Empty it piece by piece,
making no choice at all.[a]
7 For the blood she shed is inside it;
she placed it on a bare rock;
she did not pour it out on the ground,
to cover it with earth.
8 To rouse my wrath, to take vengeance,
I have placed the blood she shed
on a bare rock,
so that it may not be covered.
9 Therefore thus says the Lord God:
Woe to the bloody city!
I will even make the pile great.
10 Heap up the logs, kindle the fire;
boil the meat well, mix in the spices,
let the bones be burned.
11 Stand it empty upon the coals,
so that it may become hot, its copper glow,
its filth melt in it, its rust be consumed.
12 In vain I have wearied myself;[b]
its thick rust does not depart.
To the fire with its rust![c]
13 Yet, when I cleansed you in your filthy lewdness,
you did not become clean from your filth;
you shall not again be cleansed
until I have satisfied my fury upon you.
14 I the Lord have spoken; the time is coming, I will act. I will not refrain, I will not spare, I will not relent. According to your ways and your doings I will judge you, says the Lord God.

15 The word of the Lord came to me:
16 Mortal, with one blow I am about to take away from you the delight of your eyes; yet you shall not mourn or weep, nor shall your tears run down. 17 Sigh, but not aloud; make no mourning for the dead. Bind on your turban, and put your sandals on your feet; do not cover your upper lip or eat the bread of mourners.[d] 18 So I spoke to the people in the morning, and at evening my wife died. And on the next morning I did as I was commanded.

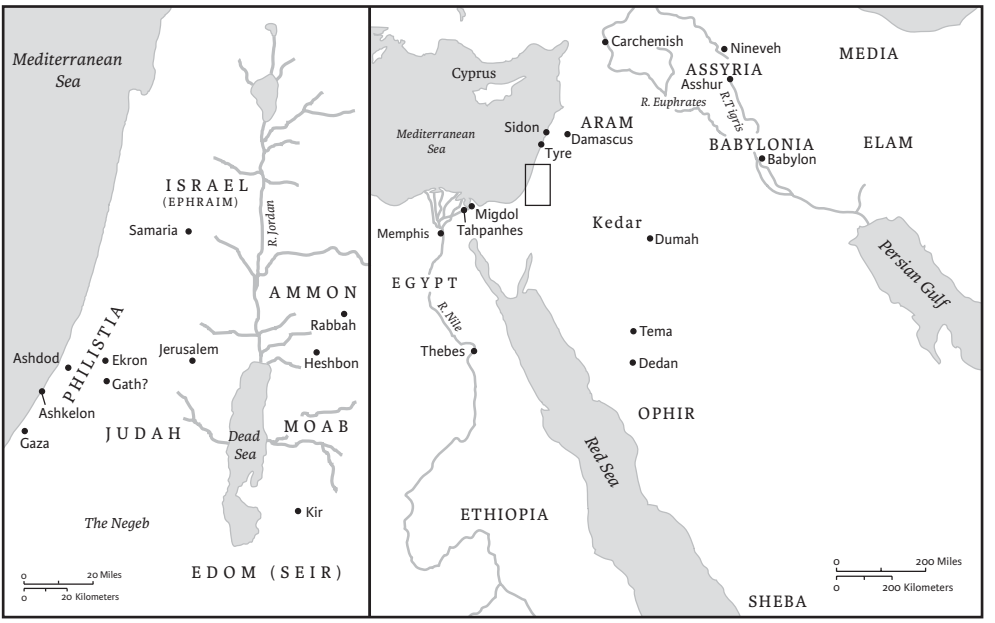
19 Then the people said to me, "Will you not tell us what these things mean for us, that you are acting this way?" 20 Then I said to them: The word of the Lord came to me: 21 Say to the house of Israel, Thus says the Lord God: I will profane my sanctuary, the pride of your power, the delight of your eyes, and your heart's desire; and your sons and your daughters whom you left behind shall fall by the sword. 22 And you shall do as I have done; you shall not cover your upper lip or eat the bread of mourners.[d] 23 Your turbans shall be on your heads and your sandals on your feet; you shall not mourn or weep, but you shall pine away in your iniquities and groan to one another. 24 Thus Ezekiel shall be a sign to you; you shall do just as he has done. When this comes, then you shall know that I am the Lord God.

25 And you, mortal, on the day when I take from them their stronghold, their joy

[a] Heb *piece, no lot has fallen on it*
[b] Cn: Meaning of Heb uncertain
[c] Meaning of Heb uncertain
[d] Vg Tg: Heb *of men*

gunk" (also vv. 11–12), represents injustice and bloodguilt (22.6–12).

24.15–27: The sign of the death of Ezekiel's wife. Ezekiel's symbolic action shows the people that the loss of the Temple and cherished persons at Jerusalem's fiery destruction in 586 BCE will bring profound recognition, reverent awe, and the submergence of ego. The people will mirror Aaron's silent mourning following the release of holy fire in Lev 10.1–7, when God manifested the divine holiness and took two of Aaron's sons with one blow. Ezek 24.17 uses the same Heb verb as Lev 10.3. **16–17:** The Lord commands the prophet to stifle all expressions of grief and forgo all rituals of mourning, such as the unbinding of the hair, the removal of shoes, the covering of the *upper lip*, and the eating of the *bread of mourners*. Ezekiel is again drawing from Lev 10.1–7, where the Holiness School stresses that Aaron's silence at God's epiphany should properly include shunning all participation in mourning and funerary rituals. Holiness and death are antithetical realities for the Holiness School, and those in contact with God's holiness must avoid the realm of death, mourning, and burial (see 44.25n.). In acting out Aaron's avoidance of mourning, Ezekiel conveys to the people that the fall of Jerusalem will be a major epiphany of divine holiness on earth. **22–24:** The people's deep, silent grief will signify a profound discernment of divine judgment (in contrast to their previous skepticism and enmity toward Ezekiel). It will also entail recognition of God's otherness (v. 24), which will afford the exiles the gracious opportunity



Chs 25–32: Places mentioned in the oracles against foreign nations.

and glory, the delight of their eyes and their heart's affection, and also[a] their sons and their daughters, **26** on that day, one who has escaped will come to you to report to you the news. **27** On that day your mouth shall be opened to the one who has escaped, and you shall speak and no longer be silent. So you shall be a sign to them; and they shall know that I am the LORD.

25 The word of the LORD came to me: **2** Mortal, set your face toward the Ammonites and prophesy against them. **3** Say to the Ammonites, Hear the word of the Lord GOD: Thus says the Lord GOD, Because you said, "Aha!" over my sanctuary when it was profaned, and over the land of Israel when it was made desolate, and over the house of Judah when it went into exile; **4** therefore I am handing you over to the people of the east for a possession. They shall set their encampments among you and pitch their tents in your midst; they shall eat your fruit, and they shall drink your milk. **5** I will make Rabbah a pasture for camels and Ammon a fold for flocks. Then you shall know that I am the LORD. **6** For thus says the Lord GOD: Because you have clapped your hands and stamped

[a] Heb lacks *and also*

for self-transcendence. **25–27: The release from speechlessness predicted.** The prophet's muted response to the death of his wife has been a continuation of the divinely imposed bridling of his tongue in effect since his commissioning (3.22–27). When word of the fall of Jerusalem reaches Ezekiel (see 33.21–22), his tongue will be loosed (3.27), and he will proclaim a new message of restoration. At that time, Ezekiel's speechlessness will be transferred to and appropriated by the people (v. 23). That is, they will fully accept God's insistence from the start of the book on radically prioritizing the divine intention and its sure performance. They will drop a false reliance on *the pride of* their *power* (v. 21) and *their stronghold* (v. 25).

25.1–32.32: Oracles against the nations. This part of Ezekiel is an effective bridge between the book's message of doom and its message of hope. Here, doom for Israel's antagonists spells hope for Israel itself. Seven nations (Ammon, Moab, Edom, Philistia, Tyre, Sidon, and Egypt) will be punished before Israel is restored (36.5–7).

25.1–17: Oracles against Ammon, Moab, Edom, and Philistia. 1–7: Against Ammon (21.28; Am 1.13–15; Jer 49.1–6). Ammon, which had maliciously gloated over Judah's fall (Lam 2.15–16), is to be occupied by *the people of the east* (v. 4; cf. Isa 11.14), i.e., nomadic Arab tribes. **5:** *Rabbah* (modern Amman, Jordan) was the Ammonite

your feet and rejoiced with all the malice within you against the land of Israel, [7] therefore I have stretched out my hand against you, and will hand you over as plunder to the nations. I will cut you off from the peoples and will make you perish out of the countries; I will destroy you. Then you shall know that I am the LORD.

[8] Thus says the Lord GOD: Because Moab[a] said, The house of Judah is like all the other nations, [9] therefore I will lay open the flank of Moab from the towns[b] on its frontier, the glory of the country, Beth-jeshimoth, Baal-meon, and Kiriathaim. [10] I will give it along with Ammon to the people of the east as a possession. Thus Ammon shall be remembered no more among the nations, [11] and I will execute judgments upon Moab. Then they shall know that I am the LORD.

[12] Thus says the Lord GOD: Because Edom acted revengefully against the house of Judah and has grievously offended in taking vengeance upon them, [13] therefore thus says the Lord GOD, I will stretch out my hand against Edom, and cut off from it humans and animals, and I will make it desolate; from Teman even to Dedan they shall fall by the sword. [14] I will lay my vengeance upon Edom by the hand of my people Israel; and they shall act in Edom according to my anger and according to my wrath; and they shall know my vengeance, says the Lord GOD.

[15] Thus says the Lord GOD: Because with unending hostilities the Philistines acted in vengeance, and with malice of heart took revenge in destruction; [16] therefore thus says the Lord GOD, I will stretch out my hand against the Philistines, cut off the Cherethites, and destroy the rest of the seacoast. [17] I will execute great vengeance on them with wrathful punishments. Then they shall know that I am the LORD, when I lay my vengeance on them.

26 In the eleventh year, on the first day of the month, the word of the LORD came to me: [2] Mortal, because Tyre said concerning Jerusalem,

"Aha, broken is the gateway of the peoples;
it has swung open to me;
I shall be replenished,
now that it is wasted,"

[3] therefore, thus says the Lord GOD:

See, I am against you, O Tyre!
I will hurl many nations against you,
as the sea hurls its waves.
[4] They shall destroy the walls of Tyre
and break down its towers.
I will scrape its soil from it
and make it a bare rock.
[5] It shall become, in the midst of the sea,
a place for spreading nets.

I have spoken, says the Lord GOD.

It shall become plunder for the nations,
[6] and its daughter-towns in the country
shall be killed by the sword.

Then they shall know that I am the LORD.

[7] For thus says the Lord GOD: I will bring against Tyre from the north King Nebuchadrezzar of Babylon, king of kings, together with horses, chariots, cavalry, and a great and powerful army.

[8] Your daughter-towns in the country
he shall put to the sword.
He shall set up a siege wall against you,
cast up a ramp against you,
and raise a roof of shields against you.

[a] Gk Old Latin: Heb *Moab and Seir*
[b] Heb *towns from its towns*

capital. **8–11: Against Moab.** Cf. Jer 48. **8:** Cf. 20.32. **9:** God will lay bare Moab's high tableland (*flank*) through the destruction of the three northern fortified cities named. **12–14: Against Edom.** Cf. Jer 49.7–22; Ob; Ps 137.3. **12:** *Vengeance,* Ob 10–14; Ps 137.7. **13:** Destruction will stretch from *Teman* to *Dedan,* localities also associated with Edom in Jer 49.7–8. **15–17: Against Philistia.** Cf. Jer 47. *Cherethites,* probably Cretans (the Philistines originally came from the islands of the Aegean Sea; cf. 1 Sam 30.14; Am 9.7; Zeph 2.5; Jer 47.4).

26.1–28.19: Oracles against Tyre. 26.1–21: Tyre is to be destroyed by Nebuchadrezzar. 1–6: Tyre is judged for gloating over the fall of Jerusalem, a commercial rival, and for looking forward to taking over the city's trade. **1:** Both the (partially preserved) Hebrew and Septuagint texts date the passage several months before Jerusalem's fall, anticipating it as having occurred already (v. 2). **7–14:** Nebuchadrezzar will besiege the island city, which lay about a half-mile (1 km) offshore from the mainland city, after destroying the outlying settlements on the mainland (*daughter-towns,* v. 8). In fact, Nebuchadrezzar besieged the island of Tyre (after the mainland fell) for thirteen years. Tyre lost the war, but it was not destroyed or pillaged (as prophesied, v. 12). This state of affairs is

[9] He shall direct the shock of his battering
rams against your walls
and break down your towers with his
axes.
[10] His horses shall be so many
that their dust shall cover you.
At the noise of cavalry, wheels, and
chariots
your very walls shall shake,
when he enters your gates
like those entering a breached city.
[11] With the hoofs of his horses
he shall trample all your streets.
He shall put your people to the sword,
and your strong pillars shall fall to the
ground.
[12] They will plunder your riches
and loot your merchandise;
they shall break down your walls
and destroy your fine houses.
Your stones and timber and soil
they shall cast into the water.
[13] I will silence the music of your songs;
the sound of your lyres shall be heard
no more.
[14] I will make you a bare rock;
you shall be a place for spreading nets.
You shall never again be rebuilt,
for I the LORD have spoken,
says the Lord GOD.
[15] Thus says the Lord GOD to Tyre: Shall not the coastlands shake at the sound of your fall, when the wounded groan, when slaughter goes on within you? [16] Then all the princes of the sea shall step down from their thrones; they shall remove their robes and strip off their embroidered garments. They shall clothe themselves with trembling, and shall sit on the ground; they shall tremble every moment, and be appalled at you. [17] And they shall raise a lamentation over you, and say to you:

How you have vanished[a] from the seas,
O city renowned,
once mighty on the sea,
you and your inhabitants,[b]
who imposed your[c] terror
on all the mainland![d]
[18] Now the coastlands tremble
on the day of your fall;
the coastlands by the sea
are dismayed at your passing.
[19] For thus says the Lord GOD: When I make you a city laid waste, like cities that are not inhabited, when I bring up the deep over you, and the great waters cover you, [20] then I will thrust you down with those who descend into the Pit, to the people of long ago, and I will make you live in the world below, among primeval ruins, with those who go down to the Pit, so that you will not be inhabited or have a place[e] in the land of the living. [21] I will bring you to a dreadful end, and you shall be no more; though sought for, you will never be found again, says the Lord GOD.

27 The word of the LORD came to me:
[2] Now you, mortal, raise a lamentation over Tyre, [3] and say to Tyre, which sits at the entrance to the sea, merchant of the peoples on many coastlands, Thus says the Lord GOD:

O Tyre, you have said,
"I am perfect in beauty."
[4] Your borders are in the heart of the seas;
your builders made perfect your beauty.
[5] They made all your planks
of fir trees from Senir;
they took a cedar from Lebanon
to make a mast for you.

[a] Gk OL Aquila: Heb *have vanished, O inhabited one,*
[b] Heb *it and its inhabitants*
[c] Heb *their*
[d] Cn: Heb *its inhabitants*
[e] Gk: Heb *I will give beauty*

addressed in 29.17–21. Tyre finally fell to Alexander the Great in 332 BCE. **11:** *Strong pillars* probably refer to standing stones that represented deities. **14:** Cf. vv. 4–5. **15–18:** Dirge of *the princes of the sea,* perhaps coastal cities in trade alliance with Tyre. **19–21:** The simile of the attack of the sea in v. 3 is here converted and heightened into mythic metaphor. The waters of the primordial *deep* (Gen 1.2) will cover the wasted city, which will *descend into the Pit* (Sheol, see 31.15–18; 32.17–32; Isa 14.15), the abode of the dead.

27.1–36: Dirge over the ship Tyre. Ezekiel's use of metaphorical language here as elsewhere serves his need to push beyond the ordinarily observable and speak of ultimate realities. **1–25:** Tyre's glory. **2:** *Lamentation,* better, a funerary "dirge," in which present downfall is contrasted with past glory. **3:** *I am perfect in beauty* is supposed to be Jerusalem's epithet (16.14; Lam 2.15), not Tyre's. **5–9:** The text shifts directly into the ship metaphor.

[6] From oaks of Bashan
they made your oars;
they made your deck of pines[a]
from the coasts of Cyprus,
inlaid with ivory.
[7] Of fine embroidered linen from Egypt
was your sail,
serving as your ensign;
blue and purple from the coasts of Elishah
was your awning.
[8] The inhabitants of Sidon and Arvad
were your rowers;
skilled men of Zemer[b] were within you,
they were your pilots.
[9] The elders of Gebal and its artisans were
within you,
caulking your seams;
all the ships of the sea with their mariners
were within you,
to barter for your wares.
[10] Paras[c] and Lud and Put
were in your army,
your mighty warriors;
they hung shield and helmet in you;
they gave you splendor.
[11] Men of Arvad and Helech[d]
were on your walls all around;
men of Gamad were at your towers.
They hung their quivers all around your
walls;
they made perfect your beauty.
[12] Tarshish did business with you out of the abundance of your great wealth; silver, iron, tin, and lead they exchanged for your wares. [13] Javan, Tubal, and Meshech traded with you; they exchanged human beings and vessels of bronze for your merchandise. [14] Beth-togarmah exchanged for your wares horses, war horses, and mules. [15] The Rhodians[e] traded with you; many coastlands were your own special markets; they brought you in payment ivory tusks and ebony. [16] Edom[f] did business with you because of your abundant goods; they exchanged for your wares turquoise, purple, embroidered work, fine linen, coral, and rubies. [17] Judah and the land of Israel traded with you; they exchanged for your merchandise wheat from Minnith, millet,[g] honey, oil, and balm. [18] Damascus traded with you for your abundant goods—because of your great wealth of every kind—wine of Helbon, and white wool. [19] Vedan and Javan from Uzal[g] entered into trade for your wares; wrought iron, cassia, and sweet cane were bartered for your merchandise. [20] Dedan traded with you in saddlecloths for riding. [21] Arabia and all the princes of Kedar were your favored dealers in lambs, rams, and goats; in these they did business with you. [22] The merchants of Sheba and

[a] Or *boxwood*
[b] Cn Compare Gen 10.18: Heb *your skilled men, O Tyre*
[c] Or *Persia*
[d] Or *and your army*
[e] Gk: Heb *The Dedanites*
[f] Another reading is *Aram*
[g] Meaning of Heb uncertain

The good ship Tyre was constructed of the best materials. **5:** *Senir* is Mount Hermon, located in southern Syria (Deut 3.9). **6:** *Bashan* is east of the Sea of Galilee, known for its oak forests. **7:** *Elishah* is probably Cyprus. **8–9:** The ship's crew was from *Sidon, Arvad, Zemer* (textual note *b*), and *Gebal* (Byblos), Phoenician island and port cities. **10:** The ship's warriors included those from Persia (textual note *c*), *Lud* (Lydia in western Asia Minor), and *Put* (Libya). **11:** Literal reality (Tyre as a city) momentarily intrudes into Ezekiel's ship metaphor. *Arvad,* see v. 8. *Helech,* possibly Cilicia, in southeastern Asia Minor. The *men of Gamad* are perhaps the Cimmerians or Cappadocians in eastern Asia Minor. **12–25:** A (mostly prose) description of the gallant ship's cargo of rich wares from many nations. Tyre's commercial empire is described first in horizontal fashion from west to east (vv. 12–15): *Tarshish,* perhaps Tartessus in southern Spain or Sardinia; *Javan,* Ionians, i.e., the Greeks of the Aegean; *Tubal* and *Meshech,* Assyrian "Tabal" and "Mushki," peoples settled in Asia Minor; *Beth-togarmah,* Assyrian "Tilgarimmu," in eastern Asia Minor (Armenia), east of the southernmost Halys River, east of Tubal. The description then moves vertically from south to northeast (vv. 16–19): *Edom; Judah* and *Israel; Minnith,* an Ammonite city (Judg 11.33); *Damascus; Helbon,* a famed wine center thirteen miles north of Damascus. The Arabian region is treated next (vv. 20–22): *Dedan,* in northwest Arabia; *Kedar,* a tribal group of northern Arabia; *Sheba* and *Raamah,* in southwest Arabia. Several Mesopotamian cities conclude the list (v. 23): *Haran,* in northwest Mesopotamia; *Canneh,* a town near Haran; *Eden,* the Aramaean state of Bit-Adini, south of Haran; *Asshur,* south of Nineveh;

Raamah traded with you; they exchanged
for your wares the best of all kinds of
spices, and all precious stones, and gold.
23 Haran, Canneh, Eden, the merchants of
Sheba, Asshur, and Chilmad traded with
you. 24 These traded with you in choice gar-
ments, in clothes of blue and embroidered
work, and in carpets of colored material,
bound with cords and made secure; in
these they traded with you.[a] 25 The ships of
Tarshish traveled for you in your trade.
So you were filled and heavily laden
in the heart of the seas.
26 Your rowers have brought you
into the high seas.
The east wind has wrecked you
in the heart of the seas.
27 Your riches, your wares, your
merchandise,
your mariners and your pilots,
your caulkers, your dealers in
merchandise,
and all your warriors within you,
with all the company
that is with you,
sink into the heart of the seas
on the day of your ruin.
28 At the sound of the cry of your pilots
the countryside shakes,
29 and down from their ships
come all that handle the oar.
The mariners and all the pilots of the sea
stand on the shore
30 and wail aloud over you,
and cry bitterly.
They throw dust on their heads
and wallow in ashes;
31 they make themselves bald for you,
and put on sackcloth,
and they weep over you in bitterness of soul,
with bitter mourning.
32 In their wailing they raise a lamentation
for you,
and lament over you:
"Who was ever destroyed[b] like Tyre
in the midst of the sea?
33 When your wares came from the seas,
you satisfied many peoples;
with your abundant wealth and
merchandise
you enriched the kings of the earth.
34 Now you are wrecked by the seas,
in the depths of the waters;
your merchandise and all your crew
have sunk with you.
35 All the inhabitants of the coastlands
are appalled at you;
and their kings are horribly afraid,
their faces are convulsed.
36 The merchants among the peoples hiss
at you;
you have come to a dreadful end
and shall be no more forever."

28 The word of the LORD came to me:
2 Mortal, say to the prince of Tyre,
Thus says the Lord GOD:
Because your heart is proud
and you have said, "I am a god;
I sit in the seat of the gods,
in the heart of the seas,"
yet you are but a mortal, and no god,
though you compare your mind
with the mind of a god.
3 You are indeed wiser than Daniel;[c]
no secret is hidden from you;
4 by your wisdom and your
understanding
you have amassed wealth for yourself,
and have gathered gold and silver
into your treasuries.
5 By your great wisdom in trade
you have increased your wealth,
and your heart has become proud in
your wealth.

[a] Cn: Heb *in your market*
[b] Tg Vg: Heb *like silence*
[c] Or, as otherwise read, *Danel*

Chilmad, unidentified. **25:** *Ships of Tarshish,* see 1 Kings 10.22; 22.48; Ps 48.7; Isa 23.1. **26–36:** With this section, the dirge shifts from picturing Tyre's past glory to describing its sudden end. As in 19.12, the *east wind* (sirocco) is an agent of destruction (cf. Ps 48.7). The sudden end of the great commercial city brings astonishment, fear, and grief to seafarers, merchants, and inhabitants of the coastlands. **31:** 7.18n.

28.1–10: Oracle against the leader of Tyre. 2: *Prince,* the Heb term means "leader" or "ruler" here. The leader, who represents the whole people of Tyre, is judged for his pride (a universal offense, Prov 16.5). Hubris leads to self-deification. Thus the prince of Tyre sat in *the seat of the gods* (cf. Isa 14.13–14). *Heart of the seas,* see 28.14n.

[6] Therefore thus says the Lord God:
Because you compare your mind
with the mind of a god,
[7] therefore, I will bring strangers against
you,
the most terrible of the nations;
they shall draw their swords against the
beauty of your wisdom
and defile your splendor.
[8] They shall thrust you down to the Pit,
and you shall die a violent death
in the heart of the seas.
[9] Will you still say, "I am a god,"
in the presence of those who kill you,
though you are but a mortal, and no god,
in the hands of those who wound
you?
[10] You shall die the death of the
uncircumcised
by the hand of foreigners;
for I have spoken, says the Lord God.
[11] Moreover the word of the Lord came to me: [12] Mortal, raise a lamentation over the king of Tyre, and say to him, Thus says the Lord God:
You were the signet of perfection,[a]
full of wisdom and perfect in beauty.
[13] You were in Eden, the garden of God;
every precious stone was your
covering,
carnelian, chrysolite, and moonstone,
beryl, onyx, and jasper,
sapphire,[b] turquoise, and emerald;
and worked in gold were your settings
and your engravings.[a]
On the day that you were created
they were prepared.
[14] With an anointed cherub as guardian I
placed you;[a]
you were on the holy mountain of God;
you walked among the stones of fire.
[15] You were blameless in your ways
from the day that you were created,
until iniquity was found in you.
[16] In the abundance of your trade
you were filled with violence, and you
sinned;

[a] Meaning of Heb uncertain
[b] Or *lapis lazuli*

3: In the Ugaritic tablets, *Danel* is the wise judge of widows and orphans (see 14.14n.). **6–10:** The leader will be slain by *the most terrible of the nations,* Babylonia (30.10–11), and come to an ignominious end (*the death of the uncircumcised*, v. 10) in *the Pit* (v. 8), that is, Sheol, where the unfortunate dead are cut off from life and community (32.30). Like the Israelites, the Phoenicians practiced circumcision, and would be shocked to experience a postmortem fate in the abysmal depths of the netherworld where unclean and vile souls were confined.

28.11–19: A dirge over the king of Tyre. The passage reworks 28.1–10 based on a mythic tale in which a celestial figure succumbed to ambition and met his downfall through hubris (cf. the Ugaritic myth of Athtar). Since this myth was familiar outside of Israel, it provided Ezekiel a basis for the judgment of a nation such as Tyre that was outside Israel's covenant. **12:** The judgment of the *king of Tyre* serves as a concrete instance of the downfall of an archetypal being, but the text (especially vv. 14 and 16) is ambiguous as to whether this being was *with* a cherub, or, more likely, was a great cherub himself (see v. 14n. and v. 16b n.). A cherub would fit Ezekiel's mythic tale well, since cherubim have an unstable, animalistic nature vulnerable to the lure of the cosmic center that they guard (cf. 28.2). Furthermore, in ancient Near Eastern myth, cherubim are nowhere companions to humans, as the NRSV translation would have it, but are interlocked with the divine presence itself (cf. 1.5–14n.). *Wisdom,* a characteristic trait of cherubim. Cf. the Ugaritic god Athtar, celebrated for knowledge and understanding, but unable successfully to occupy the throne at the cosmic center for which he longed. **13:** *Eden,* ancient images of cherubim often appear in association with highly stylized trees, which mark paradise, where God is present (cf. Gen 3.24; Ezek 31.9; 41.18). With the cherub's *covering* of precious stones, cf. the stones of the high priest's breastplate in Ex 28.17–20, which itself must have had a symbolic connection to Eden. **14:** The translation of the verse is contested (see textual note *a*). The Heb reads, "You were an anointed cherub." The outstretched, shielding wings of a cherub made it an effective *guardian* of the cosmic center. Tyre's ruler might initially have appreciated the comparison to a cherub. A magnificent, ninth-century Phoenician ivory depicts a human monarch in the guise of a semidivine cherub. The garden paradise of *Eden* (v. 13) sat atop the mythic cosmic mountain, *the holy mountain of God* that connects earth and heaven. Rivers flow from God's mountain to fill earth's lakes and oceans, making the mountain the "heart of the seas" (v. 2; cf. 47.1–12; Gen 2.10–14; Ps 46.4; Zech 14.8). *Stones of fire,* the stars of heaven, the astral coterie of the cherub. Arrayed in delicate balance

so I cast you as a profane thing from the
mountain of God,
and the guardian cherub drove you out
from among the stones of fire.
17 Your heart was proud because of your
beauty;
you corrupted your wisdom for the sake
of your splendor.
I cast you to the ground;
I exposed you before kings,
to feast their eyes on you.
18 By the multitude of your iniquities,
in the unrighteousness of your trade,
you profaned your sanctuaries.
So I brought out fire from within you;
it consumed you,
and I turned you to ashes on the earth
in the sight of all who saw you.
19 All who know you among the peoples
are appalled at you;
you have come to a dreadful end
and shall be no more forever.
20 The word of the LORD came to me:
21 Mortal, set your face toward Sidon, and
prophesy against it, 22 and say, Thus says the
Lord GOD:
I am against you, O Sidon,
and I will gain glory in your midst.
They shall know that I am the LORD
when I execute judgments in it,
and manifest my holiness in it;
23 for I will send pestilence into it,
and bloodshed into its streets;
and the dead shall fall in its midst,
by the sword that is against it on every
side.
And they shall know that I am the LORD.
24 The house of Israel shall no longer find
a pricking brier or a piercing thorn among all
their neighbors who have treated them with
contempt. And they shall know that I am the
Lord GOD.
25 Thus says the Lord GOD: When I gather
the house of Israel from the peoples among
whom they are scattered, and manifest my
holiness in them in the sight of the nations,
then they shall settle on their own soil that I
gave to my servant Jacob. 26 They shall live in
safety in it, and shall build houses and plant
vineyards. They shall live in safety, when I
execute judgments upon all their neighbors
who have treated them with contempt. And
they shall know that I am the LORD their God.

29 In the tenth year, in the tenth month,
on the twelfth day of the month, the
word of the LORD came to me: 2 Mortal, set
your face against Pharaoh king of Egypt, and
prophesy against him and against all Egypt;
3 speak, and say, Thus says the Lord GOD:
I am against you,
Pharaoh king of Egypt,
the great dragon sprawling
in the midst of its channels,
saying, "My Nile is my own;
I made it for myself."
4 I will put hooks in your jaws,
and make the fish of your channels
stick to your scales.

about the holy center of the universe, cherubim may covet the center's power. **16–19:** The dirge moves from the cherub's past glory to an account of his downfall through hubris. **16a:** The actual referent (Tyre's corrupt trade) intrudes into the allegorical figure (the primal cherub's sin) here. **16b:** The NRSV is following the Septuagint (cf. Gen 3.23–24). The Heb reads, "I drove you out, O guardian cherub." For demotions of supernatural figures, cf. Ps 82.6–7; Isa 14.12; Lk 10.18. **17–18:** The cherub arrogated to himself the "seat of the gods" (v. 2). Mimicking the hubris of this diabolical, celestial cherub, the earthly king of Tyre profaned his land. *To the ground,* in Ugaritic myth, Athtar's descent is also said to be to the "earth"/"underworld."

28.20–26: Oracle against Sidon, another Phoenician city, on the Mediterranean coast north of Tyre. **22:** A good example of Ezekiel's Priestly language (cf. Ex 14.17–18; Lev 10.3). **24–26:** Sidon's doom spells God's vindication. **24:** Cf. Num 33.55 (HS). **25–26:** Cf. 34.28; Lev 25.19.

29.1–32.32: Prophecies against Egypt. 29.1–16: Against Pharaoh (January 7, 587 BCE). **3:** In a prophecy with strong Egyptian flavoring, the pharaoh is depicted as a monstrous crocodile of the Nile, whom God will cast on the land as carrion. *Dragon,* the Heb term often refers to the mythical monster of watery chaos (see 32.2n.), but here, as in Ex 7.8–12, its basic denotation is the reptilian crocodile (a signature creature of Egypt). (The Heb term takes on more of its common mythological connotations in 32.1–16.) *Its channels,* the Nile delta and canals. *My own; I made it,* in Egyptian religion the pharaoh created and controlled the Nile. **4:** *Hooks,* cf. 38:4; Isa 37.29. *Fish of your channels,* the Egyptians and their mercenaries. **6b–9a:** *Staff of reed,* compare the Assyrian Rabshakeh's

I will draw you up from your channels,
with all the fish of your channels
sticking to your scales.
5 I will fling you into the wilderness,
you and all the fish of your channels;
you shall fall in the open field,
and not be gathered and buried.
To the animals of the earth and to the
birds of the air
I have given you as food.
6 Then all the inhabitants of Egypt shall
know
that I am the LORD
because you[a] were a staff of reed
to the house of Israel;
7 when they grasped you with the hand,
you broke,
and tore all their shoulders;
and when they leaned on you, you broke,
and made all their legs unsteady.[b]
8 Therefore, thus says the Lord GOD: I will bring a sword upon you, and will cut off from you human being and animal; 9 and the land of Egypt shall be a desolation and a waste. Then they shall know that I am the LORD.

Because you[c] said, "The Nile is mine, and I made it," 10 therefore, I am against you, and against your channels, and I will make the land of Egypt an utter waste and desolation, from Migdol to Syene, as far as the border of Ethiopia.[d] 11 No human foot shall pass through it, and no animal foot shall pass through it; it shall be uninhabited forty years. 12 I will make the land of Egypt a desolation among desolated countries; and her cities shall be a desolation forty years among cities that are laid waste. I will scatter the Egyptians among the nations, and disperse them among the countries.

13 Further, thus says the Lord GOD: At the end of forty years I will gather the Egyptians from the peoples among whom they were scattered; 14 and I will restore the fortunes of Egypt, and bring them back to the land of Pathros, the land of their origin; and there they shall be a lowly kingdom. 15 It shall be the most lowly of the kingdoms, and never again exalt itself above the nations; and I will make them so small that they will never again rule over the nations. 16 The Egyptians[e] shall never again be the reliance of the house of Israel; they will recall their iniquity, when they turned to them for aid. Then they shall know that I am the Lord GOD.

17 In the twenty-seventh year, in the first month, on the first day of the month, the word of the LORD came to me: 18 Mortal, King Nebuchadrezzar of Babylon made his army labor hard against Tyre; every head was made bald and every shoulder was rubbed bare; yet neither he nor his army got anything from Tyre to pay for the labor that he had expended against it. 19 Therefore thus says the Lord GOD: I will give the land of Egypt to King Nebuchadrezzar of Babylon; and he shall carry off its wealth and despoil it and plunder it; and it shall be the wages for his army. 20 I have given him the land of Egypt as his payment for which he labored, because they worked for me, says the Lord GOD.

21 On that day I will cause a horn to sprout up for the house of Israel, and I will open your lips among them. Then they shall know that I am the LORD.

30 The word of the LORD came to me: 2 Mortal, prophesy, and say, Thus says the Lord GOD:

[a] Gk Syr Vg: Heb *they*
[b] Syr: Heb *stand*
[c] Gk Syr Vg: Heb *he*
[d] Or *Nubia*; Heb *Cush*
[e] Heb *It*

similar belittlement of Egypt in 2 Kings 18.21; Isa 36.6. Pharaoh Hophra's attack against Nebuchadrezzar in the spring of 588 had failed to relieve Jerusalem (Jer 37.5–10). **10:** *Migdol to Syene,* northern and southern Egyptian localities, together signifying all Egypt. **11:** *Forty years,* 4.6; Num 14.33 (HS). **13–16:** The only promise of Egyptian restoration in Ezekiel, though Egypt will be restored only as a *lowly kingdom*. **14:** *Pathros,* southern Egypt.

29.17–21: Egypt as "wages" for Nebuchadrezzar, instead of Tyre. Ezekiel's latest dated oracle, April 26, 571 BCE. This unique passage amends the Tyre prophecies (26.12) in light of subsequent events. Nebuchadrezzar will get sufficient plunder from Egypt to compensate for his lack of booty from the siege of Tyre. The preservation of an earlier, embarrassingly unfulfilled prophecy (ch 26) in the book shows how quickly Ezekiel's prophecies took on scriptural authority. **21:** *Horn* may refer to a reestablished Davidic monarch in Israel (Ps 132.17); cf. 17.22–24n.

Wail, "Alas for the day!"
3 For a day is near,
the day of the LORD is near;
it will be a day of clouds,
a time of doom[a] for the nations.
4 A sword shall come upon Egypt,
and anguish shall be in Ethiopia,[b]
when the slain fall in Egypt,
and its wealth is carried away,
and its foundations are torn down.
5 Ethiopia,[b] and Put, and Lud, and all Arabia,
and Libya,[c] and the people of the allied land[d]
shall fall with them by the sword.

6 Thus says the LORD:
Those who support Egypt shall fall,
and its proud might shall come down;
from Migdol to Syene
they shall fall within it by the sword,
says the Lord GOD.
7 They shall be desolated among other
desolated countries,
and their cities shall lie among cities
laid waste.
8 Then they shall know that I am the
LORD,
when I have set fire to Egypt,
and all who help it are broken.
9 On that day, messengers shall go out
from me in ships to terrify the unsuspecting
Ethiopians;[e] and anguish shall come upon
them on the day of Egypt's doom;[f] for it is
coming!

10 Thus says the Lord GOD:
I will put an end to the hordes of Egypt,
by the hand of King Nebuchadrezzar of
Babylon.
11 He and his people with him, the most
terrible of the nations,
shall be brought in to destroy the land;
and they shall draw their swords against
Egypt,
and fill the land with the slain.
12 I will dry up the channels,
and will sell the land into the hand of
evildoers;
I will bring desolation upon the land and
everything in it
by the hand of foreigners;
I the LORD have spoken.

13 Thus says the Lord GOD:
I will destroy the idols
and put an end to the images in
Memphis;
there shall no longer be a prince in the
land of Egypt;
so I will put fear in the land of Egypt.
14 I will make Pathros a desolation,
and will set fire to Zoan,
and will execute acts of judgment on
Thebes.
15 I will pour my wrath upon Pelusium,
the stronghold of Egypt,
and cut off the hordes of Thebes.
16 I will set fire to Egypt;
Pelusium shall be in great agony;
Thebes shall be breached,
and Memphis face adversaries by day.
17 The young men of On and of Pi-beseth
shall fall by the sword;
and the cities themselves[g] shall go into
captivity.

[a] Heb lacks *of doom*
[b] Or *Nubia*; Heb *Cush*
[c] Compare Gk Syr Vg: Heb *Cub*
[d] Meaning of Heb uncertain
[e] Or *Nubians*; Heb *Cush*
[f] Heb *the day of Egypt*
[g] Heb *and they*

30.1–19: The doom of Egypt. 1–9: Since the time of the prophet Amos (Am 5.18–20), the "day of the LORD" was God's judgment day on the Israelites (7.5–9n.; 13.5); later, as here, it became Israel's restoration day but remained doomsday for the nations (38.18; 39.8). *Put, and Lud,* see 27.10n. **6–9:** Egypt's allies will collapse. *Migdol to Syene,* see 29.10n. *Unsuspecting Ethiopians,* the enormity of Egypt's fall is emphasized by describing onlookers' reactions. **10–12:** Nebuchadrezzar is Egypt's destroyer. **12:** *Channels,* see 29.3n. **13–19:** All Egypt will be destroyed. *Images* are condemned in Holiness School texts, such as Lev 19.4; 26.1. *Memphis,* south of Cairo, was the ancient capital of lower (northern) Egypt. *Pathros,* see 29.14n. *Zoan,* in the northeast delta region. *Thebes,* capital of upper Egypt, is present-day Karnak and Luxor. *Pelusium,* east of Zoan, in the delta region. *On* is Heliopolis, slightly northeast of Memphis. *Pi-beseth,* Bubastis, in the eastern delta. *Tehaphnehes,* Tahpanhes, on Egypt's northeastern frontier.

18 At Tehaphnehes the day shall be dark,
when I break there the dominion of Egypt,
and its proud might shall come to an end;
the city[a] shall be covered by a cloud,
and its daughter-towns shall go into captivity.
19 Thus I will execute acts of judgment on Egypt.
Then they shall know that I am the LORD.

20 In the eleventh year, in the first month, on the seventh day of the month, the word of the LORD came to me: 21 Mortal, I have broken the arm of Pharaoh king of Egypt; it has not been bound up for healing or wrapped with a bandage, so that it may become strong to wield the sword. 22 Therefore thus says the Lord GOD: I am against Pharaoh king of Egypt, and will break his arms, both the strong arm and the one that was broken; and I will make the sword fall from his hand. 23 I will scatter the Egyptians among the nations, and disperse them throughout the lands. 24 I will strengthen the arms of the king of Babylon, and put my sword in his hand; but I will break the arms of Pharaoh, and he will groan before him with the groans of one mortally wounded. 25 I will strengthen the arms of the king of Babylon, but the arms of Pharaoh shall fall. And they shall know that I am the LORD, when I put my sword into the hand of the king of Babylon. He shall stretch it out against the land of Egypt, 26 and I will scatter the Egyptians among the nations and disperse them throughout the countries. Then they shall know that I am the LORD.

31 In the eleventh year, in the third month, on the first day of the month, the word of the LORD came to me: 2 Mortal, say to Pharaoh king of Egypt and to his hordes:

Whom are you like in your greatness?
3 Consider Assyria, a cedar of Lebanon,
with fair branches and forest shade,
and of great height,
its top among the clouds.[b]
4 The waters nourished it,
the deep made it grow tall,
making its rivers flow[c]
around the place it was planted,
sending forth its streams
to all the trees of the field.
5 So it towered high
above all the trees of the field;
its boughs grew large
and its branches long,
from abundant water in its shoots.
6 All the birds of the air
made their nests in its boughs;
under its branches all the animals of the field
gave birth to their young;
and in its shade
all great nations lived.
7 It was beautiful in its greatness,
in the length of its branches;
for its roots went down
to abundant water.
8 The cedars in the garden of God could not rival it,
nor the fir trees equal its boughs;
the plane trees were as nothing
compared with its branches;
no tree in the garden of God
was like it in beauty.

[a] Heb *she*
[b] Gk: Heb *thick boughs*
[c] Gk: Heb *rivers going*

30.20–26: Pharaoh disarmed. April 29, 587 BCE. The body imagery of broken arms represents military defeat. Nebuchadrezzar had broken one arm of Hophra the year before (vv. 20–21; see 29.6b–9a n.). The next time, he will break both arms (vv. 22–26).

31.1–18: The comparison between Assyria and Egypt. Date, June 21, 587 BCE. Ezekiel uses the archetype of the "cosmic tree" (see 17.22–24n.) to emphasize that, as with Assyria, the cause for Egypt's fall will be pride (hubris). **3a:** The fact of the downfall undergone by great Assyria, the superpower preceding Babylonia, supports the credibility of Ezekiel's judgments against Egypt. See Nah 3.8–10 for a similar comparison of Egypt and Assyria. Ezekiel's image of Assyria as a tree may have its source of inspiration in Isa 10.33–34. **3b–9:** A dirge for the cosmic tree begins by describing its former glory. **4:** *The deep* (Heb "tehom"), here, the world's subterranean sweet-waters (Gen 7.11), which nourished the tree so that it reached into the heavens and sheltered all life (cf. Dan 4). **7–9:** The splendor of the great cedar was incomparable (v. 18), surpassing those *in the garden of*

9 I made it beautiful
with its mass of branches,
the envy of all the trees of Eden
that were in the garden of God.
10 Therefore thus says the Lord God: Because it[a] towered high and set its top among the clouds,[b] and its heart was proud of its height, 11 I gave it into the hand of the prince of the nations; he has dealt with it as its wickedness deserves. I have cast it out. 12 Foreigners from the most terrible of the nations have cut it down and left it. On the mountains and in all the valleys its branches have fallen, and its boughs lie broken in all the watercourses of the land; and all the peoples of the earth went away from its shade and left it.
13 On its fallen trunk settle
all the birds of the air,
and among its boughs lodge
all the wild animals.
14 All this is in order that no trees by the waters may grow to lofty height or set their tops among the clouds,[b] and that no trees that drink water may reach up to them in height.
For all of them are handed over to death,
to the world below;
along with all mortals,
with those who go down to the Pit.
15 Thus says the Lord God: On the day it went down to Sheol I closed the deep over it and covered it; I restrained its rivers, and its mighty waters were checked. I clothed Lebanon in gloom for it, and all the trees of the field fainted because of it. 16 I made the nations quake at the sound of its fall, when I cast it down to Sheol with those who go down to the Pit; and all the trees of Eden, the choice and best of Lebanon, all that were well watered, were consoled in the world below. 17 They also went down to Sheol with it, to those killed by the sword, along with its allies,[c] those who lived in its shade among the nations.
18 Which among the trees of Eden was like you in glory and in greatness? Now you shall be brought down with the trees of Eden to the world below; you shall lie among the uncircumcised, with those who are killed by the sword. This is Pharaoh and all his horde, says the Lord God.

32 In the twelfth year, in the twelfth month, on the first day of the month, the word of the Lord came to me: 2 Mortal, raise a lamentation over Pharaoh king of Egypt, and say to him:
You consider yourself a lion among the nations,
but you are like a dragon in the seas;
you thrash about in your streams,
trouble the water with your feet,
and foul your[d] streams.
3 Thus says the Lord God:
In an assembly of many peoples
I will throw my net over you;
and I[e] will haul you up in my dragnet.
4 I will throw you on the ground,
on the open field I will fling you,

[a] Syr Vg: Heb *you*
[b] Gk: Heb *thick boughs*
[c] Heb *its arms*
[d] Heb *their*
[e] Gk Vg: Heb *they*

God (28.13). **10–18:** The tree's two-phased disaster. God will have it cut down; the life it sheltered will be dispersed (vv. 10–14). Once felled, it will go down still farther (vv. 15–18), to the *Pit* (v. 14), i.e., to *Sheol*, the abode of the dead, where it will lie with those who died in untimely, violent, or dishonorable ways. **11:** *Prince of the nations,* Nabopolassar (626–605 BCE), founder of the Neo-Babylonian Empire, who, in alliance with the Medes, destroyed the Assyrian Empire in a series of battles between 614 and 609 BCE. **18:** *Uncircumcised,* see 28.6–10n., 32.17–32n.

32.1–16: Dirge over Pharaoh. Date, March 3, 585 BCE. Although Pharaoh fancied himself *a lion* (v. 2; symbol of world-ranging power), Ezekiel declares he is better viewed as a sea-monster. **2:** *Dragon,* a monstrous crocodile as in 29.3, but here with some of the fantastic proportions of the mythological chaos monster that the term signifies in Job 7.12; Ps 74.13; Isa 27.1; 51.9. In his hubris, Pharaoh aspires to rock the cosmos (*in the seas,* cf. Isa 27.1 and the watery chaos of Pss 46.3; 93.3). Verses 2,13–14 show, however, that in reality he can stir up only a little local trouble, muddying the water with his feet. **3–8:** His punishment. Verses 6–8 recall the "day of the Lord" (see 30.1–9n.; Isa 13.10; Joel 2.2,30), in which God overcomes all opposing forces. They also echo the Exodus

and will cause all the birds of the air to
settle on you,
and I will let the wild animals of the
whole earth gorge themselves
with you.
5 I will strew your flesh on the mountains,
and fill the valleys with your carcass.[a]
6 I will drench the land with your flowing
blood
up to the mountains,
and the watercourses will be filled with
you.
7 When I blot you out, I will cover the
heavens,
and make their stars dark;
I will cover the sun with a cloud,
and the moon shall not give its light.
8 All the shining lights of the heavens
I will darken above you,
and put darkness on your land,
says the Lord God.
9 I will trouble the hearts of many peoples,
as I carry you captive[b] among the
nations,
into countries you have not known.
10 I will make many peoples appalled at
you;
their kings shall shudder because of
you.
When I brandish my sword before them,
they shall tremble every moment
for their lives, each one of them,
on the day of your downfall.
11 For thus says the Lord God:
The sword of the king of Babylon shall
come against you.
12 I will cause your hordes to fall
by the swords of mighty ones,
all of them most terrible among the
nations.
They shall bring to ruin the pride of
Egypt,
and all its hordes shall perish.
13 I will destroy all its livestock
from beside abundant waters;
and no human foot shall trouble them any
more,
nor shall the hoofs of cattle trouble
them.
14 Then I will make their waters clear,
and cause their streams to run like oil,
says the Lord God.
15 When I make the land of Egypt desolate
and when the land is stripped of all that
fills it,
when I strike down all who live in it,
then they shall know that I am the
Lord.
16 This is a lamentation; it shall be chanted.
The women of the nations shall chant
it.
Over Egypt and all its hordes they shall
chant it,
says the Lord God.
17 In the twelfth year, in the first month,[c]
on the fifteenth day of the month, the word
of the Lord came to me:
18 Mortal, wail over the hordes of Egypt,
and send them down,
with Egypt[d] and the daughters of majestic
nations,
to the world below,
with those who go down to the Pit.
19 "Whom do you surpass in beauty?
Go down! Be laid to rest with the
uncircumcised!"
20 They shall fall among those who are killed
by the sword. Egypt[e] has been handed over to
the sword; carry away both it and its hordes.
21 The mighty chiefs shall speak of them, with

[a] Symmachus Syr Vg: Heb *your height*
[b] Gk: Heb *bring your destruction*
[c] Gk: Heb lacks *in the first month*
[d] Heb *it*
[e] Heb *It*

plagues against Egypt: blood (Ex 7.17); darkness (Ex 10.21–23 [HS]). **9–10:** The nations' reactions (cf. 26.16; 27.35). **11–15:** The *sword* of God (v. 10; 30.4; Lev 26.25,33 [HS]) is concretely the Babylonians' sword (cf. 30.25). **14:** Reversing v. 2, God restores the Nile's natural state (cf. Lev 26.34–35 [HS]).

32.17–32: Egypt in the underworld. The Septuagint's date (textual note *c*) is April 27, 586 BCE. Like Tyre (28.10), Egypt belongs in the section of the underworld ("the Pit," "Sheol") reserved for the uncircumcised and those who are executed or who die violent or untimely deaths. They do not enjoy the status of the honored war-dead, who were properly buried (v. 27). The Egyptians apparently practiced circumcision, as did the Edomites (v. 29) and the Sidonians (v. 30; cf. 28.10n.). Thus, their fate is to the disgrace of all three peoples.

their helpers, out of the midst of Sheol: "They have come down, they lie still, the uncircumcised, killed by the sword."

22 Assyria is there, and all its company, their graves all around it, all of them killed, fallen by the sword. 23 Their graves are set in the uttermost parts of the Pit. Its company is all around its grave, all of them killed, fallen by the sword, who spread terror in the land of the living.

24 Elam is there, and all its hordes around its grave; all of them killed, fallen by the sword, who went down uncircumcised into the world below, who spread terror in the land of the living. They bear their shame with those who go down to the Pit. 25 They have made Elam[a] a bed among the slain with all its hordes, their graves all around it, all of them uncircumcised, killed by the sword; for terror of them was spread in the land of the living, and they bear their shame with those who go down to the Pit; they are placed among the slain.

26 Meshech and Tubal are there, and all their multitude, their graves all around them, all of them uncircumcised, killed by the sword; for they spread terror in the land of the living. 27 And they do not lie with the fallen warriors of long ago[b] who went down to Sheol with their weapons of war, whose swords were laid under their heads, and whose shields[c] are upon their bones; for the terror of the warriors was in the land of the living. 28 So you shall be broken and lie among the uncircumcised, with those who are killed by the sword.

29 Edom is there, its kings and all its princes, who for all their might are laid with those who are killed by the sword; they lie with the uncircumcised, with those who go down to the Pit.

30 The princes of the north are there, all of them, and all the Sidonians, who have gone down in shame with the slain, for all the terror that they caused by their might; they lie uncircumcised with those who are killed by the sword, and bear their shame with those who go down to the Pit.

31 When Pharaoh sees them, he will be consoled for all his hordes—Pharaoh and all his army, killed by the sword, says the Lord God. 32 For he[d] spread terror in the land of the living; therefore he shall be laid to rest among the uncircumcised, with those who are slain by the sword—Pharaoh and all his multitude, says the Lord God.

33 The word of the Lord came to me: 2 O Mortal, speak to your people and say to them, If I bring the sword upon a land, and the people of the land take one of their number as their sentinel; 3 and if the sentinel sees the sword coming upon the land and blows the trumpet and warns the people; 4 then if any who hear the sound of the trumpet do not take warning, and the sword comes and takes them away, their blood shall be upon their own heads. 5 They heard the sound of the trumpet and did not take warning; their blood shall be upon themselves. But if they had taken warning, they would have saved their lives. 6 But if the sentinel sees the sword coming and does not blow the trumpet, so that the people are not warned, and the sword comes and takes any of them, they are taken away in their iniquity, but their blood I will require at the sentinel's hand.

[a] Heb *it*
[b] Gk Old Latin: Heb *of the uncircumcised*
[c] Cn: Heb *iniquities*
[d] Cn: Heb *I*

22–30: A roster. In its dishonorable demise Egypt will join others who were objects of God's wrath (Isa 14.9–11), such as *Assyria* (31.3–17); *Elam* (defeated by Assyria, its western neighbor); *Meshech* and *Tubal* (see 27.12–25n.); *Edom* (25.12–14); *princes of the north* (unnamed rulers in Phoenicia and Syria); and *Sidon* (28.20–26). **23:** *The uttermost parts of the Pit* constitute, in mythic poetry, a fate opposite to the goal of ascending to heaven (Isa 14.15).

33.1–39.29: Prophecies of Israel's restoration. 33.1–20: Clarification of Ezekiel's role. The social setting is given in v. 10. The exiles are now resigned to their condemnation and to Jerusalem's destruction, but this resignation has led to an unanticipated, paralyzing hopelessness. Ezekiel delivers two responses to their demoralized state: God desires people to live, and sin is forgivable. **1–9:** God reminds Ezekiel of his commission as a *sentinel* (3.16–21). This metaphor had originally assuaged Ezekiel's personal reluctance about his calling. Here the prophet's role as sentinel is stressed again to explain how the intention behind Ezekiel's doom prophecy is not

7 So you, mortal, I have made a sentinel
for the house of Israel; whenever you hear
a word from my mouth, you shall give them
warning from me. 8 If I say to the wicked,
"O wicked ones, you shall surely die," and
you do not speak to warn the wicked to turn
from their ways, the wicked shall die in their
iniquity, but their blood I will require at your
hand. 9 But if you warn the wicked to turn
from their ways, and they do not turn from
their ways, the wicked shall die in their iniq-
uity, but you will have saved your life.

10 Now you, mortal, say to the house of
Israel, Thus you have said: "Our transgres-
sions and our sins weigh upon us, and we
waste away because of them; how then can
we live?" 11 Say to them, As I live, says the
Lord God, I have no pleasure in the death of
the wicked, but that the wicked turn from
their ways and live; turn back, turn back
from your evil ways; for why will you die,
O house of Israel? 12 And you, mortal, say
to your people, The righteousness of the
righteous shall not save them when they
transgress; and as for the wickedness of
the wicked, it shall not make them stum-
ble when they turn from their wickedness;
and the righteous shall not be able to live
by their righteousness[a] when they sin.
13 Though I say to the righteous that they
shall surely live, yet if they trust in their
righteousness and commit iniquity, none
of their righteous deeds shall be remem-
bered; but in the iniquity that they have
committed they shall die. 14 Again, though
I say to the wicked, "You shall surely die,"
yet if they turn from their sin and do what
is lawful and right— 15 if the wicked restore
the pledge, give back what they have taken
by robbery, and walk in the statutes of life,
committing no iniquity—they shall surely
live, they shall not die. 16 None of the sins
that they have committed shall be remem-
bered against them; they have done what is
lawful and right, they shall surely live.

17 Yet your people say, "The way of the Lord
is not just," when it is their own way that
is not just. 18 When the righteous turn from
their righteousness, and commit iniquity,
they shall die for it.[b] 19 And when the wicked
turn from their wickedness, and do what is
lawful and right, they shall live by it.[b] 20 Yet
you say, "The way of the Lord is not just."
O house of Israel, I will judge all of you ac-
cording to your ways!

21 In the twelfth year of our exile, in the
tenth month, on the fifth day of the month,
someone who had escaped from Jerusalem
came to me and said, "The city has fallen."
22 Now the hand of the Lord had been upon
me the evening before the fugitive came; but
he had opened my mouth by the time the
fugitive came to me in the morning; so my
mouth was opened, and I was no longer un-
able to speak.

23 The word of the Lord came to me:
24 Mortal, the inhabitants of these waste
places in the land of Israel keep saying, "Abra-
ham was only one man, yet he got posses-
sion of the land; but we are many; the land is
surely given us to possess." 25 Therefore say to
them, Thus says the Lord God: You eat flesh
with the blood, and lift up your eyes to your
idols, and shed blood; shall you then possess
the land? 26 You depend on your swords,

[a] Heb *by it*
[b] Heb *them*

death but life, to call the people to repentance. **10–20:** Repentance as the way to life. This oracle reemphasizes ch 18 and its stress on the moral autonomy of generations. Earlier this material had aimed to convict the exiles of their personal culpability. Here, Ezekiel's theme of taking responsibility is used to show that one's personal sinfulness is forgivable. **11:** Cf. 18.23n.; 18.31. God's impassioned plea is for all to find life, even the wicked.

33.21–22: Release from speechlessness. *Escaped from Jerusalem,* escaped death by exile to Babylonia. The exiles from Jerusalem arrived in Babylonia on January 19, 585 BCE, about half a year after Jerusalem's fall. (See Ezra 7.9 for a comparable travel time.) Ezekiel's concurrent release from the speechlessness of 3.26–27 was predicted at 24.27. The event is a watershed: the written judgment on Jerusalem of scripture, symbolized by the "written scroll" of 2.9–10, had been fulfilled, and now a new prophetic message of promise was possible.

33.23–33: Resistance in the homeland and in exile. 23–29: Disputation over possession of homeland property. Verse 24 reveals the social setting. The homelanders are repeating their earlier claim to the land (11.15; cf. Isa 51.2). Verses 25–26 indict them in terms echoing 18.1–20; 22.11; Lev 19.16,26 (HS). On the three punishments

you commit abominations, and each of you defiles his neighbor's wife; shall you then possess the land? 27 Say this to them, Thus says the Lord God: As I live, surely those who are in the waste places shall fall by the sword; and those who are in the open field I will give to the wild animals to be devoured; and those who are in strongholds and in caves shall die by pestilence. 28 I will make the land a desolation and a waste, and its proud might shall come to an end; and the mountains of Israel shall be so desolate that no one will pass through. 29 Then they shall know that I am the Lord, when I have made the land a desolation and a waste because of all their abominations that they have committed.

30 As for you, mortal, your people who talk together about you by the walls, and at the doors of the houses, say to one another, each to a neighbor, "Come and hear what the word is that comes from the Lord." 31 They come to you as people come, and they sit before you as my people, and they hear your words, but they will not obey them. For flattery is on their lips, but their heart is set on their gain. 32 To them you are like a singer of love songs,[a] one who has a beautiful voice and plays well on an instrument; they hear what you say, but they will not do it. 33 When this comes—and come it will!—then they shall know that a prophet has been among them.

34 The word of the Lord came to me: 2 Mortal, prophesy against the shepherds of Israel: prophesy, and say to them—to the shepherds: Thus says the Lord God: Ah, you shepherds of Israel who have been feeding yourselves! Should not shepherds feed the sheep? 3 You eat the fat, you clothe yourselves with the wool, you slaughter the fatlings; but you do not feed the sheep. 4 You have not strengthened the weak, you have not healed the sick, you have not bound up the injured, you have not brought back the strayed, you have not sought the lost, but with force and harshness you have ruled them. 5 So they were scattered, because there was no shepherd; and scattered, they became food for all the wild animals. 6 My sheep were scattered, they wandered over all the mountains and on every high hill; my sheep were scattered over all the face of the earth, with no one to search or seek for them.

7 Therefore, you shepherds, hear the word of the Lord: 8 As I live, says the Lord God, because my sheep have become a prey, and my sheep have become food for all the wild animals, since there was no shepherd; and because my shepherds have not searched for my sheep, but the shepherds have fed themselves, and have not fed my sheep; 9 therefore, you shepherds, hear the word of the Lord: 10 Thus says the Lord God, I am against the shepherds; and I will demand my sheep at their hand, and put a stop to their feeding the sheep; no longer shall the shepherds feed themselves. I will rescue my sheep from their mouths, so that they may not be food for them.

11 For thus says the Lord God: I myself will search for my sheep, and will seek them out. 12 As shepherds seek out their flocks when they are among their scattered sheep, so I will seek out my sheep. I will rescue them from all the places to which they have been scattered on a day of clouds and thick darkness. 13 I will bring them out from the peoples and gather them from the countries, and will bring them into their own land; and I will feed them on the mountains of Israel, by the watercourses, and in all the inhabited parts of the land. 14 I

[a] Cn: Heb *like a love song*

in v. 27, cf. 5.17; 14.21. **30–33:** With the fulfillment of his prophecy of Jerusalem's destruction, Ezekiel's popularity grew among the exiles. Unfortunately, the response of many exiles to Ezekiel's words was shallow, lacking in personal commitment. **32:** *Love songs,* the Hebrew indicates that Ezekiel's words were just erotic entertainment to them; the same word is mistranslated "flattery" in v. 31.

34.1–31: The shepherds of Israel. 1–10: Israel's kings are symbolized by sheepherders, contracted by God to care for God's livestock, the people (*my sheep,* v. 6); the same metaphor is widely used in the ancient Near East. But they had abused their people and scattered them. The chapter combines priestly ("Holiness School," see below) and Jeremianic (Jer 10.21; 23.1–4) language. **5:** *Wild animals,* Judah's attackers, especially Babylonia. **7–10:** Punishment of the herders and rescue of the flock. **11–16: God is the good shepherd** (Isa 40.11; Jer 31.10) who will gather the entire dispersed flock. **12:** *Day of clouds and thick darkness,* the Day of the Lord, as in Joel 2.2 and

will feed them with good pasture, and the mountain heights of Israel shall be their pasture; there they shall lie down in good grazing land, and they shall feed on rich pasture on the mountains of Israel. 15 I myself will be the shepherd of my sheep, and I will make them lie down, says the Lord GOD. 16 I will seek the lost, and I will bring back the strayed, and I will bind up the injured, and I will strengthen the weak, but the fat and the strong I will destroy. I will feed them with justice.

17 As for you, my flock, thus says the Lord GOD: I shall judge between sheep and sheep, between rams and goats: 18 Is it not enough for you to feed on the good pasture, but you must tread down with your feet the rest of your pasture? When you drink of clear water, must you foul the rest with your feet? 19 And must my sheep eat what you have trodden with your feet, and drink what you have fouled with your feet?

20 Therefore, thus says the Lord GOD to them: I myself will judge between the fat sheep and the lean sheep. 21 Because you pushed with flank and shoulder, and butted at all the weak animals with your horns until you scattered them far and wide, 22 I will save my flock, and they shall no longer be ravaged; and I will judge between sheep and sheep.

23 I will set up over them one shepherd, my servant David, and he shall feed them: he shall feed them and be their shepherd. 24 And I, the LORD, will be their God, and my servant David shall be prince among them; I, the LORD, have spoken.

25 I will make with them a covenant of peace and banish wild animals from the land, so that they may live in the wild and sleep in the woods securely. 26 I will make them and the region around my hill a blessing; and I will send down the showers in their season; they shall be showers of blessing. 27 The trees of the field shall yield their fruit, and the earth shall yield its increase. They shall be secure on their soil; and they shall know that I am the LORD, when I break the bars of their yoke, and save them from the hands of those who enslaved them. 28 They shall no more be plunder for the nations, nor shall the animals of the land devour them; they shall live in safety, and no one shall make them afraid. 29 I will provide for them a splendid vegetation so that they shall no more be consumed with hunger in the land, and no longer suffer the insults of the nations. 30 They shall know that I, the LORD their God, am with them, and that they, the house of Israel, are my people, says the Lord GOD. 31 You are my sheep, the sheep of my pasture[a] and I am your God, says the Lord GOD.

35 The word of the LORD came to me: 2 Mortal, set your face against Mount Seir, and prophesy against it, 3 and say to it, Thus says the Lord GOD:

I am against you, Mount Seir;
I stretch out my hand against you
to make you a desolation and a waste.
4 I lay your towns in ruins;
you shall become a desolation,
and you shall know that I am the LORD.

5 Because you cherished an ancient enmity, and gave over the people of Israel to the power of the sword at the time of their calamity, at the time of their final punishment;

[a] Gk OL: Heb *pasture, you are people*

Zeph 1.15 (see 30.1–9n.; 32.3–8n.) **16:** The focus shifts to God's care for needy individuals within the flock and to God's judgment of particular sheep (not just their shepherds). **17–31: A new order for Israel. 17–24:** Sheep, good and bad, are found in the flock; the bad must be separated out (20.38). **23–24:** God will install a Davidic ruler over the people (37.22–25; Jer 23.3–6; 30.9; Zech 6.12). *Prince,* see 44:1–3n. **25–31:** An announcement of future blessedness dependent on the Holiness School: God will *banish wild animals* (v. 25; see Lev 26.6 [HS]), bless the people from Mount Zion (*my hill*, v. 26), and break *the bars of their yoke* (v. 27; see Lev 26.13 [HS]). Thus, the people will *live in safety* (v. 28; see Lev 26.5–6 [HS]). **29:** *Insults,* see 36.15.

35.1–36.15: Oracle on behalf of the mountains of Israel. 35.1–15: Oracles against Edom. Edom has already been judged in Ezekiel's middle section (25.12–14). The present description of its grabbing of land belonging to Israel (v. 10; cf. 1 Esd 4.50) has been placed here as a foil for the restoration message of 35.1–36.15. Ezekiel's prophecies of restoration generally have as foils past wrongs, which they aim to reverse. **1–4:** First oracle. **2:** *Mount Seir* is the plateau in which Sela, the Edomite capital, was located. **5–9:** Second oracle. **5:** Cf. 25.12; Ob 10–14; Ps 137.7. *The ancient enmity* refers to the rivalry between Esau, the ancestor of the Edomites, and Jacob,

6 therefore, as I live, says the Lord God, I will
prepare you for blood, and blood shall pursue
you; since you did not hate bloodshed, blood-
shed shall pursue you. 7 I will make Mount
Seir a waste and a desolation; and I will cut
off from it all who come and go. 8 I will fill its
mountains with the slain; on your hills and
in your valleys and in all your watercourses
those killed with the sword shall fall. 9 I will
make you a perpetual desolation, and your
cities shall never be inhabited. Then you shall
know that I am the Lord.

10 Because you said, "These two nations
and these two countries shall be mine, and
we will take possession of them,"—although
the Lord was there— 11 therefore, as I live,
says the Lord God, I will deal with you
according to the anger and envy that you
showed because of your hatred against them;
and I will make myself known among you,[a]
when I judge you. 12 You shall know that I,
the Lord, have heard all the abusive speech
that you uttered against the mountains of
Israel, saying, "They are laid desolate, they
are given us to devour." 13 And you magnified
yourselves against me with your mouth, and
multiplied your words against me; I heard it.
14 Thus says the Lord God: As the whole earth
rejoices, I will make you desolate. 15 As you
rejoiced over the inheritance of the house of
Israel, because it was desolate, so I will deal
with you; you shall be desolate, Mount Seir,
and all Edom, all of it. Then they shall know
that I am the Lord.

36 And you, mortal, prophesy to
the mountains of Israel, and say:
O mountains of Israel, hear the word of the
Lord. 2 Thus says the Lord God: Because
the enemy said of you, "Aha!" and, "The
ancient heights have become our posses-
sion," 3 therefore prophesy, and say: Thus
says the Lord God: Because they made you
desolate indeed, and crushed you from all
sides, so that you became the possession
of the rest of the nations, and you became
an object of gossip and slander among the
people; 4 therefore, O mountains of Israel,
hear the word of the Lord God: Thus says the
Lord God to the mountains and the hills, the
watercourses and the valleys, the desolate
wastes and the deserted towns, which have
become a source of plunder and an object of
derision to the rest of the nations all around;
5 therefore thus says the Lord God: I am
speaking in my hot jealousy against the rest
of the nations, and against all Edom, who,
with wholehearted joy and utter contempt,
took my land as their possession, because of
its pasture, to plunder it. 6 Therefore proph-
esy concerning the land of Israel, and say to
the mountains and hills, to the watercourses
and valleys, Thus says the Lord God: I am
speaking in my jealous wrath, because you
have suffered the insults of the nations;
7 therefore thus says the Lord God: I swear
that the nations that are all around you shall
themselves suffer insults.

8 But you, O mountains of Israel, shall
shoot out your branches, and yield your fruit
to my people Israel; for they shall soon come
home. 9 See now, I am for you; I will turn to
you, and you shall be tilled and sown; 10 and
I will multiply your population, the whole
house of Israel, all of it; the towns shall be

[a] Gk: Heb *them*

the ancestor of the Israelites; see Gen 25.21–34; 27, narratives informed by the history of the two peoples. **10–13:** Third oracle. **10:** *Two nations,* Israel and Judah. The Lord *was there* until the glory left (see 11.22–25n.); however, the glory will return (48.35). **14–15:** Fourth oracle. **15a:** As Edom rejoiced over Judah's fall (Ob 12), so the world will rejoice over Edom's fall. **36:1–12: Deliverance as "punishment."** *Mountains of Israel,* see 6.1–10n. The highlands, representing all Israel, are here promised deliverance and blessing as a sort of pseudo-punishment for being desolated and slandered. Though dispossessed by *Edom* (35.1–15) and surrounding nations (Neh 2.19), Israel will be restored to her heritage. This oracle reverses ch 6 (e.g., contrast v. 10 with 6.4–7). **5:** God's personal identification with the land of Israel is shown by the phrase *my land* (cf. Lev 25.23 [HS]). **8–12:** God's redemption goes beyond the people's repatriation and inner healing to include God's granting them a new fruitfulness within a physically transformed environment. See also vv. 33–38. **9:** Lev 26.9 (HS). **10:** *All of it,* including the northern kingdom (37.21–22). **11:** Lev 26.9 (HS). **12:** An editorial transition to vv. 13–15. **13–15: No more disgrace.** The land had been feared as a devouring land at least since the time that Israel first reconnoitered it (Num 13.32). In Ezekiel's new Exodus and settlement, there will be no place for such defamation.

inhabited and the waste places rebuilt; [11] and I will multiply human beings and animals upon you. They shall increase and be fruitful; and I will cause you to be inhabited as in your former times, and will do more good to you than ever before. Then you shall know that I am the LORD. [12] I will lead people upon you—my people Israel—and they shall possess you, and you shall be their inheritance. No longer shall you bereave them of children.

[13] Thus says the Lord GOD: Because they say to you, "You devour people, and you bereave your nation of children," [14] therefore you shall no longer devour people and no longer bereave your nation of children, says the Lord GOD; [15] and no longer will I let you hear the insults of the nations, no longer shall you bear the disgrace of the peoples; and no longer shall you cause your nation to stumble, says the Lord GOD.

[16] The word of the LORD came to me: [17] Mortal, when the house of Israel lived on their own soil, they defiled it with their ways and their deeds; their conduct in my sight was like the uncleanness of a woman in her menstrual period. [18] So I poured out my wrath upon them for the blood that they had shed upon the land, and for the idols with which they had defiled it. [19] I scattered them among the nations, and they were dispersed through the countries; in accordance with their conduct and their deeds I judged them. [20] But when they came to the nations, wherever they came, they profaned my holy name, in that it was said of them, "These are the people of the LORD, and yet they had to go out of his land." [21] But I had concern for my holy name, which the house of Israel had profaned among the nations to which they came.

[22] Therefore say to the house of Israel, Thus says the Lord GOD: It is not for your sake, O house of Israel, that I am about to act, but for the sake of my holy name, which you have profaned among the nations to which you came. [23] I will sanctify my great name, which has been profaned among the nations, and which you have profaned among them; and the nations shall know that I am the LORD, says the Lord GOD, when through you I display my holiness before their eyes. [24] I will take you from the nations, and gather you from all the countries, and bring you into your own land. [25] I will sprinkle clean water upon you, and you shall be clean from all your uncleannesses, and from all your idols I will cleanse you. [26] A new heart I will give you, and a new spirit I will put within you; and I will remove from your body the heart of stone and give you a heart of flesh. [27] I will put my spirit within you, and make you follow my statutes and be careful to observe my ordinances. [28] Then you shall live in the land that I gave to your ancestors; and you shall be my people, and I will be your God. [29] I will save you from all your unclean-

36.16–38: God's honor as the cause of the restoration. 16–21: Historical prologue. According to the Holiness School, when the homeland becomes defiled, it vomits out its inhabitants (Lev 18.25,28). This is what has happened to the exiled Israelites. **17:** *Uncleanness,* see Lev 15.19–30 (Priestly tradition); 18.19 (HS). **20:** *My holy name,* 20.9n. God's name was desecrated (cf. Lev 20.3; 22.2,32 [HS]) either because the exile made God look powerless to protect the Israelites (NRSV's interpretation; cf. Num 14.16) or because God's people from God's own land prove to be depraved (alternate sense of the Hebrew). **22–32:** Verses 22 and 32 form an envelope around this section by their parallel assertions that the restoration is not something deserved. God's mercy is unmerited by the people and even precedes their repentance (see 20.9n). According to v. 31, the people show remorse only after their restoration to the land. This chapter thus moves beyond texts such as Lev 26.40–42; Jer 31.18–20, where repentance is the driving motivation behind restoration. **24:** A reversal of v. 19. **25:** God will *sprinkle* them (cf. Num 19.20 [HS]; Ps 51.7) with water, purifying them, inasmuch as human beings cannot make themselves clean. **26:** Ezekiel's calls to repentance have failed (see 18.31n.). A radical, new creation (cf. 11.19; Ps 51.10) will be needed to break the people's bondage to the cycles of sin and retribution of Israel's past (ch 20). The concept of excising the people's old incorrigible *heart of stone* (cf. 2.4; 3.7–9; Zech 7.12) and engrafting a completely *new heart* goes beyond Jer 31.33 and Deut 30.1–6, and is in keeping with Ezekiel's focus on God's sovereignty in effecting salvation (20.33–34). **27:** The infusion of God's spirit (cf. 37.14; 39.29; Ps 51.10–11; Joel 2.29; Zech 12.10) effects a fundamental regeneration of the people, so that obedience to the covenant (Lev 26.3

nesses, and I will summon the grain and make it abundant and lay no famine upon you. 30 I will make the fruit of the tree and the produce of the field abundant, so that you may never again suffer the disgrace of famine among the nations. 31 Then you shall remember your evil ways, and your dealings that were not good; and you shall loathe yourselves for your iniquities and your abominable deeds. 32 It is not for your sake that I will act, says the Lord God; let that be known to you. Be ashamed and dismayed for your ways, O house of Israel.

33 Thus says the Lord God: On the day that I cleanse you from all your iniquities, I will cause the towns to be inhabited, and the waste places shall be rebuilt. 34 The land that was desolate shall be tilled, instead of being the desolation that it was in the sight of all who passed by. 35 And they will say, "This land that was desolate has become like the garden of Eden; and the waste and desolate and ruined towns are now inhabited and fortified." 36 Then the nations that are left all around you shall know that I, the Lord, have rebuilt the ruined places, and replanted that which was desolate; I, the Lord, have spoken, and I will do it.

37 Thus says the Lord God: I will also let the house of Israel ask me to do this for them: to increase their population like a flock. 38 Like the flock for sacrifices,[a] like the flock at Jerusalem during her appointed festivals, so shall the ruined towns be filled with flocks of people. Then they shall know that I am the Lord.

37 The hand of the Lord came upon me, and he brought me out by the spirit of the Lord and set me down in the middle of a valley; it was full of bones. 2 He led me all around them; there were very many lying in the valley, and they were very dry. 3 He said to me, "Mortal, can these bones live?" I answered, "O Lord God, you know." 4 Then he said to me, "Prophesy to these bones, and say to them: O dry bones, hear the word of the Lord. 5 Thus says the Lord God to these bones: I will cause breath[b] to enter you, and you shall live. 6 I will lay sinews on you, and will cause flesh to come upon you, and cover you with skin, and put breath[b] in you, and you shall live; and you shall know that I am the Lord."

7 So I prophesied as I had been commanded; and as I prophesied, suddenly there was a noise, a rattling, and the bones came together, bone to its bone. 8 I looked, and there were sinews on them, and flesh had come upon them, and skin had covered them; but there was no breath in them. 9 Then he said to me, "Prophesy to the breath, prophesy, mortal, and say to the breath:[c] Thus says the Lord God: Come from the four winds, O breath,[c] and breathe upon these slain, that they may live." 10 I prophesied as he commanded me, and the breath came into them, and they lived, and stood on their feet, a vast multitude.

11 Then he said to me, "Mortal, these bones are the whole house of Israel. They say, 'Our

[a] Heb *flock of holy things*
[b] Or *spirit*
[c] Or *wind* or *spirit*

[HS]) will come naturally from now on and the restoration will be permanent. **29–30:** Lev 26.4 (HS). **33–36:** The skeptical nations (v. 20) will recognize Israel's transformation to a paradise as God's act. **35:** *Garden of Eden,* Gen 2.4–14; cf. Ezek 47.1–12n.; Isa 51.3. God will now be at home in Israel just as in God's garden, Eden. **37–38:** Note the reversal of 14.3; 20.3,31. As Jerusalem always bustled with flocks at pilgrimage times, Israel will now teem with human interaction, mutuality, and spiritual energy (a blessing of the Holiness School covenant; Lev 26.9). Thus, the proliferation of the flock will signal its consecration (see textual note *a*).

37.1–14: Vision of the valley of dry bones. 1: *A valley,* in Heb, "the valley," suggesting that this is the same locale as in 3.22; 8.4. **3:** Ezekiel does not yet realize that this vision refers to the reestablishment of the exiles back in their homeland. Thus bodily resurrection was at least a theoretical possibility for Ezekiel (cf. 1 Kings 17.22; 2 Kings 4.35; 13.21). **4–8:** The first of two prophecies that are enfolded within the vision. As in Gen 2.7, life is generated here in two stages. **9–10:** Suspense builds, as a second prophesying is required in order to animate the bones. Hebrew "ruaḥ" can mean "spirit," "breath," or "wind"; thus there is a constant wordplay here. *Four winds* may refer to God's cosmic reach (1.17; Zech 6.5). *These slain,* the bones' identity is still unclear at this point, the assumption now being that Ezekiel is surveying an old battlefield. (The Hebrew word *multitude* in v. 10 com-

bones are dried up, and our hope is lost; we are cut off completely.' 12 Therefore prophesy, and say to them, Thus says the Lord GOD: I am going to open your graves, and bring you up from your graves, O my people; and I will bring you back to the land of Israel. 13 And you shall know that I am the LORD, when I open your graves, and bring you up from your graves, O my people. 14 I will put my spirit within you, and you shall live, and I will place you on your own soil; then you shall know that I, the LORD, have spoken and will act, says the LORD."

15 The word of the LORD came to me: 16 Mortal, take a stick and write on it, "For Judah, and the Israelites associated with it"; then take another stick and write on it, "For Joseph (the stick of Ephraim) and all the house of Israel associated with it"; 17 and join them together into one stick, so that they may become one in your hand. 18 And when your people say to you, "Will you not show us what you mean by these?" 19 say to them, Thus says the Lord GOD: I am about to take the stick of Joseph (which is in the hand of Ephraim) and the tribes of Israel associated with it; and I will put the stick of Judah upon it,[a] and make them one stick, in order that they may be one in my hand. 20 When the sticks on which you write are in your hand before their eyes, 21 then say to them, Thus says the Lord GOD: I will take the people of Israel from the nations among which they have gone, and will gather them from every quarter, and bring them to their own land. 22 I will make them one nation in the land, on the mountains of Israel; and one king shall be king over them all. Never again shall they be two nations, and never again shall they be divided into two kingdoms. 23 They shall never again defile themselves with their idols and their detestable things, or with any of their transgressions. I will save them from all the apostasies into which they have fallen,[b] and will cleanse them. Then they shall be my people, and I will be their God.

24 My servant David shall be king over them; and they shall all have one shepherd. They shall follow my ordinances and be careful to observe my statutes. 25 They shall live in the land that I gave to my servant Jacob, in which your ancestors lived; they and their children and their children's children shall live there forever; and my servant David shall be their prince forever. 26 I will make a covenant of peace with them; it shall be an everlasting covenant with them; and I will bless[c] them and multiply them, and will set my sanctuary among them forevermore. 27 My dwelling place shall be with them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people. 28 Then the nations shall know that I the LORD sanctify Israel, when my sanctuary is among them forevermore.

38 The word of the LORD came to me: 2 Mortal, set your face toward Gog, of the land of Magog, the chief prince of

[a] Heb *I will put them upon it*
[b] Another reading is *from all the settlements in which they have sinned*
[c] Tg: Heb *give*

monly means "army.") **11–14:** The interpretation. Verse 11 finally reveals the actual life setting of the prophecy by citing words from a lament: The exiles' *bones are dried,* a metaphor for a downcast spirit (Prov 17.22; 15.30). The metaphor of resurrection is the antidote to such despair. *Cut off,* a metaphor for being within the power of death (Ps 88.5; Lam 3.54). In vv. 12–14, the passage shifts to a metaphor of disinterment as an antidote to this complaint.

37.15–28: The symbolic action of the two sticks (cf. Zech 11.7–14) envisions the reunification of the Southern ("Judah") and Northern ("Joseph/Ephraim/Israel") Kingdoms. Full restoration will then be realized (34.28; 36.10): law-abiding living (11.20) in the promised land (28.25) under the Davidic ruler (34.23–24) in a covenant of peace (34.25). At that time, God will permanently return to the central *sanctuary* (43.9). **22:** *Mountains of Israel,* 6.1–10n. **25:** *Prince,* monarchic ruler (cf. 12.10; 19.1; 34.24; 44.1–3n.). **27:** *Dwelling place,* in the theology of the Holiness School, God's glory properly dwells among God's people (cf. Ex 25.8; 29.45–46; 40.34; Lev 26.11; Num 5.3; 35.34 [HS]). **28:** As in the ideal of the Holiness School, God sanctifies Israel by radiating the divine holiness out to the entire land (cf. Ex 31.13; Lev 19.2; 21.15; 22.32[HS]).

38.1–39.29: The Gog of Magog oracles are early apocalyptic literature, describing the imminent attack on the promised land by an embodiment of evil from the north. After a cataclysmic, doomsday battle, God will

Meshech and Tubal. Prophesy against him
3 and say: Thus says the Lord God: I am
against you, O Gog, chief prince of Meshech
and Tubal; 4 I will turn you around and put
hooks into your jaws, and I will lead you out
with all your army, horses and horsemen,
all of them clothed in full armor, a great
company, all of them with shield and buckler,
wielding swords. 5 Persia, Ethiopia,[a] and Put
are with them, all of them with buckler and
helmet; 6 Gomer and all its troops; Beth-
togarmah from the remotest parts of the
north with all its troops—many peoples are
with you.

7 Be ready and keep ready, you and all the
companies that are assembled around you,
and hold yourselves in reserve for them.
8 After many days you shall be mustered; in
the latter years you shall go against a land
restored from war, a land where people were
gathered from many nations on the moun-
tains of Israel, which had long lain waste; its
people were brought out from the nations
and now are living in safety, all of them. 9 You
shall advance, coming on like a storm; you
shall be like a cloud covering the land, you
and all your troops, and many peoples with
you.

10 Thus says the Lord God: On that day
thoughts will come into your mind, and you
will devise an evil scheme. 11 You will say, "I
will go up against the land of unwalled vil-
lages; I will fall upon the quiet people who
live in safety, all of them living without walls,
and having no bars or gates"; 12 to seize spoil
and carry off plunder; to assail the waste
places that are now inhabited, and the people
who were gathered from the nations, who are
acquiring cattle and goods, who live at the
center[b] of the earth. 13 Sheba and Dedan and
the merchants of Tarshish and all its young
warriors[c] will say to you, "Have you come to
seize spoil? Have you assembled your horde
to carry off plunder, to carry away silver and
gold, to take away cattle and goods, to seize a
great amount of booty?"

14 Therefore, mortal, prophesy, and say to
Gog: Thus says the Lord God: On that day
when my people Israel are living securely, you
will rouse yourself[d] 15 and come from your
place out of the remotest parts of the north,
you and many peoples with you, all of them
riding on horses, a great horde, a mighty
army; 16 you will come up against my people
Israel, like a cloud covering the earth. In the
latter days I will bring you against my land, so
that the nations may know me, when through
you, O Gog, I display my holiness before their
eyes.

17 Thus says the Lord God: Are you he of
whom I spoke in former days by my ser-

[a] Or *Nubia*; Heb *Cush*
[b] Heb *navel*
[c] Heb *young lions*
[d] Gk: Heb *will you not know?*

be acknowledged by all nations as the undisputed victor (38.23; 39.21–29). At this point in the book, Ezekiel's prophecies of restoration, which aim to reverse preceding tragedies, have not yet reversed Israel's Babylonian destruction. The northern foe here is thus probably an end-time surrogate for Babylon, and for any superpower that has challenged the sovereignty of God. The followers of Ezekiel who recorded these apocalyptic oracles were central priests of their society, despite the claims of some scholars that all apocalyptic texts derive from peripheral groups. **38.1–9: Prophecy against Gog. 2:** *Gog*, a name perhaps derived from Gyges, a seventh-century BCE ruler of Lydia in Asia Minor. For Ezekiel's audience, the name would have conjured thoughts of mysterious and barbaric happenings in the far north. Gog is no symbol in this text but a mythic-realistic entity: tangibly real, but of mythological proportions. He is God's archetypal enemy, arising against God's people on doomsday. *Magog,* Gen 10.2. **3:** *Meshech and Tubal,* see 27.12–25n.; Gen 10.2. **5:** *Put,* Libya; Gen 10.5. **6:** *Gomer,* the Cimmerians in Asia Minor (Gen 10.2–3), far north of Israel. *Beth-togarmah,* see 27.12–25n. **10–13:** The perspective shifts from God's external control (vv. 3–9) to Gog's interior motives. **12:** *Center,* see 5.5n. Ezekiel is affirming and re-envisioning Zion theology here. **13:** *Sheba, Dedan,* and *Tarshish* were all engaged in trade; see 27.12–25n. **14–16:** God's motive is God's glory. **17:** Transition. **18–23 (and 39.11–16): Expansion of the Gog oracles, radicalizing their apocalyptic and priestly fervor.** The radical magnitude of the apocalyptic threat is clear from the cosmic collapse (cf. Joel 2.10,30; Zech 14.4–5) and from the *seven months* (39.12) required to bury the enemy dead in the region east of the Dead Sea. In keeping with the Ezekiel group's status as priests, increasing priestly concern accompanies the increased apocalyptic feeling: This section draws heavily on Holiness School

vants the prophets of Israel, who in those days prophesied for years that I would bring you against them? 18 On that day, when Gog comes against the land of Israel, says the Lord God, my wrath shall be aroused. 19 For in my jealousy and in my blazing wrath I declare: On that day there shall be a great shaking in the land of Israel; 20 the fish of the sea, and the birds of the air, and the animals of the field, and all creeping things that creep on the ground, and all human beings that are on the face of the earth, shall quake at my presence, and the mountains shall be thrown down, and the cliffs shall fall, and every wall shall tumble to the ground. 21 I will summon the sword against Gog[a] in[b] all my mountains, says the Lord God; the swords of all will be against their comrades. 22 With pestilence and bloodshed I will enter into judgment with him; and I will pour down torrential rains and hailstones, fire and sulfur, upon him and his troops and the many peoples that are with him. 23 So I will display my greatness and my holiness and make myself known in the eyes of many nations. Then they shall know that I am the Lord.

39 And you, mortal, prophesy against Gog, and say: Thus says the Lord God: I am against you, O Gog, chief prince of Meshech and Tubal! 2 I will turn you around and drive you forward, and bring you up from the remotest parts of the north, and lead you against the mountains of Israel. 3 I will strike your bow from your left hand, and will make your arrows drop out of your right hand. 4 You shall fall on the mountains of Israel, you and all your troops and the peoples that are with you; I will give you to birds of prey of every kind and to the wild animals to be devoured. 5 You shall fall in the open field; for I have spoken, says the Lord God. 6 I will send fire on Magog and on those who live securely in the coastlands; and they shall know that I am the Lord.

7 My holy name I will make known among my people Israel; and I will not let my holy name be profaned any more; and the nations shall know that I am the Lord, the Holy One in Israel. 8 It has come! It has happened, says the Lord God. This is the day of which I have spoken.

9 Then those who live in the towns of Israel will go out and make fires of the weapons and burn them—bucklers and shields, bows and arrows, handpikes and spears—and they will make fires of them for seven years. 10 They will not need to take wood out of the field or cut down any trees in the forests, for they will make their fires of the weapons; they will despoil those who despoiled them, and plunder those who plundered them, says the Lord God.

11 On that day I will give to Gog a place for burial in Israel, the Valley of the Travelers[c] east of the sea; it shall block the path of the travelers, for there Gog and all his horde will be buried; it shall be called the Valley of Hamon-gog.[d] 12 Seven months the house of Israel shall spend burying them, in order to cleanse the land. 13 All the people of the land shall bury them; and it will bring them honor on the day that I show my glory, says the Lord God. 14 They will set apart men to pass through the land regularly and bury any invaders[e] who remain on the face of the land, so as to cleanse it; for seven months they shall make their search. 15 As the searchers[e] pass through the land, anyone who sees a human bone shall set up a sign by it, until the buriers have buried it in the Valley of Hamon-gog.[d] 16 (A city Hamonah[f] is there also.) Thus they shall cleanse the land.

[a] Heb *him*
[b] Heb *to* or *for*
[c] Or *of the Abarim*
[d] That is, *the Horde of Gog*
[e] Heb *travelers*
[f] That is *The Horde*

traditions about the defiling effect of corpses (Lev 21.1; Num 5.2–3; 9.6; 19.11,13 [HS]). **18:** *That day,* i.e., the "day of the Lord"; see 30.1–9n.; 39.8. **39.1–10: The fall of Gog.** Gog will be defeated both in the field (vv. 1–5) and back at home (v. 6). God's holy name will then be established (vv. 7–8; cf. 20.9n.; 36.22). **9–10:** As in the biblical conquest narrative (Deut 7.2; 20.16–18; Josh 6.24), everything of the enemy's is burned as material devoted to the Lord alone. The huge quantities of war material (enough *wood* for fuel for *seven years*) identify this as an apocalyptic rather than a historical victory. **11–16:** See 38.18–23n. **11:** *Valley of the Travelers,* possibly in the Abarim range (Num 27.12; see textual note *c*) east of the Dead Sea. Alternatively, the *travelers* may be the departed,

17 As for you, mortal, thus says the Lord
God: Speak to the birds of every kind and
to all the wild animals: Assemble and come,
gather from all around to the sacrificial feast
that I am preparing for you, a great sacrificial
feast on the mountains of Israel, and you
shall eat flesh and drink blood. 18 You shall
eat the flesh of the mighty, and drink the
blood of the princes of the earth—of rams,
of lambs, and of goats, of bulls, all of them
fatlings of Bashan. 19 You shall eat fat until
you are filled, and drink blood until you
are drunk, at the sacrificial feast that I am
preparing for you. 20 And you shall be filled at
my table with horses and charioteers,[a] with
warriors and all kinds of soldiers, says the
Lord God.

21 I will display my glory among the na-
tions; and all the nations shall see my judg-
ment that I have executed, and my hand that
I have laid on them. 22 The house of Israel
shall know that I am the Lord their God,
from that day forward. 23 And the nations
shall know that the house of Israel went into
captivity for their iniquity, because they dealt
treacherously with me. So I hid my face from
them and gave them into the hand of their
adversaries, and they all fell by the sword. 24 I
dealt with them according to their uncleanness and their transgressions, and hid my
face from them.

25 Therefore thus says the Lord God: Now
I will restore the fortunes of Jacob, and
have mercy on the whole house of Israel;
and I will be jealous for my holy name.
26 They shall forget[b] their shame, and all
the treachery they have practiced against
me, when they live securely in their land
with no one to make them afraid, 27 when I
have brought them back from the peoples
and gathered them from their enemies'
lands, and through them have displayed
my holiness in the sight of many nations.
28 Then they shall know that I am the Lord
their God because I sent them into exile
among the nations, and then gathered
them into their own land. I will leave none
of them behind; 29 and I will never again
hide my face from them, when I pour out
my spirit upon the house of Israel, says the
Lord God.

40 In the twenty-fifth year of our exile,
at the beginning of the year, on the
tenth day of the month, in the fourteenth
year after the city was struck down, on that
very day, the hand of the Lord was upon me,
and he brought me there. 2 He brought me,
in visions of God, to the land of Israel, and
set me down upon a very high mountain, on
which was a structure like a city to the south.
3 When he brought me there, a man was
there, whose appearance shone like bronze,

[a] Heb *chariots*
[b] Another reading is *They shall bear*

whose great numbers stop up passage to the underworld. **17–20:** Cf. 39.4b. An invitation to the animal world to attend an apocalyptic, sacrificial feast (cf. Isa 34.5–7; Zeph 1.7), perhaps a sacred, funerary banquet. **18:** Animal names were frequently used as titles of nobles. *Bashan,* in northern Transjordan, was noted for its cattle. **21–29: Secondary summary and concluding oracles. 25:** *Now I will restore,* a shift in focus to a stage before the end-times. The victory and restoration are linked here with the familiar language and narrative line of Ezekiel (5.8 [reversed]; 28.26; 34.28–30). *My holy name,* 20.9n. **29:** Cf. 36.27n.; 37.9,14; Ps 51.10–11; Zech 12.10; Joel 2.28–29.

40.1–48.35: Blueprint for the restored Temple and land. The blueprint that Ezekiel details here includes new ideal features that aim to prevent the wrongs of the past—those that led to the destruction of Solomon's Temple in 586 BCE—from ever happening again. New Temple fortifications and new land boundaries will demarcate the holiness of the land and people (e.g., 42.20n.) with the Temple functioning as an organizing center of this holiness (43.12). In accordance with the Holiness School, the plan provides for the settlements and entire people of Israel to be encompassed by the holiness of God, whose dwelling in their midst is now to be permanently safeguarded (43.7; 44.1–3; 48.35). This section of Ezekiel does not prophesy a literal future for the Temple; rather, it offers a Temple plan as an embodiment of the values of Ezekiel and his followers.

40.1–42.20: The new Temple. Ezekiel's Temple complex is modeled on that of Solomon (see 1 Kings 6 and 2 Chr 3), but with key modifications, such as immense gate-towers and graded zones of holiness, meant to secure the hierarchical world of the Holiness School. **40.1–27: The Temple area and gates: 1–5:** April 28, 573 BCE. On the twenty-fifth anniversary of his exile, Ezekiel is transported in a vision (cf. 8.2–3) to the Temple mountain

with a linen cord and a measuring reed in his hand; and he was standing in the gateway. [4] The man said to me, "Mortal, look closely and listen attentively, and set your mind upon all that I shall show you, for you were brought here in order that I might show it to you; declare all that you see to the house of Israel."

[5] Now there was a wall all around the outside of the temple area. The length of the measuring reed in the man's hand was six long cubits, each being a cubit and a handbreadth in length; so he measured the thickness of the wall, one reed; and the height, one reed. [6] Then he went into the gateway facing east, going up its steps, and measured the threshold of the gate, one reed deep.[a] There were [7] recesses, and each recess was one reed wide and one reed deep; and the space between the recesses, five cubits; and the threshold of the gate by the vestibule of the gate at the inner end was one reed deep. [8] Then he measured the inner vestibule of the gateway, one cubit. [9] Then he measured the vestibule of the gateway, eight cubits; and its pilasters, two cubits; and the vestibule of the gate was at the inner end. [10] There were three recesses on either side of the east gate; the three were of the same size; and the pilasters on either side were of the same size. [11] Then he measured the width of the opening of the gateway, ten cubits; and the width of the gateway, thirteen cubits. [12] There was a barrier before the recesses, one cubit on either side; and the recesses were six cubits on either side. [13] Then he measured the gate from the back[b] of the one recess to the back[b] of the other, a width of twenty-five cubits, from wall to wall.[c] [14] He measured[d] also the vestibule, twenty cubits; and the gate next to the pilaster on every side of the court.[e] [15] From the front of the gate at the entrance to the end of the inner vestibule of the gate was fifty cubits. [16] The recesses and their pilasters had windows, with shutters[e] on the inside of the gateway all around, and the vestibules also had windows on the inside all around; and on the pilasters were palm trees.

[17] Then he brought me into the outer court; there were chambers there, and a pavement, all around the court; thirty chambers fronted on the pavement. [18] The pavement ran along the side of the gates, corresponding to the length of the gates; this was the lower pavement. [19] Then he measured the distance from the inner front of[f] the lower gate to the outer front of the inner court, one hundred cubits.[g]

[20] Then he measured the gate of the outer court that faced north—its depth and width. [21] Its recesses, three on either side, and its pilasters and its vestibule were of the same size as those of the first gate; its depth was fifty cubits, and its width twenty-five cubits. [22] Its windows, its vestibule, and its palm trees were of the same size as those of the gate that faced toward the east. Seven steps led up to it; and its vestibule was on the inside.[h] [23] Opposite the gate on the north, as on the east, was a gate to the inner court; he measured from gate to gate, one hundred cubits.

[a] Heb *deep, and one threshold, one reed deep*
[b] Gk: Heb *roof*
[c] Heb *opening facing opening*
[d] Heb *made*
[e] Meaning of Heb uncertain
[f] Compare Gk: Heb *from before*
[g] Heb adds *the east and the north*
[h] Gk: Heb *before them*

(*very high mountain,* 17.22; Isa 2.2). **3:** *Shone like bronze,* a radiant, supernatural figure (cf. 1.7). **5:** An outer wall surrounded the entire Temple area. The *long cubit* was 20.7 in (52.5 cm); the ordinary cubit was 17.5 in (44 cm). The *reed* was 10.3 ft (3.1 m) long. **6–16:** The outer court's east gate-tower was a massive, fortified complex consisting of a *threshold,* a long hallway with *recesses* (side rooms), a second threshold, and an *inner vestibule* room. Heavy *pilasters* (piers) with windows separated the recessed chambers, or guardrooms, inside the gate-tower (three on each side). This gate is treated further in 43.1–5; 44.1–3. The plan of the gate is similar to several excavated gateways, such as those at Megiddo, Hazor, and Gezer. **8:** *One cubit,* the Hebrew text is problematic here. **16:** *Palm trees,* see 28.13n.; cf. 1 Kings 6.29,35. **17–19:** The Temple area's outer courtyard. The thirty chambers around the court's periphery were probably for the use of the Levites and for people to meet and eat together (Jer 35.2; Neh 13.4–12). See also 46.21–24. **20–27:** The other two (northern and southern) gates of the outer courtyard were identical to the east gate-tower. That there were steps up to the gates (vv. 22,26) shows that the whole

24 Then he led me toward the south,
and there was a gate on the south; and he
measured its pilasters and its vestibule;
they had the same dimensions as the oth-
ers. 25 There were windows all around in
it and in its vestibule, like the windows of
the others; its depth was fifty cubits, and
its width twenty-five cubits. 26 There were
seven steps leading up to it; its vestibule
was on the inside.[a] It had palm trees on its
pilasters, one on either side. 27 There was
a gate on the south of the inner court; and
he measured from gate to gate toward the
south, one hundred cubits.

28 Then he brought me to the inner court
by the south gate, and he measured the
south gate; it was of the same dimensions as
the others. 29 Its recesses, its pilasters, and
its vestibule were of the same size as the
others; and there were windows all around
in it and in its vestibule; its depth was fifty
cubits, and its width twenty-five cubits.
30 There were vestibules all around, twenty-
five cubits deep and five cubits wide. 31 Its
vestibule faced the outer court, and palm
trees were on its pilasters, and its stairway
had eight steps.

32 Then he brought me to the inner court
on the east side, and he measured the gate;
it was of the same size as the others. 33 Its
recesses, its pilasters, and its vestibule were
of the same dimensions as the others; and
there were windows all around in it and in its
vestibule; its depth was fifty cubits, and its
width twenty-five cubits. 34 Its vestibule faced
the outer court, and it had palm trees on its
pilasters, on either side; and its stairway had
eight steps.

35 Then he brought me to the north gate,
and he measured it; it had the same dimen-
sions as the others. 36 Its recesses, its pilas-
ters, and its vestibule were of the same size as
the others;[b] and it had windows all around.
Its depth was fifty cubits, and its width
twenty-five cubits. 37 Its vestibule[c] faced
the outer court, and it had palm trees on its
pilasters, on either side; and its stairway had
eight steps.

38 There was a chamber with its door in
the vestibule of the gate,[d] where the burnt
offering was to be washed. 39 And in the
vestibule of the gate were two tables on
either side, on which the burnt offering and
the sin offering and the guilt offering were
to be slaughtered. 40 On the outside of the
vestibule[e] at the entrance of the north gate
were two tables; and on the other side of
the vestibule of the gate were two tables.
41 Four tables were on the inside, and four
tables on the outside of the side of the gate,
eight tables, on which the sacrifices were
to be slaughtered. 42 There were also four
tables of hewn stone for the burnt offering,
a cubit and a half long, and one cubit and
a half wide, and one cubit high, on which
the instruments were to be laid with which
the burnt offerings and the sacrifices were
slaughtered. 43 There were pegs, one hand-
breadth long, fastened all around the inside.
And on the tables the flesh of the offering
was to be laid.

44 On the outside of the inner gateway there
were chambers for the singers in the inner
court, one[f] at the side of the north gate facing

[a] Gk: Heb *before them*
[b] One Ms: Compare verses 29 and 33: MT lacks *were of the same size as the others*
[c] Gk Vg Compare verses 26, 31, 34: Heb *pilasters*
[d] Cn: Heb *at the pilasters of the gates*
[e] Cn: Heb *to him who goes up*
[f] Heb lacks *one*

Temple platform was an elevated area. **28–46: The inner gate-towers.** Ezekiel is shown three gates (south, east, north) leading to the inner court corresponding to those leading to the outer court. Only priests could pass through these inner gates (42.14; 44.19; 46.3). **31:** *Eight steps,* the Temple was built on a succession of terraces, so that height demarcated gradations of holiness, just as did walled perimeters and gates (vv. 34,37). Holiness increased as one proceeded farther up and into the Temple. **38–43:** The vestibules of the inner gates contained facilities for the preparation of sacrifices. *Burnt, sin,* and *guilt* offerings, see Lev 1.1–7.38. **44–46:** Priests' chambers. On the north and south sides of the inner court were buildings for the use of the priests. These may be small cells (for priests on guard duty?), different from the chambers in 42.1–14. **44:** *The singers,* Levitical priests (cf. 1 Chr 9.33). *East gate,* read "south gate" with the Septuagint. **46b:** An editorial clarification that only Zadokite priests, such as Ezekiel and his group, may sacrifice at the altar (43.19; 44.15–31n.). **40.47–41.4: The Temple**

south, the other at the side of the east gate facing north. 45 He said to me, "This chamber that faces south is for the priests who have charge of the temple, 46 and the chamber that faces north is for the priests who have charge of the altar; these are the descendants of Zadok, who alone among the descendants of Levi may come near to the LORD to minister to him." 47 He measured the court, one hundred cubits deep, and one hundred cubits wide, a square; and the altar was in front of the temple.

48 Then he brought me to the vestibule of the temple and measured the pilasters of the vestibule, five cubits on either side; and the width of the gate was fourteen cubits; and the sidewalls of the gate were three cubits[a] on either side. 49 The depth of the vestibule was twenty cubits, and the width twelve[b] cubits; ten steps led up[c] to it; and there were pillars beside the pilasters on either side.

41 Then he brought me to the nave, and measured the pilasters; on each side six cubits was the width of the pilasters.[d] 2 The width of the entrance was ten cubits; and the sidewalls of the entrance were five cubits on either side. He measured the length of the nave, forty cubits, and its width, twenty cubits. 3 Then he went into the inner room and measured the pilasters of the entrance, two cubits; and the width of the entrance, six cubits; and the sidewalls[e] of the entrance, seven cubits. 4 He measured the depth of the room, twenty cubits, and its width, twenty cubits, beyond the nave. And he said to me, This is the most holy place.

5 Then he measured the wall of the temple, six cubits thick; and the width of the side chambers, four cubits, all around the temple. 6 The side chambers were in three stories, one over another, thirty in each story. There were offsets[f] all around the wall of the temple to serve as supports for the side chambers, so that they should not be supported by the wall of the temple. 7 The passageway[g] of the side chambers widened from story to story; for the structure was supplied with a stairway all around the temple. For this reason the structure became wider from story to story. One ascended from the bottom story to the uppermost story by way of the middle one. 8 I saw also that the temple had a raised platform all around; the foundations of the side chambers measured a full reed of six long cubits. 9 The thickness of the outer wall of the side chambers was five cubits; and the free space between the side chambers of the temple 10 and the chambers of the court was a width of twenty cubits all around the temple on every side. 11 The side chambers opened onto the area left free, one door toward the north, and another door toward the south; and the width of the part that was left free was five cubits all around.

12 The building that was facing the temple yard on the west side was seventy cubits wide; and the wall of the building was five cubits thick all around, and its depth ninety cubits.

13 Then he measured the temple, one hundred cubits deep; and the yard and the building with its walls, one hundred cubits deep; 14 also the width of the east front of the temple and the yard, one hundred cubits.

15 Then he measured the depth of the building facing the yard at the west, together

[a] Gk: Heb *and the width of the gate was three cubits*
[b] Gk: Heb *eleven*
[c] Gk: Heb *and by steps that went up*
[d] Compare Gk: Heb *tent*
[e] Gk: Heb *width*
[f] Gk Compare 1 Kings 6.6: Heb *they entered*
[g] Cn: Heb *it was surrounded*

proper. The successive entrances to the Temple's three rooms become more narrow, symbolizing increasing holiness (40.48; 41.2; 41.3). **40.49:** According to the Septuagint (textual note *c*), the Temple was *ten steps* (10 ft [3 m]; see 41.8) above the level of the inner court. (Again, steps indicate increasing holiness; cf. vv. 22,31.) In front of the vestibule were freestanding *pillars* (1 Kings 7.15–22). *The vestibule* (40.48–49) was 34 ft (10.5 m) x 20.5 ft (6.3 m). *The nave* (41.1–2), which Ezekiel could enter as a Zadokite priest, was 69 ft (21 m) x 34 ft (10.5 m). The adytum (*inner room* or *most holy place,* 41.3–4), which Ezekiel did not enter (Lev 16), was a square of 34 ft (10.5 m) per side (1 Kings 6.16; 7.50; 8.6; Ex 26.33–34). **41.5–15a: Annexes and surroundings.** The three tiers of thirty chambers per tier on the sides of the Temple (1 Kings 6.5–10) probably stored Temple treasures (cf. 44.30; 1 Kings 14.26; 2 Kings 14.14) and equipment for Temple services. **10:** *Chambers of the court,* 42.1–14.

with its galleries[a] on either side, one hundred cubits.

The nave of the temple and the inner room and the outer[b] vestibule [16] were paneled,[c] and, all around, all three had windows with recessed[d] frames. Facing the threshold the temple was paneled with wood all around, from the floor up to the windows (now the windows were covered), [17] to the space above the door, even to the inner room, and on the outside. And on all the walls all around in the inner room and the nave there was a pattern.[e] [18] It was formed of cherubim and palm trees, a palm tree between cherub and cherub. Each cherub had two faces: [19] a human face turned toward the palm tree on the one side, and the face of a young lion turned toward the palm tree on the other side. They were carved on the whole temple all around; [20] from the floor to the area above the door, cherubim and palm trees were carved on the wall.[f]

[21] The doorposts of the nave were square. In front of the holy place was something resembling [22] an altar of wood, three cubits high, two cubits long, and two cubits wide;[g] its corners, its base,[h] and its walls were of wood. He said to me, "This is the table that stands before the LORD." [23] The nave and the holy place had each a double door. [24] The doors had two leaves apiece, two swinging leaves for each door. [25] On the doors of the nave were carved cherubim and palm trees, such as were carved on the walls; and there was a canopy of wood in front of the vestibule outside. [26] And there were recessed windows and palm trees on either side, on the sidewalls of the vestibule.[i]

42 Then he led me out into the outer court, toward the north, and he brought me to the chambers that were opposite the temple yard and opposite the building on the north. [2] The length of the building that was on the north side[j] was[k] one hundred cubits, and the width fifty cubits. [3] Across the twenty cubits that belonged to the inner court, and facing the pavement that belonged to the outer court, the chambers rose[l] gallery[m] by gallery[m] in three stories. [4] In front of the chambers was a passage on the inner side, ten cubits wide and one hundred cubits deep,[n] and its[o] entrances were on the north. [5] Now the upper chambers were narrower, for the galleries[m] took more away from them than from the lower and middle chambers in the building. [6] For they were in three stories, and they had no pillars like the pillars of the outer[p] court; for this reason the upper chambers were set back from the ground more than the lower and the middle ones. [7] There was a wall outside parallel to the chambers, toward the outer court, opposite the chambers, fifty cubits long. [8] For the chambers on the outer court were fifty cubits long, while those opposite the temple were one hundred cubits long. [9] At the foot of these chambers ran a passage that one entered from the east in order to enter them from the outer court.

[a] Cn: Meaning of Heb uncertain
[b] Gk: Heb *of the court*
[c] Gk: Heb *the thresholds*
[d] Cn Compare Gk 1 Kings 6.4: Meaning of Heb uncertain
[e] Heb *measures*
[f] Cn Compare verse 25: Heb *and the wall*
[g] Gk: Heb lacks *two cubits wide*
[h] Gk: Heb *length*
[i] Cn: Heb *vestibule. And the side chambers of the temple and the canopies*
[j] Gk: Heb *door*
[k] Gk: Heb *before the length*
[l] Heb lacks *the chambers rose*
[m] Meaning of Heb uncertain
[n] Gk Syr: Heb *a way of one cubit*
[o] Heb *their*
[p] Gk: Heb lacks *outer*

12: A large auxiliary building stood west of the Temple; it may also have been intended for storage purposes. **15b–26: Wall decoration and interior furnishings. 16:** The windows were like those in the gates (40.16). **18–20:** The Temple aimed to model Eden, God's cosmic dwelling, where fantastic trees and cherubim are present (cf. 28.13n.; 1 Kings 6.29–30). **22:** The *table* in the nave was for the bread of the Presence, see Ex 25.23–30 (not HS); Lev 24.5–9 (HS).

42.1–14: The priests' chambers. Ezekiel first sees the north sacristy, which was behind (west of) the north gate-tower to the inner court. Similar chambers were on the Temple's south side (vv. 10–12). Perhaps the three stories of chambers were arranged terrace-fashion against the north and south walls retaining the inner court.

10 The width of the passage[a] was fixed by the wall of the court.

On the south[b] also, opposite the vacant area and opposite the building, there were chambers 11 with a passage in front of them; they were similar to the chambers on the north, of the same length and width, with the same exits[c] and arrangements and doors. 12 So the entrances of the chambers to the south were entered through the entrance at the head of the corresponding passage, from the east, along the matching wall.[d]

13 Then he said to me, "The north chambers and the south chambers opposite the vacant area are the holy chambers, where the priests who approach the LORD shall eat the most holy offerings; there they shall deposit the most holy offerings—the grain offering, the sin offering, and the guilt offering—for the place is holy. 14 When the priests enter the holy place, they shall not go out of it into the outer court without laying there the vestments in which they minister, for these are holy; they shall put on other garments before they go near to the area open to the people."

15 When he had finished measuring the interior of the temple area, he led me out by the gate that faces east, and measured the temple area all around. 16 He measured the east side with the measuring reed, five hundred cubits by the measuring reed. 17 Then he turned and measured[e] the north side, five hundred cubits by the measuring reed. 18 Then he turned and measured[e] the south side, five hundred cubits by the measuring reed. 19 Then he turned to the west side and measured, five hundred cubits by the measuring reed. 20 He measured it on the four sides. It had a wall around it, five hundred cubits long and five hundred cubits wide, to make a separation between the holy and the common.

43 Then he brought me to the gate, the gate facing east. 2 And there, the glory of the God of Israel was coming from the east; the sound was like the sound of mighty waters; and the earth shone with his glory. 3 The[f] vision I saw was like the vision that I had seen when he came to destroy the city, and[g] like the vision that I had seen by the river Chebar; and I fell upon my face. 4 As the glory of the LORD entered the temple by the gate facing east, 5 the spirit lifted me up, and brought me into the inner court; and the glory of the LORD filled the temple.

6 While the man was standing beside me, I heard someone speaking to me out of the temple. 7 He said to me: Mortal, this is the place of my throne and the place for the soles of my feet, where I will reside among the people of Israel forever. The house of Israel shall no more defile my holy name, neither they nor their kings, by their whoring, and by the corpses of their kings at their death.[h] 8 When they placed their threshold by my threshold and their doorposts beside my doorposts, with only a wall between me and them, they were defiling my holy name by their abominations that they committed; therefore I have consumed them in my anger. 9 Now let them put away their idolatry and the corpses

[a] Heb lacks *of the passage*
[b] Gk: Heb *east*
[c] Heb *and all their exits*
[d] Meaning of Heb uncertain
[e] Gk: Heb *measuring reed all around. He measured*
[f] Gk: Heb *Like the vision*
[g] Syr: Heb *and the visions*
[h] Or *on their high places*

A second, smaller apartment building was opposite, on the outer-court side. **13:** On the sacrifices, see 40.38–39n.; 44.28–31; Lev 2.1–10; 7.7–10. **14:** See 44.19n. **15–20: The measuring completed.** The total Temple area was a square of 861 ft (262 m) per side. **20:** Marking boundaries of holiness, distinguishing between *the holy and the common,* was a central concern of Zadokites, such as Ezekiel (22.26; 44.23; Lev 10.10–11 [HS]).

43.1–12: Return of the glory of the LORD. As God on the throne-chariot had forsaken the Temple by the east gate (10.18–19; 11.22–23), so God's glory (see 10.1–22n.) returns through the same gate (40.6–16; 44.1–3) and dwells in the new Temple (Ex 40.34–38 [HS]; 1 Kings 8.10–11). **2:** *Sound of mighty waters,* see 1.4n. **3:** *Chebar,* 1.1–3n. *Fell upon my face,* 1.28n.; 3.23. **6–12:** God warns against any more defiling of the Temple. The text particularly attacks royal encroachment on the Temple, perhaps in constructing shrines to other deities in the Temple courtyard, and the practice of royal funerary offerings at the Temple (the Hebrew may refer not to *corpses* but to deification of deceased kings). **7:** Holiness School theology triumphs, as God's glory takes up permanent

of their kings far from me, and I will reside among them forever.

10 As for you, mortal, describe the temple to the house of Israel, and let them measure the pattern; and let them be ashamed of their iniquities. 11 When they are ashamed of all that they have done, make known to them the plan of the temple, its arrangement, its exits and its entrances, and its whole form—all its ordinances and its entire plan and all its laws; and write it down in their sight, so that they may observe and follow the entire plan and all its ordinances. 12 This is the law of the temple: the whole territory on the top of the mountain all around shall be most holy. This is the law of the temple.

13 These are the dimensions of the altar by cubits (the cubit being one cubit and a handbreadth): its base shall be one cubit high,[a] and one cubit wide, with a rim of one span around its edge. This shall be the height of the altar: 14 From the base on the ground to the lower ledge, two cubits, with a width of one cubit; and from the smaller ledge to the larger ledge, four cubits, with a width of one cubit; 15 and the altar hearth, four cubits; and from the altar hearth projecting upward, four horns. 16 The altar hearth shall be square, twelve cubits long by twelve wide. 17 The ledge also shall be square, fourteen cubits long by fourteen wide, with a rim around it half a cubit wide, and its surrounding base, one cubit. Its steps shall face east.

18 Then he said to me: Mortal, thus says the Lord God: These are the ordinances for the altar: On the day when it is erected for offering burnt offerings upon it and for dashing blood against it, 19 you shall give to the levitical priests of the family of Zadok, who draw near to me to minister to me, says the Lord God, a bull for a sin offering. 20 And you shall take some of its blood, and put it on the four horns of the altar, and on the four corners of the ledge, and upon the rim all around; thus you shall purify it and make atonement for it. 21 You shall also take the bull of the sin offering, and it shall be burnt in the appointed place belonging to the temple, outside the sacred area.

22 On the second day you shall offer a male goat without blemish for a sin offering; and the altar shall be purified, as it was purified with the bull. 23 When you have finished purifying it, you shall offer a bull without blemish and a ram from the flock without blemish. 24 You shall present them before the Lord, and the priests shall throw salt on them and offer them up as a burnt offering to the Lord. 25 For seven days you shall provide daily a goat for a sin offering; also a bull and a ram from the flock, without blemish, shall be provided. 26 Seven days shall they make atonement for the altar and cleanse it, and so consecrate it. 27 When these days are over, then from the eighth day onward the priests shall offer upon the altar your burnt offerings and your offerings of well-being; and I will accept you, says the Lord God.

44 Then he brought me back to the outer gate of the sanctuary, which faces east; and it was shut. 2 The Lord said to

[a] Gk: Heb lacks *high*

residence amid the Israelites (37.27n.; 37:28n.; 48.35n.). *My holy name,* 20.9n. **10–12:** Instructions and statement of purpose. The Temple plan of chs 40–42 provides for the holiness appropriate for God's eternal presence. **12:** *Law of the temple,* it was the priests, such as Ezekiel, who transmitted such law to people (44.23n.).

43.13–17: The altar of burnt offerings (40.47). The altar symbolizes a mythic cosmic center (cf. 5.5n.; 38.12n.), its shape resembling the Babylonian ziggurats meant to be cosmic centers and gateways to heaven (see Gen 11.4). *The base on the ground* (v. 14) is literally, "the bosom of the earth." The *altar hearth* (v. 15) in Hebrew is spelled like "the mountain of God." **13:** *Cubit,* see 40.5n. **15:** *Horns,* see 1 Kings 1.50n. **16:** *Hearth,* the altar's top layer, where sacrifices were burned. **17:** The height of the altar, over 17 ft (5.2 m), necessitated its having *steps* (contrast Ex 20.26). **43.18–27: The altar's consecration.** On the analogy of earlier consecratory rites (Ex 29.36–37 (not HS); 40.1–38 [HS]; Lev 8.14–15), the priests of Zadok (40.46n.; 44.15–31n.) are to dedicate the altar upon its completion. **21:** Lev 4.11–12; 8.16–17.

44.1–3: The outer east gate. This gate-tower (40.6–14) remains closed, symbolizing its consecration by God's entrance (43.4) and God's permanent presence inside the Temple (43.7). Thus shut, the gate-complex becomes a ceremonial room. As his sacral privilege, the *prince* was to enter it from the Temple's outer courtyard to eat his part of the sacrificial meal (43.27; Lev 7.15; 22.21). Ezekiel's preferred term for Israel's monarchic leader

me: This gate shall remain shut; it shall not be opened, and no one shall enter by it; for the LORD, the God of Israel, has entered by it; therefore it shall remain shut. 3 Only the prince, because he is a prince, may sit in it to eat food before the LORD; he shall enter by way of the vestibule of the gate, and shall go out by the same way.

4 Then he brought me by way of the north gate to the front of the temple; and I looked, and lo! the glory of the LORD filled the temple of the LORD; and I fell upon my face. 5 The LORD said to me: Mortal, mark well, look closely, and listen attentively to all that I shall tell you concerning all the ordinances of the temple of the LORD and all its laws; and mark well those who may be admitted to[a] the temple and all those who are to be excluded from the sanctuary. 6 Say to the rebellious house,[b] to the house of Israel, Thus says the Lord GOD: O house of Israel, let there be an end to all your abominations 7 in admitting foreigners, uncircumcised in heart and flesh, to be in my sanctuary, profaning my temple when you offer to me my food, the fat and the blood. You[c] have broken my covenant with all your abominations. 8 And you have not kept charge of my sacred offerings; but you have appointed foreigners[d] to act for you in keeping my charge in my sanctuary.

9 Thus says the Lord GOD: No foreigner, uncircumcised in heart and flesh, of all the foreigners who are among the people of Israel, shall enter my sanctuary. 10 But the Levites who went far from me, going astray from me after their idols when Israel went astray, shall bear their punishment. 11 They shall be ministers in my sanctuary, having oversight at the gates of the temple, and serving in the temple; they shall slaughter the burnt offering and the sacrifice for the people, and they shall attend on them and serve them. 12 Because they ministered to them before their idols and made the house of Israel stumble into iniquity, therefore I have sworn concerning them, says the Lord GOD, that they shall bear their punishment. 13 They shall not come near to me, to serve me as priest, nor come near any of my sacred offerings, the things that are most sacred; but they shall bear their shame, and the consequences of the abominations that they have committed. 14 Yet I will appoint them to keep charge of the temple, to do all its chores, all that is to be done in it.

15 But the levitical priests, the descendants of Zadok, who kept the charge of my sanctu-

[a] Cn: Heb *the entrance of*
[b] Gk: Heb lacks *house*
[c] Gk Syr Vg: Heb *They*
[d] Heb lacks *foreigners*

is *prince.* The term derives from Israel's tribal past, and Ezekiel uses it to uphold the kinship networks of the countryside and the landed patrimonies that supported them (see 45:8–9n.; 46:18n.). The Holiness School is concerned with organizing and stabilizing God's entire holy territory including the countryside, not just an isolated royal capital. In 34.24 and 37.25, the prince is a Davidic figure in the new era of restoration. Here in chs 40–48, the prince is less an ideal royal figure than a civil ruler with immediate, concrete tasks.

44.4–31: Temple ordinances. 4–5: A renewed commission. **6–16:** Ezekiel's blueprint for the restored priesthood of Israel again redresses past wrongs. Under the influence of the Holiness School, Ezekiel finds these particular past wrongs encapsulated in Num 16–18, a text about the rebellion of Levites during Israel's wilderness wanderings. **7–8:** The primary reference is to a prototypical narrative: the Levites' encroachment on priestly prerogatives in Num 16.40; 18.4,7. The Levites are *foreigners*, that is "outsiders," with respect to the priestly obligations of the sanctuary and the altar. **10–14:** After their rebellion in the wilderness, the Levites were given circumscribed responsibilities. Here, the Levites are restored to these responsibilities in the new Temple, as the Holiness School had specified them (Num 18:3–4). **10:** *When Israel went astray,* Num 16.2,22,41. *Bear their punishment,* Num 18.23. **11:** The limitation of the slaughtering of sacrifices to the Levites, thus disenfranchising the general populace, is a new holiness stricture that goes beyond Lev 1.5,11. *Attend . . . and serve,* Num 16.9. **13:** Num 18.3. **14:** Num 18.4. **15–31:** The Zadokite priesthood (see 40.46b n.; 43.19; 48.11). The Zadokites, one of at least three major priestly lineages in ancient Israel, had been the central priests at Jerusalem's preexilic Temple. Their origins trace back to Solomon's elevation of *Zadok*, the founder of the Zadokite lineage, to be chief priest after Abiathar's banishment (2 Sam 20.25; 1 Kings 1.7–8,41–45; 2.26–27). Ezekiel and his group were themselves Zadokite priests. 1 Chr 6.50–53 and 24.31 trace Zadok's ancestry back to Eleazar, Aaron's son. Here, vv. 15–16 refer

ary when the people of Israel went astray from me, shall come near to me to minister to me; and they shall attend me to offer me the fat and the blood, says the Lord God. [16] It is they who shall enter my sanctuary, it is they who shall approach my table, to minister to me, and they shall keep my charge. [17] When they enter the gates of the inner court, they shall wear linen vestments; they shall have nothing of wool on them, while they minister at the gates of the inner court, and within. [18] They shall have linen turbans on their heads, and linen undergarments on their loins; they shall not bind themselves with anything that causes sweat. [19] When they go out into the outer court to the people, they shall remove the vestments in which they have been ministering, and lay them in the holy chambers; and they shall put on other garments, so that they may not communicate holiness to the people with their vestments. [20] They shall not shave their heads or let their locks grow long; they shall only trim the hair of their heads. [21] No priest shall drink wine when he enters the inner court. [22] They shall not marry a widow, or a divorced woman, but only a virgin of the stock of the house of Israel, or a widow who is the widow of a priest. [23] They shall teach my people the difference between the holy and the common, and show them how to distinguish between the unclean and the clean. [24] In a controversy they shall act as judges, and they shall decide it according to my judgments. They shall keep my laws and my statutes regarding all my appointed festivals, and they shall keep my sabbaths holy. [25] They shall not defile themselves by going near to a dead person; for father or mother, however, and for son or daughter, and for brother or unmarried sister they may defile themselves. [26] After he has become clean, they shall count seven days for him. [27] On the day that he goes into the holy place, into the inner court, to minister in the holy place, he shall offer his sin offering, says the Lord God.

[28] This shall be their inheritance: I am their inheritance; and you shall give them no holding in Israel; I am their holding. [29] They shall eat the grain offering, the sin offering, and the guilt offering; and every devoted thing in Israel shall be theirs. [30] The first of all the first fruits of all kinds, and every offering of all kinds from all your offerings, shall belong to the priests; you shall also give to the priests the first of your dough, in order that a blessing may rest on your house. [31] The priests shall not eat of anything, whether bird or animal, that died of itself or was torn by animals.

45 When you allot the land as an inheritance, you shall set aside for the Lord a portion of the land as a holy district, twenty-five thousand cubits long and twenty[a] thousand cubits wide; it shall be holy throughout its entire extent. [2] Of this, a square plot of five hundred by five hundred cubits shall be for the sanctuary, with fifty cubits for an open space around it. [3] In the holy district you shall measure off a section twenty-five thousand cubits long and ten thousand wide, in which shall be the sanctu-

[a] Gk: Heb *ten*

to how Aaron and Eleazar had been faithful during the Levites' rebellion (Num 16.11,20–22,36–40,46–50). These priests were the ancestors of the Zadokites, and Ezekiel views the Zadokites as present "embryonically" in their actions. **15–16:** Num 18.7 (cf. Lev 16.14–15). **17–31: Priestly rules. 17:** *Linen vestments,* see 9.1–2n.; Ex 39.27–29 (HS). **19:** 42.14. *Communicate holiness,* cf. 46.20. Sanctity could sometimes be transmitted through direct contact with a sacred substance (see Lev 6.18,26–27). The goal here is to preserve gradations of sanctity. Failure in this regard was life-threatening (see Num 16.38 [HS]). **20:** The care of the hair, Lev 21.5 (HS). **21:** No *wine* before service, Lev 10.9 (HS). **22:** Proper marriage, Lev 21.7,13–15 (HS). **23:** Teaching of the people, Lev 10.10–11 (HS); 2 Chr 17.9; Hag 2.10–13. **24:** *Judges,* 1 Chr 23.4; 2 Chr 19.11. **25:** Defilement by a corpse, see 39.11–16n.; Lev 21.1–3 (HS). **28:** No *inheritance,* 45.1–5; 48.8–14; Num 18.20–24 (HS). **29–30:** Eating sacrifices and *first fruits,* Num 18.9–13 (HS); Lev 2.3; 6.16,26; 7.6–7. *Every devoted thing,* Num 18.14 (HS). **31:** Lev 7.24; 22.8 (HS).

45.1–9: The distribution of land (continued in 47.13–48.35) is idealized. A *holy district* is to contain a northern section for the Levites and a southern section for the sacrificing priests. The latter includes the square section for the Temple area (42.15–20) plus an enclosure space (not mentioned earlier). The property of Jerusalem south of the holy district (v. 6) makes with the holy district (v. 1) a square area of ca. 8 mi (13 km) per side. The prince

ary, the most holy place. [4] It shall be a holy portion of the land; it shall be for the priests, who minister in the sanctuary and approach the LORD to minister to him; and it shall be both a place for their houses and a holy place for the sanctuary. [5] Another section, twenty-five thousand cubits long and ten thousand cubits wide, shall be for the Levites who minister at the temple, as their holding for cities to live in.[a]

[6] Alongside the portion set apart as the holy district you shall assign as a holding for the city an area five thousand cubits wide, and twenty-five thousand cubits long; it shall belong to the whole house of Israel.

[7] And to the prince shall belong the land on both sides of the holy district and the holding of the city, alongside the holy district and the holding of the city, on the west and on the east, corresponding in length to one of the tribal portions, and extending from the western to the eastern boundary [8] of the land. It is to be his property in Israel. And my princes shall no longer oppress my people; but they shall let the house of Israel have the land according to their tribes.

[9] Thus says the Lord GOD: Enough,
O princes of Israel! Put away violence and oppression, and do what is just and right. Cease your evictions of my people, says the Lord GOD.

[10] You shall have honest balances, an honest ephah, and an honest bath.[b] [11] The ephah and the bath shall be of the same measure, the bath containing one-tenth of a homer, and the ephah one-tenth of a homer; the homer shall be the standard measure. [12] The shekel shall be twenty gerahs. Twenty shekels, twenty-five shekels, and fifteen shekels shall make a mina for you.

[13] This is the offering that you shall make: one-sixth of an ephah from each homer of wheat, and one-sixth of an ephah from each homer of barley, [14] and as the fixed portion of oil,[c] one-tenth of a bath from each cor (the cor,[d] like the homer, contains ten baths); [15] and one sheep from every flock of two hundred, from the pastures of Israel. This is the offering for grain offerings, burnt offerings, and offerings of well-being, to make atonement for them, says the Lord GOD. [16] All the people of the land shall join with the prince in Israel in making this offering. [17] But this shall be the obligation of the prince regarding the burnt offerings, grain offerings, and drink offerings, at the festivals, the new moons, and the sabbaths, all the appointed festivals of the house of Israel: he shall provide the sin offerings, grain offerings, the burnt offerings, and the offerings of well-being, to make atonement for the house of Israel.

[18] Thus says the Lord GOD: In the first month, on the first day of the month, you shall take a young bull without blemish, and purify the sanctuary. [19] The priest shall take some of the blood of the sin offering and put it on the doorposts of the temple, the four corners of the ledge of the altar, and the posts of the gate of the inner court. [20] You shall do the same on the seventh day of the month for anyone who has sinned through error or ignorance; so you shall make atonement for the temple.

[21] In the first month, on the fourteenth day of the month, you shall celebrate the festival

[a] Gk: Heb *as their holding, twenty chambers*
[b] A Heb measure of volume
[c] Cn: Heb *oil, the bath the oil*
[d] Vg: Heb *homer*

(see 44.1–3n.) is to hold the strips of land to the west and east of this square area. **8–9:** In accordance with the ideals of the Holiness School (Lev 25.10,23–24,42), princes are denied the power to evict subjects from their family homesteads (cf. 11.15n.; 22.27; 46.18n.).

45.10-17: Weights and measures for offerings. For present-day equivalents of *ephah, bath, homer, shekel, gerah,* and *mina,* see Table of Weights and Measures. The Holiness School insisted on *honest* measures (see Lev 19.35–36). **13–17:** The people will bring gifts for the regular sacrifices to the prince, who, as their representative, will offer them to God. These offerings are additional to the donations given to the priests of 44.30.

45.18–25: Festival regulations. 18–20: A new annual ritual for purifying the Temple or a one-time, inaugural purification. **21–25:** Ezekiel's brief festival-calendar highlights the *passover* (Ex 12; Lev 23.4–8) and the festival of booths (the *festival* of the *seventh month* in v. 25; see Lev 23.33–36). It omits the festival of weeks (Pentecost;

of the passover, and for seven days unleavened bread shall be eaten. 22 On that day the prince shall provide for himself and all the people of the land a young bull for a sin offering. 23 And during the seven days of the festival he shall provide as a burnt offering to the LORD seven young bulls and seven rams without blemish, on each of the seven days; and a male goat daily for a sin offering. 24 He shall provide as a grain offering an ephah for each bull, an ephah for each ram, and a hin of oil to each ephah. 25 In the seventh month, on the fifteenth day of the month and for the seven days of the festival, he shall make the same provision for sin offerings, burnt offerings, and grain offerings, and for the oil.

46 Thus says the Lord GOD: The gate of the inner court that faces east shall remain closed on the six working days; but on the sabbath day it shall be opened and on the day of the new moon it shall be opened. 2 The prince shall enter by the vestibule of the gate from outside, and shall take his stand by the post of the gate. The priests shall offer his burnt offering and his offerings of well-being, and he shall bow down at the threshold of the gate. Then he shall go out, but the gate shall not be closed until evening. 3 The people of the land shall bow down at the entrance of that gate before the LORD on the sabbaths and on the new moons. 4 The burnt offering that the prince offers to the LORD on the sabbath day shall be six lambs without blemish and a ram without blemish; 5 and the grain offering with the ram shall be an ephah, and the grain offering with the lambs shall be as much as he wishes to give, together with a hin of oil to each ephah. 6 On the day of the new moon he shall offer a young bull without blemish, and six lambs and a ram, which shall be without blemish; 7 as a grain offering he shall provide an ephah with the bull and an ephah with the ram, and with the lambs as much as he wishes, together with a hin of oil to each ephah. 8 When the prince enters, he shall come in by the vestibule of the gate, and he shall go out by the same way.

9 When the people of the land come before the LORD at the appointed festivals, whoever enters by the north gate to worship shall go out by the south gate; and whoever enters by the south gate shall go out by the north gate: they shall not return by way of the gate by which they entered, but shall go out straight ahead. 10 When they come in, the prince shall come in with them; and when they go out, he shall go out.

11 At the festivals and the appointed seasons the grain offering with a young bull shall be an ephah, and with a ram an ephah, and with the lambs as much as one wishes to give, together with a hin of oil to an ephah. 12 When the prince provides a freewill offering, either a burnt offering or offerings of well-being as a freewill offering to the LORD, the gate facing east shall be opened for him; and he shall offer his burnt offering or his offerings of well-being as he does on the sabbath day. Then he shall go out, and after he has gone out the gate shall be closed.

13 He shall provide a lamb, a yearling, without blemish, for a burnt offering to the LORD daily; morning by morning he shall provide it. 14 And he shall provide a grain offering with it morning by morning regularly, one-sixth of an ephah, and one-third of a hin of oil to moisten the choice flour, as a grain offering to the LORD; this is the ordinance for all time. 15 Thus the lamb and the grain offering and the oil shall be provided, morning by morning, as a regular burnt offering.

16 Thus says the Lord GOD: If the prince makes a gift to any of his sons out of his

Lev 23.15–21). **24:** *Ephah* and *hin,* see Table of Weights and Measures.

46.1–15: Gate regulations and the prince's minor offerings. 1–7: Both weekly and monthly, the *prince* (see 44.1–3n.) shall bring offerings (vv. 4–7) into the inner east gate leading to the altar (40.32–34). Kings might have performed priestly functions in preexilic times (1 Kings 8.63; 2 Kings 16.12–13), but now they will stand by while the priests offer the sacrifices. For the *sabbath* sacrifices, see Num 28.9–10; on Ezekiel's emphasis on the sabbath here, see 20.12–13n. For the *new moon* (i.e., monthly) sacrifices, see Num 28.11–15. **8–10:** Exit procedures. The great festival crowds require regulations for controlled egress. **11–15:** Further rules. **11:** 45.24; 46.5,7. **12:** When the prince makes a *freewill offering* (Lev 22.18–23 [HS]), the inner east gate (v. 1) may be opened. **13–15:** The prince must also provide for daily sacrifices (Num 28.3–8; Ex 29.38–42 [HS]).

46.16–18: The prince's property. Crown property (45.7; 48.21–22) was to be inalienable from the royal line.

inheritance,[a] it shall belong to his sons, it is their holding by inheritance. 17 But if he makes a gift out of his inheritance to one of his servants, it shall be his to the year of liberty; then it shall revert to the prince; only his sons may keep a gift from his inheritance. 18 The prince shall not take any of the inheritance of the people, thrusting them out of their holding; he shall give his sons their inheritance out of his own holding, so that none of my people shall be dispossessed of their holding.

19 Then he brought me through the entrance, which was at the side of the gate, to the north row of the holy chambers for the priests; and there I saw a place at the extreme western end of them. 20 He said to me, "This is the place where the priests shall boil the guilt offering and the sin offering, and where they shall bake the grain offering, in order not to bring them out into the outer court and so communicate holiness to the people."

21 Then he brought me out to the outer court, and led me past the four corners of the court; and in each corner of the court there was a court— 22 in the four corners of the court were small[b] courts, forty cubits long and thirty wide; the four were of the same size. 23 On the inside, around each of the four courts[c] was a row of masonry, with hearths made at the bottom of the rows all around. 24 Then he said to me, "These are the kitchens where those who serve at the temple shall boil the sacrifices of the people."

47 Then he brought me back to the entrance of the temple; there, water was flowing from below the threshold of the temple toward the east (for the temple faced east); and the water was flowing down from below the south end of the threshold of the temple, south of the altar. 2 Then he brought me out by way of the north gate, and led me around on the outside to the outer gate that faces toward the east;[d] and the water was coming out on the south side.

3 Going on eastward with a cord in his hand, the man measured one thousand cubits, and then led me through the water; and it was ankle-deep. 4 Again he measured one thousand, and led me through the water; and it was knee-deep. Again he measured one thousand, and led me through the water; and it was up to the waist. 5 Again he measured one thousand, and it was a river that I could not cross, for the water had risen; it was deep enough to swim in, a river that could not be crossed. 6 He said to me, "Mortal, have you seen this?"

Then he led me back along the bank of the river. 7 As I came back, I saw on the bank of the river a great many trees on the one side and on the other. 8 He said to me, "This water flows toward the eastern region and goes down into the Arabah; and when it enters the sea, the sea of stagnant waters, the water will become fresh. 9 Wherever the river goes,[e] every living creature that swarms will live, and there will be very many fish, once these waters reach there. It will become fresh; and everything will live where the river goes. 10 People will stand fishing beside the sea[f] from En-gedi to En-eglaim; it will be a place for the spreading of nets; its fish will be of a great many kinds, like the fish of the Great Sea. 11 But its swamps and marshes will not

[a] Gk: Heb *it is his inheritance*
[b] Gk Syr Vg: Meaning of Heb uncertain
[c] Heb *the four of them*
[d] Meaning of Heb uncertain
[e] Gk Syr Vg Tg: Heb *the two rivers go*
[f] Heb *it*

When given to a nonrelative, it had to be returned on the *year of liberty* (jubilee year, Lev 25.8–17 [HS]). **18:** See 45.8–9n. Royal appropriation of others' ancestral lands (see 1 Kings 21.1–16; Isa 5.8; Mic 2.2) is strictly forbidden.

46.19–24: Sacrificial kitchens. 19–20: Behind (west of) the priest's chambers (42.1–14) were kitchens for preparing offerings (42.13) for priestly consumption. *Communicate holiness,* see 42.14; 44.19n. **21–24:** Kitchens, for the Levites to prepare the common-meal sacrifices of the general populace, were in all four corners of the outer court (40.17–19).

47.1–12: The sacred river. From the throne of God (the Temple; 43.7) issue the waters of life, making the land a new Paradise. This paradisiacal motif (see 28.14n.) is also found in Joel 3.18 and Zech 14.8 (both Zadokite apocalyptic texts that follow in the tradition of Ezekiel). **8:** *Arabah,* the Jordan valley, in which the Dead Sea (*the sea of stagnant waters*) is located. **10:** *En-gedi to En-eglaim*, two springs on the western side of the Dead Sea. *The*

become fresh; they are to be left for salt. [12] On the banks, on both sides of the river, there will grow all kinds of trees for food. Their leaves will not wither nor their fruit fail, but they will bear fresh fruit every month, because the water for them flows from the sanctuary. Their fruit will be for food, and their leaves for healing."

[13] Thus says the Lord God: These are the boundaries by which you shall divide the land for inheritance among the twelve tribes of Israel. Joseph shall have two portions. [14] You shall divide it equally; I swore to give it to your ancestors, and this land shall fall to you as your inheritance.

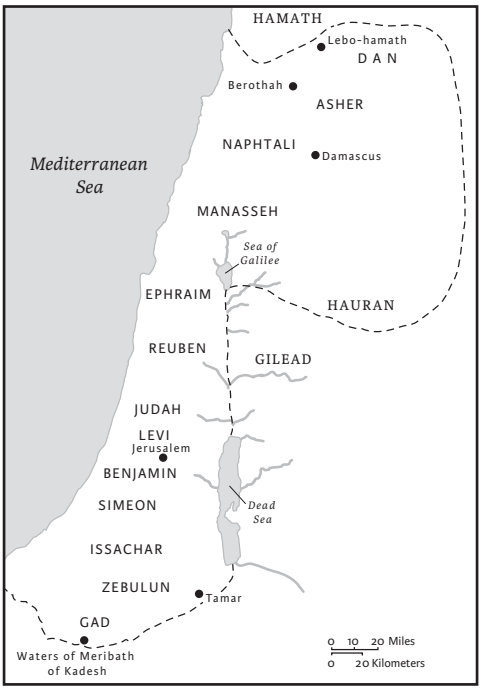
[15] This shall be the boundary of the land: On the north side, from the Great Sea by way of Hethlon to Lebo-hamath, and on to Zedad,[a] [16] Berothah, Sibraim (which lies between the border of Damascus and the border of Hamath), as far as Hazer-hatticon, which is on the border of Hauran. [17] So the boundary shall run from the sea to Hazar-enon, which is north of the border of Damascus, with the border of Hamath to the north.[b] This shall be the north side.

[18] On the east side, between Hauran and Damascus; along the Jordan between Gilead and the land of Israel; to the eastern sea and as far as Tamar.[c] This shall be the east side.

[19] On the south side, it shall run from Tamar as far as the waters of Meribath-kadesh, from there along the Wadi of Egypt[d] to the Great Sea. This shall be the south side.

[20] On the west side, the Great Sea shall be the boundary to a point opposite Lebo-hamath. This shall be the west side.

[21] So you shall divide this land among you according to the tribes of Israel. [22] You shall allot it as an inheritance for yourselves and for the aliens who reside among you and have begotten children among you. They shall be to you as citizens of Israel; with you they shall be allotted an inheritance among the tribes of Israel. [23] In whatever tribe aliens reside, there you shall assign them their inheritance, says the Lord God.



Chs 47–48: Tribal territories in the restored Israel.

[a] Gk: Heb *Lebo-zedad,* [16]*Hamath*
[b] Meaning of Heb uncertain
[c] Compare Syr: Heb *you shall measure*
[d] Heb lacks *of Egypt*

Great Sea, the Mediterranean. **11:** A source of salt would supply Temple rituals (43.24).

47.13–48.29: A new holy land. 47.13–23: Boundary and allotment instructions. Ezekiel's new Exodus and settlement (cf. 20.33–38n.; 36.8–12; 37.14) occasion a new allotment of the land. **14:** *I swore,* 20.6; 36.28. **15–20:** National boundaries. Several of the sites mentioned are unidentified. North border: roughly from the Mediterranean (*the Great Sea*) north of Tyre to Damascus (cf. Num 34.7–9). It is approximately the northern border of Solomon's territory (1 Kings 8.65). East border: along the Jordan to *Tamar,* a site south of the Dead Sea (*eastern sea*) (Num 34.10–12). Territory in the Transjordan is not included in the new land (contrast Num 34.13–15). South border: from Tamar along the southern Negeb through Kadesh-barnea (*Meribath-kadesh*) to *the Wadi of Egypt* (1 Kings 8.65n.) and the Mediterranean (Num 34.3–5). West border: the Mediterranean Sea (Num 34.6). **21–23:** Allotment. That resident *aliens* and native Israelites should be treated alike was a widespread principle in the Holiness School: Num 15.29; Lev 19.33–34; 24:22. Ezekiel radicalizes the principle to allow aliens to receive their own allotted portions of land.

48 These are the names of the tribes: Beginning at the northern border, on the Hethlon road,[a] from Lebo-hamath, as far as Hazar-enon (which is on the border of Damascus, with Hamath to the north), and[b] extending from the east side to the west,[c] Dan, one portion. [2] Adjoining the territory of Dan, from the east side to the west, Asher, one portion. [3] Adjoining the territory of Asher, from the east side to the west, Naphtali, one portion. [4] Adjoining the territory of Naphtali, from the east side to the west, Manasseh, one portion. [5] Adjoining the territory of Manasseh, from the east side to the west, Ephraim, one portion. [6] Adjoining the territory of Ephraim, from the east side to the west, Reuben, one portion. [7] Adjoining the territory of Reuben, from the east side to the west, Judah, one portion.

[8] Adjoining the territory of Judah, from the east side to the west, shall be the portion that you shall set apart, twenty-five thousand cubits in width, and in length equal to one of the tribal portions, from the east side to the west, with the sanctuary in the middle of it. [9] The portion that you shall set apart for the LORD shall be twenty-five thousand cubits in length, and twenty[d] thousand in width. [10] These shall be the allotments of the holy portion: the priests shall have an allotment measuring twenty-five thousand cubits on the northern side, ten thousand cubits in width on the western side, ten thousand in width on the eastern side, and twenty-five thousand in length on the southern side, with the sanctuary of the LORD in the middle of it. [11] This shall be for the consecrated priests, the descendants[e] of Zadok, who kept my charge, who did not go astray when the people of Israel went astray, as the Levites did. [12] It shall belong to them as a special portion from the holy portion of the land, a most holy place, adjoining the territory of the Levites. [13] Alongside the territory of the priests, the Levites shall have an allotment twenty-five thousand cubits in length and ten thousand in width. The whole length shall be twenty-five thousand cubits and the width twenty[f] thousand. [14] They shall not sell or exchange any of it; they shall not transfer this choice portion of the land, for it is holy to the LORD.

[15] The remainder, five thousand cubits in width and twenty-five thousand in length, shall be for ordinary use for the city, for dwellings and for open country. In the middle of it shall be the city; [16] and these shall be its dimensions: the north side four thousand five hundred cubits, the south side four thousand five hundred, the east side four thousand five hundred, and the west side four thousand five hundred. [17] The city shall have open land: on the north two hundred fifty cubits, on the south two hundred fifty, on the east two hundred fifty, on the west two hundred fifty. [18] The remainder of the length alongside the holy portion shall be ten thousand cubits to the east, and ten thousand to the west, and it shall be alongside the holy portion. Its produce shall be food for the workers of the city. [19] The workers of the city, from all the tribes of Israel, shall cultivate it. [20] The whole portion that you shall set apart shall be twenty-five thousand cubits square, that is, the holy portion together with the property of the city.

[21] What remains on both sides of the holy portion and of the property of the city shall belong to the prince. Extending from the twenty-five thousand cubits of the holy portion to the east border, and westward from the twenty-five thousand cubits to

[a] Compare 47.15: Heb *by the side of the way*
[b] Cn: Heb *and they shall be his*
[c] Gk Compare verses 2-8: Heb *the east side the west*
[d] Compare 45.1: Heb *ten*
[e] One Ms Gk: Heb *of the descendants*
[f] Gk: Heb *ten*

48.1–29: Tribal and holy-district allotments. All tribes receive equal allotments consisting of idealized strips of land. Ephraim and Manasseh ("Joseph," 47.13) receive a portion each, but Levi, the priestly tribe, is omitted, so that the tribal allotments number twelve in all. **1–7:** Seven tribes north of the central strip (vv. 8–22; 45.1–9). **1:** *Hethlon, Lebo-hamath,* sites on the land's northern border (47.15). **8–22:** The central strip. The description matches and expands 45.1–9. **11:** See 44.6–16n.; 44.15–31n. **15:** *Ordinary* ("common" as opposed to "holy") *use,* see 22.26; 42.20n.; 44.23; Lev 10.10 (HS). **16–17:** The area of Jerusalem, with the surrounding *open land,* was exactly one hundred times that of the Temple (42.20), i.e., a square of 1.6 mi (2.6 km) per side. **21–22:** The allot-

the west border, parallel to the tribal portions, it shall belong to the prince. The holy portion with the sanctuary of the temple in the middle of it, [22] and the property of the Levites and of the city, shall be in the middle of that which belongs to the prince. The portion of the prince shall lie between the territory of Judah and the territory of Benjamin.

[23] As for the rest of the tribes: from the east side to the west, Benjamin, one portion. [24] Adjoining the territory of Benjamin, from the east side to the west, Simeon, one portion. [25] Adjoining the territory of Simeon, from the east side to the west, Issachar, one portion. [26] Adjoining the territory of Issachar, from the east side to the west, Zebulun, one portion. [27] Adjoining the territory of Zebulun, from the east side to the west, Gad, one portion. [28] And adjoining the territory of Gad to the south, the boundary shall run from Tamar to the waters of Meribath-kadesh, from there along the Wadi of Egypt[a] to the Great Sea. [29] This is the land that you shall allot as an inheritance among the tribes of Israel, and these are their portions, says the Lord God.

[30] These shall be the exits of the city: On the north side, which is to be four thousand five hundred cubits by measure, [31] three gates, the gate of Reuben, the gate of Judah, and the gate of Levi, the gates of the city being named after the tribes of Israel. [32] On the east side, which is to be four thousand five hundred cubits, three gates, the gate of Joseph, the gate of Benjamin, and the gate of Dan. [33] On the south side, which is to be four thousand five hundred cubits by measure, three gates, the gate of Simeon, the gate of Issachar, and the gate of Zebulun. [34] On the west side, which is to be four thousand five hundred cubits, three gates,[b] the gate of Gad, the gate of Asher, and the gate of Naphtali. [35] The circumference of the city shall be eighteen thousand cubits. And the name of the city from that time on shall be, The Lord is There.

[a] Heb lacks *of Egypt*
[b] One Ms Gk Syr: MT *their gates three*

ment of the prince, as described in 45.7. **23–29:** Five tribes south of the central strip. **28:** See 47.19.

48.30–35: The new Jerusalem. Three gates on each of the city's four sides, each named after a tribe. **35:** The city's new name (cf. Isa 1.26; 60.14; 62.2; Zech 8.3) reflects how Holiness School theology has come into its own. The name *The Lord is There* (Heb "Yahweh-shammah") reverses 10.18–19.

This page intentionally left blank

DANIEL

NAME

The book of Daniel is named for its primary character, the exile from Judea who becomes a counselor and dream interpreter in the courts of the Babylonian, Median, and Persian kings (chs 1–6), and who himself is a recipient of mysterious revelations (chs 7–12).

The Daniel mentioned in Ezekiel (14.14,20; 28.3) is not the same character as the hero of the book of Daniel, but a figure of the remote past known also from Ugaritic texts of the fourteenth or thirteenth centuries BCE. In Ezekiel he is paired with Noah and Job: all three were non-Jews whose piety and wisdom were legendary. The hero of the book of Daniel is similar in knowledge and fidelity; he is, however, emphatically Jewish.

CONTENTS AND DATE OF COMPOSITION

The first six chapters are examples of the ancient Jewish short story, like Jonah, Esther, Tobit, and similar works. The purpose of such stories is to edify but also to entertain. More specifically, the stories in Daniel 1–6 are examples of "court tales," narratives that describe the dangers and triumphs experienced by Jewish heroes and heroines in the courts of foreign kings. Like Joseph in Gen 40–41, Daniel succeeds in service to the ruler through his ability to interpret dreams; like Mordecai in the book of Esther, he succeeds in such service despite challenges by rival politicians. Even though the court tales in Daniel are set in the time of the Babylonian exile and immediately following the fall of Babylon (in 539 BCE), they were most likely composed either in the late Persian (450–333 BCE) or early Hellenistic (333–170 BCE) periods, possibly in the eastern Diaspora. They reflect a time in which the imperial ruler is perceived as ignorant and dangerously unpredictable rather than malevolent, and a social context in which Jews can live at peace with their non-Jewish neighbors, although without complete security. The narratives also address a serious theological issue: How could Jews reconcile their belief in the sovereign power of God with the reality of Gentile imperial rule? In these stories the Gentile kings are shown as slowly recognizing that it is the "Most High" who is truly sovereign and that they rule only by divine permission.

The court tales in the first half of the book contrast with the apocalyptic materials in chs 7–12, which depict extreme hostility to foreign governments and feature lengthy periods of universal tribulation rather than temporary personal danger. In this second section, Daniel is not the interpreter of dream visions but the visionary himself, and he is now in need of an angel's interpretive skills. In a series of dreams, he learns of the history of the Near East from the Babylonian empire in the sixth century, through Persian rule, to the time of Alexander the Great in the late fourth century, and finally to the attacks against Jewish practice and belief as well as against the Jerusalem Temple by the Syrian-Greek ruler Antiochus IV Epiphanes (early second century BCE). The increasingly detailed descriptions of the period following the division of Alexander's empire to the rule of Antiochus suggest that the apocalyptic sections were composed between 167 and 164 BCE during the Maccabean revolt against the Hellenizing policies of Antiochus and his allies in Jerusalem's priestly circles (see 1 Macc 1). This dating makes the work the latest book in the Hebrew Bible. Its author may have been one of the "wise" who emphasized confidence in a divine plan to redeem Israel from idolatrous leaders, even in the face of martyrdom, and who rejected the armed resistance of the Maccabees (Dan 11.33–35); in the end, the author believed, God would punish the wicked and redeem the faithful (Dan 12.3). The visions are presented pseudonymously, that is, under the name of an ancient figure (in this case, Daniel, the sage of the sixth-fifth centuries BCE) who "foresees" what is to come, as in other apocalypses such as 2 Esdras, *2 Baruch*, and the later Christian *Apocalypse of Peter*.

LANGUAGE AND CANONICAL STATUS

Daniel 2.4b–7.28 is written in Aramaic, the common language of the Near East during the Persian and early Hellenistic periods; chs 1.1–2.4a and chs 8–12 are in Hebrew, which had been eclipsed by Aramaic during this period, but which enjoyed a literary revival in the second century BCE. Complicating the history of the book of Daniel are additions to the story in some ancient Greek versions: Susanna, the Prayer of Azariah and the Song of the Three Jews, and Bel and the Dragon. These short works are considered Deuterocanonical by Catholic and Orthodox churches, that is, as having canonical status; Protestant churches regard them as part of the Apocrypha, and they have no canonical status in Judaism. (See the Introduction to the Apocryphal/Deuterocanonical books.)

Additional tales belonging to the cycle of stories about Daniel appear among the Dead Sea Scrolls. One text, the Prayer of Nabonidus (4QprNab), may represent an earlier version of Dan 4.

Jewish tradition places the book of Daniel among the Writings (Heb "Ketubim"), between the books of Esther and Ezra (see rabbinic discussion in *b. Meg*. 3a; *b. Sanh*. 94a). This decision may reflect the late date of composition of Daniel. Christian tradition locates the book among the Prophets, between the books of Ezekiel and Hosea.

INTERPRETATION

Despite the different genres and dates of composition, the book of Daniel does have a consistent theme: the sovereignty of God in history. By juxtaposing the wisdom of the Jewish courtiers in negotiating the difficulties of living under an often arbitrary and dangerous foreign rule with its visions of wars, persecutions, and, finally, salvation under God's sovereignty, the book of Daniel offers its readers both advice and consolation. The folktales speak to all peoples persecuted as religious and ethnic minorities. The apocalyptic materials, whose meanings would have been known to the author's own circle, have provided for more than two thousand years the occasion for speculation and, often, hope. Already 1 Macc 2.59–60 shows that Daniel and his three friends served as role models of resistance and deliverance. The apocalyptic materials, with their promise of divine salvation, also were often reinterpreted for later circumstances. For example, the apocalypse of 2 Esdras—a text originally written by a Jew but then edited and preserved by the Christian church—reinterprets the vision of Daniel 7 to express hope for the punishment of Rome and the redemption of Israel following the Roman destruction of Jerusalem in 70 CE. Early Christians saw in the figure of the "son of man" in Daniel 7 a reference to Jesus, and the synagogue saw in this same figure a reference to the covenant community of Israel.

Amy-Jill Levine

1 In the third year of the reign of King Jehoiakim of Judah, King Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon came to Jerusalem and besieged it. **2** The Lord let King Jehoiakim of Judah fall into his power, as well as some of the vessels of the house of God. These he brought to the land of Shinar,[a] and placed the vessels in the treasury of his gods.

3 Then the king commanded his palace master Ashpenaz to bring some of the Israelites of the royal family and of the nobility, **4** young men without physical defect and handsome, versed in every branch of wisdom, endowed

[a] Gk Theodotion: Heb adds *to the house of his own gods*

1.1–21: The Babylonian exile. This first chapter introduces the young courtier Daniel, his companions in exile, and the difficulties they will face as Jews in the foreign court. **1:** *The third year of the reign of King Jehoiakim* is 606 BCE (see 2 Chr 36.5–7). *Nebuchadnezzar* reigned 605–562 BCE (see 2 Kings 24–25; 1 Chr 6; 2 Chr 36; Jer 27–29), and invaded Israel in 604, but did not attack Jerusalem until 597, when Jehoiakim's son Jehoiachin was king. The difficulties of the dating cannot be resolved; such chronological inaccuracy is typical of folktales (cf. Jdt 1.1). **2:** *Lord*, Israel's God, not the gods of Babylon, reigns over history. *Shinar*, an ancient term for Babylon (Gen 10.10; 14.1,9; Josh 7.21; Isa 11.11; Zech 5.11), is the site of the tower of Babel (Gen 11.2); both tower and Babylon fall through the sin of pride. *His gods*, Marduk, Babylon's national god, and Nabu, the king's personal deity; see Isa 46.1n. *Vessels*, noted in 2 Kings 24.13; 25.13–15; 2 Chr 36.7,10, foreshadow Belshazzar's feast (ch 5).

1.3–7: Courtiers in exile. 3: *Palace master* (lit. "chief of his eunuchs," although the term may have lost the literal meaning). Nobility from conquered kingdoms were typically brought into exile (see 2 Kings 24.14–16); educating their youth was thought to increase acceptance of foreign rule and minimize the likelihood of revolt. *Israelites*: lit. "children/sons of Israel." **4:** *Without physical defect* may suggest priests (Lev 21.17–23) as well as sacrificial animals (Lev 22.19–22), or may simply indicate attractive individuals (Absalom in 2 Sam 14.25; Song 4.7). *Versed in every branch of wisdom* also describes the heroes of the author's generation (11.33,35; 12.3). *Chaldeans* can refer either to the Babylonians in general (5.30; 9.1), or more specifically to magicians and astrologers (2.2–5,10; 4.7; 5.7,11). **5:** *Three years* are cited by Persian texts as the time required for gaining knowledge of reli-

with knowledge and insight, and competent to serve in the king's palace; they were to be taught the literature and language of the Chaldeans. [5] The king assigned them a daily portion of the royal rations of food and wine. They were to be educated for three years, so that at the end of that time they could be stationed in the king's court. [6] Among them were Daniel, Hananiah, Mishael, and Azariah, from the tribe of Judah. [7] The palace master gave them other names: Daniel he called Belteshazzar, Hananiah he called Shadrach, Mishael he called Meshach, and Azariah he called Abednego.

[8] But Daniel resolved that he would not defile himself with the royal rations of food and wine; so he asked the palace master to allow him not to defile himself. [9] Now God allowed Daniel to receive favor and compassion from the palace master. [10] The palace master said to Daniel, "I am afraid of my lord the king; he has appointed your food and your drink. If he should see you in poorer condition than the other young men of your own age, you would endanger my head with the king." [11] Then Daniel asked the guard whom the palace master had appointed over Daniel, Hananiah, Mishael, and Azariah: [12] "Please test your servants for ten days. Let us be given vegetables to eat and water to drink. [13] You can then compare our appearance with the appearance of the young men who eat the royal rations, and deal with your servants according to what you observe." [14] So he agreed to this proposal and tested them for ten days. [15] At the end of ten days it was observed that they appeared better and fatter than all the young men who had been eating the royal rations. [16] So the guard continued to withdraw their royal rations and the wine they were to drink, and gave them vegetables. [17] To these four young men God gave knowledge and skill in every aspect of literature and wisdom; Daniel also had insight into all visions and dreams.

[18] At the end of the time that the king had set for them to be brought in, the palace master brought them into the presence of Nebuchadnezzar, [19] and the king spoke with them. And among them all, no one was found to compare with Daniel, Hananiah, Mishael, and Azariah; therefore they were stationed in the king's court. [20] In every matter of wisdom and understanding concerning which the king inquired of them, he found them ten times better than all the magicians and enchanters in his whole kingdom. [21] And Daniel continued there until the first year of King Cyrus.

2 In the second year of Nebuchadnezzar's reign, Nebuchadnezzar dreamed such dreams that his spirit was troubled and his

gious concerns. **6–7:** The original names are Jewish names, with "el" and "[y]ah" suffixes relating to Israel's God; all four occur in the book of Nehemiah (8.4; 10.2,6,23), although referring to different individuals. *Judah* is the tribe of Israel's monarchy. The new names refer to the Babylonian gods Bel (Marduk; see 1.2n; 2.26n.) and Nabu ("nego"). The meaning of the names Shadrach and Meshach is uncertain. Changing names was a well-known practice of kings (Gen 41.45; 2 Kings 24.17). Fidelity is marked when those whose names are changed preserve their ethnic and religious identity, such as Joseph and Daniel.

1.8–21: The first resistance. **8:** *Defile himself* by eating the royal rations, which likely contained meat that had been sacrificed and wine that had been poured out as a libation to Babylon's gods. In the postexilic period, diet was a major indication of Jewish identity (Tob 1.10–11; 1 Macc 1.62–63; Jdt 12.1–4; 2 Macc 6–7; Esth 14.17); early followers of Jesus addressed the question of eating food offered to idols (Acts 15.29; 21.25; 1 Cor 8; Rev 2.14,20). **10:** *The palace master*, Ashpenaz (v. 3), is one of several sympathetic court functionaries in these tales (Gen 41.9–13; Esth 2.15; Achior of the book of Judith). **12:** *Test your servants* suggests trial by ordeal, a stock folktale motif. *Ten days*, see Rev 2.10. *Vegetables . . . and water*, not typically offered in sacrifice or libation, are in contrast to meat and wine. **17:** God grants the youths what Nebuchadnezzar had sought to teach them (v. 4). *Visions and dreams* associates Daniel with Joseph, another handsome youth carried into a foreign land (Gen 39–50), as well as with Mordecai in the Gk Additions to Esther. **20:** *Magicians* appear in the sagas of Joseph (Gen 41.8,24) and Moses and Aaron (Ex 7.11,22; 8.7,18–19; 9.11). *Enchanters* are priests who make incantations (2.2,10,27; 4.4; 5.7,11,15). **21:** *First year of King Cyrus*, 539 BCE (see 6.28, 10.1; 2 Chr 36.22–23; Ezra 1.1–2; 6.3; Isa 45; 1 Esdr 2.1–3).

2.1–13: Nebuchadnezzar's test. **1:** *Second year* is 604 BCE. *Dreams* are a major motif in the book of Daniel; dreams, especially those of kings, were regarded as portents (Gen 15.12; 20.3; 28.11–15; 31.10–11,24; 37.5–10; 40.5; 41.1–32; Jdg 7.13–15; 1 Kings 3.5–15; Mt 1.20; 2.12,13,19,22; 27.19; Artemidorus's *Onirocritica*). *His spirit was troubled* also describes Pharaoh in Gen 41.8; Daniel in turn resembles Joseph in the foreign court. In Genesis 41

sleep left him. [2] So the king commanded that the magicians, the enchanters, the sorcerers, and the Chaldeans be summoned to tell the king his dreams. When they came in and stood before the king, [3] he said to them, "I have had such a dream that my spirit is troubled by the desire to understand it." [4] The Chaldeans said to the king (in Aramaic),[a] "O king, live forever! Tell your servants the dream, and we will reveal the interpretation." [5] The king answered the Chaldeans, "This is a public decree: if you do not tell me both the dream and its interpretation, you shall be torn limb from limb, and your houses shall be laid in ruins. [6] But if you do tell me the dream and its interpretation, you shall receive from me gifts and rewards and great honor. Therefore tell me the dream and its interpretation." [7] They answered a second time, "Let the king first tell his servants the dream, then we can give its interpretation." [8] The king answered, "I know with certainty that you are trying to gain time, because you see I have firmly decreed: [9] if you do not tell me the dream, there is but one verdict for you. You have agreed to speak lying and misleading words to me until things take a turn. Therefore, tell me the dream, and I shall know that you can give me its interpretation." [10] The Chaldeans answered the king, "There is no one on earth who can reveal what the king demands! In fact no king, however great and powerful, has ever asked such a thing of any magician or enchanter or Chaldean. [11] The thing that the king is asking is too difficult, and no one can reveal it to the king except the gods, whose dwelling is not with mortals."

[12] Because of this the king flew into a violent rage and commanded that all the wise men of Babylon be destroyed. [13] The decree was issued, and the wise men were about to be executed; and they looked for Daniel and his companions, to execute them. [14] Then Daniel responded with prudence and discretion to Arioch, the king's chief executioner, who had gone out to execute the wise men of Babylon; [15] he asked Arioch, the royal official, "Why is the decree of the king so urgent?" Arioch then explained the matter to Daniel. [16] So Daniel went in and requested that the king give him time and he would tell the king the interpretation.

[17] Then Daniel went to his home and informed his companions, Hananiah, Mishael, and Azariah, [18] and told them to seek mercy from the God of heaven concerning this mystery, so that Daniel and his companions with the rest of the wise men of Babylon might not perish. [19] Then the mystery was revealed

[a] The text from this point to the end of chapter 7 is in Aramaic

the reader is immediately told the content of the dream. Here, the content of the dream is withheld until Daniel's interpretation in vv. 31–45. **2:** *Magicians* and *Chaldeans*, see 1.4n.,20n.; they are not depicted favorably in biblical accounts. **4:** The greeting begins the Aramaic section; the book shifts back to Hebrew at 8.1. *Live forever*, a standard greeting to a ruler (3.9; 5.10; 6.6,21; 1 Kings 1.31; Neh 2.3). **5:** Nebuchadnezzar's insistence that the magicians *tell . . . the dream* as well as its interpretation tests their abilities; this hint of distrust anticipates his later celebration of Daniel's God. *Torn limb from limb* suggests the king's volatility (see also 3.29; 2 Macc 1.16). *Houses . . . laid in ruins*, cf. Ezra 6.11; Sir 21.18. **6:** *Gifts and rewards*, contrast Daniel's lack of interest in 5.17. **10–11:** The Chaldeans' admission, coupled with lack of prayer to their own gods, contrasts with Daniel's abilities and faith. **12–13:** Neither the magicians nor the executioners distinguish Daniel from the other *wise men*.

2.14–19: Daniel seeks divine aid. This section suggests that Daniel and his colleagues were not present at the earlier meeting with the king. **14:** Daniel's question indicates that at this point, he knows less than the magicians do. The name *Arioch* appears in Gen 14.1 and Jdt 1.6 to refer to a king from the distant east. Here, like Ashpenaz (1.10), he is a royal servant who willingly helps Daniel. **16:** Daniel's access to Nebuchadnezzar contrasts with v. 24, where he requires Arioch's intervention. This discrepancy, coupled with the reintroduction of Daniel's companions in v. 17, suggests that vv. 13–23 are an addition to the story. **17:** The companions were introduced in 1.6–7. **18:** *God of heaven* is a common phrase from the Persian and Hellenistic periods (vv. 19,37,44; 2 Chr 36.23; Ezra 1.2; 5.11–12; 6.9–10; 7.12,21,23; Neh 1.4–5; 2.4,20; Ps 136.26; Jon 1.9; Tob 7.12; 8.15; Jdt 5.8; 6.19; 11.17); its universalistic implications befit accounts set in exile. *Mystery* (2.19,27–30,47; 4.9; see also Rom 11.25; 16.25; 1 Cor 2.1; 15.51; Eph 1.9; 3.3–5,9; 5.32; 6.19), a term found frequently in the Dead Sea Scrolls, indicates a secret that can be learned through divine wisdom. *Rest of the wise men*, Daniel's intervention also saves the king's magicians; after Daniel's promotion (v. 48) they will turn on his colleagues (ch 3). **19:** Appropriately, Daniel

to Daniel in a vision of the night, and Daniel blessed the God of heaven.

20 Daniel said:

"Blessed be the name of God from age to age,
for wisdom and power are his.
21 He changes times and seasons,
deposes kings and sets up kings;
he gives wisdom to the wise
and knowledge to those who have understanding.
22 He reveals deep and hidden things;
he knows what is in the darkness,
and light dwells with him.
23 To you, O God of my ancestors,
I give thanks and praise,
for you have given me wisdom and power,
and have now revealed to me what we asked of you,
for you have revealed to us what the king ordered."

24 Therefore Daniel went to Arioch, whom the king had appointed to destroy the wise men of Babylon, and said to him, "Do not destroy the wise men of Babylon; bring me in before the king, and I will give the king the interpretation."

25 Then Arioch quickly brought Daniel before the king and said to him: "I have found among the exiles from Judah a man who can tell the king the interpretation." 26 The king said to Daniel, whose name was Belteshazzar, "Are you able to tell me the dream that I have seen and its interpretation?" 27 Daniel answered the king, "No wise men, enchanters, magicians, or diviners can show to the king the mystery that the king is asking, 28 but there is a God in heaven who reveals mysteries, and he has disclosed to King Nebuchadnezzar what will happen at the end of days. Your dream and the visions of your head as you lay in bed were these: 29 To you, O king, as you lay in bed, came thoughts of what would be hereafter, and the revealer of mysteries disclosed to you what is to be. 30 But as for me, this mystery has not been revealed to me because of any wisdom that I have more than any other living being, but in order that the interpretation may be known to the king and that you may understand the thoughts of your mind.

31 "You were looking, O king, and lo! there was a great statue. This statue was huge, its brilliance extraordinary; it was standing before you, and its appearance was frightening. 32 The head of that statue was of fine gold, its chest and arms of silver, its middle and thighs of bronze, 33 its legs of iron, its feet partly of iron and partly of clay. 34 As you looked on, a

receives a *vision of the night*, i.e., a dream (1.17n; 2.1n; 7.2; Gen 46.2; Zech 1.8; see also Job 20.8; 33.15; Isa 29.7), that discloses the meaning of Nebuchadnezzar's dream. The author defers relating the content of the dream and so heightens suspense. Daniel's words of praise to God in the following verses hint at the content.

2.20–23: Daniel's doxology. This short psalm (see e.g., Pss 41.13; 106.48; 139.11–12) emphasizes the divine as the repository of wisdom (see also Prov 2.6; Isa 60.19–20; Hab 3.4; Job 12.13) and as one who controls the reigns of kings. Hymns and prayers are frequently inserted into postexilic narratives (Add Est, Jdt, Tob). **20:** *Blessed be the name of God* is a major theme in Jewish prayers (Job 1.21; Ps 113.2; Mt 6.9; the Kaddish). *Wisdom and power*, divine attributes that will be bestowed upon Daniel (v. 23). **21:** *Deposes kings*, Job 12.18–21; Lk 1.52. Here, ironically, Nebuchadnezzar is not deposed, although Belshazzar will be (ch.5). **22:** See Job 12.22–23. **23:** *God of . . . ancestors*, a traditional epithet (Ex 3.13,15–16; Deut 1.11,21; 4.1; 6.3; 12.1; 27.3; Josh 18.3; 2 Chr 13.12; 28.9; 29.5; Ezra 8.28; 10.11; Wis 9.1; Acts 7.32) here emphasizes Daniel's continuity with his community in exile. *Thanks and praise*, 2 Chr 31.2. *Revealed to us*: Daniel includes his colleagues in the revelation.

2.24–30: Daniel approaches the king. **24–25:** See vv. 14–16. Arioch trusts Daniel's powers. 25: Arioch locates Daniel not among the Babylonian magicians but among the Judean exiles (see 13n). **26:** *Belteshazzar*, see 1.7. The name in Babylonian would be *Balat-su-utsur,* "Protect his life" or *Balat-shar-utsur*, "Protect the life of the prince." **27:** Daniel agrees with the magicians (see 10–11), then distinguishes his power from human wisdom. **28:** *End of days* here means the distant future (10.14; see also Isa 2.2; Jer 23.20; 30.24; Ezek 38.16; Hos 3.5). **29–30:** The true *revealer of mysteries* is God (cf. Gen 41.16). Daniel gives God full glory, but the effect of the revelation is nonetheless that Daniel will be promoted.

2.31–35: Nebuchadnezzar's dream. **31:** Giant figures are frequent in ancient Near Eastern dream records; there were also several famous giant statues. **32–33:** The metals are of decreasing worth; the descent from the golden age through silver, bronze, and iron periods appears in Greek (Hesiod, *Works and Days*), Roman (Ovid,

stone was cut out, not by human hands, and it struck the statue on its feet of iron and clay and broke them in pieces. 35 Then the iron, the clay, the bronze, the silver, and the gold, were all broken in pieces and became like the chaff of the summer threshing floors; and the wind carried them away, so that not a trace of them could be found. But the stone that struck the statue became a great mountain and filled the whole earth.

36 "This was the dream; now we will tell the king its interpretation. 37 You, O king, the king of kings—to whom the God of heaven has given the kingdom, the power, the might, and the glory, 38 into whose hand he has given human beings, wherever they live, the wild animals of the field, and the birds of the air, and whom he has established as ruler over them all—you are the head of gold. 39 After you shall arise another kingdom inferior to yours, and yet a third kingdom of bronze, which shall rule over the whole earth. 40 And there shall be a fourth kingdom, strong as iron; just as iron crushes and smashes everything,[a] it shall crush and shatter all these. 41 As you saw the feet and toes partly of potter's clay and partly of iron, it shall be a divided kingdom; but some of the strength of iron shall be in it, as you saw the iron mixed with the clay. 42 As the toes of the feet were part iron and part clay, so the kingdom shall be partly strong and partly brittle. 43 As you saw the iron mixed with clay, so will they mix with one another in marriage,[b] but they will not hold together, just as iron does not mix with clay. 44 And in the days of those kings the God of heaven will set up a kingdom that shall never be destroyed, nor shall this kingdom be left to another people. It shall crush all these kingdoms and bring them to an end, and it shall stand forever; 45 just as you saw that a stone was cut from the mountain not by hands, and that it crushed the iron, the bronze, the clay, the silver, and the gold. The great God has informed the king what shall be hereafter. The dream is certain, and its interpretation trustworthy."

46 Then King Nebuchadnezzar fell on his face, worshiped Daniel, and commanded that a grain offering and incense be offered to

[a] Gk Theodotion Syr Vg: Aram adds *and like iron that crushes*

[b] Aram *by human seed*

Metamorphoses) and Persian (*Bahman Yasht*) texts; see also 2 Esd 7.55–56. **33:** *Clay*, this substance cannot support the weightier metals. **34:** *A stone was cut out, not by human hands* indicates divine control of history. Idols are made with *human hands* (e.g., Deut 4.28; 2 Kings 19.18; 2 Chr 32.19; Pss 115.4; 135.15; Isa 17.19; Wis 13.10). **35:** *A great mountain* may suggest the permanence of the divine dwelling, Sinai, Zion, or the covenant community; see also v. 45.

2.36–45: Daniel's first interpretation. **37–38:** Elaborating Nebuchadnezzar's powers, Daniel actually celebrates the rule of his God. For Nebuchadnezzar as a ruler designated by God, see Jer 25.9; 27.5–7. **37:** *King of kings* is used for Nebuchadnezzar in Ezek 26.7. For other references, see Ezra 7.12; 2 Mac 13.4; and the Christ, 1 Tim 6.15; Rev 17.14; 19.16. **38:** Interpreting the dream allegorically, Daniel equates Nebuchadnezzar, and by extension the neo-Babylonian empire with gold. **39–44:** The other kingdoms, although not named, are probably Media (silver), Persia (bronze), and Greece (iron and clay; the two elements probably represent the division of Alexander the Great's eastern empire into Ptolemaic and Seleucid kingdoms). This four-fold pattern of kingdoms appears also in *Sibylline Oracles* 4, Babylonian and Greek writings, and the Dead Sea Scrolls (4QPseudoDan). **41–42:** *A divided kingdom* is the division of Alexander the Great's empire: originally partitioned among four generals, for our author's history, the important part was the East: Judea was under (strong) Ptolemaic (Egyptian) control during 323–198 BCE, and then, until Maccabean rule in 163 BCE, under (brittle) Seleucid (Syrian–Greek) control. **43:** *In marriage* (lit. "by human seed"), intermarriage between Ptolemaic and Seleucid dynasties in 252 and again in 194/93 BCE (see also 11.6n.,17) did not prevent conflict. **44:** *A kingdom that shall never be destroyed* could refer to God's direct rule or to Israel. Cf. 7.27, where it is the people Israel ("the Holy Ones") who will possess the kingdom. **45:** *Cut from the mountain*, compare 2.35, where the stone became a mountain. The image of Israel as a *stone* occurs in Isa 51.1 (cf. 28.16); Ps 118.22 (cited in reference to Jesus in Mt 21.42; Mk 12.10; Lk 20.17; 1 Pet 2.7). See also Zech 12.13.

2.46–49: Nebuchadnezzar's affirmation of Daniel's God, and **Daniel's promotion**. **46:** *Worshiped*, along with offerings of grain and incense, suggests that Nebuchadnezzar viewed Daniel as divine (see 3.5–7,10–12,14–

him. 47 The king said to Daniel, "Truly, your God is God of gods and Lord of kings and a revealer of mysteries, for you have been able to reveal this mystery!" 48 Then the king promoted Daniel, gave him many great gifts, and made him ruler over the whole province of Babylon and chief prefect over all the wise men of Babylon. 49 Daniel made a request of the king, and he appointed Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego over the affairs of the province of Babylon. But Daniel remained at the king's court.

3 King Nebuchadnezzar made a golden statue whose height was sixty cubits and whose width was six cubits; he set it up on the plain of Dura in the province of Babylon. 2 Then King Nebuchadnezzar sent for the satraps, the prefects, and the governors, the counselors, the treasurers, the justices, the magistrates, and all the officials of the provinces, to assemble and come to the dedication of the statue that King Nebuchadnezzar had set up. 3 So the satraps, the prefects, and the governors, the counselors, the treasurers, the justices, the magistrates, and all the officials of the provinces, assembled for the dedication of the statue that King Nebuchadnezzar had set up. When they were standing before the statue that Nebuchadnezzar had set up, 4 the herald proclaimed aloud, "You are commanded, O peoples, nations, and languages, 5 that when you hear the sound of the horn, pipe, lyre, trigon, harp, drum, and entire musical ensemble, you are to fall down and worship the golden statue that King Nebuchadnezzar has set up. 6 Whoever does not fall down and worship shall immediately be thrown into a furnace of blazing fire." 7 Therefore, as soon as all the peoples heard the sound of the horn, pipe, lyre, trigon, harp, drum, and entire musical ensemble, all the peoples, nations, and languages fell down and worshiped the golden statue that King Nebuchadnezzar had set up.

8 Accordingly, at this time certain Chaldeans came forward and denounced the Jews. 9 They said to King Nebuchadnezzar, "O king, live forever! 10 You, O king, have made a decree, that everyone who hears the sound of the horn, pipe, lyre, trigon, harp, drum, and entire musical ensemble, shall fall down and worship the golden statue, 11 and whoever does not fall down and worship shall be thrown into a furnace of blazing fire. 12 There are certain Jews whom you have appointed over the affairs of the province of Babylon: Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego. These pay no heed to you, O king. They do not serve your gods and they do not worship the golden statue that you have set up."

13 Then Nebuchadnezzar in furious rage commanded that Shadrach, Meshach, and

15,18,28; Isa 44.15–19; 46.6; the term is typically used in reference to the worship of idols). **47:** *Your God*, Nebuchadnezzar respects Daniel's God, but he is not a convert. **48:** *Made him ruler* is reminiscent of Joseph (Gen 41.37–45; see also Esth 8.1–2). **49:** Daniel's concern for his colleagues anticipates 3.12.

3.1–7: The golden statue. 1: Even though ch 3 may originally have been an independent story (note Daniel's absence), Nebuchadnezzar's golden statue echoes the interpretation of the statue in the vision (2.38) that his kingship is the "head of gold." Ironically, first the king worships Daniel and praises Daniel's God (2.46); now he commands worship of an idol. The Greek historian Herodotus (fifth century BCE) mentions a golden statue of Zeus (Bel) in Babylon. Sixty cubits by 6 cubits (the Babylonians used a sexagesimal numerical system) is approximately 90 x 9 ft (30 x 3 m); ten times as high as wide, the statue was likely an obelisk or stele (if it could stand at all). The exaggerated dimensions suggest folktale style. *Dura* means "plain" or "fortress" and need not suggest a specific place. **2–3:** Repetition of officers, a folkloric motif, indicates the (almost) universal acceptance of Nebuchadnezzar's order. **5:** The list of instruments, reprised in vv. 7,10,15, echoes the hyperbole. Several of the terms are Greek loanwords. Jews faithful to their Torah could not obey the command. **6:** The *furnace* also functions as a symbol of testing and purifying (Ps 12.6; Prov 17.3; 27.21; Isa 48.10; Wis 3.6). The scenario anticipates the policies of Antiochus IV Epiphanes, one of the earliest instances of governmental persecution for refusing to worship the state's god.

3.8–15: The youths accused. 8: *Chaldeans*, see 1.4n.,20n. *Denounced* (lit., "ate the pieces of") indicates maliciousness and professional jealousy. In ch. 2, Daniel had saved their lives. **9:** *Live forever*: see 2.4n. **10:** The by-now humorous repetition decreases the threat of the story. **12:** *Appointed*, see 2.49. Ethnic prejudice surfaces again in Esth 3.8. *Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego*, see 1.6–7n. **13–15:** Nebuchadnezzar's questioning repeats

Abednego be brought in; so they brought those men before the king. 14 Nebuchadnezzar said to them, "Is it true, O Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, that you do not serve my gods and you do not worship the golden statue that I have set up? 15 Now if you are ready when you hear the sound of the horn, pipe, lyre, trigon, harp, drum, and entire musical ensemble to fall down and worship the statue that I have made, well and good.[a] But if you do not worship, you shall immediately be thrown into a furnace of blazing fire, and who is the god that will deliver you out of my hands?"

16 Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego answered the king, "O Nebuchadnezzar, we have no need to present a defense to you in this matter. 17 If our God whom we serve is able to deliver us from the furnace of blazing fire and out of your hand, O king, let him deliver us.[b] 18 But if not, be it known to you, O king, that we will not serve your gods and we will not worship the golden statue that you have set up."

19 Then Nebuchadnezzar was so filled with rage against Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego that his face was distorted. He ordered the furnace heated up seven times more than was customary, 20 and ordered some of the strongest guards in his army to bind Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego and to throw them into the furnace of blazing fire. 21 So the men were bound, still wearing their tunics,[c] their trousers,[c] their hats, and their other garments, and they were thrown into the furnace of blazing fire. 22 Because the king's command was urgent and the furnace was so overheated, the raging flames killed the men who lifted Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego. 23 But the three men, Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, fell down, bound, into the furnace of blazing fire.

24 Then King Nebuchadnezzar was astonished and rose up quickly. He said to his counselors, "Was it not three men that we threw bound into the fire?" They answered the king, "True, O king." 25 He replied, "But I see four men unbound, walking in the middle of the fire, and they are not hurt; and the fourth has the appearance of a god."[d] 26 Nebuchadnezzar then approached the door of the furnace of blazing fire and said, "Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, servants of the Most High God, come out! Come here!" So Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego came out from the fire. 27 And the satraps, the prefects, the governors, and the king's counselors gathered together and saw that the fire had not had any power over the bodies of those men; the hair of their heads was not singed, their tunics[c] were not harmed, and not even the smell of fire came from them. 28 Nebuchadnezzar said, "Blessed be the God

[a] Aram lacks *well and good*

[b] Or *If our God whom we serve is able to deliver us, he will deliver us from the furnace of blazing fire and out of your hand, O king.*

[c] Meaning of Aram word uncertain

[d] Aram *a son of the gods*

the law, again. **15:** *Who is the god* may indicate that this story did not originally follow ch 2, where the king acknowledges the power of Daniel's God; given ch. 2, it shows that Nebuchadnezzar is at best capricious.

3.16–18: Resistance. 16: *Defense* (lit. "to answer, reply."). The refusal to respond continues the themes of Jewish resistance and divine power. **17–18:** Anticipating later martyrs, the youths assert their fidelity regardless of their fate.

3.19–27: The furnace. 19: Nebuchadnezzar's response continues to indicate volatility. **21:** Mention of clothing (the Aramaic has a rhythmic quality appropriate to folktales) foreshadows v. 27. **22:** The king's anger leads to his own soldiers' deaths. **23:** The Septuagint (LXX), Eastern Orthodox, and Roman Catholic Bibles insert here the Prayer of Azariah and the Song of the Three Jews; Protestant tradition places these texts in the Old Testament Apocrypha. **25:** The king is first to see the mysterious fourth figure. *Walking in the middle of the fire* without burning evokes the image of the burning bush (Ex 3.2). *Has the appearance of a god* (lit. "son of God") implies an angel or watcher (Gen 6.2,4; Job 1.6; 38.7; see also the "men" who aided Judas Maccabeus in 2 Macc 10.29–30, and Nebuchadnezzar's comment in 28). **26:** *Most High God*, Nebuchadnezzar answers the question he posed in v. 15. For this title, see also 4.2; 5.18,21; Ps 78.35,36; Jdt 13.18; Sir 7.9; 24.23; 41.8; Mk 5.7; Lk 8.28; Acts 16.17; Heb 7.1. **27:** The details enhance the miracle and evoke Isa 43.2.

3.28–30: Nebuchadnezzar's acknowledgment. 28: Ironically, Nebuchadnezzar celebrates that the youths

of Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, who has sent his angel and delivered his servants who trusted in him. They disobeyed the king's command and yielded up their bodies rather than serve and worship any god except their own God. 29 Therefore I make a decree: Any people, nation, or language that utters blasphemy against the God of Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego shall be torn limb from limb, and their houses laid in ruins; for there is no other god who is able to deliver in this way." 30 Then the king promoted Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego in the province of Babylon.

4 [a] King Nebuchadnezzar to all peoples, nations, and languages that live throughout the earth: May you have abundant prosperity! 2 The signs and wonders that the Most High God has worked for me I am pleased to recount.

3 How great are his signs,
how mighty his wonders!
His kingdom is an everlasting kingdom,
and his sovereignty is from generation
to generation.

4 [b] I, Nebuchadnezzar, was living at ease in my home and prospering in my palace. 5 I saw a dream that frightened me; my fantasies in bed and the visions of my head terrified me. 6 So I made a decree that all the wise men of Babylon should be brought before me, in order that they might tell me the interpretation of the dream. 7 Then the magicians, the enchanters, the Chaldeans, and the diviners came in, and I told them the dream, but they could not tell me its interpretation. 8 At last Daniel came in before me—he who was named Belteshazzar after the name of my god, and who is endowed with a spirit of the holy gods[c]—and I told him the dream: 9 "O Belteshazzar, chief of the magicians, I know that you are endowed with a spirit of the holy gods[c] and that no mystery is too difficult for you. Hear[d] the dream that I saw; tell me its interpretation.

10 [e] Upon my bed this is what I saw;
there was a tree at the center of the
earth,
and its height was great.
11 The tree grew great and strong,
its top reached to heaven,
and it was visible to the ends of the
whole earth.
12 Its foliage was beautiful,
its fruit abundant,
and it provided food for all.
The animals of the field found shade
under it,
the birds of the air nested in its
branches,

[a] Ch 3.31 in Aram
[b] Ch 4.1 in Aram
[c] Or *a holy, divine spirit*
[d] Theodotion: Aram *The visions of*
[e] Theodotion Syr Compare Gk: Aram adds *The visions of my head*

disobeyed the king's command. His reaction, similar to those of 2.47; 4.37; and 6.26–27, is, in the context of the book, only temporarily good news. **29:** The historically improbable decree follows official form (see Ezra 6.6–12). **30:** The three, fidelity rewarded (or perhaps restored to their earlier status, see 2.49), now disappear from the story.

4.1–37: Nebuchadnezzar's praise of God, composed as a letter to the Babylonian empire. **1:** *Throughout the earth*, Nebuchadnezzar claims universal rule. **2:** *Most High God*, see 3.26n. 2–3: *Signs and wonders*, popular description of God, e.g., 6.27; Ex 7.3; Deut 4.34; 6.22; 7.19; Neh 9.10; Ps 135.9; Jer 32.20–21; Heb 2.4. **3:** The traditional doxology recalls the king's earlier confession (2.47; 3.28–29). *Everlasting kingdom* (see 7.27; Ps 145.13) contrasts Nebuchadnezzar's Babylon; *his sovereignty*, a frequent term in chs 1–7, contrasts with Nebuchadnezzar's removal from this throne (see 4.33).

4.4–18: The king's vision. Much of this chapter is written as if Nebuchadnezzar is telling the story, although in vv. 19–33 it switches from first-person to third-person narration. **5–6:** The *dream* and the demand for *interpretation* recall ch 2. **7:** As in ch 2, the non-Jewish courtiers cannot solve mysteries. **7:** *Chaldeans*, see 1.4n., 20n. **8:** *Belteshazzar*, see 2.26n. Here Nebuchadnezzar interprets the name as containing the name of the god Bel (i.e., Marduk). This and the reference to the *holy gods* contrast with the letter's praise of the "Most High God" (v. 2). *Spirit of the holy gods*, see also vv. 9,18; 5:11,14,20. **9:** See 1.20; 2.4. *Mystery*, 1.18n. **10:** *A tree at the center of the earth* evokes cross-cultural myths of the center of the world and also symbolizes the king's self-image as the one who provides food and shelter (4.22; see also Ezek 17; 31; Mt 13.32; Mk 4.32; Lk 13.19). **11:** *Reached to*

and from it all living beings
were fed.

13 "I continued looking, in the visions of
my head as I lay in bed, and there was a holy
watcher, coming down from heaven. 14 He
cried aloud and said:
'Cut down the tree and chop off its branches,
strip off its foliage and scatter its fruit.
Let the animals flee from beneath it
and the birds from its branches.
15 But leave its stump and roots in the
ground,
with a band of iron and bronze,
in the tender grass of the field.
Let him be bathed with the dew of heaven,
and let his lot be with the animals of
the field
in the grass of the earth.
16 Let his mind be changed from that of a
human,
and let the mind of an animal be given
to him.
And let seven times pass over him.
17 The sentence is rendered by decree of
the watchers,
the decision is given by order of the
holy ones,
in order that all who live may know
that the Most High is sovereign over the
kingdom of mortals;
he gives it to whom he will
and sets over it the lowliest of human
beings.'

18 "This is the dream that I, King Nebu-
chadnezzar, saw. Now you, Belteshazzar,
declare the interpretation, since all the wise
men of my kingdom are unable to tell me the
interpretation. You are able, however, for you
are endowed with a spirit of the holy gods."[a]

19 Then Daniel, who was called Beltes-
hazzar, was severely distressed for a while.
His thoughts terrified him. The king said,
"Belteshazzar, do not let the dream or the
interpretation terrify you." Belteshazzar an-
swered, "My lord, may the dream be for those
who hate you, and its interpretation for your
enemies! 20 The tree that you saw, which
grew great and strong, so that its top reached
to heaven and was visible to the end of the
whole earth, 21 whose foliage was beautiful
and its fruit abundant, and which provided
food for all, under which animals of the field
lived, and in whose branches the birds of the
air had nests— 22 it is you, O king! You have
grown great and strong. Your greatness has
increased and reaches to heaven, and your
sovereignty to the ends of the earth. 23 And
whereas the king saw a holy watcher coming
down from heaven and saying, 'Cut down the
tree and destroy it, but leave its stump and
roots in the ground, with a band of iron and
bronze, in the grass of the field; and let him
be bathed with the dew of heaven, and let
his lot be with the animals of the field, until
seven times pass over him'— 24 this is the
interpretation, O king, and it is a decree of
the Most High that has come upon my lord
the king: 25 You shall be driven away from hu-
man society, and your dwelling shall be with
the wild animals. You shall be made to eat
grass like oxen, you shall be bathed with the
dew of heaven, and seven times shall pass
over you, until you have learned that the
Most High has sovereignty over the kingdom
of mortals, and gives it to whom he will.
26 As it was commanded to leave the stump
and roots of the tree, your kingdom shall be
re-established for you from the time that you

[a] Or *a holy, divine spirit*

heaven suggests the tower of Babel (see 1.2n.). **13:** *Holy watcher* (4.17,23; also 3.25n; 8.13, *Jubilees*, and *1 Enoch*) indicates an angel. **14:** *Animals* and *birds* likely represent the peoples of the empire. **15:** With *let him* the symbolism changes from tree to beast (in Hebrew, there is no neuter pronoun). **16:** The king becomes insane. *Seven times* probably means seven years. **17:** *Watchers*, see v. 13n.

4.19–27: Daniel's second interpretation. **19:** The story shifts to third-person narration. Whether Daniel is *distressed* because he is unsure of the interpretation, because he fears the king's repercussions upon hearing it, or because he has genuine concern for the king is not immediately clear. **20–22:** The repetition of the tree's greatness may indicate either sympathy or satire. **22:** For people symbolized by trees, see Jdg 9.8–15; Pss 1.3; 37.35; Jer 17.8. **23:** *Watcher*, see v. 13n. 24: *Most High*, see 3.26n. **25:** *You have learned* contrasts with v. 17, where the watchers state that *all who live* will learn. **26:** *Heaven* as a circumlocution for God is common in the Deutero-

learn that Heaven is sovereign. 27 Therefore,
O king, may my counsel be acceptable to you:
atone for[a] your sins with righteousness, and
your iniquities with mercy to the oppressed,
so that your prosperity may be prolonged."
28 All this came upon King Nebuchadnez-
zar. 29 At the end of twelve months he was
walking on the roof of the royal palace of
Babylon, 30 and the king said, "Is this not
magnificent Babylon, which I have built as a
royal capital by my mighty power and for my
glorious majesty?" 31 While the words were
still in the king's mouth, a voice came from
heaven: "O King Nebuchadnezzar, to you it
is declared: The kingdom has departed from
you! 32 You shall be driven away from human
society, and your dwelling shall be with the
animals of the field. You shall be made to eat
grass like oxen, and seven times shall pass
over you, until you have learned that the
Most High has sovereignty over the kingdom
of mortals and gives it to whom he will."
33 Immediately the sentence was fulfilled
against Nebuchadnezzar. He was driven away
from human society, ate grass like oxen, and
his body was bathed with the dew of heaven,
until his hair grew as long as eagles' feathers
and his nails became like birds' claws.
34 When that period was over, I,
Nebuchadnezzar, lifted my eyes to heaven,
and my reason returned to me.
I blessed the Most High,
and praised and honored the one who
lives forever.
For his sovereignty is an everlasting
sovereignty,
and his kingdom endures from
generation to generation.
35 All the inhabitants of the earth are
accounted as nothing,
and he does what he wills with the host
of heaven
and the inhabitants of the earth.
There is no one who can stay his hand
or say to him, "What are you doing?"
36 At that time my reason returned to me; and
my majesty and splendor were restored to
me for the glory of my kingdom. My coun-
selors and my lords sought me out, I was
re-established over my kingdom, and still
more greatness was added to me. 37 Now I,
Nebuchadnezzar, praise and extol and honor
the King of heaven,
for all his works are truth,
and his ways are justice;
and he is able to bring low
those who walk in pride.

5 King Belshazzar made a great festival
for a thousand of his lords, and he was
drinking wine in the presence of the thou-
sand.
2 Under the influence of the wine, Belshaz-
zar commanded that they bring in the vessels
of gold and silver that his father Nebuchad-
nezzar had taken out of the temple in Jerusa-

[a] Aram *break off*

canonical writings and the Gospel of Matthew. **27:** Correct behavior, mercy, and charity atone for sins against humanity. Daniel couches the interpretation in terms that allay the harshness of the sentence.

4.28–33: Nebuchadnezzar's punishment. **30:** The king's prideful statements serve as catalyst for his fall (see also Ezek 31.10). **31:** The *voice . . . from heaven*, an increasingly common motif in the Second Temple period, can offer either good or distressing news (Mt 3.17; Mk 1.11; Lk 3.22; many instances in rabbinic texts). **32–33:** Although no sources indicate the banishment of Nebuchadnezzar, the later Babylonian king Nabonidus inexplicably left Babylon to spend several years at Tema in north Arabia; his son, Belshazzar (see ch 5) served as regent. The "Prayer of Nabonidus" in the Dead Sea Scrolls records the king's seven years of illness and his cure by a Jewish exorcist. **33:** Nebuchadnezzar's description may anticipate the humanlike beasts of Daniel's apocalyptic visions (chs 7–12).

4.34–37: Restoration. With the completion of the term of punishment and the restoration of the Nebuchadnezzar's sanity, the story resumes his first-person narration. Vv. 34–35 echo and expand upon the opening doxology (v. 3). See also 2.20–21; 6.26–27. This king's affirmation does not influence his "son," Belshazzar (5.2). **37:** *Bring low those who walk in pride* may be ironic, given Nebuchadnezzar's glorying in his restored status.

5.1–9: The handwriting on the wall. **1:** *Belshazzar* was the son of Nabonidus, not of Nebuchadnezzar. He served as regent during Nabonidus's absence (see 4.32–33n.). The banquet is a standard motif in Second Temple literature (e.g., Esther). Lacking a statue of Israel's God to symbolize their conquest, the Babylonians took

lem, so that the king and his lords, his wives, and his concubines might drink from them. 3 So they brought in the vessels of gold and silver[a] that had been taken out of the temple, the house of God in Jerusalem, and the king and his lords, his wives, and his concubines drank from them. 4 They drank the wine and praised the gods of gold and silver, bronze, iron, wood, and stone.

5 Immediately the fingers of a human hand appeared and began writing on the plaster of the wall of the royal palace, next to the lampstand. The king was watching the hand as it wrote. 6 Then the king's face turned pale, and his thoughts terrified him. His limbs gave way, and his knees knocked together. 7 The king cried aloud to bring in the enchanters, the Chaldeans, and the diviners; and the king said to the wise men of Babylon, "Whoever can read this writing and tell me its interpretation shall be clothed in purple, have a chain of gold around his neck, and rank third in the kingdom." 8 Then all the king's wise men came in, but they could not read the writing or tell the king the interpretation. 9 Then King Belshazzar became greatly terrified and his face turned pale, and his lords were perplexed.

10 The queen, when she heard the discussion of the king and his lords, came into the banqueting hall. The queen said, "O king, live forever! Do not let your thoughts terrify you or your face grow pale. 11 There is a man in your kingdom who is endowed with a spirit of the holy gods.[b] In the days of your father he was found to have enlightenment, understanding, and wisdom like the wisdom of the gods. Your father, King Nebuchadnezzar, made him chief of the magicians, enchanters, Chaldeans, and diviners,[c] 12 because an excellent spirit, knowledge, and understanding to interpret dreams, explain riddles, and solve problems were found in this Daniel, whom the king named Belteshazzar. Now let Daniel be called, and he will give the interpretation."

13 Then Daniel was brought in before the king. The king said to Daniel, "So you are Daniel, one of the exiles of Judah, whom my father the king brought from Judah? 14 I have heard of you that a spirit of the gods[d] is in you, and that enlightenment, understanding, and excellent wisdom are found in you. 15 Now the wise men, the enchanters, have been brought in before me to read this writing and tell me its interpretation, but they were not able to give the interpretation of the matter. 16 But I have heard that you can give interpretations and solve problems. Now if you are able to read the writing and tell me its interpretation, you shall be clothed in purple, have a chain of gold around your neck, and rank third in the kingdom."

17 Then Daniel answered in the presence of the king, "Let your gifts be for yourself, or give your rewards to someone else! Nevertheless I will read the writing to the king and let him know the interpretation. 18 O king, the Most High God gave your father Nebuchadnezzar kingship, greatness, glory, and maj-

[a] Theodotion Vg: Aram lacks *and silver*
[b] Or *a holy, divine spirit*
[c] Aram adds *the king your father*
[d] Or *a divine spirit*

ritual vessels (1.2; Ezra 5.14; 6.5). **4:** The scene is one of sacrilegious debauchery; the Greek historians Herodotus and Xenophon describe such dissipation at the time of Babylon's fall. **5–6:** Although the writing is visible to all, only Belshazzar is alarmed; cf. 3.25. **7:** Like Nebuchadnezzar, Belshazzar summons Babylon's wise men; those familiar with the previous chapters can anticipate the magicians' failure and Daniel's success. *Rank third*: after the king and crown prince (see 2.48).

5.10–12: The queen's intervention. Like Ashpenaz (1.9) and Arioch (2.25), the queen—the only woman to speak in the book—recognizes Daniel's worth. The account may reflect knowledge of Nebuchadnezzar's wife who, according to Herodotus, had exceptional wisdom and political ability. She, as queen mother, knows of Daniel's abilities and rank, but Belshazzar does not (cf. Ex 1.8); Daniel, as representative of the Jews in exile, continually has to demonstrate the power of his God. **11:** *Holy gods*, the queen does not, however, recognize Daniel's theological claims. *Chaldeans*, see 1.4n., 20n. **12:** *Belteshazzar,* cf. 1.7; see 2.26n.

5.13–31: Deciphering the handwriting. **13:** Reference to the *exiles* makes a fitting start to a chapter that concludes with the fall of Babylon (5.30). **14:** *Spirit of the gods* shows Belshazzar's lack of familiarity with Daniel's faith (see v. 11). **17:** Daniel disdains the offer, although later he appears to accept it (5.29). **18–21** recalls 4.30–37.

esty. 19 And because of the greatness that he gave him, all peoples, nations, and languages trembled and feared before him. He killed those he wanted to kill, kept alive those he wanted to keep alive, honored those he wanted to honor, and degraded those he wanted to degrade. 20 But when his heart was lifted up and his spirit was hardened so that he acted proudly, he was deposed from his kingly throne, and his glory was stripped from him. 21 He was driven from human society, and his mind was made like that of an animal. His dwelling was with the wild asses, he was fed grass like oxen, and his body was bathed with the dew of heaven, until he learned that the Most High God has sovereignty over the kingdom of mortals, and sets over it whomever he will. 22 And you, Belshazzar his son, have not humbled your heart, even though you knew all this! 23 You have exalted yourself against the Lord of heaven! The vessels of his temple have been brought in before you, and you and your lords, your wives and your concubines have been drinking wine from them. You have praised the gods of silver and gold, of bronze, iron, wood, and stone, which do not see or hear or know; but the God in whose power is your very breath, and to whom belong all your ways, you have not honored.

24 "So from his presence the hand was sent and this writing was inscribed. 25 And this is the writing that was inscribed: MENE, MENE, TEKEL, and PARSIN. 26 This is the interpretation of the matter: MENE, God has numbered the days of[a] your kingdom and brought it to an end; 27 TEKEL, you have been weighed on the scales and found wanting; 28 PERES,[b] your kingdom is divided and given to the Medes and Persians."

29 Then Belshazzar gave the command, and Daniel was clothed in purple, a chain of gold was put around his neck, and a proclamation was made concerning him that he should rank third in the kingdom.

30 That very night Belshazzar, the Chaldean king, was killed. 31 [c]And Darius the Mede received the kingdom, being about sixty-two years old.

6 It pleased Darius to set over the kingdom one hundred twenty satraps, stationed throughout the whole kingdom, 2 and over them three presidents, including Daniel; to these the satraps gave account, so that the king might suffer no loss. 3 Soon Daniel distinguished himself above all the other presidents and satraps because an excellent spirit was in him, and the king planned to appoint him over the whole kingdom. 4 So the presidents and the satraps tried to find grounds for complaint against Daniel in connection with the kingdom. But they could find no grounds for complaint or any corruption, because he was faithful, and no negligence or corruption could be found in him. 5 The men said, "We shall not find any ground for complaint against this Daniel unless we find it in connection with the law of his God."

6 So the presidents and satraps conspired and came to the king and said to him, "O King Darius, live forever! 7 All the presidents of

[a] Aram lacks *the days of*
[b] The singular of *Parsin*
[c] Ch 6.1 in Aram

22: Belshazzar's memory is selective, as was Nebuchadnezzar's (ch 3). **25–28:** The mysterious words are nouns that refer to various weights. Daniel will interpret them according to the related verbs. *MENE* (Heb "mina") is a large weight (ca. 20 oz [.5 kg]); the related verb means "to count" or "to number." *TEKEL* (Heb "shekel") is one-sixtieth of a mene; the related verb means "to weigh." *PARSIN* is the plural of "peres," which equals a half-shekel; the related verb means "to divide." The interpretation does not explain why the first word (*mene*) is repeated or why the last (*parsin*) is plural. The weights, which match the descending values of the metals in 2.32, symbolize Nebuchadnezzar's successors, from Belshazzar through the Medes and the Persians (see 2.39–44). **29:** Belshazzar appears oblivious to the fateful prediction: did he think rewarding Daniel would forestall it? **31:** No such person as *Darius the Mede* is known outside this biblical reference; later references in Jewish and Christian sources are dependent on Daniel's account. It was Cyrus the Persian who overthrew the Neo-Babylonian empire in 539 BCE. Darius I, not a Mede but a Persian, ruled 522–486 BCE; he facilitated the rebuilding of Jerusalem (Ezra 6).

6.1–9: Persian plot against Daniel. **1:** *Darius*, see 5.31n. **2:** Like Joseph and Mordecai, Daniel advances in the foreign court; how Daniel impressed the Persian king is not recorded. **3:** Daniel distinguished himself apparently by political acumen, not supernatural powers. **5:** The first reference to Jewish *law* (Aram. "Dat", not "Torah")

the kingdom, the prefects and the satraps,
the counselors and the governors are agreed
that the king should establish an ordinance
and enforce an interdict, that whoever prays
to anyone, divine or human, for thirty days,
except to you, O king, shall be thrown into
a den of lions. [8] Now, O king, establish the
interdict and sign the document, so that it
cannot be changed, according to the law of
the Medes and the Persians, which cannot be
revoked." [9] Therefore King Darius signed the
document and interdict.

[10] Although Daniel knew that the docu-
ment had been signed, he continued to go to
his house, which had windows in its upper
room open toward Jerusalem, and to get
down on his knees three times a day to pray
to his God and praise him, just as he had
done previously. [11] The conspirators came
and found Daniel praying and seeking mercy
before his God. [12] Then they approached
the king and said concerning the interdict,
"O king! Did you not sign an interdict, that
anyone who prays to anyone, divine or
human, within thirty days except to you,
O king, shall be thrown into a den of lions?"
The king answered, "The thing stands
fast, according to the law of the Medes and
Persians, which cannot be revoked." [13] Then
they responded to the king, "Daniel, one
of the exiles from Judah, pays no attention
to you, O king, or to the interdict you have
signed, but he is saying his prayers three
times a day."

[14] When the king heard the charge, he was
very much distressed. He was determined
to save Daniel, and until the sun went down
he made every effort to rescue him. [15] Then
the conspirators came to the king and said
to him, "Know, O king, that it is a law of
the Medes and Persians that no interdict or
ordinance that the king establishes can be
changed."

[16] Then the king gave the command, and
Daniel was brought and thrown into the den
of lions. The king said to Daniel, "May your
God, whom you faithfully serve, deliver you!"
[17] A stone was brought and laid on the mouth
of the den, and the king sealed it with his
own signet and with the signet of his lords,
so that nothing might be changed concern-
ing Daniel. [18] Then the king went to his palace
and spent the night fasting; no food was
brought to him, and sleep fled from him.

[19] Then, at break of day, the king got up
and hurried to the den of lions. [20] When he
came near the den where Daniel was, he cried
out anxiously to Daniel, "O Daniel, servant
of the living God, has your God whom you
faithfully serve been able to deliver you from
the lions?" [21] Daniel then said to the king,
"O king, live forever! [22] My God sent his angel
and shut the lions' mouths so that they would
not hurt me, because I was found blameless
before him; and also before you, O king, I
have done no wrong." [23] Then the king was
exceedingly glad and commanded that Daniel
be taken up out of the den. So Daniel was

in the book of Daniel. **7:** The plot resembles that of ch 3. **8–9:** The plot of the book of Esther (1.19; 8.8) also relies on the unalterable law of the Medes and the Persians; it is unlikely, despite occasional ancient testimony, that Median and Persian law functioned in this manner. Like Ahasuerus in Esther, Darius acts, without thinking, on his courtiers' advice. Historically, Persian rulers supported the various religious beliefs and practices of those under imperial rule.

6.10–17: Daniel's defiance. **10:** *Windows . . . open* indicates either happenstance or Daniel's deliberate flouting of the edict (see Tob 2.8). *Toward Jerusalem*, the direction toward which Jews pray (1 Kings 8.35; 1 Esd 4.58). *Three times* a day for prayer was Jewish custom by early rabbinic (*m. Ber*. 4.5) and early Christian (*Didache* 8) times. **13:** *Exiles from Judah* shows ethnic antagonism: the courtiers remind Darius that Daniel is not "one of them" (see 2.25; 5:13). **14:** Sympathy for Darius may be compromised by his willingness to pronounce the edict that condemned Daniel (v. 9). **16:** Darius prays for Daniel's safety, but does not himself acknowledge a worship of Daniel's God.

6.18–23: In the lions' den (cf. Bel 31–42). **18–19:** Darius appears more agitated than Daniel. **18:** *Fasting* is a cross-cultural practice often accompanying supplicatory prayer and repentance. Ironically, his not eating mirrors what he hopes the lions are doing. 20: The king continues to highlight Daniel's fidelity. **22:** *Sent his angel* recalls the fourth man in the furnace (3.25). *I have done no wrong*, Daniel subtly faults the king for endangering an innocent person, even as he equates his blamelessness before God with his blamelessness before the king.

taken up out of the den, and no kind of harm was found on him, because he had trusted in his God. 24 The king gave a command, and those who had accused Daniel were brought and thrown into the den of lions—they, their children, and their wives. Before they reached the bottom of the den the lions overpowered them and broke all their bones in pieces.

25 Then King Darius wrote to all peoples and nations of every language throughout the whole world: "May you have abundant prosperity! 26 I make a decree, that in all my royal dominion people should tremble and fear before the God of Daniel:

For he is the living God,
enduring forever.
His kingdom shall never be destroyed,
and his dominion has no end.
27 He delivers and rescues,
he works signs and wonders in heaven
and on earth;
for he has saved Daniel
from the power of the lions."

28 So this Daniel prospered during the reign of Darius and the reign of Cyrus the Persian.

7 In the first year of King Belshazzar of Babylon, Daniel had a dream and visions of his head as he lay in bed. Then he wrote down the dream:[a] 2 I,[b] Daniel, saw in my vision by night the four winds of heaven stirring up the great sea, 3 and four great beasts came up out of the sea, different from one another. 4 The first was like a lion and had eagles' wings. Then, as I watched, its wings were plucked off, and it was lifted up from the ground and made to stand on two feet like a human being; and a human mind was given to it. 5 Another beast appeared, a second one, that looked like a bear. It was raised up on one side, had three tusks[c] in its mouth among its teeth and was told, "Arise, devour many bodies!" 6 After this, as I watched, another appeared, like a leopard. The beast had four wings of a bird on its back and four heads; and dominion was given to it. 7 After this I saw in the visions by night a fourth beast, terrifying and dreadful and exceedingly strong. It had great iron teeth and was devouring, breaking in pieces, and stamping what was left with its feet. It was different from all the beasts that preceded it, and it had ten horns. 8 I was considering the horns, when another horn appeared, a little one

[a] Q Ms Theodotion: MT adds *the beginning of the words; he said*
[b] Theodotion: Aram *Daniel answered and said, I*
[c] Or *ribs*

6.24–28: Restitution. **24:** *Children . . . wives* (see also Josh 7.24–26; Bel 21) indicate that family members suffer because of the misdeeds of the family leader. **25:** The letter and doxology resemble 4.1–3,34–37. **26:** The king, ironically, issues another law mandating a particular form of worship. **28:** Cyrus the Persian (ruled 590–530 BCE) promulgated the edict in 538 that permitted Judean exiles Babylon to return home (Ezra 1.1–4; 6.3–5; Isa 44.28; 45.1).

7.1–8: The first vision. Unlike Nebuchadnezzar's dreams and Belshazzar's visions, Daniel's apocalyptic revelations focus less on the dreamer's fate and more on international events. Also in contrast to the earlier scenes, Daniel is now himself in need of an interpreter. The history recorded in the visions suggests that they were composed sometime before 164 BCE, when Judas Maccabeus purified the Temple that Antiochus IV Epiphanes had profaned in 167. **1:** *The first year of King Belshazzar*, 553 BCE (Belshazzar served then as co-regent with Nabonidus). **2:** Daniel describes his dream in the first person. **3:** The *sea* is associated with chaos and beasts (e.g., Isa 27.1; Job 9.13); four beasts symbolize kingdoms, Babylon, Media, Persia, and Greece (2.31–45; 7.17; Pss 68.30; *1 Enoch*, and throughout the book of Revelation). **4:** *A lion*, the kingdom of Babylon. Hybrid creatures are a standard motif in late prophetic and early apocalyptic literature (see e.g., Ezek 1.5–7). The beast *like a human* reverses the image of Nebuchadnezzar (4.33). *Plucked* wings indicates both loss of power and transition to human form. *Human mind* may reflect Nebuchadnezzar's return to sanity in 4.34–35. **5:** The *bear* represents the Medes (cf. Jer 51.11 on the Medes attacking Babylon). **6:** The *leopard* is Persia. *Four heads* may anticipate the four Persian kings of 11.2. **7:** The *fourth beast* is the Greek kingdom, in particular the Seleucid kingdom founded by Seleucus I, one of Alexander the Great's generals, in Syria and Mesopotamia after Alexander's death in 323 BCE. *Different*: because of its non-Mesopotamian origins and more extensive geographical spread. *Stamping* may suggest the elephant, part of the Greek war effort (1 Macc 1.17; 3.34; 6.28–47). *Ten horns* is a round number representing the kings of the Seleucid empire from Seleucus I until the time of Antiochus IV Epiphanes. **8:** The

coming up among them; to make room for it,
three of the earlier horns were plucked up by
the roots. There were eyes like human eyes in
this horn, and a mouth speaking arrogantly.
9 As I watched,
thrones were set in place,
and an Ancient One[a] took his throne,
his clothing was white as snow,
and the hair of his head like pure wool;
his throne was fiery flames,
and its wheels were burning fire.
10 A stream of fire issued
and flowed out from his presence.
A thousand thousands served him,
and ten thousand times ten thousand
stood attending him.
The court sat in judgment,
and the books were opened.
11 I watched then because of the noise of the
arrogant words that the horn was speaking.
And as I watched, the beast was put to death,
and its body destroyed and given over to
be burned with fire. 12 As for the rest of the
beasts, their dominion was taken away, but
their lives were prolonged for a season and a
time. 13 As I watched in the night visions,
I saw one like a human being[b]
coming with the clouds of heaven.
And he came to the Ancient One[c]
and was presented before him.
14 To him was given dominion
and glory and kingship,
that all peoples, nations, and languages
should serve him.
His dominion is an everlasting dominion
that shall not pass away,
and his kingship is one
that shall never be destroyed.
15 As for me, Daniel, my spirit was troubled
within me,[d] and the visions of my head terri-
fied me. 16 I approached one of the attendants
to ask him the truth concerning all this. So he
said that he would disclose to me the inter-
pretation of the matter: 17 "As for these four
great beasts, four kings shall arise out of the
earth. 18 But the holy ones of the Most High
shall receive the kingdom and possess the
kingdom forever—forever and ever."
19 Then I desired to know the truth concern-
ing the fourth beast, which was different from
all the rest, exceedingly terrifying, with its
teeth of iron and claws of bronze, and which
devoured and broke in pieces, and stamped
what was left with its feet; 20 and concerning
the ten horns that were on its head, and con-
cerning the other horn, which came up and to
make room for which three of them fell out—

[a] Aram *an Ancient of Days*
[b] Aram *one like a son of man*
[c] Aram *the Ancient of Days*
[d] Aram *troubled in its sheath*

little horn is Antiochus IV (8.9; 1 Macc 1.41–50), who attempted to outlaw Jewish practices. *Three of the earlier horns*, Antiochus IV was fourth in the line of succession, after his brother, Seleucus IV, and his brothers' sons, Antiochus and Demetrius. Seleucus was murdered by his prime minister, Heliodorus, and Demetrius was exiled to Rome. Antiochus IV was directly responsible only for the death of his nephew Antiochus, but the book of Daniel apparently holds him responsible for killing or displacing all three.

7.9–14: The heavenly throne room. See 1 Kings 22.19; Isa 6; Ezek 1.26–28; *1 Enoch* 14. **9:** *Thrones*, although other parts of the Hebrew Bible and other Jewish apocalypses refer to only a single throne in heaven, the multiple thrones of the court setting in Daniel 7 are reflected in early Christian texts (see e.g., Mt 19.28; Rev 20.4). *Ancient One*, lit. "Ancient of Days," i.e., God. *White clothing*, Mt 28.3; Rev 3.5. *Fiery flames*, Ezek 1.4; *wheels*, Ezek 1.15–21; 10.2. **10:** *The books* in which human deeds are recorded are commonly associated with the divine court (12.1n.; Isa 65.6; Mal 3.16; *1 Enoch* 90.20, Rev 20.12). **12:** *Prolonged for a season and a time*, the empires are stripped of power, but they are not destroyed. **13:** *One like a human being*, also translated "son of man," can be seen as the faithful community (a corporate symbol, for Daniel indicating faithful Jews), the angel Michael, Israel's guardian (10.13,21; see also Rev 12); Gabriel (see 9.21), Judas Maccabeus, Daniel himself. The term "son of man" can also mean "human being" (Ezek 2.1; Job 25.6), here in opposition to the animalistic nature of the previous kingdoms. In the Synoptic Gospels, the term is Jesus' preferred self-designation. **14:** Cf. 4.3,34; 6.26.

7.15–28: The interpretation. **15:** *Spirit was troubled* is a typical reaction to visions (2.1; 8.27; Gen 41.8); it is not clear whether Daniel has awakened or is still dreaming. **17:** The *four kings* are the kingdoms of Babylon, Media, Persia, and Greece. **18:** *The holy ones* are members of the heavenly court (e.g., Deut 33.2–3; Job 5.1; 15.15; Ps 89.5,7; Zech 14.5) as well as God's people (e.g., Ps 16.3; 34.9; Wis 3.9) The term may here specifically refer to

the horn that had eyes and a mouth that spoke arrogantly, and that seemed greater than the others. 21 As I looked, this horn made war with the holy ones and was prevailing over them, 22 until the Ancient One[a] came; then judgment was given for the holy ones of the Most High, and the time arrived when the holy ones gained possession of the kingdom.

23 This is what he said: "As for the fourth beast,
there shall be a fourth kingdom on earth
that shall be different from all the other kingdoms;
it shall devour the whole earth,
and trample it down, and break it to pieces.
24 As for the ten horns,
out of this kingdom ten kings shall arise,
and another shall arise after them.
This one shall be different from the former ones,
and shall put down three kings.
25 He shall speak words against the Most High,
shall wear out the holy ones of the Most High,
and shall attempt to change the sacred seasons and the law;
and they shall be given into his power
for a time, two times,[b] and half a time.
26 Then the court shall sit in judgment,
and his dominion shall be taken away,
to be consumed and totally destroyed.
27 The kingship and dominion
and the greatness of the kingdoms under the whole heaven
shall be given to the people of the holy ones of the Most High;
their kingdom shall be an everlasting kingdom,
and all dominions shall serve and obey them."

28 Here the account ends. As for me, Daniel, my thoughts greatly terrified me, and my face turned pale; but I kept the matter in my mind.

8 In the third year of the reign of King Belshazzar a vision appeared to me, Daniel, after the one that had appeared to me at first. 2 In the vision I was looking and saw myself in Susa the capital, in the province of Elam,[c] and I was by the river Ulai.[d] 3 I looked up and saw a ram standing beside the river.[e] It had two horns. Both horns were long, but one was longer than the other, and the longer one came up second. 4 I saw the ram charging westward and northward and southward. All beasts were powerless to withstand it, and no one could rescue from its power; it did as it pleased and became strong.

5 As I was watching, a male goat appeared from the west, coming across the face of the whole earth without touching the ground. The goat had a horn[f] between its eyes. 6 It came toward the ram with the two horns that I had seen standing beside the river,[e] and it ran at it with savage force. 7 I saw it

[a] Aram *the Ancient of Days*
[b] Aram *a time, times*
[c] Gk Theodotion: MT Q Ms repeat *in the vision I was looking*
[d] Or *the Ulai Gate*
[e] Or *gate*
[f] Theodotion: Gk *one horn*; Heb *a horn of vision*

Jews persecuted by Antiochus. **22:** The prediction anticipates the reversal of fortune for the persecuted faithful, just as the folktales of chs 1–6 depict. **23–25:** The greater detail suggests a time closer to the author's own. The *fourth beast* and the *ten horns*, see 7.7–8n. **25:** *Words against the Most High*, Antiochus IV Epiphanes was the first Hellenistic king to use divine self-designations on coinage. *Sacred seasons and the law* are practices marking Jewish identity disrupted by Antiochus (1 Macc 1.45; 2 Macc 6.6). *A time, two times, and half a time* indicates three and a half years (see 4.36), approximately the time of Antiochus's persecution. Three and a half is also half of seven, the perfect number. **28:** *Kept the matter in my mind*, apocalyptic visions are often kept secret until an opportune time (2 Esd 14.45–46).

8.1–14: The second vision. With this chapter, the book of Daniel reverts from Aramaic to Hebrew. **1:** The earlier vision is that of ch 7. **2:** Susa, the royal city of Persia (Esth 1.2). *River Ulai*, a river near Susa; visionary experiences are occasionally associated with riverbank settings (Ezek 1.1). **3–4:** *Two horns* are Media and Persia (see v. 20). *The ram* may be connected to an astrological symbol. **5:** *The goat* may also be a zodiac sign; here it symbolizes Alexander the Great (see v. 21), whose empire originated *west* of Mesopotamia. *Across . . . the whole*

approaching the ram. It was enraged against it and struck the ram, breaking its two horns. The ram did not have power to withstand it; it threw the ram down to the ground and trampled upon it, and there was no one who could rescue the ram from its power. [8] Then the male goat grew exceedingly great; but at the height of its power, the great horn was broken, and in its place there came up four prominent horns toward the four winds of heaven.

[9] Out of one of them came another[a] horn, a little one, which grew exceedingly great toward the south, toward the east, and toward the beautiful land. [10] It grew as high as the host of heaven. It threw down to the earth some of the host and some of the stars, and trampled on them. [11] Even against the prince of the host it acted arrogantly; it took the regular burnt offering away from him and overthrew the place of his sanctuary. [12] Because of wickedness, the host was given over to it together with the regular burnt offering;[b] it cast truth to the ground, and kept prospering in what it did. [13] Then I heard a holy one speaking, and another holy one said to the one that spoke, "For how long is this vision concerning the regular burnt offering, the transgression that makes desolate, and the giving over of the sanctuary and host to be trampled?"[b] [14] And he answered him,[c] "For two thousand three hundred evenings and mornings; then the sanctuary shall be restored to its rightful state."

[15] When I, Daniel, had seen the vision, I tried to understand it. Then someone appeared standing before me, having the appearance of a man, [16] and I heard a human voice by the Ulai, calling, "Gabriel, help this man understand the vision." [17] So he came near where I stood; and when he came, I became frightened and fell prostrate. But he said to me, "Understand, O mortal,[d] that the vision is for the time of the end."

[18] As he was speaking to me, I fell into a trance, face to the ground; then he touched me and set me on my feet. [19] He said, "Listen, and I will tell you what will take place later in the period of wrath; for it refers to the appointed time of the end. [20] As for the ram that you saw with the two horns, these are the kings of Media and Persia. [21] The male goat[e] is the king of Greece, and the great horn between its eyes is the first king. [22] As for the horn that was broken, in place of which four

[a] Cn Compare 7.8: Heb *one*
[b] Meaning of Heb uncertain
[c] Gk Theodotion Syr Vg: Heb *me*
[d] Heb *son of man*
[e] Or *shaggy male goat*

earth suggests Alexander's swift eastern campaign. **8:** *Great horn was broken*, Alexander died in 323 BCE. *Four prominent horns* are Alexander's generals who divided his empire. **9:** The little horn is, again (see 7.8), Antiochus IV Epiphanes. *The beautiful land* is Israel or, more specifically, Jerusalem (11.16,41; Jer 3.19; Ezek 20.6,15). **10–11:** See Isa 14.12–16; Antiochus's outrages have cosmic import. *Host of heaven* can refer to stars or to heavenly beings or to both. Dan 12.3 connects the heavenly luminaries with God's faithful worshipers. Images of heavenly and human beings converge. For *threw down* some of the host, see Rev 12.4. **11:** *Prince of the host* is probably Michael, serving as God's representative; elsewhere *prince* designates angels (10.13,20–21). *Took the . . . offering away*, Antiochus and his supporters replaced the Temple's offerings (Ex 29.38–42; Num 28–29; Ezra 3.5; Neh 10.34; Ezek 46.1–5) with sacrifices to Zeus (1 Macc 1.45,59; 2 Macc 6.2). **12:** *Truth* or true religion is, for Daniel, worship of the God of Israel only. **13:** *Holy ones*, see 7.18n. "*How long*" is a major question of both penitential and apocalyptic literature (Ps 6.3; 79.5; 80.4; 90.13; Isa 6.11; Jer 12.4; Zech 1.12). *The transgression that makes desolate* is likely the structure erected on the altar of burnt offering in the Temple (1 Macc 1.54; 2 Macc 6.2); the Heb term ("pesha' shomem") is a play on the expression "Baal Shamem," or "lord of heaven," an epithet of Zeus.

8.15–27: Gabriel's interpretation. 15: *Appearance of a man* indicates an angel; see 7.13n. **16:** *Ulai*, see v. 2n. *Gabriel*, whose name means "man of God" or "God is my hero/warrior," serves as a divine messenger (Lk 1.19,26). **17:** *Fell prostrate*, Daniel had not bowed to any Babylonian king or idol; the response is appropriate to an epiphany (10.9; Josh 5.14; Ezek 1.28; 3.23). *Mortal*, Heb "ben 'adam," or "son of man" (this is not the same term used in 7.13). *Time of the end* indicates the final judgment, restitution of the faithful, and punishment of the wicked (see Hab 2.3). **18:** *Trance* (lit. "deep sleep") is the same term used for Adam's (Gen 2.21) and Abraham's (Gen 15.12) sleep. Touch conveys heavenly concern (10.10,16,18; Isa 6.7; Jer 1.9). *Set me on my feet*, see Ezek 2.1–2.

others arose, four kingdoms shall arise from his[a] nation, but not with his power.

23 At the end of their rule,
when the transgressions have reached their full measure,
a king of bold countenance shall arise,
skilled in intrigue.
24 He shall grow strong in power,[b]
shall cause fearful destruction,
and shall succeed in what he does.
He shall destroy the powerful
and the people of the holy ones.
25 By his cunning
he shall make deceit prosper under his hand,
and in his own mind he shall be great.
Without warning he shall destroy many
and shall even rise up against the Prince of princes.
But he shall be broken, and not by human hands.

26 The vision of the evenings and the mornings that has been told is true. As for you, seal up the vision, for it refers to many days from now."

27 So I, Daniel, was overcome and lay sick for some days; then I arose and went about the king's business. But I was dismayed by the vision and did not understand it.

9 In the first year of Darius son of Ahasuerus, by birth a Mede, who became king over the realm of the Chaldeans— 2 in the first year of his reign, I, Daniel, perceived in the books the number of years that, according to the word of the LORD to the prophet Jeremiah, must be fulfilled for the devastation of Jerusalem, namely, seventy years.

3 Then I turned to the Lord God, to seek an answer by prayer and supplication with fasting and sackcloth and ashes. 4 I prayed to the LORD my God and made confession, saying,

"Ah, Lord, great and awesome God, keeping covenant and steadfast love with those who love you and keep your commandments, 5 we have sinned and done wrong, acted wickedly and rebelled, turning aside from your commandments and ordinances. 6 We have not listened to your servants the prophets, who spoke in your name to our kings, our princes, and our ancestors, and to all the people of the land.

7 "Righteousness is on your side, O Lord, but open shame, as at this day, falls on us, the people of Judah, the inhabitants of Jerusalem, and all Israel, those who are near and those who are far away, in all the lands to which you have driven them, because of the treachery that they have committed against you. 8 Open shame, O LORD, falls on us, our kings, our officials, and our ancestors, because we have sinned against you. 9 To the Lord our God belong mercy and forgiveness, for we have rebelled against him, 10 and have not obeyed the voice of the LORD our God by following his laws, which he set before us by his servants the prophets.

11 "All Israel has transgressed your law and turned aside, refusing to obey your voice. So

[a] Gk Theodotion Vg: Heb *the*

[b] Theodotion and one Gk Ms: Heb repeats (from 8.22) *but not with his power*

19: *The period of wrath* refers to the time of foreign domination. **23:** On *transgressions* that must reach a certain number, see e.g., Gen 15.16; 2 Macc 6.14; 2 Esd 4.36–37. **25:** *Without warning* may refer to the surprise attack against Jerusalem (1 Macc 1.29–30). *Prince of princes*, see v. 11n. *Not by human hands*, in contrast to the military resistance of the Maccabees, Daniel expects divine intervention (see 2.34). The circumstances of Antiochus IV's death are unclear. He died in Persia in late 164 BCE, either in the act of robbing a temple (so Polybius and 2 Macc 1.14–16) or of a sudden illness (so 1 Macc 6.1–17; 2 Macc 9.1–29). **26:** See 7.28n.; Isa 29.11. **27:** Cf. 7.28.

9.1–19: Daniel's prayer. **1:** An attempt to resolve the chronological problem of 5.31 (see note) and ch 6. **2:** Citing other scriptures is rare in the Hebrew Bible (cf. Jer 26.17–18; see also Tob 2.6n.); the reference is to Jer 25.11–12; 29.10–14. *Devastation*, Jerusalem was destroyed by the Babylonians in 586 BCE. 3: *Fasting, sackcloth, and ashes* are traditional indications of mourning and penance, including in perilous times (see 6.18n; 1 Kings 21.27; Isa 58.5; Ezra 8.21–23; Neh 9.1; Esth 4.1–4; 2 Macc 13.12; Jdt 4.9–11); fasting also serves as preparation for visionary experiences (Ex 34.28; 1 Kings 19.8). **4–19:** The prayer is similar to other postexilic penitential prayers; cf. Ezra 9; Neh 9; Bar 1.15–3.8. Communal confession is typical of Jewish piety; even in cases where no sin is indicated, prayers begin with confession and repentance (see also 1 Kings 8.47; 2 Chr 6.37; Ps 106.6). **7:** *All Israel* includes the ten tribes dispersed with the destruction of the northern kingdom of Israel by Assyria in 722 BCE. **10:** *Laws*,

the curse and the oath written in the law of Moses, the servant of God, have been poured out upon us, because we have sinned against you. 12 He has confirmed his words, which he spoke against us and against our rulers, by bringing upon us a calamity so great that what has been done against Jerusalem has never before been done under the whole heaven. 13 Just as it is written in the law of Moses, all this calamity has come upon us. We did not entreat the favor of the LORD our God, turning from our iniquities and reflecting on his[a] fidelity. 14 So the LORD kept watch over this calamity until he brought it upon us. Indeed, the LORD our God is right in all that he has done; for we have disobeyed his voice.

15 "And now, O Lord our God, who brought your people out of the land of Egypt with a mighty hand and made your name renowned even to this day—we have sinned, we have done wickedly. 16 O Lord, in view of all your righteous acts, let your anger and wrath, we pray, turn away from your city Jerusalem, your holy mountain; because of our sins and the iniquities of our ancestors, Jerusalem and your people have become a disgrace among all our neighbors. 17 Now therefore, O our God, listen to the prayer of your servant and to his supplication, and for your own sake, Lord,[b] let your face shine upon your desolated sanctuary. 18 Incline your ear, O my God, and hear. Open your eyes and look at our desolation and the city that bears your name. We do not present our supplication before you on the ground of our righteousness, but on the ground of your great mercies. 19 O Lord, hear; O Lord, forgive; O Lord, listen and act and do not delay! For your own sake, O my God, because your city and your people bear your name!"

20 While I was speaking, and was praying and confessing my sin and the sin of my people Israel, and presenting my supplication before the LORD my God on behalf of the holy mountain of my God— 21 while I was speaking in prayer, the man Gabriel, whom I had seen before in a vision, came to me in swift flight at the time of the evening sacrifice. 22 He came[c] and said to me, "Daniel, I have now come out to give you wisdom and understanding. 23 At the beginning of your supplications a word went out, and I have come to declare it, for you are greatly beloved. So consider the word and understand the vision:

24 "Seventy weeks are decreed for your people and your holy city: to finish the transgression, to put an end to sin, and to atone for iniquity, to bring in everlasting righteousness, to seal both vision and prophet, and to anoint a most holy place.[d] 25 Know therefore and understand: from the time that the word went out to restore and rebuild Jerusalem until the time of an anointed prince, there shall be seven weeks; and for sixty-two weeks it shall be built again with streets and moat, but in a troubled time. 26 After the sixty-two weeks, an anointed one shall be cut off and shall have nothing, and the troops of the prince who is to come shall destroy the city and the sanctuary. Its[e] end shall come with a flood, and to the end there shall be war. Desolations are decreed. 27 He shall make a strong

[a] Heb *your*
[b] Theodotion Vg Compare Syr: Heb *for the Lord's sake*
[c] Gk Syr: Heb *He made to understand*
[d] Or *thing* or *one*
[e] Or *His*

lit. "his Torahs." **11:** *Your law* (lit. "Your Torah" [singular]). *Curse* and *oath*, see Deut 28.15–45; Neh 10.30. **15:** The expressions echo Deuteronomy. **16:** Although in exile, Daniel's thoughts turn to Jerusalem. **17:** Reference to the *desolated sanctuary* would have particular meaning to those living during the time of Antiochus IV Epiphanes (see 8.13; 11.29–31). **19:** *Your city* is Jerusalem.

9.20–27: Gabriel's response. **21:** See 8.16n. *Swift flight* indicates Gabriel's angelic nature. **24:** *Seventy weeks,* Jeremiah's seventy years (see v. 2n.) are interpreted to mean seventy weeks of years (70 x 7) or four hundred and ninety years (see Lev 25 on the jubilee, which may also be reflected in this interpretation). In Hebrew, the words for "weeks" and "seventy" have the same consonants, thus grounding Daniel's rereading of Jeremiah. The numbers are approximations. The *most holy place* is the Temple. **25:** The edict of Cyrus, sponsoring the restoration of *Jerusalem*, was promulgated in 538 BCE. The one *anointed* (Heb "mashiaḥ" whence the English term "messiah") possibly Joshua the high priest or Zerubbabel, the descendant of King David (see Zech 4.14; also Ezra 2.2; 3.2; Hag 1.12–14). **26:** The deposed *anointed one* is the high priest Onias III (see 2 Macc 4.16), murdered in 171 BCE. *The*

covenant with many for one week, and for
half of the week he shall make sacrifice and
offering cease; and in their place[a] shall be an
abomination that desolates, until the decreed
end is poured out upon the desolator."

10 In the third year of King Cyrus of Persia a word was revealed to Daniel, who was named Belteshazzar. The word was true, and it concerned a great conflict. He understood the word, having received understanding in the vision.

2 At that time I, Daniel, had been mourning
for three weeks. 3 I had eaten no rich food,
no meat or wine had entered my mouth,
and I had not anointed myself at all, for the
full three weeks. 4 On the twenty-fourth day
of the first month, as I was standing on the
bank of the great river (that is, the Tigris), 5 I
looked up and saw a man clothed in linen,
with a belt of gold from Uphaz around his
waist. 6 His body was like beryl, his face like
lightning, his eyes like flaming torches, his
arms and legs like the gleam of burnished
bronze, and the sound of his words like the
roar of a multitude. 7 I, Daniel, alone saw the
vision; the people who were with me did not
see the vision, though a great trembling fell
upon them, and they fled and hid themselves.
8 So I was left alone to see this great vision.
My strength left me, and my complexion
grew deathly pale, and I retained no strength.
9 Then I heard the sound of his words; and
when I heard the sound of his words, I fell
into a trance, face to the ground.

10 But then a hand touched me and roused
me to my hands and knees. 11 He said to me,
"Daniel, greatly beloved, pay attention to
the words that I am going to speak to you.
Stand on your feet, for I have now been sent
to you." So while he was speaking this word
to me, I stood up trembling. 12 He said to me,
"Do not fear, Daniel, for from the first day
that you set your mind to gain understanding and to humble yourself before your God,
your words have been heard, and I have come
because of your words. 13 But the prince of the
kingdom of Persia opposed me twenty-one
days. So Michael, one of the chief princes,
came to help me, and I left him there with
the prince of the kingdom of Persia,[b] 14 and
have come to help you understand what is to
happen to your people at the end of days. For
there is a further vision for those days."

15 While he was speaking these words to
me, I turned my face toward the ground and
was speechless. 16 Then one in human form
touched my lips, and I opened my mouth to
speak, and said to the one who stood before
me, "My lord, because of the vision such
pains have come upon me that I retain no
strength. 17 How can my lord's servant talk
with my lord? For I am shaking,[c] no strength
remains in me, and no breath is left in me."

18 Again one in human form touched me
and strengthened me. 19 He said, "Do not fear,
greatly beloved, you are safe. Be strong and
courageous!" When he spoke to me, I was

[a] Cn: Meaning of Heb uncertain
[b] Gk Theodotion: Heb *I was left there with the kings of Persia*
[c] Gk: Heb *from now*

prince is Antiochus IV Epiphanes. **27:** *Strong covenant*, Antiochus received support from Jason the high priest and various members of the Judean upper class (1 Macc 1.11). **27:** See 8.13n.

10.1–9: Daniel's visionary experience. The last three chapters of the book comprise a single vision. **1:** *Third year of King Cyrus* is 536 BCE. Reference to Daniel's Babylonian name (1.7; 2.24n.; 5.12) connects the apocalypse with the earlier tales. *Word*, accompanying the visual experience is auditory revelation. **3:** Daniel's regimen indicates mourning and repentance. **4:** The dating indicates that Daniel fasted during the feast of Passover (*first month* in this book's calendar is the spring month of Nisan). *On the bank*, see 8.2n. **5:** *Clothed in linen* suggests both the Temple priesthood (Ex 28) and angelic messengers (see Ezek 9.2–7). The "man" is probably Gabriel (cf. 9.21). *Uphaz,* perhaps Ophir in Arabia (see 1 Kings 9.28). **6:** The angel is described with elements that echo the divine glory in Ezek 1. **7:** *Alone saw the vision*, a similar experience occurs to Saul (Paul) according to Acts 9.7.

10.10–21: Gabriel's encouragement. **10:** *Touched*, see 8.18n. **12:** *Do not fear* is standard exhortation for those receiving angelic revelation (also v. 19). **13:** War on earth is matched by war in heaven (a motif also found in the Dead Sea Scrolls and Rev 12); *Michael* is chief of the angelic princes (see Rev 12.7) and guardian of Israel (12.1). *Prince of the kingdom of Persia* is Persia's patron angel; cf. Deut 32.8; Sir 17.17. **16:** *Human form*, see 7.13n. Touching the *lips* recalls Isa 6.7; Jer 1.9. **17:** Reluctance is a frequent response by individuals called to prophetic tasks (see

strengthened and said, "Let my lord speak, for you have strengthened me." 20 Then he said, "Do you know why I have come to you? Now I must return to fight against the prince of Persia, and when I am through with him, the prince of Greece will come. 21 But I am to tell you what is inscribed in the book of truth. There is no one with me who contends against these princes except Michael, your

11 prince. 1 As for me, in the first year of Darius the Mede, I stood up to support and strengthen him.

2 "Now I will announce the truth to you. Three more kings shall arise in Persia. The fourth shall be far richer than all of them, and when he has become strong through his riches, he shall stir up all against the kingdom of Greece. 3 Then a warrior king shall arise, who shall rule with great dominion and take action as he pleases. 4 And while still rising in power, his kingdom shall be broken and divided toward the four winds of heaven, but not to his posterity, nor according to the dominion with which he ruled; for his kingdom shall be uprooted and go to others besides these.

5 "Then the king of the south shall grow strong, but one of his officers shall grow stronger than he and shall rule a realm greater than his own realm. 6 After some years they shall make an alliance, and the daughter of the king of the south shall come to the king of the north to ratify the agreement. But she shall not retain her power, and his offspring shall not endure. She shall be given up, she and her attendants and her child and the one who supported her.

"In those times 7 a branch from her roots shall rise up in his place. He shall come against the army and enter the fortress of the king of the north, and he shall take action against them and prevail. 8 Even their gods, with their idols and with their precious vessels of silver and gold, he shall carry off to Egypt as spoils of war. For some years he shall refrain from attacking the king of the north; 9 then the latter shall invade the realm of the king of the south, but will return to his own land.

10 "His sons shall wage war and assemble a multitude of great forces, which shall advance like a flood and pass through, and again shall carry the war as far as his fortress. 11 Moved with rage, the king of the south shall go out and do battle against the king of the north, who shall muster a great multitude, which shall, however, be defeated by his enemy. 12 When the multitude has been carried off, his heart shall be exalted, and he shall overthrow tens of thousands, but he shall not prevail. 13 For the king of the north shall again raise a multitude, larger than the former, and after some years[a] he shall advance with a great army and abundant supplies.

14 "In those times many shall rise against the king of the south. The lawless among

[a] Heb *and at the end of the times years*

Ex 3). **20:** *Prince of Greece* is another patron angel. **21:** *The book of truth*, see 7.10n.; perhaps different from the book of 12.1, describes the future; such determinism is typical of apocalyptic literature.

11.1–13: Succession of kings. 1. *Darius the Mede*, see 5.31n. **2:** see 7.6n.; there were however more than four kings of *Persia*; the numbers do not neatly match historical records. The fourth is likely Xerxes I (486–465 BCE). **3:** The *warrior king* is Alexander the Great. **4:** *Toward the four winds*, see 8.8n. **5:** *King of the south* is likely Ptolemy I Soter of Egypt (satrap, 323–305 BCE; king, 305–282); the *officer* is Seleucus I Nicanor (305–281), who established the Seleucid empire in Syria. **6:** *King of the north* is probably Antiochus II Theos of Syria (261–246), grandson of Seleucus, who married Berenice, the daughter of Ptolemy II Philadelphus, in 252 BCE. Berenice, her child, and her attendants were murdered. **7:** The *branch* is Berenice's brother, Ptolemy III Euergetes (246–221), who campaigned against the Seleucids. **8:** Ptolemy III captured many treasures from Egypt taken by the Persian king Cambyses in the fourth century and held in Babylon. **9:** The *latter* invader is Seleucus II Callinicus (246–225), whose invasion of Egypt in 242–240 BCE was unsuccessful. **10:** Callinicus's *sons* were Seleucus III Ceraunus (225–223) and Antiochus III the Great (223–187). **11:** Antiochus III campaigned against Ptolemy IV but was defeated by him at the battle of Raphia in 217. **13:** *King of the north* is Antiochus III, who waged successful campaigns during 212–205.

11.14–20: Campaigns of Antiochus III. The Ptolemies and Seleucids continued to fight until, in 198 BCE at the battle of Paneas, the Seleucids defeated the Egyptian forces and gained control of Judea. **14:** *Lawless* among

your own people shall lift themselves up in order to fulfill the vision, but they shall fail. 15 Then the king of the north shall come and throw up siegeworks, and take a well-fortified city. And the forces of the south shall not stand, not even his picked troops, for there shall be no strength to resist. 16 But he who comes against him shall take the actions he pleases, and no one shall withstand him. He shall take a position in the beautiful land, and all of it shall be in his power. 17 He shall set his mind to come with the strength of his whole kingdom, and he shall bring terms of peace[a] and perform them. In order to destroy the kingdom,[b] he shall give him a woman in marriage; but it shall not succeed or be to his advantage. 18 Afterward he shall turn to the coastlands, and shall capture many. But a commander shall put an end to his insolence; indeed,[c] he shall turn his insolence back upon him. 19 Then he shall turn back toward the fortresses of his own land, but he shall stumble and fall, and shall not be found.

20 "Then shall arise in his place one who shall send an official for the glory of the kingdom; but within a few days he shall be broken, though not in anger or in battle. 21 In his place shall arise a contemptible person on whom royal majesty had not been conferred; he shall come in without warning and obtain the kingdom through intrigue. 22 Armies shall be utterly swept away and broken before him, and the prince of the covenant as well. 23 And after an alliance is made with him, he shall act deceitfully and become strong with a small party. 24 Without warning he shall come into the richest parts[d] of the province and do what none of his predecessors had ever done, lavishing plunder, spoil, and wealth on them. He shall devise plans against strongholds, but only for a time. 25 He shall stir up his power and determination against the king of the south with a great army, and the king of the south shall wage war with a much greater and stronger army. But he shall not succeed, for plots shall be devised against him 26 by those who eat of the royal rations. They shall break him, his army shall be swept away, and many shall fall slain. 27 The two kings, their minds bent on evil, shall sit at one table and exchange lies. But it shall not succeed, for there remains an end at the time appointed. 28 He shall return to his land with great wealth, but his heart shall be set against the holy covenant. He shall work his will, and return to his own land.

29 "At the time appointed he shall return and come into the south, but this time it shall not be as it was before. 30 For ships of Kittim shall come against him, and he shall lose heart and withdraw. He shall be enraged and take action against the holy covenant. He shall turn back and pay heed to those

[a] Gk: Heb *kingdom, and upright ones with him*
[b] Heb *it*
[c] Meaning of Heb uncertain
[d] Or *among the richest men*

your own people may refer to the rivalry between the Tobiad family and the supporters of Onias III (see 9.26n.); both sought control of the Jerusalem Temple. **15–16:** The *well-fortified city* is Sidon; its fall resulted in Antiochus III's personally taking possession of Judea, *the beautiful land*. **17:** *Terms of peace* refers to the alliance formed when Antiochus III betrothed his daughter, Cleopatra I, to Ptolemy Epiphanes in 197 BCE. **18:** Defeated by the Romans at Thermopylae in 191 and at Magnesia in 190, Antiochus III incurred massive tribute debt. **19:** Antiochus III *stumbled and fell* at Elymais in 187, while attempting to plunder the temple of Bel in order to pay his debt to Rome. **20:** The *official* is the tribute-collector, Heliodorus, sent by Seleucus IV Philopator (187–175 BCE) to plunder the Jerusalem Temple, but thwarted according to 2 Macc 3 by a divine apparition.

11.21–28: Antiochus IV. 21: The *contemptible person* is Antiochus IV Epiphanes (175–164 BCE). **22:** The *prince of the covenant* is the high priest Onias III, deposed by Antiochus, who replaced him with Onias's assimilationist brother Jason (see 9.26n.). **23:** The *small party* of Jews, those supporting Hellenization, receive rewards from the king's plundering. **25–28:** Antiochus IV's successful first campaign against Egypt in 170 BCE. **26:** *Those who eat of the royal rations* (cf. 1.5) are Eulaeus and Lenaeus, Ptolemaic courtiers whose plots against Antiochus IV prompted him to invade Egypt. **28:** *Against the holy covenant,* either Antiochus's support in sponsoring anti-Jewish legislation or his attack on the Temple (1 Macc 1.20).

11.29–39: Attack against the Jews. 30: *Kittim* (Gen 10.4) here refers to Rome, which forced Antiochus to withdraw from Egypt in 168 BCE during his second campaign. That same year, Antiochus attacked Jerusalem

who forsake the holy covenant. 31 Forces sent by him shall occupy and profane the temple and fortress. They shall abolish the regular burnt offering and set up the abomination that makes desolate. 32 He shall seduce with intrigue those who violate the covenant; but the people who are loyal to their God shall stand firm and take action. 33 The wise among the people shall give understanding to many; for some days, however, they shall fall by sword and flame, and suffer captivity and plunder. 34 When they fall victim, they shall receive a little help, and many shall join them insincerely. 35 Some of the wise shall fall, so that they may be refined, purified, and cleansed,[a] until the time of the end, for there is still an interval until the time appointed.

36 "The king shall act as he pleases. He shall exalt himself and consider himself greater than any god, and shall speak horrendous things against the God of gods. He shall prosper until the period of wrath is completed, for what is determined shall be done. 37 He shall pay no respect to the gods of his ancestors, or to the one beloved by women; he shall pay no respect to any other god, for he shall consider himself greater than all. 38 He shall honor the god of fortresses instead of these; a god whom his ancestors did not know he shall honor with gold and silver, with precious stones and costly gifts. 39 He shall deal with the strongest fortresses by the help of a foreign god. Those who acknowledge him he shall make more wealthy, and shall appoint them as rulers over many, and shall distribute the land for a price.

40 "At the time of the end the king of the south shall attack him. But the king of the north shall rush upon him like a whirlwind, with chariots and horsemen, and with many ships. He shall advance against countries and pass through like a flood. 41 He shall come into the beautiful land, and tens of thousands shall fall victim, but Edom and Moab and the main part of the Ammonites shall escape from his power. 42 He shall stretch out his hand against the countries, and the land of Egypt shall not escape. 43 He shall become ruler of the treasures of gold and of silver, and all the riches of Egypt; and the Libyans and the Ethiopians[b] shall follow in his train. 44 But reports from the east and the north shall alarm him, and he shall go out with great fury to bring ruin and complete destruction to many. 45 He shall pitch his palatial tents between the sea and the beautiful holy mountain. Yet he shall come to his end, with no one to help him.

12 "At that time Michael, the great prince, the protector of your people, shall arise. There shall be a time of anguish, such as has never occurred since nations first came into existence. But at that time your people shall be delivered, everyone who is found written in the book. 2 Many of those who sleep in the dust of the earth[c] shall awake, some to everlasting life, and some to shame and everlasting contempt. 3 Those who are wise shall shine like the brightness

[a] Heb *made them white*
[b] Or *Nubians*; Heb *Cushites*
[c] Or *the land of dust*

(1 Macc 1.29–32). **31:** *Forces sent*, see 2 Macc 5.24. The *abomination* is an altar to Zeus Olympios set up in the Temple (see 8.13n.); this phrase reappears in early Christian literature (Mk 13.14). **32:** *People who are loyal* are those who resist the program of Hellenization, with its assimilationist and idolatrous practices. **33–34:** The visionary regards himself as one of the wise (Heb "maskilim"); they are distinguished from those of *little help*, probably the Maccabees, who rely on military force. On those who *fall by sword and flame*, cf. 1 Macc 1.63. **35:** Refining is a testing and purifying process (Ps 17.3; Jer 6.29; 9.6; Zech 13.9; Sir 2.5). **37:** *Beloved by women* is Tammuz (Adonis), a Mesopotamian god (Ezek 8.14). **38:** *God of fortresses* is Zeus Olympios; the fortress is likely the citadel in Jerusalem (the Akra) where occupation troops were stationed.

11.40–45: The end-time. **40:** *The time of the end* moves into speculative material; no longer reporting what happened, the author envisions what will occur. **41–42:** *Edom*, *Moab*, and *Ammon* are ancient enemies of Israel, to its east and southeast. **45:** *The beautiful holy mountain* is Jerusalem; see 8.25n.

12.1–13: Michael's victory. **1:** For the *book*, see 7.9–10n.; Ps 69.28; Isa 4.3; Mal 3.16–18; Rev 20.12,15; 21.27. Michael had been in battle with Persia and Greece (10.21–11.1). **2:** The first clear biblical reference to a resurrection, final judgment, and afterlife (see also 2 Macc 12.44–45 and cf. Ezek 37; Hos 6.2; Isa 26.19). *Many* may

of the sky,[a] and those who lead many to righteousness, like the stars forever and ever. [4] But you, Daniel, keep the words secret and the book sealed until the time of the end. Many shall be running back and forth, and evil[b] shall increase."

[5] Then I, Daniel, looked, and two others appeared, one standing on this bank of the stream and one on the other. [6] One of them said to the man clothed in linen, who was upstream, "How long shall it be until the end of these wonders?" [7] The man clothed in linen, who was upstream, raised his right hand and his left hand toward heaven. And I heard him swear by the one who lives forever that it would be for a time, two times, and half a time,[c] and that when the shattering of the power of the holy people comes to an end, all these things would be accomplished. [8] I heard but could not understand; so I said, "My lord, what shall be the outcome of these things?" [9] He said, "Go your way, Daniel, for the words are to remain secret and sealed until the time of the end. [10] Many shall be purified, cleansed, and refined, but the wicked shall continue to act wickedly. None of the wicked shall understand, but those who are wise shall understand. [11] From the time that the regular burnt offering is taken away and the abomination that desolates is set up, there shall be one thousand two hundred ninety days. [12] Happy are those who persevere and attain the thousand three hundred thirty-five days. [13] But you, go your way,[d] and rest; you shall rise for your reward at the end of the days."

[a] Or *dome*
[b] Cn Compare Gk: Heb *knowledge*
[c] Heb *a time, times, and a half*
[d] Gk Theodotion: Heb adds *to the end*

suggest that not all will rise. **4:** *The book sealed*, see 7.28n. **5–7:** *The man clothed in linen* resembles a priest (see 10.5n.) and speaks like an angel. *Time, two times and half a time*, see 7.25n. **10:** *Purified*, see 11.35n. **11–12:** The numbers, likely added when the original timetable did not come to pass and different from the datings of 8.14, provide assurance that the end will come.

This page intentionally left blank

HOSEA

NAME, AUTHORSHIP, DATE OF COMPOSITION, AND HISTORICAL CONTEXT

The book of Hosea consists of a narrative about the prophet and sayings attributed to him. Hosea began his career in the final days of Jeroboam II (1.1), whose long reign (788–747 BCE) capped a century of political stability and economic prosperity in the Northern Kingdom of Israel under the dynasty found by Jehu in 842. Jeroboam died in 747, two years before Tiglath-pileser III came to power in Assyria (745) and initiated a program of imperial expansion. A prolonged national crisis ensued, which ended with the demise of the Northern Kingdom. Israel floundered under the Assyrian onslaught. Of the six kings who reigned in the next two decades, four were assassinated as the nation veered between appeasement, at the cost of heavy tribute, and rebellion, seeking futile alliances with Syria and Egypt (see 2 Kings 14.23–17.41). When Hosea's prophetic career ended is uncertain, though his oracles appear to allude to events right up to the Assyrian siege of Samaria in 722 (13.10–11,16).

After the destruction of Samaria, Hosea's words were preserved and transmitted in the Southern Kingdom of Judah. Some or all of the references to Judah may have been added in this era as Hosea's words were reinterpreted to address an analogous situation there (e.g., 1.7; 3.5; 11.12). It is also possible, however, that Hosea himself, though a northern prophet, addressed Judah as well.

As a prophet of the Northern Kingdom, Hosea presents a unique perspective among the prophets as an Israelite native, not a Judahite like his near contemporary Amos, who viewed the events from the south. The text gives little information about the prophet himself. Indeed, the only personal detail is the name of his father, Beeri (1.1). Chapters 1–3 narrate Hosea's marriage to the adulteress Gomer and the birth of their three children, Jezreel, Lo-ruhamah, and Lo-ammi, but it is debatable whether one can deduce actual biographical facts from this description of family life.

CANONICAL STATUS AND LOCATION IN CANON

The book of Hosea stands first in that part of the latter prophets called the Book of the Twelve, also known as the Minor Prophets because of their relative brevity in comparison with Isaiah, Jeremiah, and Ezekiel. Along with Amos, Hosea was the first of the "writing prophets," those prophets whose speeches were collected and edited as literary documents.

CONTENTS AND STRUCTURE

The book consists primarily of speeches critiquing the political, social, and, above all, religious life of the Northern Kingdom of Israel in the final days before its conquest and destruction by the Assyrians in 722. Hosea often refers to the Northern Kingdom under the titles of "Ephraim," its largest tribe, and "Samaria," its capital (see 4.17n.). Over the course of three decades (ca. 750–720 BCE), Hosea interpreted the unfolding disaster as a divine punishment—the Assyrians were merely God's tool—for violation of the exclusive demands of the LORD. With frequent allusions to Israelite historical traditions, Hosea portrayed Israel's entire history as a spiritual decline from an ideal time, its "youth" in the period of the Exodus from Egypt (2.15; 11.1).

During this national crisis, Hosea issued an unrelenting critique of existing political and religious institutions. Through dynastic kingship, political alliances with other nations, and, above all, illicit religious practices, Israel had violated the divine claim upon it for exclusive dependence upon and worship of the LORD. As divine punishment, Israel would be stripped of political and religious institutions too corrupt to be reformed and its land left desolate and barren. Israel would, in essence, find itself again in the wilderness. The severity of the prophetic critique is juxtaposed with language of divine longing and compassion (11.1–11; 13.4–7). In the short term, Hosea presented the annihilation of the Northern Kingdom as inevitable. Drawing, however, on a pattern discerned in Israel's sacred traditions, Hosea ultimately offered hope. In this new wilderness, as in the Sinai desert, Israel would recognize its dependence on the LORD and be restored to a harmonious state with God and with nature (2.14–23).

Hosea is best known for his metaphors, drawn from the natural world, agriculture, and, especially, kinship structures: Israel as the LORD's wife, Israel as the LORD's son. These familial metaphors are introduced in two narrative sections about the prophet's own life at the beginning of the book (1.2–2.1; 3.1–5). The prophet's personal life is presented as a paradigm of the relationship between the LORD and Israel.

Insofar as these chapters construct a biographical story for prophetic purposes, it can be said that Hosea deals with Gomer as the LORD deals with Israel. Gomer is "a wife of whoredom" (1.2), best understood as "a promiscuous woman." She bore three children, of whom Hosea was presumably not the father (2.4–5). After a period of marital separation, Hosea took her back (3.1–5). In a similar way, Israel, the LORD's unfaithful wife, will be separated from her husband and home but, just as Hosea bought back Gomer (3.2), the LORD will restore Israel. Hosea's image of Israel's sexual misconduct may be more than symbolic (e.g., 4.13–19; 9.1). Canaanite religious practice may have included sexual rites in imitation of the gods, who, presumably, generated terrestrial fertility through sexual intercourse.

The book has two major sections, which appear to be roughly chronological. Chapters 1–3 contain the material about Hosea's marriage and can be understood against the background of the last days of Jeroboam II, since 1.4 announces the demise of the Jehu dynasty of which Jeroboam was the final ruler. The second major section, chs 4–14, consists entirely of prophetic speeches that seem to allude to the chaotic days following the demise of the house of Jehu and the prolonged Assyria crisis. Boundaries between individual speech units in this second section are hard to discern. It seems to fall into two parts (chs 4–11; 12–14), rhetorically couched as legal indictments of Israel for breach of covenant (4.1; 12.2), and ending with images of restoration (11.1–11; 14.1–7).

Gregory Mobley

1 The word of the LORD that came to Hosea son of Beeri, in the days of Kings Uzziah, Jotham, Ahaz, and Hezekiah of Judah, and in the days of King Jeroboam son of Joash of Israel.

[2] When the LORD first spoke through Hosea, the LORD said to Hosea, "Go, take for yourself a wife of whoredom and have children of whoredom, for the land commits great whoredom by forsaking the LORD." [3] So he went and took Gomer daughter of Diblaim, and she conceived and bore him a son.

[4] And the LORD said to him, "Name him Jezreel;[a] for in a little while I will punish the house of Jehu for the blood of Jezreel, and I will put an end to the kingdom of the house of Israel. [5] On that day I will break the bow of Israel in the valley of Jezreel."

[6] She conceived again and bore a daughter. Then the LORD said to him, "Name her Lo-ruhamah,[b] for I will no longer have pity on the house of Israel or forgive them. [7] But I will have pity on the house of Judah, and I will save them by the LORD their God; I will not

[a] That is *God sows*
[b] That is *Not pitied*

1.1: Superscription. *Word of the LORD,* the customary term for prophetic verbal revelation (Jer 18.18). For similar introductions to prophetic books, see Joel 1.1, Mic 1.1, Zeph 1.1, and Mal 1.1. *Hosea* (= Hoshea) is also the name for other persons in the Hebrew Bible (e.g., Num 13.8; 2 Kings 15.3; 1 Chr 27.20; Neh 10.23) and means "salvation" or "deliverance." *Days of Kings Uzziah . . .*, these kings of Judah reigned in Jerusalem in the last half of the eighth century BCE (see 2 Kings 14.23–20.21). Uzziah was a contemporary of *Jeroboam* II, who ruled 788–747 in Samaria, the capital of the Northern Kingdom of Israel, and Ahaz was king in Judah when Samaria fell. Presumably Hosea prophesied late in Jeroboam's reign and after his death.

1.2–3.5: Hosea's family life as a symbolic vehicle for divine communication. The prophetic acts of Hosea, detailed in two sections (1.2–2.1; 3.1–5), exemplify God's relationship with Israel in allegorical fashion. Between the narrative sections, a prophetic speech (2.2–23) indicts Israel for unfaithfulness and offers hope for restoration after a period of punishment.

1.2–2.1: Hosea's marriage to Gomer, and the birth, naming, and renaming of their children as prophetic signs. The marital states of Jeremiah (Jer 16.1–2) and Ezekiel (Ezek 24) also took on prophetic significance; Isaiah gave children symbolic names (Isa 7.3,10,14; 8.1,3). **1.2:** *Wife of whoredom,* a promiscuous woman. *Children of whoredom,* children born of promiscuity. **4–8:** Birth of three children, each with symbolic names. **4:** *Jezreel* ("God sows"), the site where Jehu's bloody coup d'etat began (2 Kings 9–10). *House of Jehu,* the Israelite dynasty founded by Jehu in 842 BCE extended for a century, ending with Jeroboam II. **6:** *Lo-ruhamah,* "Not loved, not pitied"; cf. Ezek 16.4–5. **7:** This amendment to the doom promised in v. 6 is likely added by a later Judean editor.

save them by bow, or by sword, or by war, or by horses, or by horsemen."

8 When she had weaned Lo-ruhamah, she conceived and bore a son. 9 Then the LORD said, "Name him Lo-ammi,[a] for you are not my people and I am not your God."[b]

10 [c] Yet the number of the people of Israel shall be like the sand of the sea, which can be neither measured nor numbered; and in the place where it was said to them, "You are not my people," it shall be said to them, "Children of the living God." 11 The people of Judah and the people of Israel shall be gathered together, and they shall appoint for themselves one head; and they shall take possession of[d] the land, for great shall be the day of Jezreel.

2 [e] Say to your brother,[f] Ammi,[g] and to your sister,[h] Ruhamah.[i]

2 Plead with your mother, plead—
for she is not my wife,
and I am not her husband—
that she put away her whoring from her face,
and her adultery from between her breasts,
3 or I will strip her naked
and expose her as in the day she was born,
and make her like a wilderness,
and turn her into a parched land,
and kill her with thirst.
4 Upon her children also I will have no pity,
because they are children of whoredom.
5 For their mother has played the whore;
she who conceived them has acted shamefully.
For she said, "I will go after my lovers;
they give me my bread and my water,
my wool and my flax, my oil and my drink."
6 Therefore I will hedge up her[j] way with thorns;
and I will build a wall against her,
so that she cannot find her paths.
7 She shall pursue her lovers,
but not overtake them;
and she shall seek them,
but shall not find them.
Then she shall say, "I will go
and return to my first husband,
for it was better with me then than now."
8 She did not know
that it was I who gave her
the grain, the wine, and the oil,
and who lavished upon her silver
and gold that they used for Baal.

[a] That is *Not my people*
[b] Heb *I am not yours*
[c] Ch 2.1 in Heb
[d] Heb *rise up from*
[e] Ch 2.3 in Heb
[f] Gk: Heb *brothers*
[g] That is *My people*
[h] Gk Vg: Heb *sisters*
[i] That is *Pitied*
[j] Gk Syr: Heb *your*

8: *Weaned* the child, probably at age three (1 Sam 1.22; 2 Chr 31.16). **9:** *Lo-ammi,* "Not my people." *You are not my people,* God rejects the language of his covenant with Israel; see Ex 6.7; Deut 29.13. *I am not your God* can also be read, "I am not I Am" (see note *b*), as if God now withdraws the intimacy extended to Moses through revelation of the divine name (Ex 3.14). **1.10–2.1:** Jezreel's exaltation (1.11) and the renaming of Lo-ruhamah (2.1, *Ruhamah,* "Loved") and Lo-ammi (2.1, *Ammi,* "My people") signal restoration. **1.10:** For *the sand of the sea,* see the divine promise to Abraham (Gen 22.17) and Jacob (Gen 32.12); cf. Gen 15.5; 16.10; 1 Kings 3.8. *Children of the living God*, in contrast to "children of whoredom" (1.2). **11:** The prophet anticipates unification of the kingdoms of Israel and Judah, which had been separated since the tenth century BCE. *The day of Jezreel* will be one of triumph and glory; contrast 1.4–5.

2.2–23: A prophetic speech based on the preceding sign-acts. Israel wrongly attributed its agricultural fertility to Baal, a Canaanite god. For this infidelity, the Lord first initiates divorce against Israel, the promiscuous wife, then promises a rebetrothal. The metaphor of adulterous marriage and violent punishment should be interpreted with caution. It is a literary device to be viewed within its historical context, where a culture of honor and shame was used to control women's sexuality; it does not sanction domestic violence of any kind. **2:** *Plead with,* take legal action against. **3:** Ezekiel 16 expands this image. The covenant was first forged in the *wilderness* (Ex 19.1), though here "wilderness" is a symbol for barrenness and Israel's infidelity. **4:** *No pity,* a pun on Lo-ruhamah; see 1.6n. **5:** *My lovers,* foreign gods. *Wool and . . . flax,* pastoral and agricultural products, re-

9 Therefore I will take back
my grain in its time,
and my wine in its season;
and I will take away my wool and my flax,
which were to cover her nakedness.
10 Now I will uncover her shame
in the sight of her lovers,
and no one shall rescue her out of my hand.
11 I will put an end to all her mirth,
her festivals, her new moons, her sabbaths,
and all her appointed festivals.
12 I will lay waste her vines and her fig trees,
of which she said,
"These are my pay,
which my lovers have given me."
I will make them a forest,
and the wild animals shall devour them.
13 I will punish her for the festival days of the Baals,
when she offered incense to them
and decked herself with her ring and jewelry,
and went after her lovers,
and forgot me, says the LORD.

14 Therefore, I will now allure her,
and bring her into the wilderness,
and speak tenderly to her.
15 From there I will give her her vineyards,
and make the Valley of Achor a door of hope.
There she shall respond as in the days of her youth,
as at the time when she came out of the land of Egypt.
16 On that day, says the LORD, you will call me,
"My husband," and no longer will you call me, "My Baal."[a] 17 For I will remove the names of the Baals from her mouth, and they shall be mentioned by name no more. 18 I will make for you[b] a covenant on that day with the wild animals, the birds of the air, and the creeping things of the ground; and I will abolish[c] the bow, the sword, and war from the land; and I will make you lie down in safety. 19 And I will take you for my wife forever; I will take you for my wife in righteousness and in justice, in steadfast love, and in mercy. 20 I will take you for my wife in faithfulness; and you shall know the LORD.
21 On that day I will answer, says the LORD,
I will answer the heavens
and they shall answer the earth;
22 and the earth shall answer the grain, the wine, and the oil,
and they shall answer Jezreel;[d]
23 and I will sow him[e] for myself in the land.

a That is, *"My master"*
b Heb *them*
c Heb *break*
d That is *God sows*
e Cn: Heb *her*

spectively, used for clothing. **6:** Sexual access will be prevented (see Song 8.9). **2.9–10:** *Nakedness*, a metaphor for Israel's unfaithfulness (see 1.3; Lam 1.8; Nah 3.5). **8:** The Lord, not Baal, is Israel's benefactor. **11:** The seasonal agricultural festivals (Ex 34.21–24) and the customary occasions for worship (Num 29.6; Ex 20.8) were now diluted by elements of the worship of Baal. **13:** *Baals*, manifestations of the god Baal at various shrines. *Offered incense,* incense itself was a lawful Israelite element of worship (Ex 30.7–8) but here, unlawfully, it is offered to other gods (cf. 1 Kings 22.44; Isa 65.3). *Decked herself,* cf. Isa 3.16–22. **14:** *Allure her,* courtship language. The *wilderness* signifies Israel's early years after the Exodus, remembered here, in terms of the marital metaphor, as a honeymoon (Jer 2.2). The wilderness can also be a place of judgment (Ezek 20.33–38). In both cases, the wilderness is a place for transformation. *Speak tenderly*, see Isa 40.2. **15:** *Achor,* a site just east of the Dead Sea where Israel got into "trouble" (the meaning of "Achor") soon after leaving the wilderness (Josh 7.22–26). **16:** *My Baal,* in secular usage, "ba'al" could also mean "husband." In this wordplay, Israel is to address the Lord as "husband" (Heb "'ish"), not as "husband" (Heb "ba'al"). 17: *Baals*, see 2.13n. **18:** *Animals, birds . . ., creeping things,* the phrases recall Gen 1.27–31 and suggest a return to a state of blessing. See also Lev 26.6. **20:** *You shall know,* "knowledge" implies covenant faithfulness and, in terms of the marital metaphor employed, sexual intimacy. **21–23:** A conclusion to chs 1–2: The renaming of the children (see 1.4,6,9n.; 2.1n.) follows the rebetrothal of the Lord and Israel. **21–22:** Human faithfulness (or its lack) to the Lord has implications for the natural world. *Jezreel*, meaning "God sows," another symbol of restoration; see 1.4n.; 1.11n. Through a wordplay, the prophet indicates that the people will grow like plants upon their return to the land, that is, *they shall answer*, "God sows," *and I*

And I will have pity on Lo-ruhamah,[a]
and I will say to Lo-ammi,[b] "You are my people";
and he shall say, "You are my God."

3 The LORD said to me again, "Go, love a woman who has a lover and is an adulteress, just as the LORD loves the people of Israel, though they turn to other gods and love raisin cakes." [2] So I bought her for fifteen shekels of silver and a homer of barley and a measure of wine.[c] [3] And I said to her, "You must remain as mine for many days; you shall not play the whore, you shall not have intercourse with a man, nor I with you." [4] For the Israelites shall remain many days without king or prince, without sacrifice or pillar, without ephod or teraphim. [5] Afterward the Israelites shall return and seek the LORD their God, and David their king; they shall come in awe to the LORD and to his goodness in the latter days.

4 Hear the word of the LORD, O people of Israel;
for the LORD has an indictment against the inhabitants of the land.
There is no faithfulness or loyalty,
and no knowledge of God in the land.
[2] Swearing, lying, and murder,
and stealing and adultery break out;
bloodshed follows bloodshed.
[3] Therefore the land mourns,
and all who live in it languish;
together with the wild animals
and the birds of the air,
even the fish of the sea are perishing.

[4] Yet let no one contend,
and let none accuse,
for with you is my contention, O priest.[d]
[5] You shall stumble by day;
the prophet also shall stumble with you by night,
and I will destroy your mother.
[6] My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge;
because you have rejected knowledge,
I reject you from being a priest to me.

[a] That is *Not pitied*
[b] That is *Not my people*
[c] Gk: Heb *a homer of barley and a lethech of barley*
[d] Cn: Meaning of Heb uncertain

will sow him for myself in the land. **23:** Cf. Ex 6.7; Lev 26.12.

3.1–5: The restoration of Hosea's marriage. In a like manner, the Lord's relationship to Israel will be restored. This section is in the first person while 1.2–2.1 was in the third. Gomer is not mentioned here by name. **1:** *Raisin cakes* were associated with illicit worship (Isa 16.7; Jer 7.18; 44.19). **2:** *Shekel,* ca. .4 oz (11.5 g); *homer,* about 230 l (6.5 bu). From whom Hosea *bought her* is not indicated. **3–4:** A transitional period is announced during which, on one level, the marital partners forgo relations, and on another, the covenant partners lack their customary mediators (king, prince) and religious mediations. *Pillar,* see 10.2n.; Gen 31.45. *Ephod,* Ex 28.6–14; 39.2–7; Judg 8.24–28; 1 Sam 2.18. *Teraphim,* Gen 31.19; probably ancestor statues. **5:** *David their king,* the only reference in Hosea to a specifically Judahite institution such as the Davidic dynasty, Jerusalem, or Zion; probably a later addition.

4.1–14.9: The prophetic speeches of Hosea indict Israel for unfaithfulness and announce the divine judgment, while offering hope of eventual restoration. The boundaries between individual speech units in the remainder of the book are unclear. This may in part reflect the style of the prophet and may in part be due to later editorial rearrangement.

4.1–12.1: The Lord has an indictment against Israel. 4.1: *Hear the word of the LORD,* an introduction in the prophetic style, which serves both the immediate speech and the remainder of the book. *Israel,* the primary referent here is the Northern Kingdom (also known as Ephraim) but, like all of Hosea's prophecies, after 722 the prophecy is transmitted in Judah; so the address is also to Israel in its broader sense as the people with whom God had made a covenant. *Indictment* is a legal term: On God's behalf, the prophet files suit against the people for breach of covenant. *Faithfulness, loyalty* (steadfast love), and *knowledge of God* are major theological terms in Hosea (2.19–20; 4.6; 5.4,7; 6.3,6; 10.12; 11.3–4,12b; 12.6). **2:** *Swearing . . .,* five of the Ten Commandments referred to (Ex 20.7,13–16; Deut 5.11,17–20). **3:** See 2.21n.

4.4–19: An indictment of corrupt religious practices. 4–8: The corruption issues from the priests. **4:** Legally, there are no grounds for a counterclaim against God. *Contend, contention*, the same legal terminology translated in 4.1 as "indictment." **5–6:** The phrases *destroy your mother* and *forget your children* build on the

And since you have forgotten the law of
your God,
I also will forget your children.

7 The more they increased,
the more they sinned against me;
they changed[a] their glory into shame.
8 They feed on the sin of my people;
they are greedy for their iniquity.
9 And it shall be like people, like priest;
I will punish them for their ways,
and repay them for their deeds.
10 They shall eat, but not be satisfied;
they shall play the whore, but not
multiply;
because they have forsaken the LORD
to devote themselves to 11 whoredom.

Wine and new wine
take away the understanding.
12 My people consult a piece of wood,
and their divining rod gives them
oracles.
For a spirit of whoredom has led them astray,
and they have played the whore,
forsaking their God.
13 They sacrifice on the tops of the
mountains,
and make offerings upon the hills,
under oak, poplar, and terebinth,
because their shade is good.

Therefore your daughters play the whore,
and your daughters-in-law commit
adultery.

14 I will not punish your daughters when
they play the whore,
nor your daughters-in-law when they
commit adultery;
for the men themselves go aside with
whores,
and sacrifice with temple prostitutes;
thus a people without understanding
comes to ruin.

15 Though you play the whore, O Israel,
do not let Judah become guilty.
Do not enter into Gilgal,
or go up to Beth-aven,
and do not swear, "As the LORD lives."
16 Like a stubborn heifer,
Israel is stubborn;
can the LORD now feed them
like a lamb in a broad pasture?

17 Ephraim is joined to idols—
let him alone.
18 When their drinking is ended, they
indulge in sexual orgies;
they love lewdness more than their
glory.[b]
19 A wind has wrapped them[c] in its wings,
and they shall be ashamed because of
their altars.[d]

[a] Ancient Heb tradition: MT *I will change*
[b] Cn Compare Gk: Meaning of Heb uncertain
[c] Heb *her*
[d] Gk Syr: Heb *sacrifices*

foundation of 1.2–3.5. **7:** *The more . . . the more,* for a similar formulation, see 11.2. **8:** *They feed,* the priests depend on the sacrificial system for food. Since more sins require more sacrifices, Hosea accuses the priests of a debased relationship in their role in the process of atonement. **9–14:** The corruption, detailed here in terms of drunkenness, sexual activity, and divination, spreads from priests to the rest of society. **10:** Human fertility, also part of the divine blessing (Gen 1.28), is affected by human unfaithfulness. **11–12:** *Whoredom*, that is, improper worship and veneration of fertility deities. **12:** *Piece of wood, divining rod,* the exact referents are unknown. Trees or wooden symbols were associated with the worship of Asherah, a Canaanite goddess. **13:** A reference to high-place sanctuaries and their sacred groves (Deut 12.2). *Their shade,* note the contrast between this shade and that of 14.7. **14:** *Temple prostitutes*, lit. "sacred women," i.e., female ritual officials, a feature in Canaanite but not orthodox Israelite practice. *Without understanding*, see 2.20n. **15–19:** An admonishment to Judah: Do not let the contamination spread to you. **15:** *Gilgal, Beth-aven* (i.e., Bethel; Am 5.5), the northern shrines closest to Judah. *Beth-aven* (lit. "house of worthlessness") is a pejorative name for Bethel ("house of God"). **16:** *Stubborn heifer,* see 10.11. **17:** *Ephraim* was the name for the region surrounding Samaria. Though often used as a general term for the Northern Kingdom, its use here and Hosea's preference for it over Israel in the rest of the book could reflect a changed political situation. Israel gradually lost its territory in Transjordan, Galilee, and Jezreel in this period; in the end Ephraim was all that remained.

5 Hear this, O priests!
Give heed, O house of Israel!
Listen, O house of the king!
For the judgment pertains to you;
for you have been a snare at Mizpah,
and a net spread upon Tabor,
2 and a pit dug deep in Shittim;[a]
but I will punish all of them.

3 I know Ephraim,
and Israel is not hidden from me;
for now, O Ephraim, you have played the whore;
Israel is defiled.
4 Their deeds do not permit them
to return to their God.
For the spirit of whoredom is within them,
and they do not know the LORD.

5 Israel's pride testifies against him;
Ephraim[b] stumbles in his guilt;
Judah also stumbles with them.
6 With their flocks and herds they shall go
to seek the LORD,
but they will not find him;
he has withdrawn from them.
7 They have dealt faithlessly with the LORD;
for they have borne illegitimate children.
Now the new moon shall devour them
along with their fields.

8 Blow the horn in Gibeah,
the trumpet in Ramah.
Sound the alarm at Beth-aven;
look behind you, Benjamin!
9 Ephraim shall become a desolation
in the day of punishment;
among the tribes of Israel
I declare what is sure.
10 The princes of Judah have become
like those who remove the landmark;
on them I will pour out
my wrath like water.
11 Ephraim is oppressed, crushed in judgment,
because he was determined to go after vanity.[c]
12 Therefore I am like maggots to Ephraim,
and like rottenness to the house of Judah.
13 When Ephraim saw his sickness,
and Judah his wound,
then Ephraim went to Assyria,
and sent to the great king.[d]
But he is not able to cure you
or heal your wound.
14 For I will be like a lion to Ephraim,
and like a young lion to the house of Judah.
I myself will tear and go away;

[a] Cn: Meaning of Heb uncertain
[b] Heb *Israel and Ephraim*
[c] Gk: Meaning of Heb uncertain
[d] Cn: Heb *to a king who will contend*

5.1–6.6: The people do not know the Lord. 5.1: *The judgment,* in a legal sense. *Mizpah,* a fortress city on the border between Judah and Israel (1 Kings 15.22), probably housed, like many border towns, a sanctuary. *Tabor,* a mountain in the north of Palestine, overlooking the Jezreel valley (Ps 89.12); probably the site of a sanctuary (Deut 33.18–19). **2:** *Shittim,* a border town in Transjordan; the final encampment of the Israelites before they crossed the Jordan; also site of an infamy (Num 25.1–9). **3–4:** Note the wordplay with "knowledge": The Lord *knows* (is aware of) *Ephraim* ('s deeds) but *they do not know* (demonstrate loyalty toward) the Lord. See 2.20n. *Spirit of whoredom,* see 4.11–12n. **5–7:** Because of their disloyalty, the Lord will not be available to the people at festivals. **5:** *Israel's pride,* also in 7.10. **6:** *They shall go,* in pilgrimage festivals. **7:** *New moon shall devour,* meaning obscure. **8–14:** In the day of punishment the Lord will become the enemy of Israel (Am 9.2–4). This section may refer to the Syro-Ephraimite War (2 Kings 15.27–30) in 735, when Israel under Pekah formed a coalition with Syria to force Judah to join a rebellion against Assyria (see 2.11). **8:** *Blow the horn,* the alarm signal used by sentinels. *Gibeah, Ramah,* Benjaminite towns just north of Jerusalem, situated on the path an invading army would take approaching from the south (Isa 10.28–32); *Beth-aven,* see 4.15n. This may refer to a Judahite counterattack after the Syro-Ephraimite initiative failed. **10–14:** There is no defense against God. **10:** *Remove the landmark,* a landmark is a boundary marker, defining the extent of property. See Deut 19.14; 27.17; Prov 22.28; 23.10. **13:** *Went to Assyria,* Hoshea, the final king in Samaria (732–722 BCE), sought to appease Assyria in the wake of Pekah's

I will carry off, and no one shall rescue.
15 I will return again to my place
until they acknowledge their guilt and
seek my face.
In their distress they will beg my favor:

6 "Come, let us return to the LORD;
for it is he who has torn, and he will
heal us;
he has struck down, and he will bind
us up.
2 After two days he will revive us;
on the third day he will raise us up,
that we may live before him.
3 Let us know, let us press on to know the
LORD;
his appearing is as sure as the dawn;
he will come to us like the showers,
like the spring rains that water the
earth."
4 What shall I do with you, O Ephraim?
What shall I do with you, O Judah?
Your love is like a morning cloud,
like the dew that goes away early.
5 Therefore I have hewn them by the
prophets,
I have killed them by the words of my
mouth,
and my[a] judgment goes forth as the
light.
6 For I desire steadfast love and not
sacrifice,
the knowledge of God rather than burnt
offerings.

7 But at[b] Adam they transgressed the
covenant;
there they dealt faithlessly with me.
8 Gilead is a city of evildoers,
tracked with blood.
9 As robbers lie in wait[c] for someone,
so the priests are banded together;[d]
they murder on the road to Shechem,
they commit a monstrous crime.
10 In the house of Israel I have seen a
horrible thing;
Ephraim's whoredom is there, Israel is
defiled.

11 For you also, O Judah, a harvest is
appointed.

When I would restore the fortunes of my
people,
7 1 when I would heal Israel,
the corruption of Ephraim is revealed,
and the wicked deeds of Samaria;
for they deal falsely,
the thief breaks in,
and the bandits raid outside.
2 But they do not consider
that I remember all their wickedness.
Now their deeds surround them,
they are before my face.
3 By their wickedness they make the king
glad,
and the officials by their treachery.
4 They are all adulterers;

a Gk Syr: Heb *your*
b Cn: Heb *like*
c Cn: Meaning of Heb uncertain
d Syr: Heb *are a company*

failed rebellion (2 Kings 16.3). **14:** *Lion*, see Job 10.16; Lam 3.10.

5.15–6.6: God punishes not to annihilate but in order to inspire repentance. This section is in the form of a dialogue. **6.1:** God both punishes and *heals*; see Deut 32.39; Job 5.18. **6.2:** The punishment is temporary. *Two days . . . third day,* idiomatic expression for a brief period of time. **3:** *Spring rains,* the latter (March-April) rains (Deut 11.14). **4–6:** A summary of the entire speech. **4:** See the similar questions in 11.8. **6:** God desires covenant loyalty, a persistent theme of the prophets (Am 5.22–24; Mic 6.6–8). *Knowledge of God*, see 2.20n.

6.7–11a: An unholy gazetteer. 7: *At Adam,* a town in central Transjordan, close to where the Israelites crossed the Jordan (Josh 3.16). **8:** Men from *Gilead* participated in the assassination of King Pekahiah (2 Kings 15.25). **9:** *Shechem,* a major Ephraimite town, 12 km (7 mi) southeast of Samaria. Their *monstrous crime* is unspecified, though it may involve mistreatment of pilgrims, indecent religious acts, or brutal opposition to prophetic activity. **10:** *Ephraim's whoredom*, see 4.11–12n.; 4.17.

6.11b–7.7: A corrupt people and government. The author uses the metaphor of an oven to describe the heated activity of Israel's idolaters, the fervent celebration of the enthronement ritual, the hot anger of those who oppose the king, and the burning violence of assassination. **7.1:** The theme of healing again (5.13; 6.1). *Samaria,*

they are like a heated oven,
whose baker does not need to stir the fire,
from the kneading of the dough until it is leavened.
5 On the day of our king the officials
became sick with the heat of wine;
he stretched out his hand with mockers.
6 For they are kindled[a] like an oven, their heart burns within them;
all night their anger smolders;
in the morning it blazes like a flaming fire.
7 All of them are hot as an oven,
and they devour their rulers.
All their kings have fallen;
none of them calls upon me.

8 Ephraim mixes himself with the peoples;
Ephraim is a cake not turned.
9 Foreigners devour his strength,
but he does not know it;
gray hairs are sprinkled upon him,
but he does not know it.
10 Israel's pride testifies against[b] him;
yet they do not return to the LORD their God,
or seek him, for all this.

11 Ephraim has become like a dove,
silly and without sense;
they call upon Egypt, they go to Assyria.
12 As they go, I will cast my net over them;
I will bring them down like birds of the air;
I will discipline them according to the report made to their assembly.[c]
13 Woe to them, for they have strayed from me!
Destruction to them, for they have rebelled against me!
I would redeem them,
but they speak lies against me.

14 They do not cry to me from the heart,
but they wail upon their beds;
they gash themselves for grain and wine;
they rebel against me.
15 It was I who trained and strengthened their arms,
yet they plot evil against me.
16 They turn to that which does not profit;[d]
they have become like a defective bow;
their officials shall fall by the sword
because of the rage of their tongue.
So much for their babbling in the land of Egypt.

8 Set the trumpet to your lips!
One like a vulture[c] is over the house of the LORD,
because they have broken my covenant,
and transgressed my law.
2 Israel cries to me,
"My God, we—Israel—know you!"
3 Israel has spurned the good;
the enemy shall pursue him.

[a] Gk Syr: Heb *brought near*
[b] Or *humbles*
[c] Meaning of Heb uncertain
[d] Cn: Meaning of Heb uncertain

the capital of the Northern Kingdom. **4:** The time between the kneading of the dough and its fermentation is apparently when the oven was hottest. **5:** *Day of our king,* perhaps at an enthronement. **7:** *Devour their rulers,* four Israelite kings were assassinated between 747 and 732. **6:** An *oven* was typically a cylindrical earthenware structure with an opening at the top that permitted smoke or flames to escape (cf. Gen 15.17).

7.8–16: Mixing, religious and political, is bad. 8–10: Ephraim is a half-baked cake. **10:** Cf. 5.5. **11:** The *dove* was considered *silly* because it was overly familiar with humans and easily captured. *Egypt* and *Assyria* are the "foreigners" of v. 9. For the historical background, see 2 Kings 15.19–20; 17.3–4. **14:** The contrast is between acceptable forms of prayer, *cry*ing *to me from the heart,* and those which were unacceptable, such as *wail*ing *upon their beds* (Isa 57.8) and self-mutilation (*they gash themselves*) (Deut 14.1; 1 Kings 18.28). **15:** Cf. 11.3–4. **16:** *Babbling,* i.e., negotiations conducted in the Egyptian language.

8.1–14: For the crime of assimilating foreign political models and religious practices, the punishment is foreign domination. 1–3: A military alarm signals the approach of an enemy, the Assyrians, the vehicle of divine judgment against Israel. This section is in the form of a dialogue. **1:** *Vulture,* or eagle, a symbol of the Assyrian

[4] They made kings, but not through me;
they set up princes, but without my knowledge.
With their silver and gold they made idols
for their own destruction.
[5] Your calf is rejected, O Samaria.
My anger burns against them.
How long will they be incapable of innocence?
[6] For it is from Israel,
an artisan made it;
it is not God.
The calf of Samaria
shall be broken to pieces.[a]

[7] For they sow the wind,
and they shall reap the whirlwind.
The standing grain has no heads,
it shall yield no meal;
if it were to yield,
foreigners would devour it.
[8] Israel is swallowed up;
now they are among the nations
as a useless vessel.
[9] For they have gone up to Assyria,
a wild ass wandering alone;
Ephraim has bargained for lovers.
[10] Though they bargain with the nations,
I will now gather them up.
They shall soon writhe
under the burden of kings and princes.

[11] When Ephraim multiplied altars to expiate sin,
they became to him altars for sinning.
[12] Though I write for him the multitude of my instructions,
they are regarded as a strange thing.
[13] Though they offer choice sacrifices,[b]
though they eat flesh,
the LORD does not accept them.
Now he will remember their iniquity,
and punish their sins;
they shall return to Egypt.
[14] Israel has forgotten his Maker,
and built palaces;
and Judah has multiplied fortified cities;
but I will send a fire upon his cities,
and it shall devour his strongholds.

9 Do not rejoice, O Israel!
Do not exult[c] as other nations do;
for you have played the whore, departing from your God.
You have loved a prostitute's pay
on all threshing floors.
[2] Threshing floor and wine vat shall not feed them,
and the new wine shall fail them.
[3] They shall not remain in the land of the LORD;
but Ephraim shall return to Egypt,
and in Assyria they shall eat unclean food.

[4] They shall not pour drink offerings of wine to the LORD,
and their sacrifices shall not please him.
Such sacrifices shall be like mourners' bread;
all who eat of it shall be defiled;
for their bread shall be for their hunger only;

[a] Or *shall go up in flames*
[b] Cn: Meaning of Heb uncertain
[c] Gk: Heb *To exultation*

army (Jer 49.22). **2:** *Know*, see 2.20n. **4:** *They made kings . . . without my knowledge,* without endorsement from the Lord by a prophet. **5–6:** There were calf images at the northern shrines of Dan and Bethel (1 Kings 12.28); the singular *calf* here probably refers to that at Bethel (10.5), the shrine closest to the city of Samaria. *An artisan,* see Isa 40.19–20. **7–10:** As punishment for political defection, Israel will be subjugated by foreigners. *Wind*, a reference to useless vanity (see Prov 11.29; Eccl 1.14,17), here implying Israel's idol worship, will become a destructive *whirlwind.* See also 12.1. **9:** The phrase *a wild ass . . . Ephraim . . .* plays on the Heb words for wild ass ("pere'") and Ephraim ("'eprayim"); cf. Jer 2.24. *Bargained for lovers*, had relations with Syria, Egypt, and Assyria. **11–14:** As punishment for religious defection, Israel shall return to Egypt (cf. 9.3,6; 11.5; Deut 17.16). **12:** *My instructions,* my "torahs," the legacy of Moses.

9.1–6: Israel's festivals are condemned. 1: *Prostitute's pay,* Gen 38.17; Deut 23.17; Mic 1.7. *Threshing floors*, harvest festivals were an occasion for communal worship; in this case, illicit worship. They were also the site of sexual overtures (Deut 3). **3:** See 8.11–14n.; Am 7.17. **4:** *Drink offerings* were not, in themselves, forbidden; cf. Gen

it shall not come to the house of the LORD.

5 What will you do on the day of appointed festival,
and on the day of the festival of the LORD?
6 For even if they escape destruction,
Egypt shall gather them,
Memphis shall bury them.
Nettles shall possess their precious things of silver;[a]
thorns shall be in their tents.

7 The days of punishment have come,
the days of recompense have come;
Israel cries,[b]
"The prophet is a fool,
the man of the spirit is mad!"
Because of your great iniquity,
your hostility is great.
8 The prophet is a sentinel for my God over Ephraim,
yet a fowler's snare is on all his ways,
and hostility in the house of his God.
9 They have deeply corrupted themselves
as in the days of Gibeah;
he will remember their iniquity,
he will punish their sins.

10 Like grapes in the wilderness,
I found Israel.
Like the first fruit on the fig tree,
in its first season,
I saw your ancestors.
But they came to Baal-peor,
and consecrated themselves to a thing of shame,
and became detestable like the thing they loved.
11 Ephraim's glory shall fly away like a bird—
no birth, no pregnancy, no conception!
12 Even if they bring up children,
I will bereave them until no one is left.
Woe to them indeed
when I depart from them!
13 Once I saw Ephraim as a young palm planted in a lovely meadow,[a]
but now Ephraim must lead out his children for slaughter.
14 Give them, O LORD—
what will you give?
Give them a miscarrying womb
and dry breasts.

15 Every evil of theirs began at Gilgal;
there I came to hate them.
Because of the wickedness of their deeds

[a] Meaning of Heb uncertain
[b] Cn Compare Gk: Heb *shall know*

35.14. *Mourners' bread* was unclean because of association with the dead. **6:** *Memphis* was the capital of Lower (northern) Egypt. *Tents* here probably refers to festival structures.

9.7–9: A response to the prophet's critics. 7: *Man of the spirit,* that is, the prophet (see Isa 11.2; 61.1; Ezek 2.2; Mic 3.8). **8:** For the prophet as *sentinel* who sees at a distance and announces the divine approach, see Isa 21.6; Jer 6.17; Ezek 3.16–21; 33.6–8. *House of his God,* either the region as a whole or a former sanctuary where the prophet is no longer welcome (see 9.4). **9:** *Gibeah,* the infamous episode there and its aftermath are detailed in Judg 19–21.

9.10–11.11: Before and after. This section consists of a series of four metaphors (Israel as grapes in the wilderness, a luxuriant vine, a heifer trained, a beloved child) used to characterize the people's former fidelity and health, and contrasted with their present corrupt state brought about by religious, social, and political misdeeds. As the first three metaphors unfold, the cumulative message appears to be that the covenant is irrevocably broken and Israel is to be abandoned (9.17; 10.10; 10.15). The fourth part, the culmination of the series and, for many, the culmination of the prophecies of Hosea, initially continues in this vein (11.1–7), but then dramatically shifts from an angry to a compassionate tone (11.8–11).

9.10–17: Israel, grapes in the wilderness found by God (v. 10), is now desiccated (v. 16). 10: *Baal-peor,* the site of an incident of grave disloyalty during the wilderness period (see Num 25.1–18). *First fruit*, a reference to Israel's divine election in the wilderness (see Deut 32.10; Jer 2.2–3). **15:** *Gilgal,* a venerable Israelite shrine near Jericho (e.g., Josh 4.20; 10.43; 1 Sam 7.16); condemned here as the site of illicit worship (4.15; 12.11; Am 4.4; 5.5). Also, at Gilgal the Lord reluctantly acceded to the people's request for a king (1 Sam 10.14–11.25). *Thing of shame*, an epithet for Baal.

I will drive them out of my house.
I will love them no more;
all their officials are rebels.

16 Ephraim is stricken,
their root is dried up,
they shall bear no fruit.
Even though they give birth,
I will kill the cherished offspring of their womb.
17 Because they have not listened to him,
my God will reject them;
they shall become wanderers among the nations.

10 Israel is a luxuriant vine
that yields its fruit.
The more his fruit increased
the more altars he built;
as his country improved,
he improved his pillars.
2 Their heart is false;
now they must bear their guilt.
The LORD[a] will break down their altars,
and destroy their pillars.

3 For now they will say:
"We have no king,
for we do not fear the LORD,
and a king—what could he do for us?"
4 They utter mere words;
with empty oaths they make covenants;
so litigation springs up like poisonous weeds
in the furrows of the field.
5 The inhabitants of Samaria tremble
for the calf[b] of Beth-aven.
Its people shall mourn for it,
and its idolatrous priests shall wail[c] over it,
over its glory that has departed from it.
6 The thing itself shall be carried to Assyria
as tribute to the great king.[d]
Ephraim shall be put to shame,
and Israel shall be ashamed of his idol.[e]

7 Samaria's king shall perish
like a chip on the face of the waters.
8 The high places of Aven, the sin of Israel,
shall be destroyed.
Thorn and thistle shall grow up
on their altars.
They shall say to the mountains, Cover us,
and to the hills, Fall on us.

9 Since the days of Gibeah you have sinned,
O Israel;
there they have continued.
Shall not war overtake them in Gibeah?
10 I will come[f] against the wayward people
to punish them;
and nations shall be gathered against them
when they are punished[g] for their double iniquity.

11 Ephraim was a trained heifer
that loved to thresh,
and I spared her fair neck;
but I will make Ephraim break the ground;
Judah must plow;
Jacob must harrow for himself.
12 Sow for yourselves righteousness;
reap steadfast love;
break up your fallow ground;
for it is time to seek the LORD,
that he may come and rain righteousness upon you.

a Heb *he*
b Gk Syr: Heb *calves*
c Cn: Heb *exult*
d Cn: Heb *to a king who will contend*
e Cn: Heb *counsel*
f Cn Compare Gk: Heb *In my desire*
g Gk: Heb *bound*

10.1–7: Israel, a luxuriant vine (v. 1), is now weedy (v. 4) and overrun with thorns (v. 8). 1–2: In Canaan Israel increased in sin (here adopting illicit religious practices) as it increased in prosperity; cf. Deut 6.10–15. **2:** *Pillars,* standing stones, condemned in Ex 23.24; see 3.4. **4:** *Empty oaths,* Ex 20.7. **5:** *Calf,* 8.5n. *Beth-aven,* see 4.15n. **8:** *Aven,* 10.5n. *Mountains, Cover us . . .,* this phrase will be reused in New Testament depictions of divine judgment (Lk 23.30; Rev 6.16). **9:** *Gibeah,* 9.9n. **10:** God is a commander of the nations who will direct them against Israel. *Double iniquity,* Gibeah's former sin (see 9.9n.) and present guilt.

10.11–15: Heifer Israel now plows wickedness. 11: *Trained heifer,* compare with 4.16. *Spared her . . . neck,* i.e., she was unyoked. **12:** *Break up your fallow ground,* Jer 4.3. *Rain* is a frequent prophetic symbol of divine restora-

13 You have plowed wickedness,
you have reaped injustice,
you have eaten the fruit of lies.
Because you have trusted in your power
and in the multitude of your warriors,
14 therefore the tumult of war shall rise
against your people,
and all your fortresses shall be destroyed,
as Shalman destroyed Beth-arbel on the
day of battle
when mothers were dashed in pieces
with their children.
15 Thus it shall be done to you, O Bethel,
because of your great wickedness.
At dawn the king of Israel
shall be utterly cut off.

11 When Israel was a child, I loved him,
and out of Egypt I called my son.
2 The more I[a] called them,
the more they went from me;[b]
they kept sacrificing to the Baals,
and offering incense to idols.

3 Yet it was I who taught Ephraim to walk,
I took them up in my[c] arms;
but they did not know that I healed them.
4 I led them with cords of human kindness,
with bands of love.
I was to them like those
who lift infants to their cheeks.[d]
I bent down to them and fed them.

5 They shall return to the land of Egypt,
and Assyria shall be their king,
because they have refused to return to me.
6 The sword rages in their cities,
it consumes their oracle-priests,
and devours because of their schemes.
7 My people are bent on turning away from
me.
To the Most High they call,
but he does not raise them up at all.[e]

8 How can I give you up, Ephraim?
How can I hand you over, O Israel?
How can I make you like Admah?
How can I treat you like Zeboiim?
My heart recoils within me;
my compassion grows warm and tender.
9 I will not execute my fierce anger;
I will not again destroy Ephraim;
for I am God and no mortal,
the Holy One in your midst,
and I will not come in wrath.[e]

10 They shall go after the LORD,
who roars like a lion;
when he roars,
his children shall come trembling from
the west.
11 They shall come trembling like birds
from Egypt,
and like doves from the land of Assyria;
and I will return them to their homes,
says the LORD.

12 [f]Ephraim has surrounded me with lies,
and the house of Israel with deceit;
but Judah still walks[g] with God,
and is faithful to the Holy One.

[a] Gk: Heb *they*
[b] Gk: Heb *them*
[c] Gk Syr Vg: Heb *his*
[d] Or *who ease the yoke on their jaws*
[e] Meaning of Heb uncertain
[f] Ch 12.1 in Heb
[g] Heb *roams* or *rules*

tion and blessing (Isa 44.3; 45.8; 55.10). **13:** Contrast Ps 20.7, 44.6, Isa 31.1. **14:** *Shalman . . . Beth-arbel,* the allusion is unknown, but perhaps refers to the Assyrian king Shalmaneser V (see 2 Kings 17.3) or the Moabite king Salamanu. **15:** *Bethel,* see 8.5–6n.

11.1–11: Israel as God's wayward child. This speech employs the culminating, and most intimate, metaphor in the series: Israel as the Lord's child. It also ends this long section, which began in 4.1, on a hopeful note. Here, the divine mood shifts from anger to compassion. **1:** Cf. Ex 4.22. **2:** *Baals,* see 2.13n. **3:** Cf. 7.15. **5:** *Return to . . . Egypt,* 8.13; 9.3. **8–9:** At the pivotal point of this soliloquy, divine compassion overcomes divine anger. *Admah, Zeboiim,* cities destroyed along with Sodom and Gomorrah (Gen 19; Deut 29.23). **10:** In contrast with 5.14, this lion's *roar* is not aggressive but is a summons to its mate or cubs. **11:** *Doves,* contrast 7.11. These doves exhibit a homing instinct. *Egypt* and *Assyria,* contrast 9.3.

12 Ephraim herds the wind,
and pursues the east wind all day long;
they multiply falsehood and violence;
they make a treaty with Assyria,
and oil is carried to Egypt.

2 The LORD has an indictment against
Judah,
and will punish Jacob according to his
ways,
and repay him according to his
deeds.
3 In the womb he tried to supplant his
brother,
and in his manhood he strove with God.
4 He strove with the angel and prevailed,
he wept and sought his favor;
he met him at Bethel,
and there he spoke with him.[a]
5 The LORD the God of hosts,
the LORD is his name!
6 But as for you, return to your God,
hold fast to love and justice,
and wait continually for your God.

7 A trader, in whose hands are false balances,
he loves to oppress.
8 Ephraim has said, "Ah, I am rich,
I have gained wealth for myself;
in all of my gain
no offense has been found in me
that would be sin."[b]
9 I am the LORD your God
from the land of Egypt;
I will make you live in tents again,
as in the days of the appointed festival.
10 I spoke to the prophets;
it was I who multiplied visions,
and through the prophets I will bring
destruction.
11 In Gilead[c] there is iniquity,
they shall surely come to nothing.
In Gilgal they sacrifice bulls,
so their altars shall be like stone heaps
on the furrows of the field.
12 Jacob fled to the land of Aram,
there Israel served for a wife,
and for a wife he guarded sheep.[d]
13 By a prophet the LORD brought Israel up
from Egypt,
and by a prophet he was guarded.
14 Ephraim has given bitter offense,
so his Lord will bring his crimes down
on him
and pay him back for his insults.

13 When Ephraim spoke, there was
trembling;
he was exalted in Israel;
but he incurred guilt through Baal and
died.
2 And now they keep on sinning
and make a cast image for themselves,
idols of silver made according to their
understanding,
all of them the work of artisans.
"Sacrifice to these," they say.[e]

[a] Gk Syr: Heb *us*
[b] Meaning of Heb uncertain
[c] Compare Syr: Heb *Gilead*
[d] Heb lacks *sheep*
[e] Cn Compare Gk: Heb *To these they say sacrifices of people*

11.12–12.1: The futility of foreign alliances. 11.12: *But Judah still . . .*, perhaps a later addition. **12.1:** Cf. 8.7. *Treaty with Assyria,* see 2 Kings 15.19–20; 17.3. *Oil . . . to Egypt,* Samaria was renowned for its olive oil, used here as a commodity of tribute to Egypt, which produced little.

12.2–14.9: Rebellion and restoration. Another major division in the book (like 4.1–12.1), which begins with the announcement of an indictment and ends with an oracle of hope.

12.2–13.16: A divine lawsuit against Israel, which mixes historical retrospection with contemporary critique. For a historical summary with a similar tone, see Ps 106. **12.2:** *The LORD has an indictment,* cf. 4.1. **3:** Gen 25.26; 32.22–30. **4–5:** Gen 28.11–17; 35.5–8. **7:** See Am 8.5. *Trader*, the Hebrew word can also mean "Canaanite," thus a doubly condemnatory pun. **8:** As if prosperity were proof of virtue. **9:** *I am the LORD your God,* see Ex 20.2; Deut 5.6; Ps 81.10; Isa 43.3. *Tents,* a customary feature of seasonal rites (Lev 23.34–43; Deut 16.13) and symbolic of the wilderness period, will be all that remains for Israel following the divine punishment. **11:** *Gilead*, see 6.8n.; *Gilgal*, see 9.15n. **12–13:** *Jacob . . . guarded sheep*, but Moses *guarded* the people of Israel; Gen 29.1–30. **13:** *By a prophet,* the first reference is clearly to Moses; the second may be Moses as well, or Samuel (1 Sam 3.20) or Elijah (1 Kings 18.22). **13.1:** An allusion to Ephraim's relative prosperity during much of the Divided Monarchy. **2:**

People are kissing calves!
3 Therefore they shall be like the morning
mist
or like the dew that goes away early,
like chaff that swirls from the threshing
floor
or like smoke from a window.

4 Yet I have been the LORD your God
ever since the land of Egypt;
you know no God but me,
and besides me there is no savior.
5 It was I who fed[a] you in the wilderness,
in the land of drought.
6 When I fed[b] them, they were satisfied;
they were satisfied, and their heart was
proud;
therefore they forgot me.
7 So I will become like a lion to them,
like a leopard I will lurk beside the way.
8 I will fall upon them like a bear robbed of
her cubs,
and will tear open the covering of their
heart;
there I will devour them like a lion,
as a wild animal would mangle them.

9 I will destroy you, O Israel;
who can help you?[c]
10 Where now is[d] your king, that he may
save you?
Where in all your cities are your rulers,
of whom you said,
"Give me a king and rulers"?
11 I gave you a king in my anger,
and I took him away in my wrath.

12 Ephraim's iniquity is bound up;
his sin is kept in store.
13 The pangs of childbirth come for him,
but he is an unwise son;
for at the proper time he does not present
himself
at the mouth of the womb.

14 Shall I ransom them from the power of
Sheol?
Shall I redeem them from Death?
O Death, where are[e] your plagues?
O Sheol, where is[e] your destruction?
Compassion is hidden from my eyes.

15 Although he may flourish among
rushes,[f]
the east wind shall come, a blast from
the LORD,
rising from the wilderness;
and his fountain shall dry up,
his spring shall be parched.
It shall strip his treasury
of every precious thing.
16 [g] Samaria shall bear her guilt,
because she has rebelled against her
God;
they shall fall by the sword,
their little ones shall be dashed in
pieces,
and their pregnant women ripped open.

14 Return, O Israel, to the LORD your God,
for you have stumbled because of your
iniquity.
2 Take words with you

[a] Gk Syr: Heb *knew*
[b] Cn: Heb *according to their pasture*
[c] Gk Syr: Heb *for in me is your help*
[d] Gk Syr Vg: Heb *I will be*
[e] Gk Syr: Heb *I will be*
[f] Or *among brothers*
[g] Ch 14.1 in Heb

Kissing calves, see 8.5–6n.; 1 Kings 19.18. **3:** *Morning mist,* cf. 6.4. **4:** See 12.9n. **5:** Cf. 11.4. **8:** *A bear robbed of her cubs,* a popular image for ferocity (2 Sam 17.8; Prov 17.12). *Lion*, see 5.14; 11.10. **9–11:** This may refer to the deposing of Hoshea by the Assyrians in 723 (2 Kings 17.4). **10:** *King . . . may save,* read this in light of 13.4: The Lord alone is Israel's savior. *Give me a king*, Israel requested human leadership; see 1 Sam 8.6,19; 12.13,17. **11:** *I gave . . . a king in my anger,* cf. 1 Sam 12. **13:** The pain of divine judgment is designed not to kill but to induce new life, yet Israel, *unwise,* refuses to budge. **14:** *Sheol*, the abode of all dead, righteous and unrighteous. *Death* (Mot), the Canaanite deity of the underworld, is probably referred to here; cf. Job 18.13; Ps 49.14; Isa 28.15; Hab 2.5. *Sheol,* in this era, the abode of all dead, righteous and unrighteous. In this judgment speech, *compassion is hidden,* unlike 11.8. **15:** *Flourish among rushes,* alludes to political reliance on Egypt, which will be blown away by the "east wind," Assyria. *The east wind . . . a blast from the LORD,* contrasts the east wind, which was the vehicle of

and return to the LORD;
say to him,
"Take away all guilt;
accept that which is good,
and we will offer
the fruit[a] of our lips.
3 Assyria shall not save us;
we will not ride upon horses;
we will say no more, 'Our God,'
to the work of our hands.
In you the orphan finds mercy."

4 I will heal their disloyalty;
I will love them freely,
for my anger has turned from them.
5 I will be like the dew to Israel;
he shall blossom like the lily,
he shall strike root like the forests of Lebanon.[b]
6 His shoots shall spread out;
his beauty shall be like the olive tree,
and his fragrance like that of Lebanon.
7 They shall again live beneath my[c] shadow,
they shall flourish as a garden;[d]
they shall blossom like the vine,
their fragrance shall be like the wine of Lebanon.

8 O Ephraim, what have I[e] to do with idols?
It is I who answer and look after you.[f]
I am like an evergreen cypress;
your faithfulness[g] comes from me.
9 Those who are wise understand these things;
those who are discerning know them.
For the ways of the LORD are right,
and the upright walk in them,
but transgressors stumble in them.

[a] Gk Syr: Heb *bulls*
[b] Cn: Heb *like Lebanon*
[c] Heb *his*
[d] Cn: Heb *they shall grow grain*
[e] Or *What more has Ephraim*
[f] Heb *him*
[g] Heb *your fruit*

the Lord's deliverance of Israel at the Reed Sea (Ex 14.21; 15.8). **16:** The ravages of conquering armies; cf. 10.14; 2 Kings 8.12; Ps 137.9; Am 1.13.

14.1–8: A final plea for repentance and a vision of restoration. 2–3: *Take words,* i.e., take these words: The prophet coaches Israel in repentance. **3:** *The work of our hands*, see 8.6. *Mercy* or "pity," the same root as in Lo-ruhamah/Ruhamah (1.6; 2.1). **5:** *Dew* is a life-sustaining necessity in the dry land of Israel (Ps 133.3); contrast the image in 6.4; 13.3. **6:** This *fragrance* is of the aromatic Lebanese cedar forest; in the next verse, of Lebanese scented wine. **7–8:** *My shadow,* more common is the poetic image of the "shade" under God's wings (Ps 17.8; 36.8); uniquely here, God's shade is that of a great tree. In contrast to the trees used in Canaanite worship (see 4.12n.), God's presence is everlasting, like the abundant foliage of an *evergreen*.

14.9: A postscript in the style of wisdom literature. For the first half of the verse, cf. Ps 107.43; Jer 9.12; for the second, Prov 10.29.

JOEL

NAME, AUTHORSHIP, AND DATE OF COMPOSITION

The book begins with a brief superscription stating that the word of the LORD came to Joel the son of Bethuel. No chronological formula is given to indicate the book's date, unlike the surrounding books of Hosea and Amos, which are both dated to the eighth century BCE. There is good reason to think that the book of Joel derives from a much later period, probably the Persian era (539–333 BCE), because (1) it refers to the Greeks (3.6); (2) it includes imagery attested elsewhere in late prophetic literature; (3) it alludes to other biblical texts, some of which were written in the late monarchic period (Obadiah) or the Persian period (Malachi); and (4) the name "Joel" is prominent in Persian-period biblical literature. Of the prophet himself nothing is known except his father's name.

LOCATION IN CANON

In the Masoretic Text (and in English translations that follow its order) Joel comes between two books attributed to much earlier prophets, Hosea and Amos. That may be due to two similar verses, Joel 3.16a and Am 1.2a. In the Septuagint (LXX), however, Joel is typically the fourth book of the Minor Prophets, after Hosea, Amos, and Micah.

STRUCTURE, CONTENTS, AND INTERPRETATION

The book of Joel describes a crisis in harrowing terms. The crisis and its resolution are reported in 1.1–2.27. Scholars, however, often attribute 2.28–3.21 to another author or authors. In this section, described as late prophetic or early apocalyptic literature, the world of ritual disappears and is replaced by the return of prophecy, cosmic symbolism, conflict with foreign nations, and images of fertility. These later verses also include more allusions to other biblical texts than 1.1–2.27.

The book offers multiple images of agricultural ruin and its impact on life in Judah. The prophet speaks of drought in the land (e.g., 1.10,12,17,20), and envisions a locust plague in the language of military attack. Locusts were known for their destructive potential to strip all vegetation from the countryside (see Ex 10.15) and are compared with military forces in other ancient Near Eastern literature.

Although the book's rhetoric of destruction is comparable to that found in other prophetic books, the poems or speeches are quite different. Rather than offering a critique of Israel's behavior, Joel summons the people to respond to the crisis by performing several rituals. Plural imperative verbs—fast, lament, wail, blow (the trumpet), put on sackcloth—are a hallmark of this summons.

The book has a distinctive theological position. Though Joel clearly thinks that God was the ultimate cause of the disaster (2.19), the prophet offers no reason for the deity's action. Hence, it is not clear that the crisis should be conceived as judgment for the people's prior misdeeds. Nonetheless, the book affirms that Israel's God is sovereign.

David L. Petersen

1 The word of the LORD that came to Joel
son of Pethuel:

[2] Hear this, O elders,
give ear, all inhabitants of the land!
Has such a thing happened in your days,
or in the days of your ancestors?
[3] Tell your children of it,
and let your children tell their
children,
and their children another generation.

[4] What the cutting locust left,
the swarming locust has eaten.
What the swarming locust left,
the hopping locust has eaten,
and what the hopping locust left,
the destroying locust has eaten.

[5] Wake up, you drunkards, and weep;
and wail, all you wine-drinkers,
over the sweet wine,
for it is cut off from your mouth.
[6] For a nation has invaded my land,
powerful and innumerable;
its teeth are lions' teeth,
and it has the fangs of a lioness.
[7] It has laid waste my vines,
and splintered my fig trees;
it has stripped off their bark and thrown
it down;
their branches have turned white.

[8] Lament like a virgin dressed in
sackcloth
for the husband of her youth.
[9] The grain offering and the drink offering
are cut off
from the house of the LORD.
The priests mourn,
the ministers of the LORD.
[10] The fields are devastated,
the ground mourns;
for the grain is destroyed,
the wine dries up,
the oil fails.

[11] Be dismayed, you farmers,
wail, you vinedressers,
over the wheat and the barley;
for the crops of the field are ruined.
[12] The vine withers,
the fig tree droops.
Pomegranate, palm, and apple—
all the trees of the field are dried up;
surely, joy withers away
among the people.

1.1: Superscription. Unlike Hos 1.1 and Am 1.1, there is no reference to a king during whose reign Joel prophesied. This may suggest a date when Israel was no longer a monarchy.

1.2–2.17: Crisis and call to action. A series of staccato-like poems, some of which depict the crisis (e.g., 1.17–18), more of which call people to act (e.g., 1.14). **1.2–20:** Different groups are commanded to undertake various rituals of lament and petition to the LORD. **2–3:** The prophet strikes an intergenerational note, which involves both hearing and telling. *Elders*, probably village or regional officials (cf. Ezra 5.9; 6.8,14; 10.8,14), stand in parallel with the hyperbolic *all inhabitants of the land*. *Ancestors*, lit., "fathers." The rhetorical question, which has an obvious negative answer, does not reveal the nature of *such a thing.* **4:** Rather than different species, these nouns probably refer to the developmental stages of the *locust*. For Joel, the four forms represent four attacks on the vegetation (cf. Am 4.9). For other references to *locust* plagues see Ex 10.22; Pss 78.46; 105.34–35. **5–7:** *Drunkards* may be too negative a translation. In these speeches Joel does not regularly indict Israelites, so here he may simply be referring to those who enjoy wine. Joel 3.18 promises the return of *sweet wine.* The admonition to *wail* may involve ritual lament, not simply crying, as in Jer 4.8. **6–7:** The reference to *my land* (cf. 2.18; Lev 25.23) suggests that God is speaking. The poem offers the reason for the commands: *a nation* of vast numbers is ferocious; it is destroying Israel's *vines* (note the earlier reference to wine) and *fig trees*, both of which must grow for a long time before they bear fruit. **8–10:** *Virgin* may mean a young woman who is grief-stricken at the death of her husband. Again, the reason for the command follows the command itself, given to unidentified persons. Rituals at the temple—*grain offering, drink offering*—could not take place because *wine, grain,* and *oil* (cf. 2.19, which promises their return) were no longer available. **11–12:** Now farmers must lament the demise of eight different harvests, divided into *crops* and *trees*. **11:** *Vinedresser*, a person who prunes grape vines. **13–14:** *Priests* (cf. 1.9–11) are now commanded to lament and put on *sackcloth*, which was worn during mourning rites (e.g., Am 8.10) and other difficult times (e.g., Ps 35.13); see 2 Sam 12.16 for passing the night in

13 Put on sackcloth and lament, you priests;
wail, you ministers of the altar.
Come, pass the night in sackcloth,
you ministers of my God!
Grain offering and drink offering
are withheld from the house of your God.

14 Sanctify a fast,
call a solemn assembly.
Gather the elders
and all the inhabitants of the land
to the house of the LORD your God,
and cry out to the LORD.

15 Alas for the day!
For the day of the LORD is near,
and as destruction from the Almighty[a]
it comes.
16 Is not the food cut off
before our eyes,
joy and gladness
from the house of our God?

17 The seed shrivels under the clods,[b]
the storehouses are desolate;
the granaries are ruined
because the grain has failed.
18 How the animals groan!
The herds of cattle wander about
because there is no pasture for them;
even the flocks of sheep are dazed.[c]

19 To you, O LORD, I cry.
For fire has devoured
the pastures of the wilderness,
and flames have burned
all the trees of the field.
20 Even the wild animals cry to you
because the watercourses are dried up,
and fire has devoured
the pastures of the wilderness.

2 Blow the trumpet in Zion;
sound the alarm on my holy mountain!
Let all the inhabitants of the land tremble,
for the day of the LORD is coming, it is
near—
2 a day of darkness and gloom,
a day of clouds and thick darkness!
Like blackness spread upon the mountains
a great and powerful army comes;
their like has never been from of old,
nor will be again after them
in ages to come.

3 Fire devours in front of them,
and behind them a flame burns.
Before them the land is like the garden of
Eden,
but after them a desolate wilderness,
and nothing escapes them.

4 They have the appearance of horses,
and like war-horses they charge.
5 As with the rumbling of chariots,
they leap on the tops of the mountains,
like the crackling of a flame of fire
devouring the stubble,
like a powerful army
drawn up for battle.

6 Before them peoples are in anguish,
all faces grow pale.[b]

[a] Traditional rendering of Heb *Shaddai*
[b] Meaning of Heb uncertain
[c] Compare Gk Syr Vg: Meaning of Heb uncertain

a comparable ritual. *A fast* could be a public event (cf. Zech 7.3–5; 8.18–19; Ezra 8.21–23; Neh 1.4–11). For a different perspective on *a solemn assembly,* see Am 5.21; Isa 1:13. *Elders* and *all the inhabitants of the land* echo 1.2. **15–20:** These verses may be a single lament, spoken either by the prophet or the people (or their priests). *The day of the LORD* (see also 2.1,11,31; 3.14) symbolizes God's theophanic and judging presence (cf. Am 5.18; Ob 15; Zeph 1.7,14–15; Isa 13.6; Ezek 13.5). **16:** A rhetorical question, with an obvious response. **18:** Domestic animals also suffer. **20:** *Even the wild animals* completes the picture of all life—plant and animal—suffering through the attack, fire, and drought.

2.1–17: Though similar to ch 1, these poems focus more on describing the calamity than commanding a response. **1–2:** *The day of the LORD . . . is near* (see 1.15), even though catastrophe has already struck. *Darkness* is an anticipated feature of the *day* (see also Am 5.18; Zeph 1.15), highlighted in the advent of a *great and powerful army*. **3–4:** The prophet depicts the scene *before* the onslaught (2.3,6,10), *like the garden of Eden* (see Gen 2.8–9; 13.10; Isa 51.3), which contrasts with the description of the devastation afterward, *a desolate wilderness*. **5–7:**

7 Like warriors they charge,
  like soldiers they scale the wall.
Each keeps to its own course,
  they do not swerve from[a] their paths.
8 They do not jostle one another,
  each keeps to its own track;
they burst through the weapons
  and are not halted.
9 They leap upon the city,
  they run upon the walls;
they climb up into the houses,
  they enter through the windows like a thief.

10 The earth quakes before them,
  the heavens tremble.
The sun and the moon are darkened,
  and the stars withdraw their shining.
11 The LORD utters his voice
  at the head of his army;
how vast is his host!
  Numberless are those who obey his command.
Truly the day of the LORD is great;
  terrible indeed—who can endure it?

12 Yet even now, says the LORD,
  return to me with all your heart,
with fasting, with weeping, and with mourning;
  13 rend your hearts and not your clothing.
Return to the LORD, your God,
  for he is gracious and merciful,
slow to anger, and abounding in steadfast love,
  and relents from punishing.
14 Who knows whether he will not turn and relent,
  and leave a blessing behind him,
a grain offering and a drink offering
  for the LORD, your God?

15 Blow the trumpet in Zion;
  sanctify a fast;
call a solemn assembly;
  16 gather the people.
Sanctify the congregation;
  assemble the aged;
gather the children,
  even infants at the breast.
Let the bridegroom leave his room,
  and the bride her canopy.

17 Between the vestibule and the altar
  let the priests, the ministers of the LORD, weep.
Let them say, "Spare your people, O LORD,
  and do not make your heritage a mockery,
  a byword among the nations.
Why should it be said among the peoples,
  'Where is their God?'"

18 Then the LORD became jealous for his land,
  and had pity on his people.
19 In response to his people the LORD said:
I am sending you
  grain, wine, and oil,
  and you will be satisfied;
and I will no more make you
  a mockery among the nations.

[a] Gk Syr Vg: Heb *they do not take a pledge along*

The similes *like a powerful army* and *like warriors* make it clear that locusts, not an army, are meant. **10–11:** *The earth quakes* is typical of a theophany (e.g., Ps 77.18), as is the darkening of astral objects (cf. Isa 13.10). God is the general of *his army*, which may describe the locusts and thus explains why the locusts are related to *the day of the LORD*. **12–13:** Language from ch 1 reappears, calling for a ritual response. The reference to *heart* reflects Deuteronomic idioms (Deut 10.16; 30.2). The characterization of the LORD in v. 13b appears elsewhere, though Joel omits mention of God's judgment (see, e.g., Ex 34.6–7; Num 14.18). **14:** *Who knows . . . ,* cf. Jon 3.9. *The LORD* may leave an offering for himself. **15–16:** Cf. 1.14. **17:** *Vestibule* refers to the entry hall of the temple (see 1 Kings 6.3). The *altar* was in the temple courtyard. The priests, stationed between the altar and the vestibule, are to utter the prayer given to them by Joel. Cf. Ex 32.12; Deut 9.26–28 for similar logic.

2.18–27: The LORD responds. Since the deity responds, one may infer that the people, especially the priests, complied with Joel's commands, though the book does not report the people's actual response to Joel's admonitions. **18–19:** *Jealous,* better "zealous"; cf. Zech 1.14; Isa 9.7. God's first concern, even before the people, was *his land* (see 1.6–7n.). *Grain, wine, and oil* mentioned as absent in 1.10. The reference to *mockery among the nations*

20 I will remove the northern army far from
you,
and drive it into a parched and desolate
land,
its front into the eastern sea,
and its rear into the western sea;
its stench and foul smell will rise up.
Surely he has done great things!

21 Do not fear, O soil;
be glad and rejoice,
for the LORD has done great things!
22 Do not fear, you animals of the field,
for the pastures of the wilderness are
green;
the tree bears its fruit,
the fig tree and vine give their full yield.

23 O children of Zion, be glad
and rejoice in the LORD your God;
for he has given the early rain[a] for your
vindication,
he has poured down for you abundant
rain,
the early and the later rain, as before.
24 The threshing floors shall be full of
grain,
the vats shall overflow with wine and
oil.

25 I will repay you for the years
that the swarming locust has eaten,
the hopper, the destroyer, and the cutter,
my great army, which I sent against you.

26 You shall eat in plenty and be satisfied,
and praise the name of the LORD your
God,
who has dealt wondrously with you.
And my people shall never again be put to
shame.
27 You shall know that I am in the midst of
Israel,
and that I, the LORD, am your God and
there is no other.
And my people shall never again be put to
shame.

28 [b]Then afterward
I will pour out my spirit on all flesh;
your sons and your daughters shall
prophesy,
your old men shall dream dreams,
and your young men shall see visions.
29 Even on the male and female slaves,
in those days, I will pour out my spirit.

30 I will show portents in the heavens and
on the earth, blood and fire and columns of
smoke. 31 The sun shall be turned to darkness,
and the moon to blood, before the great and
terrible day of the LORD comes. 32 Then every-
one who calls on the name of the LORD shall
be saved; for in Mount Zion and in Jerusalem
there shall be those who escape, as the LORD
has said, and among the survivors shall be
those whom the LORD calls.

[a] Meaning of Heb uncertain
[b] Ch 3.1 in Heb

suggests that God responded directly to the prayer in 2.17. **20:** *Northern army* is probably an allusion to the mythic enemy from the north (cf. Jer 1.13–15; 4.6; 6.1). *Eastern sea*, the Dead Sea; *western sea*, the Mediterranean. *Stench and foul smell* may reflect the plague traditions, cf. Ex 7.18; 8.14. **21:** The land is now personified as *soil*. **22:** The imagery represents a reversal of the earlier situation. *Animals of the field* will have pastureland (cf. 1.18), and *fig tree* and *vine* will bear fruit (cf. 1.12). **23:** *Abundant rain* replaces the earlier drought (1.20). *Children of Zion*, cf. Ps 149.2. Human life focuses on Jerusalem. *Early* rain, in late fall; *later rain,* in early spring. **25:** *Repay* often has legal connotations; cf. Ex 21.34. *Years* is much longer than the attack heretofore described. The four forms of locust appear here in a different order from that in 1.4. **26–27:** The promise of restoration is confirmed by allusion to the covenantal relationship with the only true God; cf. Isa 45.5; 45.17.

2.28–3.21. A future of well-being for Israel. Poetic and prose oracles focusing on Israel and their human enemies. God will again bring victory that will result in marvelous fertility. **2.28–29:** *Pour out my spirit* here implies enabling various forms of prophetic revelation (cf. Ezek 39.29). What had been limited to the house of David (Zech 12.10) or the prophets is now available to all Israel. Cf. Acts 2.16–21. **30–32:** These verses are probably poetic. *Portents* are cosmic events. On the sky darkening, cf. Isa 13.10; 34.4; Jer 4.23; Ezek 32.7–8; Am 8.9. In Joel 2.10, the locusts had darkened the sky; now God is the cause. *Calls on the name of the LORD,* i.e., worships the LORD. *Those who escape* and *survivors* probably refer to those not killed in an eschatological battle; cf. Zech 14.16,

3 [a] For then, in those days and at that time,
when I restore the fortunes of Judah
and Jerusalem, [2] I will gather all the nations and bring them down to the valley of Jehoshaphat, and I will enter into judgment with them there, on account of my people and my heritage Israel, because they have scattered them among the nations. They have divided my land, [3] and cast lots for my people, and traded boys for prostitutes, and sold girls for wine, and drunk it down.

[4] What are you to me, O Tyre and Sidon, and all the regions of Philistia? Are you paying me back for something? If you are paying me back, I will turn your deeds back upon your own heads swiftly and speedily. [5] For you have taken my silver and my gold, and have carried my rich treasures into your temples.[b] [6] You have sold the people of Judah and Jerusalem to the Greeks, removing them far from their own border. [7] But now I will rouse them to leave the places to which you have sold them, and I will turn your deeds back upon your own heads. [8] I will sell your sons and your daughters into the hand of the people of Judah, and they will sell them to the Sabeans, to a nation far away; for the LORD has spoken.

[9] Proclaim this among the nations:
Prepare war,[c]
stir up the warriors.
Let all the soldiers draw near,
let them come up.
[10] Beat your plowshares into swords,
and your pruning hooks into spears;
let the weakling say, "I am a warrior."

[11] Come quickly,[d]
all you nations all around,
gather yourselves there.
Bring down your warriors, O LORD.
[12] Let the nations rouse themselves,
and come up to the valley of
Jehoshaphat;
for there I will sit to judge
all the neighboring nations.

[13] Put in the sickle,
for the harvest is ripe.
Go in, tread,
for the wine press is full.
The vats overflow,
for their wickedness is great.

[14] Multitudes, multitudes,
in the valley of decision!
For the day of the LORD is near
in the valley of decision.
[15] The sun and the moon are darkened,
and the stars withdraw their shining.

[16] The LORD roars from Zion,
and utters his voice from Jerusalem,

[a] Ch 4.1 in Heb
[b] Or *palaces*
[c] Heb *sanctify war*
[d] Meaning of Heb uncertain

which includes non-Israelites. **3.1–3:** These verses are probably poetic. They depict an eschatological tradition that the LORD will judge *the nations*. **2:** *Valley of Jehoshaphat*, probably not the Kidron Valley in Jerusalem, but a symbolic place, a plain broad enough for *the nations* to be gathered and defeated, though cf. 2 Chr 20.20–26. **3:** On charges of enslavement, cf. Am 2.6; 8.6. On foreign nations that *cast lots,* see Ob 11; Nah 3.10.

3.4–21: Punishment of Tyre, Sidon, Philistia: In the tradition of oracles against foreign nations, coastal territories are indicted. Verses 4–8 may refer to events dating to the mid-fourth century BCE, a time when these regions could have worked in concert. Mercantile activity pervades these verses, which probably interrupt an original oracle 3.1–3,9–13 (16). **5:** According to 2 Kings 25.13–17, the Babylonians removed the gold from Jerusalem's Temple. **6:** On sale of children to Greece, cf. Ezek 27.13. **7–8:** Judah will requite the coastal regions by selling their children to the *Sabeans*, or the land of Sheba, in the southern Arabian peninsula. **9–13:** The oracle begun in vv. 1–3 resumes. Plural imperative verbs predominate in vv. 9–11, though speakers and audiences are ambiguous. The nations, or perhaps the divine council, are commanded to prepare for war. Verse 11b is directed to the LORD whereas in v. 12 the deity is speaking; v. 13 is addressed either to the divine council or to Israel. **12:** *Jehoshaphat* is a wordplay on *judge* (Heb "shaphat"). **13:** Images of fertility, as in ch 2, reappear. **14–21:** A series of poetic fragments (vv. 14–15,16,17,18,19–21) now ensues. **14–15:** The motif of darkening before the Day of the LORD appears echoes 2.30–31; cf. 2.1–2n. The motif of *valley* (see 3.2,12) may explain why this oracle appears here. **16a:** This part of the verse is identical with Am 1.2 and may explain why these two books are situated next

and the heavens and the earth
shake.
But the LORD is a refuge for his people,
a stronghold for the people of
Israel.

17 So you shall know that I, the LORD your
God,
dwell in Zion, my holy mountain.
And Jerusalem shall be holy,
and strangers shall never again pass
through it.

18 In that day
the mountains shall drip sweet wine,
the hills shall flow with milk,
and all the stream beds of Judah
shall flow with water;
a fountain shall come forth from the house
of the LORD
and water the Wadi Shittim.

19 Egypt shall become a desolation
and Edom a desolate wilderness,
because of the violence done to the people
of Judah,
in whose land they have shed innocent
blood.
20 But Judah shall be inhabited forever,
and Jerusalem to all generations.
21 I will avenge their blood, and I will not
clear the guilty,[a]
for the LORD dwells in Zion.

[a] Gk Syr: Heb *I will hold innocent their blood that I have not held innocent*

to each other; see the Introduction. **17:** *You shall know*, cf. 2.27. **18:** The first part of this verse is almost identical with the last part of Am 9:13. For such preternatural fertility, cf. Isa 65.17–25; Zech 14.6–11. On a *fountain* and river flowing from the temple, see Ezek 47.1–12; Zech 14.8. *Wadi Shittim*, literally "Wadi of Acacias"; as with the valley of Jehoshaphat (v. 12), the location is unknown. It may symbolize fertility. **19–21:** A final punitive oracle against Egypt and Edom (cf. Ob; Ps 137; Mal 1.3–4; Sir 50.26), an unusual combination of an empire and a small state. That the LORD dwells in or is located at Zion is an important motif near the end of the book (vv. 16,17,18,21).

AMOS

NAME, AUTHORSHIP, DATE OF COMPOSITION, AND HISTORICAL CONTEXT

The book of Amos is a compilation of sayings attributed to the prophet Amos, who was active in the first half of the eighth century BCE, during the long and peaceful reigns of Jeroboam II of Israel (788–747; Am 1.1) and Uzziah of Judah (785–733). In this period, Israel attained a height of territorial expansion and national prosperity never again reached. At the same time, this prosperity led to gross inequities between urban elites and the poor. Through manipulation of debt and credit, wealthy landowners amassed capital and estates at the expense of small farmers. The smallest debt served as the thin end of a wedge that lenders could use to separate farmers from their patrimonial farms and personal liberty.

Into this scene stepped Amos (of Tekoa, a small village in Judah), who was himself a farmer and herder, and was probably active during the decade 760–750 BCE. Amos denounced the society of the Northern Kingdom, Israel, in vivid language, bitterly describing the decadent opulence, immorality, and smug piety of elites who "trample the head of the poor into the dust of the earth" (2.7). Amos's program, in contrast, called for "justice" and "righteousness" (5.7,24; 6.12), terms that connote social equality and concern for the disadvantaged (Isa 5.7; Mic 6.8).

The narrative about Amos's encounter with Amaziah (7.1–7) and the superscription (1.1) yield the only portrait of the prophet. A native of the Southern Kingdom of Judah who raised livestock and tended fruit trees, Amos prophesied to and in the Northern Kingdom of Israel. At the royal sanctuary of Bethel (7.13), his bitter invective, voiced as divine word ("I hate, I despise your festivals," 5.21) no doubt scandalized pilgrims from Samaria, capital of the Northern Kingdom. His confrontation with Amaziah remains one of the unforgettable scenes in biblical prophecy. Expelled from Bethel and commanded not to prophesy there again, Amos perhaps returned to Judah where he, or like-minded scribes, wrote down the essence of his public preaching in substantially its present form.

Although the reigns of Jeroboam II and Uzziah were relatively peaceful and prosperous in Israel and Judah, the region experienced calamitous upheaval shortly thereafter when Tiglath-pileser III assumed the throne in Assyria (745–727). He began the period of Assyria's greatest expansion in the west, including conquering the smaller kingdoms of Syria-Palestine. His successors, Shalmaneser V (727–722) and Sargon II (722–705), invaded the Northern Kingdom and conquered Samaria in 722. Within a few decades of Amos's prophetic activity, the Northern Kingdom saw devastation and destruction which made his foreboding words all the more sobering.

CANONICAL STATUS AND LOCATION IN CANON

Amos's prophetic career was roughly contemporaneous with that of Hosea, though Amos probably preceded him. Chronologically, then, Amos inaugurated the era of classical prophecy. In some ancient manuscript traditions (the Septuagint [LXX], the ancient Greek translation of the Hebrew Bible), the book of Amos directly follows Hosea. The traditional arrangement of the Book of the Twelve in the Masoretic Text and in English translations, however, is based not solely on chronology but often on specific verbal similarities or catchwords that link the end of one book to the beginning of the next. Amos is linked to the preceding book of Joel by identical phrases (see Joel 3.16a and Am 1.2a) and to the following book of Obadiah by a similar subject (Edom in Am 9.12 and in Ob 1).

STRUCTURE, CONTENTS, AND GUIDE TO READING

The book of Amos has three major parts: chs 1–2 are presented as a single speech, an ethical tour of the region from the divine perspective, which climaxes in judgment on Israel itself; chs 3–6 are the least unified section, a collection of short prophetic sayings indicting Israel for sin and injustice; chs 7–9 contain the visions of Amos, as well as the Amaziah narrative (7.10–17) and a final speech of comfort (9.11–15) addressed not to Israel but to Judah. The best approach for readers is to follow the sequence of the book itself. The book contains a variety of material. Some of Amos's sayings are presented as messenger speeches ("thus says the LORD"), others as visions ("This is what the LORD showed me"), especially in chs 7–9. Amos, in a legal style of indictment followed by punishment ("therefore . . ."), announced judgments (e.g., 1.3–2.16), delivered funeral orations (e.g.,

5.1–2), and exhortations (e.g., 5.6). He rarely encouraged (but see 9.11–15 and the notes there). In addition to the above types of prophetic sayings, the book contains three fragments from a hymn (4.13; 5.8–9; 9.5–6) and one narrative about Amos's encounter with Amaziah, priest of the Northern Kingdom's royal sanctuary at Bethel (7.10–17).

INTERPRETATION

Against the background of Israelite tradition about "the Day of the LORD," occasions celebrated from the past and eagerly anticipated in the future when the LORD dramatically intervenes in human affairs, Amos announced that such a day was imminent. This time, however, the fortified palaces and temples of Israel would be leveled along with those of Israel's rival nations (1.3–2.3) when God executed the divine version of "justice and righteousness." Israel's covenant with God (3.2) did not absolve it from this ethical standard, which Amos, in so many words, universalized (9.7–8). Though Amos affirmed the special quality of God's relationship with Israel (9.8), he stressed that it entailed a special ethical responsibility (3.1). The agent of this divine punishment would be the Assyrian army (Isa 10.5–11). The frequent references to exile in Amos (e.g., 3.11; 6.7; 7.17) reflect a grim threat: the Assyrian imperial practice of deporting and transplanting conquered peoples.

Amos described himself as "a herdsman, and a dresser of sycamore trees" (7.14). The latter tree is not the same as a North American "sycamore" (*Platanus occidentalis*), but a type of wild fig tree (*Ficus sycomorus*). These wild figs were gathered by poor people. The small fruit of this tree was inferior to that from the domesticated fig tree (*Ficus carica*). By "dressing" or gashing the small fruit of this tree, Amos and his cohorts hastened their ripening. This single, vivid detail about Amos's background in 7.14 speaks volumes about the prophet's ethics and harsh tone. It explains his solidarity with the poor (2.6–7; 5.11; 8.4) who literally "scratched out" a living in rural Judah and Ephraim, desperate for any harvest, however sparse and bitter. As noted above, Amos rebuked far more often than he comforted. This arborist with his knife understood that pruning was required for revitalization and new growth. Amos lashed out at the elite's prosperity gained at the expense of the poor, upsetting their "baskets of summer fruit" (8.1–2).

The book of Amos begins and ends with references to an earthquake (1.1 and the images of shaking in 9.1–9). The exact year is unknown (760 has been proposed), but some archaeological evidence of a catastrophe exists. Did this earthquake, so severe that it was recalled centuries later (Zech 14.5), offer cosmic validation of Amos's preaching? One cannot know. Still, even today one can feel the aftershocks of Amos, the first in a brilliant succession of biblical prophets whose words, now preserved in written form, have left their indelible stamp on later thought about God and human history.

Gregory Mobley

1 The words of Amos, who was among
the shepherds of Tekoa, which he saw
concerning Israel in the days of King Uzziah
of Judah and in the days of King Jeroboam
son of Joash of Israel, two years[a] before the
earthquake. [2] And he said:

The LORD roars from Zion,
and utters his voice from
Jerusalem;
the pastures of the shepherds wither,
and the top of Carmel dries up.

[3] Thus says the LORD:
For three transgressions of Damascus,
and for four, I will not revoke the
punishment;[b]
because they have threshed Gilead
with threshing sledges of iron.
[4] So I will send a fire on the house of
Hazael,
and it shall devour the strongholds of
Ben-hadad.
[5] I will break the gate bars of Damascus,
and cut off the inhabitants from the
Valley of Aven,
and the one who holds the scepter from
Beth-eden;
and the people of Aram shall go into
exile to Kir,
says the LORD.

[6] Thus says the LORD:
For three transgressions of Gaza,
and for four, I will not revoke the
punishment;[b]
because they carried into exile entire
communities,
to hand them over to Edom.
[7] So I will send a fire on the wall of
Gaza,
fire that shall devour its strongholds.

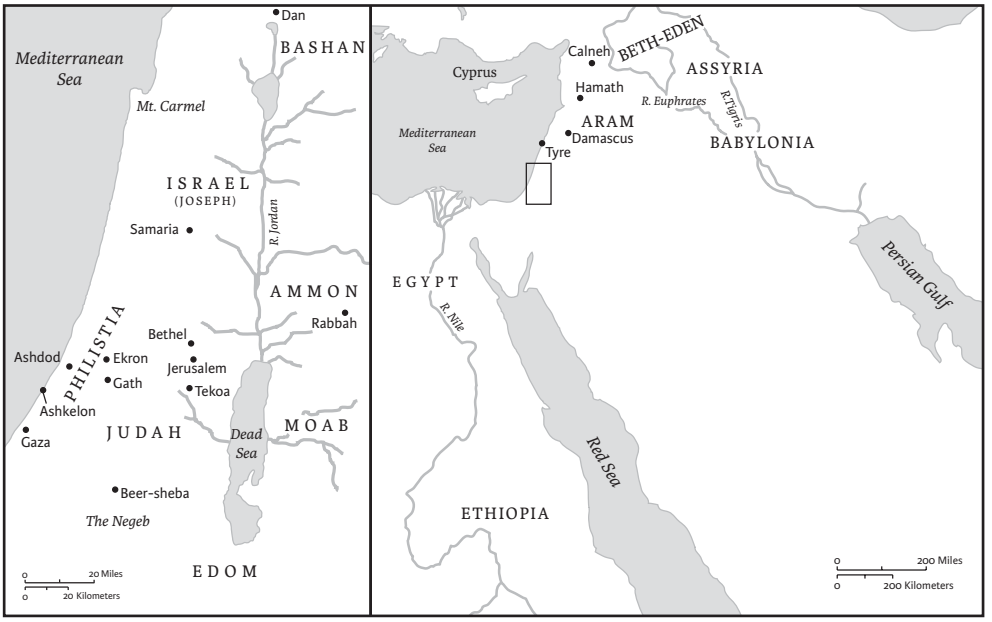
[a] Or *during two years*
[b] Heb *cause it to return*

1.1: Superscription. *Amos* means "one supported" (by the Lord). *Among the shepherds,* the word translated "shepherds" probably denotes a herder or owner of large flocks rather than a hired worker; the same word is translated "sheepbreeder" in 2 Kings 3.4, its only other occurrence. See also 7.14–15. *Tekoa* was a town in Judah, ca. 16 km (10 mi) south of Jerusalem. *He saw,* see Nah 1.1; visions were common among prophets from Judah (e.g., Isaiah and Ezekiel). *Uzziah* reigned over the Southern Kingdom 785–733 BCE. *Jeroboam* II reigned over the Northern Kingdom 788–747. The *earthquake,* mentioned again in Zech 14.5, cannot be precisely dated.

1.2–2.16: A speech against the nations. A common feature of Israelite prophecy was the indictment of foreign nations, which implied the Lord's universal sovereignty. In general, Amos indicts the neighboring peoples for ethical transgressions on the order of war crimes. The prophet condemns their actions not only against Israel and Judah, but against other neighboring peoples. Thus, the scope of God's concern spans the larger international community. Near the end of this section, when Amos addresses Judah and Israel, the ethical standard is more exacting. There is another way to look at the indictments directed toward these foreign nations. All the nations discussed were either subject to or allies of the Davidic and Solomonic monarchy, and therefore bound by treaties to which the Lord would have been a witness and now was acting as enforcer of the treaty curses. **1.2:** This introductory verse occurs in similar form in Joel 3.16 (cf. Jer 25.30). *The LORD roars,* Amos uses the image of God as lion again in 3.4,8. The sequence *from Jerusalem . . .* (to) *Carmel* traces the trajectory of the book as Amos, a southerner from the vicinity of Jerusalem, addresses the Northern Kingdom, whose northwest boundary was Mt. Carmel (see 9.3n.). **3,6,8, etc.:** *Thus says the LORD* and the conclusion *says the LORD* are standard formulas identifying prophetic oracles. The idiom *for three . . . and for four* indicates "more than enough" (Prov 30.18; Job 33.14).

1.3–5: Against Damascus (cf. Isa 17.1–3; Jer 49.23–27; Zech 9.1–4). *Damascus* was the capital of Syria (Aram). *They have threshed Gilead,* Gilead was Israelite territory in northern Transjordan, particularly vulnerable to Syrian aggression (2 Kings 10.32–33); threshing was often used to symbolize martial brutality (Isa 41.15; Mic 4.13). *Hazael* and *Ben-hadad* II were Syrian rulers (2 Kings 13.3). *The Valley of Aven* probably refers to the Beqa region between the Lebanon and Anti-Lebanon ranges. *Beth-eden,* known in Assyrian records as Bitidini, was a city-state on the Euphrates, between the Lebanon and Anti-Lebanon ranges. *Kir* is the place of Syrian origins (9.7) and exile (2 Kings 16.9); its precise location is unknown.

1.6–8: Against Philistia. Four cities of the Philistine pentapolis (1 Sam 6.17) on the southeast coast of the Mediterranean are condemned for their slave traffic with Edom (2 Chr 21.16–17; Joel 3.4–8; Zeph 2.4–7).



Chs 1–2: Places mentioned in the oracles against foreign nations.

8 I will cut off the inhabitants from Ashdod,
and the one who holds the scepter from Ashkelon;
I will turn my hand against Ekron,
and the remnant of the Philistines shall perish,
says the Lord God.

9 Thus says the Lord:
For three transgressions of Tyre,
and for four, I will not revoke the punishment;[a]
because they delivered entire communities over to Edom,
and did not remember the covenant of kinship.
10 So I will send a fire on the wall of Tyre,
fire that shall devour its strongholds.

11 Thus says the Lord:
For three transgressions of Edom,
and for four, I will not revoke the punishment;[a]
because he pursued his brother with the sword
and cast off all pity;
he maintained his anger perpetually,[b]
and kept his wrath[c] forever.
12 So I will send a fire on Teman,
and it shall devour the strongholds of Bozrah.

13 Thus says the Lord:
For three transgressions of the Ammonites,

a Heb *cause it to return*
b Syr Vg: Heb *and his anger tore perpetually*
c Gk Syr Vg: Heb *and his wrath kept*

1.9–10: Against Tyre (see Joel 3.4–8). Tyre was a Phoenician seaport north of Israel. *Covenant of kinship* (lit. "covenant of brothers"), cf. 1 Kings 5.12; 9.13.

1.11–12: Against Edom (Isa 34; Joel 3.19; Ezek 25.12). *Edom,* located south and east of the Dead Sea, was a perennial rival of neighboring Judah, especially in the exilic and postexilic era (Ps 137.7; Obadiah). The term *his brother,* i.e., Judah (Mal 1.2), draws on the ancient tradition of kinship between Jacob and Esau (Esau was "the father of Edom," Gen 36.43) and also connotes a treaty relationship (see vv. 9–10n.). *Teman,* a synonym for Edom. *Bozrah,* modern Buseirah, 40 km (25 mi) south of the Dead Sea.

1.13–15: Against Ammon (Zeph 2.8–11), which is condemned for atrocities against Israelites to its immediate north, in *Gilead. Rabbah,* the Ammonite capital (modern Amman).

and for four, I will not revoke the punishment;[a]
because they have ripped open pregnant women in Gilead
in order to enlarge their territory.
14 So I will kindle a fire against the wall of Rabbah,
fire that shall devour its strongholds,
with shouting on the day of battle,
with a storm on the day of the whirlwind;
15 then their king shall go into exile,
he and his officials together,
says the LORD.

2 Thus says the LORD:
For three transgressions of Moab,
and for four, I will not revoke the punishment;[a]
because he burned to lime
the bones of the king of Edom.
2 So I will send a fire on Moab,
and it shall devour the strongholds of Kerioth,
and Moab shall die amid uproar,
amid shouting and the sound of the trumpet;
3 I will cut off the ruler from its midst,
and will kill all its officials with him,
says the LORD.

4 Thus says the LORD:
For three transgressions of Judah,
and for four, I will not revoke the punishment;[a]
because they have rejected the law of the LORD,
and have not kept his statutes,
but they have been led astray by the same lies
after which their ancestors walked.
5 So I will send a fire on Judah,
and it shall devour the strongholds of Jerusalem.

6 Thus says the LORD:
For three transgressions of Israel,
and for four, I will not revoke the punishment;[a]
because they sell the righteous for silver,
and the needy for a pair of sandals—
7 they who trample the head of the poor into the dust of the earth,
and push the afflicted out of the way;
father and son go in to the same girl,
so that my holy name is profaned;
8 they lay themselves down beside every altar
on garments taken in pledge;
and in the house of their God they drink wine bought with fines they imposed.

9 Yet I destroyed the Amorite before them,
whose height was like the height of cedars,

[a] Heb *cause it to return*

2.1–3: Against Moab, Israel's neighbor and rival southeast of the Jordan (Isa 15.1–16.14). *Burned to lime,* for the practice of desecrating a corpse through disinterment and incineration, see 2 Kings 23.16–20; Isa 33.12. *Kerioth,* location uncertain; see Jer 48.24,41.

2.4–5: Against Judah. Because of similarities between its language and that of the Deuteronomistic Reform (e.g., 2 Kings 17.15) in the late seventh century, many scholars consider this oracle a later addition, but it is consistent with Amos's view that all nations stand accountable before God.

2.6–16: Against Israel. Amos's ethical tour finally reaches home, where it surely shocked its audience. Israel can refer both to the Northern Kingdom, as the counterpart of Judah (2.4), and to the entire people that God brought out of Egypt (see 2.10; 3.1). Using the same literary form, Amos shows that Israel stands under divine judgment too, for oppression of the poor and for immorality. **6:** *They sell the righteous . . . and the needy* into debt slavery. **7:** *Same girl* probably does not refer to ritual prostitutes but to young unmarried women who, like the "needy" and the *poor,* were being exploited. **8:** *Garments taken in pledge,* see the prohibitions in Ex 22.25; Deut 24.17. The exploitation of the poor is especially odious when commodities gained unjustly, the above *garments* and *wine,* were paraded before the deity at the *altar* of *the house of their God.* **9:** *The Amorite . . . whose height,* pre-Israelite inhabitants of Canaan such as the Amorites (see Ezek 16.3) were often depicted as gigantic (Num

and who was as strong as oaks;
I destroyed his fruit above,
and his roots beneath.
10 Also I brought you up out of the land of Egypt,
and led you forty years in the wilderness,
to possess the land of the Amorite.
11 And I raised up some of your children to be prophets
and some of your youths to be nazirites.[a]
Is it not indeed so, O people of Israel?
says the LORD.

12 But you made the nazirites[a] drink wine,
and commanded the prophets,
saying, "You shall not prophesy."

13 So, I will press you down in your place,
just as a cart presses down
when it is full of sheaves.[b]
14 Flight shall perish from the swift,
and the strong shall not retain their strength,
nor shall the mighty save their lives;
15 those who handle the bow shall not stand,
and those who are swift of foot shall not save themselves,
nor shall those who ride horses save their lives;
16 and those who are stout of heart among the mighty
shall flee away naked in that day,
says the LORD.

3 Hear this word that the LORD has spoken against you, O people of Israel, against the whole family that I brought up out of the land of Egypt:

2 You only have I known
of all the families of the earth;
therefore I will punish you
for all your iniquities.

3 Do two walk together
unless they have made an appointment?
4 Does a lion roar in the forest,
when it has no prey?
Does a young lion cry out from its den,
if it has caught nothing?
5 Does a bird fall into a snare on the earth,
when there is no trap for it?
Does a snare spring up from the ground,
when it has taken nothing?
6 Is a trumpet blown in a city,
and the people are not afraid?
Does disaster befall a city,
unless the LORD has done it?
7 Surely the Lord GOD does nothing,
without revealing his secret
to his servants the prophets.
8 The lion has roared;
who will not fear?
The Lord GOD has spoken;
who can but prophesy?

[a] That is, *those separated* or *those consecrated*
[b] Meaning of Heb uncertain

13.32–33; Deut 1.28). **10:** Deut 1.19–21. In contrast to the preceding indictments, the prophet invokes God's history with Israel as grounds for impending punishment. **11–12:** *Nazirites,* consecrated individuals who undertook vows, including abstinence from wine; Num 6.2; Judg 13.5. **13:** The entire Israelite army is defenseless: archers, infantry, and cavalry. **16:** *Naked,* unarmed and exposed; cf. Isa 20.1–6.

3.1–6.14: Judgment speeches against Israel come in three sections, each with the same opening (3.1; 4.1; 5.1).

3.1–2: A chosen people are held to a higher standard. 2: *You only have I known,* knowledge here refers to a relationship through covenant. The phrase *all the families of the earth* recalls traditions about divine promises to Abram (Gen 12.3) and Moses (Ex 19.4–6; Deut 7.6).

3.3–8: A series of rhetorical questions, which permit only a single response, build to an inescapable conclusion in v. 8b: The call to prophecy, unsolicited, cannot be resisted (7.14–15). Furthermore, the self-evident truths of vv. 1–8a render the audience susceptible to a truth in 8b it would naturally resist: Amos speaks on behalf of the Lord. **4:** *A lion roar,* see 1.2. **6:** *Trumpet,* the shofar, the ram's horn. **7:** *His secret to his servants the prophets,* for positive and negative illustrations of this principle, see, respectively, Gen 18.17–19 and 2 Kings 4.27; cf. 2 Kings 4.13. Because the phrase "his servants the prophets" is Deuteronomistic (see 2 Kings 21.10), and because the verse is in a different form, some scholars consider it a later addition (see 2.3–4n.).

[9] Proclaim to the strongholds in Ashdod,
and to the strongholds in the land of Egypt,
and say, "Assemble yourselves on Mount[a] Samaria,
and see what great tumults are within it,
and what oppressions are in its midst."
[10] They do not know how to do right, says the LORD,
those who store up violence and robbery in their strongholds.
[11] Therefore thus says the Lord GOD:
An adversary shall surround the land,
and strip you of your defense;
and your strongholds shall be plundered.

[12] Thus says the LORD: As the shepherd rescues from the mouth of the lion two legs, or a piece of an ear, so shall the people of Israel who live in Samaria be rescued, with the corner of a couch and part[b] of a bed.

[13] Hear, and testify against the house of Jacob,
says the Lord GOD, the God of hosts:
[14] On the day I punish Israel for its transgressions,
I will punish the altars of Bethel,
and the horns of the altar shall be cut off
and fall to the ground.
[15] I will tear down the winter house as well as the summer house;
and the houses of ivory shall perish,
and the great houses[c] shall come to an end,
says the LORD.

4 Hear this word, you cows of Bashan who are on Mount Samaria,
who oppress the poor, who crush the needy,
who say to their husbands, "Bring something to drink!"
[2] The Lord GOD has sworn by his holiness:
The time is surely coming upon you,
when they shall take you away with hooks,
even the last of you with fishhooks.
[3] Through breaches in the wall you shall leave,

[a] Gk Syr: Heb *the mountains of*
[b] Meaning of Heb uncertain
[c] Or *many houses*

3.9–15: Neighboring nations are invited to witness the Lord's complaint against the elites of Israelite society, who dwelt in *strongholds,* massive fortified palaces. **9:** *Ashdod,* a Philistine city on the Mediterranean coast; see 1.6–8. **11:** God addresses Samaria directly and promises the coming of an *adversary*, though whether the figure is a divine or human agent of God's judgment is difficult to say (cf. Isa 10.5; Jer 25.8; Lam 2.5). **12:** As Amos, a pastoralist himself (7.14) knew, a *shepherd* was absolved of blame for loss of livestock if there were even small remains, *legs, or a piece of an ear,* of a predator's attack. With sarcasm, Amos suggests that after the divine punishment, announced by the roar of a lion (1.2; 3.8), only scraps would remain from the palaces of Samaria. Thus, Israel's remains do not signify the survival of a righteous remnant, but rather they justify God's judgment, just as the remains of an animal's carcass vindicate the shepherd (Ex 22.13). **14:** *Bethel* was near the southern border of the Northern Kingdom, ca. 18 km (11 mi) north of Jerusalem. For Bethel as a shrine, see 1 Kings 12.25–30; for Amos and *Bethel,* see 4.4; 5.5–6; 7.10–13. *The horns of the altar,* the projections at the corners of an altar had special significance; see Ex 21.14; 1 Kings 2.28–34. **15:** The Lord will raze the tokens of conspicuous Israelite consumption: *the winter house, the summer house,* and the *houses* decorated with carved *ivory* inlay, such as the royal palace in Samaria built by Ahab (1 Kings 22.39).

4.1–3: Israel's luxurious excesses. Wealthy and greedy women of Samaria would be punished along with their husbands. **1:** *Cows of Bashan,* is not necessarily a derogatory remark against the prosperous women who are identified with prized animal's from Bashan, a fertile region in the northern Transjordan renowned for its cattle (Ps 22.12). However, the prophet suggests that the wealthy women make their husbands the instruments of their oppressive greed. **2:** *Hooks . . . fishhooks,* the terms are obscure but perhaps refer to the practice of leading away prisoners with hooks through their noses, as depicted in ancient Near Eastern art (cf. Isa 37.29). **3:** *Straight ahead,* with the city walls in ruins, the captives will be easily taken away.

each one straight ahead;
and you shall be flung out into
Harmon,[a]
says the LORD.
4 Come to Bethel—and transgress;
to Gilgal—and multiply
transgression;
bring your sacrifices every morning,
your tithes every three days;
5 bring a thank offering of leavened bread,
and proclaim freewill offerings, publish
them;
for so you love to do, O people of
Israel!
says the Lord GOD.

6 I gave you cleanness of teeth in all your
cities,
and lack of bread in all your places,
yet you did not return to me,
says the LORD.

7 And I also withheld the rain from you
when there were still three months to
the harvest;
I would send rain on one city,
and send no rain on another city;
one field would be rained upon,
and the field on which it did not rain
withered;
8 so two or three towns wandered to one
town
to drink water, and were not satisfied;
yet you did not return to me,
says the LORD.

9 I struck you with blight and mildew;
I laid waste[b] your gardens and your
vineyards;
the locust devoured your fig trees and
your olive trees;
yet you did not return to me,
says the LORD.

10 I sent among you a pestilence after the
manner of Egypt;
I killed your young men with the sword;
I carried away your horses;[c]
and I made the stench of your camp go
up into your nostrils;
yet you did not return to me,
says the LORD.

11 I overthrew some of you,
as when God overthrew Sodom and
Gomorrah,
and you were like a brand snatched
from the fire;
yet you did not return to me,
says the LORD.

12 Therefore thus I will do to you,
O Israel;
because I will do this to you,
prepare to meet your God, O Israel!

13 For lo, the one who forms the
mountains, creates the wind,
reveals his thoughts to mortals,
makes the morning darkness,
and treads on the heights of the
earth—
the LORD, the God of hosts, is his name!

[a] Meaning of Heb uncertain
[b] Cn: Heb *the multitude of*
[c] Heb *with the captivity of your horses*

4.4–5: Israel's piety is satirized. **4:** *Bethel,* see 3.14n. *Gilgal,* a venerable Israelite shrine near Jericho (e.g., Josh 4.20; 10.43; 1 Sam 7.16), condemned by Amos (5.5) and his contemporary Hosea (Hos 4.15; 9.15; 12.11). The ritual practices listed here are prescribed elsewhere; for the morning sacrifice, see Ex 29.29; *tithes,* see Lev 27.30–32; Deut 14.28–29; *thank offering of leavened bread,* see Lev 7.13; *freewill offerings*, see Num 15.3. Note the association of tithes with Bethel in Gen 28.22.

4.6–13: Israel has ignored the divine warnings issued through plagues. These plagues typify the curses a treaty partner brought on itself through disobedience. Israel's covenantal documents contained such curses (Lev 26.14–39; Deut 28.15–68). **6:** *Cleanness of teeth,* i.e., famine. **10:** *A pestilence after the manner of Egypt,* Ex 9.3–7,15. *The stench* of unburied corpses, as in Isa 34.3. **11:** The verb *overthrew* here could refer to an earthquake, as it seems to in Gen 19.25,29, in which the destruction of *Sodom and Gomorrah* is described. **13:** The first of three doxologies interspersed throughout Amos (5.8–9; 9.5–6). These hymn-like sections emphasize that the God Israel encounters in judgment is the creator.

5 Hear this word that I take up over you in lamentation, O house of Israel:

2 Fallen, no more to rise,
is maiden Israel;
forsaken on her land,
with no one to raise her up.

3 For thus says the Lord God:
The city that marched out a thousand
shall have a hundred left,
and that which marched out a hundred
shall have ten left.[a]

4 For thus says the Lord to the house of Israel:
Seek me and live;
5 but do not seek Bethel,
and do not enter into Gilgal
or cross over to Beer-sheba;
for Gilgal shall surely go into exile,
and Bethel shall come to nothing.

6 Seek the Lord and live,
or he will break out against the house of Joseph like fire,
and it will devour Bethel, with no one to quench it.
7 Ah, you that turn justice to wormwood,
and bring righteousness to the ground!

8 The one who made the Pleiades and Orion,
and turns deep darkness into the morning,
and darkens the day into night,
who calls for the waters of the sea,
and pours them out on the surface of the earth,
the Lord is his name,
9 who makes destruction flash out against the strong,
so that destruction comes upon the fortress.

10 They hate the one who reproves in the gate,
and they abhor the one who speaks the truth.
11 Therefore because you trample on the poor
and take from them levies of grain,
you have built houses of hewn stone,
but you shall not live in them;
you have planted pleasant vineyards,
but you shall not drink their wine.
12 For I know how many are your transgressions,
and how great are your sins—
you who afflict the righteous, who take a bribe,
and push aside the needy in the gate.
13 Therefore the prudent will keep silent in such a time;
for it is an evil time.

[a] Heb adds *to the house of Israel*

5.1–3: Lament for Israel. Among the forms of prophetic speech was the lament; hearing one's own funeral speech delivered by a prophet must have had a sobering effect (cf. Jer 9.17–22).

5.4–7: A plea for repentance. Though the lament form was meant to convey a sense of inevitable judgment, there is yet time to *seek the Lord and live,* an exhortation to turn to God or abide by God's precepts (Ps 24.6; Prov 28.5; Isa 55.6). The prophet enjoins Israel to *seek* the Lord, not the sanctuaries of the Lord. **5:** For *Bethel* and *Gilgal,* see 3.14n.; 4.4n. *Beer-sheba,* though in the Negeb to the far south, was a shrine associated with Israel's ancestors (Gen 21.25–31; 26.23; 46.1–4) and would have attracted pilgrims from the north. **6:** *House of Joseph,* i.e., the Northern Kingdom. Its two main parts were Ephraim and Manasseh, named for the sons of Joseph (Gen 41.50–52; 48). **7:** The dried leaves of *wormwood* were aromatic and bitter; here, injustice leads to bitterness (see 6.12).

5.8–9: The second doxology (see 4.13n.). **8:** *Pleiades* and *Orion* also occur together in Job 9.9; 38.31. Though astral bodies could inspire illicit worship (e.g., 2 Kings 23.5), to the faithful they testified to God's power (e.g., Ps 8.3).

5.10–17: Amos condemns a corrupt legal system. 10–13: At the very site of legal proceedings, the city *gate,* the truth is rejected, the poor are plundered, and witnesses are bribed. See Prov 10.19. **11:** A futility curse, in which the connections between actions and their expected effects are broken; cf. Deut 28.30–31,38–46; Mic

14 Seek good and not evil,
that you may live;
and so the LORD, the God of hosts, will be with you,
just as you have said.
15 Hate evil and love good,
and establish justice in the gate;
it may be that the LORD, the God of hosts,
will be gracious to the remnant of Joseph.

16 Therefore thus says the LORD, the God of hosts, the Lord:
In all the squares there shall be wailing;
and in all the streets they shall say, "Alas! alas!"
They shall call the farmers to mourning,
and those skilled in lamentation, to wailing;
17 in all the vineyards there shall be wailing,
for I will pass through the midst of you,
says the LORD.

18 Alas for you who desire the day of the LORD!
Why do you want the day of the LORD?
It is darkness, not light;
19 as if someone fled from a lion,
and was met by a bear;
or went into the house and rested a hand against the wall,
and was bitten by a snake.
20 Is not the day of the LORD darkness, not light,
and gloom with no brightness in it?

21 I hate, I despise your festivals,
and I take no delight in your solemn assemblies.
22 Even though you offer me your burnt offerings and grain offerings,
I will not accept them;
and the offerings of well-being of your fatted animals
I will not look upon.
23 Take away from me the noise of your songs;
I will not listen to the melody of your harps.
24 But let justice roll down like waters,
and righteousness like an ever-flowing stream.

25 Did you bring to me sacrifices and offerings the forty years in the wilderness, O house of Israel? 26 You shall take up Sakkuth your king, and Kaiwan your star-god, your images,[a] which you made for yourselves; 27 therefore I

[a] Heb *your images, your star-god*

6.14–15; Zeph 1.13. **12:** Cf. 2.6–7. **14–15:** Another plea for repentance; see vv. 4–7; *Joseph*, see 5.6n. **16–17:** Staying with the images of village life and returning to the motif of lament (5.1–3), Amos depicts the divine punishment for injustice. **16:** *Skilled in lamentation,* professional mourners; see Jer 9.17–21; Ezek 32.16; Eccl 12.5; 2 Chr 35.25.

5.18–6.14: A series of "woe" sayings (5.18–25; 6.1–3; 6.4–14) complete the section of judgment speeches.

5.18–20: The Day of the Lord, in which Israelites expected to be vindicated against their enemies, will be, as depicted already in 1.1–2.16, a day when Israel too receives its judgment. Amos's profound reinterpretation of this popular concept is among his most significant contributions. See also Isa 13.6,9; Jer 46.10; Joel 2.1–2; Mal 4.5.

5.21–27: The LORD delights not in abundance of festivals and sacrifices but in justice and righteousness. V. 24 expresses a central message of the prophets; see also Mic 6.6–8. **21–23:** The language is harsh. *Festivals* refers to the three pilgrimage feasts (Ex 23.14–17; 34.18,22–23; Deut 16.16), as does *solemn assemblies* (Lev 23.36; Deut 16.8). The sacrifices in v. 22 were prescribed; see, e.g., Lev 7.8–14. *Songs* is often used of hymns (see 8.3), such as the psalms (e.g., see title of Ps 120). For a similar view, see Isa 1.11–17. **24:** An *ever-flowing stream* is a riverbed that never fails, as opposed to a wadi, common in Israel's landscape, which had run-off water only in the rainy season. **25:** As in Jeremiah (2.2–3) and Hosea (2.14–20; 9.10), the period in the wilderness after the Exodus is recalled as an ideal. Like Jer 7.21–23, the rhetorical question presumes that sacrifice was not a component of Israel's religious system immediately after the Exodus. This is inconsistent with other biblical traditions (contrast Ex 20–Num 10). **26:** *Sakkuth* and *Kaiwan* (Saturn) designate known Assyrian deities. *Sakkuth* may be the same as the "Succoth" whose cult the Babylonians established in Samaria after its fall (2 Kings 17.30). **27:** *Damascus,* 1.3–5n.

will take you into exile beyond Damascus, says the LORD, whose name is the God of hosts.

6 Alas for those who are at ease in Zion,
and for those who feel secure on Mount Samaria,
the notables of the first of the nations,
to whom the house of Israel resorts!
2 Cross over to Calneh, and see;
from there go to Hamath the great;
then go down to Gath of the Philistines.
Are you better[a] than these kingdoms?
Or is your[b] territory greater than their[c] territory,
3 O you that put far away the evil day,
and bring near a reign of violence?

4 Alas for those who lie on beds of ivory,
and lounge on their couches,
and eat lambs from the flock,
and calves from the stall;
5 who sing idle songs to the sound of the harp,
and like David improvise on instruments of music;
6 who drink wine from bowls,
and anoint themselves with the finest oils,
but are not grieved over the ruin of Joseph!
7 Therefore they shall now be the first to go into exile,
and the revelry of the loungers shall pass away.

8 The Lord GOD has sworn by himself
(says the LORD, the God of hosts):
I abhor the pride of Jacob
and hate his strongholds;
and I will deliver up the city and all that is in it.

9 If ten people remain in one house, they shall die. 10 And if a relative, one who burns the dead,[d] shall take up the body to bring it out of the house, and shall say to someone in the innermost parts of the house, "Is anyone else with you?" the answer will come, "No." Then the relative[e] shall say, "Hush! We must not mention the name of the LORD."

11 See, the LORD commands,
and the great house shall be shattered to bits,
and the little house to pieces.
12 Do horses run on rocks?
Does one plow the sea with oxen?[f]
But you have turned justice into poison
and the fruit of righteousness into wormwood—
13 you who rejoice in Lo-debar,[g]
who say, "Have we not by our own strength
taken Karnaim[h] for ourselves?"

[a] Or *Are they better*
[b] Heb *their*
[c] Heb *your*
[d] Or *who makes a burning for him*
[e] Heb *he*
[f] Or *Does one plow them with oxen*
[g] Or *in a thing of nothingness*
[h] Or *horns*

6.1–7: An indictment of conspicuous consumption. 1: Amos targets elite classes of the capitals of both the South (*Zion,* i.e., Jerusalem) and the North (*Mount Samaria*). **2:** Cf. Isa 10.9–11. *Calneh* and *Hamath* were prosperous cities of Syria, conquered by the Assyrians in 738 BCE; the allusion to *Gath,* the only Philistine city unmentioned in 1.6–8, could refer to its defeat at the hands of Syria (2 Kings 12.18) or Judah (2 Chr 26.6), or its conquest by the Assyrians in 711. **4:** *Beds of ivory,* see 3.15n. Over 500 ivory fragments have been excavated from the site of Samaria. **5:** *David,* 1 Sam 16.23; 1 Chr 23.5; Neh 12.36. **6–7:** Joseph, see 5.6n. The elites of Samaria, accustomed to the choicest products, will be the first chosen for deportation by the Assyrians. **7:** The *revelry* (Heb "marzeah") was a social and funerary ritual banquet of Canaanite origin; cf. Jer 16.5.

6.8–14: Judgment on Israel. *Jacob,* here referring to the Northern Kingdom. The house of Israel, both as a sociopolitical body and as representative of its palatial *strongholds,* is doomed. **10:** *Burns the dead* probably refers to practices employed to stop the spread of infection. In this extremity, the few survivors dare not *mention the name of the LORD,* out of fear of inviting their own destruction from a deity still intent on destruction. **12:** Israel's legal and moral machinations are a perversion bordering on the absurd. *Wormwood,* see 5.7n. **13:** *Lo-debar* and *Karnaim* are two cities east of the Jordan recovered for Israel by Jeroboam II (2 Kings 14.25). The

14 Indeed, I am raising up against you a
nation,
O house of Israel, says the LORD, the
God of hosts,
and they shall oppress you from Lebo-
hamath
to the Wadi Arabah.

7 This is what the Lord GOD showed me:
he was forming locusts at the time the
latter growth began to sprout (it was the latter
growth after the king's mowings). 2 When they
had finished eating the grass of the land, I said,
"O Lord GOD, forgive, I beg you!
How can Jacob stand?
He is so small!"
3 The LORD relented concerning this;
"It shall not be," said the LORD.

4 This is what the Lord GOD showed me:
the Lord GOD was calling for a shower of fire,[a]
and it devoured the great deep and was eating
up the land. 5 Then I said,
"O Lord GOD, cease, I beg you!
How can Jacob stand?
He is so small!"
6 The LORD relented concerning this;
"This also shall not be," said the Lord
GOD.

7 This is what he showed me: the Lord was
standing beside a wall built with a plumb
line, with a plumb line in his hand. 8 And the
LORD said to me, "Amos, what do you see?"
And I said, "A plumb line." Then the Lord
said,
"See, I am setting a plumb line
in the midst of my people Israel;
I will never again pass them by;
9 the high places of Isaac shall be made
desolate,
and the sanctuaries of Israel shall be
laid waste,
and I will rise against the house of
Jeroboam with the sword."

10 Then Amaziah, the priest of Bethel, sent
to King Jeroboam of Israel, saying, "Amos
has conspired against you in the very center

[a] Or *for a judgment by fire*

verse puns on the names of the cities, which mean "No-thing" and "Horns [i.e., strength]," respectively. **14:** An unnamed nation will be the instrument of God's judgement. *From Lebo-hamath to the Wadi Arabah,* the farthest limits of Israelite territory (see 2 Kings 14.25), from the Orontes Valley in Lebanon to the north to the Rift Valley in the southeast.

7.1–9.15: The visions of Amos. The final section of the book consists of accounts and interpretations of five visions (7.1–3; 7.4–6; 7.7–9; 8.1–3; 9.1–6), a biographical account about the prophet (7.10–17), and prophetic oracles (8.4–14; 9.5–15).

7.1–9: A series of three visions and attempted intercession. Amos acts as an intercessor on behalf of Israel (see Gen 18.17; Ex 32.7–14). Yet prophetic intercession, while effective in the short term, will ultimately not deter God from punishing sinful Israel.

7.1–3: Judgment by locusts (cf. Joel 1.2–7). **1:** A locust plague at the time of *the latter growth* endangered the spring planting, just sprouting, after the harvest of the winter grains. **2:** The prophet appeals to God's sense of proportion: Israel (*Jacob*) is *so small* and, by implication, God is so big (cf. Job 7.20). **3:** *The LORD relented*, God's mind changed concerning the punishment, although forgiveness is not offered, as Amos requested (see also Ex 32.14; Joel 2.13; Jon 4.2).

7.4–6: Judgment by fire. 4: *The great deep,* the cosmic waters under the earth and over the heavens (see Gen 1.2).

7.7–9: Israel falls short. The *plumb line* (2 Kings 21.13–15), a device for determining the true vertical line of a structure, reveals that Israel's religious and political institutions do not measure up and will be destroyed; here the prophet offers no intercessory protest or plea. *High places* were open-air *sanctuaries.* Though acceptable in earlier eras, Amos and Hosea (10.8) condemned them as places of illicit worship. *Isaac,* a rare designation for the Northern Kingdom (see v. 16). *House of Jeroboam,* the royal dynasty of Jeroboam II (788–747 BCE).

7.10–17: Amos and Amaziah. This piece, a narrative illustration of 2.12 in the form of a dramatic encounter between the royal priest and the prophet, the classic outsider, is placed at this point in the book perhaps because its reference to *King Jeroboam* (v. 10) fits well next to the phrase "house of Jeroboam" (v. 9). Amaziah

of the house of Israel; the land is not able to bear all his words. [11] For thus Amos has said,

'Jeroboam shall die by the sword,
and Israel must go into exile
away from his land.'"

[12] And Amaziah said to Amos, "O seer, go, flee away to the land of Judah, earn your bread there, and prophesy there; [13] but never again prophesy at Bethel, for it is the king's sanctuary, and it is a temple of the kingdom."

[14] Then Amos answered Amaziah, "I am[a] no prophet, nor a prophet's son; but I am[a] a herdsman, and a dresser of sycamore trees, [15] and the LORD took me from following the flock, and the LORD said to me, 'Go, prophesy to my people Israel.'

[16] "Now therefore hear the word of the LORD.
You say, 'Do not prophesy against Israel,
and do not preach against the house of Isaac.'
[17] Therefore thus says the LORD:
'Your wife shall become a prostitute in the city,
and your sons and your daughters shall fall by the sword,
and your land shall be parceled out by line;
you yourself shall die in an unclean land,
and Israel shall surely go into exile away from its land.'"

8 This is what the Lord GOD showed me—a basket of summer fruit.[b] [2] He said, "Amos, what do you see?" And I said, "A basket of summer fruit."[b] Then the LORD said to me,

"The end[c] has come upon my people Israel;
I will never again pass them by.
[3] The songs of the temple[d] shall become wailings in that day,"
says the Lord GOD;
"the dead bodies shall be many,
cast out in every place. Be silent!"

[4] Hear this, you that trample on the needy,
and bring to ruin the poor of the land,
[5] saying, "When will the new moon be over
so that we may sell grain;
and the sabbath,
so that we may offer wheat for sale?

[a] Or *was*
[b] Heb *qayits*
[c] Heb *qets*
[d] Or *palace*

was the official priest of the royal shrine at Bethel (see 3.14n.). **10:** Amos's prophecy equates to treason. **11:** *For thus Amos has said,* Amaziah does not attribute the prophet's words to God. The first utterance Amaziah cites (*Jeroboam shall die . . .*) is the rough but not exact equivalent of 7.9; the second phrase (*Israel must go . . .*) of 4.2–3; 5.5,26–27; 6.7; 9.4. **12:** *Earn your bread,* lit. "eat bread." **14:** Amos asserts that he is neither a professional prophet (1 Sam 9.6–10; Mic 3.5–8,11) nor a member of a prophetic guild (2 Kings 2.3; 1 Sam 10.5; 1 Kings 22.6). *Herdsman,* of large cattle (cf. 1.1n.); the word occurs only here in the Bible. *Dresser of sycamore trees,* the biblical sycamore was a type of fig tree whose fruit was gashed with knives to induce ripening. **15:** Cf. 2 Sam 7.8. **17:** A dreadful string of curses: May *your wife . . . become a prostitute;* may others acquire title to your land, i.e., *parcel* it *out* with a measuring *line. Israel shall surely go,* Amos closes his response to Amaziah by repeating the latter's words from v. 11.

8.1–9.15: Further visions and oracles. The final two chapters of Amos have a similar outline: Both begin with visions (8.1–3; 9.1–6), followed by oracles with many literary parallels (compare 8.8 with 9.5; 8.9 with 9.11; 8.11 with 9.13).

8.1–3: Fourth vision. A basket of ripe summer fruit symbolizes the immediacy of Israel's end. Note the pun in Hebrew between summer fruit, "qayits," and end, "qets." **2:** *I will never again pass them by*, God will no longer mitigate Israel's punishment, see 7.8. Contrast 5.17, where God's presence brings destruction. **3:** *Songs of the temple*, see 5.21–23n. *Wailings*, see 5.16. *Be silent,* see 6.10.

8.4–14: Judgment speeches against Israel akin to those in 3.1–6.14. **4–6:** Rapacious and fraudulent business practices victimize the poor. **5:** The merchants are impatient for the holy days to pass so they can resume their fraudulent business (Lev 19.35–36; Deut 25.13–16). *The new moon,* see Num 29.6. *Ephah small,* sell less than the apparent volume; an *ephah* was ca. 23 l (.66 bu). *Shekel great,* overcharge; a *shekel* weighed ca. 11.5 gr (.4 oz). *False*

We will make the ephah small and the
shekel great,
and practice deceit with false balances,
6 buying the poor for silver
and the needy for a pair of sandals,
and selling the sweepings of the wheat."

7 The LORD has sworn by the pride of Jacob:
Surely I will never forget any of their
deeds.
8 Shall not the land tremble on this account,
and everyone mourn who lives in it,
and all of it rise like the Nile,
and be tossed about and sink again, like
the Nile of Egypt?

9 On that day, says the Lord GOD,
I will make the sun go down at noon,
and darken the earth in broad daylight.
10 I will turn your feasts into mourning,
and all your songs into lamentation;
I will bring sackcloth on all loins,
and baldness on every head;
I will make it like the mourning for an only
son,
and the end of it like a bitter day.

11 The time is surely coming, says the Lord
GOD,
when I will send a famine on the land;
not a famine of bread, or a thirst for water,
but of hearing the words of the LORD.
12 They shall wander from sea to sea,
and from north to east;
they shall run to and fro, seeking the word
of the LORD,
but they shall not find it.

13 In that day the beautiful young women
and the young men
shall faint for thirst.
14 Those who swear by Ashimah of Samaria,
and say, "As your god lives, O Dan,"
and, "As the way of Beer-sheba lives"—
they shall fall, and never rise again.

9 I saw the LORD standing beside[a] the altar,
and he said:
Strike the capitals until the thresholds
shake,
and shatter them on the heads of all the
people;[b]
and those who are left I will kill with the
sword;
not one of them shall flee away,
not one of them shall escape.

2 Though they dig into Sheol,
from there shall my hand take them;
though they climb up to heaven,
from there I will bring them down.
3 Though they hide themselves on the top
of Carmel,
from there I will search out and take
them;

[a] Or *on*
[b] Heb *all of them*

balances, scales rigged in the merchant's favor. **6:** *Buying the poor* probably refers to outright slavery, as opposed to *selling the righteous* (2.6) into debt slavery. *Sweepings of the wheat,* they sell the chaff as wheat. **7:** *Pride of Jacob*, may be an epithet for God (compare 1 Sam 15.29) or for Israel (see Ps 47.4). Here the term is ironic, for it is the sinful pride of Israel which prompts God's reproach (see 6.8; Jer 13.9; Hos 7.10). That God does not *forget* is often a comfort (see Deut 4.31; Ps 9.12; Isa 49.15), but here it brings judgment. **8:** *Like the Nile . . . tossed about and sink,* the annual inundation of the Nile (9.5; Jer 46.7–8). **9–10:** A solar eclipse portends divine punishment and elicits mourning rituals. *Sackcloth* and *baldness* were customary expressions of mourning associated with national disaster (e.g., Isa 22.12). *An only son,* Jer 6.26; Zech 12.10. **11–12:** No longer will God's judgment come as a famine or drought (contrast 4.6), but rather as an absence of prophecy, thus extinguishing the intercessory role of prophets in times of turmoil. **14:** *Ashimah* (or "guilt") *of Samaria* could be a Syrian deity (2 Kings 17.30) or a disparaging reference ("the guilt") to the practice of treating the cosmic Lord merely as the patron of a local shrine, whether in the center of Israel (*Samaria*), the farthest north (*Dan*), or the farthest south (*Beer-sheba*).

9.1–6: Fifth vision. For other appearances of the Lord at shrines, see 1 Sam 3.1–18; Isa 6.1–13. **1:** Probably *the altar* at Bethel (3.14; 7.10) is intended. Capital, the top of a pillar. *Threshold*, the foundational slab of the doorposts. The entire structure, from ceiling to foundation, will *shake*; see Isa 6.4. **2:** *Sheol,* the place of the dead (Job 10.19–22; Isa 14.11,15), which, Amos asserts, is within God's purview (Ps 139.7–12), though many feared it was not (e.g., Ps 6.6; 88.3–5). **3:** Mount *Carmel,* which juts into the Mediterranean at the northwestern border of Israel,

and though they hide from my sight at the bottom of the sea,
there I will command the sea-serpent, and it shall bite them.
4 And though they go into captivity in front of their enemies,
there I will command the sword, and it shall kill them;
and I will fix my eyes on them
for harm and not for good.

5 The Lord, God of hosts,
he who touches the earth and it melts,
and all who live in it mourn,
and all of it rises like the Nile,
and sinks again, like the Nile of Egypt;
6 who builds his upper chambers in the heavens,
and founds his vault upon the earth;
who calls for the waters of the sea,
and pours them out upon the surface of the earth—
the Lord is his name.

7 Are you not like the Ethiopians[a] to me,
O people of Israel? says the Lord.
Did I not bring Israel up from the land of Egypt,
and the Philistines from Caphtor and the Arameans from Kir?
8 The eyes of the Lord God are upon the sinful kingdom,
and I will destroy it from the face of the earth
—except that I will not utterly destroy the house of Jacob,
says the Lord.

9 For lo, I will command,
and shake the house of Israel among all the nations
as one shakes with a sieve,
but no pebble shall fall to the ground.
10 All the sinners of my people shall die by the sword,
who say, "Evil shall not overtake or meet us."

11 On that day I will raise up
the booth of David that is fallen,
and repair its[b] breaches,
and raise up its[c] ruins,
and rebuild it as in the days of old;
12 in order that they may possess the remnant of Edom
and all the nations who are called by my name,
says the Lord who does this.

13 The time is surely coming, says the Lord,

[a] Or *Nubians*; Heb *Cushites*
[b] Gk: Heb *their*
[c] Gk: Heb *his*

reaches a summit of ca. 550 m (1,800 ft) above sea level and also boasts caves and forests for those who wish to *hide. Sea-serpent,* sea monsters, personifications of chaos, are at times cast as opponents of God (Ps 72.13); at other times, as here, as God's servants (Ps 104.25–26; Job 41). **5–6:** The third hymn-like passage (4.13; 5.8–9). **5:** See 8.8. **6:** *Upper chambers,* Ps 104.3. The vault is another name for the celestial barrier thought to separate the earth from the cosmic waters (Gen 1.6–8; Prov 8.27).

9.7–10: Israel has no claim to special privilege. Amos refutes the idea that Israel's relationship with God implies its superiority. This oracle suggests, positively, that God has enacted other exoduses at other times and places and, negatively, that Israel stands in judgment alongside the nations; see 3.2. **7:** *Like the Ethiopians,* even distant Nubia is within God's purview. *Philistines from Caphtor* (probably Crete) (Jer 47.4). *Kir,* see 1.5n. **8:** *House of Jacob,* here referring to Judah. This exception to God's judgment is likely a later addition. **9:** *Sieve,* used to separate grain from stones picked up on the threshing room floor.

9.11–15: An oracle of restoration. Prophetic collections often end on a similar, hopeful note; many, as above, refer to *that day* (Hos 14.1–7; Joel 3.18–21; Mic 7.11–20; Zeph 3.14–20; Hag 2.20; Zech 14.6,20; Mal 14.1–5). **11:** *Booth of David,* elsewhere in Amos, the fate of the Davidic dynasty, depicted here as in *ruins,* had not been a concern. This verse, at least, sounds like it stems from a later time, after the dynasty had *fallen.* The phrase "booth of David" suggests a more fragile structure than the more frequent "house of David" (cf. 2 Sam 7.11; Isa 1.8). **12:** *Edom* was a traditional rival of Judah, not Israel, so this is further evidence that part or all of this final

when the one who plows shall overtake
the one who reaps,
and the treader of grapes the one who
sows the seed;
the mountains shall drip sweet wine,
and all the hills shall flow with it.
14 I will restore the fortunes of my people
Israel,
and they shall rebuild the ruined cities
and inhabit them;
they shall plant vineyards and drink their
wine,
and they shall make gardens and eat
their fruit.
15 I will plant them upon their land,
and they shall never again be plucked
up
out of the land that I have given them,
says the Lord your God.

oracle was added after the fall of Samaria in 722, at a time when the book was reinterpreted for Judahites. **13:** See Joel 3.18–21. *Shall overtake,* see Lev 26.5.

OBADIAH

NAME, AUTHORSHIP, AND CANONICAL STATUS

The name Obadiah, which means "servant of Yah[weh]," was a common one in ancient Israel. Other Obadiahs are mentioned in the books of Kings, Chronicles, Ezra, and Nehemiah. Because it has little information in its superscription, the name for the introductory labels of prophetic books, the book of Obadiah is functionally anonymous.

Obadiah is the shortest book in the Hebrew Bible, containing only verse numbers. It appears here, as in the Masoretic Text, between Amos and Jonah, although some ancient manuscripts place Obadiah between Joel and Jonah.

CONTENTS AND DATE OF COMPOSITION

Despite our lack of information about this particular Obadiah, his family background, or when he lived, most interpreters link the contents of the book to events in the sixth century BCE. Obadiah single-mindedly announces God's punishment on Edom, a nation east of Judah in Transjordan, for its mistreatment of Judah. The accusations leveled against Edom in vv. 10–14, that Edom stood aside while strangers attacked Jerusalem and even aided in the invasion of the city, are understood to refer to Edomite activity during the Babylonian destruction of Jerusalem in 586 BCE.

Other biblical books share Obadiah's anger against Edom. Anti-Edomite oracles appear in Isa 34.5–8; 63.1–4; Ezek 25.12–13; 35.5–6,15; 36.5; Joel 3.19; and Jer 49.7–22, the language of which closely parallels parts of Obadiah. Like Obadiah, Ps 137.7 calls for revenge against Edom. Obadiah is distinctive, however, in claiming that Edom's crimes are especially heinous because of the brotherhood between the nations: a brother should not do the things that Edom did to Judah. The tradition that Edom and Judah descend from the brothers Esau and Jacob is familiar to readers of Gen 25 and Mal 1.2–5, but only Obadiah uses the expectations of brotherhood to bolster criticism of Edom's behavior in the sixth century.

Archaeology has shown that the Babylonian armies left their mark not only on Judah but also on Edom; both countries suffered loss of population and stability. In the sixth and fifth centuries BCE, territorial boundaries between Judah and Edom, as well as ethnic boundaries between their populations, seem to have been fluid. This may be the situation reflected in the closing verses of Obadiah, which not only promise that Judah will reclaim the Negeb (disputed territory in southern Judah) but also envision the enlargement of Judah's borders in every direction. Hence, while many date Obadiah close to the traumatic events of 586, it instead may have been written in a later generation, as its author sought to establish Judah's land claims by recalling Edom's past crimes while appealing to the rhetoric of brotherhood.

Julia M. O'Brien

[1] The vision of Obadiah.

Thus says the Lord God concerning Edom:
We have heard a report from the Lord,
and a messenger has been sent among the nations:
"Rise up! Let us rise against it for battle!"
[2] I will surely make you least among the nations;
you shall be utterly despised.
[3] Your proud heart has deceived you,
you that live in the clefts of the rock,[a]
whose dwelling is in the heights.
You say in your heart,
"Who will bring me down to the ground?"
[4] Though you soar aloft like the eagle,
though your nest is set among the stars,
from there I will bring you down,
says the Lord.

[5] If thieves came to you,
if plunderers by night
—how you have been destroyed!—
would they not steal only what they wanted?
If grape-gatherers came to you,
would they not leave gleanings?
[6] How Esau has been pillaged,
his treasures searched out!
[7] All your allies have deceived you,
they have driven you to the border;
your confederates have prevailed against you;
those who ate[b] your bread have set a trap for you—
there is no understanding of it.
[8] On that day, says the Lord,
I will destroy the wise out of Edom,
and understanding out of Mount Esau.
[9] Your warriors shall be shattered, O Teman,
so that everyone from Mount Esau will be cut off.
[10] For the slaughter and violence done to your brother Jacob,
shame shall cover you,
and you shall be cut off forever.
[11] On the day that you stood aside,
on the day that strangers carried off his wealth,
and foreigners entered his gates
and cast lots for Jerusalem,
you too were like one of them.

[a] Or *clefts of Sela*
[b] Cn: Heb lacks *those who ate*

1a: Superscription. A distinctively prophetic term, *vision* also occurs in Isa 1.1 and Nah 1.1. It refers not to data simply registered by the eyes but rather to truth made known by God, as in Jer 23.16.

1b–4: Edom's pending destruction. These verses closely parallel Jer 49.12–16, although in Jeremiah feminine forms are used to describe Edom. The theme of reversal runs throughout the book: Edom's fortunes are about to change. **1b–2:** Both other nations and God are described as rising up against Edom. **3:** Prophetic books frequently condemn the *proud*, especially among the nations (Isa 10.12; 13.11,19; 16.6; Jer 48.29; Zeph 2.10; 9.6; Zech 10.11). **3–4:** *Clefts of the rock*, the same Heb word means "rock" and Sela, an Edomite city probably to be identified with Umm el-Biyara, a site on a mountain within the later city of Petra; cf. Ps 137.9. The mountainous terrain of Edom, however, will offer no protection.

5–7: Edom at the hand of the nations. These verses imply that Edom's former allies have already begun its devastation, as in Jer 49.9–10. **5:** A difficult verse, suggesting that Edom's loss is beyond that caused by simple thieves. *Leave gleanings*, see Deut 24.21. **6:** *Esau* is described as Judah's brother and the ancestor of the Edomites in Gen 25. **7:** Edom's former *allies* and *confederates* are not named.

8–9: Edom at the hand of God. God will complete Edom's devastation *on that day*, a common prophetic term for the Day of the Lord. Phrases are shared with Jer 49.7 and 22. **9:** *Teman* refers either to the northern region of Edom (as in Am 1.12) or to Edom as a whole.

10–14: Edom as treacherous brother. Edom's actions are especially treacherous because Esau/Edom was the brother of Jacob/Judah. *On the day* appears nine times in this unit, apparently referring to the traumatic day of Jerusalem's fall. The accusations against Edom increase—from *standing aside*, to *gloating*, to *boasting*, to *looting*, to physical acts against fleeing Judeans. Although the NRSV translates 12–14 as *you should not have*, the forms are Heb jussives: "may you not." While Ps 137.7 also blames Edomites for *rejoicing* in Jerusalem's destruction, 2 Kings 24.2 blames bands of Arameans, Moabites, and Ammonites for coming up against Jerusalem, with no mention of Edomites. Jeremiah 40.11 indicates that Judeans fleeing the Babylonians had escaped to Moab, Ammon, Edom and elsewhere. **11:** *Cast lots*, see Joel 3.3.

12 But you should not have gloated[a] over[b]
your brother
on the day of his misfortune;
you should not have rejoiced over the
people of Judah
on the day of their ruin;
you should not have boasted
on the day of distress.
13 You should not have entered the gate of
my people
on the day of their calamity;
you should not have joined in the gloating
over Judah's[c] disaster
on the day of his calamity;
you should not have looted his goods
on the day of his calamity.
14 You should not have stood at the crossings
to cut off his fugitives;
you should not have handed over his
survivors
on the day of distress.

15 For the day of the LORD is near against all
the nations.
As you have done, it shall be done to you;
your deeds shall return on your own head.
16 For as you have drunk on my holy
mountain,
all the nations around you shall drink;
they shall drink and gulp down,[d]
and shall be as though they had never
been.
17 But on Mount Zion there shall be those
that escape,
and it shall be holy;
and the house of Jacob shall take possession
of those who dispossessed them.
18 The house of Jacob shall be a fire,
the house of Joseph a flame,
and the house of Esau stubble;
they shall burn them and consume them,
and there shall be no survivor of the
house of Esau;
for the LORD has spoken.
19 Those of the Negeb shall possess Mount
Esau,
and those of the Shephelah the land of
the Philistines;
they shall possess the land of Ephraim and
the land of Samaria,
and Benjamin shall possess Gilead.
20 The exiles of the Israelites who are in
Halah[e]
shall possess[f] Phoenicia as far as
Zarephath;
and the exiles of Jerusalem who are in
Sepharad
shall possess the towns of the Negeb.
21 Those who have been saved[g] shall go up
to Mount Zion
to rule Mount Esau;
and the kingdom shall be the LORD's.

[a] Heb *But do not gloat* (and similarly through verse 14)
[b] Heb *on the day of*
[c] Heb *his*
[d] Meaning of Heb uncertain
[e] Cn: Heb *in this army*
[f] Cn: Meaning of Heb uncertain
[g] Or *Saviors*

15–18: The Day of the LORD. Edom's fate will be shared by all hostile nations, as they suffer a reversal of fates on the *day* that God acts to (re-)establish justice. **16:** As in other prophetic books, retribution is depicted as drinking a cup of wrath (Isa 51.17,22; Jer 25.17; Hab 2.16; Zech 12.2). **17–18:** The reversal of fates will benefit Judah, whose devastation will turn to preeminence. **17:** *Mount Zion,* a synonym for Jerusalem, is contrasted with *Mount Esau* in v. 8. **18:** The *house of Jacob*, here southern Israel, i.e., Judah. The *house of Joseph* is Israel, the northern kingdom destroyed in 722 BCE. As in Mal 4.1, the day of the LORD will *burn* the unrighteous like *stubble*.

19–21: Reclamation and expansion of territory. 19: Those in the *Negeb*, an arid region in southern Judah, will expand eastward to take Edom. Those in the *Shephelah*, the western foothills of Judah, will seize territory from the neighboring *Philistines* and then advance northward, first into the tribal territory of *Ephraim* and then further northward to *Samaria*. The southern Judean tribe of *Benjamin* will expand eastward across the Jordan River to take the land of *Gilead*. **20:** Survivors of both the Assyrian destruction of the Northern Kingdom in the eighth century BCE and the Babylonian destruction of the Southern Kingdom in the sixth century BCE will return to aid in Judah's territorial expansion. Those exiled to the Assyrian territory of *Halah* (2 Kings 17.6) will take *Zarephath* in Phoenicia, territory never previously possessed by Israel. Those exiled by the Babylonians will return from *Sepharad*, location unknown, and possess the *Negeb*, mentioned at the beginning of the unit. **21:** The concluding verse justifies *Mount Zion's* control of *Mount Esau* (see 17n.), under the auspices of Judah's God.

JONAH

NAME AND LOCATION IN CANON

The book of Jonah, a story about a prophet and not a collection of his prophecies, is atypical of the prophetical books. It is the fifth of the Minor Prophets in the Hebrew Bible; the book's placement following Amos and Obadiah is likely topical: both Amos and Obadiah contain prophecies concerning foreign nations, and Jonah relates another prophecy concerning foreigners, the people of Nineveh. In the Septuagint (LXX), Jonah is the sixth book (between Obadiah and Nahum), the same order as in the list of the twelve minor prophets in 2 Esd 1.38–40.

Jonah son of Amittai is mentioned in 2 Kings 14 as a prophet who prophesied in the Northern Kingdom of Israel in the days of the King Jeroboam II in the mid-eighth century BCE: "[Jeroboam] restored the border of Israel from Lebo-hamath as far as the Sea of the Arabah, according to the word of the LORD, the God of Israel, which he spoke by his servant Jonah son of Amittai, the prophet, who was from Gath-hepher. For the LORD saw the distress of Israel was very bitter; there was no one left, bond or free, and no one to help Israel. But the LORD had not said that he would blot out the name of Israel from under heaven, so he saved them by the hand of Jeroboam son of Joash" (vv. 25–27). Jonah is not mentioned again. The author of our book seems to have chosen Jonah as his protagonist since attributing the events to a prophet mentioned in Israel's history grants authenticity, and because the event described in Kings deals with God's compassion and mercy, the central theme of the book of Jonah: In Kings the Northern Kingdom is spared, while in Jonah, the Assyrian Empire, its enemy, is forgiven.

STRUCTURE

The book is in two parts, each with three scenes:

Chs 1–2	God's first call to Jonah
1.1–3	Jonah's commission and attempt to flee
1.4–16	The moral: one cannot flee from God
2.1–11	Jonah, in the fish, prays and is saved
Chs 3–4	God's second call to Jonah
3.1–4	Jonah's mission and its completion
3.5–10	The repentance of Nineveh and God's forgiveness
4.1–11	Jonah's prayer-complaint, and the moral he learns from God

The two parts are symmetrical: the opening command assigning both missions is almost identical; the formulation of Jonah's flight and that of the fulfillment of the second mission open with the same words, "Jonah set out" (1.3; 3.3); both second scenes features foreigners who are depicted favorably in contrast with Jonah; similar phrasing is used when the ship captain and the king of Nineveh express their belief in God when they are in danger, though unsure their belief will save them (1.6; 3.6–9); Jonah prays to God in both final scenes: in 2.2 in order to save himself, and in 4.2–3 to express frustration over God's saving the people of Nineveh.

AUTHORSHIP AND DATE

The book of Jonah was written by an unknown author. Its language places it in the Second Temple period, its vocabulary and syntax corresponding with those of the Bible's later books, Aramaic sources, and rabbinic literature. The book was apparently written after the destruction of the Assyrian capital of Nineveh in 612 BCE, since it refers to that city in the past tense (3.3), and the king is not called the "King of Assyria" but the "King of Nineveh" (3.6), an inappropriate title. The book should be dated no later than the third century BCE.

A late date is also suggested by Jonah's broad and sophisticated use of earlier biblical texts. The evil of the Ninevites and their punishment is contrasted with that of the inhabitants of Sodom (1.2; 3.4; 4.5; cf. Gen 18.20; 19.24), while Jonah appears as Abraham's opposite. In the story of Sodom, Abraham pleads with God to save the city for the sake of the few righteous people without expecting the city's repentance (Gen 18.22–33). Jonah, in contrast, flees, refusing to warn the Ninevites lest they repent and be saved. Jonah is also depicted as the op-

posite of Abraham's nephew Lot, who warned his sons-in-law of imminent destruction until being taken from Sodom by angels; Jonah's proclamation, "Forty days more and Nineveh shall be overthrown!" (3.4) is recited unwillingly, and then he even leaves the city to watch events unfold with complete lack of interest (4.5). Jonah is also contrasted with Moses, who was willing to die if God did not forgive the Israelites after they made the golden calf (Ex 32). Jonah's actions are also patterned after those of Elijah, who fled from Jezebel and his mission and asked to die (1 Kings 19). Jonah 4.2 appears to quote God's attributes (Ex 34.6–7) as they are presented in Joel 2.13. Jeremiah's prophecies (Jer 26.3; 36.7) echo in the words of the king of Nineveh who, with Jonah behaving as an anti-prophet, himself assumes the role of prophet and rouses his people to repent (3.8).

INTERPRETATION AND GUIDE TO READING

Jonah is not a historical book in the sense of recalling events that actually occurred; its characters and setting provide the means for the writer to convey his message. Part of that message concerns the power of repentance. While not unimportant, however, repentance is not the book's central theme: were it so, the first three chapters would suffice, and Jonah's flight would be irrelevant. Instead, the book of Jonah revolves around the essence of prophecy. Jonah knows God's attributes, that he is "gracious and merciful, slow to anger, and abounding in steadfast love, and ready to relent from punishing" (4.2). He knows that God will relent from destroying Nineveh and he flees, certain that his prophecy of destruction will be proven false. Jonah represents the concept, expressed explicitly in Deut 18.21–22, that the single proof for a prophecy's truth is its realization. God seeks to teach Jonah values more lofty than a prophecy's realization or a prophet's reliability—the saving of God's creation when found worthy. The book therefore illustrates the position—voiced openly in Jer 28.9—that although a prophecy of peace must be fulfilled in order to prove that its deliverer is a true prophet, a prophecy of destruction is meant, from the outset, to educate and bring repentance. This holds true even for foreign nations: the prophecy of doom is a conditional prophecy that will come true only in the absence of repentance (Jer 18.7–8).

The book of Jonah is uncharacteristic, when compared to other writings in the prophetic tradition, in its use of humor or irony to make its point. Humorous qualities, such as exaggerated behavior (running away from God, 1.3); inappropriate actions (sleeping through a violent storm, 1.5); outlandish situations (offering a prayer of thanksgiving from inside a fish's belly, 2.1); ludicrous commands (animals must fast and wear sackcloth, 3.7–8); and emotions either contrary to expectation (anger at mercy, 4.1–2) or out of proportion (being angry enough to die because a plant has withered, 4.9) appear throughout the story. But all of these qualities serve to underline the book's themes.

The book has a role disproportionate to its size within religious tradition. Judaism, picking up on its theme of repentance, reads it liturgically on Yom Kippur, the Day of Atonement. It is cited several times in the New Testament, where Jonah prefigures Jesus who spent "three days and three nights . . . in the heart of the earth" (Mt 12.40).

Yair Zakovitch

1 Now the word of the LORD came to Jonah son of Amittai, saying, 2 "Go at once to Nineveh, that great city, and cry out against it; for their wickedness has come up before me." 3 But Jonah set out to flee to Tarshish from the presence of the LORD. He went down to Joppa and found a ship going to Tarshish; so he paid his fare and went on board, to go with them to Tarshish, away from the presence of the LORD.

4 But the LORD hurled a great wind upon the sea, and such a mighty storm came upon the sea that the ship threatened to break up. 5 Then the mariners were afraid, and each cried to his god. They threw the cargo that was in the ship into the sea, to lighten it for them. Jonah, meanwhile, had gone down into the hold of the ship and had lain down, and was fast asleep. 6 The captain came and said to him, "What are you doing sound asleep? Get up, call on your god! Perhaps the god will spare us a thought so that we do not perish."

7 The sailors[a] said to one another, "Come, let us cast lots, so that we may know on whose account this calamity has come upon us." So they cast lots, and the lot fell on Jonah. 8 Then they said to him, "Tell us why this calamity has come upon us. What is your occupation? Where do you come from? What is your country? And of what people are you?" 9 "I am a Hebrew," he replied. "I worship the LORD, the God of heaven, who made the sea and the dry land." 10 Then the men were even more afraid, and said to him, "What is this that you have done!" For the men knew that he was fleeing from the presence of the LORD, because he had told them so.

11 Then they said to him, "What shall we do to you, that the sea may quiet down for us?" For the sea was growing more and more tempestuous. 12 He said to them, "Pick me up and throw me into the sea; then the sea will quiet down for you; for I know it is because of me that this great storm has come upon you." 13 Nevertheless the men rowed hard to bring the ship back to land, but they could not, for the sea grew more and more stormy against them. 14 Then they cried out to the LORD, "Please, O LORD, we pray, do not let us perish on account of this man's life. Do not make us guilty of innocent blood; for you, O LORD, have done as it pleased you." 15 So they picked Jonah up and threw him into the sea; and the sea ceased from its raging. 16 Then the men feared the LORD even more, and they offered a sacrifice to the LORD and made vows.

17 [b]But the LORD provided a large fish to swallow up Jonah; and Jonah was in

[a] Heb *They*
[b] Ch 2.1 in Heb

1–2: God's first call to Jonah. 1.1–3: Jonah's commission and attempt to flee. Neither what Jonah was commanded to say nor the reason for his flight is given. Jonah's name, which means "dove, the son of truth," may be symbolic. *Joppa,* modern Jaffa, is on the Mediterranean coast near Tel Aviv. *Tarshish* (Isa 23.1; Ezek 27.22,25) is probably Tarsus on the southeast coast of Turkey, or perhaps Tartessus in southwestern Spain, neither being in the direction of Nineveh. **4–16: The moral: one cannot flee from God.** Jonah realizes the impossibility of flight—God, ruler of the seas, causes a great storm. The sailors, in their terror and awe, call to their gods for help, before turning to the practical matter of tossing the ship's cargo into the sea, whereas Jonah continues to flee, this time escaping into sleep. Ironically the prophet takes no part in the attempted rescue, and the ship's captain must rouse Jonah to call out to his God. **7:** Using *lots,* a standard way of revealing the future in the ancient Near East, the sailors discover who is responsible; curious, they ask Jonah a series of questions. **9:** Jonah's answer reveals another irony: although he knew that God *made the sea,* Jonah fled to the sea to escape him. Jonah identifies himself as a *Hebrew*, a term typically used when speaking to non-Hebrews. *The LORD, the God of heaven* is a title found only in Second Temple biblical texts. **12:** Despite Jonah's words, the sailors' compassion spurs them to try to reach shore; only after the futility of their rowing becomes apparent do they pray to Jonah's God and throw him into the sea. **16:** The section ends with the report of the sailors' awe ("feared"; cf. vv. 5,10) for the Lord; their *sacrifice* and *vows* show their belief in him. **17:** Jonah in the fish's belly. *Provided*, the verb appears three more times in the story (4.6,7,8), always indicating a divine act that immediately affects Jonah's situation. *Three days and three nights*, with no deliverance in sight. Jonah had avoided turning to God on the ship, but now he has no other choice.

2.1–11: Jonah, in the fish, prays and is saved. The psalm (like those in 1 Sam 2.1–10 and Isa 38.9–10) was incorporated into the story at a secondary stage. It is a psalm of thanksgiving and not a prayer for salvation, and

the belly of the fish three days and three nights.

2 Then Jonah prayed to the LORD his God
from the belly of the fish, [2] saying,
"I called to the LORD out of my distress,
and he answered me;
out of the belly of Sheol I cried,
and you heard my voice.
[3] You cast me into the deep,
into the heart of the seas,
and the flood surrounded me;
all your waves and your billows
passed over me.
[4] Then I said, 'I am driven away
from your sight;
how[a] shall I look again
upon your holy temple?'
[5] The waters closed in over me;
the deep surrounded me;
weeds were wrapped around my head
[6] at the roots of the mountains.
I went down to the land
whose bars closed upon me forever;
yet you brought up my life from the Pit,
O LORD my God.
[7] As my life was ebbing away,
I remembered the LORD;
and my prayer came to you,
into your holy temple.
[8] Those who worship vain idols
forsake their true loyalty.
[9] But I with the voice of thanksgiving
will sacrifice to you;
what I have vowed I will pay.
Deliverance belongs to the LORD!"
[10] Then the LORD spoke to the fish, and it spewed Jonah out upon the dry land.

3 The word of the LORD came to Jonah a
second time, saying, [2] "Get up, go to Nineveh, that great city, and proclaim to it the message that I tell you." [3] So Jonah set out and went to Nineveh, according to the word of the LORD. Now Nineveh was an exceedingly large city, a three days' walk across. [4] Jonah began to go into the city, going a day's walk. And he cried out, "Forty days more, and Nineveh shall be overthrown!" [5] And the people of Nineveh believed God; they proclaimed a fast, and everyone, great and small, put on sackcloth.

[6] When the news reached the king of Nineveh, he rose from his throne, removed his robe, covered himself with sackcloth, and sat in ashes. [7] Then he had a proclamation made in Nineveh: "By the decree of the king and his nobles: No human being or animal, no herd or flock, shall taste anything. They shall not feed, nor shall they drink water. [8] Human beings and animals shall be covered with sackcloth, and they shall cry mightily to God. All shall turn from their evil ways and from the violence that is in their hands. [9] Who knows? God may relent and change his mind;

[a] Theodotion: Heb *surely*

does not correspond exactly to the context, although one can find associative connections with Jonah's situation. The image of the drowning poet reflects an ancient concept that the netherworld is found in the *deep*, at the *roots of the mountains*; its doors are bolted (v. 6) and none who enter will return. Despite the poet's being in *Sheol*, God, in his *holy temple*, nevertheless hears his prayer (v. 7). **2:** *Sheol*, the underworld, where all deceased go. **4:** The wish to visit the *temple*, God's home, is common in Psalms (e.g., 5.7). **9:** Cf. 1.16. **10:** God who made the sea and the dry land (1.9) returns Jonah from sea to the dry land. God speaks to the fish, not yet to Jonah directly. The term "spew" (literally, "vomit") mocks Jonah.

3–4: God's second call to Jonah. 3.1–10: Jonah's mission and its completion. This time Jonah obeys. Before we hear of Jonah entering Nineveh, the storyteller dwells on Nineveh's size, a significant detail in that all its inhabitants may perish. **3:** *A three days' walk across*, excavations have revealed a city three miles long and one and half miles wide; thus the description of its size is an exaggeration. Jonah's proclamation, after walking only a third of the way in, is cursory, even omitting the preliminary "Thus said the LORD." **4:** *Forty days* is frequently a symbolic period of time in the Bible (e.g., Gen 8.6; Ex 24.18). **5–10: The Ninevites repent and God forgives.** Despite Jonah's brevity, the Ninevites believe in God and perform customs of mourning and repentance (cf. 2 Sam 3.31; Job 2.12; Dan 9.3). Even the animals repent! Faced with the prophet's failure to fulfill his duties, the king functions as a prophet, calling out to his people to repent. **9:** Cf. 1.6. These two foreigners understand that supplications before God *may* awaken his mercy, a notion tightly linked with the lesson the author wishes to impart. The Ninevites' sincere repentance succeeds; God relents.

he may turn from his fierce anger, so that we do not perish."

10 When God saw what they did, how they turned from their evil ways, God changed his mind about the calamity that he had said he would bring upon them; and he did not do it.

4 But this was very displeasing to Jonah, and he became angry. 2 He prayed to the LORD and said, "O LORD! Is not this what I said while I was still in my own country? That is why I fled to Tarshish at the beginning; for I knew that you are a gracious God and merciful, slow to anger, and abounding in steadfast love, and ready to relent from punishing. 3 And now, O LORD, please take my life from me, for it is better for me to die than to live." 4 And the LORD said, "Is it right for you to be angry?" 5 Then Jonah went out of the city and sat down east of the city, and made a booth for himself there. He sat under it in the shade, waiting to see what would become of the city.

6 The LORD God appointed a bush,[a] and made it come up over Jonah, to give shade over his head, to save him from his discomfort; so Jonah was very happy about the bush. 7 But when dawn came up the next day, God appointed a worm that attacked the bush, so that it withered. 8 When the sun rose, God prepared a sultry east wind, and the sun beat down on the head of Jonah so that he was faint and asked that he might die. He said, "It is better for me to die than to live."

9 But God said to Jonah, "Is it right for you to be angry about the bush?" And he said, "Yes, angry enough to die." 10 Then the LORD said, "You are concerned about the bush, for which you did not labor and which you did not grow; it came into being in a night and perished in a night. 11 And should I not be concerned about Nineveh, that great city, in which there are more than a hundred and twenty thousand persons who do not know their right hand from their left, and also many animals?"

[a] Heb *qiqayon*, possibly *the castor bean plant*

4.1–11: Jonah's prayer-complaint, and the moral he learns from God. The foreigners fear the God of Israel, while Jonah, God's messenger, cannot accept God's actions and protests them. He is indignant that the Ninevites have been saved since his credibility is thereby questioned. **2–3:** Jonah's second prayer to God is ironic: previously he asked for mercy for himself (2.2), now he resents the mercy shown toward the Ninevites. The prayer is in two parts: in v. 2 he provides his reasoning, in v. 3 he makes his request. **2:** Jonah describes God's character with words taken from God's definition of his essence in Ex 34.6–7. Like other biblical texts (Pss 86.15; 103.8; 145.8; Neh 9.31; 2 Chr 30.9) that quote only the part about God's mercy (and not his severity—see Ex 34.7b), so also Jonah (cf. also Joel 2.13). Jonah objects to God's compassion, turning praise for God into condemnation. **3:** An ironic reversal of 1 Kings 19.4, where Elijah offers legitimate reasons to die. **5:** Such *booth*s were constructed to guard the crop during harvest time. **11:** The size of the city is again exaggerated. The book concludes with a question, suggesting that the reader must carefully ponder the nature of God.

MICAH

NAME, AUTHORSHIP, AND HISTORICAL CONTEXT

The book of Micah gives us little information about the prophet himself, for whom the book is named. According to 1.1, Micah prophesied in the days of Jotham, Ahaz, and Hezekiah, kings of Judah whose reigns spanned 759–687 BCE. Possible allusions to the fall of Samaria, the capital of the Northern Kingdom of Israel, in 722 (1.6), and to the campaign of Sennacherib, the Assyrian king, in 701 (1.10–16), place the prophet in the final quarter of the eighth century. As such he was a younger contemporary of Isaiah of Jerusalem. Like Hosea, Amos, and especially Isaiah, Micah lived in a tumultuous era, whose events are recounted in 2 Kings 16–19.

LOCATION IN CANON

The prophet Micah was among the earliest of the Minor Prophets. In the organization of the Book of the Twelve, Micah follows Jonah, an arrangement apparently based on chronology since, according to 2 Kings 14.25, Jonah also lived in the eighth century. Micah is connected to the book of Nahum, which follows, by catchword; compare the final section of Micah (7.18–19) with the initial unit of Nahum (1.1–3).

STRUCTURE AND CONTENTS

The book may be divided into three sections: chs 1–3; 4–5; 6–7. Some scholars think that chs 1–3 form the oldest core of the book; it is characterized by the judgmental tone for which Micah was most famous (Jer 26.18). Chs 1–3 consist mainly of oracles of judgment; chs 4–5 of oracles of hope. The final section, chs 6–7, begins with judgment and moves to hope. This alternation between judgment and hope may conform to some pattern in Micah's preaching or it may be an organizing device of later editors. The book of Micah may also have material from subsequent periods (e.g., 4.10 speaks of the Babylonian exile; 7.11 seems to reflect the postexilic period). Further evidence of editorial activity is the close correspondence between Micah 4.1–5 and Isaiah 2.2–5.

INTERPRETATION

Micah offered a theological interpretation of the dizzying events near the end of the eighth century: the fall of Samaria, the expansion of Jerusalem fueled by emigrants from the north, and the international situation made unstable by an aggressive superpower, Assyria. Micah, from a small town southwest of Jerusalem, Moreshethgath, had a populist message. He expressed disdain for the corruptions and pretensions of Jerusalem and its leaders. He recalled the traditions of early Israel (3.9–10; 6.3–5), and condemned religious practice unaccompanied by ethical performance (6.6–8).

While Amos and Hosea condemned the high places, provincial shrines where the proper worship of the LORD was diluted by illicit elements, Micah called Jerusalem itself a high place (1.5) and announced its destruction (3.12), for which he was long remembered (see Jer 26.18). At the same time, Micah never lost faith in the future. The middle section of the book, chs 4–5, contains images of a restored and glorious Zion to which the nations make pilgrimage, and of an ideal king (5.2–5).

It is instructive to see how Micah's rural background shaped his populist vision of the ideal king, or "messiah." Isaiah, Micah's contemporary, used the birth of a royal child (Hezekiah, son of Ahaz, was probably intended) in the Judahite capital of Jerusalem as a symbol of hope (Isa 7.10–14). Micah affirmed the Davidic lineage of the ideal king by tracing his roots to Bethlehem (5.2), David's home village (1 Sam 17:12), but also reminded his audience that their greatest king once did and will again emerge from "one of the little clans of Judah" (5.2).

Gregory Mobley

1 The word of the LORD that came to Micah of Moresheth in the days of Kings Jotham, Ahaz, and Hezekiah of Judah, which he saw concerning Samaria and Jerusalem.

[2] Hear, you peoples, all of you;
listen, O earth, and all that is in it;
and let the Lord GOD be a witness against you,
the Lord from his holy temple.
[3] For lo, the LORD is coming out of his place,
and will come down and tread upon the high places of the earth.
[4] Then the mountains will melt under him
and the valleys will burst open,
like wax near the fire,
like waters poured down a steep place.
[5] All this is for the transgression of Jacob
and for the sins of the house of Israel.
What is the transgression of Jacob?
Is it not Samaria?
And what is the high place[a] of Judah?
Is it not Jerusalem?
[6] Therefore I will make Samaria a heap in the open country,
a place for planting vineyards.
I will pour down her stones into the valley,
and uncover her foundations.
[7] All her images shall be beaten to pieces,
all her wages shall be burned with fire,
and all her idols I will lay waste;
for as the wages of a prostitute she gathered them,
and as the wages of a prostitute they shall again be used.

[8] For this I will lament and wail;
I will go barefoot and naked;
I will make lamentation like the jackals,
and mourning like the ostriches.
[9] For her wound[b] is incurable.
It has come to Judah;
it has reached to the gate of my people,
to Jerusalem.

[10] Tell it not in Gath,
weep not at all;
in Beth-leaphrah
roll yourselves in the dust.
[11] Pass on your way,
inhabitants of Shaphir,
in nakedness and shame;
the inhabitants of Zaanan
do not come forth;

[a] Heb *what are the high places*
[b] Gk Syr Vg: Heb *wounds*

1.1: Superscription. Among the Minor Prophets, this superscription is closest in form to those for Hosea (1.1), Amos (1.1), and Zephaniah (1.1). *Micah* is a short form of the name Micaiah (1 Kings 22), which means, "Who is like Yahweh?" *Moresheth,* a small town in southwest Judah (cf. 1.14), probably Tell el-Judeidah, 37 km (23 mi) southwest of Jerusalem. *Which he saw,* Judean prophecy often had a visionary quality (e.g., Isa 1.1; Ezek 1.1.; Am 1.1; Ob 1; Nah 1.1; Hab 1.1). *Jotham* reigned from ca. 759 to 743 BCE; *Ahaz* from 743/735 to 727/715; *Hezekiah* from 727/715 to 698/687 (the data are inconsistent for the reigns of Ahaz and Hezekiah).

1.2–3.12: Speeches condemning Judean society and its leaders. This collection of speeches begins with an indictment of Samaria, capital of the Northern Kingdom, and ends with an indictment of Jerusalem, capital of the Southern Kingdom. This first major section of Micah is dominated by judgment speeches.

1.2–7: The coming of the Lord. In grand style, the Lord descends from heaven to punish Samaria. This oracle is to be dated before 722 BCE, when Samaria fell to the Assyrians. **2:** Cf. Isa 1.2; Hab 2.20; and 1 Kings 22.28b. **3–4:** Judg 5.4; Ps 68.8; 97.1–5; Isa 26.21. **5:** *Jacob,* poetic synonym for Israel; cf. Gen 32.28. *High place* usually designates an open-air shrine, but seems to refer here to the Solomonic Temple. **7:** This destruction of images is consistent with Deuteronomic law (Deut 7.25; 12.3). The phrase *wages of a prostitute* recalls the imagery of Hosea (Hos 2.2–13).

1.8–16: A lament for Samaria, and Jerusalem too. 8: *Barefoot . . . naked,* conventional mourning behavior (2 Sam 15.30; Ezek 24.17,23), employed for effect by Micah's contemporary Isaiah (Isa 20.2). *Jackals* and *ostriches,* associated with desolation because they frequented ruins and produced eerie howls or cries; see also Job 30.29; Isa 34.13.

1.10–16: These towns in southwestern Judah lay along the path of the Assyrian king Sennacherib's campaign in 701 (2 Kings 18–19; Isa 36–37), although the specific locations of several are unknown. There is a pun in virtually every verse of this section, lost in translation. For the flavor in Hebrew, consider v. 12: "the inhabitants of

Beth-ezel is wailing
and shall remove its support from you.
12 For the inhabitants of Maroth
wait anxiously for good,
yet disaster has come down from the LORD
to the gate of Jerusalem.
13 Harness the steeds to the chariots,
inhabitants of Lachish;
it was the beginning of sin
to daughter Zion,
for in you were found
the transgressions of Israel.
14 Therefore you shall give parting gifts
to Moresheth-gath;
the houses of Achzib shall be a deception
to the kings of Israel.
15 I will again bring a conqueror upon you,
inhabitants of Mareshah;
the glory of Israel
shall come to Adullam.
16 Make yourselves bald and cut off your
hair
for your pampered children;
make yourselves as bald as the eagle,
for they have gone from you into exile.

2 Alas for those who devise wickedness
and evil deeds[a] on their beds!
When the morning dawns, they perform it,
because it is in their power.
2 They covet fields, and seize them;
houses, and take them away;
they oppress householder and house,
people and their inheritance.
3 Therefore thus says the LORD:
Now, I am devising against this family an
evil
from which you cannot remove your
necks;
and you shall not walk haughtily,
for it will be an evil time.
4 On that day they shall take up a taunt
song against you,
and wail with bitter lamentation,
and say, "We are utterly ruined;
the LORD[b] alters the inheritance of my
people;
how he removes it from me!
Among our captors[c] he parcels out our
fields."
5 Therefore you will have no one to cast the
line by lot
in the assembly of the LORD.

6 "Do not preach"—thus they preach—
"one should not preach of such
things;
disgrace will not overtake us."
7 Should this be said, O house of Jacob?
Is the LORD's patience exhausted?
Are these his doings?
Do not my words do good
to one who walks uprightly?
8 But you rise up against my people[d] as an
enemy;
you strip the robe from the peaceful,[e]
from those who pass by trustingly
with no thought of war.
9 The women of my people you drive out
from their pleasant houses;
from their young children you take away
my glory forever.

[a] Cn: Heb *work evil*
[b] Heb *he*
[c] Cn: Heb *the rebellious*
[d] Cn: Heb *But yesterday my people rose*
[e] Cn: Heb *from before a garment*

Bitterness wait . . . for something sweet." **10:** *Gath,* one of the five Philistine cities on the coast; 2 Sam 1.20b. **13:** Sennacherib's siege of *Lachish,* an important city 45 km (28 mi) southwest of Jerusalem, is depicted in Assyrian records. **14:** *Moresheth-gath,* see 1.1n. **15:** *Mareshah,* later known as Marisa, is modern Tell Sandahanna, 5 km (3 mi) northeast of Lachish. **16:** *Make yourselves bald,* an extreme form of mourning behavior (e.g., Isa 15.2; Jer 7.29; 16.6; Am 8.10). *Pampered children* (better, "children of your delight") is not pejorative. It depicts the grief of parents bereft of exiled children. The *eagle,* more exactly, the griffon-vulture.

2.1–5: The Lord will punish the land barons. 1–2: Ps 36.4; Isa 5.8–12; 32.7. Micah condemns the injustice and inhumanity of creditors who, through manipulation of credit and courts, foreclose on family farms. **4:** *Taunt song,* cf. Num 21.27–30; Isa 23.15–16; Hab 2.6. **5:** *Cast the line by lot,* on a piece of land, thus acquiring title to it (Josh 18.6–10; Ps 16.6).

2.6–11: The prophet responds to criticism. Micah, like other prophets (Isa 30.10; Jer 5.31; Am 2.12), realizes his uncompromising message is not one his audience wants to hear.

10 Arise and go;
for this is no place to rest,
because of uncleanness that destroys
with a grievous destruction.[a]
11 If someone were to go about uttering
empty falsehoods,
saying, "I will preach to you of wine and
strong drink,"
such a one would be the preacher for
this people!

12 I will surely gather all of you, O Jacob,
I will gather the survivors of Israel;
I will set them together
like sheep in a fold,
like a flock in its pasture;
it will resound with people.
13 The one who breaks out will go up before
them;
they will break through and pass the
gate,
going out by it.
Their king will pass on before them,
the LORD at their head.

3 And I said:
Listen, you heads of Jacob
and rulers of the house of Israel!
Should you not know justice?—
2 you who hate the good and love the
evil,
who tear the skin off my people,[b]
and the flesh off their bones;
3 who eat the flesh of my people,
flay their skin off them,
break their bones in pieces,
and chop them up like meat[c] in a
kettle,
like flesh in a caldron.

4 Then they will cry to the LORD,
but he will not answer them;
he will hide his face from them at that
time,
because they have acted wickedly.

5 Thus says the LORD concerning the
prophets
who lead my people astray,
who cry "Peace"
when they have something to eat,
but declare war against those
who put nothing into their mouths.
6 Therefore it shall be night to you, without
vision,
and darkness to you, without
revelation.
The sun shall go down upon the prophets,
and the day shall be black over them;
7 the seers shall be disgraced,
and the diviners put to shame;
they shall all cover their lips,
for there is no answer from God.
8 But as for me, I am filled with power,
with the spirit of the LORD,
and with justice and might,
to declare to Jacob his transgression
and to Israel his sin.

9 Hear this, you rulers of the house of
Jacob
and chiefs of the house of Israel,
who abhor justice
and pervert all equity,
10 who build Zion with blood
and Jerusalem with wrong!

[a] Meaning of Heb uncertain
[b] Heb *from them*
[c] Gk: Heb *as*

2.12–13: A shift to an oracle of encouragement. Against the background of exile, whether in 722 or 587, this oracle counters despair with images of the Lord as shepherd (v. 12) and victorious king (v. 13). **13:** *The one who breaks out:* i.e., the Lord; see Ex 19.22; 2 Sam 5.20; 6.8.

3.1–4: The Lord will punish the judicial leaders. Corrupt judges are described as cannibals; Ezekiel also used this image (Ezek 11.5–12; 24.1–14). **1:** *Listen,* lit. "Hear," as in 1.1; 3.9; 6.1; 6.9b, a common introduction to Micah's oracles. **2:** For comparison, Isa 5.20; for contrast, Am 5.15. **4:** Futile *cry to the LORD* (i.e., prayer), cf. Isa 1.15.

3.5–8: The Lord will punish the religious leaders. Micah's rival prophets are crowd pleasers (see also 2.11), inspired on commission (v. 5); by contrast, see Micah's source of inspiration in v. 8. **6:** A time *without vision,* 1 Sam 3.1. **7:** *Seers,* see 1 Sam 9.9. *Cover their lips,* a sign of mourning (Lev 13.45; Ezek 24.17,22). **8:** *Filled . . . with the spirit,* Isa 11.2; 61.1–3; Ezek 2.2.

3.9–12: Summary: Its leadership corrupt, Jerusalem is doomed. The first section ends with Micah's bold

11 Its rulers give judgment for a bribe,
its priests teach for a price,
its prophets give oracles for money;
yet they lean upon the LORD and say,
"Surely the LORD is with us!
No harm shall come upon us."
12 Therefore because of you
Zion shall be plowed as a field;
Jerusalem shall become a heap of ruins,
and the mountain of the house a
wooded height.

4 In days to come
the mountain of the LORD's house
shall be established as the highest of the
mountains,
and shall be raised up above the hills.
Peoples shall stream to it,
2 and many nations shall come and say:
"Come, let us go up to the mountain of the
LORD,
to the house of the God of Jacob;
that he may teach us his ways
and that we may walk in his paths."
For out of Zion shall go forth instruction,
and the word of the LORD from Jerusalem.
3 He shall judge between many peoples,
and shall arbitrate between strong
nations far away;
they shall beat their swords into
plowshares,
and their spears into pruning hooks;
nation shall not lift up sword against
nation,
neither shall they learn war any
more;
4 but they shall all sit under their own
vines and under their own fig trees,
and no one shall make them afraid;
for the mouth of the LORD of hosts has
spoken.

5 For all the peoples walk,
each in the name of its god,
but we will walk in the name of the LORD
our God
forever and ever.

6 In that day, says the LORD,
I will assemble the lame
and gather those who have been driven
away,
and those whom I have afflicted.
7 The lame I will make the remnant,
and those who were cast off, a strong
nation;
and the LORD will reign over them in
Mount Zion
now and forevermore.

8 And you, O tower of the flock,
hill of daughter Zion,

assertion that Jerusalem and the Temple itself shall be destroyed because of the corruption of its leaders. **10:** *Who build Zion,* following the collapse of the northern state, Jerusalem expanded as it absorbed refugees; Hab 2.12. **11–12:** Prophecy is inseparable from context: Here, hopes in Zion's inviolability are dashed; contrast Ps 46, where they are confirmed. *Heap of ruins,* Jerusalem's fate shall be similar to that of Samaria (1.6). This parallel reveals a key strategy of the preexilic Judean prophets: The fall of Samaria served as an example to Judah. **12:** This prophecy was quoted at the trial of Jeremiah (Jer 26.18).

4.1–5.15: Speeches promising divine restoration and exaltation of the people Israel and the city Jerusalem. A series of poems depicts an ideal age ("that day") when God reigns, Israel triumphs, and the nations are judged. Some scholars date this section to the exilic or postexilic period (see 4.10n.). Alternately, possible allusions to the Babylonian exile (e.g., 4.6,10) could stem from editors who recast Micah's oracles for a later audience.

4.1–8: The ideal age is depicted in three poems, the first of which (vv. 1–4) is nearly identical to Isaiah 2.2–4. **1–2:** There is a universal pilgrimage to Mt. Zion, to which cosmic significance is ascribed here as *the mountain of the Lord's house.* **1:** *Highest of the mountains,* claims for Mt. Zion's height (Ps 48.3; Ezek 40.2) were symbolic, not topographic. **2:** *Instruction,* Heb "torah." **3–4:** A classic articulation of the Israelite prophetic ideal: peace and a social equality rooted in family ownership of land. **3:** *Swords into plowshares* (or "plowpoints," a stick with a small metal point), i.e., the transition from war to peace, as the militia man converts to farmer. For the opposite movement, see Joel 3.10. **4:** Zech 3.10; 1 Kings 4.25; 2 Kings 18.31 = Isa 36.16. **5:** Like its similarly worded parallel in Isa 2.5, this verse may have been read antiphonally, as an "Amen" to the visionary speech of 4.1–4 (= Isa 2.2–4). **6–7:** Cf. Zeph 3.19–20. **8:** *Tower of the flock,* an old epithet for Jerusalem (see "tower of Eder" in Gen

to you it shall come,
the former dominion shall come,
the sovereignty of daughter Jerusalem.

9 Now why do you cry aloud?
Is there no king in you?
Has your counselor perished,
that pangs have seized you like a woman in labor?
10 Writhe and groan,[a] O daughter Zion,
like a woman in labor;
for now you shall go forth from the city
and camp in the open country;
you shall go to Babylon.
There you shall be rescued,
there the LORD will redeem you
from the hands of your enemies.

11 Now many nations
are assembled against you,
saying, "Let her be profaned,
and let our eyes gaze upon Zion."
12 But they do not know
the thoughts of the LORD;
they do not understand his plan,
that he has gathered them as sheaves to the threshing floor.
13 Arise and thresh,
O daughter Zion,
for I will make your horn iron
and your hoofs bronze;
you shall beat in pieces many peoples,
and shall[b] devote their gain to the LORD,
their wealth to the Lord of the whole earth.

5 [c] Now you are walled around with a wall;[d]
siege is laid against us;
with a rod they strike the ruler of Israel
upon the cheek.

2 [e] But you, O Bethlehem of Ephrathah,
who are one of the little clans of Judah,
from you shall come forth for me
one who is to rule in Israel,
whose origin is from of old,
from ancient days.
3 Therefore he shall give them up until the time
when she who is in labor has brought forth;
then the rest of his kindred shall return
to the people of Israel.
4 And he shall stand and feed his flock in the strength of the LORD,
in the majesty of the name of the LORD his God.
And they shall live secure, for now he shall be great
to the ends of the earth;
5 and he shall be the one of peace.

If the Assyrians come into our land
and tread upon our soil,[f]

a Meaning of Heb uncertain
b Gk Syr Tg: Heb *and I will*
c Ch 4.14 in Heb
d Cn Compare Gk: Meaning of Heb uncertain
e Ch 5.1 in Heb
f Gk: Heb *in our palaces*

35.21; "Eder" means "flock").

4.9–10: The Lord will rescue the exiles. This speech, which describes the exiles' march to Babylon and promises their redemption, addresses the situation of the sixth century, not the eighth. *Like a woman in labor,* Isa 13.8; 26.17; Jer 4.31.

4.11–12: Israel will crush its enemies. The Lord has planned a stunning reversal. At the very place outside Jerusalem where hostile nations assemble, the city gate (also the site of threshing floors), Israel shall trample them. **13:** For Israel as bovine, see Hos 10.11. *Devote their gain,* Deut 20.16; Josh 6.18–19.

5.1: *Strike . . . the cheek,* a gesture of insult; see 1 Kings 22.24; Job 16.10; Ps 3.7; Lam 3.30.

5.2–5a: A messianic poem. A new David shall arise, not from Jerusalem but from Bethlehem, David's place of birth, to rule in this ideal age. The New Testament interprets this poem as referring to the birth of Jesus (Mt 2.6; cf. Jn 7.40–43). **2:** *Bethlehem,* located 9 km (6 mi) south of Jerusalem; Gen 35.19; Ruth 4.11; 1 Sam 17.12. *Ephrathah,* the name of a Judahite clan and region; the latter includes the village of Bethlehem. The prophet Amos (9.11) also uses the phrase *of old* in reference to David. **3:** Isaiah of Jerusalem, a contemporary of Micah, also described the birth of an ideal king (7.14; 9.6).

5.5b–6: Assyria will be defeated. In the new age, Israel will not lack for leaders (contrast chs 2–3). **5:** *Seven . . .*

we will raise against them seven
shepherds
and eight installed as rulers.
6 They shall rule the land of Assyria with
the sword,
and the land of Nimrod with the drawn
sword;[a]
they[b] shall rescue us from the Assyrians
if they come into our land
or tread within our border.

7 Then the remnant of Jacob,
surrounded by many peoples,
shall be like dew from the LORD,
like showers on the grass,
which do not depend upon people
or wait for any mortal.
8 And among the nations the remnant of
Jacob,
surrounded by many peoples,
shall be like a lion among the animals of
the forest,
like a young lion among the flocks of
sheep,
which, when it goes through, treads
down
and tears in pieces, with no one to
deliver.
9 Your hand shall be lifted up over your
adversaries,
and all your enemies shall be cut off.

10 In that day, says the LORD,
I will cut off your horses from among
you
and will destroy your chariots;
11 and I will cut off the cities of your land
and throw down all your strongholds;
12 and I will cut off sorceries from your
hand,
and you shall have no more
soothsayers;
13 and I will cut off your images
and your pillars from among you,
and you shall bow down no more
to the work of your hands;
14 and I will uproot your sacred poles[c] from
among you
and destroy your towns.
15 And in anger and wrath I will execute
vengeance
on the nations that did not obey.

6 Hear what the LORD says:
Rise, plead your case before the
mountains,
and let the hills hear your voice.
2 Hear, you mountains, the controversy of
the LORD,
and you enduring foundations of the
earth;
for the LORD has a controversy with his
people,
and he will contend with Israel.

3 "O my people, what have I done to you?
In what have I wearied you? Answer
me!

[a] Cn: Heb *in its entrances*
[b] Heb *he*
[c] Heb *Asherim*

eight, a sufficient number (see Am 1.3n). **6:** *Land of Nimrod,* Assyria; Gen 10.8–11 identifies Nimrod as a legendary warrior and king of Assyria.

5.7–9: Israel gains the upper hand. 7: *Dew,* the image is hostile; see 2 Sam 17.12.

5.10–15: But before reconstruction, demolition. The repetition of first-person verbs at the beginning of each line (*I will cut off,* four times; *I will uproot; I will execute vengeance*) sets the tone. **10:** *Cut off your horses . . . and . . . chariots,* Israel must rely on the Lord, not military force (Ps 20.17; 33.13–17; Zech 9.10). **11:** Jer 5.17; Hos 10.12–14. **12:** The precise forms these means of divination took are unknown; for the biblical prohibition, see Deut 18.10–11. **13–14:** *Pillars* and *sacred poles,* the equipment of Canaanite religion, banned for Israel (Ex 34.13). According to 2 Kings 18.4, King Hezekiah accomplished this.

6.1–7.20: A prophetic sampler moves from legal indictment of Israel's guilt to liturgical affirmation of God's mercy. The final section of Micah consists of four units, of different genres, which extend the themes of the first section (1.2–3.12).

6.1–8: A divine lawsuit. There are frequent shifts of speakers here, from the Lord (v. 1) to the prophet (v. 2) and back to the Lord (vv. 3–5), to a spokesperson for the community (vv. 6–7) and back to the prophet (v. 8), who delivers the punchline, the epitome of the entire Israelite prophetic tradition. **1–2:** The audience, in the style

4 For I brought you up from the land of Egypt,
and redeemed you from the house of slavery;
and I sent before you Moses,
Aaron, and Miriam.
5 O my people, remember now what King Balak of Moab devised,
what Balaam son of Beor answered him,
and what happened from Shittim to Gilgal,
that you may know the saving acts of the LORD."

6 "With what shall I come before the LORD,
and bow myself before God on high?
Shall I come before him with burnt offerings,
with calves a year old?
7 Will the LORD be pleased with thousands of rams,
with ten thousands of rivers of oil?
Shall I give my firstborn for my transgression,
the fruit of my body for the sin of my soul?"
8 He has told you, O mortal, what is good;
and what does the LORD require of you
but to do justice, and to love kindness,
and to walk humbly with your God?

9 The voice of the LORD cries to the city
(it is sound wisdom to fear your name):
Hear, O tribe and assembly of the city![a]
10 Can I forget[b] the treasures of wickedness in the house of the wicked,
and the scant measure that is accursed?
11 Can I tolerate wicked scales
and a bag of dishonest weights?
12 Your[c] wealthy are full of violence;
your[d] inhabitants speak lies,
with tongues of deceit in their mouths.
13 Therefore I have begun[e] to strike you down,
making you desolate because of your sins.
14 You shall eat, but not be satisfied,
and there shall be a gnawing hunger within you;
you shall put away, but not save,
and what you save, I will hand over to the sword.
15 You shall sow, but not reap;
you shall tread olives, but not anoint yourselves with oil;
you shall tread grapes, but not drink wine.
16 For you have kept the statutes of Omri[f]
and all the works of the house of Ahab,
and you have followed their counsels.
Therefore I will make you a desolation,
and your[g] inhabitants an object of hissing;
so you shall bear the scorn of my people.

7 Woe is me! For I have become like one who,
after the summer fruit has been gathered,
after the vintage has been gleaned,
finds no cluster to eat;
there is no first-ripe fig for which I hunger.

[a] Cn Compare Gk: Heb *tribe, and who has appointed it yet?*
[b] Cn: Meaning of Heb uncertain
[c] Heb *Whose*
[d] Heb *whose*
[e] Gk Syr Vg: Heb *have made sick*
[f] Gk Syr Vg Tg: Heb *the statutes of Omri are kept*
[g] Heb *its*

of ancient treaty witnesses, is the heavenly court. *Controversy,* lawsuit. **4:** Note the prominence of *Miriam* (Ex 15.20–21). **5:** *Balak, Balaam,* Num 22–24. **5:** *From Shittim* (Josh 3.1) *to Gilgal* (Josh 4.19) refers to the crossing of the Jordan. **6:** Cf. Pss 15.1; 24.3. **8:** In this single sentence the prophet sums up a century of brilliant prophecy; see Am 5.21–24; Hos 6.6; Isa 1.11–17. *Kindness,* "ḥesed," covenant loyalty.

6.9–16: Jerusalem, the corrupt city, is cursed. Jerusalem, as wicked as Samaria (see v. 16), must be destroyed. This speech can be read as a separate oracle or as the judicial sentence following the indictment in 6.1–8. **14–16:** For other "futility curses" in which actions fail to produce normal and expected results, see Deut 28.30–31,38–46. **16:** *Omri, Ahab,* of the Northern Kingdom in the ninth century BCE; see 1 Kings 16.25–34. *Object of hissing,* Zeph 2.15.

7.1–7: A lament for a desperate society. 1: *Gleaned,* Lev 19.9–10; 23.22; Deut 24.19–21; Ruth 2–3. The *first-ripe*

[2] The faithful have disappeared from the
land,
and there is no one left who is upright;
they all lie in wait for blood,
and they hunt each other with nets.
[3] Their hands are skilled to do evil;
the official and the judge ask for a bribe,
and the powerful dictate what they desire;
thus they pervert justice.[a]
[4] The best of them is like a brier,
the most upright of them a thorn hedge.
The day of their[b] sentinels, of their[b]
punishment, has come;
now their confusion is at hand.
[5] Put no trust in a friend,
have no confidence in a loved one;
guard the doors of your mouth
from her who lies in your embrace;
[6] for the son treats the father with contempt,
the daughter rises up against her
mother,
the daughter-in-law against her mother-
in-law;
your enemies are members of your own
household.
[7] But as for me, I will look to the LORD,
I will wait for the God of my salvation;
my God will hear me.

[8] Do not rejoice over me, O my enemy;
when I fall, I shall rise;
when I sit in darkness,
the LORD will be a light to me.
[9] I must bear the indignation of the LORD,
because I have sinned against him,
until he takes my side
and executes judgment for me.
He will bring me out to the light;
I shall see his vindication.
[10] Then my enemy will see,
and shame will cover her who said
to me,
"Where is the LORD your God?"
My eyes will see her downfall;[c]
now she will be trodden down
like the mire of the streets.

[11] A day for the building of your walls!
In that day the boundary shall be far
extended.
[12] In that day they will come to you
from Assyria to[d] Egypt,
and from Egypt to the River,
from sea to sea and from mountain to
mountain.
[13] But the earth will be desolate
because of its inhabitants,
for the fruit of their doings.

[14] Shepherd your people with your staff,
the flock that belongs to you,
which lives alone in a forest
in the midst of a garden land;
let them feed in Bashan and Gilead
as in the days of old.
[15] As in the days when you came out of the
land of Egypt,
show us[e] marvelous things.
[16] The nations shall see and be ashamed
of all their might;
they shall lay their hands on their mouths;
their ears shall be deaf;
[17] they shall lick dust like a snake,
like the crawling things of the earth;
they shall come trembling out of their
fortresses;
they shall turn in dread to the LORD our
God,
and they shall stand in fear of you.

[a] Cn: Heb *they weave it*
[b] Heb *your*
[c] Heb lacks *downfall*
[d] One Ms: MT *Assyria and cities of*
[e] Cn: Heb *I will show him*

fig was the most delicious. **2:** Abraham (Gen 18.23–33), Jeremiah (Jer 5.1), and Ezekiel (Ezek 22.30) also searched for an honest man. **5:** Cf. Jer 9.4. **6:** Contrast Mal 4.6.

7.8–20: A final liturgy. This final unit contains shifts in content, if not speakers, and may have been designed for worship. It begins with lament (vv. 8–10), followed by an oracle of encouragement (vv. 11–13) and prayer (vv. 14–17), before closing with hopeful affirmation of God's great mercy. **8–10:** The prophet speaks as Israel. **9:** Jer 10.19. **10:** *Shame will cover her,* Ob 10. *Mire of the streets,* Isa 10.6. **11–13:** The references to the (re)*building of your walls* (Neh 2.17) and the restoration of former boundaries (Isa 54.2–3) suggest that this oracle was probably written in the early postexilic period. **12:** *The River,* the Euphrates. **14:** *Bashan* and *Gilead* in northern Transjordan

[18] Who is a God like you, pardoning
iniquity
and passing over the transgression
of the remnant of your[a] possession?
He does not retain his anger forever,
because he delights in showing
clemency.
[19] He will again have compassion upon us;
he will tread our iniquities under foot.
You will cast all our[b] sins
into the depths of the sea.
[20] You will show faithfulness to Jacob
and unswerving loyalty to Abraham,
as you have sworn to our ancestors
from the days of old.

[a] Heb *his*
[b] Gk Syr Vg Tg: Heb *their*

were known for their fertility. **18–19:** Cf. Ex 34.6–7; Ps 103.8–10; contrast Nah 1.2–3. **18:** The sentence *Who is a God like you* is reminiscent of the prophet's name (1.1n.). **20:** Gen 12.1–3; 17.6–8.

NAHUM

NAME AND CANONICAL STATUS

The name Nahum derives from the Hebrew word for "comfort." It may be a shortened form of Nehemiah—"God has comforted."

The book is the seventh of the twelve Minor Prophets (see the Introduction to the Prophetic Books). In the books of Hosea, Amos, and Micah, those prophets devote much attention to explaining that Israel and Judah fell because of the people's sin. The next three books of the collection, begun by Nahum, explain God's sovereignty over the nations through which God carried out that punishment. Nahum insists that God will soon punish Nineveh, the capital of the Assyrian empire in the eighth century BCE. The Assyrians are infamous to the biblical writers for their destruction of the Northern Kingdom of Israel in 722 BCE, and even after Assyria passed from world dominance, it remained a symbol for brutal imperial control, as seen in works of the Hellenistic period such as the books of Judith and Tobit. Following Nahum, Habakkuk pointedly calls for God's action against the Babylonians, and Zephaniah joins oracles against Judah with oracles against the nations and offers a glimmer of hope for both.

DATE OF COMPOSITION

Nahum was written sometime after the fall of the Egyptian city of Thebes (mentioned in Nah 3.8) in 663 BCE. Because it looks forward to the fall of Nineveh, accomplished by a coalition of Babylonians and Medes in 612 BCE, the book is often dated to just before that major event. Recent interpretation of the prophetic books, however, suggests that they provide retrospective interpretations of Israel's history, so the book could date after 612 BCE. To readers aware that Nineveh had indeed fallen, Nahum would reveal not only God's powerful hand in international affairs but also the role of prophets in preparing each generation for events to come.

CONTENTS AND INTERPRETATION

A common genre within the prophetic books is the "oracle against the nations," which pronounces God's judgment on those other than Israel or Judah. While Isaiah, Jeremiah, Zephaniah, and others outline God's displeasure at multiple nations, Nahum focuses on only one: Assyria.

Throughout Nahum, God is cast as a mighty warrior whose armies violently defeat the foe. After an opening depiction of God as a cosmic power in ch 1, the book turns in chs 2 and 3 to vivid images of Nineveh in the midst of siege and defeat. The images of warfare are stark and disturbing: captive slave women beat their breasts (2.7), dead bodies fill Nineveh's streets (3.3), and Nineveh itself is portrayed as a woman who is sexually assaulted by God (3.5–7). The author shows no pity for Nineveh or its inhabitants, instead delighting in its overthrow and claiming that all nations do the same (3.19).

For this reason, many readers condemn the book and contrast it negatively with the book of Jonah, which insists that God cares about the Ninevites and which describes the Assyrians as repenting. The difference between the books, however, may be due less to different ancient assessments of the Assyrians than to the different messages the books proclaim. While Jonah demonstrates the depths of divine mercy by showing stereotypically evil Ninevites in the act of repentance, Nahum establishes the sovereignty of God over all tyrants by showing powerful Nineveh in defeat. The power of God is good news for Judah, as seen especially in Nah 1 where God's anger is presented as an act of care for Judah: God will serve as a stronghold to those who seek divine refuge (1.7), caring enough about their affliction to become angry on their behalf.

Reading Nahum raises issues that are disturbingly contemporary, such as justice, violence, revenge, and women as symbols of evil. Although the question that ends the book is rhetorical, perhaps Nahum leaves its readers with a more serious quandary: how can one appreciate Nahum's call for justice without embracing its celebration of violence?

Julia M. O'Brien

1 An oracle concerning Nineveh. The book
of the vision of Nahum of Elkosh.

2 A jealous and avenging God is the LORD,
the LORD is avenging and wrathful;
the LORD takes vengeance on his adversaries
and rages against his enemies.
3 The LORD is slow to anger but great in
power,
and the LORD will by no means clear the
guilty.

His way is in whirlwind and storm,
and the clouds are the dust of his feet.
4 He rebukes the sea and makes it dry,
and he dries up all the rivers;
Bashan and Carmel wither,
and the bloom of Lebanon fades.
5 The mountains quake before him,
and the hills melt;
the earth heaves before him,
the world and all who live in it.

6 Who can stand before his indignation?
Who can endure the heat of his anger?
His wrath is poured out like fire,
and by him the rocks are broken in
pieces.

7 The LORD is good,
a stronghold in a day of trouble;
he protects those who take refuge in him,
8 even in a rushing flood.
He will make a full end of his adversaries,[a]
and will pursue his enemies into
darkness.
9 Why do you plot against the LORD?
He will make an end;
no adversary will rise up twice.
10 Like thorns they are entangled,
like drunkards they are drunk;
they are consumed like dry straw.
11 From you one has gone out
who plots evil against the LORD,
one who counsels wickedness.

12 Thus says the LORD,
"Though they are at full strength and
many,[b]
they will be cut off and pass away.
Though I have afflicted you,
I will afflict you no more.
13 And now I will break off his yoke from you
and snap the bonds that bind you."

[a] Gk: Heb *of her place*
[b] Meaning of Heb uncertain

1.1: Superscription. Like other prophetic books, Nahum begins with a description of its contents. *Oracle* also begins prophetic collections in Isa 13; Hab 1; Zech 9; 12; and Mal 1. Although other prophetic books mention the writing of prophecy, Nahum is the only one explicitly called a *book*; the Hebrew term refers to anything that is written and may refer to a scroll. *Vision* in the Hebrew Bible refers almost exclusively to prophecy; seeing is linked with the reception of prophecy in the superscriptions of Amos, Micah, and Habakkuk. The location of *Elkosh* is unknown.

1.2–8: Establishing God's power. Before addressing the specific issue of Nineveh, the book seeks to establish God's power and might. These verses form a partial acrostic; that is, most lines in vv. 2–8 begin with successive letters of the first half of Hebrew alphabet. **2–3a:** First, God's attributes are named and God's character established: God is *jealous* for God's people and does not ignore wrongdoing. This version of Israel's familiar confession of faith (see Ex 34.6; Jon 4.2; Ps 86.15; etc.) highlights *vengeance*, the deity's willingness and power to right wrongs. **3b–5:** God's appearance on earth, the divine theophany, is as an angry, cosmic warrior (cf. 2 Sam 22.8–16 = Ps 18.7–15; Ps 29; Hab 3.3–12). **4:** The language may allude to ancient Near Eastern cosmologies, in which the deities "River" and "Sea" were defeated by a more powerful god (see also Hab 3; Ps 74.13). *Bashan* in northern Transjordan, *Carmel* on Israel's northern Mediterranean coast, and *Lebanon* are areas known for agricultural fertility; God is powerful enough to dry them up. **5:** God's appearance shakes *mountains* (Judg 5.5; Ps 18.7; Isa 64.1). **6–8:** As expressed in the first of several rhetorical questions in the book, no one who opposes this God can stand, while no one who seeks divine *refuge* will suffer. In biblical Hebrew as in English, *anger* is associated with *heat* (e.g., Ex 32.22; Judg 6.39; Jer 7.20; 17.4).

1.9–15: God's power turned against Nineveh. The shift in addressee to *you* marks a move from the general description of divine power to its specific application. The gender and identity of *you*, however, change in the course of the unit: the feminine *you* in 1.9–13 and 15 likely refers to Judah, and the masculine *you* in 1.14 likely is the king of Assyria. Many of the references in these verses, such as to the one *who plots evil* (v. 11), are unclear.

14 The LORD has commanded concerning you:
"Your name shall be perpetuated no longer;
from the house of your gods I will cut off the carved image and the cast image.
I will make your grave, for you are worthless."

15 [a]Look! On the mountains the feet of one who brings good tidings,
who proclaims peace!
Celebrate your festivals, O Judah,
fulfill your vows,
for never again shall the wicked invade you;
they are utterly cut off.

2 A shatterer[b] has come up against you.
Guard the ramparts;
watch the road;
gird your loins;
collect all your strength.

2 (For the LORD is restoring the majesty of Jacob,
as well as the majesty of Israel,
though ravagers have ravaged them
and ruined their branches.)

3 The shields of his warriors are red;
his soldiers are clothed in crimson.
The metal on the chariots flashes
on the day when he musters them;
the chargers[c] prance.
4 The chariots race madly through the streets,
they rush to and fro through the squares;
their appearance is like torches,
they dart like lightning.
5 He calls his officers;
they stumble as they come forward;
they hasten to the wall,
and the mantelet[d] is set up.
6 The river gates are opened,
the palace trembles.
7 It is decreed[d] that the city[e] be exiled,
its slave women led away,
moaning like doves
and beating their breasts.
8 Nineveh is like a pool
whose waters[f] run away.

[a] Ch 2.1 in Heb
[b] Cn: Heb *scatterer*
[c] Cn Compare Gk Syr: Heb *cypresses*
[d] Meaning of Heb uncertain
[e] Heb *it*
[f] Cn Compare Gk: Heb *a pool, from the days that she has become, and they*

12: While acknowledging a role in Judah's oppression, God promises that its salvation has begun. **13:** *His yoke*, the political oppression of the king of Assyria, is about to break. **14:** Threats against the king of Assyria include loss of reputation, religious practice, and life itself. The king is *worthless* or, in Hebrew, a "trifling." **15:** A messenger brings the good news of the imminent death of the enemy to Judah, who can now celebrate its own religious traditions. *One who brings good tidings*, see 2 Sam 18.27,31; Isa 40.9; 41.27; 52.7. *Fulfill your vows*, presumably vows made to God during the oppression in hope of deliverance.

2.1–13: The siege of Nineveh. A vivid description of the divine warrior's battle against the city of Nineveh. **1:** *You* is a feminine form, likely Nineveh. Here, as later in the book, the call for Nineveh to protect itself is sarcastic. *Shatterer*, "scatterer" in Hebrew (see translation note *a*), may be God, who leads warriors against Nineveh (vv. 3–6). A form of this word is used for the divine warrior's activity in Hab 3.14 and Isa 24.1. **2:** Parenthetical reminder that Nineveh's downfall avenges the devastation of the Northern Kingdom of *Israel* (722 BCE), whose ancestor is *Jacob*. **3–6:** Descriptive language and active verbs create arresting images of God's invading army. **5:** *He* likely is the king of Assyria, who tries in vain to defend the city by bolstering its walls. **6–8a:** The actual fall of the city is depicted with water imagery, conventional imagery found in other ancient Near Eastern documents and in Jer 51. **6:** *The river gates*, Nineveh was situated on the east bank of the Tigris River, whose tributary, the Khosr, flowed through the city, so it is possible that actual flooding occurred during the attack; see v. 8. **7:** The description of the mourning of the *slave women* adds poignancy to the scene; in Hebrew the sound of the words mimics mourning. **8b–10:** The NRSV has added quotation marks to highlight the writer's attempt to reproduce the shouts of the warriors. Incomplete sentences give a breathless feeling to the chaotic scene. **10a:** The first three words begin with the same letter in English, as the translators attempt to mirror the alliteration found in

"Halt! Halt!"—
but no one turns back.
9 "Plunder the silver,
plunder the gold!
There is no end of treasure!
An abundance of every precious thing!"

10 Devastation, desolation, and
destruction!
Hearts faint and knees tremble,
all loins quake,
all faces grow pale!
11 What became of the lions' den,
the cave[a] of the young lions,
where the lion goes,
and the lion's cubs, with no one to
disturb them?
12 The lion has torn enough for his
whelps
and strangled prey for his lionesses;
he has filled his caves with prey
and his dens with torn flesh.

13 See, I am against you, says the LORD of hosts, and I will burn your[b] chariots in smoke, and the sword shall devour your young lions; I will cut off your prey from the earth, and the voice of your messengers shall be heard no more.

3 Ah! City of bloodshed,
utterly deceitful, full of booty—
no end to the plunder!
2 The crack of whip and rumble of wheel,
galloping horse and bounding chariot!
3 Horsemen charging,
flashing sword and glittering spear,
piles of dead,
heaps of corpses,
dead bodies without end—
they stumble over the bodies!
4 Because of the countless debaucheries of
the prostitute,
gracefully alluring, mistress of sorcery,
who enslaves[c] nations through her
debaucheries,
and peoples through her sorcery,
5 I am against you,
says the LORD of hosts,
and will lift up your skirts over your
face;
and I will let nations look on your nakedness
and kingdoms on your shame.
6 I will throw filth at you
and treat you with contempt,
and make you a spectacle.
7 Then all who see you will shrink from
you and say,
"Nineveh is devastated; who will bemoan
her?"
Where shall I seek comforters for you?

[a] Cn: Heb *pasture*
[b] Heb *her*
[c] Heb *sells*

the Hebrew version of the phrase. **11–13:** The author begins a taunt of the Assyrian king by comparing him to a lion, an animal frequently associated with the Assyrian empire in its own art. Although the king (*lion*) has provided much wealth (*prey*) for his citizens (*his whelps*), God will cut off both. The *you* of v.13 is feminine, turning the taunt to Nineveh herself. The verse ties together previous parts of Nahum: the description of *chariots* in 2.4, the analogy of the den of the *lion* in 2.11–12, and the reference to a messenger in 1.15: while a messenger brought good news to Judah, now the *messengers* of the Assyrians are cut off.

3.1–19: Further taunts against feminine Nineveh and the Assyrian king. Nahum's personification of Nineveh as a woman, begun in the previous chapter, turns derogatory, as the city is envisioned as a prostitute who is taunted as well as assaulted. **1–3:** The absence of verbs creates a montage of horrific images of the city's destruction. **1:** *Ah* is an exclamation calling attention to woman Nineveh. *City of bloodshed,* similar language is used for Israel, Judah, and Jerusalem in Ezek 7.23; 9.9; and for Babylon in Hab 2.12. **4–7:** The punishment of the prostitute Nineveh begins. **4:** While the Hebrew term for *prostitute* can refer to one who receives money for sex acts, it also is used in the Bible to refer to promiscuity and unfaithfulness (Deut 22.21; 31.16; Ezek 23.3; Hos 4.13–14). Here the term may function as a slur against the city rather than a description of its activities. Nineveh's control over and appeal to other nations is attributed to *sorcery* and seduction. **5:** God will personally take action against Nineveh. The uncovering of *nakedness* is a matter of *shame* (Gen 9.22–23; Lev 18–20; Isa 47.3; Lam 1.8; Hab 2.15) and is often a prelude to sexual violation (Jer 13.22). **6:** Nineveh's nakedness will be made into a *spectacle,* as is the punished woman in Hos 2.10. **7:** The absence of *comforters* for Nineveh is ironic, given that "Nahum" derives from the word for "comfort." The image of Nineveh as a devastated woman finds a parallel in the depiction of Jerusalem in the book of Lamentations.

[8] Are you better than Thebes[a]
that sat by the Nile,
with water around her,
her rampart a sea,
water her wall?
[9] Ethiopia[b] was her strength,
Egypt too, and that without limit;
Put and the Libyans were her[c] helpers.

[10] Yet she became an exile,
she went into captivity;
even her infants were dashed in pieces
at the head of every street;
lots were cast for her nobles,
all her dignitaries were bound in fetters.
[11] You also will be drunken,
you will go into hiding;[d]
you will seek
a refuge from the enemy.
[12] All your fortresses are like fig trees
with first-ripe figs—
if shaken they fall
into the mouth of the eater.
[13] Look at your troops:
they are women in your midst.
The gates of your land
are wide open to your foes;
fire has devoured the bars of your gates.

[14] Draw water for the siege,
strengthen your forts;
trample the clay,
tread the mortar,
take hold of the brick mold!

[15] There the fire will devour you,
the sword will cut you off.
It will devour you like the locust.

Multiply yourselves like the locust,
multiply like the grasshopper!
[16] You increased your merchants
more than the stars of the heavens.
The locust sheds its skin and flies
away.
[17] Your guards are like grasshoppers,
your scribes like swarms[d] of locusts
settling on the fences
on a cold day—
when the sun rises, they fly away;
no one knows where they have gone.

[18] Your shepherds are asleep,
O king of Assyria;
your nobles slumber.
Your people are scattered on the
mountains
with no one to gather them.
[19] There is no assuaging your hurt,
your wound is mortal.
All who hear the news about you
clap their hands over you.
For who has ever escaped
your endless cruelty?

[a] Heb *No-amon*
[b] Or *Nubia*; Heb *Cush*
[c] Gk: Heb *your*
[d] Meaning of Heb uncertain

8–13: Nineveh is threatened with the same fate that befell Thebes, the most important city in southern Egypt, which was conquered by the Assyrians in 663 BCE. **8:** The threat starts in the form of a rhetorical question, one of many in the book. **9–10:** Thebes' sea defenses and her allies *Ethiopia*, *Put*, and the *Libyans* could not protect her. Just as she went into exile and her *infants were dashed in pieces* (see Isa 13.16; Ps 137.9), so Nineveh will suffer. **11:** Military defeat is often described as stumbling as though drunken (Isa 51.22; Jer 25.16,27; 51.3). **13:** Nineveh's *troops* are taunted as being as weak as *women*, language also used in Assyrian documents to describe defeated soldiers. *Gates* may be an allusion to female genitals (as also perhaps in Isa 3.26): Nineveh is open to violation. **14–17:** The call for Nineveh to fortify itself for battle is sarcastic, as in 2.1: the city's fate is sealed. Locust imagery is used in several ways in these verses: Nineveh will be devoured as by *the locust* (v. 15a), even should its warriors multiply like *locusts* (v. 15b), and those charged with protecting the city are as undependable as *swarms of locusts* (v. 17). **16–17:** *Merchants* may allude to Assyria's economic power in the ancient world. *Merchants*, *guards*, and *scribes*, each a part of a thriving society, all abandon Nineveh. **18–19:** Shepherd imagery dominates the final taunt of the king of Assyria. Ironically, the one who was once called the "lion" (2.11–12) is here described as having incompetent *shepherds*, a common designation for leaders or *nobles* (Jer 3.15; 10.21; 25.35; Ezek 34.2–12). **19**: All nations are described as celebrating the Assyrian king's defeat because of Nineveh's *endless cruelty*. A final rhetorical question ends this book, a feature shared with the book of Jonah, also concerned with Nineveh.

HABAKKUK

LOCATION IN CANON, AUTHORSHIP, AND LITERARY HISTORY

Habakkuk is the eighth of the twelve Minor Prophets (see Introduction to the Prophetic Books). Despite the book's first-person style, we know nothing about Habakkuk as a person. The superscription, the opening introductory title of a prophetic collection, only provides a label for the book. Unlike the complex superscriptions of Isaiah, Jeremiah, Amos, and Micah, the opening of Habakkuk does not give the prophet's family, location, or time period.

The prophet does appear as a character in later Jewish and Christian literature. In the Addition to Daniel known as Bel and the Dragon in the Apocrypha, Habakkuk is transported by an angel to feed Daniel in the lions' den (Bel 33–39). Other traditions locate him in the times of Manasseh or Jeremiah and Ezekiel, in the seventh and early sixth centuries BCE. A commentary on Habakkuk from Qumran, called a "pesher" for its style of applying the biblical text directly to events of the writer's own day, provides not only an early copy of the text itself but also a glimpse of how Habakkuk's words resonated with a later generation.

CONTENT AND LITERARY STYLE

Habakkuk complains about the violence of the Babylonians, called the Chaldeans in 1.6. Their empire came to power in the seventh century BCE after defeating the Assyrians. As described in 1 Kings 23–25, Babylonia soon dominated Judah's political life and in 586 BCE destroyed its independent existence as a state: Babylonian armies burned the Temple in Jerusalem and exiled many of the population.

Other prophetic collections such as Isa 14.3–23 and Jer 50–51 pronounce God's judgment on Babylon for its cruelty. While Habakkuk's anti-Babylonian rhetoric is similar, even sharing some vocabulary with Jeremiah, its literary style is different. The core of the book takes the form of alternating speeches of the prophet and God (1.2–17 and 2.1–20). In each case, the prophet voices the community's complaint in the first person, granting it immediacy and poignancy. God's ensuing speech does not directly answer the prophet but rather raises new issues for consideration. The book ends with the speech of the prophet, cast as a prayer for God to act as a warrior on behalf of the people. The divine warrior who was depicted as marching to right wrongs in Nah 1 is entreated here to return and save again.

DATE OF COMPOSITION

Because of its anti-Babylonian theme, the book is often dated to the late seventh century BCE, the height of Babylonian power. A key issue of interpretation, however, is whether the prophet's initial complaint in 1.2–4 concerns the Babylonians themselves or rather another enemy that will itself be conquered by the even more brutal Babylonians. Is God's rousing of the Babylonians in 1.5–11 offered as an answer to the prophet's complaint about someone else, or is it instead God's agreement about the nature of the Babylonians? The accusations in 1.4 of injustice and the perversion of the law could describe wrongdoing in a variety of contexts, including within Judah itself. These ambiguities, as well as the generic language of the book, rule out certainty in dating, yet the same features contribute to the book's ability to resonate in multiple times and places.

INTERPRETATION

A classic question in monotheistic traditions is why, if God is just and caring, do believers suffer? While the book of Job pointedly raises this question on behalf of an individual, the book of Habakkuk complains about the suffering of the community as a whole at the hand of tyrants. Nowhere does the book attempt to solve the problem of God's apparent injustice. Instead, it models the legitimacy of human protest as well as the power of trusting in God's power even when it is not apparent.

Julia M. O'Brien

1 The oracle that the prophet Habakkuk saw.

[2] O LORD, how long shall I cry for help,
and you will not listen?
Or cry to you "Violence!"
and you will not save?
[3] Why do you make me see wrongdoing
and look at trouble?
Destruction and violence are before me;
strife and contention arise.
[4] So the law becomes slack
and justice never prevails.
The wicked surround the righteous—
therefore judgment comes forth
perverted.

[5] Look at the nations, and see!
Be astonished! Be astounded!
For a work is being done in your days
that you would not believe if you were
told.
[6] For I am rousing the Chaldeans,
that fierce and impetuous nation,
who march through the breadth of the earth
to seize dwellings not their own.
[7] Dread and fearsome are they;
their justice and dignity proceed from
themselves.
[8] Their horses are swifter than
leopards,
more menacing than wolves at dusk;
their horses charge.
Their horsemen come from far away;
they fly like an eagle swift to
devour.
[9] They all come for violence,
with faces pressing[a] forward;
they gather captives like sand.
[10] At kings they scoff,
and of rulers they make sport.
They laugh at every fortress,
and heap up earth to take it.
[11] Then they sweep by like the wind;
they transgress and become guilty;
their own might is their god!

[12] Are you not from of old,
O LORD my God, my Holy One?
You[b] shall not die.
O LORD, you have marked them for
judgment;
and you, O Rock, have established them
for punishment.

[a] Meaning of Heb uncertain
[b] Ancient Heb tradition: MT *We*

1.1: Superscription. Like Nahum, which precedes it in the canon, the book of Habakkuk is called an *oracle*; Nahum is also called a vision, deriving from the same Hebrew verbal root as *saw* (cf. also Isa 1.1; Am 1.1). The book calls Habakkuk a *prophet* here and in 3.1. The superscription provides no family, geographical, or chronological information.

1.2–17: First interaction between the prophet and God. 2–4: The prophet speaks. While it is common for prophetic books to begin with the prophet speaking *for* God, Habakkuk pointedly begins with the prophet speaking *to* God, complaining about injustice. As in psalms of lament, *how long* introduces complaint and petition (Ps 6.3; 13.1; 35.17; 74.10; 79.5). Although he speaks in the first person, the prophet seems to speak for the community as a whole. The complaint that the *wicked surround the righteous* will be repeated in 1.13. **3:** Jer 20.8. **4:** *The law becomes slack*, this could refer to the reign of Jehoiakim (608–598 BCE), when the reforms of his father Josiah languished (2 Kings 23.35–37; cf. Jer 2.8). The *law* (Heb "torah") formed the basis of Josiah's reforms. **5–11: God speaks.** Rather than directly answering the prophet's questions, God addresses the community as a whole (*you* is plural), explaining that God is *rousing the Chaldeans* (the Neo-Babylonian empire, ca. 612–539 BCE); although they are fierce, they are being sent by God. The NRSV refers throughout this unit to *they*, but the Hebrew alternates between singular and plural references to the enemy. In response to the prophet's complaint of *violence* in 1.2, God explains that the Babylonians *come for violence*, and the complaint about the lack of *justice* in 1.4 is countered with the acknowledgment that the Babylonians make their own *justice*. God's words intensify rather than satisfy the prophet's claims. **12–17: The prophet speaks.** Having received no answer to his complaints, the prophet again appeals to God to save. **12–13:** As in numerous psalms, the prophet appeals to God's goodness and constancy as the basis for his request: why, if God is good, does God not act? **12:** *From of old*, Ps 74.12. As the note to the translation footnote explains, the Masoretic Text likely changed the original reading of *You* to *We* in order to avoid the possibility of suggesting that God could die. The metaphor of God as *Rock* appears frequently in the Bible (e.g., Deut 32.4; 2 Sam 23.3; Pss 18.2; 62.2,6–7; Isa 30.29). The claim that the

13 Your eyes are too pure to behold evil,
and you cannot look on wrongdoing;
why do you look on the treacherous,
and are silent when the wicked swallow
those more righteous than they?
14 You have made people like the fish of the sea,
like crawling things that have no ruler.

15 The enemy[a] brings all of them up with a hook;
he drags them out with his net,
he gathers them in his seine;
so he rejoices and exults.
16 Therefore he sacrifices to his net
and makes offerings to his seine;
for by them his portion is lavish,
and his food is rich.
17 Is he then to keep on emptying his net,
and destroying nations without mercy?

2 I will stand at my watchpost,
and station myself on the rampart;
I will keep watch to see what he will say to me,
and what he[b] will answer concerning my complaint.
2 Then the LORD answered me and said:
Write the vision;
make it plain on tablets,
so that a runner may read it.
3 For there is still a vision for the appointed time;
it speaks of the end, and does not lie.
If it seems to tarry, wait for it;
it will surely come, it will not delay.
4 Look at the proud!
Their spirit is not right in them,
but the righteous live by their faith.[c]
5 Moreover, wealth[d] is treacherous;
the arrogant do not endure.
They open their throats wide as Sheol;
like Death they never have enough.
They gather all nations for themselves,
and collect all peoples as their own.

6 Shall not everyone taunt such people
and, with mocking riddles, say about them,
"Alas for you who heap up what is not your own!"
How long will you load yourselves with goods taken in pledge?
7 Will not your own creditors suddenly rise,
and those who make you tremble wake up?
Then you will be booty for them.
8 Because you have plundered many nations,
all that survive of the peoples shall plunder you—

a Heb *He*
b Syr: Heb *I*
c Or *faithfulness*
d Other Heb Mss read *wine*

wicked oppress the *righteous* repeats the prophet's initial complaint in 1.4. **14–17:** *People*, Heb "'adam," the word used in Gen 1 to describe all humanity. There humanity was given dominion over the *fish of the sea* and *crawling things* (Gen 1.26,28); now the people have become *fish* in the *net* of the enemy. **16:** The enemy even treats his power, his *net*, as his god.

2.1–20: Second interaction between the prophet and God. 1: The image of the prophet is that of a sentinel posted on the city walls, awaiting God's reply (cf. Isa 21.6–12; 62.7; Ezek 3.17; 33.7; Hos 9.8). **2:** God's reply will be a *vision*, from the same Hebrew word as "saw" in the book's superscription (1.1). It will be made plain to all, written largely enough that a *running* messenger can read it. **3–5:** All three verses constitute God's reply: the prophet is told to trust that an answer will come, despite its apparent *delay*. **4:** Although Rom 1.17; Gal 3.11; and Heb 10.38–39 draw heavily on this verse to prioritize *faith* over works, the Heb word is better understood as "faithfulness." Like the previous verse and 3.16, it stresses that the one who patiently awaits God's response will be rewarded. **5:** The *proud* of v. 4 are here linked with *wealth* and the *arrogant*. *Sheol*, the abode of the dead. In ancient Israelite and Canaanite literature death and the underworld are often depicted as an open mouth with an insatiable appetite; see Isa 5.14; Prov 30.15–16. **6–20: God's extended response, in five taunts.** Continuing the condemnation of pride and wealth are five taunts, each marked by *alas* (6b–8,9–11,12–14,15–17,18–19). The condemnation of rapaciousness, arrogance, and violence matches the description of Babylon in 1.6–11. **6–8:** The first taunt condemns the voracious appetite of the Babylonians. Common to prophetic literature is the affirmation that the evil will suffer the same pains they inflicted on others (Ob 15). **6b:** *Alas*, a term often used

because of human bloodshed, and
violence to the earth,
to cities and all who live in them.

9 "Alas for you who get evil gain for your
house,
setting your nest on high
to be safe from the reach of harm!"
10 You have devised shame for your house
by cutting off many peoples;
you have forfeited your life.
11 The very stones will cry out from the
wall,
and the plaster[a] will respond from the
woodwork.

12 "Alas for you who build a town by
bloodshed,
and found a city on iniquity!"
13 Is it not from the LORD of hosts
that peoples labor only to feed the
flames,
and nations weary themselves for
nothing?
14 But the earth will be filled
with the knowledge of the glory of the
LORD,
as the waters cover the sea.

15 "Alas for you who make your neighbors
drink,
pouring out your wrath[b] until they are
drunk,
in order to gaze on their nakedness!"
16 You will be sated with contempt instead
of glory.
Drink, you yourself, and stagger![c]
The cup in the LORD's right hand
will come around to you,
and shame will come upon your glory!
17 For the violence done to Lebanon will
overwhelm you;
the destruction of the animals will
terrify you—[d]
because of human bloodshed and violence
to the earth,
to cities and all who live in them.

18 What use is an idol
once its maker has shaped it—
a cast image, a teacher of lies?
For its maker trusts in what has been made,
though the product is only an idol that
cannot speak!
19 Alas for you who say to the wood, "Wake
up!"
to silent stone, "Rouse yourself!"
Can it teach?
See, it is gold and silver plated,
and there is no breath in it at all.

20 But the LORD is in his holy temple;
let all the earth keep silence before him!

3 A prayer of the prophet Habakkuk according to Shigionoth.

2 O LORD, I have heard of your renown,
and I stand in awe, O LORD, of your work.

[a] Or *beam*
[b] Or *poison*
[c] Q Ms Gk: MT *be uncircumcised*
[d] Gk Syr: Meaning of Heb uncertain

in funeral laments (1 Kings 13.30; Jer 22.18). **9–11:** Like Ob 3–4, the second taunt chastises the arrogance of the proud in setting their *nest* high; their very houses will rise up against them. **12–14:** The third taunt contrasts the aspirations of the peoples and the power of God. **14:** Isa 11.9. **15–17:** The fourth taunt insists that Babylon's fortunes will be reversed, using the imagery of drinking: she (Babylon) who made others *drink* of her *wrath* will herself drink God's cup of punishment (Jer 25.15–27; 51.7). Throughout the prophetic books, the punished suffer *shame* and *nakedness* (Jer 13.26; Ezek 7.18; Nah 3.5; Ob 10). **17:** Isa 14.8; 37.24 suggest that both Assyrian and Babylonian kings cut down the famous cedars of *Lebanon*; this verse suggests that the *animals* themselves will take revenge. *Bloodshed* and *violence* were mentioned earlier in 2.8. **18–20:** The fifth taunt differs from the others: *alas* does not begin the unit, and the theme of idolatry is introduced for the first time since 1.16. Isa 40.18–20; 44.9–20 also lampoon the making of an *idol*. **20:** Ps 11.4; Zeph 1.7; Zech 2.13.

3.1–19: The prayer of the prophet, in the form of a divine warrior hymn. The prophet, unsatisfied with God's previous responses, turns from complaint to petition. He invokes the biblical memory that God once marched as a divine warrior to vindicate the people (Nah 1; Ex 15; Deut 33; Isa 13) as the basis for his request that God march again to establish justice. **1:** The book's second superscription (see also 1.1) not only marks this chapter

In our own time revive it;
in our own time make it known;
in wrath may you remember mercy.
3 God came from Teman,
the Holy One from Mount
Paran. *Selah*
His glory covered the heavens,
and the earth was full of his
praise.
4 The brightness was like the sun;
rays came forth from his hand,
where his power lay hidden.
5 Before him went pestilence,
and plague followed close behind.
6 He stopped and shook the earth;
he looked and made the nations
tremble.
The eternal mountains were
shattered;
along his ancient pathways
the everlasting hills sank low.
7 I saw the tents of Cushan under
affliction;
the tent-curtains of the land of Midian
trembled.
8 Was your wrath against the rivers,[a]
O LORD?
Or your anger against the rivers,[a]
or your rage against the sea,[b]
when you drove your horses,
your chariots to victory?
9 You brandished your naked bow,
sated[c] were the arrows at your
command.[d] *Selah*
You split the earth with rivers.
10 The mountains saw you, and writhed;
a torrent of water swept by;
the deep gave forth its voice.
The sun[e] raised high its hands;
11 the moon[f] stood still in its exalted
place,
at the light of your arrows speeding by,
at the gleam of your flashing spear.
12 In fury you trod the earth,
in anger you trampled nations.
13 You came forth to save your people,
to save your anointed.
You crushed the head of the wicked house,
laying it bare from foundation
to roof.[d] *Selah*
14 You pierced with their[g] own arrows the
head[h] of his warriors,[i]

[a] Or *against River*
[b] Or *against Sea*
[c] Cn: Heb *oaths*
[d] Meaning of Heb uncertain
[e] Heb *It*
[f] Heb *sun, moon*
[g] Heb *his*
[h] Or *leader*
[i] Vg Compare Gk Syr: Meaning of Heb uncertain

as a *prayer* but also provides instruction for its musical performance. The singular form of *Shigionoth* appears in the superscription to Ps 7; its meaning is unknown. Other musical notations end vv. 3,9,13, and the book as a whole. They may indicate that, like the Psalms, Hab 3 originally was a musical composition, or perhaps that the chapter was written in the style of a musical composition. **2:** The prophet makes his opening petition for God to *revive* God's saving work in *our own time* and show *mercy*. **3–15:** A vision of the divine warrior. Although in Hebrew the verb tenses are ambiguous, the NRSV has rendered them in the past tense to underscore that the vision is a memory of how God acted in the past, particularly in delivering the Israelites from Egyptian bondage. **3:** As in Deut 33.2 and Judg 5.4, the divine warrior began his march from *Teman* (synonymous with Edom, as in Ob 9) and *Paran*, areas in Transjordan associated with God's dramatic deliverance of the Israelites from Egypt. **3:** *Selah*, here as in vv. 9 and 13, is a notation common to Psalms; its meaning is unclear, although it may indicate a musical pause. **4–11:** The description of God's dominance over *mountains*, *rivers*, etc., has strong mythical connotations and may allude to the cosmologies of other ancient Near Eastern cultures, in which *River* and *Sea* were deities defeated by a more powerful god (see translation notes *a* and *b*). Parallels are found in Pss 74.12–15; 89.9–10. The shaking of *mountains* is a common divine warrior motif (Judg 5.5; Ps 18.7; Isa 64.1). Throughout these verses, the warrior's scope is cosmic, as God brandishes *chariots*, *bow, arrows,* and *spear* while subduing all the earth. **5:** *Pestilence* and *plague* are pictured as divine attendants; cf. Ps 79.49. *Plague* (Heb "Resheph") is a well-attested deity in nonbiblical sources. **7:** Although the location of *Cushan* is unknown, it is here linked with *Midian*, another area connected with the Transjordanian wanderings of the Israelites. **10–11:** These and other verses are difficult to translate. *Mountains . . . writhed*, a common image in depictions of theophanies (divine appearances); cf. Pss 29.5–8; 114.3–7. **12:** As in Nah 1, God's *anger* is understood to be a positive force for action

who came like a whirlwind to scatter
us,[a]
gloating as if ready to devour the poor
who were in hiding.
15 You trampled the sea with your horses,
churning the mighty waters.

16 I hear, and I tremble within;
my lips quiver at the sound.
Rottenness enters into my bones,
and my steps tremble[b] beneath me.
I wait quietly for the day of calamity
to come upon the people who attack us.

17 Though the fig tree does not blossom,
and no fruit is on the vines;
though the produce of the olive fails,
and the fields yield no food;
though the flock is cut off from the fold,
and there is no herd in the stalls,
18 yet I will rejoice in the LORD;
I will exult in the God of my salvation.
19 GOD, the Lord, is my strength;
he makes my feet like the feet of a deer,
and makes me tread upon the heights.[c]

To the leader: with stringed[d] instruments.

[a] Heb *me*
[b] Cn Compare Gk: Meaning of Heb uncertain
[c] Heb *my heights*
[d] Heb *my stringed*

against injustice. **15:** Further echoes of God's deliverance of the Israelites at the Red Sea (see Ex 15). **16–19a:** The prophet's response to the vision. **16:** After hearing a recital of the divine warrior's power, the prophet is awestruck, and is now able to trust that God will indeed act again. He has received the vision promised by God in 2.3 and can *wait quietly* (2.20; see also 2.4n.) for the *day of calamity* for his enemies. **17–19:** Although God's saving acts are not yet evident and the people and its land continue to suffer, the vision has allowed the prophet to trust in God's saving power. The book closes with a psalmlike affirmation that God is the prophet's *strength* (Ps 118.14) and makes his feet *like the feet of a deer* (Ps 18.33 = 2 Sam 22.34). **19:** The concluding instruction to the music *leader* to accompany the text with *stringed instruments* (see Pss 4; 6; 45; 54; 55; etc.) reinforces the psalmlike style of the chapter.

ZEPHANIAH

NAME, CANONICAL LOCATION, AND DATE OF COMPOSITION

Zephaniah is the ninth of the twelve Minor Prophets (see Introduction to Prophetic Literature). The book's superscription, its introductory title, provides more detailed information than do those of Nahum and Habakkuk, the two books that precede it in the canon.

After listing a four-generation genealogy, the superscription links the prophet (whose name means "the LORD has hidden" or "the LORD has stored up") with the reign of the Judean king Josiah. Second Kings 22–23 lauds Josiah as one of Judah's great religious reformers; before his death in 609 BCE, he removed foreign images from the Temple in Jerusalem, centralized worship practices, and established for Judah a degree of political independence from the Assyrian empire. Second Kings 16–23 also traces the close tie between worship practices and politics in this period. Submission to the Assyrians meant the inclusion of their religious statuary in the Temple (2 Kings 16.18), while resistance to Assyrian power both by Josiah and by his predecessor Hezekiah (see 1.1n.) was bolstered by the removal of such images. Resonating strongly with the narratives in 2 Kings, Zephaniah blames Judeans for mixing worship of the LORD with the worship of other deities (1.4–5) and accuses the royal court of dressing in foreign attire (1.8–9).

While the literary setting of the book in the seventh century BCE is obvious, the book may actually have been composed or at least substantially edited at a later date. The concluding promise of salvation for daughter Jerusalem (3.14–20), for example, reflects an exilic or postexilic perspective in its concern with the return of exiles to the city.

CONTENTS

Zephaniah is a typical prophetic book. It opens with a dramatic announcement of the Day of the LORD, prophetic language for a time in which God will act decisively to (re-)establish justice (Joel 1.15; 3.14; Am 5.18; Ob 15; Zech 12.4). It pairs oracles against foreign nations (cf. Isa 13–23; Jer 46–51; Ezek 25–32; Am 1.3–2.3) with oracles against Judah (cf. Isa 3; 5; Jer 1; 3; Am 2; Mic 2), accusing Judah of idolatry and injustice (cf. Isa 5.7; Jer 2.28; 11.13) and the nations of arrogance (cf. Isa 16.6; Jer 48.29; Zech 10.11). Zephaniah also ends with an announcement of salvation to daughter Jerusalem, similar to those found in other prophetic books (e.g., Mic 4; Zech 2; 9).

INTERPRETATION

The book's powerful language for divine judgment captivated the imagination of later interpreters. The *Dies Irae* ("day of wrath"), a thirteenth-century Christian hymn long included in the Mass for the Dead, derives from the Latin translation of the harrowing Day of the LORD imagery in ch 1. The *Apocalypse of Zephaniah*, a Jewish document usually dated between 100 BCE and 70 CE, describes the prophet's tour of hell as well as his brief visit to heaven. "Shoah," the Hebrew word for *ruin* in 1.15, is now a designation for the devastation of European Jewry known as the Holocaust.

Julia M. O'Brien

1 The word of the LORD that came to Zephaniah son of Cushi son of Gedaliah son of Amariah son of Hezekiah, in the days of King Josiah son of Amon of Judah.

[2] I will utterly sweep away everything
from the face of the earth, says the LORD.
[3] I will sweep away humans and animals;
I will sweep away the birds of the air
and the fish of the sea.
I will make the wicked stumble.[a]
I will cut off humanity
from the face of the earth, says the
LORD.
[4] I will stretch out my hand against Judah,
and against all the inhabitants of
Jerusalem;
and I will cut off from this place every
remnant of Baal
and the name of the idolatrous priests;[b]
[5] those who bow down on the roofs
to the host of the heavens;
those who bow down and swear to the
LORD,
but also swear by Milcom;[c]
[6] those who have turned back from
following the LORD,
who have not sought the LORD or
inquired of him.

[7] Be silent before the Lord GOD!
For the day of the LORD is at hand;
the LORD has prepared a sacrifice,
he has consecrated his guests.
[8] And on the day of the LORD's sacrifice
I will punish the officials and the king's
sons
and all who dress themselves in foreign
attire.
[9] On that day I will punish
all who leap over the threshold,
who fill their master's house
with violence and fraud.

[10] On that day, says the LORD,
a cry will be heard from the Fish
Gate,
a wail from the Second Quarter,
a loud crash from the hills.
[11] The inhabitants of the Mortar wail,
for all the traders have perished;
all who weigh out silver are cut off.
[12] At that time I will search Jerusalem with
lamps,
and I will punish the people
who rest complacently[d] on their dregs,
those who say in their hearts,

[a] Cn: Heb *sea, and those who cause the wicked to stumble*
[b] Compare Gk: Heb *the idolatrous priests with the priests*
[c] Gk Mss Syr Vg: Heb *Malcam* (or, *their king*)
[d] Heb *who thicken*

1.1: Superscription. *Cushi* may be either a name or an ethnic designation, Ethiopian (see 2.12 and 3.10). *Gedaliah* and *Amariah* are otherwise unknown, although the names also appear in postexilic books. If *Hezekiah* is the eighth-century reformer King Hezekiah (727/715–698/687 BCE; 2 Kings 18), then Zephaniah would be a member of the royal family. The unusually long genealogy suggests this may have been the case. *Josiah* (640–609 BCE) was also a reformer (2 Kings 22–23), although his father *Amon* had sacrificed to carved images (2 Chr 33.22).

1.2–18: The Coming Day of the LORD. 2–3: Punishment is announced first against *everything from the face of the earth*. The language echoes that used in Gen 1 to describe creation and in Gen 6.7; 7.4; and 8.8 to describe God's punishment through the Flood. **4–5:** God's focus turns to Judah, whose inhabitants are charged with combining worship of the LORD with worship of other deities such as the Canaanite god *Baal,* the astral deities known as *the host of the heavens,* and the Ammonite god *Milcom.* These charges, as well as the term for *idolatrous priests*, fit well with the accounts of Manasseh's idolatry in 2 Kings 21 and Josiah's reforms in 2 Kings 23; see also Jer 19.13; 32.29. **7–18:** *The Day of the LORD* (Joel 1.15; 3.14; Am 5.18; Ob 15; Zech 12.4). **7–13:** First outlined are the implications of the Day for Judah. **7:** *Be silent*, cf. Hab 2.20. Judah is described as an animal *sacrificed* by God to serve *his guests*. **8–13:** A listing of Judah's crimes. **8–9:** The linkage between adoption of *foreign attire* with *leaping over the threshold*, likely a non-Judean religious custom (cf. 1 Sam 5.5), connects political assimilation with idolatry. **10–11:** *The Fish Gate* (Neh 3.3; 12.39), *the Second Quarter* (2 Kings 22.14), and *the Mortar* (unidentified) likely all refer to wealthy districts in Jerusalem, where *traders* work. **12–13:** Every one of the wealthy in these districts will be searched out and punished. Because they doubt God's oversight of the world (see also

"The LORD will not do good,
nor will he do harm."
13 Their wealth shall be plundered,
and their houses laid waste.
Though they build houses,
they shall not inhabit them;
though they plant vineyards,
they shall not drink wine from them.

14 The great day of the LORD is near,
near and hastening fast;
the sound of the day of the LORD is bitter,
the warrior cries aloud there.
15 That day will be a day of wrath,
a day of distress and anguish,
a day of ruin and devastation,
a day of darkness and gloom,
a day of clouds and thick darkness,
16 a day of trumpet blast and battle cry
against the fortified cities
and against the lofty battlements.

17 I will bring such distress upon people
that they shall walk like the blind;
because they have sinned against the LORD,
their blood shall be poured out like dust,
and their flesh like dung.
18 Neither their silver nor their gold
will be able to save them
on the day of the LORD's wrath;
in the fire of his passion
the whole earth shall be consumed;
for a full, a terrible end
he will make of all the inhabitants of the earth.

2 Gather together, gather,
O shameless nation,
2 before you are driven away
like the drifting chaff,[a]
before there comes upon you
the fierce anger of the LORD,
before there comes upon you
the day of the LORD's wrath.
3 Seek the LORD, all you humble of the land,
who do his commands;
seek righteousness, seek humility;
perhaps you may be hidden
on the day of the LORD's wrath.
4 For Gaza shall be deserted,
and Ashkelon shall become a desolation;
Ashdod's people shall be driven out at noon,
and Ekron shall be uprooted.

5 Ah, inhabitants of the seacoast,
you nation of the Cherethites!
The word of the LORD is against you,
O Canaan, land of the Philistines;
and I will destroy you until no inhabitant is left.
6 And you, O seacoast, shall be pastures,
meadows for shepherds
and folds for flocks.
7 The seacoast shall become the possession
of the remnant of the house of Judah,
on which they shall pasture,
and in the houses of Ashkelon
they shall lie down at evening.
For the LORD their God will be mindful of them
and restore their fortunes.

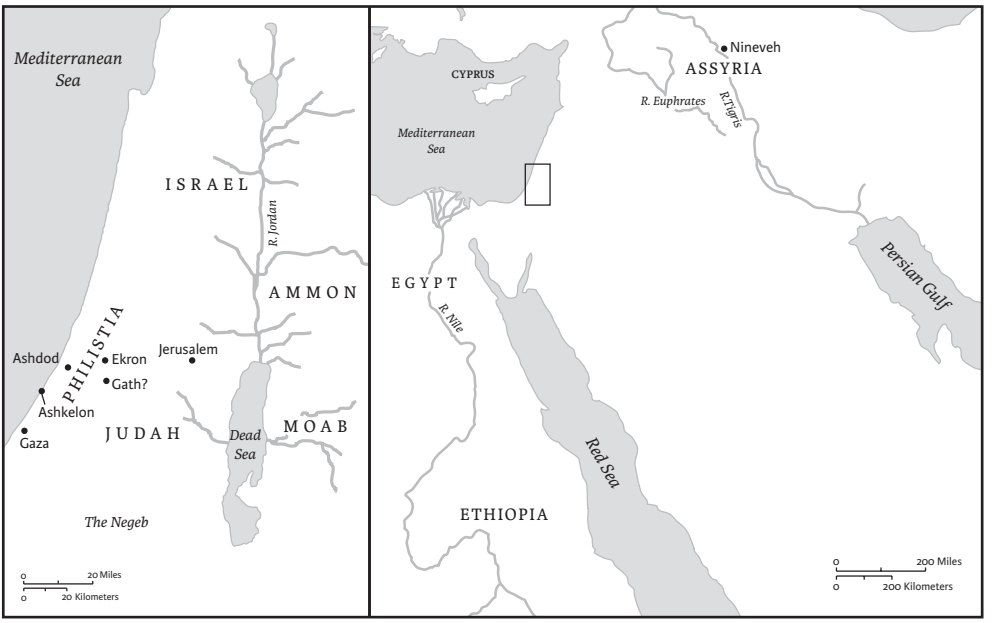
8 I have heard the taunts of Moab
and the revilings of the Ammonites,

[a] Cn Compare Gk Syr: Heb *before a decree is born; like chaff a day has passed away*

Mal 2.17), their labor will not be successful (see Deut 28.30–31 and cf. Isa 65.21). **14–18:** The chapter ends as it began, with attention on *all the inhabitants of the earth.* As elsewhere in the prophets, the *Day* is one of divine *wrath* (Isa 13.9) from which *silver* and *gold* provide no protection (Ezek 7.19). **15:** Am 5.18–20.

2.1–3: Call to repentance. Although the Day of the LORD seems inevitable, Judah's repentance may yet stave off destruction. **1:** The *shameless nation* likely is Judah. **3:** As in Joel 2.14 and Jon 3.8–9, the prophet underscores that some could *perhaps* survive if they *seek righteousness* (Isa 51.1).

2.4–15: Judgment on the nations. The call for Judah to repent shifts to promises that Judah's enemies will be destroyed and that Judeans will possess their land. Throughout, the threats employ language common to ancient Near Eastern curses against those who break the terms of a treaty. **4:** *Gaza, Ashkelon, Ashdod*, and *Ekron* are four of the five major cities of the Philistines (Josh 13.3). Missing from the traditional list is Gath, destroyed by the Assyrians ca. 712 BCE. **5:** The *Cherethites* may be synonymous with "Philistines" (Ezek 25.16; 2 Sam 8.18),



Ch 2.4–15: Places mentioned in the oracles against foreign nations.

how they have taunted my people
and made boasts against their territory.
9 Therefore, as I live, says the LORD of hosts,
the God of Israel,
Moab shall become like Sodom
and the Ammonites like Gomorrah,
a land possessed by nettles and salt pits,
and a waste forever.
The remnant of my people shall plunder them,
and the survivors of my nation shall possess them.
10 This shall be their lot in return for their pride,
because they scoffed and boasted
against the people of the LORD of hosts.
11 The LORD will be terrible against them;
he will shrivel all the gods of the earth,
and to him shall bow down,
each in its place,
all the coasts and islands of the nations.

12 You also, O Ethiopians,[a]
shall be killed by my sword.

13 And he will stretch out his hand against the north,
and destroy Assyria;
and he will make Nineveh a desolation,
a dry waste like the desert.
14 Herds shall lie down in it,
every wild animal;[b]
the desert owl[c] and the screech owl[c]
shall lodge on its capitals;

[a] Or *Nubians*; Heb *Cushites*
[b] Tg Compare Gk: Heb *nation*
[c] Meaning of Heb uncertain

who ruled the area along the Mediterranean *seacoast*. In Hebrew, the cities are characterized as female. **8–11:** Threats against *Moab* and the *Ammonites*, two of Judah's eastern neighbors, are common in prophetic literature (Jer 48–49; Ezek 25; Am 1–2), as is the use of *Sodom* and *Gomorrah* to connote total annihilation (Gen 19; Isa 1.9; 13.19; Jer 23.14; 50.4). **9:** *Remnant* and *survivors* may reflect the situation of the Babylonian exile. **12:** The brief mention of the *Ethiopians* (Heb "Cush," see 1.1n.) seems out of place. **13–15:** *Assyria*, with its capital *Nineveh*, receives the greatest condemnation. While the translation of the animal vocabulary is difficult, the threat that a city become the *lair for wild animals* was common in the ancient world (Isa 13.19–22; 24.11–15), as was cursing by *hissing* and *shaking the fist* (Jer 19.8; 49.17; Lam 2.15).

the owl[a] shall hoot at the window,
the raven[b] croak on the threshold;
for its cedar work will be laid bare.
15 Is this the exultant city
that lived secure,
that said to itself,
"I am, and there is no one else"?
What a desolation it has become,
a lair for wild animals!
Everyone who passes by it
hisses and shakes the fist.

3 Ah, soiled, defiled,
oppressing city!
2 It has listened to no voice;
it has accepted no correction.
It has not trusted in the LORD;
it has not drawn near to its God.

3 The officials within it
are roaring lions;
its judges are evening wolves
that leave nothing until the morning.
4 Its prophets are reckless,
faithless persons;
its priests have profaned what is sacred,
they have done violence to the law.
5 The LORD within it is righteous;
he does no wrong.
Every morning he renders his judgment,
each dawn without fail;
but the unjust knows no shame.

6 I have cut off nations;
their battlements are in ruins;
I have laid waste their streets
so that no one walks in them;
their cities have been made desolate,
without people, without inhabitants.
7 I said, "Surely the city[c] will fear me,
it will accept correction;
it will not lose sight[d]
of all that I have brought upon it."
But they were the more eager
to make all their deeds corrupt.

8 Therefore wait for me, says the LORD,
for the day when I arise as a
witness.
For my decision is to gather nations,
to assemble kingdoms,
to pour out upon them my indignation,
all the heat of my anger;
for in the fire of my passion
all the earth shall be consumed.

9 At that time I will change the speech of
the peoples
to a pure speech,
that all of them may call on the name of
the LORD
and serve him with one accord.
10 From beyond the rivers of Ethiopia[e]
my suppliants, my scattered ones,
shall bring my offering.

11 On that day you shall not be put to
shame
because of all the deeds by which you
have rebelled against me;
for then I will remove from your midst
your proudly exultant ones,

[a] Cn: Heb *a voice*
[b] Gk Vg: Heb *desolation*
[c] Heb *it*
[d] Gk Syr: Heb *its dwelling will not be cut off*
[e] Or *Nubia*; Heb *Cush*

3.1–7: Judgment against Jerusalem. The *city* Jerusalem is no better than the nations previously judged. *Officials, judges, prophets*, and *priests* encompass the entire leadership of the city (Jer 6.13; 14.18). Their deceit contrasts the *righteousness* and just *judgments* of God. **6–7:** God's punishment of the *nations* should have served as a warning for Judah to fear God and repent (Am 4).

3.8–10: Judgment and salvation of the nations. 8: Language of the Day of the LORD, which dominated ch 1, returns; it is here described as a *day* of God's *decision* to act against the *nations* (Joel 3.14). The Hebrew Bible describes the emotion of anger as *heat* and *fire*. **9:** A more universal hope follows, in which all *peoples* will *call on* Judah's God (Isa 2; Mal 1.11; Ps 68.31). The punishment of those who built the Tower of Babel (Gen 11.9) is reversed. **10:** *Scattered ones*, Judeans who have been exiled to places such as *Ethiopia* (Heb "Cush"; see 1.1; 2.12), will join in this world-wide worship of God.

3.11–13: Salvation in Jerusalem. Focus returns to Jerusalem, for whom feminine Hebrew forms are used. **11:** At the time of salvation, God will remove the city's *shame* (3.19; Joel 2.26–27) and those who are proud (Isa

and you shall no longer be haughty
in my holy mountain.
12 For I will leave in the midst of you
a people humble and lowly.
They shall seek refuge in the name of the
LORD—
13 the remnant of Israel;
they shall do no wrong
and utter no lies,
nor shall a deceitful tongue
be found in their mouths.
Then they will pasture and lie down,
and no one shall make them afraid.

14 Sing aloud, O daughter Zion;
shout, O Israel!
Rejoice and exult with all your heart,
O daughter Jerusalem!
15 The LORD has taken away the judgments
against you,
he has turned away your enemies.
The king of Israel, the LORD, is in your midst;
you shall fear disaster no more.
16 On that day it shall be said to Jerusalem:
Do not fear, O Zion;
do not let your hands grow weak.
17 The LORD, your God, is in your midst,
a warrior who gives victory;
he will rejoice over you with gladness,
he will renew you[a] in his love;
he will exult over you with loud singing
18 as on a day of festival.[b]
I will remove disaster from you,[c]
so that you will not bear reproach
for it.
19 I will deal with all your oppressors
at that time.
And I will save the lame
and gather the outcast,
and I will change their shame into praise
and renown in all the earth.
20 At that time I will bring you home,
at the time when I gather you;
for I will make you renowned and
praised
among all the peoples of the earth,
when I restore your fortunes
before your eyes, says the LORD.

[a] Gk Syr: Heb *he will be silent*
[b] Gk Syr: Meaning of Heb uncertain
[c] Cn: Heb *I will remove from you; they were*

2.11,12,17), highly negative terms in prophetic books. *My holy mountain*, Mount Zion, site of the temple. **12–13:** As in 2.7,9, this verse envisions salvation not for all of Judah but only for a *remnant*. The *humble*, those urged in 2.3 to *seek righteousness*, will survive. Their peaceful state will be like that of guarded sheep.

3.14–20: Salvation of daughter Jerusalem. The feminine characterization of *Jerusalem* expands to its depiction as a *daughter*, a designation of the city used throughout the prophets to underscore its vulnerability and utter dependency on God. The masculine characterization of God is essential to this unit as well: God is a virile *king* and *warrior* (cf. Ex 15.3) about to rescue daughter Zion (Zech 2.10–11; 9.9–10). **14:** *Zion*, *Israel*, and *Jerusalem* seem to be used interchangeably. **15–17:** The presence of God as strong *king* and *warrior* means that daughter Jerusalem does not need to *fear* or *grow weak*. **16:** Cf. Isa 41.10,13; 43.1,5. **17–18:** The Hebrew is obscure; see textual notes. **17:** God the *warrior* will *sing* and *rejoice*, just as Jerusalem was called to do in 3.14. **18–20:** *I will remove disaster from you*, contrasting with the beginning of the book, 1.2–3. The deep concern for the ingathering of exiles likely reflects postexilic sentiments, indicating either that these verses were later added to an Assyrian-period book or that the book itself was written in the postexilic period as a retrospective look at the time of King Josiah. The language is highly reminiscent of the promises made to Jerusalem in Zech 1–2, as well those made to daughter Zion in Mic 4.6–7, which also envisions the return of *the lame* and *the outcast* (the same Heb word is translated as "those who were cast off" in Mic 4.7).

HAGGAI

NAME, AUTHORSHIP, AND CANONICAL STATUS

The book offers no biographical information about Haggai, the prophet for whom the book is named. The name Haggai is related to the Hebrew word for festival (*ḥag*), perhaps indicating that he was born on a feast day. Some scholars have suggested that he had not been in exile. The book reports Haggai's prophetic activity during a brief period of less than four months. For Haggai as one of the twelve Minor Prophets, see the Introduction to the Prophetic Books (p. 961).

DATE AND HISTORICAL CONTEXT

The chronological formula with which the book begins (and which then reappears in 1.15b–2.1) is similar in style to those found in other books, e.g., 2 Kings 3.1; Hos 1.1; Am 1.1. The book of Haggai, however, records events after the destruction of the kingdom of Judah in 586 BCE and so has no native king to whom to refer (cf. Esth 3.7; Dan 7.1; 8.1; 9.1; 10.1; 11.1). Instead, Haggai is dated to the reign of a Persian ruler, Darius I. Although Cyrus, an earlier Persian king, had been remembered by one Israelite author as a "messiah" (Isa 45.1), Darius was the king during whose reign (522–486 BCE) the Temple in Jerusalem, which had to be rebuilt after the Neo-Babylonians destroyed it in 586 (see 2 Kings 26.8–21), was dedicated (515). This event inaugurates what biblical scholars refer to as the Second Temple period. Early in Darius's reign, several Persian colonies revolted, most notably Egypt, in response to which the empire launched both military and administrative campaigns to restore regional security. It was therefore in his interest to have a politically stable Syria-Palestine from which to move toward Egypt.

Because the book does not mention the completion of the Temple in 515 BCE, it was probably written before that event.

STRUCTURE, CONTENT, AND INTERPRETATION

Though many English translations construe the book as prose, substantial portions may be poetic, e.g., 1.4–9. The book presents a brief apologetic, historical narrative, focused on the rebuilding of the Temple, and in four dated oracles, on Haggai's role in persuading the community to complete that project. Haggai interpreted the plight of those in Yehud (the name given to the territory around Jerusalem by the Persians, formerly Judah) in light of the Temple, which was still in ruins. The book's final oracle broaches another issue, the royal prerogatives of Zerubbabel, heir to the Davidic throne. Haggai apparently addressed both the community's leaders—Joshua (high priest) and Zerubbabel (governor)—and the community directly.

GUIDE TO READING

Since this short book is arranged in chronological order, it can easily be read at one sitting, providing a contemporaneous perspective on the reconstruction of the Temple, as do chs 1–8 of the book of Zechariah that follows.

David L. Petersen

1 In the second year of King Darius, in the sixth month, on the first day of the month, the word of the LORD came by the prophet Haggai to Zerubbabel son of Shealtiel, governor of Judah, and to Joshua son of Jehozadak, the high priest: [2] Thus says the LORD of hosts: These people say the time has not yet come to rebuild the LORD's house. [3] Then the word of the LORD came by the prophet Haggai, saying: [4] Is it a time for you yourselves to live in your paneled houses, while this house lies in ruins? [5] Now therefore thus says the LORD of hosts: Consider how you have fared. [6] You have sown much, and harvested little; you eat, but you never have enough; you drink, but you never have your fill; you clothe yourselves, but no one is warm; and you that earn wages earn wages to put them into a bag with holes.

[7] Thus says the LORD of hosts: Consider how you have fared. [8] Go up to the hills and bring wood and build the house, so that I may take pleasure in it and be honored, says the LORD. [9] You have looked for much, and, lo, it came to little; and when you brought it home, I blew it away. Why? says the LORD of hosts. Because my house lies in ruins, while all of you hurry off to your own houses. [10] Therefore the heavens above you have withheld the dew, and the earth has withheld its produce. [11] And I have called for a drought on the land and the hills, on the grain, the new wine, the oil, on what the soil produces, on human beings and animals, and on all their labors.

[12] Then Zerubbabel son of Shealtiel, and Joshua son of Jehozadak, the high priest, with all the remnant of the people, obeyed the voice of the LORD their God, and the words of the prophet Haggai, as the LORD their God had sent him; and the people feared the LORD. [13] Then Haggai, the messenger of the LORD, spoke to the people with the LORD's message, saying, I am with you, says the LORD. [14] And the LORD stirred up the spirit of Zerubbabel son of Shealtiel, governor of Judah, and the spirit of Joshua son of Jehozadak, the high priest, and the spirit of all the remnant of the people; and they came and worked on

1.1–11: Haggai indicts the people. 1: *The second year,* 520 BCE. *The sixth month,* Elul (August-September). *The first day of the month* was a time for special rituals; the date is ironic, since the place where such rituals took place is in ruins. *Zerubbabel* (1 Chr 3.19; Ezra 2.2; 3.2,8; 5.2; Neh 12.1; Zech 4.6–10), the grandson of Jehoiachin (2 Kings 24.8–17; 1 Chr 3.16–19), and thus a descendant of David. *Joshua,* Zech 3.1–10; 6.11 (= Jeshua in Ezra 2–5). Addressing the two together suggests that Yehud was led by both political and religious leaders. **2:** For reasons unknown, the community has resisted rebuilding the Temple. **3–5:** Even though Zerubbabel and Joshua had been addressed previously, Haggai appears to speak directly to the community. **4:** Haggai charges the people not only with not building the Temple but also with living in lavish, i.e., *paneled*, houses. (Solomon's palace was paneled with cedar, 1 Kings 7.7.) The issue of *time (*vv. 2,4) is important. Haggai's rhetorical question receives no direct answer, but the answer is obviously "no." **5:** *Consider,* literally, "set to your hearts," a phrase that will recur (1.7; 2.15,18). **6:** Haggai analyzes the status quo, using imagery drawn from futility curses; cf. Deut 28.38; Hos 4.10. Such misfortune stands in marked contrast with the luxurious houses in which the people live. **7–11: A call to action. 7:** *Consider,* see 1.5n. **8:** Haggai's central admonition: build the Temple. **9–11:** These verses are built around a wordplay: as long as the Temple is in *ruins* (Heb "ḥareb"), the people will suffer drought ("ḥoreb"). **9:** The prophet returns to the language of futility curses, though now explicitly identifying the LORD as the one who has caused such futility—*I blew it away*.

1.12–15a: The people respond. Unlike many earlier prophets, Haggai is successful in his admonitions. **12:** *All the remnant of the people* suggests that Zerubbabel and Joshua had moved the people to obey. *Remnant* is ambiguous, perhaps referring to a group smaller than the preexilic population, or perhaps specifying those who had returned from exile. **13:** Haggai is labeled *the messenger of the LORD,* a logical though unusual label for a prophet; cf. 2 Chr 35.15–16. The word *messenger* offers a wordplay on *message*. *I am with you* often occurs in oracles of salvation (e.g., Isa 41.10; 43.5). **14: A** new perspective on the people's obedience (v. 12), which is due to the LORD's stirring up *the spirit* of both the leaders and the people. **15:** *The sixth month,* Elul (August–September). The date seems out of place, since such dates elsewhere in the book occur at the beginning of an oracle. Three weeks have elapsed since Haggai initially addressed the governor and high priest.

1.15b–2.9: The Temple will be filled with splendor. Contrary to current experience, the LORD promises that this Temple will be even more glorious than the earlier one. **1.15b–2.1:** *The twenty-fourth day of . . . the sixth*

the house of the LORD of hosts, their God,
15 on the twenty-fourth day of the month, in
the sixth month. In the second year of King
2 Darius, 1 in the seventh month, on the
twenty-first day of the month, the word
of the LORD came by the prophet Haggai,
saying: 2 Speak now to Zerubbabel son of
Shealtiel, governor of Judah, and to Joshua
son of Jehozadak, the high priest, and to the
remnant of the people, and say, 3 Who is left
among you that saw this house in its former
glory? How does it look to you now? Is it
not in your sight as nothing? 4 Yet now take
courage, O Zerubbabel, says the LORD; take
courage, O Joshua, son of Jehozadak, the
high priest; take courage, all you people of
the land, says the LORD; work, for I am with
you, says the LORD of hosts, 5 according to
the promise that I made you when you came
out of Egypt. My spirit abides among you;
do not fear. 6 For thus says the LORD of hosts:
Once again, in a little while, I will shake the
heavens and the earth and the sea and the
dry land; 7 and I will shake all the nations, so
that the treasure of all nations shall come,
and I will fill this house with splendor, says
the LORD of hosts. 8 The silver is mine, and
the gold is mine, says the LORD of hosts. 9 The
latter splendor of this house shall be greater
than the former, says the LORD of hosts; and
in this place I will give prosperity, says the
LORD of hosts.

10 On the twenty-fourth day of the ninth
month, in the second year of Darius, the
word of the LORD came by the prophet Hag-
gai, saying: 11 Thus says the LORD of hosts:
Ask the priests for a ruling: 12 If one car-
ries consecrated meat in the fold of one's
garment, and with the fold touches bread,
or stew, or wine, or oil, or any kind of food,
does it become holy? The priests answered,
"No." 13 Then Haggai said, "If one who is
unclean by contact with a dead body touches
any of these, does it become unclean?" The
priests answered, "Yes, it becomes unclean."
14 Haggai then said, So is it with this people,

month, more than three weeks since construction began. *The seventh month,* Tishri (September-October). Haggai is commanded to address the community and its leaders. On this date, the community would have been celebrating the feast of booths (Lev 23.33–36,39–42). **2.3:** As was the case in v. 4, Haggai poses questions, the last two of which are rhetorical. The first question indicates that at least some of those present had seen the First Temple before it was destroyed in 586 BCE (cf. Ezra 3.12–13). They would have had to have been more than seventy years old to remember the First Temple. **4:** *Take courage,* cf. Zech 8.9,13,22–23, where the same Hebrew word occurs. In 1 Chr 28.10,20, David delivers a similar exhortation to Solomon, builder of the First Temple. *People of the land* probably refers to the same group known earlier as *the remnant of the people*, although some scholars have suggested that the former phrase refers to a rural population that did not go into exile. *I am with you,* see 1.13n. **5:** The Hebrew is difficult, reading literally, "The matter that I covenanted with you when you came out of Egypt." Haggai is clearly alluding to the Exodus and Sinai experiences, and claiming that God's covenant is still in force. The notion of God's *spirit* residing among the people is unusual. However, God could not be present as before, since the Temple had not yet been rebuilt.

2.6–9: An oracle announcing theophanic splendor. 6: God will now act on behalf of the Temple. *Once again, in a little while* is difficult in Hebrew, literally, "yet one, and it is only a little one." References to such shaking of the cosmos often occur in eschatological literature (e.g., v. 21; Isa 13.13; Joel 3.16; Heb 12.26). Here the very fabric of the universe quakes, not just mountains. This description of the universe—*heavens, earth, sea, dry land*—echoes that in Gen 1. **7:** *Splendor* refers to precious objects (see Hos 13.15; 2 Chr 32.27), which means that Haggai anticipates new ritual vessels will be provided for the Temple, the old ones having been plundered by the Neo-Babylonians (cf. 2 Kings 24.13). **8:** On silver and gold, cf. Zech 6.9–15, where they are products of fund-raising. **9:** *Prosperity,* Heb "shalom." The rebuilt Temple will engender well-being in Yehud, reversing the conditions described in 1.6,9.

2.10–14: The community is unclean. 10: December 18, 520 BCE, two months since the oracle promising splendor. *The word of the LORD* comes literally "to" Haggai, not "by" as was the case in 1.3 and 2.1; i.e., this is a private oracle. **11:** Literally, "Ask the priests for a torah." Priests were responsible for determining whether something or someone was holy or common, clean or unclean (Lev 10.10–11; Deut 33.10). Unlike the priests indicted in Ezek 22.26, those whom Haggai consults give proper responses. **12–13:** Two cases, one involving something holy, another involving something unclean, demonstrate the supremely contagious quality of the

and with this nation before me, says the LORD; and so with every work of their hands; and what they offer there is unclean. 15 But now, consider what will come to pass from this day on. Before a stone was placed upon a stone in the LORD's temple, 16 how did you fare?[a] When one came to a heap of twenty measures, there were but ten; when one came to the wine vat to draw fifty measures, there were but twenty. 17 I struck you and all the products of your toil with blight and mildew and hail; yet you did not return to me, says the LORD. 18 Consider from this day on, from the twenty-fourth day of the ninth month. Since the day that the foundation of the LORD's temple was laid, consider: 19 Is there any seed left in the barn? Do the vine, the fig tree, the pomegranate, and the olive tree still yield nothing? From this day on I will bless you.

20 The word of the LORD came a second time to Haggai on the twenty-fourth day of the month: 21 Speak to Zerubbabel, governor of Judah, saying, I am about to shake the heavens and the earth, 22 and to overthrow the throne of kingdoms; I am about to destroy the strength of the kingdoms of the nations, and overthrow the chariots and their riders; and the horses and their riders shall fall, every one by the sword of a comrade. 23 On that day, says the LORD of hosts, I will take you, O Zerubbabel my servant, son of Shealtiel, says the LORD, and make you like a signet ring; for I have chosen you, says the LORD of hosts.

[a] Gk: Heb *since they were*

latter. Corpse uncleanness is especially difficult to remove (Num 19). **14:** Haggai focuses on *what they offer there* as *unclean.* Sacrifices presented at the altar and the Temple, which was under construction, are unclean, presumably because the Temple itself has not yet been officially rededicated. The unclean Temple is analogous to a corpse in its ability to defile.

2.15–19: The Temple is rededicated. Since 2:20 refers to a second *word of the* LORD on the twenty-fourth day, 2.15–19 are part of the first word, which begins at 2.10. **15–17:** The repetition of *consider* in this oracle mirrors the twofold use in 1.5,7. Haggai appeals to past agricultural disaster, comparable to that depicted in 1.6,10–11. **18:** *This day* almost certainly refers to the day on which the Temple's foundation stone was relaid (cf. Zech 4.9; Ezra 3.10–11). Even though the Temple will not be completed and rededicated until 515 BCE, the Temple has now been purified. **19:** Haggai's questions (cf. the use of questions in 1.4; 2.3,16) affirms that seeds will be planted and that vines and trees will yield fruit. Prior agricultural disaster will give way to fertility. The final words are literally "I will bless," the implication being that the "shalom" foreseen in 2.9 will include both the people and the land.

2.20–23: Zerubbabel, my servant and signet ring. On that same *twenty-fourth day*, a second oracle focuses on Zerubbabel. **21:** The diction of "shaking" the nations resumes that in 2.6. **22:** God will destroy unnamed nations. The language is allusive, e.g., *chariots and their riders* echoes Jer 51.21, *overthrow* Gen 19.25, *sword of a comrade* Judg 7.22. **23:** *On that day,* a phrase routinely used to depict the eschatological "day of the LORD." *Son of Shealtiel* means that Zerubbabel stands in the Davidic line, the grandson of Jehoiachin, Judah's last reigning king. The diction of *choosing* (God "chose" David, Ps 78.70), *servant* (the Davidic king can be so labeled, 2 Sam 7.5), and *signet ring* (Jer 22.24) all suggest that Haggai thinks Zerubbabel will achieve royal status. Zerubbabel's fate, however, is unknown.

ZECHARIAH

NAME, AUTHORSHIP, AND CANONICAL STATUS

The name of the book derives from the prophet Zechariah, a contemporary of the prophet Haggai. Both prophesied in the early days of the restoration, when both returning exiles and those who had never left joined together to rebuild Judahite society. Although the book provides no biographical information, Zechariah is mentioned, along with Haggai, in Ezra 5.1 and 6.14. The book of Zechariah, however, is made up of diverse literature, deriving from different historical periods, and only the material in chs 1–8 pertains to the historical Zechariah. For Zechariah as one of the twelve Minor Prophets, see the Introduction to the Prophetic Books, p. 961.

DATE AND HISTORICAL CONTEXT

Chapters 1–8, often known as First Zechariah, include three chronological formulae (1.1,7; 7.1), which report that Zechariah was active between October and November in 520 BCE and December 7, 518 BCE. As with Haggai, Zechariah's work is dated early in the reign of the Persian emperor Darius I (522–486 BCE) and before the rededication of the Temple in 515. Though Haggai interacted with individuals also mentioned by Zechariah and both were active during 520 BCE, neither prophet refers to the other, although "the prophets" to whom Zechariah refers in 8.9 may include Haggai. Ezra 5.1 speaks of them as active together. Chapters 9–14, sometimes referred to as Deutero-Zechariah, stem from a later time, which is difficult to determine for at least two reasons. First, there are no explicit chronological formulas nor direct references to named individuals or recognizable historical events. Second, chs 9–14 are themselves heterogeneous. Zechariah 9:1 and 12:1 introduce two collections with comparable formulas: "The word of the LORD." The collections differ so much that it is unlikely they derive from the same time. Reference to Greece (9.13) may suggest that this section dates to the Hellenistic period, when Greece ruled Syria-Palestine. However, archaeology has shown that Greek imports were present in the Levant well before then.

STRUCTURE, CONTENTS, AND INTERPRETATION

In the month just before Haggai reported that the Temple foundation stone had been laid (Hag 2.10), Zechariah first speaks (Zech 1–8). Unlike Haggai, he is not overtly concerned with the rebuilding of the Temple, though he does refer to the Temple foundation stone ceremony (8.9). His message is broader, including both moral discourse and visionary rhetoric. As a result, Zech 1–8 is more literarily diverse than Haggai, including both oracles and vision reports. Haggai offers none of the latter. The oracles are themselves different. Some recapitulate rhetoric known from earlier prophets to whom he refers in general terms (1.5–6; 7.12); some encourage the people to return to the land (2.6–13); others offer ethical admonition (e.g., 7.8–10); still others announce a glorious future for Zion (8.1–7). Haggai's oracles sound similar to the one in 8.12.

The eight vision reports in chs 1–6 are truly distinctive. Other prophetic books include vision reports (e.g., Amos, Isaiah, Jeremiah, and Ezekiel) but none includes such a high proportion of them. In earlier visions, prophets apparently understood what they perceived. This changes with Zechariah. As prophet, he receives the visions, but he understands them only when they are interpreted by "the angel of the LORD" (e.g., Zech 1.9–10, literally "the LORD's messenger"). This situation will recur in later apocalyptic visions, e.g., Dan 7. Further, as was the case with Amos, the vision reports in Zech 1–6 constitute a carefully structured series. The first and last visions offer scenes populated by multicolored horses, whereas the central visions in chs 4 and 5 highlight the figures important to Yehud's polity, the high priest Joshua and the governor Zerubbabel. Zechariah's visions move beyond ordinary reality. They are filled with movement and color. Moreover, they span "the whole earth" (1.11). These visions explain the ways in which God is working providentially on behalf of the newly restored community.

The latter part of the book (Zech 9–14) has a less carefully worked-out structure. Two collections of prophetic sayings (chs 9–11 and 12–14) are introduced by the heading "An Oracle. The word of the LORD," as is the collection represented by Malachi, which follows. Chapters 9–11 are largely concerned with aspects of the victories of the LORD as Divine Warrior. The collection in chs 12–14 has a related focus on the imminent "day of the LORD" and is characterized by the repeated phrase "on that day."

GUIDE TO READING

The book of Zechariah is best read in conjunction with the books that precede and follow it: chs 1–8 in conjunction with Haggai, and chs 9–14 with Malachi. In terms of the development of apocalyptic literature in the Bible, Zechariah stands between Ezekiel (e.g., chs 38–39) and Daniel (chs 7–12).

David L. Petersen

1 In the eighth month, in the second year of Darius, the word of the LORD came to the prophet Zechariah son of Berechiah son of Iddo, saying: [2] The LORD was very angry with your ancestors. [3] Therefore say to them, Thus says the LORD of hosts: Return to me, says the LORD of hosts, and I will return to you, says the LORD of hosts. [4] Do not be like your ancestors, to whom the former prophets proclaimed, "Thus says the LORD of hosts, Return from your evil ways and from your evil deeds." But they did not hear or heed me, says the LORD. [5] Your ancestors, where are they? And the prophets, do they live forever? [6] But my words and my statutes, which I commanded my servants the prophets, did they not overtake your ancestors? So they repented and said, "The LORD of hosts has dealt with us according to our ways and deeds, just as he planned to do."

[7] On the twenty-fourth day of the eleventh month, the month of Shebat, in the second year of Darius, the word of the LORD came to the prophet Zechariah son of Berechiah son of Iddo; and Zechariah[a] said, [8] In the night I saw a man riding on a red horse! He was standing among the myrtle trees in the glen; and behind him were red, sorrel, and white horses. [9] Then I said, "What are these, my lord?" The angel who talked with me said to me, "I will show you what they are." [10] So the man who was standing among the myrtle trees answered, "They are those whom the LORD has sent to patrol the earth." [11] Then they spoke to the angel of the LORD who was standing among the myrtle trees, "We have patrolled the earth, and lo, the whole earth remains at peace." [12] Then the angel of the LORD said, "O LORD of hosts, how long will you withhold mercy from Jerusalem and the cities of Judah, with which you have been angry these seventy years?" [13] Then the LORD replied with gracious and comforting words to the angel who talked with me. [14] So the angel who talked with me said to me, Proclaim this message: Thus says the LORD of hosts; I am very jealous for Jerusalem and for Zion. [15] And I am extremely angry with the nations that are at ease; for while I was only a little angry, they made the disaster worse. [16] Therefore, thus says the LORD, I have returned to Jerusalem with compassion; my house shall be built in it, says the LORD of hosts, and the

[a] Heb *and he*

1.1–8.23: Oracles and visions attributed to Zechariah ben Berechiah. This first major division of the book has three parts, each introduced by a date formula (1.1; 1.7; 7.1).

1.1–6: Prologue. 1: *The eighth month, in the second year,* Marheshvan (October-November), 520 BCE. *Darius* I, king of Persia, 522–486 BCE. A *Zechariah son of Iddo*, mentioned in Neh 12:16, belongs to a priestly lineage. *Zechariah* means "God remembered," which symbolizes God's remembering of the people, an important theme of the book. **2–6:** An unusual oracle, which reflects on past prophetic admonitions and the *ancestors'* responses. *Return/repent* (Heb "shub," translated both ways) is the key word, appearing four times. For earlier prophetic calls to *return,* see, e.g., Joel 2.12; Jer 18.11; Ezek 33.11. **3:** On mutual return, cf. Joel 2.12–14; Mal 3.7. **6:** Though the *ancestors* did not initially *return,* they finally *repented*, which sets the stage for a glorious future.

1.7–17: The first vision: divine horsemen patrol the earth. 7: *The eleventh month . . . Shebat,* January-February; the year is 519 BCE. **8:** *Glen,* or "cosmic deep"; cf. Mic 7.19. **9–12:** A quiet scene in which horses graze, symbolizing peace over all the earth, elicits a protest by the angel. **10:** *Patrol the earth,* cf. Job 1.7; 2.2. **12:** *How long* regularly occurs in laments, e.g., Pss 6.4; 79.5. *Seventy years* also appears in Zech 7.4. The phrase is used in both biblical (e.g., Jer 25.11; Isa 23.15) and other ancient texts to refer to an unfortunate period of time. **13–17:** The LORD expresses anger at the nations and promises that both Temple and cities will be rebuilt. **16:** *The measuring line*, indicating new construction; (see 2.1–5; Jer 31.38–39; cf. Mic 2.4–5; Am 7.17).

measuring line shall be stretched out over Jerusalem. 17 Proclaim further: Thus says the LORD of hosts: My cities shall again overflow with prosperity; the LORD will again comfort Zion and again choose Jerusalem.

18 [a]And I looked up and saw four horns. 19 I asked the angel who talked with me, "What are these?" And he answered me, "These are the horns that have scattered Judah, Israel, and Jerusalem." 20 Then the LORD showed me four blacksmiths. 21 And I asked, "What are they coming to do?" He answered, "These are the horns that scattered Judah, so that no head could be raised; but these have come to terrify them, to strike down the horns of the nations that lifted up their horns against the land of Judah to scatter its people."[b]

2 [c] I looked up and saw a man with a measuring line in his hand. 2 Then I asked, "Where are you going?" He answered me, "To measure Jerusalem, to see what is its width and what is its length." 3 Then the angel who talked with me came forward, and another angel came forward to meet him, 4 and said to him, "Run, say to that young man: Jerusalem shall be inhabited like villages without walls, because of the multitude of people and animals in it. 5 For I will be a wall of fire all around it, says the LORD, and I will be the glory within it."

6 Up, up! Flee from the land of the north, says the LORD; for I have spread you abroad like the four winds of heaven, says the LORD. 7 Up! Escape to Zion, you that live with daughter Babylon. 8 For thus said the LORD of hosts (after his glory[d] sent me) regarding the nations that plundered you: Truly, one who touches you touches the apple of my eye.[e] 9 See now, I am going to raise[f] my hand against them, and they shall become plunder for their own slaves. Then you will know that the LORD of hosts has sent me. 10 Sing and rejoice, O daughter Zion! For lo, I will come and dwell in your midst, says the LORD. 11 Many nations shall join themselves to the LORD on that day, and shall be my people; and I will dwell in your midst. And you shall know that the LORD of hosts has sent me to you. 12 The LORD will inherit Judah as his portion in the holy land, and will again choose Jerusalem.

[a] Ch 2.1 in Heb
[b] Heb *it*
[c] Ch 2.5 in Heb
[d] Cn: Heb *after glory he*
[e] Heb *his eye*
[f] Or *wave*

1.18–21: The second vision: four horns and four smiths. 18: The *four horns* are ambiguous. They may refer to two pairs of animal horns, to horned helmets, or, most likely, to the four corners of a stone altar (cf. Ex 27.2; 38.2; Ezek 43.15). They are then interpreted as the totality of nations that destroyed Israel. **19:** *Horns* elsewhere can symbolize nations (e.g., Deut 33.17 [the horns of a bull]; Jer 48.25; Dan 8.8). **20:** *Blacksmiths,* the Hebrew word can refer to an artisan who works with wood, stone, or metal. **21:** *These have come* probably refers to the artisans who will destroy *the horns of the nations*. Such artisans are elsewhere depicted as punitive agents (Ezek 21.31, "those skillful to destroy"). The world at peace in the first vision will now be disrupted.

2.1–5: The third vision: a surveyor measures Jerusalem. 1: A *measuring line,* see 1.16n. Such a line was used to determine divisions within a particular territory as in Ezek 40.3, a text that also foresees the rebuilding of Jerusalem and the Temple, using the categories of *width* and *length*. **2:** Zechariah's questions presume that, in this vision, he understands what he sees. **4:** Restoration focuses on *Jerusalem*, not the Temple, as was the case in Ezekiel. Here the absence of walls stands in stark contrast with the walls described in Ezek 40. Jerusalem's walls were eventually rebuilt (Neh 2.17–6.15). **5:** *Wall of fire*, the Persian capital Pasargadae stood without walls and was surrounded by fire altars. God as *glory* will be located within the fiery circumference; cf. Ezek 43.2,4.

2.6–13: Admonitions and promises. 6–7: *Up, Up,* lit. "Woe, Woe," though here simply calling attention to what is being said; cf. Isa 1.24; Jer 27.6. *The land of the north*, the place where Israelites are in exile and from which they will return, so Jer 3.18; 16.15; 23.8; 31.8. *Daughter Babylon,* cf. Jer 50.42; 51.33; Ps 137.8. **8a:** Literally, "after glory sent me to the nations." Cf. vv. 9,11, which also report that the LORD *sent me.* **8b:** *Apple of my eye* refers to the pupil. **9:** *My hand,* another bodily metaphor of the deity. Only when the nations are plundered will Israelites know that the LORD sent Zechariah. **10:** *Sing and rejoice,* cf. Isa 12.6; Zeph 3.14–15. In all three texts, the command to sing accompanies the presence of the God *in your midst*. **11:** On *join themselves to the LORD,* cf. 8.20–23; Isa 56.6–7. **12:** *Holy land* does not occur elsewhere in the Hebrew Bible, but see Wis 12.3; 2 Macc 1.7.

[13] Be silent, all people, before the LORD; for
he has roused himself from his holy dwelling.
3 Then he showed me the high priest
Joshua standing before the angel of the
LORD, and Satan[a] standing at his right hand
to accuse him. [2] And the LORD said to Satan,[a]
"The LORD rebuke you, O Satan![a] The LORD
who has chosen Jerusalem rebuke you! Is
not this man a brand plucked from the fire?"
[3] Now Joshua was dressed with filthy clothes
as he stood before the angel. [4] The angel
said to those who were standing before him,
"Take off his filthy clothes." And to him
he said, "See, I have taken your guilt away
from you, and I will clothe you with festal
apparel." [5] And I said, "Let them put a clean
turban on his head." So they put a clean
turban on his head and clothed him with
the apparel; and the angel of the LORD was
standing by.

[6] Then the angel of the LORD assured
Joshua, saying [7] "Thus says the LORD of hosts:
If you will walk in my ways and keep my
requirements, then you shall rule my house
and have charge of my courts, and I will give
you the right of access among those who
are standing here. [8] Now listen, Joshua, high
priest, you and your colleagues who sit before
you! For they are an omen of things to come:
I am going to bring my servant the Branch.
[9] For on the stone that I have set before
Joshua, on a single stone with seven facets, I
will engrave its inscription, says the LORD of
hosts, and I will remove the guilt of this land
in a single day. [10] On that day, says the LORD
of hosts, you shall invite each other to come
under your vine and fig tree."

4 The angel who talked with me came
again, and wakened me, as one is wak-
ened from sleep. [2] He said to me, "What do
you see?" And I said, "I see a lampstand all
of gold, with a bowl on the top of it; there are
seven lamps on it, with seven lips on each of
the lamps that are on the top of it. [3] And by
it there are two olive trees, one on the right
of the bowl and the other on its left." [4] I said
to the angel who talked with me, "What are
these, my lord?" [5] Then the angel who talked
with me answered me, "Do you not know
what these are?" I said, "No, my lord." [6] He

[a] Or *the Accuser*; Heb *the Adversary*

Zechariah emphasizes the sacred character of the land of Israel. **13:** *Be silent,* cf. Hab 2.20; Zeph 1.7. Sacrifices at the Temple were conducted in silence. *All people* is consistent with v. 11. *Holy dwelling* can refer to either the earthly temple (Ps 26.8) or the heavenly abode (Deut 26.15).

3.1–10: The fourth vision: Joshua and the satan. This vision differs from the prior three: Zechariah is shown something—he does not just see it; the usual question is missing; and no clarification is offered. **1:** The *angel of the LORD* is not an interpreter but a character in the vision, along with *Joshua*, the high priest (cf. Hag 1.1;2.2) and "the *satan,*" on whom see textual note *a*. This figure functions as the prosecuting attorney in the divine council; cf. Ps 109.6; 1 Chr 21.1 (only in this text does *Satan* appear as a name); Job 1–2. **2:** The accuser is rebuked, apparently for having charged Joshua improperly. **3:** The high priest is ritually unclean. **4:** *Festal apparel* (cf. Isa 3.22) symbolizes the cleansing of the high priest. **5:** *And I said* should read with LXX (Septuagint), "and he said." Zechariah is not an actor in the vision. *Turban,* the traditional headgear of the high priest, although not the same Hebrew word as in Lev 8.9. **6–7:** Admonitions of both general and specific sort; *keep my requirements* refers to priestly responsibilities (Num 3; Ezek 44). *Those standing here* belong to the divine council, to which Joshua is promised access. **8–10:** *The Branch,* (cf. Isa 11.1; Jer 23.5; 33.15) refers to a member of the royal family of David, probably Zerubbabel, the governor (Hag 1.1; 2.20–23). *Stone . . . with . . . facets,* probably the engraved gold plaque on the high priest's headdress (Ex 28.36–38); it signifies the ability of the high priest to remove guilt. **10:** *Under your vine and fig tree,* see 1 Kings 4.25; Mic 4.4.

4.1–14: The fifth vision: a lampstand and two olive trees. 1–6a: The angel roused Zechariah, whereupon he reported yet another vision. This vision builds on the previous one, since it alludes to Joshua. **2:** *Lampstand* (Heb "menorah") has a round *bowl* at the top with seven indentations for wicks; see Ex 25.31–40. Ceramic lampstands of this type have been discovered by archaeologists. **3:** *Olive trees* may be related to the olive oil that fueled the lamp. **6b–10a:** A distinct oracle. **6b–7:** An unnamed person is addressed as *O great mountain* and compared to Zerubbabel. The obvious candidate is the recently purified Joshua. Zerubbabel will achieve high status as the one who lays the foundation—*the top stone*—of the Temple. The ritual of temple rededication involved reus-

said to me, "This is the word of the LORD to Zerubbabel: Not by might, nor by power, but by my spirit, says the LORD of hosts. 7 What are you, O great mountain? Before Zerubbabel you shall become a plain; and he shall bring out the top stone amid shouts of 'Grace, grace to it!'"

8 Moreover the word of the LORD came to me, saying, 9 "The hands of Zerubbabel have laid the foundation of this house; his hands shall also complete it. Then you will know that the LORD of hosts has sent me to you. 10 For whoever has despised the day of small things shall rejoice, and shall see the plummet in the hand of Zerubbabel.

"These seven are the eyes of the LORD, which range through the whole earth." 11 Then I said to him, "What are these two olive trees on the right and the left of the lampstand?" 12 And a second time I said to him, "What are these two branches of the olive trees, which pour out the oil[a] through the two golden pipes?" 13 He said to me, "Do you not know what these are?" I said, "No, my lord." 14 Then he said, "These are the two anointed ones who stand by the Lord of the whole earth."

5 Again I looked up and saw a flying scroll. 2 And he said to me, "What do you see?" I answered, "I see a flying scroll; its length is twenty cubits, and its width ten cubits." 3 Then he said to me, "This is the curse that goes out over the face of the whole land; for everyone who steals shall be cut off according to the writing on one side, and everyone who swears falsely[b] shall be cut off according to the writing on the other side. 4 I have sent it out, says the LORD of hosts, and it shall enter the house of the thief, and the house of anyone who swears falsely by my name; and it shall abide in that house and consume it, both timber and stones."

5 Then the angel who talked with me came forward and said to me, "Look up and see what this is that is coming out." 6 I said, "What is it?" He said, "This is a basket[c] coming out." And he said, "This is their iniquity[d] in all the land." 7 Then a leaden cover was lifted, and there was a woman sitting in

[a] Cn: Heb *gold*
[b] The word *falsely* added from verse 4
[c] Heb *ephah*
[d] Gk Compare Syr: Heb *their eye*

ing a stone from the previous temple. **8–10a:** A second oracle, referring to the previous ritual, again highlights the role Zerubbabel will have in the reconstruction of the Temple. Kings were known as temple builders. **10a:** *The day of small things*, cf. Ezra 3.11. *Plummet* emphasizes Zerubbabel's role as builder. **10b–14:** The vision and its interpretation resume. **10b:** *Eyes of the LORD*, cf. 2 Chr 16.9, where the eyes represent divine benevolence. **11–14:** The *two olive trees* symbolize *the two anointed ones*, lit. "the two sons of the oil." The word "anoint" is not present in Hebrew, nor is the typical word for olive oil that is used in anointing. This *oil* was used both for food and for fueling such lamps. These two "sons" almost certainly refer to Joshua and Zerubbabel, who now stand in close relationship to the LORD, symbolized by the lamp. Zechariah envisions a government in which power is shared between the priest and the descendant of David.

5.1–4: The sixth vision: a flying scroll. 1–2: The scroll is apparently unrolled, rather like a flying carpet, and long, almost 30 ft (9 m). This scroll has a proportion of 2:1, more like a carpet than a document; the Qumran Isaiah scroll is about 24 ft (7.3 m) long and 11 in (30 cm) wide, a proportion of 24:1. **3:** *The curse* probably refers to the curses found in God's covenant with Israel (cf. Deut 29.11,13,18), curses that were written down on a scroll (cf. 2 Chr 34.24; Dan 9.11). *The whole land,* a phrase used through Zech 1–8 (1.11; 4.10b; 5.6; 6.5). *Steals. . . swears falsely* echoes, although does not quote exactly, the Decalogue (Ex 20.7,15,16). Scrolls were rarely written on both sides. **4:** Destruction of houses is a typical punishment (Hab 3.13b; Dan 2.5; 3.29; Ezra 6.11). Oddly, the perpetrators are not punished. The flying scroll symbolizes the administration of the LORD's covenant-based justice throughout the world.

5.5–11: The seventh vision: a woman in a basket. 5–6: This vision is so bizarre that, unlike the other visions, Zechariah cannot name or describe what he sees; only the angel can do so. **6:** *Basket,* Heb "ephah," which was a unit of measure, roughly two-thirds of a bushel (23 liters). Such an amount of grain or flour might have been held in a container made of textile, ceramic, or metal. *Iniquity,* see textual note *d*, the same word for evil that appeared in 3.4. The referent of *their* is unclear, though it may refer to Judeans, whose iniquity is being removed. **7–8:** An incongruous image, particularly since an "ephah" could not hold a human. This "ephah" was made of a

the basket![a] 8 And he said, "This is Wickedness." So he thrust her back into the basket,[a] and pressed the leaden weight down on its mouth. 9 Then I looked up and saw two women coming forward. The wind was in their wings; they had wings like the wings of a stork, and they lifted up the basket[a] between earth and sky. 10 Then I said to the angel who talked with me, "Where are they taking the basket?"[a] 11 He said to me, "To the land of Shinar, to build a house for it; and when this is prepared, they will set the basket[a] down there on its base."

6 And again I looked up and saw four chariots coming out from between two mountains—mountains of bronze. 2 The first chariot had red horses, the second chariot black horses, 3 the third chariot white horses, and the fourth chariot dappled gray[b] horses. 4 Then I said to the angel who talked with me, "What are these, my lord?" 5 The angel answered me, "These are the four winds[c] of heaven going out, after presenting themselves before the Lord of all the earth. 6 The chariot with the black horses goes toward the north country, the white ones go toward the west country,[d] and the dappled ones go toward the south country." 7 When the steeds came out, they were impatient to get off and patrol the earth. And he said, "Go, patrol the earth." So they patrolled the earth. 8 Then he cried out to me, "Lo, those who go toward the north country have set my spirit at rest in the north country."

9 The word of the LORD came to me: 10 Collect silver and gold[e] from the exiles—from Heldai, Tobijah, and Jedaiah—who have arrived from Babylon; and go the same day to the house of Josiah son of Zephaniah. 11 Take the silver and gold and make a crown,[f] and set it on the head of the high priest Joshua son of Jehozadak; 12 say to him: Thus says the LORD of hosts: Here is a man whose name is Branch: for he shall branch out in his place, and he shall build the temple of the LORD. 13 It is he that shall build the temple of the LORD; he shall bear royal honor, and shall sit upon his throne and rule. There

[a] Heb *ephah*
[b] Compare Gk: Meaning of Heb uncertain
[c] Or *spirits*
[d] Cn: Heb *go after them*
[e] Cn Compare verse 11: Heb lacks *silver and gold*
[f] Gk Mss Syr Tg: Heb *crowns*

hard substance due to its lead lid. The entire image is thought to symbolize *Wickedness*. **9–11:** Gender continues to play a prominent role in this vision. *Two women* with wings, not cherubim, which were male. *Stork*, an unclean bird (Lev 11.19), and hence, in this simile, well suited to remove iniquity/wickedness. *The land of Shinar,* Babylon (Gen 10.10; 11.2; Dan 1.2; Josh 7.21). Isaiah 11.11 understands *Shinar* to be a place for exile and a place from which those exiled will return. Judeans are coming from Babylon; *Wickedness* is going to Babylon. *Build a house . . . its base,* the Babylonians, who will build a shrine for and permanently install *Wickedness*, will be polluted by the gesture that purifies Judah.

6.1–8: The eighth vision: four chariots. 1–3: A vision that like the first includes horses of many colors. The geographic setting is similar to that of the Mesopotamian sun god's appearance between two mountains. Here, chariots, rather than the sun, *come out* (a verb elsewhere used of the sun), with no explicit reference to charioteers. *Chariots* represent military might and dominion (cf. Hag 2.22), and could symbolize God's martial presence (Isa 66.15–16; Ps 68.17). **5–6:** That they go out in four directions (cf. Jer 49.36; Ezek 37.9; Dan 11.4) means that the LORD's military might will be present everywhere with the winds as the deity's agents; cf. Ps 104.4. *Four winds* are present in Zech 2.6. *Presented themselves,* cf. Job 1.6; 2.1. **7:** *Patrol,* see 1.7n. **8:** *The north country,* the land to which Judeans had been exiled; cf. 2.6. *My spirit*, the same Hebrew word as "wind" in v. 5. The Hebrew verb "go out" appears seven times in this vision report (vv. 1,5,6 [three times],7,8). The vision concludes with the deity having fulfilled the threats of the first and second visions (1.15, 21).

6.9–15: Wealth and coronation. Two oracles, one embedded in another, 6.9–11,14 and 6.12–13. **9–10:** *The exiles*, i.e., those who have returned from Mesopotamia. The three individuals are otherwise unknown. *Zephaniah*, father of *Josiah* may be the priest of 2 Kings 25.18, who was taken into exile. **11:** Literally "crowns," one of which was intended for *Joshua.* **12–13:** *Branch* in 3.8 and here refers to David's descendant Zerubbabel as is clear from his role as builder of the *Temple.* The oracle alludes to the diarchy envisioned in the fifth vision, though here the *Branch* appears to have a higher status than the priest. **14:** Hebrew reads "crowns." *Memorial in the temple* may

shall be a priest by his throne, with peaceful understanding between the two of them.
14 And the crown[a] shall be in the care of Heldai,[b] Tobijah, Jedaiah, and Josiah[c] son of Zephaniah, as a memorial in the temple of the LORD.

15 Those who are far off shall come and help to build the temple of the LORD; and you shall know that the LORD of hosts has sent me to you. This will happen if you diligently obey the voice of the LORD your God.

7 In the fourth year of King Darius, the word of the LORD came to Zechariah on the fourth day of the ninth month, which is Chislev. 2 Now the people of Bethel had sent Sharezer and Regem-melech and their men, to entreat the favor of the LORD, 3 and to ask the priests of the house of the LORD of hosts and the prophets, "Should I mourn and practice abstinence in the fifth month, as I have done for so many years?" 4 Then the word of the LORD of hosts came to me: 5 Say to all the people of the land and the priests: When you fasted and lamented in the fifth month and in the seventh, for these seventy years, was it for me that you fasted? 6 And when you eat and when you drink, do you not eat and drink only for yourselves? 7 Were not these the words that the LORD proclaimed by the former prophets, when Jerusalem was inhabited and in prosperity, along with the towns around it, and when the Negeb and the Shephelah were inhabited?

8 The word of the LORD came to Zechariah, saying: 9 Thus says the LORD of hosts: Render true judgments, show kindness and mercy to one another; 10 do not oppress the widow, the orphan, the alien, or the poor; and do not devise evil in your hearts against one another. 11 But they refused to listen, and turned a stubborn shoulder, and stopped their ears in order not to hear. 12 They made their hearts adamant in order not to hear the law and the words that the LORD of hosts had sent by his spirit through the former prophets. Therefore great wrath came from the LORD of hosts.
13 Just as, when I[d] called, they would not hear, so, when they called, I would not hear, says the LORD of hosts, 14 and I scattered them with a whirlwind among all the nations that they had not known. Thus the land they left was desolate, so that no one went to and fro, and a pleasant land was made desolate.

8 The word of the LORD of hosts came to me, saying: 2 Thus says the LORD of hosts: I am jealous for Zion with great jealousy, and I am jealous for her with great wrath. 3 Thus says the LORD: I will return to Zion, and will

[a] Gk Syr: Heb *crowns*
[b] Syr Compare verse 10: Heb *Helem*
[c] Syr Compare verse 10: Heb *Hen*
[d] Heb *he*

mean that the three donors are remembered for their gift at the Temple. **15:** A general comment about the help that those who return from exile would offer. *You shall know . . . sent me*, cf. 2.9.

7.1–8.23: Oracles. 7.1–7: A question answered by questions. **1:** December 7, 518 BCE., a date that introduces a miscellany of oracles. Two years after reporting visions (1.1), Zechariah now offers oracles. **2:** A delegation from *Bethel* travels the ca. 11 mi (17 km) south to Jerusalem for two reasons. *Entreat the favor of the LORD* means to seek help in a time of difficulty (so Ex 32.11; 1 Kings 13.6; 2 Kings 13.4; Jer 26.19; Ps 119.58). **3:** The question reflects a ritual commemorating the destruction of the Temple, which occurred *in the fifth month*. Gedeliah the governor was murdered in *the seventh* (2 Kings 25.8–9,25). It is possible to read the rest of the oracles in chs 7–8 as a response to this question. A definitive answer appears in 8.19. **4–6:** Zechariah addresses not only the delegation but also the priests whom they have come to consult. Zechariah again alludes to the words of *former prophets* (cf. 1.4,6) and poses three questions. In the first, he suggests that the rite has been *only for yourselves*. On inappropriate and appropriate fasting, see Isa 58.4b–5; Joel 2.12–13. Zechariah charges the people with both ineffectual fasting and feasting. **7:** *The Negeb and the Shephelah*, the southern and western regions of Judah.

7:8–14: Oracle and historical reprise. 9–10: Having referred to *former prophets* in v. 7, Zechariah now quotes what they said. For comparable admonitions and prohibitions, see Jer 7.5–6; 22.3; Mic 6.8. **11–12:** Language about *adamant hearts* was also used about Pharaoh (Ex 7.14). **13–14:** To *not hear* was reciprocal (cf. Ezek 8.18b; Jer 11.11b). The *whirlwind,* often a punitive agent, e.g., Jer 23.19).

8.1–23: Ten oracles of restoration (vv. 1–2; 3; 4–5; 6; 7–8; 9–13; 14–17; 18–19; 20–22; 23). **1–2:** Language of *jealousy* reprises 1.14; cf. Ezek 36.6b. **3:** This oracle echoes 1.14, with *dwell* referring to the Temple. *The faith-*

dwell in the midst of Jerusalem; Jerusalem shall be called the faithful city, and the mountain of the LORD of hosts shall be called the holy mountain. [4] Thus says the LORD of hosts: Old men and old women shall again sit in the streets of Jerusalem, each with staff in hand because of their great age. [5] And the streets of the city shall be full of boys and girls playing in its streets. [6] Thus says the LORD of hosts: Even though it seems impossible to the remnant of this people in these days, should it also seem impossible to me, says the LORD of hosts? [7] Thus says the LORD of hosts: I will save my people from the east country and from the west country; [8] and I will bring them to live in Jerusalem. They shall be my people and I will be their God, in faithfulness and in righteousness.

[9] Thus says the LORD of hosts: Let your hands be strong—you that have recently been hearing these words from the mouths of the prophets who were present when the foundation was laid for the rebuilding of the temple, the house of the LORD of hosts. [10] For before those days there were no wages for people or for animals, nor was there any safety from the foe for those who went out or came in, and I set them all against one another. [11] But now I will not deal with the remnant of this people as in the former days, says the LORD of hosts. [12] For there shall be a sowing of peace; the vine shall yield its fruit, the ground shall give its produce, and the skies shall give their dew; and I will cause the remnant of this people to possess all these things. [13] Just as you have been a cursing among the nations, O house of Judah and house of Israel, so I will save you and you shall be a blessing. Do not be afraid, but let your hands be strong.

[14] For thus says the LORD of hosts: Just as I purposed to bring disaster upon you, when your ancestors provoked me to wrath, and I did not relent, says the LORD of hosts, [15] so again I have purposed in these days to do good to Jerusalem and to the house of Judah; do not be afraid. [16] These are the things that you shall do: Speak the truth to one another, render in your gates judgments that are true and make for peace, [17] do not devise evil in your hearts against one another, and love no false oath; for all these are things that I hate, says the LORD.

[18] The word of the LORD of hosts came to me, saying: [19] Thus says the LORD of hosts: The fast of the fourth month, and the fast of the fifth, and the fast of the seventh, and the fast of the tenth, shall be seasons of joy and gladness, and cheerful festivals for the house of Judah: therefore love truth and peace.

[20] Thus says the LORD of hosts: Peoples shall yet come, the inhabitants of many cities; [21] the inhabitants of one city shall go to another, saying, "Come, let us go to entreat the favor of the LORD, and to seek the LORD of hosts; I myself am going." [22] Many peoples and strong nations shall come to seek the LORD of hosts in Jerusalem, and to entreat the favor of the LORD. [23] Thus says the LORD of hosts: In those days ten men from nations of every language shall take hold of a Jew,

ful city, a new name for Jerusalem; cf. Isa 62.4; Jer 33.16; Ezek 48.35. On *holy mountain,* see Joel 3.17; Isa 52.1. **4–5:** This oracle continues to portray prosperity in an urban setting, including multiple generations of both genders, on which see Jer 30.18–21. **6:** This oracle highlights the key word "impossibility" (cf. Ps 139.4), just as v. 2 focused on "jealousy." **7–8:** On *saving from,* see Jer 30.10–11; Isa 43.5–6. The covenantal relationship is reaffirmed (cf. Ex 6.7). **9–13:** This oracle begins with an admonition, not just a promise. **9:** An allusion to the ceremony reflected in 4.9; Hag 2.15,18. **10:** A lamentable state portrayed similarly in Hag 1.6. **11–13:** On *remnant,* see 8.6; Hag 1.12,14. *Peace,* Heb "shalom," which is described using fertility imagery, cf. Hag 1.10; Joel 3.18. *Cursing/blessing* draws on covenantal traditions, e.g., Deut 28. **14–17:** The LORD promises a time of benevolence (*do . . . good to Jerusalem*); then turns to admonitions comparable to those in 7.9–10. Legal proceedings were conducted in city *gates* (Deut 21.19; Ruth 4.1). **18–19:** This oracle responds to the question posed in 7.3. All prior rituals of fasting are to become occasions for feasting. *The fourth* month was when the Babylonians breached the walls of Jerusalem, and *the tenth* when they began their siege (2 Kings 25.1–4; Jer 39.2; 52.4–7). For *the fifth* and *seventh* months, see 7.3n. Again, a promise is juxtaposed with an admonition. **20–22:** A pilgrimage of foreign nations to Jerusalem; cf. 14.16; Isa 2.2–4; 60.1–3; 66.18–21. **23:** On the cloak, see Hag 2.12.

grasping his garment and saying, "Let us go with you, for we have heard that God is with you."

9

An Oracle.

The word of the LORD is against the land of Hadrach
and will rest upon Damascus.
For to the LORD belongs the capital[a] of Aram,[b]
as do all the tribes of Israel;
2 Hamath also, which borders on it,
Tyre and Sidon, though they are very wise.
3 Tyre has built itself a rampart,
and heaped up silver like dust,
and gold like the dirt of the streets.
4 But now, the Lord will strip it of its possessions
and hurl its wealth into the sea,
and it shall be devoured by fire.

5 Ashkelon shall see it and be afraid;
Gaza too, and shall writhe in anguish;
Ekron also, because its hopes are withered.
The king shall perish from Gaza;
Ashkelon shall be uninhabited;
6 a mongrel people shall settle in Ashdod,
and I will make an end of the pride of Philistia.
7 I will take away its blood from its mouth,
and its abominations from between its teeth;
it too shall be a remnant for our God;
it shall be like a clan in Judah,
and Ekron shall be like the Jebusites.
8 Then I will encamp at my house as a guard,
so that no one shall march to and fro;
no oppressor shall again overrun them,
for now I have seen with my own eyes.

9 Rejoice greatly, O daughter Zion!
Shout aloud, O daughter Jerusalem!
Lo, your king comes to you;
triumphant and victorious is he,
humble and riding on a donkey,
on a colt, the foal of a donkey.
10 He[c] will cut off the chariot from Ephraim
and the war-horse from Jerusalem;
and the battle bow shall be cut off,
and he shall command peace to the nations;
his dominion shall be from sea to sea,
and from the River to the ends of the earth.

11 As for you also, because of the blood of my covenant with you,

[a] Heb *eye*
[b] Cn: Heb *of Adam* (or *of humankind)*
[c] Gk: Heb I

9.1–11.17: The first "Oracle." "*An oracle. The word of the* LORD" also appears in Zech 12.1; and Mal 1.1., suggesting that three "oracles" have been appended to Zechariah 1–8. **9.1–8: An oracle of woe against foreign nations and of protection for the Temple.** The places named are all within Syria-Palestine. The initial sites are in the north; they subsequently move to the west and then south. **1:** *Hadrach*, Hatarikka in Neo-Assyrian texts, refers to a place in northern Syria. As is common in prophetic texts, the LORD controls land beyond the boundaries of Israel. **2:** *Tyre and Sidon*, Phoenician port cities, attested in earlier oracles against the nations (e.g., Isa 23; Ezek 26–28) and also important mercantile centers in the Persian period (Ezra 3.7; Neh 13.16). **4:** The LORD now acts as divine warrior. **5–6:** The sites are sometimes personified—*see, afraid, writhe.* Verses 5–6 highlight Philistine cities. **7–8:** God now speaks in the first person, promising to remove *abominations* (cf. Lev 7.21; 11.10–12) from Philistia's mouth, so that the Philistines will observe Jewish dietary laws (cf. Gen 9.4; Lev 11.2–47; Deut 14.3–21). *Jebusites*, pre-Israelite inhabitants of Jerusalem; see Josh 15.63; 2 Sam 5.6–9; 1 Chr 11.4–9. **8:** *Encamp*, an unusual word to depict God's presence at the Temple. It continues the military tone of the poem, with the LORD as *guard (*lit. "as a garrison").

9.9–17: God's sovereign rule. A series of poetic vignettes about God as king. **9–10:** The king welcomed. **9:** Personified Jerusalem is admonished to sing for joy; cf. Ps 32.11; 47.1. On *daughter Zion/Jerusalem,* see Lam 1.6; Zeph 3.14–15; Zech 2.13. *On a donkey, on a colt,* i.e., on one animal described in two parallel poetic lines; cf. Mt 21.2–7, which understands there are to be two animals. *The River* probably refers to the Euphrates. The demilitarized dominion described here is similar to Mic 4.3; Isa 2.4. **11–13:** Oracle advocating return and preparation for battle. **11:** *You* is feminine singular, referring still to *daughter Zion. Blood of my covenant* echoes Ex 24.8, the Sinai

I will set your prisoners free from the
waterless pit.
12 Return to your stronghold, O prisoners
of hope;
today I declare that I will restore to you
double.
13 For I have bent Judah as my bow;
I have made Ephraim its arrow.
I will arouse your sons, O Zion,
against your sons, O Greece,
and wield you like a warrior's sword.

14 Then the LORD will appear over them,
and his arrow go forth like lightning;
the Lord GOD will sound the trumpet
and march forth in the whirlwinds of
the south.
15 The LORD of hosts will protect them,
and they shall devour and tread down
the slingers;[a]
they shall drink their blood[b] like wine,
and be full like a bowl,
drenched like the corners of the altar.

16 On that day the LORD their God will save
them
for they are the flock of his people;
for like the jewels of a crown
they shall shine on his land.
17 For what goodness and beauty are his!
Grain shall make the young men
flourish,
and new wine the young women.

10 Ask rain from the LORD
in the season of the spring rain,
from the LORD who makes the storm
clouds,
who gives showers of rain to you,[c]
the vegetation in the field to everyone.
2 For the teraphim[d] utter nonsense,
and the diviners see lies;
the dreamers tell false dreams,
and give empty consolation.
Therefore the people wander like sheep;
they suffer for lack of a shepherd.

3 My anger is hot against the shepherds,
and I will punish the leaders;[e]
for the LORD of hosts cares for his flock,
the house of Judah,
and will make them like his proud war-
horse.
4 Out of them shall come the cornerstone,
out of them the tent peg,
out of them the battle bow,
out of them every commander.
5 Together they shall be like warriors in
battle,
trampling the foe in the mud of the
streets;
they shall fight, for the LORD is with
them,
and they shall put to shame the riders
on horses.

6 I will strengthen the house of Judah,
and I will save the house of Joseph.
I will bring them back because I have
compassion on them,
and they shall be as though I had not
rejected them;
for I am the LORD their God and I will
answer them.

[a] Cn: Heb *the slingstones*
[b] Gk: Heb *shall drink*
[c] Heb *them*
[d] Or *household gods*
[e] Or *male goats*

covenant. **13:** Martial imagery returns, with *Judah* and *Ephraim*, the preexilic Southern and Northern Kingdoms, as weapons. *Greece,* along with Joel 3.6, is the earliest reference in the Bible to this enemy of the Persians. **14–15:** Prophetic poem about the battle. **14:** A military theophany. On a *march . . . of the south,* cf. Judg 5.4. **15:** Typical of holy war, the divine warrior will fight and Israel will reap the benefits of victory, here described in graphic imagery, which also alludes to the Temple—*bowl* (Ex 27.3), *altar* (Ex 27.2). **16–17:** The LORD as royal shepherd conveyed using the metaphor of a flock and a simile of jewelry. *Grain/new wine* symbolize fertility; cf. Hag 2.19.

10.1–12: The LORD, the militant shepherd. A poem that offers critique and solace. **1:** God is affirmed as the source of fertility. **2:** Three forms of divination are condemned. *Teraphim,* divinatory figurines often critiqued in the Bible (e.g., so Ezek 21.21). **3–5:** God will turn *the house of Judah* into a military force. **3:** *Shepherds*, i.e., rulers. *Leaders*, lit. "he-goats" (textual note *e*; Isa 14.9). **6:** God speaks, reiterating the diction of *save* (9.16) and return (*bring back*; 9.12). Cf. Isa 54.8. The Northern Kingdom of Israel, *the house of Joseph* (called

7 Then the people of Ephraim shall become
like warriors,
and their hearts shall be glad as with
wine.
Their children shall see it and rejoice,
their hearts shall exult in the LORD.

8 I will signal for them and gather them in,
for I have redeemed them,
and they shall be as numerous as they
were before.
9 Though I scattered them among the
nations,
yet in far countries they shall remember
me,
and they shall rear their children and
return.
10 I will bring them home from the land of
Egypt,
and gather them from Assyria;
I will bring them to the land of Gilead and
to Lebanon,
until there is no room for them.
11 They[a] shall pass through the sea of
distress,
and the waves of the sea shall be struck
down,
and all the depths of the Nile dried up.
The pride of Assyria shall be laid low,
and the scepter of Egypt shall
depart.
12 I will make them strong in the LORD,
and they shall walk in his name,
says the LORD.

11 Open your doors, O Lebanon,
so that fire may devour your cedars!
2 Wail, O cypress, for the cedar has fallen,
for the glorious trees are ruined!
Wail, oaks of Bashan,
for the thick forest has been felled!
3 Listen, the wail of the shepherds,
for their glory is despoiled!
Listen, the roar of the lions,
for the thickets of the Jordan are
destroyed!

4 Thus said the LORD my God: Be a shepherd of the flock doomed to slaughter.
5 Those who buy them kill them and go unpunished; and those who sell them say, "Blessed be the LORD, for I have become rich"; and their own shepherds have no pity on them. 6 For I will no longer have pity on the inhabitants of the earth, says the LORD. I will cause them, every one, to fall each into the hand of a neighbor, and each into the hand of the king; and they shall devastate the earth, and I will deliver no one from their hand.

7 So, on behalf of the sheep merchants, I became the shepherd of the flock doomed to slaughter. I took two staffs; one I named Favor, the other I named Unity, and I tended the sheep. 8 In one month I disposed of the three shepherds, for I had become impatient with them, and they also detested me. 9 So I said, "I will not be your shepherd. What is to die, let it die; what is to be destroyed, let it be destroyed; and let those that are left devour the flesh of one another!" 10 I took my staff Favor and broke it, annulling the covenant that I had made with all the peoples. 11 So it was annulled on that day, and the sheep merchants, who were watching me, knew that it was the word of the LORD. 12 I then said to them, "If it seems right to you, give

[a] Gk: Heb *He*

"Ephraim" in v. 7), will be saved along with Judah; cf. 9.13; Ezek 37.15–28. **7:** *Wine* making the *heart glad* symbolizes a good future; cf. Eccl 9.7; Ps 104.15. **8–12:** An oracle focusing on gathering and return from exile; cf. Isa 43.1–7,14–21; Jer 23.3. **10–11:** On the flight to Egypt, see Jer 43. With part of Israel in Egypt, a new Exodus can take place. **10:** *Gilead*, northern Transjordan. *Lebanon*, the mountainous region north of Israel, famous for its forests (see 11.1).

11.1–3: Taunt against Israel's northern neighbors. In this ironic taunt, the region is personified and characterized by three trees, two of which are fabled—cedars of Lebanon (Ezek 31.3) and oaks of Bashan (Ezek 27.6), which was in northern Transjordan. Shepherds and lions probably symbolize communal leaders. The destruction will affect foliage as far away as the Jordan Valley.

11.4–17: Shepherding a flock. Diverse oracles and reports, all using the metaphor of a shepherd for the community's leader; cf. 13.7–9. **4–6:** An unnamed person, perhaps the prophet Zechariah, is charged to lead the community, which is doomed. **7–14:** The symbolic action is reported by the individual who wields and then

me my wages; but if not, keep them." So they weighed out as my wages thirty shekels of silver. 13 Then the LORD said to me, "Throw it into the treasury"[a]—this lordly price at which I was valued by them. So I took the thirty shekels of silver and threw them into the treasury[a] in the house of the LORD. 14 Then I broke my second staff Unity, annulling the family ties between Judah and Israel.

15 Then the LORD said to me: Take once more the implements of a worthless shepherd. 16 For I am now raising up in the land a shepherd who does not care for the perishing, or seek the wandering,[b] or heal the maimed, or nourish the healthy,[c] but devours the flesh of the fat ones, tearing off even their hoofs.

17 Oh, my worthless shepherd,
who deserts the flock!
May the sword strike his arm
and his right eye!
Let his arm be completely withered,
his right eye utterly blinded!

12

An Oracle.

The word of the LORD concerning Israel: Thus says the LORD, who stretched out the heavens and founded the earth and formed the human spirit within: 2 See, I am about to make Jerusalem a cup of reeling for all the surrounding peoples; it will be against Judah also in the siege against Jerusalem. 3 On that day I will make Jerusalem a heavy stone for all the peoples; all who lift it shall grievously hurt themselves. And all the nations of the earth shall come together against it. 4 On that day, says the LORD, I will strike every horse with panic, and its rider with madness. But on the house of Judah I will keep a watchful eye, when I strike every horse of the peoples with blindness. 5 Then the clans of Judah shall say to themselves, "The inhabitants of Jerusalem have strength through the LORD of hosts, their God."

6 On that day I will make the clans of Judah like a blazing pot on a pile of wood, like a flaming torch among sheaves; and they shall devour to the right and to the left all the surrounding peoples, while Jerusalem shall again be inhabited in its place, in Jerusalem.

7 And the LORD will give victory to the tents of Judah first, that the glory of the house of David and the glory of the inhabitants of Jerusalem may not be exalted over that of Judah. 8 On that day the LORD will shield the inhabitants of Jerusalem so that the feeblest among them on that day shall be like David, and the house of David shall be like God, like the angel of the LORD, at their head. 9 And on that day I will seek to destroy all the nations that come against Jerusalem.

10 And I will pour out a spirit of compassion and supplication on the house of David and the inhabitants of Jerusalem, so that, when they look on the one[d] whom they have pierced, they shall mourn for him, as one mourns for an only child, and weep bitterly over him, as one weeps over a firstborn. 11 On that day the mourning in Jerusalem will be as great as the mourning for Hadad-rimmon

[a] Syr: Heb *it to the potter*
[b] Syr Compare Gk Vg: Heb *the youth*
[c] Meaning of Heb uncertain
[d] Heb *on me*

destroys two shepherd's staffs, symbolizing the end of a covenantal relationship. **12–13:** *Thirty shekels of silver*: Ex 21.32 stipulates this amount as restitution for a slave gored by an ox. Other ancient texts understand this to be a trifling amount of money; cf. Mt 26.15; 27.3–10. *Lordly price* is ironic. **15–16:** The deity commands a second symbolic action, again involving a shepherd's implements. **17:** Woe oracle against the community's leader.

12.1–14.21: The second "Oracle." See 9.1–11.17n. Divine oracles and prophetic sayings about the imminent day of the LORD, referred to as "that day." **12.1–9:** Through a *word . . . concerning Israel,* vv. 2–9 highlight the destruction of foreign nations, as did 9.1–8. The God who creates (v. 1; cf. Job 9.8; Isa 42.5; Jer 10,12) can also destroy. There will be conflict between Israel and the nations and even within Judah (v. 2). **2:** *Cup of reeling,* cf. Ps 75.8; Isa 51.17–23; Jer 25.15–18. **4:** *Madness* and *blindness*, curses in Deut 28.28–29. **7–8:** David's lineage continues to be a source of hope. **10–14:** The tone shifts to that of lamentation. **10:** *The one . . . pierced,* cf. 13.3. The referent is unclear but the Hebrew suggests it is the LORD; cf. Jn 19.37, which identifies it with Jesus. **11–14:** Lamentation over the one *pierced*. **11:** *Hadad-rimmon* is, according to 2 Chr 35.20–25, the site for mourning over Josiah's death. It is also the name of a Syrian storm god, also known as Baal, whose seasonal disappearance

in the plain of Megiddo. 12 The land shall mourn, each family by itself; the family of the house of David by itself, and their wives by themselves; the family of the house of Nathan by itself, and their wives by themselves; 13 the family of the house of Levi by itself, and their wives by themselves; the family of the Shimeites by itself, and their wives by themselves; 14 and all the families that are left, each by itself, and their wives by themselves.

13 On that day a fountain shall be opened for the house of David and the inhabitants of Jerusalem, to cleanse them from sin and impurity.

2 On that day, says the LORD of hosts, I will cut off the names of the idols from the land, so that they shall be remembered no more; and also I will remove from the land the prophets and the unclean spirit. 3 And if any prophets appear again, their fathers and mothers who bore them will say to them, "You shall not live, for you speak lies in the name of the LORD"; and their fathers and their mothers who bore them shall pierce them through when they prophesy. 4 On that day the prophets will be ashamed, every one, of their visions when they prophesy; they will not put on a hairy mantle in order to deceive, 5 but each of them will say, "I am no prophet, I am a tiller of the soil; for the land has been my possession[a] since my youth." 6 And if anyone asks them, "What are these wounds on your chest?"[b] the answer will be "The wounds I received in the house of my friends."

7 "Awake, O sword, against my shepherd,
against the man who is my associate,"
says the LORD of hosts.
Strike the shepherd, that the sheep may be scattered;
I will turn my hand against the little ones.
8 In the whole land, says the LORD,
two-thirds shall be cut off and perish,
and one-third shall be left alive.
9 And I will put this third into the fire,
refine them as one refines silver,
and test them as gold is tested.
They will call on my name,
and I will answer them.
I will say, "They are my people";
and they will say, "The LORD is our God."

14 See, a day is coming for the LORD, when the plunder taken from you will be divided in your midst. 2 For I will gather all the nations against Jerusalem to battle, and the city shall be taken and the houses looted and the women raped; half the city shall go into exile, but the rest of the people shall not be cut off from the city. 3 Then the LORD will go forth and fight against those nations as when he fights on a day of battle. 4 On that day his feet shall stand on the Mount of Olives, which lies before Jerusalem on the east; and the Mount of Olives shall be split in two from east to west by a very wide valley; so that one half of the Mount shall withdraw

[a] Cn: Heb *for humankind has caused me to possess*
[b] Heb *wounds between your hands*

was mourned in the agriculturally fertile area around Megiddo; see 2 Kings 5.18. **12–14:** *Their wives,* on women's lamentation, see 2 Chr 35.25; Jer 9.17,20. The lamentation will involve *the land* and *all the families*, not just the families named. The families are those of *the house of David* (1 Chr 14.14 reports that David bore Nathan) and *the house of Levi* (Shimei was a grandson of Levi, 1 Chr 6.16–17). **13.1:** Those who might have incurred corpse defilement during mourning will be cleansed by water from *a fountain*. On purification from such uncleanness, see Num 19. The *fountain* may be related to the motif of a river flowing from the Temple; cf. Zech 14.8; Ps 46.4 Ezek 47.1–12; Joel 3.18. **2–6:** Prophecy is viewed as negatively as idolatry, subject to punishment by death. Unlike the rebellious son, whom parents are to bring before the legal assembly (Deut 21.18–21), parents here can kill their prophetic offspring immediately. **4–6:** *Hairy mantle,* a garment, as in Gen 25.25, that symbolizes deception. *I am no prophet* quotes Am 7.14. Prophetic *wounds,* cf. 1 Kings 18.28.

13.7–9: A personified sword. A poem using imagery similar to 11.17. The fractional destruction is similar to that in Ezek 5.1–12. **8:** On imagery of refining, see Isa 1.25–26; Mal 3.2–4. **9:** *My people . . . our God* expresses the covenantal relationship (cf. Ex 6.7; Hos 2.23).

14.1–21: An eschatological depiction of the LORD's Day. 4: A theophany, in which the mountains are *split* (cf.

northward, and the other half southward.
5 And you shall flee by the valley of the LORD's
mountain,[a] for the valley between the moun-
tains shall reach to Azal;[b] and you shall flee
as you fled from the earthquake in the days of
King Uzziah of Judah. Then the LORD my God
will come, and all the holy ones with him.
6 On that day there shall not be[c] either cold
or frost.[d] 7 And there shall be continuous day
(it is known to the LORD), not day and not
night, for at evening time there shall be light.
8 On that day living waters shall flow out
from Jerusalem, half of them to the eastern
sea and half of them to the western sea; it
shall continue in summer as in winter.
9 And the LORD will become king over all
the earth; on that day the LORD will be one
and his name one.
10 The whole land shall be turned into a
plain from Geba to Rimmon south of Jerusa-
lem. But Jerusalem shall remain aloft on its
site from the Gate of Benjamin to the place
of the former gate, to the Corner Gate, and
from the Tower of Hananel to the king's wine
presses. 11 And it shall be inhabited, for never
again shall it be doomed to destruction; Jeru-
salem shall abide in security.
12 This shall be the plague with which the
LORD will strike all the peoples that wage war
against Jerusalem: their flesh shall rot while
they are still on their feet; their eyes shall rot
in their sockets, and their tongues shall rot
in their mouths. 13 On that day a great panic
from the LORD shall fall on them, so that
each will seize the hand of a neighbor, and
the hand of the one will be raised against the
hand of the other; 14 even Judah will fight at
Jerusalem. And the wealth of all the sur-
rounding nations shall be collected—gold,
silver, and garments in great abundance.
15 And a plague like this plague shall fall on
the horses, the mules, the camels, the don-
keys, and whatever animals may be in those
camps.
16 Then all who survive of the nations that
have come against Jerusalem shall go up year
after year to worship the King, the LORD of
hosts, and to keep the festival of booths.[e] 17 If
any of the families of the earth do not go up
to Jerusalem to worship the King, the LORD
of hosts, there will be no rain upon them.
18 And if the family of Egypt do not go up
and present themselves, then on them shall[f]
come the plague that the LORD inflicts on the
nations that do not go up to keep the festival
of booths.[e] 19 Such shall be the punishment
of Egypt and the punishment of all the na-
tions that do not go up to keep the festival of
booths.[e]
20 On that day there shall be inscribed on
the bells of the horses, "Holy to the LORD."
And the cooking pots in the house of the
LORD shall be as holy as[g] the bowls in front of
the altar; 21 and every cooking pot in Jerusa-
lem and Judah shall be sacred to the LORD of
hosts, so that all who sacrifice may come and
use them to boil the flesh of the sacrifice. And
there shall no longer be traders[h] in the house
of the LORD of hosts on that day.

[a] Heb *my mountains*
[b] Meaning of Heb uncertain
[c] Cn: Heb *there shall not be light*
[d] Compare Gk Syr Vg Tg: Meaning of Heb uncertain
[e] Or *tabernacles*; Heb *succoth*
[f] Gk Syr: Heb *shall not*
[g] Heb *shall be like*
[h] Or *Canaanites*

Mic 1.4; Hab 3.6). The new landscape allows Jerusalemites to flee from destruction. **5:** *Earthquake*, see Am 1.1n. *The holy ones,* members of the divine council; cf. Deut 33.2; Ps 89.5,7). **7:** The LORD's *day* will no longer be a day of darkness; cf. Am 5.18; Zeph 1.15. **8:** *Living waters*, see 13.1n. **9:** *The LORD* as monarch juxtaposed with an allusion to the "Shema" (Deut 6.4). **10–11:** Consistent with the Zion tradition (Ps 48.2; Isa 2.2; Mic 4.1), Jerusalem will be elevated and secure. The area *from Geba to Rimmon*, from (ca) 10 km (6mi) north-northeast to 60 km (37 mi) *south* of Jerusalem, represents the geographic limits of the old kingdom of Judah. **12–15:** The plague tradition (Ex 7–12; Pss 78; 105) is linked with holy war *panic* (cf. Deut 7.23; 1 Sam 5.9). **14:** Despoliation of the nations; cf. Isa 61.6; Hag 2.7). **16–19:** The tradition of a pilgrimage of nations (cf. 8.20–23; Isa 2.1–4; Mic 4.1–4) is related to *the festival of booths*, Sukkoth (Lev 23.33–36; Neh 8.13–18). Egypt is singled out for punishment, perhaps because of the allusion to plagues in vv.12,13. **20–21:** Imagery of radical holiness throughout Jerusalem, not just at the Temple. **20:** The book concludes as it began, with reference to horses. **21:** *Traders*, see textual note *h*, literally "Canaanites."

MALACHI

NAME, AUTHORSHIP, AND CANONICAL STATUS

Unlike the other compositions in the Book of the Twelve (the "Minor Prophets"), Malachi may not be named for a prophet. Malachi means literally "my messenger," and there is good reason not to construe the word in 1.1 as a proper name, especially since the name does not appear elsewhere in the Bible. The Septuagint (LXX) does not translate it as a name, and in fact the same word appears in Mal 3.1, where it is simply translated as "my messenger."

The book begins in similar fashion to Zech 9.1 and 12.1, suggesting that three collections (Zech 9–12; 12–14; and Malachi) were appended to Zech 1–8. An interest in creating a collection of twelve prophetic books may have resulted in the identification of Malachi as a separate book.

DATE OF COMPOSITION AND HISTORICAL CONTEXT

Scholars generally agree that the book of Malachi dates to the period after the rededication of the Temple in Jerusalem in 515 BCE. Reference to a governor (1.8), and not a king, clearly points to the postexilic era. The book may have been composed in Judah prior to the time that Ezra and Nehemiah were active, i.e., in the early decades of the fifth century BCE. Problems that Malachi addresses, such as tithing, are also attested in the book of Ezra-Nehemiah (Neh 13.5,12), suggesting that these three books date to roughly the same period. The book knows a number of earlier biblical traditions, particularly those in Deuteronomy and in ritual texts.

STRUCTURE, CONTENTS, AND INTERPRETATION

Malachi includes a distinctive form of literature, often characterized as a disputation. This genre has striking similarities to Greek diatribes. There are six such rhetorical units (1.2–5; 1.6.–2.9; 2.10–16; 2.17–3.5; 3.6–12; 3.13–4.3). In all of them, two parties—God and some group—engage in a stylized dialogue. All six units include questions, posed sometimes by the deity, other times by the people. Moreover, each disputation quotes the LORD's opponents. What the people say often seems outlandish, e.g., "All who do evil are good in the sight of the LORD, and he delights in them" (2.17) or "It is vain to serve God" (3.14).

The book addresses numerous topics: the permanence of the LORD's care for Israel, the need to venerate the LORD alone, the importance of tithing and justice, and hope for those who fear the LORD. Two topics are particularly prominent—the international scope of God's reign, and the ritual world of the Temple.

In the Hebrew Bible, Malachi ends the Book of the Twelve and the entire division of the canon called the Prophets. In Christian Bibles, it ends the Old Testament; its final words about Elijah as messenger are interpreted in the Gospels as referring to John the Baptist (Mt 14.10; Lk 1.17).

David L. Petersen

1 An oracle. The word of the LORD to Israel by Malachi.[a]

[2] I have loved you, says the LORD. But you say, "How have you loved us?" Is not Esau Jacob's brother? says the LORD. Yet I have loved Jacob [3] but I have hated Esau; I have made his hill country a desolation and his heritage a desert for jackals. [4] If Edom says, "We are shattered but we will rebuild the ruins," the LORD of hosts says: They may build, but I will tear down, until they are called the wicked country, the people with whom the LORD is angry forever. [5] Your own eyes shall see this, and you shall say, "Great is the LORD beyond the borders of Israel!"

[6] A son honors his father, and servants their master. If then I am a father, where is the honor due me? And if I am a master, where is the respect due me? says the LORD of hosts to you, O priests, who despise my name. You say, "How have we despised your name?" [7] By offering polluted food on my altar. And you say, "How have we polluted it?"[b] By thinking that the LORD's table may be despised. [8] When you offer blind animals in sacrifice, is that not wrong? And when you offer those that are lame or sick, is that not wrong? Try presenting that to your governor; will he be pleased with you or show you favor? says the LORD of hosts. [9] And now implore the favor of God, that he may be gracious to us. The fault is yours. Will he show favor to any of you? says the LORD of hosts. [10] Oh, that someone among you would shut the temple[c] doors, so that you would not kindle fire on my altar in vain! I have no pleasure in you, says the LORD of hosts, and I will not accept an offering from your hands. [11] For from the rising of the sun to its setting my name is great among the nations, and in every place incense is offered to my name, and a pure offering; for my name is great among the nations, says the LORD of hosts. [12] But you profane it when you say that the Lord's table is polluted, and the food for it[d] may be despised. [13] "What a weariness this is," you say, and you sniff at me,[e] says the LORD of hosts. You bring what has been taken by violence or is lame or sick, and this you bring as your offering! Shall I accept that from your hand? says the LORD. [14] Cursed be the cheat

[a] Or *by my messenger*
[b] Gk: Heb *you*
[c] Heb lacks *temple*
[d] Compare Syr Tg: Heb *its fruit, its food*
[e] Another reading is *at it*

1.1: Superscription. This verse begins in the same way as Zech 9.1 and Zech 12.1. Here the *oracle* (lit., "burden") is directed *to* Israel. *Malachi,* literally, "my messenger."

1.2–5: The God who loves and hates. God demonstrates love for Israel (Jacob) by hating Edom (Esau; see Gen 25.19–24; 36.1). Enmity toward Edom runs deep in the Hebrew Bible; see especially Obadiah (cf. Isa 34.5–17; Isa 63.1; Jer 49.7–22; Ezek 25.12–14; 35.1–15; Ps 137.7). Still, Israel's God was remembered as having given Edom its land (see Deut 2.4–5). **3:** Such destruction may be related to Nabonidus's campaign against Edom in 552 BCE. **5:** *Great is the LORD*, similar claims are made about God in Pss 35.27; 40.16; 70.4; 96.4, which emphasize the power of the divine king. The international significance of Israel's God is reiterated in 1.11,14.

1.6–2.9: Concerning priests and Levites. The longest of the disputations deals with the priesthood. **6:** The notion of honoring a parent is embedded in the Decalogue (Ex 20.12) and in proverbial literature (Prov 13.1; 19.26). To *despise my name* strikes at the heart of Israel's religious life since the Temple is "the place that the LORD your God will choose as a dwelling for his name" (Deut 12.11). **7:** *Polluted food,* an unusual phrase to describe unacceptable offerings. The word for "pollute" or "defile" is used in Ezra 2 of unacceptable priests (Ezra 2.62). **8:** *Blind, lame,* and *sick* animals were not acceptable as sacrifices (Deut 15.19–23; Lev 22.18–25). The prophet offers an ironic admonition, *Try presenting that . . .* **9:** *And now implore the favor of God,* an ironic call to worship placed in the mouths of the priests, which may echo the priestly blessing of Num 6.24–26. **10:** *Doors,* see textual note *c*. On the doors of the Temple, see 1 Kings 6.31; Ps 100.4; the Levites were doorkeepers at the Temple (Ezra 2.42; Neh 11.19). It is unclear whether *altar* refers to the altar of burnt offering or the incense altar. **11:** Using solar imagery (cf. 4.2), the prophet testifies to the vast territory in which the LORD is worshiped. Whether or not appropriate ritual is taking place at the Jerusalem Temple, the LORD's name is being venerated appropriately *among the nations*, including Jews in the Diaspora. **14:**

who has a male in the flock and vows to give it, and yet sacrifices to the Lord what is blemished; for I am a great King, says the LORD of hosts, and my name is reverenced among the nations.

2 And now, O priests, this command is for you. [2] If you will not listen, if you will not lay it to heart to give glory to my name, says the LORD of hosts, then I will send the curse on you and I will curse your blessings; indeed I have already cursed them,[a] because you do not lay it to heart. [3] I will rebuke your offspring, and spread dung on your faces, the dung of your offerings, and I will put you out of my presence.[b]

[4] Know, then, that I have sent this command to you, that my covenant with Levi may hold, says the LORD of hosts. [5] My covenant with him was a covenant of life and well-being, which I gave him; this called for reverence, and he revered me and stood in awe of my name. [6] True instruction was in his mouth, and no wrong was found on his lips. He walked with me in integrity and uprightness, and he turned many from iniquity. [7] For the lips of a priest should guard knowledge, and people should seek instruction from his mouth, for he is the messenger of the LORD of hosts. [8] But you have turned aside from the way; you have caused many to stumble by your instruction; you have corrupted the covenant of Levi, says the LORD of hosts, [9] and so I make you despised and abased before all the people, inasmuch as you have not kept my ways but have shown partiality in your instruction.

[10] Have we not all one father? Has not one God created us? Why then are we faithless to one another, profaning the covenant of our ancestors? [11] Judah has been faithless, and abomination has been committed in Israel and in Jerusalem; for Judah has profaned the sanctuary of the LORD, which he loves, and has married the daughter of a foreign god. [12] May the LORD cut off from the tents of Jacob

[a] Heb *it*

[b] Cn Compare Gk Syr: Heb *and he shall bear you to it*

Curse replaces the earlier style of questions (cf. the curses in Deut 27.15–16). On pledging something good to sacrifice and then replacing it with something inferior, see Lev 27.9–11. It appears that both worshiper and priest would suffer a curse. On the LORD as *great King*, see Pss 96.10; 97.1; 99.1. **2.1–3:** Admonition and threat to the priests. **1:** *This command* echoes language found in Deuteronomy (e.g. 27.1; 30.11). **2:** Veneration of the LORD's *name* is also at issue in Mal 1.6,11,14; 2.5; and the language of curse continues that of 1.14. *Your blessings* probably refers to the blessings that priests dispense (Num 6.23–27). **3:** *Offspring* implies the priestly lineage of Aaron, who were promised a covenant of peace (Num 25.12–13). *Dung*, either excrement or intestinal contents normally burned outside the Temple compound (Ex 29.14; Lev 4.11; 8.17; 16.27; Num 19.5). Smearing *dung* on the face of a priest would require the removal of that unclean priest from the Temple. **4–9:** The language of covenant and commandment continues, though now focusing on the Levites, whose status was below that of the priests who traced their ancestry back to Aaron. **4–5:** *Levi*, the third son of Jacob and ancestor of all priests (Gen 29.34). Jer 33.21 refers to a *covenant with Levi*; Deut 33.9 affirms the covenantal fidelity of the Levites. *Well-being* or "peace," (Heb "shalom"), is associated with the covenant with Phinehas in Num 25.12. **6:** *Instruction*, (Heb "torah"). Deut 33.10 characterizes Levites as responsible for teaching God's torah. To "walk" describes a proper covenantal relationship in Deuteronomy (10.12; 13.5). **7:** The language becomes prescriptive, though continuing to emphasize instruction. *Messenger of the LORD,* a phrase used of Haggai (Hag 1.13; see also Gen 19.1; 21.17). That Levi, personifying a group, would be so characterized underscores the high status priests receive here. **8:** *You* probably refers to the priests, indicted earlier in this disputation. The metaphor of walking (v. 6) continues here with turning *aside from the way*. **9:** The punishment is consistent with 2.2–3. Neh 13.19–20 may provide a context for understanding these charges. Nehemiah acted against those who had "defiled the priesthood, and the covenant of the priesthood and the Levites" (Neh 13.29).

2.10–16: Religious fidelity. Focus on covenant continues, but now between God and all Israel. Familial imagery is important. **10:** For a similar question, see Deut 32.6. On God as *one,* see Deut 6.4. *Covenant of our ancestors* (cf. Deut 4.3–31; 29.24–25; Jer 34.13–14, all referring to the Sinai covenant). **11:** *Abomination,* a religious sin. *The sanctuary of the LORD*, literally, "the holiness of Yahweh," which may refer to the Temple (Pss 63.2; 68.22). *Daughter of a foreign god* may refer to veneration of a goddess such as Asherah or, less likely, marriage to a

anyone who does this—any to witness[a] or answer, or to bring an offering to the LORD of hosts.

13 And this you do as well: You cover the LORD's altar with tears, with weeping and groaning because he no longer regards the offering or accepts it with favor at your hand. 14 You ask, "Why does he not?" Because the LORD was a witness between you and the wife of your youth, to whom you have been faithless, though she is your companion and your wife by covenant. 15 Did not one God make her?[b] Both flesh and spirit are his.[c] And what does the one God[d] desire? Godly offspring. So look to yourselves, and do not let anyone be faithless to the wife of his youth. 16 For I hate[e] divorce, says the LORD, the God of Israel, and covering one's garment with violence, says the LORD of hosts. So take heed to yourselves and do not be faithless.

17 You have wearied the LORD with your words. Yet you say, "How have we wearied him?" By saying, "All who do evil are good in the sight of the LORD, and he delights in them." Or by asking, "Where is the God of justice?"

3 See, I am sending my messenger to prepare the way before me, and the Lord whom you seek will suddenly come to his temple. The messenger of the covenant in whom you delight—indeed, he is coming, says the LORD of hosts. 2 But who can endure the day of his coming, and who can stand when he appears?

For he is like a refiner's fire and like fullers' soap; 3 he will sit as a refiner and purifier of silver, and he will purify the descendants of Levi and refine them like gold and silver, until they present offerings to the LORD in righteousness.[f] 4 Then the offering of Judah and Jerusalem will be pleasing to the LORD as in the days of old and as in former years.

5 Then I will draw near to you for judgment; I will be swift to bear witness against the sorcerers, against the adulterers, against those who swear falsely, against those who oppress the hired workers in their wages, the widow and the orphan, against those who thrust aside the alien, and do not fear me, says the LORD of hosts.

6 For I the LORD do not change; therefore you, O children of Jacob, have not perished.

[a] Cn Compare Gk: Heb *arouse*
[b] Or *Has he not made one?*
[c] Cn: Heb *and a remnant of spirit was his*
[d] Heb *he*
[e] Cn: Heb *he hates*
[f] Or *right offerings to the* LORD

non-Israelite woman, a major issue in the Persian period (see Ezra 9–10; Neh 13). **12:** The punishing curse. To *cut off* as a punishment, see Pss 12.3; 109.15. *Tents of Jacob,* see Jer 30.18. **13:** *Weeping* at the Temple may refer to foreign rituals similar to those described in Ezek 8.14. **14:** The identity of the characters is ambiguous. If *you* is Judah, then the *wife by covenant* would be the LORD. On marriage as a covenant, see also Ezek 16.8; Prov 2.17. **15:** Family symbolism continues with reference to *offspring.* **15b–16:** These verses, perhaps by another author, refer to human divorce; the issue is now marriage within the community, not idolatry as in vv. 10–14. Although Deut 24.1–4 permits *divorce,* it is likened to *violence* that the LORD hates.

2.17–3.5: Theodicy and theophany. The prospect of judgment brought by both a messenger and the LORD. **17:** The people are quoted three times. The second quotation ("Everyone who does evil . . .") reverses the usual biblical view about God and evildoers (cf. Deut 18.12; 25.16). *Where is the God of justice?* echoes language in psalms of lament, e.g., Pss 22.1; 89.49. **3.1–5:** These verses focus on an expected *messenger* and what he will do. **1:** *My messenger,* Heb. "mal'aki" (Eng. "Malachi"). This verse echoes Ex 23.20, "Behold, I send my messenger before you to guard your way" (cf. also Isa 40.3, "prepare the way of the LORD"). The messenger is apparently a forerunner of the Lord. *The messenger of the covenant* may be the same individual as *my messenger.* The epilogue in 4.5–6 identifies the messenger as the prophet Elijah. In the New Testament the messenger is identified as John the Baptist (Mt 11.10; Mk 1.2; Lk 1.17,76; 7.27). **2–3:** Metallurgy and the manufacture of textiles provide metaphors for purification. *Fullers' soap,* whitening and cleansing agent used in the processing of textiles. *The descendents of Levi* (see 2.4) become important again, though here as officiating priests, not teachers. **5:** All the infractions also appear in Deuteronomy, especially 24.14–17, which refers to the wage earner, sojourner, widow, and orphan (cf. also Zech 7.9–10).

3.6–12: Tithes, curses, and blessings. A disputation that addresses the responsibility of the entire community to bring tithes. **6:** *Children of Jacob* symbolize the unchanging commitment of the deity to Israel, as

7 Ever since the days of your ancestors you
have turned aside from my statutes and have
not kept them. Return to me, and I will return
to you, says the LORD of hosts. But you say,
"How shall we return?"

8 Will anyone rob God? Yet you are robbing
me! But you say, "How are we robbing you?" In
your tithes and offerings! 9 You are cursed with
a curse, for you are robbing me—the whole na-
tion of you! 10 Bring the full tithe into the store-
house, so that there may be food in my house,
and thus put me to the test, says the LORD
of hosts; see if I will not open the windows
of heaven for you and pour down for you an
overflowing blessing. 11 I will rebuke the locust[a]
for you, so that it will not destroy the produce
of your soil; and your vine in the field shall not
be barren, says the LORD of hosts. 12 Then all
nations will count you happy, for you will be a
land of delight, says the LORD of hosts.

13 You have spoken harsh words against
me, says the LORD. Yet you say, "How have
we spoken against you?" 14 You have said, "It
is vain to serve God. What do we profit by
keeping his command or by going about as
mourners before the LORD of hosts? 15 Now
we count the arrogant happy; evildoers not
only prosper, but when they put God to the
test they escape."

16 Then those who revered the LORD spoke
with one another. The LORD took note and lis-
tened, and a book of remembrance was written
before him of those who revered the LORD and
thought on his name. 17 They shall be mine, says
the LORD of hosts, my special possession on the
day when I act, and I will spare them as parents
spare their children who serve them. 18 Then
once more you shall see the difference between
the righteous and the wicked, between one who
serves God and one who does not serve him.

4 [b] See, the day is coming, burning like an
oven, when all the arrogant and all
evildoers will be stubble; the day that comes
shall burn them up, says the LORD of hosts,
so that it will leave them neither root nor
branch. 2 But for you who revere my name the
sun of righteousness shall rise, with heal-
ing in its wings. You shall go out leaping like
calves from the stall. 3 And you shall tread
down the wicked, for they will be ashes under
the soles of your feet, on the day when I act,
says the LORD of hosts.

4 Remember the teaching of my servant
Moses, the statutes and ordinances that I
commanded him at Horeb for all Israel.

[a] Heb *devourer*
[b] Ch 4.1-6 are Ch 3.19-24 in Heb

it has existed since the time of its ancient ancestor. **7:** This verse picks up the theme of return found in Zech 1.2–6. **8–10:** The deity responds to the people's question "How shall we return" (v. 7) by mandating proper *tithes and offerings.* **10:** On *the full tithe*, see Lev 27.30,32. Num 18.21–32 allocates the tithe to the Levites (cf. Deut 14.22–29). The tithe was a matter of concern during the Persian period, see Neh 10.35,37–40 (cf. 12.44; 13.5). The people's testing of the LORD is attested elsewhere only in 3.15 and Ps 95.9, where it is an accusation. Here it is a challenge, and the LORD promises to pass the test and provide rain, which will create agricultural bounty. **11–12:** *Locust,* literally, "devourer," which could refer to flies (Ps 78.45) or worms (Deut 28.39) as well as locusts (Joel 1.4). Deut 28.10–12 reflects a similar notion of rain, abundant harvest, and recognition by other peoples.

3.13–4.3: Those who fear the LORD's name. This diatribe differs strikingly from the preceding ones by introducing a distinct group, "those who revered the LORD" (v. 16). **13:** The LORD's charge could now refer to everything that the people have been quoted as saying throughout the book. **14–15:** The people raise the issue of theodicy. Unlike those who venerate God, *evildoers . . . prosper*, even after they *put God to the test* (cf. 2.17; 3.10). The LORD offers no response to this charge; dialogue ceases. **16:** On such God-fearers, see Pss 15.4; 22.23. Some psalms associate God-fearers with priestly houses; Ps 135.20 identifies them as the house of Levi, which has been prominent in Malachi. *Book of remembrance* (cf. Ps 139.16; Dan.10.21; Rev 13.8). In Ex 19.5, all Israel is God's *special possession;* here only a portion of Israel, the God-fearers, receives that honor. **17–18:** God will spare those who serve him, those who are righteous. Some will not be spared. The language of *parents* and *children* recurs in the book's final verse. **4.1**: *The day* is the day of the LORD. Unlike the fire in 3.2–3, the *oven* will destroy, not purify. Cf. Isa 6.13 for the imagery of stubble consumed by fire. **2:** *Sun of righteousness* alludes to the winged sun disk, which symbolized divine beneficence and protection in both Mesopotamia and Egypt.

4.4–6: An epilogue, drawing on diverse biblical texts (Mal 1.6; Joel 2.31; 2 Kgs 2), that integrates the book of Malachi with individuals (Moses and Elijah) mentioned elsewhere in the Bible. **4:** *Teaching* (Heb "torah") *of*

[5] Lo, I will send you the prophet Elijah
before the great and terrible day of the LORD
comes. [6] He will turn the hearts of parents
to their children and the hearts of children
to their parents, so that I will not come and
strike the land with a curse.[a]

[a] Or *a ban of utter destruction*

my servant Moses (cf. Josh 8.31; Neh 8.1). *Horeb* is an alternate name for Mount Sinai. **5–6:** Elijah (see 3.1n.) can return because he never died (2 Kings 2.11). There was an expectation that a prophet or prophecy would return before the day of the Lord arrived (cf. Ezek 39.29; Joel 2.28; Sir 48.10). The book concludes with the imagery of familial reconciliation.

This page intentionally left blank

This page intentionally left blank

THE APOCRYPHA

The Apocryphal/ Deuterocanonical books of The Old Testament

New Revised Standard Version

This page intentionally left blank

INTRODUCTION TO THE APOCRYPHAL/ DEUTEROCANONICAL BOOKS

DEFINITIONS

The apocryphal/Deuterocanonical books are those works that were included in the Septuagint (the ancient Greek translation of the Hebrew Bible, referred to as LXX) or in the Old Latin and Vulgate translations, but are not included in the Hebrew text that forms both the canon for Judaism and the Protestant Old Testament. All of these works, whether they are individual books or additions to the Hebrew texts of Esther and Daniel, have been regarded as canonical by one or more Christian communities, but not by all. (The exception is 4 Macc, which appears only in an appendix to the Greek Bible.)

"Apocrypha" means "hidden things," but it is not clear why the term was chosen to describe these books. In antiquity "hidden books" sometimes referred to books that were restricted because they contained mysterious or esoteric teaching, too profound to be communicated to any except the initiated (see 2 Esd 14.45–46). Some early Christian writers used the term to describe works they considered to be spurious or heretical. But neither usage aptly describes the set of books that now goes by this name. The use of the term to refer to this group of books can be traced to the Christian scholar Jerome at the turn of the fifth century CE. It serves to distinguish them from books of the Christian Old Testament that are also found in the Jewish canon.

"Deuterocanonical," along with its coordinate term "protocanonical," is used in Roman Catholic tradition to describe the status of the two groups of books of the Old Testament. The "protocanon" consists of the books of the Hebrew Bible, concerning which there was no debate as to their canonical status. The "Deuterocanon" refers to those additional books whose canonical status was reaffirmed at a later date. This distinction, introduced by Sixtus of Sienna in 1566, acknowledges the differences between the two categories while making clear that Roman Catholics accept as fully canonical those books and parts of books that Protestants call the Apocrypha (except the Prayer of Manasseh, Psalm 151, 3 and 4 Maccabees, and 1 and 2 Esdras, which both groups regard as apocryphal). Thus, although the terms "Deuterocanonical" and "Apocryphal" can describe the same collections of writings, they clearly indicate the difference in status of the writings among different groups. In the NRSV translation, subheadings in the table of contents for these books, and in the text itself, explain the differing canonical status of various writings.

THE ROMAN CATHOLIC, ORTHODOX, AND PROTESTANT CANONS OF THE OLD TESTAMENT

Toward the end of the fourth century CE, Pope Damasus commissioned Jerome, the most learned Christian biblical scholar of his day, to prepare a standard Latin version of the scriptures (the translation that was to become known as the Latin Vulgate). In the Old Testament Jerome followed the Hebrew canon; though he also translated the apocryphal books, he called attention to their distinct status in prefaces. Subsequent copyists of the Latin Bible, however, did not always include Jerome's prefaces, and during the medieval period the Western Church generally regarded these books as scripture, without differentiation. After the Protestant reformers had denied the canonical status of these books, in 1546 the Council of Trent decreed that the canon of the Old Testament includes them (with the exceptions listed earlier). Subsequent editions of the Latin Vulgate text, officially approved by the Roman Catholic Church, placed these books within the Christian sequence of the Old Testament books. Thus Tobit and Judith come after Nehemiah; the Wisdom of Solomon and Ecclesiasticus (Sirach) come after the Song of Solomon; Baruch (with the Letter of Jeremiah as ch 6) comes after Lamentations; and 1 and 2 Maccabees conclude the books of the Old Testament. Esther is given in its longer (Greek) form rather than in the version based solely on the Hebrew text; the Prayer of Azariah and Song of the Three Jews appear as vv. 24–90 of ch 3 of Daniel, and the stories of Susanna and Bel and the Dragon as chs 13 and 14 of Daniel. An appendix after the New Testament contains the Prayer of Manasseh and 1 and 2 Esdras, without implying canonical status.

The Eastern Orthodox Churches recognize several other books as authoritative. Editions of the Old Testament approved by the Holy Synod of the Greek Orthodox Church contain, besides the Roman Catholic Deuterocanonical books, 1 Esdras, Psalm 151, the Prayer of Manasseh, and 3 Maccabees, while 4 Maccabees appears in an appendix. Slavonic Bibles approved by the Russian Orthodox Church contain, besides the Deuterocanonical books, 1 and 2 Esdras (called 2 and 3 Esdras), Psalm 151, and 3 Maccabees.

Protestant Bibles have followed the Hebrew canon, though in a different order. The disputed books, if they are included at all, have generally been placed in a separate section, usually bound between the Old and New Testaments, but occasionally placed after the close of the New Testament.

Here is a list of the Apocryphal/Deuterocanonical books in the order in which they are found in this Bible, showing which religious communities accept them as scripture:

	ROMAN CATHOLIC	GREEK ORTHODOX	SLAVONIC (RUSSIAN ORTHODOX)	LATIN VULGATE APPENDIX	GREEK APPENDIX	PROTESTANT/ ANGLICAN APOCRYPHA
Tobit	•	•	•			•
Judith	•	•	•			•
Additions to Esther	•	•	•			•
Wisdom of Solomon	•	•	•			•
Ecclesiasticus[1]	•	•	•			•
Baruch	•	•	•			•
Letter of Jeremiah (Baruch ch.6)	•	•	•			•
Additions to Daniel	•	•	•			•
1 Maccabees	•	•	•			•
2 Maccabees	•	•	•			•
1 Esdras[2]		•	•	•		•
Prayer of Manasseh		•	•	•		•
Psalm 151		•	•			
3 Maccabees		•	•			
2 Esdras[3]			•	•		•
4 Maccabees					•	

[1] Also called The Wisdom of Jesus, Son of Sirach, or simply Sirach.
[2] 2 Esdras in Slavonic; 3 Esdras in Appendix to Vulgate; In the Vulgate, Ezra-Nehemiah are 1 and 2 Esdras.
[3] 3 Esdras in Slavonic; 4 Esdras in Vulgate Appendix.

THE STATUS OF THE APOCRYPHAL/DEUTEROCANONICAL BOOKS IN CHRISTIANITY

During the first centuries of the Common Era, early Christian theologians (most of whom knew no Hebrew) quoted, in Greek, passages both from books in the Hebrew canon and from these additional works without making any distinction between them. Such citations were usually preceded by a word or phrase making it clear that the writer regarded the text being cited as canonical. During this time, only a few thinkers investigated the Jewish canon or distinguished between, for instance, the Hebrew text of Daniel and the addition of the story of Susanna in the Greek version.

By the fourth century, theologians in the Eastern (Greek) churches had begun to recognize a distinction between the books in the Hebrew canon and the rest, though they continued to cite all of them as scripture. During the following centuries the matter was debated and, consequently, practice varied in the East, but at the Synod of Jerusalem in 1672 (which expressed the Orthodox churches' reaction to the Protestant Reforma-

tion), Tobit, Judith, Ecclesiasticus (Sirach), Wisdom, Additions to Daniel, and 1 and 2 Maccabees were expressly designated as canonical.

In the Western (Latin) church, on the other hand, though there was some variety of opinion, in general theologians regarded these books as canonical. More than one local synodical council (e.g., Hippo, 393, and Carthage, 397 and 419) justified and authorized their use as scripture. The so-called *Decretum Gelasianum,* a Latin document probably dating to the sixth century, contains lists of the books to be read as scripture and of books to be avoided as apocryphal. The former list, which is not present in all the manuscripts, includes among the biblical books Tobit, Judith, Wisdom, Ecclesiasticus (Sirach), and 1 and 2 Maccabees.

Occasionally, however, theologians questioned the status of these books. Jerome, near the end of the fourth century, thought that books not in the Hebrew canon should be designated as apocryphal, and other thinkers, though always a minority, followed his view, at least theoretically. Toward the close of the fourteenth century John Wycliffe and his disciples produced the first English version of the Bible. This translation of the Latin Vulgate included all of the disputed books, with the exception of 2 Esdras. In the Prologue to the Old Testament, however, it makes a distinction between the books of the Hebrew canon, listed there, and the others which, the writer says, "shall be set among apocrypha, that is, without authority of belief." In the books of Esther and Daniel, the translators included a rendering of Jerome's notes calling the reader's attention to the additions.

At the time of the Reformation, Protestant thinkers came to the conclusion fairly early that they would need to determine which books were authoritative for the establishment of doctrine and which were not. For instance, disputes over the doctrine of purgatory and of the usefulness of prayers and masses for the dead involved the authority of 2 Maccabees, which contains what was held to be scriptural warrant for them (12.43–45). The first extensive Protestant discussion of the canon was Andreas Bodenstein's treatise *De Canonicis Scripturis Libellus* (1520). Bodenstein (or Carlstadt, after his place of birth) distinguished the books of the Hebrew Bible from the books of the Apocrypha, classifying the Apocrypha into two divisions. Concerning Wisdom, Ecclesiasticus (Sirach), Judith, Tobit, and 1 and 2 Maccabees, he says, "These are Apocrypha, that is, are outside the Hebrew canon; yet they are holy writings" (sect. 114). He continues:

> What they contain is not to be despised at once; still it is not right that Christians should relieve, much less slake, their thirst with them. . . . Before all things the best books must be read, that is, those that are canonical beyond all controversy; afterwards, if one has the time, it is allowed to peruse the controverted books, provided that you have the set purpose of comparing and collating the non-canonical books with those which are truly canonical (sect. 118).

The second group, 1 and 2 Esdras, Baruch, Prayer of Manasseh, and the Additions to Daniel, he declared without worth.

The first Bible in a modern vernacular language to segregate the apocryphal books from the others was the Dutch Bible published by Jacob van Liesveldt in 1526 at Antwerp. After Malachi there follows a section embodying the Apocrypha titled "The books which are not in the canon, that is to say, which one does not find among the Jews in the Hebrew."

The first edition of the Swiss-German Bible was published in six volumes (Zurich, 1527–29), the fifth of which contains the Apocrypha. The title page of this volume states, "These are the books which are not reckoned as biblical by the ancients, nor are found among the Hebrews." A one-volume edition of the Zurich Bible, which appeared in 1530, contains the apocryphal books grouped together after the New Testament. One Swiss reformer, Oecolampadius, declared in 1530: "We do not despise Judith, Tobit, Ecclesiasticus, Baruch, the last two books of Esdras, the three books of Maccabees, the Additions to Daniel; but we do not allow them divine authority with the others."

In reaction to Protestant criticism of the disputed books, in 1546 the Council of Trent gave what is regarded by Roman Catholics as the definitive declaration on the canon of the scriptures. After enumerating the books, which in the Old Testament include Tobit, Judith, Wisdom, Ecclesiasticus (Sirach), Baruch, and the two books of Maccabees, the decree pronounces an anathema upon anyone who "does not accept as sacred and canonical the aforesaid books in their entirety and with all their parts, as they have been accustomed to be read in the Catholic Church and as they are contained in the old Latin Vulgate Edition" (trans. H. J. Schroeder). The reference to "books in their entirety and with all their parts" is intended to cover the Letter of Jeremiah as ch 6

of Baruch, the Additions to Esther, and the chapters in Daniel including the Prayer of Azariah, the Song of the Three Jews, Susanna, and Bel and the Dragon. It is noteworthy, however, that the Prayer of Manasseh and 1 and 2 Esdras, although included in some manuscripts of the Latin Vulgate, were denied canonical status by the Council of Trent. In the official edition of the Vulgate, published in 1592, these three are printed as an appendix after the New Testament, "lest they should perish altogether."

In England, even though Protestants were unanimous in declaring that the apocryphal books were not to be used to establish any doctrine, differences arose as to the proper use and place of noncanonical books. A milder view prevailed in the Church of England, and the lectionary attached to the Book of Common Prayer, from 1549 on, has always contained prescribed lessons from the Apocrypha. In addition, portions of the Song of the Three Jews are used as a canticle, or song of praise, alongside selected Psalms in the service of Morning Prayer. In reply to those who urged the discontinuance of reading lessons from apocryphal books, as being inconsistent with the sufficiency of scripture, the bishops at the Savoy Conference, held in 1661, replied that the same objection could be raised against the preaching of sermons, and that it was much to be desired that all sermons should give as useful instruction as did the chapters selected from the Apocrypha.

The Puritans took a stricter view, and some Geneva Bibles, printed in 1599 mainly in the Low Countries, excluded the Apocrypha. The omission of the Apocrypha was presumably due to those responsible for binding the copies, since the titles of the apocryphal books occur in the table of contents. During subsequent centuries Bibles that lacked the books of the Apocrypha came to outnumber those that included them, and soon it became difficult to obtain ordinary editions of the King James Version containing the Apocrypha.

(For a more complete account of the formation of the various canons of scripture, see "The Canons of the Bible" on p 2185.)

THE HISTORICAL BACKGROUND TO THE APOCRYPHAL/DEUTEROCANONICAL BOOKS

With the destruction of Jerusalem and the Temple by the Babylonians under Nebuchadnezzar in 586 BCE, and the subsequent exile of many Judeans to Babylon, the history of Israel underwent a decisive break. Henceforth there would always be Jewish communities outside the land of Israel (the Diaspora), and even after the Persian king Cyrus allowed the exiles to return in 538 BCE, large communities flourished in Babylon and elsewhere.

For two centuries the Persians controlled the Near East. The rebuilt Temple became the institutional focus of the province of Judah. Although details are uncertain, this era probably saw important work on the editing of the Pentateuch and the prophetic writings, as well as the composition of other literature. The Persian period came to an end when Alexander the Great completed a series of conquests that put him in control of the former Persian empire, including Egypt. When Alexander died in 323, his empire was divided among his warring generals, and two of them—Seleucus, king of Syria, and Ptolemy, king of Egypt—and their successors fought over the territory of Judah, which fell first under Ptolemaic and then Seleucid dynastic control. Despite the political changes, however, the overall cultural influence remained: This was the era of the triumph of Hellenistic culture, including the use of the Greek language as the standard for the whole empire.

There had already been, in the Hebrew Bible, contention about such issues as intermarriage (Ezra 9.1–10.44; Neh 13.23–31). Now, with large numbers of Jews living outside the land as minorities within much larger and more dominant cultures, this issue and those of other religious observances came to be much more important. Stories of faithfully observant Jews among non-Jewish populations (Tobit, 3 Macc) were joined by expanded versions of books that strengthened this point (Greek Esther, the Prayer of Azariah, and Song of the Three Jews in ch 3 of Daniel).

Jews both in the Diaspora and in Judah appropriated many elements of Hellenistic culture, usually without incident. During the second century BCE, however, an attempt to establish Hellenistic educational and civic institutions in Jerusalem created a crisis when the persons involved bribed King Antiochus IV Epiphanes (175–164) to appoint Hellenizing high priests (Jason and Menelaus) and funds were taken from the Temple itself to pay the king. In response to the ensuing violence, Antiochus invaded Jerusalem in 169; in 167 he effectively outlawed the Jewish religion, making the teaching of the Torah a crime and establishing polytheistic worship in the Temple. This final provocation led to the ultimately successful Jewish revolt under the Hasmonean family, led by Mattathias and his five sons, one of whom, Judas, was known as Maccabeus, "the hammer." The revolt and the subsequent establishment of a Jewish government (which took more than twenty years to accomplish) are therefore referred to as Maccabean. This rule lasted for eighty years, until (because of constant power struggles among the various factions of Jews) the Romans were able to intervene and take direct control of the territory in 63 BCE.

KINDS OF LITERATURE IN THE APOCRYPHAL/DEUTEROCANONICAL BOOKS

The Apocryphal/Deuterocanonical books contain several different literary genres, including histories, historical fiction, wisdom, devotional writings, letters, and an apocalypse. Though several of the books combine more than one of these genres, most of the books can be classified as predominantly one type or another. Thus 1 Esdras, 1 Maccabees, and in a certain sense, 2 Maccabees are histories. First Esdras summarizes 2 Chr 35.1–36.23 and reproduces all of Ezra and Neh 7.38–8.12. Only 1 Esd 3.1–5.6 is a significant addition. First Maccabees recounts the history of the Seleucid persecutions and the rebellion and rise of the Maccabees. Second Maccabees, with its bombastic rhetoric and abundant use of invectives against the Seleucid tyrants and Hellenizing Jews, is an example of a popular Hellenistic genre, the "pathetic history," which uses highly charged language, exhortation, exaggeration, and other methods to stimulate the imaginations and emotions ("pathos") of readers. Third Maccabees is misleadingly named: It actually has nothing to do with the Maccabean period or the Seleucid dynasty, but deals with a period a half-century earlier and concerns the sufferings of the Jewish community in Egypt under the Ptolemaic rulers. It is a religious novel, written in Greek by an Alexandrian Jew sometime after 30 BCE. Using legendary elements, it tells three stories of conflict between Ptolemy IV (221–204) and the Jewish community in Egypt. The most dramatic section (5.1–6.21) describes Ptolemy's scheme to martyr the Jews: They were to be herded into an arena near Alexandria to be trampled under the feet of five hundred intoxicated elephants. The king's plan was finally foiled when angelic intervention terrorized those supervising the persecutions and also frightened the elephants into turning upon the Egyptian soldiers.

Fourth Maccabees is not a historical narrative but rather a Greek philosophical treatise addressed to Jews on the supremacy of reason over the passions of body and soul. In the form of a Stoic diatribe, or popular address, it uses narratives of exemplary behavior, and the conversations and arguments of characters in the narratives, to explore philosophical issues. The author begins with a theoretical exposition of his theme, which he then illustrates at length with examples of the martyrs drawn from 2 Maccabees, who preferred death to committing apostasy. The book was probably written by a Hellenistic Jew before 70 CE. In early Christianity the Maccabean martyrs were venerated as saints and eventually accorded a yearly festival in the ecclesiastical calendar (August 1).

Judith, Tobit, Susanna, and Bel and the Dragon are short historical fictions written to convey a moral point, as well as to entertain. Except for Judith, which is set in Judah, the rest are sometimes referred to as "Diaspora novels" since they are all set in the Jewish Diaspora of Mesopotamia. Yet they differ from one another in other respects. Like the canonical stories of Daniel 1–6, Bel and the Dragon is a court tale, in which the hero's relationship with the king and other members of the court provides the conflict of the plot. The motif of the lion's den, which occurs in Daniel 6, also occurs in the story of the dragon. In contrast to the earlier Daniel tales, however, Bel and the Dragon is preoccupied with the theme of the exposure of idols as false gods and their priests as fraudulent (see also the Letter of Jeremiah). Bel and the Dragon and Susanna are sometimes referred to as ancient examples of the detective story. Whereas Daniel functioned as an interpreter of dreams and visions in Daniel 1–6, in these stories Daniel uses cleverness and logical deduction to uncover deception.

Although Tobit, like Daniel, is presented as a court official of a Mesopotamian king, the story is concerned with personal and family affairs, not a rivalry at court. Thematically, Tobit may be compared with the prose story of Job, since it concerns the suffering of the righteous (both Tobit and his daughter-in-law Sarah). The book of Tobit is distinguished by the use of various folktale motifs (e.g., the motifs of the grateful dead, the angel in disguise, the dangerous bride, and the demon lover), and by its references to Ahikar, the hero of a non-Jewish folktale from Mesopotamia.

Judith might seem to bear comparison with 1 and 2 Maccabees, since it concerns a threat to the people from a foreign army. But whereas 1 and 2 Maccabees are histories, the fictional nature of Judith is evident from the story's flagrant historical inaccuracies, such as describing Nebuchadnezzar as king of Assyria and the invasion as taking place after the people's return from exile. A better comparison might be between Judith and Esther. Though set in Judah rather than the Diaspora, Judith, like Esther, tells how a courageous Jewish woman saves her people from enemies bent on destroying them.

Didactic literature is represented in the Apocrypha by the two treatises on wisdom: the Wisdom of Solomon, and the Wisdom of Jesus son of Sirach (also known as Ecclesiasticus). Sirach, which was originally composed in Hebrew ca. 180 BCE, shows particularly close connections with the style and content of the book of Proverbs in the Hebrew Bible, from which it is a natural development. The Wisdom of Solomon, by contrast, contains no proverbial material, such as characterizes the Hebrew wisdom tradition. It does, however, share

with Proverbs and Sirach an interest in the figure of wisdom personified as a woman. What makes the Wisdom of Solomon distinctive is the strong influence of Greek literary styles and philosophical ideas. Thus, it comes from the Greek-speaking Diaspora, most probably from Alexandria in Egypt.

The Prayer of Manasseh is a hymnic lament of great feeling and literary skill. The Prayer of Azariah and the Song of the Three Jews are both modeled on psalms that are liturgical in form. In addition to the 150 psalms comprising the book of Psalms in the Hebrew Bible, during the Hellenistic and Roman periods such hymns were composed in Hebrew and in other languages; there are a number of such compositions in the Dead Sea Scrolls. Another, which celebrates the prowess of young David in slaying Goliath, is appended (as Ps 151) to the book of Psalms in Greek manuscripts.

The Hebrew Bible contains no books that are in the form of a letter, although letters or excerpts from letters occur at various places. There are decrees (Ezra 1.1–6), diplomatic correspondence (1 Kings 5.2–6), royal commands (2 Sam 11.14–15), even forgeries (1 Kings 21.8–10), but all are used to advance the narratives in which they occur, or explain incidents that follow, so it is unclear how representative they are. Twenty-one of the twenty-seven books of the New Testament are in the form of letters, but some (for instance, Hebrews) are more like sermons than letters. The Letter of Jeremiah, which dates from the Hellenistic period, may have provided later, Christian writers with an example of how this literary form could be used for religious purposes, combining theological content with a direct personal approach.

Finally, 2 Esdras, a book that purports to reveal the future, belongs to the genre of apocalypse, a word that literally means "an unveiling." Like the last six chapters of Daniel in the Hebrew Bible and the book of Revelation in the New Testament, which also are apocalypses, 2 Esdras uses metaphoric language, symbolic numbers, and angelic messengers who reveal hidden information.

Despite this diversity of genres, most of which parallel or are developed from similar ones in the Hebrew Bible, there is no correlative to classical prophecy. Even within the prophetic books of the Hebrew Bible, apocalyptic elements had already begun to supplant strict prophecy (for instance, Isa chs 24–27; Ezek chs 38–39; Joel ch 2; Zech chs 9–14). This absence perhaps supports the view of the late first-century CE historian Josephus (*Ag. Ap.* 1.8), that "the exact succession of the prophets" had been broken after the Persian period; a similar idea is found in later rabbinic literature. Sometimes there is a direct statement that "prophets ceased to appear" (1 Macc 9.27); at other times the writers express the hope that prophecy might one day return (1 Macc 4.46; 14.41). When a writer imitates prophetic style, as in the book of Baruch, he repeats with slight modifications the language of the older prophets. But the introductory phrase, "Thus says the Lord," which occurs so frequently in the prophetic literature of the Hebrew Bible, is absent from the Apocryphal/Deuterocanonical Books.

THE APOCRYPHAL/DEUTEROCANONICAL BOOKS WITHIN JUDAISM

All of the writings in the Apocryphal/Deuterocanonical books are Jewish in origin, but it is not clear that they were collected by any particular community of Jews. Some of them (for instance, Sirach) were quoted by rabbis, but for others no evidence exists that they were regarded as central to the Jewish community at any point. Some (Tobit, parts of Sirach, the Letter of Jeremiah, and Psalm 151) are among the Dead Sea Scrolls, and were therefore presumably of importance to the Essene community there, but whether or not they were considered canonical is not clear.

Nevertheless, influences from some of these works are apparent within Judaism. As mentioned above, rabbinic literature quotes and appropriates sayings from Sirach. The martyrdom of the woman and her seven sons (2 Macc 7.1–42; 4 Macc 8.3–18.24) is recounted in several places (*Lam. Rab.* 1.50; *b. Git.* 57b; *Seder Eliyahu R.* 29).

First and Second Maccabees (1 Macc 4.36–59; 2 Macc 10.1–8) provide the original accounts of the purification of the Temple in 164 BCE, which is commemorated in the festival of Hanukkah. The Talmudic legend (*b. Shabb.* 21b) that oil in the Temple, though only enough for one day nevertheless burned for eight—the supposed reason for the eight-day length of the observance—is not found in the books of Maccabees. Judith was, during the Middle Ages, associated with Hanukkah as well, on the grounds that both had to do with rallying an oppressed Jewish population to overthrow a threatening or occupying power.

Both Tobit and 2 Esdras influenced later Jewish literature and were popular during the Middle Ages. Baruch may have been read in synagogues at one time (see Bar 1.14), and Baruch himself, and therefore his writing, were regarded in some rabbinic writings as sharing Jeremiah's prophetic status (*Sifre Num.* 78; *Seder Olam R.* 20; *b. B. Bat.* 14b; Jer. Sot. 9.12). Susanna's story is recounted in the Babylonian Talmud (*b. San.* 93a).

The sense of a canon of scripture emerged only gradually in Judaism. During the time in which the Apocryphal/Deuterocanonical books were composed, the Torah (Pentateuch), the Prophets, and possibly the book of Psalms were considered authoritative. Many other writings, both those now in the Jewish canon and additional ones, were widely popular but did not have the status of scripture. A sense of a closed set of authoritative books emerged only in the first century CE, and even then there was some uncertainty about its extent. Josephus, however, says that "there are not with us myriads of books, discordant and discrepant, but only twenty-two, comprising the history of all time, which are justly accredited" (*Ag. Ap.*1.43).

Even if these additional writings were not considered scripture, they were often read and cited. Josephus himself makes use of 1 Esdras, 1 Maccabees, and the additions to Esther. Early rabbinic literature, however, makes no mention of any of these books except for Sirach, which is frequently quoted. The rabbis were, however, aware of the festival of Hanukkah, which is described in 1 and 2 Maccabees. During the Middle Ages, Jews became reacquainted with some of the Apocryphal/Deuterocanonical works from Christian sources and retranslated Tobit and Judith into Hebrew. The entire Apocrypha/Deuterocanon was translated into Hebrew in the early sixteenth century.

NEW TESTAMENT USES OF THE APOCRYPHAL/DEUTEROCANONICAL BOOKS

None of the books of the New Testament quotes directly from any Apocryphal book, in contrast to the frequent quotation of the thirty-nine books in the Hebrew Bible. Several New Testament writers, however, do allude to one or more apocryphal books. For example, what seem to be literary echoes from the Wisdom of Solomon are present in Paul's Letter to the Romans (compare Rom 1.20–29 with Wis 13.5,8; 14.24,27; and Rom 9.20–23 with Wis 12.12,20; 15.7) and in his correspondence with the Corinthians (compare 2 Cor 5.1,4 with Wis 9.15). The short Letter of James, a typical bit of "wisdom literature" in the New Testament, contains allusions not only to the book of Proverbs in the Hebrew Bible but to gnomic sayings in Sirach as well (compare Jas 1.19 with Sir 5.11; and Jas 1.13 with Sir 15.11–12).

THE FURTHER INFLUENCE OF THE APOCRYPHAL/DEUTEROCANONICAL BOOKS

The influence of the Apocrypha has been widespread, inspiring homilies, meditations, and liturgical forms, and providing subjects for poets, dramatists, composers, and artists. Some common expressions and proverbs have come from the Apocrypha. The sayings, "A good name endures forever" and "You can't touch pitch without being defiled," are derived from Sir 41.13 and 13.1. The affirmation in 1 Esd 4.41, "Great is Truth, and mighty above all things" (King James Version), or its Latin form, *Magna est veritas et praevalet,* has been used as a motto or maxim in a wide variety of contexts.

The importance of these books extends to the information they supply concerning the development of Jewish life and thought just prior to the beginning of the Common Era. The stirring political fortunes of the Jews in the time of the Maccabees; the rise of what has been called normative Judaism, and the emergence of the sects of the Pharisees and the Sadducees; the lush growth of popular belief in the activities of angels and demons, and the use of magic to drive away malevolent influences; the first reflections on "original sin" and its relation to the "evil inclination" present in every person; the blossoming of apocalyptic hopes relating to the messiah, the resurrection of the body, and the vindication of the righteous—all these and many other topics are to be found in the Apocryphal/Deuterocanonical books.

(a) The books and parts of books from Tobit through 2 Maccabees are recognized as Deuterocanonical Scripture by the Roman Catholic, Greek, and Russian Orthodox Churches.

TOBIT

NAME AND CANONICAL STATUS

The book is named for its principal character, Tobit. The name is the Greek form of Hebrew *Tobi*, meaning "my good," possibly an abbreviation for *Tobiah,* "Yahweh is my good," or *Tobiel,* "God is my good." The book is not included in the Protestant or Jewish canons, but it is canonical in the Roman Catholic and Orthodox Churches. The Anglican Church and some other communions also recognize Tobit as Scripture for the purpose of edification but not for doctrine.

AUTHORSHIP, TEXT, AND DATE OF COMPOSITION

The author of the book is unknown. Although the original language was likely Aramaic, only fragments of that text have survived. The translation below is based on the Greek text of Codex Sinaiticus; other versions include two additional Greek recensions, the Old Latin, Jerome's Vulgate, a medieval Aramaic rendering, Coptic, Syriac, Ethiopic, and Armenian. Fragments in both Hebrew and Aramaic were found among the Dead Sea Scrolls. The book likely dates to sometime in the third or possibly early second century BCE; its place of composition remains unknown, with plausible suggestions including the eastern Diaspora, Egypt, and Israel.

CONTENTS AND STRUCTURE

After the Assyrian conquest of the Northern Kingdom of Israel in 722 BCE, Tobit, his wife Anna, and his son Tobias were exiled from their home in Galilee to Assyria. There Tobit, like Joseph (in Gen 39–50), Mordecai (in the book of Esther), and Daniel (in the book of Daniel), found himself in the service of a foreign ruler, as an officer in the court of the Assyrian king Shalmaneser. This pious Israelite too was tested: Shalmaneser's successor removed Tobit from his official position and then persecuted him for his insistence on burying the unattended corpses of his fellow Jews. One evening, following yet another burial, Tobit was blinded by a bird with unfortunate aim. Dependent on others, including his wife, for economic support, and following an argument with her in which she questioned the value of his piety, Tobit prayed for death. At the same time his relative Sarah was also praying for death. The demon Asmodeus, who was in love with her, had killed each of her seven successive grooms on their wedding nights. To resolve these improbable situations, the angel Raphael, in disguise as Tobias's traveling companion, escorts the young man first to Media to exorcise the demon and marry Sarah and then back to Nineveh to cure Tobit.

The complex plot is tied together by the parallel situations of Tobit and Sarah, prayers of praise and references to almsgiving, and frequent supernatural events. Its humorous aspects—from the angel in disguise to the attack of a magical fish—make the stories of Tobit and Sarah almost farcical and so prevent the book from becoming tragic or maudlin. Readers familiar with biblical literature will recognize familiar motifs and themes in the narrative: wisdom sayings; the antipathy between the matriarch Sarah and her slave Hagar (Gen 16; 21); the search for a bride for Isaac (Gen 24); the successes and trials of the Jew in the royal court; the problems of life in the Diaspora; Job's trials; the role of angels; the centrality of Jerusalem; the fulfillment of prophecy; and, especially, the importance of charity. The numerous personal prayers, similar to those found in the stories of Judith, Daniel (including the Additions), the Greek Additions to Esther, and elsewhere in postexilic Jewish literature, emphasize the universal authority and righteousness of God.

INTERPRETATION AND GUIDE TO READING

Combining ethical exhortation and prayers with broad humor, a rollicking plot, and vivid characters, the book of Tobit is both entertaining and edifying. It offers to a Diaspora community guidelines on how to preserve their identity, to historians indirect information about the postexilic period, and to theologians a view of a God who tests the faithful, responds to prayers, and redeems the covenant community.

The book of Tobit is also replete with information concerning family life, travel, burial and eating customs, gender roles, and medicine. These matters testify to the author's interest in providing guidance for life in Diaspora: Where Temple sacrifice is unavailable and the people are scattered, the story insists that Jews maintain their identity not only through piety and practice but also through strong bonds between parents and children,

between husbands and wives, and with family members and fellow Jews. To preserve the community, Tobit insists that his son imitate Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, who "took wives from among their kindred" (4.12–13).

The book also has connections to well-known folktale motifs, including the dangerous bride, the monster in the nuptial chamber, the supernatural being in disguise, the miraculous animal, and the grateful dead. Specifically mentioned are the characters of an Assyrian official Ahikar and his nephew, from a story well known in antiquity; there may also be hints of Homer's *Odyssey* and Sophocles's *Antigone*.

Amy-Jill Levine

1 This book tells the story of Tobit son of Tobiel son of Hananiel son of Aduel son of Gabael son of Raphael son of Raguel of the descendants[a] of Asiel, of the tribe of Naphtali, [2] who in the days of King Shalmaneser[b] of the Assyrians was taken into captivity from Thisbe, which is to the south of Kedesh Naphtali in Upper Galilee, above Asher toward the west, and north of Phogor.

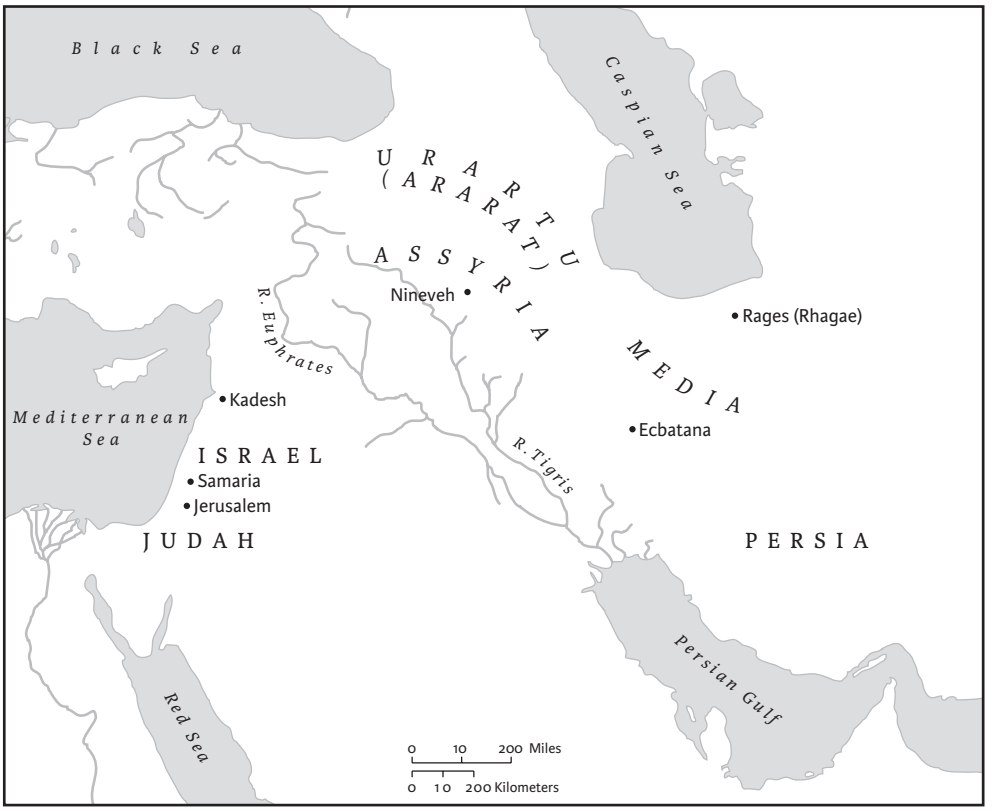
[3] I, Tobit, walked in the ways of truth and righteousness all the days of my life. I performed many acts of charity for my kindred and my people who had gone with me in exile to Nineveh in the land of the Assyrians. [4] When I was in my own country, in the land of Israel, while I was still a young man, the whole tribe of my ancestor Naphtali deserted the house of David and Jerusalem. This city had been chosen from among all the tribes of Israel, where all the tribes of Israel should offer sacrifice and where the temple, the dwelling of God, had been consecrated and established for all generations forever.

[5] All my kindred and our ancestral house of Naphtali sacrificed to the calf[c] that King Jeroboam of Israel had erected in Dan and on all the mountains of Galilee. [6] But I alone went often to Jerusalem for the festivals, as it is prescribed for all Israel by an everlasting decree. I would hurry off to Jerusalem with the first fruits of the crops and the firstlings of the flock, the tithes of the cattle, and the first shearings of the sheep. [7] I would give these to the priests, the sons of Aaron, at the altar; likewise the tenth of the grain, wine, olive oil, pomegranates, figs, and the rest of the fruits to the sons of Levi who ministered

[a] Other ancient authorities lack *of Raphael son of Raguel of the descendants*
[b] Gk *Enemessaros*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *heifer*

1.1–2: Exilic context. The superscription establishes Tobit's location and genealogy. **1:** *Tobiel*, "God is my good"; *Hananiel*, "God has shown mercy"; the names of his family members have the suffix *el*, meaning "God." Genealogy becomes increasingly important in Second Temple Judaism (see Ezra 2; 8.1–20; Neh 7.5–73; 11.1–12.26; Jdt 8; Mt 1; Lk 3). **2:** *Shalmaneser* V, ruled 727–722 BCE. Shalmaneser's predecessor, Tiglath-pileser III (ruled 745–727) deported the Naphtalites to Assyria (2 Kings 15.29); in 722 Sargon of Assyria, Shalmaneser's brother and successor, conquered Samaria, Israel's capital and resettled substantial portions of the population (2 Kings 17.1–6). *Kedesh*, in northern Galilee, defeated by Joshua (Josh 12.22; 19.37), was the home of Deborah's general Barak (Judg 4.6) and site of a Maccabean victory (1 Macc 11.63,73). *Asher* may be a Greek spelling of Hazor, ca. 6 mi (10 km) south-southeast of Kedesh. *Thisbe* and *Phogor* have not been identified.

1.3–9: Tobit's background. **3–4:** Tobit, who speaks in the first person in 1.3–3.1, consistently emphasizes his own righteousness despite Israel's apostasy. Walking *in the ways of truth and righteousness* is a prominent motif of the Israelite wisdom tradition (see Prov 2.7–9; 4.11). **3:** *Nineveh*, the capital of Assyria. **4:** Tobit's life span, ranging from before 928 to after 722 BCE (but see 14.2), indicates the tale's fictional nature (the book of Judith similarly displays chronological fiction). *Naphtali* was one of the ten northern tribes that rebelled in 928 BCE against the dynasty founded by David (1 Kings 12.19–20); Tobit nevertheless consistently expresses concern for Jerusalem, the capital of the Southern Kingdom of Judah. **5:** *Calf*, 1 Kings 12.28–29; *Dan* is northeast of Kedesh (see 1.2n.). **6:** Participation in the pilgrimage *festivals* (Deut 12.11) of Booths (Sukkot), Passover (Pesach), and Weeks (Shavuot/Pentecost) entailed the giving of *first fruits* (Deut 26.1–11), *firstlings* (Ex 13.12), *tithes of the cattle* (Lev 27.32), and *first shearings of the sheep* (Deut 18.4). The extent of Tobit's pilgrimages and sacrificial activity emphasizes his faithfulness to the Torah, in contrast to his kin. **7–8:** For tithing of produce, see Lev 27.30; Deut



The geography of Tobit.

at Jerusalem. Also for six years I would save up a second tenth in money and go and distribute it in Jerusalem. [8] A third tenth[a] I would give to the orphans and widows and to the converts who had attached themselves to Israel. I would bring it and give it to them in the third year, and we would eat it according to the ordinance decreed concerning it in the law of Moses and according to the instructions of Deborah, the mother of my father Tobiel,[b] for my father had died and left me an orphan. [9] When I became a man I married a woman,[c] a member of our own family, and by her I became the father of a son whom I named Tobias.

[10] After I was carried away captive to Assyria and came as a captive to Nineveh, everyone of my kindred and my people ate the food of the Gentiles, [11] but I kept myself from eating the food of the Gentiles. [12] Because I was mindful of God with all my heart, [13] the Most High gave me favor and good

[a] *A third tenth* added from other ancient authorities
[b] Lat: Gk *Hananiel*
[c] Other ancient authorities add *Anna*

14.22. For the distribution of tithes to *Levites, orphans, and widows*, see Deut 14.27–29. **8:** *Deborah* indicates women's roles in religious education (see Prov 1.8; Sir 3.2); the name may have some connection to Kedesh and Naphtali (Judg 4–5; Tob 1.2n.). **9:** Endogamy, i.e., marriage within the kinship group, is a major theme (3.17; 4.12–13; 6.11–12; 7.10–11; cf. Gen 11.29; 24.3–4; 27.46–28.2; Deut 7.3–4; Ezra 9–10; Neh 10.28–30; but contrast the marriages of Ruth and Esther). Intermarriage became a particularly acute issue in the Diaspora.

1.10–22: Early captivity. The setting and Tobit's initial political success resemble that of Dan 1–6. Like Daniel and his companions (Dan 1.8–20), Esther (Add Esth 14.17), and Judith (Jdt 12.1–3), Tobit follows Jewish dietary laws (e.g., Lev 11.1–47; Deut 14.3–21). **13:** Tobit regards his political office as steward as a reward for righteous-

standing with Shalmaneser,[a] and I used to buy everything he needed. 14 Until his death I used to go into Media, and buy for him there. While in the country of Media I left bags of silver worth ten talents in trust with Gabael, the brother of Gabri. 15 But when Shalmaneser[a] died, and his son Sennacherib reigned in his place, the highways into Media became unsafe and I could no longer go there.

16 In the days of Shalmaneser[a] I performed many acts of charity to my kindred, those of my tribe. 17 I would give my food to the hungry and my clothing to the naked; and if I saw the dead body of any of my people thrown out behind the wall of Nineveh, I would bury it. 18 I also buried any whom King Sennacherib put to death when he came fleeing from Judea in those days of judgment that the king of heaven executed upon him because of his blasphemies. For in his anger he put to death many Israelites; but I would secretly remove the bodies and bury them. So when Sennacherib looked for them he could not find them. 19 Then one of the Ninevites went and informed the king about me, that I was burying them; so I hid myself. But when I realized that the king knew about me and that I was being searched for to be put to death, I was afraid and ran away. 20 Then all my property was confiscated; nothing was left to me that was not taken into the royal treasury except my wife Anna and my son Tobias.

21 But not forty[b] days passed before two of Sennacherib's[c] sons killed him, and they fled to the mountains of Ararat, and his son Esar-haddon[d] reigned after him. He appointed Ahikar, the son of my brother Hanael[e] over all the accounts of his kingdom, and he had authority over the entire administration. 22 Ahikar interceded for me, and I returned to Nineveh. Now Ahikar was chief cupbearer, keeper of the signet, and in charge of administration of the accounts under King Sennacherib of Assyria; so Esar-haddon[d] reappointed him. He was my nephew and so a close relative.

2 Then during the reign of Esar-haddon[d] I returned home, and my wife Anna and my son Tobias were restored to me. At our festival of Pentecost, which is the sacred festival of weeks, a good dinner was prepared for me and I reclined to eat. 2 When the table was set for me and an abundance of food placed before me, I said to my son Tobias, "Go, my child, and bring whatever poor person you may find of our people among the exiles in Nineveh, who is wholeheartedly mindful of God,[f] and he shall eat together with me. I will wait for you, until you come back." 3 So Tobias went to look for some poor person of our people. When he had returned he said, "Father!" And I replied, "Here I am, my child."

[a] Gk *Enemessaros*
[b] Other ancient authorities read either *forty-five* or *fifty*
[c] Gk *his*
[d] Gk *Sacherdonos*
[e] Other authorities read *Hananael*
[f] Lat: Gk *wholeheartedly mindful*

ness; later events temporarily question such justice. *Shalmaneser,* see 1.2n. **14:** *Media* (northern Iran) is east of Assyria; on Israelites exiled there, see 2 Kings 17.6. *Ten talents* is approximately 750 lb (350 kg). **15:** Sargon II (ruled 721–705 BCE), not Shalmaneser, was *Sennacherib*'s father (see 1.2n.,18–20n.). Similar historical inaccuracies mark the opening of the book of Judith. **16–17:** Tobit continues his earlier charitable works (1.3). Burying corpses is his principal sign of righteousness (1.18–20; 2.3–8; 4.3–4; 6.15; 14.10–133); their unburied presence indicates Assyria's brutality (Deut 28.26; 1 Kings 14.11; 21.24; Jer 7.33; Ezek 29.5), for even executed criminals deserved proper burial (Deut 21.22–23). *Nineveh,* see 1.3n. **18:** Sennacherib (ruled 705–681) succeeded his father Sargon II in 705 BCE. *Fleeing . . . in those days of judgment*, a reference to the defeat of Sennacherib by divine intervention; see 2 Kings 19.35–36. **19:** Like Sophocles's Antigone, Tobit is threatened with death for burying the executed; cf. 2 Sam 21.8–14. **20:** Like Daniel and his companions (Dan 3; 6), Tobit is persecuted for practicing Jewish piety. **21:** *Killed him*, see 2 Kings 19.37. *Esar-haddon* reigned 681–669 BCE. **21–22:** *Ahikar* is a well-known figure in Semitic stories; a copy of the Aramaic book of Ahikar, dating to the early fifth century BCE, was found among a cache of papyri from a Jewish colony in Elephantine in southern Egypt. Ahikar's relationship to Tobit, noted only in this book, enhances Tobit's status. Ahikar's own story is summarized in 14.10; cf. 2.10; 11.18.

2.1–10: Tobit's blindness. Tobit's charity toward others results in his being blinded. **1:** *Pentecost*, the spring harvest of Weeks, also known as Shavuot (Lev 23.15–21; Deut 16.9–12; 2 Chr 8.13). **2:** Tobit consistently demon-

Then he went on to say, "Look, father, one of our own people has been murdered and thrown into the market place, and now he lies there strangled." [4] Then I sprang up, left the dinner before even tasting it, and removed the body[a] from the square[b] and laid it[a] in one of the rooms until sunset when I might bury it.[a] [5] When I returned, I washed myself and ate my food in sorrow. [6] Then I remembered the prophecy of Amos, how he said against Bethel,[c]

"Your festivals shall be turned into mourning,
and all your songs into lamentation."

And I wept.

[7] When the sun had set, I went and dug a grave and buried him. [8] And my neighbors laughed and said, "Is he still not afraid? He has already been hunted down to be put to death for doing this, and he ran away; yet here he is again burying the dead!" [9] That same night I washed myself and went into my courtyard and slept by the wall of the courtyard; and my face was uncovered because of the heat. [10] I did not know that there were sparrows on the wall; their fresh droppings fell into my eyes and produced white films. I went to physicians to be healed, but the more they treated me with ointments the more my vision was obscured by the white films, until I became completely blind. For four years I remained unable to see. All my kindred were sorry for me, and Ahikar took care of me for two years before he went to Elymais.

[11] At that time, also, my wife Anna earned money at women's work. [12] She used to send what she made to the owners and they would pay wages to her. One day, the seventh of Dystrus, when she cut off a piece she had woven and sent it to the owners, they paid her full wages and also gave her a young goat for a meal. [13] When she returned to me, the goat began to bleat. So I called her and said, "Where did you get this goat? It is surely not stolen, is it? Return it to the owners; for we have no right to eat anything stolen." [14] But she said to me, "It was given to me as a gift in addition to my wages." But I did not believe her, and told her to return it to the owners. I became flushed with anger against her over this. Then she replied to me, "Where are your acts of charity? Where are your righteous deeds? These things are known about you!"[d]

3 Then with much grief and anguish of heart I wept, and with groaning began to pray:

[2] "You are righteous, O Lord,
and all your deeds are just;
all your ways are mercy and truth;
you judge the world.[e]

[a] Gk *him*
[b] Other ancient authorities lack *from the square*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *against Bethlehem*
[d] Or *to you*; Gk *with you*
[e] Other ancient authorities read *you render true and righteous judgment forever*

strates charity toward his people in exile (4.7–11,16). **5:** *Washed*, Num 19.11–13 commands washing as purification after contact with a corpse. **6:** *Amos* 8.10, one of the few scriptural citations in the book and another sign of composition in the Second Temple period. **9:** It is unclear why Tobit sleeps outside, especially since after moving the corpse he did return home to eat dinner (v. 5). If the concern is for ritual purity following contact with a corpse, see Num 19.11–22. A similar connection of dinner and gravedigging, but with humorous overtones, appears in 8.9–11. **10:** *Droppings*, Tobit is blinded in an ignominious and perhaps farcical manner. *Ahikar,* see 1.21–22n. *Elymais*, earlier Elam, a region in northwestern Persia.

2.11–14: The argument. Now dependent on others, Tobit becomes increasingly despondent. **11:** *Women's work* is weaving (cf. Prov 31.13,24); Tobit's earlier source of income, aside from investments, is unmentioned. **12:** At this verse and at 2.15–16, the Vulgate adds a comparison of Tobit to Job and thus an implied comparison of Anna to Job's wife. *Dystrus*, the fifth month in the Macedonian calendar (February/March), corresponding to the Jewish month of Shebat. The use of the Macedonian name is an indication of the Hellenistic date of Tobit. **13:** The outburst nuances Tobit's claims of righteousness and may also reflect his feeling of dishonor in being supported by a woman (Sir 25.22). **14:** Like Job's wife (Job 2.9), Anna questions the relationship between *righteous deeds* and a good life.

3.1–6: Tobit's prayer. The fight, coupled with Anna's observations about justice, not Tobit's blindness, causes him to seek death. Personal prayer is a major motif of this book (3.11–15; 8.4–8,15–17; 13.1–17) as well as

[3] And now, O Lord, remember me
and look favorably upon me.
Do not punish me for my sins
and for my unwitting offenses
and those that my ancestors committed
before you.
They sinned against you,
[4] and disobeyed your commandments.
So you gave us over to plunder, exile, and
death,
to become the talk, the byword, and an
object of reproach
among all the nations among whom
you have dispersed us.
[5] And now your many judgments are true
in exacting penalty from me for my sins.
For we have not kept your commandments
and have not walked in accordance with
truth before you.
[6] So now deal with me as you will;
command my spirit to be taken from
me,
so that I may be released from the face
of the earth and become dust.
For it is better for me to die than to live,
because I have had to listen to
undeserved insults,
and great is the sorrow within me.
Command, O Lord, that I be released from
this distress;
release me to go to the eternal home,
and do not, O Lord, turn your face away
from me.
For it is better for me to die
than to see so much distress in my life
and to listen to insults."

[7] On the same day, at Ecbatana in Media,
it also happened that Sarah, the daughter of
Raguel, was reproached by one of her father's
maids. [8] For she had been married to seven
husbands, and the wicked demon Asmodeus
had killed each of them before they had
been with her as is customary for wives. So
the maid said to her, "You are the one who
kills[a] your husbands! See, you have already
been married to seven husbands and have
not borne the name of[b] a single one of them.
[9] Why do you beat us? Because your hus-
bands are dead? Go with them! May we never
see a son or daughter of yours!"

[10] On that day she was grieved in spirit and
wept. When she had gone up to her father's
upper room, she intended to hang herself. But
she thought it over and said, "Never shall they
reproach my father, saying to him, 'You had
only one beloved daughter but she hanged
herself because of her distress.' And I shall
bring my father in his old age down in sor-
row to Hades. It is better for me not to hang
myself, but to pray the Lord that I may die
and not listen to these reproaches anymore."

[a] Other ancient authorities read *strangles*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *have had no benefit from*

in Hellenistic Jewish literature in general (see Jdt 9; Esth 14.1–9; Song of Thr; Sus; 1 Macc 7.37–38). **3–4:** Tobit admits his own sin and the sin of his *ancestors* (see Ex 20.5–6). The theology, which posits that plunder, exile, and death are occasioned by sin, is complicated by the plot, in which the righteous Tobit and Sarah suffer. Attribution of the exile to the people's sin is a common biblical idea. **6:** *Command my spirit to be taken from me*, Moses (Num 11.15), Elijah (1 Kings 19.4), and Jonah (Jon 4.8) similarly pray for release from suffering. Undeserved *insults* were directed at Tobit by his neighbors (2.8); Tobit does not reflect upon his undeserved insult to Anna. To *become dust* evokes Gen 3.19. The request for death is reminiscent of Job 3; cf. Jer 20.14–18. *The eternal home* likely refers not to immortality of the soul or eternal life, but either to the grave (see Job 34.15; Ps 104.29) or to Sheol, the realm of the dead (see Job 7.9–10; 14.10–13).

3.7–15: Sarah's plight and prayer. The scene shifts to Ecbatana in Media (modern Hamadan, in Iran), ca. 325 mi (525 km) east-southeast of Nineveh, and the narration shifts from first to third person as, *on the same day*, Sarah's plight parallels that of Tobit. **7:** *Reproached*, like Sarah of Gen 16.4–6, this Sarah also has no children and abuses her tormentor. **8:** The earliest literary mention of *Asmodeus*; his name derives from either the Persian expression "aeshma Daeva" meaning "demon of wrath," or Heb "shamad," meaning "to destroy." **10:** Sarah *intended to hang herself*, but concern for her father prevents suicide. The Bible does not condemn those who commit suicide (e.g. Saul [1 Sam 31.4–5], Ahithophel [2 Sam 17.23], Zimri [1 Kings 16.18], Razis [2 Macc 14.41–46]), but suicide is implicitly forbidden in Gen 9.4–6 and Ex 20.13. *Hades*, for this text the Greek equivalent of Sheol, the abode of the dead. Like Tobit, Sarah seeks to escape a woman's reproaches. **11:** *Hands outstretched* is a com-

[11] At that same time, with hands outstretched
toward the window, she prayed and said,
"Blessed are you, merciful God!
Blessed is your name forever;
let all your works praise you forever.
[12] And now, Lord,[a] I turn my face to you,
and raise my eyes toward you.
[13] Command that I be released from the earth
and not listen to such reproaches any
more.
[14] You know, O Master, that I am innocent
of any defilement with a man,
[15] and that I have not disgraced my name
or the name of my father in the land of
my exile.
I am my father's only child;
he has no other child to be his heir;
and he has no close relative or other
kindred
for whom I should keep myself as wife.
Already seven husbands of mine have died.
Why should I still live?
But if it is not pleasing to you, O Lord, to
take my life,
hear me in my disgrace."
[16] At that very moment, the prayers of both
of them were heard in the glorious presence
of God. [17] So Raphael was sent to heal both
of them: Tobit, by removing the white films
from his eyes, so that he might see God's light
with his eyes; and Sarah, daughter of Raguel,
by giving her in marriage to Tobias son of
Tobit, and by setting her free from the wicked
demon Asmodeus. For Tobias was entitled to
have her before all others who had desired
to marry her. At the same time that Tobit
returned from the courtyard into his house,
Sarah daughter of Raguel came down from
her upper room.

4 That same day Tobit remembered the
money that he had left in trust with
Gabael at Rages in Media, [2] and he said to
himself, "Now I have asked for death. Why
do I not call my son Tobias and explain to
him about the money before I die?" [3] Then he
called his son Tobias, and when he came to
him he said, "My son, when I die,[b] give me a
proper burial. Honor your mother and do not
abandon her all the days of her life. Do what-
ever pleases her, and do not grieve her in
anything. [4] Remember her, my son, because
she faced many dangers for you while you
were in her womb. And when she dies, bury
her beside me in the same grave.
[5] "Revere the Lord all your days, my son,
and refuse to sin or to transgress his com-
mandments. Live uprightly all the days of
your life, and do not walk in the ways of
wrongdoing; [6] for those who act in accor-
dance with truth will prosper in all their
activities. To all those who practice right-
eousness[c] [7] give alms from your possessions,

[a] Other ancient authorities lack *Lord*
[b] Lat
[c] The text of codex Sinaiticus goes directly from verse 6 to verse 19, reading *To those who practice righteousness* [19] *the Lord will give good counsel.* In order to fill the lacuna verses 7 to 18 are derived from other ancient authorities

mon posture for prayer (Ezra 9.5; Dan 6.10). *Blessed are you* is the traditional opening of Jewish prayers (8.5,15; Jdt 13.17). **13–15:** Sarah more quickly than Tobit pleads for death, though, unlike Tobit, she adds only if death is *pleasing* to God; in contrast to Tobit, she does not confess sins but instead protests her innocence. **14–15:** Women's chastity and honor are also prominent themes in the books of Judith and Susanna. *A close relative* suggests levirate law (Deut 25.5–10); Sarah is not aware that another relative and thus a potential husband, Tobias, exists.

3.16–17: Divine response. The fates of the supplicants are intertwined by Raphael's dual mission. **16:** Seven angels stand *in the glorious presence of God* to express human prayers and fulfill God's replies (see 12.15n.). **17:** *Raphael*'s name means "God has healed." *Entitled*, by being a near relation (6.12; see 3.14–15n.). The style shifts to third-person narration.

4.1–13: Tobit's advice on the family. Tobit offers a "testament" or "farewell discourse," a common literary genre in biblical texts (Gen 48–49 [Jacob]; the book of Deuteronomy [Moses]; Josh 22–24 [Joshua]; 1 Chr 28–29 [David]) as well as in Hellenistic writings (*1 Enoch* 81; *Testaments of the Twelve Patriarchs*), in which a father offers his children ethical advice and prophetic insight. Chapter 14 provides a second example. **1:** *Money*, see 1.14. *Rages* is just east of modern Teheran. **3:** *Burial*, Tobit asks for what he provided others (on this familial responsibility, see also Lk 9.59). *Honoring one's mother* is commanded in the Decalogue (Ex 20.12; Deut 5.16; see also Prov 23.22; Sir 3.12–15; 7.27–28). **6–7:** Tobit's circumstances (temporarily) conflict with the comments typical

and do not let your eye begrudge the gift when you make it. Do not turn your face away from anyone who is poor, and the face of God will not be turned away from you. [8] If you have many possessions, make your gift from them in proportion; if few, do not be afraid to give according to the little you have. [9] So you will be laying up a good treasure for yourself against the day of necessity. [10] For almsgiving delivers from death and keeps you from going into the Darkness. [11] Indeed, almsgiving, for all who practice it, is an excellent offering in the presence of the Most High.

[12] "Beware, my son, of every kind of fornication. First of all, marry a woman from among the descendants of your ancestors; do not marry a foreign woman, who is not of your father's tribe; for we are the descendants of the prophets. Remember, my son, that Noah, Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, our ancestors of old, all took wives from among their kindred. They were blessed in their children, and their posterity will inherit the land. [13] So now, my son, love your kindred, and in your heart do not disdain your kindred, the sons and daughters of your people, by refusing to take a wife for yourself from among them. For in pride there is ruin and great confusion. And in idleness there is loss and dire poverty, because idleness is the mother of famine.

[14] "Do not keep over until the next day the wages of those who work for you, but pay them at once. If you serve God you will receive payment. Watch yourself, my son, in everything you do, and discipline yourself in all your conduct. [15] And what you hate, do not do to anyone. Do not drink wine to excess or let drunkenness go with you on your way. [16] Give some of your food to the hungry, and some of your clothing to the naked. Give all your surplus as alms, and do not let your eye begrudge your giving of alms. [17] Place your bread on the grave of the righteous, but give none to sinners. [18] Seek advice from every wise person and do not despise any useful counsel. [19] At all times bless the Lord God, and ask him that your ways may be made straight and that all your paths and plans may prosper. For none of the nations has understanding, but the Lord himself will give them good counsel; but if he chooses otherwise, he casts down to deepest Hades. So now, my child, remember these commandments, and do not let them be erased from your heart.

[20] "And now, my son, let me explain to you that I left ten talents of silver in trust with Gabael son of Gabrias, at Rages in Media. [21] Do not be afraid, my son, because we have become poor. You have great wealth if you fear God and flee from every sin and do what is good in the sight of the Lord your God."

of wisdom literature (e.g., Prov 10.27–30). **8:** Giving what one can is a prominent motif in Jewish-Hellenistic (*Testament of Issachar*), early Christian (Lk 21.1–4; 2 Cor 8.12), and rabbinic (*b. Git.* 7a) writing. **10:** *Delivers from death* probably suggests a long life, not an eternal one. *Darkness*, that is, the grave. **11:** *Almsgiving* is consistently emphasized (12.8–9; 14.10–11; see also Lev 23.22; Ps 112.9; Prov 14.21,31; Isa 58.6–8; Sir 3.30–31; 34.18–35.4). **12–13:** Consistent with the instructions of wisdom literature (Prov 5.20; 6.24), Tobit warns about the evils of sexual sin and foreign women. *Fornication* refers to any intercourse outside of marriage. On endogamy, see 1.9n. Genesis does not record the ancestry of Noah's wife, though *Jubilees* (4.33), an early Second Temple text, does. The reference to *pride* suggests Prov 16.18.

4.14–19: Popular wisdom. Following instructions on marriage, Tobit returns to the conventional advice begun in 4.5–10. **14:** *Do not keep over*, see Lev 19.13; Deut 24.15. **15:** The "golden rule" appears throughout ancient writing (*Ahikar*; Mt 7.12; Lk 6.31; *b. Shabb.* 31a). On *drunkenness*, see Prov 23.29–35; Sir 31.25–30; Tobit's point is not abstinence but avoiding excess. **16:** *Alms,* see v. 11n. **17:** *The grave of the righteous* may refer to food given to mourners (see Ps 106.28) or to meals offered to the dead. The *Tale of Ahikar* (see 1.21–22n.) mentions this latter forbidden (Deut 26:14) and decried (Sir 30.18) practice. **19:** *Ways . . . made straight*, see Prov 3.6; 11.5; Ps 5.8; Isa 45.13. The view that *none of the nations has understanding* (see Deut 32.28) comports with the condition of exile. *Hades*, see 3.10n.

4.20–5.3: Obtaining funds left in trust. Tobias is to obtain wealth from righteousness and, more directly, from his father's banked funds. The *fear* of *God* is a common theme in wisdom literature (see Prov 1.7; 10.27; 15.16; 22.4). **4.20:** *Ten talents*, see 1.14n. **5.1–2:** Tobias's positive response echoes Ex 19.8; Ruth 3.5. However, like Moses (Ex 3), he also questions his commission.

5 Then Tobias answered his father Tobit, "I will do everything that you have commanded me, father; **2** but how can I obtain the money[a] from him, since he does not know me and I do not know him? What evidence[b] am I to give him so that he will recognize and trust me, and give me the money? Also, I do not know the roads to Media, or how to get there." **3** Then Tobit answered his son Tobias, "He gave me his bond and I gave him my bond. I[c] divided his in two; we each took one part, and I put one with the money. And now twenty years have passed since I left this money in trust. So now, my son, find yourself a trustworthy man to go with you, and we will pay him wages until you return. But get back the money from Gabael."[d]

4 So Tobias went out to look for a man to go with him to Media, someone who was acquainted with the way. He went out and found the angel Raphael standing in front of him; but he did not perceive that he was an angel of God. **5** Tobias[e] said to him, "Where do you come from, young man?" "From your kindred, the Israelites," he replied, "and I have come here to work." Then Tobias[f] said to him, "Do you know the way to go to Media?" **6** "Yes," he replied, "I have been there many times; I am acquainted with it and know all the roads. I have often traveled to Media, and would stay with our kinsman Gabael who lives in Rages of Media. It is a journey of two days from Ecbatana to Rages; for it lies in a mountainous area, while Ecbatana is in the middle of the plain." **7** Then Tobias said to him, "Wait for me, young man, until I go in and tell my father; for I do need you to travel with me, and I will pay you your wages." **8** He replied, "All right, I will wait; but do not take too long."

9 So Tobias[f] went in to tell his father Tobit and said to him, "I have just found a man who is one of our own Israelite kindred!" He replied, "Call the man in, my son, so that I may learn about his family and to what tribe he belongs, and whether he is trustworthy enough to go with you."

10 Then Tobias went out and called him, and said, "Young man, my father is calling for you." So he went in to him, and Tobit greeted him first. He replied, "Joyous greetings to you!" But Tobit retorted, "What joy is left for me any more? I am a man without eyesight; I cannot see the light of heaven, but I lie in darkness like the dead who no longer see the light. Although still alive, I am among the dead. I hear people but I cannot see them." But the young man[f] said, "Take courage; the time is near for God to heal you; take courage." Then Tobit said to him, "My son Tobias wishes to go to Media. Can you accompany him and guide him? I will pay your wages, brother." He answered, "I can go with him and I know all the roads, for I have often gone to Media and have crossed all its plains, and I am familiar with its mountains and all of its roads."

11 Then Tobit[f] said to him, "Brother, of what family are you and from what tribe? Tell me, brother." **12** He replied, "Why do you need to know my tribe?" But Tobit[f] said, "I want to be sure, brother, whose son you are and what your name is." **13** He replied, "I am Azariah, the son of the great Hananiah, one of your

[a] Gk *it*
[b] Gk *sign*
[c] Other authorities read *He*
[d] Gk *from him*
[e] Gk *He*
[f] Gk *he*

5.4–17: Raphael's disguise. Disguised heavenly beings are a stock motif in folklore (as in *The Odyssey*, in which Athena accompanies Telemachus), and angelic appearances are frequent in biblical stories (e.g., Gen 18.1–15; Judg 13). That readers know more than Tobit and his family adds to the entertainment of the tale. **4:** *Standing in front of him*, the immediacy of the angel's appearance suggests the miraculous. *Raphael*, see 3.17n. **5:** *Young man*: Tobias better fits this description; the humor of mistaken identities continues. **6:** *Two days*: *Rages* is 185 mi (300 km) from *Ecbatana*; this journey would take far longer for anyone other than an angel. Ecbatana is not in *the middle of a plain*, but in the mountains; the story is as loose with geographical as with chronological and historical details (see 1.4n.; 1.15n.). **10:** Having prayed for death (3.6), Tobit perceives himself as among the dead. The reference to divine healing recalls Raphael's name (see 3.17n.). **11–12:** The angel appears to be reluctant to reveal his *family* and *tribe*. **13:** The pseudonyms point to Raphael's roles: *Azariah* is Hebrew for "God

relatives." [14] Then Tobit said to him, "Welcome! God save you, brother. Do not feel bitter toward me, brother, because I wanted to be sure about your ancestry. It turns out that you are a kinsman, and of good and noble lineage. For I knew Hananiah and Nathan,[a] the two sons of Shemeliah,[b] and they used to go with me to Jerusalem and worshiped with me there, and were not led astray. Your kindred are good people; you come of good stock. Hearty welcome!"

[15] Then he added, "I will pay you a drachma a day as wages, as well as expenses for yourself and my son. So go with my son, [16] and[c] I will add something to your wages." Raphael[d] answered, "I will go with him; so do not fear. We shall leave in good health and return to you in good health, because the way is safe." [17] So Tobit[e] said to him, "Blessings be upon you, brother."

Then he called his son and said to him, "Son, prepare supplies for the journey and set out with your brother. May God in heaven bring you safely there and return you in good health to me; and may his angel, my son, accompany you both for your safety."

Before he went out to start his journey, he kissed his father and mother. Tobit then said to him, "Have a safe journey."

[18] But his mother[f] began to weep, and said to Tobit, "Why is it that you have sent my child away? Is he not the staff of our hand as he goes in and out before us? [19] Do not heap money upon money, but let it be a ransom for our child. [20] For the life that is given to us by the Lord is enough for us." [21] Tobit[d] said to her, "Do not worry; our child will leave in good health and return to us in good health. Your eyes will see him on the day when he returns to you in good health. Say no more! Do not fear for them, my sister. [22] For a good angel will accompany him; his journey will be successful, and he will come back in good health." [1] So she stopped weeping.

6 The young man went out and the angel went with him; [2] and the dog came out with him and went along with them. So they both journeyed along, and when the first night overtook them they camped by the Tigris river. [3] Then the young man went down to wash his feet in the Tigris river. Suddenly a large fish leaped up from the water and tried to swallow the young man's foot, and he cried out. [4] But the angel said to the young man, "Catch hold of the fish and hang on to it!" So the young man grasped the fish and drew it up on the land. [5] Then the angel said to him, "Cut open the fish and take out its gall, heart, and liver. Keep them with you, but throw away the intestines. For its gall, heart, and liver are useful as medicine." [6] So after cutting open

[a] Other ancient authorities read *Jathan* or *Nathaniah*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *Shemaiah*
[c] Other ancient authorities add *when you return safely*
[d] Gk *He*
[e] Gk *he*
[f] Other ancient authorities add *Anna*

has helped"; *Hananiah* means "God is merciful." **14:** Reference to the righteous sons of *Shemeliah* belies Tobit's claim (1.5–6) that he alone was faithful. **15:** Tobit's financial arrangements are generous. **17:** Tobit's prayer for angelic accompaniment (also 5.22) is already answered, adding an ironic note to the scene. Tobias's journey will resemble earlier quests for brides, although he does not yet know this (cf. Gen 24.40).

5.18–6.1a: Anna's lament. The couple alternate between practical observations and theological reflection (cf. 10.1–7). **18:** *My child,* Anna's maternal worry is palpable. *The staff of our hand*, a reliable person upon whom they can lean (see 2 Kings 18.21). **19:** *Ransom* suggests that Gabael should keep the funds as though they were ransom for Tobias. **21:** *My sister,* a term of affection for a lover or spouse (see Song 4.9,10). **22:** *A good angel* does accompany Tobias, although Tobit does not know this.

6.1b–9: Dangerous journey. Still disguised, Raphael will protect Tobias from dangerous fish and provide instruction for protection against lecherous demons. **2:** The *dog* (see also 11.4) adds an intimate touch and may suggest Odysseus's faithful pet (*Odyssey* 17.289–327). The *Tigris* is west of Nineveh; the geography remains fanciful. **3:** The unexpected *large fish* may be a parody of the Jonah story (Jon 1.7), in which a large fish swallows someone heading eventually toward Nineveh. **5:** Raphael's instructions are consistent with ancient medical texts that provide instructions for the use of fish organs. *Gall*, i.e., bile, is a bitter digestive juice recognized as

the fish the young man gathered together the gall, heart, and liver; then he roasted and ate some of the fish, and kept some to be salted.

The two continued on their way together until they were near Media.[a] 7 Then the young man questioned the angel and said to him, "Brother Azariah, what medicinal value is there in the fish's heart and liver, and in the gall?" 8 He replied, "As for the fish's heart and liver, you must burn them to make a smoke in the presence of a man or woman afflicted by a demon or evil spirit, and every affliction will flee away and never remain with that person any longer. 9 And as for the gall, anoint a person's eyes where white films have appeared on them; blow upon them, upon the white films, and the eyes[b] will be healed."

10 When he entered Media and already was approaching Ecbatana,[c] 11 Raphael said to the young man, "Brother Tobias." "Here I am," he answered. Then Raphael[d] said to him, "We must stay this night in the home of Raguel. He is your relative, and he has a daughter named Sarah. 12 He has no male heir and no daughter except Sarah only, and you, as next of kin to her, have before all other men a hereditary claim on her. Also it is right for you to inherit her father's possessions. Moreover, the girl is sensible, brave, and very beautiful, and her father is a good man." 13 He continued, "You have every right to take her in marriage. So listen to me, brother; tonight I will speak to her father about the girl, so that we may take her to be your bride. When we return from Rages we will celebrate her marriage. For I know that Raguel can by no means keep her from you or promise her to another man without incurring the penalty of death according to the decree of the book of Moses. Indeed he knows that you, rather than any other man, are entitled to marry his daughter. So now listen to me, brother, and tonight we shall speak concerning the girl and arrange her engagement to you. And when we return from Rages we will take her and bring her back with us to your house."

14 Then Tobias said in answer to Raphael, "Brother Azariah, I have heard that she already has been married to seven husbands and that they died in the bridal chamber. On the night when they went in to her, they would die. I have heard people saying that it was a demon that killed them. 15 It does not harm her, but it kills anyone who desires to approach her. So now, since I am the only son my father has, I am afraid that I may die and bring my father's and mother's life down to their grave, grieving for me—and they have no other son to bury them."

16 But Raphael[d] said to him, "Do you not remember your father's orders when he commanded you to take a wife from your father's house? Now listen to me, brother, and say no more about this demon. Take her. I know that this very night she will be given to you in marriage. 17 When you enter the bridal chamber, take some of the fish's liver and heart, and put them on the embers of the incense. An odor will be given off; 18 the demon will smell it and flee, and will never be seen near her any more. Now when you are

[a] Other ancient authorities read *Ecbatana*
[b] Gk *they*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *Rages*
[d] Gk *he*

having medicinal properties. **6:** No reference is made to the angel's eating (see Judg. 13.16). **8:** *To make a smoke*, or to fumigate, was a standard means for healing and exorcising demons. Explicit reference to a *woman* foreshadows Sarah's role.

6.10–18: Prenuptial instructions. Raphael now reveals the additional purpose of their journey; knowing Sarah's past luck with marriages, Tobias is understandably reluctant but quickly warms to the prospect of marrying her. **12:** *No male heir*, although Israelite inheritance laws were patrilineal, brotherless daughters could inherit if they married within the tribe (Num 27.1–11; 36.1–13). *Next of kin* refers to levirate law (3.14–15n.); by marrying Sarah, Tobias will obtain Raguel's estate. **13:** *Penalty of death*: no such law exists. **14–15:** Tobias's hesitancy—he mentions the death of Sarah's husbands four times in vv. 14–15—increases the tension; his fear is not primarily for his own life, but for the grief his death will cause his parents (see 3.10). **16:** Raphael eases Tobias's fear by repeating his concern for his parents, but changing his focus. **17:** On fumigating as an exorcism technique, see 6.8n. **18:** Raphael's advice, coupled with the announcement that the match was made in heaven and that Sarah is Tobias's relative, both calms the young man's fears and prompts his love.

about to go to bed with her, both of you must first stand up and pray, imploring the Lord of heaven that mercy and safety may be granted to you. Do not be afraid, for she was set apart for you before the world was made. You will save her, and she will go with you. I presume that you will have children by her, and they will be as brothers to you. Now say no more!" When Tobias heard the words of Raphael and learned that she was his kinswoman,[a] related through his father's lineage, he loved her very much, and his heart was drawn to her.

7 Now when they[b] entered Ecbatana, Tobias[c] said to him, "Brother Azariah, take me straight to our brother Raguel." So he took him to Raguel's house, where they found him sitting beside the courtyard door. They greeted him first, and he replied, "Joyous greetings, brothers; welcome and good health!" Then he brought them into his house. [2] He said to his wife Edna, "How much the young man resembles my kinsman Tobit!" [3] Then Edna questioned them, saying, "Where are you from, brothers?" They answered, "We belong to the descendants of Naphtali who are exiles in Nineveh." [4] She said to them, "Do you know our kinsman Tobit?" And they replied, "Yes, we know him." Then she asked them, "Is he[d] in good health?" [5] They replied, "He is alive and in good health." And Tobias added, "He is my father!" [6] At that Raguel jumped up and kissed him and wept. [7] He also spoke to him as follows, "Blessings on you, my child, son of a good and noble father![e] O most miserable of calamities that such an upright and beneficent man has become blind!" He then embraced his kinsman Tobias and wept. [8] His wife Edna also wept for him, and their daughter Sarah likewise wept. [9] Then Raguel[c] slaughtered a ram from the flock and received them very warmly.

When they had bathed and washed themselves and had reclined to dine, Tobias said to Raphael, "Brother Azariah, ask Raguel to give me my kinswoman[a] Sarah." [10] But Raguel overheard it and said to the lad, "Eat and drink, and be merry tonight. For no one except you, brother, has the right to marry my daughter Sarah. Likewise I am not at liberty to give her to any other man than yourself, because you are my nearest relative. But let me explain to you the true situation more fully, my child. [11] I have given her to seven men of our kinsmen, and all died on the night when they went in to her. But now, my child, eat and drink, and the Lord will act on behalf of you both." But Tobias said, "I will neither eat nor drink anything until you settle the things that pertain to me." So Raguel said, "I will do so. She is given to you in accordance with the decree in the book of Moses, and it has been decreed from heaven that she be given to you. Take your kinswoman;[a] from now on you are her brother and she is your sister. She is given to you from today and forever. May the Lord of heaven, my child, guide and prosper you both this night and grant you mercy and peace." [12] Then Raguel summoned his daughter Sarah. When she came to him he took her by the hand and

[a] Gk *sister*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *he*
[c] Gk *he*
[d] Other ancient authorities add *alive and*
[e] Other ancient authorities add *When he heard that Tobit had lost his sight, he was stricken with grief and wept. Then he said,*

7.1–16: Tobit and Sarah marry. *Raguel* and Edna's welcome repeats the themes of family connections. **1:** *Raguel*'s name is connected to Reuel, Moses' father-in-law (Ex 2.18; Num 10.29); the name is also shared with an archangel in *I Enoch* 20.4. *Ecbatana,* see 5.6n. **3:** *Edna* asks the more pertinent questions; the scene echoes Gen 28.1–5. **5:** Tobias does not mention his father's illness. **7:** The source of Raguel's knowledge of Tobit's blindness is not cited. **9:** *Bathed and washed* and *reclined to dine* indicate common customs of hospitality, cf. Gen 18.1–8; Lk 7.44–46. **10–11:** The juxtaposition of death threats and joyous feasting is humorous; not every groom would appreciate Sarah's *true situation*. Raguel must follow the *decree in the book of Moses* regarding the rightful spouse for Sarah (see 3.14–15n.), but he is also concerned about the fate of her husbands. *I will neither eat nor drink*, Tobias begins to take charge of his fate. *Sister*, see 5.21n. **12–15:** *The decree* is Num 36.8; Raguel repeats the idea (6.18) that Sarah is Tobias's divinely appointed wife. **12:** *Raguel summoned his daughter* because neither she nor

gave her to Tobias,[a] saying, "Take her to be your wife in accordance with the law and decree written in the book of Moses. Take her and bring her safely to your father. And may the God of heaven prosper your journey with his peace." [13] Then he called her mother and told her to bring writing material; and he wrote out a copy of a marriage contract, to the effect that he gave her to him as wife according to the decree of the law of Moses. [14] Then they began to eat and drink.

[15] Raguel called his wife Edna and said to her, "Sister, get the other room ready, and take her there." [16] So she went and made the bed in the room as he had told her, and brought Sarah[b] there. She wept for her daughter.[b] Then, wiping away the tears,[c] she said to her, "Take courage, my daughter; the Lord of heaven grant you joy[d] in place of your sorrow. Take courage, my daughter." Then she went out.

8 When they had finished eating and drinking they wanted to retire; so they took the young man and brought him into the bedroom. [2] Then Tobias remembered the words of Raphael, and he took the fish's liver and heart out of the bag where he had them and put them on the embers of the incense. [3] The odor of the fish so repelled the demon that he fled to the remotest parts[e] of Egypt. But Raphael followed him, and at once bound him there hand and foot.

[4] When the parents[f] had gone out and shut the door of the room, Tobias got out of bed and said to Sarah,[b] "Sister, get up, and let us pray and implore our Lord that he grant us mercy and safety." [5] So she got up, and they began to pray and implore that they might be kept safe. Tobias[g] began by saying,

"Blessed are you, O God of our ancestors,
and blessed is your name in all
generations forever.
Let the heavens and the whole creation
bless you forever.
[6] You made Adam, and for him you made
his wife Eve
as a helper and support.
From the two of them the human race
has sprung.
You said, 'It is not good that the man
should be alone;
let us make a helper for him like
himself.'
[7] I now am taking this kinswoman of mine,
not because of lust,
but with sincerity.
Grant that she and I may find mercy
and that we may grow old together."

[8] And they both said, "Amen, Amen." [9] Then they went to sleep for the night.

[a] Gk *him*
[b] Gk *her*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *the tears of her daughter*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *favor*
[e] Or *fled through the air to the parts*
[f] Gk *they*
[g] Gk *He*

her mother participated in the original conversation about her fate; the match is arranged by the men. **13:** The Jewish marriage *contract* (Heb "ketubah") protects the wife's financial interests; this is the first recorded literary reference to this well-known practice; the earliest preserved example of a ketubah, dating to ca. 440 BCE, comes from the Jewish colony at Elephantine in Egypt. **16:** Edna's emotions encompass both fear and hope; she exhorts her daughter to courage, as Raphael had exhorted Tobias (6.18).

8.1–9a: Asmodeus is exorcised. Raphael's advice proves sound as the demon is exorcised, and the couple offers a prayer of thanksgiving. **2:** *The words of Raphael,* 6.8. **3:** *Repelled the demon,* see 6.8n. *Bound*, since binding restrains demons (see *1 Enoch* 10.4). **4–5:** The couple's praying contrasts with both Raguel's grave-digging (8.9–11) and the descriptions of ardent love-making found in non-Jewish Hellenistic romances. *Sister*, see 5.21n. **5–7:** Prayers are frequently attributed to characters in Second Temple Jewish literature (Jdt 9; Add Est 13; 14; Sus; Song of Three). **5:** *Blessed are you*, see 3.11n. *God of our ancestors*, see Ex 3.13; Deut 4.1. **6:** *Adam* and *Eve*, one of the earliest biblical references to these figures outside of Genesis. *You said*, introducing a quotation of Gen 2.18. **7:** *Not because of lust*, chastity is a popular theme in Jewish-Hellenistic literature; see also 3.14–15n. **8:** The text, discreetly, does not note when the marriage was consummated. *Amen, Amen* are Sarah's only words aside from her prayer (3.11–15).

8.9b–18: Raguel's fears are assuaged. 9–10: Raguel's morbid planning contrasts with Tobias's piety; unlike

But Raguel arose and called his servants to him, and they went and dug a grave, [10] for he said, "It is possible that he will die and we will become an object of ridicule and derision." [11] When they had finished digging the grave, Raguel went into his house and called his wife, [12] saying, "Send one of the maids and have her go in to see if he is alive. But if he is dead, let us bury him without anyone knowing it." [13] So they sent the maid, lit a lamp, and opened the door; and she went in and found them sound asleep together. [14] Then the maid came out and informed them that he was alive and that nothing was wrong. [15] So they blessed the God of heaven, and Raguel[a] said,

"Blessed are you, O God, with every pure blessing;
let all your chosen ones bless you.[b]
Let them bless you forever.
[16] Blessed are you because you have made me glad.
It has not turned out as I expected,
but you have dealt with us according to your great mercy.
[17] Blessed are you because you had compassion
on two only children.
Be merciful to them, O Master, and keep them safe;
bring their lives to fulfillment
in happiness and mercy."

[18] Then he ordered his servants to fill in the grave before daybreak.

[19] After this he asked his wife to bake many loaves of bread; and he went out to the herd and brought two steers and four rams and ordered them to be slaughtered. So they began to make preparations. [20] Then he called for Tobias and swore on oath to him in these words:[c] "You shall not leave here for fourteen days, but shall stay here eating and drinking with me; and you shall cheer up my daughter, who has been depressed. [21] Take at once half of what I own and return in safety to your father; the other half will be yours when my wife and I die. Take courage, my child. I am your father and Edna is your mother, and we belong to you as well as to your wife[d] now and forever. Take courage, my child."

9 Then Tobias called Raphael and said to him, [2] "Brother Azariah, take four servants and two camels with you and travel to Rages. Go to the home of Gabael, give him the bond, get the money, and then bring him with you to the wedding celebration. [4] For you know that my father must be counting the days, and if I delay even one day I will upset him very much. [3] You are witness to the oath Raguel has sworn, and I cannot violate his oath."[e] [5] So Raphael with the four servants and two camels went to Rages in Media and stayed with Gabael. Raphael[f] gave him the bond and informed him that Tobit's son Tobias had married and was inviting him to the wedding celebration. So Gabael[g] got up and counted out to him the money bags, with their seals intact; then they loaded

[a] Gk *they*
[b] Other ancient authorities lack this line
[c] Other ancient authorities read *Tobias and said to him*
[d] Gk *sister*
[e] In other ancient authorities verse 3 precedes verse 4
[f] Gk *He*
[g] Gk *he*

Tobit, Raguel prepares a grave *before* finding a corpse. **10:** *Ridicule and derision*, Raguel fears for his reputation, not his daughter's happiness or his son-in-law's life; Sarah had already become an object of derision (3.7–9). **12:** *Without anyone knowing* ignores Azariah/Raphael, the servants, and the concerns of Tobit and Anna. **15–17:** The prayer continues Raguel's wry perspective: he praises God for his own good fortune before mentioning the mercy extended to the couple.

8.19–9.6: The wedding celebrated and tasks fulfilled. 8.20: *Fourteen days,* often seen as twice as long as a usual wedding celebration. *Depressed* either because of past deaths or the prospect of leaving her home. **21:** *Take courage* is what Edna advised Sarah (7.16), but under much different circumstances. The language of *father* and *mother* together with promises of inheritance suggests an adoption formula (see 10.12). **9.1:** Tobias now commands Raphael to obtain Tobit's money from Gabael; no longer the youth, he has become an adult. **4:** *I will upset him*, as demonstrated in 10.1–3. **5:** *Rages*, see 4.1n. **6:** Gabael's blessing indicates that the two families are regarded as one.

them on the camels.[a] [6] In the morning they both got up early and went to the wedding celebration. When they came into Raguel's house they found Tobias reclining at table. He sprang up and greeted Gabael,[b] who wept and blessed him with the words, "Good and noble son of a father good and noble, upright and generous! May the Lord grant the blessing of heaven to you and your wife, and to your wife's father and mother. Blessed be God, for I see in Tobias the very image of my cousin Tobit."

10 Now, day by day, Tobit kept counting how many days Tobias[c] would need for going and for returning. And when the days had passed and his son did not appear, [2] he said, "Is it possible that he has been detained? Or that Gabael has died, and there is no one to give him the money?" [3] And he began to worry. [4] His wife Anna said, "My child has perished and is no longer among the living." And she began to weep and mourn for her son, saying, [5] "Woe to me, my child, the light of my eyes, that I let you make the journey." [6] But Tobit kept saying to her, "Be quiet and stop worrying, my dear;[d] he is all right. Probably something unexpected has happened there. The man who went with him is trustworthy and is one of our own kin. Do not grieve for him, my dear;[d] he will soon be here." [7] She answered him, "Be quiet yourself! Stop trying to deceive me! My child has perished." She would rush out every day and watch the road her son had taken, and would heed no one.[e] When the sun had set she would go in and mourn and weep all night long, getting no sleep at all.

Now when the fourteen days of the wedding celebration had ended that Raguel had sworn to observe for his daughter, Tobias came to him and said, "Send me back, for I know that my father and mother do not believe that they will see me again. So I beg of you, father, to let me go so that I may return to my own father. I have already explained to you how I left him." [8] But Raguel said to Tobias, "Stay, my child, stay with me; I will send messengers to your father Tobit and they will inform him about you." [9] But he said, "No! I beg you to send me back to my father." [10] So Raguel promptly gave Tobias his wife Sarah, as well as half of all his property: male and female slaves, oxen and sheep, donkeys and camels, clothing, money, and household goods. [11] Then he saw them safely off; he embraced Tobias[b] and said, "Farewell, my child; have a safe journey. The Lord of heaven prosper you and your wife Sarah, and may I see children of yours before I die." [12] Then he kissed his daughter Sarah and said to her, "My daughter, honor your father-in-law and your mother-in-law,[f] since from now on they are as much your parents as those who gave you birth. Go in peace, daughter, and may I hear a good report about you as long as I live." Then he bade them farewell and let

[a] Other ancient authorities lack *on the camels*
[b] Gk *him*
[c] Gk *he*
[d] Gk *sister*
[e] Other ancient authorities read *and she would eat nothing*
[f] Other ancient authorities lack parts of *Then … mother-in-law*

10.1–7a: Anxiety at home. Tobit and Anna's concerns contrast with the celebration in Media. **1:** *And when the days had passed,* the two-week wedding celebrations, unknown to Tobit and Anna, extended the time of Tobias's absence long past what was required for the journey. **5:** *Light of my eyes*, perhaps a veiled reference to Tobit's blindness, recalls his words to Anna in 5.21. *I let you make the journey*, rather than again blaming Tobit (see 5.18), Anna suggests she had the power to prevent Tobias from leaving. **6:** In comforting Anna (cf. 5.21), Tobit masks his own fears. **7:** Unlike 5.21, here Anna does not heed Tobit's command to silence. Despite insisting that her *child has perished*, she continues to watch for him.

10.7b–13: Return to Nineveh. The couple's leave-taking is much less fraught with worry—and advice—than the parallel scene of 5.17–22. Tobias is mindful that his parents are likely worried (10.1–7a). **8:** Raguel desires his new son remain with him, but filial duty prompts Tobias to leave. **10:** Sarah's substantial dowry is part of the inheritance Tobias will receive (6.12). **12:** *Honor your father-in-law and your mother-in-law* extends the Decalogue's commandment (see 4.3n.). *Child and dear brother* intensifies the familial connection; more than just a marriage, the couple's relationship is the merging of two families. To *see children*, this prayer will be granted, as Raphael had remarked to Tobias (6.18). *Do nothing to grieve her*, the mother is vigilant for her daughter's happiness; the

them go. Then Edna said to Tobias, "My child and dear brother, the Lord of heaven bring you back safely, and may I live long enough to see children of you and of my daughter Sarah before I die. In the sight of the Lord I entrust my daughter to you; do nothing to grieve her all the days of your life. Go in peace, my child. From now on I am your mother and Sarah is your beloved wife.[a] May we all prosper together all the days of our lives." Then she kissed them both and saw them safely off. [13] Tobias parted from Raguel with happiness and joy, praising the Lord of heaven and earth, King over all, because he had made his journey a success. Finally, he blessed Raguel and his wife Edna, and said, "I have been commanded by the Lord to honor you all the days of my life."[b]

11 When they came near to Kaserin, which is opposite Nineveh, Raphael said, [2] "You are aware of how we left your father. [3] Let us run ahead of your wife and prepare the house while they are still on the way." [4] As they went on together Raphael[c] said to him, "Have the gall ready." And the dog[d] went along behind them.

[5] Meanwhile Anna sat looking intently down the road by which her son would come. [6] When she caught sight of him coming, she said to his father, "Look, your son is coming, and the man who went with him!"

[7] Raphael said to Tobias, before he had approached his father, "I knowthat his eyes will be opened. [8] Smear the gall of the fish on his eyes; the medicine will make the white films shrink and peel off from his eyes, and your father will regain his sight and see the light."

[9] Then Anna ran up to her son and threw her arms around him, saying, "Now that I have seen you, my child, I am ready to die." And she wept. [10] Then Tobit got up and came stumbling out through the courtyard door. Tobias went up to him, [11] with the gall of the fish in his hand, and holding him firmly, he blew into his eyes, saying, "Take courage, father." With this he applied the medicine on his eyes, [12] and it made them smart.[b] [13] Next, with both his hands he peeled off the white films from the corners of his eyes. Then Tobit[c] saw his son and[e] threw his arms around him, [14] and he wept and said to him, "I see you, my son, the light of my eyes!" Then he said,

"Blessed be God,
and blessed be his great name,
and blessed be all his holy angels.
May his holy name be blessed[f]
throughout all the ages.
[15] Though he afflicted me,
he has had mercy upon me.[g]
Now I see my son Tobias!"

So Tobit went in rejoicing and praising God at the top of his voice. Tobias reported to his father that his journey had been successful, that he had brought the money, that he had married Raguel's daughter Sarah, and that she was, indeed, on her way there, very near to the gate of Nineveh.

[16] Then Tobit, rejoicing and praising God, went out to meet his daughter-in-law at the gate of Nineveh. When the people of Nineveh saw him coming, walking along in full vigor and with no one leading him, they were

[a] Gk *sister*
[b] Lat: Meaning of Gk uncertain
[c] Gk *he*
[d] Codex Sinaiticus reads *And the Lord*
[e] Other ancient authorities lack *saw his son and*
[f] Codex Sinaiticus reads *May his great name be upon us and blessed be all the angels*
[g] Lat: Gk lacks this line

reader may recall the grief Tobit's insults brought Anna (2.11–14). **13:** Tobias confirms his bond with his in-laws; Sarah remains silent.

11.1–6: Tobias returns. **3:** *Let us run ahead* may indicate Raphael's concern to avoid Sarah's company; unlike Asmodeus, he will not be tempted. **4:** *Gall,* see 6.5n. *The dog*, see 6.2n. **6:** Anna, ever watchful (see 10.7), brings the good news to Tobit.

11.7–18: Tobit is healed. **8:** *Gall,* see 6.9. **11–13:** See Acts 9.18. **14:** *Light of my eyes*, fulfilling v. 8, has both metaphoric and literal implications (cf. 10.5). **14–15:** Tobit's doxology resembles those of Tobias (8.5–7) and Raguel (8.15–17); see also 8.5–7n. *Holy angels* is ironic, since Raphael has not revealed his identity. *Afflicted* (lit. "scourged") and *had mercy*, conventional terms for divine punishment and reconciliation upon the community's repentance, are applied to Israel in 13.2,5 (see 2 Macc 6.12–16). **16:** *Amazement* is the standard reaction

amazed. [17] Before them all, Tobit acknowledged that God had been merciful to him and had restored his sight. When Tobit met Sarah the wife of his son Tobias, he blessed her saying, "Come in, my daughter, and welcome. Blessed be your God who has brought you to us, my daughter. Blessed be your father and your mother, blessed be my son Tobias, and blessed be you, my daughter. Come in now to your home, and welcome, with blessing and joy. Come in, my daughter." So on that day there was rejoicing among all the Jews who were in Nineveh. [18] Ahikar and his nephew Nadab were also present to share Tobit's joy. With merriment they celebrated Tobias's wedding feast for seven days, and many gifts were given to him.[a]

12 When the wedding celebration was ended, Tobit called his son Tobias and said to him, "My child, see to paying the wages of the man who went with you, and give him a bonus as well." [2] He replied, "Father, how much shall I pay him? It would do no harm to give him half of the possessions brought back with me. [3] For he has led me back to you safely, he cured my wife, he brought the money back with me, and he healed you. How much extra shall I give him as a bonus?" [4] Tobit said, "He deserves, my child, to receive half of all that he brought back." [5] So Tobias[b] called him and said, "Take for your wages half of all that you brought back, and farewell."

[6] Then Raphael[b] called the two of them privately and said to them, "Bless God and acknowledge him in the presence of all the living for the good things he has done for you. Bless and sing praise to his name. With fitting honor declare to all people the deeds[c] of God. Do not be slow to acknowledge him. [7] It is good to conceal the secret of a king, but to acknowledge and reveal the works of God, and with fitting honor to acknowledge him. Do good and evil will not overtake you. [8] Prayer with fasting[d] is good, but better than both is almsgiving with righteousness. A little with righteousness is better than wealth with wrongdoing.[e] It is better to give alms than to lay up gold. [9] For almsgiving saves from death and purges away every sin. Those who give alms will enjoy a full life, [10] but those who commit sin and do wrong are their own worst enemies.

[11] "I will now declare the whole truth to you and will conceal nothing from you. Already I have declared it to you when I said, 'It is good to conceal the secret of a king, but to reveal with due honor the works of God.' [12] So now when you and Sarah prayed, it was I who brought and read[f] the record of your prayer before the glory of the Lord, and likewise whenever you would bury the dead. [13] And that time when you did not hesitate to get up and leave your dinner to go and bury the dead, [14] I was sent to you to test you. And at the same time God sent me to heal you and

[a] Other ancient authorities lack parts of this sentence
[b] Gk *he*
[c] Gk *words*; other ancient authorities read *words of the deeds*
[d] Codex Sinaiticus *with sincerity*
[e] Lat
[f] Lat: Gk lacks *and read*

to a miraculous healing. **17:** *My daughter*, a repeated phrase, echoes the familial language of Raguel and Edna; Tobit greets the daughter-in-law for whom he had prayed (4.12–13). **18:** *Ahikar,* see 1.21–22n. *Nadab*, see 14.10n.

12.1–22: Raphael's revelations. Bringing the major plot lines to a conclusion, Raphael explains his role in testing Tobit and exhorts Tobit and his son to good deeds and piety. **2:** *How much shall I pay him?* The fee had been determined, but not the amount of the bonus (5.15–16). *Half of the possessions* is one-quarter of Raguel's estate plus half the loan. The generosity is consistent with Tobit's insistence on almsgiving. **6:** *Declare to all people* expresses a universalistic impulse (13.3–4,11; 14.6–7). **7:** *Secret of a king* anticipates Raphael's revelation in v. 11 and recalls Tobit's position at court (1.13–14); indeed, Tobit reveals no court secrets. *To acknowledge*, as Tobit had done in 11.17. **7b–10:** Proverbial sayings continue the emphasis on charitable deeds (4.6–11); for *fasting*, which becomes increasingly important in the postexilic period, see also 1 Macc 3.44–48; Esth 4.1–3,15; Mt 6.16–18; *almsgiving,* see 4.11n. **12–13:** The angelic task of conveying prayers and good deeds is mentioned in other Second Temple Jewish literature, such as *1 Enoch*. **14:** *To test* indicates that Tobit's blindness and his subsequent trials resulted from God's active effort (Gen 22.1–22; Job 1–2); unmentioned is whether Sarah's trials were

Sarah your daughter-in-law. 15 I am Raphael, one of the seven angels who stand ready and enter before the glory of the Lord."

16 The two of them were shaken; they fell face down, for they were afraid. 17 But he said to them, "Do not be afraid; peace be with you. Bless God forevermore. 18 As for me, when I was with you, I was not acting on my own will, but by the will of God. Bless him each and every day; sing his praises. 19 Although you were watching me, I really did not eat or drink anything—but what you saw was a vision. 20 So now get up from the ground,[a] and acknowledge God. See, I am ascending to him who sent me. Write down all these things that have happened to you." And he ascended. 21 Then they stood up, and could see him no more. 22 They kept blessing God and singing his praises, and they acknowledged God for these marvelous deeds of his, when an angel of God had appeared to them.

13 Then Tobit[b] said:
"Blessed be God who lives forever,
because his kingdom[c] lasts throughout all ages.
2 For he afflicts, and he shows mercy;
he leads down to Hades in the lowest regions of the earth,
and he brings up from the great abyss,[d]
and there is nothing that can escape his hand.
3 Acknowledge him before the nations,
O children of Israel;
for he has scattered you among them.
4 He has shown you his greatness even there.
Exalt him in the presence of every living being,
because he is our Lord and he is our God;
he is our Father and he is God forever.
5 He will afflict[e] you for your iniquities,
but he will again show mercy on all of you.
He will gather you from all the nations among whom you have been scattered.
6 If you turn to him with all your heart and with all your soul,
to do what is true before him,
then he will turn to you
and will no longer hide his face from you.
So now see what he has done for you;
acknowledge him at the top of your voice.
Bless the Lord of righteousness,
and exalt the King of the ages.[f]
In the land of my exile I acknowledge him,
and show his power and majesty to a nation of sinners:
'Turn back, you sinners, and do what is right before him;
perhaps he may look with favor upon you and show you mercy.'

[a] Other ancient authorities read *now bless the Lord on earth*
[b] Gk *he*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *forever, and his kingdom*
[d] Gk *from destruction*
[e] Other ancient authorities read *He afflicted*
[f] The lacuna in codex Sinaiticus, verses 6b to 10a, is filled in from other ancient authorities

also tests. **15:** *Seven angels* (cf. Rev. 8.2) do not appear in earlier biblical material; Daniel mentions Gabriel (Dan 8.16; 9.21; cf. Lk 1.19,26) and Michael (Dan 10.13,21; 12.1; cf. Jude 9; Rev 12.7). *The glory of the Lord*, see 3.16. **16–17:** Fear and prostration are standard reactions to epiphanies (Dan 10.1–12), as is the response, *Do not be afraid*. **19:** *I really did not eat* reflects the traditional view that angels do not require food (Judg 13.16; see 6.6n.). **20:** Jesus' ascension in Acts 1.9 (cf. Jn 16.5) shares several motifs with this scene.

13.1–14.1: Tobit's hymn. The hymn expands upon 11.14–15; the vocabulary evokes Psalms 92–118, and the form may indicate liturgical models in use in the early Second Temple period. **2:** *Afflicts . . . and . . . shows mercy* (also v. 5), see 11.14–15n.; Tobit's (and Sarah's) trials encapsulate the difficulties of exile. Tobit repeats the Deuteronomic view that sin leads to punishment, and repentance to redemption (Deut 28–33; cf. Wis 12.22). Some interpreters see in *brings up from the great abyss* belief in resurrection; others associate the references with sickness and recovery, redemption from Sheol, or exile and return; see Deut 32.39; 1 Sam 2.6; Wis 16.13–15; 2 Macc 7.35. *Hades*, see 3.10n. **4:** *Our Father*, an address to God that becomes increasingly common in the post-exilic period (e.g., Isa 63.16; 64.8; Sir 23.1,4; Wis 14.3; Mt 6.9). **5:** The in-gathering of the exiles, a popular theme in Second Temple Jewish literature, becomes in Jewish tradition a sign of the messianic age (14.7; Sir 36.13; Bar

[7] As for me, I exalt my God,
and my soul rejoices in the King of heaven.
[8] Let all people speak of his majesty,
and acknowledge him in Jerusalem.
[9] O Jerusalem, the holy city,
he afflicted[a] you for the deeds of your hands,[b]
but will again have mercy on the children of the righteous.
[10] Acknowledge the Lord, for he is good,[c]
and bless the King of the ages,
so that his tent[d] may be rebuilt in you in joy.
May he cheer all those within you who are captives,
and love all those within you who are distressed,
to all generations forever.
[11] A bright light will shine to all the ends of the earth;
many nations will come to you from far away,
the inhabitants of the remotest parts of the earth to your holy name,
bearing gifts in their hands for the King of heaven.
Generation after generation will give joyful praise in you;
the name of the chosen city will endure forever.
[12] Cursed are all who speak a harsh word against you;
cursed are all who conquer you
and pull down your walls,
all who overthrow your towers
and set your homes on fire.
But blessed forever will be all who revere you.[e]
[13] Go, then, and rejoice over the children of the righteous,
for they will be gathered together
and will praise the Lord of the ages.
[14] Happy are those who love you,
and happy are those who rejoice in your prosperity.
Happy also are all people who grieve with you
because of your afflictions;
for they will rejoice with you
and witness all your glory forever.
[15] My soul blesses[f] the Lord, the great King!
[16] For Jerusalem will be built[g] as his house for all ages.
How happy I will be if a remnant of my descendants should survive
to see your glory and acknowledge the King of heaven.
The gates of Jerusalem will be built with sapphire and emerald,
and all your walls with precious stones.
The towers of Jerusalem will be built with gold,
and their battlements with pure gold.
The streets of Jerusalem will be paved with ruby and with stones of Ophir.
[17] The gates of Jerusalem will sing hymns of joy,
and all her houses will cry, 'Hallelujah! Blessed be the God of Israel!'
and the blessed will bless the holy name forever and ever."

14 So ended Tobit's words of praise.
[2] Tobit[h] died in peace when he was one hundred twelve years old, and was buried with great honor in Nineveh. He was sixty-two[i]

[a] Other ancient authorities read *will afflict*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *your children*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *Lord worthily*
[d] Or *tabernacle*
[e] Other ancient authorities read *who build you up*
[f] Or *O my soul, bless*
[g] Other ancient authorities add *for a city*
[h] Gk *He*
[i] Other ancient authorities read *fifty-eight*

4.21–5.9). *Afflict* and *show mercy*, see 11.14–15n. **6:** *Heart* and *soul* are to be inclined toward God (Deut 6.5). **8–17:** A celebration of *Jerusalem*, a focus with which the book began (1.4–10); now Tobit speaks of Jerusalem's glory rather than its destruction. **11:** *Many nations will come* is another sign of the messianic age (Isa 60.1–5; Zech 14.16). **12:** *Who conquer you* is anachronistic for Tobit's ostensible date; the reference shows knowledge of Nebuchadnezzar's attack on Jerusalem in 586 BCE. **14:** *Happy are . . . you* is a macarism or beatitude, cf. Mt 5.3–11; Lk 6.20–22. **16–17:** For similar views of Jerusalem's restoration, see Isa 54.11–14; Rev 21.9–27.

14.2–11a: Tobit's testament. Tobit's second testament (see 4.1–13n.) confirms his earlier insistence that piety will ultimately be rewarded. **2:** *Giving alms* and *blessing God* are the two major exhortations made throughout

years old when he lost his eyesight, and after regaining it he lived in prosperity, giving alms and continually blessing God and acknowledging God's majesty.

3 When he was about to die, he called his son Tobias and the seven sons of Tobias[a] and gave this command: "My son, take your children 4 and hurry off to Media, for I believe the word of God that Nahum spoke about Nineveh, that all these things will take place and overtake Assyria and Nineveh. Indeed, everything that was spoken by the prophets of Israel, whom God sent, will occur. None of all their words will fail, but all will come true at their appointed times. So it will be safer in Media than in Assyria and Babylon. For I know and believe that whatever God has said will be fulfilled and will come true; not a single word of the prophecies will fail. All of our kindred, inhabitants of the land of Israel, will be scattered and taken as captives from the good land; and the whole land of Israel will be desolate, even Samaria and Jerusalem will be desolate. And the temple of God in it will be burned to the ground, and it will be desolate for a while.[b]

5 "But God will again have mercy on them, and God will bring them back into the land of Israel; and they will rebuild the temple of God, but not like the first one until the period when the times of fulfillment shall come. After this they all will return from their exile and will rebuild Jerusalem in splendor; and in it the temple of God will be rebuilt, just as the prophets of Israel have said concerning it. 6 Then the nations in the whole world will all be converted and worship God in truth. They will all abandon their idols, which deceitfully have led them into their error; 7 and in righteousness they will praise the eternal God. All the Israelites who are saved in those days and are truly mindful of God will be gathered together; they will go to Jerusalem and live in safety forever in the land of Abraham, and it will be given over to them. Those who sincerely love God will rejoice, but those who commit sin and injustice will vanish from all the earth. 8,9 So now, my children, I command you, serve God faithfully and do what is pleasing in his sight. Your children are also to be commanded to do what is right and to give alms, and to be mindful of God and to bless his name at all times with sincerity and with all their strength. So now, my son, leave Nineveh; do not remain here. 10 On whatever day you bury your mother beside me, do not stay overnight within the confines of the city. For I see that there is much wickedness within it, and that much deceit is practiced within it, while the people are without shame. See, my son, what Nadab did to Ahikar who had reared him. Was he not, while still alive, brought down into the earth? For God repaid him to his face for this shameful treatment. Ahikar came out into the light, but Nadab went into the eternal darkness, because he tried to kill Ahikar. Because he gave alms, Ahikar[c] escaped the fatal trap that Nadab had set for him, but Nadab fell into it himself, and was destroyed. 11 So now, my children, see what almsgiving accomplishes, and what

[a] Lat: Gk lacks *and the seven sons of Tobias*

[b] Lat: Other ancient authorities read *of God will be in distress and will be burned for a while*

[c] Gk *he*; other ancient authorities read *Manasses*

the volume (see 3.1–6n.; 4.11n.). **3:** *Seven sons*: Edna's wish for grandchildren is granted (10.12; for the motif of seven sons, see Ruth 4.15; 2 Macc 7; 4 Macc 14.12). **4:** Unlike the first testament (ch 4), this one opens with predictions of the future; Tobit's comments are among the earliest claims that events are predetermined (see also Dan 10–12; Mk 13.7; Acts 1.7; Rev 1.1). The prophet *Nahum* predicted the destruction of *Assyria and Nineveh*; Babylon conquered Nineveh in 612 BCE (see v. 15; 13.12n.). **5–7:** With the restoration that began with the edict of Cyrus of Persia in 538 BCE, the hymn shifts to a vision of the splendid future of a renewed Jerusalem, glorified temple, return of the exiles (13.5n.), conversion of the Gentiles to the worship of the God of Israel, and elimination of sin. **10:** Recognizing that Anna will outlive him, Tobit insists his son provide for her in life and in death; reference to burial, now after a long life, contrasts positively with Tobit's interring of unburied corpses. *Nadab did to Ahikar*: see 1.21–22n. Nadab framed his uncle Ahikar, making it appear that he had committed treason against the king.

14.11b–15: Tobit and Anna die. Tobias is obedient to his father's command (v. 10) and fulfills his filial duty also by burying his in-laws. Of all the main characters, only Sarah's fate is left undeveloped in the final chapter.

injustice does—it brings death! But now my breath fails me."

Then they laid him on his bed, and he died; and he received an honorable funeral. 12 When Tobias's mother died, he buried her beside his father. Then he and his wife and children[a] returned to Media and settled in Ecbatana with Raguel his father-in-law. 13 He treated his parents-in-law[b] with great respect in their old age, and buried them in Ecbatana of Media. He inherited both the property of Raguel and that of his father Tobit. 14 He died highly respected at the age of one hundred seventeen[c] years. 15 Before he died he heard[d] of the destruction of Nineveh, and he saw its prisoners being led into Media, those whom King Cyaxares[e] of Media had taken captive. Tobias[f] praised God for all he had done to the people of Nineveh and Assyria; before he died he rejoiced over Nineveh, and he blessed the Lord God forever and ever. Amen.[g]

[a] Codex Sinaiticus lacks *and children*
[b] Gk *them*
[c] Other authorities read other numbers
[d] Codex Sinaiticus reads *saw and heard*
[e] Cn: Codex Sinaiticus *Ahikar*; other ancient authorities read *Nebuchadnezzar and Ahasuerus*
[f] Gk *He*
[g] Other ancient authorities lack *Amen*

13: *Ecbatana of Media,* see 3.7–15n. **15:** Reference to the destruction of Nineveh (see v. 4n.) suggests that Tobit's other predictions (vv. 4–7) will also come to pass. *Cyaxares* was ruler of Media ca. 625–585 BCE. Appropriately, the book ends with praise to God.

JUDITH

NAME, DATE OF COMPOSITION, AND CANONICAL STATUS

The book of Judith, which is named for its spirited heroine, is an entertaining narrative that has engaged Jewish and Christian imaginations for centuries and in many different ways. In Jewish tradition Judith was a heroine who protected her people, while in Christian tradition Judith has represented various virtues, such as chastity slaying lust. It was probably composed in Hebrew near the end of the second century BCE in the aftermath of the Maccabean Revolt, which it appears to idealize. No Hebrew manuscript survives, probably because the book was not accorded canonical status in Judaism, but the book was preserved in the Christian tradition in Greek, Latin, and other translations. It is considered canonical in Roman Catholic and Eastern Orthodox churches, and as part of the Apocrypha by Protestants.

GENRE, STRUCTURE, AND INTERPRETATION

Although the book of Judith came to be considered historical, it was composed as a fictional novella, much like other Hebrew stories with a central female protagonist, such as Esther, Tobit, and Susanna, as well as the apocryphal story of *Joseph and Aseneth,* and many Greek novels. The book's fictional nature is evident from its blending of history and fiction, beginning in the very first verse, and is too prevalent thereafter to be considered as the result of mere historical mistakes. Thus, the great villain is "Nebuchadnezzar, who ruled over the Assyrians" (1.1), yet the historical Nebuchadnezzar was the famous king of the Babylonians. Other details are also patently unbelievable, such as fictional place names, the immense size of armies and fortifications, the dating of events, and the actions of the Assyrian general Holofernes. Like the books of Jonah and Job and the more contemporary novellas, Judith would not have been taken to be a factual account even at the time of its composition. With its blend of fiction and ancient history, it should also be read in light of historical events at the time it was written. The "Assyrian" Nebuchadnezzar may be a cipher or coded name for the Syrian Antiochus IV Epiphanes, who had also tried to enforce a foreign religion on Israel. The Maccabees, like Judith, showed strength of resolve and won their freedom. Judith later recounts that Israel had destroyed the cults of those on the land (8.18–20), and this also recalls contemporary history, because the successors of the Maccabees destroyed the Samaritan temple on Mount Gerizim.

The book of Judith entertains and instructs by combining irony and humor, bombast and fascinating detail, sexual suggestiveness and pious self-denial bordering on asceticism, outrageous reversals of the period's gender roles and conservative religious values, escapism, and celebration of military success. Moreover, the plot's careful structure and the commanding figure of Judith herself make this a compelling tale. The story has two parts or acts of approximately equal length. Chapters 1–7 describe the rise of the threat to Israel, led by the evil king Nebuchadnezzar of the Assyrians and his sycophantic general Holofernes. This first part concludes as Holofernes' world-wide campaign has converged at the mountain pass where Judith's village, Bethulia, is located. The second part, chs 8–16, introduces Judith and depicts her heroic actions to save her people. Each of the two parts has a clear chiastic pattern in which the order of events is reversed at a central moment in the narrative (*abcc'b'a'*).

Part I (1.1–7.23)
- A. Campaign against disobedient nations; the people surrender (1.1–2.13)
  - B. Israel is "greatly terrified" (2.14–3.10)
    - C. Joakim prepares for war (4.1–15)
      - D. Holofernes talks with Achior (5.1–6.9)
        - E. Achior is expelled by Assyrians (6.10–13)
        - E.' Achior is received in village of Bethulia (6.14–15)
      - D.' Achior talks with the people (6.16–21)
    - C.' Holofernes prepares for war (7.1–3)
  - B.' Israel is "greatly terrified" (7.4–5)
- A.' Campaign against Bethulia; the people want to surrender (7.6–32)

Part II (8.1–16.25)
- A. Introduction of Judith (8.1–8)
  - B. Judith plans to save Israel (8.9–10.8)
    - C. Judith and her maid leave Bethulia (10.9–10)
      - D. Judith beheads Holofernes (10.11–13.10a)
    - C.' Judith and her maid return to Bethulia (13.10b–11)
  - B.' Judith plans the destruction of Israel's enemy (13.12–16.20)
- A.' Conclusion about Judith (16.21–25)

Part I, although at times tedious in its description of the military developments, develops important themes by alternating battles with reflections and rousing action with rest. In contrast, the second half is devoted mainly to Judith's strength of character and the beheading scene, which is told quickly. Perhaps such terseness implies that the original audience would have known the story, but the artistry lies in describing not *what* will happen but *how* it will happen. Furthermore, that the scene is told quickly does not imply insignificance. On the contrary, its importance is evident in its position at the center of the story's second act. Other paired figures and expressions also contribute to the story's structure: Nebuchadnezzar and God each have a "general," Holofernes and Judith respectively, and each of them has a servant, Bagoas and Judith's maid.

The character of Judith is also larger than life, and she has won a place in Jewish and Christian lore, art, poetry, and drama. Her name, which means "Jewish woman," is the feminine form of *Yehudi* and suggests that she represents the heroic spirit of the Jewish people. Because of her unswerving religious devotion, she is able to step outside of her widow's role, dress and act in a sexually provocative manner, lie to the opposing general Holofernes, seduce him, and behead him, all without a moment of self-doubt. Yet the book does not undermine accepted social conventions, for in the end Judith returns to her life as an exemplary pious widow. Thus, like many comedies, the book of Judith allows for a release of social tensions, explores transgressions of everyday rules, and then reconstitutes society on acceptable lines.

The book constantly echoes biblical narratives, most notably the assassination of Sisera by Jael in Judg 4–5 and the revenge of Simeon and Levi on Shechem after the rape of Dinah in Gen 34. Judith's deliverance of her people from danger makes her like the judges of Israel. She echoes Moses, too, as when she responds to murmuring over water and the testing of God (8.9–27), and when her hand is likened to the hand of Moses (8.33; 13.14; cf. Ex 14.21). The story also recalls folk traditions about male heroes, but adds humor and irony by making the hero a pious widow who transgresses the social restrictions of her gender in order to save her people and defend her God. Although some modern interpreters have questioned Judith's morality, in the ancient world Judith was always remembered positively as a heroine of the faith.

Lawrence M. Wills

1 It was the twelfth year of the reign of Nebuchadnezzar, who ruled over the Assyrians in the great city of Nineveh. In those days Arphaxad ruled over the Medes in Ecbatana. [2] He built walls around Ecbatana with hewn stones three cubits thick and six cubits long; he made the walls seventy cubits high and fifty cubits wide. [3] At its gates he raised towers one hundred cubits high and sixty cubits wide at the foundations. [4] He made its gates seventy cubits high and forty cubits wide to allow his armies to march out in force and his infantry to form their ranks. [5] Then King Nebuchadnezzar made war against King Arphaxad in the great plain that is on the borders of Ragau. [6] There rallied to him all the people of the hill country and all those who lived along the Euphrates, the Tigris, and the Hydaspes, and, on the plain, Arioch, king of the Elymeans. Thus, many nations joined the forces of the Chaldeans.[a]

[7] Then Nebuchadnezzar, king of the Assyrians, sent messengers to all who lived in Persia and to all who lived in the west, those who lived in Cilicia and Damascus, Lebanon and Antilebanon, and all who lived along the seacoast, [8] and those among the nations of Carmel and Gilead, and Upper Galilee and the great plain of Esdraelon, [9] and all who were in Samaria and its towns, and beyond the Jordan as far as Jerusalem and Bethany and Chelous and Kadesh and the river of Egypt, and Tahpanhes and Raamses and the whole land of Goshen, [10] even beyond Tanis and Memphis, and all who lived in Egypt as far as the borders of Ethiopia. [11] But all who lived in the whole region disregarded the summons of Nebuchadnezzar, king of the Assyrians, and refused to join him in the war; for they were not afraid of him, but regarded him as only one man.[b] So they sent back his messengers empty-handed and in disgrace.

[12] Then Nebuchadnezzar became very angry with this whole region, and swore by his throne and kingdom that he would take revenge on the whole territory of Cilicia and Damascus and Syria, that he would kill with his sword also all the inhabitants of the land of Moab, and the people of Ammon, and all Judea, and every one in Egypt, as far as the coasts of the two seas.

[13] In the seventeenth year he led his forces against King Arphaxad and defeated him

[a] Syr: Gk *Cheleoudites*
[b] Or *a man*

1.1–7.32: Part I: A great empire rises up to attack Israel and other nations.

1.1–6: Nebuchadnezzar is introduced and declares war on Arphaxad, king of Media. 1: The dating of events in the reign of the great king is typical of histories, but although *Nebuchadnezzar* of Babylon had defeated the southern half of Israel (Judah) in 586 BCE (see 2 Kings 25.1–21) and the *Assyrians* had defeated the northern half of Israel in 722 BCE (see 2 Kings 17.5–6), the combination *Nebuchadnezzar* of the *Assyrians* is fictitious—yet it combines both bitter associations. There is also no known king of the *Medes* named *Arphaxad*. **2–4:** The massive fortifications of Arphaxad's capital *Ecbatana,* in northwestern Iran, are unrealistic: *walls seventy cubits high and fifty cubits wide* would measure 105 ft (32 m) by 75 ft (23 m). By beginning with the might and grandeur of Arphaxad, the threat of Nebuchadnezzar is made even more dramatic. **5–6:** Although many of the place names in the book of Judith are well known, others are fictitious or unknown; together they give the impression that the entire world is involved. What seems repetitive to the modern reader serves to evoke the extent of the campaign. **6:** *Euphrates, Tigris,* the principal rivers of Mesopotamia. *Chaldeans* is another name for Babylonians, reflecting the author's fictitious merging of the Assyrians and Babylonians for the purposes of the story.

1.7–11: Many nations rebuff Nebuchadnezzar's call to ally with him. Nebuchadnezzar's messengers move from east to west, through modern Iran, Syria, southern Turkey, Lebanon, Jordan, Palestine, Israel, and into Egypt. But all the nations reject his summons; he is nothing more than *one man* (v. 11). This judgment will be tested. **8:** *Esdraelon* (older Jezreel), the *great plain* from Mount *Carmel* to the Jordan Valley. **9:** *Samaria* and *Jerusalem* are mentioned only in passing; at this point there is a world-wide focus, which will first narrow to the area of Syria-Palestine, then to Samaria and Judea, and finally to the tiny mountain village of Bethulia (4.6). (See map on p. 1394.)

1.12–16: Nebuchadnezzar vows to destroy the western nations and easily defeats Arphaxad without their aid. 12: Nebuchadnezzar swears to destroy the nations that figure so prominently in the Bible: *Damascus, Syria, Moab, Ammon, Egypt;* Judith and a small band of Jews will deliver all of the biblical lands. The *two seas* are pos-

in battle, overthrowing the whole army of Arphaxad and all his cavalry and all his chariots. [14] Thus he took possession of his towns and came to Ecbatana, captured its towers, plundered its markets, and turned its glory into disgrace. [15] He captured Arphaxad in the mountains of Ragau and struck him down with his spears, thus destroying him once and for all. [16] Then he returned to Nineveh, he and all his combined forces, a vast body of troops; and there he and his forces rested and feasted for one hundred twenty days.

2 In the eighteenth year, on the twenty-second day of the first month, there was talk in the palace of Nebuchadnezzar, king of the Assyrians, about carrying out his revenge on the whole region, just as he had said. [2] He summoned all his ministers and all his nobles and set before them his secret plan and recounted fully, with his own lips, all the wickedness of the region.[a] [3] They decided that every one who had not obeyed his command should be destroyed.

[4] When he had completed his plan, Nebuchadnezzar, king of the Assyrians, called Holofernes, the chief general of his army, second only to himself, and said to him, [5] "Thus says the Great King, the lord of the whole earth: Leave my presence and take with you men confident in their strength, one hundred twenty thousand foot soldiers and twelve thousand cavalry. [6] March out against all the land to the west, because they disobeyed my orders. [7] Tell them to prepare earth and water, for I am coming against them in my anger, and will cover the whole face of the earth with the feet of my troops, to whom I will hand them over to be plundered. [8] Their wounded shall fill their ravines and gullies, and the swelling river shall be filled with their dead. [9] I will lead them away captive to the ends of the whole earth. [10] You shall go and seize all their territory for me in advance. They must yield themselves to you, and you shall hold them for me until the day of their punishment. [11] But to those who resist show no mercy, but hand them over to slaughter and plunder throughout your whole region. [12] For as I live, and by the power of my kingdom, what I have spoken I will accomplish by my own hand. [13] And you—take care not to transgress any of your lord's commands, but carry them out exactly as I have ordered you; do it without delay."

[14] So Holofernes left the presence of his lord, and summoned all the commanders, generals, and officers of the Assyrian army. [15] He mustered the picked troops by divisions as his lord had ordered him to do, one hundred twenty thousand of them, together with twelve thousand archers on horseback, [16] and he organized them as a great army is marshaled for a campaign. [17] He took along a vast number of camels and donkeys and mules for transport, and innumerable sheep and oxen and goats for food; [18] also ample rations for everyone, and a huge amount of gold and silver from the royal palace.

[19] Then he set out with his whole army, to go ahead of King Nebuchadnezzar and to cover the whole face of the earth to the west with their chariots and cavalry and picked foot soldiers. [20] Along with them went a mixed crowd like a swarm of locusts, like the

[a] Meaning of Gk uncertain

sibly the Red Sea and the Mediterranean. **16:** The army *rested and feasted for one hundred twenty days*. This is the first of a series of well-placed pauses in the military history of the first half of the book (cf. 2.28; 3.10; 6.21; 7.32).

2.1–13: Nebuchadnezzar makes plans to destroy all the nations who opposed him. 1: *The eighteenth year,* 587 BCE, when the siege of Jerusalem began; see 2 Kings 25.1. **2:** Nebuchadnezzar summons *all his ministers* and threatens to destroy the whole region (cf. Dan 2.2–5; 3.2–9). **4:** *Holofernes* was the name of a general in the Persian army of Artaxerxes III Ochus, who invaded this same region in 350 and 343 BCE. His officer was named Bagoas, a name that will appear in 12:11. Real persons have likely been used as fictional opponents. **5:** *The lord of the whole earth,* Nebuchadnezzar and Holofernes will have delusions of grandeur and attribute terms to Nebuchadnezzar that should be reserved for God alone (cf. 3.8). **7:** It was Persian practice to demand *earth and water* from foreign states as a sign of submission (Herodotus, *Histories* 6.48).

2.14–3.10: Holofernes begins the campaign to destroy the disobedient nations.

2.15–20: The enormousness of the Assyrian army is emphasized, including animals, rations, gold and silver, even hangers-on—*a mixed crowd* (cf. Ex 12.38) *like a swarm of locusts* (cf. Judg 6.5; Joel 1.4–7), *like the dust of the*

dust[a] of the earth—a multitude that could not be counted.

21 They marched for three days from Nineveh to the plain of Bectileth, and camped opposite Bectileth near the mountain that is to the north of Upper Cilicia. 22 From there Holofernes[b] took his whole army, the infantry, cavalry, and chariots, and went up into the hill country. 23 He ravaged Put and Lud, and plundered all the Rassisites and the Ishmaelites on the border of the desert, south of the country of the Chelleans. 24 Then he followed[c] the Euphrates and passed through Mesopotamia and destroyed all the fortified towns along the brook Abron, as far as the sea. 25 He also seized the territory of Cilicia, and killed everyone who resisted him. Then he came to the southern borders of Japheth, facing Arabia. 26 He surrounded all the Midianites, and burned their tents and plundered their sheepfolds. 27 Then he went down into the plain of Damascus during the wheat harvest, and burned all their fields and destroyed their flocks and herds and sacked their towns and ravaged their lands and put all their young men to the sword.

28 So fear and dread of him fell upon all the people who lived along the seacoast, at Sidon and Tyre, and those who lived in Sur and Ocina and all who lived in Jamnia. Those who lived in Azotus and Ascalon feared him greatly.

3 They therefore sent messengers to him to sue for peace in these words: 2 "We, the servants of Nebuchadnezzar, the Great King, lie prostrate before you. Do with us whatever you will. 3 See, our buildings and all our land and all our wheat fields and our flocks and herds and all our encampments[d] lie before you; do with them as you please. 4 Our towns and their inhabitants are also your slaves; come and deal with them as you see fit."

5 The men came to Holofernes and told him all this. 6 Then he went down to the seacoast with his army and stationed garrisons in the fortified towns and took picked men from them as auxiliaries. 7 These people and all in the countryside welcomed him with garlands and dances and tambourines. 8 Yet he demolished all their shrines[e] and cut down their sacred groves; for he had been commissioned to destroy all the gods of the land, so that all nations should worship Nebuchadnezzar alone, and that all their dialects and tribes should call upon him as a god.

9 Then he came toward Esdraelon, near Dothan, facing the great ridge of Judea; 10 he camped between Geba and Scythopolis, and remained for a whole month in order to collect all the supplies for his army.

4 When the Israelites living in Judea heard of everything that Holofernes, the general of Nebuchadnezzar, the king of the Assyrians, had done to the nations, and how he had plundered and destroyed all their temples, 2 they were therefore greatly terrified at his approach; they were alarmed both for Jerusalem and for the temple of the Lord their God. 3 For they had only recently returned from exile, and all the people of Judea had

[a] Gk *sand*
[b] Gk *he*
[c] Or *crossed*
[d] Gk *all the sheepfolds of our tents*
[e] Syr: Gk *borders*

earth. Such images depict the entire world at war. **21–27:** The campaign builds in intensity to include plundering, slaughter, and destruction, but the geography is confused. **21:** *Upper Cilicia*, in southeastern Asia Minor, is 400 mi (650 km) from Nineveh, a distance far too great to travel on foot in *three days*. **23:** *Put,* usually Libya; *Lud,* Lydia, in central Asia Minor; *Ishmaelites,* Arabs (Gen 16.11–12). **26:** *Midianites,* a group of people who lived in southern Transjordan, sometimes depicted as nomads (Gen 37.28; Judg 6.1–6).

2.28–3.10: The surrounding nations, who had caused trouble for Israel in the past, showed initial courage before Nebuchadnezzar (1.11), but now they succumb. **2.28:** *Sidon* and *Tyre* were two Phoenician cities on the Mediterranean coast north of Israel. *Jamnia, Azotus* (earlier Ashdod), and *Ascalon* (earlier Ashkelon), were on the Mediterranean coast of Palestine. **3.8:** *All nations, dialects, and tribes* (cf. Dan 3–4). **9:** *Dothan* was south of the plain of *Esdraelon* (see 1.8n.); *Scythopolis* (formerly Beth-shan) was at the plain's eastern end.

4.1–7: Israel, now standing alone, prepares for attack. The perspective now shifts to *the Israelites living in Judea* (v. 1), allowing an opportunity for a reflection on their history; however, it is telescoped: the Assyrians actually ruled before the Judeans *returned from exile* (v. 3). **3:** The consecration of the *sacred vessels, altar,* and



The geography of the book of Judith.

just now gathered together, and the sacred vessels and the altar and the temple had been consecrated after their profanation. [4] So they sent word to every district of Samaria, and to Kona, Beth-horon, Belmain, and Jericho, and to Choba and Aesora, and the valley of Salem. [5] They immediately seized all the high hilltops and fortified the villages on them and stored up food in preparation for war—since their fields had recently been harvested.

[6] The high priest, Joakim, who was in Jerusalem at the time, wrote to the people of Bethulia and Betomesthaim, which faces Esdraelon opposite the plain near Dothan, [7] ordering them to seize the mountain passes, since by them Judea could be invaded; and it would be easy to stop any who tried to enter, for the approach was narrow, wide enough for only two at a time to pass.

[8] So the Israelites did as they had been ordered by the high priest Joakim and the senate of the whole people of Israel, in session at Jerusalem. [9] And every man of Israel cried out to God with great fervor, and they humbled themselves with much fasting. [10] They and their wives and their children and their cattle and every resident alien and hired laborer and purchased slave—they all put sackcloth around their waists. [11] And all the Israelite men, women, and children living at Jerusalem prostrated themselves before the temple and put ashes on their heads and spread out their sackcloth before the Lord. [12] They even draped the altar with sackcloth and cried out in unison, praying fervently to the God of Israel not to allow their infants to be carried off and their wives to be taken as booty, and the towns they had inherited to be destroyed, and the sanctuary to be profaned and desecrated to the malicious joy of the Gentiles.

[13] The Lord heard their prayers and had regard for their distress; for the people fasted many days throughout Judea and in Jerusalem before the sanctuary of the Lord Almighty. [14] The high priest Joakim and all the priests who stood before the Lord and ministered to the Lord, with sackcloth around their loins, offered the daily burnt offerings, the votive offerings, and freewill offerings of the people. [15] With ashes on their turbans, they cried out to the Lord with all their might to look with favor on the whole house of Israel.

5 It was reported to Holofernes, the general of the Assyrian army, that the people of Israel had prepared for war and had closed the mountain passes and fortified all the high hilltops and set up barricades in the plains. [2] In great anger he called together all the princes of Moab and the commanders of Ammon and all the governors of the coastland, [3] and said to them, "Tell me, you Canaanites, what people is this that lives in the hill country? What towns do they inhabit? How large is their army, and in what does their power and strength consist? Who rules over them

temple ostensibly refers to the events in the late sixth century BCE after the exile (Ezra 6.13–22), but for the reader it would also evoke the more recent events after the victory of the Maccabees in 164 BCE (1 Macc 4:36–61; 2 Macc 10:1–8). Such telescoping distances the story from any specific historical event and so suggests that it concerns threats and responses in general. **4:** *Beth-horon,* 11 miles (18 km) northwest of Jerusalem. **6:** Judith's village, Bethulia ("virginity"), is named for the first time; if it is not a fictional place, its location is unknown. Although it is in Samaritan territory, Jerusalem and the Temple are always the focus.

4.8–15: Israel prays and fasts. The Israelites *humbled themselves with much fasting,* and *put sackcloth around their waists*—even the cattle! The humor is intentional (cf. Jon 3.8). The penitential theology found here became a staple of postexilic Judaism (cf. Ezra 9; Neh 9; Dan 9.4–19; Bar 1.1–3).**13:** *The Lord heard their prayers and had regard for their distress* (cf. Judg 3:9,15). Readers are assured that help is on the way, but in 7.23–31 this will be brought into question. Other novelistic texts of the period similarly predict happy endings despite building tension (Tob 3.16–17; Xenophon of Ephesus, *Ephesian Tale* 1.6). The question is not whether the protagonists will be saved, but how. **14:** For the various types of *offerings,* see Ex 29.38–41 and Lev 22.18–30.

5.1–21: Holofernes learns from Achior about Israelite identity. 1–4: Holofernes' campaign pauses for him to inquire concerning these Israelites who dare to oppose him. His military questions call forth a reflection on Jewish identity within a larger world: *In what does their power and strength consist? Who rules over them as king?* For the reader, God is king, which profoundly qualifies reverence for any earthly king. This scene introduces a recurring irony: the opponents perceive a worldly frame of reference, but Judith—and the audience—under-

as king and leads their army? [4] And why have they alone, of all who live in the west, refused to come out and meet me?"

[5] Then Achior, the leader of all the Ammonites, said to him, "May my lord please listen to a report from the mouth of your servant, and I will tell you the truth about this people that lives in the mountain district near you. No falsehood shall come from your servant's mouth. [6] These people are descended from the Chaldeans. [7] At one time they lived in Mesopotamia, because they did not wish to follow the gods of their ancestors who were in Chaldea. [8] Since they had abandoned the ways of their ancestors, and worshiped the God of heaven, the God they had come to know, their ancestors[a] drove them out from the presence of their gods. So they fled to Mesopotamia, and lived there for a long time. [9] Then their God commanded them to leave the place where they were living and go to the land of Canaan. There they settled, and grew very prosperous in gold and silver and very much livestock. [10] When a famine spread over the land of Canaan they went down to Egypt and lived there as long as they had food. There they became so great a multitude that their race could not be counted. [11] So the king of Egypt became hostile to them; he exploited them and forced them to make bricks. [12] They cried out to their God, and he afflicted the whole land of Egypt with incurable plagues. So the Egyptians drove them out of their sight. [13] Then God dried up the Red Sea before them, [14] and he led them by the way of Sinai and Kadesh-barnea. They drove out all the people of the desert, [15] and took up residence in the land of the Amorites, and by their might destroyed all the inhabitants of Heshbon; and crossing over the Jordan they took possession of all the hill country. [16] They drove out before them the Canaanites, the Perizzites, the Jebusites, the Shechemites, and all the Gergesites, and lived there a long time.

[17] "As long as they did not sin against their God they prospered, for the God who hates iniquity is with them. [18] But when they departed from the way he had prescribed for them, they were utterly defeated in many battles and were led away captive to a foreign land. The temple of their God was razed to the ground, and their towns were occupied by their enemies. [19] But now they have returned to their God, and have come back from the places where they were scattered, and have occupied Jerusalem, where their sanctuary is, and have settled in the hill country, because it was uninhabited.

[20] "So now, my master and lord, if there is any oversight in this people and they sin

[a] Gk *they*

stand these discussions on a theological level. **5–21:** Achior's account of Israelite history is told from a Jewish, not an Ammonite, point of view and summarizes Israelite history from the time of Abraham until the return from exile. The character of the Ammonite Achior is probably inspired by the legendary Assyrian courtier Ahikar (cf. Tob 1.21–22; 14.10). He is similar to other righteous Gentiles (Josh 2–6; 2 Kings 5) and foreshadows Judith's role: he is heroic, in an almost prophetic way says many of the same things as she, and will attest to her achievements. **6–9:** The ancestral narratives from Gen 12–36. **6:** *Chaldeans,* Abraham came from Ur of the Chaldees (Gen 11.27–31), in southern Babylonia. It is characteristic of Greek and Roman ethnography to begin by noting the origins of a people. **7:** Early Jewish tradition explains that Abraham's family migrated from Chaldea because they wished to escape polytheism (*Jub*. 11.16–12.7; Josephus, *Ant.* 1.134–57). **10–13:** The descent into Egypt and the Exodus (Gen 37–Ex 18). **14:** *Sinai*, Ex 19–Num 10; *Kadesh-barnea*, Num 20.1. **15–16:** The conquests in Transjordan and Canaan (Num 20–Josh 11). **17–21:** Achior here states the Deuteronomic principle of God's conditional favor (Deut 28) that is prominent in the books of Joshua through Kings, later repeated by Judith (11. 9–15), and finally illustrated by the outcome of the story. **19:** The return from exile (Ezra 1–3).

5.22–6.21: Holofernes expels Achior, who is received in Bethulia. 6.2: *Ephraim,* the northern part of Israel. Holofernes understands Achior's words as an attempt at prophecy and uses prophetic idioms to report Nebuchadnezzar's will (v. 4). He thus defines the conflict as a question of who is God. **6.5:** *You shall not see my face again,* highly ironic, since Achior will see Holofernes' face again—separated from the rest of his body (14.6)! Achior will not die in battle but will become a Jew (14.10). At least some of Holofernes' words will indeed come true, but not as he assumes. **20:** His banquet upon being received will be balanced by Judith's smaller banquet when she is received by Holofernes (12.1).

against their God and we find out their offense, then we can go up and defeat them. [21] But if they are not a guilty nation, then let my lord pass them by; for their Lord and God will defend them, and we shall become the laughingstock of the whole world."

[22] When Achior had finished saying these things, all the people standing around the tent began to complain; Holofernes' officers and all the inhabitants of the seacoast and Moab insisted that he should be cut to pieces. [23] They said, "We are not afraid of the Israelites; they are a people with no strength or power for making war. [24] Therefore let us go ahead, Lord Holofernes, and your vast army will swallow them up."

6 When the disturbance made by the people outside the council had died down, Holofernes, the commander of the Assyrian army, said to Achior[a] in the presence of all the foreign contingents:

[2] "Who are you, Achior and you mercenaries of Ephraim, to prophesy among us as you have done today and tell us not to make war against the people of Israel because their God will defend them? What god is there except Nebuchadnezzar? He will send his forces and destroy them from the face of the earth. Their God will not save them; [3] we the king's[b] servants will destroy them as one man. They cannot resist the might of our cavalry. [4] We will overwhelm them;[c] their mountains will be drunk with their blood, and their fields will be full of their dead. Not even their footprints will survive our attack; they will utterly perish. So says King Nebuchadnezzar, lord of the whole earth. For he has spoken; none of his words shall be in vain.

[5] "As for you, Achior, you Ammonite mercenary, you have said these words in a moment of perversity; you shall not see my face again from this day until I take revenge on this race that came out of Egypt. [6] Then at my return the sword of my army and the spear[d] of my servants shall pierce your sides, and you shall fall among their wounded. [7] Now my slaves are going to take you back into the hill country and put you in one of the towns beside the passes. [8] You will not die until you perish along with them. [9] If you really hope in your heart that they will not be taken, then do not look downcast! I have spoken, and none of my words shall fail to come true."

[10] Then Holofernes ordered his slaves, who waited on him in his tent, to seize Achior and take him away to Bethulia and hand him over to the Israelites. [11] So the slaves took him and led him out of the camp into the plain, and from the plain they went up into the hill country and came to the springs below Bethulia. [12] When the men of the town saw them,[e] they seized their weapons and ran out of the town to the top of the hill, and all the slingers kept them from coming up by throwing stones at them. [13] So having taken shelter below the hill, they bound Achior and left him lying at the foot of the hill, and returned to their master.

[14] Then the Israelites came down from their town and found him; they untied him and brought him into Bethulia and placed him before the magistrates of their town, [15] who in those days were Uzziah son of Micah, of the tribe of Simeon, and Chabris son of Gothoniel, and Charmis son of Melchiel. [16] They called together all the elders of the town, and all their young men and women ran to the assembly. They set Achior in the midst of all their people, and Uzziah questioned him about what had happened. [17] He answered and told them what had taken place at the council of Holofernes, and all that he had said in the presence of the Assyrian leaders, and all that Holofernes had boasted he would do against the house of Israel. [18] Then the people fell down and worshiped God, and cried out:

[19] "O Lord God of heaven, see their arrogance, and have pity on our people in their humiliation, and look kindly today on the faces of those who are consecrated to you."

[20] Then they reassured Achior, and praised him highly. [21] Uzziah took him from the assembly to his own house and gave a banquet for the elders; and all that night they called on the God of Israel for help.

[a] Other ancient authorities add *and to all the Moabites*
[b] Gk *his*
[c] Other ancient authorities add *with it*
[d] Lat Syr: Gk *people*
[e] Other ancient authorities add *on the top of the hill*

7 The next day Holofernes ordered his whole army, and all the allies who had joined him, to break camp and move against Bethulia, and to seize the passes up into the hill country and make war on the Israelites. 2 So all their warriors marched off that day; their fighting forces numbered one hundred seventy thousand infantry and twelve thousand cavalry, not counting the baggage and the foot soldiers handling it, a very great multitude. 3 They encamped in the valley near Bethulia, beside the spring, and they spread out in breadth over Dothan as far as Balbaim and in length from Bethulia to Cyamon, which faces Esdraelon.

4 When the Israelites saw their vast numbers, they were greatly terrified and said to one another, "They will now strip clean the whole land; neither the high mountains nor the valleys nor the hills will bear their weight." 5 Yet they all seized their weapons, and when they had kindled fires on their towers, they remained on guard all that night.

6 On the second day Holofernes led out all his cavalry in full view of the Israelites in Bethulia. 7 He reconnoitered the approaches to their town, and visited the springs that supplied their water; he seized them and set guards of soldiers over them, and then returned to his army.

8 Then all the chieftains of the Edomites and all the leaders of the Moabites and the commanders of the coastland came to him and said, 9 "Listen to what we have to say, my lord, and your army will suffer no losses. 10 This people, the Israelites, do not rely on their spears but on the height of the mountains where they live, for it is not easy to reach the tops of their mountains. 11 Therefore, my lord, do not fight against them in regular formation, and not a man of your army will fall. 12 Remain in your camp, and keep all the men in your forces with you; let your servants take possession of the spring of water that flows from the foot of the mountain, 13 for this is where all the people of Bethulia get their water. So thirst will destroy them, and they will surrender their town. Meanwhile, we and our people will go up to the tops of the nearby mountains and camp there to keep watch to see that no one gets out of the town. 14 They and their wives and children will waste away with famine, and before the sword reaches them they will be strewn about in the streets where they live. 15 Thus you will pay them back with evil, because they rebelled and did not receive you peaceably."

16 These words pleased Holofernes and all his attendants, and he gave orders to do as they had said. 17 So the army of the Ammonites moved forward, together with five thousand Assyrians, and they encamped in the valley and seized the water supply and the springs of the Israelites. 18 And the Edomites and Ammonites went up and encamped in the hill country opposite Dothan; and they sent some of their men toward the south and the east, toward Egrebeh, which is near Chusi beside the Wadi Mochmur. The rest of the Assyrian army encamped in the plain, and covered the whole face of the land. Their tents and supply trains spread out in great number, and they formed a vast multitude.

19 The Israelites then cried out to the Lord their God, for their courage failed, because all their enemies had surrounded them, and there was no way of escape from them. 20 The whole Assyrian army, their infantry, chariots, and cavalry, surrounded them for thirty-four days, until all the water containers of every inhabitant of Bethulia were empty; 21 their cisterns were going dry, and on no day did they have enough water to drink, for their drinking water was rationed. 22 Their children were listless, and the women and young men fainted from thirst and were collapsing in the streets of the town and in the gateways; they no longer had any strength.

7.1–18: Holofernes advances on Bethulia and prepares for a siege. Again, the size of the army is emphasized, covering an entire valley (see 2.15–20n). They will *strip clean the whole land* like locusts. The action is drawn out and presented visually to give the full impression of the forces arrayed against Bethulia. **8:** The historical enemies of Israel, *Edomites* and *Moabites*, recommend a siege, so that Bethulia will fall for lack of water.

7.19–32: Israelites in Bethulia begin to despair. The predictions of Holofernes' advisers appear to be coming true. Just as lack of water led to murmuring in Ex 17.1–7, so also here; Moses' role is paralleled by both Uzziah

[23] Then all the people, the young men, the women, and the children, gathered around Uzziah and the rulers of the town and cried out with a loud voice, and said before all the elders, [24] "Let God judge between you and us! You have done us a great injury in not making peace with the Assyrians. [25] For now we have no one to help us; God has sold us into their hands, to be strewn before them in thirst and exhaustion. [26] Now summon them and surrender the whole town as booty to the army of Holofernes and to all his forces. [27] For it would be better for us to be captured by them.[a] We shall indeed become slaves, but our lives will be spared, and we shall not witness our little ones dying before our eyes, and our wives and children drawing their last breath. [28] We call to witness against you heaven and earth and our God, the Lord of our ancestors, who punishes us for our sins and the sins of our ancestors; do today the things that we have described!"

[29] Then great and general lamentation arose throughout the assembly, and they cried out to the Lord God with a loud voice. [30] But Uzziah said to them, "Courage, my brothers and sisters![b] Let us hold out for five days more; by that time the Lord our God will turn his mercy to us again, for he will not forsake us utterly. [31] But if these days pass by, and no help comes for us, I will do as you say."

[32] Then he dismissed the people to their various posts, and they went up on the walls and towers of their town. The women and children he sent home. In the town they were in great misery.

8 Now in those days Judith heard about these things: she was the daughter of Merari son of Ox son of Joseph son of Oziel son of Elkiah son of Ananias son of Gideon son of Raphain son of Ahitub son of Elijah son of Hilkiah son of Eliab son of Nathanael son of Salamiel son of Sarasadai son of Israel. [2] Her husband Manasseh, who belonged to her tribe and family, had died during the barley harvest. [3] For as he stood overseeing those who were binding sheaves in the field, he was overcome by the burning heat, and took to his bed and died in his town Bethulia. So they buried him with his ancestors in the field between Dothan and Balamon. [4] Judith remained as a widow for three years and four months [5] at home where she set up a tent for herself on the roof of her house. She put sackcloth around her waist and dressed in widow's clothing. [6] She fasted all the days of her widowhood, except the day before the sabbath and the sabbath itself, the day before the new moon and the day of the new moon, and the festivals and days of rejoicing of the house of Israel. [7] She was beautiful in appearance, and was very lovely to behold. Her husband Manasseh had left her gold and silver, men and women slaves, livestock, and fields; and she

[a] Other ancient authorities add *than to die of thirst*
[b] Gk *Courage, brothers*

and Judith. **28:** *Our sins and the sins of our ancestors*, the Israelites blame themselves for their predicaments (cf. Judith's interpretation in 8.18,27). **30:** Uzziah urges that they *hold out for five days more*. A similar story is told of the Greek city of Lindos, in which the citizens, besieged by the Persians, pray to Athena to send rain within five days. The goddess comes to their aid by bringing rain to them and drought to the Persians. Judith, however, will later have none of this; she will condemn the Bethulians for setting a deadline on God's help (see 8.11–17). **7.32:** Calm descends on Bethulia, but it is the calm of despair. This makes an effective conclusion to the first half and a transition to the introduction of the person who will save Bethulia and thus Israel: Judith.

8.1–16.25: Part II: Judith rescues her people.

8.1–8: Judith is introduced. 1: Judith's name, in Greek "Ioudith," in Hebrew "Yehudit," is the feminine for Judean or Jew. Her name suggests that Bethulia and Jerusalem will be saved by the ideal Jewish woman, and it also echoes the name of one of the leaders of the Maccabean revolt, Judas Maccabeus. She is given the longest genealogy of any woman in the Bible, but it is likely fictitious. Many of the names are unknown, although it includes *Israel,* i.e., Jacob. **2–3:** The death of her husband from sunstroke provides an unheroic contrast to Judith's actions. Other male characters will also be passive in contrast to her. **4–6:** Judith's piety is exemplary, and her period of mourning is far greater than prescribed in Jewish law, suggesting a new mode of ascetic practice. In keeping with Jewish law, she does not fast on festive holidays. **7–8:** Judith's beauty and wealth give her a larger-than-life quality, but her devotion to God is the source of her strength.

maintained this estate. [8] No one spoke ill of her, for she feared God with great devotion.

[9] When Judith heard the harsh words spoken by the people against the ruler, because they were faint for lack of water, and when she heard all that Uzziah said to them, and how he promised them under oath to surrender the town to the Assyrians after five days, [10] she sent her maid, who was in charge of all she possessed, to summon Uzziah and[a] Chabris and Charmis, the elders of her town. [11] They came to her, and she said to them:

"Listen to me, rulers of the people of Bethulia! What you have said to the people today is not right; you have even sworn and pronounced this oath between God and you, promising to surrender the town to our enemies unless the Lord turns and helps us within so many days. [12] Who are you to put God to the test today, and to set yourselves up in the place of[b] God in human affairs? [13] You are putting the Lord Almighty to the test, but you will never learn anything! [14] You cannot plumb the depths of the human heart or understand the workings of the human mind; how do you expect to search out God, who made all these things, and find out his mind or comprehend his thought? No, my brothers, do not anger the Lord our God. [15] For if he does not choose to help us within these five days, he has power to protect us within any time he pleases, or even to destroy us in the presence of our enemies. [16] Do not try to bind the purposes of the Lord our God; for God is not like a human being, to be threatened, or like a mere mortal, to be won over by pleading. [17] Therefore, while we wait for his deliverance, let us call upon him to help us, and he will hear our voice, if it pleases him.

[18] "For never in our generation, nor in these present days, has there been any tribe or family or people or town of ours that worships gods made with hands, as was done in days gone by. [19] That was why our ancestors were handed over to the sword and to pillage, and so they suffered a great catastrophe before our enemies. [20] But we know no other god but him, and so we hope that he will not disdain us or any of our nation. [21] For if we are captured, all Judea will be captured and our sanctuary will be plundered; and he will make us pay for its desecration with our blood. [22] The slaughter of our kindred and the captivity of the land and the desolation of our inheritance—all this he will bring on our heads among the Gentiles, wherever we serve as slaves; and we shall be an offense and a disgrace in the eyes of those who acquire us. [23] For our slavery will not bring us into favor, but the Lord our God will turn it to dishonor.

[24] "Therefore, my brothers, let us set an example for our kindred, for their lives depend upon us, and the sanctuary—both the temple and the altar—rests upon us. [25] In spite of everything let us give thanks to the Lord our God, who is putting us to the test as he did our ancestors. [26] Remember what he did with Abraham, and how he tested Isaac, and what happened to Jacob in Syrian Mesopotamia, while he was tending the sheep of Laban, his mother's brother. [27] For he has not tried us with fire, as he did them, to search their hearts, nor has he taken vengeance on us; but the Lord scourges those who are close to him in order to admonish them."

[28] Then Uzziah said to her, "All that you have said was spoken out of a true heart, and there is no one who can deny your words. [29] Today is not the first time your wisdom

[a] Other ancient authorities lack *Uzziah and* (see verses 28 and 35)

[b] Or *above*

8.9–27: Judith upbraids the town leaders. 10: Her unnamed *maid,* a slave, is responsible for her affairs. Slaves could wield the authority of their owners. **11:** That *they came to her* indicates Judith's important status in the community. **12:** Judith will insist that they pray to God (v.17), but they may not *put God to the test* by setting a date, a violation of Deut 6.16. **18–19:** A theme of this story is the Deuteronomic principle that if Jews sin, they will be defeated, but if they remain righteous, God will protect them (Deut 28). Judith's description of the present righteousness idealizes the period after the Maccabean Revolt when the Temple had been rededicated. **25–27:** Rather than testing God, it is God who tests Israel, as God tested *Abraham* (Gen 22), *Isaac,* and *Jacob* (Gen 29). Israelite history is echoed often in Judith.

8.28–36: Judith's powerful words win over Uzziah and the citizens. Just as Holofernes in the first half spends much of his time in war councils, Judith holds a war council with the Bethulians. **29:** The Bethulians have always

has been shown, but from the beginning of your life all the people have recognized your understanding, for your heart's disposition is right. 30 But the people were so thirsty that they compelled us to do for them what we have promised, and made us take an oath that we cannot break. 31 Now since you are a God-fearing woman, pray for us, so that the Lord may send us rain to fill our cisterns. Then we will no longer feel faint from thirst."

32 Then Judith said to them, "Listen to me. I am about to do something that will go down through all generations of our descendants. 33 Stand at the town gate tonight so that I may go out with my maid; and within the days after which you have promised to surrender the town to our enemies, the Lord will deliver Israel by my hand. 34 Only, do not try to find out what I am doing; for I will not tell you until I have finished what I am about to do."

35 Uzziah and the rulers said to her, "Go in peace, and may the Lord God go before you, to take vengeance on our enemies." 36 So they returned from the tent and went to their posts.

9 Then Judith prostrated herself, put ashes on her head, and uncovered the sackcloth she was wearing. At the very time when the evening incense was being offered in the house of God in Jerusalem, Judith cried out to the Lord with a loud voice, and said,

2 "O Lord God of my ancestor Simeon, to whom you gave a sword to take revenge on those strangers who had torn off a virgin's clothing[a] to defile her, and exposed her thighs to put her to shame, and polluted her womb to disgrace her; for you said, 'It shall not be done'—yet they did it; 3 so you gave up their rulers to be killed, and their bed, which was ashamed of the deceit they had practiced, was stained with blood, and you struck down slaves along with princes, and princes on their thrones. 4 You gave up their wives for booty and their daughters to captivity, and all their booty to be divided among your beloved children who burned with zeal for you and abhorred the pollution of their blood and called on you for help. O God, my God, hear me also, a widow.

5 "For you have done these things and those that went before and those that followed. You have designed the things that are now, and those that are to come. What you had in mind has happened; 6 the things you decided on presented themselves and said, 'Here we are!' For all your ways are prepared in advance, and your judgment is with foreknowledge.

7 "Here now are the Assyrians, a greatly increased force, priding themselves in their horses and riders, boasting in the strength of their foot soldiers, and trusting in shield and spear, in bow and sling. They do not know that you are the Lord who crushes wars; the Lord is your name. 8 Break their strength by your might, and bring down their power in your anger; for they intend to defile your sanctuary, and to pollute the tabernacle where your glorious name resides, and to break off the horns[b] of your altar with the sword. 9 Look at their pride, and send your

[a] Cn: Gk *loosed her womb*
[b] Syr: Gk *horn*

respected Judith's wisdom; her traits are similar to personified Wisdom (Prov 8.6) and the capable wife (Prov 31.10–31). However, her wisdom will exceed the usual standards for wise women. **30:** Thirst had rendered the people weak, and the passive leaders, unlike Judith, had acquiesced. **32–34:** Judith keeps her plan secret, in contrast to Nebuchadnezzar who reveals his secret plan to his advisors (2.2), and places her confidence in God that it will succeed. It will be remembered by *all generations* (cf. 16.21–25).

9.1–14: Judith prepares through prayer. 1: *Ashes* and *sackcloth* are signs of mourning and affliction. Judith's prayer coincides with the offering of evening incense (Ex 30.8). **2–8:** She invokes the sins of the invaders and the revenge of *my ancestor Simeon* on Shechem for raping Dinah (Gen 34). Although Simeon's revenge is characterized as excessive and foolhardy in Gen 34.30; 49.5–7, here it is considered justified, as in *Jub.* 30. **8:** The *horns* of the altar were projections with symbolic importance; see Ex 27.2; 1 Kings 1.50; 2.28; Am 3.14. **9–10:** Judith prays that God strike down Holofernes by the hand of a *widow* and a *woman,* a reversal found also at Judg 4; 5; 9.53–54. Like Simeon, Judith will use *deceit*—not a last-minute expedient but the basis of her plan and her prayer all along. By contrast, a weaker male, Achior, insisted rightly that he would speak only truth (5.5). Although rejected in wisdom texts (Prov 6.16–19; Wis 1.8; Jas 3.5–12), deceit is celebrated in this story, and

wrath upon their heads. Give to me, a widow, the strong hand to do what I plan. [10] By the deceit of my lips strike down the slave with the prince and the prince with his servant; crush their arrogance by the hand of a woman.

[11] "For your strength does not depend on numbers, nor your might on the powerful. But you are the God of the lowly, helper of the oppressed, upholder of the weak, protector of the forsaken, savior of those without hope. [12] Please, please, God of my father, God of the heritage of Israel, Lord of heaven and earth, Creator of the waters, King of all your creation, hear my prayer! [13] Make my deceitful words bring wound and bruise on those who have planned cruel things against your covenant, and against your sacred house, and against Mount Zion, and against the house your children possess. [14] Let your whole nation and every tribe know and understand that you are God, the God of all power and might, and that there is no other who protects the people of Israel but you alone!"

10 When Judith[a] had stopped crying out to the God of Israel, and had ended all these words, [2] she rose from where she lay prostrate. She called her maid and went down into the house where she lived on sabbaths and on her festal days. [3] She removed the sackcloth she had been wearing, took off her widow's garments, bathed her body with water, and anointed herself with precious ointment. She combed her hair, put on a tiara, and dressed herself in the festive attire that she used to wear while her husband Manasseh was living. [4] She put sandals on her feet, and put on her anklets, bracelets, rings, earrings, and all her other jewelry. Thus she made herself very beautiful, to entice the eyes of all the men who might see her. [5] She gave her maid a skin of wine and a flask of oil, and filled a bag with roasted grain, dried fig cakes, and fine bread;[b] then she wrapped up all her dishes and gave them to her to carry.

[6] Then they went out to the town gate of Bethulia and found Uzziah standing there with the elders of the town, Chabris and Charmis. [7] When they saw her transformed in appearance and dressed differently, they were very greatly astounded at her beauty and said to her, [8] "May the God of our ancestors grant you favor and fulfill your plans, so that the people of Israel may glory and Jerusalem may be exalted." She bowed down to God.

[9] Then she said to them, "Order the gate of the town to be opened for me so that I may go out and accomplish the things you have just said to me." So they ordered the young men to open the gate for her, as she requested. [10] When they had done this, Judith went out, accompanied by her maid. The men of the town watched her until she had gone down the mountain and passed through the valley, where they lost sight of her.

[11] As the women[c] were going straight on through the valley, an Assyrian patrol met her [12] and took her into custody. They asked her, "To what people do you belong, and where are you coming from, and where are you going?" She replied, "I am a daughter of the Hebrews, but I am fleeing from them, for they are about

[a] Gk *she*
[b] Other ancient authorities add *and cheese*
[c] Gk *they*

elsewhere is often used by tricksters and those less powerful than their adversaries, such as Rebekah (Gen 27), Jacob (Gen 27), Rachel (Gen 31), Tamar (Gen 38), and Abraham (Gen 12; 20).

10.1–10: Judith puts her plan into motion. 1–4: Judith wore sackcloth while praying, but now dresses in beautiful clothes (cf. Add Esth 15). **3:** Given the lack of water in Bethulia, Judith's decision to bathe *her body with water* indicates the significance of her mission. **5:** Judith's provisions will allow her to keep the dietary laws while with the Assyrians (cf. Dan 1.8–16). Her maid will be a silent, efficient, loyal counterpart to Holofernes' talkative assistant, Bagoas. **6–10:** The ritualized departure slows the rhythm of the story here, and the visual detail is striking. Once Judith passes through the gate of the city, almost every word out of her mouth will be deceitful and every action sexually provocative or murderous.

10.11–23: Judith meets the guards and is taken to Holofernes. 13–16: Ironically and humorously, readers already see that her *true report* will be a lie. Nearly every line of dialogue that follows can be read ironically as well: *You have saved your life by hurrying down to see our lord* (v. 15) can be heard by the audience as referring to God. The obtuseness of the Assyrians, even about the meanings of their own words, is likely intended as

to be handed over to you to be devoured. [13] I am on my way to see Holofernes the commander of your army, to give him a true report; I will show him a way by which he can go and capture all the hill country without losing one of his men, captured or slain."

[14] When the men heard her words, and observed her face—she was in their eyes marvelously beautiful—they said to her, [15] "You have saved your life by hurrying down to see our lord. Go at once to his tent; some of us will escort you and hand you over to him. [16] When you stand before him, have no fear in your heart, but tell him what you have just said, and he will treat you well."

[17] They chose from their number a hundred men to accompany her and her maid, and they brought them to the tent of Holofernes. [18] There was great excitement in the whole camp, for her arrival was reported from tent to tent. They came and gathered around her as she stood outside the tent of Holofernes, waiting until they told him about her. [19] They marveled at her beauty and admired the Israelites, judging them by her. They said to one another, "Who can despise these people, who have women like this among them? It is not wise to leave one of their men alive, for if we let them go they will be able to beguile the whole world!"

[20] Then the guards of Holofernes and all his servants came out and led her into the tent. [21] Holofernes was resting on his bed under a canopy that was woven with purple and gold, emeralds and other precious stones. [22] When they told him of her, he came to the front of the tent, with silver lamps carried before him. [23] When Judith came into the presence of Holofernes[a] and his servants, they all marveled at the beauty of her face. She prostrated herself and did obeisance to him, but his slaves raised her up.

11 Then Holofernes said to her, "Take courage, woman, and do not be afraid in your heart, for I have never hurt anyone who chose to serve Nebuchadnezzar, king of all the earth. [2] Even now, if your people who live in the hill country had not slighted me, I would never have lifted my spear against them. They have brought this on themselves. [3] But now tell me why you have fled from them and have come over to us. In any event, you have come to safety. Take courage! You will live tonight and ever after. [4] No one will hurt you. Rather, all will treat you well, as they do the servants of my lord King Nebuchadnezzar."

[5] Judith answered him, "Accept the words of your slave, and let your servant speak in your presence. I will say nothing false to my lord this night. [6] If you follow out the words of your servant, God will accomplish something through you, and my lord will not fail to achieve his purposes. [7] By the life of Nebuchadnezzar, king of the whole earth, and by the power of him who has sent you to direct every living being! Not only do human beings serve him because of you, but also the animals of the field and the cattle and the birds of the air will live, because of your power, under Nebuchadnezzar and all his house. [8] For we have heard of your wisdom and skill, and it is reported throughout the whole world that you alone are the best in the whole kingdom, the most informed and the most astounding in military strategy.

[9] "Now as for Achior's speech in your council, we have heard his words, for the people of Bethulia spared him and he told them all he had said to you. [10] Therefore, lord and master, do not disregard what he said, but keep it in your mind, for it is true. Indeed our nation cannot be punished, nor can the sword prevail against them, unless they sin against their God.

[11] "But now, in order that my lord may not be defeated and his purpose frustrated, death

[a] Gk *him*

humorous. **20–22:** Holofernes' tent is decorated with luxurious items like a harem chamber.

11.1–23: Judith's dialogue with Holofernes. 1: Holofernes also speaks a mixture of truth and lies (see 3.2–8). **6:** Judith's double meanings continue with the ambiguity in her statement: *My lord will not fail to achieve his purposes.* **7:** This grandiose view of Nebuchadnezzar is also played upon in Dan 2.37–38; 4.12 (cf. Jer 27.6; 28.14). Judith cleverly adapts the praise of Nebuchadnezzar to flatter Holofernes. **9–15:** That Holofernes would have believed any part of her story is preposterous, but this only makes the fictional world more enjoyable. **9:** *Achior's*

will fall upon them, for a sin has overtaken them by which they are about to provoke their God to anger when they do what is wrong. 12 Since their food supply is exhausted and their water has almost given out, they have planned to kill their livestock and have determined to use all that God by his laws has forbidden them to eat. 13 They have decided to consume the first fruits of the grain and the tithes of the wine and oil, which they had consecrated and set aside for the priests who minister in the presence of our God in Jerusalem—things it is not lawful for any of the people even to touch with their hands. 14 Since even the people in Jerusalem have been doing this, they have sent messengers there in order to bring back permission from the council of the elders. 15 When the response reaches them and they act upon it, on that very day they will be handed over to you to be destroyed.

16 "So when I, your slave, learned all this, I fled from them. God has sent me to accomplish with you things that will astonish the whole world wherever people shall hear about them. 17 Your servant is indeed God-fearing and serves the God of heaven night and day. So, my lord, I will remain with you; but every night your servant will go out into the valley and pray to God. He will tell me when they have committed their sins. 18 Then I will come and tell you, so that you may go out with your whole army, and not one of them will be able to withstand you. 19 Then I will lead you through Judea, until you come to Jerusalem; there I will set your throne.[a] You will drive them like sheep that have no shepherd, and no dog will so much as growl at you. For this was told me to give me foreknowledge; it was announced to me, and I was sent to tell you."

20 Her words pleased Holofernes and all his servants. They marveled at her wisdom and said, 21 "No other woman from one end of the earth to the other looks so beautiful or speaks so wisely!" 22 Then Holofernes said to her, "God has done well to send you ahead of the people, to strengthen our hands and bring destruction on those who have despised my lord. 23 You are not only beautiful in appearance, but wise in speech. If you do as you have said, your God shall be my God, and you shall live in the palace of King Nebuchadnezzar and be renowned throughout the whole world."

12 Then he commanded them to bring her in where his silver dinnerware was kept, and ordered them to set a table for her with some of his own delicacies, and with some of his own wine to drink. 2 But Judith said, "I cannot partake of them, or it will be an offense; but I will have enough with the things I brought with me." 3 Holofernes said to her, "If your supply runs out, where can we get you more of the same? For none of your people are here with us." 4 Judith replied, "As surely as you live, my lord, your servant will not use up the supplies I have with me before the Lord carries out by my hand what he has determined."

5 Then the servants of Holofernes brought her into the tent, and she slept until midnight. Toward the morning watch she got up 6 and sent this message to Holofernes: "Let my lord now give orders to allow your servant to go out and pray." 7 So Holofernes commanded his guards not to hinder her. She remained in the camp three days. She went out each night to the valley of Bethulia, and bathed at the spring in the camp.[b] 8 After bathing, she prayed the Lord God of Israel to direct her way for the triumph of his[c] people. 9 Then she returned purified and stayed in the tent until she ate her food toward evening.

[a] Or *chariot*
[b] Other ancient authorities lack *in the camp*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *her*

speech, see 5.5–21. **13:** *First fruits*, Ex 23.19; *tithes*, Lev 27.30. **17:** Even Judith's piety is deceitful; she establishes a prayer discipline that will allow her to escape unnoticed (13.3,10), just as her pouch for kosher food will also serve a different and macabre purpose. **22–23:** Holofernes unknowingly speaks the truth in double meanings: *bring destruction on those who have despised my lord; your God shall be my God*—in judgment!

12.1–9: Judith's daily schedule within Holofernes' camp. Judith imposes her schedule on Holofernes, which allows her to keep the dietary laws and to pray (cf. Dan 1.8–19). **8:** Her daily *bathing* may be a ritual bath; similar rituals were practiced at Qumran.

10 On the fourth day Holofernes held a
banquet for his personal attendants only,
and did not invite any of his officers. 11 He
said to Bagoas, the eunuch who had charge
of his personal affairs, "Go and persuade the
Hebrew woman who is in your care to join us
and to eat and drink with us. 12 For it would be
a disgrace if we let such a woman go without
having intercourse with her. If we do not
seduce her, she will laugh at us."

13 So Bagoas left the presence of Holo-
fernes, and approached her and said, "Let
this pretty girl not hesitate to come to my lord
to be honored in his presence, and to enjoy
drinking wine with us, and to become today
like one of the Assyrian women who serve in
the palace of Nebuchadnezzar." 14 Judith re-
plied, "Who am I to refuse my lord? Whatever
pleases him I will do at once, and it will be a
joy to me until the day of my death." 15 So she
proceeded to dress herself in all her woman's
finery. Her maid went ahead and spread for
her on the ground before Holofernes the
lambskins she had received from Bagoas for
her daily use in reclining.

16 Then Judith came in and lay down.
Holofernes' heart was ravished with her
and his passion was aroused, for he had
been waiting for an opportunity to seduce
her from the day he first saw her. 17 So
Holofernes said to her, "Have a drink and
be merry with us!" 18 Judith said, "I will
gladly drink, my lord, because today is the
greatest day in my whole life." 19 Then she
took what her maid had prepared and ate
and drank before him. 20 Holofernes was
greatly pleased with her, and drank a great
quantity of wine, much more than he had
ever drunk in any one day since he was
born.

13 When evening came, his slaves quickly
withdrew. Bagoas closed the tent from
outside and shut out the attendants from
his master's presence. They went to bed, for
they all were weary because the banquet had
lasted so long. 2 But Judith was left alone in
the tent, with Holofernes stretched out on his
bed, for he was dead drunk.

3 Now Judith had told her maid to stand
outside the bedchamber and to wait for
her to come out, as she did on the other
days; for she said she would be going out
for her prayers. She had said the same thing
to Bagoas. 4 So everyone went out, and no
one, either small or great, was left in the
bedchamber. Then Judith, standing beside
his bed, said in her heart, "O Lord God of all
might, look in this hour on the work of my
hands for the exaltation of Jerusalem. 5 Now
indeed is the time to help your heritage and
to carry out my design to destroy the enemies
who have risen up against us."

6 She went up to the bedpost near Holo-
fernes' head, and took down his sword that
hung there. 7 She came close to his bed,
took hold of the hair of his head, and said,
"Give me strength today, O Lord God of Is-
rael!" 8 Then she struck his neck twice with
all her might, and cut off his head. 9 Next
she rolled his body off the bed and pulled
down the canopy from the posts. Soon af-
terward she went out and gave Holofernes'
head to her maid, 10 who placed it in her
food bag.

12.10–20: Holofernes invites Judith to a banquet. 11–13: *Bagoas,* see 2.4n. Both Holofernes and Bagoas reveal by their words that they are putty in Judith's hands, an ironic contrast with the power they think they have. In the Greek novels the beautiful heroine is often threatened with the prospect of being forced to marry a king or become a courtesan, but here Judith is fully in charge and can manipulate the suggestion. **15:** The lambskins may symbolically protect Judith from impurity (cf. Josephus, *Ant.* 3.270, *m. Sot.* 2:4). **16–20:** Holofernes thinks that he will seduce Judith, but it is *she* who seduces *him* into drinking *more than he had ever drunk* before. She seems as excited as Holofernes, but for an entirely different reason. Again, Judith speaks the truth that she intends to be misunderstood by Holofernes.

13.1–10a: Judith beheads Holofernes 1–3: Chs 1–12 have been building in tension for this moment. The story has been intentionally delayed before but proceeds quickly now, with the beheading scene told in seven verses. **6–10a:** Judith's actions and words also have biblical precedents, including David slaying Goliath (1 Sam 17.46) and Jael slaying Sisera (Judg 4–5). Holofernes' *canopy* and *head* are collected as trophies, which will be important later. The *food bag* is now seen to be part of her plan to kill Holofernes as well.

13.10b–20: Judith and her maid return to Bethulia. The daily prayers of Judith and her maid now make it

Then the two of them went out together, as they were accustomed to do for prayer. They passed through the camp, circled around the valley, and went up the mountain to Bethulia, and came to its gates. [11] From a distance Judith called out to the sentries at the gates, "Open, open the gate! God, our God, is with us, still showing his power in Israel and his strength against our enemies, as he has done today!"

[12] When the people of her town heard her voice, they hurried down to the town gate and summoned the elders of the town. [13] They all ran together, both small and great, for it seemed unbelievable that she had returned. They opened the gate and welcomed them. Then they lit a fire to give light, and gathered around them. [14] Then she said to them with a loud voice, "Praise God, O praise him! Praise God, who has not withdrawn his mercy from the house of Israel, but has destroyed our enemies by my hand this very night!"

[15] Then she pulled the head out of the bag and showed it to them, and said, "See here, the head of Holofernes, the commander of the Assyrian army, and here is the canopy beneath which he lay in his drunken stupor. The Lord has struck him down by the hand of a woman. [16] As the Lord lives, who has protected me in the way I went, I swear that it was my face that seduced him to his destruction, and that he committed no sin with me, to defile and shame me."

[17] All the people were greatly astonished. They bowed down and worshiped God, and said with one accord, "Blessed are you our God, who have this day humiliated the enemies of your people."

[18] Then Uzziah said to her, "O daughter, you are blessed by the Most High God above all other women on earth; and blessed be the Lord God, who created the heavens and the earth, who has guided you to cut off the head of the leader of our enemies. [19] Your praise[a] will never depart from the hearts of those who remember the power of God. [20] May God grant this to be a perpetual honor to you, and may he reward you with blessings, because you risked your own life when our nation was brought low, and you averted our ruin, walking in the straight path before our God." And all the people said, "Amen. Amen."

14 Then Judith said to them, "Listen to me, my friends. Take this head and hang it upon the parapet of your wall. [2] As soon as day breaks and the sun rises on the earth, each of you take up your weapons, and let every able-bodied man go out of the town; set a captain over them, as if you were going down to the plain against the Assyrian outpost; only do not go down. [3] Then they will seize their arms and go into the camp and rouse the officers of the Assyrian army. They will rush into the tent of Holofernes and will not find him. Then panic will come over them, and they will flee before you. [4] Then you and all who live within the borders of Israel will pursue them and cut them down in their tracks. [5] But before you do all this, bring Achior the Ammonite to me so that he may see and recognize the man who despised the house of Israel and sent him to us as if to his death."

[6] So they summoned Achior from the house of Uzziah. When he came and saw the head of Holofernes in the hand of one of the men in the assembly of the people, he fell down on his face in a faint. [7] When they raised him up he threw himself at Judith's feet, and did obeisance to her, and said, "Blessed are you in every tent of Judah! In every nation those who hear your name will be alarmed. [8] Now tell me what you have done during these days."

So Judith told him in the presence of the people all that she had done, from the day

[a] Other ancient authorities read *hope*

possible for them to arouse no suspicion as they escape (11.17; 12.7). **15:** *By the hand of a woman,* see 9.9–10n. **18–20:** Judith's deed is met with a blessing similar to Deborah's blessing of Jael for killing the Canaanite general Sisera (Judg 5.24).

14.1–10: Judith plans for a military victory, and Achior converts. Judith again orders the Bethulians into action and demonstrates her control over the Assyrians. On exhibiting the enemy's *head,* cf. 1 Sam 17.54; 31.9–10; 2 Kings 10.7–8; Matt 14.8; 1 Macc 7.47; 2 Macc 15.35. The last two are significant because Judith's name may be a play on that of Judas Maccabeus, whose exhibition of the head of Nicanor also resulted in an annual celebra-

she left until the moment she began speaking to them. [9] When she had finished, the people raised a great shout and made a joyful noise in their town. [10] When Achior saw all that the God of Israel had done, he believed firmly in God. So he was circumcised, and joined the house of Israel, remaining so to this day.

[11] As soon as it was dawn they hung the head of Holofernes on the wall. Then they all took their weapons, and they went out in companies to the mountain passes. [12] When the Assyrians saw them they sent word to their commanders, who then went to the generals and the captains and to all their other officers. [13] They came to Holofernes' tent and said to the steward in charge of all his personal affairs, "Wake up our lord, for the slaves have been so bold as to come down against us to give battle, to their utter destruction."

[14] So Bagoas went in and knocked at the entry of the tent, for he supposed that he was sleeping with Judith. [15] But when no one answered, he opened it and went into the bedchamber and found him sprawled on the floor dead, with his head missing. [16] He cried out with a loud voice and wept and groaned and shouted, and tore his clothes. [17] Then he went to the tent where Judith had stayed, and when he did not find her, he rushed out to the people and shouted, [18] "The slaves have tricked us! One Hebrew woman has brought disgrace on the house of King Nebuchadnezzar. Look, Holofernes is lying on the ground, and his head is missing!"

[19] When the leaders of the Assyrian army heard this, they tore their tunics and were greatly dismayed, and their loud cries and shouts rose up throughout the camp.

15 When the men in the tents heard it, they were amazed at what had happened. [2] Overcome with fear and trembling, they did not wait for one another, but with one impulse all rushed out and fled by every path across the plain and through the hill country. [3] Those who had camped in the hills around Bethulia also took to flight. Then the Israelites, everyone that was a soldier, rushed out upon them. [4] Uzziah sent men to Betomasthaim[a] and Choba and Kola, and to all the frontiers of Israel, to tell what had taken place and to urge all to rush out upon the enemy to destroy them. [5] When the Israelites heard it, with one accord they fell upon the enemy,[b] and cut them down as far as Choba. Those in Jerusalem and all the hill country also came, for they were told what had happened in the camp of the enemy. The men in Gilead and in Galilee outflanked them with great slaughter, even beyond Damascus and its borders. [6] The rest of the people of Bethulia fell upon the Assyrian camp and plundered it, acquiring great riches. [7] And the Israelites, when they returned from the slaughter, took possession of what remained. Even the villages and towns in the hill country and in the plain got a great amount of booty, since there was a vast quantity of it.

[8] Then the high priest Joakim and the elders of the Israelites who lived in Jerusalem came to witness the good things that the Lord

[a] Other ancient authorities add *and Bebai*
[b] Gk *them*

tion. **6:** Cf. 6.5. It is ironic that Achior faints, since Judith was so resolute in taking the head. **10:** Like Judith, Achior recognizes that her heroism comes from God, and responds by converting. Although Deut 23.3 forbids the acceptance of Ammonites or Moabites to the tenth generation, in this romanticized narrative, he, like Ruth the Moabite, is permitted to join.

14.11–15.7: The Assyrians discover Holofernes' headless body and are put to flight. 14.11–14: Events occur just as Judith predicted (14.3), although the story is slowed somewhat so that the audience can relish the coming reversal. **18:** Honor and shame are now reversed; Judith has exhibited Holofernes' head, shaming him and his memory, and the status of weak and powerful is reversed: *Slaves* and *one Hebrew woman* prevail over and disgrace *the house of King Nebuchadnezzar.* **14.19–15.7:** Upon learning that Holofernes has lost his head, the Assyrians lose theirs as well: general chaos results, and they are easily vanquished by the outnumbered Israelites. Here the Assyrians experience the same *fear and trembling* that they caused other nations (cf. 2.3), including Israel (4.1–2). The depiction of victory and plundering is similar to 1 Macc 7.44–47 (cf. also Deut 20.10–18; Esth 9.1–19; Ps 48).

15.8–16.20: A series of celebrations. 15.8–10: The connection between Judith, Bethulia, and the Jerusalem

had done for Israel, and to see Judith and to wish her well. [9] When they met her, they all blessed her with one accord and said to her, "You are the glory of Jerusalem, you are the great boast of Israel, you are the great pride of our nation! [10] You have done all this with your own hand; you have done great good to Israel, and God is well pleased with it. May the Almighty Lord bless you forever!" And all the people said, "Amen."

[11] All the people plundered the camp for thirty days. They gave Judith the tent of Holofernes and all his silver dinnerware, his beds, his bowls, and all his furniture. She took them and loaded her mules and hitched up her carts and piled the things on them.

[12] All the women of Israel gathered to see her, and blessed her, and some of them performed a dance in her honor. She took ivy-wreathed wands in her hands and distributed them to the women who were with her; [13] and she and those who were with her crowned themselves with olive wreaths. She went before all the people in the dance, leading all the women, while all the men of Israel followed, bearing their arms and wearing garlands and singing hymns.

[14] Judith began this thanksgiving before all Israel, and all the people loudly sang this song of praise. [1] And Judith said,

16

Begin a song to my God with tambourines,
sing to my Lord with cymbals.
Raise to him a new psalm;[a]
exalt him, and call upon his name.
[2] For the Lord is a God who crushes wars;
he sets up his camp among his people;
he delivered me from the hands of my pursuers.
[3] The Assyrian came down from the mountains of the north;
he came with myriads of his warriors;
their numbers blocked up the wadis,
and their cavalry covered the hills.
[4] He boasted that he would burn up my territory,
and kill my young men with the sword,
and dash my infants to the ground,
and seize my children as booty,
and take my virgins as spoil.

[5] But the Lord Almighty has foiled them
by the hand of a woman.[b]
[6] For their mighty one did not fall by the hands of the young men,
nor did the sons of the Titans strike him down,
nor did tall giants set upon him;
but Judith daughter of Merari
with the beauty of her countenance undid him.

[7] For she put away her widow's clothing
to exalt the oppressed in Israel.
She anointed her face with perfume;
[8] she fastened her hair with a tiara
and put on a linen gown to beguile him.
[9] Her sandal ravished his eyes,
her beauty captivated his mind,
and the sword severed his neck!
[10] The Persians trembled at her boldness,
the Medes were daunted at her daring.

[a] Other ancient authorities read *a psalm and praise*
[b] Other ancient authorities add *he has confounded them*

Temple officials has often been emphasized in the story, and especially here in the co-celebration. **11:** A balanced and complete reversal of fortune can be seen here. Bethulia was under siege for thirty-four days (7.20) before Judith went to the Assyrian camp for four days, which the Israelites then plunder for thirty days. **12:** *The women . . . performed a dance in her honor,* women in Israel performed victory dances and songs (Ex 15.20–21; 1 Sam 18.6–7). *Ivy-wreathed wands* were Greek in origin, but 2 Macc 10.7 and 3 Macc 7.16 indicate that they had been adopted by Jews. **15.14–16.17:** Judith's victory song. This book, like Tobit, concludes with a long hymn of thanksgiving (cf. also Deut 32–33; Judg 5; 2 Sam 22; Jon 2; Prayer of Azariah, and the Song of the Three Jews). Especially close is Ex 15; Ex 15.3 (Greek) and Jdt 16.2 both read: *For the Lord is a God who crushes wars.* **16.1:** *Tambourines,* small hand-drums without the modern metal rattles, are known from ancient depictions (cf. Ps 150.4–5). *A new psalm* (cf. Ps 96.1; 98.1). **5:** *By the hand of a woman,* see 9.9–10n.; 13.15. **6:** *Titans* and *giants* are from Greek mythology, though here perhaps also referring to giants from Israelite tradition (Gen 6.4; Deut 3.11). **10:** The

[11] Then my oppressed people shouted;
my weak people cried out,[a] and the enemy[b] trembled;
they lifted up their voices, and the enemy[b] were turned back.
[12] Sons of slave-girls pierced them through and wounded them like the children of fugitives;
they perished before the army of my Lord.

[13] I will sing to my God a new song:
O Lord, you are great and glorious,
wonderful in strength, invincible.
[14] Let all your creatures serve you,
for you spoke, and they were made.
You sent forth your spirit,[c] and it formed them;[d]
there is none that can resist your voice.
[15] For the mountains shall be shaken to their foundations with the waters;
before your glance the rocks shall melt like wax.
But to those who fear you
you show mercy.
[16] For every sacrifice as a fragrant offering is a small thing,
and the fat of all whole burnt offerings to you is a very little thing;
but whoever fears the Lord is great forever.

[17] Woe to the nations that rise up against my people!
The Lord Almighty will take vengeance on them in the day of judgment;
he will send fire and worms into their flesh;
they shall weep in pain forever.

[18] When they arrived at Jerusalem, they worshiped God. As soon as the people were purified, they offered their burnt offerings, their freewill offerings, and their gifts. [19] Judith also dedicated to God all the possessions of Holofernes, which the people had given her; and the canopy that she had taken for herself from his bedchamber she gave as a votive offering. [20] For three months the people continued feasting in Jerusalem before the sanctuary, and Judith remained with them.

[21] After this they all returned home to their own inheritances. Judith went to Bethulia, and remained on her estate. For the rest of her life she was honored throughout the whole country. [22] Many desired to marry her, but she gave herself to no man all the days of her life after her husband Manasseh died and was gathered to his people. [23] She became more and more famous, and grew old in her husband's house, reaching the age of one hundred five. She set her maid free. She died in Bethulia, and they buried her in the cave of her husband Manasseh; [24] and the house of Israel mourned her for seven days. Before she died she distributed her property to all those who were next of kin to her husband Manasseh, and to her own nearest kindred. [25] No one ever again spread terror among the Israelites during the lifetime of Judith, or for a long time after her death.

[a] Other ancient authorities read *feared*
[b] Gk *they*
[c] Or *breath*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *they were created*

Persians and *Medes* are surprising here; they have not figured in the narrative before. **13:** *A new song* (cf. 16.1n.; Ps 33; 149.1; Isa 42.10). **14:** Cf. Ps 104.30. **15:** Cf. Ps. 97.5. **19:** Offerings of military booty were common; David offered the sword of Goliath (1 Sam 21.9). Ironically, Judith does not offer Holofernes' sword but the inner canopy of his tent, which she penetrated to kill him. Even in death Holofernes is unmanned and shamed.

16.21–25: Conclusion. The hero or heroine in stories of many cultures does not generally reintegrate into society after saving the people, although Judith's status is unclear. She does not marry, gives away her wealth (cf. Num 27.11), and frees her slave, but does she reenter her hut (8.5)? At any rate, like the judges she brings peace and safety to the land for a period (Judg 3.11,30; 5.31).

This page intentionally left blank

ESTHER
(THE GREEK VERSION CONTAINING ADDITIONAL CHAPTERS)

NAME AND CANONICAL STATUS

The Greek version of Esther is a second- or first-century BCE translation for Greek-speaking Jews of the canonical Hebrew book of Esther (i.e., the one included in the "Hebrew Bible" portion of this edition). The earliest indication that the story was titled "Esther" after its Jewish heroine appears in connection with this Greek translation. The translator—very likely the Lysimachus of Jerusalem mentioned in 11.1—produced a systematic but relatively free translation of the Hebrew. Besides numerous small but often significant omissions and additions (see annotations that follow), the Greek version includes six extra sections with more than a hundred verses that have no counterparts in any Hebrew manuscript.

In the early centuries CE, as the rabbis worked out the official canon of Jewish scripture, they rejected the Greek translation of Esther, including its additional verses, along with all other non-Hebrew Jewish texts. By contrast the early Church adopted into its canon a number of Jewish writings in Greek, among them the "extra" verses in Greek Esther. Protestants follow the Jewish model and exclude the additional verses from their canon, while Roman Catholic and Orthodox Christians accept them. (Most editions of this Bible include these disputed Greek/Jewish texts in the Apocryphal/Deuterocanonical section.)

AUTHORSHIP, DATE, AND LITERARY HISTORY

The evidence from both Hebrew and Greek manuscripts suggests a complicated evolution of the Esther story that scholars have yet to disentangle fully. Originally, Additions A, C, D, and F were probably composed in either Hebrew or Aramaic, and if so may have already been part of the text from which the Greek translator worked. The florid rhetorical phraseology of B and E indicates that they must originally have been composed in Greek. It is impossible to say who authored either the Semitic or Greek Additions. Additions B and E may have been composed in a sophisticated Greek Jewish center, such as Alexandria, but a Palestinian provenance for the others is likely.

The additions were not composed at the same time. The latest possible date for B, C, D, and E is 93 CE when the historian Josephus paraphrased them in his *Jewish Antiquities.* The colophon's location (11.1) immediately after F suggests that A as well as F were part of the Semitic text at the time that Lysimachus made his Greek translation in the late second or first century BCE.

The additional sections are clearly intrusive and secondary, for they contradict the older Hebrew text at a number of points. What is clear, however, is that the Hellenistic author(s) of these extra portions of the story all followed the early Jewish tradition of biblical interpretation called *midrash* and felt called upon to resolve perceived narrative, theological, and moral ambiguities in Jewish scripture. Consequently, while the additions sometimes make the characters and events more vivid or dramatic, their main purpose is to transform the comparatively subtle and enigmatic Hebrew story of Esther into a more conventional tale of divine intervention and exemplary Jewish piety.

CONTENTS

The Greek Additions to the book of Esther comprise 105 verses. Their contents are as follows:

- Addition A: Mordecai's dream (11.2–12) and his discovery of a plot against the king (12.1–6)
- Addition B: The royal edict dictated by Haman, announcing a pogrom (a persecution to the death) against the Jews (13.1–7)
- Addition C: The prayers of Mordecai (13.8-18) and Esther (14.1–19)
- Addition D: Esther's appearance, unsummoned, before the king (15.4–19)
- Addition E: The royal edict dictated by Mordecai, counteracting the edict sent by Haman (16.1–24)
- Addition F: The interpretation of Mordecai's dream (10.4–13) and the colophon (an inscription at the end of a manuscript) to the Greek version (11.1)

Besides the Additions, the translators also made many minor changes as they interpreted the Hebrew text. These are mentioned in the annotations.

INTERPRETATION

Besides giving the story a more explicit religious character, the additions as they are arranged within the narrative create new emphases. A and F, which frame the story, graft onto it an apocalyptic perspective of cosmic struggle between good and evil. The juxtaposition of C's extensive praise of God with specific terms and phrases applied to Ahasuerus in D makes explicit the Greek version's intent throughout the story to contrast the capricious earthly king with God the faithful heavenly king. Similarly, the royal decrees in B and E highlight the theme of human commandments versus the divinely given Jewish law to which Esther also alludes when she prays in C.

There is no mention of God in the original Hebrew narrative, one important reason for the centuries of rabbinical debate over including Esther among the authoritative Jewish scriptures. By contrast, in the Greek Additions the terms "Lord" or "God" appear more than fifty times. Occasionally the Greek translation inserts references to God into verses that correspond to the original Hebrew text, as when Mordecai instructs Esther prior to her becoming queen that she should "fear God and keep his laws" (2.20) and then later urges her to "call upon the Lord" (4.8) before appearing unsummoned before the king. In 6.1 according to the Greek text, "That night the Lord took sleep from the king," whereas the Hebrew leaves the source of Ahasuerus's insomnia unspecified. Likewise in the Greek version, Haman's wife and his friends caution Haman that if Mordecai is Jewish, then "the living God is with him" (compare the Heb at 6.13).

The additions provide their authors with an opportunity to express their own particular theological views. Additions A and F introduce apocalyptic motifs to emphasize God's providential care for the people Israel in a universally hostile world. Addition C attests to the efficacy of prayer and expresses Queen Esther's abhorrence at being married to a Gentile, her loathing of all things worldly and courtly, and her strict observance of Jewish dietary laws—none of which are so much as hinted at in the Hebrew. Thanks largely to Addition D, the climax of the Greek version is reached when God miraculously changes to gentleness the king's "fierce anger" at Esther's unannounced entrance. This motif is lacking in the Hebrew. Taken together, the six additions deemphasize the establishment of Purim and express a deep distrust of Gentiles.

[For a full introduction to the book of Esther, see pp. 707–708 HB.]

Mary Joan Winn Leith

ADDITION A

11[a] [2] In the second year of the reign of Artaxerxes the Great, on the first day of Nisan, Mordecai son of Jair son of Shimei[b] son of Kish, of the tribe of Benjamin, had a dream. [3] He was a Jew living in the city of Susa, a great man, serving in the court of the king. [4] He was one of the captives whom King Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon had brought from Jerusalem with King Jeconiah of Judea. And this was his dream: [5] Noises[c] and confusion, thunders and earthquake, tumult on the earth! [6] Then two great dragons came forward, both ready to fight, and they roared terribly. [7] At their roaring every nation prepared for war, to fight against the righteous nation. [8] It was a day of darkness and gloom, of tribulation and distress, affliction and great tumult on the earth! [9] And the whole righteous nation was troubled; they feared the evils that threatened them,[d] and were ready to perish. [10] Then they cried out to God; and at their outcry, as though from a tiny spring, there came a great river, with abundant water; [11] light came, and the sun rose, and the lowly were exalted and devoured those held in honor.

[12] Mordecai saw in this dream what God had determined to do, and after he awoke he had it on his mind, seeking all day to understand it in every detail.

12 Now Mordecai took his rest in the courtyard with Gabatha and Tharra, the two eunuchs of the king who kept watch in the courtyard. [2] He overheard their conversation and inquired into their purposes, and learned that they were preparing to lay hands on King Artaxerxes; and he informed the king concerning them. [3] Then the king examined the two eunuchs, and after they had confessed it, they were led away to execution. [4] The king made a permanent record of these

[a] Chapters 11.2—12.6 correspond to chapter A 1-17 in some translations.
[b] Gk *Semeios*
[c] Or *Voices*
[d] Gk *their own evils*

Addidion A: 11.2–12: Mordecai's prophetic dream of impending danger to the Jews. 2: *Artaxerxes*, a mistranslation of the Heb "Ahasuerus," that is, Xerxes I (486–465 BCE); the *second year* would be 485. Month names in Esther are Babylonian; *Nisan*, March-April, is the first month of the new year. Thus, Mordecai's dream comes on New Year's Day. *Mordecai*'s name derives from the name of the Babylonian god Marduk, whose creation of the world was reenacted every new year in Babylon. Mordecai's genealogy connecting him with King Saul (1 Sam 9.1; 2 Sam 16.5–18) is repeated in 2.5. **3:** *Jew* (Heb "yehudi"), originally meaning someone from the kingdom of Judah (2 Kings 16.6), is used here in its later sense of an adherent to Judaism. *Susa*, westernmost of the three capital cities of the Persian empire in northwestern Iran. In contrast to Heb Esther, Mordecai is already an important royal official. **4:** Mordecai would be well over one hundred years old by 485 BCE if he, along with Judah's last king *Jeconiah* (Jehoiachin), had been exiled by *Nebuchadnezzar* in 597 (2 Kings 24.8–16). As in other historical novellas, the author takes liberties with actual chronology. **5:** *Noises . . . tumult on the earth*, the language of cosmic chaos is typical of apocalyptic texts (see Isa 24.17–20; Dan 12.1,4). **6:** *Two great dragons*, Mordecai and Haman (see Addition F 10.7). God defeated the chaos dragon (a sea monster) at the time of creation (Pss 74.13; 89.10; Isa 27.1; 51.9–10; Job 26.12–13); imagery from this primordial battle is frequently used in apocalyptic literature (Dan 7; Rev 12.3; 13.2; 20.2). Two dragons (see 2 Esd 6.49–52), one good, one evil, are unusual and may reflect Persian influence. **7:** *Righteous nation*, the Jews (see Dan 7.27). Unlike the Heb, Gk Esther perceives the entire Gentile (non-Jewish) world as a danger to the Jews. **10:** *Cried out*, Ex 3.7; Jdt 4.9,12,15. *Tiny spring* and *great river* refer to Esther (10.6). **11:** *Light* and morning, symbolizing joy, salvation, and new life (Pss 30.5; 46.5; 112.4; Isa 33.2). *Lowly were exalted*, 1 Sam 2.4–9. One *held in honor* is Haman (12.6). **12:** *What God had determined to do*, in contrast to the Heb, all events in Gk Esther are foreordained by God, although Mordecai does not yet fully understand the dream's symbolism (10.4–9).

12.1–6: Mordecai saves the king's life. It is unclear whether this conspiracy is the same as the one in Esth 2.19–23 of the Heb text or an earlier intrigue. **5:** The king *rewarded* Mordecai immediately (in contrast to 6.1–3). **6:** The Gk text suggests (in contrast to the Heb) that Haman took part in the eunuchs' foiled plot and thus provides a motivation for Mordecai's and Haman's subsequent actions. *Bougean* (see also 3.1) is apparently an attempt to translate the Heb word "Agagite," which connects Haman to the Amalekite king, Agag, Saul's vanquished enemy (see 1 Sam 15.8). Mordecai and Haman share an ancestral enmity (Ex 17.8–16; Num 24.7).

things, and Mordecai wrote an account of them. 5 And the king ordered Mordecai to serve in the court, and rewarded him for these things. 6 But Haman son of Hammedatha, a Bougean, who was in great honor with the king, determined to injure Mordecai and his people because of the two eunuchs of the king.

END OF ADDITION A

1 It was after this that the following things happened in the days of Artaxerxes, the same Artaxerxes who ruled over one hundred twenty-seven provinces from India to Ethiopia.[a] 2 In those days, when King Artaxerxes was enthroned in the city of Susa, 3 in the third year of his reign, he gave a banquet for his Friends and other persons of various nations, the Persians and Median nobles, and the governors of the provinces. 4 After this, when he had displayed to them the riches of his kingdom and the splendor of his bountiful celebration during the course of one hundred eighty days, 5 at the end of the festivity[b] the king gave a drinking party for the people of various nations who lived in the city. This was held for six days in the courtyard of the royal palace, 6 which was adorned with curtains of fine linen and cotton, held by cords of purple linen attached to gold and silver blocks on pillars of marble and other stones. Gold and silver couches were placed on a mosaic floor of emerald, mother-of-pearl, and marble. There were coverings of gauze, embroidered in various colors, with roses arranged around them. 7 The cups were of gold and silver, and a miniature cup was displayed, made of ruby, worth thirty thousand talents. There was abundant sweet wine, such as the king himself drank. 8 The drinking was not according to a fixed rule; but the king wished to have it so, and he commanded his stewards to comply with his pleasure and with that of the guests.

9 Meanwhile, Queen Vashti[c] gave a drinking party for the women in the palace where King Artaxerxes was.

10 On the seventh day, when the king was in good humor, he told Haman, Bazan, Tharra, Boraze, Zatholtha, Abataza, and Tharaba, the seven eunuchs who served King Artaxerxes, 11 to escort the queen to him in order to proclaim her as queen and to place the diadem on her head, and to have her display her beauty to all the governors and the people of various nations, for she was indeed a beautiful woman. 12 But Queen Vashti[c] refused to obey him and would not come with the eunuchs. This offended the king and he became furious. 13 He said to his Friends, "This is how Vashti[c] has answered me.[d] Give therefore your ruling and judgment on this matter." 14 Arkesaeus, Sarsathaeus, and Malesear, then the governors of the Persians and Medes who were closest to the king—Arkesaeus, Sarsathaeus, and Malesear, who sat beside him in the chief seats—came to him 15 and told him what must be done

[a] Other ancient authorities lack *to Ethiopia*
[b] Gk *marriage feast*
[c] Gk *Astin*
[d] Gk *Astin has said thus and so*

1.1–9: Artaxerxes' banquet. 1: *Artaxerxes* see 11.2n. *Ethiopia* (Heb "Cush"), in the Bible this term refers to the territory of modern Sudan and Ethiopia. **3–4:** Greek writers mention fabulous feasts given by Persian kings; Ahasuerus's *banquet*, with its exaggerated length of *one hundred eighty days* (see Jdt 1.16), is the first of several that occur at key points in the story. *Friends*, a special class of courtiers. **5:** *Festivity*, or *marriage feast* (see textual note *b*), which would clarify the behavior of the king and Vashti (see 1.11). *Six days*, 1.10 (and Heb 1.5,10) says the party lasted seven days. **6–7:** The description, which emphasizes power and wealth, is more extravagant than in the Heb version. **8:** *According to a fixed rule*, ancient sources suggest that the king set the pace for drinking (Herodotus 1.33), and all guests drank when he drank. **9:** There are no ancient references to *Vashti*, whose name means "beloved"; Xerxes I's queen was Amestris (Herodotus 7.61). *Queen Vashti gave a drinking party for the women* emphasizes the separate gendered spheres of king and queen, a factor in Esther's later bravery.

1.10–22: Queen Vashti's downfall. 10: *Eunuchs* were castrated males who served in the Persian court. The list of their names lends the story an air of authenticity. **11:** *Proclaim her as queen*, in contrast to the Heb, Vashti is summoned for her official coronation as well as for display. **12:** The circumstances will be reversed when Esther approaches the king without having been summoned (4.11,16,15). **13–14:** Three *governors* rather than the seven

to Queen Vashti[a] for not obeying the order that the king had sent her by the eunuchs. [16] Then Muchaeus said to the king and the governors, "Queen Vashti[a] has insulted not only the king but also all the king's governors and officials" [17] (for he had reported to them what the queen had said and how she had defied the king). "And just as she defied King Artaxerxes, [18] so now the other ladies who are wives of the Persian and Median governors, on hearing what she has said to the king, will likewise dare to insult their husbands. [19] If therefore it pleases the king, let him issue a royal decree, inscribed in accordance with the laws of the Medes and Persians so that it may not be altered, that the queen may no longer come into his presence; but let the king give her royal rank to a woman better than she. [20] Let whatever law the king enacts be proclaimed in his kingdom, and thus all women will give honor to their husbands, rich and poor alike." [21] This speech pleased the king and the governors, and the king did as Muchaeus had recommended. [22] The king sent the decree into all his kingdom, to every province in its own language, so that in every house respect would be shown to every husband.

2 After these things, the king's anger abated, and he no longer was concerned about Vashti[a] or remembered what he had said and how he had condemned her. [2] Then the king's servants said, "Let beautiful and virtuous girls be sought out for the king. [3] The king shall appoint officers in all the provinces of his kingdom, and they shall select beautiful young virgins to be brought to the harem in Susa, the capital. Let them be entrusted to the king's eunuch who is in charge of the women, and let ointments and whatever else they need be given them. [4] And the woman who pleases the king shall be queen instead of Vashti."[a] This pleased the king, and he did so.

[5] Now there was a Jew in Susa the capital whose name was Mordecai son of Jair son of Shimei[b] son of Kish, of the tribe of Benjamin; [6] he had been taken captive from Jerusalem among those whom King Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon had captured. [7] And he had a foster child, the daughter of his father's brother, Aminadab, and her name was Esther. When her parents died, he brought her up to womanhood as his own. The girl was beautiful in appearance. [8] So, when the decree of the king was proclaimed, and many girls were gathered in Susa the capital in custody of Gai, Esther also was brought to Gai, who had custody of the women. [9] The girl pleased him

[a] Gk *Astin*
[b] Gk *Semeios*

officials named in the Heb. **16–18:** The fear of a feminine insurrection against patriarchal order lies just below the surface of many ancient myths and legends. Contrary to Muchaeus's dire imaginings, the real danger will come in the form of a conspiracy by palace bodyguards (2.21). **19:** There is no historical evidence that the *laws of the Medes and the Persians* (Esth 8.8; Dan 6.9,13) were unalterable. The phrase sets up a narrative tension between rigid legalism and the requirements of true justice. **20:** By issuing an absurdly unenforceable decree, the foolish king draws attention to his failure at ruling his own wife. **22:** The first of several decrees in the book (see 2.8; 3.12,13; 8.9–11; 9.20–22,29–32). Persian royal edicts were issued both in Aramaic, the official language of Persian diplomacy, and in the *languages* of subject peoples (see Ezra 6.3–5).

2.1–18: Esther becomes queen. 1–4: The king agrees to seek a new queen. 1: Here the search for a replacement occurs after the king forgets Vashti, while in the Heb the search begins because the king remembers Vashti's act. **2:** Consistent with its concern for moral rectitude, the Gk version adds that the winning *girl* (Heb "virgin") must be *virtuous* as well as *beautiful*. **3:** In patriarchal societies, a *virgin* bride ensures the paternity of children within the marriage (see Ex 22.16; Lev 21.13); here it may also be a convention of historical romance. Actual Persian law restricted kings to wives from certain noble Persian families.

2.5–7: Mordecai and Esther. 5–6: For a second time, the Gk introduces Mordecai (see 11.2–4n.). **7:** The name *Esther* derives from Ishtar, the Babylonian goddess of sexuality and war (the deities Marduk and Ishtar were cousins), or from the Persian word for "star," or both. The Gk fails to mention Esther's Heb name, Hadassah (see 2.7 in the Heb). *Aminadab*, in the Heb (2.15) Esther's father is Abihail. **8:** By beginning the book (11.2–12) with Mordecai's prophetic dream, the Gk version suggests that Esther arrives at court according to divine plan (see 10.4–6). Neither the Heb nor the Gk mentions Esther's feelings when she *was brought* to Susa. This is contra-

and won his favor, and he quickly provided her with ointments and her portion of food,[a] as well as seven maids chosen from the palace; he treated her and her maids with special favor in the harem. [10] Now Esther had not disclosed her people or country, for Mordecai had commanded her not to make it known. [11] And every day Mordecai walked in the courtyard of the harem, to see what would happen to Esther.

[12] Now the period after which a girl was to go to the king was twelve months. During this time the days of beautification are completed—six months while they are anointing themselves with oil of myrrh, and six months with spices and ointments for women. [13] Then she goes in to the king; she is handed to the person appointed, and goes with him from the harem to the king's palace. [14] In the evening she enters and in the morning she departs to the second harem, where Gai the king's eunuch is in charge of the women; and she does not go in to the king again unless she is summoned by name.

[15] When the time was fulfilled for Esther daughter of Aminadab, the brother of Mordecai's father, to go in to the king, she neglected none of the things that Gai, the eunuch in charge of the women, had commanded. Now Esther found favor in the eyes of all who saw her. [16] So Esther went in to King Artaxerxes in the twelfth month, which is Adar, in the seventh year of his reign. [17] And the king loved Esther and she found favor beyond all the other virgins, so he put on her the queen's diadem. [18] Then the king gave a banquet lasting seven days for all his Friends and the officers to celebrate his marriage to Esther; and he granted a remission of taxes to those who were under his rule.

[19] Meanwhile Mordecai was serving in the courtyard. [20] Esther had not disclosed her country—such were the instructions of Mordecai; but she was to fear God and keep his laws, just as she had done when she was with him. So Esther did not change her mode of life.

[21] Now the king's eunuchs, who were chief bodyguards, were angry because of Mordecai's advancement, and they plotted to kill King Artaxerxes. [22] The matter became known to Mordecai, and he warned Esther, who in turn revealed the plot to the king. [23] He investigated the two eunuchs and hanged them. Then the king ordered a memorandum to be deposited in the royal library in praise of the goodwill shown by Mordecai.

3 After these events King Artaxerxes promoted Haman son of Hammedatha, a Bougean, advancing him and granting him precedence over all the king's[b] Friends. [2] So all who were at court used to do obeisance to Haman,[c] for so the king had commanded to be done. Mordecai, however, did not do obeisance. [3] Then the king's courtiers said to Mordecai, "Mordecai, why do you disobey the king's command?" [4] Day after day they spoke

[a] Gk lacks *of food*
[b] Gk *all his*
[c] Gk *him*

dicted later in one of the Gk additions (14.15–18). **9:** In winning the *favor* of *Gai* (foreshadowing 2.15,17; 5.8; 7.3), Esther resembles Joseph in the house of Potiphar (Gen 39.2–6) and Daniel at the Babylonian court (Dan 1.9). **10:** Esther's silence about her Jewish identity (reiterated in v. 20) demonstrates her submissive nature even as it heightens narrative suspense.

2.12–18: Esther becomes queen. 14: The impossibility of seeing the king again unless *summoned by name* foreshadows Esther's dilemma in 4.11–16 and 15.1–6. **16:** *Adar*, February-March. The Heb gives a different month, Tebeth (December-January). *In the seventh year of his reign*, Ahasuerus has been testing queen candidates now for about four years. **18:** Another in the series of banquets (see 1.3n.) that will climax with the feast of Purim. *Remission of taxes*, the Gk correctly interprets the Hebrew term "holiday" in economic terms.

2.19–23: Mordecai and Esther save the king's life. This may be a second version of the plot in 12.1–6 or a different episode altogether. **20:** *Mode of life*, in contrast to the Heb, where Esther seems Jewish by ethnicity rather than religious observance. **21:** Unlike the Heb, the conspirators in the Gk are motivated by jealousy of Mordecai (see Dan 6.3–5). **23:** *Hanged*, impaled, not strangled with a rope, a foreshadowing of 5.14; 7.9–10; 9.13–14. *The royal library*, an official archive of royal decrees (cf. 10.2; 1 Kings 14.19,29; 2 Chr 25.26; 32.32).

3.1–13: Haman plots to annihilate the Jews. 1: *Bougean*, see 12.6n. **2:** The reasons for Mordecai's refusal to *do obeisance* are unclear but possibly explained in the Gk by Mordecai's prayer (13.14) or by the fact that Jews and

to him, but he would not listen to them. Then they informed Haman that Mordecai was resisting the king's command. Mordecai had told them that he was a Jew. 5 So when Haman learned that Mordecai was not doing obeisance to him, he became furiously angry, 6 and plotted to destroy all the Jews under Artaxerxes' rule.

7 In the twelfth year of King Artaxerxes Haman[a] came to a decision by casting lots, taking the days and the months one by one, to fix on one day to destroy the whole race of Mordecai. The lot fell on the fourteenth[b] day of the month of Adar.

8 Then Haman[a] said to King Artaxerxes, "There is a certain nation scattered among the other nations in all your kingdom; their laws are different from those of every other nation, and they do not keep the laws of the king. It is not expedient for the king to tolerate them. 9 If it pleases the king, let it be decreed that they are to be destroyed, and I will pay ten thousand talents of silver into the king's treasury." 10 So the king took off his signet ring and gave it to Haman to seal the decree[c] that was to be written against the Jews. 11 The king told Haman, "Keep the money, and do whatever you want with that nation."

12 So on the thirteenth day of the first month the king's secretaries were summoned, and in accordance with Haman's instructions they wrote in the name of King Artaxerxes to the magistrates and the governors in every province from India to Ethiopia. There were one hundred twenty-seven provinces in all, and the governors were addressed each in his own language. 13 Instructions were sent by couriers throughout all the empire of Artaxerxes to destroy the Jewish people on a given day of the twelfth month, which is Adar, and to plunder their goods.

ADDITION B

13[d] This is a copy of the letter: "The Great King, Artaxerxes, writes the following to the governors of the hundred twenty-seven provinces from India to Ethiopia and to the officials under them:

2 "Having become ruler of many nations and master of the whole world (not elated with presumption of authority but always acting reasonably and with kindness), I have determined to settle the lives of my subjects in lasting tranquility and, in order to make my kingdom peaceable and open to travel throughout all its extent, to restore the peace desired by all people.

3 "When I asked my counselors how this might be accomplished, Haman—who excels among us in sound judgment, and is distinguished for his unchanging goodwill and steadfast fidelity, and has attained the second place in the kingdom— 4 pointed out to us that among all the nations in the world there is scattered a certain hostile people, who have laws contrary to those of every nation and continually disregard the ordinances of kings, so that the unifying of the kingdom

[a] Gk *he*
[b] Other ancient witnesses read *thirteenth*; see 8.12
[c] Gk lacks *the decree*
[d] Chapter 13.1-7 corresponds to chapter B 1-7 in some translations.

Agagites were traditionally enemies; see 12.6n. **4:** *Day after day*, wording reminiscent of Joseph's resistance to the blandishments of Potiphar's wife (Gen 39.10). **7:** *The twelfth year*, Esther has been queen for five years. The Heb word for *lot*, "pur" (pl. "purim"), is borrowed from Babylonian. Haman resorts to this common form of divination (Herodotus 3.128) known also to the Israelites (1 Sam 14.42). *Adar*, February-March. Instead of the *fourteenth day*, 8.12 of the Gk and Heb rightly cite the thirteenth. **8:** Haman's manipulation of the pliable king (see 1.16–20) begins with the truth: the Jews were indeed *scattered* (Zech 7.14), and like other subject peoples in the Persian empire, their *laws* were different (Deut 4.5–6). He slides into falsehood in asserting that Jews *do not keep the laws of the king*. **9:** *Ten thousand talents of silver*, equal in value to hundreds of millions of US dollars. **10:** The king's *signet ring* gave Haman unlimited power to sign documents in the king's name (8.2,8; cf. Gen 41.41–42; 1 Kings 21.8–9). **12:** *In his own language*, see 1.22n. **13:** *Couriers*, the Persian empire's communication system was renowned (Herodotus 8.98). *A given day*, the thirteenth (see 8.12, Gk and Heb). *Adar*, February-March.

Addition B: 13.1–7: The text of the king's letter authorizing the slaughter of the Jews. This addition to the Gk version of Esther was composed in Gk by the same author as 16.1–24 (Addition E). The brazen tone of the letter seems inconsistent with the king's general demeanor as depicted earlier in the story and reflects Haman's

that we honorably intend cannot be brought about. 5 We understand that this people, and it alone, stands constantly in opposition to every nation, perversely following a strange manner of life and laws, and is ill-disposed to our government, doing all the harm they can so that our kingdom may not attain stability.

6 "Therefore we have decreed that those indicated to you in the letters written by Haman, who is in charge of affairs and is our second father, shall all—wives and children included—be utterly destroyed by the swords of their enemies, without pity or restraint, on the fourteenth day of the twelfth month, Adar, of this present year, 7 so that those who have long been hostile and remain so may in a single day go down in violence to Hades, and leave our government completely secure and untroubled hereafter."

END OF ADDITION B

3 14 Copies of the document were posted in every province, and all the nations were ordered to be prepared for that day. 15 The matter was expedited also in Susa. And while the king and Haman caroused together, the city of Susa[a] was thrown into confusion.

4 When Mordecai learned of all that had been done, he tore his clothes, put on sackcloth, and sprinkled himself with ashes; then he rushed through the street of the city, shouting loudly: "An innocent nation is being destroyed!" 2 He got as far as the king's gate, and there he stopped, because no one was allowed to enter the courtyard clothed in sackcloth and ashes. 3 And in every province where the king's proclamation had been posted there was a loud cry of mourning and lamentation among the Jews, and they put on sackcloth and ashes. 4 When the queen's[b] maids and eunuchs came and told her, she was deeply troubled by what she heard had happened, and sent some clothes to Mordecai to put on instead of sackcloth; but he would not consent. 5 Then Esther summoned Hachratheus, the eunuch who attended her, and ordered him to get accurate information for her from Mordecai.[c]

7 So Mordecai told him what had happened and how Haman had promised to pay ten thousand talents into the royal treasury to bring about the destruction of the Jews. 8 He also gave him a copy of what had been posted in Susa for their destruction, to show to Esther; and he told him to charge her to go in to the king and plead for his favor in behalf of the people. "Remember," he said, "the days when you were an ordinary person, being brought up under my care—for Haman, who stands next to the king, has spoken against us and demands our death. Call upon the Lord; then speak to the king in our behalf, and save us from death."

9 Hachratheus went in and told Esther all these things. 10 And she said to him, "Go to Mordecai and say, 11 'All nations of the empire know that if any man or woman goes to the king inside the inner court without being called, there is no escape for that person. Only the one to whom the king stretches out the golden scepter is safe—and it is now thirty days since I was called to go to the king.'"

12 When Hachratheus delivered her entire message to Mordecai, 13 Mordecai told him to go back and say to her, "Esther, do not say to yourself that you alone among all the Jews will escape alive. 14 For if you keep quiet at such a time as this, help and protection will come to the Jews from another quarter,

[a] Gk *the city*

[b] Gk *When her*

[c] Other ancient witnesses add [6]*So Hachratheus went out to Mordecai in the street of the city opposite the city gate.*

voice. **6:** *Fourteenth* day, a correction of the Gk's "thirteenth" (see the Hebrew text 3.13; 8.12; 9.1; cf. Gk 16.20; 8.12). *Adar*, February–March. **7:** *Hades*, the underworld and abode of the dead (Heb "sheol").

3.14–15: Haman and the king celebrate the publication of the decree.

4.1–17: Mordecai persuades Esther to risk her life to save her people. 1: *Sackcloth* and *ashes* and torn clothing were traditional signs of mourning and repentance (2 Sam 3.31; Job 42.6; Jon 3.5; Dan 9.3). **2:** No one rendered ritually unclean by mourning could *enter the courtyard*. **4:** Esther has obeyed Mordecai and kept her Jewish identity a secret; she is unaware of the edict. **11:** Like other biblical heroes called upon to save their people (Ex 3.11; 4.10; 10.28; Judg 6.15; Jer 1.6), Esther initially objects. *Since I was called to go to the king*, see 2.14. **14:** *From another quarter*, divine providence according to Gk 10.4–5; the phrase is ambiguous in Heb Esther. *Who*

but you and your father's family will perish. Yet, who knows whether it was not for such a time as this that you were made queen?" [15] Then Esther gave the messenger this answer to take back to Mordecai: [16] "Go and gather all the Jews who are in Susa and fast on my behalf; for three days and nights do not eat or drink, and my maids and I will also go without food. After that I will go to the king, contrary to the law, even if I must die." [17] So Mordecai went away and did what Esther had told him to do.

ADDITION C

13 [8] [a]Then Mordecai[b] prayed to the Lord, calling to remembrance all the works of the Lord.

[9] He said, "O Lord, Lord, you rule as King over all things, for the universe is in your power and there is no one who can oppose you when it is your will to save Israel, [10] for you have made heaven and earth and every wonderful thing under heaven. [11] You are Lord of all, and there is no one who can resist you, the Lord. [12] You know all things; you know, O Lord, that it was not in insolence or pride or for any love of glory that I did this, and refused to bow down to this proud Haman; [13] for I would have been willing to kiss the soles of his feet to save Israel! [14] But I did this so that I might not set human glory above the glory of God, and I will not bow down to anyone but you, who are my Lord; and I will not do these things in pride. [15] And now, O Lord God and King, God of Abraham, spare your people; for the eyes of our foes are upon us[c] to annihilate us, and they desire to destroy the inheritance that has been yours from the beginning. [16] Do not neglect your portion, which you redeemed for yourself out of the land of Egypt. [17] Hear my prayer, and have mercy upon your inheritance; turn our mourning into feasting that we may live and sing praise to your name, O Lord; do not destroy the lips[d] of those who praise you."

[18] And all Israel cried out mightily, for their death was before their eyes.

14 Then Queen Esther, seized with deadly anxiety, fled to the Lord. [2] She took off her splendid apparel and put on the garments of distress and mourning, and instead of costly perfumes she covered her head with ashes and dung, and she utterly humbled her body; every part that she loved to adorn she covered with her tangled hair. [3] She prayed to the Lord God of Israel, and said: "O my Lord, you only are our king; help me, who am alone and have no helper but you, [4] for my danger is in my hand. [5] Ever since I was born I have heard in the tribe of my family that you, O Lord, took Israel out of all the nations, and our ancestors from among all their forebears, for an everlasting inheritance, and that you did for them all that you promised. [6] And now we have sinned before you, and you have handed us over to our enemies [7] because we glorified their gods. You are righteous, O Lord! [8] And now they are not satisfied that we are in bitter slavery, but they have covenanted with their idols [9] to abolish what your mouth has ordained, and to destroy

[a] Chapters 13.8—15.16 correspond to chapters C 1-30 and D 1-16 in some translations.
[b] Gk *he*
[c] Gk *for they are eying us*
[d] Gk *mouth*

knows? Often precedes an expression of hope for divine mercy (2 Sam 12.22; Joel 2.14; Jon 3.9). **16–17:** Resolving to act *contrary to the law* (see 4.11) on behalf of her people, Esther takes charge (anticipating 9.29). Communal or individual fasting was a rite of repentance believed to influence the deity (Lev 16.29–31; Judg 20.26; 2 Sam 12.16; 1 Kings 21.27; Jon 3.5,8; Ezra 8.21–23; Joel 1.14; 2.12,15; 1 Macc 3.47).

Addition C: 13.8–14.19: The prayers of Mordecai and Esther give the book an explicitly religious tone. Both contain themes common to national laments (Neh 9; Dan 9).

13.8–17: Mordecai's prayer and the people's response. 12–14: Mordecai justifies his refusal to bow down to Haman (3.2) on religious grounds (see Dan 3.12,16–18). **16:** Mordecai is confident in the god who liberated the Israelites, God's *portion* (Deut 32.9), from enslavement in *Egypt* (Ex 1–14).

14.1–19: Esther humbly petitions God. Her prayer (see especially Jdt 9) resembles Mordecai's in its sincere, if conventional, piety and concern for religious self-justification. **2:** Humble *garments*, filth, and disarray are appropriate to penitential prayer (2 Kings 19.1; Neh 1.4; Dan 9.3–4; Jdt 9.1). **8:** *Bitter slavery* interprets the exile and Diaspora in terms evocative of bondage in Egypt (Ex 1–14). **9:** *Your altar* and *your house* refer to the ruined

your inheritance, to stop the mouths of those who praise you and to quench your altar and the glory of your house, [10] to open the mouths of the nations for the praise of vain idols, and to magnify forever a mortal king.

[11] "O Lord, do not surrender your scepter to what has no being; and do not let them laugh at our downfall; but turn their plan against them, and make an example of him who began this against us. [12] Remember, O Lord; make yourself known in this time of our affliction, and give me courage, O King of the gods and Master of all dominion! [13] Put eloquent speech in my mouth before the lion, and turn his heart to hate the man who is fighting against us, so that there may be an end of him and those who agree with him. [14] But save us by your hand, and help me, who am alone and have no helper but you, O Lord. [15] You have knowledge of all things, and you know that I hate the splendor of the wicked and abhor the bed of the uncircumcised and of any alien. [16] You know my necessity—that I abhor the sign of my proud position, which is upon my head on days when I appear in public. I abhor it like a filthy rag, and I do not wear it on the days when I am at leisure. [17] And your servant has not eaten at Haman's table, and I have not honored the king's feast or drunk the wine of libations. [18] Your servant has had no joy since the day that I was brought here until now, except in you, O Lord God of Abraham. [19] O God, whose might is over all, hear the voice of the despairing, and save us from the hands of evildoers. And save me from my fear!"

END OF ADDITION C

ADDITION D

15 On the third day, when she ended her prayer, she took off the garments in which she had worshiped, and arrayed herself in splendid attire. [2] Then, majestically adorned, after invoking the aid of the all-seeing God and Savior, she took two maids with her; [3] on one she leaned gently for support, [4] while the other followed, carrying her train. [5] She was radiant with perfect beauty, and she looked happy, as if beloved, but her heart was frozen with fear. [6] When she had gone through all the doors, she stood before the king. He was seated on his royal throne, clothed in the full array of his majesty, all covered with gold and precious stones. He was most terrifying.

[7] Lifting his face, flushed with splendor, he looked at her in fierce anger. The queen faltered, and turned pale and faint, and collapsed on the head of the maid who went in front of her. [8] Then God changed the spirit of the king to gentleness, and in alarm he sprang from his throne and took her in his arms until she came to herself. He comforted her with soothing words, and said to her, [9] "What is it, Esther? I am your husband.[a] Take courage; [10] You shall not die, for our law applies only to our subjects.[b] Come near."

[11] Then he raised the golden scepter and touched her neck with it; [12] he embraced her, and said, "Speak to me." [13] She said to him, "I saw you, my lord, like an angel of God, and my heart was shaken with fear at your glory.

[a] Gk *brother*

[b] Meaning of Gk uncertain

Temple in Jerusalem (2 Macc 14.33; 3 Macc 5.43), a subject ignored in the Heb. **13:** Despite her plea for *eloquent speech*, in 15.5 it is her beauty on which Esther initially relies. *Lion*, Artaxerxes (see Prov 19.12; 20.2). **15:** *Abhor the bed of the uncircumcised*, reflecting the Jewish prohibition of mixed marriage (Deut 7.3; Ezra 10.2; Neh 13.23–27). *Wicked, uncircumcised, alien*, non-Jews. Unlike the Heb text, Gk Esther takes a negative view of Gentiles. **16:** The *sign* upon Esther's *head* is the crown which she abhors as a *filthy* rag (lit. a rag soaked in menstrual blood; see Lev 15.19–24; Isa 64.6; contrast Deut 6.9). **17:** Esther observes the Jewish dietary laws (Lev 11; see Jdt 12.1–2).

Addition D: 15.1–16: Esther approaches the king. This chapter expands 5.1–2 in the Heb text, heightening the suspense with added details and, consistent with the Gk version's theological perspective, crediting Esther's success to God's intervention. **1:** Esther's preparations call to mind an epic hero arming for battle (see *Iliad* 19.338–39; 360–91; 1 Sam 17.5–7,38–39; see Jdt 10.3; 12.15). **7–8:** This episode, absent in the Heb, portrays an Esther undone by feminine weakness and dependant upon God to succeed in her mission. *God changed the spirit of the king*, see 1 Sam 10.9. **9:** *Husband*, Gk "brother," a metaphorical expression of endearment found in Egyptian and Israelite love poetry (Song 4.9–10; 5.1–2). **13:** *Like an angel of God*, see 2 Sam 14.20. The phrase (not found in the Heb) implies wisdom and absence of evil intent. **15:** *Fainted*, see 15.7n.

[14] For you are wonderful, my lord, and your countenance is full of grace." [15] And while she was speaking, she fainted and fell. [16] Then the king was agitated, and all his servants tried to comfort her.

END OF ADDITION D

5[a] [3] The king said to her, "What do you wish, Esther? What is your request? It shall be given you, even to half of my kingdom." [4] And Esther said, "Today is a special day for me. If it pleases the king, let him and Haman come to the dinner that I shall prepare today." [5] Then the king said, "Bring Haman quickly, so that we may do as Esther desires." So they both came to the dinner that Esther had spoken about. [6] While they were drinking wine, the king said to Esther, "What is it, Queen Esther? It shall be granted you." [7] She said, "My petition and request is: [8] if I have found favor in the sight of the king, let the king and Haman come to the dinner that I shall prepare them, and tomorrow I will do as I have done today."

[9] So Haman went out from the king joyful and glad of heart. But when he saw Mordecai the Jew in the courtyard, he was filled with anger. [10] Nevertheless, he went home and summoned his friends and his wife Zosara. [11] And he told them about his riches and the honor that the king had bestowed on him, and how he had advanced him to be the first in the kingdom. [12] And Haman said, "The queen did not invite anyone to the dinner with the king except me; and I am invited again tomorrow. [13] But these things give me no pleasure as long as I see Mordecai the Jew in the courtyard." [14] His wife Zosara and his friends said to him, "Let a gallows be made, fifty cubits high, and in the morning tell the king to have Mordecai hanged on it. Then, go merrily with the king to the dinner." This advice pleased Haman, and so the gallows was prepared.

6 That night the Lord took sleep from the king, so he gave orders to his secretary to bring the book of daily records, and to read to him. [2] He found the words written about Mordecai, how he had told the king about the two royal eunuchs who were on guard and sought to lay hands on King Artaxerxes. [3] The king said, "What honor or dignity did we bestow on Mordecai?"The king's servants said, "You have not done anything for him." [4] While the king was inquiring about the goodwill shown by Mordecai, Haman was in the courtyard. The king asked, "Who is in the courtyard?" Now Haman had come to speak to the king about hanging Mordecai on the gallows that he had prepared. [5] The servants of the king answered, "Haman is standing in the courtyard." And the king said, "Summon him." [6] Then the king said to Haman, "What shall I do for the person whom I wish to honor?" And Haman said to himself, "Whom would the king wish to honor more than me?" [7] So he said to the king, "For a person whom the king wishes to honor, [8] let the king's servants bring out the fine linen robe that the king has worn, and the horse on which the king rides, [9] and let both be given to one of the king's honored Friends, and let him robe the person whom the king loves and mount him on the horse, and let it be proclaimed through the open square of the city, saying, 'Thus shall it be done to everyone

[a] In Greek, Chapter D replaces verses 1 and 2 in Hebrew.

5.3–8: Esther invites the king and Haman to dinner. 3: *Half of my kingdom* is customary folktale hyperbole. **4:** Esther frames her invitation in self-effacing terms. *Dinner*, see 1.3n. Food, reassuring and nurturing, is a frequent motif in stories of women confronting powerful men; Esther works indirectly to achieve her goal (Judg 5.25; Jdt 10.5; 12.1,17–20).

5.9–14: Haman's happiness is spoiled. 11–12: Haman's boasting sets him up as an arrogant fool ripe for a fall, a theme also found in wisdom literature (Prov 11.28; 13.3; 16.5,18; 27.1; 29.20). 14: *Zosara* is an exemplary son-bearing wife (9.7–10) whose husband heeds her loyal counsel. *Gallows* (also 9.13–14), see 2.23n. *Fifty cubits*, ca. 72 ft (22m), an exaggerated height. Only *the king* can order an execution.

6.1–13: Mordecai's triumph. 1: *The Lord took sleep from the king*, unlike the Heb, the Gk ascribes the events of the Esther story to divine intention and intervention (11.1–12; 10.4–12; 4.14n.; 15.1–16). A sleepless king appears in numerous folktales (Dan 6.18; 1 Esd 3.3). **3:** Herodotus (8.85,90) notes that Persian kings kept records of courtiers' noble deeds. *You have not done anything for him*, in contrast to Mordecai's royal reward for reporting the earlier plot in Gk Addition A (see 12.5). **8:** A *robe* and a *horse* were gestures of favor (Gen 37.3; 41.42; 1 Sam

whom the king honors.'" [10] Then the king said to Haman, "You have made an excellent suggestion! Do just as you have said for Mordecai the Jew, who is on duty in the courtyard. And let nothing be omitted from what you have proposed." [11] So Haman got the robe and the horse; he put the robe on Mordecai and made him ride through the open square of the city, proclaiming, "Thus shall it be done to everyone whom the king wishes to honor." [12] Then Mordecai returned to the courtyard, and Haman hurried back to his house, mourning and with his head covered. [13] Haman told his wife Zosara and his friends what had befallen him. His friends and his wife said to him, "If Mordecai is of the Jewish people, and you have begun to be humiliated before him, you will surely fall. You will not be able to defend yourself, because the living God is with him."

[14] While they were still talking, the eunuchs arrived and hurriedly brought Haman to the banquet that Esther had prepared.

7 [1] So the king and Haman went in to drink with the queen. [2] And the second day, as they were drinking wine, the king said, "What is it, Queen Esther? What is your petition and what is your request? It shall be granted to you, even to half of my kingdom." [3] She answered and said, "If I have found favor with the king, let my life be granted me at my petition, and my people at my request. [4] For we have been sold, I and my people, to be destroyed, plundered, and made slaves—we and our children—male and female slaves. This has come to my knowledge. Our antagonist brings shame on[a] the king's court." [5] Then the king said, "Who is the person that would dare to do this thing?" [6] Esther said, "Our enemy is this evil man Haman!" At this, Haman was terrified in the presence of the king and queen.

[7] The king rose from the banquet and went into the garden, and Haman began to beg for his life from the queen, for he saw that he was in serious trouble. [8] When the king returned from the garden, Haman had thrown himself on the couch, pleading with the queen. The king said, "Will he dare even assault my wife in my own house?" Haman, when he heard, turned away his face. [9] Then Bugathan, one of the eunuchs, said to the king, "Look, Haman has even prepared a gallows for Mordecai, who gave information of concern to the king; it is standing at Haman's house, a gallows fifty cubits high." So the king said, "Let Haman be hanged on that." [10] So Haman was hanged on the gallows he had prepared for Mordecai. With that the anger of the king abated.

8 On that very day King Artaxerxes granted to Esther all the property of the persecutor[b] Haman. Mordecai was summoned by the king, for Esther had told the king[c] that he was related to her. [2] The king took the ring that had been taken from Haman, and gave it to Mordecai; and Esther set Mordecai over everything that had been Haman's.

[3] Then she spoke once again to the king and, falling at his feet, she asked him to avert all the evil that Haman had planned against the Jews. [4] The king extended his golden scepter to Esther, and she rose and stood

[a] Gk *is not worthy of*
[b] Gk *slanderer*
[c] Gk *him*

18.4; 1 Kings 1.33). **12:** Haman *covered* his *head* as a sign of grief (2 Sam 15.30; 19.4; Jer 14.4), foreshadowing his own demise, as his wife and friends recognize (v.13). **13:** *Because the living God is with him* (lacking in the Heb text), an example of Gentile wisdom, Zosara and Haman's friends make explicit the story's theme of divine retribution and Jewish triumph (11.1–12; 15.1–16; 6.1; 10.4–12; 4.14n.; see Josh 2.6–14; Jdt 5.20–21; 3 Macc 3.8–10,31).

6.14–7.10: Esther's second banquet and Haman's fall. 7.2: *Half of my kingdom*, see 5.3n. **4:** *Sold*, probably an allusion to Haman's bribe in 3.11; (see 4.7; but note the metaphorical use of the verb in Deut 32.30; Judg 2.14; 3.8; 4.2,9; 10.7). *Shame on the king's court*, the king would be shamed if his queen were dishonored. **6:** Like Esther before the king in 15.5, now Haman is *terrified in the presence of the king and queen*. **8:** *Assault my wife*, Artaxerxes misinterprets Haman's gesture as a sexual assault on the queen, an unpardonable affront to both male and royal honor and, as such, a capital offense. **9–10:** *Bugathan*, Heb "Harbona." *Gallows*, see 2.23n., an ironic reversal of the death Haman intended for Mordecai.

8.1–12: The king shows favor to Esther, Mordecai, and the Jews. 1: In 3.9, Haman offered the king money; now the king gives Haman's wealth to Esther. **2:** Haman's position as grand vizier (3.10) becomes Mordecai's with the transfer of the king's signet *ring* (see v. 8; 3.10n.), another ironic inversion of the two figures. **5:** *That*

before the king. 5 Esther said, "If it pleases you, and if I have found favor, let an order be sent rescinding the letters that Haman wrote and sent to destroy the Jews in your kingdom. 6 How can I look on the ruin of my people? How can I be safe if my ancestral nation[a] is destroyed?" 7 The king said to Esther, "Now that I[b] have granted all of Haman's property to you and have hanged him on a tree because he acted against the Jews, what else do you request? 8 Write in my name what you think best and seal it with my ring; for whatever is written at the king's command and sealed with my ring cannot be contravened."

9 The secretaries were summoned on the twenty-third day of the first month, that is, Nisan, in the same year; and all that he commanded with respect to the Jews was given in writing to the administrators and governors of the provinces from India to Ethiopia, one hundred twenty-seven provinces, to each province in its own language. 10 The edict was written[c] with the king's authority and sealed with his ring, and sent out by couriers. 11 He ordered the Jews in every city to observe their own laws, to defend themselves, and to act as they wished against their opponents and enemies 12 on a certain day, the thirteenth of the twelfth month, which is Adar, throughout all the kingdom of Artaxerxes.

ADDITION E

16[d] The following is a copy of this letter: "The Great King, Artaxerxes, to the governors of the provinces from India to Ethiopia, one hundred twenty-seven provinces, and to those who are loyal to our government, greetings.

2 "Many people, the more they are honored with the most generous kindness of their benefactors, the more proud do they become, 3 and not only seek to injure our subjects, but in their inability to stand prosperity, they even undertake to scheme against their own benefactors. 4 They not only take away thankfulness from others, but, carried away by the boasts of those who know nothing of goodness, they even assume that they will escape the evil-hating justice of God, who always sees everything. 5 And often many of those who are set in places of authority have been made in part responsible for the shedding of innocent blood, and have been involved in irremediable calamities, by the persuasion of friends who have been entrusted with the administration of public affairs, 6 when these persons by the false trickery of their evil natures beguile the sincere goodwill of their sovereigns.

7 "What has been wickedly accomplished through the pestilent behavior of those who exercise authority unworthily can be seen, not so much from the more ancient records that we hand on, as from investigation of matters close at hand.[e] 8 In the future we will take care to render our kingdom quiet and peaceable for all, 9 by changing our methods and always judging what comes before our eyes with more equitable consideration. 10 For Haman son of Hammedatha, a Macedonian

[a] Gk *country*
[b] Gk *If I*
[c] Gk *It was written*
[d] Chapter 16.1-24 corresponds to chapter E 1-24 in some translations.
[e] Gk *matters beside* (your) *feet*

Haman wrote, Esther diplomatically dissociates the king from the edict that condemned the Jews. **8:** The king's earlier edict *cannot be contravened* (1.19n.), but a new edict can neutralize the former's intent. **9:** *First month . . . Nisan* (March-April), Heb "third month . . . Sivan" (May-June). *In its own language*, see 1.22n. **11:** This explicit permission for the *Jews . . . to observe their own laws* (see 3.8n.; 13.4–5), which is a distinctly religious concern, is lacking in the Heb. **12:** The date of the intended extermination (3.7,13) becomes a day of triumph and relates to the Purim festival (see 9.21). *Adar*, February-March.

Addition E: 16.1–24: The king's second letter: Denunciation of Haman, praise of Mordecai and Esther, and direction to his subjects to help the Jews. Addition E to the Gk version of Esther provides a counterpoint to Addition C (13.1–17). Both were composed in Gk probably by the same author. The Gentile king refers in the most positive terms to the Jews and their God (Ex 9.27; 18.10–11; Num 22–24; 2 Kings 5.15; Dan 2.47; 3.29; 4.1–3,34–37; 6.26–27; Jdt 5.5–21). **2:** *Benefactors*, a reference to the king. **10:** Haman is actually a *Macedonian* scheming to overthrow Persian rule (v. 14; cf. 12.6), a plot twist not found in the Heb. This may be an allusion to the conquest of Persia by the Macedonian Alexander the Great in 333 BCE, an event already in the past when Addition E was composed.

(really an alien to the Persian blood, and quite devoid of our kindliness), having become our guest, [11] enjoyed so fully the goodwill that we have for every nation that he was called our father and was continually bowed down to by all as the person second to the royal throne. [12] But, unable to restrain his arrogance, he undertook to deprive us of our kingdom and our life,[a] [13] and with intricate craft and deceit asked for the destruction of Mordecai, our savior and perpetual benefactor, and of Esther, the blameless partner of our kingdom, together with their whole nation. [14] He thought that by these methods he would catch us undefended and would transfer the kingdom of the Persians to the Macedonians.

[15] "But we find that the Jews, who were consigned to annihilation by this thrice-accursed man, are not evildoers, but are governed by most righteous laws [16] and are children of the living God, most high, most mighty,[b] who has directed the kingdom both for us and for our ancestors in the most excellent order.

[17] "You will therefore do well not to put in execution the letters sent by Haman son of Hammedatha, [18] since he, the one who did these things, has been hanged at the gate of Susa with all his household—for God, who rules over all things, has speedily inflicted on him the punishment that he deserved.

[19] "Therefore post a copy of this letter publicly in every place, and permit the Jews to live under their own laws. [20] And give them reinforcements, so that on the thirteenth day of the twelfth month, Adar, on that very day, they may defend themselves against those who attack them at the time of oppression. [21] For God, who rules over all things, has made this day to be a joy for his chosen people instead of a day of destruction for them.

[22] "Therefore you shall observe this with all good cheer as a notable day among your commemorative festivals, [23] so that both now and hereafter it may represent deliverance for you[c] and the loyal Persians, but that it may be a reminder of destruction for those who plot against us.

[24] "Every city and country, without exception, that does not act accordingly shall be destroyed in wrath with spear and fire. It shall be made not only impassable for human beings, but also most hateful to wild animals and birds for all time.

END OF ADDITION E

8 [13] "Let copies of the decree be posted conspicuously in all the kingdom, and let all the Jews be ready on that day to fight against their enemies."

[14] So the messengers on horseback set out with all speed to perform what the king had commanded; and the decree was published also in Susa. [15] Mordecai went out dressed in the royal robe and wearing a gold crown and a turban of purple linen. The people in Susa rejoiced on seeing him. [16] And the Jews had light and gladness [17] in every city and province wherever the decree was published; wherever the proclamation was made, the Jews had joy and gladness, a banquet and a holiday. And many of the Gentiles were circumcised and became Jews out of fear of the Jews.

9 Now on the thirteenth day of the twelfth month, which is Adar, the decree written by the king arrived. [2] On that same day the enemies of the Jews perished; no one resisted, because they feared them. [3] The chief provincial governors, the princes, and the royal secretaries were paying honor to the Jews, because fear of Mordecai weighed upon them. [4] The king's decree required that Mordecai's name be held in honor throughout the

[a] Gk *our spirit*
[b] Gk *greatest*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *for us*

11: *Our father*, 13.6. *Second to the royal throne*, 13.3 (2 Chr 28.7; 1 Esd 3.7). **17:** *Letters sent by Haman*, see 8.8n. **18:** The Gk's reference to the death of Haman's family contradicts 7.9 and 9.7–10,13–14. **19:** *Their own laws* (absent in the Heb), see vv. 15–16; 8.11n. **21:** *Chosen people*, Deut 7.6; 1 Kings 3.8; 1 Chr 16.13; Ps 105.6; Isa 43.20 (see Esth 13.15–17). **22–23:** These verses, addressed to all the king's subjects, may hint at a non-Jewish origin for the Purim festival.

8.13–17: Dispatch of the king's decree. 14: See 3.13n. **17:** *Gentiles were circumcised and became Jews*, the Gk here interprets literally the ambiguous wording of the Heb.

9.1–19: The Jews triumph over their enemies. 2: *No one resisted*, contradicts the Heb ("no one could withstand them"), and vv. 11,16. **10:** The death of *the ten sons of Haman* agrees with the Heb but contradicts 16.18 (see

kingdom.[a] 6 Now in the city of Susa the Jews killed five hundred people, 7 including Pharsannestain, Delphon, Phasga, 8 Pharadatha, Barea, Sarbacha, 9 Marmasima, Aruphaeus, Arsaeus, Zabutheus, 10 the ten sons of Haman son of Hammedatha, the Bougean, the enemy of the Jews—and they indulged[b] themselves in plunder.

11 That very day the number of those killed in Susa was reported to the king. 12 The king said to Esther, "In Susa, the capital, the Jews have destroyed five hundred people. What do you suppose they have done in the surrounding countryside? Whatever more you ask will be done for you." 13 And Esther said to the king, "Let the Jews be allowed to do the same tomorrow. Also, hang up the bodies of Haman's ten sons." 14 So he permitted this to be done, and handed over to the Jews of the city the bodies of Haman's sons to hang up. 15 The Jews who were in Susa gathered on the fourteenth and killed three hundred people, but took no plunder.

16 Now the other Jews in the kingdom gathered to defend themselves, and got relief from their enemies. They destroyed fifteen thousand of them, but did not engage in plunder. 17 On the fourteenth day they rested and made that same day a day of rest, celebrating it with joy and gladness. 18 The Jews who were in Susa, the capital, came together also on the fourteenth, but did not rest. They celebrated the fifteenth with joy and gladness. 19 On this account then the Jews who are scattered around the country outside Susa keep the fourteenth of Adar as a joyful holiday, and send presents of food to one another, while those who live in the large cities keep the fifteenth day of Adar as their joyful holiday, also sending presents to one another.

20 Mordecai recorded these things in a book, and sent it to the Jews in the kingdom of Artaxerxes both near and far, 21 telling them that they should keep the fourteenth and fifteenth days of Adar, 22 for on these days the Jews got relief from their enemies. The whole month (namely, Adar), in which their condition had been changed from sorrow into gladness and from a time of distress to a holiday, was to be celebrated as a time for feasting[c] and gladness and for sending presents of food to their friends and to the poor.

23 So the Jews accepted what Mordecai had written to them 24—how Haman son of Hammedatha, the Macedonian,[d] fought against them, how he made a decree and cast lots[e] to destroy them, 25 and how he went in to the king, telling him to hang Mordecai; but the wicked plot he had devised against the Jews came back upon himself, and he and his sons were hanged. 26 Therefore these days were called "Purim," because of the lots (for in their language this is the word that means "lots"). And so, because of what was written in this letter, and because of what they had experienced in this affair and what had befallen them, Mordecai established this festival,[f] 27 and the Jews took upon themselves, upon their descendants, and upon all who would join them, to observe it without fail.[g] These days of Purim should be a memorial and kept from generation to generation, in every city, family, and country. 28 These days of Purim were to be observed for all time, and the

[a] Meaning of Gk uncertain. Some ancient authorities add verse 5, *So the Jews struck down all their enemies with the sword, killing and destroying them, and they did as they pleased to those who hated them.*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *did not indulge*
[c] Gk *of weddings*
[d] Other ancient witnesses read *the Bougean*
[e] Gk *a lot*
[f] Gk *he established* (it)
[g] Meaning of Gk uncertain

note). *Indulged themselves in plunder* contradicted by both the Heb and Gk 9:15–16. **12–15:** Notice of the extra day for observing the king's edict is probably included to explain why the Jews of Susa celebrated Purim on the fifteenth of Adar and country Jews on the fourteenth (see 9.18–19). *Plunder*, see v.10n. **16:** *Destroyed fifteen thousand*, Heb "seventy-five thousand."

18–19: Differences in Purim dates are explained (see vv. 12–15n.). Jews today continue to observe Purim with feasting and *presents of food*.

9.20–32: The inauguration of the feast of Purim. The emphasis here upon the written word, a particular concern in postexilic Judaism, was probably intended to legitimize a festival not mentioned in the Torah (cf. the origin of Hanukkah: 1 Macc 4.56–59; 2 Macc 1.1–2.28; 10.1–8). **21:** See 9.12–15n. **22:** Purim commemorates not the day of the Jews' military triumph, but the day they obtained their *relief. Sorrow into gladness*, see Isa

commemoration of them was never to cease among their descendants.

29 Then Queen Esther daughter of Aminadab along with Mordecai the Jew wrote down what they had done, and gave full authority to the letter about Purim.[a] 31 And Mordecai and Queen Esther established this decision on their own responsibility, pledging their own well-being to the plan.[b] 32 Esther established it by a decree forever, and it was written for a memorial.

10 The king levied a tax upon his kingdom both by land and sea. 2 And as for his power and bravery, and the wealth and glory of his kingdom, they were recorded in the annals of the kings of the Persians and the Medes. 3 Mordecai acted with authority on behalf of King Artaxerxes and was great in the kingdom, as well as honored by the Jews. His way of life was such as to make him beloved to his whole nation.

ADDITION F

4 [b]And Mordecai said, "These things have come from God; 5 for I remember the dream that I had concerning these matters, and none of them has failed to be fulfilled. 6 There was the little spring that became a river, and there was light and sun and abundant water—the river is Esther, whom the king married and made queen. 7 The two dragons are Haman and myself. 8 The nations are those that gathered to destroy the name of the Jews. 9 And my nation, this is Israel, who cried out to God and was saved. The Lord has saved his people; the Lord has rescued us from all these evils; God has done great signs and wonders, wonders that have never happened among the nations. 10 For this purpose he made two lots, one for the people of God and one for all the nations, 11 and these two lots came to the hour and moment and day of decision before God and among all the nations. 12 And God remembered his people and vindicated his inheritance. 13 So they will observe these days in the month of Adar, on the fourteenth and fifteenth[c] of that month, with an assembly and joy and gladness before God, from generation to generation

11 forever among his people Israel." 1 In the fourth year of the reign of Ptolemy and Cleopatra, Dositheus, who said that he was a priest and a Levite,[d] and his son Ptolemy brought to Egypt[e] the preceding Letter about Purim, which they said was authentic and had been translated by Lysimachus son of Ptolemy, one of the residents of Jerusalem.

END OF ADDITION F

[a] Verse 30 in Heb is lacking in Gk: *Letters were sent to all the Jews, to the one hundred twenty-seven provinces of the kingdom of Ahasuerus, in words of peace and truth.*

[b] Chapter 10.4-13 and 11.1 correspond to chapter F 1-11 in some translations.

[c] Other ancient authorities lack *and fifteenth*

[d] Or *priest, and Levitas*

[e] Cn: Gk *brought in*

61.3; Jer 31.13. **24–26:** This plot summary, which does not mention Esther, differs slightly from the Heb version. The festival came to be called "*Purim*" for the lot, "pur" (pl. "purim"), which Haman cast (see 3.7n.). **32:** *Esther established it*, Queen Esther is the only woman in the Bible credited with establishing a religious observance.

10.1–3: The greatness of Artaxerxes and Mordecai. 1: This seemingly irrelevant comment may imply that the king prospered with Mordecai's assistance (see Gen 47.1–26). **2:** *Recorded in the annals,* a standard formula for historical reports in Kings and Chronicles (1 Kings 14.19,29; 2 Chr 25.26; 32.32).

Addition F: 10.4–13: Epilogue: Mordecai's dream explained. This addition rounds out the Gk version of Esther with an explanation of Mordecai's dream with which the book began (11.2–12n.). **4:** *These things have come from God*, the theme of Gk Esther (11.12; 4.14; 15.8; 6.1,13; 16.4; see Ps 118.23). **6:** *Light and sun*, 11.11n.; 8.16. **8:** *Name*, in ancient times, the essence of one's identity resided largely in one's name. **10:** *Two lots*, not mentioned in 11.2–12. This verse may represent an alternative derivation for Purim. It assumes a different context for the "lots" that give Purim its name (9.23; 3.7n.), understanding them as symbols of destiny (Dan 12.13; Isa 17.14; Jer 13.25). A similar concept appears in the Dead Sea Scrolls (1QS 2.2,5; 3.1–4.26). **13:** *So they will observe these days*, see 9.20–22.

11.1: The colophon to Gk Esther provides a probable date reference for the Gk translation. *Ptolemy and Cleopatra*, because three kings of Egypt named Ptolemy had wives named Cleopatra, the *fourth year* could be 114–113, 78–77, or 49–48 BCE. *Dositheus*, a common Hellenistic name (2 Macc 12.19,35; 3 Macc 1.3); presumably a copyist, he affirms the text's authenticity and his own religious authority. *Letter about Purim*, probably the entire book of Esther. *Lysimachus*, a Greek name (cf. 2 Macc 4.29), likely the translator of Heb Esther into Gk.

THE WISDOM OF SOLOMON

NAME AND CANONICAL STATUS

The title of the book in most manuscripts is "The Wisdom of Solomon." It is a Jewish writing, but it was preserved in Christian circles, like other Jewish writings in Greek. There is no evidence that the writing was accepted as canonical by any Jewish group, or even read by Jewish readers until many centuries after it had been written. The work seems to have been known to Clement of Rome and possibly Ignatius (late first-early second century CE). The Wisdom of Solomon was certainly used as Scripture by such early third-century writers as Tertullian, Clement of Alexandria, and Pseudo-Hippolytus. On the other hand, its canonicity was doubted by Origen, although he sometimes quotes it as if it were canonical. The book became a part of the Roman Catholic and Eastern Orthodox canons but is considered one of the Apocrypha by many Protestant groups.

AUTHORSHIP, DATE, AND HISTORICAL CONTEXT

Although the author claims to be King Solomon (with parts of ch 9 based on his prayer for wisdom in 1 Kings 3.6–9), this ascription has been recognized as a literary fiction since ancient times. Instead, the author is an anonymous Hellenistic Jew writing some time in the late first century BCE or early first century CE. The author most likely came from the Jewish community in Alexandria in Egypt or possibly from another major center in the Hellenistic world. In spite of seeming to appeal to Greek readers, the work is evidently aimed at an internal audience, probably the Jewish youth of Alexandria who might be tempted by the Hellenistic culture around them.

Some recent commentators view the book as originating in the historical context of the troubles experienced by the Alexandrian Jewish community in the period 38–41 CE, but the book gives no hint of a period of trauma or threat. Others have argued that the book is earlier, dating from the reign of the Roman emperor Augustus (27 BCE–14 CE). Nothing prevents the book from being this early. Typologically, The Wisdom of Solomon represents an earlier stage of development in the trajectory of biblical interpretation that reached its culmination in the Jewish philosopher Philo of Alexandria. A date about 20 BCE would fit the contents of the book.

GENRE, STRUCTURE, AND CONTENTS

The genre of the book has been analyzed in two distinct ways. One is as an "encomium," defined by Aristotle as a work praising someone or, in this case, something—the quality of wisdom. Much of the content of the book can be seen as part of an encomium if the structure is understood as follows:

Introduction	chs 1–6
Encomium proper	chs 6–9
Comparison	10.1–19.9
Epilogue and conclusion	19.10–22

Another suggestion is that The Wisdom of Solomon is an "exhortatory discourse." This is a much more specialized type of writing that was cultivated in philosophical schools and argued for and extolled a philosophical lifestyle. In addition to these two literary forms, The Wisdom of Solomon also has much in common with the "diatribe." The Hellenistic diatribe was a specific rhetorical form and should not be confused with the English term "diatribe"; it was essentially a type of moral discourse in the form of a speech or address, much favored by the philosophical street preachers among the Cynics and Stoics, though recent study has emphasized its home in an academic context. Its aim was to convince the hearers of a particular course of action, and it always had a moral theme.

Some scholars have argued that a concentric internal structure (or "chiastic" structure) with parallel elements can be found in various passages of The Wisdom of Solomon, indicating a deliberate arrangement of material. Some of these arrangements affect only individual passages of a few verses or so (for example, see chs 7–8). Others suggest an overall structure to the book. For example:

1–6	Book of Eschatology
7–10	Book of Wisdom
11–19	Book of History

Arguments about how to divide the book are often based on an inclusio, in which a section is delimited by having the same device (e.g., a word, a phrase, a sentence, a subject) at the beginning and the end. For example, the Book of Eschatology begins with an address to the rulers of the earth (ch 1) and ends with an address to the kings of the earth (ch 6), suggesting that chs 1–6 formed a complete unit in the mind of the author.

The Book of Eschatology (chs 1–6) contrasts the lives of the just and the wicked, dramatizing the eschatological destinies of the two groups. The next section, the Book of Wisdom (chs 7–10), celebrates the figure of divine Sophia (Wisdom). The author's persona as Solomon emerges most clearly here, as the king describes wisdom and his pursuit of her. The third section, the Book of History (chs 11–19), adopts the approach of historical comparison, presenting an elaborate system of contrasts based largely on Ex 7–14. A series of digressions in 11.17–15.19 explains why God's judgment manifested itself differently in dealing with the Egyptians and the Israelites. This adaptation of the Exodus story is meant to complement the arguments of the first two sections, providing biblical examples of the righteous and the unrighteous, and demonstrating how the power of divine wisdom operates in human history.

GUIDE TO READING

As a carefully crafted work, the book is best read in its entirety. For an understanding of its distinctive style and philosophical approach, comparing its summaries of biblical history in 10.1–11.14 with the corresponding passages in Genesis and Exodus will be fruitful.

Lester L. Grabbe

1 Love righteousness, you rulers of the earth,
think of the Lord in goodness
and seek him with sincerity of heart;
[2] because he is found by those who do not put him to the test,
and manifests himself to those who do not distrust him.
[3] For perverse thoughts separate people from God,
and when his power is tested, it exposes the foolish;
[4] because wisdom will not enter a deceitful soul,
or dwell in a body enslaved to sin.
[5] For a holy and disciplined spirit will flee from deceit,
and will leave foolish thoughts behind,
and will be ashamed at the approach of unrighteousness.

[6] For wisdom is a kindly spirit,
but will not free blasphemers from the guilt of their words;

1.1–6.21: The Book of Eschatology. Many scholars see this "book" as having a concentric structure, as follows:

A. Address to judges: exhortation to justice (1.1–15)
  B. Speech of the wicked (1.16–2.24)
    C. Four paired contrasts of the just and the wicked (3.1–4.20)
  B.' Speech of the wicked (5.1–23)
A.' Address to kings: exhortation to wisdom (6.1–21).

For those who analyze the book as an encomium (see Introduction), chs 1–6 function as the introduction ("exordium") whose theme is Wisdom's gift of immortality to the righteous. This section addresses "rulers of the earth" in what is mainly a discourse on righteousness and wickedness.

1.1–15: An exhortation to justice. The figure of Wisdom is introduced (v. 4) and seems to be equated with a *holy . . . spirit* (v. 5) or *the spirit of the Lord* (v. 7). Specific references to wisdom then disappear until ch 6. Much of the passage is framed negatively, focusing on those things that are the opposite of wisdom and God's spirit: *perverse thoughts* (v. 3), *sin* (v. 4), injustice (vv. 5,8), blasphemy (v. 6), *counsels of the ungodly* (v. 9), *lawless deeds* (v. 9), and so on. **1:** The verse is reminiscent of Ps 2.2; other passages seem to presuppose this Psalm (see 2.10–20; 4.8,19; 6.1,21). The book begins with the literary device of the apostrophe, a direct address to the hearers or readers, though the actual audience is the Hellenistic Jewish community, not their Gentile rulers. This is one of the features of the diatribe that has influenced the rhetoric of Wisdom of Solomon; see also 2.10–20n. **5:**

because God is witness of their inmost
feelings,
and a true observer of their hearts, and a
hearer of their tongues.
7 Because the spirit of the Lord has filled
the world,
and that which holds all things together
knows what is said,
8 therefore those who utter unrighteous
things will not escape notice,
and justice, when it punishes, will not pass
them by.
9 For inquiry will be made into the
counsels of the ungodly,
and a report of their words will come to
the Lord,
to convict them of their lawless deeds;
10 because a jealous ear hears all
things,
and the sound of grumbling does not go
unheard.
11 Beware then of useless grumbling,
and keep your tongue from slander;
because no secret word is without
result,[a]
and a lying mouth destroys the soul.

12 Do not invite death by the error of your
life,
or bring on destruction by the works of
your hands;
13 because God did not make death,
and he does not delight in the death of the
living.
14 For he created all things so that they
might exist;
the generative forces[b] of the world are
wholesome,
and there is no destructive poison in them,
and the dominion[c] of Hades is not on
earth.
15 For righteousness is immortal.

16 But the ungodly by their words and
deeds summoned death;[d]
considering him a friend, they pined away
and made a covenant with him,
because they are fit to belong to his
company.

2 For they reasoned unsoundly, saying to
themselves,
"Short and sorrowful is our life,
and there is no remedy when a life comes
to its end,
and no one has been known to return from
Hades.
2 For we were born by mere chance,
and hereafter we shall be as though we
had never been,
for the breath in our nostrils is smoke,
and reason is a spark kindled by the
beating of our hearts;
3 when it is extinguished, the body will
turn to ashes,
and the spirit will dissolve like empty air.
4 Our name will be forgotten in time,
and no one will remember our works;

[a] Or *will go unpunished*
[b] Or *the creatures*
[c] Or *palace*
[d] Gk *him*

Wisdom is a product of the *spirit* of God; cf. Isa 2.11. **6:** *A kindly spirit*, literally "a philanthropic spirit," i.e., loving humanity (cf. 7.22–23; 12.19; 15.1). **7:** See 12.1n. **11:** *Tongue*, counsel on the vices of human speech is ubiquitous in wisdom literature (e.g., Prov 2.12; 4.24; 10.11,18–19,31–32; Sir 9.18; 20.24–26; 28.12–26). **12–15:** These verses anticipate the discussion on immortality that follows in chs 2–6. **13:** *Death* is eternal separation from God, the condition of the sinner. Here the author does not refer to the reality of physical death. **14:** *Hades*, the abode of the dead in Greek tradition; comparable to Heb "Sheol." **15:** Immortality is not an innate condition of the soul but God's gift to the righteous (see Philo, *On the Confusion of Tongues*, 149); see 2.23–24n.

1.16–2.24: The deluded reasoning of the ungodly. The passage's style resembles that of the Greco-Roman diatribe, which often included argumentative exchanges with a fictional adversary. Here the ungodly are made to explain their actions and motives *to themselves* (2.1–20). The writer then disproves the reasoning of the ungodly (vv. 21–24). The view expressed is Epicurean or a caricature of the Epicurean belief, which argued that everything was material, that life and the universe came about by accident, and that death was the end of the person. Epicureans were accused of being atheists and of promoting a sensual lifestyle. Some of this was broadly true, but in reality the Epicurean lifestyle was one of moderation, not excess. **1.16:** For the *covenant* with *death* cf. Isa 28.15. **2.1–5:** This view of death is reflected also in Job 7.9–10; 14.1–2; Eccl 2.14,16,24; 3.12,19; 6.12;

our life will pass away like the traces of a
cloud,
and be scattered like mist
that is chased by the rays of the sun
and overcome by its heat.
5 For our allotted time is the passing of a
shadow,
and there is no return from our death,
because it is sealed up and no one turns
back.

6 "Come, therefore, let us enjoy the good
things that exist,
and make use of the creation to the full as
in youth.
7 Let us take our fill of costly wine and
perfumes,
and let no flower of spring pass us by.
8 Let us crown ourselves with rosebuds
before they wither.
9 Let none of us fail to share in our revelry;
everywhere let us leave signs of
enjoyment,
because this is our portion, and this our lot.
10 Let us oppress the righteous poor man;
let us not spare the widow
or regard the gray hairs of the aged.
11 But let our might be our law of right,
for what is weak proves itself to be useless.

12 "Let us lie in wait for the righteous man,
because he is inconvenient to us and
opposes our actions;
he reproaches us for sins against the law,
and accuses us of sins against our training.
13 He professes to have knowledge of God,
and calls himself a child[a] of the Lord.
14 He became to us a reproof of our
thoughts;
15 the very sight of him is a burden to us,
because his manner of life is unlike that of
others,
and his ways are strange.
16 We are considered by him as something
base,
and he avoids our ways as unclean;
he calls the last end of the righteous
happy,
and boasts that God is his father.
17 Let us see if his words are true,
and let us test what will happen at the end
of his life;
18 for if the righteous man is God's child, he
will help him,
and will deliver him from the hand of his
adversaries.
19 Let us test him with insult and torture,
so that we may find out how gentle he is,
and make trial of his forbearance.
20 Let us condemn him to a shameful
death,
for, according to what he says, he will be
protected."

21 Thus they reasoned, but they were led
astray,
for their wickedness blinded them,
22 and they did not know the secret
purposes of God,
nor hoped for the wages of holiness,
nor discerned the prize for blameless
souls;
23 for God created us for incorruption,
and made us in the image of his own
eternity,[b]

[a] Or *servant*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *nature*

9.2,7–9). **1:** *Hades*, see 1.14n. **6–9:** In the reasoning of the ungodly, the threat of death warrants sensuality (see Isa 22.13). In Eccl 9.7 enjoyment of pleasure is recommended as a proper response to life under the shadow of death. **10–20:** The wicked are misled by an irrational antipathy for the righteous and the weak, persecuting those who call *God* their *father*. This passage draws on Isa 52.13–53.12: vv. 13 and 16 describe the righteous as *child*, Gk "pais," which can also be translated "servant" (as in LXX Isa 52.13); cf. also vv. 19–20 with Isa 53.7–9. Other parallels in following chapters include 3.2–3 and Isa 53.4; 3.6 and Isa 53.7–10; 4.19 and Isa 52.15; 5.2 and Isa 52.14; 5.3–4 and Isa 53.3,10; 5.6 and Isa 53.6. The passage also shows affinities with *1 Enoch* 62–63, probably indicating that both *1 Enoch* and Wis have drawn on Isa 52–53. **13:** *Knowledge of God*, a gift of wisdom illuminating the path to immortality (6.22; 7.12,17; 8.4,9; 10.10; 15.2–3; 18.6). Conversely the wicked refuse to know God (2.22; 12.27; 13.1,9; 14.22; 15.11; 16.16). **22:** For the idea of the afterlife as part of *the secret purposes of God*, see also 1 Cor 4.5; 15.51; *1 Enoch* 103.2; and the *Book of Mysteries* in the Dead Sea Scrolls, 1Q27 1.3–4. **23–24:** These verses explain further what has already been asserted in 1.13–14: Humanity was created for immortality. *Through the*

[24] but through the devil's envy death
entered the world,
and those who belong to his company
experience it.

3 But the souls of the righteous are in the
hand of God,
and no torment will ever touch them.
[2] In the eyes of the foolish they seemed to
have died,
and their departure was thought to be a
disaster,
[3] and their going from us to be their
destruction;
but they are at peace.
[4] For though in the sight of others they
were punished,
their hope is full of immortality.
[5] Having been disciplined a little, they will
receive great good,
because God tested them and found them
worthy of himself;
[6] like gold in the furnace he tried them,
and like a sacrificial burnt offering he
accepted them.
[7] In the time of their visitation they will
shine forth,
and will run like sparks through the
stubble.
[8] They will govern nations and rule over
peoples,
and the Lord will reign over them
forever.
[9] Those who trust in him will understand
truth,
and the faithful will abide with him in
love,
because grace and mercy are upon his holy
ones,
and he watches over his elect.[a]

[10] But the ungodly will be punished as their
reasoning deserves,
those who disregarded the righteous[b]
and rebelled against the Lord;
[11] for those who despise wisdom and
instruction are miserable.
Their hope is vain, their labors are
unprofitable,
and their works are useless.
[12] Their wives are foolish, and their
children evil;
[13] their offspring are accursed.
For blessed is the barren woman who is
undefiled,
who has not entered into a sinful union;
she will have fruit when God examines
souls.

[a] Text of this line uncertain; omitted by some ancient authorities. Compare 4.15
[b] Or *what is right*

devil's envy death entered refers to Gen 3.1–24 (see 6.23; *2 Enoch* 31.3–6). Consequently, immortality (*incorruption*) is no longer a natural condition but a reward from God, contrasted with the view of this time in the Greek world that the soul was naturally immortal (see 1.16–2.24n., however, for the Epicurean view).

3.1–4.20: Four pairs contrasting the just and the wicked. 3.1–11: The souls of the righteous will be rewarded, and the wicked, punished; 3.12–19: the offspring of the righteous and the wicked; 4.1–6: better the childlessness of the righteous than the fertility of the wicked; 4.7–20: better a short life and righteousness than long life and wickedness.

3.1–11: First contrast, on suffering and death. The suffering and even death of the righteous is only apparent (vv. 1–9; cf. *1 Enoch* 102.4–103.4; 103.9–104.6), in contrast to the wicked (vv. 10–11; cf. *1 Enoch* 103.5–8; 104.7–10) who are rightly punished. **1:** *Souls*, the author repeatedly emphasizes the primacy of the soul in constituting human identity (1.4,11; 2.22; 3.13; 4.14; 7.27; 8.19; 9.15; 10.16; 15.8,11). **4:** The emphasis on *immortality* rather than bodily resurrection reflects Greek influence (1.15; 2.23; 4.1; 6.18–19; 8.13, 17; 12.1; 15.3; 2 Esd 2.45; 7.13,96; 8.54; 4 Macc 9.22). **5–6:** The value of divine discipline; cf. 11.8–10; 12.20–22; 16.3–6,11; 18.20; Deut 8.5; Job 5.17; Prov 3.11–12; Sir 2.1–5; 4.17; 18.13–14; 32.14; 2 Macc 6.12–16; 7.33. **7:** *Shine forth*, the star-like appearance of the glorified righteous is frequently mentioned in apocalyptic literature (cf. Dan 12.3; 2 Esd 7.97; *1 Enoch* 104.2). **9:** *Watches over his elect*, see 4.15; Ps 1.6; 145.20; Sir 46.14; 2 Macc 7.6.

3.12–19: Second contrast, on offspring. Better is childlessness than children through adultery and unlawful union. Since children were considered a blessing in the ancient world (e.g., Ps 127.3–5; 128.3–4), the author shows how the apparent good fortune of the ungodly in having children is illusory. See also 3.16–19; 4.3–6; cf. Sir 16.1–4; 23.22–27. 41.5–9. In contrast, barrenness, which was often thought to indicate divine displeasure

14 Blessed also is the eunuch whose hands
have done no lawless deed,
and who has not devised wicked things
against the Lord;
for special favor will be shown him for his
faithfulness,
and a place of great delight in the temple
of the Lord.
15 For the fruit of good labors is
renowned,
and the root of understanding does not
fail.
16 But children of adulterers will not come
to maturity,
and the offspring of an unlawful union will
perish.
17 Even if they live long they will be held of
no account,
and finally their old age will be without
honor.
18 If they die young, they will have no
hope
and no consolation on the day of
judgment.
19 For the end of an unrighteous generation
is grievous.

4 Better than this is childlessness with
virtue,
for in the memory of virtue[a] is
immortality,
because it is known both by God and by
mortals.
2 When it is present, people imitate[b] it,
and they long for it when it has gone;
throughout all time it marches, crowned in
triumph,
victor in the contest for prizes that are
undefiled.
3 But the prolific brood of the ungodly will
be of no use,
and none of their illegitimate seedlings
will strike a deep root
or take a firm hold.
4 For even if they put forth boughs for a
while,
standing insecurely they will be shaken by
the wind,
and by the violence of the winds they will
be uprooted.
5 The branches will be broken off before
they come to maturity,
and their fruit will be useless,
not ripe enough to eat, and good for
nothing.
6 For children born of unlawful unions
are witnesses of evil against their parents
when God examines them.[c]
7 But the righteous, though they die early,
will be at rest.
8 For old age is not honored for length of
time,
or measured by number of years;
9 but understanding is gray hair for
anyone,
and a blameless life is ripe old age.

10 There were some who pleased God and
were loved by him,
and while living among sinners were taken
up.
11 They were caught up so that evil might
not change their understanding
or guile deceive their souls.

[a] Gk *it*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *honor*
[c] Gk *at their examination*

(Gen 30.23) if not sin (*1 Enoch* 98.5), may be the condition of the morally pure. **14:** Although Deut 23.1 excluded eunuchs from the cultic assembly, this author assures the virtuous eunuch a place in *the temple of the Lord*, referring perhaps to the heavenly temple; cf. Isa 56.4–5.

4.1–6: Third contrast, parallel to 3.13–19 on offspring. 1: *The memory of virtue*, God's remembrance of the virtuous is their guarantee of eternal life (cf. 8.13; Ps 112.6; Prov 10.7; Sir 44.8–15; 2 Esd 12.47). Conversely, the memory of the wicked will perish (4.19; see 2.4; Eccl 9.5). **3–5:** Cf. Sir 23.22–27. For the imagery, cf. Job 15.32–34; Ps 1.4–5; Ezek 17.9; 31.10–14; Dan 4.14. **6:** *Witnesses . . . against their parents*, see 4.20.

4.7–20: Fourth contrast, parallel to 3.1–9, returning to the theme of suffering and death. A similar idea, that the righteous were taken away in order that they be removed from evil, is found in Isa 57.1–2. **7–9:** In contrast to the traditional association of old age with wisdom (Job 15.7–10), *understanding*, not *length of time*, is the true measure of righteousness (see 4.15; Philo, *On Abraham* 271). **10–11:** An allusion to Enoch who was *taken up* by God (Gen 5.24; cf. Sir 44.16). *Gen Rab* 25.1 also claims that the purpose of Enoch's removal was to

12 For the fascination of wickedness
obscures what is good,
and roving desire perverts the innocent
mind.
13 Being perfected in a short time, they
fulfilled long years;
14 for their souls were pleasing to the Lord,
therefore he took them quickly from the
midst of wickedness.
15 Yet the peoples saw and did not
understand,
or take such a thing to heart,
that God's grace and mercy are with his
elect,
and that he watches over his holy ones.

16 The righteous who have died will
condemn the ungodly who are living,
and youth that is quickly perfected[a] will
condemn the prolonged old age of
the unrighteous.
17 For they will see the end of the wise,
and will not understand what the Lord
purposed for them,
and for what he kept them safe.
18 The unrighteous[b] will see, and will have
contempt for them,
but the Lord will laugh them to scorn.
After this they will become dishonored
corpses,
and an outrage among the dead forever;
19 because he will dash them speechless to
the ground,
and shake them from the foundations;
they will be left utterly dry and barren,
and they will suffer anguish,
and the memory of them will perish.

20 They will come with dread when their
sins are reckoned up,
and their lawless deeds will convict them
to their face.

5 Then the righteous will stand with great
confidence
in the presence of those who have
oppressed them
and those who make light of their labors.
2 When the unrighteous[c] see them, they
will be shaken with dreadful fear,
and they will be amazed at the unexpected
salvation of the righteous.
3 They will speak to one another in
repentance,
and in anguish of spirit they will groan,
and say,
4 "These are persons whom we once held
in derision
and made a byword of reproach—fools
that we were!
We thought that their lives were
madness
and that their end was without honor.
5 Why have they been numbered among
the children of God?
And why is their lot among the saints?
6 So it was we who strayed from the way of
truth,
and the light of righteousness did not
shine on us,
and the sun did not rise upon us.
7 We took our fill of the paths of
lawlessness and destruction,
and we journeyed through trackless
deserts,
but the way of the Lord we have not
known.

[a] Or *ended*
[b] Gk *They*
[c] Gk *they*

preserve his character. **12:** *Roving desire*, see 15.5–6; Eccl 6.9; 11.9; Sir 18.30–19.3. **14–15,17:** Premature death is interpreted not as a curse (cf. Ps 109.8–9) but as a sign of God's favor. These verses may be based on Isa 57.1–2. **17:** *They will see*, answering 2.17 (cf. 5.2). **18:** *The Lord will laugh*, cf. Ps 2.4; Prov 1.26. **18b–19:** These threats are familiar from prophetic announcements of judgment (Isa 13.6–16; 24.17–23; 66.24; Jer 15.7–9). **19:** *Memory*, see 4.1n.

5.1–23: Final judgment and the speech of the impious. In contrast to their arrogant speech of 2.1–20, *the unrighteous* now speak with remorse and self-condemnation (5.4–13). **1–8:** The reaction of *the unrighteous* to *the righteous* parallels the so-called servant song of Isa 52.13–53.12, which describes the astonishing restoration of Israel after terrible affliction. Cf. also *1 Enoch* 62–63. **4–13:** An imaginary monologue is placed in the mouths of the wicked, as in 2.1–20, a device common in diatribe. **5:** The righteous eventually become part of the heavenly host, a kind of astral immortality; cf. Dan. 12.2–3; *1 Enoch* 39.5; 104.2,6; 1QH 3.19–23; *2 Baruch* 51.5–13. **6–8:** Con-

8 What has our arrogance profited us?
And what good has our boasted wealth
brought us?

9 "All those things have vanished like a
shadow,
and like a rumor that passes by;
10 like a ship that sails through the billowy
water,
and when it has passed no trace can be
found,
no track of its keel in the waves;
11 or as, when a bird flies through the air,
no evidence of its passage is found;
the light air, lashed by the beat of its
pinions
and pierced by the force of its rushing
flight,
is traversed by the movement of its wings,
and afterward no sign of its coming is
found there;
12 or as, when an arrow is shot at a target,
the air, thus divided, comes together at
once,
so that no one knows its pathway.
13 So we also, as soon as we were born,
ceased to be,
and we had no sign of virtue to show,
but were consumed in our wickedness."
14 Because the hope of the ungodly is like
thistledown[a] carried by the wind,
and like a light frost[b] driven away by a
storm;
it is dispersed like smoke before the wind,
and it passes like the remembrance of a
guest who stays but a day.

15 But the righteous live forever,
and their reward is with the Lord;
the Most High takes care of them.
16 Therefore they will receive a glorious
crown
and a beautiful diadem from the hand of
the Lord,
because with his right hand he will cover
them,
and with his arm he will shield them.
17 The Lord[c] will take his zeal as his whole
armor,
and will arm all creation to repel[d] his
enemies;
18 he will put on righteousness as a
breastplate,
and wear impartial justice as a helmet;
19 he will take holiness as an invincible
shield,
20 and sharpen stern wrath for a sword,
and creation will join with him to fight
against his frenzied foes.
21 Shafts of lightning will fly with true aim,
and will leap from the clouds to the target,
as from a well-drawn bow,
22 and hailstones full of wrath will be
hurled as from a catapult;
the water of the sea will rage against
them,
and rivers will relentlessly overwhelm
them;
23 a mighty wind will rise against them,
and like a tempest it will winnow them
away.
Lawlessness will lay waste the whole
earth,
and evildoing will overturn the thrones of
rulers.

6 Listen therefore, O kings, and
understand;
learn, O judges of the ends of the earth.

[a] Other ancient authorities read *dust*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *spider's web*
[c] Gk *He*
[d] Or *punish*

fession of guilt by the wicked (cf. Isa 59.2–3,7–10). **6:** *The light . . . did not shine*, see 17.2–21. **9–14:** The ephemeral existence of *the ungodly*, cf. Ps. 1.4–5; Hos 13.3; 2 Esd 7.61; Jas 4.14. **10–11:** *A ship . . . a bird*, cf. Prov 30.18–19. **17–22: The armor of virtues** (see also 18.14–16; 19.13–17). The imagery of God putting on various attributes as divine armor derives from Isa 59.17; cf. Eph. 6.11–17. **16:** *Crown . . . diadem,* cf. Isa 62.3. **17:** *Will arm all creation*, see 5.20–23; 19.6; Sir 39.28–31. **21–22:** *Lightning . . . hailstones . . . water*, cf. 16.15–29.

6.1–21: An exhortation to wisdom. This section is parallel to 1.1–15, forming an inclusio that marks off 1.1–6.21 as a unit: just as the section began with an address to "the rulers of the earth" (1.1–15), it ends with an address to "the kings of the earth" (6.1–21). Some of the passage's themes are familiar from philosophical treatises on kingship (e.g., Plutarch, *To an Uneducated Ruler*), which generally stressed the need for rulers to be wise and

[2] Give ear, you that rule over multitudes,
and boast of many nations.
[3] For your dominion was given you from
the Lord,
and your sovereignty from the Most High;
he will search out your works and inquire
into your plans.
[4] Because as servants of his kingdom you
did not rule rightly,
or keep the law,
or walk according to the purpose of God,
[5] he will come upon you terribly and
swiftly,
because severe judgment falls on those in
high places.
[6] For the lowliest may be pardoned in
mercy,
but the mighty will be mightily tested.
[7] For the Lord of all will not stand in awe of
anyone,
or show deference to greatness;
because he himself made both small and
great,
and he takes thought for all alike.
[8] But a strict inquiry is in store for the
mighty.
[9] To you then, O monarchs, my words are
directed,
so that you may learn wisdom and not
transgress.
[10] For they will be made holy who observe
holy things in holiness,
and those who have been taught them will
find a defense.
[11] Therefore set your desire on my words;
long for them, and you will be instructed.

[12] Wisdom is radiant and unfading,
and she is easily discerned by those who
love her,
and is found by those who seek her.
[13] She hastens to make herself known to
those who desire her.
[14] One who rises early to seek her will have
no difficulty,
for she will be found sitting at the gate.
[15] To fix one's thought on her is perfect
understanding,
and one who is vigilant on her account will
soon be free from care,
[16] because she goes about seeking those
worthy of her,
and she graciously appears to them in
their paths,
and meets them in every thought.

[17] The beginning of wisdom[a] is the most
sincere desire for instruction,
and concern for instruction is love of her,
[18] and love of her is the keeping of her laws,
and giving heed to her laws is assurance of
immortality,

[a] Gk *Her beginning*

benevolent (cf. 12.15–18n.). Kingship is also an important theme in Proverbs (e.g., 16.10–19; 20.26–28; 25.1–7; 29.4,12–14; 30.21–31), another book attributed to Solomon. **1–11:** Rulers of other nations are often condemned in the Bible and Jewish literature (e.g., Isa 14.3–21), yet this passage seems to assume that the ruler who heeds and gains wisdom will rule the world and gain many benefits. Thus, even Gentile rulers can gain favor in the eyes of God by living according to the law and God's will (6.4). *Law* (v. 4) here probably refers to universal law rather the specific Jewish Torah, though some Jewish writers of the time equated the two (*Ep. Aris.* 161,168–69; Philo, *Abraham*, especially 16,60–61,133–37). **1–2:** An apostrophe (see 1.1n.). **3:** Political authority is granted by God (cf. Prov 8.15–16; Jer 27.5–7; Dan 2.37–38; 4.17; Sir 10.4–5). **4–6:** For God's judgment against *the mighty*, cf. 1 Sam 2.3–5; Job 12.17–25; 34.24–30; Ps 2; Isa 2.11–17; Jer 25.15–29; Ezek 21.25–27; Sir 10.8–18. **7:** *Small and great*, cf. Job 34.19. **12:** *Wisdom* has been mentioned in passing at several points (1.4–6; 3.11; 6.9), but with this verse a discourse on the figure of personified Wisdom begins, continuing to the end of ch 10. The figure of Wisdom or Lady Wisdom occurs frequently in late Israelite and Jewish literature, especially Prov 1.20–33; 8; 9.1–6; Job 28.12–28; Sir 1.1–27; 4.11–19; 6.18–37; 14.20–15.10; 24; Bar 3.9–4.4. Later, Wisdom came to be equated with the Torah or elements of the Torah, rather than just intellectual or practical wisdom (e.g., Sir 24.23–29; Bar 4.1). **14:** *The gate*, the place in a city where legal and commercial transactions were carried out (Deut 22.15,24; Prov 22.22; Isa 29.21; Am 5.10–12,15); cf. Prov 1.20–21. **17–20:** The literary form called a "sorites" in Greek, defined as a set of statements that proceed step by step to a conclusion, with each statement picking up the last key word or phrase of the preceding one. The author of Wis clearly knows of the form and makes effective use of it. **18–19:** *Immortality*, see 3.4n.

19 and immortality brings one near to God;
20 so the desire for wisdom leads to a kingdom.

21 Therefore if you delight in thrones and scepters, O monarchs over the peoples,
honor wisdom, so that you may reign forever.
22 I will tell you what wisdom is and how she came to be,
and I will hide no secrets from you,
but I will trace her course from the beginning of creation,
and make knowledge of her clear,
and I will not pass by the truth;
23 nor will I travel in the company of sickly envy,
for envy[a] does not associate with wisdom.
24 The multitude of the wise is the salvation of the world,
and a sensible king is the stability of any people.
25 Therefore be instructed by my words, and you will profit.

7 I also am mortal, like everyone else,
a descendant of the first-formed child of earth;
and in the womb of a mother I was molded into flesh,
2 within the period of ten months,
compacted with blood,
from the seed of a man and the pleasure of marriage.
3 And when I was born, I began to breathe the common air,
and fell upon the kindred earth;
my first sound was a cry, as is true of all.
4 I was nursed with care in swaddling cloths.
5 For no king has had a different beginning of existence;
6 there is for all one entrance into life, and one way out.
7 Therefore I prayed, and understanding was given me;
I called on God, and the spirit of wisdom came to me.
8 I preferred her to scepters and thrones,
and I accounted wealth as nothing in comparison with her.
9 Neither did I liken to her any priceless gem,
because all gold is but a little sand in her sight,
and silver will be accounted as clay before her.
10 I loved her more than health and beauty,
and I chose to have her rather than light,
because her radiance never ceases.

[a] Gk *this*

6.22–10.21: The Book of Wisdom.

6.22–25: Introduction: the promise is made to reveal the mysteries of wisdom to the reader.

7.1–9.18: In this section the implied author speaks in the persona of Solomon, describing his life and quest for wisdom and the benefits wisdom is able to bestow. The pseudo-autobiographical narrative serves the dual function of gaining the empathy of the hearers and commending the quest for wisdom.

7.1–8.21: The first part of the autobiographical narrative consists of a speech by Solomon that has a concentric framework:

A. Birth of Solomon (7.1–6)
  B. Solomon asks for wisdom from God (7.7–12)
    C. Solomon given wealth and power (7.13–22a)
      D. Description of wisdom (7.22b–8.1)
    C.' Wisdom brings all good things (8.2–8)
  B.' Solomon becomes a great king through Wisdom (8.9–16)
A.' Wisdom available only through prayer (8.17–21).

7.1–6: By describing his birth *like everyone else*, "Solomon" shows his common humanity with the hearers. **2:** The conventional 40 weeks or 280 days of human gestation was usually interpreted as *ten months* in antiquity, because of the use of lunar rather than solar months. *Compacted with blood*, on conception as the coagulation of semen in the womb, cf. Job 10.10. **7–14:** Solomon prays for wisdom from God, as also in 1 Kings 3.4–14. God grants Solomon not only wisdom but also wealth and other benefits (cf. 1 Kings 3.10–14). **8–9:** Cf. Job 28.15–19;

11 All good things came to me along with
her,
and in her hands uncounted wealth.
12 I rejoiced in them all, because wisdom
leads them;
but I did not know that she was their
mother.
13 I learned without guile and I impart
without grudging;
I do not hide her wealth,
14 for it is an unfailing treasure for mortals;
those who get it obtain friendship with
God,
commended for the gifts that come from
instruction.

15 May God grant me to speak with
judgment,
and to have thoughts worthy of what I
have received;
for he is the guide even of wisdom
and the corrector of the wise.
16 For both we and our words are in his
hand,
as are all understanding and skill in crafts.
17 For it is he who gave me unerring
knowledge of what exists,
to know the structure of the world and the
activity of the elements;
18 the beginning and end and middle of
times,
the alternations of the solstices and the
changes of the seasons,
19 the cycles of the year and the
constellations of the stars,
20 the natures of animals and the tempers
of wild animals,
the powers of spirits[a] and the thoughts of
human beings,
the varieties of plants and the virtues of
roots;
21 I learned both what is secret and what is
manifest,
22 for wisdom, the fashioner of all things,
taught me.

There is in her a spirit that is intelligent,
holy,
unique, manifold, subtle,
mobile, clear, unpolluted,
distinct, invulnerable, loving the good,
keen,
irresistible, 23 beneficent, humane,
steadfast, sure, free from anxiety,
all-powerful, overseeing all,
and penetrating through all spirits
that are intelligent, pure, and altogether
subtle.
24 For wisdom is more mobile than any
motion;
because of her pureness she pervades and
penetrates all things.
25 For she is a breath of the power of God,
and a pure emanation of the glory of the
Almighty;
therefore nothing defiled gains entrance
into her.
26 For she is a reflection of eternal light,
a spotless mirror of the working of God,
and an image of his goodness.
27 Although she is but one, she can do all
things,
and while remaining in herself, she renews
all things;
in every generation she passes into holy
souls

[a] Or *winds*

Prov 2.4; 3.14–16. **14:** Abraham in particular was known for his *friendship with* God (2 Chr 20.7; Isa 41.8; Jas 2.23); see also 7.27; 8.18; Job 29.4; Ps 25.14; Jer 3.4. **15–22:** Divine wisdom is presented in scientific and philosophical terms; this sort of encyclopedic knowledge was a common interest of ancient wisdom literature; cf. 1 Kings 4.33.

7.22b–8.1: A description of wisdom, with two sets of lists. **7.22b–24:** The first list consists of 21 attributes (a multiple of 7 and 3, numbers signifying completeness and perfection). Most of the epithets have parallels in Greek philosophy (cf. Pseudo-Aristotle, *On the Cosmos* 400B–401B); a similar litany of attributes, glorifying the deity, is used in the *Apocalypse of Abraham* 17.8–15. **7.25–8.1:** The second list is made up of metaphors, a five-fold description of wisdom's relationship with God (breath, emanation, reflection, mirror, image). **25:** *Breath,* see 11.20; Sir 24.3. The description of wisdom as a *pure emanation* or effluence of God reflects the influence of philosophical concepts (e.g., Cicero, *The Nature of the Gods* 2.79; cf. Sir 1.9; 24.23–33). **26:** *Mirror,* cf. 2 Cor 3.18; Philo, *Quest. in Gen.* 1.57.

and makes them friends of God, and
prophets;
28 for God loves nothing so much as the
person who lives with wisdom.
29 She is more beautiful than the sun,
and excels every constellation of the stars.
Compared with the light she is found to be
superior,
30 for it is succeeded by the night,
but against wisdom evil does not prevail.

8 She reaches mightily from one end of the
earth to the other,
and she orders all things well.
2 I loved her and sought her from my youth;
I desired to take her for my bride,
and became enamored of her beauty.
3 She glorifies her noble birth by living
with God,
and the Lord of all loves her.
4 For she is an initiate in the knowledge of
God,
and an associate in his works.
5 If riches are a desirable possession in life,
what is richer than wisdom, the active
cause of all things?
6 And if understanding is effective,
who more than she is fashioner of what
exists?
7 And if anyone loves righteousness,
her labors are virtues;
for she teaches self-control and prudence,
justice and courage;
nothing in life is more profitable for
mortals than these.
8 And if anyone longs for wide experience,
she knows the things of old, and infers the
things to come;
she understands turns of speech and the
solutions of riddles;
she has foreknowledge of signs and
wonders
and of the outcome of seasons and times.
9 Therefore I determined to take her to live
with me,
knowing that she would give me good
counsel
and encouragement in cares and grief.
10 Because of her I shall have glory among
the multitudes
and honor in the presence of the elders,
though I am young.
11 I shall be found keen in judgment,
and in the sight of rulers I shall be
admired.
12 When I am silent they will wait for me,
and when I speak they will give heed;
if I speak at greater length,
they will put their hands on their
mouths.
13 Because of her I shall have immortality,
and leave an everlasting remembrance to
those who come after me.
14 I shall govern peoples,
and nations will be subject to me;
15 dread monarchs will be afraid of me
when they hear of me;
among the people I shall show myself
capable, and courageous in war.
16 When I enter my house, I shall find rest
with her;
for companionship with her has no
bitterness,
and life with her has no pain, but gladness
and joy.
17 When I considered these things inwardly,
and pondered in my heart
that in kinship with wisdom there is
immortality,
18 and in friendship with her, pure delight,
and in the labors of her hands, unfailing
wealth,
and in the experience of her company,
understanding,
and renown in sharing her words,
I went about seeking how to get her for
myself.
19 As a child I was naturally gifted,
and a good soul fell to my lot;

8.2–16: The extended metaphor of Solomon making Wisdom his bride. Erotic imagery in connection with Wisdom is found elsewhere, as in Prov. 9.1–6, which makes Wisdom a seductress. Even more erotically explicit is the Hebrew version of Sir 51.13–30, which circulated separately at Qumran as part of a Psalms scroll (11QPsa 21). **4–6:** On wisdom's agency in creation, see Prov 8.22–31. **7:** The four cardinal virtues of Greek thought: *self-control, prudence, justice,* and *courage.* Cf. 4 Macc 1.2–4. **8:** *Turns of speech . . . riddles*, cf. Prov. 1.5–6. **10–12:** Cf. Job 29.7–11,21–23; Sir 15.4–6. **13:** *Everlasting remembrance,* see 4.1n. **15–16:** *Rest*, see Sir 6.28.

8.17–21: Wisdom is available only as a gift from God. 17: *Immortality*, see 3.4n. **18:** *Friendship,* see 7.8–9n.

20 or rather, being good, I entered an
undefiled body.
21 But I perceived that I would not possess
wisdom unless God gave her to me—
and it was a mark of insight to know
whose gift she was—
so I appealed to the Lord and implored
him,
and with my whole heart I said:

9 "O God of my ancestors and Lord of
mercy,
who have made all things by your word,
2 and by your wisdom have formed
humankind
to have dominion over the creatures you
have made,
3 and rule the world in holiness and
righteousness,
and pronounce judgment in uprightness
of soul,
4 give me the wisdom that sits by your
throne,
and do not reject me from among your
servants.
5 For I am your servant[a] the son of your
serving girl,
a man who is weak and short-lived,
with little understanding of judgment and
laws;
6 for even one who is perfect among
human beings
will be regarded as nothing without the
wisdom that comes from you.
7 You have chosen me to be king of your
people
and to be judge over your sons and
daughters.
8 You have given command to build a
temple on your holy mountain,
and an altar in the city of your habitation,
a copy of the holy tent that you prepared
from the beginning.
9 With you is wisdom, she who knows your
works
and was present when you made the
world;
she understands what is pleasing in your
sight
and what is right according to your
commandments.
10 Send her forth from the holy heavens,
and from the throne of your glory send
her,
that she may labor at my side,
and that I may learn what is pleasing to
you.
11 For she knows and understands all
things,
and she will guide me wisely in my actions
and guard me with her glory.
12 Then my works will be acceptable,
and I shall judge your people justly,
and shall be worthy of the throne[b] of my
father.
13 For who can learn the counsel of God?
Or who can discern what the Lord wills?
14 For the reasoning of mortals is
worthless,
and our designs are likely to fail;
15 for a perishable body weighs down the
soul,
and this earthy tent burdens the
thoughtful[c] mind.
16 We can hardly guess at what is on earth,
and what is at hand we find with labor;
but who has traced out what is in the
heavens?
17 Who has learned your counsel,
unless you have given wisdom
and sent your holy spirit from on high?

a Gk *slave*
b Gk *thrones*
c Or *anxious*

19–20: The Platonic view of the soul as preexistent is reflected here, as in other Hellenistic Jewish writings (cf. Philo, *Giants* 6–14; *2 Enoch* 23.4–5). The author may be referring also to Hellenistic theories about the transmigration of souls, a belief attributed by Josephus to the Pharisees (*J.W.* 2.8.14).

9.1–18: Solomon's prayer (cf. 1 Kings 3.6–9; 2 Chr 1.8–10). Verses 1–5 parallel vv. 7–12: Address to God (vv. 1–3; 7–9); petition (vv. 4; 10a); motive (vv. 5; 10b–12). Verses 13–18 are a meditation on humanity's insignificance before God. **2:** *Dominion*, see 10.2; Gen 1.26,28; Ps 8.6; Sir 17.2–4. **4:** *Wisdom . . . sits by your throne*, see 9.10; 18.15; Prov 8.30; Sir 24.4; *1 Enoch* 84.3. **5:** *Your servant*, see Pss 86.16; 116.16. **8:** That the earthly temple on Mount Zion was only a *copy* of a heavenly archetype may be an interpretation of Ex 25.9,40; 26.30 (cf. Heb 8.2–5; Rev 11.19; *1 Enoch* 14.10–20). **9:** Cf. Prov. 8.22–31. **12:** *My father*, David. **13:** Cf. Isa 40.12–14; Sir 1.2–6; Bar 3.29–31.**15:** That

18 And thus the paths of those on earth
were set right,
and people were taught what pleases you,
and were saved by wisdom."

10 Wisdom[a] protected the first-formed
father of the world, when he alone
had been created;
she delivered him from his transgression,
2 and gave him strength to rule all things.
3 But when an unrighteous man departed
from her in his anger,
he perished because in rage he killed his
brother.
4 When the earth was flooded because of
him, wisdom again saved it,
steering the righteous man by a paltry
piece of wood.

5 Wisdom[a] also, when the nations in
wicked agreement had been put to
confusion,
recognized the righteous man and
preserved him blameless before God,
and kept him strong in the face of his
compassion for his child.

6 Wisdom[a] rescued a righteous man when
the ungodly were perishing;
he escaped the fire that descended on the
Five Cities.[b]
7 Evidence of their wickedness still
remains:
a continually smoking wasteland,
plants bearing fruit that does not ripen,
and a pillar of salt standing as a
monument to an unbelieving soul.
8 For because they passed wisdom by,
they not only were hindered from
recognizing the good,
but also left for humankind a reminder of
their folly,
so that their failures could never go
unnoticed.

9 Wisdom rescued from troubles those
who served her.
10 When a righteous man fled from his
brother's wrath,
she guided him on straight paths;
she showed him the kingdom of God,
and gave him knowledge of holy
things;
she prospered him in his labors,
and increased the fruit of his toil.
11 When his oppressors were covetous,
she stood by him and made him rich.
12 She protected him from his
enemies,
and kept him safe from those who lay in
wait for him;
in his arduous contest she gave him the
victory,
so that he might learn that godliness is
more powerful than anything else.

13 When a righteous man was sold,
wisdom[c] did not desert him,
but delivered him from sin.
She descended with him into the
dungeon,
14 and when he was in prison she did not
leave him,
until she brought him the scepter of a
kingdom
and authority over his masters.

[a] Gk *She*
[b] Or *on Pentapolis*
[c] Gk *she*

the body *weighs down the soul* was a common philosophical belief (see Plato, *Phaedr* 81C). **18:** *Saved by wisdom*, the attribution of a saving role to wisdom is one of the book's distinctive features; here as elsewhere activities usually reserved for God are assigned to wisdom.

10.1–21: Biblical history illustrates wisdom's saving and punishing power. The author presents seven righteous heroes as evidence of wisdom's providential ordering of Israelite history, each contrasted with some unrighteous villain. Personal names are avoided in favor of generic categories, but the descriptions make it clear who they are. This chapter provides a transition to the third part of the book. **1–2:** The interpretation of Adam is different in emphasis from the account in Gen 1.26–5.5. **2:** *Rule,* see 9.2n. **3:** Cain and Abel (Gen 4.1–16). **4:** *Because of him*, Cain's crime is interpreted by the author as the cause of the Flood. *The righteous man*, Noah (Gen 5.28–9.29). **5:** Abraham (Gen 11.26–25.10). *The nations*, referring to the Tower of Babel story (Gen 11.1–9). *Compassion for his child*, cf. Gen 22.1–19. **6–8:** Lot (Gen 19.1–29). **9–12:** Jacob (Gen 27–33). **10:** *The kingdom of God*,

Those who accused him she showed to be
false,
and she gave him everlasting honor.

15 A holy people and blameless race
wisdom delivered from a nation of
oppressors.
16 She entered the soul of a servant of the
Lord,
and withstood dread kings with wonders
and signs.
17 She gave to holy people the reward of
their labors;
she guided them along a marvelous
way,
and became a shelter to them by day,
and a starry flame through the night.
18 She brought them over the Red Sea,
and led them through deep waters;
19 but she drowned their enemies,
and cast them up from the depth of the
sea.
20 Therefore the righteous plundered the
ungodly;
they sang hymns, O Lord, to your holy
name,
and praised with one accord your
defending hand;
21 for wisdom opened the mouths of those
who were mute,
and made the tongues of infants speak
clearly.

11 Wisdom[a] prospered their works by the
hand of a holy prophet.
2 They journeyed through an uninhabited
wilderness,
and pitched their tents in untrodden places.
3 They withstood their enemies and fought
off their foes.
4 When they were thirsty, they called upon
you,
and water was given them out of flinty rock,
and from hard stone a remedy for their
thirst.
5 For through the very things by which
their enemies were punished,
they themselves received benefit in their
need.
6 Instead of the fountain of an ever-flowing
river,
stirred up and defiled with blood
7 in rebuke for the decree to kill the infants,
you gave them abundant water
unexpectedly,
8 showing by their thirst at that time
how you punished their enemies.
9 For when they were tried, though they
were being disciplined in mercy,
they learned how the ungodly were
tormented when judged in wrath.
10 For you tested them as a parent[b] does in
warning,

[a] Gk *She*
[b] Gk *a father*

see Gen 28.12,17,22. **12:** *Arduous contest* (Gen 32.22–32; Hos 12.3–4). **13–14:** Joseph (Gen 37–50). **15–21:** Moses (Ex 1–17).

11.1–19.22: The Book of History, a historical meditation contrasting God's dealings with the Israelites and the Egyptians. The presentation of Moses in the preceding passage leads without a break into an elaborate comparison consisting of seven historical contrasts, supplemented by a digression in 11.17–15.19. Although based on the events of Ex 7–14, the author's interpretation is apologetic in nature, underscoring the Egyptians' culpability while omitting reference to any of Israel's failures. Three principles seem have been used in constructing these historical contrasts: Israel would benefit from those things that were a punishment of the Egyptians (11.5); the Egyptians' sins would themselves act as a punishment of them (11.16); Israel would also suffer a mild form of the punishments, but this would be a means of understanding God's mercies (cf. 16.4).

11.1–14: First contrast: plague of the Nile versus water from the rock. The sin of the Egyptians was killing the Israelite infants in the Nile (11.7); the punishment is that the Nile becomes undrinkable. The Israelite counterpart is the water brought forth from the rock in the desert (Ex 17.1–7; Num 20.1–13). **1–3:** Without making specific references, the author establishes the historical setting for what follows, the Israelites' struggle in the *wilderness*. **4,6–8:** See Ex 7.14–25; 17.1–7; Num 20.2–13. **5:** The principle behind all the contrasts: God uses the same means for aiding Israel and punishing her *enemies* (see 11.13; 16.24; 18.8). **8–10:** The righteous must also experience God's punishment, though not as a matter of condemnation but of compassionate testing and discipline (see 3.5).

but you examined the ungodly[a] as a stern king does in condemnation.
[11] Whether absent or present, they were equally distressed,
[12] for a twofold grief possessed them,
and a groaning at the memory of what had occurred.
[13] For when they heard that through their own punishments
the righteous[b] had received benefit, they perceived it was the Lord's doing.
[14] For though they had mockingly rejected him who long before had been cast out and exposed,
at the end of the events they marveled at him,
when they felt thirst in a different way from the righteous.

[15] In return for their foolish and wicked thoughts,
which led them astray to worship irrational serpents and worthless animals,
you sent upon them a multitude of irrational creatures to punish them,
[16] so that they might learn that one is punished by the very things by which one sins.
[17] For your all-powerful hand,
which created the world out of formless matter,
did not lack the means to send upon them a multitude of bears, or bold lions,
[18] or newly-created unknown beasts full of rage,
or such as breathe out fiery breath,
or belch forth a thick pall of smoke,
or flash terrible sparks from their eyes;
[19] not only could the harm they did destroy people,[c]
but the mere sight of them could kill by fright.
[20] Even apart from these, people[b] could fall at a single breath
when pursued by justice
and scattered by the breath of your power.
But you have arranged all things by measure and number and weight.

[21] For it is always in your power to show great strength,
and who can withstand the might of your arm?
[22] Because the whole world before you is like a speck that tips the scales,
and like a drop of morning dew that falls on the ground.
[23] But you are merciful to all, for you can do all things,
and you overlook people's sins, so that they may repent.
[24] For you love all things that exist,
and detest none of the things that you have made,
for you would not have made anything if you had hated it.
[25] How would anything have endured if you had not willed it?
Or how would anything not called forth by you have been preserved?
[26] You spare all things, for they are yours,
O Lord, you who love the living.

[a] Gk *those*
[b] Gk *they*
[c] Gk *them*

11.15–16: Second contrast: the plague of small animals (see Ex 8.1–19; 9.1–7). Here the positive parallel with the Israelites is not developed; see further 16.1–4.

11.17–15.19: Two digressions that interrupt the interpretation of the Exodus, explaining how and why God judges the nations, contrasting the results of true worship (Jewish monotheism) and false worship (idolatry).

11.17–12.27: First digression. God's power and mercy, composed of two parallel sections and a conclusion: God punished the Egyptians by degrees so that they will have a chance to repent (11.17–12.2); God's punishment of the Canaanites was gradual, in spite of their heinous sins (12.3–18); God's punishment of Israel is very mild compared to that of their enemies (12.19–22).

11.17–12.2: God exercises power and mercy in judgment so as to free all creation from wickedness. **11.17:** *Formless matter*, a concept of Greek philosophy (see Plato, *Timaeus* 50D-E), here describing the chaos of Gen 1.2. **18–19:** Cf. Job 41.12–21. **21:** See 12.12n. **23:** *Merciful to all*, see 12.13,16,18; 15.1; Sir 16.11–14; 18.11–14; 2 Esd

12 For your immortal spirit is in all things.
[2] Therefore you correct little by little
those who trespass,
and you remind and warn them of the
things through which they sin,
so that they may be freed from wickedness
and put their trust in you, O Lord.

[3] Those who lived long ago in your holy
land
[4] you hated for their detestable practices,
their works of sorcery and unholy rites,
[5] their merciless slaughter[a] of children,
and their sacrificial feasting on human
flesh and blood.
These initiates from the midst of a
heathen cult,[b]
[6] these parents who murder helpless
lives,
you willed to destroy by the hands of our
ancestors,
[7] so that the land most precious of all to
you
might receive a worthy colony of the
servants[c] of God.
[8] But even these you spared, since they
were but mortals,
and sent wasps[d] as forerunners of your
army
to destroy them little by little,
[9] though you were not unable to give
the ungodly into the hands of the
righteous in battle,
or to destroy them at one blow by dread
wild animals or your stern word.
[10] But judging them little by little you gave
them an opportunity to repent,
though you were not unaware that their
origin[e] was evil
and their wickedness inborn,
and that their way of thinking would never
change.
[11] For they were an accursed race from the
beginning,
and it was not through fear of anyone that
you left them unpunished for their
sins.

[12] For who will say, "What have you done?"
or will resist your judgment?
Who will accuse you for the destruction of
nations that you made?
Or who will come before you to plead as an
advocate for the unrighteous?
[13] For neither is there any god besides you,
whose care is for all people,[f]
to whom you should prove that you have
not judged unjustly;
[14] nor can any king or monarch confront
you about those whom you have
punished.
[15] You are righteous and you rule all things
righteously,
deeming it alien to your power
to condemn anyone who does not deserve
to be punished.
[16] For your strength is the source of
righteousness,
and your sovereignty over all causes you to
spare all.
[17] For you show your strength when people
doubt the completeness of your
power,

[a] Gk *slaughterers*
[b] Meaning of Gk uncertain
[c] Or *children*
[d] Or *hornets*
[e] Or *nature*
[f] Or *all things*

8.45. **12.1:** *Your . . . spirit is in all things*, see 1.7; 15.11; cf. Gen 6.3; Ps 104.30; Jdt 16.14. **2:** *You remind . . . them*, see 16.6,11n.

12.3–11: Divine judgment of the ancient Canaanites, a common theme of Jewish apologetic (see *Jub.*10.27–34; 22.20–22), gives an illustration for the preceding argument; although hating their *wickedness*, God showed forbearance in destroying them. **5:** Cf. Lev 20.2–5. **8:** *Wasps*, see Ex 23.28; Deut 7.20; Josh 24.12. **10:** *Little by little*, see 12.2,8; Ex 23.28–30. *Their origin was evil* (see textual note *e*), cf. Sir 33.10–15. **11:** *An accursed race*, see the curse placed on Canaan in Gen 9.25–27.

12.12–27: Divine righteousness and forbearance. God gives opportunity for *repentance* (v. 19; see also 11.23; 12.10) but condemns the obstinate. **12–14:** The affirmation of divine providence, making use of legal terminology. **12:** For similar rhetorical questions, see 9.13; 11.21; Job 9.12,19; Ps 76.7; Isa 40.13–14. **13:** *Any god besides you*, see Deut 32.39; cf. Ex 20.3. **15–18:** The portrayal of God's universal *power* and *forbearance* shares themes used

and you rebuke any insolence among
those who know it.[a]
18 Although you are sovereign in strength,
you judge with mildness,
and with great forbearance you govern us;
for you have power to act whenever you
choose.

19 Through such works you have taught
your people
that the righteous must be kind,
and you have filled your children with
good hope,
because you give repentance for sins.
20 For if you punished with such great care
and indulgence[b]
the enemies of your servants[c] and those
deserving of death,
granting them time and opportunity to
give up their wickedness,
21 with what strictness you have judged
your children,
to whose ancestors you gave oaths and
covenants full of good promises!
22 So while chastening us you scourge our
enemies ten thousand times
more,
so that, when we judge, we may meditate
upon your goodness,
and when we are judged, we may expect
mercy.

23 Therefore those who lived
unrighteously, in a life of folly,
you tormented through their own
abominations.
24 For they went far astray on the paths of
error,
accepting as gods those animals that even
their enemies[d] despised;
they were deceived like foolish infants.
25 Therefore, as though to children who
cannot reason,
you sent your judgment to mock them.
26 But those who have not heeded the
warning of mild rebukes
will experience the deserved judgment of
God.
27 For when in their suffering they became
incensed
at those creatures that they had thought
to be gods, being punished by means
of them,
they saw and recognized as the true God
the one whom they had before
refused to know.
Therefore the utmost condemnation came
upon them.

13 For all people who were ignorant of
God were foolish by nature;
and they were unable from the good
things that are seen to know the one
who exists,
nor did they recognize the artisan while
paying heed to his works;
2 but they supposed that either fire or wind
or swift air,
or the circle of the stars, or turbulent
water,

[a] Meaning of Gk uncertain
[b] Other ancient authorities lack *and indulgence*; others read *and entreaty*
[c] Or *children*
[d] Gk *they*

to describe the ideal ruler in philosophical treatises on kingship (see 6.1–21n.). **17:** *You rebuke any insolence*, see Ps 119.21; Isa 13.11; Jer 48.28–33; Sir 35.22–26; Bar 4.34; 3 Macc 2.3,21. **19–22:** Divine judgment is a model of *goodness* and *mercy* for God's children. **20–21:** If repentance is available to the wicked, it is all the more available to the heirs of God's *promises*. **23–27:** Condemnation of animal worshipers (see 11.15–16; 13.14; 15.18–19); divine judgment forces them to recognize *the true God*. On their refusal *to know* God, see 2.13n. **25:** *To mock them*, cf. Ex 10.2; Isa 66.4.

13.1–15.19: Second digression. False worship of nature, idols, and animals is castigated at length. The material is divided into two sections: a short section on worship of the natural world (13.1–9), and a much longer and detailed section on idol worship (13.10–15.19).

13.1–9: Worship of the natural world. The natural philosophers are to be blamed, because they sought the Creator but were unable to find him in spite of his works. **1:** *The one who exists* is used of the Supreme Being by Platonists, whereas it is used by Jews (e.g., LXX Ex 3.14) to refer to the only God. Platonists considered the Supreme Being to be separate from the material creator. For Jews the Supreme Being is also the creator or *artisan*.

or the luminaries of heaven were the gods
that rule the world.
3 If through delight in the beauty of these
things people assumed them to be
gods,
let them know how much better than
these is their Lord,
for the author of beauty created them.
4 And if people[a] were amazed at their
power and working,
let them perceive from them
how much more powerful is the one who
formed them.
5 For from the greatness and beauty of
created things
comes a corresponding perception of their
Creator.
6 Yet these people are little to be blamed,
for perhaps they go astray
while seeking God and desiring to find
him.
7 For while they live among his works, they
keep searching,
and they trust in what they see, because
the things that are seen are beautiful.
8 Yet again, not even they are to be
excused;
9 for if they had the power to know so
much
that they could investigate the world,
how did they fail to find sooner the Lord of
these things?

10 But miserable, with their hopes set on
dead things, are those
who give the name "gods" to the works of
human hands,
gold and silver fashioned with skill,
and likenesses of animals,
or a useless stone, the work of an ancient
hand.
11 A skilled woodcutter may saw down a
tree easy to handle
and skillfully strip off all its bark,
and then with pleasing workmanship
make a useful vessel that serves life's needs,
12 and burn the cast-off pieces of his work
to prepare his food, and eat his fill.
13 But a cast-off piece from among them,
useful for nothing,
a stick crooked and full of knots,
he takes and carves with care in his leisure,
and shapes it with skill gained in idleness;[b]
he forms it in the likeness of a human
being,

[a] Gk *they*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *with intelligent skill*

In Hellenistic literature, *ignorance* in this sort of context often implied impiety. **2:** The elements worshiped by those who do not know God. Associated with them are several philosophical terms; for example, the phrase *gods that rule the world* seems to refer to astral piety, the worship of the heavenly bodies (cf. 2 Kings 17.16; 23.4; Job 31.26–28; Cicero, *The Nature of the Gods* 2.15). **4:** Another technical philosophical expression, known from Aristotle (*Metaphysics*, 9.6.1–2 1048a), is *power and working*. **5:** The type of argumentation used here is Hellenistic, not biblical. It includes the common Hellenistic form of reasoning from analogy, and it argues that the beauty of the creation requires some overseer and source of beauty behind it. **6:** *Seeking God*, cf. Philo, *Abraham* 124–30; Acts 17.26–27. **9:** In Hellenistic speculation, the word translated *world* (Gk "aion") could mean both "world" and "age," but in Hellenistic speculation it was used of a mystical concept, the personification of a kind of world-soul, as in Plato's *Timaeus* 37D. The Stoics believed in an analogous cosmic "reason" or mind that governed all things.

13.10–15.19: Polemic against idolatry. The Jews came to regard idolatry as one of the most disgusting traits of paganism. Here it is stated that idolatry is "the beginning and cause and end of every evil" (14.27), leading to child murder, secret rites, pollution of marriages, adultery, bloodshed, murder, theft, deceit, sexual perversion, and debauchery. Jer 10.1–16 and Isa 44.9–20 engage in a similar polemic, describing at length the way in which a piece of wood could partly be burned for warmth and preparing food, and partly used to make a god for worship. This was a simplistic criticism, of course, since no pagans regarded themselves as worshiping a piece of wood, stone, or metal. The criticism is aimed at a Jewish audience, however, and the polemic may have been effective in this context. Yet similar comments about idols can be found in some Greco-Roman writers (Horace, *Satires* 1.8.1–7; Sophocles, according to a quotation in Clement of Alexandria, *Strom*. 5.14 113.1–2).

13.10–16: A sarcastic description of how idol "gods" are created from discarded wood (see 15.7–19). **13:** *In the*

[14] or makes it like some worthless animal,
giving it a coat of red paint and coloring its surface red
and covering every blemish in it with paint;
[15] then he makes a suitable niche for it,
and sets it in the wall, and fastens it there with iron.
[16] He takes thought for it, so that it may not fall,
because he knows that it cannot help itself,
for it is only an image and has need of help.
[17] When he prays about possessions and his marriage and children,
he is not ashamed to address a lifeless thing.
[18] For health he appeals to a thing that is weak;
for life he prays to a thing that is dead;
for aid he entreats a thing that is utterly inexperienced;
for a prosperous journey, a thing that cannot take a step;
[19] for money-making and work and success with his hands
he asks strength of a thing whose hands have no strength.

14 Again, one preparing to sail and about to voyage over raging waves
calls upon a piece of wood more fragile than the ship that carries him.
[2] For it was desire for gain that planned that vessel,
and wisdom was the artisan who built it;
[3] but it is your providence, O Father, that steers its course,
because you have given it a path in the sea,
and a safe way through the waves,
[4] showing that you can save from every danger,
so that even a person who lacks skill may put to sea.
[5] It is your will that works of your wisdom should not be without effect;
therefore people trust their lives even to the smallest piece of wood,
and passing through the billows on a raft they come safely to land.
[6] For even in the beginning, when arrogant giants were perishing,
the hope of the world took refuge on a raft,
and guided by your hand left to the world the seed of a new generation.
[7] For blessed is the wood by which righteousness comes.

[8] But the idol made with hands is accursed, and so is the one who made it—
he for having made it, and the perishable thing because it was named a god.
[9] For equally hateful to God are the ungodly and their ungodliness;
[10] for what was done will be punished together with the one who did it.
[11] Therefore there will be a visitation also upon the heathen idols,
because, though part of what God created, they became an abomination,
snares for human souls
and a trap for the feet of the foolish.

[12] For the idea of making idols was the beginning of fornication,
and the invention of them was the corruption of life;

likeness of a human being, cf. 14.19; Deut 4.16.

13.17–14.2: The ironically ineffective prayer of the idolater contrasts with that of Solomon in 9.1–18.

14.3–11: Safety and salvation come from God, not idols. **3:** *Providence*, see 17.2,4; 4 Macc 9.24. *O Father*, cf. Isa 63.16; Tob 13.4; Sir 23.1; 3 Macc 6.3. **6–7:** *Arrogant giants*, see Gen 6.1–4; cf. Sir 16.7; Bar 3.26–28; 3 Macc 2.4. A *raft*, Noah's ark (Gen 6.5–9.29). **8–11:** The author's premise is that one takes on the status of what one worships; in this case both idols and idolaters are *accursed* by God. **11:** *Visitation*, the occasion of God's judgment; see 3.7; Sir 16.18. *Abomination*, a common term for idolatry (see 12.23; 2 Chr 34.33; Ezra 9.1,11,14; Jer 2.7–8; Ezek 8.6–17; 18.12–13; Mal 2.11; 1 Macc 1.43–49).

14.12–31: Origins and repercussions of idolatry. The idea that the gods were originally human beings who have been elevated to divine status goes back to the Greek writer Euhemerus (ca. 300 BCE). He told a story about islands with a utopian society, in which the local gods (with Greek names) were originally kings who were promoted to divine status and worshiped by the people after their death (Diodorus Siculus 6.1). Although

13 for they did not exist from the beginning,
nor will they last forever.
14 For through human vanity they entered the world,
and therefore their speedy end has been planned.

15 For a father, consumed with grief at an untimely bereavement,
made an image of his child, who had been suddenly taken from him;
he now honored as a god what was once a dead human being,
and handed on to his dependents secret rites and initiations.
16 Then the ungodly custom, grown strong with time, was kept as a law,
and at the command of monarchs carved images were worshiped.
17 When people could not honor monarchs[a] in their presence, since they lived at a distance,
they imagined their appearance far away,
and made a visible image of the king whom they honored,
so that by their zeal they might flatter the absent one as though present.

18 Then the ambition of the artisan impelled
even those who did not know the king to intensify their worship.
19 For he, perhaps wishing to please his ruler,
skillfully forced the likeness to take more beautiful form,
20 and the multitude, attracted by the charm of his work,
now regarded as an object of worship the one whom shortly before they had honored as a human being.
21 And this became a hidden trap for humankind,
because people, in bondage to misfortune or to royal authority,
bestowed on objects of stone or wood the name that ought not to be shared.

22 Then it was not enough for them to err about the knowledge of God,
but though living in great strife due to ignorance,
they call such great evils peace.
23 For whether they kill children in their initiations, or celebrate secret mysteries,
or hold frenzied revels with strange customs,
24 they no longer keep either their lives or their marriages pure,
but they either treacherously kill one another, or grieve one another by adultery,
25 and all is a raging riot of blood and murder, theft and deceit, corruption, faithlessness, tumult, perjury,
26 confusion over what is good, forgetfulness of favors,
defiling of souls, sexual perversion,
disorder in marriages, adultery, and debauchery.
27 For the worship of idols not to be named
is the beginning and cause and end of every evil.
28 For their worshipers[b] either rave in exultation,
or prophesy lies, or live unrighteously, or readily commit perjury;
29 for because they trust in lifeless idols
they swear wicked oaths and expect to suffer no harm.
30 But just penalties will overtake them on two counts:
because they thought wrongly about God in devoting themselves to idols,

[a] Gk *them*
[b] Gk *they*

the idea was not widespread among Greeks, the Jews latched on to it as an explanation for pagan worship, and it appears in several Jewish writings (e.g., Aristeas 135; Artapanus [Eusebius, *Praep. Ev*. 9.18,23,27; Clement of Alexandria, *Strom*. 1.23.154]; *Sib. Or.* 3.110–58). **12:** *Fornication*, the prophets sometimes spoke of idolatry metaphorically as sexual immorality (Jer 3.1–3; Ezek 16.28–41; Hos 2.2–15). **22–31.** The repercussions of idolatry include *strife, murder, adultery,* and *perjury*. **23:** Cf. 11.7; 12.4–5. **25:** Similar crimes are enumerated in Jer 7.9; Hos 4.2. **27:** Cf. 14.12. **29:** *They swear wicked oaths*, for the seriousness with which false oaths were regarded, see Hos 10.4; Sir 23.11; 41.19; 1 Macc 7.18; 1 Esd 1.48.

and because in deceit they swore
unrighteously through contempt for
holiness.
31 For it is not the power of the things by
which people swear,[a]
but the just penalty for those who sin,
that always pursues the transgression of
the unrighteous.

15 But you, our God, are kind and true,
patient, and ruling all things[b] in mercy.
2 For even if we sin we are yours, knowing
your power;
but we will not sin, because we know that
you acknowledge us as yours.
3 For to know you is complete
righteousness,
and to know your power is the root of
immortality.
4 For neither has the evil intent of human
art misled us,
nor the fruitless toil of painters,
a figure stained with varied colors,
5 whose appearance arouses yearning in
fools,
so that they desire[c] the lifeless form of a
dead image.
6 Lovers of evil things and fit for such
objects of hope[d]
are those who either make or desire or
worship them.

7 A potter kneads the soft earth
and laboriously molds each vessel for our
service,
fashioning out of the same clay
both the vessels that serve clean uses
and those for contrary uses, making all
alike;
but which shall be the use of each of them
the worker in clay decides.
8 With misspent toil, these workers form a
futile god from the same clay—
these mortals who were made of earth a
short time before
and after a little while go to the earth from
which all mortals are taken,
when the time comes to return the souls
that were borrowed.
9 But the workers are not concerned that
mortals are destined to die
or that their life is brief,
but they compete with workers in gold and
silver,
and imitate workers in copper;
and they count it a glorious thing to mold
counterfeit gods.
10 Their heart is ashes, their hope is
cheaper than dirt,
and their lives are of less worth than
clay,
11 because they failed to know the one who
formed them
and inspired them with active souls
and breathed a living spirit into them.
12 But they considered our existence an idle
game,
and life a festival held for profit,
for they say one must get money however
one can, even by base means.
13 For these persons, more than all others,
know that they sin
when they make from earthy matter fragile
vessels and carved images.

14 But most foolish, and more miserable
than an infant,
are all the enemies who oppressed your
people.
15 For they thought that all their heathen
idols were gods,

[a] Or *of the oaths people swear*
[b] Or *ruling the universe*
[c] Gk *and he desires*
[d] Gk *such hopes*

15.1–6: The benefits of true worship include *righteousness* and *immortality*. **1–3:** An apostrophe (direct address) to the deity. Allusion to Ex 34.6–9 makes it clear that the author associates authentic worship with the Sinai covenant. **5–6:** *Desire*, cf. 4.12; 6.11,13,17,20; 8.2; 13.6; 15.19.

15.7–19: The fabrication of idols (cf. 13.10–19). The image of clay and the potter occurs frequently (Isa 41.25; 45.9; 64.8; Jer 18.1–10), but it is usually about God as the potter and humans as clay. The image is turned here into the choice of the potter to turn the clay into base objects (e.g., a sewage pipe) or divine images, thus making the same point as at 13.11–19. **8:** That *souls* are *borrowed* was a philosophical conception (cf. 15.16). **12:** The image of life as a *game* or *festival* was common in ancient literature, e.g. Isa 22.12–13; Mt 11.16–17; Epictetus,

though these have neither the use of their eyes to see with,
nor nostrils with which to draw breath,
nor ears with which to hear,
nor fingers to feel with,
and their feet are of no use for walking.
16 For a human being made them,
and one whose spirit is borrowed formed them;
for none can form gods that are like themselves.
17 People are mortal, and what they make with lawless hands is dead;
for they are better than the objects they worship,
since[a] they have life, but the idols[b] never had.

18 Moreover, they worship even the most hateful animals,
which are worse than all others when judged by their lack of intelligence;
19 and even as animals they are not so beautiful in appearance that one would desire them,
but they have escaped both the praise of God and his blessing.

16 Therefore those people[c] were deservedly punished through such creatures,
and were tormented by a multitude of animals.
2 Instead of this punishment you showed kindness to your people,
and you prepared quails to eat,
a delicacy to satisfy the desire of appetite;
3 in order that those people, when they desired food,
might lose the least remnant of appetite[d]
because of the odious creatures sent to them,
while your people,[c] after suffering want a short time,
might partake of delicacies.
4 For it was necessary that upon those oppressors inescapable want should come,
while to these others it was merely shown how their enemies were being tormented.

5 For when the terrible rage of wild animals came upon your people[e]
and they were being destroyed by the bites of writhing serpents,
your wrath did not continue to the end;
6 they were troubled for a little while as a warning,
and received a symbol of deliverance to remind them of your law's command.

7 For the one who turned toward it was saved, not by the thing that was beheld,
but by you, the Savior of all.
8 And by this also you convinced our enemies
that it is you who deliver from every evil.
9 For they were killed by the bites of locusts and flies,

[a] Other ancient authorities read *of which*
[b] Gk *but they*
[c] Gk *they*
[d] Gk *loathed the necessary appetite*
[e] Gk *them*

Discourses 2.14.23–29. **14:** *Most foolish* are the Egyptians who *oppressed* the Israelites. **18–19:** Egyptian animal worship was denounced by Romans as well as Jews, e.g., Juvenal, *Satire* 15.1–11; cf. Philo, *Decalogue* 76–80. **19:** *They have escaped . . . blessing*, referring perhaps to Gen 3.14–15 (cf. Wis 11.15; 1.5,10).

16.1–14: The contrasts, resumed (see 11.1–16). Each of the "elements" of classical antiquity (water, earth, air, and fire) is associated with one of the plagues in this section of the book; see 16.1–4; 16.5–14; 16.15–29; 17.1–18.4.

16.1–4: The second contrast, continued (see 11.15–16). The plague of frogs (cf. Ex 7.25–8.11) that came up from the Nile as punishment for the Egyptian attempt to kill the Israelite baby boys in the Nile is contrasted with the gift of God to the Israelites in the form of the quails from the sea to provide food in the wilderness (Ex 16.12–13; Num 11.31–34; Wis ignores the context in Num in which the demand for meat is actually criticized). This section also represents the element of water, with references to the river and the sea.

16.5–14: The third contrast: the plague of insects and the bronze serpent (Ex 8.20–32; 10.1–20; Num 21.4–9). Whereas the Egyptians were plagued by locusts and flies, the Israelites were saved from a plague of poisonous

and no healing was found for them,
because they deserved to be punished by such things.
10 But your children were not conquered even by the fangs of venomous serpents,
for your mercy came to their help and healed them.
11 To remind them of your oracles they were bitten,
and then were quickly delivered,
so that they would not fall into deep forgetfulness
and become unresponsive[a] to your kindness.
12 For neither herb nor poultice cured them,
but it was your word, O Lord, that heals all people.
13 For you have power over life and death;
you lead mortals down to the gates of Hades and back again.
14 A person in wickedness kills another,
but cannot bring back the departed spirit,
or set free the imprisoned soul.

15 To escape from your hand is impossible;
16 for the ungodly, refusing to know you,
were flogged by the strength of your arm,
pursued by unusual rains and hail and relentless storms,
and utterly consumed by fire.
17 For—most incredible of all—in water, which quenches all things,
the fire had still greater effect,
for the universe defends the righteous.
18 At one time the flame was restrained,
so that it might not consume the creatures sent against the ungodly,
but that seeing this they might know
that they were being pursued by the judgment of God;
19 and at another time even in the midst of water it burned more intensely than fire,
to destroy the crops of the unrighteous land.
20 Instead of these things you gave your people food of angels,
and without their toil you supplied them from heaven with bread ready to eat,
providing every pleasure and suited to every taste.
21 For your sustenance manifested your sweetness toward your children;
and the bread, ministering[b] to the desire of the one who took it,
was changed to suit everyone's liking.
22 Snow and ice withstood fire without melting,
so that they might know that the crops of their enemies
were being destroyed by the fire that blazed in the hail
and flashed in the showers of rain;
23 whereas the fire,[c] in order that the righteous might be fed,
even forgot its native power.

24 For creation, serving you who made it,
exerts itself to punish the unrighteous,
and in kindness relaxes on behalf of those who trust in you.
25 Therefore at that time also, changed into all forms,
it served your all-nourishing bounty,
according to the desire of those who had need,[d]
26 so that your children, whom you loved, O Lord, might learn

[a] Meaning of Gk uncertain
[b] Gk *and it, ministering*
[c] Gk *this*
[d] Or *who made supplication*

serpents through God's "word." **9:** Ex 8.16–32 and 10.12–20 do not speak of deaths from the lice/gnats/flies and locusts, but Josephus mentions them in connection with this plague (*Ant.* 2.14.3).

16.15–29: The fourth contrast: the plague of storms (cf. Ex 9.13–35). Because the Egyptians sinned by refusing to recognize God (16.16), their crops were destroyed by fire and hail. The Israelite counterpart of this plague is the rain of manna from heaven (Ex 16.11–35; Num. 11.6–9). **17:** *Water . . . fire*, referring to the hail and lightning of Ex 9.23–24. **18:** *So that it might not consume*, cf. 19.21. *The creatures*, the animals and insects of 16.1–14; apparently the author assumes that the plagues occurred at one time. **20:** *Food of angels*, cf. Ps 78.24–25. **21:** *Changed to suit everyone's liking*, a tradition also reflected in *Tosefta to Yoma* 75a and *Mekilta* on Ex 16.23. **24:** Since it was fashioned in accordance with wisdom, *creation* inherently assists providence, functioning as an instrument of

that it is not the production of crops that feeds humankind
but that your word sustains those who trust in you.
27 For what was not destroyed by fire
was melted when simply warmed by a fleeting ray of the sun,
28 to make it known that one must rise before the sun to give you thanks,
and must pray to you at the dawning of the light;
29 for the hope of an ungrateful person will melt like wintry frost,
and flow away like waste water.

17 Great are your judgments and hard to describe;
therefore uninstructed souls have gone astray.
2 For when lawless people supposed that they held the holy nation in their power,
they themselves lay as captives of darkness and prisoners of long night,
shut in under their roofs, exiles from eternal providence.
3 For thinking that in their secret sins they were unobserved
behind a dark curtain of forgetfulness,
they were scattered, terribly[a] alarmed,
and appalled by specters.
4 For not even the inner chamber that held them protected them from fear,
but terrifying sounds rang out around them,
and dismal phantoms with gloomy faces appeared.
5 And no power of fire was able to give light,
nor did the brilliant flames of the stars
avail to illumine that hateful night.
6 Nothing was shining through to them
except a dreadful, self-kindled fire,
and in terror they deemed the things that they saw
to be worse than that unseen appearance.
7 The delusions of their magic art lay humbled,
and their boasted wisdom was scornfully rebuked.
8 For those who promised to drive off the fears and disorders of a sick soul
were sick themselves with ridiculous fear.
9 For even if nothing disturbing frightened them,
yet, scared by the passing of wild animals and the hissing of snakes
10 they perished in trembling fear,
refusing to look even at the air, though it nowhere could be avoided.
11 For wickedness is a cowardly thing,
condemned by its own testimony;[b]
distressed by conscience, it has always exaggerated[c] the difficulties.
12 For fear is nothing but a giving up of the helps that come from reason;
13 and hope, defeated by this inward weakness,
prefers ignorance of what causes the torment.
14 But throughout the night, which was really powerless
and which came upon them from the recesses of powerless Hades,

[a] Other ancient authorities read *unobserved, they were darkened behind a dark curtain of forgetfulness, terribly*
[b] Meaning of Gk uncertain
[c] Other ancient authorities read *anticipated*

both condemnation and blessing; see 8.4–6; 19.18–21 (cf. Josh 10.11–14; Judg 5.20–21). **28:** *Rise before the sun*, cf. Ps 119.147; Sir 39.5. **29:** *Hope . . . will melt*, cf. 5.14; Job 14.19.

17.1–18.4: The fifth contrast: the plague of darkness and the pillar of fire (Ex. 10.21–29; 13.21–22; 14.24–15). Because the Egyptians sinned by taking the Israelites captive, they suffer by being taken captive by the darkness, which contrasts with the pillar of fire that goes with the Israelites day and night (18.3). This plague represents the element of air, since the darkness was caused by a strange atmosphere. **17.2–21:** The description of the Egyptians' *terror* is reminiscent of the Greco-Roman genre of the "descent into Hades," of which Book 6 of Virgil's *Aeneid* was a popular example. **3:** *A dark curtain of forgetfulness*, those who thought their sins were hidden are themselves concealed in darkness (cf. 16.11). **7:** See Ex 7.11,22; 8.7,18; 9.11. **11:** *Conscience*, a common topic in moral literature (e.g., *T. Reuben* 4.3; Philo, *The Worse Attacks the Better* 22–26). **14:** *Powerless Hades*, see 1.14; cf. Ps 88.10–12; Eccl 9.10; Isa 14.9–11. *Sleep*, the divine penalty includes nightmares (cf. 18.17–19; Job 7.14; Dan 4.5; Sir

they all slept the same sleep,
15 and now were driven by monstrous specters,
and now were paralyzed by their souls' surrender;
for sudden and unexpected fear overwhelmed them.
16 And whoever was there fell down,
and thus was kept shut up in a prison not made of iron;
17 for whether they were farmers or shepherds
or workers who toiled in the wilderness,
they were seized, and endured the inescapable fate;
for with one chain of darkness they all were bound.
18 Whether there came a whistling wind,
or a melodious sound of birds in wide-spreading branches,
or the rhythm of violently rushing water,
19 or the harsh crash of rocks hurled down,
or the unseen running of leaping animals,
or the sound of the most savage roaring beasts,
or an echo thrown back from a hollow of the mountains,
it paralyzed them with terror.
20 For the whole world was illumined with brilliant light,
and went about its work unhindered,
21 while over those people alone heavy night was spread,
an image of the darkness that was destined to receive them;
but still heavier than darkness were they to themselves.

18 But for your holy ones there was very great light.
Their enemies[a] heard their voices but did not see their forms,
and counted them happy for not having suffered,
2 and were thankful that your holy ones,[b] though previously wronged, were doing them no injury;
and they begged their pardon for having been at variance with them.[b]
3 Therefore you provided a flaming pillar of fire
as a guide for your people's[c] unknown journey,
and a harmless sun for their glorious wandering.
4 For their enemies[d] deserved to be deprived of light and imprisoned in darkness,
those who had kept your children imprisoned,
through whom the imperishable light of the law was to be given to the world.

5 When they had resolved to kill the infants of your holy ones,
and one child had been abandoned and rescued,
you in punishment took away a multitude of their children;
and you destroyed them all together by a mighty flood.
6 That night was made known beforehand to our ancestors,
so that they might rejoice in sure knowledge of the oaths in which they trusted.
7 The deliverance of the righteous and the destruction of their enemies
were expected by your people.
8 For by the same means by which you punished our enemies
you called us to yourself and glorified us.
9 For in secret the holy children of good people offered sacrifices,

[a] Gk *They*
[b] Meaning of Gk uncertain
[c] Gk *their*
[d] Gk *those persons*

40.5–7). **18–19:** They experience *terror* even at ordinary sounds (cf. 17.4; Lev 26.36–37; Job 15.20–21). **18.2:** This verse, the meaning of which is unclear, may be referring to Ex 12.31–33. **3:** See Ex 13.21–22; 14.24. **4:** *The law was to be given to the world*, cf. Isa 2.2–3; 42.6; 49.6; 2 Esd 7.20–24; 14.20–22.

18.5–25: The sixth contrast: the plague of the Egyptian firstborn and Israel's rescue (cf. Ex 11.1–12.32). The Egyptians sinned by killing the infants in the Nile. Their punishment is to have their firstborn die by the hand of the angel of death **5:** *One child*, Moses (Ex 1.15–2.10). **6–9:** A poetic description of the first Passover (Ex 12.1–28).

and with one accord agreed to the divine law,
so that the saints would share alike the same things,
both blessings and dangers;
and already they were singing the praises of the ancestors.[a]
10 But the discordant cry of their enemies echoed back,
and their piteous lament for their children was spread abroad.
11 The slave was punished with the same penalty as the master,
and the commoner suffered the same loss as the king;
12 and they all together, by the one form[b] of death,
had corpses too many to count.
For the living were not sufficient even to bury them,
since in one instant their most valued children had been destroyed.
13 For though they had disbelieved everything because of their magic arts,
yet, when their firstborn were destroyed, they acknowledged your people to be God's child.
14 For while gentle silence enveloped all things,
and night in its swift course was now half gone,
15 your all-powerful word leaped from heaven, from the royal throne,
into the midst of the land that was doomed,
a stern warrior
16 carrying the sharp sword of your authentic command,
and stood and filled all things with death,
and touched heaven while standing on the earth.
17 Then at once apparitions in dreadful dreams greatly troubled them,
and unexpected fears assailed them;
18 and one here and another there, hurled down half dead,
made known why they were dying;
19 for the dreams that disturbed them forewarned them of this,
so that they might not perish without knowing why they suffered.

20 The experience of death touched also the righteous,
and a plague came upon the multitude in the desert,
but the wrath did not long continue.
21 For a blameless man was quick to act as their champion;
he brought forward the shield of his ministry,
prayer and propitiation by incense;
he withstood the anger and put an end to the disaster,
showing that he was your servant.
22 He conquered the wrath[c] not by strength of body,
not by force of arms,
but by his word he subdued the avenger,
appealing to the oaths and covenants given to our ancestors.
23 For when the dead had already fallen on one another in heaps,
he intervened and held back the wrath,
and cut off its way to the living.
24 For on his long robe the whole world was depicted,
and the glories of the ancestors were engraved on the four rows of stones,
and your majesty was on the diadem upon his head.
25 To these the destroyer yielded, these he[d] feared;
for merely to test the wrath was enough.

[a] Other ancient authorities read *dangers, the ancestors already leading the songs of praise*
[b] Gk *name*
[c] Cn: Gk *multitude*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *they*

9: *Already they were singing,* cf. 2 Chr 30.21. **13:** *God's child*, cf. 5.5; Ex 4.22–23; Jer 31.9; Hos 11.1. **15:** *A stern warrior*, cf. 5.17–20. **17–19:** Cf. 17.14n. **20–25:** *A blameless man*, Aaron makes atonement for the Israelites' rebellion against God by burning *incense*, ending *a plague* that killed 14,700 people (Num 16.41–50). **22:** *The avenger*, cf. Ps 99.8; 1 Thess 4.6. **24:** See Ex 28.15–38. On the symbolism of the high priest's vestments, see Josephus, *Ant.* 3.7.7; Philo, *Moses* 2.117–26 **25:** *The destroyer*, cf. 1 Cor 10:10.

19 But the ungodly were assailed to the end by pitiless anger,
for God[a] knew in advance even their future actions:
[2] how, though they themselves had permitted[b] your people to depart
and hastily sent them out,
they would change their minds and pursue them.
[3] For while they were still engaged in mourning,
and were lamenting at the graves of their dead,
they reached another foolish decision,
and pursued as fugitives those whom they had begged and compelled to leave.
[4] For the fate they deserved drew them on to this end,
and made them forget what had happened,
in order that they might fill up the punishment that their torments still lacked,
[5] and that your people might experience[c] an incredible journey,
but they themselves might meet a strange death.

[6] For the whole creation in its nature was fashioned anew,
complying with your commands,
so that your children[d] might be kept unharmed.
[7] The cloud was seen overshadowing the camp,
and dry land emerging where water had stood before,
an unhindered way out of the Red Sea,
and a grassy plain out of the raging waves,
[8] where those protected by your hand passed through as one nation,
after gazing on marvelous wonders.
[9] For they ranged like horses,
and leaped like lambs,
praising you, O Lord, who delivered them.
[10] For they still recalled the events of their sojourn,
how instead of producing animals the earth brought forth gnats,
and instead of fish the river spewed out vast numbers of frogs.
[11] Afterward they saw also a new kind[e] of birds,
when desire led them to ask for luxurious food;
[12] for, to give them relief, quails came up from the sea.

[13] The punishments did not come upon the sinners
without prior signs in the violence of thunder,
for they justly suffered because of their wicked acts;
for they practiced a more bitter hatred of strangers.
[14] Others had refused to receive strangers when they came to them,
but these made slaves of guests who were their benefactors.
[15] And not only so—but, while punishment of some sort will come upon the former
for having received strangers with hostility,
[16] the latter, having first received them with festal celebrations,
afterward afflicted with terrible sufferings
those who had already shared the same rights.
[17] They were stricken also with loss of sight—
just as were those at the door of the righteous man—
when, surrounded by yawning darkness,
all of them tried to find the way through their own doors.

[a] Gk *he*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *had changed their minds to permit*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *accomplish*
[d] Or *servants*
[e] Or *production*

19.1–21: The seventh contrast: death and salvation at the Red Sea (Ex 14.1–31). **1:** *The ungodly,* the Egyptians. **4:** *Made them forget,* cf. 4.1; 17.3. *Fill up the punishment*, cf. Dan 8.23; 2 Macc 6.14. **6:** See 19.18–21. **7:** *Cloud*, Ex 13.21–22. **10:** Ex 8.1–19. **11–12:** See 16.1–4; cf. Num 11.31–32. **14:** *Others*, those of Sodom (Gen 19.1–11). *These*, the Egyptians. *Guests*, see Gen 45.16–20. *Benefactors*, referring to Joseph's service to Egypt. **17:** *Righteous man,* Lot;

18 For the elements changed[a] places with one another,
as on a harp the notes vary the nature of the rhythm,
while each note remains the same.[b]
This may be clearly inferred from the sight of what took place.
19 For land animals were transformed into water creatures,
and creatures that swim moved over to the land.
20 Fire even in water retained its normal power,
and water forgot its fire-quenching nature.
21 Flames, on the contrary, failed to consume
the flesh of perishable creatures that walked among them,
nor did they melt[c] the crystalline, quick-melting kind of heavenly food.

22 For in everything, O Lord, you have exalted and glorified your people,
and you have not neglected to help them at all times and in all places.

[a] Gk *changing*
[b] Meaning of Gk uncertain
[c] Cn: Gk *nor could be melted*

cf. Gen 19.11; Ex 14.20. **18–21:** In the plagues and at the Red Sea nature *changed* its customary actions so as to bring about God's purpose (16.24; 19.6). That the material elements could be transformed in various ways was an assumption of ancient physics, e.g., Cicero, *The Nature of the Gods* 3.39.92.

19.22: A final doxology or praise of God concludes the book.

This page intentionally left blank

ECCLESIASTICUS, OR THE WISDOM OF JESUS, SON OF SIRACH

NAME

In most Greek manuscripts the title given to this book is "The Wisdom of Jesus the Son of Sirach." Latin manuscripts refer to it as "The Book of Jesus the Son of Sirach." In the Latin tradition it is also known as "Ecclesiasticus," which means "church book" and was probably intended as a statement about the book's acceptance in the Christian canon of scripture. If the Hebrew original had a title, it was something like "The Wisdom of Yeshua the Son of Sira." Today some scholars refer to the book as "Sirach" and the original author as Ben Sira. Others use the title "Sirach" for the Greek version, "Ecclesiasticus" for the Latin text, and "Ben Sira" for the Hebrew original and/or its author.

CANONICAL STATUS

The book of Sirach was never part of the Hebrew canon of scripture, even though it was composed in Hebrew and was often quoted in Hebrew by later Jewish writers. It may have been considered too recent in its composition (early second century BCE) in comparison with the other canonical books. The Greek translation made by Ben Sira's grandson, however, was transmitted as part of the larger collection of Jewish writings in Greek known as the Septuagint (LXX). The Christian churches generally followed the wider Greek canon of scripture, and for fifteen centuries most Christians regarded Sirach as part of their Old Testament. When Martin Luther and other early Reformers sought to limit the Protestant Old Testament canon to the Jewish Hebrew canon, Sirach and other "deuterocanonical" books were relegated to the "Apocrypha" (see p. 1361). Roman Catholics and Orthodox Christians regard Sirach as canonical and place it among the other Old Testament books. Some Protestant Bibles today have revived the practice of the early Reformers and place it as part of the separate section between the Old and the New Testaments that is known as the Apocrypha.

AUTHOR AND HISTORICAL CONTEXT

Near the end of the Greek version of the book, the original author identifies himself as "Jesus son of Eleazar son of Sirach" (50.27). His Hebrew name would have been "Yeshua ben Eleazar ben Sira." He conducted a school ("a house of instruction," 51.23) for prospective scribes and sages, perhaps in association with the Jerusalem Temple complex. His book is a summary or compendium of his teachings, written down in Hebrew ca. 180 BCE. His grandson produced the Greek version in Egypt ca. 117 BCE.

If Ben Sira wrote his book ca. 180 BCE, he would have lived through the transition in control of Judea from the Ptolemies in Egypt to the Seleucids in Syria, and the political turmoil associated with that transition, which took place around 200 BCE. He may have died before the conflicts about the Jewish high priesthood beginning ca. 175 BCE, when the Seleucid ruler Antiochus IV Epiphanes and his Jewish collaborators attempted to eradicate the distinctive features of Jewish life (the Jerusalem Temple and the Torah) and sparked the Maccabean revolt (see Daniel and 1 and 2 Maccabees). Ben Sira was a traditional and conservative person by nature, and a strong supporter of the Temple and the Jewish high priesthood. Nevertheless, it is difficult to find clear references in his book to contemporary historical events (but perhaps 35.21–26 and 36.1–22 constitute exceptions) and figures (except for Simon the high priest in 50.1–24). For Ben Sira's autobiographical notices scattered throughout the book, see 24.30–34; 33.16–19; 34.9–13; 39.12–13; 50.27; and 51.13–30.

Ben Sira was a man of his place and time, that is, Palestine in the early second century BCE. His opinions on many social issues, especially on women and slaves, may strike modern readers as benighted, even outrageous. Ben Sira and his contemporaries perceived themselves as embedded in various groups (family, clan, village, city, etc.). They judged their own importance by what others thought of them, in what anthropologists call an honor-shame society. His social world was hierarchical, with everyone having a relatively fixed place and little opportunity for upward social mobility. People then considered wives to be naturally subordinate to their husbands, and children and slaves under the ultimate control of the male head of the household.

SIRACH

LITERARY HISTORY

The book of Sirach is best known through the grandson's Greek translation, which provides the basis for the present English version. As the Greek version became canonical for Christians, the Hebrew form became increasingly marginal for Jews. Large parts of the Hebrew text, however, have been found among the Dead Sea Scrolls (at Qumran and Masada) and in the Genizah (storehouse) of a medieval Jewish synagogue in Cairo. Nearly two-thirds of the Hebrew version has been retrieved in one form or another. Even in antiquity the Hebrew and Greek textual traditions developed short and long editions or recensions. The additional sayings in the longer recension appear in small type at the foot of the pages in this translation; this explains the "missing numbers" for verses throughout the main text of the book. Moreover, it appears that all the Greek manuscripts contained a textual displacement by which Sir 30.25–33.13a and 33.13b–36.16a changed places; this explains discrepancies in references between older and more recent translations and scholarly studies.

Sirach remains a valuable resource for understanding Judaism in the Second Temple period and the world in which Jesus and the early Christians lived. It was translated into various ancient languages and received much attention from patristic and medieval writers. It was treasured for its practical advice on many different topics and its emphasis on love of learning and the desire for God.

STRUCTURE AND CONTENTS

As with other ancient wisdom books, Sirach is an anthology or collection of short units on various topics. In many parts it is difficult to discover a logical progression of thought or to discern the principles of arrangement. However, a series of poems on seeking and finding wisdom (1.1–10; 4.11–19; 6.18–37; 14.20–15.10; 24.1–33; 38.24–39.11) seem to divide the book into something like chapters. The book reaches its climax with the praise of God's glory manifest in creation (42.15–43.33) and in the heroes of faith in ancient Israel's history (44.1–50.24).

In conveying his wisdom teachings, Ben Sira used a wide array of literary forms: analogies or comparisons (*meshalim*), maxims or proverbs, beatitudes and woes, numerical sayings, questions and answers, refrains and repetitions, "there is" sayings, "better than" sayings, prohibitions or admonitions ("Do not . . ."), instructions, prayers of petition, hymns, aretalogy (self-praise), autobiographical accounts, and biblical paraphrases. Many of these literary devices lend themselves to easy memorization, thus supplying Ben Sira's students and readers with a treasury of wisdom sayings by which to interpret the world around them and to conduct themselves wisely and righteously.

INTERPRETATION

Sirach is the largest wisdom book that we have from antiquity. It provides a window into life in ancient Israel at a pivotal point in Jewish history, illustrating how and what Jewish wisdom teachers taught, and offering wise teachings that have inspired and challenged readers for more than two millennia. Ben Sira gives his opinions on topics such as creation, death, fear of the Lord, friendship, happiness, and honor and shame. While conservative by nature, Ben Sira was an innovator in joining the wisdom traditions of the ancient Near East and the distinctive traditions of ancient Israel (cf. 24.23). The students at his school were expected to become equally adept at practical wisdom and biblical learning (39.1–5).

Ben Sira's students were mainly well-to-do young men preparing for careers as teachers and counselors in the public arena (39.6–11). He insisted that they view true wisdom as a gift from God and that they pray regularly for wisdom. He was an enthusiastic supporter of the Jerusalem Temple and high priesthood. As a teacher of young men, he issued warnings about the troubles that the wrong kinds of women might bring upon them. At several points, however, his caution borders on misogyny. With regard to human suffering, Ben Sira accepts the traditional understanding of theodicy, or divine justice, according to which wise and righteous persons prosper, while foolish and wicked persons suffer. He generally ignores the problem of innocent suffering raised by the book of Job, and at some points he may have been responding to the skepticism displayed by the book of Ecclesiastes. He takes a tentative stab at the problem of evil with his doctrine of the "pairs" (33.7–15), without proposing a full-fledged dualism. His poems about God's action in creation and in Israel's history urge his readers to seek and find the glory of God in all things (42.15–50.24). He viewed immortality mainly in terms of the good name or reputation that one leaves behind (38.16–23; 41.1–13).

GUIDE TO READING

One can read Sirach straight through from beginning to end, just as the book has come down to us. However, many find it difficult to read an anthology that way. Moreover, the various units in the book demand meditation, personal appropriation, and application. The reflections on wisdom and fear of the Lord in chapters 1 and 2 provide the theological framework for all that follows. The poem about wisdom personified and Ben Sira's identification of her with the covenant and the Torah in chapter 24 is the key to his integration of secular wisdom and biblical revelation. The other wisdom poems (4.11–19; 6.18–37; 14.20–15.10; 38.34–39.11) are also important for catching the flavor of Ben Sira's project. The description of Israel's heroes of faith as manifestations of God's glory in chapters 44–50 opens up fresh perspectives on the Bible as a whole. For the rest of the book, tracking specific themes through the various parts can be quite fruitful. For example, one might pursue several or all of the following ten topics: creation (16.24–17.24; 18.1–14; 33.7–15; 39.12–35; 42.15–43.33), death (11.26–28; 22.11–12; 38.16–23; 41.1–13), friendship (6.5–17; 9.10–16; 19.13–17; 22.19–26; 27.16–21; 36.23–37.15), happiness (25.1–11; 30.14–25; 40.1–30), honor and shame (4.20–6.4; 10.19–11.6; 41.14–42.8), money matters (3.30–4.10; 11.7–28; 13.1–14.19; 29.1–28; 31.1–11), sin (7.1–17; 15.11–20; 16.1–17.32; 18.30–19.3; 21.1–10; 22.27–23.27; 26.28–28.7), social justice (4.1–10; 34.21–27; 35.14–26), speech (5.9–15; 18.15–29; 19.4–17; 20.1–31; 23.7–15; 27.4–7; 27.11–15; 28.8–26), and women (9.1–9; 23.22–27; 25.13–26.27; 36.26–31; 42.9–14).

Daniel J. Harrington

THE PROLOGUE

Many great teachings have been given to us through the Law and the Prophets and the others[a] that followed them, and for these we should praise Israel for instruction and wisdom. Now, those who read the scriptures must not only themselves understand them, but must also as lovers of learning be able through the spoken and written word to help the outsiders. So my grandfather Jesus, who had devoted himself especially to the reading of the Law and the Prophets and the other books of our ancestors, and had acquired considerable proficiency in them, was himself also led to write something pertaining to instruction and wisdom, so that by becoming familiar also with his book[b] those who love learning might make even greater progress in living according to the law.

You are invited therefore to read it with goodwill and attention, and to be indulgent in cases where, despite our diligent labor in translating, we may seem to have rendered some phrases imperfectly. For what was originally expressed in Hebrew does not have exactly the same sense when translated into another language. Not only this book, but even the Law itself, the Prophecies, and the rest of the books differ not a little when read in the original.

When I came to Egypt in the thirty-eighth year of the reign of Euergetes and stayed for some time, I found opportunity for no little instruction.[c] It seemed highly necessary that

[a] Or *other books*
[b] Gk *with these things*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *I found a copy affording no little instruction*

Prologue: Written in an elevated Greek style, the prologue to the Greek version of the book provides in three long sentences basic information about the original author and his purposes, the problems facing the translator, and the circumstances of the translation. It contains the earliest references to the threefold division of the Hebrew scriptures: *the Law and the Prophets and the other books* (cf. Lk 24.44). *Jesus* is the Greek form of the original author's Hebrew name, which was probably "Yeshua" or some other form of Joshua (50.27). In contrast to this translator, who admits that his book, as well as *the Law, the Prophecies, and the rest,* differ *not a little* from the *Hebrew* original, other early Jewish and Christian writers defended the accuracy of the Septuagint (LXX) in legends that have miraculous elements (Philo, *Life of Moses* 2.25–44). Ben Sira's grandson came to Egypt (most likely Alexandria) in *the thirty-eighth year* of the reign of Ptolemy VII Psychon *Euergetes* II, that is, in 132 BCE. He probably completed his work shortly after Ptolemy VII's death in 117 BCE. He intended his Greek translation especially for his fellow Jews *living abroad,* and in particular for the large Jewish community in Egypt. Thus he hoped that Diaspora Jews might profit from reading his grandfather's work in Greek just as Jews in Palestine had profited from the Hebrew original.

I should myself devote some diligence and labor to the translation of this book. During that time I have applied my skill day and night to complete and publish the book for those living abroad who wished to gain learning and are disposed to live according to the law.

1 All wisdom is from the Lord,
and with him it remains forever.
2 The sand of the sea, the drops of rain,
and the days of eternity—who can count them?
3 The height of heaven, the breadth of the earth,
the abyss, and wisdom[a]—who can search them out?
4 Wisdom was created before all other things,
and prudent understanding from eternity.[b]
6 The root of wisdom—to whom has it been revealed?
Her subtleties—who knows them?[c]
8 There is but one who is wise, greatly to be feared,
seated upon his throne—the Lord.
9 It is he who created her;
he saw her and took her measure;
he poured her out upon all his works,
10 upon all the living according to his gift;
he lavished her upon those who love him.[d]

11 The fear of the Lord is glory and exultation,
and gladness and a crown of rejoicing.
12 The fear of the Lord delights the heart,
and gives gladness and joy and long life.[e]
13 Those who fear the Lord will have a happy end;
on the day of their death they will be blessed.

14 To fear the Lord is the beginning of wisdom;
she is created with the faithful in the womb.
15 She made[f] among human beings an eternal foundation,
and among their descendants she will abide faithfully.
16 To fear the Lord is fullness of wisdom;
she inebriates mortals with her fruits;
17 she fills their[g] whole house with desirable goods,
and their[g] storehouses with her produce.
18 The fear of the Lord is the crown of wisdom,
making peace and perfect health to flourish.[h]
19 She rained down knowledge and discerning comprehension,
and she heightened the glory of those who held her fast.

[a] Other ancient authorities read *the depth of the abyss*
[b] Other ancient authorities add as verse 5, *The source of wisdom is God's word in the highest heaven, and her ways are the eternal commandments.*
[c] Other ancient authorities add as verse 7, *The knowledge of wisdom—to whom was it manifested? And her abundant experience—who has understood it?*
[d] Other ancient authorities add *Love of the Lord is glorious wisdom; to those to whom he appears he apportions her, that they may see him.*
[e] Other ancient authorities add *The fear of the Lord is a gift from the Lord; also for love he makes firm paths.*
[f] Gk *made as a nest*
[g] Other ancient authorities read *her*
[h] Other ancient authorities add *Both are gifts of God for peace; glory opens out for those who love him. He saw her and took her measure.*

1.1–10: Wisdom's origin. Wisdom, described as a feminine figure, was created by God and is given to humans as a gift. **1:** *From the Lord,* created by and residing with God (Prov 8.22–23; Wis 7.25–26). **2–3:** The rhetorical questions (cf. 1.6) indicate that true wisdom is beyond mere human understanding (Job 38–39). **4:** *Created before all other things,* 24.3–7; Prov 8.22–26. **6–10:** God, the truly wise one, *created* wisdom and bestows *her* on those who *love him* (Job 28.23–27).

1.11–30: Wisdom and fear of the Lord. A programmatic statement of the proper response to God's gift of wisdom: *fear of the Lord*—the gratitude, respect, and conduct owed to God. **12:** *Long life,* v. 20; cf. Prov 3.16. In wisdom literature generally, the good are rewarded with a long, healthy, prosperous life. **13:** *Happy end,* immortality for Ben Sira consists primarily in the good name or reputation that one leaves behind (41.11–13). **14:** *The beginning of wisdom,* cf. Prov 1.7; 9.10; Ps 111.10. *In the womb,* a prophetic motif (49.7; Jer 1.5; Isa 44.2,24; 49.1,5; see also Ps 139.13). **15:** *Abide faithfully,* for wisdom's dwelling place, cf. 24.10–12; Prov 8.31; Wis 1.7. **20:** *Root,* wis-

20 To fear the Lord is the root of wisdom,
and her branches are long life.[a]

22 Unjust anger cannot be justified,
for anger tips the scale to one's ruin.
23 Those who are patient stay calm until the right moment,
and then cheerfulness comes back to them.
24 They hold back their words until the right moment;
then the lips of many tell of their good sense.

25 In the treasuries of wisdom are wise sayings,
but godliness is an abomination to a sinner.
26 If you desire wisdom, keep the commandments,
and the Lord will lavish her upon you.
27 For the fear of the Lord is wisdom and discipline,
fidelity and humility are his delight.

28 Do not disobey the fear of the Lord;
do not approach him with a divided mind.
29 Do not be a hypocrite before others,
and keep watch over your lips.
30 Do not exalt yourself, or you may fall
and bring dishonor upon yourself.
The Lord will reveal your secrets
and overthrow you before the whole congregation,
because you did not come in the fear of the Lord,
and your heart was full of deceit.

2 My child, when you come to serve the Lord,
prepare yourself for testing.[b]
2 Set your heart right and be steadfast,
and do not be impetuous in time of calamity.
3 Cling to him and do not depart,
so that your last days may be prosperous.
4 Accept whatever befalls you,
and in times of humiliation be patient.
5 For gold is tested in the fire,
and those found acceptable, in the furnace of humiliation.[c]
6 Trust in him, and he will help you;
make your ways straight, and hope in him.

7 You who fear the Lord, wait for his mercy;
do not stray, or else you may fall.
8 You who fear the Lord, trust in him,
and your reward will not be lost.
9 You who fear the Lord, hope for good things,
for lasting joy and mercy.[d]
10 Consider the generations of old and see:
has anyone trusted in the Lord and been disappointed?
Or has anyone persevered in the fear of the Lord[e] and been forsaken?

[a] Other ancient authorities add as verse 21, *The fear of the Lord drives away sins; and where it abides, it will turn away all anger.*
[b] Or *trials*
[c] Other ancient authorities add *in sickness and poverty put your trust in him*
[d] Other ancient authorities add *For his reward is an everlasting gift with joy.*
[e] Gk *of him*

dom is the tree that gives life (24.13–17; Prov 3.18; Gen 3.22). **22–24:** For the dangers of yielding to *unjust anger,* cf. 27.30–28.11; Prov 12.16; 29.22. **25–27:** *The treasuries of wisdom* include proverbs and other sayings, while the *commandments* are laws in the Torah (cf. 24.23). Sirach is the first wisdom book to relate Torah and wisdom in this way; cf. Bar 4.1. **28:** *Divided mind,* 2.12. **29:** *Hypocrite,* 32.15; 33.2. **30:** Honor and *dishonor* are major themes in Sirach (3.2–11; 4.21; 7.7; 10.19–11.6; 41.17–42.8).

2.1–18: Fear of the Lord. What it means to remain faithful to God and to the pursuit of wisdom. **1–6:** Those who serve God must expect testing, remain patient, and accept suffering as a discipline. **1:** *My child,* literally "my son," a common way for Ben Sira the teacher to address a pupil (3.17; 4.1; 6.8; 7.3; etc.; cf. Prov 1.8,10, etc.). *Testing* reveals one's true character (4.17; 6.20–21; 44.20; Prov 3.11–12). **5.** *Tested in the fire,* cf. Prov 17.3; 27.21; Wis 3.6. **7–9:** Those who *fear the Lord* must *wait, trust,* and *hope* during this life. Note another threefold repetition of *fear of the Lord* in 2.15–17. **10–11:** The three questions (cf. Pss 22.4–5; 37.25) expect negative responses, though the case of Job renders dubious such easy answers. **11:** *The Lord is compassionate and merciful,* Ex 34.6–7;

Or has anyone called upon him and
been neglected?
11 For the Lord is compassionate and
merciful;
he forgives sins and saves in time of
distress.

12 Woe to timid hearts and to slack hands,
and to the sinner who walks a double
path!
13 Woe to the fainthearted who have no trust!
Therefore they will have no shelter.
14 Woe to you who have lost your nerve!
What will you do when the Lord's
reckoning comes?

15 Those who fear the Lord do not disobey
his words,
and those who love him keep his ways.
16 Those who fear the Lord seek to please
him,
and those who love him are filled with
his law.
17 Those who fear the Lord prepare their
hearts,
and humble themselves before him.
18 Let us fall into the hands of the Lord,
but not into the hands of mortals;
for equal to his majesty is his mercy,
and equal to his name are his works.[a]

3 Listen to me your father, O children;
act accordingly, that you may be kept in
safety.
2 For the Lord honors a father above his
children,
and he confirms a mother's right over
her children.
3 Those who honor their father atone for
sins,
4 and those who respect their mother
are like those who lay up treasure.
5 Those who honor their father will have
joy in their own children,
and when they pray they will be heard.
6 Those who respect their father will have
long life,
and those who honor[b] their mother
obey the Lord;
7 they will serve their parents as their
masters.[c]
8 Honor your father by word and deed,
that his blessing may come upon you.
9 For a father's blessing strengthens the
houses of the children,
but a mother's curse uproots their
foundations.
10 Do not glorify yourself by dishonoring
your father,
for your father's dishonor is no glory
to you.
11 The glory of one's father is one's own
glory,
and it is a disgrace for children not to
respect their mother.

12 My child, help your father in his old age,
and do not grieve him as long as he lives;
13 even if his mind fails, be patient with him;
because you have all your faculties do
not despise him.

[a] Syr: Gk lacks this line
[b] Heb: Other ancient authorities read *comfort*
[c] In other ancient authorities this line is preceded by *Those who fear the Lord honor their father,*

Pss 103.8–9; 145.8; Jon 4.2. For God as one who *forgives sins* and *saves,* cf. Pss 37.39–40; 103.3; 145.18–19. **12–14:** The three *woes* (41.8) are warnings or threats to the conflicted or *fainthearted. The Lord's reckoning* refers to the consequences during this life rather than to the last judgment. **15–17:** *Those who fear the Lord* observe God's commandments and approach God with proper reverence (cf. 2.7–9). **18:** *Fall into the hands of the Lord,* 2 Sam 24.14; 1 Chr 21.13. The *name* of the Lord here is "the merciful one"; see 2.11n.; 50.19.

3.1–16: Parents and children. Wisdom and fear of the Lord should extend to family relationships (Ex 20.12; Deut 5.16); those addressed (*O children*) are adults. **1–2:** The social order decreed by God places parents above their children. For the *father* as head of the family, see 7.23–26; 22.3–5; 26.1–27. Respect for the *mother* is also stressed here (cf. 3.16; Prov 1.8; 6.20; etc.). **3–7:** *Those who honor* their parents can expect spiritual and material benefits, including atonement for their sins (3.14) and a long life (Deut 5.16).

8–11: Honoring parents brings *honor* to the child, while *dishonoring* them brings shame (1.30; 4.21; 7.7; 10.19–11.6; 41.17–42.8). **12–16:** Caring for elderly parents will be rewarded by God and will provide atonement for sins (3.3), while dishonoring parents is the equivalent of blasphemy (3.1–2).

14 For kindness to a father will not be
forgotten,
and will be credited to you against your
sins;
15 in the day of your distress it will be
remembered in your favor;
like frost in fair weather, your sins will
melt away.
16 Whoever forsakes a father is like a
blasphemer,
and whoever angers a mother is cursed
by the Lord.

17 My child, perform your tasks with
humility;[a]
then you will be loved by those whom
God accepts.
18 The greater you are, the more you must
humble yourself;
so you will find favor in the sight of the
Lord.[b]
20 For great is the might of the Lord;
but by the humble he is glorified.
21 Neither seek what is too difficult for you,
nor investigate what is beyond your
power.
22 Reflect upon what you have been
commanded,
for what is hidden is not your concern.
23 Do not meddle in matters that are
beyond you,
for more than you can understand has
been shown you.
24 For their conceit has led many astray,
and wrong opinion has impaired their
judgment.

25 Without eyes there is no light;
without knowledge there is no
wisdom.[c]
26 A stubborn mind will fare badly at the
end,
and whoever loves danger will perish in it.
27 A stubborn mind will be burdened by
troubles,
and the sinner adds sin to sins.
28 When calamity befalls the proud, there
is no healing,
for an evil plant has taken root in him.
29 The mind of the intelligent appreciates
proverbs,
and an attentive ear is the desire of the
wise.

30 As water extinguishes a blazing fire,
so almsgiving atones for sin.
31 Those who repay favors give thought to
the future;
when they fall they will find support.

4 My child, do not cheat the poor of their
living,
and do not keep needy eyes waiting.
2 Do not grieve the hungry,
or anger one in need.
3 Do not add to the troubles of the desperate,
or delay giving to the needy.
4 Do not reject a suppliant in distress,
or turn your face away from the poor.
5 Do not avert your eye from the needy,
and give no one reason to curse you;
6 for if in bitterness of soul some should
curse you,
their Creator will hear their prayer.

7 Endear yourself to the congregation;
bow your head low to the great.
8 Give a hearing to the poor,
and return their greeting politely.
9 Rescue the oppressed from the oppressor;
and do not be hesitant in giving a verdict.

[a] Heb: Gk *meekness*
[b] Other ancient authorities add as verse 19, *Many are lofty and renowned, but to the humble he reveals his secrets.*
[c] Heb: Other ancient authorities lack verse 25

3.17–29: Humility before God. Humility brings favor from God, while intellectual pride is to be avoided. **17–20:** Humility (or meekness) glorifies God and wins favor from those *loved* by God (7.16–17; 10.28). **21–29:** *What is too difficult* may refer to Greek philosophical and Jewish apocalyptic speculations. True wisdom is found in *what you have been commanded* (in the Torah) and in *proverbs* (the teachings of the sages)—the two major sources of wisdom in Ben Sira's school and his book.

3.30–4.10: Almsgiving. The instructions assume that the sage will have sufficient wealth to act as a benefactor (cf. Job 29). **30:** *Atones for sin,* cf. 3.4,14. **4.1–5:** Ten things not to do when giving alms. The advice acknowledges and attempts to address the social and power differences that are present in acts of charity. **6:** *Curse,* cf.

10 Be a father to orphans,
and be like a husband to their mother;
you will then be like a son of the Most High,
and he will love you more than does your mother.

11 Wisdom teaches[a] her children
and gives help to those who seek her.
12 Whoever loves her loves life,
and those who seek her from early morning are filled with joy.
13 Whoever holds her fast inherits glory,
and the Lord blesses the place she[b] enters.
14 Those who serve her minister to the Holy One;
the Lord loves those who love her.
15 Those who obey her will judge the nations,
and all who listen to her will live secure.
16 If they remain faithful, they will inherit her;
their descendants will also obtain her.
17 For at first she will walk with them on tortuous paths;
she will bring fear and dread upon them,
and will torment them by her discipline until she trusts them,[c]
and she will test them with her ordinances.
18 Then she will come straight back to them again and gladden them,
and will reveal her secrets to them.
19 If they go astray she will forsake them,
and hand them over to their ruin.

20 Watch for the opportune time, and beware of evil,
and do not be ashamed to be yourself.
21 For there is a shame that leads to sin,
and there is a shame that is glory and favor.
22 Do not show partiality, to your own harm,
or deference, to your downfall.
23 Do not refrain from speaking at the proper moment,[d]
and do not hide your wisdom.[e]
24 For wisdom becomes known through speech,
and education through the words of the tongue.
25 Never speak against the truth,
but be ashamed of your ignorance.
26 Do not be ashamed to confess your sins,
and do not try to stop the current of a river.
27 Do not subject yourself to a fool,
or show partiality to a ruler.
28 Fight to the death for truth,
and the Lord God will fight for you.

29 Do not be reckless in your speech,
or sluggish and remiss in your deeds.
30 Do not be like a lion in your home,
or suspicious of your servants.
31 Do not let your hand be stretched out to receive
and closed when it is time to give.

5 Do not rely on your wealth,
or say, "I have enough."
2 Do not follow your inclination and strength
in pursuing the desires of your heart.

[a] Heb Syr: Gk *exalts*
[b] Or *he*
[c] Or *until they remain faithful in their heart*
[d] Heb: Gk *at a time of salvation*
[e] So some Gk Mss and Heb Syr Lat: Other Gk Mss lack *and do not hide your wisdom*

Deut 15.9. **10:** *Orphans,* cf. Ex 22.21–23; for God as father of orphans, see Ps 68.5.

4.11–19. Wisdom's benefits. While the search for wisdom brings many benefits, it also involves testing and discipline. As often, wisdom is personified as a woman (cf. Prov 1.20–33; 8; Sir 24). **12:** Prov 8.35. **14:** Serving wisdom is the same as serving *the Holy One.* **15:** The expressions *judge the nations* and *live secure* probably refer to earthly existence rather than life after death. **17–19:** Wisdom as harsh disciplinarian but also giver of joy and security are key themes in Prov 1–9. **17:** *Discipline,* cf. 2.1. **18:** *Secrets,* 39.7; Dan 2.22.

4.20–31: The need for self-restraint and truthfulness. 20–21: For proper and improper *shame,* see 41.17–42.8. **20–31:** The admonitions (*Do not . . .*) deal mainly with speech, especially truthfulness in speech, a frequent topic in wisdom literature (e.g., Prov 13.3; 25.11). **26:** *Stop the current of a river,* that is, trying to conceal one's sins from God is impossible. **30:** *Lion,* a frequent symbol of overpowering force (13.19; 21.2; 25.16; 27.10,28; 28.23; 47.3).

3 Do not say, "Who can have power over me?"
for the Lord will surely punish you.

4 Do not say, "I sinned, yet what has happened to me?"
for the Lord is slow to anger.
5 Do not be so confident of forgiveness[a]
that you add sin to sin.
6 Do not say, "His mercy is great,
he will forgive[b] the multitude of my sins,"
for both mercy and wrath are with him,
and his anger will rest on sinners.
7 Do not delay to turn back to the Lord,
and do not postpone it from day to day;
for suddenly the wrath of the Lord will come upon you,
and at the time of punishment you will perish.
8 Do not depend on dishonest wealth,
for it will not benefit you on the day of calamity.

9 Do not winnow in every wind,
or follow every path.[c]
10 Stand firm for what you know,
and let your speech be consistent.
11 Be quick to hear,
but deliberate in answering.
12 If you know what to say, answer your neighbor;
but if not, put your hand over your mouth.

13 Honor and dishonor come from speaking,
and the tongue of mortals may be their downfall.

14 Do not be called double-tongued[d]
and do not lay traps with your tongue;
for shame comes to the thief,
and severe condemnation to the double-tongued.
15 In great and small matters cause no harm,[e]

6 1 and do not become an enemy instead of a friend;
for a bad name incurs shame and reproach;
so it is with the double-tongued sinner.

2 Do not fall into the grip of passion,[f]
or you may be torn apart as by a bull.[g]
3 Your leaves will be devoured and your fruit destroyed,
and you will be left like a withered tree.
4 Evil passion destroys those who have it,
and makes them the laughingstock of their enemies.

5 Pleasant speech multiplies friends,
and a gracious tongue multiplies courtesies.

a Heb: Gk *atonement*
b Heb: Gk *he* (or *it*) *will atone for*
c Gk adds *so it is with the double-tongued sinner* (see 6.1)
d Heb: Gk *a slanderer*
e Heb Syr: Gk *be ignorant*
f Heb: Meaning of Gk uncertain
g Meaning of Gk uncertain

5.1–8. Avoid presumption. Do not rely on wealth or presume on God's mercy as excuses for putting off repentance. **4:** *Slow to anger,* Ex 34.6. This ancient liturgical formula is frequently cited and adapted; cf. Num 14.18; Neh 9.17; Pss 86.15; 103.8; 145.8; Jon 4.2; etc. **6:** *Mercy and wrath,* although God is merciful, God's just demands cannot be ignored (16.11–12). **7:** *Wrath of the Lord,* Ex 32.10; Num 16.46; Deut 29.23; etc. The notion of sudden punishment, especially of the powerful, is a common motif in wisdom literature (10.10–11; Job 34.20–25; cf. Dan 5).

5.9–6.4: The need for truthfulness and self-restraint. Here speech is treated mainly in an honor-shame context (see 4.20–31).

10: For other treatments of *speech,* see 19.6–17; 20.16–20; 22.27–23.15; 28.12–26. **12:** *Hand over your mouth*, a gesture of humility and circumspection (Job 29.9; 40.4–5; Prov 30.32). **14:** *Double-tongued,* one who is duplicitous in speech or a slanderer (cf. 5.9 in Greek; 6.1). **6.2–4:** *Passion,* most likely sexual desire (18.30–19.3), though anger or envy is also possible. **6.3:** Cf. Ps 1.3.

6 Let those who are friendly with you be many,
but let your advisers be one in a thousand.
7 When you gain friends, gain them through testing,
and do not trust them hastily.
8 For there are friends who are such when it suits them,
but they will not stand by you in time of trouble.
9 And there are friends who change into enemies,
and tell of the quarrel to your disgrace.
10 And there are friends who sit at your table,
but they will not stand by you in time of trouble.
11 When you are prosperous, they become your second self,
and lord it over your servants;
12 but if you are brought low, they turn against you,
and hide themselves from you.
13 Keep away from your enemies,
and be on guard with your friends.

14 Faithful friends are a sturdy shelter:
whoever finds one has found a treasure.
15 Faithful friends are beyond price;
no amount can balance their worth.
16 Faithful friends are life-saving medicine;
and those who fear the Lord will find them.
17 Those who fear the Lord direct their friendship aright,
for as they are, so are their neighbors also.

18 My child, from your youth choose discipline,
and when you have gray hair you will still find wisdom.
19 Come to her like one who plows and sows,
and wait for her good harvest.
For when you cultivate her you will toil but little,
and soon you will eat of her produce.
20 She seems very harsh to the undisciplined;
fools cannot remain with her.
21 She will be like a heavy stone to test them,
and they will not delay in casting her aside.
22 For wisdom is like her name;
she is not readily perceived by many.

23 Listen, my child, and accept my judgment;
do not reject my counsel.
24 Put your feet into her fetters,
and your neck into her collar.
25 Bend your shoulders and carry her,
and do not fret under her bonds.
26 Come to her with all your soul,
and keep her ways with all your might.
27 Search out and seek, and she will become known to you;
and when you get hold of her, do not let her go.
28 For at last you will find the rest she gives,
and she will be changed into joy for you.
29 Then her fetters will become for you a strong defense,
and her collar a glorious robe.

6.5–17: Friendship. While caution is necessary in making friends, a faithful friend is a treasure (cf. 9.10–16; 19.13–17; 22.19–26; 27.16–21; 37.1–6). Although the topic of friendship occasionally appears in earlier Israelite wisdom literature (Prov 17.17; 18.24; 27.6,10), it was a particularly prominent theme in Hellenistic writings. **6–7:** The difference between *those who are friendly* and true friends becomes clear only over time (*testing*). **8–13:** False *friends* can easily turn into enemies. **14–17:** *Faithful friends* are best sought and found among *those who fear the Lord.*

6.18–37: Discipline and the way to wisdom. Those who seek to become wise must accept the religious, intellectual, and moral formation (*discipline*) that produces wisdom and its rewards. **18–22:** Those who accept wisdom's *discipline* are like farmers who work hard and so enjoy abundant harvests, whereas discipline is *like a heavy stone* to those who refuse it. **18:** *My child,* each of the three segments begins with this address (vv.18,23,32); see 2.1n. **22:** *Wisdom is like her name,* probably a play on the Hebrew words "musar" (*discipline,* v. 18) and "sar" ("turn aside," i.e., become distant). **23–31:** The process of accepting wisdom's discipline is illustrated by images of the *yoke* and *rest* (51.26) and *glorious* royal apparel. **26:** *All your soul, and . . . all your might*, Deut

30 Her yoke[a] is a golden ornament,
and her bonds a purple cord.
31 You will wear her like a glorious robe,
and put her on like a splendid crown.[b]

32 If you are willing, my child, you can be disciplined,
and if you apply yourself you will become clever.
33 If you love to listen you will gain knowledge,
and if you pay attention you will become wise.
34 Stand in the company of the elders.
Who is wise? Attach yourself to such a one.
35 Be ready to listen to every godly discourse,
and let no wise proverbs escape you.
36 If you see an intelligent person, rise early to visit him;
let your foot wear out his doorstep.
37 Reflect on the statutes of the Lord,
and meditate at all times on his commandments.
It is he who will give insight to[c] your mind,
and your desire for wisdom will be granted.

7 Do no evil, and evil will never overtake you.
2 Stay away from wrong, and it will turn away from you.
3 Do[d] not sow in the furrows of injustice,
and you will not reap a sevenfold crop.

4 Do not seek from the Lord high office,
or the seat of honor from the king.
5 Do not assert your righteousness before the Lord,
or display your wisdom before the king.
6 Do not seek to become a judge,
or you may be unable to root out injustice;
you may be partial to the powerful,
and so mar your integrity.
7 Commit no offense against the public,
and do not disgrace yourself among the people.

8 Do not commit a sin twice;
not even for one will you go unpunished.
9 Do not say, "He will consider the great number of my gifts,
and when I make an offering to the Most High God, he will accept it."
10 Do not grow weary when you pray;
do not neglect to give alms.
11 Do not ridicule a person who is embittered in spirit,
for there is One who humbles and exalts.
12 Do not devise[e] a lie against your brother,
or do the same to a friend.
13 Refuse to utter any lie,
for it is a habit that results in no good.
14 Do not babble in the assembly of the elders,
and do not repeat yourself when you pray.

15 Do not hate hard labor
or farm work, which was created by the Most High.

[a] Heb: Gk *Upon her*
[b] Heb: Gk *crown of gladness*
[c] Heb: Gk *will confirm*
[d] Gk *My child, do*
[e] Heb: Gk *plow*

6.5. **30:** *Purple cord*; see Num 15.38–40. Although wisdom is often likened to an ornament (e.g., Prov 1.9; 3.22; 4.8–9), here the language evokes ritual garments like those of the high priest (50.11). **32–37:** The prospective sage should spend time in listening to the *elders*, attending to *godly discourse* and *wise proverbs*, and reflecting on and carrying out God's *commandments* (in the Torah).

7.1–17: Evildoing and its consequences. Most of these instructions are presented as negative admonitions (*Do not . . .*; cf. Prov 3.1–4; 22.22–29). **1–3:** Avoiding *evil, wrong,* and *injustice* will protect one from their damaging consequences. **4–7:** Ambition for high offices and public prestige can be dangerous (Prov 25.6–7). **8–9:** For an earlier warning about presuming on God's mercy and patience, see 5.6–7. **10–14:** The unit begins and ends with

16 Do not enroll in the ranks of sinners;
remember that retribution does not delay.
17 Humble yourself to the utmost,
for the punishment of the ungodly is fire and worms.[a]

18 Do not exchange a friend for money,
or a real brother for the gold of Ophir.
19 Do not dismiss[b] a wise and good wife,
for her charm is worth more than gold.
20 Do not abuse slaves who work faithfully,
or hired laborers who devote themselves to their task.
21 Let your soul love intelligent slaves;[c]
do not withhold from them their freedom.

22 Do you have cattle? Look after them;
if they are profitable to you, keep them.
23 Do you have children? Discipline them,
and make them obedient[d] from their youth.
24 Do you have daughters? Be concerned for their chastity,[e]
and do not show yourself too indulgent with them.
25 Give a daughter in marriage, and you complete a great task;
but give her to a sensible man.
26 Do you have a wife who pleases you?[f] Do not divorce her;
but do not trust yourself to one whom you detest.

27 With all your heart honor your father,
and do not forget the birth pangs of your mother.
28 Remember that it was of your parents[g] you were born;
how can you repay what they have given to you?

29 With all your soul fear the Lord,
and revere his priests.
30 With all your might love your Maker,
and do not neglect his ministers.
31 Fear the Lord and honor the priest,
and give him his portion, as you have been commanded:
the first fruits, the guilt offering, the gift of the shoulders,
the sacrifice of sanctification, and the first fruits of the holy things.

32 Stretch out your hand to the poor,
so that your blessing may be complete.
33 Give graciously to all the living;
do not withhold kindness even from the dead.
34 Do not avoid those who weep,
but mourn with those who mourn.
35 Do not hesitate to visit the sick,
because for such deeds you will be loved.
36 In all you do, remember the end of your life,
and then you will never sin.

[a] Heb *for the expectation of mortals is worms*
[b] Heb: Gk *deprive yourself of*
[c] Heb *Love a wise slave as yourself*
[d] Gk *bend their necks*
[e] Gk *body*
[f] Heb Syr lack *who pleases you*
[g] Gk *them*

comments on prayer; the intervening material concerns faults connected with speech. **17:** *Fire and worms,* cf. Isa 66.24. The Hebrew has *worms* only.

7.18–36: Social relations. Directed to the male head of a household, these instructions pertain to his relationships with his *friend* or *brother, wife, slaves,* and *hired laborers, cattle, children, daughters, wife* again, *father* and *mother, priests,* the *poor*, the *dead,* and the *sick.* **18:** *Ophir* in southern Arabia or east Africa was famous for its *gold* (1 Kings 9.28; 10.11; Job 22.24; 28.16; Ps 45.9; Isa 13.12). **19:** *Dismiss a . . . wife,* Deut 24.1–4. **21:** *Freedom,* Ex 21.2; Lev 25.39–43; Deut 15.12–15. **24–25:** *Daughters,* cf. 22.3–6n.; 42.9–13. **27–28:** *Father . . . mother,* 3.1–16; cf. Ex 20.12; Deut 5.16.

31: *His portion,* Ex 29.27; Lev 7.31–34; Num 18.8–20; Deut 18.3. Earlier Israelite wisdom literature does not mention priests and seldom refers to ritual obligations; Prov 3.9 is a rare exception. **32:** *Poor,* Deut 14.28–29. **33:** *Dead,* cf. 38.16–18; Tob 1.17. **36:** *The end of your life* probably refers to one's good name at death (1.13; 28.6) rather than rewards in life after death.

8 Do not contend with the powerful,
or you may fall into their hands.
2 Do not quarrel with the rich,
in case their resources outweigh yours;
for gold has ruined many,
and has perverted the minds of kings.
3 Do not argue with the loud of mouth,
and do not heap wood on their fire.

4 Do not make fun of one who is ill-bred,
or your ancestors may be insulted.
5 Do not reproach one who is turning away from sin;
remember that we all deserve punishment.
6 Do not disdain one who is old,
for some of us are also growing old.
7 Do not rejoice over anyone's death;
remember that we must all die.

8 Do not slight the discourse of the sages,
but busy yourself with their maxims;
because from them you will learn discipline
and how to serve princes.
9 Do not ignore the discourse of the aged,
for they themselves learned from their parents;[a]
from them you learn how to understand
and to give an answer when the need arises.

10 Do not kindle the coals of sinners,
or you may be burned in their flaming fire.
11 Do not let the insolent bring you to your feet,
or they may lie in ambush against your words.

12 Do not lend to one who is stronger than you;
but if you do lend anything, count it as a loss.
13 Do not give surety beyond your means;
but if you give surety, be prepared to pay.

14 Do not go to law against a judge,
for the decision will favor him because of his standing.
15 Do not go traveling with the reckless,
or they will be burdensome to you;
for they will act as they please,
and through their folly you will perish with them.
16 Do not pick a fight with the quick-tempered,
and do not journey with them through lonely country,
because bloodshed means nothing to them,
and where no help is at hand, they will strike you down.
17 Do not consult with fools,
for they cannot keep a secret.
18 In the presence of strangers do nothing that is to be kept secret,
for you do not know what they will divulge.[b]
19 Do not reveal your thoughts to anyone,
or you may drive away your happiness.[c]

[a] Or *ancestors*
[b] Or *it will bring forth*
[c] Heb: Gk *and let him not return a favor to you*

8.1–19: Caution in social relations. These negative admonitions (*Do not . . .*) are accompanied by reasons why certain persons and social situations should be avoided. The goal is to help one avoid public disgrace and shame. **1–2:** The *powerful* and *rich* as social categories are more prominent in Sirach than in earlier wisdom literature and may reflect the changing socio-economic realities of the Hellenistic world. **3:** The dangers of arguing with those who cannot control their speech is already a topic in ancient Egyptian wisdom literature (see, e.g., *Ptahhotep*). **5–7:** These motive clauses are more philosophical than the mainly pragmatic reasons given elsewhere in this instruction. **8–9:** *The discourse of the sages* and *of the aged* contain the wise learning of tradition, highly valued by the wisdom tradition (cf. Prov 4.1–4; Job 8.8–10). **10:** *Flaming fire,* 8.3; 28.8–12. **12–13:** Although Ben Sira was not opposed in principle to making loans and standing *surety* (29.1–7; cf. Prov 6.1–5; 11.15), he urges great caution. **17–19:** Avoiding self–revelation to *fools* and *strangers* is a prudent way to protect one's social standing. **18:** The Hebrew makes a play on words between "zar" (*stranger*) and "raz" (*secret*).

9 Do not be jealous of the wife of your bosom,
or you will teach her an evil lesson to your own hurt.
[2] Do not give yourself to a woman
and let her trample down your strength.
[3] Do not go near a loose woman,
or you will fall into her snares.
[4] Do not dally with a singing girl,
or you will be caught by her tricks.
[5] Do not look intently at a virgin,
or you may stumble and incur penalties for her.
[6] Do not give yourself to prostitutes,
or you may lose your inheritance.
[7] Do not look around in the streets of a city,
or wander about in its deserted sections.
[8] Turn away your eyes from a shapely woman,
and do not gaze at beauty belonging to another;
many have been seduced by a woman's beauty,
and by it passion is kindled like a fire.
[9] Never dine with another man's wife,
or revel with her at wine;
or your heart may turn aside to her,
and in blood[a] you may be plunged into destruction.

[10] Do not abandon old friends,
for new ones cannot equal them.
A new friend is like new wine;
when it has aged, you can drink it with pleasure.

[11] Do not envy the success of sinners,
for you do not know what their end will be like.
[12] Do not delight in what pleases the ungodly;
remember that they will not be held guiltless all their lives.

[13] Keep far from those who have power to kill,
and you will not be haunted by the fear of death.
But if you approach them, make no misstep,
or they may rob you of your life.
Know that you are stepping among snares,
and that you are walking on the city battlements.

[14] As much as you can, aim to know your neighbors,
and consult with the wise.
[15] Let your conversation be with intelligent people,
and let all your discussion be about the law of the Most High.
[16] Let the righteous be your dinner companions,
and let your glory be in the fear of the Lord.

[17] A work is praised for the skill of the artisan;
so a people's leader is proved wise by his words.
[18] The loud of mouth are feared in their city,
and the one who is reckless in speech is hated.

[a] Heb: Gk *by your spirit*

9.1–9: Caution in relations with women. These admonitions concern the various types of women who can bring public disgrace and shame upon a sage. They continue the cautious tone of the preceding passage. **3–4:** *Loose*, literally "strange" woman (Heb. "zarah"); see Prov 2.16; 5.3,20; 7.5. The *singing girl* is apparently a prostitute (cf. Isa 23.15–16). **5:** The penalty for seducing a *virgin* involved financial payments to her father and marriage (Ex 22.16–17). **7:** *In the streets of a city*, cf. Prov 7.7–10. **9:** The penalty for adultery with *another man's wife* was death (Lev 20.10; Deut 22.22).

9.10–16: Caution in choosing and making friends. The best friends share the same spiritual values—*the law of the Most High* and *fear of the Lord.* See 6.5–17; 19.13–17; 22.19–26; 27.16–21; 37.1–6. **10:** As with *wine, old friends* are better than *new* ones.

11–13: *Sinners* and the *ungodly* pose a threat because they may entangle one in their own bad *end* (cf. Prov 1.10–19), but kings and rulers are dangerous because they themselves *have power to kill* (cf. Prov 16.14). **13:** *Battlements,* high on the city walls where one is exposed and easy to kill.

9.17–10.5: Wise rulers. The wise ruler is the good ruler (see Prov 25.4–5; 28.2–3,16; 29.4,12,14). **17–18:** Wise

10 A wise magistrate educates his people,
and the rule of an intelligent person is
well ordered.
2 As the people's judge is, so are his
officials;
as the ruler of the city is, so are all its
inhabitants.
3 An undisciplined king ruins his people,
but a city becomes fit to live in through
the understanding of its rulers.
4 The government of the earth is in the
hand of the Lord,
and over it he will raise up the right
leader for the time.
5 Human success is in the hand of the Lord,
and it is he who confers honor upon the
lawgiver.[a]

6 Do not get angry with your neighbor for
every injury,
and do not resort to acts of insolence.
7 Arrogance is hateful to the Lord and to
mortals,
and injustice is outrageous to both.
8 Sovereignty passes from nation to nation
on account of injustice and insolence
and wealth.[b]
9 How can dust and ashes be proud?
Even in life the human body decays.[c]
10 A long illness baffles the physician;[d]
the king of today will die tomorrow.
11 For when one is dead
he inherits maggots and vermin[e] and
worms.
12 The beginning of human pride is to
forsake the Lord;
the heart has withdrawn from its
Maker.
13 For the beginning of pride is sin,
and the one who clings to it pours out
abominations.
Therefore the Lord brings upon them
unheard-of calamities,
and destroys them completely.
14 The Lord overthrows the thrones of
rulers,
and enthrones the lowly in their place.
15 The Lord plucks up the roots of the
nations,[f]
and plants the humble in their place.
16 The Lord lays waste the lands of the
nations,
and destroys them to the foundations of
the earth.
17 He removes some of them and destroys
them,
and erases the memory of them from
the earth.
18 Pride was not created for human beings,
or violent anger for those born of
women.

19 Whose offspring are worthy of honor?
Human offspring.
Whose offspring are worthy of honor?
Those who fear the Lord.
Whose offspring are unworthy of honor?
Human offspring.
Whose offspring are unworthy of honor?
Those who break the commandments.
20 Among family members their leader is
worthy of honor,

a Heb: Gk *scribe*
b Other ancient authorities add here or after verse 9a, *Nothing is more wicked than one who loves money, for such a person puts his own soul up for sale.*
c Heb: Meaning of Gk uncertain
d Heb Lat: Meaning of Gk uncertain
e Heb: Gk *wild animals*
f Other ancient authorities read *proud nations*

words are the tools of the good ruler. **10.1–3:** Rulers can have positive or negative effects on their city's *inhabitants* (Prov 28.3,16; 29.4,12). **4–5:** *The hand of the Lord,* Prov 8.15–16; Wis 6.1–3.

10.6–18: Avoid arrogance and pride. Such behavior is hateful to not only to God but also to other people and has disastrous effects. Although arrogance is a traditional topic in wisdom literature, Sirach applies it specifically to rulers and nations, perhaps as a critique of the Ptolemaic and Seleucid kings of his day. **9–11:** Death is the great equalizer among humans (22.11–22; 38.16–23; 41.1–13), and the best remedy for pride. **9:** *Dust and ashes*, Gen 18.27; Job 30.19; 42.6. **12:** *To forsake the Lord* is the root of foolish *pride,* and pride is not what God intended for humankind (10.18). **14–17:** *Overthrows the thrones of rulers,* cf. 1 Sam 2.1–10; Lk 1.47–55.

10.19–11.6: Honor and shame. True honor belongs not to the wealthy and powerful but rather to those who *fear the Lord* and keep God's *commandments* (cf. 4.20–6.4; 41.14–42.8; Prov 1.7; 9.10). **19:** *Human offspring*, giving

but those who fear the Lord are worthy
of honor in his eyes.[a]
22 The rich, and the eminent, and the
poor—
their glory is the fear of the Lord.
23 It is not right to despise one who is
intelligent but poor,
and it is not proper to honor one who
is sinful.
24 The prince and the judge and the ruler
are honored,
but none of them is greater than the
one who fears the Lord.
25 Free citizens will serve a wise servant,
and an intelligent person will not
complain.

26 Do not make a display of your wisdom
when you do your work,
and do not boast when you are in need.
27 Better is the worker who has goods in
plenty
than the boaster who lacks bread.

28 My child, honor yourself with humility,
and give yourself the esteem you
deserve.
29 Who will acquit those who condemn[b]
themselves?
And who will honor those who
dishonor themselves?[c]
30 The poor are honored for their
knowledge,
while the rich are honored for their
wealth.
31 One who is honored in poverty, how
much more in wealth!
And one dishonored in wealth, how
much more in poverty!

11 The wisdom of the humble lifts their
heads high,
and seats them among the great.
2 Do not praise individuals for their good
looks,
or loathe anyone because of appearance
alone.
3 The bee is small among flying creatures,
but what it produces is the best of sweet
things.
4 Do not boast about wearing fine clothes,
and do not exalt yourself when you are
honored;
for the works of the Lord are wonderful,
and his works are concealed from
humankind.
5 Many kings have had to sit on the ground,
but one who was never thought of has
worn a crown.
6 Many rulers have been utterly disgraced,
and the honored have been handed
over to others.

7 Do not find fault before you investigate;
examine first, and then criticize.
8 Do not answer before you listen,
and do not interrupt when another is
speaking.
9 Do not argue about a matter that does not
concern you,
and do not sit with sinners when they
judge a case.

10 My child, do not busy yourself with
many matters;
if you multiply activities, you will not
be held blameless.
If you pursue, you will not overtake,
and by fleeing you will not escape.
11 There are those who work and struggle
and hurry,
but are so much the more in want.
12 There are others who are slow and need
help,

[a] Other ancient authorities add as verse 21, *The fear of the Lord is the beginning of acceptance; obduracy and pride are the beginning of rejection.*
[b] Heb: Gk *sin against*
[c] Heb Lat: Gk *their own life*

the same answer to opposite questions is a form of riddle, designed to provoke reflection. **26–27:** Boasting by those in need brings only shame. **28:** *Humility* is appropriate to the wise (cf. 11.1). **11.3:** *The bee,* for other comparisons between animal and human behaviors, see Prov 6.6–8; 30.15–19,24–31.

11.7–9: Avoid hasty judgments. See 5.11–12.

11.10–28: True wealth. Since God is the real source of wealth, it is foolish to rely on earthly riches for security (cf. Prov 13.11; 20.21; 23.4–5; Eccl 5.10–12). **10–13:** Divine favor (*the eyes of the Lord*), and not human activity

who lack strength and abound in poverty;
but the eyes of the Lord look kindly upon them;
he lifts them out of their lowly condition
13 and raises up their heads
to the amazement of the many.

14 Good things and bad, life and death,
poverty and wealth, come from the Lord.[a]
17 The Lord's gift remains with the devout,
and his favor brings lasting success.
18 One becomes rich through diligence and self-denial,
and the reward allotted to him is this:
19 when he says, "I have found rest,
and now I shall feast on my goods!"
he does not know how long it will be
until he leaves them to others and dies.

20 Stand by your agreement and attend to it,
and grow old in your work.
21 Do not wonder at the works of a sinner,
but trust in the Lord and keep at your job;
for it is easy in the sight of the Lord
to make the poor rich suddenly, in an instant.
22 The blessing of the Lord is[b] the reward of the pious,
and quickly God causes his blessing to flourish.
23 Do not say, "What do I need,
and what further benefit can be mine?"
24 Do not say, "I have enough,
and what harm can come to me now?"
25 In the day of prosperity, adversity is forgotten,
and in the day of adversity, prosperity is not remembered.
26 For it is easy for the Lord on the day of death
to reward individuals according to their conduct.
27 An hour's misery makes one forget past delights,
and at the close of one's life one's deeds are revealed.
28 Call no one happy before his death;
by how he ends, a person becomes known.[c]

29 Do not invite everyone into your home,
for many are the tricks of the crafty.
30 Like a decoy partridge in a cage, so is the mind of the proud,
and like spies they observe your weakness;[d]
31 for they lie in wait, turning good into evil,
and to worthy actions they attach blame.
32 From a spark many coals are kindled,
and a sinner lies in wait to shed blood.
33 Beware of scoundrels, for they devise evil,
and they may ruin your reputation forever.
34 Receive strangers into your home and they will stir up trouble for you,
and will make you a stranger to your own family.

12 If you do good, know to whom you do it,
and you will be thanked for your good deeds.
2 Do good to the devout, and you will be repaid—

[a] Other ancient authorities add as verses 15 and 16, *15 Wisdom, understanding, and knowledge of the law come from the Lord; affection and the ways of good works come from him. 16 Error and darkness were created with sinners; evil grows old with those who take pride in malice.*
[b] Heb: Gk *is in*
[c] Heb: Gk *and through his children a person becomes known*
[d] Heb: Gk *downfall*

alone, often brings success to some unlikely persons. **19:** A rich fool can be quickly deprived of material security by death (cf. 11.26–28; Eccl 2.21; 4.8; 5.12–14). **26–28:** The *reward* most likely refers to the sage's good name rather than to the last judgment and eternal rewards (22.11–22; 38.16–23; 41.1–13).

11.29–12.18: Caution in social relations. Even for those who approach them innocently and with good will, social relations can be full of danger. **29–34:** *Scoundrels* and *strangers* can ruin one's reputation and turn a whole household against its master. The Hebrew text makes a pun between "zar" (*stranger*) and "zahir" (*make you a stranger*). **12.1–7:** Reserve almsgiving for the *devout, humble,* and *good* (cf. 18.15–18; 29.8–13). **8–18:** A warning against potential enemies.

if not by them, certainly by the Most High.
3 No good comes to one who persists in evil
or to one who does not give alms.
4 Give to the devout, but do not help the sinner.
5 Do good to the humble, but do not give to the ungodly;
hold back their bread, and do not give it to them,
for by means of it they might subdue you;
then you will receive twice as much evil
for all the good you have done to them.
6 For the Most High also hates sinners
and will inflict punishment on the ungodly.[a]
7 Give to the one who is good, but do not help the sinner.
8 A friend is not known[b] in prosperity,
nor is an enemy hidden in adversity.
9 One's enemies are friendly[c] when one prospers,
but in adversity even one's friend disappears.
10 Never trust your enemy,
for like corrosion in copper, so is his wickedness.
11 Even if he humbles himself and walks bowed down,
take care to be on your guard against him.
Be to him like one who polishes a mirror,
to be sure it does not become completely tarnished.
12 Do not put him next to you,
or he may overthrow you and take your place.
Do not let him sit at your right hand,
or else he may try to take your own seat,
and at last you will realize the truth of my words,
and be stung by what I have said.

13 Who pities a snake charmer when he is bitten,
or all those who go near wild animals?
14 So no one pities a person who associates with a sinner
and becomes involved in the other's sins.
15 He stands by you for a while,
but if you falter, he will not be there.
16 An enemy speaks sweetly with his lips,
but in his heart he plans to throw you into a pit;
an enemy may have tears in his eyes,
but if he finds an opportunity he will never have enough of your blood.
17 If evil comes upon you, you will find him there ahead of you;
pretending to help, he will trip you up.
18 Then he will shake his head, and clap his hands,
and whisper much, and show his true face.

13 Whoever touches pitch gets dirty,
and whoever associates with a proud person becomes like him.
2 Do not lift a weight too heavy for you,
or associate with one mightier and richer than you.
How can the clay pot associate with the iron kettle?
The pot will strike against it and be smashed.
3 A rich person does wrong, and even adds insults;
a poor person suffers wrong, and must add apologies.
4 A rich person[d] will exploit you if you can be of use to him,
but if you are in need he will abandon you.
5 If you own something, he will live with you;
he will drain your resources without a qualm.
6 When he needs you he will deceive you,
and will smile at you and encourage you;

[a] Other ancient authorities add *and he is keeping them for the day of their punishment*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *punished*
[c] Heb: Gk *grieved*
[d] Gk *He*

13.1–23: Rich and poor. Associating with rich persons poses dangers to those dedicated to wisdom and fear of the Lord. **1–7:** The rich abuse and exploit the poor; they defile (like *pitch*) and destroy (like an *iron kettle* striking a *clay pot*) poor persons. Although a prominent citizen, Sirach speaks from the perspective of the poor

he will speak to you kindly and say,
"What do you need?"
7 He will embarrass you with his delicacies,
until he has drained you two or three times,
and finally he will laugh at you.
Should he see you afterwards, he will pass you by
and shake his head at you.

8 Take care not to be led astray
and humiliated when you are enjoying yourself.[a]
9 When an influential person invites you, be reserved,
and he will invite you more insistently.
10 Do not be forward, or you may be rebuffed;
do not stand aloof, or you will be forgotten.
11 Do not try to treat him as an equal,
or trust his lengthy conversations;
for he will test you by prolonged talk,
and while he smiles he will be examining you.
12 Cruel are those who do not keep your secrets;
they will not spare you harm or imprisonment.
13 Be on your guard and very careful,
for you are walking about with your own downfall.[b]

15 Every creature loves its like,
and every person the neighbor.
16 All living beings associate with their own kind,
and people stick close to those like themselves.
17 What does a wolf have in common with a lamb?
No more has a sinner with the devout.
18 What peace is there between a hyena and a dog?
And what peace between the rich and the poor?
19 Wild asses in the wilderness are the prey of lions;
likewise the poor are feeding grounds for the rich.
20 Humility is an abomination to the proud;
likewise the poor are an abomination to the rich.

21 When the rich person totters, he is supported by friends,
but when the humble[c] falls, he is pushed away even by friends.
22 If the rich person slips, many come to the rescue;
he speaks unseemly words, but they justify him.
If the humble person slips, they even criticize him;
he talks sense, but is not given a hearing.
23 The rich person speaks and all are silent;
they extol to the clouds what he says.
The poor person speaks and they say,
"Who is this fellow?"
And should he stumble, they even push him down.
24 Riches are good if they are free from sin;
poverty is evil only in the opinion of the ungodly.

25 The heart changes the countenance,
either for good or for evil.[d]
26 The sign of a happy heart is a cheerful face,

[a] Other ancient authorities read *in your folly*
[b] Other ancient authorities add as verse 14, *When you hear these things in your sleep, wake up! During all your life love the Lord, and call on him for your salvation.*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *poor*
[d] Other ancient authorities add *and a glad heart makes a cheerful countenance*

rather than from the perspective of the rich. **8–13:** In dealing with the rich and powerful, one must always be on guard, since they can easily bring about one's *downfall*; see also 31.12–18. Similar cautious advice is found in Egyptian wisdom literature (*Amenemope*, ch. 23), in Prov 23.1–3, and in later Jewish wisdom literature (*m. Abot* 2.3). **15–20:** The incompatibility between rich and poor is illustrated by comparisons taken from the animal kingdom, which serve to naturalize the social antagonism. **17:** Cf. Isa 11.6. **21–23:** The *rich* customarily receive better treatment than the *poor.*

13.24–14.2: Wealth and happiness. Happiness of *heart* (in biblical understanding where thinking and feeling take place) is reflected in a *cheerful face* and in a clear conscience.

but to devise proverbs requires painful thinking.

14 Happy are those who do not blunder with their lips,
and need not suffer remorse for sin.
[2] Happy are those whose hearts do not condemn them,
and who have not given up their hope.

[3] Riches are inappropriate for a small-minded person;
and of what use is wealth to a miser?
[4] What he denies himself he collects for others;
and others will live in luxury on his goods.
[5] If one is mean to himself, to whom will he be generous?
He will not enjoy his own riches.
[6] No one is worse than one who is grudging to himself;
this is the punishment for his meanness.
[7] If ever he does good, it is by mistake;
and in the end he reveals his meanness.
[8] The miser is an evil person;
he turns away and disregards people.
[9] The eye of the greedy person is not satisfied with his share;
greedy injustice withers the soul.
[10] A miser begrudges bread,
and it is lacking at his table.

[11] My child, treat yourself well, according to your means,
and present worthy offerings to the Lord.
[12] Remember that death does not tarry,
and the decree[a] of Hades has not been shown to you.
[13] Do good to friends before you die,
and reach out and give to them as much as you can.
[14] Do not deprive yourself of a day's enjoyment;
do not let your share of desired good pass by you.
[15] Will you not leave the fruit of your labors to another,
and what you acquired by toil to be divided by lot?
[16] Give, and take, and indulge yourself,
because in Hades one cannot look for luxury.
[17] All living beings become old like a garment,
for the decree[b] from of old is, "You must die!"
[18] Like abundant leaves on a spreading tree
that sheds some and puts forth others,
so are the generations of flesh and blood:
one dies and another is born.
[19] Every work decays and ceases to exist,
and the one who made it will pass away with it.

[20] Happy is the person who meditates on[c] wisdom
and reasons intelligently,
[21] who[d] reflects in his heart on her ways
and ponders her secrets,
[22] pursuing her like a hunter,
and lying in wait on her paths;
[23] who peers through her windows
and listens at her doors;
[24] who camps near her house
and fastens his tent peg to her walls;

[a] Heb Syr: Gk *covenant*
[b] Heb: Gk *covenant*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *dies in*
[d] The structure adopted in verses 21-27 follows the Heb

14.3–10: The miser. While devoted to making money, the *miser* never really enjoys life and so leads a miserable existence, doing harm to himself and little good for others (cf. Prov 11.24–26).

14.11–19: Money and death. Now is the time to use money to serve God, help others, and enjoy oneself. **12:** *Hades,* the abode of the dead; Sheol in Hebrew. **14:** Cf. Eccl 8.15; 9.7. **17:** *Like a garment,* cf. Ps 102.26; Isa 50.9. *The decree from of old,* see Gen 2.17; 3.3,19. **18–19:** Cf. Eccl 1.2–4; *Iliad* 6.146–49.

14.20–27: The search for wisdom. One who seeks and finds wisdom may be declared *happy* (cf. Prov 3.13). **20:** *Happy is* takes the form of a beatitude or makarism (cf. Ps 1.1; Prov 3.13; 8.34; etc.; Mt 5.3–11; Lk 6.20–23). **22–27:** The search for wisdom is compared to going on a hunt, camping out by *her house,* and finding her as a

25 who pitches his tent near her,
and so occupies an excellent lodging place;
26 who places his children under her shelter,
and lodges under her boughs;
27 who is sheltered by her from the heat,
and dwells in the midst of her glory.

15 Whoever fears the Lord will do this,
and whoever holds to the law will obtain wisdom.[a]
2 She will come to meet him like a mother,
and like a young bride she will welcome him.
3 She will feed him with the bread of learning,
and give him the water of wisdom to drink.
4 He will lean on her and not fall,
and he will rely on her and not be put to shame.
5 She will exalt him above his neighbors,
and will open his mouth in the midst of the assembly.
6 He will find gladness and a crown of rejoicing,
and will inherit an everlasting name.
7 The foolish will not obtain her,
and sinners will not see her.
8 She is far from arrogance,
and liars will never think of her.
9 Praise is unseemly on the lips of a sinner,
for it has not been sent from the Lord.
10 For in wisdom must praise be uttered,
and the Lord will make it prosper.

11 Do not say, "It was the Lord's doing that I fell away";
for he does not do[b] what he hates.
12 Do not say, "It was he who led me astray";
for he has no need of the sinful.
13 The Lord hates all abominations;
such things are not loved by those who fear him.
14 It was he who created humankind in the beginning,
and he left them in the power of their own free choice.
15 If you choose, you can keep the commandments,
and to act faithfully is a matter of your own choice.
16 He has placed before you fire and water;
stretch out your hand for whichever you choose.
17 Before each person are life and death,
and whichever one chooses will be given.
18 For great is the wisdom of the Lord;
he is mighty in power and sees everything;
19 his eyes are on those who fear him,
and he knows every human action.
20 He has not commanded anyone to be wicked,

[a] Gk *her*
[b] Heb: Gk *you ought not to do*

shady tree. **23:** *Peers through her windows*, cf. Song 2.9. **24:** *Her house,* cf. the description of Ben Sira's school as the "house of instruction" in 51.23; see also Prov 8.32–35. **26:** *Her boughs,* for wisdom as a tree, see 1.20; 24.13–17; Prov 3.18.

15.1–10: The benefits of wisdom. Wisdom is eager to be found and wants to lavish gifts on those who seek her out. **1:** The three major theological themes of Sirach—*fear of Lord, the law,* and *wisdom*—come together in this verse (cf. 1.1–30; 6.32–37; 24.23). **2–6:** Portrayed as a *mother* and as a *bride*, wisdom brings to those who seek her love, sustenance, security, success, and *an everlasting name* (immortality by remembrance). Cf. Prov 7.4; Wis 7.12; 8.2. **3:** *Bread* and *water*, cf. 1.16; 24.19–21; Prov 9.1–5; Isa 55.1–2. **7–10:** Wisdom has nothing to do with fools and sinners; only the wise can praise God properly.

15.11–20: Human choice and sin. Since God has given humans free will, they must take responsibility for their sins. **11–13:** For texts that could suggest that God makes people sin, see Ex 11.10 and 2 Sam 24.1. **14–17:** No attention is given here to Adam's sin (Gen 3.1–24) or the sins of "the sons of God" (Gen 6.1–4; but see Sir 16.7). Rather, the human person is regarded as free to choose between life and death (Deut 30.15–20) and so must be ready to accept the consequences. **14:** *Free choice* (Heb "yetser") is a technical term, sometimes used in a good sense (Isa 26.3; 1 Chr 29.18), but usually to refer to an evil tendency or inclination toward sin (Gen 6.5; 8.21; cf. 2 Esd 4.30–31). In postbiblical times the doctrine arose of a good and an evil "yetser" that every person possesses (cf. 37.3). **18–20:** God has no part in sin (cf. 15.11–13).

and he has not given anyone
permission to sin.

16 Do not desire a multitude of
worthless[a] children,
and do not rejoice in ungodly offspring.
2 If they multiply, do not rejoice in them,
unless the fear of the Lord is in them.
3 Do not trust in their survival,
or rely on their numbers;[b]
for one can be better than a thousand,
and to die childless is better than to
have ungodly children.
4 For through one intelligent person a city
can be filled with people,
but through a clan of outlaws it
becomes desolate.

5 Many such things my eye has seen,
and my ear has heard things more
striking than these.
6 In an assembly of sinners a fire is kindled,
and in a disobedient nation wrath
blazes up.
7 He did not forgive the ancient giants
who revolted in their might.
8 He did not spare the neighbors of Lot,
whom he loathed on account of their
arrogance.
9 He showed no pity on the doomed nation,
on those dispossessed because of their
sins;[c]
10 or on the six hundred thousand foot
soldiers
who assembled in their stubbornness.[d]
11 Even if there were only one stiff-necked
person,
it would be a wonder if he remained
unpunished.
For mercy and wrath are with the Lord;[e]
he is mighty to forgive—but he also
pours out wrath.
12 Great as is his mercy, so also is his
chastisement;
he judges a person according to his or
her deeds.
13 The sinner will not escape with plunder,
and the patience of the godly will not be
frustrated.
14 He makes room for every act of mercy;
everyone receives in accordance with
his or her deeds.[f]

17 Do not say, "I am hidden from the Lord,
and who from on high has me in
mind?
Among so many people I am unknown,
for what am I in a boundless creation?
18 Lo, heaven and the highest heaven,
the abyss and the earth, tremble at his
visitation![g]
19 The very mountains and the foundations
of the earth
quiver and quake when he looks upon
them.

[a] Heb: Gk *unprofitable*
[b] Other ancient authorities add *For you will groan in untimely mourning, and will know of their sudden end.*
[c] Other ancient authorities add *All these things he did to the hard-hearted nations, and by the multitude of his holy ones he was not appeased.*
[d] Other ancient authorities add *Chastising, showing mercy, striking, healing, the Lord persisted in mercy and discipline.*
[e] Gk *him*
[f] Other ancient authorities add *15 The Lord hardened Pharaoh so that he did not recognize him, in order that his works might be known under heaven. 16 His mercy is manifest to the whole of creation, and he divided his light and darkness with a plumb line.*
[g] Other ancient authorities add *The whole world past and present is in his will.*

16.1–23: Responsibility for sin. God holds both individuals and groups responsible for their sins. **1–4:** In a society in which having many children was regarded as a sign of divine blessing (Prov 17.6; Ps 127.3–5), the author counters that one good child *can be better than a thousand* bad ones. Cf. 40.15–16; 41.5–9. **5–10:** God has punished groups of sinners such as *the ancient giants* (Gen 6.1–4), *the neighbors of Lot* (Gen 18.16–19.29), *the doomed nation* of Canaanites (Lev 18.3,24–25), and *the six hundred thousand foot soldiers* in the desert (Ex 12.37; Num 14.38). **11–14:** God judges individuals according to their deeds (Ps 62.12; Ezek 18). **15–23:** The speaker quoted here claims that God is distant and has no concern for individuals and their moral responsibility (cf. Wis 2.1–20). The target may be Qoheleth/Ecclesiastes. The monologue is prefaced by an admonition (*Do not say*) and is concluded with a judgment (16.23) that whoever says such things is a fool.

20 But no human mind can grasp this,
and who can comprehend his ways?
21 Like a tempest that no one can see,
so most of his works are concealed.[a]
22 Who is to announce his acts of justice?
Or who can await them? For his decree[b]
is far off."[c]
23 Such are the thoughts of one devoid of
understanding;
a senseless and misguided person
thinks foolishly.

24 Listen to me, my child, and acquire
knowledge,
and pay close attention to my words.
25 I will impart discipline precisely[d]
and declare knowledge accurately.

26 When the Lord created[e] his works from
the beginning,
and, in making them, determined their
boundaries,
27 he arranged his works in an eternal order,
and their dominion[f] for all generations.
They neither hunger nor grow weary,
and they do not abandon their tasks.
28 They do not crowd one another,
and they never disobey his word.
29 Then the Lord looked upon the earth,
and filled it with his good things.
30 With all kinds of living beings he
covered its surface,
and into it they must return.

17 The Lord created human beings out of
earth,
and makes them return to it again.
2 He gave them a fixed number of days,
but granted them authority over
everything on the earth.[g]
3 He endowed them with strength like his
own,[h]
and made them in his own image.
4 He put the fear of them[i] in all living
beings,
and gave them dominion over beasts
and birds.[j]
6 Discretion and tongue and eyes,
ears and a mind for thinking he gave
them.
7 He filled them with knowledge and
understanding,
and showed them good and evil.
8 He put the fear of him into[k] their hearts
to show them the majesty of his works.[l]
10 And they will praise his holy name,
9 to proclaim the grandeur of his works.
11 He bestowed knowledge upon them,
and allotted to them the law of life.[m]
12 He established with them an eternal
covenant,
and revealed to them his decrees.

a Meaning of Gk uncertain: Heb Syr *If I sin, no eye can see me, and if I am disloyal all in secret, who is to know?*
b Heb *the decree*: Gk *the covenant*
c Other ancient authorities add *and a scrutiny for all comes at the end*
d Gk *by weight*
e Heb: Gk *judged*
f Or *elements*
g Lat: Gk *it*
h Lat: Gk *proper to them*
i Syr: Gk *him*
j Other ancient authorities add as verse 5, *They obtained the use of the five faculties of the Lord; as sixth he distributed to them the gift of mind, and as seventh, reason, the interpreter of one's faculties.*
k Other ancient authorities read *He set his eye upon*
l Other ancient authorities add *and he gave them to boast of his marvels forever*
m Other ancient authorities add *so that they may know that they who are alive now are mortal*

16.24–17.24: Creation and responsibility. God has put order into the world that can be discerned by reason and the law of Moses (the Torah), and God knows and judges the actions of every person. **16.26–17.4:** A paraphrase of Gen 1–3 and related texts, with an emphasis on the orderliness of creation. **26:** *Beginning,* Gen 1.1; Prov 8.22–23. *Their boundaries*, Job 38.10; Pss 104.9; 148.6. **27b–28:** Apparently referring to the heavenly bodies; see Ps 104.19; but cf. *1 En* 21. **29:** *Good things,* Gen 1.4,10,12, etc. **30:** *Must return,* 17.1; Gen 3.19. **17.1:** *Out of earth,* Gen 2.7 **2:** *Authority,* Gen 1.28. **3:** *His own image,* Gen 1.26. **4:** *Dominion,* Gen 1.28; 9.2. **6–10:** God has endowed humans with reason, and their proper response to God is *fear* and *praise* of the Lord. Thus there is no excuse for sin. **11–14:** The *law* (the Torah) is a further gift from God, and it enables humans to discern good from evil. **11:** *The law of life,* 45.5; Deut 30.15–20. **12–13:** When God made a *covenant* with the Israelites on Mount Sinai, they saw his *glorious majesty* (Ex 19).

13 Their eyes saw his glorious majesty,
and their ears heard the glory of his voice.
14 He said to them, "Beware of all evil."
And he gave commandment to each of them concerning the neighbor.
15 Their ways are always known to him;
they will not be hid from his eyes.[a]
17 He appointed a ruler for every nation,
but Israel is the Lord's own portion.[b]
19 All their works are as clear as the sun before him,
and his eyes are ever upon their ways.
20 Their iniquities are not hidden from him,
and all their sins are before the Lord.[c]
22 One's almsgiving is like a signet ring with the Lord,[d]
and he will keep a person's kindness like the apple of his eye.[e]
23 Afterward he will rise up and repay them,
and he will bring their recompense on their heads.
24 Yet to those who repent he grants a return,
and he encourages those who are losing hope.

25 Turn back to the Lord and forsake your sins;
pray in his presence and lessen your offense.
26 Return to the Most High and turn away from iniquity,[f]
and hate intensely what he abhors.
27 Who will sing praises to the Most High in Hades
in place of the living who give thanks?
28 From the dead, as from one who does not exist, thanksgiving has ceased;
those who are alive and well sing the Lord's praises.
29 How great is the mercy of the Lord,
and his forgiveness for those who return to him!
30 For not everything is within human capability,
since human beings are not immortal.
31 What is brighter than the sun? Yet it can be eclipsed.
So flesh and blood devise evil.
32 He marshals the host of the height of heaven;
but all human beings are dust and ashes.

18 He who lives forever created the whole universe;
2 the Lord alone is just.[g]
4 To none has he given power to proclaim his works;
and who can search out his mighty deeds?
5 Who can measure his majestic power?
And who can fully recount his mercies?
6 It is not possible to diminish or increase them,
nor is it possible to fathom the wonders of the Lord.

[a] Other ancient authorities add [16]*Their ways from youth tend toward evil, and they are unable to make for themselves hearts of flesh in place of their stony hearts.* [17]*For in the division of the nations of the whole earth, he appointed*

[b] Other ancient authorities add as verse 18, *whom, being his firstborn, he brings up with discipline, and allotting to him the light of his love, he does not neglect him.*

[c] Other ancient authorities add as verse 21, *But the Lord, who is gracious and knows how they are formed, has neither left them nor abandoned them, but has spared them.*

[d] Gk *him*

[e] Other ancient authorities add *apportioning repentance to his sons and daughters*

[f] Other ancient authorities add *for he will lead you out of darkness to the light of health.*

[g] Other ancient authorities add *and there is no other beside him;* [3]*he steers the world with the span of his hand, and all things obey his will; for he is king of all things by his power, separating among them the holy things from the profane.*

14: *Neighbor,* Ex 20.13–17; Lev 19.18; Deut 5.17–21. **15–23:** Although God will judge each person with justice, almsgiving and repentance can delay or even temper God's judgment. **17:** *The Lord's own portion,* Deut 32.8–9. **22:** *Signet ring* (Jer 22.24; Hag 2.23) and *apple of his eye* (Deut 32.10; Ps 17.8; Prov 7.2) suggest a close personal relationship with God.

17.25–32: A call to repent. God's mercy makes repentance possible. **27:** *Hades,* Heb "Sheol," the abode of the dead, where there is no praising God (Pss 6.5; 30.9; 88.10–12; 115.17–18; Isa 38.18; Bar 2.17). **31:** *Eclipsed,* if the sun can fail by way of an eclipse, so mortal humans can also be expected to fail. **32:** *Dust and ashes*, see 10.9n.

18.1–14: God's majesty and mercy. The all-powerful and just God shows mercy to weak and mortal humans.

7 When human beings have finished, they
are just beginning,
and when they stop, they are still
perplexed.
8 What are human beings, and of what use
are they?
What is good in them, and what is evil?
9 The number of days in their life is great if
they reach one hundred years.[a]
10 Like a drop of water from the sea and a
grain of sand,
so are a few years among the days of
eternity.
11 That is why the Lord is patient with them
and pours out his mercy upon them.
12 He sees and recognizes that their end is
miserable;
therefore he grants them forgiveness all
the more.
13 The compassion of human beings is for
their neighbors,
but the compassion of the Lord is for
every living thing.
He rebukes and trains and teaches them,
and turns them back, as a shepherd his
flock.
14 He has compassion on those who accept
his discipline
and who are eager for his precepts.

15 My child, do not mix reproach with your
good deeds,
or spoil your gift by harsh words.
16 Does not the dew give relief from the
scorching heat?
So a word is better than a gift.
17 Indeed, does not a word surpass a good gift?
Both are to be found in a gracious person.
18 A fool is ungracious and abusive,
and the gift of a grudging giver makes
the eyes dim.
19 Before you speak, learn;
and before you fall ill, take care of your
health.
20 Before judgment comes, examine yourself;
and at the time of scrutiny you will find
forgiveness.
21 Before falling ill, humble yourself;
and when you have sinned, repent.
22 Let nothing hinder you from paying a
vow promptly,
and do not wait until death to be
released from it.
23 Before making a vow, prepare yourself;
do not be like one who puts the Lord to
the test.
24 Think of his wrath on the day of death,
and of the moment of vengeance when
he turns away his face.
25 In the time of plenty think of the time of
hunger;
in days of wealth think of poverty and
need.
26 From morning to evening conditions
change;
all things move swiftly before the Lord.

27 One who is wise is cautious in
everything;
when sin is all around, one guards
against wrongdoing.
28 Every intelligent person knows wisdom,
and praises the one who finds her.
29 Those who are skilled in words become
wise themselves,
and pour forth apt proverbs.[b]

[a] Other ancient authorities add *but the death of each one is beyond the calculation of all*

[b] Other ancient authorities add *Better is confidence in the one Lord than clinging with a dead heart to a dead one.*

8: *What are human beings,* Ps 8.4. **9:** *The number of days,* Ps. 90.10. **13:** *As a shepherd his flock,* cf. Pss 23.1–4; 80.1; Isa 40.11; Ezek 34.11–16.

18.15–18: Words and gifts. Good gifts can be spoiled by bad words, whereas good words are better than material gifts and are the mark of a gracious person. For more texts on speech, see 18.19–29; 19.4–17; 20.1–8,18–31.

18.19–29: Reflection and action. Before, during, and after action there is need for planning and assessment. **22–23:** For similar advice see Prov 20.25; Eccl 5.4–5. *Test*, cf. Ex 17.2; Deut 6.16. **29:** *Apt proverbs* are intended as both interpretations of life experiences and guides to living wisely and correctly.

18.30–19.3: Self-control. Matters that need control are *base desires* such as greed and lust. Their negative effects include shame, poverty, debauchery (Prov 20.1; 31.3–5), and death.

SELF-CONTROL[a]

30 Do not follow your base desires,
but restrain your appetites.
31 If you allow your soul to take pleasure in base desire,
it will make you the laughingstock of your enemies.
32 Do not revel in great luxury,
or you may become impoverished by its expense.
33 Do not become a beggar by feasting with borrowed money,
when you have nothing in your purse.[b]

19 The one who does this[c] will not become rich;
one who despises small things will fail little by little.
2 Wine and women lead intelligent men astray,
and the man who consorts with prostitutes is reckless.
3 Decay and worms will take possession of him,
and the reckless person will be snatched away.

4 One who trusts others too quickly has a shallow mind,
and one who sins does wrong to himself.
5 One who rejoices in wickedness[d] will be condemned,[e]
6 but one who hates gossip has less evil.
7 Never repeat a conversation,
and you will lose nothing at all.
8 With friend or foe do not report it,
and unless it would be a sin for you, do not reveal it;
9 for someone may have heard you and watched you,
and in time will hate you.
10 Have you heard something? Let it die with you.
Be brave, it will not make you burst!
11 Having heard something, the fool suffers birth pangs
like a woman in labor with a child.
12 Like an arrow stuck in a person's thigh,
so is gossip inside a fool.

13 Question a friend; perhaps he did not do it;
or if he did, so that he may not do it again.
14 Question a neighbor; perhaps he did not say it;
or if he said it, so that he may not repeat it.
15 Question a friend, for often it is slander;
so do not believe everything you hear.
16 A person may make a slip without intending it.
Who has not sinned with his tongue?
17 Question your neighbor before you threaten him;
and let the law of the Most High take its course.[f]

20 The whole of wisdom is fear of the Lord,
and in all wisdom there is the fulfillment of the law.[g]

[a] This heading is included in the Gk text.
[b] Other ancient authorities add *for you will be plotting against your own life*
[c] Heb: Gk *A worker who is a drunkard*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *heart*
[e] Other ancient authorities add *but one who withstands pleasures crowns his life. [6]One who controls the tongue will live without strife,*
[f] Other ancient authorities add *and do not be angry. [18]The fear of the Lord is the beginning of acceptance, and wisdom obtains his love. [19]The knowledge of the Lord's commandments is life-giving discipline; and those who do what is pleasing to him enjoy the fruit of the tree of immortality.*
[g] Other ancient authorities add *and the knowledge of his omnipotence. [21]When a slave says to his master, "I will not act as you wish," even if later he does it, he angers the one who supports him.*

19.4–17: The evils of gossip. Loose talk is destructive not only to its subject but also to its purveyors. **4–12:** A wise person should not accept slander or gossip too quickly and repeat it *unless it would be a sin* (19.8) to withhold it (cf. Lev 5.1). **13–17:** When a *friend* or *neighbor* is the subject of gossip, it is best to question that person directly. **17:** *The law of the Most High,* cf. Lev 19.17–18.

18–19: The verses included in the translators' note to 19.17 are generally regarded as a later addition to the text, since they refer explicitly to *immortality*, which is inconsistent with Sirach's statements elsewhere about the finality of death.

19.20–30: Wisdom and cleverness. Without *fear of the Lord* and fulfilling God's *law,* what may seem like

22 The knowledge of wickedness is not wisdom,
nor is there prudence in the counsel of sinners.
23 There is a cleverness that is detestable,
and there is a fool who merely lacks wisdom.
24 Better are the God-fearing who lack understanding
than the highly intelligent who transgress the law.
25 There is a cleverness that is exact but unjust,
and there are people who abuse favors to gain a verdict.
26 There is the villain bowed down in mourning,
but inwardly he is full of deceit.
27 He hides his face and pretends not to hear,
but when no one notices, he will take advantage of you.
28 Even if lack of strength keeps him from sinning,
he will nevertheless do evil when he finds the opportunity.
29 A person is known by his appearance,
and a sensible person is known when first met, face to face.
30 A person's attire and hearty laughter,
and the way he walks, show what he is.

20 There is a rebuke that is untimely,
and there is the person who is wise enough to keep silent.
2 How much better it is to rebuke than to fume!
3 And the one who admits his fault will be kept from failure.
4 Like a eunuch lusting to violate a girl
is the person who does right under compulsion.
5 Some people keep silent and are thought to be wise,
while others are detested for being talkative.
6 Some people keep silent because they have nothing to say,
while others keep silent because they know when to speak.
7 The wise remain silent until the right moment,
but a boasting fool misses the right moment.
8 Whoever talks too much is detested,
and whoever pretends to authority is hated.[a]

9 There may be good fortune for a person in adversity,
and a windfall may result in a loss.
10 There is the gift that profits you nothing,
and the gift to be paid back double.
11 There are losses for the sake of glory,
and there are some who have raised their heads from humble circumstances.
12 Some buy much for little,
but pay for it seven times over.
13 The wise make themselves beloved by only few words,[b]
but the courtesies of fools are wasted.
14 A fool's gift will profit you nothing,[c]
for he looks for recompense sevenfold.[d]
15 He gives little and upbraids much;
he opens his mouth like a town crier.
Today he lends and tomorrow he asks it back;
such a one is hateful to God and humans.[e]

[a] Other ancient authorities add *How good it is to show repentance when you are reproved, for so you will escape deliberate sin!*
[b] Heb: Gk *by words*
[c] Other ancient authorities add *so it is with the envious who give under compulsion*
[d] Syr: Gk *he has many eyes instead of one*
[e] Other ancient authorities lack *to God and humans*

wisdom may be only *detestable cleverness.* **20:** *Fear of the Lord*, cf. Prov 1.7; 9.10. **29:** A person's *appearance* may be either deceiving or revealing.

20.1–31: Speech and related topics. These sayings concerning rebukes, silence, gifts and money, the fool, inappropriate speech, shame, lies, and other matters are connected more by catchwords and topics than by logical progression or argument. The appeal throughout is to human experience and natural reasoning, not to fear of the Lord or the commandments. **4:** *Like a eunuch,* a sinner cannot be forced to do *right* any more than a eunuch can engage in sexual intercourse. **5–6:** *Keep silent,* Prov 17.27–28. **9–12:** Although wisdom literature attempted to

16 The fool says, "I have no friends,
and I get no thanks for my good deeds.
Those who eat my bread are evil-
tongued."
17 How many will ridicule him, and how
often![a]

18 A slip on the pavement is better than a
slip of the tongue;
the downfall of the wicked will occur
just as speedily.
19 A coarse person is like an inappropriate
story,
continually on the lips of the ignorant.
20 A proverb from a fool's lips will be rejected,
for he does not tell it at the proper time.

21 One may be prevented from sinning by
poverty;
so when he rests he feels no remorse.
22 One may lose his life through shame,
or lose it because of human respect.[b]
23 Another out of shame makes promises
to a friend,
and so makes an enemy for nothing.

24 A lie is an ugly blot on a person;
it is continually on the lips of the
ignorant.
25 A thief is preferable to a habitual liar,
but the lot of both is ruin.
26 A liar's way leads to disgrace,
and his shame is ever with him.

PROVERBIAL SAYINGS[c]

27 The wise person advances himself by his
words,
and one who is sensible pleases the great.
28 Those who cultivate the soil heap up
their harvest,
and those who please the great atone
for injustice.
29 Favors and gifts blind the eyes of the wise;
like a muzzle on the mouth they stop
reproofs.
30 Hidden wisdom and unseen treasure,
of what value is either?
31 Better are those who hide their folly
than those who hide their wisdom.[d]

21 Have you sinned, my child? Do so no
more,
but ask forgiveness for your past sins.
2 Flee from sin as from a snake;
for if you approach sin, it will bite you.
Its teeth are lion's teeth,
and can destroy human lives.
3 All lawlessness is like a two-edged sword;
there is no healing for the wound it inflicts.

4 Panic and insolence will waste away riches;
thus the house of the proud will be laid
waste.[e]
5 The prayer of the poor goes from their
lips to the ears of God,[f]
and his judgment comes speedily.
6 Those who hate reproof walk in the
sinner's steps,
but those who fear the Lord repent in
their heart.
7 The mighty in speech are widely known;
when they slip, the sensible person
knows it.

8 Whoever builds his house with other
people's money
is like one who gathers stones for his
burial mound.[g]

a Other ancient authorities add *for he has not honestly received what he has, and what he does not have is unimportant to him*
b Other ancient authorities read *his foolish look*
c This heading is included in the Gk text.
d Other ancient authorities add *32 Unwearied endurance in seeking the Lord is better than a masterless charioteer of one's own life.*
e Other ancient authorities read *uprooted*
f Gk *his ears*
g Other ancient authorities read *for the winter*

discern clear cause-and-effect relationships, it also acknowledged the possibility of paradox and uncertainty; cf. Prov 14.12; 16.25; Eccl 9.11–12. **24–26:** For the evil effects of a *lie,* see 7.13; 25.2; Prov 6.17; 12.22; Ps 5.6.

21.1–10: The destructive effects of sin. Sin can destroy a person and lead to shame and death. **2–3:** Sin is subtle and tempting like a *snake* (Gen 3.1–5), strong and destructive like a *lion's teeth* (27.10), and deadly like a *two-edged sword* (Prov 5.4). **5:** The prayer of the poor, cf. 35.17–21. **9:** *Bundle of tow,* that is, combustible fibers. *Fire* here refers to the sinner's destruction in this life rather than punishment after death. **10:** *Hades,* the abode

9 An assembly of the wicked is like a
bundle of tow,
and their end is a blazing fire.
10 The way of sinners is paved with smooth
stones,
but at its end is the pit of Hades.

11 Whoever keeps the law controls his
thoughts,
and the fulfillment of the fear of the
Lord is wisdom.
12 The one who is not clever cannot be
taught,
but there is a cleverness that increases
bitterness.
13 The knowledge of the wise will increase
like a flood,
and their counsel like a life-giving spring.
14 The mind[a] of a fool is like a broken jar;
it can hold no knowledge.

15 When an intelligent person hears a wise
saying,
he praises it and adds to it;
when a fool[b] hears it, he laughs at[c] it
and throws it behind his back.
16 A fool's chatter is like a burden on a
journey,
but delight is found in the speech of the
intelligent.
17 The utterance of a sensible person is
sought in the assembly,
and they ponder his words in their
minds.

18 Like a house in ruins is wisdom to a fool,
and to the ignorant, knowledge is talk
that has no meaning.
19 To a senseless person education is fetters
on his feet,
and like manacles on his right hand.
20 A fool raises his voice when he laughs,
but the wise[d] smile quietly.

21 To the sensible person education is like a
golden ornament,
and like a bracelet on the right arm.

22 The foot of a fool rushes into a house,
but an experienced person waits
respectfully outside.
23 A boor peers into the house from the
door,
but a cultivated person remains outside.
24 It is ill-mannered for a person to listen
at a door;
the discreet would be grieved by the
disgrace.

25 The lips of babblers speak of what is not
their concern,[e]
but the words of the prudent are
weighed in the balance.
26 The mind of fools is in their mouth,
but the mouth of the wise is in[f] their
mind.
27 When an ungodly person curses an
adversary,[g]
he curses himself.
28 A whisperer degrades himself
and is hated in his neighborhood.

22 The idler is like a filthy stone,
and every one hisses at his disgrace.
2 The idler is like the filth of dunghills;
anyone that picks it up will shake it off
his hand.

[a] Syr Lat: Gk *entrails*
[b] Syr: Gk *reveler*
[c] Syr: Gk *dislikes*
[d] Syr Lat: Gk *clever*
[e] Other ancient authorities read *of strangers speak of these things*
[f] Other ancient authorities omit *in*
[g] Or *curses Satan*

of the dead (Heb "Sheol").

21.11–28: The sage and the fool. The opening saying gives the series of comparisons a specifically Jewish religious context by linking them to the *law, fear of the Lord,* and *wisdom*—the major themes of the book. Otherwise, the appeal is to common human experience and reason. The contrasts between the sage and the fool are especially evident with regard to speech (21.16–17,25–28), attitudes toward education (21.15,19,21), and behavior (21.22–24).

22.1–18: Dealing with fools. While the *idler* and the *fool* can be avoided, dealing with one's own foolish children is especially difficult. **1:** *Filthy stone,* a rock used for wiping oneself after a bowel movement. **3–6:** *Daughter,* sons were prized in Ben Sira's patriarchal society, whereas daughters were often regarded as a source of trouble for their

[3] It is a disgrace to be the father of an
undisciplined son,
and the birth of a daughter is a loss.
[4] A sensible daughter obtains a husband of
her own,
but one who acts shamefully is a grief
to her father.
[5] An impudent daughter disgraces father
and husband,
and is despised by both.
[6] Like music in time of mourning is ill-
timed conversation,
but a thrashing and discipline are at all
times wisdom.[a]

[9] Whoever teaches a fool is like one who
glues potsherds together,
or who rouses a sleeper from deep
slumber.
[10] Whoever tells a story to a fool tells it to a
drowsy man;
and at the end he will say, "What is it?"
[11] Weep for the dead, for he has left the
light behind;
and weep for the fool, for he has left
intelligence behind.
Weep less bitterly for the dead, for he is at
rest;
but the life of the fool is worse than death.
[12] Mourning for the dead lasts seven days,
but for the foolish or the ungodly it
lasts all the days of their lives.

[13] Do not talk much with a senseless person
or visit an unintelligent person.[b]
Stay clear of him, or you may have trouble,
and be spattered when he shakes
himself off.
Avoid him and you will find rest,
and you will never be wearied by his
lack of sense.

[14] What is heavier than lead?
And what is its name except "Fool"?
[15] Sand, salt, and a piece of iron
are easier to bear than a stupid person.

[16] A wooden beam firmly bonded into a
building
is not loosened by an earthquake;
so the mind firmly resolved after due
reflection
will not be afraid in a crisis.
[17] A mind settled on an intelligent thought
is like stucco decoration that makes a
wall smooth.
[18] Fences[c] set on a high place
will not stand firm against the wind;
so a timid mind with a fool's resolve
will not stand firm against any fear.

[19] One who pricks the eye brings tears,
and one who pricks the heart makes
clear its feelings.
[20] One who throws a stone at birds scares
them away,
and one who reviles a friend destroys a
friendship.
[21] Even if you draw your sword against a
friend,
do not despair, for there is a way back.
[22] If you open your mouth against your
friend,
do not worry, for reconciliation is
possible.

[a] Other ancient authorities add [7]*Children who are brought up in a good life, conceal the lowly birth of their parents.* [8]*Children who are disdainfully and boorishly haughty stain the nobility of their kindred.*
[b] Other ancient authorities add *For being without sense he will despise everything about you*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *Pebbles*

fathers (cf. 7.24–25; 42.9–13). **6:** *Thrashing,* corporal punishment was acceptable in this society (30.1–13; Prov 13.24; 23.13–14). **7–8:** Translated in the marginal notes, these verses are probably not part of the original composition. **9:** *Glues potsherds together,* reassembling a broken clay pot is futile and nearly impossible. **11–12:** *The fool* is more deserving of pity and mourning than a dead person (cf. 38.16–23). **13:** *Avoid him,* the best strategy for dealing with a fool. **14–15:** The comparisons illustrate how burdensome a fool can be (cf. 21.16). Verse 14 has the structure of a riddle. **16–18:** *A fool's resolve,* the comparisons contrast the strong resolve of the sage and the weak resolve of the fool.

22.19–26: Preserving friendships. Friendships are best preserved by keeping confidences and avoiding harsh words. A true friend remains faithful both in prosperity and in hard times (cf. 6.5–17; 9.10–16; 19.13–17; 27.16–21; 37.1–6). **19:** *Eye,* just as the eye is sensitive to being hurt, so the heart (the place of thinking and feeling) suffers and expresses its own hurt *feelings.*

But as for reviling, arrogance, disclosure of
secrets, or a treacherous blow—
in these cases any friend will take to
flight.

[23] Gain the trust of your neighbor in his
poverty,
so that you may rejoice with him in his
prosperity.
Stand by him in time of distress,
so that you may share with him in his
inheritance.[a]
[24] The vapor and smoke of the furnace
precede the fire;
so insults precede bloodshed.
[25] I am not ashamed to shelter a friend,
and I will not hide from him.
[26] But if harm should come to me because
of him,
whoever hears of it will beware of him.

[27] Who will set a guard over my mouth,
and an effective seal upon my lips,
so that I may not fall because of them,
and my tongue may not destroy me?

23 O Lord, Father and Master of my life,
do not abandon me to their designs,
and do not let me fall because of them!
[2] Who will set whips over my thoughts,
and the discipline of wisdom over my
mind,
so as not to spare me in my errors,
and not overlook my[b] sins?
[3] Otherwise my mistakes may be multiplied,
and my sins may abound,
and I may fall before my adversaries,
and my enemy may rejoice over me.[c]
[4] O Lord, Father and God of my life,
do not give me haughty eyes,
[5] and remove evil desire from me.
[6] Let neither gluttony nor lust overcome me,
and do not give me over to shameless
passion.

DISCIPLINE OF THE TONGUE[d]

[7] Listen, my children, to instruction
concerning the mouth;
the one who observes it will never be
caught.
[8] Sinners are overtaken through their
lips;
by them the reviler and the arrogant are
tripped up.
[9] Do not accustom your mouth to oaths,
nor habitually utter the name of the
Holy One;
[10] for as a servant who is constantly under
scrutiny
will not lack bruises,
so also the person who always swears and
utters the Name
will never be cleansed[e] from sin.
[11] The one who swears many oaths is full of
iniquity,
and the scourge will not leave his
house.
If he swears in error, his sin remains on
him,
and if he disregards it, he sins doubly;
if he swears a false oath, he will not be
justified,
for his house will be filled with
calamities.

[12] There is a manner of speaking
comparable to death;[f]
may it never be found in the inheritance
of Jacob!
Such conduct will be far from the godly,
and they will not wallow in sins.
[13] Do not accustom your mouth to coarse,
foul language,
for it involves sinful speech.

[a] Other ancient authorities add *For one should not always despise restricted circumstances, or admire a rich person who is stupid.*
[b] Gk *their*
[c] Other ancient authorities add *From them the hope of your mercy is remote*
[d] This heading is included in the Gk text.
[e] Syr *be free*
[f] Other ancient authorities read *clothed about with death*

22.27–23.6: Prayers for self-control. Two short units consisting of a question and a prayer ask for God's help in the areas of speech and sexuality. **23.1,4:** *O Lord, Father,* cf. 51.10.

23.7–15: Sins of speech. Recognition of the need for self-control in matters of speech flows from the question and prayer in 22.27–23.1. **9:** *Oaths,* for avoiding rash or false oaths sworn in God's *name,* see Ex 20.7; Lev

14 Remember your father and mother
when you sit among the great,
or you may forget yourself in their
presence,
and behave like a fool through bad habit;
then you will wish that you had never
been born,
and you will curse the day of your birth.
15 Those who are accustomed to using
abusive language
will never become disciplined as long as
they live.

16 Two kinds of individuals multiply sins,
and a third incurs wrath.
Hot passion that blazes like a fire
will not be quenched until it burns
itself out;
one who commits fornication with his
near of kin
will never cease until the fire burns
him up.
17 To a fornicator all bread is sweet;
he will never weary until he dies.
18 The one who sins against his marriage
bed
says to himself, "Who can see me?
Darkness surrounds me, the walls hide me,
and no one sees me. Why should I
worry?
The Most High will not remember sins."
19 His fear is confined to human eyes
and he does not realize that the eyes of
the Lord
are ten thousand times brighter than
the sun;
they look upon every aspect of human
behavior
and see into hidden corners.
20 Before the universe was created, it was
known to him,
and so it is since its completion.
21 This man will be punished in the streets
of the city,
and where he least suspects it, he will
be seized.

22 So it is with a woman who leaves her
husband
and presents him with an heir by
another man.
23 For first of all, she has disobeyed the law
of the Most High;
second, she has committed an offense
against her husband;
and third, through her fornication she has
committed adultery
and brought forth children by another
man.
24 She herself will be brought before the
assembly,
and her punishment will extend to her
children.
25 Her children will not take root,
and her branches will not bear fruit.
26 She will leave behind an accursed
memory
and her disgrace will never be blotted
out.
27 Those who survive her will recognize
that nothing is better than the fear of
the Lord,
and nothing sweeter than to heed the
commandments of the Lord.[a]

THE PRAISE OF WISDOM[b]

24 Wisdom praises herself,
and tells of her glory in the midst of
her people.

[a] Other ancient authorities add as verse 28, *It is a great honor to follow God, and to be received by him is long life.*

[b] This heading is included in the Gk text.

5.4; Deut 5.11. **12:** *Death,* the biblical penalty for blasphemy (Lev 24.16). *The inheritance of Jacob,* the Israelites. **14:** *Curse the day of your birth,* see Job 3.3–5; Jer 20.14–18.

23.16–27: Sexual sins. This unit flows from the question and prayer in 23.2–6. **16–17:** *Two kinds . . . a third,* the numerical proverb (cf. 25.1–2,7–11; 26.5–6,28; 50.25–26) condemns three kinds of sexual sins: *hot passion,* incest, and *fornication.* **18–21:** How adulterers delude themselves. **21:** *Punished,* cf. Lev 20.10; Deut 22.22–27. **22–27:** An adulteress who bears a child by another man offends both God and her husband (Ex 20.14; Deut. 5.18). **24:** *Before the assembly,* cf. Deut 22.22–24. **27:** The punishments visited upon those who commit adultery highlight the importance of the *fear of the Lord* and God's *commandments.*

24.1–22: Wisdom praises herself. Wisdom is personified as a female figure (cf. Prov 8.22–36; Job 28; Bar

[2] In the assembly of the Most High she
opens her mouth,
and in the presence of his hosts she
tells of her glory:
[3] "I came forth from the mouth of the Most
High,
and covered the earth like a mist.
[4] I dwelt in the highest heavens,
and my throne was in a pillar of cloud.
[5] Alone I compassed the vault of heaven
and traversed the depths of the abyss.
[6] Over waves of the sea, over all the earth,
and over every people and nation I have
held sway.[a]
[7] Among all these I sought a resting place;
in whose territory should I abide?

[8] "Then the Creator of all things gave me a
command,
and my Creator chose the place for my
tent.
He said, 'Make your dwelling in Jacob,
and in Israel receive your inheritance.'
[9] Before the ages, in the beginning, he
created me,
and for all the ages I shall not cease to be.
[10] In the holy tent I ministered before him,
and so I was established in Zion.
[11] Thus in the beloved city he gave me a
resting place,
and in Jerusalem was my domain.
[12] I took root in an honored people,
in the portion of the Lord, his heritage.

[13] "I grew tall like a cedar in Lebanon,
and like a cypress on the heights of
Hermon.
[14] I grew tall like a palm tree in En-gedi,[b]
and like rosebushes in Jericho;
like a fair olive tree in the field,
and like a plane tree beside water[c] I
grew tall.
[15] Like cassia and camel's thorn I gave forth
perfume,
and like choice myrrh I spread my
fragrance,
like galbanum, onycha, and stacte,
and like the odor of incense in the tent.
[16] Like a terebinth I spread out my branches,
and my branches are glorious and
graceful.
[17] Like the vine I bud forth delights,
and my blossoms become glorious and
abundant fruit.[d]

[19] "Come to me, you who desire me,
and eat your fill of my fruits.
[20] For the memory of me is sweeter than
honey,
and the possession of me sweeter than
the honeycomb.
[21] Those who eat of me will hunger for more,
and those who drink of me will thirst
for more.
[22] Whoever obeys me will not be put to
shame,
and those who work with me will not
sin."

[a] Other ancient authorities read *I have acquired a possession*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *on the beaches*
[c] Other ancient authorities omit *beside water*
[d] Other ancient authorities add as verse 18, *I am the mother of beautiful love, of fear, of knowledge, and of holy hope; being eternal, I am given to all my children, to those who are named by him.*

3.9–4.4) who dwells in the Jerusalem Temple. **1–2:** *Her glory,* both the Hebrew (*hokhma*) and Greek (*sophia*) terms for *wisdom* are feminine in gender. The use of first-person singular language in praise of oneself (aretalogy) is characteristic of ancient texts associated with the Egyptian goddess Isis. *Her people,* i.e., Israel, and *the assembly of the Most High,* i.e., the divine council, cf. Ps 82.1,6–7. **3–7:** Wisdom was created by God and has cosmic significance (Prov 8.22–31; Wis 1.7; 7.22–30). **4:** *Pillar of cloud,* see Ex 13.21–22; 33.9–10. **7:** *Resting place,* cf. Job 28.12–28; Wis 7.22–30; *1 Enoch* 42. **8–12:** *Zion,* wisdom's dwelling place in Jacob (cf. Bar 3.36–37) is the Jerusalem Temple. **9:** Cf. Prov 8.22–23. **10:** *Holy tent*, i.e., the tabernacle; see Ex 25.8–9. **13–17:** The comparisons stress wisdom's attractiveness and her life-giving power. **13:** *Lebanon,* a high mountain range in modern Lebanon and Syria, famous in antiquity for its forests. *Hermon,* a high mountain on the border between modern Israel and Syria. **14:** *En-gedi* and *Jericho* are oases in the Judean desert region, near the Dead Sea. **15:** These items were ingredients for the *perfume* and *incense* used in the Jerusalem Temple; see Ex 30.22–38. **19–22:** Wisdom's banquet provides delights and keeps one from sin (cf. 51.23–30; Prov 9.1–6).

[23] All this is the book of the covenant of
the Most High God,
the law that Moses commanded us
as an inheritance for the congregations
of Jacob.[a]
[25] It overflows, like the Pishon, with wisdom,
and like the Tigris at the time of the
first fruits.
[26] It runs over, like the Euphrates, with
understanding,
and like the Jordan at harvest time.
[27] It pours forth instruction like the Nile,[b]
like the Gihon at the time of vintage.
[28] The first man did not know wisdom[c]
fully,
nor will the last one fathom her.
[29] For her thoughts are more abundant
than the sea,
and her counsel deeper than the great
abyss.

[30] As for me, I was like a canal from a river,
like a water channel into a garden.
[31] I said, "I will water my garden
and drench my flower-beds."
And lo, my canal became a river,
and my river a sea.
[32] I will again make instruction shine forth
like the dawn,
and I will make it clear from far away.
[33] I will again pour out teaching like
prophecy,
and leave it to all future generations.
[34] Observe that I have not labored for
myself alone,
but for all who seek wisdom.[c]

25 I take pleasure in three things,
and they are beautiful in the sight of
God and of mortals:[d]
agreement among brothers and sisters,
friendship among neighbors,
and a wife and a husband who live in
harmony.
[2] I hate three kinds of people,
and I loathe their manner of life:
a pauper who boasts, a rich person who lies,
and an old fool who commits adultery.

[3] If you gathered nothing in your youth,
how can you find anything in your old
age?
[4] How attractive is sound judgment in the
gray-haired,
and for the aged to possess good
counsel!
[5] How attractive is wisdom in the aged,
and understanding and counsel in the
venerable!
[6] Rich experience is the crown of the aged,
and their boast is the fear of the Lord.

[7] I can think of nine whom I would call
blessed,
and a tenth my tongue proclaims:
a man who can rejoice in his children;
a man who lives to see the downfall of
his foes.
[8] Happy the man who lives with a sensible
wife,

[a] Other ancient authorities add as verse 24, *"Do not cease to be strong in the Lord, cling to him so that he may strengthen you; the Lord Almighty alone is God, and besides him there is no savior."*
[b] Syr: Gk *It makes instruction shine forth like light*
[c] Gk *her*
[d] Syr Lat: Gk *In three things I was beautiful and I stood in beauty before the Lord and mortals.*

24.23–34: Ben Sira's commentary on the preceding poem about Wisdom. The identification of wisdom with the *covenant* and the *law* (24.23; Ex 24.7; Deut 33.4) combines the two great traditions taught at Ben Sira's school. **25–27:** Four of the rivers—Pishon, Tigris, Euphrates, and Gihon—appear in Gen 2.10–14. **28–29:** *The first man,* Adam did not know the Torah, the true wisdom, which was given first to Moses. **30–34:** As a wisdom teacher, Ben Sira regarded himself as a *canal* and a *water channel* for the wisdom conveyed in the Torah and the ancient Near Eastern wisdom tradition. See 33.16–19 and 51.13–30 for further autobiographical reflections on his role as a wisdom teacher.

25.1–11: Happiness. Two sets of numerical sayings (25.1–2,7–11) bracket an ideal picture of old age (25.3–6). **1–2:** The scenes of harmony stand in contrast with pictures of persons who act inappropriately. **3–6:** At their best the elderly manifest the value of *wisdom* and *fear of the Lord*. **7–11:** Ten beatitudes declare certain persons *happy* in the present. **8:** Plowing with an *ox and ass together* is forbidden by Deut 22.10. The reference here may

and the one who does not plow with ox
and ass together.[a]
Happy is the one who does not sin with
the tongue,
and the one who has not served an
inferior.
9 Happy is the one who finds a friend,[b]
and the one who speaks to attentive
listeners.
10 How great is the one who finds wisdom!
But none is superior to the one who
fears the Lord.
11 Fear of the Lord surpasses everything;
to whom can we compare the one who
has it?[c]

13 Any wound, but not a wound of the
heart!
Any wickedness, but not the
wickedness of a woman!
14 Any suffering, but not suffering from
those who hate!
And any vengeance, but not the
vengeance of enemies!
15 There is no venom[d] worse than a snake's
venom,[d]
and no anger worse than a woman's[e]
wrath.

16 I would rather live with a lion and a
dragon
than live with an evil woman.
17 A woman's wickedness changes her
appearance,
and darkens her face like that of a bear.
18 Her husband sits[f] among the neighbors,
and he cannot help sighing[g] bitterly.
19 Any iniquity is small compared to a
woman's iniquity;
may a sinner's lot befall her!
20 A sandy ascent for the feet of the aged—
such is a garrulous wife to a quiet
husband.

21 Do not be ensnared by a woman's beauty,
and do not desire a woman for her
possessions.[h]
22 There is wrath and impudence and great
disgrace
when a wife supports her husband.
23 Dejected mind, gloomy face,
and wounded heart come from an evil
wife.
Drooping hands and weak knees
come from the wife who does not make
her husband happy.
24 From a woman sin had its beginning,
and because of her we all die.
25 Allow no outlet to water,
and no boldness of speech to an evil wife.
26 If she does not go as you direct,
separate her from yourself.

26 Happy is the husband of a good wife;
the number of his days will be doubled.
2 A loyal wife brings joy to her husband,
and he will complete his years in peace.
3 A good wife is a great blessing;
she will be granted among the blessings
of the man who fears the Lord.
4 Whether rich or poor, his heart is
content,
and at all times his face is cheerful.

[a] Heb Syr: Gk lacks *and the one who does not plow with ox and ass together*
[b] Lat Syr: Gk *good sense*
[c] Other ancient authorities add as verse 12, *The fear of the Lord is the beginning of love for him, and faith is the beginning of clinging to him.*
[d] Syr: Gk *head*
[e] Other ancient authorities read *an enemy's*
[f] Heb Syr: Gk *loses heart*
[g] Other ancient authorities read *and listening he sighs*
[h] Heb Syr: Other Gk authorities read *for her beauty*

be to polygamy with incompatible wives (cf. 26.6; 37.11).

25.13–26.18: Bad and good wives. Alternating sections describe a bad wife (25.13–26; 26.5–12) and a good wife (26.1–4; 26.13–18). **25.13–26:** Advice for young male students about the bad effects of living with an evil and angry woman. Sirach's very negative remarks about women are striking even in the context of a patriarchal culture. **16:** Prov 21.19; 25.24; 27.15. **22:** *Disgrace,* for a husband to be dependent financially on his wife was regarded as a cause for shame. **24:** *From a woman sin had its beginning,* see Gen 3.6. Sirach's interpretation exceeds Gen 3 in placing blame upon the woman (cf. 2 Cor 11.3; 1 Tim 2.14). **26:** *Separate,* only the husband could initiate divorce proceedings (Deut 24.1–4). **26.1–4:** A *good wife* is a *great blessing* to her husband, and brings him a long

[5] Of three things my heart is frightened,
and of a fourth I am in great fear:[a]
Slander in the city, the gathering of a mob,
and false accusation—all these are worse than death.
[6] But it is heartache and sorrow when a wife is jealous of a rival,
and a tongue-lashing makes it known to all.
[7] A bad wife is a chafing yoke;
taking hold of her is like grasping a scorpion.
[8] A drunken wife arouses great anger;
she cannot hide her shame.
[9] The haughty stare betrays an unchaste wife;
her eyelids give her away.

[10] Keep strict watch over a headstrong daughter,
or else, when she finds liberty, she will make use of it.
[11] Be on guard against her impudent eye,
and do not be surprised if she sins against you.
[12] As a thirsty traveler opens his mouth
and drinks from any water near him,
so she will sit in front of every tent peg
and open her quiver to the arrow.

[13] A wife's charm delights her husband,
and her skill puts flesh on his bones.
[14] A silent wife is a gift from the Lord,
and nothing is so precious as her self-discipline.
[15] A modest wife adds charm to charm,
and no scales can weigh the value of her chastity.
[16] Like the sun rising in the heights of the Lord,
so is the beauty of a good wife in her well-ordered home.
[17] Like the shining lamp on the holy lampstand,
so is a beautiful face on a stately figure.
[18] Like golden pillars on silver bases,
so are shapely legs and steadfast feet.

Other ancient authorities add verses 19-27:

[19] *My child, keep sound the bloom of your youth,*
and do not give your strength to strangers.
[20] *Seek a fertile field within the whole plain,*
and sow it with your own seed, trusting in your fine stock.
[21] *So your offspring will prosper,*
and, having confidence in their good descent, will grow great.
[22] *A prostitute is regarded as spittle,*
and a married woman as a tower of death to her lovers.
[23] *A godless wife is given as a portion to a lawless man,*
but a pious wife is given to the man who fears the Lord.
[24] *A shameless woman constantly acts disgracefully,*
but a modest daughter will even be embarrassed before her husband.
[25] *A headstrong wife is regarded as a dog,*
but one who has a sense of shame will fear the Lord.
[26] *A wife honoring her husband will seem wise to all,*
but if she dishonors him in her pride she will be known to all as ungodly.
Happy is the husband of a good wife;

[a] Syr: Meaning of Gk uncertain

life, joy, and peace (cf. Prov. 31.10–31). **26.5–12:** Warnings about a *jealous, bad, drunken,* and *unchaste wife* lead into advice about keeping strict control over a *headstrong daughter.* **5–6:** In numerical proverbs (see 23.16–17n) the last element is the climax. **6:** *Jealous of a rival*, probably referring to hostility among wives in a polygamous household. **12:** *Tent peg . . . quiver,* the language here about illicit sexual relations is very graphic. **26.13–18:** A good wife is praised for her virtues and physical beauty. **13:** *Her skill,* cf. Prov 31.10–31. **17–18:** Cf. Song 4.1–7.

27.19–27: More about women. While not in the Hebrew text, these verses appear in Greek and Syriac manuscripts and seem to have been part of Ben Sira's original work. **19–21:** The ideal for the young Jewish man is to marry a Jewish woman and raise up many children from her (Prov 5.7–23). **20:** An agricultural metaphor for reproduction. **22–27:** These further contrasts between bad and good wives (cf. 25.13–26.18) allow the positive ideal of the good Jewish wife to emerge more clearly.

for the number of his years will be doubled.
[27] *A loud-voiced and garrulous wife is like a trumpet sounding the charge,*
and every person like this lives in the anarchy of war.

---

[28] At two things my heart is grieved,
and because of a third anger comes over me:
a warrior in want through poverty,
intelligent men who are treated contemptuously,
and a man who turns back from righteousness to sin—
the Lord will prepare him for the sword!

[29] A merchant can hardly keep from wrongdoing,
nor is a tradesman innocent of sin.

27 Many have committed sin for gain,[a]
and those who seek to get rich will avert their eyes.
[2] As a stake is driven firmly into a fissure between stones,
so sin is wedged in between selling and buying.
[3] If a person is not steadfast in the fear of the Lord,
his house will be quickly overthrown.

[4] When a sieve is shaken, the refuse appears;
so do a person's faults when he speaks.
[5] The kiln tests the potter's vessels;
so the test of a person is in his conversation.
[6] Its fruit discloses the cultivation of a tree;
so a person's speech discloses the cultivation of his mind.
[7] Do not praise anyone before he speaks,
for this is the way people are tested.

[8] If you pursue justice, you will attain it
and wear it like a glorious robe.
[9] Birds roost with their own kind,
so honesty comes home to those who practice it.
[10] A lion lies in wait for prey;
so does sin for evildoers.

[11] The conversation of the godly is always wise,
but the fool changes like the moon.
[12] Among stupid people limit your time,
but among thoughtful people linger on.
[13] The talk of fools is offensive,
and their laughter is wantonly sinful.
[14] Their cursing and swearing make one's hair stand on end,
and their quarrels make others stop their ears.
[15] The strife of the proud leads to bloodshed,
and their abuse is grievous to hear.

[16] Whoever betrays secrets destroys confidence,
and will never find a congenial friend.
[17] Love your friend and keep faith with him;
but if you betray his secrets, do not follow after him.
[18] For as a person destroys his enemy,
so you have destroyed the friendship of your neighbor.
[19] And as you allow a bird to escape from your hand,
so you have let your neighbor go, and will not catch him again.
[20] Do not go after him, for he is too far off,
and has escaped like a gazelle from a snare.
[21] For a wound may be bandaged,
and there is reconciliation after abuse,
but whoever has betrayed secrets is without hope.

[a] Other ancient authorities read *a trifle*

26.28–27.29: Sin and speech. 26.28–27.7: How speech often reveals a person's character. **28:** Another numerical proverb (see 23.16–17; 26.5–6). *Warrior,* the Greek translator may have mistaken *warrior* for the Hebrew word for "wealthy man." **27.2:** *Sin is wedged,* business dealings often involve corruption (cf. Prov 11.1; 20.10,14). **4–7:** Good speech is a paramount virtue in the wisdom tradition. A series of three comparisons from daily life disclose its diagnostic quality. **8–10:** The contrasting effects of honesty and sin. **11–15:** The contrast in the speech of the godly person and the fool. **16–21:** Betraying confidences or *secrets* often brings friendships to an

22 Whoever winks the eye plots mischief,
and those who know him will keep their distance.
23 In your presence his mouth is all sweetness,
and he admires your words;
but later he will twist his speech
and with your own words he will trip you up.
24 I have hated many things, but him above all;
even the Lord hates him.
25 Whoever throws a stone straight up throws it on his own head,
and a treacherous blow opens up many wounds.
26 Whoever digs a pit will fall into it,
and whoever sets a snare will be caught in it.
27 If a person does evil, it will roll back upon him,
and he will not know where it came from.
28 Mockery and abuse issue from the proud,
but vengeance lies in wait for them like a lion.
29 Those who rejoice in the fall of the godly will be caught in a snare,
and pain will consume them before their death.

30 Anger and wrath, these also are abominations,
yet a sinner holds on to them.

28 The vengeful will face the Lord's vengeance,
for he keeps a strict account of[a] their sins.
2 Forgive your neighbor the wrong he has done,
and then your sins will be pardoned when you pray.
3 Does anyone harbor anger against another,
and expect healing from the Lord?
4 If one has no mercy toward another like himself,
can he then seek pardon for his own sins?
5 If a mere mortal harbors wrath,
who will make an atoning sacrifice for his sins?
6 Remember the end of your life, and set enmity aside;
remember corruption and death, and be true to the commandments.
7 Remember the commandments, and do not be angry with your neighbor;
remember the covenant of the Most High, and overlook faults.

8 Refrain from strife, and your sins will be fewer;
for the hot-tempered kindle strife,
9 and the sinner disrupts friendships
and sows discord among those who are at peace.
10 In proportion to the fuel, so will the fire burn,
and in proportion to the obstinacy, so will strife increase;[b]
in proportion to a person's strength will be his anger,
and in proportion to his wealth he will increase his wrath.
11 A hasty quarrel kindles a fire,
and a hasty dispute sheds blood.
12 If you blow on a spark, it will glow;
if you spit on it, it will be put out;
yet both come out of your mouth.

[a] Other ancient authorities read *for he firmly establishes*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *burn*

end (Prov 20.19; 25.9). **21:** *Without hope,* of reconciliation (cf. 22.22). **22–24:** The hatefulness of the hypocrite. **25–29:** How people destroy themselves with their own evil devices; cf. Prov 26.27; Eccl 10.8.

27.30–28.7: Forgiveness of sins. Two very important attributes of God are justice and mercy. **27.30–28.1:** Those who demand strict justice from others will have to face God's own strict justice (cf. Deut 32.35–36). **2–5:** Those who seek God's mercy must be willing to show mercy to others (cf. Lev 19.18). **6–7:** Remembering *death, the commandments,* and God's *covenant* can provide encouragement to forgive others. Death is frequently mentioned as a motivation for proper conduct in Sirach; see 7.36; 8.7; 14.12; 18.24; 38.20.

28.8–26: Destructive speech. The mouth can be the instrument for all kinds of bad speech, and so it must be carefully controlled. **8–12:** The mouth can either ignite or extinguish anger and *strife* (cf. Prov 26.20–21).

13 Curse the gossips and the double-
tongued,
for they destroy the peace of many.
14 Slander[a] has shaken many,
and scattered them from nation to
nation;
it has destroyed strong cities,
and overturned the houses of the
great.
15 Slander[a] has driven virtuous women
from their homes,
and deprived them of the fruit of their
toil.
16 Those who pay heed to slander[b] will not
find rest,
nor will they settle down in peace.
17 The blow of a whip raises a welt,
but a blow of the tongue crushes the
bones.
18 Many have fallen by the edge of the
sword,
but not as many as have fallen because
of the tongue.
19 Happy is the one who is protected from
it,
who has not been exposed to its
anger,
who has not borne its yoke,
and has not been bound with its
fetters.
20 For its yoke is a yoke of iron,
and its fetters are fetters of bronze;
21 its death is an evil death,
and Hades is preferable to it.
22 It has no power over the godly;
they will not be burned in its flame.
23 Those who forsake the Lord will fall into
its power;
it will burn among them and will not be
put out.
It will be sent out against them like a lion;
like a leopard it will mangle them.
24*a* As you fence in your property with
thorns,
25*b* so make a door and a bolt for your
mouth.
24*b* As you lock up your silver and gold,
25*a* so make balances and scales for your
words.
26 Take care not to err with your tongue,[c]
and fall victim to one lying in wait.

29 The merciful lend to their neighbors;
by holding out a helping hand they
keep the commandments.
2 Lend to your neighbor in his time of
need;
repay your neighbor when a loan falls
due.
3 Keep your promise and be honest with
him,
and on every occasion you will find
what you need.
4 Many regard a loan as a windfall,
and cause trouble to those who help
them.
5 One kisses another's hands until he gets
a loan,
and is deferential in speaking of his
neighbor's money;
but at the time for repayment he delays,
and pays back with empty promises,
and finds fault with the time.
6 If he can pay, his creditor[d] will hardly get
back half,
and will regard that as a windfall.
If he cannot pay, the borrower[d] has robbed
the other of his money,
and he has needlessly made him an
enemy;

a Gk *A third tongue*
b Gk *it*
c Gk *with it*
d Gk *he*

13–16: *Slander* can and does ruin lives (51.2–6). **17–23:** A series of comparisons illustrates the destructive effects of speech. **17:** *Bones,* cf. Prov 25.15. **21:** *Hades* (Heb "Sheol") is the abode of the dead. **24–26:** Various images highlight the need to guard against destructive speech. One's *words* should be guarded as carefully as one's prized possessions.

29.1–20: Money matters. 1–7: *Lend*ing. While loans could be given to fellow Jews without charging interest (Ex 22.25; Lev 25.35–37; Deut 15.7–11; 23.19–20; 24.10–13; Neh 5.10–11), charging interest was allowed when one loaned to non-Jews (Deut 23.20–21). Ben Sira encourages a willingness to make loans, but warns that there is

he will repay him with curses and
reproaches,
and instead of glory will repay him with
dishonor.
7 Many refuse to lend, not because of
meanness,
but from fear[a] of being defrauded
needlessly.

8 Nevertheless, be patient with someone in
humble circumstances,
and do not keep him waiting for your
alms.
9 Help the poor for the commandment's sake,
and in their need do not send them
away empty-handed.
10 Lose your silver for the sake of a brother
or a friend,
and do not let it rust under a stone and
be lost.
11 Lay up your treasure according to the
commandments of the Most High,
and it will profit you more than gold.
12 Store up almsgiving in your treasury,
and it will rescue you from every disaster;
13 better than a stout shield and a sturdy
spear,
it will fight for you against the enemy.

14 A good person will be surety for his
neighbor,
but the one who has lost all sense of
shame will fail him.
15 Do not forget the kindness of your
guarantor,
for he has given his life for you.
16 A sinner wastes the property of his
guarantor,
17 and the ungrateful person abandons
his rescuer.
18 Being surety has ruined many who were
prosperous,
and has tossed them about like waves of
the sea;
it has driven the influential into exile,
and they have wandered among foreign
nations.
19 The sinner comes to grief through surety;
his pursuit of gain involves him in
lawsuits.
20 Assist your neighbor to the best of your
ability,
but be careful not to fall yourself.

21 The necessities of life are water, bread,
and clothing,
and also a house to assure privacy.
22 Better is the life of the poor under their
own crude roof
than sumptuous food in the house of
others.
23 Be content with little or much,
and you will hear no reproach for being
a guest.[b]
24 It is a miserable life to go from house to
house;
as a guest you should not open your
mouth;
25 you will play the host and provide drink
without being thanked,
and besides this you will hear rude
words like these:
26 "Come here, stranger, prepare the table;
let me eat what you have there."
27 "Be off, stranger, for an honored guest
is here;
my brother has come for a visit, and I
need the guest-room."
28 It is hard for a sensible person to bear
scolding about lodging[c] and the insults
of the moneylender.

[a] Other ancient authorities read *many refuse to lend, therefore, because of such meanness; they are afraid*

[b] Lat: Gk *reproach from your family*; other ancient authorities lack this line

[c] Or *scolding from the household*

no guarantee that one will be repaid and so one must always be cautious (cf. 8.12–13). **8–13:** Alms. Giving *alms* is in accord with the Torah (Deut 15.7) and will contribute to one's spiritual treasury (cf. 3.30–4.10). **14–20:** *Surety*. Ben Sira's encouragement to provide *surety* or collateral for another person contrasts with the advice given repeatedly in Prov 6.1–5; 11.15; 17.18; 20.16; 22.2; 27.13.

29.21–28: Not depending on others. While the Torah directs caring for indigent relatives (Lev 25.35), receiving such care can become demeaning and even shameful. **21:** *Necessities,* cf. the longer list in 39.26. **25:** *You will play the host,* that is, you will be pressed into service in the household.

CONCERNING CHILDREN[a]

30 He who loves his son will whip him often,
so that he may rejoice at the way he turns out.
2 He who disciplines his son will profit by him,
and will boast of him among acquaintances.
3 He who teaches his son will make his enemies envious,
and will glory in him among his friends.
4 When the father dies he will not seem to be dead,
for he has left behind him one like himself,
5 whom in his life he looked upon with joy
and at death, without grief.
6 He has left behind him an avenger against his enemies,
and one to repay the kindness of his friends.

7 Whoever spoils his son will bind up his wounds,
and will suffer heartache at every cry.
8 An unbroken horse turns out stubborn,
and an unchecked son turns out headstrong.
9 Pamper a child, and he will terrorize you;
play with him, and he will grieve you.
10 Do not laugh with him, or you will have sorrow with him,
and in the end you will gnash your teeth.
11 Give him no freedom in his youth,
and do not ignore his errors.
12 Bow down his neck in his youth,[b]
and beat his sides while he is young,
or else he will become stubborn and disobey you,
and you will have sorrow of soul from him.[c]
13 Discipline your son and make his yoke heavy,[d]
so that you may not be offended by his shamelessness.

14 Better off poor, healthy, and fit
than rich and afflicted in body.
15 Health and fitness are better than any gold,
and a robust body than countless riches.
16 There is no wealth better than health of body,
and no gladness above joy of heart.
17 Death is better than a life of misery,
and eternal sleep[e] than chronic sickness.

CONCERNING FOODS[f]

18 Good things poured out upon a mouth that is closed
are like offerings of food placed upon a grave.
19 Of what use to an idol is a sacrifice?
For it can neither eat nor smell.
So is the one punished by the Lord;
20 he sees with his eyes and groans
as a eunuch groans when embracing a girl.[g]

21 Do not give yourself over to sorrow,
and do not distress yourself deliberately.

a This heading is included in the Gk text.
b Other ancient authorities lack this line and the preceding line
c Other ancient authorities lack this line
d Heb: Gk *take pains with him*
e Other ancient authorities lack *eternal sleep*
f This heading is included in the Gk text; other ancient authorities place the heading before verse 16
g Other ancient authorities add *So is the person who does right under compulsion*

30.1–13: Fathers and sons. A father's discipline of his son will benefit the son and add to the father's good reputation before others. **1–6:** Ben Sira's harsh views on raising children (cf. 22.6) were not unique (cf. Prov 13.24; 19.18; 22.15; 23.13–14; 29.15,17). **4:** The child is the image of the father (cf. Gen 5.3; Tob 9.6). **6:** *Avenger,* one who can vindicate his father's honor (cf. Ps 127.5). **7–13:** Lack of *discipline* will lead to shame and sorrow for both parent and child (Deut 21.18–21).

30.14–25: Happiness. Three elements that lead to happiness are good health, good food, and a good disposition. **17:** *Death is better,* cf. Job 3.11,13,17; Eccl 4.2–3; 6.3,10,13; Tob 3.6,10,13. **18–20:** *Food placed on a grave* (Tob

22 A joyful heart is life itself,
and rejoicing lengthens one's life span.
23 Indulge yourself[a] and take comfort,
and remove sorrow far from you,
for sorrow has destroyed many,
and no advantage ever comes from it.
24 Jealousy and anger shorten life,
and anxiety brings on premature old age.
25 Those who are cheerful and merry at table
will benefit from their food.

31 Wakefulness over wealth wastes away one's flesh,
and anxiety about it drives away sleep.
2 Wakeful anxiety prevents slumber,
and a severe illness carries off sleep.[b]
3 The rich person toils to amass a fortune,
and when he rests he fills himself with his dainties.
4 The poor person toils to make a meager living,
and if ever he rests he becomes needy.

5 One who loves gold will not be justified;
one who pursues money will be led astray[c] by it.
6 Many have come to ruin because of gold,
and their destruction has met them face to face.
7 It is a stumbling block to those who are avid for it,
and every fool will be taken captive by it.
8 Blessed is the rich person who is found blameless,
and who does not go after gold.
9 Who is he, that we may praise him?
For he has done wonders among his people.
10 Who has been tested by it and been found perfect?
Let it be for him a ground for boasting.
Who has had the power to transgress and did not transgress,
and to do evil and did not do it?
11 His prosperity will be established,[d]
and the assembly will proclaim his acts of charity.

12 Are you seated at the table of the great?[e]
Do not be greedy at it,
and do not say, "How much food there is here!"
13 Remember that a greedy eye is a bad thing.
What has been created more greedy than the eye?
Therefore it sheds tears for any reason.
14 Do not reach out your hand for everything you see,
and do not crowd your neighbor[f] at the dish.
15 Judge your neighbor's feelings by your own,
and in every matter be thoughtful.
16 Eat what is set before you like a well brought-up person,[g]
and do not chew greedily, or you will give offense.
17 Be the first to stop, as befits good manners,

[a] Other ancient authorities read *Beguile yourself*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *sleep carries off a severe illness*
[c] Heb Syr: Gk *pursues destruction will be filled*
[d] Other ancient authorities add *because of this*
[e] Heb Syr: Gk *at a great table*
[f] Gk *him*
[g] Heb: Gk *like a human being*

4.17) is useless. An *idol* (Deut 4.28; Isa 44.9–20) and a *eunuch* (20.4) are unable to enjoy the pleasures of life. **23:** *Indulge yourself,* cf. Eccl 2.10; 11.9–10.

31.1–11: Riches and righteousness. Wealth does not guarantee happiness or righteousness (cf. Prov 30.8–9; Eccl 5.10). **8–11:** The beatitude acknowledges that it is possible (by exception) for a rich person to be righteous (cf. 13.24; Prov 28.20). **8:** *Gold,* the Hebrew text has *mammon* (cf. Mt 6.24; Lk 16.9,13).

31.12–32.13: Table manners and moderation. In the upper-class milieu supposed here, cautious public behavior could help in establishing and maintaining one's good reputation. The topic of proper behavior at banquets was a frequent theme in ancient Egyptian wisdom literature, including *Ptahhotep* and *Amenemope.* **12–18:** The goal behind observing good table manners (cf. Prov 23.1–3) is to avoid drawing undue and unwelcome

and do not be insatiable, or you will
give offense.
18 If you are seated among many persons,
do not help yourself[a] before they do.

19 How ample a little is for a well-
disciplined person!
He does not breathe heavily when in
bed.
20 Healthy sleep depends on moderate
eating;
he rises early, and feels fit.
The distress of sleeplessness and of
nausea
and colic are with the glutton.
21 If you are overstuffed with food,
get up to vomit, and you will have relief.
22 Listen to me, my child, and do not
disregard me,
and in the end you will appreciate my
words.
In everything you do be moderate,[b]
and no sickness will overtake you.
23 People bless the one who is liberal with
food,
and their testimony to his generosity is
trustworthy.
24 The city complains of the one who is
stingy with food,
and their testimony to his stinginess is
accurate.

25 Do not try to prove your strength by
wine-drinking,
for wine has destroyed many.
26 As the furnace tests the work of the
smith,[c]
so wine tests hearts when the insolent
quarrel.
27 Wine is very life to human beings
if taken in moderation.
What is life to one who is without wine?
It has been created to make people
happy.
28 Wine drunk at the proper time and in
moderation
is rejoicing of heart and gladness of
soul.
29 Wine drunk to excess leads to bitterness
of spirit,
to quarrels and stumbling.
30 Drunkenness increases the anger of a
fool to his own hurt,
reducing his strength and adding
wounds.
31 Do not reprove your neighbor at a
banquet of wine,
and do not despise him in his
merrymaking;
speak no word of reproach to him,
and do not distress him by making
demands of him.

32 If they make you master of the feast,
do not exalt yourself;
be among them as one of their
number.
Take care of them first and then sit down;
2 when you have fulfilled all your duties,
take your place,
so that you may be merry along with
them
and receive a wreath for your excellent
leadership.

3 Speak, you who are older, for it is your
right,
but with accurate knowledge, and do
not interrupt the music.
4 Where there is entertainment, do not
pour out talk;
do not display your cleverness at the
wrong time.
5 A ruby seal in a setting of gold
is a concert of music at a banquet of
wine.
6 A seal of emerald in a rich setting of gold
is the melody of music with good wine.

7 Speak, you who are young, if you are
obliged to,
but no more than twice, and only if
asked.

[a] Gk *reach out your hand*
[b] Heb Syr: Gk *industrious*
[c] Heb: Gk *tests the hardening of steel by dipping*

attention to oneself. **19–31:** The bad effects of drinking too much *wine* (cf. Prov 20.1; 23.29–35; 31.4–5) are contrasted with the good effects of the moderate use of wine (cf. Ps 104.15). **32.1–13:** Advice to various participants at a banquet. **1:** *Master of the feast,* the one who cares for the needs of those who are eating (2 Macc 2.27). **3–10:**

[8] Be brief; say much in few words;
be as one who knows and can still hold his tongue.
[9] Among the great do not act as their equal;
and when another is speaking, do not babble.

[10] Lightning travels ahead of the thunder,
and approval goes before one who is modest.
[11] Leave in good time and do not be the last;
go home quickly and do not linger.
[12] Amuse yourself there to your heart's content,
but do not sin through proud speech.
[13] But above all bless your Maker,
who fills you with his good gifts.

[14] The one who seeks God[a] will accept his discipline,
and those who rise early to seek him[b] will find favor.
[15] The one who seeks the law will be filled with it,
but the hypocrite will stumble at it.
[16] Those who fear the Lord will form true judgments,
and they will kindle righteous deeds like a light.
[17] The sinner will shun reproof,
and will find a decision according to his liking.

[18] A sensible person will not overlook a thoughtful suggestion;
an insolent[c] and proud person will not be deterred by fear.[d]
[19] Do nothing without deliberation,
but when you have acted, do not regret it.
[20] Do not go on a path full of hazards,
and do not stumble at an obstacle twice.[e]

[21] Do not be overconfident on a smooth[f] road,
[22] and give good heed to your paths.[g]
[23] Guard[h] yourself in every act,
for this is the keeping of the commandments.

[24] The one who keeps the law preserves himself,[i]
and the one who trusts the Lord will not suffer loss.

33 No evil will befall the one who fears the Lord,
but in trials such a one will be rescued again and again.
[2] The wise will not hate the law,
but the one who is hypocritical about it is like a boat in a storm.
[3] The sensible person will trust in the law;
for such a one the law is as dependable as a divine oracle.

[4] Prepare what to say, and then you will be listened to;
draw upon your training, and give your answer.
[5] The heart of a fool is like a cart wheel,
and his thoughts like a turning axle.
[6] A mocking friend is like a stallion
that neighs no matter who the rider is.

[a] Heb: Gk *who fears the Lord*
[b] Other ancient authorities lack *to seek him*
[c] Heb: Gk *alien*
[d] Meaning of Gk uncertain. Other ancient authorities add *and after acting, with him, without deliberation*
[e] Heb: Gk *stumble on stony ground*
[f] Or *an unexplored*
[g] Heb Syr: Gk *and beware of your children*
[h] Heb Syr: Gk *Trust*
[i] Heb: Gk *who believes the law heeds the commandments*

Directions to *older* persons and the *young.* **11–13:** Advice meant for all. **13:** *Bless your Maker,* by saying a prayer of thanksgiving after the meal.

32.14–33.6: The law, fear of the Lord, and wisdom. Ben Sira's ideal sage combines these three elements (which are the book's central themes), and so differs sharply from fools and sinners. **14:** *Discipline,* a frequent topic in the book; see 1.27; 4.17; 6.18,22; 21.19,21; 26.14; 42.5,8; 50.27). *Rise early,* for prayer (cf. 39.5). **15:** *The law,* here and elsewhere in the passage the reference is to the law of Moses (the Torah). **17:** *Decision,* an interpretation of the Torah. **33.1:** Cf. Wis 10.1–21. **2:** Hebrew, "He who hates the law is not wise, and is tossed about like a boat in a storm." **3:** *Divine oracle,* the Urim and Thummim (45.10; Ex 28.30; Num 27.21; 1 Sam 14.41–42).

7 Why is one day more important than another,
when all the daylight in the year is from the sun?
8 By the Lord's wisdom they were distinguished,
and he appointed the different seasons and festivals.
9 Some days he exalted and hallowed,
and some he made ordinary days.
10 All human beings come from the ground,
and humankind[a] was created out of the dust.
11 In the fullness of his knowledge the Lord distinguished them
and appointed their different ways.
12 Some he blessed and exalted,
and some he made holy and brought near to himself;
but some he cursed and brought low,
and turned them out of their place.
13 Like clay in the hand of the potter,
to be molded as he pleases,
so all are in the hand of their Maker,
to be given whatever he decides.

14 Good is the opposite of evil,
and life the opposite of death;
so the sinner is the opposite of the godly.
15 Look at all the works of the Most High;
they come in pairs, one the opposite of the other.

16 Now I was the last to keep vigil;
I was like a gleaner following the grape-pickers;
17 by the blessing of the Lord I arrived first,
and like a grape-picker I filled my wine press.
18 Consider that I have not labored for myself alone,
but for all who seek instruction.
19 Hear me, you who are great among the people,
and you leaders of the congregation, pay heed!

20 To son or wife, to brother or friend,
do not give power over yourself, as long as you live;
and do not give your property to another,
in case you change your mind and must ask for it.
21 While you are still alive and have breath in you,
do not let anyone take your place.
22 For it is better that your children should ask from you
than that you should look to the hand of your children.
23 Excel in all that you do;
bring no stain upon your honor.
24 At the time when you end the days of your life,
in the hour of death, distribute your inheritance.

25 Fodder and a stick and burdens for a donkey;
bread and discipline and work for a slave.

[a] Heb: Gk *Adam*

33.7–15: The pairs. God's plan for creation is based on opposites. Nevertheless, since the absolute sovereignty of God is assumed, this is not a full-scale dualism. Ben Sira may be influenced by Stoic philosophy. **7–9:** Some days are holy days and others are *ordinary* (Gen 1.14; 2.3; Deut 16.1–15). **10–13:** A similar dualism occurs among humans. Although all are made from *dust* (Gen 3.19), some are *blessed* and some are *cursed*; perhaps referring to the different status of Israel (Gen 12.2–3; Ex 19.5) and the Canaanites (Gen 9.25–27; 12.6–7). **13:** *Clay,* cf. Isa 29.16; 45.9; 64.8; Jer 18.1–12. **14–15:** The dualism of the pairs is modified, since the *Most High* remains sovereign over all (Isa 45.7).

33.16–19: Ben Sira's vocation. For other autobiographical notices, see 24.30–34; 34.9–13; 39.12–13; 50.27; 51.13–30. **16–17:** *A gleaner* collects the leftovers during the harvest. By study and hard work Ben Sira became a *grape-picker,* that is, a wisdom teacher. **18–19:** *For all,* cf. 24.34.

33.20–33: Master of the household. The advice given here is intended for an adult male with a family, financial resources, and slaves. **20–24:** Preserve your financial independence and do not distribute your property until the hour of death. **25–33:** Human slavery was a socially and religiously sanctioned institution, and integral to the economy, in Ben Sira's world (cf. 7.20–21). His harsh advice is tempered by recognizing the self-interest

26 Set your slave to work, and you will find rest;
leave his hands idle, and he will seek liberty.
27 Yoke and thong will bow the neck,
and for a wicked slave there are racks and tortures.
28 Put him to work, in order that he may not be idle,
29 for idleness teaches much evil.
30 Set him to work, as is fitting for him,
and if he does not obey, make his fetters heavy.
Do not be overbearing toward anyone,
and do nothing unjust.

31 If you have but one slave, treat him like yourself,
because you have bought him with blood.
If you have but one slave, treat him like a brother,
for you will need him as you need your life.
32 If you ill-treat him, and he leaves you and runs away,
33 which way will you go to seek him?

34 The senseless have vain and false hopes,
and dreams give wings to fools.
2 As one who catches at a shadow and pursues the wind,
so is anyone who believes in[a] dreams.
3 What is seen in dreams is but a reflection,
the likeness of a face looking at itself.
4 From an unclean thing what can be clean?
And from something false what can be true?
5 Divinations and omens and dreams are unreal,
and like a woman in labor, the mind has fantasies.
6 Unless they are sent by intervention from the Most High,
pay no attention to them.
7 For dreams have deceived many,
and those who put their hope in them have perished.
8 Without such deceptions the law will be fulfilled,
and wisdom is complete in the mouth of the faithful.

9 An educated[b] person knows many things,
and one with much experience knows what he is talking about.
10 An inexperienced person knows few things,
11 but he that has traveled acquires much cleverness.
12 I have seen many things in my travels,
and I understand more than I can express.
13 I have often been in danger of death,
but have escaped because of these experiences.

14 The spirit of those who fear the Lord will live,
15 for their hope is in him who saves them.
16 Those who fear the Lord will not be timid,
or play the coward, for he is their hope.

[a] Syr: Gk *pays heed to*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *A traveled*

of someone who owns only *one slave* (33.31–33). **30:** *Do nothing unjust,* that is, act according to the biblical laws pertaining to slaves (Ex 21.2–6,20–21,26–27; Lev 25.46; Deut 15.12–18). **32:** *Runs away,* Deut 23.15–16.

34.1–8: A critique of dreams. It is better to fulfill the law and to practice perfect wisdom than to rely on dreams for wisdom and direction. Ben Sira may be criticizing the Jewish apocalyptic movement, which relied extensively on dreams and visions for divine guidance (see the book of Daniel). **1:** *Dreams give wings to fools,* cf. Deut 13.2–5; 18.9–14; Eccl 5.7; Jer 29.8. **2:** *Pursues the wind,* cf. Eccl 1.14; Hos 12.1. **3:** *Reflection,* dreams are often merely mirrors of one's own concerns. **4:** *Unclean . . . clean,* cf. Job 14.4. **6:** *From the Most High,* an exception is made for dreams that definitely come from God (as in Gen 37.5–10; Judg 7.13–15; Dan 2).

34.9–13: The value of experience through travel. See 39.4; 51.13.

34.14–20: Fear of the Lord. Blessings accompany *those who fear the Lord,* which is the proper human re-

17 Happy is the soul that fears the Lord!
18 To whom does he look? And who is his support?
19 The eyes of the Lord are on those who love him,
a mighty shield and strong support,
a shelter from scorching wind and a shade from noonday sun,
a guard against stumbling and a help against falling.
20 He lifts up the soul and makes the eyes sparkle;
he gives health and life and blessing.

21 If one sacrifices ill-gotten goods, the offering is blemished;[a]
22 the gifts[b] of the lawless are not acceptable.
23 The Most High is not pleased with the offerings of the ungodly,
nor for a multitude of sacrifices does he forgive sins.
24 Like one who kills a son before his father's eyes
is the person who offers a sacrifice from the property of the poor.
25 The bread of the needy is the life of the poor;
whoever deprives them of it is a murderer.
26 To take away a neighbor's living is to commit murder;
27 to deprive an employee of wages is to shed blood.

28 When one builds and another tears down,
what do they gain but hard work?
29 When one prays and another curses,
to whose voice will the Lord listen?
30 If one washes after touching a corpse,
and touches it again,
what has been gained by washing?
31 So if one fasts for his sins,
and goes again and does the same things,
who will listen to his prayer?
And what has he gained by humbling himself?

35 The one who keeps the law makes many offerings;
2 one who heeds the commandments makes an offering of well-being.
3 The one who returns a kindness offers choice flour,
4 and one who gives alms sacrifices a thank offering.
5 To keep from wickedness is pleasing to the Lord,
and to forsake unrighteousness is an atonement.
6 Do not appear before the Lord empty-handed,
7 for all that you offer is in fulfillment of the commandment.
8 The offering of the righteous enriches the altar,
and its pleasing odor rises before the Most High.
9 The sacrifice of the righteous is acceptable,
and it will never be forgotten.

[a] Other ancient authorities read *is made in mockery*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *mockeries*

sponse to true wisdom (cf. 1.11–30; 2.1–18). **19:** *The eyes of the Lord,* cf. Ps 34.15. *Shelter,* cf. Pss 61.2–4; 91.1–4; 121.5–6; Isa 25.4.

34.21–31: True religion and social justice. Religious practices must be animated by and accomplished with a concern for social justice (cf. 1 Sam 15.22; Ps 51.16–19; Prov 15.8; 21.3; Hos 6.6; Amos 5.21–24). **21:** *Blemished,* cf. Lev 22.18–25. **26–27:** *Deprive an employee,* cf. Lev 19.13. **28:** *One builds and another tears down,* both the poor and the rich lose. **29:** *To whose voice,* cf. 4.5–6; 35.17–21. **30:** *Touching a corpse* makes a person ritually impure (Num 19.11). **31:** *Fasts for his sins,* most likely a reference to the Day of Atonement (Lev 23.27–32).

35.1–13: Good deeds and sacrifices. While Ben Sira was an enthusiastic supporter of the Jerusalem Temple and its priesthood (cf. 50.1–24), he also insisted that sacrifices be offered in the proper spirit and be accompanied by ethical obedience to the Torah (cf. Isa 1.11–18; Mic 6.6–8; Tob 1.6–8). **1–5:** Observing the *commandments,* performing kind actions, and avoiding sin are equivalent to offering sacrifices to God (cf. Ps 51.17; 1QS 8.1–4). **6–13:** But such observances are neither in opposition to the offering of material sacrifices nor substitutes for them. Here Ben Sira offers his endorsement of the sacrificial system carried out at the Jerusalem Temple.

10 Be generous when you worship the Lord,
and do not stint the first fruits of your hands.
11 With every gift show a cheerful face,
and dedicate your tithe with gladness.
12 Give to the Most High as he has given to you,
and as generously as you can afford.
13 For the Lord is the one who repays,
and he will repay you sevenfold.
14 Do not offer him a bribe, for he will not accept it;
15 and do not rely on a dishonest sacrifice;
for the Lord is the judge,
and with him there is no partiality.
16 He will not show partiality to the poor;
but he will listen to the prayer of one who is wronged.
17 He will not ignore the supplication of the orphan,
or the widow when she pours out her complaint.
18 Do not the tears of the widow run down her cheek
19 as she cries out against the one who causes them to fall?
20 The one whose service is pleasing to the Lord will be accepted,
and his prayer will reach to the clouds.
21 The prayer of the humble pierces the clouds,
and it will not rest until it reaches its goal;
it will not desist until the Most High responds
22 and does justice for the righteous, and executes judgment.
Indeed, the Lord will not delay,
and like a warrior[a] will not be patient
until he crushes the loins of the unmerciful
23 and repays vengeance on the nations;
until he destroys the multitude of the insolent,
and breaks the scepters of the unrighteous;
24 until he repays mortals according to their deeds,
and the works of all according to their thoughts;
25 until he judges the case of his people
and makes them rejoice in his mercy.
26 His mercy is as welcome in time of distress
as clouds of rain in time of drought.

36 Have mercy upon us, O God[b] of all,
2 and put all the nations in fear of you.
3 Lift up your hand against foreign nations
and let them see your might.
4 As you have used us to show your holiness to them,
so use them to show your glory to us.
5 Then they will know,[c] as we have known,
that there is no God but you, O Lord.
6 Give new signs, and work other wonders;
7 make your hand and right arm glorious.
8 Rouse your anger and pour out your wrath;
9 destroy the adversary and wipe out the enemy.
10 Hasten the day, and remember the appointed time,[d]

[a] Heb: Gk *and with them*
[b] Heb: Gk *O Master, the God*
[c] Heb: Gk *And let them know you*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *remember your oath*

35.14–26: God's justice. As a just judge God will not be bribed by *dishonest sacrifice.* God will answer the prayers of those most in need. **15:** *No partiality,* cf. Deut 10.17; Job 34.19; Wis 6.7. **17:** *Orphan . . . widow,* God will defend the most vulnerable in society (cf. 4.9–10; Ps 68.5; Prov 23.10–11). **22–26:** This passage prepares for the prayer in 36.1–22. It may allude to political turmoil in Ben Sira's own time. **25:** *His people,* this suggests that the oppressors threatened here were foreign enemies of Israel, perhaps the Seleucids who had recently replaced the Ptolemies as rulers over the land of Israel.

36.1–22: Prayers for God's people. 1–12: A plea for deliverance from Israel's enemies, perhaps from the Seleucid rulers after 198 BCE (cf. Ps 44.1–8; 2 Macc 1.24–29). **1:** *God of all,* cf. 36.5,12; 50.22. **4:** As God manifested *holiness* in rescuing Israel from exile (Ezek 20.41; 28.25), so may God display *glory* by subduing its enemies now. **6–7:** *Signs . . .wonders . . . hand . . . right arm,* allusions to the Exodus from Egypt (Ex 11.9–10; 15.6; Deut 4.34; 7.19;

and let people recount your mighty deeds.
11 Let survivors be consumed in the fiery wrath,
and may those who harm your people meet destruction.
12 Crush the heads of hostile rulers who say, "There is no one but ourselves."
13 Gather all the tribes of Jacob,[a]
16 and give them their inheritance, as at the beginning.
17 Have mercy, O Lord, on the people called by your name,
on Israel, whom you have named[b] your firstborn,
18 Have pity on the city of your sanctuary,[c] Jerusalem, the place of your dwelling.[d]
19 Fill Zion with your majesty,[e]
and your temple[f] with your glory.
20 Bear witness to those whom you created in the beginning,
and fulfill the prophecies spoken in your name.
21 Reward those who wait for you
and let your prophets be found trustworthy.
22 Hear, O Lord, the prayer of your servants, according to your goodwill toward[g] your people,
and all who are on the earth will know that you are the Lord, the God of the ages.

23 The stomach will take any food,
yet one food is better than another.
24 As the palate tastes the kinds of game,
so an intelligent mind detects false words.
25 A perverse mind will cause grief,
but a person with experience will pay him back.
26 A woman will accept any man as a husband,
but one girl is preferable to another.
27 A woman's beauty lights up a man's face,
and there is nothing he desires more.
28 If kindness and humility mark her speech,
her husband is more fortunate than other men.
29 He who acquires a wife gets his best possession,[h]
a helper fit for him and a pillar of support.[i]
30 Where there is no fence, the property will be plundered;
and where there is no wife, a man will become a fugitive and a wanderer.[j]
31 For who will trust a nimble robber that skips from city to city?
So who will trust a man that has no nest, but lodges wherever night overtakes him?

37 Every friend says, "I too am a friend"; but some friends are friends only in name.
2 Is it not a sorrow like that for death itself when a dear friend turns into an enemy?

[a] Owing to a dislocation in the Greek Mss of Sirach, the verse numbers 14 and 15 are not used in chapter 36, though no text is missing.
[b] Other ancient authorities read *you have likened to*
[c] Or *on your holy city*
[d] Heb: Gk *your rest*
[e] Heb Syr: Gk *the celebration of your wondrous deeds*
[f] Heb Syr: Gk Lat *people*
[g] Heb and two Gk witnesses: Lat and most Gk witnesses read *according to the blessing of Aaron for*
[h] Heb: Gk *enters upon a possession*
[i] Heb: Gk *rest*
[j] Heb: Gk *wander about and sigh*

Neh 9.10). **10:** *The appointed time,* when Israel will be freed from its foreign oppressors. **13–22:** A prayer for the ingathering of Israel and God's blessing on the Jerusalem Temple. **17:** *Called by your name,* see Deut 28.10; Jer 14.9. *Firstborn,* see Ex 4.22. **18:** *Your dwelling,* cf. Pss 26.8; 63.2; 102.16; 132.13–14.

36.23–31: On choosing a wife. 23–25: On discernment in general.

26–31: On choosing a wife in particular (cf. 26.13–18). **26:** *Accept,* marriages were often arranged by the fathers (cf. 7.25). **29:** In a patriarchal family, the wife was regarded as the husband's *possession. A helper fit for him,* see Gen 2.18. **30:** *A fugitive and a wanderer,* like Cain (Gen 4.12,14).

37.1–15: On choosing a friend and a counselor. 1–7: More warnings against false and fair-weather friends (cf.

3 O inclination to evil, why were you
formed
to cover the land with deceit?
4 Some companions rejoice in the
happiness of a friend,
but in time of trouble they are against
him.
5 Some companions help a friend for their
stomachs' sake,
yet in battle they will carry his shield.
6 Do not forget a friend during the battle,[a]
and do not be unmindful of him when
you distribute your spoils.[b]

7 All counselors praise the counsel they give,
but some give counsel in their own
interest.
8 Be wary of a counselor,
and learn first what is his interest,
for he will take thought for himself.
He may cast the lot against you
9 and tell you, "Your way is good,"
and then stand aside to see what
happens to you.
10 Do not consult the one who regards you
with suspicion;
hide your intentions from those who
are jealous of you.
11 Do not consult with a woman about her
rival
or with a coward about war,
with a merchant about business
or with a buyer about selling,
with a miser about generosity[c]
or with the merciless about kindness,
with an idler about any work
or with a seasonal laborer about
completing his work,
with a lazy servant about a big task—
pay no attention to any advice they give.
12 But associate with a godly person
whom you know to be a keeper of the
commandments,
who is like-minded with yourself,
and who will grieve with you if you fail.
13 And heed[d] the counsel of your own
heart,
for no one is more faithful to you than
it is.
14 For our own mind sometimes keeps us
better informed
than seven sentinels sitting high on a
watchtower.
15 But above all pray to the Most High
that he may direct your way in truth.

16 Discussion is the beginning of every
work,
and counsel precedes every
undertaking.
17 The mind is the root of all conduct;
18 it sprouts four branches,[e]
good and evil, life and death;
and it is the tongue that continually
rules them.
19 Some people may be clever enough to
teach many,
and yet be useless to themselves.
20 A skillful speaker may be hated;
he will be destitute of all food,
21 for the Lord has withheld the gift of
charm,
since he is lacking in all wisdom.
22 If a person is wise to his own
advantage,
the fruits of his good sense will be
praiseworthy.[f]
23 A wise person instructs his own people,
and the fruits of his good sense will
endure.
24 A wise person will have praise heaped
upon him,

[a] Heb: Gk *in your heart*
[b] Heb: Gk *him in your wealth*
[c] Heb: Gk *gratitude*
[d] Heb: Gk *establish*
[e] Heb: Gk *As a clue to changes of heart four kinds of destiny appear*
[f] Other ancient witnesses read *trustworthy*

6.5–17; 9.10–16; 19.13–17; 22.19–26; 27.16–21). **3:** *O inclination to evil,* the evil impulse (Heb *yetser*) is the origin of sins and offenses against friendships (cf. 15.14n). **5:** *Carry his shield,* defend from attack (cf. Ps 35.2). **8–11:** By finding out a prospective counselor's own agenda, one can avoid relying on inappropriate counselors. **11:** *Her rival,* perhaps another wife (26.6). **12–15:** The best sources of good counsel are *those who keep the commandments,* one's own heart, and *the Most High.*

37.16–26: Wisdom and action. 16–18: Wise action demands consultation, thought, and articulation. **19–26:**

and all who see him will call him happy.
25 The days of a person's life are numbered,
but the days of Israel are without number.
26 One who is wise among his people will inherit honor,[a]
and his name will live forever.

27 My child, test yourself while you live;
see what is bad for you and do not give in to it.
28 For not everything is good for everyone,
and no one enjoys everything.
29 Do not be greedy for every delicacy,
and do not eat without restraint;
30 for overeating brings sickness,
and gluttony leads to nausea.
31 Many have died of gluttony,
but the one who guards against it prolongs his life.

38 Honor physicians for their services,
for the Lord created them;
2 for their gift of healing comes from the Most High,
and they are rewarded by the king.
3 The skill of physicians makes them distinguished,
and in the presence of the great they are admired.
4 The Lord created medicines out of the earth,
and the sensible will not despise them.
5 Was not water made sweet with a tree
in order that its[b] power might be known?
6 And he gave skill to human beings
that he[c] might be glorified in his marvelous works.
7 By them the physician[d] heals and takes away pain;
8 the pharmacist makes a mixture from them.
God's[e] works will never be finished;
and from him health[f] spreads over all the earth.

9 My child, when you are ill, do not delay,
but pray to the Lord, and he will heal you.
10 Give up your faults and direct your hands rightly,
and cleanse your heart from all sin.
11 Offer a sweet-smelling sacrifice, and a memorial portion of choice flour,
and pour oil on your offering, as much as you can afford.[g]
12 Then give the physician his place, for the Lord created him;
do not let him leave you, for you need him.
13 There may come a time when recovery lies in the hands of physicians,[h]
14 for they too pray to the Lord
that he grant them success in diagnosis[i]
and in healing, for the sake of preserving life.
15 He who sins against his Maker,
will be defiant toward the physician.[j]

16 My child, let your tears fall for the dead,
and as one in great pain begin the lament.

[a] Other ancient authorities read *confidence*
[b] Or *his*
[c] Or *they*
[d] Heb: Gk *he*
[e] Gk *His*
[f] Or *peace*
[g] Heb: Lat lacks *as much as you can afford*; Meaning of Gk uncertain
[h] Gk *in their hands*
[i] Heb: Gk *rest*
[j] Heb: Gk *may he fall into the hands of the physician*

There are *clever* persons who lack wisdom, while truly wise persons benefit themselves and their *people*. **25:** *The days of Israel are without number,* 2 Macc 14.15.

37.27–31: Moderation. Cf. 31.12–31. **28:** *Not everything is good for everyone,* Num 11.18–20.

38.1–15: Sickness and physicians. The wise person is respectful toward and cooperative with doctors, and regards medicines as gifts from God. **5:** *Water made sweet,* see Ex 15.23–25. **9–15:** The assumption is that illness is the effect of sin (Deut 28.21–22,27–28; Prov 3.7–8; Job 5.17–18), and so the sick must engage in prayer, repentance, and *sacrifice.*

Lay out the body with due ceremony,
and do not neglect the burial.
17 Let your weeping be bitter and your wailing fervent;
make your mourning worthy of the departed,
for one day, or two, to avoid criticism;
then be comforted for your grief.
18 For grief may result in death,
and a sorrowful heart saps one's strength.
19 When a person is taken away, sorrow is over;
but the life of the poor weighs down the heart.
20 Do not give your heart to grief;
drive it away, and remember your own end.
21 Do not forget, there is no coming back;
you do the dead[a] no good, and you injure yourself.
22 Remember his[b] fate, for yours is like it;
yesterday it was his,[c] and today it is yours.
23 When the dead is at rest, let his remembrance rest too,
and be comforted for him when his spirit has departed.

24 The wisdom of the scribe depends on the opportunity of leisure;
only the one who has little business can become wise.
25 How can one become wise who handles the plow,
and who glories in the shaft of a goad,
who drives oxen and is occupied with their work,
and whose talk is about bulls?
26 He sets his heart on plowing furrows,
and he is careful about fodder for the heifers.
27 So it is with every artisan and master artisan
who labors by night as well as by day;
those who cut the signets of seals,
each is diligent in making a great variety;
they set their heart on painting a lifelike image,
and they are careful to finish their work.
28 So it is with the smith, sitting by the anvil,
intent on his iron-work;
the breath of the fire melts his flesh,
and he struggles with the heat of the furnace;
the sound of the hammer deafens his ears,[d]
and his eyes are on the pattern of the object.
He sets his heart on finishing his handiwork,
and he is careful to complete its decoration.
29 So it is with the potter sitting at his work
and turning the wheel with his feet;
he is always deeply concerned over his products,
and he produces them in quantity.
30 He molds the clay with his arm
and makes it pliable with his feet;
he sets his heart to finish the glazing,
and he takes care in firing[e] the kiln.

31 All these rely on their hands,
and all are skillful in their own work.

[a] Gk *him*
[b] Heb: Gk *my*
[c] Heb: Gk *mine*
[d] Cn: Gk *renews his ear*
[e] Cn: Gk *cleaning*

38.16–23: Mourning. Grief over the death of a loved one (cf. 22.11–12; Tob 1.17–18; 4.3–4; 6.15; 12.12; 14.12–13) should be intense but circumscribed, lest the mourner suffer harm. **23:** *The dead is at rest,* while there is no explicit denial of life after death, there is no affirmation of it either.

38.24–34: Tradesmen and the scribe. Scribes trained at Ben Sira's school (51.23–28) learned not only to copy and produce legal documents but were also expected to become intellectuals, public figures, and leaders (cf. 39.1–11). **24:** *Leisure,* the scribe has time and circumstances to study, whereas farmers, artisans, smiths, and potters (38.25–30) are too occupied with working on their trades to do so. The contrast between the scribe and other occupations is also a topic in several Egyptian wisdom compositions, including the *Satire on the Trades*

32 Without them no city can be inhabited,
and wherever they live, they will not go hungry.[a]
Yet they are not sought out for the council of the people,[b]
33 nor do they attain eminence in the public assembly.
They do not sit in the judge's seat,
nor do they understand the decisions of the courts;
they cannot expound discipline or judgment,
and they are not found among the rulers.[c]
34 But they maintain the fabric of the world,
and their concern is for[d] the exercise of their trade.

How different the one who devotes himself
to the study of the law of the Most High!
39 He seeks out the wisdom of all the ancients,
and is concerned with prophecies;
2 he preserves the sayings of the famous
and penetrates the subtleties of parables;
3 he seeks out the hidden meanings of proverbs
and is at home with the obscurities of parables.
4 He serves among the great
and appears before rulers;
he travels in foreign lands
and learns what is good and evil in the human lot.
5 He sets his heart to rise early
to seek the Lord who made him,
and to petition the Most High;
he opens his mouth in prayer
and asks pardon for his sins.
6 If the great Lord is willing,
he will be filled with the spirit of understanding;
he will pour forth words of wisdom of his own
and give thanks to the Lord in prayer.
7 The Lord[e] will direct his counsel and knowledge,
as he meditates on his mysteries.
8 He will show the wisdom of what he has learned,
and will glory in the law of the Lord's covenant.
9 Many will praise his understanding;
it will never be blotted out.
His memory will not disappear,
and his name will live through all generations.
10 Nations will speak of his wisdom,
and the congregation will proclaim his praise.
11 If he lives long, he will leave a name greater than a thousand,
and if he goes to rest, it is enough[f] for him.

12 I have more on my mind to express;
I am full like the full moon.
13 Listen to me, my faithful children, and blossom
like a rose growing by a stream of water.
14 Send out fragrance like incense,
and put forth blossoms like a lily.
Scatter the fragrance, and sing a hymn of praise;
bless the Lord for all his works.

a Syr: Gk *and people can neither live nor walk there*
b Most ancient authorities lack this line
c Cn: Gk *among parables*
d Syr: Gk *prayer is in*
e Gk *He himself*
f Cn: Meaning of Gk uncertain

and the *Instruction of Kheti.* **32–33:** *Without them no city can be inhabited,* Ben Sira acknowledges the positive contributions of tradesmen to society. But they are not present in the *public assembly*, the *courts*, or *among the rulers.* **34:** *Law,* the Torah was an essential component in Ben Sira's curriculum (cf. Ezra 7.6,10).

39.1–11: Scribal education. The scribes dealt with the law, *wisdom,* and *prophecies* (see the Prologue for the threefold division of the Hebrew scriptures). **2–3:** Cf. Prov 1.5–6; 25.1. **4:** *Travels,* cf. 34.11; 51.13. **5:** *Prayer,* since God is the source of true wisdom (1.1–10), prayer must be part of the scribe's formation. **9:** *His memory* and *name will live,* cf. 37.26; 44.10–15. **11:** *Greater than a thousand,* cf. Job 9.3; 33.23; Eccl 7.28.

39.12–35: God's creation and evil. God can use everything, both *good* and *bad,* to carry out the divine pur-

15 Ascribe majesty to his name
and give thanks to him with praise,
with songs on your lips, and with harps;
this is what you shall say in thanksgiving:

16 "All the works of the Lord are very good,
and whatever he commands will be done at the appointed time.
17 No one can say, 'What is this?' or 'Why is that?'—
for at the appointed time all such questions will be answered.
At his word the waters stood in a heap,
and the reservoirs of water at the word of his mouth.
18 When he commands, his every purpose is fulfilled,
and none can limit his saving power.
19 The works of all are before him,
and nothing can be hidden from his eyes.
20 From the beginning to the end of time he can see everything,
and nothing is too marvelous for him.
21 No one can say, 'What is this?' or 'Why is that?'—
for everything has been created for its own purpose.

22 "His blessing covers the dry land like a river,
and drenches it like a flood.
23 But his wrath drives out the nations,
as when he turned a watered land into salt.
24 To the faithful his ways are straight,
but full of pitfalls for the wicked.
25 From the beginning good things were created for the good,
but for sinners good things and bad.[a]
26 The basic necessities of human life
are water and fire and iron and salt
and wheat flour and milk and honey,
the blood of the grape and oil and clothing.
27 All these are good for the godly,
but for sinners they turn into evils.

28 "There are winds created for vengeance,
and in their anger they can dislodge mountains;[b]
on the day of reckoning they will pour out their strength
and calm the anger of their Maker.
29 Fire and hail and famine and pestilence,
all these have been created for vengeance;
30 the fangs of wild animals and scorpions and vipers,
and the sword that punishes the ungodly with destruction.
31 They take delight in doing his bidding,
always ready for his service on earth;
and when their time comes they never disobey his command."

32 So from the beginning I have been convinced of all this
and have thought it out and left it in writing:
33 All the works of the Lord are good,
and he will supply every need in its time.
34 No one can say, "This is not as good as that,"
for everything proves good in its appointed time.
35 So now sing praise with all your heart and voice,
and bless the name of the Lord.

40 Hard work was created for everyone,
and a heavy yoke is laid on the children of Adam,
from the day they come forth from their mother's womb

[a] Heb Lat: Gk *sinners bad things*
[b] Heb Syr: Gk *can scourge mightily*

pose. **16–31:** A hymn of praise (v. 14). **16:** *Very good,* cf. Gen 1.4,10,12,18,21,25,31. **17:** *The waters stood in a heap,* see Ex 15.8; Josh 3.16. *Water at the word of his mouth,* see Gen 1.9–10. **21:** *Created for its own purpose* may reflect the influence of Stoic philosophy. **23:** *Watered land into salt,* see Gen 19.24–26. **26:** *The basic necessities,* cf. 29.21. **28–30:** Things with bad effects punish the wicked. **33–34:** *Good,* cf. 39.16; 33.7–15.

40.1–30: Miseries and joys. 1–11: Fears and anxieties stem from the *heavy yoke* laid on *Adam*'s descendants

until the day they return to[a] the mother
of all the living.[b]
2 Perplexities and fear of heart are theirs,
and anxious thought of the day of their
death.
3 From the one who sits on a splendid
throne
to the one who grovels in dust and
ashes,
4 from the one who wears purple and a
crown
to the one who is clothed in burlap,
5 there is anger and envy and trouble and
unrest,
and fear of death, and fury and strife.
And when one rests upon his bed,
his sleep at night confuses his mind.
6 He gets little or no rest;
he struggles in his sleep as he did by
day.[c]
He is troubled by the visions of his mind
like one who has escaped from the
battlefield.
7 At the moment he reaches safety he
wakes up,
astonished that his fears were
groundless.
8 To all creatures, human and animal,
but to sinners seven times more,
9 come death and bloodshed and strife and
sword,
calamities and famine and ruin and
plague.
10 All these were created for the wicked,
and on their account the flood came.
11 All that is of earth returns to earth,
and what is from above returns above.[d]

12 All bribery and injustice will be blotted
out,
but good faith will last forever.
13 The wealth of the unjust will dry up like
a river,
and crash like a loud clap of thunder in
a storm.
14 As a generous person has cause to
rejoice,
so lawbreakers will utterly fail.
15 The children of the ungodly put out few
branches;
they are unhealthy roots on sheer
rock.
16 The reeds by any water or river bank
are plucked up before any grass;
17 but kindness is like a garden of
blessings,
and almsgiving endures forever.

18 Wealth and wages make life sweet,[e]
but better than either is finding a
treasure.
19 Children and the building of a city
establish one's name,
but better than either is the one who
finds wisdom.
Cattle and orchards make one
prosperous;[f]
but a blameless wife is accounted better
than either.
20 Wine and music gladden the heart,
but the love of friends[g] is better than
either.
21 The flute and the harp make sweet
melody,
but a pleasant voice is better than
either.
22 The eye desires grace and beauty,
but the green shoots of grain more than
either.
23 A friend or companion is always
welcome,
but a sensible wife[h] is better than
either.
24 Kindred and helpers are for a time of
trouble,
but almsgiving rescues better than
either.

[a] Other Gk and Lat authorities read *are buried in*
[b] Heb: Gk *of all*
[c] Arm: Meaning of Gk uncertain
[d] Heb Syr: Gk Lat *from the waters returns to the sea*
[e] Heb: Gk *Life is sweet for the self-reliant worker*
[f] Heb Syr: Gk lacks *but better . . . prosperous*
[g] Heb: Gk *wisdom*
[h] Heb Compare Syr: Gk *wife with her husband*

(Gen 3.17–19). **1:** *Mother's womb . . . mother,* cf. Job 1.21. **5–7:** For restless *sleep* and bad dreams, see 34.1–8; Job 7.4; Eccl 2.23. **10:** *Flood,* see Gen 6–8. **11:** *Returns to earth*, cf. Gen 3.19. *What is from above*, cf. Eccl 12.7. **12–17:** In the end righteousness will prevail. **15:** Cf. Job 18.16. **18–27:** The numerical sayings name two good things and

25 Gold and silver make one stand firm,
but good counsel is esteemed more than either.
26 Riches and strength build up confidence,
but the fear of the Lord is better than either.
There is no want in the fear of the Lord,
and with it there is no need to seek for help.
27 The fear of the Lord is like a garden of blessing,
and covers a person better than any glory.

28 My child, do not lead the life of a beggar;
it is better to die than to beg.
29 When one looks to the table of another,
one's way of life cannot be considered a life.
One loses self-respect with another person's food,
but one who is intelligent and well instructed guards against that.
30 In the mouth of the shameless begging is sweet,
but it kindles a fire inside him.

41 O death, how bitter is the thought of you
to the one at peace among possessions,
who has nothing to worry about and is prosperous in everything,
and still is vigorous enough to enjoy food!
2 O death, how welcome is your sentence
to one who is needy and failing in strength,
worn down by age and anxious about everything;
to one who is contrary, and has lost all patience!
3 Do not fear death's decree for you;
remember those who went before you and those who will come after.
4 This is the Lord's decree for all flesh;
why then should you reject the will of the Most High?
Whether life lasts for ten years or a hundred or a thousand,
there are no questions asked in Hades.

5 The children of sinners are abominable children,
and they frequent the haunts of the ungodly.
6 The inheritance of the children of sinners will perish,
and on their offspring will be a perpetual disgrace.
7 Children will blame an ungodly father,
for they suffer disgrace because of him.
8 Woe to you, the ungodly,
who have forsaken the law of the Most High God!
9 If you have children, calamity will be theirs;
you will beget them only for groaning.
When you stumble, there is lasting joy;[a]
and when you die, a curse is your lot.
10 Whatever comes from earth returns to earth;
so the ungodly go from curse to destruction.

11 The human body is a fleeting thing,
but a virtuous name will never be blotted out.[b]
12 Have regard for your name, since it will outlive you
longer than a thousand hoards of gold.
13 The days of a good life are numbered,
but a good name lasts forever.

14 My children, be true to your training and be at peace;

[a] Heb: Meaning of Gk uncertain
[b] Heb: Gk *People grieve over the death of the body, but the bad name of sinners will be blotted out*

assert that a third is even *better.* **26–27:** *Fear of the Lord* is best of all (cf. 1.11–30). **28–30:** The worst misery is to be reduced to begging (29.24–28; 30.17).

41.1–13: Death and reputation. The most important mode of immortality for Ben Sira is through one's *name,* the reputation that one leaves behind (cf. 14.11–19; 17.25–28; 38.16–23). **4:** *Decree for all,* cf. Gen 3.19. *Hades,* Heb "Sheol," the abode of the dead (cf. Ps 88.10–12). **5:** *Abominable children,* merely having offspring does not guarantee immortality (Wis 3.12–13,16–18; 4.3–6). **11:** *Virtuous name,* cf. Prov 22.1; Eccl 7.1.

hidden wisdom and unseen treasure—
of what value is either?
15 Better are those who hide their folly
than those who hide their wisdom.
16 Therefore show respect for my words;
for it is not good to feel shame in every
circumstance,
nor is every kind of abashment to be
approved.[a]

17 Be ashamed of sexual immorality, before
your father or mother;
and of a lie, before a prince or a ruler;
18 of a crime, before a judge or magistrate;
and of a breach of the law, before the
congregation and the people;
of unjust dealing, before your partner or
your friend;
19 and of theft, in the place where you
live.
Be ashamed of breaking an oath or
agreement,[b]
and of leaning on your elbow at meals;
of surliness in receiving or giving,
20 and of silence, before those who greet
you;
of looking at a prostitute,
21 and of rejecting the appeal of a
relative;
of taking away someone's portion or gift,
and of gazing at another man's wife;
22 of meddling with his servant-girl—
and do not approach her bed;
of abusive words, before friends—
and do not be insulting after making a
gift.

42 Be ashamed of repeating what you
hear,
and of betraying secrets.
Then you will show proper shame,
and will find favor with everyone.

Of the following things do not be
ashamed,
and do not sin to save face:
2 Do not be ashamed of the law of the Most
High and his covenant,
and of rendering judgment to acquit the
ungodly;
3 of keeping accounts with a partner or
with traveling companions,
and of dividing the inheritance of
friends;
4 of accuracy with scales and weights,
and of acquiring much or little;
5 of profit from dealing with merchants,
and of frequent disciplining of
children,
and of drawing blood from the back of a
wicked slave.
6 Where there is an untrustworthy wife, a
seal is a good thing;
and where there are many hands, lock
things up.
7 When you make a deposit, be sure it is
counted and weighed,
and when you give or receive, put it all
in writing.
8 Do not be ashamed to correct the stupid
or foolish
or the aged who are guilty of sexual
immorality.
Then you will show your sound training,
and will be approved by all.

9 A daughter is a secret anxiety to her
father,
and worry over her robs him of sleep;
when she is young, for fear she may not
marry,
or if married, for fear she may be
disliked;
10 while a virgin, for fear she may be
seduced
and become pregnant in her father's
house;

[a] Heb: Gk *and not everything is confidently esteemed by everyone*
[b] Heb: Gk *before the truth of God and the covenant*

41.14–42.8: True and false shame. Cf. 4.20–6.4; 10.19–11.6. After an introduction (41.14–16), Ben Sira describes behaviors that properly bring shame (sexual misconduct, dishonesty, rudeness, 41.17–42.1a) and notes things of which one should not be ashamed (fidelity to the law, honesty, controlling one's household, giving reproof where needed, 42.1b–8). **42.2:** *The law of the Most High* leads the list of things not to be ashamed of.

42.9–14: A father's anxiety over his daughters. Cf. 7.24–25; 22.3–6. The major concern here is the father's good reputation (cf. 30.1–13). **9–10:** *Worry over her,* the father was responsible for arranging his daughter's

or having a husband, for fear she may go
astray,
or, though married, for fear she may be
barren.
[11] Keep strict watch over a headstrong
daughter,
or she may make you a laughingstock to
your enemies,
a byword in the city and the assembly of[a]
the people,
and put you to shame in public
gatherings.[b]
See that there is no lattice in her room,
no spot that overlooks the approaches
to the house.[c]
[12] Do not let her parade her beauty before
any man,
or spend her time among married
women;[a]
[13] for from garments comes the moth,
and from a woman comes woman's
wickedness.
[14] Better is the wickedness of a man than a
woman who does good;
it is woman who brings shame and
disgrace.

[15] I will now call to mind the works of the
Lord,
and will declare what I have seen.
By the word of the Lord his works are
made;
and all his creatures do his will.[d]
[16] The sun looks down on everything with
its light,
and the work of the Lord is full of his
glory.
[17] The Lord has not empowered even his
holy ones
to recount all his marvelous works,
which the Lord the Almighty has
established
so that the universe may stand firm in
his glory.
[18] He searches out the abyss and the
human heart;
he understands their innermost secrets.
For the Most High knows all that may be
known;
he sees from of old the things that are
to come.[e]
[19] He discloses what has been and what is
to be,
and he reveals the traces of hidden things.
[20] No thought escapes him,
and nothing is hidden from him.
[21] He has set in order the splendors of his
wisdom;
he is from all eternity one and the same.
Nothing can be added or taken away,
and he needs no one to be his
counselor.
[22] How desirable are all his works,
and how sparkling they are to see![f]
[23] All these things live and remain forever;
each creature is preserved to meet a
particular need.[g]
[24] All things come in pairs, one opposite
the other,
and he has made nothing incomplete.
[25] Each supplements the virtues of the
other.
Who could ever tire of seeing his glory?

[a] Heb: Meaning of Gk uncertain
[b] Heb: Gk *to shame before the great multitude*
[c] Heb: Gk lacks *See . . . house*
[d] Syr Compare Heb: most Gk witnesses lack *and all . . . will*
[e] Heb: Gk *he sees the sign(s) of the age*
[f] Meaning of Gk uncertain
[g] Heb: Gk *forever for every need, and all are obedient*

marriage, and a high premium was placed on her virginity and fertility (cf. Deut 22.13–29). **11–12:** *Headstrong daughter,* a father who was unable to control the women of his household was subject to shame. Thus the life of unmarried daughters was closely supervised. **13:** *From a woman comes woman's wickedness,* the woman is Eve (cf. Gen 3.6; 1 Tim 3.14). **14:** *Better is the wickedness of a man,* the lowest point in Ben Sira's misogyny (cf. 25.13–26.27; 36.26–31).

42.15–43.33: God's glory made manifest in all creation. 15–25: The order and splendor of the whole cosmos reflect God's omniscience and purpose. **15:** *By the word,* cf. Gen 1.1–31; Ps 33.6; Jdt 16.14; Wis 9.1. **17:** *Holy ones,* that is, angels or members of the heavenly court. **19:** *What has been and what is to be,* cf. Isa 41.22–23; 44.7. *Reveals . . . hidden things,* cf. Dan 2.22. **21:** *Counselor,* cf. Isa 40.13. **24:** *All things come in pairs,* cf. 33.7–15; 39.12–35;

43 The pride of the higher realms is the clear vault of the sky,
as glorious to behold as the sight of the heavens.
[2] The sun, when it appears, proclaims as it rises
what a marvelous instrument it is, the work of the Most High.
[3] At noon it parches the land,
and who can withstand its burning heat?
[4] A man tending[a] a furnace works in burning heat,
but three times as hot is the sun scorching the mountains;
it breathes out fiery vapors,
and its bright rays blind the eyes.
[5] Great is the Lord who made it;
at his orders it hurries on its course.

[6] It is the moon that marks the changing seasons,[b]
governing the times, their everlasting sign.
[7] From the moon comes the sign for festal days,
a light that wanes when it completes its course.
[8] The new moon, as its name suggests, renews itself;[c]
how marvelous it is in this change,
a beacon to the hosts on high,
shining in the vault of the heavens!

[9] The glory of the stars is the beauty of heaven,
a glittering array in the heights of the Lord.
[10] On the orders of the Holy One they stand in their appointed places;
they never relax in their watches.
[11] Look at the rainbow, and praise him who made it;
it is exceedingly beautiful in its brightness.
[12] It encircles the sky with its glorious arc;
the hands of the Most High have stretched it out.
[13] By his command he sends the driving snow
and speeds the lightnings of his judgment.
[14] Therefore the storehouses are opened,
and the clouds fly out like birds.
[15] In his majesty he gives the clouds their strength,
and the hailstones are broken in pieces.
[17a] The voice of his thunder rebukes the earth;
[16] when he appears, the mountains shake.
At his will the south wind blows;
[17b] so do the storm from the north and the whirlwind.
He scatters the snow like birds flying down,
and its descent is like locusts alighting.
[18] The eye is dazzled by the beauty of its whiteness,
and the mind is amazed as it falls.
[19] He pours frost over the earth like salt,
and icicles form like pointed thorns.
[20] The cold north wind blows,
and ice freezes on the water;
it settles on every pool of water,
and the water puts it on like a breastplate.
[21] He consumes the mountains and burns up the wilderness,
and withers the tender grass like fire.
[22] A mist quickly heals all things;
the falling dew gives refreshment from the heat.

[23] By his plan he stilled the deep
and planted islands in it.
[24] Those who sail the sea tell of its dangers,
and we marvel at what we hear.
[25] In it are strange and marvelous creatures,
all kinds of living things, and huge sea-monsters.

[a] Other ancient authorities read *blowing upon*
[b] Heb: Meaning of Gk uncertain
[c] Heb: Gk *The month is named after the moon*

40.8–10. **43.1–12:** God's glory in the heavenly bodies (cf. Job 38.1–38; Ps 104). **7:** *The sign for festal days,* this may suggest preference for a lunar rather than a solar calendar. **11:** *Rainbow,* see Gen 9.12–17. **43.13–26:** God's glory in storms (cf. Ps 29; Job 38–39). **16–17:** The imagery is evocative of divine theophanies, cf. Ps 18.7–15. **23–25:** Cf.

[26] Because of him each of his messengers
succeeds,
and by his word all things hold
together.

[27] We could say more but could never say
enough;
let the final word be: "He is the all."
[28] Where can we find the strength to praise
him?
For he is greater than all his works.
[29] Awesome is the Lord and very great,
and marvelous is his power.
[30] Glorify the Lord and exalt him as much
as you can,
for he surpasses even that.
When you exalt him, summon all your
strength,
and do not grow weary, for you cannot
praise him enough.
[31] Who has seen him and can describe
him?
Or who can extol him as he is?
[32] Many things greater than these lie
hidden,
for I[a] have seen but few of his works.
[33] For the Lord has made all things,
and to the godly he has given wisdom.

HYMN IN HONOR OF OUR ANCESTORS[b]

44 Let us now sing the praises of famous
men,
our ancestors in their generations.
[2] The Lord apportioned to them[c] great
glory,
his majesty from the beginning.
[3] There were those who ruled in their
kingdoms,
and made a name for themselves by
their valor;
those who gave counsel because they were
intelligent;
those who spoke in prophetic oracles;
[4] those who led the people by their
counsels
and by their knowledge of the people's
lore;
they were wise in their words of
instruction;
[5] those who composed musical tunes,
or put verses in writing;
[6] rich men endowed with resources,
living peacefully in their homes—
[7] all these were honored in their
generations,
and were the pride of their times.
[8] Some of them have left behind a
name,
so that others declare their praise.
[9] But of others there is no memory;
they have perished as though they had
never existed;
they have become as though they had
never been born,
they and their children after them.
[10] But these also were godly men,
whose righteous deeds have not been
forgotten;
[11] their wealth will remain with their
descendants,
and their inheritance with their
children's children.[d]
[12] Their descendants stand by the
covenants;
their children also, for their sake.
[13] Their offspring will continue forever,
and their glory will never be blotted
out.
[14] Their bodies are buried in peace,
but their name lives on generation after
generation.

[a] Heb: Gk *we*
[b] This title is included in the Gk text.
[c] Heb: Gk *created*
[d] Heb Compare Lat Syr: Meaning of Gk uncertain

Pss 104.24–26; 107.23–24. **27–33:** God is *the all* in the sense that all creation reveals the presence of God as its creator and lord. The proper response from humans is praise and humility.

44.1–50.24: In praise of Israel's ancestors. Ben Sira celebrates the covenant with the patriarchs and Israel by recounting the great figures of Israel's history (44.1–49.16), culminating in the high priest Simon II (50.1–24).

44.1–15: God's glory made manifest in Israel. The great heroes in Israel's history are best understood as manifestations of God's glory (cf. 1 Macc 2.51–64). **1.** *Famous men,* the Hebrew and Syriac read *men of piety.* **3–8:** Twelve types of heroes are listed. **9–10:** Some good people have left no memorial, but they will not be *forgotten.* **14:** *Their name,* cf. 41.11–13.

15 The assembly declares[a] their wisdom,
and the congregation proclaims their praise.

16 Enoch pleased the Lord and was taken up,
an example of repentance to all generations.

17 Noah was found perfect and righteous;
in the time of wrath he kept the race alive;[b]
therefore a remnant was left on the earth when the flood came.
18 Everlasting covenants were made with him
that all flesh should never again be blotted out by a flood.

19 Abraham was the great father of a multitude of nations,
and no one has been found like him in glory.
20 He kept the law of the Most High,
and entered into a covenant with him;
he certified the covenant in his flesh,
and when he was tested he proved faithful.
21 Therefore the Lord[c] assured him with an oath
that the nations would be blessed through his offspring;
that he would make him as numerous as the dust of the earth,
and exalt his offspring like the stars,
and give them an inheritance from sea to sea
and from the Euphrates[d] to the ends of the earth.
22 To Isaac also he gave the same assurance for the sake of his father Abraham.
The blessing of all people and the covenant
23 he made to rest on the head of Jacob;
he acknowledged him with his blessings,
and gave him his inheritance;
he divided his portions,
and distributed them among twelve tribes.

From his descendants the Lord[c] brought forth a godly man,
who found favor in the sight of all

45 1 and was beloved by God and people,
Moses, whose memory is blessed.
2 He made him equal in glory to the holy ones,
and made him great, to the terror of his enemies.
3 By his words he performed swift miracles;[e]
the Lord[c] glorified him in the presence of kings.
He gave him commandments for his people,
and revealed to him his glory.
4 For his faithfulness and meekness he consecrated him,
choosing him out of all humankind.
5 He allowed him to hear his voice,
and led him into the dark cloud,
and gave him the commandments face to face,
the law of life and knowledge,

[a] Heb: Gk *Peoples declare*
[b] Heb: Gk *was taken in exchange*
[c] Gk *he*
[d] Syr: Heb Gk *River*
[e] Heb: Gk *caused signs to cease*

44.16–23: The patriarchs. 16: *Enoch* also ends the list (49.14). For his being *taken up,* see Gen 5.24. Why he is called an *example of repentance* is not clear. **17–18:** *Noah* was *perfect* (Gen 6.9) and *righteous* (Gen 7.1), and the vehicle for *everlasting covenants* (Gen 9.8–17). **19–21:** *Abraham,* the *great father* (Gen 17.4–5), *kept the law* before it was given to Moses on Sinai, entered into the *covenant* by circumcision (Gen 17), and *was tested* in the binding of Isaac (Gen 22.1–14). **21:** See Gen 12.3; 13.16; 15.5,18; 22.17–18. **22:** *Isaac*, Gen 17.19; 26.3–5. **23:** *Jacob*, Gen 27.27–29; 28.13–15; *his inheritance* is the promised land (Gen 28.4). The *twelve tribes* of Israel, descended from Jacob's sons; see Gen 49.

45.1–5: Moses as a miracle worker and teacher. 2: *Glory,* Ex 33.18–23. **3:** *Miracles,* specifically the signs and plagues in Egypt; Ex 7.1–11.10; 12.29–32. *Commandments*, the Decalogue (Ex 20.1–17; Deut 5.1–33); *glory* (Ex 33.18–23). **4:** *Meekness,* Num 12.3. **5:** *Dark cloud,* Ex 20.21; 24.18. *Face to face,* Num 12.8. *Teach,* Deut 4.1.

so that he might teach Jacob the covenant,
and Israel his decrees.

6 He exalted Aaron, a holy man like
Moses[a]
who was his brother, of the tribe of
Levi.
7 He made an everlasting covenant with
him,
and gave him the priesthood of the
people.
He blessed him with stateliness,
and put a glorious robe on him.
8 He clothed him in perfect splendor,
and strengthened him with the symbols
of authority,
the linen undergarments, the long robe,
and the ephod.
9 And he encircled him with
pomegranates,
with many golden bells all around,
to send forth a sound as he walked,
to make their ringing heard in the
temple
as a reminder to his people;
10 with the sacred vestment, of gold and
violet
and purple, the work of an
embroiderer;
with the oracle of judgment, Urim and
Thummim;
11 with twisted crimson, the work of an
artisan;
with precious stones engraved like seals,
in a setting of gold, the work of a
jeweler,
to commemorate in engraved letters
each of the tribes of Israel;
12 with a gold crown upon his turban,
inscribed like a seal with "Holiness,"
a distinction to be prized, the work of an
expert,
a delight to the eyes, richly adorned.
13 Before him such beautiful things did not
exist.
No outsider ever put them on,
but only his sons
and his descendants in perpetuity.
14 His sacrifices shall be wholly burned
twice every day continually.
15 Moses ordained him,
and anointed him with holy oil;
it was an everlasting covenant for him
and for his descendants as long as the
heavens endure,
to minister to the Lord[a] and serve as
priest
and bless his people in his name.
16 He chose him out of all the living
to offer sacrifice to the Lord,
incense and a pleasing odor as a memorial
portion,
to make atonement for the[b] people.
17 In his commandments he gave him
authority and statutes and[c]
judgments,
to teach Jacob the testimonies,
and to enlighten Israel with his law.
18 Outsiders conspired against him,
and envied him in the wilderness,
Dathan and Abiram and their followers
and the company of Korah, in wrath
and anger.
19 The Lord saw it and was not pleased,
and in the heat of his anger they were
destroyed;
he performed wonders against them
to consume them in flaming fire.
20 He added glory to Aaron
and gave him a heritage;
he allotted to him the best of the first
fruits,
and prepared bread of first fruits in
abundance;
21 for they eat the sacrifices of the Lord,
which he gave to him and his
descendants.

[a] Gk *him*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *his* or *your*
[c] Heb: Gk *authority in covenants of*

45.6–26: Aaron and Phinehas. Attention to the priesthood prepares for the climactic description of Simon the high priest in 50.1–24. **6:** *His brother, of the tribe of Levi,* Ex 4.14. **7:** *Everlasting covenant* of *priesthood,* Ex 29.9; 40.15. **8–13:** *Perfect splendor,* see Ex 28–29 for the various priestly vestments. **10:** *Urim and Thummim,* see Ex 28.30; Num 27.21; 1 Sam 14.41–42. **14:** *Sacrifices,* Lev 6.8–15; Num 28.3–4. **15:** *Moses ordained . . . anointed,* Ex 28.41; Lev 8.1–30. *Bless his people,* see Num 6.22–27. **17:** *Teach,* Lev 10.11; Deut 33.10; Mal 2.7. **18–19:** *Dathan and Abiram*

22 But in the land of the people he has no
inheritance,
and he has no portion among the
people;
for the Lord[a] himself is his[b] portion and
inheritance.

23 Phinehas son of Eleazar ranks third in
glory
for being zealous in the fear of the
Lord,
and standing firm, when the people turned
away,
in the noble courage of his soul;
and he made atonement for Israel.
24 Therefore a covenant of friendship was
established with him,
that he should be leader of the
sanctuary and of his people,
that he and his descendants should
have
the dignity of the priesthood forever.
25 Just as a covenant was established with
David
son of Jesse of the tribe of Judah,
that the king's heritage passes only from
son to son,
so the heritage of Aaron is for his
descendants alone.

26 And now bless the Lord
who has crowned you with glory.[c]
May the Lord[a] grant you wisdom of
mind
to judge his people with justice,
so that their prosperity may not vanish,
and that their glory may endure
through all their generations.

46 Joshua son of Nun was mighty in war,
and was the successor of Moses in the
prophetic office.
He became, as his name implies,
a great savior of God's[d] elect,
to take vengeance on the enemies that
rose against them,
so that he might give Israel its
inheritance.
2 How glorious he was when he lifted his
hands
and brandished his sword against the
cities!
3 Who before him ever stood so firm?
For he waged the wars of the Lord.
4 Was it not through him that the sun
stood still
and one day became as long as two?
5 He called upon the Most High, the
Mighty One,
when enemies pressed him on every
side,
and the great Lord answered him
with hailstones of mighty power.
6 He overwhelmed that nation in
battle,
and on the slope he destroyed his
opponents,
so that the nations might know his
armament,
that he was fighting in the sight of the
Lord;
for he was a devoted follower of the
Mighty One.
7 And in the days of Moses he proved his
loyalty,
he and Caleb son of Jephunneh:
they opposed the congregation,[e]
restrained the people from sin,
and stilled their wicked grumbling.
8 And these two alone were spared
out of six hundred thousand
infantry,
to lead the people[f] into their inheritance,
the land flowing with milk and honey.

[a] Gk *he*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *your*
[c] Heb: Gk lacks *And . . . glory*
[d] Gk *his*
[e] Other ancient authorities read *the enemy*
[f] Gk *them*

. . . *Korah,* Num 16.1–35. **21:** *Eat the sacrifices,* Num 18.8–19. **22:** *No inheritance,* Num 18.20; Deut 12.12. **23–25:** *Phinehas,* Num 25.10–13; Ps 106.30; 1 Macc 2.54. **26:** *You,* perhaps directed to Simon (50.1–24) and his successors.

46.1–20: Joshua and Caleb, the judges, and Samuel. 1–10: For Joshua's military exploits, see Josh 6–11. **1:** *Successor of Moses,* Deut 34.9; Josh 1.1,5; 3.7. Joshua's *name* means "the Lord is salvation." **4:** *Sun stood still,* Josh 10.12–14. **5:** *Hailstones,* Josh 10.11. **7:** *Proved his loyalty,* Num 14.6–10. **8:** *Two alone,* Num 14.38; 26.65. *Six hundred*

9 The Lord gave Caleb strength,
which remained with him in his old age,
so that he went up to the hill country,
and his children obtained it for an inheritance,
10 so that all the Israelites might see
how good it is to follow the Lord.

11 The judges also, with their respective names,
whose hearts did not fall into idolatry
and who did not turn away from the Lord—
may their memory be blessed!
12 May their bones send forth new life from where they lie,
and may the names of those who have been honored
live again in their children!

13 Samuel was beloved by his Lord;
a prophet of the Lord, he established the kingdom
and anointed rulers over his people.
14 By the law of the Lord he judged the congregation,
and the Lord watched over Jacob.
15 By his faithfulness he was proved to be a prophet,
and by his words he became known as a trustworthy seer.
16 He called upon the Lord, the Mighty One,
when his enemies pressed him on every side,
and he offered in sacrifice a suckling lamb.
17 Then the Lord thundered from heaven,
and made his voice heard with a mighty sound;
18 he subdued the leaders of the enemy[a]
and all the rulers of the Philistines.
19 Before the time of his eternal sleep,
Samuel[b] bore witness before the Lord and his anointed:
"No property, not so much as a pair of shoes,
have I taken from anyone!"
And no one accused him.
20 Even after he had fallen asleep, he prophesied
and made known to the king his death,
and lifted up his voice from the ground
in prophecy, to blot out the wickedness of the people.

47 After him Nathan rose up
to prophesy in the days of David.
2 As the fat is set apart from the offering of well-being,
so David was set apart from the Israelites.
3 He played with lions as though they were young goats,
and with bears as though they were lambs of the flock.
4 In his youth did he not kill a giant,
and take away the people's disgrace,
when he whirled the stone in the sling
and struck down the boasting Goliath?
5 For he called on the Lord, the Most High,
and he gave strength to his right arm
to strike down a mighty warrior,
and to exalt the power[c] of his people.
6 So they glorified him for the tens of thousands he conquered,
and praised him for the blessings bestowed by the Lord,
when the glorious diadem was given to him.

[a] Heb: Gk *leaders of the people of Tyre*
[b] Gk *he*
[c] Gk *horn*

thousand, Ex 12.37; Num 11.21. **9:** Caleb's *inheritance,* Josh 14.6–14. **11–12:** Only those *judges* who did not fall into idolatry (as Gideon did; Judg 8.22–35) are blessed. **12:** *Bones send forth new life,* 2 Kings 13.21. **13–20:** Samuel *anointed rulers* (1 Sam 10.1; 16.13) and served as a *judge* (1 Sam 7.3–17), *prophet* (1 Sam 3.19–20), and priest (1 Sam 7.9). **16–18:** 1 Sam 7.9–11. **19:** See 1 Sam 12.3. **20:** *Lifted up his voice from the ground,* 1 Sam 28.8–19.

47.1–25: Early kings. 1: *Nathan,* 2 Sam 7.2–3; 12.1; 1 Chr 17.1. **2–11:** *David* was chosen by God (1 Sam 16.1–12), was a great warrior, and initiated public worship in Jerusalem (1 Chr 16.4; 23.1–6,24–32). **2:** *The fat,* Lev 3.3–5. **3:** *Played with lions . . . and with bears,* 1 Sam 17.34–36. **4:** *Kill a giant,* Goliath (1 Sam 17.49–51). **6:** *Tens of thousands,*

7 For he wiped out his enemies on every side,
and annihilated his adversaries the Philistines;
he crushed their power[a] to our own day.
8 In all that he did he gave thanks to the Holy One, the Most High, proclaiming his glory;
he sang praise with all his heart, and he loved his Maker.
9 He placed singers before the altar, to make sweet melody with their voices.[b]
10 He gave beauty to the festivals, and arranged their times throughout the year,[c]
while they praised God's[d] holy name, and the sanctuary resounded from early morning.
11 The Lord took away his sins, and exalted his power[a] forever;
he gave him a covenant of kingship and a glorious throne in Israel.

12 After him a wise son rose up who because of him lived in security:[e]
13 Solomon reigned in an age of peace, because God made all his borders tranquil,
so that he might build a house in his name and provide a sanctuary to stand forever.
14 How wise you were when you were young!
You overflowed like the Nile[f] with understanding.
15 Your influence spread throughout the earth, and you filled it with proverbs having deep meaning.
16 Your fame reached to far-off islands, and you were loved for your peaceful reign.
17 Your songs, proverbs, and parables, and the answers you gave astounded the nations.
18 In the name of the Lord God, who is called the God of Israel,
you gathered gold like tin and amassed silver like lead.
19 But you brought in women to lie at your side,
and through your body you were brought into subjection.
20 You stained your honor, and defiled your family line,
so that you brought wrath upon your children,
and they were grieved[g] at your folly,
21 because the sovereignty was divided and a rebel kingdom arose out of Ephraim.
22 But the Lord will never give up his mercy,
or cause any of his works to perish;
he will never blot out the descendants of his chosen one,
or destroy the family line of him who loved him.
So he gave a remnant to Jacob, and to David a root from his own family.

23 Solomon rested with his ancestors, and left behind him one of his sons,
broad in[h] folly and lacking in sense, Rehoboam, whose policy drove the people to revolt.
Then Jeroboam son of Nebat led Israel into sin and started Ephraim on its sinful ways.

a Gk *horn*
b Other ancient authorities add *and daily they sing his praises*
c Gk *to completion*
d Gk *his*
e Heb: Gk *in a broad place*
f Heb: Gk *a river*
g Other ancient authorities read *I was grieved*
h Heb (with a play on the name Rehoboam) Syr: Gk *the people's*

1 Sam 18.7. **11:** *His sins,* 2 Sam 11–12. *Covenant of kingship,* 2 Sam 7.12–16; Ps 89.19–37. **12–22:** *Solomon* built the Jerusalem Temple (1 Kings 5–8), became *wise* and wealthy (1 Kings 3.12–13; 4.21–34; 10.14–29) but succumbed to lust and idolatry (1 Kings 11.1–11). **21:** When Solomon died, what had been one kingdom was *divided* into

[24] Their sins increased more and more,
until they were exiled from their land.
[25] For they sought out every kind of
wickedness,
until vengeance came upon them.

48 Then Elijah arose, a prophet like fire,
and his word burned like a torch.
[2] He brought a famine upon them,
and by his zeal he made them few in
number.
[3] By the word of the Lord he shut up the
heavens,
and also three times brought down
fire.
[4] How glorious you were, Elijah, in your
wondrous deeds!
Whose glory is equal to yours?
[5] You raised a corpse from death
and from Hades, by the word of the
Most High.
[6] You sent kings down to destruction,
and famous men, from their sickbeds.
[7] You heard rebuke at Sinai
and judgments of vengeance at Horeb.
[8] You anointed kings to inflict
retribution,
and prophets to succeed you.[a]
[9] You were taken up by a whirlwind of fire,
in a chariot with horses of fire.
[10] At the appointed time, it is written, you
are destined[b]
to calm the wrath of God before it
breaks out in fury,
to turn the hearts of parents to their
children,
and to restore the tribes of Jacob.
[11] Happy are those who saw you
and were adorned[c] with your love!
For we also shall surely live.[d]

[12] When Elijah was enveloped in the
whirlwind,
Elisha was filled with his spirit.
He performed twice as many signs,
and marvels with every utterance of his
mouth.[e]
Never in his lifetime did he tremble before
any ruler,
nor could anyone intimidate him at all.
[13] Nothing was too hard for him,
and when he was dead, his body
prophesied.
[14] In his life he did wonders,
and in death his deeds were marvelous.

[15] Despite all this the people did not
repent,
nor did they forsake their sins,
until they were carried off as plunder from
their land,
and were scattered over all the earth.
The people were left very few in number,
but with a ruler from the house of
David.
[16] Some of them did what was right,
but others sinned more and more.

[17] Hezekiah fortified his city,
and brought water into its midst;
he tunneled the rock with iron tools,
and built cisterns for the water.
[18] In his days Sennacherib invaded the
country;
he sent his commander[f] and departed;

[a] Heb: Gk *him*
[b] Heb: Gk *are for reproofs*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *and have died*
[d] Text and meaning of Gk uncertain
[e] Heb: Gk lacks *He performed . . . mouth*
[f] Other ancient authorities add *from Lachish*

two; 1 Kings 11.11–13,31–39; 12.15–20. **22:** *Root,* see Isa 11.10. **23–25:** *Rehoboam* and *Jeroboam,* 1 Kings 11.43–12.20; 12.28–30. **24:** *Exiled,* 2 Kings 17.6–8,18.

48.1–16: Elijah and Elisha. 1–11: How *Elijah* the *prophet* manifested God's glory. **3:** *Shut up the heavens,* 1 Kings 17.1. *Brought down fire,* 1 Kings 18.38; 2 Kings 1.10–12. **5:** *Raised a corpse,* 1 Kings 17.21–22. *Hades,* Heb "Sheol," the abode of the dead. **6:** *Sent kings,* 2 Kings 1.16. **7:** *Heard rebuke at Sinai,* 1 Kings 19.8. **8:** *Anointed kings,* 1 Kings 19.15–16. **9:** *Taken up,* 2 Kings 2.11. **10:** *It is written,* Mal 4.5–6. **12–14:** How the prophet *Elisha* manifested God's glory. **12:** *Filled with his spirit,* 2 Kings 2.9,13. **13:** *His body prophesied,* 2 Kings 13.20–21. **15–16:** The prophets could not overcome the people's sinfulness, which led to the defeat and exile of the northern kingdom of Israel in the eighth century BCE. **15:** *Were carried off,* 2 Kings 18.11–12.

48.17–49.16: Kings, prophets, and leaders of Judah. 17–22: The reign of King *Hezekiah.* **17:** *Water,* 2 Kings

he shook his fist against Zion,
and made great boasts in his arrogance.
19 Then their hearts were shaken and their hands trembled,
and they were in anguish, like women in labor.
20 But they called upon the Lord who is merciful,
spreading out their hands toward him.
The Holy One quickly heard them from heaven,
and delivered them through Isaiah.
21 The Lord[a] struck down the camp of the Assyrians,
and his angel wiped them out.
22 For Hezekiah did what was pleasing to the Lord,
and he kept firmly to the ways of his ancestor David,
as he was commanded by the prophet Isaiah,
who was great and trustworthy in his visions.
23 In Isaiah's[b] days the sun went backward,
and he prolonged the life of the king.
24 By his dauntless spirit he saw the future,
and comforted the mourners in Zion.
25 He revealed what was to occur to the end of time,
and the hidden things before they happened.

49 The name[c] of Josiah is like blended incense
prepared by the skill of the perfumer;
his memory[d] is as sweet as honey to every mouth,
and like music at a banquet of wine.
2 He did what was right by reforming the people,
and removing the wicked abominations.
3 He kept his heart fixed on the Lord;
in lawless times he made godliness prevail.

4 Except for David and Hezekiah and Josiah,
all of them were great sinners,
for they abandoned the law of the Most High;
the kings of Judah came to an end.
5 They[e] gave their power to others,
and their glory to a foreign nation,
6 who set fire to the chosen city of the sanctuary,
and made its streets desolate,
as Jeremiah had foretold.[f]
7 For they had mistreated him,
who even in the womb had been consecrated a prophet,
to pluck up and ruin and destroy,
and likewise to build and to plant.

8 It was Ezekiel who saw the vision of glory,
which God[a] showed him above the chariot of the cherubim.
9 For God[g] also mentioned Job
who held fast to all the ways of justice.[h]
10 May the bones of the Twelve Prophets send forth new life from where they lie,
for they comforted the people of Jacob
and delivered them with confident hope.

[a] Gk *He*
[b] Gk *his*
[c] Heb: Gk *memory*
[d] Heb: Gk *it*
[e] Heb *He*
[f] Gk *by the hand of Jeremiah*
[g] Gk *he*
[h] Heb Compare Syr: Meaning of Gk uncertain

20.20. **18:** *Sennacherib,* the Assyrian king (705–681 BCE); 2 Kings 18.13,17; Isa 36.1. **20:** *Called upon the Lord,* 2 Kings 19.15–20. **21:** *The Lord struck down,* 2 Kings 19.35; Isa 37.36. **23–25:** The deeds of the prophet *Isaiah.* **23:** *Sun went backward,* 2 Kings 20.8–11; Isa 38.7–8. **24–25:** *He saw the future,* Isa 40.1–2; 42.9. **49.1–3:** The reign of King *Josiah.* **1:** *His memory,* 2 Kings 22.1–23.30. **6–7:** The prophet *Jeremiah,* 2 Chr 36.17–19; Jer 1.5–10; 38.2. **8:** The prophet *Ezekiel,* Ezek 1.3–15; 10.1–3; **9:** *Job,* Job 1–2; 42. **10:** *Twelve Prophets,* Hosea—Malachi, the so-called Minor Prophets, probably considered a single book by Ben Sira. **11–13:** Leaders after the exile: *Zerubbabel* (Ezra

[11] How shall we magnify Zerubbabel?
He was like a signet ring on the right hand,
[12] and so was Jeshua son of Jozadak;
in their days they built the house
and raised a temple[a] holy to the Lord,
destined for everlasting glory.
[13] The memory of Nehemiah also is lasting;
he raised our fallen walls,
and set up gates and bars,
and rebuilt our ruined houses.

[14] Few have[b] ever been created on earth like Enoch,
for he was taken up from the earth.
[15] Nor was anyone ever born like Joseph;[c]
even his bones were cared for.
[16] Shem and Seth and Enosh were honored,[d]
but above every other created living being was Adam.

50 The leader of his brothers and the pride of his people[e]
was the high priest, Simon son of Onias,
who in his life repaired the house,
and in his time fortified the temple.
[2] He laid the foundations for the high double walls,
the high retaining walls for the temple enclosure.
[3] In his days a water cistern was dug,[f]
a reservoir like the sea in circumference.
[4] He considered how to save his people from ruin,
and fortified the city against siege.
[5] How glorious he was, surrounded by the people,
as he came out of the house of the curtain.
[6] Like the morning star among the clouds,
like the full moon at the festal season;[f]
[7] like the sun shining on the temple of the Most High,
like the rainbow gleaming in splendid clouds;
[8] like roses in the days of first fruits,
like lilies by a spring of water,
like a green shoot on Lebanon on a summer day;
[9] like fire and incense in the censer,
like a vessel of hammered gold
studded with all kinds of precious stones;
[10] like an olive tree laden with fruit,
and like a cypress towering in the clouds.
[11] When he put on his glorious robe
and clothed himself in perfect splendor,
when he went up to the holy altar,
he made the court of the sanctuary glorious.

[12] When he received the portions from the hands of the priests,
as he stood by the hearth of the altar
with a garland of brothers around him,
he was like a young cedar on Lebanon
surrounded by the trunks of palm trees.
[13] All the sons of Aaron in their splendor
held the Lord's offering in their hands
before the whole congregation of Israel.
[14] Finishing the service at the altars,[g]
and arranging the offering to the Most High, the Almighty,

[a] Other ancient authorities read *people*
[b] Heb Syr: Gk *No one has*
[c] Heb Syr: Gk adds *the leader of his brothers, the support of the people*
[d] Heb: Gk *Shem and Seth were honored by people*
[e] Heb Syr: Gk lacks this line. Compare 49.15
[f] Heb: Meaning of Gk uncertain
[g] Other ancient authorities read *altar*

3.2; Hag 2.23), *Jeshua* (Ezra 3.2; Hag 1.12; 2.2; Zech 3.1); *Nehemiah* (Neh 7.1). **14–16:** Mentions of *Enoch* (44.16; Gen 5.18–24) and *Joseph* (Gen 39–50) as well as *Shem* (Gen 9.18), *Seth* (Gen 5.3) and *Enosh* (Gen 5.6–11) lead back to *Adam* (Gen 1.26–31).

50.1–24: Simon the high priest. Simon II, son of Onias, was the high priest from 219 to 196 BCE (Josephus, *Ant.* 12.4.10). **1–4:** A summary of Simon's public works projects. **5–13:** For an earlier description of the high priest's vestments, cf. 45.6–13; cf. Ex 28.2–43; 39.1–31. **14–21:** A vivid description of the Temple ritual and sac-

15 he held out his hand for the cup
and poured a drink offering of the blood of the grape;
he poured it out at the foot of the altar,
a pleasing odor to the Most High, the king of all.
16 Then the sons of Aaron shouted;
they blew their trumpets of hammered metal;
they sounded a mighty fanfare
as a reminder before the Most High.
17 Then all the people together quickly
fell to the ground on their faces
to worship their Lord,
the Almighty, God Most High.

18 Then the singers praised him with their voices
in sweet and full-toned melody.[a]
19 And the people of the Lord Most High offered
their prayers before the Merciful One,
until the order of worship of the Lord was ended,
and they completed his ritual.
20 Then Simon[b] came down and raised his hands
over the whole congregation of Israelites,
to pronounce the blessing of the Lord with his lips,
and to glory in his name;
21 and they bowed down in worship a second time,
to receive the blessing from the Most High.

22 And now bless the God of all,
who everywhere works great wonders,
who fosters our growth from birth,
and deals with us according to his mercy.
23 May he give us[c] gladness of heart,
and may there be peace in our[d] days in Israel, as in the days of old.
24 May he entrust to us his mercy,
and may he deliver us in our[e] days!

25 Two nations my soul detests,
and the third is not even a people:
26 Those who live in Seir,[f] and the Philistines,
and the foolish people that live in Shechem.

27 Instruction in understanding and knowledge
I have written in this book,
Jesus son of Eleazar son of Sirach[g] of Jerusalem,
whose mind poured forth wisdom.
28 Happy are those who concern themselves with these things,
and those who lay them to heart will become wise.
29 For if they put them into practice, they will be equal to anything,
for the fear[h] of the Lord is their path.

PRAYER OF JESUS SON OF SIRACH[i]

51 I give you thanks, O Lord and King,
and praise you, O God my Savior.
I give thanks to your name,
2 for you have been my protector and helper

a Other ancient authorities read *in sweet melody throughout the house*
b Gk *he*
c Other ancient authorities read *you*
d Other ancient authorities read *your*
e Other ancient authorities read *his*
f Heb Compare Lat: Gk *on the mountain of Samaria*
g Heb: Meaning of Gk uncertain
h Heb: Other ancient authorities read *light*
i This title is included in the Gk text.

rifices, most likely for the Day of Atonement (Lev 16). **16:** *Trumpets*, Num 10.2; 31.6. **18:** *Singers*, 2 Chr 29.26–30. **20:** *The blessing*, Num 6.24–27. *His name*, only the high priest (and only once a year, on the Day of Atonement) could utter the ineffable name, YHWH. **22–24:** A concluding benediction.

50.25–26: A final numerical proverb. 26: *Seir* (Edom) and the *Philistines* were historic enemies of the Israelites; here they refer to those who threatened them in Ben Sira's time, the Idumeans and the Greeks, along with the Samaritans, in *Shechem*.

50.27–29: Postscript. 27: *Jesus,* the author's Hebrew name was probably Yeshua ben Eleazar ben Sira. **29:** *Fear of the Lord,* one of the book's major themes (1.11–30).

and have delivered me from destruction
and from the trap laid by a slanderous tongue,
from lips that fabricate lies.
In the face of my adversaries
you have been my helper [3] and delivered me,
in the greatness of your mercy and of your name,
from grinding teeth about to devour me,
from the hand of those seeking my life,
from the many troubles I endured,
[4] from choking fire on every side,
and from the midst of fire that I had not kindled,
[5] from the deep belly of Hades,
from an unclean tongue and lying words—
[6] the slander of an unrighteous tongue to the king.
My soul drew near to death,
and my life was on the brink of Hades below.
[7] They surrounded me on every side,
and there was no one to help me;
I looked for human assistance,
and there was none.
[8] Then I remembered your mercy, O Lord,
and your kindness[a] from of old,
for you rescue those who wait for you
and save them from the hand of their enemies.
[9] And I sent up my prayer from the earth,
and begged for rescue from death.
[10] I cried out, "Lord, you are my Father;[b]
do not forsake me in the days of trouble,
when there is no help against the proud.
[11] I will praise your name continually,
and will sing hymns of thanksgiving."
My prayer was heard,
[12] for you saved me from destruction
and rescued me in time of trouble.
For this reason I thank you and praise you,
and I bless the name of the Lord.

Heb adds:

Give thanks to the LORD, for he is good,
for his steadfast love endures forever;

Give thanks to the God of praises,
for his steadfast love endures forever;

Give thanks to the guardian of Israel,
for his steadfast love endures forever;

Give thanks to him who formed all things,
for his steadfast love endures forever;

Give thanks to the redeemer of Israel,
for his steadfast love endures forever;

Give thanks to him who gathers the dispersed of Israel,
for his steadfast love endures forever;

Give thanks to him who rebuilt his city and his sanctuary,
for his steadfast love endures forever;

Give thanks to him who makes a horn to sprout for the house of David,
for his steadfast love endures forever;

Give thanks to him who has chosen the sons of Zadok to be priests,
for his steadfast love endures forever;

Give thanks to the shield of Abraham,
for his steadfast love endures forever;

Give thanks to the rock of Isaac,
for his steadfast love endures forever;

Give thanks to the mighty one of Jacob,
for his steadfast love endures forever;

Give thanks to him who has chosen Zion,
for his steadfast love endures forever;

Give thanks to the King of the kings of kings,

[a] Other ancient authorities read *work*
[b] Heb: Gk *the Father of my lord*

51.1–30: Three appendixes. 1–12: A hymn in thanksgiving for deliverance. **5,6:** *Hades*, Heb "Sheol," the abode of the dead. **10:** *Father,* cf. 23.1,4. **12:** Following v. 12, the medieval Hebrew text includes a thanksgiving

for his steadfast love endures
forever;

He has raised up a horn for his people,
praise for all his loyal ones.

For the children of Israel, the people close
to him.
Praise the LORD*!*

---

13 While I was still young, before I went on my travels,
I sought wisdom openly in my prayer.
14 Before the temple I asked for her,
and I will search for her until the end.

15 From the first blossom to the ripening grape
my heart delighted in her;
my foot walked on the straight path;
from my youth I followed her steps.

16 I inclined my ear a little and received her,
and I found for myself much instruction.
17 I made progress in her;
to him who gives wisdom I will give glory.

18 For I resolved to live according to wisdom,[a]
and I was zealous for the good,
and I shall never be disappointed.
19 My soul grappled with wisdom,[a]
and in my conduct I was strict;[b]

I spread out my hands to the heavens,
and lamented my ignorance of her.
20 I directed my soul to her,
and in purity I found her.

With her I gained understanding from the first;
therefore I will never be forsaken.

21 My heart was stirred to seek her;
therefore I have gained a prize possession.
22 The Lord gave me my tongue as a reward,
and I will praise him with it.

23 Draw near to me, you who are uneducated,
and lodge in the house of instruction.
24 Why do you say you are lacking in these things,[c]
and why do you endure such great thirst?
25 I opened my mouth and said,
Acquire wisdom[d] for yourselves without money.

26 Put your neck under her[e] yoke,
and let your souls receive instruction;
it is to be found close by.

27 See with your own eyes that I have labored but little
and found for myself much serenity.
28 Hear but a little of my instruction,
and through me you will acquire silver and gold.[f]

29 May your soul rejoice in God's[g] mercy,
and may you never be ashamed to praise him.
30 Do your work in good time,
and in his own time God[h] will give you your reward.

[a] Gk *her*
[b] Meaning of Gk uncertain
[c] Cn Compare Heb Syr: Meaning of Gk uncertain
[d] Heb: Gk lacks *wisdom*
[e] Heb: other ancient authorities read *the*
[f] Syr Compare Heb: Gk *Get instruction with a large sum of silver, and you will gain by it much gold.*
[g] Gk *his*
[h] Gk *he*

hymn based on Ps 136. **13–30:** An autobiographical, acrostic poem on the search for wisdom. Another (somewhat more erotic) version of this text appears in a Psalms scroll from Qumran (11QPsa). **13:** *Travels,* cf. 34.11; 39.4. **23:** *Draw near to me,* cf. 14.20–27; Prov 9.1–6. *House of instruction,* a wisdom school, presumably Ben Sira's own in Jerusalem. **26:** *Yoke,* cf. 6.23–31.

This page intentionally left blank

BARUCH

NAME AND AUTHORSHIP

The title of the book comes from its opening verse, which attributes the book to Baruch son of Neriah, the scribe of Jeremiah (cf. Jer 32.12; 36.4). This verse places Baruch in the Babylonian exile of the early sixth century BCE, but according to Jer 43.1–7, he and Jeremiah went to Egypt (not Babylon) in 582 BCE. This, along with historical errors in the introduction (1.1–14), suggests that the work was not actually written by Baruch. Following 1.1, later rabbinic tradition places Baruch in Babylon (*Mid. Rab. Song* 5.5; *b. Meg.* 16b; *Seder Olam R.* 26). The book is often referred to as 1 Baruch to distinguish it from several other books also attributed to Baruch, dating from the second century CE.

CANONICAL STATUS AND LOCATION IN CANON

In the Protestant tradition the book of Baruch is included in the Apocrypha; in the Roman Catholic and Eastern Orthodox churches it is one of the deuterocanonical books of the Old Testament. In Catholic Bibles the book is located between Lamentations and Ezekiel, with the Letter of Jeremiah (see p. 1537) appended as the final chapter of Baruch. In the Orthodox churches the book is between Lamentations and the Letter of Jeremiah. Baruch is not included in the Jewish canon of scripture.

DATE OF COMPOSITION AND HISTORICAL CONTEXT

Scholars often date the book of Baruch to the second or first centuries BCE. The book's themes of communal repentance, the gift of the Torah to Israel, and the glorification of Jerusalem through the return of the exiles may indicate a date during the national revival led by the Maccabees that began during the revolt against the Seleucid king Antiochus IV Epiphanes (175–164 BCE).

LITERARY HISTORY, STRUCTURE, AND CONTENTS

The existing text of Baruch is in Greek. On the basis of its literary style scholars think that the book was originally written in Hebrew and then translated into Greek; however, no Hebrew manuscript of Baruch is known. Ancient versions of Baruch in other languages, such as Latin and Syriac, are translations from the Greek.

The book has four major sections:

A. Historical Introduction (1.1–14)
B. Confession of Sin (1.15–3.8)
C. Wisdom Poem (3.9–4.4)
D. Poem of Consolation (4.5–5.9)

While themes such as confession of sin and exile are found throughout the work, these four sections differ significantly from one another in form and content (see, for example, 3.10n. and 4.10n.). Also, different names for God are used in the confession ("Lord"), in the Wisdom poem ("God"), and in the poem of consolation ("the Everlasting"). Thus the different sections may have been written separately and combined later. Much of the book is a pastiche of quotations and paraphrases of biblical texts (see the annotations). This type of composition, popular in the late Second Temple period, provided a means of interpreting canonical literature and creating new works.

INTERPRETATION

The Babylonian exile was not a living reality for the author of Baruch but a context for reflection on maintaining the vitality of the relationship between God and Israel. The book attributes the Babylonian exile to national sin (1.21–2.1). The curses of the covenant have now come upon the people (1.20; 2.2; compare 2.3 and Deut 28.53). The book offers a way to alleviate this difficult situation: confess your sins and turn to God. The people need to renew their dedication to God and the covenant. This is the core message of the prayer in 1.15–3.8. The poem in 3.9–4.4 encourages Israel to learn "where there is wisdom" (3.14)—God has found Wisdom, and he has given it to Israel in the form of the Torah (3.36–4.1a). Wisdom, as elsewhere in wisdom literature, is associated with life

(3.9; 4.1b; Prov 3.16). God, the book promises, will reward repentance by returning the exiles to Judah (4.36–5.9). The exile represents death and sin (2.17; 3.4,10–11); return to Zion symbolizes life and devotion to God.

Although the book of Baruch originated in the Jewish community, like other such works written in the Hellenistic and Roman eras, it fell out of use in rabbinic Judaism. Early Christian writers, however, frequently quoted the book as scripture. Baruch 3.36–37, which refers to Wisdom appearing on earth and living with humankind, was often cited because of its Christological interpretation (cf. Jn 1.14).

GUIDE TO READING

The opening verses of Baruch describe the book as having been read to the Jews exiled in Babylon; reading aloud was a common practice in antiquity. Modern readers can also appreciate the book's rhetorical appeal by listening to it rather than reading it silently. Even though the book consists of stylistically different sections, readers can experience its unity by noticing verses that reflect its main themes: sin and exile, repentance and the restoration of Zion. In antiquity Jewish education often involved memorizing large sections of scripture. Thus early readers would have recognized the many phrases adapted from biblical books, in particular Deuteronomy, Jeremiah, and Isaiah. The annotations will aid modern readers to identify and recognize these echoes of scripture.

Matthew Goff

1 These are the words of the book that Baruch son of Neriah son of Mahseiah son of Zedekiah son of Hasadiah son of Hilkiah wrote in Babylon, [2] in the fifth year, on the seventh day of the month, at the time when the Chaldeans took Jerusalem and burned it with fire.

[3] Baruch read the words of this book to Jeconiah son of Jehoiakim, king of Judah, and to all the people who came to hear the book, [4] and to the nobles and the princes, and to the elders, and to all the people, small and great, all who lived in Babylon by the river Sud.

[5] Then they wept, and fasted, and prayed before the Lord; [6] they collected as much money as each could give, [7] and sent it to Jerusalem to the high priest[a] Jehoiakim son of Hilkiah son of Shallum, and to the priests, and to all the people who were present with him in Jerusalem. [8] At the same time, on the tenth day of Sivan, Baruch[b] took the vessels of the house of the Lord, which had been carried away from the temple, to return them to the land of Judah—the silver vessels that Zedekiah son of Josiah, king of Judah, had made, [9] after King Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon had carried away from Jerusalem Jeconiah and the princes and the prisoners and the nobles and the people of the land, and brought them to Babylon.

[10] They said: Here we send you money; so buy with the money burnt offerings and sin offerings and incense, and prepare a grain offering, and offer them on the altar of the Lord our God; [11] and pray for the life of King

[a] Gk *the priest*
[b] Gk *he*

1.1–14: Historical introduction. 1–2: Authorship and date. **1:** *Baruch*, Jeremiah's scribe (Jer 36.4,15; 45.1). The genealogy here is more extensive than in Jer 32.12. **2:** *Fifth year*, after the destruction of Jerusalem in 586 BCE (2 Kings 25.8–12) by the Babylonians (*the Chaldeans*). **3–4:** Baruch reads his book to the other exiles (cf. Jer 36.10). **3:** *Jeconiah*, also called Jehoiachin. He was regarded by the exiles as king (2 Kings 24.15; 25.27–30; Jer 24.1; Ezek 1.2). **4:** *Sud*, the name is otherwise unknown. Perhaps a reference to the river Ahava (Ezra 8.15,21,31). **5–7:** The exiles react to Baruch's reading. **5:** In the book of Baruch the word *Lord* occurs only in 1.1–3.8. **6:** *They collected*, see Ezra 1.4,6. **7:** *The high priest Jehoiakim*, otherwise unknown. The Greek reads "the priest." The genealogy is derived from 1 Chr 6.13–15. **8:** *Sivan*, the third month of the Jewish calendar (May-June). This verse does not agree with Ezra 1.7–11, which states that Sheshbazzar returned the gold and *silver vessels* to Jerusalem after the edict of the Persian king Cyrus (538 BCE). *Zedekiah*, the king of Judah when Jerusalem fell (2 Kings 24.18–25.7). 2 Kings never claims that Zedekiah fashioned temple vessels. **9:** Jer 24.1; 2 Kings 24.10–16. **10–14:** Instruction that accompanies the scroll sent by exiles to the Jews who remained in Jerusalem. **10:** Jer 41.5 indicates that

Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon, and for the life of his son Belshazzar, so that their days on earth may be like the days of heaven. [12] The Lord will give us strength, and light to our eyes; we shall live under the protection[a] of King Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon, and under the protection of his son Belshazzar, and we shall serve them many days and find favor in their sight. [13] Pray also for us to the Lord our God, for we have sinned against the Lord our God, and to this day the anger of the Lord and his wrath have not turned away from us. [14] And you shall read aloud this scroll that we are sending you, to make your confession in the house of the Lord on the days of the festivals and at appointed seasons.

[15] And you shall say: The Lord our God is in the right, but there is open shame on us today, on the people of Judah, on the inhabitants of Jerusalem, [16] and on our kings, our rulers, our priests, our prophets, and our ancestors, [17] because we have sinned before the Lord. [18] We have disobeyed him, and have not heeded the voice of the Lord our God, to walk in the statutes of the Lord that he set before us. [19] From the time when the Lord brought our ancestors out of the land of Egypt until today, we have been disobedient to the Lord our God, and we have been negligent, in not heeding his voice. [20] So to this day there have clung to us the calamities and the curse that the Lord declared through his servant Moses at the time when he brought our ancestors out of the land of Egypt to give to us a land flowing with milk and honey. [21] We did not listen to the voice of the Lord our God in all the words of the prophets whom he sent to us, [22] but all of us followed the intent of our own wicked hearts by serving other gods and doing what is evil in the sight of the Lord our God.

2 So the Lord carried out the threat he spoke against us: against our judges who ruled Israel, and against our kings and our rulers and the people of Israel and Judah. [2] Under the whole heaven there has not been done the like of what he has done in Jerusalem, in accordance with the threats that were[b] written in the law of Moses. [3] Some of us ate the flesh of their sons and others the flesh of their daughters. [4] He made them subject to all the kingdoms around us, to be an object of scorn and a desolation among all the surrounding peoples, where the Lord has scattered them. [5] They were brought down and not raised up, because our nation[c] sinned against the Lord our God, in not heeding his voice.

[6] The Lord our God is in the right, but there is open shame on us and our ancestors this very day. [7] All those calamities with which the Lord threatened us have come upon us. [8] Yet we have not entreated the favor of the Lord by turning away, each of us, from the thoughts of our wicked hearts. [9] And the Lord has kept the calamities ready, and the Lord has brought them upon us, for the Lord is just in all the works that he has commanded us to do. [10] Yet we have not obeyed his voice, to walk in the statutes of the Lord that he set before us.

[11] And now, O Lord God of Israel, who brought your people out of the land of Egypt with a mighty hand and with signs and wonders and with great power and outstretched arm, and made yourself a name that continues to this day, [12] we have sinned, we have

[a] Gk *in the shadow*
[b] Gk *in accordance with what is*
[c] Gk *because we*

incense and *grain* offerings continued at the ruined temple; cf. Jer 17.26. **11:** Jer 29.7. Belshazzar was the son of Nabonidus. Dan 5 makes the same error.

1.15–3.8: Confession of sin. This prayer draws on numerous biblical texts, including Lev 26, Deut 28, and parts of Jeremiah. It also has many links with Dan 9.4–19. Bar 1.15–2.5 appears to be intended for the Jewish community in Palestine and 2.6–3.8 for Jews in exile; compare 1.15–16 and 2.13–14. **1.15–18:** The Jews in Judah confess their disobedience to God and his commandments (Dan 9.7–10). This refrain is similar to 2.6–10, which helps mark the division between the two sections of 1.15–3.8. **15:** *Open shame*, repeated in 2.6. See Dan 9.7–8; Ezra 9.7. **18:** 2.10; Dan 9.10. **1.19–2.5:** Israel's disobedience is given a historical context, from the Exodus to the Babylonian exile. **19:** 2 Kings 21.15; Jer 7.25. **20:** *Curse,* Lev 26; Deut 28; Jer 11.3–5. **21:** Jer 7.25–26; 26.4–5; Dan 9.5–6,10. **22:** 2.8. **2.1–2:** Dan 9.12–13. **3:** Lev 26.29; Deut 28.53; Jer 19.9; Lam 4.10. **4:** Cf. Jer 42.18. **5:** Deut 28.13. **6–10:** Confession of guilt. See 1.15–18; Dan 9.12–14. **11–26:** Supplication and confession. **11–14:** Dan 9.15–17. **11:**

been ungodly, we have done wrong, O Lord our God, against all your ordinances. [13] Let your anger turn away from us, for we are left, few in number, among the nations where you have scattered us. [14] Hear, O Lord, our prayer and our supplication, and for your own sake deliver us, and grant us favor in the sight of those who have carried us into exile; [15] so that all the earth may know that you are the Lord our God, for Israel and his descendants are called by your name.

[16] O Lord, look down from your holy dwelling, and consider us. Incline your ear, O Lord, and hear; [17] open your eyes, O Lord, and see, for the dead who are in Hades, whose spirit has been taken from their bodies, will not ascribe glory or justice to the Lord; [18] but the person who is deeply grieved, who walks bowed and feeble, with failing eyes and famished soul, will declare your glory and righteousness, O Lord.

[19] For it is not because of any righteous deeds of our ancestors or our kings that we bring before you our prayer for mercy, O Lord our God. [20] For you have sent your anger and your wrath upon us, as you declared by your servants the prophets, saying: [21] Thus says the Lord: Bend your shoulders and serve the king of Babylon, and you will remain in the land that I gave to your ancestors. [22] But if you will not obey the voice of the Lord and will not serve the king of Babylon, [23] I will make to cease from the towns of Judah and from the region around Jerusalem the voice of mirth and the voice of gladness, the voice of the bridegroom and the voice of the bride, and the whole land will be a desolation without inhabitants.

[24] But we did not obey your voice, to serve the king of Babylon; and you have carried out your threats, which you spoke by your servants the prophets, that the bones of our kings and the bones of our ancestors would be brought out of their resting place; [25] and indeed they have been thrown out to the heat of day and the frost of night. They perished in great misery, by famine and sword and pestilence. [26] And the house that is called by your name you have made as it is today, because of the wickedness of the house of Israel and the house of Judah.

[27] Yet you have dealt with us, O Lord our God, in all your kindness and in all your great compassion, [28] as you spoke by your servant Moses on the day when you commanded him to write your law in the presence of the people of Israel, saying, [29] "If you will not obey my voice, this very great multitude will surely turn into a small number among the nations, where I will scatter them. [30] For I know that they will not obey me, for they are a stiff-necked people. But in the land of their exile they will come to themselves [31] and know that I am the Lord their God. I will give them a heart that obeys and ears that hear; [32] they will praise me in the land of their exile, and will remember my name [33] and turn from their stubbornness and their wicked deeds; for they will remember the ways of their ancestors, who sinned before the Lord. [34] I will bring them again into the land that I swore to give to their ancestors, to Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, and they will rule over it; and I will increase them, and they will not be diminished. [35] I will make an everlasting covenant with them to be their God and they shall be my people; and I will never again remove my people Israel from the land that I have given them."

3 O Lord Almighty, God of Israel, the soul in anguish and the wearied spirit cry out to you. [2] Hear, O Lord, and have mercy, for we have sinned before you. [3] For you are enthroned forever, and we are perishing

Ex 15.11–16; Jer 32.20–21. **12:** Cf. 1 Kings 8.47 and Ps 106.6. **13:** Deut 4.27; Jer 42.2. **15:** Cf. Deut 28.10; Jer 14.9. **16:** Deut 26.15; 1 Kings 8.39; Isa 63.15; Dan 9.18. **17:** Pss 6.5; 30.9; Isa 38.18; Sir 17.27–28. *Hades*, in Hebrew "Sheol," the underworld abode of the dead. **18:** Deut 28.65–66. **20:** Jer 36.7. **21:** Jer 27.11–12. **23:** Jer 7.34; 16.9; 33.10–11. **24:** Jer 8.1–2. **25:** Jer 36.30. **26:** Jer 7.14. **27–35:** Repentance and restoration illustrate God's compassion for Israel. The words attributed to Moses in vv. 29–34 have no verbatim match in the Hebrew Bible but resemble phrases from Deuteronomy and Jeremiah. **29:** Deut 28.58,62. **30:** 1 Kings 8.47. **31:** Jer 24.7. **34:** Lev 26.42–45; Deut 6.10; 30.1–5; Jer 32.37. **35:** Jer 24.6; 32.38–40. **3.1–8:** Appeal to God to hear the prayer of the exiles. **4:** The Greek word *dead* (see textual note *a*) may represent the confusion of two similar Hebrew terms, one which means "dead" and the other "men." Note, however, that elsewhere in the book exile is symbolically depicted as a form of death (2.17;

forever. [4] O Lord Almighty, God of Israel,
hear now the prayer of the people[a] of Israel,
the children of those who sinned before
you, who did not heed the voice of the Lord
their God, so that calamities have clung to
us. [5] Do not remember the iniquities of our
ancestors, but in this crisis remember your
power and your name. [6] For you are the Lord
our God, and it is you, O Lord, whom we will
praise. [7] For you have put the fear of you in
our hearts so that we would call upon your
name; and we will praise you in our exile,
for we have put away from our hearts all the
iniquity of our ancestors who sinned against
you. [8] See, we are today in our exile where
you have scattered us, to be reproached and
cursed and punished for all the iniquities
of our ancestors, who forsook the Lord our
God.

[9] Hear the commandments of life, O Israel;
give ear, and learn wisdom!
[10] Why is it, O Israel, why is it that you are
in the land of your enemies,
that you are growing old in a foreign
country,
that you are defiled with the dead,
[11] that you are counted among those in
Hades?
[12] You have forsaken the fountain of
wisdom.
[13] If you had walked in the way of God,
you would be living in peace forever.
[14] Learn where there is wisdom,
where there is strength,
where there is understanding,
so that you may at the same time discern
where there is length of days, and life,
where there is light for the eyes, and
peace.

[15] Who has found her place?
And who has entered her storehouses?
[16] Where are the rulers of the nations,
and those who lorded it over the
animals on earth;
[17] those who made sport of the birds of the
air,
and who hoarded up silver and gold
in which people trust,
and there is no end to their getting;
[18] those who schemed to get silver, and
were anxious,
but there is no trace of their works?
[19] They have vanished and gone down to
Hades,
and others have arisen in their place.

[20] Later generations have seen the light of
day,
and have lived upon the earth;
but they have not learned the way to
knowledge,
nor understood her paths,
nor laid hold of her.
[21] Their descendants have strayed far from
her[b] way.
[22] She has not been heard of in Canaan,
or seen in Teman;

[a] Gk *dead*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *their*

3.10–11). **7:** 1 Kings 8.47–48; Jer 32.40b. **8:** 2.4. The exile is punishment for sins committed by earlier generations (2.33; 3.4–5; Ex 20.5; 34.7; Lam 5.7; cf. Jer 31.29–30; Ezek 18).

3.9–4.4: Wisdom poem. Wisdom, personified as a woman, is elusive but known to God, who gave her to Israel as the Torah. This section has many affinities with Sir 24 and Job 28. **3.9–14:** Introduction to the poem, exhorting Israel to learn wisdom. **9:** *The commandments of life*, Deut 30.15–20; Sir 45.5. **10:** This verse connects the Wisdom poem of 3.9–4.4 to the confession of sin in 1.15–3.8. *Growing old*, the exile has continued for a long time (contrast 1.2). **11:** Pss 28.1; 88.4. *Hades*, see 2.17n. **12:** Prov 18.4; Jer 2.13; 2 Esd 14.47. **14:** Prov 3.2,13–18; Job 12.13. **15–23:** Gentile kings and nations do not possess wisdom. **15:** Job 28.12,20. **16b–17a:** Jer 27.6; Dan 2.37–38; Jdt 11.7. **17b–19:** Those who searched for riches were unable to avoid death. The Torah, by contrast, is associated with life (4.1; cf. Prov 8.10–11,19). **22:** *Canaan*, here probably a reference to the Phoenicians (cf. Gen 10.15), whose coastal cities Tyre and Sidon were associated with wisdom and mercantile skill (Isa 23.8; Ezek 28.3–5; Zech 9.2). *Teman*, in Edom, a region known for its wisdom (Jer 49.7; Ob 8–9; cf. Gen 36.9–11). **23:** *The descendants of Hagar*, the Ishmaelites, who were Arabian tribal groups with a reputation for trade and commerce (Gen 25.12–15; 37.25). *Merran*, the word occurs nowhere else in the Bible. It may be a corruption of "Midian," an area well-known for its traders in the northern Hejaz region of Arabia, east of the Gulf of Aqaba

[23] the descendants of Hagar, who seek for
understanding on the earth,
the merchants of Merran and Teman,
the story-tellers and the seekers for
understanding,
have not learned the way to wisdom,
or given thought to her paths.

[24] O Israel, how great is the house of God,
how vast the territory that he possesses!
[25] It is great and has no bounds;
it is high and immeasurable.
[26] The giants were born there, who were
famous of old,
great in stature, expert in war.
[27] God did not choose them,
or give them the way to knowledge;
[28] so they perished because they had no
wisdom,
they perished through their folly.

[29] Who has gone up into heaven, and taken
her,
and brought her down from the clouds?
[30] Who has gone over the sea, and found
her,
and will buy her for pure gold?
[31] No one knows the way to her,
or is concerned about the path to her.
[32] But the one who knows all things knows
her,
he found her by his understanding.
The one who prepared the earth for all time
filled it with four-footed creatures;
[33] the one who sends forth the light, and
it goes;
he called it, and it obeyed him,
trembling;
[34] the stars shone in their watches, and
were glad;
he called them, and they said, "Here we
are!"
They shone with gladness for him who
made them.
[35] This is our God;
no other can be compared to him.
[36] He found the whole way to knowledge,
and gave her to his servant Jacob
and to Israel, whom he loved.
[37] Afterward she appeared on earth
and lived with humankind.

4 She is the book of the commandments
of God,
the law that endures forever.
All who hold her fast will live,
and those who forsake her will die.
[2] Turn, O Jacob, and take her;
walk toward the shining of her light.
[3] Do not give your glory to another,
or your advantages to an alien people.
[4] Happy are we, O Israel,
for we know what is pleasing to God.

[5] Take courage, my people,
who perpetuate Israel's name!
[6] It was not for destruction
that you were sold to the nations,
but you were handed over to your enemies
because you angered God.
[7] For you provoked the one who made you
by sacrificing to demons and not to God.
[8] You forgot the everlasting God, who
brought you up,
and you grieved Jerusalem, who reared
you.

(Gen 25.2; 37.28; Isa 60.6). **24–28:** This section praises the magnitude of God's creation. **24:** *The house of God*, the context suggests that this refers to the created world rather than the Jerusalem temple. **26:** *The giants*, the legendary offspring of angels and women recounted in Gen 6.1–4; cf. *1 En.* 6–8; *Jub.* 5. **28:** Sir 16.7; Wis 14.6; 3 Macc 2.4. **29–37:** Only God has Wisdom, and he gives it to Israel. **29:** Deut 30.12–14; cf. Prov 30.4; Sir 24.4. **30:** Job 28.14–15. **32:** Job 28.23. God finds Wisdom (see v. 36), whereas in Ben Sira he creates Wisdom (Sir 24.3,9; cf. Prov 8:22). **33:** The trembling of *the light* denotes its fear and obedience before God (cf. Gen 1.3; Job 38.35). **34:** Job 38.7; Ps 148.3; Sir 43.10. **36:** Sir 24.8. **37:** Divine Wisdom appears on earth in Prov 8 and Sir 24.6–12 (cf. Wis 1.7; 9.10). Contrast *1 En.* 42. **4.1–4:** Identification of Wisdom as the Torah, which Israel should embrace. The personification of Wisdom as a woman is more prominent in Prov 8 and Sir 24 (cf. Wis 6–9). **1:** Prov 3.18; Sir 24.23 (cf. 6.37; 15.1). **4:** Deut 33.29.

4.5–5.9: Poem of consolation. 4.5–8: Introductory exhortation, stressing that God wished to punish, not destroy, Israel because of its sins. **5:** *Take courage*, a refrain of the poem (vv. 21,27,30; cf. Isa 40.1). **6:** Isa 50.1b; 52.3. **7:** Deut 32.16–17; Ps 106.37. **8:** Gen 21.33; Isa 40.28. **9b–16:** Jerusalem personified addresses neighboring

9 For she saw the wrath that came upon
you from God,
and she said:
Listen, you neighbors of Zion,
God has brought great sorrow upon me;
10 for I have seen the exile of my sons and
daughters,
which the Everlasting brought upon
them.
11 With joy I nurtured them,
but I sent them away with weeping and
sorrow.
12 Let no one rejoice over me, a widow
and bereaved of many;
I was left desolate because of the sins of
my children,
because they turned away from the law
of God.
13 They had no regard for his statutes;
they did not walk in the ways of God's
commandments,
or tread the paths his righteousness
showed them.
14 Let the neighbors of Zion come;
remember the capture of my sons and
daughters,
which the Everlasting brought upon
them.
15 For he brought a distant nation against
them,
a nation ruthless and of a strange
language,
which had no respect for the aged
and no pity for a child.
16 They led away the widow's beloved sons,
and bereaved the lonely woman of her
daughters.

17 But I, how can I help you?
18 For he who brought these calamities
upon you
will deliver you from the hand of your
enemies.
19 Go, my children, go;
for I have been left desolate.
20 I have taken off the robe of peace
and put on sackcloth for my
supplication;
I will cry to the Everlasting all my days.

21 Take courage, my children, cry to God,
and he will deliver you from the power
and hand of the enemy.
22 For I have put my hope in the Everlasting
to save you,
and joy has come to me from the Holy
One,
because of the mercy that will soon come
to you
from your everlasting savior.[a]
23 For I sent you out with sorrow and
weeping,
but God will give you back to me with
joy and gladness forever.
24 For as the neighbors of Zion have now
seen your capture,
so they soon will see your salvation by
God,
which will come to you with great glory
and with the splendor of the
Everlasting.
25 My children, endure with patience the
wrath that has come upon you from
God.
Your enemy has overtaken you,
but you will soon see their destruction
and will tread upon their necks.
26 My pampered children have traveled
rough roads;
they were taken away like a flock
carried off by the enemy.

27 Take courage, my children, and cry to God,
for you will be remembered by the one
who brought this upon you.
28 For just as you were disposed to go
astray from God,
return with tenfold zeal to seek him.

[a] Or *from the Everlasting, your savior*

cities. **9:** Lam 1.12. **10:** *Everlasting*, a term for God characteristic of this poem that is not found in other sections of the book of Baruch (vv. 14,20,22,24,35; 5.2). **12:** Isa 49.21; 54.4; Lam 1.1. **15:** Deut 28.49–50; Isa 33.19. **17–29:** Jerusalem personified speaks to the exiles. **20:** Contrast Isa 52.1. *Robe of peace*, worn during a time of prosperity. *Sackcloth*, worn in times of mourning and penitence (e.g., Isa 3.24; Jer 6.26; Lam 2.10). **22:** *The Holy One*, a name for God that is prominent in Isaiah (e.g., 5.19; 12.6; 43.3; 47.4; 60.9) found also in 4.37; 5.5 but not elsewhere in the book of Baruch. **23:** Ps 126.6; Isa 35.10; 51.11; Jer 31.12–13. **24:** Isa 60.1–3. **25:** Deut 33.29; Isa 51.23. *The wrath*

29 For the one who brought these
calamities upon you
will bring you everlasting joy with your
salvation.

30 Take courage, O Jerusalem,
for the one who named you will
comfort you.
31 Wretched will be those who mistreated
you
and who rejoiced at your fall.
32 Wretched will be the cities that your
children served as slaves;
wretched will be the city that received
your offspring.
33 For just as she rejoiced at your fall
and was glad for your ruin,
so she will be grieved at her own
desolation.
34 I will take away her pride in her great
population,
and her insolence will be turned to
grief.
35 For fire will come upon her from the
Everlasting for many days,
and for a long time she will be inhabited
by demons.

36 Look toward the east, O Jerusalem,
and see the joy that is coming to you
from God.
37 Look, your children are coming, whom
you sent away;
they are coming, gathered from east
and west,
at the word of the Holy One,
rejoicing in the glory of God.

5 Take off the garment of your sorrow and
affliction, O Jerusalem,
and put on forever the beauty of the
glory from God.
2 Put on the robe of the righteousness that
comes from God;
put on your head the diadem of the
glory of the Everlasting;
3 for God will show your splendor
everywhere under heaven.
4 For God will give you evermore the name,
"Righteous Peace, Godly Glory."

5 Arise, O Jerusalem, stand upon the
height;
look toward the east,
and see your children gathered from west
and east
at the word of the Holy One,
rejoicing that God has remembered
them.
6 For they went out from you on foot,
led away by their enemies;
but God will bring them back to you,
carried in glory, as on a royal throne.
7 For God has ordered that every high
mountain and the everlasting hills be
made low
and the valleys filled up, to make level
ground,
so that Israel may walk safely in the
glory of God.
8 The woods and every fragrant tree
have shaded Israel at God's command.
9 For God will lead Israel with joy,
in the light of his glory,
with the mercy and righteousness that
come from him.

has a short duration (cf. Isa 54.7–8). **4.30–5.9:** The narrator consoles Jerusalem with the prospect of the exiles' return. **30–35:** Jerusalem is encouraged by the fall of her enemies, referring to Babylon and perhaps Edom (Ps 137.7–8; Isa 63.1–6; cf. Isa 13–14; 47; Jer 50–51). Contrast the attitude toward Babylon in 1.11–12. **30:** *The one who named you*, see 5.4n. Cf. Isa 51.3. **35:** *Fire*, Jer 51.58; *demons*, Isa 13.21; 34.14. **4.36–5.4:** Jerusalem is exhorted to watch the exiles return from the east. **36–37:** See 5.5n. **5.1–2:** 4.20; Isa 52.1; 61.3,10; *Pss. Sol.* 11.7. **4:** The renaming of Jerusalem, which marks a change in status, is a theme in the prophetic books (Isa 1.26; 60.14; 62.2–4; Jer 33.16; Ezek 48.35). *Righteous Peace*, Isa 32.17; 60.17. **5.5–9:** A second call for Jerusalem to watch God bring the exiles to her. **5:** 4.36; Isa 40.9–11; 43.5; 49.18; 51.17; 60.4; *Pss. Sol.* 11.2–3. **6:** Isa 49.22; 66.20. **7:** Isa 40.4–5; 42.16; *Pss. Sol.* 11.4. **8:** *Pss. Sol.* 11.5–6. Cf. Isa 41.19.

THE LETTER OF JEREMIAH

NAME AND AUTHORSHIP

The work claims to be a copy of a letter written by the prophet Jeremiah for Judeans about to be exiled to Babylonia in 597 BCE. The Letter, however, never gives the impression that the siege of Jerusalem and the Babylonian exile are recent calamities. Moreover, it draws on the canonical book of Jeremiah and other biblical texts (see next sections). Thus the Letter was probably written much later and attributed to Jeremiah, inspired by the account in Jer 29 of Jeremiah's writing to the exilic community.

CANONICAL STATUS AND LOCATION IN CANON

The Letter is not part of the Jewish or Protestant canons. In the Roman Catholic and Orthodox traditions it is deuterocanonical. Major Greek Septuagint manuscripts, such as Vaticanus (fourth century CE) and Alexandrinus (fifth century CE), treat the Letter as a distinct work placed between Lamentations and Ezekiel. The Latin Vulgate, which is prominent in the Roman Catholic tradition, considers the text the sixth chapter of Baruch. The Letter appears in the NRSV as an independent book because it differs markedly from Baruch in terms of style and content; there is no strong evidence that it was originally part of Baruch (but see also note *a*).

DATE OF COMPOSITION AND HISTORICAL CONTEXT

Although the Letter purports to be sent to the Judeans about to be exiled to Babylonia in the early sixth century BCE, many scholars date the Letter to the Hellenistic period. The reference in v. 3 to an exile lasting seven generations (280 years) could, if taken literally, indicate that the text was written in 317 BCE. The "seven generations," however, should probably be read symbolically. 2 Macc 2.1–3 refers to the Letter, and a fragment of a Greek papyrus from Cave 7 of Qumran (7Q2) contains a portion of Let Jer 43–44; these factors indicate that the work was written before 100 BCE.

LITERARY HISTORY, STRUCTURE, AND CONTENTS

Although the oldest surviving manuscripts of the Letter are in Greek, there are indications that it was originally written in Hebrew or Aramaic and then translated into Greek (see 12n. and 72n.).

After a historical introduction (vv. 1–7), the body of the composition consists of ten warnings about idolatry. Each unit ends with a refrain that idols are not gods and that they should not be feared (vv. 16,23,29,40,44,52,56,65,69,72).

INTERPRETATION

The Letter of Jeremiah warns Jews to avoid pagan religion and asserts that idols are false gods that have no power. Since the veneration of idols was widespread, the text would have had relevance not only to Jewish exiles living in Babylon but to Jews living anywhere in the ancient world. The work is influenced by biblical condemnations of idolatry such as Deut 4.27–28; Isa 44.9–20; 46.5–7; Pss 115.3–8; 135.15–18; cf. Wis 13–15. The Letter also relies upon and expands Jer 10. Despite the identification of the composition as a letter, inspired by the prophet's epistle to the exiles in Jer 29, the work does not belong to the genre of ancient letters and is better classified as a homily or sermon.

GUIDE TO READING

The homiletical style of the Letter, with its vivid imagery, repeated refrains, reliance on formulaic biblical denunciations of idolatry, and sarcastic humor is intended to reinforce beliefs and values already held by its Jewish audience. The author shows no sympathy for actual pagan customs, and the Letter cannot be read as an accurate description of the way in which pagans understood their own religious practices.

Matthew Goff

6 [a] A copy of a letter that Jeremiah sent to those who were to be taken to Babylon as exiles by the king of the Babylonians, to give them the message that God had commanded him.

[2] Because of the sins that you have committed before God, you will be taken to Babylon as exiles by Nebuchadnezzar, king of the Babylonians. [3] Therefore when you have come to Babylon you will remain there for many years, for a long time, up to seven generations; after that I will bring you away from there in peace. [4] Now in Babylon you will see gods made of silver and gold and wood, which people carry on their shoulders, and which cause the heathen to fear. [5] So beware of becoming at all like the foreigners or of letting fear for these gods[b] possess you [6] when you see the multitude before and behind them worshiping them. But say in your heart, "It is you, O Lord, whom we must worship." [7] For my angel is with you, and he is watching over your lives.

[8] Their tongues are smoothed by the carpenter, and they themselves are overlaid with gold and silver; but they are false and cannot speak. [9] People[c] take gold and make crowns for the heads of their gods, as they might for a girl who loves ornaments. [10] Sometimes the priests secretly take gold and silver from their gods and spend it on themselves, [11] or even give some of it to the prostitutes on the terrace. They deck their gods[d] out with garments like human beings—these gods of silver and gold and wood [12] that cannot save themselves from rust and corrosion. When they have been dressed in purple robes, [13] their faces are wiped because of the dust from the temple, which is thick upon them. [14] One of them holds a scepter, like a district judge, but is unable to destroy anyone who offends it. [15] Another has a dagger in its right hand, and an ax, but cannot defend itself from war and robbers. [16] From this it is evident that they are not gods; so do not fear them.

[17] For just as someone's dish is useless when it is broken, [18] so are their gods when they have been set up in the temples. Their eyes are full of the dust raised by the feet of those who enter. And just as the gates are shut on every side against anyone who has offended a king, as though under sentence of death, so the priests make their temples secure with doors and locks and bars, in order that they may not be plundered by robbers. [19] They light more lamps for them than they light for themselves, though their gods[e] can see none of them. [20] They are[f] just like a beam of the temple, but their hearts, it is said, are eaten away when crawling creatures from the earth devour them and their robes. They do not notice [21] when their faces have been blackened by the smoke

[a] The King James Version (like the Latin Vulgate) prints The Letter of Jeremiah as Chapter 6 of the Book of Baruch, and the chapter and verse numbers are here retained. In the Greek Septuagint, the Letter is separated from Baruch by the Book of Lamentations.
[b] Gk *for them*
[c] Gk *They*
[d] Gk *them*
[e] Gk *they*
[f] Gk *It is*

6.1–7: Historical introduction. 1: The exile of 597 BCE (2 Kings 24.10–17). *Who were to be taken*, the work is composed for people about to be exiled. The letter in Jer 29 is written by the prophet to Jews already in exile. **3:** *Seven generations*, taken literally, the duration of the exile in Babylon. Contrast the different figures given in Jer 25.12; 29.10 (seventy years), Ezek 4.6 (forty years) and Dan 9.24 (seventy weeks of years). **4:** *Silver and gold*, overlaid on wood (v. 55; Jer 10.3–4; cf. Isa 40.19). *Which people carry on their shoulders*, this may refer to the procession that was part of the *Akitu*, the Babylonian New Year festival (see v. 26). **5:** Jer 10.2.

6.8–73: Warnings against idolatry. 8–16: First warning: the helplessness of idols. 8: *Carpenter*, Isa 40.20; 44.13; Jer. 10.3–4. *Cannot speak*, Pss 115.4–5; 135.15–16. **11:** *Prostitutes* may refer to women who earned money for vows through prostitution (cf. v. 43). **12:** *Purple robes*, a symbol of authority (cf. Jer 10.9). *Corrosion*, several Greek manuscripts give this word as either "food" or "meat." It is most likely a mistranslation of a Hebrew word for "moth." **15:** Vv. 48–49,57.

6.17–23: Second warning: the uselessness of idols. 17: V. 59; Jer 22.28; Hos 8.8. **18:** *Robbers*, see vv. 57–58n. **19:** Despite many lamps, the idols cannot see (Deut 4.28; Pss 115.5; 135.16; Isa 44.18). **20:** Being wooden, the idols are subject to decay and infestation. **22:** The earliest reference in Jewish literature to *cats*, first domesticated in Egypt.

of the temple. 22 Bats, swallows, and birds alight on their bodies and heads; and so do cats. 23 From this you will know that they are not gods; so do not fear them.

24 As for the gold that they wear for beauty—it[a] will not shine unless someone wipes off the tarnish; for even when they were being cast, they did not feel it. 25 They are bought without regard to cost, but there is no breath in them. 26 Having no feet, they are carried on the shoulders of others, revealing to humankind their worthlessness. And those who serve them are put to shame 27 because, if any of these gods falls[b] to the ground, they themselves must pick it up. If anyone sets it upright, it cannot move itself; and if it is tipped over, it cannot straighten itself. Gifts are placed before them just as before the dead. 28 The priests sell the sacrifices that are offered to these gods[c] and use the money themselves. Likewise their wives preserve some of the meat[d] with salt, but give none to the poor or helpless. 29 Sacrifices to them may even be touched by women in their periods or at childbirth. Since you know by these things that they are not gods, do not fear them.

30 For how can they be called gods? Women serve meals for gods of silver and gold and wood; 31 and in their temples the priests sit with their clothes torn, their heads and beards shaved, and their heads uncovered. 32 They howl and shout before their gods as some do at a funeral banquet. 33 The priests take some of the clothing of their gods[e] to clothe their wives and children. 34 Whether one does evil to them or good, they will not be able to repay it. They cannot set up a king or depose one. 35 Likewise they are not able to give either wealth or money; if one makes a vow to them and does not keep it, they will not require it. 36 They cannot save anyone from death or rescue the weak from the strong. 37 They cannot restore sight to the blind; they cannot rescue one who is in distress. 38 They cannot take pity on a widow or do good to an orphan. 39 These things that are made of wood and overlaid with gold and silver are like stones from the mountain, and those who serve them will be put to shame. 40 Why then must anyone think that they are gods, or call them gods?

Besides, even the Chaldeans themselves dishonor them; for when they see someone who cannot speak, they bring Bel and pray that the mute may speak, as though Bel[f] were able to understand! 41 Yet they themselves cannot perceive this and abandon them, for they have no sense. 42 And the women, with cords around them, sit along the passageways, burning bran for incense. 43 When one of them is led off by one of the passers-by and is taken to bed by him, she derides the woman next to her, because she was not as attractive as herself and her cord was not broken. 44 Whatever is done for these idols[g] is

[a] Lat Syr: Gk *they*
[b] Gk *if they fall*
[c] Gk *to them*
[d] Gk *of them*
[e] Gk *some of their clothing*
[f] Gk *he*
[g] Gk *them*

6.24–29: Third warning: the lifelessness of idols. 25: *No breath*, Ps 135.17; Jer 10.14; 51.17; Hab 2.19. **26:** V. 4; Isa 46.1, 7a; Jer 10.5. **27:** Isa 46.7b; Jer 10.4 (cf. 1 Sam 5.3). *Gifts* for *the dead*, Ps 106.28; Tob 4.17; Sir 30.18–19. **29:** Biblical purity regulations state that women during and shortly after menstruation and childbirth are not allowed to participate in worship (Lev 12.2–5; 15.19–24).

6.30–40a: Fourth warning: the powerlessness of idols. 30: Only men were priests in the Temple in Jerusalem; but see Ex 38.8; 1 Sam 2.22. **31–32:** Ritual mourning, presumably for gods such as the Mesopotamian deity Tammuz, whose descent into the netherworld was annually observed with similar practices (Ezek 8.14; cf. Lev 21.5). *Funeral banquets*, Jer 16.5–9. **34b:** V. 53; cf. Job 12.18; Dan 2.21. **35b:** Deut 23.21. **36:** Deut 32.39; 1 Sam 2.6. **37:** Ps 146.8. **38:** Deut 10.18; Ps 146.9. **39.** Isa 44.11; Hab 2.19.

6.40b–44: Fifth warning: the folly of revering idols. 40b: *Chaldeans*, often a synonym for "Babylonians." The term can also refer to astrologers or diviners (e.g., Dan 2.2,4). *Bel* ("Lord"), a title for Marduk, the patron god of the city of Babylon (Isa 46.1; Jer 50.2; 51.44; Bel 1.3). **43:** The Greek historian Herodotus (1.199) describes a similar practice among the Babylonians (cf. v. 11).

6.45–52: Sixth warning: idols are not divine but the work of human hands. 45: Isa 40.15; Jer 10.9; Pss 115.4;

false. Why then must anyone think that they are gods, or call them gods?

45 They are made by carpenters and goldsmiths; they can be nothing but what the artisans wish them to be. 46 Those who make them will certainly not live very long themselves; 47 how then can the things that are made by them be gods? They have left only lies and reproach for those who come after. 48 For when war or calamity comes upon them, the priests consult together as to where they can hide themselves and their gods.[a] 49 How then can one fail to see that these are not gods, for they cannot save themselves from war or calamity? 50 Since they are made of wood and overlaid with gold and silver, it will afterward be known that they are false. 51 It will be manifest to all the nations and kings that they are not gods but the work of human hands, and that there is no work of God in them. 52 Who then can fail to know that they are not gods?[b]

53 For they cannot set up a king over a country or give rain to people. 54 They cannot judge their own cause or deliver one who is wronged, for they have no power; 55 they are like crows between heaven and earth. When fire breaks out in a temple of wooden gods overlaid with gold or silver, their priests will flee and escape, but the gods[c] will be burned up like timbers. 56 Besides, they can offer no resistance to king or enemy. Why then must anyone admit or think that they are gods?

57 Gods made of wood and overlaid with silver and gold are unable to save themselves from thieves or robbers. 58 Anyone who can will strip them of their gold and silver and of the robes they wear, and go off with this booty, and they will not be able to help themselves. 59 So it is better to be a king who shows his courage, or a household utensil that serves its owner's need, than to be these false gods; better even the door of a house that protects its contents, than these false gods; better also a wooden pillar in a palace, than these false gods.

60 For sun and moon and stars are bright, and when sent to do a service, they are obedient. 61 So also the lightning, when it flashes, is widely seen; and the wind likewise blows in every land. 62 When God commands the clouds to go over the whole world, they carry out his command. 63 And the fire sent from above to consume mountains and woods does what it is ordered. But these idols[d] are not to be compared with them in appearance or power. 64 Therefore one must not think that they are gods, nor call them gods, for they are not able either to decide a case or to do good to anyone. 65 Since you know then that they are not gods, do not fear them.

66 They can neither curse nor bless kings; 67 they cannot show signs in the heavens for the nations, or shine like the sun or give light like the moon. 68 The wild animals are better than they are, for they can flee to shelter and help themselves. 69 So we have no evidence whatever that they are gods; therefore do not fear them.

70 Like a scarecrow in a cucumber bed, which guards nothing, so are their gods of wood, overlaid with gold and silver. 71 In the

[a] Gk *them*
[b] Meaning of Gk uncertain
[c] Gk *they*
[d] Gk *these things*

135.15. **47:** *Those who come after*, future generations. **50:** *Afterward*, when the idols' overlay is stripped off (cf. vv. 10,58).

6.53–56: Seventh warning: the impotence of idols. 53: See v. 34b and note. *Give rain*, Deut 11.14; 28.12; Ps 147.8; Jer 14.22. **54:** Vv. 36–37. **55:** *Crows*, the sense is unclear; perhaps a mistranslation into Greek of the Hebrew word for "clouds."

6.57–65: Eighth warning: the helplessness and uselessness of idols. 57–58: The author mentions the plundering of idols several times (vv. 15,18,33; cf. 10). **59:** V. 17. **60–63:** God controls the natural world; the idols do not (cf. Sir 16.26–30; *1 En.* 2–5). **61:** Pss 97.4; 135.7. **64:** V. 54; Ex 18.19; Isa 41.21.

6.66–69: Ninth warning: idols cannot do what God can. Wild animals can do more than they can. 66: V. 34; Jer 10.5; for the idiom see Gen 12.3; Num 22.6. **67:** *Signs*, portents (cf. Jer 10.2; Joel 2.30).

6.70–73: Tenth warning: idols are compared to a scarecrow, a thornbush, and a corpse. 70: *Like a scarecrow in a cucumber bed*, the same comparison occurs in the Hebrew text of Jer 10.5 but not in its translation in the Greek Septuagint, suggesting that the Letter was originally written in Hebrew. **71:** *Thornbush*, a common, use-

same way, their gods of wood, overlaid with gold and silver, are like a thornbush in a garden on which every bird perches; or like a corpse thrown out in the darkness. **72** From the purple and linen[a] that rot upon them you will know that they are not gods; and they will finally be consumed themselves, and be a reproach in the land. **73** Better, therefore, is someone upright who has no idols; such a person will be far above reproach.

[a] Cn: Gk *marble*, Syr *silk*

less shrub (cf. Judg 9.14–15). *A corpse thrown out*, the body is crudely discarded and not buried (cf. Isa 34.3; Jer 14.16; 22.19). **72:** The Greek word "marble" (see textual note *a*) is a mistranslation based on the confusion of two Hebrew homonyms (*shesh*), one of which means "alabaster" (or "marble") and the other "linen."

THE ADDITIONS TO DANIEL

CANONICAL STATUS AND LOCATION

The original book of Daniel is comprised of twelve chapters, six in Aramaic and six in Hebrew. The Greek translations of the book of Daniel, however, both in the Septuagint (LXX) version and in a version attributed to the second-century CE Jewish scholar Theodotion, include three Additions to the twelve original chapters: "The Prayer of Azariah and the Song of the Three Jews," "Susanna," and "Bel and the Dragon." The names given to these poetic compositions are descriptive titles provided by later editors and do not appear in the texts of the ancient manuscripts themselves.

The Additions to Daniel are considered canonical in Roman Catholic and Orthodox Christian traditions, whereas Protestants place them with the Apocrypha. They are not considered scriptural in Judaism.

The Prayer of Azariah and the Song of the Three Jews are found in all Greek versions between Dan 3.23 and 3.24. The Septuagint locates the other two Additions at the end of the book of Daniel, after 12.13; Theodotion's version places Susanna at the opening of the book of Daniel, and Bel and the Dragon at the conclusion of ch 6. The NRSV follows Theodotion's text but places the Additions with the other Apocryphal/Deuterocanonical texts rather than integrating them into the book of Daniel.

DATE AND HISTORICAL CONTEXT

Behind the Greek Additions may lie Hebrew or Aramaic originals, although no versions of the three stories have been found, even among the Dead Sea Scrolls. Like the folktales in Dan 1–6, the Additions may well have been written prior to the Maccabean revolt of the mid-second century BCE; the Prayer of Azariah (vs. 9) may reflect the crisis that led to the revolt. Scholars debate the place of composition: A Semitic (Hebrew or Aramaic) original would strengthen the argument for an origin in Israel or the eastern Diaspora; a Greek original would suggest Alexandria in Egypt, where there was a major Jewish community. The Additions likely circulated independently and only later, perhaps ca. 100 BCE when the book of Daniel was translated into Greek, were they added to it. The first independent citations of the Additions date from the church fathers of the second century CE.

Amy-Jill Levine

THE PRAYER OF AZARIAH AND THE SONG OF THE THREE JEWS

LOCATION

The Prayer of Azariah (vv. 1–22) and the Song of the Three Jews (vv. 28–68), along with a brief prose paragraph (vv. 23–27) concerning the fate of the three in Nebuchadnezzar's furnace, appear in ancient manuscripts between Dan 3.23 and 3.24. The Prayer and Song (with the exception of the end of the Song) may have had no original connection to the book of Daniel. They appear as numbers seven and eight of the fifteen "Odes" added to the book of Psalms in a few manuscripts of the Septuagint, a placement that complements the resemblance of these Additions to Ps 148 in terms of theme and to Ps 136 in terms of structure. The narrative context of Dan 3 gives their general emphasis on hope for deliverance, national repentance, and divine faithfulness a poignant focus as the three Jews face death in Babylonian exile.

DATE AND HISTORICAL CONTEXT

Whether the Prayer and Song were initially written in Hebrew or Aramaic or Greek remains debated, as does their place of composition. The Prayer contains references that correspond to the reign of the Seleucid king Antiochus IV (175–164 BCE), and so a second- (or perhaps first-) century BCE date of composition is possible.

CONTENTS AND INTERPRETATION

Prayers and hymns are a hallmark of Second Temple Jewish texts, and they are found in such works as Judith, Tobit, and Baruch, as well as in Dan 9 and among the scrolls discovered at Qumran (the Dead Sea Scrolls). The Additions to Daniel are especially comparable to the Additions to Esther—in both, prose narrative is supplemented with prayer and song that emphasize the piety of the main characters. The Prayer of Azariah resembles other postexilic works in its condemnation of the covenant community for its lack of fidelity to God, its emphasis on divine righteousness and mercy, and its appeal for deliverance (Ps 106; Ezra 9.6–15; Neh 1.5–11; Bar 1.15–3.8; and some Qumran texts). The Song of the Three Jews has allusions to numerous psalmic and prophetic passages in its exhortations to the heavens (vv. 36–41), nature (vv. 42–51), earth and its creatures (vv. 52–59), and humanity (vv. 60–68). Unlike the book of Daniel and the Prayer of Azariah, however, it does not suggest a period of persecution or a time when the Temple was either destroyed or profaned.

Amy-Jill Levine

(ADDITIONS TO DANIEL, INSERTED BETWEEN 3.23 AND 3.24)

1 They[a] walked around in the midst of the flames, singing hymns to God and blessing the Lord. 2 Then Azariah stood still in the fire and prayed aloud:

3 "Blessed are you, O Lord, God of our ancestors, and worthy of praise;
and glorious is your name forever!
4 For you are just in all you have done;
all your works are true and your ways right,
and all your judgments are true.
5 You have executed true judgments in all you have brought upon us
and upon Jerusalem, the holy city of our ancestors;
by a true judgment you have brought all this upon us because of our sins.
6 For we have sinned and broken your law in turning away from you;
in all matters we have sinned grievously.
7 We have not obeyed your commandments,
we have not kept them or done what you have commanded us for our own good.
8 So all that you have brought upon us,
and all that you have done to us,
you have done by a true judgment.
9 You have handed us over to our enemies, lawless and hateful rebels,
and to an unjust king, the most wicked in all the world.
10 And now we cannot open our mouths;
we, your servants who worship you, have become a shame and a reproach.
11 For your name's sake do not give us up forever,
and do not annul your covenant.
12 Do not withdraw your mercy from us,
for the sake of Abraham your beloved
and for the sake of your servant Isaac
and Israel your holy one,
13 to whom you promised
to multiply their descendants like the stars of heaven
and like the sand on the shore of the sea.
14 For we, O Lord, have become fewer than any other nation,
and are brought low this day in all the world because of our sins.
15 In our day we have no ruler, or prophet, or leader,
no burnt offering, or sacrifice, or oblation, or incense,

[a] That is, Hananiah, Mishael, and Azariah (Dan 2.17), the original names of Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego (Dan 1.6-7)

1–22: The prayer of Azariah. 1: *They* refers to Daniel's three friends, Hananiah (named Shadrach), Mishael (Meshach), and Azariah (Abednego) in v. 66; Dan 1.6–7; 3.22–23. The Babylonian names given here in parentheses do not appear in these Additions; the use of the Hebrew names reinforces the friends' Jewish identity. **3:** *Our ancestors*, see vv. 5,12,29; 1 Kings 8.53; Ezra 7.27; Dan 2.23; Tob 8.5. *Your name*, the praise of the divine name becomes increasingly common in Second Temple Jewish literature; cf. v. 30. **5:** *True judgments*, v. 8; Neh 9.33; Lam 1.18; Tobit; and other texts attribute the Babylonian exile to the community's sin. **6–8:** The confession of sin resembles Dan 9.5,15; Ezra 9.6; Neh 9.26. **9:** The *unjust king* in the context of the book of Daniel is Nebuchadnezzar (Dan 3.19), but the vague reference makes the statement applicable to other tyrants, such as Antiochus IV Epiphanes (see 1 Macc 1 and notes to Dan 10–12); *rebels* may refer to Jews who supported Antiochus and the Hellenization of Jerusalem (1 Macc 1.11–15,41–60). **10:** *Shame and a reproach*, see Dan 9.12. **11:** *Covenant*, see Gen 15.18; 17.7–8. **12:** *Abraham* is identified as beloved of God in Isa 41.8; 2 Chr 20.7; Jas 2.23, as well as the Qur'an (4.125). *Isaac* is called *servant* in Gen 24.14. *Israel*, i.e., Jacob (see Gen 32.28; 35.10). *Holy one* is more typically used for heavenly beings (Dan 4.10,20; 8.13). **13:** On the *promise*, with references to the *stars* or the *sand*, see, e.g., Gen 15.5; 22.17; Ex 32.13; Jer 33.22. **15:** *No ruler*, when read in the context of Dan 3, may refer to Nebuchadnezzar's blinding and exiling the Judean king (2 Kings 24.15); the lament is more generally expressed in Lam 2.9; Hos 3.4. No *prophet* is exaggerated for the Babylonian context, but it fits the early postexilic period (see Zech 13.3–6) and the time of Antiochus IV. *No burnt offering*, cessation of proper sacrifices occurred both when Nebuchadnezzar destroyed the Temple and when Antiochus IV profaned it. **16:** Contrition and humility substitute for sacrifice (1 Sam 15.22; Pss 51.16–17; 141.2; Hos 6.6); the context of the prayer, the impending martyrdom of the

no place to make an offering before you
and to find mercy.
16 Yet with a contrite heart and a humble
spirit may we be accepted,
17 as though it were with burnt offerings
of rams and bulls,
or with tens of thousands of fat lambs;
such may our sacrifice be in your sight
today,
and may we unreservedly follow you,[a]
for no shame will come to those who
trust in you.
18 And now with all our heart we follow you;
we fear you and seek your presence.
19 Do not put us to shame,
but deal with us in your patience
and in your abundant mercy.
20 Deliver us in accordance with your
marvelous works,
and bring glory to your name, O Lord.
21 Let all who do harm to your servants be
put to shame;
let them be disgraced and deprived of
all power,
and let their strength be broken.
22 Let them know that you alone are the
Lord God,
glorious over the whole world."

23 Now the king's servants who threw them in kept stoking the furnace with naphtha, pitch, tow, and brushwood. 24 And the flames poured out above the furnace forty-nine cubits, 25 and spread out and burned those Chaldeans who were caught near the furnace. 26 But the angel of the Lord came down into the furnace to be with Azariah and his companions, and drove the fiery flame out of the furnace, 27 and made the inside of the furnace as though a moist wind were whistling through it. The fire did not touch them at all and caused them no pain or distress.

28 Then the three with one voice praised and glorified and blessed God in the furnace:

29 "Blessed are you, O Lord, God of our
ancestors,
and to be praised and highly exalted
forever;
30 And blessed is your glorious, holy name,
and to be highly praised and highly
exalted forever.
31 Blessed are you in the temple of your
holy glory,
and to be extolled and highly glorified
forever.
32 Blessed are you who look into the depths
from your throne on the cherubim,
and to be praised and highly exalted
forever.
33 Blessed are you on the throne of your
kingdom,
and to be extolled and highly exalted
forever.
34 Blessed are you in the firmament of
heaven,
and to be sung and glorified forever.

35 "Bless the Lord, all you works of the Lord;
sing praise to him and highly exalt him
forever.

[a] Meaning of Gk uncertain

three, makes the point acute. **21:** *Put to shame*, in the context of the book of Daniel, anticipates Nebuchadnezzar's madness in Dan 4. See also Sir 36.9 on the hope for the enemy's demise.

23–27: Protection in the furnace. The plot follows Dan 3.22. **23:** *Naphthah* is a type of petroleum (see 2 Macc 1.20–22,30–36). **24:** *Forty-nine cubits* is 71 ft (22 m); the multiple of seven suggests Dan 3.19, in which Nebuchadnezzar orders the furnace heated to seven times its usual temperature **25:** *Burned those Chaldeans* is noted in Dan 3:22; the king's agents die from the flames. **26:** The protecting *angel* is an increasingly common figure in Second Temple literature (Tobit; Sus 44–45 in the Old Greek version; *1 Enoch*); this verse makes the angelic presence, implicit in the reference to a "fourth man" who appeared like a "son of the gods" in Dan 3.25, explicit. **27:** The verse is evoked in 3 Macc 6.6. *Moist* wind is dew; cf. Isa 26.19; Hos 14.5; Mic 5.7; etc., where dew indicates God's salvation.

28–34: Song of thanksgiving. 29: The song begins with direct address to God. Verses 29–30 resemble Tob 8.5. **31:** *Temple* may refer to the heavenly, not the Jerusalem, sanctuary, as in Ps 11.4; Hab 2.20. **32:** *Cherubim* are winged creatures who serve as the divine throne (Ex 25.18–20; 2 Sam 6.2; 22:11; Ps 18:10).

30–68: The litany of praise. 30: *Glorious, holy name*, Pss 29.2; 66.2; 79.9; etc. **31:** *Temple of your . . . glory* may indicate a heavenly temple, or the earthly one in a restored, purified state. **35:** The song shifts to exhortations

36 Bless the Lord, you heavens;
sing praise to him and highly exalt him forever.
37 Bless the Lord, you angels of the Lord;
sing praise to him and highly exalt him forever.
38 Bless the Lord, all you waters above the heavens;
sing praise to him and highly exalt him forever.
39 Bless the Lord, all you powers of the Lord;
sing praise to him and highly exalt him forever.
40 Bless the Lord, sun and moon;
sing praise to him and highly exalt him forever.
41 Bless the Lord, stars of heaven;
sing praise to him and highly exalt him forever.

42 "Bless the Lord, all rain and dew;
sing praise to him and highly exalt him forever.
43 Bless the Lord, all you winds;
sing praise to him and highly exalt him forever.
44 Bless the Lord, fire and heat;
sing praise to him and highly exalt him forever.
45 Bless the Lord, winter cold and summer heat;
sing praise to him and highly exalt him forever.
46 Bless the Lord, dews and falling snow;
sing praise to him and highly exalt him forever.
47 Bless the Lord, nights and days;
sing praise to him and highly exalt him forever.
48 Bless the Lord, light and darkness;
sing praise to him and highly exalt him forever.
49 Bless the Lord, ice and cold;
sing praise to him and highly exalt him forever.
50 Bless the Lord, frosts and snows;
sing praise to him and highly exalt him forever.
51 Bless the Lord, lightnings and clouds;
sing praise to him and highly exalt him forever.

52 "Let the earth bless the Lord;
let it sing praise to him and highly exalt him forever.
53 Bless the Lord, mountains and hills;
sing praise to him and highly exalt him forever.
54 Bless the Lord, all that grows in the ground;
sing praise to him and highly exalt him forever.
55 Bless the Lord, seas and rivers;
sing praise to him and highly exalt him forever.
56 Bless the Lord, you springs;
sing praise to him and highly exalt him forever.
57 Bless the Lord, you whales and all that swim in the waters;
sing praise to him and highly exalt him forever.
58 Bless the Lord, all birds of the air;
sing praise to him and highly exalt him forever.
59 Bless the Lord, all wild animals and cattle;
sing praise to him and highly exalt him forever.

60 "Bless the Lord, all people on earth;
sing praise to him and highly exalt him forever.
61 Bless the Lord, O Israel;
sing praise to him and highly exalt him forever.
62 Bless the Lord, you priests of the Lord;
sing praise to him and highly exalt him forever.
63 Bless the Lord, you servants of the Lord;
sing praise to him and highly exalt him forever.
64 Bless the Lord, spirits and souls of the righteous;
sing praise to him and highly exalt him forever.

to creation and thereby recalls the refrains of Pss 136 and 148. **38:** *Waters above*, see Gen 1.7; Ps 148.4. **39:** *Powers* suggests the heavenly host (see Ps 148.2–3). **57:** *Whales*, or sea monsters, suggest Leviathan (Isa 27.1; Ps 104.26; Job 41). **62:** *Priests* implies a Temple setting, but the song does not restrict its recitation to the Temple.

65 Bless the Lord, you who are holy and humble in heart;
sing praise to him and highly exalt him forever.

66 "Bless the Lord, Hananiah, Azariah, and Mishael;
sing praise to him and highly exalt him forever.
For he has rescued us from Hades and saved us from the power[a] of death,
and delivered us from the midst of the burning fiery furnace;
from the midst of the fire he has delivered us.
67 Give thanks to the Lord, for he is good,
for his mercy endures forever.
68 All who worship the Lord, bless the God of gods,
sing praise to him and give thanks to him,
for his mercy endures forever."

[a] Gk *hand*

63: *Servants* could also refer to priests or other Temple functionaries, but the term is not limited to them. **66:** The friends are identified by their Hebrew names, as in Dan 1.6; 1 Macc 2.59. *Hananiah* means "the LORD is gracious"; *Azariah* is "the LORD has helped" (in the book of Tobit, the disguised angel Raphael assumes this name); and *Mishael* is "who is like God?" *Hades*, the abode of the dead. Their song strikes the same chord as numerous biblical comments on rescue from Sheol, e.g., 1 Sam 2.6; Pss 16.10; 30.3; 49.15; 86.13; Prov 23.14; Jon 2.2. **67:** *Give thanks . . . for his mercy endures forever*, see Ps 136; Sir 51; 1 Macc 4.24.

SUSANNA

NAME AND LOCATION

This addition to the book of Daniel is named for its heroine. Often called the first detective story, it appears in two different forms and locations in the early textual traditions. The Septuagint (and the Vulgate) locate it after Daniel 13; Theodotion, the version followed in this as well as most modern translations, locates the story at the beginning of the book of Daniel, since Sus 45 describes Daniel as a "young man." Perhaps composed as early as the Persian period (539–333 BCE), Susanna's tale was added to the cycle of tales about Daniel, probably ca. 100 BCE. The story may originally not have been about Daniel; the identification of the rescuing lad as Daniel would then be a secondary attribute of the story, added when the tale was attached to the other materials concerning Daniel, just as the Prayer of Azariah and the Song of the Three Jews may not have had an original connection to Dan 3. Susanna's setting in peaceful Babylon, in which the enemies are not wicked pagan kings but corrupt Jewish judges, contrasts with the threats emphasized in Dan 1–6.

CONTENT AND CANONICAL STATUS

Like Greek Esther, Judith, and Sarah of the book of Tobit, Susanna is beautiful and chaste, and, as in those books, prayer and piety are major motifs. Indeed, with the exception of the villainous elders, all the characters—including the narrator—mention God. First cited as having canonical status by the church father Irenaeus of Lyons in the late second century CE, Roman Catholic and Orthodox churches consider it canonical, while Protestants include it in the Apocrypha. Although the addition is not considered scriptural in Judaism, Susanna's story was also adapted by Samaritan and medieval Jewish writers.

Amy-Jill Levine

[1] There was a man living in Babylon whose
name was Joakim. [2] He married the daughter of
Hilkiah, named Susanna, a very beautiful wom-
an and one who feared the Lord. [3] Her parents
were righteous, and had trained their daughter
according to the law of Moses. [4] Joakim was very
rich, and had a fine garden adjoining his house;
the Jews used to come to him because he was
the most honored of them all.

[5] That year two elders from the people
were appointed as judges. Concerning them
the Lord had said: "Wickedness came forth
from Babylon, from elders who were judges,
who were supposed to govern the people."
[6] These men were frequently at Joakim's
house, and all who had a case to be tried
came to them there.

[7] When the people left at noon, Susanna
would go into her husband's garden to
walk. [8] Every day the two elders used to see
her, going in and walking about, and they
began to lust for her. [9] They suppressed their

1–4: Introduction. 1: Set in *Babylon*, the story is typically dated during the Babylonian exile (587–538 BCE) because of its connection to Daniel; however, an exact date is never specified. *Joakim* does not appear to be connected with others of the same name (2 Kings 24.15; Neh 12.10,12,26; Jdt 4.6; 15.8). **2:** *Susanna*, the name, which means "lily," appears in Lk 8.3, but not elsewhere in the Jewish or Christian canons. It is attested in late Babylonian sources. *Hilkiah* was a common name in priestly circles (2 Kings 22.4; Neh 12.7; Jer 1.1) and so perhaps suggests that Susanna's father was a priest. Beauty and piety are typically associated with heroines in the Deuterocanonical literature (Jdt 8:7–8; Tob 6:12; Est 2:7,20 [LXX]). **4:** The prosperity of some Jews in Babylon is attested by archaeological findings (see also Jer 29.5–7; 2 Esd 3:1b–2). *Joakim's* honor appears based on wealth. *Garden* (Gk "Paradeisos") recalls Eden (Gen 2–3).

5–14: The elders' plot. 5: The *year* is not identified. *Elders*, community leaders (Ruth 4.2–12; Ezek 8.1; 14.1; 20.1; Jer 29.1). The phrase *wickedness* (Gk "anomia," lit. "lawlessness") *came forth* is unattested in existing prophetic books, but see Jer 23.14–15; the church fathers Origin and Jerome associate the reference with Jer 29.20–23. The occasional suggestion that the Jewish community denied this story canonical status because it

consciences and turned away their eyes from looking to Heaven or remembering their duty to administer justice. [10] Both were overwhelmed with passion for her, but they did not tell each other of their distress, [11] for they were ashamed to disclose their lustful desire to seduce her. [12] Day after day they watched eagerly to see her.

[13] One day they said to each other, "Let us go home, for it is time for lunch." So they both left and parted from each other. [14] But turning back, they met again; and when each pressed the other for the reason, they confessed their lust. Then together they arranged for a time when they could find her alone.

[15] Once, while they were watching for an opportune day, she went in as before with only two maids, and wished to bathe in the garden, for it was a hot day. [16] No one was there except the two elders, who had hidden themselves and were watching her. [17] She said to her maids, "Bring me olive oil and ointments, and shut the garden doors so that I can bathe." [18] They did as she told them: they shut the doors of the garden and went out by the side doors to bring what they had been commanded; they did not see the elders, because they were hiding.

[19] When the maids had gone out, the two elders got up and ran to her. [20] They said, "Look, the garden doors are shut, and no one can see us. We are burning with desire for you; so give your consent, and lie with us. [21] If you refuse, we will testify against you that a young man was with you, and this was why you sent your maids away."

[22] Susanna groaned and said, "I am completely trapped. For if I do this, it will mean death for me; if I do not, I cannot escape your hands. [23] I choose not to do it; I will fall into your hands, rather than sin in the sight of the Lord."

[24] Then Susanna cried out with a loud voice, and the two elders shouted against her. [25] And one of them ran and opened the garden doors. [26] When the people in the house heard the shouting in the garden, they rushed in at the side door to see what had happened to her. [27] And when the elders told their story, the servants felt very much ashamed, for nothing like this had ever been said about Susanna.

[28] The next day, when the people gathered at the house of her husband Joakim, the two elders came, full of their wicked plot to have Susanna put to death. In the presence of the people they said, [29] "Send for Susanna daughter of Hilkiah, the wife of Joakim." [30] So they sent for her. And she came with her parents, her children, and all her relatives.

[31] Now Susanna was a woman of great refinement and beautiful in appearance. [32] As

criticized the elders is belied by the remarkable amount of self-critique the biblical text generates. **8:** *Lust*, in violation of Ex 20.17. **9:** *Turned away their eyes*, although they had no hesitance in looking at Susanna. *Heaven* is a circumlocution for God. **14:** *Pressed the other*, as if in cross-examination: their true testimony here will contrast with their false testimony regarding Susanna.

15–21: The attempted rape. **15:** Contrary to most artistic depictions, Susanna never actually bathes. *In the garden*, the scene recollects depictions both of luxuriant beauty and physical love in the Song of Solomon, and of the garden of Eden (Gen 2–3) as a site of temptation. *Bathe* suggests both Bathsheba (2 Sam 11.2) and observations in Jewish-Hellenistic literature (*Jubilees* 22; *Testament of Reuben* 3) that Reuben sinned with his father's wife Bilhah after seeing her bathe; cf. Gen 35.22; 49.4. *Maids* frequently accompany heroines in the Deuterocanonical texts (Jdt, Tob, Add Esth). **17:** *Oil and ointments*, compare 2 Sam 12.20; Ruth 3.3; Jdt 10.3. *Shut the garden doors* attests to Susanna's modesty. **20:** *Give your consent*, Susanna's choice is adultery or death.

22–27: Susanna's response. **22:** *Death*, because adultery was a capital crime (Lev 20.10; Deut 22.21–24; see also Jn 8:4–5). Susanna knows the "law of Moses" (v. 3). **23:** *Sin in the sight of the Lord* is the same concern voiced by Joseph in similar circumstances (Gen 39.9). **24:** Deut 22.24 legislates that a woman, facing rape, is to *cry out with a loud voice*; Susanna shows knowledge of and fidelity to the law. On crying out at times of oppression, see also Gen 21.16; Ex 2.23; 14.10; Deut 26.7; 1 Sam 4.13; 3 Macc 5.51; and elsewhere. **27:** That servants would be ashamed indicates the dishonor to the household. Although the elders (v. 11) and servants feel shame, Susanna is never described in this manner, despite being placed in a situation of public humiliation (vv. 31–32). *Nothing like this*, although she had an unblemished reputation, Susanna is presumed guilty.

28–41: Accusation. **30:** Susanna is accompanied by all her family except Joakim. The Septuagint (LXX) notes

she was veiled, the scoundrels ordered her to be unveiled, so that they might feast their eyes on her beauty. [33] Those who were with her and all who saw her were weeping.

[34] Then the two elders stood up before the people and laid their hands on her head. [35] Through her tears she looked up toward Heaven, for her heart trusted in the Lord. [36] The elders said, "While we were walking in the garden alone, this woman came in with two maids, shut the garden doors, and dismissed the maids. [37] Then a young man, who was hiding there, came to her and lay with her. [38] We were in a corner of the garden, and when we saw this wickedness we ran to them. [39] Although we saw them embracing, we could not hold the man, because he was stronger than we, and he opened the doors and got away. [40] We did, however, seize this woman and asked who the young man was, [41] but she would not tell us. These things we testify."

Because they were elders of the people and judges, the assembly believed them and condemned her to death.

[42] Then Susanna cried out with a loud voice, and said, "O eternal God, you know what is secret and are aware of all things before they come to be; [43] you know that these men have given false evidence against me. And now I am to die, though I have done none of the wicked things that they have charged against me!"

[44] The Lord heard her cry. [45] Just as she was being led off to execution, God stirred up the holy spirit of a young lad named Daniel, [46] and he shouted with a loud voice, "I want no part in shedding this woman's blood!"

[47] All the people turned to him and asked, "What is this you are saying?" [48] Taking his stand among them he said, "Are you such fools, O Israelites, as to condemn a daughter of Israel without examination and without learning the facts? [49] Return to court, for these men have given false evidence against her."

[50] So all the people hurried back. And the rest of the[a] elders said to him, "Come, sit among us and inform us, for God has given you the standing of an elder." [51] Daniel said to them, "Separate them far from each other, and I will examine them."

[52] When they were separated from each other, he summoned one of them and said to him, "You old relic of wicked days, your sins have now come home, which you have

[a] Gk lacks *rest of the*

that Susanna had four children. **31:** *Refinement* and beauty are attributes of (Gk) Esther. **32:** *Veiled* emphasizes her modesty; although the trial occurs in her home, the proceedings are public. The LXX describes Susanna as being uncovered (see Hos 2.3–10; Ezek 16.37–39). **34:** *Laid their hands* indicates that the elders serve as witnesses (Lev 24.14; see Lev 8.14,18,22; Ex 29.10,15,19 for sacrificial imagery, and Lev 16.21–22 for the scapegoat ritual). The elders planned to lay their hands upon Susanna in order to rape her; now their gesture seeks to condemn her. Two witnesses are required (Num 35.30; Deut 17.6; 19.15). **41:** *Condemned her* without cross-examination (Deut 19.15–21) or Susanna's own testimony; the "trial" is illegal according to both biblical and later rabbinic regulations.

42–43: Susanna's prayer. Like (Gk) Esther (14.3–19), Judith (9.2–14), and Sarah (Tob 2.10–15), as well as Azariah of the Additions to Daniel, Susanna offers personal prayer in a time of distress. **42:** *Loud voice*, see v. 24. *Know what is secret* is a divine attribute stressed in Dan 2.22. **43:** *Given false evidence*, Susanna's prayer locates God as the (true) judge and jury even as it again shows her knowledge of the law (Deut 19.15–21). *Now I am to die* leaves Susanna's request for justice implicit.

44–47: Daniel responds. 44: God responds to Susanna's prayer, not to the events that prompted it. **45:** *Young lad* contrasts Daniel with the "elders"; the term indicates a youth of marriageable age (Tob 5.17) and subtly recalls the "young man" the elders claimed was with Susanna (37–39). *Holy spirit* is associated with both prophetic abilities and the possession of wisdom. The miraculous element in Susanna is not the work of an angel or a revelation of an undescribed dream, but the miracle of the inspired intellect. **46:** *I want no part*, since the community is responsible for justice (Deut 22.20–21; Mt 27.24; Acts 24.26).

48–63: Susanna's acquittal. **48:** *Examination*, or cross-examination, is required by Deut 19.15–20. *Daughter of Israel*, see also v. 57, which describes Susanna as a *daughter of Judah*. **50:** Daniel's status appears miraculously granted. His youth contrasts with his *standing* as *an elder*. **50:** *Rest of the elders* indicates that not all the leaders

committed in the past, [53] pronouncing unjust judgments, condemning the innocent and acquitting the guilty, though the Lord said, 'You shall not put an innocent and righteous person to death.' [54] Now then, if you really saw this woman, tell me this: Under what tree did you see them being intimate with each other?" He answered, "Under a mastic tree."[a] [55] And Daniel said, "Very well! This lie has cost you your head, for the angel of God has received the sentence from God and will immediately cut[a] you in two."

[56] Then, putting him to one side, he ordered them to bring the other. And he said to him, "You offspring of Canaan and not of Judah, beauty has beguiled you and lust has perverted your heart. [57] This is how you have been treating the daughters of Israel, and they were intimate with you through fear; but a daughter of Judah would not tolerate your wickedness. [58] Now then, tell me: Under what tree did you catch them being intimate with each other?" He answered, "Under an evergreen oak."[b] [59] Daniel said to him, "Very well! This lie has cost you also your head, for the angel of God is waiting with his sword to split[b] you in two, so as to destroy you both."

[60] Then the whole assembly raised a great shout and blessed God, who saves those who hope in him. [61] And they took action against the two elders, because out of their own mouths Daniel had convicted them of bearing false witness; they did to them as they had wickedly planned to do to their neighbor. [62] Acting in accordance with the law of Moses, they put them to death. Thus innocent blood was spared that day.

[63] Hilkiah and his wife praised God for their daughter Susanna, and so did her husband Joakim and all her relatives, because she was found innocent of a shameful deed. [64] And from that day onward Daniel had a great reputation among the people.

[a] The Greek words for *mastic tree* and *cut* are similar, thus forming an ironic wordplay

[b] The Greek words for *evergreen oak* and *split* are similar, thus forming an ironic wordplay

are wicked. **53:** *Pronouncing unjust judgments*, Daniel accuses the first elder of a pattern of injustice. The citation evokes Ex 23:7. **54–55:** *Mastic* (Gk "schinon") . . . *cut* (Gk "schisei"): "clove . . . cleave" provides an English approximation of the Greek pun. **55:** *Angels* become increasingly common in Jewish Hellenistic literature (including Daniel; also Isa 37.36; Ezek 9). Here they serve as agents of punishment rather than of revelation. **56–57:** The comment compares three nations. *Offspring of Canaan* suggests the sexual crimes attributed to the earlier inhabitants of the promised land (Lev 18.24–28); *daughters of Israel* refers to the Northern Kingdom, destroyed by Assyria in 722 BCE (2 Kings 17); *daughter of Judah*, Susanna is from the Southern Kingdom, whose exile in 586 BCE created the Babylonian Jewish community. **58–59:** *Evergreen oak* (Gk "prinon") . . . *split* (Gk "kataprisei"): "yew" and "hew" provides an English approximation of the Greek pun. **59:** *Sword* recalls Gen 3.24, as Susanna's garden suggests Eden (Gen 2–3). **62:** *Law of Moses* is Deut 19.15–21.

64: Epilogue. If Susanna is placed at the opening of the book of Daniel, Daniel's *great reputation* is seen to increase in the subsequent stories.

BEL AND THE DRAGON

LOCATION AND NAME

These stories appear as ch 14 of the Greek version of the book of Daniel. In the Septuagint, as opposed to Theodotion's version, which is printed here, Daniel is identified as a priest and thus as a positive foil to the deceptive priests of the false gods. The title of the stories in the Septuagint is "From the prophecy of Habakkuk, the son of Joshua [Gk Jesus], of the tribe of Levi."

DATE, CONTENTS, AND INTERPRETATION

Perhaps composed as early as the Persian period (539–333 BCE), these two idol parodies (compare Isa 44) display the foolishness of pagan worship, divine protection of faithful Jews, and the cleverness of the court favorite, Daniel. In the first story, concerning Bel, Daniel demonstrates that the idol is not a god by proving that it does not eat the food set out for it each night; the second story reverses this scenario as Daniel proves that the dragon is not divine by feeding it a noxious concoction that kills it. This second story recapitulates the account of Daniel in the lion's den (Dan 6.16–24) and adds to it Daniel's own miraculous feeding by the prophet Habakkuk. Food references culminate at the end, when Daniel's enemies are eaten by the lions into whose den Daniel had been thrown. Perhaps this second story is based on Jer 51.34,44, which is also set in Babylon, the filling of a belly with delicacies, and the punishment of Bel by having him "disgorge what he has swallowed."

Amy-Jill Levine

[1] When King Astyages was laid to rest with
his ancestors, Cyrus the Persian succeeded
to his kingdom. [2] Daniel was a companion of
the king, and was the most honored of all his
Friends.

[3] Now the Babylonians had an idol called
Bel, and every day they provided for it twelve
bushels of choice flour and forty sheep and
six measures[a] of wine. [4] The king revered it
and went every day to worship it. But Daniel
worshiped his own God.

So the king said to him, "Why do you not
worship Bel?" [5] He answered, "Because I do
not revere idols made with hands, but the living God, who created heaven and earth and
has dominion over all living creatures."

[6] The king said to him, "Do you not think that
Bel is a living god? Do you not see how much
he eats and drinks every day?" [7] And Daniel
laughed, and said, "Do not be deceived, O king,
for this thing is only clay inside and bronze
outside, and it never ate or drank anything."

[8] Then the king was angry and called the
priests of Bel[b] and said to them, "If you do
not tell me who is eating these provisions,
you shall die. [9] But if you prove that Bel is
eating them, Daniel shall die, because he has
spoken blasphemy against Bel." Daniel said to
the king, "Let it be done as you have said."

[a] A little more than fifty gallons
[b] Gk *his priests*

1–2: Daniel in the Persian court. **1:** *Astyages*, last king of Media (585–550 BCE), was defeated by his grandson, *Cyrus the Persian* (Dan 6.28). **2:** *Companion of the king*, perhaps an official position (1 Macc 2.18), suggests a confidant. *Most honored*, see Dan 2.48.

3–7: The worship of Bel. **3:** *Bel*, an epithet of Marduk, the god who headed the Babylonian pantheon (Jer 50.2). Ancient Babylonian sources confirm Bel's extensive diet. **4:** *The king revered it*, although ancient sources indicate that in actual practice, the "leftovers" were sent to the king, and their consumption was considered to provide blessings. The king's support for the priests who were consuming the food is therefore ironic. **4:** The question indicates the story's original independence from the book of Daniel, although in Dan 1–6 kings continually require reeducation about Daniel's faith and practices. **5:** Daniel boldly confesses his own faith and criticizes that of the king. **7:** *Laughed* (also in v. 19) indicates Daniel's familiarity with the king as well as his disdain for the worship of the idol; Bel is also ridiculed in Isa 46.1–2.

10 Now there were seventy priests of Bel, besides their wives and children. So the king went with Daniel into the temple of Bel. 11 The priests of Bel said, "See, we are now going outside; you yourself, O king, set out the food and prepare the wine, and shut the door and seal it with your signet. 12 When you return in the morning, if you do not find that Bel has eaten it all, we will die; otherwise Daniel will, who is telling lies about us." 13 They were unconcerned, for beneath the table they had made a hidden entrance, through which they used to go in regularly and consume the provisions. 14 After they had gone out, the king set out the food for Bel. Then Daniel ordered his servants to bring ashes, and they scattered them throughout the whole temple in the presence of the king alone. Then they went out, shut the door and sealed it with the king's signet, and departed. 15 During the night the priests came as usual, with their wives and children, and they ate and drank everything.

16 Early in the morning the king rose and came, and Daniel with him. 17 The king said, "Are the seals unbroken, Daniel?" He answered, "They are unbroken, O king." 18 As soon as the doors were opened, the king looked at the table, and shouted in a loud voice, "You are great, O Bel, and in you there is no deceit at all!"

19 But Daniel laughed and restrained the king from going in. "Look at the floor," he said, "and notice whose footprints these are." 20 The king said, "I see the footprints of men and women and children."

21 Then the king was enraged, and he arrested the priests and their wives and children. They showed him the secret doors through which they used to enter to consume what was on the table. 22 Therefore the king put them to death, and gave Bel over to Daniel, who destroyed it and its temple.

23 Now in that place[a] there was a great dragon, which the Babylonians revered. 24 The king said to Daniel, "You cannot deny that this is a living god; so worship him." 25 Daniel said, "I worship the Lord my God, for he is the living God. 26 But give me permission, O king, and I will kill the dragon without sword or club." The king said, "I give you permission."

27 Then Daniel took pitch, fat, and hair, and boiled them together and made cakes, which he fed to the dragon. The dragon ate them, and burst open. Then Daniel said, "See what you have been worshiping!"

28 When the Babylonians heard about it, they were very indignant and conspired against the king, saying, "The king has become a Jew; he has destroyed Bel, and killed the dragon, and slaughtered the priests." 29 Going to the king, they said, "Hand Daniel

[a] Other ancient authorities lack *in that place*

8–22: Bel's trial. **8:** The abruptness of *You shall die* (Dan 2.5; 3.6; 6.7) is conventional in folktales. **10:** *Wives and children* contrasts Daniel's single status. **11:** *Prepare the wine* by mixing it with water (2 Macc 15.39) or spices (Isa 5.22; Song 8.2). **14:** *Ordered his servants*, unlike Dan chs 1–6, where Daniel relies on divine revelation and aid, here as well as in Susanna, he succeeds by his wits. The scene establishes what becomes a detective story convention, the "mystery of the locked room." **22:** *Put them to death* echoes the punishment of the wicked elders (Sus 62; see Dan 2.12; 6.24); the corruption of the priests condemns also their wives and children. Bel's idol and *temple* were, according to the Greek historian Herodotus and other ancient sources, destroyed by the Persian king Xerxes in 479 BCE; Xerxes melted the temple's 20 ft (6 m) high statue of Bel into 800 lb (363 kg) of gold bullion. Daniel's action responds to Babylon's destruction of the Jerusalem Temple.

23–27: The destruction of the dragon. **23:** *Great dragon*, dragons or snakes could symbolize the divine in ancient Near Eastern and Mediterranean cultures (see Num 2.8–9; 2 Kings 18.4), but there is no independent evidence of Babylonian snake worship. **24:** *Living god* contrasts with the idol Bel, for the snake is clearly alive. **25:** Daniel resists apostasy, a special concern for Jews in the Diaspora and during the persecution of Antiochus IV Epiphanes. **27:** *Pitch, fat, and hair* would not necessarily be a noxious concoction; later versions of the story add details to increase the toxicity of the mixture. The snake eats and dies, unlike Bel who is proven false because he cannot eat; within the cycle of stories about Daniel, this detail offers subtle comparisons. Daniel and his friends prosper by restricting their diet (Dan 1); Belshazzar falls because of his blasphemous feasting (Dan 5).

28–42: Daniel in the lion pit. **28:** *Become a Jew* anticipates v. 41, where the king affirms Daniel's God; he does not, however, convert. **29:** The death threat repeats the punishment of Bel's priests and their families, but here

over to us, or else we will kill you and your household." 30 The king saw that they were pressing him hard, and under compulsion he handed Daniel over to them.

31 They threw Daniel into the lions' den, and he was there for six days. 32 There were seven lions in the den, and every day they had been given two human bodies and two sheep; but now they were given nothing, so that they would devour Daniel.

33 Now the prophet Habakkuk was in Judea; he had made a stew and had broken bread into a bowl, and was going into the field to take it to the reapers. 34 But the angel of the Lord said to Habakkuk, "Take the food that you have to Babylon, to Daniel, in the lions' den." 35 Habakkuk said, "Sir, I have never seen Babylon, and I know nothing about the den." 36 Then the angel of the Lord took him by the crown of his head and carried him by his hair; with the speed of the wind[a] he set him down in Babylon, right over the den.

37 Then Habakkuk shouted, "Daniel, Daniel! Take the food that God has sent you." 38 Daniel said, "You have remembered me, O God, and have not forsaken those who love you." 39 So Daniel got up and ate. And the angel of God immediately returned Habakkuk to his own place.

40 On the seventh day the king came to mourn for Daniel. When he came to the den he looked in, and there sat Daniel! 41 The king shouted with a loud voice, "You are great, O Lord, the God of Daniel, and there is no other besides you!" 42 Then he pulled Daniel[b] out, and threw into the den those who had attempted his destruction, and they were instantly eaten before his eyes.

[a] Or *by the power of his spirit*
[b] Gk *him*

the king is threatened by his own people. **30:** The king's reluctance resembles that of Darius (Dan 6). **31:** *Lions' den*, see Dan 6.16–24, where Daniel spends one night, not six. Daniel destroyed Babylon's animal god; now the Babylonians anticipate that animals will destroy him. **32:** The description continues the author's interest in dietary matters, but it is only in this case that concerns for eating will be connected to the miraculous. **33:** *Habakkuk* prophesied ca. 612–597 BCE, well before the events recounted here. **34:** Angels appear in the book of Daniel as protectors (Dan 6.22) as well as apocalyptic revealers and interpreters (Dan 7–12). Along with the unlikely summoning of Habakkuk and his reluctance concerning this unexpected assignment, *the food* is part of the tale's humor: the lions, not Daniel, have the greater problem with hunger. **36:** *By his hair*, see Ezek 8.3. **41:** *You are great* replaces the king's praise of Bel in 18. **42:** References to food reach their conclusion as Daniel's accusers are consumed.

1 MACCABEES

NAME

The name "1 Maccabees" derives from the church fathers Hippolytus (ca. 170–236 CE), Origen (ca. 185–254 CE), and Jerome (ca. 342–420 CE), who notes that he found the first book of the Maccabees in Hebrew. The name "Maccabee," a nickname ("Hammer") given to Judas (1 Macc 3.4), was extended in Christian (but not Jewish) tradition to include his family. Origen said the book was titled *sarbethsabanaiel*, a Greek transliteration possibly suggesting an original Hebrew "The Book of the House of the Princes of Israel."

CANONICAL STATUS AND LOCATION

Jerome distinguished between Hebrew and Greek Jewish books, describing the latter as *apocrypha*, "hidden things." Perhaps because Jerome knew of a Hebrew version of 1 Maccabees, it was included in the Vulgate, the Latin Bible of the Western church. It is also one of the canonical scriptures of the Eastern Orthodox churches. The sixteenth-century Protestant reformers, unsympathetic toward non-Hebrew Jewish writings, placed it firmly among the Apocrypha, to be read for instruction in godly manners but not in Christian doctrine. The Roman Catholic church reaffirmed the canonical status of 1 Maccabees at the Council of Trent (1545–63). The book is not canonical in Jewish tradition, although it is an important religious text describing the origin of the festival of Hanukkah, the rededication of the Temple in 164 BCE. In Roman Catholic and Eastern Orthodox Bibles, 1 Maccabees is placed among the historical books, after the books of Tobit, Judith, and Esther. In Protestant Bibles it is included among the Apocrypha, usually after the Additions to Daniel.

AUTHORSHIP AND DATE

The author's identity is unknown. He was apparently an educated Jew, well versed in the Hebrew scriptures and the Temple liturgy, and with sufficient leisure and resources for authorship. He wrote in Hebrew but was able to use, translate, and incorporate Greek and Latin documents from Seleucid, Roman, and Spartan archives. His interests were political and historical rather than priestly; he firmly supported the Maccabean cause but was sufficiently scholarly and objective to avoid demonizing the Seleucid opposition (contrast 2 Maccabees).

The book covers Jewish history from the time of Alexander the Great to the high priesthood of John Hyrcanus (134–104 CE) and is thus usually dated to the later years of Hyrcanus's rule or soon after; the statements of 1 Macc 16.23–24, that his achievements were recorded in the chronicles of his high priesthood, and of 1 Macc 13.30, that the Maccabean family tomb built by Simon "remains to this day," suggest some passing of time. The book's positive attitude toward Rome makes it likely that it was written before the Roman general Pompey captured Jerusalem in 63 BCE.

LITERARY HISTORY

Sometime about the turn of the era, 1 Maccabees appeared in Greek translation; the late first-century BCE Jewish historian Josephus used this as a major source for his *Antiquities* (*Ant*. 12.242–13.212). Josephus perhaps found a copy in Jerusalem before the destruction of Jerusalem in 70 CE, or later in a Roman library. The fourth- and fifth-century manuscripts of Codex Sinaiticus and Codex Alexandrinus, and the eighth-century Codex Venetus preserve the Greek text; the presumed Hebrew original has been lost. The Old Latin translation, from the second or early third century CE, was later incorporated into the Vulgate tradition.

HISTORICAL CONTEXT

Judea had known a long period of relative peace and prosperity, first under Alexander the Great (332–323 BCE), then under the Ptolemies, the successors to Alexander's rule in Egypt. As a result of Alexander's rule, Hellenism (a mixture of Greek and Semitic cultures) had dominated all the countries of the eastern Mediterranean basin. By the second century BCE, however, when Judea came under the control of the Seleucids, the successors to Alexander's rule in Mesopotamia and Syria, Jews were divided over how to relate to Gentile culture. The upper classes in Jerusalem, the Hellenizers, had long adopted Greek ways, while the poorer people of the rural areas tended to cling to the customs of their ancestors. The book of 1 Maccabees consistently presents the Helle-

nizers as "renegades" or apostates (1 Macc 1.11–15), and their introduction of the Greek gymnasium and all that went with it (see 2 Macc 4.11–17) as the root of the following struggle.

In this situation of complex religious, economic, and political tensions, the actions of the Seleucid ruler Antiochus IV were a match in a tinderbox. In 169 BCE Antiochus IV invaded Egypt to reclaim Judea from Ptolemy IV Philometor. On Antiochus's return he pillaged the Jerusalem Temple (1 Macc 1.20–28) for purely financial reasons (he had at that point no political or religious quarrel with Judea). The following year, believing Judea to be in revolt (2 Macc 5.11), Antiochus attacked Jerusalem more viciously (1 Macc 1.29–40; cf. 2 Macc 5.11–14, Dan 11.29–31), and the subsequent attempt to suppress the Judeans by attacking the religious law (1 Macc 1.41–61), which apparently sustained the Jewish resistance, led to the war of independence and its horrors described in the following chapters of 1 Maccabees.

Into this crisis the author introduces the priestly family of Mattathias and his sons Judas, Jonathan, and Simon as the deliverers of Judea. Fearing that the policies of the Hellenizers would destroy Judaism, Judas Maccabeus and his men mounted a campaign of armed resistance against both enemies. Using a combination of guerrilla warfare and diplomacy, they succeeded in recovering and purifying the Temple after Antiochus had defiled it, fortifying Jerusalem and securing a measure of independence for Judea. By the end of the book three generations of Mattathias's family had fought for Judea's independence from the Seleucids and had established a ruling dynasty (called Hasmonean according to Josephus and other sources) that would remain in power until the Roman occupation in 63 BCE.

STRUCTURE AND CONTENTS

The book is clearly structured. Chapters 1 and 2 are introductory, giving the historical context and Mattathias's exhortation to his sons, and emphasizing the complementary roles of Simon and Judas (2.65–66). Chapters 3.1–9.22 describe the achievements of Judas, marked by an opening poetic eulogy of Judas (3.3–9) and a closure modeled on the regnal summaries in 1 and 2 Kings (9.22). Chapters 9.23–16.23 describe the activities of Jonathan, Simon, and Simon's son John, marked by the eulogy of Simon (14.4–15) and another regnal closure (16.23). Within this framework the author marshals his complex narrative. He presents the Maccabean relationships with the hostile Seleucids of Syria, the Ptolemies of Egypt, the cities of the Palestinian coast, and the tribes of Transjordan, and with two friendly Mediterranean powers, the Romans and the Spartans. The book condemns the "renegades" within Israel who would conform to the Greek way of life (1.11–15); Judas and Simon are presented as preserving the Jewish law and Temple against the enemies of their nation (14.29). The book ends with the firm establishment and solid achievements of the high priesthood of John Hyrcanus (16.23). For this author, it is through the Maccabean family alone that "deliverance was given to Israel" (5.62).

INTERPRETATION AND GUIDE TO READING

Historians value 1 Maccabees for its information on the second-century BCE Jewish-Hellenistic world. Jews and Christians alike have seen the Maccabees as champions against tyrants hostile to their faith aided by traitors within the fold. Some students of history, less sympathetic to the Jewish cause, have seen Antiochus as a cultivated Hellenistic monarch trying to unify his empire and control a disloyal subject on his borders. Others in modern times, less sympathetic to imperial causes, have interpreted the Maccabees as a rebel army struggling righteously on behalf of political minorities. Different circumstances make for different readings, as ever.

The reader will make sense of 1 Maccabees only by taking it as a coherent narrative from start to finish. Occasional dipping will yield only confusion. The author shapes his history clearly, quoting archival sources for information and adding short poems as theological commentary. Sympathetic reading will reveal, rewardingly, that the author was a man of scholarly ability, deep commitment to Israel, and trust in Israel's God.

John R. Bartlett

1 After Alexander son of Philip, the Macedonian, who came from the land of Kittim, had defeated[a] King Darius of the Persians and the Medes, he succeeded him as king. (He had previously become king of Greece.) [2] He fought many battles, conquered strongholds, and put to death the kings of the earth. [3] He advanced to the ends of the earth, and plundered many nations. When the earth became quiet before him, he was exalted, and his heart was lifted up. [4] He gathered a very strong army and ruled over countries, nations, and princes, and they became tributary to him.

[5] After this he fell sick and perceived that he was dying. [6] So he summoned his most honored officers, who had been brought up with him from youth, and divided his kingdom among them while he was still alive. [7] And after Alexander had reigned twelve years, he died.

[8] Then his officers began to rule, each in his own place. [9] They all put on crowns after his death, and so did their descendants after them for many years; and they caused many evils on the earth.

[10] From them came forth a sinful root, Antiochus Epiphanes, son of King Antiochus; he had been a hostage in Rome. He began to reign in the one hundred thirty-seventh year of the kingdom of the Greeks.[b]

[11] In those days certain renegades came out from Israel and misled many, saying, "Let us go and make a covenant with the Gentiles around us, for since we separated from them many disasters have come upon us." [12] This proposal pleased them, [13] and some of the people eagerly went to the king, who authorized them to observe the ordinances of the Gentiles. [14] So they built a gymnasium in Jerusalem, according to Gentile custom, [15] and removed the marks of circumcision, and abandoned the holy covenant. They joined with the Gentiles and sold themselves to do evil.

[16] When Antiochus saw that his kingdom was established, he determined to become king of the land of Egypt, in order that he might reign over both kingdoms. [17] So he invaded Egypt with a strong force, with chariots and elephants and cavalry and with a large fleet. [18] He engaged King Ptolemy of

[a] Gk adds *and he defeated*
[b] 175 B.C.

1.1–10: Introduction. The author sketches the history of the Hellenistic world from Alexander the Great to Antiochus IV; cf. Dan 11.2–28. **1:** *Philip* II of Macedon (ruled 359–336 BCE) conquered the Greeks in 338 BCE; his son Alexander (336–323 BCE) marched from Greece (*the land of Kittim*) and defeated *Darius* III of Persia at Issus (333 BCE) and Gaugamela (331 BCE). Media (the land of *the Medes*) was south of the Caspian Sea. **2:** *Strongholds*, e.g., Tyre and Gaza. 3: *To the ends of the earth*, i.e., present-day Afghanistan and India. *Exalted . . . his heart was lifted up* suggests deification as well as the biblical sin of pride (Isa 2.5–22; 2 Chr 26.16). **7:** Alexander *died* at Babylon, June 323 BCE. **8–9:** *Officers . . . descendants,* especially Seleucus I Nicator (305–281 BCE), who seized Babylonia and Syria, and Ptolemy I Soter (305–282 BCE), who took over Egypt and Palestine, and their successors in these regions. *Crowns* were of white cloth rather than precious metal. **10:** *Antiochus* IV (175–164 BCE), son of *Antiochus* III "the Great" (223–187 BCE), used the title "Theos Epiphanes" ("god manifest") on some of his later coins, but probably took such implied divinity less seriously than his Jewish subjects. *Hostage in Rome,* after the Roman defeat of Antiochus III at Magnesia (190 BCE); he escaped, succeeding his brother Seleucus IV in 175 BCE. *One hundred thirty-seventh year of* the Seleucid era, which began in either 312 BCE or 311 BCE.

1.11–15: Conflicts over Hellenization. 11: The author sees the *renegades* as Jewish apostates; 2 Macc 4.7–17 identifies the usurping high priest Jason as their leader. They hoped for the economic and political advantages of belonging to the wider Hellenistic world, rejecting the separation from the Gentiles required by the Law (cf. Deut 7.1–6) and demanded by Nehemiah (Neh 13.1–3,23–27). **14:** *Gymnasium,* the essential place of education and recreation for citizens of a Hellenistic city. This development did not break the Law, but according to Greek custom, athletes competed in the nude (2 Macc 4.14). *Removing the marks of circumcision* by surgery (epispasm) to make participants resemble Greek athletes was elsewhere seen as showing "irreverence to the divine laws" (2 Macc 4.17).

1.16–19: Antiochus IV and Egypt. See Dan 11.25–27. In 170 BCE Egypt, under Ptolemy VI Philometor (180–145 BCE), claimed Palestine under the terms of an earlier marriage settlement; Antiochus *invaded Egypt*, defeated Ptolemy (v. 18) at Mons Casius, and captured the fortress of Pelusium.

Egypt in battle, and Ptolemy turned and fled before him, and many were wounded and fell. [19] They captured the fortified cities in the land of Egypt, and he plundered the land of Egypt.

[20] After subduing Egypt, Antiochus returned in the one hundred forty-third year.[a] He went up against Israel and came to Jerusalem with a strong force. [21] He arrogantly entered the sanctuary and took the golden altar, the lampstand for the light, and all its utensils. [22] He took also the table for the bread of the Presence, the cups for drink offerings, the bowls, the golden censers, the curtain, the crowns, and the gold decoration on the front of the temple; he stripped it all off. [23] He took the silver and the gold, and the costly vessels; he took also the hidden treasures that he found. [24] Taking them all, he went into his own land.

He shed much blood,
and spoke with great arrogance.
[25] Israel mourned deeply in every community,
[26] rulers and elders groaned,
young women and young men became faint,
the beauty of the women faded.
[27] Every bridegroom took up the lament;
she who sat in the bridal chamber was mourning.
[28] Even the land trembled for its inhabitants,
and all the house of Jacob was clothed with shame.

[29] Two years later the king sent to the cities of Judah a chief collector of tribute, and he came to Jerusalem with a large force. [30] Deceitfully he spoke peaceable words to them, and they believed him; but he suddenly fell upon the city, dealt it a severe blow, and destroyed many people of Israel. [31] He plundered the city, burned it with fire, and tore down its houses and its surrounding walls. [32] They took captive the women and children, and seized the livestock. [33] Then they fortified the city of David with a great strong wall and strong towers, and it became their citadel. [34] They stationed there a sinful people, men who were renegades. These strengthened their position; [35] they stored up arms and food, and collecting the spoils of Jerusalem they stored them there, and became a great menace,

[a] 169 B.C.

1.20–28: Antiochus's first attack on Jerusalem. In autumn 169 BCE Antiochus, en route home from Egypt, pillaged the Jerusalem Temple (cf. the earlier attempt of Seleucus IV, 2 Macc 3). His motive was financial (see Dan 11.28); he had no political or religious quarrel with Judah. A Hellenistic king would not hesitate to enter a city temple; the Jewish author saw the entry of anyone but the high priest into the sanctuary as arrogance (v. 21; cf. Dan 7.8,25), requiring divine punishment. **21–23:** *Golden altar* (of incense), Ex 30.1–10; *lampstand*, Ex 25.31–40; *table*, Ex 25.23–30; cf. 1 Kings 7.48–50. *The bread of the Presence*, see Lev 24.5–9; this symbolized the covenant between God and Israel, which 1 Macc sees as threatened by the current events. *Crowns,* diplomatic gifts stored in the Temple; see 13.37. *Gold decoration,* see 1 Kings 6.20–22. *Hidden treasures,* money deposited for safety by individuals; see 2 Macc 4.10–12. Later Judas restores these losses (4.49). **24b–28:** Poetic comment (cf. the book of Lamentations) on the events described, as also in 1.36–40; 2.7–13. *Blood*, vv. 20–24 record no bloodshed, but see 2 Macc 5.11–14.

1.29–40: Capture and fortification of Jerusalem. 29: *Two years later,* probably 168 BCE, after Antiochus's second invasion of Egypt (2 Macc 5.1). Ejected from Egypt by Roman legions, learning that in Jerusalem his appointee the high priest Menelaus was under attack from his deposed predecessor Jason (2 Macc 5.5–10), and believing Judea was in revolt, Antiochus attacked Jerusalem viciously (2 Macc 5.11–14), later sending Apollonius with troops to enslave the citizens (2 Macc 5.24). Apollonius is probably the *chief collector of tribute*, this title perhaps mistranslates "captain of the Mysians" (mercenary troops from Asia; see 2 Macc 5.24). **30:** *The city . . . many people*, the concern is political, to subjugate Jerusalem. **33:** *The city of David* indicates historical identity rather than topography; the precise location of the *citadel* (Gk "akra") is debated; it overlooked and controlled the Temple (Josephus, *Ant.* 12.252,362), from the northwest or southeast corner, and was finally captured by Simon (13.49–50). **34:** *Renegades*: see v. 11n. **36–40:** Poetic lament, emphasizing the citadel's effect on the *sanctuary*. But Antiochus has not yet threatened Jewish religion.

[36] for the citadel[a] became an ambush
against the sanctuary,
an evil adversary of Israel at all times.
[37] On every side of the sanctuary they shed
innocent blood;
they even defiled the sanctuary.
[38] Because of them the residents of
Jerusalem fled;
she became a dwelling of strangers;
she became strange to her offspring,
and her children forsook her.
[39] Her sanctuary became desolate like a
desert;
her feasts were turned into mourning,
her sabbaths into a reproach,
her honor into contempt.
[40] Her dishonor now grew as great as her
glory;
her exaltation was turned into
mourning.

[41] Then the king wrote to his whole kingdom that all should be one people, [42] and that all should give up their particular customs. [43] All the Gentiles accepted the command of the king. Many even from Israel gladly adopted his religion; they sacrificed to idols and profaned the sabbath. [44] And the king sent letters by messengers to Jerusalem and the towns of Judah; he directed them to follow customs strange to the land, [45] to forbid burnt offerings and sacrifices and drink offerings in the sanctuary, to profane sabbaths and festivals, [46] to defile the sanctuary and the priests, [47] to build altars and sacred precincts and shrines for idols, to sacrifice swine and other unclean animals, [48] and to leave their sons uncircumcised. They were to make themselves abominable by everything unclean and profane, [49] so that they would forget the law and change all the ordinances. [50] He added,[b] "And whoever does not obey the command of the king shall die."

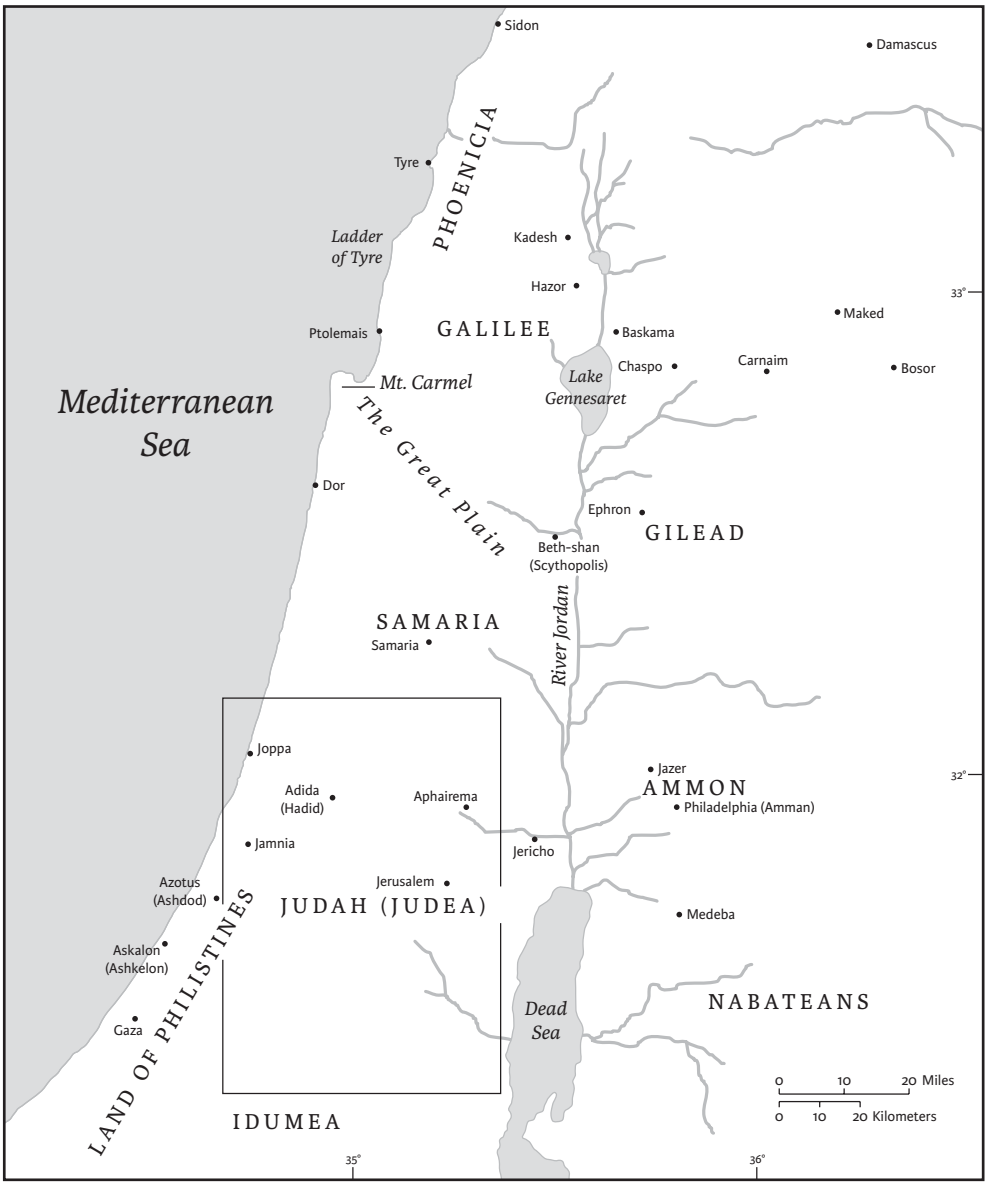
[51] In such words he wrote to his whole kingdom. He appointed inspectors over all the people and commanded the towns of Judah to offer sacrifice, town by town. [52] Many of the people, everyone who forsook the law, joined them, and they did evil in the land; [53] they drove Israel into hiding in every place of refuge they had.

[54] Now on the fifteenth day of Chislev, in the one hundred forty-fifth year,[c] they erected a desolating sacrilege on the altar of burnt offering. They also built altars in the surrounding towns of Judah, [55] and offered incense at the doors of the houses and in the streets. [56] The books of the law that they found they tore to pieces and burned with fire. [57] Anyone found possessing the book of the covenant, or anyone who adhered to the law, was condemned to death by decree of the king. [58] They kept using violence against Israel, against those who were found month after month in the towns. [59] On the twenty-fifth day of the month they offered sacrifice on the altar that was on top of the altar of burnt offering. [60] According to the decree, they put to death the women who had their children circumcised, [61] and their families and those who circumcised them; and they hung the infants from their mothers' necks.

[62] But many in Israel stood firm and were resolved in their hearts not to eat unclean food. [63] They chose to die rather than to be defiled by food or to profane the holy cov-

[a] Gk *it*
[b] Gk lacks *He added*
[c] 167 B.C.

1.41–64: The decree of Antiochus and its consequences. 41–43: Antiochus did not attempt religious coercion throughout his *whole kingdom*. His *letters* applied only to Jews in Jerusalem and Judea. **45–48:** His prohibitions forced Jews to break the Law's fundamental commandments of *burnt offerings and sacrifices*, *sabbaths and festivals*, rejection of idolatry, practice of circumcision, and the offering of proper sacrifice at Jerusalem only (Ex 20.4–6; Deut 12.2–28). **51:** Thus *inspectors* required sacrifice outside Jerusalem in *the towns of Judah* (cf. v. 55). 2 Macc 6.7 adds that Jews had to offer pagan sacrifices monthly to celebrate the king's birthday, and to honor the god Dionysus. **54:** The date is December 168 or 167 BCE. *Desolating sacrilege* ("abomination of desolation"; cf. Dan 11.31; Mk 13.14) may pun on the Syrian "Ba'al Samen" ("Lord of Heaven"), identified as "Olympian Zeus" in 2 Macc 6.2, or more likely indicate a pagan altar erected above the Jewish altar of burnt offering outside the Temple (see v. 59). **56–57,60–61:** The books of the Law, people owning copies, or keeping the Law, and those practicing circumcision (cf. 2 Macc 6.10) were targeted. *Decree*, the instructions contained in the king's letters (vv. 45–48 above). Antiochus's motives are debated; probably he wished to suppress rebellion by abolishing the



Chs 2–16: Campaigns of the Maccabees and Hasmoneans. See map on p. 1563 for sites in the Jerusalem vicinity.

enant; and they did die. [64] Very great wrath came upon Israel.

2 In those days Mattathias son of John son of Simeon, a priest of the family of Joarib, moved from Jerusalem and settled in Modein. [2] He had five sons, John surnamed Gaddi, [3] Simon called Thassi, [4] Judas called Maccabeus, [5] Eleazar called Avaran, and Jonathan called Apphus. [6] He saw the blasphemies being committed in Judah and Jerusalem, [7] and said,

"Alas! Why was I born to see this,
the ruin of my people, the ruin of the holy city,
and to live there when it was given over to the enemy,
the sanctuary given over to aliens?
[8] Her temple has become like a person without honor;[a]
[9] her glorious vessels have been carried into exile.
Her infants have been killed in her streets,
her youths by the sword of the foe.
[10] What nation has not inherited her palaces[b]
and has not seized her spoils?
[11] All her adornment has been taken away;
no longer free, she has become a slave.
[12] And see, our holy place, our beauty,
and our glory have been laid waste;
the Gentiles have profaned them.
[13] Why should we live any longer?"

[14] Then Mattathias and his sons tore their clothes, put on sackcloth, and mourned greatly.

[15] The king's officers who were enforcing the apostasy came to the town of Modein to make them offer sacrifice. [16] Many from Israel came to them; and Mattathias and his sons were assembled. [17] Then the king's officers spoke to Mattathias as follows: "You are a leader, honored and great in this town, and supported by sons and brothers. [18] Now be the first to come and do what the king commands, as all the Gentiles and the people of Judah and those that are left in Jerusalem have done. Then you and your sons will be numbered among the Friends of the king, and you and your sons will be honored with silver and gold and many gifts."

[19] But Mattathias answered and said in a loud voice: "Even if all the nations that live under the rule of the king obey him, and have chosen to obey his commandments, every one of them abandoning the religion of their ancestors, [20] I and my sons and my brothers will continue to live by the covenant of our ancestors. [21] Far be it from us to desert the law and the ordinances. [22] We will not obey the king's words by turning aside from our religion to the right hand or to the left."

[23] When he had finished speaking these words, a Jew came forward in the sight of all to offer sacrifice on the altar in Modein, according to the king's command. [24] When Mattathias saw it, he burned with zeal and his heart was stirred. He gave vent to righteous anger; he ran and killed him on the altar. [25] At the same time he killed the king's officer who was forcing them to sacrifice, and he tore down the altar. [26] Thus he burned with zeal for the law, just as Phinehas did against Zimri son of Salu.

[a] Meaning of Gk uncertain

[b] Other ancient authorities read *has not had a part in her kingdom*

code that apparently sustained it. **64:** *Great wrath*, 1 Macc presents these events as God's punishment upon the sins of the renegades and their supporters.

2.1–14: Mattathias and his sons. 1: *Family of Joarib*, a senior priestly (not high priestly) family; 1 Chr 9.10; 24.7. *Modein* (cf. 13.25–30), a village near Lod, ca. 20 mi (32 km) northwest of Jerusalem. **2–5:** *Simon,* see chs 13–16; *Judas,* see 3.1–9.22. The nickname *Maccabeus* may mean "hammer" (see Introduction, 2 Macc). *Eleazar,* see 6.43. *Jonathan,* see 9.28–13.30. Jonathan and Simon became high priests. **7–13:** A poetic lament over Jerusalem personified as a captive woman, a comment on the events of 1.41–64; see Lam 1.

2.15–28: Confrontation at Modein. 15: *King's officers,* cf. "inspectors" (1.51). **18:** *What the king commands*, i.e., make local sacrifice away from Jerusalem, against the Jewish Law. *Friends of the king*, advisers at court appointed by the king. Jonathan was later enrolled among the king's "chief Friends" (10.65; cf. 10.20; 11.27) or "King's Kinsmen" (10.89). **22:** *Turning aside,* Mattathias rejects the invitation, quoting Deut 5.32. **23:** The Jew thus makes a direct challenge to Mattathias's leadership. **26:** Mattathias is directly compared with *Phinehas*, grandson of the high priest Aaron, who had killed an Israelite. The Israelite had compromised Israelite exclusivism by having

27 Then Mattathias cried out in the town
with a loud voice, saying: "Let every one
who is zealous for the law and supports the
covenant come out with me!" 28 Then he and
his sons fled to the hills and left all that they
had in the town.

29 At that time many who were seeking
righteousness and justice went down to the
wilderness to live there, 30 they, their sons,
their wives, and their livestock, because
troubles pressed heavily upon them. 31 And
it was reported to the king's officers, and to
the troops in Jerusalem the city of David,
that those who had rejected the king's com-
mand had gone down to the hiding places in
the wilderness. 32 Many pursued them, and
overtook them; they encamped opposite
them and prepared for battle against them
on the sabbath day. 33 They said to them,
"Enough of this! Come out and do what the
king commands, and you will live." 34 But
they said, "We will not come out, nor will we
do what the king commands and so profane
the sabbath day." 35 Then the enemy[a] quickly
attacked them. 36 But they did not answer
them or hurl a stone at them or block up their
hiding places, 37 for they said, "Let us all die
in our innocence; heaven and earth testify for
us that you are killing us unjustly." 38 So they
attacked them on the sabbath, and they died,
with their wives and children and livestock,
to the number of a thousand persons.

39 When Mattathias and his friends
learned of it, they mourned for them deeply.
40 And all said to their neighbors: "If we all
do as our kindred have done and refuse to
fight with the Gentiles for our lives and for
our ordinances, they will quickly destroy us
from the earth." 41 So they made this decision
that day: "Let us fight against anyone who
comes to attack us on the sabbath day; let us
not all die as our kindred died in their hiding
places."

42 Then there united with them a company
of Hasideans, mighty warriors of Israel, all who
offered themselves willingly for the law. 43 And
all who became fugitives to escape their trou-
bles joined them and reinforced them. 44 They
organized an army, and struck down sinners in
their anger and renegades in their wrath; the
survivors fled to the Gentiles for safety. 45 And
Mattathias and his friends went around and
tore down the altars; 46 they forcibly circum-
cised all the uncircumcised boys that they
found within the borders of Israel. 47 They
hunted down the arrogant, and the work pros-
pered in their hands. 48 They rescued the law
out of the hands of the Gentiles and kings, and
they never let the sinner gain the upper hand.

49 Now the days drew near for Mattathias
to die, and he said to his sons: "Arrogance and
scorn have now become strong; it is a time of
ruin and furious anger. 50 Now, my children,
show zeal for the law, and give your lives for
the covenant of our ancestors.

51 "Remember the deeds of the ancestors,
which they did in their generations; and you
will receive great honor and an everlasting
name. 52 Was not Abraham found faithful
when tested, and it was reckoned to him as
righteousness? 53 Joseph in the time of his
distress kept the commandment, and became
lord of Egypt. 54 Phinehas our ancestor,
because he was deeply zealous, received the
covenant of everlasting priesthood. 55 Joshua,
because he fulfilled the command, became a
judge in Israel. 56 Caleb, because he testified
in the assembly, received an inheritance in

[a] Gk *they*

intercourse with a Midianite woman who worshiped Baal of Peor (Num 25.1–16). **28:** *Fled to the hills*, 2 Macc 5.27–6.2 dates this before Antiochus's religious persecution.

2.29–41: Passive resistance. 29: Mattathias's violence for Law and covenant (2.27) is contrasted favorably with the passive reaction of another group *seeking righteousness and justice*. **41:** Mattathias's followers decide that the necessity of self-preservation overrides even the command to keep the sabbath.

2:42–48: The Hasideans and Mattathias. The *Hasideans* (Heb "ḥasidim," "the pious," cf. Pss 79.2; 149.1) are another militaristic group, which *united* with Mattathias's *friends*; in 2 Macc 14.6 they are under Judas's leadership. 1 Macc 7.12 reports them as naively and fatally supporting a peace mission.

2:49–70: Mattathias's death-bed speech. Jacob (Gen 49), Moses (Deut 33), and Samuel (1 Sam 12) utter similar speeches; compare also the praises of famous men in Sir 44–50. **52:** *Abraham . . . faithful when tested*, Gen 22.1–18; *reckoned . . . as righteousness*, Gen 15.6. **53:** *Joseph*, Gen 39–50. **54:** *Phinehas*, see v. 26n. **55–56:** *Joshua*

the land. 57 David, because he was merciful,
inherited the throne of the kingdom forever.
58 Elijah, because of great zeal for the law, was
taken up into heaven. 59 Hananiah, Azariah,
and Mishael believed and were saved from
the flame. 60 Daniel, because of his innocence,
was delivered from the mouth of the lions.

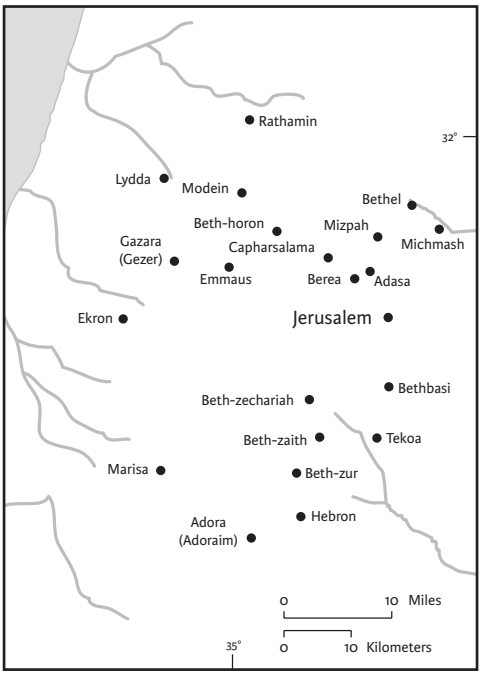
61 "And so observe, from generation to
generation, that none of those who put their
trust in him will lack strength. 62 Do not fear
the words of sinners, for their splendor will
turn into dung and worms. 63 Today they will
be exalted, but tomorrow they will not be
found, because they will have returned to the
dust, and their plans will have perished. 64 My
children, be courageous and grow strong in
the law, for by it you will gain honor.

65 "Here is your brother Simeon who, I
know, is wise in counsel; always listen to him;
he shall be your father. 66 Judas Maccabeus
has been a mighty warrior from his youth;
he shall command the army for you and fight
the battle against the peoples.[a] 67 You shall
rally around you all who observe the law, and
avenge the wrong done to your people. 68 Pay
back the Gentiles in full, and obey the com-
mands of the law."

69 Then he blessed them, and was gathered
to his ancestors. 70 He died in the one hundred
forty-sixth year[b] and was buried in the tomb
of his ancestors at Modein. And all Israel
mourned for him with great lamentation.

3 Then his son Judas, who was called Mac-
cabeus, took command in his place. 2 All
his brothers and all who had joined his father
helped him; they gladly fought for Israel.

3 He extended the glory of his people.
Like a giant he put on his breastplate;
he bound on his armor of war and waged
battles,
protecting the camp by his sword.



Chs 2–16: The Jerusalem vicinity.

4 He was like a lion in his deeds,
like a lion's cub roaring for prey.
5 He searched out and pursued those who
broke the law;
he burned those who troubled his
people.
6 Lawbreakers shrank back for fear of
him;
all the evildoers were confounded;
and deliverance prospered by his hand.
7 He embittered many kings,
but he made Jacob glad by his deeds,
and his memory is blessed forever.

[a] Or *of the people*
[b] 166 B.C.

and *Caleb* appear together in Num 14.5–10 and Sir 46.1–10. **57:** *David . . . merciful*, perhaps "pious" or "loyal" is meant. *Throne . . . forever*, see 2 Sam 7.13,16. **58:** *Elijah . . . zeal for the law*, cf. 1 Kings 21.17–29; *into heaven*, 2 Kings 2.9–12. **59:** *Hananiah, Azariah, and Mishael*, see Dan 1.6–20. **60:** *Daniel . . . lions*, Dan 6.16–24. Mattathias commends these heroes especially for their loyalty to the Law and readiness to testify under trial. **65–66:** *Simeon* (Simon), *wise in counsel,* and *Judas, a mighty warrior*, thus 1 Macc presents them, but in reverse order. **70:** *Tomb*, described in 13.27–30.

3.1–9: Introducing Judas. The poem pictures Judas in terms of earlier heroes. **4:** *Like a lion*, cf. Judah (Gen 49.9). **5–8:** Judas attacks two groups, the *lawbreakers* (vv. 5,6) who accept Antiochus's decree, and foreign *kings* (v. 7), i.e., Antiochus IV and Demetrius. *Turned away wrath from Israel*, cf. Phinehas (Num 25.11); thus Judas cancels God's wrath (1.64).

[8] He went through the cities of Judah;
he destroyed the ungodly out of the land;[a]
thus he turned away wrath from Israel.
[9] He was renowned to the ends of the earth;
he gathered in those who were perishing.

[10] Apollonius now gathered together Gentiles and a large force from Samaria to fight against Israel. [11] When Judas learned of it, he went out to meet him, and he defeated and killed him. Many were wounded and fell, and the rest fled. [12] Then they seized their spoils; and Judas took the sword of Apollonius, and used it in battle the rest of his life.

[13] When Seron, the commander of the Syrian army, heard that Judas had gathered a large company, including a body of faithful soldiers who stayed with him and went out to battle, [14] he said, "I will make a name for myself and win honor in the kingdom. I will make war on Judas and his companions, who scorn the king's command." [15] Once again a strong army of godless men went up with him to help him, to take vengeance on the Israelites.

[16] When he approached the ascent of Beth-horon, Judas went out to meet him with a small company. [17] But when they saw the army coming to meet them, they said to Judas, "How can we, few as we are, fight against so great and so strong a multitude? And we are faint, for we have eaten nothing today." [18] Judas replied, "It is easy for many to be hemmed in by few, for in the sight of Heaven there is no difference between saving by many or by few. [19] It is not on the size of the army that victory in battle depends, but strength comes from Heaven. [20] They come against us in great insolence and lawlessness to destroy us and our wives and our children, and to despoil us; [21] but we fight for our lives and our laws. [22] He himself will crush them before us; as for you, do not be afraid of them."

[23] When he finished speaking, he rushed suddenly against Seron and his army, and they were crushed before him. [24] They pursued them[b] down the descent of Beth-horon to the plain; eight hundred of them fell, and the rest fled into the land of the Philistines. [25] Then Judas and his brothers began to be feared, and terror fell on the Gentiles all around them. [26] His fame reached the king, and the Gentiles talked of the battles of Judas.

[27] When King Antiochus heard these reports, he was greatly angered; and he sent and gathered all the forces of his kingdom, a very strong army. [28] He opened his coffers and gave a year's pay to his forces, and ordered them to be ready for any need. [29] Then he saw that the money in the treasury was exhausted, and that the revenues from the country were small because of the dissension and disaster that he had caused in the land by abolishing the laws that had existed from the earliest days. [30] He feared that he might not have such funds as he had before for his expenses and for the gifts that he used to give more lavishly than preceding kings. [31] He was greatly perplexed in mind; then he determined to go to Persia and collect the revenues from those regions and raise a large fund.

[a] Gk *it*

[b] Other ancient authorities read *him*

3.10–26: Judas's campaigns against Apollonius and Seron. 10: *Apollonius*, possibly the Apollonius of 2 Macc 5.24, probably governor of Samaria (Josephus, *Ant*. 2.287). 1 Macc knows no details of this campaign. **12:** *Sword of Apollonius*, cf. David's use of Goliath's sword (2 Sam 17.51). **13:** *Seron . . . Syrian army*, in spite of the title, not a high-ranking officer, nor the main Syrian army, which in 166 BCE was on parade near Antioch. **16:** *Ascent of Beth-horon*, a major pass ca. 12 mi (20 km) northwest of Jerusalem on the route from the coastal plain. The Seleucid general Bacchides later fortified it (9.50). Judas ambushed Seron here, as the Jews ambushed the Roman general Cestius in 65 CE (Josephus, *J.W.* 2.547). **18:** *Heaven*, throughout 1 Macc, a pious substitution for the name of God; note "he himself" (v. 22). *Saving by many or by few*, an echo of 1 Sam 14.6. **24:** *Philistines*, an anachronism illustrating the presentation of Judas as a latter-day David.

3.27–37: Antiochus's policy. 27: *Gathered all the forces* for a military review at Daphne near Antioch, 166 BCE. **29–30:** Antiochus's shortage of cash was not caused, as the author likes to imagine, by *abolishing the* [Jewish] *laws* but by spending *lavishly* elsewhere. **31:** Antiochus hoped to restore his finances by an expedition to *Persia*.

32 He left Lysias, a distinguished man of
royal lineage, in charge of the king's affairs
from the river Euphrates to the borders of
Egypt. 33 Lysias was also to take care of his
son Antiochus until he returned. 34 And he
turned over to Lysias[a] half of his forces and
the elephants, and gave him orders about all
that he wanted done. As for the residents of
Judea and Jerusalem, 35 Lysias was to send a
force against them to wipe out and destroy
the strength of Israel and the remnant of
Jerusalem; he was to banish the memory of
them from the place, 36 settle aliens in all
their territory, and distribute their land by
lot. 37 Then the king took the remaining half
of his forces and left Antioch his capital in
the one hundred and forty-seventh year.[b] He
crossed the Euphrates river and went through
the upper provinces.

38 Lysias chose Ptolemy son of Dorymenes,
and Nicanor and Gorgias, able men among
the Friends of the king, 39 and sent with them
forty thousand infantry and seven thousand
cavalry to go into the land of Judah and
destroy it, as the king had commanded. 40 So
they set out with their entire force, and when
they arrived they encamped near Emmaus in
the plain. 41 When the traders of the region
heard what was said to them, they took silver
and gold in immense amounts, and fetters,[c]
and went to the camp to get the Israelites for
slaves. And forces from Syria and the land of
the Philistines joined with them.

42 Now Judas and his brothers saw that
misfortunes had increased and that the forces
were encamped in their territory. They also
learned what the king had commanded to do
to the people to cause their final destruction.
43 But they said to one another, "Let us restore
the ruins of our people, and fight for our peo-
ple and the sanctuary." 44 So the congregation
assembled to be ready for battle, and to pray
and ask for mercy and compassion.

45 Jerusalem was uninhabited like a
wilderness;
not one of her children went in or out.
The sanctuary was trampled down,
and aliens held the citadel;
it was a lodging place for the Gentiles.
Joy was taken from Jacob;
the flute and the harp ceased to play.

46 Then they gathered together and went
to Mizpah, opposite Jerusalem, because Israel
formerly had a place of prayer in Mizpah.
47 They fasted that day, put on sackcloth and
sprinkled ashes on their heads, and tore their
clothes. 48 And they opened the book of the
law to inquire into those matters about which
the Gentiles consulted the likenesses of their
gods. 49 They also brought the vestments of
the priesthood and the first fruits and the
tithes, and they stirred up the nazirites[d] who
had completed their days; 50 and they cried
aloud to Heaven, saying,

"What shall we do with these?
Where shall we take them?
51 Your sanctuary is trampled down and
profaned,
and your priests mourn in humiliation.

[a] Gk *him*
[b] 165 B.C.
[c] Syr: Gk Mss, Vg *slaves*
[d] That is *those separated* or *those consecrated*

32: *Lysias . . . of royal lineage* was probably one of the King's "Kinsmen" (an honorary title; cf. 10.89) rather than a blood relative. **33:** *His son Antiochus*, Antiochus V Eupator (ca. 164–162 BCE). **37:** *Antioch*, modern Antakya in southern Turkey near the mouth of the Orontes River, founded by Seleucus I in 300 BCE. *Upper provinces*, Antiochus campaigned in Armenia, along the Persian Gulf, and in Elymais, probably in spring 165 BCE.

3.38–4.35: Judas's victory over Gorgias. 38: *Ptolemy son of Dorymenes*, probably the governor of Coelesyria and Phoenicia (2 Macc 8.8), and *Nicanor*, "son of Patroclus and one of the king's chief Friends" (2 Macc 8.9), play no further part in this campaign in 1 Macc; the enemy is led by *Gorgias*, another of the king's Friends (see 2.18) and governor of Idumea (2 Macc 12.32), but according to 2 Macc 8.10–29 by Nicanor (whose activities, however, seem to belong to Demetrius's reign; see 7.26–50). **40:** *Emmaus* (not that of Lk 24.13), ca. 18 mi (28 km) west-northwest of Jerusalem, 8 mi (13 km) south of Modein. **41:** *Slaves*, the sale of captured soldiers was usual in ancient warfare (see also 2 Macc 8.10–11). Some scholars think that *Syria* is an error for "Idumea" (cf. 4.29). *Philistines*, see v. 24n. **45–46:** A poetic comment (cf. vv. 50–53). **46:** *Mizpah*, 8 mi (13 km) north of Jerusalem, where Samuel gathered the Israelites against the Philistines (1 Sam 7.5–11). **48:** A deliberate contrast: Jews consult *the book of the law*, Gentiles *their gods*. **49:** *Nazirites* (cf. Num 6.1–21), perhaps a reminder of men like Samson (Judg

[52] Here the Gentiles are assembled against
us to destroy us;
you know what they plot against us.
[53] How will we be able to withstand them,
if you do not help us?"
[54] Then they sounded the trumpets and gave a loud shout. [55] After this Judas appointed leaders of the people, in charge of thousands and hundreds and fifties and tens. [56] Those who were building houses, or were about to be married, or were planting a vineyard, or were fainthearted, he told to go home again, according to the law. [57] Then the army marched out and encamped to the south of Emmaus.

[58] And Judas said, "Arm yourselves and be courageous. Be ready early in the morning to fight with these Gentiles who have assembled against us to destroy us and our sanctuary. [59] It is better for us to die in battle than to see the misfortunes of our nation and of the sanctuary. [60] But as his will in heaven may be, so shall he do."

4 Now Gorgias took five thousand infantry and one thousand picked cavalry, and this division moved out by night [2] to fall upon the camp of the Jews and attack them suddenly. Men from the citadel were his guides. [3] But Judas heard of it, and he and his warriors moved out to attack the king's force in Emmaus [4] while the division was still absent from the camp. [5] When Gorgias entered the camp of Judas by night, he found no one there, so he looked for them in the hills, because he said, "These men are running away from us."

[6] At daybreak Judas appeared in the plain with three thousand men, but they did not have armor and swords such as they desired. [7] And they saw the camp of the Gentiles, strong and fortified, with cavalry all around it; and these men were trained in war. [8] But Judas said to those who were with him, "Do not fear their numbers or be afraid when they charge. [9] Remember how our ancestors were saved at the Red Sea, when Pharaoh with his forces pursued them. [10] And now, let us cry to Heaven, to see whether he will favor us and remember his covenant with our ancestors and crush this army before us today. [11] Then all the Gentiles will know that there is one who redeems and saves Israel."

[12] When the foreigners looked up and saw them coming against them, [13] they went out from their camp to battle. Then the men with Judas blew their trumpets [14] and engaged in battle. The Gentiles were crushed, and fled into the plain, [15] and all those in the rear fell by the sword. They pursued them to Gazara, and to the plains of Idumea, and to Azotus and Jamnia; and three thousand of them fell. [16] Then Judas and his force turned back from pursuing them, [17] and he said to the people, "Do not be greedy for plunder, for there is a battle before us; [18] Gorgias and his force are near us in the hills. But stand now against our enemies and fight them, and afterward seize the plunder boldly."

[19] Just as Judas was finishing this speech, a detachment appeared, coming out of the hills. [20] They saw that their army[a] had been put to flight, and that the Jews[a] were burning the camp, for the smoke that was seen showed what had happened. [21] When they perceived this, they were greatly frightened, and when they also saw the army of Judas drawn up in the plain for battle, [22] they all fled into the land of the Philistines. [23] Then Judas returned to plunder the camp, and they seized a great amount of gold and silver, and cloth dyed blue and sea purple, and great riches. [24] On their return they sang hymns

[a] Gk *they*

13.7), Israel's champion against the Philistines. **55–56:** Judas *appointed leaders* (cf. Moses, Deut 1.15), sending *home* some groups (cf. Deut 20.5–8) and giving a pre-battle sermon (like Jehoshaphat; 2 Chr 20.15–17). **4.2:** *The citadel,* see 1.33n. **8:** *Do not fear their numbers,* the imbalance of Judas's 3,000 men opposing 35,000 infantry and 6,000 cavalry (see 3.39 and 4.1) is emphasized. 2 Macc 8.9,24 give different numbers. **9–11:** Judas appeals to Israel's victory at the Red Sea (Ex 14.21–31) and God's covenant with their *ancestors* Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob (Gen 17.1–8; 26.2–5; 35.9–15). **15:** *Gazara,* Gezer (1 Kings 9.15–17), and *Jamnia,* Jabneh (2 Chr 26.6), were both west of Emmaus, the site of the battle, and *Azotus*, Ashdod (1 Sam 5.5–6), was to the southwest. All were once Philistine cities. *Idumea* was south of Judah toward the Negeb. **23:** *Cloth dyed blue and sea purple*, luxury products of the Phoenician coast; see Ezek 27.7. **24:** Pss 118.1; 136.1.

and praises to Heaven—"For he is good, for his mercy endures forever." [25] Thus Israel had a great deliverance that day.

[26] Those of the foreigners who escaped went and reported to Lysias all that had happened. [27] When he heard it, he was perplexed and discouraged, for things had not happened to Israel as he had intended, nor had they turned out as the king had ordered. [28] But the next year he mustered sixty thousand picked infantry and five thousand cavalry to subdue them. [29] They came into Idumea and encamped at Beth-zur, and Judas met them with ten thousand men.

[30] When he saw that their army was strong, he prayed, saying, "Blessed are you, O Savior of Israel, who crushed the attack of the mighty warrior by the hand of your servant David, and gave the camp of the Philistines into the hands of Jonathan son of Saul, and of the man who carried his armor. [31] Hem in this army by the hand of your people Israel, and let them be ashamed of their troops and their cavalry. [32] Fill them with cowardice; melt the boldness of their strength; let them tremble in their destruction. [33] Strike them down with the sword of those who love you, and let all who know your name praise you with hymns."

[34] Then both sides attacked, and there fell of the army of Lysias five thousand men; they fell in action.[a] [35] When Lysias saw the rout of his troops and observed the boldness that inspired those of Judas, and how ready they were either to live or to die nobly, he withdrew to Antioch and enlisted mercenaries in order to invade Judea again with an even larger army.

[36] Then Judas and his brothers said, "See, our enemies are crushed; let us go up to cleanse the sanctuary and dedicate it." [37] So all the army assembled and went up to Mount Zion. [38] There they saw the sanctuary desolate, the altar profaned, and the gates burned. In the courts they saw bushes sprung up as in a thicket, or as on one of the mountains. They saw also the chambers of the priests in ruins. [39] Then they tore their clothes and mourned with great lamentation; they sprinkled themselves with ashes [40] and fell face down on the ground. And when the signal was given with the trumpets, they cried out to Heaven.

[41] Then Judas detailed men to fight against those in the citadel until he had cleansed the sanctuary. [42] He chose blameless priests devoted to the law, [43] and they cleansed the sanctuary and removed the defiled stones to an unclean place. [44] They deliberated what to do about the altar of burnt offering, which had been profaned. [45] And they thought it best to tear it down, so that it would not be a lasting shame to them that the Gentiles had defiled it. So they tore down the altar, [46] and stored the stones in a convenient place on the temple hill until a prophet should come to tell what to do with them. [47] Then they took unhewn[b] stones, as the law directs, and built a new altar like the former one. [48] They also rebuilt the sanctuary and the interior of the temple, and consecrated the courts. [49] They made new holy vessels, and brought the lampstand, the altar of incense, and the table into the temple. [50] Then they offered incense on the altar and lit the lamps on the lampstand, and these gave light in the tem-

[a] Or *and some fell on the opposite side*
[b] Gk *whole*

4.26–35: Judas defeats Lysias. 26: *Lysias*, see 3.32n. **28:** *The next year*, i.e., year 148 (cf. 3.37), probably beginning in autumn 165 BCE. 1 Macc emphasizes the size of Lysias's army. **29:** *Beth-zur*, 16 mi (25 km) south-southeast of Jerusalem; cf. 2 Macc 11.25. **30–33:** Judas's prayer (cf. 4.8–11) recalls David's killing of Goliath (*the mighty warrior*; cf. 1 Sam 17.4–54) and Jonathan's success against the Philistines (1 Sam 14.1–15); 1 Macc again presents the struggle in biblical terms. **35:** *To invade Judea again*, cf. 6.28–63. Some scholars suspect that these two campaigns are really one.

4.36–61: The cleansing of the Temple and dedication of the altar. 37: *Mount Zion*, an old name for the city of David (2 Sam 5.7) and the Temple site (Ps 2.6; Joel 2.1). **38:** *Sanctuary desolate . . . altar profaned*, cf. 1.54,59. *Gates burned*, by Jason's men in 168 BCE, cf. 2 Macc 1.8; 5.5–6; 8.33. **41:** Judas attacks the *citadel*, which controlled access to the Temple (see 1.33n.). **43:** *Defiled stones,* i.e., those forming the "desolating sacrilege," 1.54n. **44:** See 1.54,59. **46:** *Stored the stones*, though defiled, they were still part of the original altar. *Prophet should come*, the author believed that prophecy had ceased (9.27) but awaited a future prophet to advise the people (14.41;

ple. 51 They placed the bread on the table and hung up the curtains. Thus they finished all the work they had undertaken.

52 Early in the morning on the twenty-fifth day of the ninth month, which is the month of Chislev, in the one hundred forty-eighth year,[a] 53 they rose and offered sacrifice, as the law directs, on the new altar of burnt offering that they had built. 54 At the very season and on the very day that the Gentiles had profaned it, it was dedicated with songs and harps and lutes and cymbals. 55 All the people fell on their faces and worshiped and blessed Heaven, who had prospered them. 56 So they celebrated the dedication of the altar for eight days, and joyfully offered burnt offerings; they offered a sacrifice of well-being and a thanksgiving offering. 57 They decorated the front of the temple with golden crowns and small shields; they restored the gates and the chambers for the priests, and fitted them with doors. 58 There was very great joy among the people, and the disgrace brought by the Gentiles was removed.

59 Then Judas and his brothers and all the assembly of Israel determined that every year at that season the days of dedication of the altar should be observed with joy and gladness for eight days, beginning with the twenty-fifth day of the month of Chislev.

60 At that time they fortified Mount Zion with high walls and strong towers all around, to keep the Gentiles from coming and trampling them down as they had done before. 61 Judas[b] stationed a garrison there to guard it; he also fortified Beth-zur to guard it, so that the people might have a stronghold that faced Idumea.

5 When the Gentiles all around heard that the altar had been rebuilt and the sanctuary dedicated as it was before, they became very angry, 2 and they determined to destroy the descendants of Jacob who lived among them. So they began to kill and destroy among the people. 3 But Judas made war on the descendants of Esau in Idumea, at Akrabattene, because they kept lying in wait for Israel. He dealt them a heavy blow and humbled them and despoiled them. 4 He also remembered the wickedness of the sons of Baean, who were a trap and a snare to the people and ambushed them on the highways. 5 They were shut up by him in their[c] towers; and he encamped against them, vowed their complete destruction, and burned with fire their towers and all who were in them. 6 Then he crossed over to attack the Ammonites, where he found a strong band and many people, with Timothy as their leader. 7 He engaged in many battles with them, and they

[a] 164 B.C.
[b] Gk *He*
[c] Gk *her*

cf. Deut 18.15; Mal 4.5; Jn 1.21). **47:** *As the law directs*, Ex 20.25; Deut 27.5–6. **49:** Cf. 1.21–23n. **51:** *Curtains*, see Ex 26.1–10,31–35. *Finished*, echoing the completion of Moses' work (Ex 40.33). **52:** *Chislev . . . the one hundred forty-eighth year*, i.e., December 165 BCE, exactly three years after the desecration (1.59); this dating places the Temple dedication, with 1 Macc, before Antiochus IV's death in 164 BCE. Some scholars, following 2 Macc 10.1–8, date the dedication soon after Antiochus's death in December 164 BCE. **56:** *Eight days*, as in Solomon's Temple dedication (1 Kings 8.66) and Hezekiah's purification (2 Chr 29.17). **57:** *Crowns*, cf. 1.22. **59:** *Assembly*, cf. 5.16; 14.19. Exactly who has authority to make this decision in 165 BCE is unclear. *Every year*, the letters of 2 Macc 1.1–9 and 1.10–2.18 instruct Egyptian Jews to keep this feast, associating it with lighting lamps (2 Macc 1.8) and holy fire (2 Macc 1.19–2.12). It is also called "the feast of Lights" (Josephus, *Ant.* 12.236) and "the festival of the Dedication" (Jn 10.22). **60–61:** *Mount Zion*, defending the Temple area against the citadel; *Beth-zur*, defending Jerusalem from the south (see 4.29n.).

5.1–68: Judas rescues Jews from neighboring peoples. The author inserts these undated events between chs 4 and 6 (2 Macc dates some of them later), constructing ch 5 carefully. Verses 1–8 show Judas attacking the sons of Esau and the Ammonites, balanced by 5.65–68 in which he attacks the sons of Esau again. In between, 5.9–64 show Simon rescuing Jews from Galilee (vv. 17,21–23), Judas rescuing Jews from Gilead (vv. 17,24–54), and Joseph and Azariah, left to guard Judea, being defeated (vv. 18–19,55–62). **3:** *Esau*, brother of Jacob, ancestor of Judah's enemy, Edom (see Gen 36). Judas defeats the Edomites as David did (2 Sam 8.13–14). *Idumea* (see 4.15n.). *Akrabattene*, located by Josephus (*J.W.* 2.235) in Samaria, by some scholars south of Judah (cf. Num 34.4). **4:** *Sons of Baean*, otherwise unknown. **6:** *Ammonites*, east of the Jordan; cf. Saul's victory (2 Sam 11). *Timothy*, cf.

were crushed before him; he struck them down. [8] He also took Jazer and its villages; then he returned to Judea.

[9] Now the Gentiles in Gilead gathered together against the Israelites who lived in their territory, and planned to destroy them. But they fled to the stronghold of Dathema, [10] and sent to Judas and his brothers a letter that said, "The Gentiles around us have gathered together to destroy us. [11] They are preparing to come and capture the stronghold to which we have fled, and Timothy is leading their forces. [12] Now then, come and rescue us from their hands, for many of us have fallen, [13] and all our kindred who were in the land of Tob have been killed; the enemy[a] have captured their wives and children and goods, and have destroyed about a thousand persons there."

[14] While the letter was still being read, other messengers, with their garments torn, came from Galilee and made a similar report; [15] they said that the people of Ptolemais and Tyre and Sidon, and all Galilee of the Gentiles,[b] had gathered together against them "to annihilate us." [16] When Judas and the people heard these messages, a great assembly was called to determine what they should do for their kindred who were in distress and were being attacked by enemies.[c] [17] Then Judas said to his brother Simon, "Choose your men and go and rescue your kindred in Galilee; Jonathan my brother and I will go to Gilead." [18] But he left Joseph, son of Zechariah, and Azariah, a leader of the people, with the rest of the forces, in Judea to guard it; [19] and he gave them this command, "Take charge of this people, but do not engage in battle with the Gentiles until we return." [20] Then three thousand men were assigned to Simon to go to Galilee, and eight thousand to Judas for Gilead.

[21] So Simon went to Galilee and fought many battles against the Gentiles, and the Gentiles were crushed before him. [22] He pursued them to the gate of Ptolemais; as many as three thousand of the Gentiles fell, and he despoiled them. [23] Then he took the Jews[d] of Galilee and Arbatta, with their wives and children, and all they possessed, and led them to Judea with great rejoicing.

[24] Judas Maccabeus and his brother Jonathan crossed the Jordan and made three days' journey into the wilderness. [25] They encountered the Nabateans, who met them peaceably and told them all that had happened to their kindred in Gilead: [26] "Many of them have been shut up in Bozrah and Bosor, in Alema and Chaspho, Maked and Carnaim"—all these towns were strong and large— [27] "and some have been shut up in the other towns of Gilead; the enemy[a] are getting ready to attack the strongholds tomorrow and capture and destroy all these people in a single day."

[28] Then Judas and his army quickly turned back by the wilderness road to Bozrah; and he took the town, and killed every male by the edge of the sword; then he seized all its spoils and burned it with fire. [29] He left the place at night, and they went all the way to the stronghold of Dathema.[e] [30] At dawn they looked out and saw a large company, which could not be counted, carrying ladders and engines of war to capture the stronghold, and attacking the Jews within.[f] [31] So Judas saw that the battle had begun and that the cry of the town went up to Heaven, with trumpets and loud shouts, [32] and he said to the men of his forces, "Fight today for your kindred!" [33] Then he came up behind them in three

[a] Gk *they*
[b] Gk *aliens*
[c] Gk *them*
[d] Gk *those*
[e] Gk lacks *of Dathema*. See verse 9
[f] Gk *and they were attacking them*

vv. 9,34,37,40 and 2 Macc 8.30–33. **8:** *Jazer*, ca. 12 mi (20 km) northwest of Philadelphia (modern Amman); see Num 32.3. **9:** *Gilead*, region north of Amman. *Dathema*, precise location uncertain. **13:** *Land of Tob*, in southern Syria; see Judg 11.3. **15:** *Ptolemais*, earlier Acco (Judg 1.31; modern Akko), renamed by Ptolemy II Philadelphus in 261 BCE, a Hellenistic port hostile to the Jews (see 2 Macc 6.8). **23:** *Arbatta*, precise location uncertain. **25:** *Nabateans*, people of northwest Arabia whose kings (e.g., Aretas, 2 Macc 5.8) ruled from Petra in southern Transjordan. **26:** *Bosrah*, modern Bostra in southern Syria. The identifications of *Bosor*, *Alema*, *Chaspho* (perhaps the Caspin of 2 Macc 12.13–16), and *Maked* are debated. *Carnaim* (cf. 2 Macc 12.21) is Sheik Sad in southern Syria.

companies, who sounded their trumpets and cried aloud in prayer. 34 And when the army of Timothy realized that it was Maccabeus, they fled before him, and he dealt them a heavy blow. As many as eight thousand of them fell that day.

35 Next he turned aside to Maapha,[a] and fought against it and took it; and he killed every male in it, plundered it, and burned it with fire. 36 From there he marched on and took Chaspho, Maked, and Bosor, and the other towns of Gilead.

37 After these things Timothy gathered another army and encamped opposite Raphon, on the other side of the stream. 38 Judas sent men to spy out the camp, and they reported to him, "All the Gentiles around us have gathered to him; it is a very large force. 39 They also have hired Arabs to help them, and they are encamped across the stream, ready to come and fight against you." And Judas went to meet them.

40 Now as Judas and his army drew near to the stream of water, Timothy said to the officers of his forces, "If he crosses over to us first, we will not be able to resist him, for he will surely defeat us. 41 But if he shows fear and camps on the other side of the river, we will cross over to him and defeat him." 42 When Judas approached the stream of water, he stationed the officers[b] of the army at the stream and gave them this command, "Permit no one to encamp, but make them all enter the battle." 43 Then he crossed over against them first, and the whole army followed him. All the Gentiles were defeated before him, and they threw away their arms and fled into the sacred precincts at Carnaim. 44 But he took the town and burned the sacred precincts with fire, together with all who were in them. Thus Carnaim was conquered; they could stand before Judas no longer.

45 Then Judas gathered together all the Israelites in Gilead, the small and the great, with their wives and children and goods, a very large company, to go to the land of Judah. 46 So they came to Ephron. This was a large and very strong town on the road, and they could not go around it to the right or to the left; they had to go through it. 47 But the people of the town shut them out and blocked up the gates with stones.

48 Judas sent them this friendly message, "Let us pass through your land to get to our land. No one will do you harm; we will simply pass by on foot." But they refused to open to him. 49 Then Judas ordered proclamation to be made to the army that all should encamp where they were. 50 So the men of the forces encamped, and he fought against the town all that day and all the night, and the town was delivered into his hands. 51 He destroyed every male by the edge of the sword, and razed and plundered the town. Then he passed through the town over the bodies of the dead.

52 Then they crossed the Jordan into the large plain before Beth-shan. 53 Judas kept rallying the laggards and encouraging the people all the way until he came to the land of Judah. 54 So they went up to Mount Zion with joy and gladness, and offered burnt offerings, because they had returned in safety; not one of them had fallen.

55 Now while Judas and Jonathan were in Gilead and their[c] brother Simon was in Galilee before Ptolemais, 56 Joseph son of Zechariah, and Azariah, the commanders of the forces, heard of their brave deeds and of the heroic war they had fought. 57 So they said, "Let us also make a name for ourselves; let us go and make war on the Gentiles around us." 58 So they issued orders to the men of the forces that were with them and marched against Jamnia. 59 Gorgias and his men came out of the town to meet them

[a] Other ancient authorities read *Alema*
[b] Or *scribes*
[c] Gk *his*

33–34: Cf. Gideon's tactics in Judg 7.19–20. **35:** *Maapha*, both text and site intended are uncertain. **37:** *Raphon*, er-Rafeh, 9 mi (15 km) west of Carnaim. **43–44:** *Sacred precincts*, of the goddess Atargatis, consort of the Syrian god Hadad; see 2 Macc 12.26. **46:** *Ephron*, et-Taiyibeh, 12 mi (20 km) south-southeast of Lake Gennesaret (the Sea of Galilee); see 2 Macc 12.27. **48:** Judas follows Moses' example, Num 21.21–24. **52:** *Beth-shan*, in Hellenistic times Scythopolis (2 Macc 12.29–30), in the Jordan Valley ca. 16 mi (26 km) south-southwest of Lake Gennesaret (the Sea of Galilee). **56:** *Joseph* and *Azariah* envy Judas's success; for the author, only members of Judas's family

in battle. 60 Then Joseph and Azariah were routed, and were pursued to the borders of Judea; as many as two thousand of the people of Israel fell that day. 61 Thus the people suffered a great rout because, thinking to do a brave deed, they did not listen to Judas and his brothers. 62 But they did not belong to the family of those men through whom deliverance was given to Israel.

63 The man Judas and his brothers were greatly honored in all Israel and among all the Gentiles, wherever their name was heard. 64 People gathered to them and praised them.

65 Then Judas and his brothers went out and fought the descendants of Esau in the land to the south. He struck Hebron and its villages and tore down its strongholds and burned its towers on all sides. 66 Then he marched off to go into the land of the Philistines, and passed through Marisa.[a] 67 On that day some priests, who wished to do a brave deed, fell in battle, for they went out to battle unwisely. 68 But Judas turned aside to Azotus in the land of the Philistines; he tore down their altars, and the carved images of their gods he burned with fire; he plundered the towns and returned to the land of Judah.

6 King Antiochus was going through the upper provinces when he heard that Elymais in Persia was a city famed for its wealth in silver and gold. 2 Its temple was very rich, containing golden shields, breastplates, and weapons left there by Alexander son of Philip, the Macedonian king who first reigned over the Greeks. 3 So he came and tried to take the city and plunder it, but he could not because his plan had become known to the citizens 4 and they withstood him in battle. So he fled and in great disappointment left there to return to Babylon.

5 Then someone came to him in Persia and reported that the armies that had gone into the land of Judah had been routed; 6 that Lysias had gone first with a strong force, but had turned and fled before the Jews;[b] that the Jews[c] had grown strong from the arms, supplies, and abundant spoils that they had taken from the armies they had cut down; 7 that they had torn down the abomination that he had erected on the altar in Jerusalem; and that they had surrounded the sanctuary with high walls as before, and also Beth-zur, his town.

8 When the king heard this news, he was astounded and badly shaken. He took to his bed and became sick from disappointment, because things had not turned out for him as he had planned. 9 He lay there for many days, because deep disappointment continually gripped him, and he realized that he was dying. 10 So he called all his Friends and said to them, "Sleep has departed from my eyes and I am downhearted with worry. 11 I said to myself, 'To what distress I have come! And into what a great flood I now am plunged! For I was kind and beloved in my power.' 12 But now I remember the wrong I did in Jerusalem. I seized all its vessels of silver and gold, and I sent to destroy the inhabitants of Judah without good reason. 13 I know that it is because of this that these misfortunes have come upon me; here I am, perishing of bitter disappointment in a strange land."

14 Then he called for Philip, one of his Friends, and made him ruler over all his

[a] Other ancient authorities read *Samaria*
[b] Gk *them*
[c] Gk *they*

can claim to have saved Israel (v. 62). **58:** *Jamnia*, see 4.15. **65:** Hebron, where David ruled over Judah (1 Sam 5.5), now in Idumea; ca. 20 mi (31 km) south of Jerusalem. **66:** *Marisa*, 2 Macc 12.35, also in Idumea, ca. 12 mi (20 km) northwest of Hebron. **67:** The same point is made as in v. 62. **68:** *Azotus*, see 4.15. *Altars . . . images*, Judas, as at Carnaim (v. 44), destroys a pagan sanctuary, in accordance with Deuteronomy's command (Deut 7.5). Throughout the chapter 1 Macc presents Judas as a biblical hero.

6.1–17: Death of Antiochus IV and accession of Antiochus V. 1: *Upper provinces*, see 3.37n. *Elymais*, a region west of Persia, not a city. **2–3:** *Temple*, identified by 2 Macc 1.11–17 as the temple of the goddess Nanea (Gk Artemis), possibly located by 2 Macc 9.2 at Persepolis. **5–7:** *Reported*, these verses summarize 3.38–4.61, events from before Antiochus's death (see v. 16). **8–13:** The author's invention, suggesting (more charitably than 2 Macc 9) some remorse in Antiochus. **12:** See 1.20–23,30–31. **14–15:** Instead of Lysias, Antiochus appoints *Philip*, perhaps the "courtier" of 2 Macc 9.29 (cf. Manaen in Acts 13.1), as *ruler* and guardian of the child *Antiochus* V.

kingdom. 15 He gave him the crown and his robe and the signet, so that he might guide his son Antiochus and bring him up to be king. 16 Thus King Antiochus died there in the one hundred forty-ninth year.[a] 17 When Lysias learned that the king was dead, he set up Antiochus the king's[b] son to reign. Lysias[c] had brought him up from boyhood; he named him Eupator.

18 Meanwhile the garrison in the citadel kept hemming Israel in around the sanctuary. They were trying in every way to harm them and strengthen the Gentiles. 19 Judas therefore resolved to destroy them, and assembled all the people to besiege them. 20 They gathered together and besieged the citadel[d] in the one hundred fiftieth year;[e] and he built siege towers and other engines of war. 21 But some of the garrison escaped from the siege and some of the ungodly Israelites joined them. 22 They went to the king and said, "How long will you fail to do justice and to avenge our kindred? 23 We were happy to serve your father, to live by what he said, and to follow his commands. 24 For this reason the sons of our people besieged the citadel[f] and became hostile to us; moreover, they have put to death as many of us as they have caught, and they have seized our inheritances. 25 It is not against us alone that they have stretched out their hands; they have also attacked all the lands on their borders. 26 And see, today they have encamped against the citadel in Jerusalem to take it; they have fortified both the sanctuary and Beth-zur; 27 unless you quickly prevent them, they will do still greater things, and you will not be able to stop them."

28 The king was enraged when he heard this. He assembled all his Friends, the commanders of his forces and those in authority.[g] 29 Mercenary forces also came to him from other kingdoms and from islands of the seas. 30 The number of his forces was one hundred thousand foot soldiers, twenty thousand horsemen, and thirty-two elephants accustomed to war. 31 They came through Idumea and encamped against Beth-zur, and for many days they fought and built engines of war; but the Jews[h] sallied out and burned these with fire, and fought courageously.

32 Then Judas marched away from the citadel and encamped at Beth-zechariah, opposite the camp of the king. 33 Early in the morning the king set out and took his army by a forced march along the road to Beth-zechariah, and his troops made ready for battle and sounded their trumpets. 34 They offered the elephants the juice of grapes and mulberries, to arouse them for battle. 35 They distributed the animals among the phalanxes; with each elephant they stationed a thousand men armed with coats of mail, and with brass helmets on their heads; and five hundred picked horsemen were assigned to each beast. 36 These took their position beforehand wherever the animal was; wherever it went, they went with it, and they never left it. 37 On the elephants[i] were wooden towers, strong and covered; they were fastened on each animal by special harness, and on each were four[j] armed men who fought from there,

[a] 163 B.C.
[b] Gk *his*
[c] Gk *He*
[d] Gk *it*
[e] 162 B.C.
[f] Meaning of Gk uncertain
[g] Gk *those over the reins*
[h] Gk *they*
[i] Gk *them*
[j] Cn: Some authorities read *thirty*; others *thirty-two*

Signet, the official seal, a symbol of authority together with the *crown* and the *robe.* **16:** *Died*, Antiochus's death is securely dated between 19/20 November and 18/19 December 164 BCE; *the one hundred forty-ninth year* began in spring or autumn 164 BCE. **17:** *Lysias* (see 3.32), in spite of Antiochus's wishes, remains regent for Antiochus V *Eupator*, "of a good father," and opposes Philip (see 6.55–56,63).

6.18–27: Judas attacks the citadel. 18: *Citadel*, see 1.33n. **20:** The *one hundred fiftieth year* began in spring or autumn 163 BCE; the event probably belongs to 163, not 162 BCE (cf. 2 Macc 13.1). *Siege towers* with other *engines* were commonly used in Hellenistic times; see 5.30; 6.51–52. **26:** *Fortified both the sanctuary and Beth-zur*, cf. 4.60–61.

6.28–63: Lysias's response. 31: *Beth–zur*, fortified by Judas (4.61). **32:** *Beth-zechariah,* ca. 7 mi (10 km) north of Beth-zur, between it and Jerusalem. Judas was blocking Lysias's approach to Jerusalem. **34:** The *elephants* are aroused by alcoholic *juice*; cf. 3 Macc 5.2. **35:** *Phalanxes*, infantry units in sixteen parallel columns sixteen ranks

and also its Indian driver. 38 The rest of the cavalry were stationed on either side, on the two flanks of the army, to harass the enemy while being themselves protected by the phalanxes. 39 When the sun shone on the shields of gold and brass, the hills were ablaze with them and gleamed like flaming torches.

40 Now a part of the king's army was spread out on the high hills, and some troops were on the plain, and they advanced steadily and in good order. 41 All who heard the noise made by their multitude, by the marching of the multitude and the clanking of their arms, trembled, for the army was very large and strong. 42 But Judas and his army advanced to the battle, and six hundred of the king's army fell. 43 Now Eleazar, called Avaran, saw that one of the animals was equipped with royal armor. It was taller than all the others, and he supposed that the king was on it. 44 So he gave his life to save his people and to win for himself an everlasting name. 45 He courageously ran into the midst of the phalanx to reach it; he killed men right and left, and they parted before him on both sides. 46 He got under the elephant, stabbed it from beneath, and killed it; but it fell to the ground upon him and he died. 47 When the Jews[a] saw the royal might and the fierce attack of the forces, they turned away in flight.

48 The soldiers of the king's army went up to Jerusalem against them, and the king encamped in Judea and at Mount Zion. 49 He made peace with the people of Beth-zur, and they evacuated the town because they had no provisions there to withstand a siege, since it was a sabbatical year for the land. 50 So the king took Beth-zur and stationed a guard there to hold it. 51 Then he encamped before the sanctuary for many days. He set up siege towers, engines of war to throw fire and stones, machines to shoot arrows, and catapults. 52 The Jews[a] also made engines of war to match theirs, and fought for many days. 53 But they had no food in storage,[b] because it was the seventh year; those who had found safety in Judea from the Gentiles had consumed the last of the stores. 54 Only a few men were left in the sanctuary; the rest scattered to their own homes, for the famine proved too much for them.

55 Then Lysias heard that Philip, whom King Antiochus while still living had appointed to bring up his son Antiochus to be king, 56 had returned from Persia and Media with the forces that had gone with the king, and that he was trying to seize control of the government. 57 So he quickly gave orders to withdraw, and said to the king, to the commanders of the forces, and to the troops, "Daily we grow weaker, our food supply is scant, the place against which we are fighting is strong, and the affairs of the kingdom press urgently on us. 58 Now then let us come to terms with these people, and make peace with them and with all their nation. 59 Let us agree to let them live by their laws as they did before; for it was on account of their laws that we abolished that they became angry and did all these things."

60 The speech pleased the king and the commanders, and he sent to the Jews[c] an offer of peace, and they accepted it. 61 So the king and the commanders gave them their oath. On these conditions the Jews[a] evacuated the stronghold. 62 But when the king entered Mount Zion and saw what a strong fortress the place was, he broke the oath he had sworn and gave orders to tear down the wall all around. 63 Then he set off in haste and returned to Antioch. He found Philip in control of the city, but he fought against him, and took the city by force.

7 In the one hundred fifty-first year[d] Demetrius son of Seleucus set out from Rome, sailed with a few men to a town by

[a] Gk *they*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *in the sanctuary*
[c] Gk *them*
[d] 161 B.C.

deep wielding long pikes. **43:** *Eleazar Avaran*, Judas's brother (2.5). **49–50:** *Beth-zur* had to be captured before the attack on Jerusalem. The *sabbatical year* (see Lev 25.2–7) began in autumn 164 BCE, with no harvesting in 163 BCE; cf. v. 53. **55:** *Philip*, see vv. 14–15. **57–59:** Threatened by Philip, isolated in Jerusalem, Lysias proposes *terms*, cancellation of the decree (1.51–60) for Jewish evacuation of Mount Zion (4.60). The letter of 2 Macc 11.22–27 probably reflects this situation. **62:** *Tear down the wall*, Lysias goes beyond the agreement.

the sea, and there began to reign. 2 As he was entering the royal palace of his ancestors, the army seized Antiochus and Lysias to bring them to him. 3 But when this act became known to him, he said, "Do not let me see their faces!" 4 So the army killed them, and Demetrius took his seat on the throne of his kingdom.

5 Then there came to him all the renegade and godless men of Israel; they were led by Alcimus, who wanted to be high priest. 6 They brought to the king this accusation against the people: "Judas and his brothers have destroyed all your Friends, and have driven us out of our land. 7 Now then send a man whom you trust; let him go and see all the ruin that Judas[a] has brought on us and on the land of the king, and let him punish them and all who help them."

8 So the king chose Bacchides, one of the king's Friends, governor of the province Beyond the River; he was a great man in the kingdom and was faithful to the king. 9 He sent him, and with him he sent the ungodly Alcimus, whom he made high priest; and he commanded him to take vengeance on the Israelites. 10 So they marched away and came with a large force into the land of Judah; and he sent messengers to Judas and his brothers with peaceable but treacherous words. 11 But they paid no attention to their words, for they saw that they had come with a large force.

12 Then a group of scribes appeared in a body before Alcimus and Bacchides to ask for just terms. 13 The Hasideans were first among the Israelites to seek peace from them, 14 for they said, "A priest of the line of Aaron has come with the army, and he will not harm us." 15 Alcimus[b] spoke peaceable words to them and swore this oath to them, "We will not seek to injure you or your friends." 16 So they trusted him; but he seized sixty of them and killed them in one day, in accordance with the word that was written,

17 "The flesh of your faithful ones and their blood
they poured out all around Jerusalem,
and there was no one to bury them."

18 Then the fear and dread of them fell on all the people, for they said, "There is no truth or justice in them, for they have violated the agreement and the oath that they swore."

19 Then Bacchides withdrew from Jerusalem and encamped in Beth-zaith. And he sent and seized many of the men who had deserted to him,[c] and some of the people, and killed them and threw them into a great pit. 20 He placed Alcimus in charge of the country and left with him a force to help him; then Bacchides went back to the king.

21 Alcimus struggled to maintain his high priesthood, 22 and all who were troubling their people joined him. They gained control of the land of Judah and did great damage in Israel. 23 And Judas saw all the wrongs that Alcimus and those with him had done among the Israelites; it was more than the Gentiles had done. 24 So Judas[a] went out into all the surrounding parts of Judea, taking vengeance on those who had deserted and preventing those in the city[d] from going out into the country. 25 When Alcimus saw that Judas and those with

[a] Gk *he*
[b] Gk *He*
[c] Or *many of his men who had deserted*
[d] Gk *and they were prevented*

7.1–4: Demetrius becomes king. 1: *One hundred fifty-first year,* beginning in spring or autumn 162 BCE. *Demetrius* I Soter (162–150 BCE), son of Seleucus IV (Antiochus IV's brother), was held hostage in Rome (175–162 BCE). Helped by the historian Polybius, he escaped. *A few men*, Polybius says sixteen. *Town by the sea*: Tripolis (2 Macc 14.1), in northern Lebanon. **2:** *Palace*, at Antioch.

7.5–25: Alcimus as high priest. 5: *Renegades*, Hellenizing opponents of the Maccabees, cf. 1.11. *High priest*, Alcimus's predecessor Menelaus, of dubious priestly descent (2 Macc 3.4; 4.23), had bought his office (2 Macc 4.23). Alcimus, of a genuine high-priestly family (7.14; 2 Macc 14.7), was compromised in Maccabean eyes as Hellenizing (7.9; 2 Macc 14.3). **8:** *Beyond the River*, i.e., west of the Euphrates (cf. 3.32; Ezra 4.11). **12:** *Scribes*, i.e., scholars of the Law. **13:** *The Hasideans* (see 2.42n.) apparently joined the scribes and trusted Alcimus, but he mistrusted the Hasideans. **17:** Ps 79.2–3. **19:** *Beth-zaith*, location uncertain; either 15 mi (24 km) south or 9 mi (15 km) north of Jerusalem.

him had grown strong, and realized that he could not withstand them, he returned to the king and brought malicious charges against them.

[26] Then the king sent Nicanor, one of his honored princes, who hated and detested Israel, and he commanded him to destroy the people. [27] So Nicanor came to Jerusalem with a large force, and treacherously sent to Judas and his brothers this peaceable message, [28] "Let there be no fighting between you and me; I shall come with a few men to see you face to face in peace."

[29] So he came to Judas, and they greeted one another peaceably; but the enemy were preparing to kidnap Judas. [30] It became known to Judas that Nicanor[a] had come to him with treacherous intent, and he was afraid of him and would not meet him again. [31] When Nicanor learned that his plan had been disclosed, he went out to meet Judas in battle near Caphar-salama. [32] About five hundred of the army of Nicanor fell, and the rest[b] fled into the city of David.

[33] After these events Nicanor went up to Mount Zion. Some of the priests from the sanctuary and some of the elders of the people came out to greet him peaceably and to show him the burnt offering that was being offered for the king. [34] But he mocked them and derided them and defiled them and spoke arrogantly, [35] and in anger he swore this oath, "Unless Judas and his army are delivered into my hands this time, then if I return safely I will burn up this house." And he went out in great anger. [36] At this the priests went in and stood before the altar and the temple; they wept and said,

[37] "You chose this house to be called by
your name,
and to be for your people a house of
prayer and supplication.

[38] Take vengeance on this man and on his
army,
and let them fall by the sword;
remember their blasphemies,
and let them live no longer."

[39] Now Nicanor went out from Jerusalem and encamped in Beth-horon, and the Syrian army joined him. [40] Judas encamped in Adasa with three thousand men. Then Judas prayed and said, [41] "When the messengers from the king spoke blasphemy, your angel went out and struck down one hundred eighty-five thousand of the Assyrians.[c] [42] So also crush this army before us today; let the rest learn that Nicanor[a] has spoken wickedly against the sanctuary, and judge him according to this wickedness."

[43] So the armies met in battle on the thirteenth day of the month of Adar. The army of Nicanor was crushed, and he himself was the first to fall in the battle. [44] When his army saw that Nicanor had fallen, they threw down their arms and fled. [45] The Jews[b] pursued them a day's journey, from Adasa as far as Gazara, and as they followed they kept sounding the battle call on the trumpets. [46] People came out of all the surrounding villages of Judea, and they outflanked the enemy[d] and drove them back to their pursuers,[e] so that they all fell by the sword; not even one of them was left. [47] Then the Jews[b] seized the spoils and the plunder; they cut off Nicanor's head and the right hand that he had so arrogantly stretched out, and brought them and displayed them just outside Jerusalem. [48] The people rejoiced greatly and celebrated that day as a day of great gladness. [49] They

[a] Gk *he*
[b] Gk *they*
[c] Gk *of them*
[d] Gk *them*
[e] Gk *these*

7.26–50: Judas and Nicanor. 26: *Nicanor*, possibly the Nicanor of 3.38 (in 2 Macc 14.12 an elephant commander and governor of Judea). **27,30:** 1 Macc presents Nicanor as ever-treacherous, 2 Macc 14.18–25 as attempting friendly persuasion. **31:** *Caphar-salama*, Khirbet Selma, ca. 7 mi (11 km) northwest of Jerusalem. **32:** Nicanor lost men but remained in control; he demanded the surrender of Judas on pain of burning the Temple (v. 35, and replacing it with a temple to Dionysus, 2 Macc 14.33). **37:** *Your name*, alluding to 1 Kings 8.29. **39:** *Beth-horon*, see 3.16n. **40:** *Adasa*, location uncertain, but somewhere between Beth-horon and Jerusalem. **41:** Judas refers to 2 Kings 19.35. **43:** *Adar*, i.e., March, probably 161 BCE. **45:** The westward pursuit (cf. 1 Sam 14.31) to

decreed that this day should be celebrated each year on the thirteenth day of Adar.
50 So the land of Judah had rest for a few days.

8 Now Judas heard of the fame of the Romans, that they were very strong and were well-disposed toward all who made an alliance with them, that they pledged friendship to those who came to them, 2 and that they were very strong. He had been told of their wars and of the brave deeds that they were doing among the Gauls, how they had defeated them and forced them to pay tribute, 3 and what they had done in the land of Spain to get control of the silver and gold mines there, 4 and how they had gained control of the whole region by their planning and patience, even though the place was far distant from them. They also subdued the kings who came against them from the ends of the earth, until they crushed them and inflicted great disaster on them; the rest paid them tribute every year. 5 They had crushed in battle and conquered Philip, and King Perseus of the Macedonians,[a] and the others who rose up against them. 6 They also had defeated Antiochus the Great, king of Asia, who went to fight against them with one hundred twenty elephants and with cavalry and chariots and a very large army. He was crushed by them; 7 they took him alive and decreed that he and those who would reign after him should pay a heavy tribute and give hostages and surrender some of their best provinces, 8 the countries of India, Media, and Lydia. These they took from him and gave to King Eumenes. 9 The Greeks planned to come and destroy them, 10 but this became known to them, and they sent a general against the Greeks[b] and attacked them. Many of them were wounded and fell, and the Romans[c] took captive their wives and children; they plundered them, conquered the land, tore down their strongholds, and enslaved them to this day. 11 The remaining kingdoms and islands, as many as ever opposed them, they destroyed and enslaved;
12 but with their friends and those who rely on them they have kept friendship. They have subdued kings far and near, and as many as have heard of their fame have feared them. 13 Those whom they wish to help and to make kings, they make kings, and those whom they wish they depose; and they have been greatly exalted. 14 Yet for all this not one of them has put on a crown or worn purple as a mark of pride, 15 but they have built for themselves a senate chamber, and every day three hundred twenty senators constantly deliberate concerning the people, to govern them well. 16 They trust one man each year to rule over them and to control all their land; they all heed the one man, and there is no envy or jealousy among them.

[a] Or *Kittim*
[b] Gk *them*
[c] Gk *they*

Gazara (see 4.15n.), the complete annihilation, and the decapitation (cf. 1 Sam 17.54) recall famous past victories. **49:** *Celebrated each year*, but dropped from the calendar after 70 CE. 1 Macc sees this event as introducing a short period of peace; in 2 Macc 15.28–37 it marks the Jewish permanent repossession of Jerusalem.

8.1–16: Eulogy of the Romans. 1 Macc lists Rome's achievements, presenting Rome as an ally against the Seleucids. Several of the details are inaccurate. **1:** *Friendship*, an official term indicating diplomatic relationship. **2:** Rome had conquered *Gauls* south of the Alps by 190 BCE. **3:** *Spain*, Roman exploitation began after Rome defeated Carthage (202 BCE). **4:** *Kings . . . of the earth*, identified in vv. 5–12. **5:** *Philip* V of Macedon was defeated at Cynoscephale in 197 BCE; his son *Perseus* was defeated at Pydna 168 BCE. **6:** The Seleucid *Antiochus* (III) *the Great* (223–187 BCE), who according to other sources had fifty-four, not *one hundred twenty elephants,* was *crushed* at Magnesia by Scipio Africanus (189 BCE). **7:** Antiochus remained free, but by the Treaty of Apamea (188 BCE) paid *tribute* of twelve thousand talents and gave *hostages* (including the future Antiochus IV). **8:** Rome transferred not *India* and *Media* but Asia Minor (including Lydia) to *King Eumenes* of Pergamum and to Rhodes. **9–10:** 1 Macc refers to the Achaean War of 146–145 BCE. *Strongholds*, particularly Corinth, mercilessly destroyed by L. Mummius. **11:** *Remaining kingdoms and islands*, including Carthage and Sicily. **14:** *Crown . . . purple,* the Roman republic banned kingship and its trappings, but magistrates wore togas with a purple hem. 1 Macc indirectly criticizes Jonathan (10.20,62,64) and Simon (14.43). **15:** The Roman *senate* numbered three hundred and did not meet daily. **16:** *One man each year*, i.e., a consul; in fact there were two.

17 So Judas chose Eupolemus son of John
son of Accos, and Jason son of Eleazar, and
sent them to Rome to establish friendship
and alliance, 18 and to free themselves from
the yoke; for they saw that the kingdom of the
Greeks was enslaving Israel completely. 19 They
went to Rome, a very long journey; and they
entered the senate chamber and spoke as fol-
lows: 20 "Judas, who is also called Maccabeus,
and his brothers and the people of the Jews
have sent us to you to establish alliance and
peace with you, so that we may be enrolled
as your allies and friends." 21 The proposal
pleased them, 22 and this is a copy of the letter
that they wrote in reply, on bronze tablets, and
sent to Jerusalem to remain with them there as
a memorial of peace and alliance:

23 "May all go well with the Romans and
with the nation of the Jews at sea and on land
forever, and may sword and enemy be far
from them. 24 If war comes first to Rome or to
any of their allies in all their dominion, 25 the
nation of the Jews shall act as their allies
wholeheartedly, as the occasion may indicate
to them. 26 To the enemy that makes war they
shall not give or supply grain, arms, money,
or ships, just as Rome has decided; and they
shall keep their obligations without receiving
any return. 27 In the same way, if war comes
first to the nation of the Jews, the Romans
shall willingly act as their allies, as the oc-
casion may indicate to them. 28 And to their
enemies there shall not be given grain, arms,
money, or ships, just as Rome has decided;
and they shall keep these obligations and
do so without deceit. 29 Thus on these terms
the Romans make a treaty with the Jewish
people. 30 If after these terms are in effect
both parties shall determine to add or delete
anything, they shall do so at their discretion,
and any addition or deletion that they may
make shall be valid.

31 "Concerning the wrongs that King
Demetrius is doing to them, we have written
to him as follows, 'Why have you made your
yoke heavy on our friends and allies the Jews?
32 If now they appeal again for help against
you, we will defend their rights and fight you
on sea and on land.'"

9 When Demetrius heard that Nicanor and
his army had fallen in battle, he sent Bac-
chides and Alcimus into the land of Judah a
second time, and with them the right wing of
the army. 2 They went by the road that leads
to Gilgal and encamped against Mesaloth in
Arbela, and they took it and killed many peo-
ple. 3 In the first month of the one hundred
fifty-second year[a] they encamped against
Jerusalem; 4 then they marched off and went
to Berea with twenty thousand foot soldiers
and two thousand cavalry.

5 Now Judas was encamped in Elasa, and
with him were three thousand picked men.
6 When they saw the huge number of the en-
emy forces, they were greatly frightened, and
many slipped away from the camp, until no
more than eight hundred of them were left.

7 When Judas saw that his army had
slipped away and the battle was imminent,
he was crushed in spirit, for he had no time
to assemble them. 8 He became faint, but he
said to those who were left, "Let us get up
and go against our enemies. We may have
the strength to fight them." 9 But they tried
to dissuade him, saying, "We do not have the
strength. Let us rather save our own lives

[a] 160 B.C.

8.17–32: Alliance with Rome. 17: *Eupolemos,* grandson of *Accos*, of a priestly (Ezra 2.61) and diplomatic (2 Macc 4.11) family, may be the Jewish historian Eupolemus who wrote ca. 158 BCE. *Jason's* son Antipater also served on a mission to Rome (12.16; 14.22). These men had Greek names and presumably spoke Greek. **19:** *Long journey*, over a month, probably in 161 BCE. **20:** *Allies and friends*, Judas aims high; Judea was not even an independent state but subject to the Seleucid king. **22:** *Bronze tablets*, cf. 14.27. **23–30:** The format is standard, including mutual assistance in case of foreign aggression (vv. 24,27), prohibition of support for enemies (vv. 26,28), and provision for alterations (v. 30). **31–32:** An appended letter from Rome to Demetrius, probably inauthentic.

9.1–22: The death of Judas. This resumes the narrative from 7.50. **1:** *Bacchides and Alcimus*, see 7.19–20; *second time*, cf. 7.8–20. **2:** The topography requires close examination. *Gilgal* was near Jericho. *Mesaloth* perhaps transliterates a Heb word for "trails" and *in Arbela* the Heb for "Mount Bethel." **3:** The *one hundred fifty-second year* began in spring or autumn 161 BCE. **4:** *Berea*, possibly el-Bireh near Ramallah 10 mi (16 km) north of Je-

now, and let us come back with our kindred and fight them; we are too few." [10] But Judas said, "Far be it from us to do such a thing as to flee from them. If our time has come, let us die bravely for our kindred, and leave no cause to question our honor."

[11] Then the army of Bacchides[a] marched out from the camp and took its stand for the encounter. The cavalry was divided into two companies, and the slingers and the archers went ahead of the army, as did all the chief warriors. [12] Bacchides was on the right wing. Flanked by the two companies, the phalanx advanced to the sound of the trumpets; and the men with Judas also blew their trumpets. [13] The earth was shaken by the noise of the armies, and the battle raged from morning until evening.

[14] Judas saw that Bacchides and the strength of his army were on the right; then all the stouthearted men went with him, [15] and they crushed the right wing, and he pursued them as far as Mount Azotus. [16] When those on the left wing saw that the right wing was crushed, they turned and followed close behind Judas and his men. [17] The battle became desperate, and many on both sides were wounded and fell. [18] Judas also fell, and the rest fled.

[19] Then Jonathan and Simon took their brother Judas and buried him in the tomb of their ancestors at Modein, [20] and wept for him. All Israel made great lamentation for him; they mourned many days and said,

[21] "How is the mighty fallen,
the savior of Israel!"

[22] Now the rest of the acts of Judas, and his wars and the brave deeds that he did, and his greatness, have not been recorded, but they were very many.

[23] After the death of Judas, the renegades emerged in all parts of Israel; all the wrongdoers reappeared. [24] In those days a very great famine occurred, and the country went over to their side. [25] Bacchides chose the godless and put them in charge of the country. [26] They made inquiry and searched for the friends of Judas, and brought them to Bacchides, who took vengeance on them and made sport of them. [27] So there was great distress in Israel, such as had not been since the time that prophets ceased to appear among them.

[28] Then all the friends of Judas assembled and said to Jonathan, [29] "Since the death of your brother Judas there has been no one like him to go against our enemies and Bacchides, and to deal with those of our nation who hate us. [30] Now therefore we have chosen you today to take his place as our ruler and leader, to fight our battle." [31] So Jonathan accepted the leadership at that time in place of his brother Judas.

[32] When Bacchides learned of this, he tried to kill him. [33] But Jonathan and his brother Simon and all who were with him heard of it, and they fled into the wilderness of Tekoa and camped by the water of the pool of Asphar. [34] Bacchides found this out on the sabbath day, and he with all his army crossed the Jordan.

[35] So Jonathan[b] sent his brother as leader of the multitude and begged the Nabateans, who were his friends, for permission to store with them the great amount of baggage that they had. [36] But the family of Jambri from Medeba came out and seized John and all that he had, and left with it.

[a] Gk lacks *of Bacchides*
[b] Gk *he*

rusalem. **5:** *Elasa*, .6 mi (1 km) from el-Bireh. **15:** *Mount Azotus*, perhaps a corruption of "to the slopes of the mountains." The whole campaign thus takes place in the central hill country north of Jerusalem. **19:** *Modein*, see 2.1n. **21:** *Mighty fallen*, quoting 2 Sam 1.19. **22:** 1 Macc imitates the formulae used in the books of Kings (cf. 1 Kings 11.41; 1 Macc 16.23).

9.23–31: Jonathan succeeds Judas. 23: The author begins the second half of his history with the reappearance of the pro-Seleucid *renegades* (cf. 1.11,34), who assume control under Bacchides. **27:** For 1 Macc, this is the nadir of the post-prophetic age (cf. 4.46n.). **28:** *Jonathan*, apparently the youngest brother (2.5). **30:** *Ruler and leader,* cf. Judg 11.4–11.

9.32–53: Jonathan and Bacchides. The topography of this section, which intertwines the accounts of Bacchides's pursuit of Jonathan (vv. 32–34,43–49) and a Nabatean-Maccabean vendetta (vv. 35–42), is confusing. **33:** *Tekoa*, Amos's home (Am 1.1), 11 mi (18 km) south of Jerusalem. **34:** Topographically difficult here; probably

37 After these things it was reported to
Jonathan and his brother Simon, "The family
of Jambri are celebrating a great wedding, and
are conducting the bride, a daughter of one
of the great nobles of Canaan, from Nadabath
with a large escort." 38 Remembering how
their brother John had been killed, they went
up and hid under cover of the mountain.
39 They looked out and saw a tumultuous
procession with a great amount of bag-
gage; and the bridegroom came out with his
friends and his brothers to meet them with
tambourines and musicians and many weap-
ons. 40 Then they rushed on them from the
ambush and began killing them. Many were
wounded and fell, and the rest fled to the
mountain; and the Jews[a] took all their goods.
41 So the wedding was turned into mourn-
ing and the voice of their musicians into a
funeral dirge. 42 After they had fully avenged
the blood of their brother, they returned to
the marshes of the Jordan.

43 When Bacchides heard of this, he
came with a large force on the sabbath day
to the banks of the Jordan. 44 And Jonathan
said to those with him, "Let us get up now
and fight for our lives, for today things are
not as they were before. 45 For look! the
battle is in front of us and behind us; the
water of the Jordan is on this side and on
that, with marsh and thicket; there is no
place to turn. 46 Cry out now to Heaven that
you may be delivered from the hands of
our enemies." 47 So the battle began, and
Jonathan stretched out his hand to strike
Bacchides, but he eluded him and went
to the rear. 48 Then Jonathan and the men
with him leaped into the Jordan and swam
across to the other side, and the enemy[a] did
not cross the Jordan to attack them. 49 And
about one thousand of Bacchides' men fell
that day.

50 Then Bacchides[b] returned to Jerusalem
and built strong cities in Judea: the fortress in
Jericho, and Emmaus, and Beth-horon, and
Bethel, and Timnath, and[c] Pharathon, and
Tephon, with high walls and gates and bars.
51 And he placed garrisons in them to harass
Israel. 52 He also fortified the town of Beth-
zur, and Gazara, and the citadel, and in them
he put troops and stores of food. 53 And he
took the sons of the leading men of the land
as hostages and put them under guard in the
citadel at Jerusalem.

54 In the one hundred and fifty-third year,[d]
in the second month, Alcimus gave orders
to tear down the wall of the inner court of
the sanctuary. He tore down the work of
the prophets! 55 But he only began to tear it
down, for at that time Alcimus was stricken
and his work was hindered; his mouth was
stopped and he was paralyzed, so that he
could no longer say a word or give commands
concerning his house. 56 And Alcimus died at
that time in great agony. 57 When Bacchides
saw that Alcimus was dead, he returned to
the king, and the land of Judah had rest for
two years.

58 Then all the lawless plotted and said,
"See! Jonathan and his men are living in quiet
and confidence. So now let us bring Bac-
chides back, and he will capture them all in
one night." 59 And they went and consulted
with him. 60 He started to come with a large
force, and secretly sent letters to all his al-

[a] Gk *they*
[b] Gk *he*
[c] Some authorities omit *and*
[d] 159 B.C.

a gloss from v. 43. **35:** *Nabateans,* see 5.25n. **36:** *Family of Jambri,* a local tribe. *Medeba,* ca. 20 mi (32 km) south-southwest of Philadelphia (Amman). *John,* see 2.1. **37:** *Nadabath,* perhaps a corruption of Medeba. **43:** Bacchides comes from the west. **45:** Jonathan is on the marshy west bank, with the Jordan curving round him on each side. **48:** Jonathan retreats back across the Jordan. **50–52:** Bacchides ensures control of the eastern (*Jericho*), northern/northwestern (*Emmaus, Beth-horon, Bethel, Timnath, Pharathon, Tephon*), western (*Gazara*) and southern (*Beth-zur*) approaches to Jerusalem; see maps on pp. 1560, 1563. **53:** *Citadel,* see 1.33n.

9.54–57: Death of Alcimus. 54: *The one hundred and fifty-third year* began in spring or autumn 160 BCE. *Wall,* probably that separating the outer, Gentile court from the inner courts reserved for Jews, perhaps with Hellenizing intentions. *Work of the prophets*: in what sense precisely is unclear. **57:** *Two years*, presumably ca. 159–158 BCE.

9.58–73: The continuing struggle. 62: *Bethbasi*, perhaps Khirbet Beit Bassi, ca. 7 mi (11 km) south of Jerusa-

lies in Judea, telling them to seize Jonathan and his men; but they were unable to do it, because their plan became known. 61 And Jonathan's men[a] seized about fifty of the men of the country who were leaders in this treachery, and killed them.

62 Then Jonathan with his men, and Simon, withdrew to Bethbasi in the wilderness; he rebuilt the parts of it that had been demolished, and they fortified it. 63 When Bacchides learned of this, he assembled all his forces, and sent orders to the men of Judea. 64 Then he came and encamped against Bethbasi; he fought against it for many days and made machines of war.

65 But Jonathan left his brother Simon in the town, while he went out into the country; and he went with only a few men. 66 He struck down Odomera and his kindred and the people of Phasiron in their tents. 67 Then he[b] began to attack and went into battle with his forces; and Simon and his men sallied out from the town and set fire to the machines of war. 68 They fought with Bacchides, and he was crushed by them. They pressed him very hard, for his plan and his expedition had been in vain. 69 So he was very angry at the renegades who had counseled him to come into the country, and he killed many of them. Then he decided to go back to his own land.

70 When Jonathan learned of this, he sent ambassadors to him to make peace with him and obtain release of the captives. 71 He agreed, and did as he said; and he swore to Jonathan[c] that he would not try to harm him as long as he lived. 72 He restored to him the captives whom he had taken previously from the land of Judah; then he turned and went back to his own land, and did not come again into their territory. 73 Thus the sword ceased from Israel. Jonathan settled in Michmash and began to judge the people; and he destroyed the godless out of Israel.

10 In the one hundred sixtieth year[d] Alexander Epiphanes, son of Antiochus, landed and occupied Ptolemais. They welcomed him, and there he began to reign. 2 When King Demetrius heard of it, he assembled a very large army and marched out to meet him in battle. 3 Demetrius sent Jonathan a letter in peaceable words to honor him; 4 for he said to himself, "Let us act first to make peace with him[e] before he makes peace with Alexander against us, 5 for he will remember all the wrongs that we did to him and to his brothers and his nation." 6 So Demetrius[f] gave him authority to recruit troops, to equip them with arms, and to become his ally; and he commanded that the hostages in the citadel should be released to him.

7 Then Jonathan came to Jerusalem and read the letter in the hearing of all the people and of those in the citadel. 8 They were greatly alarmed when they heard that the king had given him authority to recruit troops. 9 But those in the citadel released the hostages to Jonathan, and he returned them to their parents.

10 And Jonathan took up residence in Jerusalem and began to rebuild and restore the city. 11 He directed those who were doing the work to build the walls and encircle Mount Zion with squared stones, for better fortification; and they did so.

[a] Gk *they*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *they*
[c] Gk *him*
[d] 152 B.C.
[e] Gk *them*
[f] Gk *he*

lem. **65–66:** Simon *struck down Odomera and . . . the people of Phasiron* (as local supporters of Bacchides?), or by a slight change "summoned" them, in which case the Greek "they" (v. 67; see textual note *b*) makes sense. **68:** Bacchides, besieging Bethbasi, was *crushed* between attacks from both town and surrounding country. **70–73:** Peace is agreed upon, and captives are returned. *Michmash*, ca. 9 mi (14 km) north-northeast of Jerusalem; cf. 1 Sam 13.23. *Judge the people*, Jonathan appears as a biblical hero (cf. 1 Sam 7.6), but has no political or priestly office.

10.1–50: Alexander Epiphanes and Demetrius I compete for Jonathan's support. 1: *The one hundred sixtieth year* probably began in spring or autumn 153, or possibly 152 BCE. *Alexander Epiphanes*, commonly called Balas, was an impostor who, helped by Eumenes of Pergamum (cf. 8.8), got Rome's support against Demetrius; he ruled until ca. 145. *Ptolemais*, see 5.15n. **6–8:** *Hostages . . . released* (cf. 9.53), an important concession. **10–11:**

12 Then the foreigners who were in the
strongholds that Bacchides had built fled;
13 all of them left their places and went back
to their own lands. 14 Only in Beth-zur did
some remain who had forsaken the law and
the commandments, for it served as a place
of refuge.

15 Now King Alexander heard of all the
promises that Demetrius had sent to Jona-
than, and he heard of the battles that
Jonathan[a] and his brothers had fought, of the
brave deeds that they had done, and of the
troubles that they had endured. 16 So he said,
"Shall we find another such man? Come now,
we will make him our friend and ally." 17 And
he wrote a letter and sent it to him, in the
following words:

18 "King Alexander to his brother Jonathan,
greetings. 19 We have heard about you, that
you are a mighty warrior and worthy to be
our friend. 20 And so we have appointed you
today to be the high priest of your nation; you
are to be called the king's Friend and you are
to take our side and keep friendship with us."
He also sent him a purple robe and a golden
crown.

21 So Jonathan put on the sacred vestments
in the seventh month of the one hundred
sixtieth year,[b] at the festival of booths,[c] and
he recruited troops and equipped them with
arms in abundance. 22 When Demetrius heard
of these things he was distressed and said,
23 "What is this that we have done? Alexander
has gotten ahead of us in forming a friend-
ship with the Jews to strengthen himself. 24 I
also will write them words of encouragement
and promise them honor and gifts, so that I
may have their help." 25 So he sent a message
to them in the following words:

"King Demetrius to the nation of the
Jews, greetings. 26 Since you have kept your
agreement with us and have continued your
friendship with us, and have not sided with
our enemies, we have heard of it and rejoiced.
27 Now continue still to keep faith with us,
and we will repay you with good for what you
do for us. 28 We will grant you many immuni-
ties and give you gifts.

29 "I now free you and exempt all the Jews
from payment of tribute and salt tax and
crown levies, 30 and instead of collecting the
third of the grain and the half of the fruit of
the trees that I should receive, I release them
from this day and henceforth. I will not collect
them from the land of Judah or from the three
districts added to it from Samaria and Galilee,
from this day and for all time. 31 Jerusalem and
its environs, its tithes and its revenues, shall
be holy and free from tax. 32 I release also my
control of the citadel in Jerusalem and give it
to the high priest, so that he may station in it
men of his own choice to guard it. 33 And ev-
eryone of the Jews taken as a captive from the
land of Judah into any part of my kingdom, I
set free without payment; and let all officials
cancel also the taxes on their livestock.

[a] Gk *he*
[b] 152 B.C.
[c] Or *tabernacles*

Jonathan restores the defenses built by Judas (4.60) and destroyed by Lysias (6.62). **12:** *Strongholds*, cf. 9.50–53. **14:** *Beth-zur*, cf. 6.50. **20:** *We have appointed you . . . high priest*, Alexander had no right in Jewish law to do this. *King's Friend*, see 2.18n. *Purple robe*, appropriate both for a Friend and for the high priest (Ex 28.5). *Golden crown*, a gift: the high priest could wear a golden rosette and a "holy diadem" (Ex 28.36; 29.6) on the turban. **21:** *Vestments*, Ex 28.1–39; 39.1–26. *The one hundred sixtieth year* here began in spring, as the references to *the seventh month* and the autumn *festival of booths* (Lev 23.33–43) require, possibly in 153 but probably in 152 BCE. **22–45:** Demetrius offers new, remarkable concessions (vv. 29–45). Some major concessions reappear in Demetrius II's proposals (11.30–37: the exemption from *salt tax and crown levies* [v. 29; 11.35], from payments of *grain* and *fruit* [v. 30; 11.34]), and therefore were probably not part of Demetrius I's offer. Demetrius's astonishing offer of exemption from *tribute* (v. 29) is not granted until 13.39, as part of a peace agreement. Ceding *control of the citadel* (v. 32) (in fact never returned but captured by Simon, 13.50), the gift of *Ptolemais and* its *lands* (v. 39; cf. v. 1), the annual grant of *fifteen thousand shekels of silver* (v. 40), are also unlikely concessions at this stage. More realistically, Demetrius I may have conceded tax freedom and inviolability for *Jerusalem* (v. 31), *festivals* as *days of immunity and release* (v. 34), enrollment of Jews in the *king's forces* and administration with freedom to *live by their own laws* (vv. 36–37), the annexation to Judea of three Samarian districts (v. 38), various provisions for Temple finances and debtors taking sanctuary in the Temple (vv. 41–45), and the costs of *restoring the sanctuary* and

34 "All the festivals and sabbaths and new moons and appointed days, and the three days before a festival and the three after a festival—let them all be days of immunity and release for all the Jews who are in my kingdom. 35 No one shall have authority to exact anything from them or annoy any of them about any matter.

36 "Let Jews be enrolled in the king's forces to the number of thirty thousand men, and let the maintenance be given them that is due to all the forces of the king. 37 Let some of them be stationed in the great strongholds of the king, and let some of them be put in positions of trust in the kingdom. Let their officers and leaders be of their own number, and let them live by their own laws, just as the king has commanded in the land of Judah.

38 "As for the three districts that have been added to Judea from the country of Samaria, let them be annexed to Judea so that they may be considered to be under one ruler and obey no other authority than the high priest. 39 Ptolemais and the land adjoining it I have given as a gift to the sanctuary in Jerusalem, to meet the necessary expenses of the sanctuary. 40 I also grant fifteen thousand shekels of silver yearly out of the king's revenues from appropriate places. 41 And all the additional funds that the government officials have not paid as they did in the first years,[a] they shall give from now on for the service of the temple.[b] 42 Moreover, the five thousand shekels of silver that my officials[c] have received every year from the income of the services of the temple, this too is canceled, because it belongs to the priests who minister there. 43 And all who take refuge at the temple in Jerusalem, or in any of its precincts, because they owe money to the king or are in debt, let them be released and receive back all their property in my kingdom.

44 "Let the cost of rebuilding and restoring the structures of the sanctuary be paid from the revenues of the king. 45 And let the cost of rebuilding the walls of Jerusalem and fortifying it all around, and the cost of rebuilding the walls in Judea, also be paid from the revenues of the king."

46 When Jonathan and the people heard these words, they did not believe or accept them, because they remembered the great wrongs that Demetrius[d] had done in Israel and how much he had oppressed them. 47 They favored Alexander, because he had been the first to speak peaceable words to them, and they remained his allies all his days.

48 Now King Alexander assembled large forces and encamped opposite Demetrius. 49 The two kings met in battle, and the army of Demetrius fled, and Alexander[e] pursued him and defeated them. 50 He pressed the battle strongly until the sun set, and on that day Demetrius fell.

51 Then Alexander sent ambassadors to Ptolemy king of Egypt with the following message: 52 "Since I have returned to my kingdom and have taken my seat on the throne of my ancestors, and established my rule—for I crushed Demetrius and gained control of our country; 53 I met him in battle, and he and his army were crushed by us, and we have taken our seat on the throne of his kingdom— 54 now therefore let us establish friendship with one another; give me now your daughter as my wife, and I will become your son-in-law, and will make gifts to you and to her in keeping with your position."

55 Ptolemy the king replied and said, "Happy was the day on which you returned to the land of your ancestors and took your seat on the throne of their kingdom. 56 And now I will do for you as you wrote, but meet me at Ptolemais, so that we may see one another, and I will become your father-in-law, as you have said."

[a] Meaning of Gk uncertain
[b] Gk *house*
[c] Gk *they*
[d] Gk *he*
[e] Other ancient authorities read *Alexander fled, and Demetrius*

walls of Jerusalem and *in Judea* (vv. 44–45). **46:** *Great wrongs*, cf. chs 7–9. **47:** *First to speak*, in fact, Demetrius was (v. 3). The Greek perhaps means that Alexander provided the original opportunity for peace. **48–50:** This follows from v. 2. The battleground is unknown; see Josephus, *Ant.* 13.58–61. The date is probably summer 150 BCE.

10.51–66: Alexander, Ptolemy, and Jonathan. 51: *Ptolemy* VI Philometor (180–145 BCE), cf. 1.18. **54:** *Daughter*, Cleopatra Thea (v. 57). **55:** Ptolemy recognizes Alexander's legitimacy. **56:** *Ptolemais* (cf. v. 1), a symbol of Egyp-

57 So Ptolemy set out from Egypt, he and
his daughter Cleopatra, and came to Ptole-
mais in the one hundred sixty-second year.[a]
58 King Alexander met him, and Ptolemy[b]
gave him his daughter Cleopatra in marriage,
and celebrated her wedding at Ptolemais with
great pomp, as kings do.
59 Then King Alexander wrote to Jonathan
to come and meet him. 60 So he went with
pomp to Ptolemais and met the two kings;
he gave them and their Friends silver and
gold and many gifts, and found favor with
them. 61 A group of malcontents from Israel,
renegades, gathered together against him
to accuse him; but the king paid no atten-
tion to them. 62 The king gave orders to take
off Jonathan's garments and to clothe him
in purple, and they did so. 63 The king also
seated him at his side; and he said to his
officers, "Go out with him into the middle
of the city and proclaim that no one is to
bring charges against him about any matter,
and let no one annoy him for any reason."
64 When his accusers saw the honor that was
paid him, in accord with the proclamation,
and saw him clothed in purple, they all fled.
65 Thus the king honored him and enrolled
him among his chief[c] Friends, and made him
general and governor of the province. 66 And
Jonathan returned to Jerusalem in peace and
gladness.
67 In the one hundred sixty-fifth year[d]
Demetrius son of Demetrius came from
Crete to the land of his ancestors. 68 When
King Alexander heard of it, he was greatly
distressed and returned to Antioch. 69 And
Demetrius appointed Apollonius the gover-
nor of Coelesyria, and he assembled a large
force and encamped against Jamnia. Then he
sent the following message to the high priest
Jonathan:

70 "You are the only one to rise up against
us, and I have fallen into ridicule and disgrace
because of you. Why do you assume author-
ity against us in the hill country? 71 If you now
have confidence in your forces, come down
to the plain to meet us, and let us match
strength with each other there, for I have
with me the power of the cities. 72 Ask and
learn who I am and who the others are that
are helping us. People will tell you that you
cannot stand before us, for your ancestors
were twice put to flight in their own land.
73 And now you will not be able to withstand
my cavalry and such an army in the plain,
where there is no stone or pebble, or place to
flee."
74 When Jonathan heard the words of Apol-
lonius, his spirit was aroused. He chose ten
thousand men and set out from Jerusalem,
and his brother Simon met him to help him.
75 He encamped before Joppa, but the people
of the city closed its gates, for Apollonius had
a garrison in Joppa. 76 So they fought against
it, and the people of the city became afraid
and opened the gates, and Jonathan gained
possession of Joppa.
77 When Apollonius heard of it, he mus-
tered three thousand cavalry and a large
army, and went to Azotus as though he were
going farther. At the same time he advanced
into the plain, for he had a large troop of
cavalry and put confidence in it. 78 Jona-
than[b] pursued him to Azotus, and the armies
engaged in battle. 79 Now Apollonius had
secretly left a thousand cavalry behind them.
80 Jonathan learned that there was an ambush

[a] 150 B.C.
[b] Gk *he*
[c] Gk *first*
[d] 147 B.C.

tian presence on the coast. **57:** *The one hundred sixty-second year*, probably summer-autumn 150 BCE. **60:** *He,* i.e., Jonathan; *two kings*, Alexander and Ptolemy. **65:** *Chief Friends,* promotion, cf. v. 20. *General and governor*, i.e., military and civil head of the *province*, i.e., Judea. Jonathan is now a Seleucid official.

10.67–89: Jonathan defeats Apollonius. 67: *The one hundred sixty-fifth year* probably began in autumn 148 BCE; *Demetrius* II Nicator *came from Crete* to Cilicia in spring 147 BCE with Cretan mercenaries led by Lasthenes (cf. 11.32). **68:** *Returned to Antioch*, the Seleucid capital. **69:** *Apollonius*, known from Polybius (*Hist.* 31.11.19). *Coelesyria*, originally "hollow Syria" between the Lebanon and Anti-Lebanon ranges, then with wider reference. *Jamnia*, see 4.15n. Demetrius has to control Jonathan before attacking Alexander. **72:** *Twice put to flight*, perhaps referring to Judas's defeats, 6.47; 9.6–19. **73:** *No stone or pebble*, i.e., for ammunition. **74:** *Simon* (2.3) appears in action for the first time. **75:** *Joppa* (cf. 2 Macc 3–9), on the coast north of Jamnia, Azotus, and As-

behind him, for they surrounded his army and shot arrows at his men from early morning until late afternoon. 81 But his men stood fast, as Jonathan had commanded, and the enemy's[a] horses grew tired.

82 Then Simon brought forward his force and engaged the phalanx in battle (for the cavalry was exhausted); they were overwhelmed by him and fled, 83 and the cavalry was dispersed in the plain. They fled to Azotus and entered Beth-dagon, the temple of their idol, for safety. 84 But Jonathan burned Azotus and the surrounding towns and plundered them; and the temple of Dagon, and those who had taken refuge in it, he burned with fire. 85 The number of those who fell by the sword, with those burned alive, came to eight thousand.

86 Then Jonathan left there and encamped against Askalon, and the people of the city came out to meet him with great pomp.

87 He and those with him then returned to Jerusalem with a large amount of booty. 88 When King Alexander heard of these things, he honored Jonathan still more; 89 and he sent to him a golden buckle, such as it is the custom to give to the King's Kinsmen. He also gave him Ekron and all its environs as his possession.

11 Then the king of Egypt gathered great forces, like the sand by the seashore, and many ships; and he tried to get possession of Alexander's kingdom by trickery and add it to his own kingdom. 2 He set out for Syria with peaceable words, and the people of the towns opened their gates to him and went to meet him, for King Alexander had commanded them to meet him, since he was Alexander's[b] father-in-law. 3 But when Ptolemy entered the towns he stationed forces as a garrison in each town.

4 When he[c] approached Azotus, they showed him the burnt-out temple of Dagon, and Azotus and its suburbs destroyed, and the corpses lying about, and the charred bodies of those whom Jonathan[d] had burned in the war, for they had piled them in heaps along his route. 5 They also told the king what Jonathan had done, to throw blame on him; but the king kept silent. 6 Jonathan met the king at Joppa with pomp, and they greeted one another and spent the night there. 7 And Jonathan went with the king as far as the river called Eleutherus; then he returned to Jerusalem.

8 So King Ptolemy gained control of the coastal cities as far as Seleucia by the sea, and he kept devising wicked designs against Alexander. 9 He sent envoys to King Demetrius, saying, "Come, let us make a covenant with each other, and I will give you in marriage my daughter who was Alexander's wife, and you shall reign over your father's kingdom. 10 I now regret that I gave him my daughter, for he has tried to kill me." 11 He threw blame on Alexander[e] because he coveted his kingdom. 12 So he took his daughter away from him and gave her to Demetrius. He was estranged from Alexander, and their enmity became manifest.

13 Then Ptolemy entered Antioch and put on the crown of Asia. Thus he put two crowns

[a] Gk *their*
[b] Gk *his*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *they*
[d] Gk *he*
[e] Gk *him*

calon; Jonathan thus separates Apollonius from Demetrius. **82:** Simon's forces complete the rout. **83–84:** *Azotus,* see 4.15n. *Beth-dagon*, lit. "the house of Dagon" (a West Semitic and later a Philistine god) at Azotus/Ashdod; see 1 Sam 5.1–5; cf. Judg 16.23. 1 Macc emphasizes Maccabean hostility to paganism. **86:** *Askalon*, earlier Ashkelon, about 10 mi (16 km) south of Azotus. **88–89:** *Buckle*, to fasten the cloak; cf. 11.58. *Kinsmen*, see 2.18. *Ekron*, Tel Miqne, a former Philistine city (Josh 14.3), important for olive oil production. Judea begins to extend her territory.

11.1–19: The end of Ptolemy VI and Alexander. 1: *By trickery*, Josephus (*Ant.* 13.106–8) claims that Ptolemy set out as Alexander's ally but changed his mind after Alexander plotted against his life. **4:** See 10.84. **5:** *The king kept silent*, needing Jonathan's support. **7:** *River called Eleutherus*, Nahr el-Kebir, north of Tripolis. **8:** *Seleucia*, Antioch's port at the mouth of the Orontes River, founded by Antiochus I. **9:** *Demetrius* II, see 10.67. *My daughter*, i.e., Cleopatra; see 10.57. **10:** *Tried to kill me*, a reference to the plot (v. 1). **12:** Ptolemy was supporting Demetrius to undermine *Alexander*. **13:** *Two crowns*, Antiochus IV had also wished (1.16) to "reign over both

on his head, the crown of Egypt and that of Asia. [14] Now King Alexander was in Cilicia at that time, because the people of that region were in revolt. [15] When Alexander heard of it, he came against him in battle. Ptolemy marched out and met him with a strong force, and put him to flight. [16] So Alexander fled into Arabia to find protection there, and King Ptolemy was triumphant. [17] Zabdiel the Arab cut off the head of Alexander and sent it to Ptolemy. [18] But King Ptolemy died three days later, and his troops in the strongholds were killed by the inhabitants of the strongholds. [19] So Demetrius became king in the one hundred sixty-seventh year.[a]

[20] In those days Jonathan assembled the Judeans to attack the citadel in Jerusalem, and he built many engines of war to use against it. [21] But certain renegades who hated their nation went to the king and reported to him that Jonathan was besieging the citadel. [22] When he heard this he was angry, and as soon as he heard it he set out and came to Ptolemais; and he wrote Jonathan not to continue the siege, but to meet him for a conference at Ptolemais as quickly as possible.

[23] When Jonathan heard this, he gave orders to continue the siege. He chose some of the elders of Israel and some of the priests, and put himself in danger, [24] for he went to the king at Ptolemais, taking silver and gold and clothing and numerous other gifts. And he won his favor. [25] Although certain renegades of his nation kept making complaints against him, [26] the king treated him as his predecessors had treated him; he exalted him in the presence of all his Friends. [27] He confirmed him in the high priesthood and in as many other honors as he had formerly had, and caused him to be reckoned among his chief[b] Friends. [28] Then Jonathan asked the king to free Judea and the three districts of Samaria[c] from tribute, and promised him three hundred talents. [29] The king consented, and wrote a letter to Jonathan about all these things; its contents were as follows:

[30] "King Demetrius to his brother Jonathan and to the nation of the Jews, greetings. [31] This copy of the letter that we wrote concerning you to our kinsman Lasthenes we have written to you also, so that you may know what it says. [32] 'King Demetrius to his father Lasthenes, greetings. [33] We have determined to do good to the nation of the Jews, who are our friends and fulfill their obligations to us, because of the goodwill they show toward us. [34] We have confirmed as their possession both the territory of Judea and the three districts of Aphairema and Lydda and Rathamin; the latter, with all

[a] 145 B.C.
[b] Gk *first*
[c] Cn: Gk *the three districts and Samaria*

kingdoms," the Ptolemaic and the Seleucid, but was prevented by Rome. **14:** *Cilicia*, on the southeast coast of Turkey. **15:** Strabo (*Geog*. 16.2.8) locates the *battle* on the river Oenoparus near Antioch. **16:** *Arabia*, the great desert east of Damascus and extending into southern Jordan; cf. Gal 1.17. **17:** *Zabdiel*; Diodorus 32.9,10 gives the name Diocles, blaming Alexander's death on two of his officers. **18:** Seriously wounded, *Ptolemy* died after surgery, having seen Alexander's severed head (Josephus, *Ant.* 13.118). *Strongholds*, cf. 11.3. **19:** *Demetrius* had arrived to claim his crown two years earlier (10.67), and took it in *the one hundred sixty-seventh year*, probably summer 145 BCE.

11.20–37: Jonathan's agreement with Demetrius II. 20: Jonathan's attack on the *citadel* shows that Demetrius's promise (10.32), if authentic, was not fulfilled. **23:** Jonathan negotiates from a position of strength. **26:** *Predecessors*, i.e., Demetrius I and Alexander. **27:** *High priesthood*, see 10.20n. *Other honors*, presumably his military and civil rule of Judea (10.65). *Chief Friends*, cf. Alexander's honors, 10.65. **28:** *To free . . . from tribute*, a major request; possession of the *three districts* (10.38) was confirmed, but *tribute* remission not granted (v. 34). *Three hundred talents*, in lieu of tribute; a talent weighed about 75 lb (34 kg). **32:** *Lasthenes*, not Demetrius's *father* but the general of his Cretan mercenaries. **34:** *Confirmed as their possession*, according to 10.38, specifically under the high priest's authority. *Aphairema* (Ephraim in Jn 11.54), *Lydda* (Lod, Ezra 2.2) and *Rathamin* (Arimathea in Lk 23.50) lie to the north and northwest of Judea; see maps on pp. 1560, 1563. *To all those who offer sacrifice in Jerusalem* (i.e., the priesthood), if taken with the preceding words, the revenues of the three districts benefit the priesthood (cf. 10.38); if with the following words (so NRSV), the priests are offered *release* from *taxes* on *crops* and *fruit, salt,* and *crown taxes* (v. 35; see 10.29–30). Demetrius is perhaps allowing that Jerusalem shall be "holy

the region bordering them, were added to Judea from Samaria. To all those who offer sacrifice in Jerusalem we have granted release from[a] the royal taxes that the king formerly received from them each year, from the crops of the land and the fruit of the trees. 35 And the other payments henceforth due to us of the tithes, and the taxes due to us, and the salt pits and the crown taxes due to us—from all these we shall grant them release. 36 And not one of these grants shall be canceled from this time on forever. 37 Now therefore take care to make a copy of this, and let it be given to Jonathan and put up in a conspicuous place on the holy mountain.'"

38 When King Demetrius saw that the land was quiet before him and that there was no opposition to him, he dismissed all his troops, all of them to their own homes, except the foreign troops that he had recruited from the islands of the nations. So all the troops who had served under his predecessors hated him. 39 A certain Trypho had formerly been one of Alexander's supporters; he saw that all the troops were grumbling against Demetrius. So he went to Imalkue the Arab, who was bringing up Antiochus, the young son of Alexander, 40 and insistently urged him to hand Antiochus[b] over to him, to become king in place of his father. He also reported to Imalkue[b] what Demetrius had done and told of the hatred that the troops of Demetrius[c] had for him; and he stayed there many days.

41 Now Jonathan sent to King Demetrius the request that he remove the troops of the citadel from Jerusalem, and the troops in the strongholds; for they kept fighting against Israel. 42 And Demetrius sent this message back to Jonathan: "Not only will I do these things for you and your nation, but I will confer great honor on you and your nation, if I find an opportunity. 43 Now then you will do well to send me men who will help me, for all my troops have revolted." 44 So Jonathan sent three thousand stalwart men to him at Antioch, and when they came to the king, the king rejoiced at their arrival.

45 Then the people of the city assembled within the city, to the number of a hundred and twenty thousand, and they wanted to kill the king. 46 But the king fled into the palace. Then the people of the city seized the main streets of the city and began to fight. 47 So the king called the Jews to his aid, and they all rallied around him and then spread out through the city; and they killed on that day about one hundred thousand. 48 They set fire to the city and seized a large amount of spoil on that day, and saved the king. 49 When the people of the city saw that the Jews had gained control of the city as they pleased, their courage failed and they cried out to the king with this entreaty: 50 "Grant us peace, and make the Jews stop fighting against us and our city." 51 And they threw down their arms and made peace. So the Jews gained glory in the sight of the king and of all the people in his kingdom, and they returned to Jerusalem with a large amount of spoil.

52 So King Demetrius sat on the throne of his kingdom, and the land was quiet before him. 53 But he broke his word about all that he had promised; he became estranged from Jonathan and did not repay the favors that Jonathan[d] had done him, but treated him very harshly.

54 After this Trypho returned, and with him the young boy Antiochus who began to reign and put on the crown. 55 All the troops that Demetrius had discharged gathered

[a] Or *Samaria, for all those who offer sacrifice in Jerusalem, in place of*
[b] Gk *him*
[c] Gk *his troops*
[d] Gk *he*

and tax-free" (cf. 10.31), the taxes going to support the official rituals. **37:** *Copy*, cf. 8.22; *holy mountain*, Mount Zion. Note that Demetrius rejects cancellation of tribute, and retains control of the citadel.

11.38–59: The appearance of Trypho. 39: *Trypho*, "self-indulgent," the nickname of Diodotus, former officer of Demetrius I and Alexander. *Imalkue*, possibly son of Zabdiel (11.17). *Antiochus*, born ca. 150 BCE. **41:** *Remove the troops*, presumably Jonathan had withdrawn his attack (11.20) under the agreement. *Strongholds*, Beth-zur and Gazara (see 9.52). **42–44:** Demetrius agrees, in return for military assistance. *Antioch*, ca. 300 mi (500 km) north of Jerusalem. **46–48:** Josephus (*Ant.* 13.135–41) describes the fighting. **53:** Demetrius reneges and, according to

around him; they fought against Demetrius,[a] and he fled and was routed. 56 Trypho captured the elephants[b] and gained control of Antioch. 57 Then the young Antiochus wrote to Jonathan, saying, "I confirm you in the high priesthood and set you over the four districts and make you one of the king's Friends." 58 He also sent him gold plates and a table service, and granted him the right to drink from gold cups and dress in purple and wear a gold buckle. 59 He appointed Jonathan's[c] brother Simon governor from the Ladder of Tyre to the borders of Egypt.

60 Then Jonathan set out and traveled beyond the river and among the towns, and all the army of Syria gathered to him as allies. When he came to Askalon, the people of the city met him and paid him honor. 61 From there he went to Gaza, but the people of Gaza shut him out. So he besieged it and burned its suburbs with fire and plundered them. 62 Then the people of Gaza pleaded with Jonathan, and he made peace with them, and took the sons of their rulers as hostages and sent them to Jerusalem. And he passed through the country as far as Damascus.

63 Then Jonathan heard that the officers of Demetrius had come to Kadesh in Galilee with a large army, intending to remove him from office. 64 He went to meet them, but left his brother Simon in the country. 65 Simon encamped before Beth-zur and fought against it for many days and hemmed it in. 66 Then they asked him to grant them terms of peace, and he did so. He removed them from there, took possession of the town, and set a garrison over it.

67 Jonathan and his army encamped by the waters of Gennesaret. Early in the morning they marched to the plain of Hazor, 68 and there in the plain the army of the foreigners met him; they had set an ambush against him in the mountains, but they themselves met him face to face. 69 Then the men in ambush emerged from their places and joined battle. 70 All the men with Jonathan fled; not one of them was left except Mattathias son of Absalom and Judas son of Chalphi, commanders of the forces of the army. 71 Jonathan tore his clothes, put dust on his head, and prayed. 72 Then he turned back to the battle against the enemy[d] and routed them, and they fled. 73 When his men who were fleeing saw this, they returned to him and joined him in the pursuit as far as Kadesh, to their camp, and there they encamped. 74 As many as three thousand of the foreigners fell that day. And Jonathan returned to Jerusalem.

12 Now when Jonathan saw that the time was favorable for him, he chose men and sent them to Rome to confirm and renew the friendship with them. 2 He also sent letters to the same effect to the Spartans and to other places. 3 So they went to Rome and entered the senate chamber

[a] Gk *him*
[b] Gk *animals*
[c] Gk *his*
[d] Gk *them*

Josephus (*Ant.* 13.143), demands payment of back taxes. **54:** Trypho establishes *Antiochus* VI. **55:** *Discharged*, Gk "sent to the crows," suggesting contempt; this rebounded on Demetrius. **57:** The *four districts*, i.e., the three Samarian districts with Judea (11.34), or perhaps with Ekron (10.89). **58:** *Gold buckle*, cf. 10.89. **59:** Jonathan was already governor of Judea (10.65); *Simon* is now made Seleucid *governor* of the whole coastal region (with which he was familiar; see 10.74–85) from Ras en-Naqura, north of Ptolemais, to the Egyptian border (cf. Cendebaeus, 15.38).

11.60–74: Campaigns of Jonathan and Simon. 60: *Beyond the river*, the Greek means that Jonathan toured the province west of the Euphrates. *Askalon* (see 10.86n.) welcomed Jonathan; *Gaza* (ca. 12 mi [20 km] south of Askalon) opposed him, as it had Alexander the Great. **63:** *Kadesh in Galilee*, Tell Qades (Josh 12.22). **65–66:** *Beth-zur*, cf. 9.52; 11.41. **67:** *The waters of Gennesaret*, the Sea of Galilee, to the north of which, in *the plain of Hazor*, Jonathan intended to counter Demetrius at Kadesh. **71:** Cf. Josh 7.6–9. **74:** This narrative continues in 12.24.

12.1–23: Alliances with Rome and Sparta. 1: *The time was favorable*, the date is between Antiochus VI's accession (145 BCE) and Jonathan's death (142 BCE; 13.23), after Rome's destruction of the Achaean League in Greece (see 8.9–10n.). *Renew*, see 8.17–32. **2:** The *Spartans* (v. 2), a militaristic people, the rival of Athens in Greece, whose constitution, founded by the lawgiver Lycurgus, may have seemed to the Jews comparable to the Law of Moses. **3–4:** The renewal is assumed; the Romans sent *letters* to *people in every place* (compare the list in 15.22–23) requesting *safe conduct* for the envoys' return; Josephus preserves a similar letter (*Ant.* 14.233). **5–18:**

and said, "The high priest Jonathan and the Jewish nation have sent us to renew the former friendship and alliance with them." [4] And the Romans[a] gave them letters to the people in every place, asking them to provide for the envoys[b] safe conduct to the land of Judah.

[5] This is a copy of the letter that Jonathan wrote to the Spartans: [6] "The high priest Jonathan, the senate of the nation, the priests, and the rest of the Jewish people to their brothers the Spartans, greetings. [7] Already in time past a letter was sent to the high priest Onias from Arius,[c] who was king among you, stating that you are our brothers, as the appended copy shows. [8] Onias welcomed the envoy with honor, and received the letter, which contained a clear declaration of alliance and friendship. [9] Therefore, though we have no need of these things, since we have as encouragement the holy books that are in our hands, [10] we have undertaken to send to renew our family ties and friendship with you, so that we may not become estranged from you, for considerable time has passed since you sent your letter to us. [11] We therefore remember you constantly on every occasion, both at our festivals and on other appropriate days, at the sacrifices that we offer and in our prayers, as it is right and proper to remember brothers. [12] And we rejoice in your glory. [13] But as for ourselves, many trials and many wars have encircled us; the kings around us have waged war against us. [14] We were unwilling to annoy you and our other allies and friends with these wars, [15] for we have the help that comes from Heaven for our aid, and so we were delivered from our enemies, and our enemies were humbled. [16] We therefore have chosen Numenius son of Antiochus and Antipater son of Jason, and have sent them to Rome to renew our former friendship and alliance with them. [17] We have commanded them to go also to you and greet you and deliver to you this letter from us concerning the renewal of our family ties. [18] And now please send us a reply to this."

[19] This is a copy of the letter that they sent to Onias: [20] "King Arius of the Spartans, to the high priest Onias, greetings. [21] It has been found in writing concerning the Spartans and the Jews that they are brothers and are of the family of Abraham. [22] And now that we have learned this, please write us concerning your welfare; [23] we on our part write to you that your livestock and your property belong to us, and ours belong to you. We therefore command that our envoys[a] report to you accordingly."

[24] Now Jonathan heard that the commanders of Demetrius had returned, with a larger force than before, to wage war against him. [25] So he marched away from Jerusalem and met them in the region of Hamath, for he gave them no opportunity to invade his own country. [26] He sent spies to their camp, and they returned and reported to him that the enemy[a] were being drawn up in formation to attack the Jews[b] by night. [27] So when the

[a] Gk *they*
[b] Gk *them*
[c] Vg Compare verse 20: Gk *Darius*

This *letter* is a fiction concocted by the author; behind it lies the letter of vv. 19–21. **6:** *Senate* (Gk "gerousia"), elsewhere "elders" (cf. 7.33); later the Sanhedrin. *Brothers*, see vv. 6,11,21. **7:** *High priest Onias*, *Arius*, either Onias I (323–300 BCE) and Arius I (309–265), though the contact is most unlikely at this date; or Onias III (so Josephus, *Ant.* 12.225) murdered in 174 BCE (2 Macc 4.34), though there was no contemporary king *Arius* of Sparta (the author perhaps used the only Spartan royal name known to him). *Appended copy*, vv. 19–21. **9:** *Holy books*, "the Law and the Prophets and the other books of our ancestors" (Sir *Prologue*). **11–12:** Surely insincere. **13–15:** If authentic, tactless, with no reference to Spartan political difficulties. **16:** *Numenius, Antipater*, cf. 8.17n.; 14.22. **17:** The sending of ambassadors to Rome *also to you* is equally undiplomatic. **19–21:** This letter is probably inauthentic, though perhaps deriving from a source also known to Josephus (*Ant.* 12.225–27). **21:** *Brothers, of the family of Abraham*, an idea unlikely from a Spartan king. **23:** *Livestock* and *property*, most unlikely between Sparta and Judea. Although these letters were fictional, however, the diplomatic contacts they presuppose were real; the Spartan "kinship" is noted in 2 Macc 5.9.

12.24–38: Jonathan's war with Demetrius, continued. This narrative continues from 11.74. **25:** Reference to Jerusalem here and in 11.74 suggests that Jonathan returned south for the winter. **25:** *Hamath*, on the Orontes

sun had set, Jonathan commanded his troops to be alert and to keep their arms at hand so as to be ready all night for battle, and he stationed outposts around the camp. [28] When the enemy heard that Jonathan and his troops were prepared for battle, they were afraid and were terrified at heart; so they kindled fires in their camp and withdrew.[a] [29] But Jonathan and his troops did not know it until morning, for they saw the fires burning. [30] Then Jonathan pursued them, but he did not overtake them, for they had crossed the Eleutherus river. [31] So Jonathan turned aside against the Arabs who are called Zabadeans, and he crushed them and plundered them. [32] Then he broke camp and went to Damascus, and marched through all that region.

[33] Simon also went out and marched through the country as far as Askalon and the neighboring strongholds. He turned aside to Joppa and took it by surprise, [34] for he had heard that they were ready to hand over the stronghold to those whom Demetrius had sent. And he stationed a garrison there to guard it.

[35] When Jonathan returned he convened the elders of the people and planned with them to build strongholds in Judea, [36] to build the walls of Jerusalem still higher, and to erect a high barrier between the citadel and the city to separate it from the city, in order to isolate it so that its garrison[b] could neither buy nor sell. [37] So they gathered together to rebuild the city; part of the wall on the valley to the east had fallen, and he repaired the section called Chaphenatha. [38] Simon also built Adida in the Shephelah; he fortified it and installed gates with bolts.

[39] Then Trypho attempted to become king in Asia and put on the crown, and to raise his hand against King Antiochus. [40] He feared that Jonathan might not permit him to do so, but might make war on him, so he kept seeking to seize and kill him, and he marched out and came to Beth-shan. [41] Jonathan went out to meet him with forty thousand picked warriors, and he came to Beth-shan. [42] When Trypho saw that he had come with a large army, he was afraid to raise his hand against him. [43] So he received him with honor and commended him to all his Friends, and he gave him gifts and commanded his Friends and his troops to obey him as they would himself. [44] Then he said to Jonathan, "Why have you put all these people to so much trouble when we are not at war? [45] Dismiss them now to their homes and choose for yourself a few men to stay with you, and come with me to Ptolemais. I will hand it over to you as well as the other strongholds and the remaining troops and all the officials, and will turn around and go home. For that is why I am here."

[46] Jonathan[c] trusted him and did as he said; he sent away the troops, and they returned to the land of Judah. [47] He kept with himself three thousand men, two thousand of whom he left in Galilee, while one thousand accompanied him. [48] But when Jonathan entered Ptolemais, the people of Ptolemais closed the gates and seized him, and they killed with the sword all who had entered with him.

[49] Then Trypho sent troops and cavalry into Galilee and the Great Plain to destroy all Jonathan's soldiers. [50] But they realized that Jonathan had been seized and had perished

[a] Other ancient authorities omit *and withdrew*
[b] Gk *they*
[c] Gk *he*

River in northern Syria. **30:** *Crossed the Eleutherus river* (see 11.7n.), i.e., southwest toward the coast. **31:** *Zabadeans*, cf. Zabdiel (11.17), and modern Zebdani, north-northwest of *Damascus* (v. 32). **33–34:** Simon, in the south (11.64–65) surprises *Joppa* (previously taken by Jonathan, 10.76) and garrisons it. **35:** *Strongholds*, perhaps those built by Bacchides (9.50) and later deserted (10.12). **36:** *Still higher*, cf. 10.11. The *barrier* blockading the citadel and its garrison presaged its fall (13.49–52). **37:** *Valley to the east*, the Kidron. *Chaphenatha*, unidentified. **38:** *Adida*, Hadid (Ezra 2.33) near Lydda (11.34). *Shephelah*, foothills west of Judea.

12.39–53: Trypho captures Jonathan. 39: *King in Asia*, cf. 11.13. **40:** *Beth-shan* (see 5.52n.), at a strategic point in the Jordan Valley (5.52). **45:** *Ptolemais*, hostile to the Jews (5.15). Trypho repeats Demetrius's false promise (10.39). *Other strongholds*, apart from Beth-zur, Joppa, and Adida, already in Jewish hands. **48:** *Jonathan* is *seized*, but not yet killed (see 13.23). **49:** *Great Plain*, also called the Valley of Jezreel (Judg 6.33) and the plain of Es-

along with his men, and they encouraged one another and kept marching in close formation, ready for battle. 51 When their pursuers saw that they would fight for their lives, they turned back. 52 So they all reached the land of Judah safely, and they mourned for Jonathan and his companions and were in great fear; and all Israel mourned deeply. 53 All the nations around them tried to destroy them, for they said, "They have no leader or helper. Now therefore let us make war on them and blot out the memory of them from humankind."

13 Simon heard that Trypho had assembled a large army to invade the land of Judah and destroy it, 2 and he saw that the people were trembling with fear. So he went up to Jerusalem, and gathering the people together 3 he encouraged them, saying to them, "You yourselves know what great things my brothers and I and the house of my father have done for the laws and the sanctuary; you know also the wars and the difficulties that my brothers and I have seen. 4 By reason of this all my brothers have perished for the sake of Israel, and I alone am left. 5 And now, far be it from me to spare my life in any time of distress, for I am not better than my brothers. 6 But I will avenge my nation and the sanctuary and your wives and children, for all the nations have gathered together out of hatred to destroy us."

7 The spirit of the people was rekindled when they heard these words, 8 and they answered in a loud voice, "You are our leader in place of Judas and your brother Jonathan. 9 Fight our battles, and all that you say to us we will do." 10 So he assembled all the warriors and hurried to complete the walls of Jerusalem, and he fortified it on every side. 11 He sent Jonathan son of Absalom to Joppa, and with him a considerable army; he drove out its occupants and remained there.

12 Then Trypho left Ptolemais with a large army to invade the land of Judah, and Jonathan was with him under guard. 13 Simon encamped in Adida, facing the plain. 14 Trypho learned that Simon had risen up in place of his brother Jonathan, and that he was about to join battle with him, so he sent envoys to him and said, 15 "It is for the money that your brother Jonathan owed the royal treasury, in connection with the offices he held, that we are detaining him. 16 Send now one hundred talents of silver and two of his sons as hostages, so that when released he will not revolt against us, and we will release him."

17 Simon knew that they were speaking deceitfully to him, but he sent to get the money and the sons, so that he would not arouse great hostility among the people, who might say, 18 "It was because Simon[a] did not send him the money and the sons, that Jonathan[b] perished." 19 So he sent the sons and the hundred talents, but Trypho[b] broke his word and did not release Jonathan.

20 After this Trypho came to invade the country and destroy it, and he circled around by the way to Adora. But Simon and his army kept marching along opposite him to every place he went. 21 Now the men in the citadel kept sending envoys to Trypho urging him to come to them by way of the wilderness and to send them food. 22 So Trypho got all his cavalry

[a] Gk *I*
[b] Gk *he*

draelon (Jdt 1.8), extending from Mount Carmel to the Jordan Valley. **52–53:** *Mourned*, though Jonathan was not dead; *blot out the memory*, dramatic exaggeration (cf. 3.35).

13.1–11: Simon becomes leader. The date is somewhere between the accession of Demetrius II in 145 BCE (11.19) and the regaining of independence in 143 or 142 BCE (13.41). If Jonathan's campaigns (11.63–74; 12.24–32) belong to 144 BCE, Simon perhaps took over in 143 BCE. **4:** *Brothers . . . perished*, Eleazar (6.46), Judas (9.18), John (9.38); *I alone am left*, cf. 1 Kings 18.22. Jonathan, however, was still alive (cf. 13.23). **7–8:** These verses echo 2.67–68 and 9.28–31. In 2.67–68 Mattathias commissions his sons; in 9.28 the "friends of Judas" appointed Jonathan; now the people appoint Simon, an indication of political development. **10:** Simon urgently completes Jonathan's fortification of Jerusalem (12.35–37). **11:** *Jonathan son of Absalom*, perhaps brother of Mattathias (11.70). Simon strengthens his control of *Joppa* (cf. 12.33–34). The capture of this harbor was "to crown all his honor" (14.5).

13.12–30: Trypho invades Judea; the death of Jonathan. 13: *Adida*, see 12.38n. **16:** *Talents*, see 11.28n. **20:** *Ado-*

ready to go, but that night a very heavy snow fell, and he did not go because of the snow. He marched off and went into the land of Gilead. 23 When he approached Baskama, he killed Jonathan, and he was buried there. 24 Then Trypho turned and went back to his own land.

25 Simon sent and took the bones of his brother Jonathan, and buried him in Modein, the city of his ancestors. 26 All Israel bewailed him with great lamentation, and mourned for him many days. 27 And Simon built a monument over the tomb of his father and his brothers; he made it high so that it might be seen, with polished stone at the front and back. 28 He also erected seven pyramids, opposite one another, for his father and mother and four brothers. 29 For the pyramids[a] he devised an elaborate setting, erecting about them great columns, and on the columns he put suits of armor for a permanent memorial, and beside the suits of armor he carved ships, so that they could be seen by all who sail the sea. 30 This is the tomb that he built in Modein; it remains to this day.

31 Trypho dealt treacherously with the young King Antiochus; he killed him 32 and became king in his place, putting on the crown of Asia; and he brought great calamity on the land. 33 But Simon built up the strongholds of Judea and walled them all around, with high towers and great walls and gates and bolts, and he stored food in the strongholds. 34 Simon also chose emissaries and sent them to King Demetrius with a request to grant relief to the country, for all that Trypho did was to plunder. 35 King Demetrius sent him a favorable reply to this request, and wrote him a letter as follows, 36 "King Demetrius to Simon, the high priest and friend of kings, and to the elders and nation of the Jews, greetings. 37 We have received the gold crown and the palm branch that you[b] sent, and we are ready to make a general peace with you and to write to our officials to grant you release from tribute. 38 All the grants that we have made to you remain valid, and let the strongholds that you have built be your possession. 39 We pardon any errors and offenses committed to this day, and cancel the crown tax that you owe; and whatever other tax has been collected in Jerusalem shall be collected no longer. 40 And if any of you are qualified to be enrolled in our bodyguard,[c] let them be enrolled, and let there be peace between us."

41 In the one hundred seventieth year[d] the yoke of the Gentiles was removed from Israel, 42 and the people began to write in their documents and contracts, "In the first year of Simon the great high priest and commander and leader of the Jews."

43 In those days Simon[e] encamped against Gazara[f] and surrounded it with troops. He

a Gk *For these*
b The word *you* in verses 37-40 is plural
c Or *court*
d 142 B.C.
e Gk *he*
f Cn: Gk *Gaza*

ra (Adoraim, 2 Chr 11.9), a Hellenistic town in Idumea, southwest of Beth-zur, held by Simon. **22:** *Gilead*, east of the River Jordan. **23:** *Baskama*, unidentified, perhaps near the Sea of Galilee. **25–29:** *Modein*, see 2.1. Simon builds above the family tomb a typically Hellenistic victory *monument*, with *pyramids*, *columns*, *armor* (trophies), and *carved ships*; Simon (perhaps emulating Solomon; see 1 Kings 9.26–28; 10.11–12,22) was signaling Jewish marine ambitions for which the capture of Joppa was important.

13.31–53. Simon regains independence for Judea. 31–32: *Trypho . . . became king*, killing Antiochus, probably late 143, or 142 BCE. The last known coins of Antiochus VI are dated year 171, i.e., 142–141 BCE. *Crown of Asia*, cf. 12.39. **33:** *Strongholds*, Simon continues the policy of 11.66; 12.35,38. **34:** *Plunder*: the underlying Heb word ("ṭerepah") puns on Trypho. **36:** *High priest*, see 14.38,41. *Friend of kings*, an irregular and suspect phrase. *Elders*, see 7.33; 12.6n.,35. *Nation*, 11.30. **37:** *Gold crown, palm branch*, diplomatic gifts, tokens of allegiance (cf. 2 Macc 14.4). *General peace, release from tribute*, the latter, long sought (cf. 11.28) meant independence. **38:** *Strongholds*, Beth-zur, Adida, Joppa. **39:** *Crown tax*, *other tax*, ceded already (11.35). **40:** *Enrolled in our bodyguard*, cf. 10.36, which merely allowed enrollment in the king's forces. **41:** *Yoke of the Gentiles*, i.e., Seleucid rule. *The one hundred seventieth year,* reckoned from 312 or 311 BCE, began in spring 143 or 142 BCE; the date is therefore 142 or 141 BCE. **42:** *Documents and contracts*, unfortunately none survive. The titles *high priest* (14.27,38,41), *commander* (11.59), and *leader of the Jews* (perhaps the "ethnarch" of 14.47) were conferred by the Seleucids. **43:** *Gazara*, a correction

made a siege engine, brought it up to the city, and battered and captured one tower. 44 The men in the siege engine leaped out into the city, and a great tumult arose in the city. 45 The men in the city, with their wives and children, went up on the wall with their clothes torn, and they cried out with a loud voice, asking Simon to make peace with them; 46 they said, "Do not treat us according to our wicked acts but according to your mercy." 47 So Simon reached an agreement with them and stopped fighting against them. But he expelled them from the city and cleansed the houses in which the idols were located, and then entered it with hymns and praise. 48 He removed all uncleanness from it, and settled in it those who observed the law. He also strengthened its fortifications and built in it a house for himself.

49 Those who were in the citadel at Jerusalem were prevented from going in and out to buy and sell in the country. So they were very hungry, and many of them perished from famine. 50 Then they cried to Simon to make peace with them, and he did so. But he expelled them from there and cleansed the citadel from its pollutions. 51 On the twenty-third day of the second month, in the one hundred seventy-first year,[a] the Jews[b] entered it with praise and palm branches, and with harps and cymbals and stringed instruments, and with hymns and songs, because a great enemy had been crushed and removed from Israel. 52 Simon[c] decreed that every year they should celebrate this day with rejoicing. He strengthened the fortifications of the temple hill alongside the citadel, and he and his men lived there. 53 Simon saw that his son John had reached manhood, and so he made him commander of all the forces; and he lived at Gazara.

14 In the one hundred seventy-second year[d] King Demetrius assembled his forces and marched into Media to obtain help, so that he could make war against Trypho. 2 When King Arsaces of Persia and Media heard that Demetrius had invaded his territory, he sent one of his generals to take him alive. 3 The general[c] went and defeated the army of Demetrius, and seized him and took him to Arsaces, who put him under guard.

4 The land[e] had rest all the days of Simon.
He sought the good of his nation;
his rule was pleasing to them,
as was the honor shown him, all his days.
5 To crown all his honors he took Joppa for a harbor,
and opened a way to the isles of the sea.
6 He extended the borders of his nation,
and gained full control of the country.
7 He gathered a host of captives;
he ruled over Gazara and Beth-zur and the citadel,
and he removed its uncleanness from it;
and there was none to oppose him.
8 They tilled their land in peace;
the ground gave its increase,
and the trees of the plains their fruit.

[a] 141 B.C.
[b] Gk *they*
[c] Gk *He*
[d] 140 B.C.
[e] Other ancient authorities add *of Judah*

for Gk "Gaza" (11.61), which remained independent until 96 BCE. Gazara, garrisoned by Bacchides (9.52), was an important capture. **47:** *Idols*, cf. the treatment of Azotus (5.68). **48:** *House*, an inscription found in Gazara calls for fire to descend on Simon's palace. **49–50:** The *citadel* (cf. 12.36) is finally starved out and ritually cleansed. **51:** *Twenty-third day of the second month* (Iyyar), a major event, dated precisely in late May/early June 142 or 141 BCE, and celebrated annually (mentioned in *Megillat Ta'anith*, "Scroll of Fasting"). *Harps*, etc: cf. 4.54. **52:** *Fortifications of the temple hill*, cf. 12.36. **53:** *John,* see 16.1–24.

14.1–3: Exile of Demetrius II. 1: The *one hundred and seventy-second year* began in autumn 141 BCE, and the campaign in spring 140 BCE. **2:** *Persia and Media*, formerly part of the Seleucid empire, were under Parthian control; *Arsaces* VI Mithradates I (171–138 BCE) occupied Seleucia on the Tigris. Demetrius attempted to recover Babylonia. **3:** Arsaces held Demetrius, but gave him his daughter as wife. Demetrius regained his throne and ruled 129–126 BCE.

14.4–15: Poetic eulogy of Simon. Compare the ode in praise of Judas, 3.3–9. **4:** *Had rest*, cf. Judg 3.30; 5.31; etc. **5:** *Joppa*, 13.11. **6:** *Extended the borders*, Jonathan had added three districts (11.34); Simon settled Jews in

[9] Old men sat in the streets;
they all talked together of good things,
and the youths put on splendid military attire.
[10] He supplied the towns with food,
and furnished them with the means of defense,
until his renown spread to the ends of the earth.
[11] He established peace in the land,
and Israel rejoiced with great joy.
[12] All the people sat under their own vines and fig trees,
and there was none to make them afraid.
[13] No one was left in the land to fight them,
and the kings were crushed in those days.
[14] He gave help to all the humble among his people;
he sought out the law,
and did away with all the renegades and outlaws.
[15] He made the sanctuary glorious,
and added to the vessels of the sanctuary.

[16] It was heard in Rome, and as far away as Sparta, that Jonathan had died, and they were deeply grieved. [17] When they heard that his brother Simon had become high priest in his stead, and that he was ruling over the country and the towns in it, [18] they wrote to him on bronze tablets to renew with him the friendship and alliance that they had established with his brothers Judas and Jonathan. [19] And these were read before the assembly in Jerusalem.

[20] This is a copy of the letter that the Spartans sent:

"The rulers and the city of the Spartans to the high priest Simon and to the elders and the priests and the rest of the Jewish people, our brothers, greetings. [21] The envoys who were sent to our people have told us about your glory and honor, and we rejoiced at their coming. [22] We have recorded what they said in our public decrees, as follows, 'Numenius son of Antiochus and Antipater son of Jason, envoys of the Jews, have come to us to renew their friendship with us. [23] It has pleased our people to receive these men with honor and to put a copy of their words in the public archives, so that the people of the Spartans may have a record of them. And they have sent a copy of this to the high priest Simon.'"

[24] After this Simon sent Numenius to Rome with a large gold shield weighing one thousand minas, to confirm the alliance with the Romans.[a]

[25] When the people heard these things they said, "How shall we thank Simon and his sons? [26] For he and his brothers and the house of his father have stood firm; they have fought and repulsed Israel's enemies and established its freedom." [27] So they made a record on bronze tablets and put it on pillars on Mount Zion.

[a] Gk *them*

Joppa and Gazara. **7:** The capture of *Gazara*, *Beth-zur,* and the *citadel* were major achievements. **8–15:** Simon's Judea is pictured in idyllic and scriptural terms from Lev 26.4; 1 Kings 4.25; Ezek 36.33–36; Mic 4.4; Zech 8.4; and elsewhere. **15:** *Made the sanctuary glorious*, no details are known.

14.16–24: Diplomacy with Rome and Sparta. These verses, interweaving contacts with Rome and Sparta, must be connected with 12.1–23 and 15.15–24, and present many problems. **16:** *As far away as Sparta*, an editorial link between two separate accounts. **18:** The Romans *wrote*, a most unlikely initiative. Probably they were responding to Simon's initiative described in v. 24. *Bronze tablets* suggest memorial plaques, not letters. *Renew . . . established with . . . Judas and Jonathan*, cf. 8.21; 12.1. **20–23:** This *letter* is clearly linked with that of 12.5–18 and seems equally inauthentic. **24:** *Numenius*, cf. 12.16; 14.22; 15.15. His travels are incomprehensible in their present sequence; this visit to Rome *to confirm the alliance* belongs before the Roman response of 14.8. *Gold shield . . . one thousand minas*, an enormous gift (weighing more than 1,100 lb [500 kg]) for a small nation.

14.25–49: Decree in honor of Simon. Such decrees were common in the Hellenistic world. They usually record the honorand's achievements in "whereas" clauses (cf. "since," v. 29), ending with the decree ("it seemed good to . . . "; cf. "have resolved," v. 41). **27:** *A record on bronze tablets*, cf. 8.21; 14.18. *Mount Zion*, 4.37; cf. Ps 2.6. *Copy*, vv. 27–45 seem partly quotation, partly reportage by 1 Macc. *The eighteenth day of Elul, in the one hundred seventy-second year*, a Jewish date, 13 September 141 or 140 BCE. Simon's *third year*, his first was year 170; cf. 13.41.

This is a copy of what they wrote: "On the eighteenth day of Elul, in the one hundred seventy-second year,[a] which is the third year of the great high priest Simon, 28 in Asaramel,[b] in the great assembly of the priests and the people and the rulers of the nation and the elders of the country, the following was proclaimed to us:

29 "Since wars often occurred in the country, Simon son of Mattathias, a priest of the sons[c] of Joarib, and his brothers, exposed themselves to danger and resisted the enemies of their nation, in order that their sanctuary and the law might be preserved; and they brought great glory to their nation. 30 Jonathan rallied the[d] nation, became their high priest, and was gathered to his people. 31 When their enemies decided to invade their country and lay hands on their sanctuary, 32 then Simon rose up and fought for his nation. He spent great sums of his own money; he armed the soldiers of his nation and paid them wages. 33 He fortified the towns of Judea, and Beth-zur on the borders of Judea, where formerly the arms of the enemy had been stored, and he placed there a garrison of Jews. 34 He also fortified Joppa, which is by the sea, and Gazara, which is on the borders of Azotus, where the enemy formerly lived. He settled Jews there, and provided in those towns[e] whatever was necessary for their restoration.

35 "The people saw Simon's faithfulness[f] and the glory that he had resolved to win for his nation, and they made him their leader and high priest, because he had done all these things and because of the justice and loyalty that he had maintained toward his nation. He sought in every way to exalt his people. 36 In his days things prospered in his hands, so that the Gentiles were put out of the[d] country, as were also those in the city of David in Jerusalem, who had built themselves a citadel from which they used to sally forth and defile the environs of the sanctuary, doing great damage to its purity. 37 He settled Jews in it and fortified it for the safety of the country and of the city, and built the walls of Jerusalem higher.

38 "In view of these things King Demetrius confirmed him in the high priesthood, 39 made him one of his Friends, and paid him high honors. 40 For he had heard that the Jews were addressed by the Romans as friends and allies and brothers, and that the Romans[g] had received the envoys of Simon with honor.

41 "The Jews and their priests have resolved that Simon should be their leader and high priest forever, until a trustworthy prophet should arise, 42 and that he should be governor over them and that he should take charge of the sanctuary and appoint officials over its tasks and over the country and the weapons and the strongholds, and that he should take charge of the sanctuary, 43 and that he should be obeyed by all, and that all contracts in the

[a] 140 B.C.
[b] This word resembles the Hebrew words for *the court of the people of God* or *the prince of the people of God*
[c] Meaning of Gk uncertain
[d] Gk *their*
[e] Gk *them*
[f] Other ancient authorities read *conduct*
[g] Gk *they*

28: *Asaramel,* a corruption (see textual note *b*), possibly of the title "prince of God's people." **30:** *Became their high priest*, 10.20–21. This reference to Jonathan is intrusive in a decree honoring Simon. **31:** *Enemies . . . invade their country*, i.e., Trypho, 13.1. **32:** *His own money*, like other Hellenistic rulers, Simon paid for his army. **33–34:** *Fortified . . . Judea* (12.38; 13.33), *Beth-zur* (11.65–66), *Joppa* (12.33–34), *Gazara* (13.43–48), near *Azotus* (14.34). **35:** This verse, speaking of the people's actions, divides vv. 34 and 36, which belong together. **36:** *Gentiles . . . put out*, from Beth-zur (11.66), Joppa (13.1), Gazara (13.47), *citadel* (13.50). **37:** *Settled Jews in it and fortified it*, not mentioned in 13.50. *Built the walls of Jerusalem higher*, continuing Jonathan's work (12.36; 13.52). **38–39:** 1 Macc reports *Demetrius* II's action, not explicitly stated in 13.36–37, and motivation, clearly not original to the decree. **40:** The author similarly adds reference to Roman approval of Simon. **41–43:** The actual decree making Simon *leader* (Gk "hegoumenos," 13.8,42), *high priest* ("archiereus," 13.36,42), and *governor* ("strategos"; cf. 13.42), with civil, religious and military powers. *High priest forever*, i.e., for life, or to create a priestly dynasty. *Until a trustworthy prophet should arise*, i.e., to approve this high priesthood or reveal another. **42:** *Take charge of the sanctuary*, repeated later (v. 43) and additional here. **43:** *All contracts*, cf. 13.42. *Purple and . . . gold* (buckle): the insignia

country should be written in his name, and that he should be clothed in purple and wear gold.

44 "None of the people or priests shall be permitted to nullify any of these decisions or to oppose what he says, or to convene an assembly in the country without his permission, or to be clothed in purple or put on a gold buckle. 45 Whoever acts contrary to these decisions or rejects any of them shall be liable to punishment."

46 All the people agreed to grant Simon the right to act in accordance with these decisions. 47 So Simon accepted and agreed to be high priest, to be commander and ethnarch of the Jews and priests, and to be protector of them all.[a] 48 And they gave orders to inscribe this decree on bronze tablets, to put them up in a conspicuous place in the precincts of the sanctuary, 49 and to deposit copies of them in the treasury, so that Simon and his sons might have them.

15 Antiochus, son of King Demetrius, sent a letter from the islands of the sea to Simon, the priest and ethnarch of the Jews, and to all the nation; 2 its contents were as follows: "King Antiochus to Simon the high priest and ethnarch and to the nation of the Jews, greetings. 3 Whereas certain scoundrels have gained control of the kingdom of our ancestors, and I intend to lay claim to the kingdom so that I may restore it as it formerly was, and have recruited a host of mercenary troops and have equipped warships, 4 and intend to make a landing in the country so that I may proceed against those who have destroyed our country and those who have devastated many cities in my kingdom, 5 now therefore I confirm to you all the tax remissions that the kings before me have granted you, and a release from all the other payments from which they have released you. 6 I permit you to mint your own coinage as money for your country, 7 and I grant freedom to Jerusalem and the sanctuary. All the weapons that you have prepared and the strongholds that you have built and now hold shall remain yours. 8 Every debt you owe to the royal treasury and any such future debts shall be canceled for you from henceforth and for all time. 9 When we gain control of our kingdom, we will bestow great honor on you and your nation and the temple, so that your glory will become manifest in all the earth."

10 In the one hundred seventy-fourth year[b] Antiochus set out and invaded the land of his ancestors. All the troops rallied to him, so that there were only a few with Trypho. 11 Antiochus pursued him, and Trypho[c] came in his flight to Dor, which is by the sea; 12 for he knew that troubles had converged on him, and his troops had deserted him. 13 So Antiochus encamped against Dor, and with him were one hundred twenty thousand warriors and eight thousand cavalry. 14 He surrounded the town, and the ships joined battle from the sea; he pressed the town hard from land and sea, and permitted no one to leave or enter it.

15 Then Numenius and his companions arrived from Rome, with letters to the kings and countries, in which the following was written: 16 "Lucius, consul of the Romans, to King Ptolemy, greetings. 17 The envoys of the Jews have come to us as our friends and allies

[a] Or *to preside over them all*
[b] 138 B.C.
[c] Gk *he*

of kings' Friends and high priests (cf. 10.20,89; 14.44). **44–45:** Safeguarding Simon's position. **47:** Simon *agreed* to be *high priest . . . commander* (Gk "strategos"), *and ethnarch*, an alternate Greek title for "leader of the people." **48:** *Bronze tablets*, cf. v. 27.

15.1–41: Antiochus VII, Trypho, and Simon. 1: With Antiochus VI dead and Demetrius II captive in Parthia, Demetrius's brother *Antiochus* VII Sidetes (named after his home town Side in Pamphylia) acceded in 139 or 138 BCE. *Islands of the sea,* probably Rhodes in the Aegean off the coast of Asia Minor. **2:** *Priest, ethnarch*, cf. 14.47. **5:** *Remissions*, cf. 10.25–45; 11.30–37; 13.38–39. **6:** *Coinage*, a new privilege (but soon withdrawn, v. 27), of minting copper (not silver or gold) coins. No coins of Simon are known. **7:** *Freedom to Jerusalem and the sanctuary* (cf. 10.31; 11.34) may have meant that Jerusalem was to be sacred, with right of asylum, rather than tax exempt. **9:** Antiochus clearly assumes that Judea, though with some independence, remains part of his empire. **10:** *Trypho*, cf. 12.39. *The one hundred and seventy-fourth year* began in autumn 139 BCE; Antiochus set out the following spring. **11:** *Dor*, an ancient port south of Mount Carmel. **15–24:** These verses interrupt the account of Antio-

to renew our ancient friendship and alliance. They had been sent by the high priest Simon and by the Jewish people [18] and have brought a gold shield weighing one thousand minas. [19] We therefore have decided to write to the kings and countries that they should not seek their harm or make war against them and their cities and their country, or make alliance with those who war against them. [20] And it has seemed good to us to accept the shield from them. [21] Therefore if any scoundrels have fled to you from their country, hand them over to the high priest Simon, so that he may punish them according to their law."

[22] The consul[a] wrote the same thing to King Demetrius and to Attalus and Ariarathes and Arsaces, [23] and to all the countries, and to Sampsames,[b] and to the Spartans, and to Delos, and to Myndos, and to Sicyon, and to Caria, and to Samos, and to Pamphylia, and to Lycia, and to Halicarnassus, and to Rhodes, and to Phaselis, and to Cos, and to Side, and to Aradus and Gortyna and Cnidus and Cyprus and Cyrene. [24] They also sent a copy of these things to the high priest Simon.

[25] King Antiochus besieged Dor for the second time, continually throwing his forces against it and making engines of war; and he shut Trypho up and kept him from going out or in. [26] And Simon sent to Antiochus[c] two thousand picked troops, to fight for him, and silver and gold and a large amount of military equipment. [27] But he refused to receive them, and broke all the agreements he formerly had made with Simon, and became estranged from him. [28] He sent to him Athenobius, one of his Friends, to confer with him, saying, "You hold control of Joppa and Gazara and the citadel in Jerusalem; they are cities of my kingdom. [29] You have devastated their territory, you have done great damage in the land, and you have taken possession of many places in my kingdom. [30] Now then, hand over the cities that you have seized and the tribute money of the places that you have conquered outside the borders of Judea; [31] or else pay me five hundred talents of silver for the destruction that you have caused and five hundred talents more for the tribute money of the cities. Otherwise we will come and make war on you."

[32] So Athenobius, the king's Friend, came to Jerusalem, and when he saw the splendor of Simon, and the sideboard with its gold and silver plate, and his great magnificence, he was amazed. When he reported to him the king's message, [33] Simon said to him in reply: "We have neither taken foreign land nor seized foreign property, but only the inheritance of our ancestors, which at one time had been unjustly taken by our enemies. [34] Now that we have the opportunity, we are firmly holding the inheritance of our ancestors. [35] As for Joppa and Gazara, which you demand, they were causing great damage among the people and to our land; for them we will give you one hundred talents."

[a] Gk *He*
[b] The name is uncertain
[c] Gk *him*

chus's pursuit of Trypho and clearly belong with 14.24. **16:** *Lucius*, possibly Lucius Caecilius Metellus, *consul* in Rome 142 BCE, or Lucius Valerius Flaccus, praetor 134 BCE and consul 131 BCE, with whom Josephus (*Ant.* 145–148) associates an almost identical Jewish mission (though dating it to Hyrcanus II's time [63–40 BCE]). Josephus has perhaps confused consuls and dating. **18:** *Weighing one thousand minas* (see 14,24n.), according to Josephus (*Ant.* 14.147), "worth fifty thousand gold pieces." **22:** *Demetrius* II, cf. 11.19; 14.1; *Attalus* II (159–38) of Pergamum; *Ariarathes* V (162–131) of Cappadocia; *Arsaces*, cf. 14.2. **23:** A list of independent cities and states: *Sampsames*, possibly Samsun on the Black Sea. In Greece: the *Spartans* (see 12.2), and *Sicyon*, on the Gulf of Corinth. Aegean islands: *Delos*, a free port, notorious for its slave trade, with a Jewish population and synagogue; *Samos*; *Rhodes* (cf. Acts 21.1); *Cos* (cf. Acts 21.1). Crete: *Gortyna*. On the southwest coast of modern Turkey: *Caria* and *Lycia*, states; *Myndos*; *Halicarnassus*, birthplace of the Greek historian Herodotus; *Cnidus*. On the south coast of Turkey: *Pamphylia* (cf. Acts 13.13); *Phaselis*; *Side* (cf.15.1n.), later notorious for piracy. Phoenician coast: *Aradus*. Eastern Mediterranean: *Cyprus*. North Africa: *Cyrene* (cf. Mark 15.21). Ptolemy VIII of Egypt claimed these last two for his empire. **25:** *For the second time*, an inaccurate gloss probably caused by the intrusion of vv. 15–24 into this narrative. **26:** Simon sends military aid to Antiochus, thus accepting his political allegiance. **27:** *Agreements*, cf. vv. 5–9. **28:** *Joppa*, *Gazara*, and the *citadel* were Seleucid possessions before Simon took them, and Antiochus's claims (vv. 30–31) had some justification. **31:** *Or else* suggests that Antiochus was open to negotiation. *Talents,*

Athenobius[a] did not answer him a word,
[36] but returned in wrath to the king and
reported to him these words, and also the
splendor of Simon and all that he had seen.
And the king was very angry.

[37] Meanwhile Trypho embarked on a ship
and escaped to Orthosia. [38] Then the king
made Cendebeus commander-in-chief of
the coastal country, and gave him troops of
infantry and cavalry. [39] He commanded him
to encamp against Judea, to build up Kedron
and fortify its gates, and to make war on the
people; but the king pursued Trypho. [40] So
Cendebeus came to Jamnia and began to
provoke the people and invade Judea and
take the people captive and kill them. [41] He
built up Kedron and stationed horsemen and
troops there, so that they might go out and
make raids along the highways of Judea, as
the king had ordered him.

16 John went up from Gazara and
reported to his father Simon what
Cendebeus had done. [2] And Simon called in
his two eldest sons Judas and John, and said
to them: "My brothers and I and my father's
house have fought the wars of Israel from our
youth until this day, and things have pros-
pered in our hands so that we have delivered
Israel many times. [3] But now I have grown old,
and you by Heaven's[b] mercy are mature in
years. Take my place and my brother's, and go
out and fight for our nation, and may the help
that comes from Heaven be with you."

[4] So John[c] chose out of the country twenty
thousand warriors and cavalry, and they
marched against Cendebeus and camped for
the night in Modein. [5] Early in the morning
they started out and marched into the plain,
where a large force of infantry and cavalry
was coming to meet them; and a stream lay
between them. [6] Then he and his army lined
up against them. He saw that the soldiers
were afraid to cross the stream, so he crossed
over first; and when his troops saw him, they
crossed over after him. [7] Then he divided the
army and placed the cavalry in the center
of the infantry, for the cavalry of the enemy
were very numerous. [8] They sounded the
trumpets, and Cendebeus and his army were
put to flight; many of them fell wounded and
the rest fled into the stronghold. [9] At that
time Judas the brother of John was wounded,
but John pursued them until Cendebeus[d]
reached Kedron, which he had built. [10] They
also fled into the towers that were in the
fields of Azotus, and John[d] burned it with
fire, and about two thousand of them fell. He
then returned to Judea safely.

[11] Now Ptolemy son of Abubus had been
appointed governor over the plain of Jericho;
he had a large store of silver and gold, [12] for he
was son-in-law of the high priest. [13] His heart
was lifted up; he determined to get control
of the country, and made treacherous plans
against Simon and his sons, to do away with
them. [14] Now Simon was visiting the towns
of the country and attending to their needs,
and he went down to Jericho with his sons
Mattathias and Judas, in the one hundred
seventy-seventh year,[e] in the eleventh
month, which is the month of Shebat. [15] The
son of Abubus received them treacherously

[a] Gk *He*
[b] Gk *his*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *he*
[d] Gk *he*
[e] 134 B.C.

see 11.28n. **32:** *Gold and silver plate*, the gifts of Trypho (11.58), provocatively displayed. **35:** Simon is prepared to negotiate over *Joppa* and *Gazara*. **37:** *Orthosia*, a Phoenician city north of Tripolis. **38:** *Commander-in-chief of the coastal country*, Simon was governor ("strategos") of the coast south of the Ladder of Tyre (cf. 11.59); Antiochus apparently replaces him with the higher ranking ("epistrategos") Cendebaeus. **39:** *Kedron*, cf. 16.9, near Jamnia, perhaps the village of Qatra. **40:** *Jamnia*, cf. 4.15n.; 10.69.

16.1–10: John defeats Cendebaeus. 1: *Gazara*, John's home, cf.13.53. **2–3:** Cf. Mattathias's speech, 2.49–68. **4:** *Modein*, see 2.1n. **8:** *Stronghold,* i.e., Kedron, cf. v. 9; 15.39. **10:** *Azotus*, burned by Jonathan (10.84). These verses give a confusing picture.

16.11–22: The deaths of Simon and his sons Mattathias and Judas, and the accession of John Hyrcanus. 11–12: *Ptolemy son of Abubus*, Hellenized Semitic names. His wealth came from his governorship of the rich plain of Jericho (cf. Gen 13.10) and his father-in-law's income. **14:** Though retired (v. 3) Simon is still active. *Mattathias* and *Judas*, probably named after Simon's father and uncle. *Shebat*, the date, cast in Jewish form, is

in the little stronghold called Dok, which he had built; he gave them a great banquet, and hid men there. [16] When Simon and his sons were drunk, Ptolemy and his men rose up, took their weapons, rushed in against Simon in the banquet hall and killed him and his two sons, as well as some of his servants. [17] So he committed an act of great treachery and returned evil for good.

[18] Then Ptolemy wrote a report about these things and sent it to the king, asking him to send troops to aid him and to turn over to him the towns and the country. [19] He sent other troops to Gazara to do away with John; he sent letters to the captains asking them to come to him so that he might give them silver and gold and gifts; [20] and he sent other troops to take possession of Jerusalem and the temple hill. [21] But someone ran ahead and reported to John at Gazara that his father and brothers had perished, and that "he has sent men to kill you also." [22] When he heard this, he was greatly shocked; he seized the men who came to destroy him and killed them, for he had found out that they were seeking to destroy him.

[23] The rest of the acts of John and his wars and the brave deeds that he did, and the building of the walls that he completed, and his achievements, [24] are written in the annals of his high priesthood, from the time that he became high priest after his father.

January/February 135 or 134 BCE. **15:** *Dok*, the fortress on the Mount of Temptation above the spring 'Ain Duk, overlooking Jericho. **19:** *Gazara*, John's home (cf. v. 1), ca. 34 mi (55 km) west of Jericho. **20:** Ptolemy's plot failed, information reaching John before Ptolemy could take control. Ptolemy retreated to Dok, where John besieged him, and then fled to Philadelphia (Amman); Josephus, *Ant.* 13.230–235.

16.23–24: Epilogue. Compare the epilogue to Judas's career, 9.22. These verses imitate summaries familiar from 1–2 Kings, e.g., 2 Kings 14.28–29. **23:** John is presented as a worthy successor, with his *brave deeds* and *building of the walls* (probably walls destroyed by Antiochus VII, [Josephus, *Ant.* 13.247], who invaded Judea in 134 BCE, cf. his threat, 15.31). **24:** The author prefers not to describe John's career, referring the reader to *annals*: any existing were probably lost when the Romans destroyed the Temple (70 CE). John's *high priesthood* (134–104 BCE) appears to be in the past. 1 Macc was perhaps written during his high priesthood and completed shortly after it.

2 MACCABEES

TITLE

The title Maccabees derives from Heb *maqqabi*, "hammer" (cf. Isa 44.12), the nickname given to Judas Maccabeus, the leader of the Jewish revolt that the story narrates. The original Greek title was "Book Recounting the Matters Pertaining to Maccabeus." The titles of the two main manuscripts of this work specifically refer to "the deeds of Judas Maccabeus" (terming it, respectively, an "epistle" or an "epitome" about those deeds). This title is especially appropriate for this work, in contrast to 1 Maccabees, which develops the history of several subsequent members of the Hasmonean dynasty after Judas.

CANONICAL STATUS

Second Maccabees is part of the Roman Catholic canon and Eastern Orthodox canons and the Protestant Apocrypha, but has no sacred status in Judaism. The text survived as part of the Septuagint (LXX), the Greek version of the Hebrew scriptures.

DATE, AUTHORSHIP, AND LITERARY HISTORY

In the introduction, the author tells us that the work is an abridgement of a longer work, now lost, written by Jason of Cyrene. Jason, otherwise unknown probably wrote in the mid-second century BCE, within a decade or so of the last events described in the work. The present abridgement was produced not long thereafter, around the same time as 1 Maccabees. Whereas 1 Maccabees was originally composed in Hebrew, 2 Maccabees was composed in Greek.

STRUCTURE AND CONTENTS

The body of the work (chs 4–15) deals with Judean history from King Antiochus IV Epiphanes' ascent to the Seleucid throne in 175 BCE to Judas Maccabeus's victory over the Seleucid general Nicanor in 161 BCE. It is prefaced (chs 1–2) by Palestinian letters urging the Jews of Egypt to celebrate the festival of Hanukkah, which commemorates Judas's purification and rededication of the Temple of Jerusalem in 164 BCE; by the abridger's introduction (2.19–32); and by a story (ch 3) about the way the Temple was miraculously preserved from desecration in the days of Antiochus's predecessor, an episode that in its present context serves as something of an idyllic prologue to the book's main story.

Chapter 4 begins that story with the introduction of Hellenized institutions into Jerusalem, which, according to the author, engendered sinful neglect of true Judaism. God, in response, "disregarded" (5.17) Jerusalem, i.e., suspended his providential care for it and thus allowed terrible things to happen, culminating in Antiochus's decrees against Judaism. These decrees then led to the noble martyrdom of those who refused to obey (chs 6–7).

Beginning in ch 8, however, God's anger changes to mercy (8.5; the pivotal verse of the book), and things go dramatically uphill: Judas Maccabeus wins battle after battle, Antiochus dies a terrible death (ch 9), Judas retakes Jerusalem and restores proper worship in the Temple (ch 10), and further victories bring about the repeal of Antiochus's decrees against Judaism (ch 11). More campaigns follow (chs 12–13) until the Seleucid army, commanded by Nicanor, is finally and decisively defeated. The book ends with the establishment of a holiday, "Nicanor's Day," to commemorate that event.

Accordingly, the main part of the book has two parts, in each of which, in the tradition of biblical dual causality, history and theology coincide. Chapters 4–7 present the problem: sin leads to persecution and Antiochus has the upper hand, while chs 8–15 present the solution: atonement makes for "reconciliation" (5.20; 7.33; 8.29) between the Jews and God, and Judas wins victory after victory until the circle is completed. The narrative opens in 3.1 with "the city" being once upon a time in ideal circumstances, and closes with the announcement in 15.37 that "the city" was restored to (other) ideal circumstances and so remained happily ever after.

INTERPRETATION

The book is a fascinating blend of Hellenism and Judaism. It was composed in the literary Greek of its day, comparable to that of the second-century BCE Greek historian Polybius, and has numerous allusions to Greek

literature. For example, the author compares Antiochus's arrogance to that of the Persian king Xerxes (5.21; 9.8), portrays his heroes as complete Hellenistic gentlemen (4.37; 15.12,30), depicts his central martyr as a Jewish Socrates, and throughout the story, focuses upon Jerusalem as the Jews' *polis*, portraying Antiochus as a "barbarian" who tried to change the city's "constitution" and forbid Jews to "act as citizens" (6.1) according to Jewish law. But it is also a very Jewish book; its basic interpretative model is the Song of Moses (Deut 32), according to which God providentially cares for the Jews but hides his face when they sin, thus allowing foreigners to persecute them until the shedding of "his servants'" blood works atonement, so that God steps in, revenges himself upon their enemies, and restores his providential care for them. The author composes several substantial excurses (4.16–17; 5.17–20; 6.12–17), as well as various shorter remarks (e.g., 8.5; 9.13) to make sure readers understand his interpretation of events.

In addition to providing a parallel witness to the events reported in 1 Macc 1–7, this work (apart from the two introductory epistles) also bears witness to Judaism in the Hellenistic Diaspora. While those opening epistles have much in common with 1 Maccabees, the body of the book aligns more easily with such Diaspora works as 3 Maccabees, the Letter of Aristeas, and the works of Philo. This affinity is especially evident in the book's rosy picture of the Jews' usual relations with Gentiles (e.g. 4.35–36,49; contrast 1 Macc 5.1–2; 12.53), its assumption that Gentile rulers are usually benevolent (3.1–3; 5.16; contrast 1 Macc 1.9), its relative lack of interest in the Temple rituals (contrast 5.16 with the detail in 1 Macc 1.21–22 and note 2 Maccabees' emphasis upon God's residence in heaven in 3.39; 14.35), its high esteem for martyrs (see 6.11n.), and its insistence upon the priority of the people rather than the place (5.19; see also 5.6n).

Daniel R. Schwartz

1 The Jews in Jerusalem and those in the land of Judea,
To their Jewish kindred in Egypt,
Greetings and true peace.

[2] May God do good to you, and may he remember his covenant with Abraham and Isaac and Jacob, his faithful servants. [3] May he give you all a heart to worship him and to do his will with a strong heart and a willing spirit. [4] May he open your heart to his law and his commandments, and may he bring peace. [5] May he hear your prayers and be reconciled to you, and may he not forsake you in time of evil. [6] We are now praying for you here.

[7] In the reign of Demetrius, in the one hundred sixty-ninth year,[a] we Jews wrote to you, in the critical distress that came upon us in those years after Jason and his company revolted from the holy land and the kingdom [8] and burned the gate and shed innocent blood. We prayed to the Lord and were heard, and we offered sacrifice and grain offering, and we lit the lamps and set out the loaves. [9] And now see that you keep the festival of booths in the month of Chislev, in the one hundred eighty-eighth year.[b]

[a] 143 B.C.
[b] 124 B.C.

1.1–9: Letter to the Jews in Egypt. This letter from Jerusalem invites the Jews of Egypt to observe the Hanukkah festival by referring to a previous letter written in the *one hundred sixty-ninth year* of the Seleucid era (v. 7), in the reign of Demetrius II, i.e., 143/142 BCE, which overlapped the first year of Hasmonean independence, according to 1 Macc 13.41. The letter portrays the Jews' troubles as having begun with Jason's revolt against the kingdom (v. 7), i.e., the kingdom of God; see ch 4. Thus, this epistle was written as something of a cover letter accompanying the body of the work, in an attempt to convince the Jews of Egypt to join in celebrating the Hasmoneans' victory. **2:** See Gen 15.18; 26.3; 35.12. **8:** *Lit the lamps and set out the loaves*, as mandated by Lev 24.1–9; see 10.3. **9:** *Festival of booths in the month of Chislev,* i.e., Hanukkah. The festival of booths (or tabernacles; Heb "Sukkoth") is celebrated in the autumn month of Tishri (September); Chislev (November/December) of 164 is when Judas retook the Temple, purified it, and rededicated it in a celebration reminiscent of that of the autumn festival (see 10.6–7). *In the one hundred eighty-eighth year*, if this date, ca. 124 BCE, is authentic, then this letter is quoting one of 143/142 BCE. But the date may be corrupt.

10 The people of Jerusalem and of Judea
and the senate and Judas,

To Aristobulus, who is of the family of the
anointed priests, teacher of King Ptolemy,
and to the Jews in Egypt,

Greetings and good health.

11 Having been saved by God out of grave
dangers we thank him greatly for taking our
side against the king,[a] 12 for he drove out those
who fought against the holy city. 13 When the
leader reached Persia with a force that seemed
irresistible, they were cut to pieces in the
temple of Nanea by a deception employed by
the priests of the goddess[b] Nanea. 14 On the
pretext of intending to marry her, Antiochus
came to the place together with his Friends,
to secure most of its treasures as a dowry.
15 When the priests of the temple of Nanea
had set out the treasures and Antiochus had
come with a few men inside the wall of the
sacred precinct, they closed the temple as
soon as he entered it. 16 Opening a secret door
in the ceiling, they threw stones and struck
down the leader and his men; they dismem-
bered them and cut off their heads and threw
them to the people outside. 17 Blessed in every
way be our God, who has brought judgment
on those who have behaved impiously.

18 Since on the twenty-fifth day of Chislev
we shall celebrate the purification of the tem-
ple, we thought it necessary to notify you, in
order that you also may celebrate the festival
of booths and the festival of the fire given
when Nehemiah, who built the temple and
the altar, offered sacrifices.

19 For when our ancestors were being led
captive to Persia, the pious priests of that time
took some of the fire of the altar and secretly
hid it in the hollow of a dry cistern, where
they took such precautions that the place was
unknown to anyone. 20 But after many years
had passed, when it pleased God, Nehemiah,
having been commissioned by the king of Per-
sia, sent the descendants of the priests who
had hidden the fire to get it. And when they
reported to us that they had not found fire but
only a thick liquid, he ordered them to dip it
out and bring it. 21 When the materials for the
sacrifices were presented, Nehemiah ordered
the priests to sprinkle the liquid on the wood
and on the things laid upon it. 22 When this
had been done and some time had passed,

[a] Cn: Gk *as those who array themselves against a king*

[b] Gk lacks *the goddess*

1.10–2.18: Another letter to the Jews of Egypt. This letter focuses on the history of the fire on the altar of the Temple of Jerusalem, working backward from Nehemiah through Jeremiah to Solomon. It claims that the fire that descended from heaven in the days of Solomon (2.10; 2 Chr 7.3) was hidden by pious priests at the time of the destruction of the First Temple (1.19). At the time of the restoration, it was found by Nehemiah, after a metamorphosis into a viscous and combustible liquid (1.20–36). He used some of it to rekindle the fire on the altar of the Second Temple, while the rest of it was preserved in rocks (1.31–32), from which Judas would eventually extract it when rededicating the Temple (10.3). So the restored Temple still had the original fire that descended from heaven. Thus, this letter constitutes an extended argument for the legitimacy of the Second Temple by connecting Nehemiah's restoration and Judas's rededication to Solomon's original dedication. **10:** *The senate,* lit. "council of elders." *Judas* Maccabeus; this letter is presented as if it were written in contemplation of the first Hanukkah or perhaps its first anniversary. *Aristobulus* was an Alexandrian Jewish philosopher and biblical exegete in the days of *Ptolemy* VI Philometor, king of Egypt, 180–145 BCE. By naming him merely "Ptolemy" the Judean authors show how little they care about that foreign king; contrast the use of "Philometor" in the body of the book (4.21; 9.29).

1.11–16: Antiochus Epiphanes' death in Persia. For other versions of Antiochus's death during his eastern campaign, taken here to be part of God's rescue of the Jews, see ch 9 and 1 Macc 6.1–16. **14:** *His Friends*, courtiers of high rank; cf. 7.24; 14.11. This is not the only case of a fictive "sacred marriage" being used as a pretext to obtain money from a sanctuary. **18:** *The festival of booths,* cf. 1 Macc 10.21; 1 Kings 8.2; Neh 8.13–18.

1.19–36: The latest link: the preservation of the fire. This story assumes that Nehemiah rebuilt the Second Temple. In fact, he was active in the mid-fifth century BCE, several generations after the construction of the Second Temple. The mistake was common in Jewish tradition, which frequently remembered the Persian period as shorter than it really was. **19:** *Persia*, the exiles were actually led to Babylonia (cf. 2 Kings 24.14), which later became part of the Persian empire. **20:** *Nehemiah . . . commissioned*, Neh 2.7–8. **22:** *The sun . . . a great fire blazed*

and when the sun, which had been clouded over, shone out, a great fire blazed up, so that all marveled. 23 And while the sacrifice was being consumed, the priests offered prayer—the priests and everyone. Jonathan led, and the rest responded, as did Nehemiah. 24 The prayer was to this effect:

"O Lord, Lord God, Creator of all things, you are awe-inspiring and strong and just and merciful, you alone are king and are kind, 25 you alone are bountiful, you alone are just and almighty and eternal. You rescue Israel from every evil; you chose the ancestors and consecrated them. 26 Accept this sacrifice on behalf of all your people Israel and preserve your portion and make it holy. 27 Gather together our scattered people, set free those who are slaves among the Gentiles, look on those who are rejected and despised, and let the Gentiles know that you are our God. 28 Punish those who oppress and are insolent with pride. 29 Plant your people in your holy place, as Moses promised."

30 Then the priests sang the hymns. 31 After the materials of the sacrifice had been consumed, Nehemiah ordered that the liquid that was left should be poured on large stones. 32 When this was done, a flame blazed up; but when the light from the altar shone back, it went out. 33 When this matter became known, and it was reported to the king of the Persians that, in the place where the exiled priests had hidden the fire, the liquid had appeared with which Nehemiah and his associates had burned the materials of the sacrifice, 34 the king investigated the matter, and enclosed the place and made it sacred. 35 And with those persons whom the king favored he exchanged many excellent gifts. 36 Nehemiah and his associates called this "nephthar," which means purification, but by most people it is called naphtha.[a]

2 One finds in the records that the prophet Jeremiah ordered those who were being deported to take some of the fire, as has been mentioned, 2 and that the prophet, after giving them the law, instructed those who were being deported not to forget the commandments of the Lord, or to be led astray in their thoughts on seeing the gold and silver statues and their adornment. 3 And with other similar words he exhorted them that the law should not depart from their hearts.

4 It was also in the same document that the prophet, having received an oracle, ordered that the tent and the ark should follow with him, and that he went out to the mountain where Moses had gone up and had seen the inheritance of God. 5 Jeremiah came and found a cave-dwelling, and he brought there the tent and the ark and the altar of incense; then he sealed up the entrance. 6 Some of those who followed him came up intending to mark the way, but could not find it. 7 When Jeremiah learned of it, he rebuked them and declared: "The place shall remain unknown until God gathers his people together again and shows his mercy. 8 Then the Lord will disclose these things, and the glory of the Lord and the cloud will appear, as they were shown in the case of Moses, and as Solomon asked that the place should be specially consecrated."

9 It was also made clear that being possessed of wisdom Solomon[b] offered sacrifice

[a] Gk *nephthai*
[b] Gk *he*

up, with no human involvement, as in the days of Solomon (2.10; 2 Chr 7.3). The story also echoes one about Elijah in 1 Kings 18.33–38. **23:** *Jonathan* is unknown, although it may refer to Mattaniah "who was the leader to begin the thanksgiving in prayer" (Neh 11.17) and whose name, like Jonathan, also means "God's gift" in Hebrew. **27:** *Gather . . . set free those who are slaves among the Gentiles,* this Judean attitude contrasts diametrically with that of the Diaspora author of the body of the book. **29:** *As Moses promised,* Ex 15.17; Deut 30.5. **34:** The Persians considered fire holy and sometimes *enclosed* sites of *sacred* fire. **36:** "*Nephthar," which means purification*, this etymology is obscure but Hanukkah is often seen as a purification; cf. 2.18; 10.3.

2.1–8: The penultimate link: Jeremiah. The tradition that Jeremiah saw to the hiding of various ritual objects at the time the First Temple was destroyed supplements the preceding one about what "pious priests" (1.19) did at the same time. For similar traditions, see *2 Baruch* 6. **2:** *Instructed those who were being deported*, see Letter of Jeremiah. **4:** *Mountain*, Nebo (Deut 32.49). *Inheritance of God* refers to the Holy Land in this Judean letter; elsewhere, notably in Deut 32.9, it often refers to the people (see 5.19n. and 6.16n.). **9–10:** *Solomon*, 1 Kings 8.62–64;

for the dedication and completion of the temple. [10] Just as Moses prayed to the Lord, and fire came down from heaven and consumed the sacrifices, so also Solomon prayed, and the fire came down and consumed the whole burnt offerings. [11] And Moses said, "They were consumed because the sin offering had not been eaten." [12] Likewise Solomon also kept the eight days.

[13] The same things are reported in the records and in the memoirs of Nehemiah, and also that he founded a library and collected the books about the kings and prophets, and the writings of David, and letters of kings about votive offerings. [14] In the same way Judas also collected all the books that had been lost on account of the war that had come upon us, and they are in our possession. [15] So if you have need of them, send people to get them for you.

[16] Since, therefore, we are about to celebrate the purification, we write to you. Will you therefore please keep the days? [17] It is God who has saved all his people, and has returned the inheritance to all, and the kingship and the priesthood and the consecration, [18] as he promised through the law. We have hope in God that he will soon have mercy on us and will gather us from everywhere under heaven into his holy place, for he has rescued us from great evils and has purified the place.

[19] The story of Judas Maccabeus and his brothers, and the purification of the great temple, and the dedication of the altar, [20] and further the wars against Antiochus Epiphanes and his son Eupator, [21] and the appearances that came from heaven to those who fought bravely for Judaism, so that though few in number they seized the whole land and pursued the barbarian hordes, [22] and regained possession of the temple famous throughout the world, and liberated the city, and re-established the laws that were about to be abolished, while the Lord with great kindness became gracious to them— [23] all this, which has been set forth by Jason of Cyrene in five volumes, we shall attempt to condense into a single book. [24] For considering the flood of statistics involved and the difficulty there is for those who wish to enter upon the narratives of history because of the mass of material, [25] we have aimed to please those who wish to read, to make it easy for those who are inclined to memorize, and to profit all readers. [26] For us who have undertaken the toil of abbreviating, it is no light matter but calls for sweat and loss of sleep, [27] just as it is not easy for one who prepares a banquet and seeks the benefit of others. Nevertheless, to secure the gratitude of many we will gladly endure the uncomfortable toil, [28] leaving the responsibility for exact details to the compiler, while devoting our effort to arriving at the outlines of the condensation. [29] For as the master builder of a new house must be concerned with the whole construction, while the one who undertakes

2 Chr 7.1. **10:** *Moses prayed*, Lev 9.24. **11:** *"They were consumed . . ."* does not appear in the Bible, but may refer to the story in Lev 10.16–19. **12:** *The eight days* of dedicatory celebrations by Moses (Lev 8.33–9.1) and Solomon (2 Chr 7.9) are cited as precedents for Hanukkah (10.6). **13–14:** *Memoirs of Nehemiah . . . Judas also collected*, the biblical book of Nehemiah does not contain these references. Cf. Ezra 3.1–6; 1 Esd 5:46–50. It is important for the author, however, to underline these parallels between the putative founder of the Second Temple and its restorer, so that his claims are documented and thus should be believed by his addressees. Although there is no other evidence for the claim that Nehemiah *founded a library*, the reference to *kings and prophets, and the writings of David* sounds like a way of referring to the latter two parts of the Hebrew canon; compare the prologue to Sir and Lk 24.44. *Votive offerings*, such as those mentioned in 3.2 and 5.16. **17:** *All . . . to all,* including the Jews of Egypt. *Kingship and the priesthood*, a usual Jewish way of reading the promise of Ex 19.6.

2.19–32: The author's preface. 19–23. An involved sentence, in which the author shows his control of Greek from the outset. **21:** *Appearances* (Gk "epiphaneiai") . . . *from heaven* are given significant attention in the ensuing narrative at 3.24–26; 5.2–4; 10.29; 11.8; 12.22; etc. These true "epiphanies" are contrasted with the arrogant villain's byname, "Epiphanes." *Judaism*, the first known use of this term for the religion. *Barbarian hordes* as a term referring to the Greeks is a calculated reversal, which allows the author to mobilize the sympathies of Greek readers; so too 5.22; 13.9; 15.2. **23:** The five-volume work of *Jason of Cyrene*, of which 2 Macc is an abridgement, is no longer extant. *Cyrene,* in Libya. **29:** The author compares his work to that of a decorator, in

its painting and decoration has to consider only what is suitable for its adornment, such in my judgment is the case with us. 30 It is the duty of the original historian to occupy the ground, to discuss matters from every side, and to take trouble with details, 31 but the one who recasts the narrative should be allowed to strive for brevity of expression and to forego exhaustive treatment. 32 At this point therefore let us begin our narrative, without adding any more to what has already been said; for it would be foolish to lengthen the preface while cutting short the history itself.

3 While the holy city was inhabited in unbroken peace and the laws were strictly observed because of the piety of the high priest Onias and his hatred of wickedness, 2 it came about that the kings themselves honored the place and glorified the temple with the finest presents, 3 even to the extent that King Seleucus of Asia defrayed from his own revenues all the expenses connected with the service of the sacrifices.

4 But a man named Simon, of the tribe of Benjamin, who had been made captain of the temple, had a disagreement with the high priest about the administration of the city market. 5 Since he could not prevail over Onias, he went to Apollonius of Tarsus,[a] who at that time was governor of Coelesyria and Phoenicia, 6 and reported to him that the treasury in Jerusalem was full of untold sums of money, so that the amount of the funds could not be reckoned, and that they did not belong to the account of the sacrifices, but that it was possible for them to fall under the control of the king. 7 When Apollonius met the king, he told him of the money about which he had been informed. The king[b] chose Heliodorus, who was in charge of his affairs, and sent him with commands to effect the removal of the reported wealth. 8 Heliodorus at once set out on his journey, ostensibly to make a tour of inspection of the cities of Coelesyria and Phoenicia, but in fact to carry out the king's purpose.

9 When he had arrived at Jerusalem and had been kindly welcomed by the high priest of[c] the city, he told about the disclosure that had been made and stated why he had come, and he inquired whether this really was the situation. 10 The high priest explained that there were some deposits belonging to widows and orphans, 11 and also some money of Hyrcanus son of Tobias, a man of very promi-

[a] Gk *Apollonius son of Tharseas*
[b] Gk *He*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *and*

relation to Jason's original construction; for another analogy, see 15.39.

3.1–3: Prologue. Once upon a time everything was fine. **1:** *The holy city*, this opening bracket announces the book's topic; for the closing bracket, see 15.37. In the next two verses, the author quickly moves, using the inclusive term "place" (v. 2, compare 13.23), to the Temple. *Onias* III, son of Simeon II (whose praises are sung in Sir 50). He turned against Syria and collaborated with Egypt, while his cousins, the family of Tobias, to which Simon (v. 4) belonged, were pro-Syrian. For the notion that his piety guaranteed the stability of the city, compare Sir 10.2. *Hatred of wickedness*, a universal moral quality that also characterizes good Gentiles (4.36,49) and God himself (8.4). **3:** *King Seleucus* IV ruled 187–175 BCE. *Asia* was frequently used of the Seleucid kingdom.

3.4–40: Simon's plot against Onias. 4: *But* signals the beginning of the story; compare 12.2 and 14.26. *A man named Simon*, just as Greek kings are generally represented as benevolent and the villainous Antiochus is an exception, so too concerning Jewish villains, our author prefers lone wolves and bad apples, not parties; see 4.7 (contrast 1 Macc 1.13–14),40; 14.3 (contrast 1 Macc 7.5, also 1.11; 2.46). That is, the author in general portrays his world as good, with only occasional problems; contrast the world according to 1 Maccabees, which needed serious revision by the Hasmoneans. *Of the tribe of Benjamin*, since 4.23 identifies Menelaus as Simon's brother, many scholars prefer to read, with Latin witnesses, "of Bilgah" (a priestly clan, 1 Chr 24.14). **5:** *Tarsus*, capital of Cilicia in southern Asia Minor (Acts 21.39), then part of the Seleucid empire. *Coelesyria*, lit. "hollow Syria" (see 1 Macc 10.69n.), here used of Palestine. **6:** Simon apparently claimed that the royal budgets, earmarked for sacrifices (as in v. 3), were in fact being accumulated. **7:** *Heliodorus*, the prime minister of Seleucus IV, is known from inscriptions and historical sources. **11:** *Hyrcanus son of Tobias*, a well-known aristocratic Jewish family in Transjordan; see also 12.17. Hyrcanus was pro-Egyptian. He fled east of the Jordan after 198 BCE and built the fortress now known as Araq el-Emir. He committed suicide on the accession of Antiochus IV in 175. A *talent*

nent position, and that it totaled in all four hundred talents of silver and two hundred of gold. To such an extent the impious Simon had misrepresented the facts. [12] And he said that it was utterly impossible that wrong should be done to those people who had trusted in the holiness of the place and in the sanctity and inviolability of the temple that is honored throughout the whole world.

[13] But Heliodorus, because of the orders he had from the king, said that this money must in any case be confiscated for the king's treasury. [14] So he set a day and went in to direct the inspection of these funds.

There was no little distress throughout the whole city. [15] The priests prostrated themselves before the altar in their priestly vestments and called toward heaven upon him who had given the law about deposits, that he should keep them safe for those who had deposited them. [16] To see the appearance of the high priest was to be wounded at heart, for his face and the change in his color disclosed the anguish of his soul. [17] For terror and bodily trembling had come over the man, which plainly showed to those who looked at him the pain lodged in his heart. [18] People also hurried out of their houses in crowds to make a general supplication because the holy place was about to be brought into dishonor. [19] Women, girded with sackcloth under their breasts, thronged the streets. Some of the young women who were kept indoors ran together to the gates, and some to the walls, while others peered out of the windows. [20] And holding up their hands to heaven, they all made supplication. [21] There was something pitiable in the prostration of the whole populace and the anxiety of the high priest in his great anguish.

[22] While they were calling upon the Almighty Lord that he would keep what had been entrusted safe and secure for those who had entrusted it, [23] Heliodorus went on with what had been decided. [24] But when he arrived at the treasury with his bodyguard, then and there the Sovereign of spirits and of all authority caused so great a manifestation that all who had been so bold as to accompany him were astounded by the power of God, and became faint with terror. [25] For there appeared to them a magnificently caparisoned horse, with a rider of frightening mien; it rushed furiously at Heliodorus and struck at him with its front hoofs. Its rider was seen to have armor and weapons of gold. [26] Two young men also appeared to him, remarkably strong, gloriously beautiful and splendidly dressed, who stood on either side of him and flogged him continuously, inflicting many blows on him. [27] When he suddenly fell to the ground and deep darkness came over him, his men took him up, put him on a stretcher, [28] and carried him away—this man who had just entered the aforesaid treasury with a great retinue and all his bodyguard but was now unable to help himself. They recognized clearly the sovereign power of God.

[29] While he lay prostrate, speechless because of the divine intervention and deprived of any hope of recovery, [30] they praised the Lord who had acted marvelously for his own place. And the temple, which a little while before was full of fear and disturbance, was filled with joy and gladness, now that the Almighty Lord had appeared.

[31] Some of Heliodorus's friends quickly begged Onias to call upon the Most High to grant life to one who was lying quite at his last breath. [32] So the high priest, fearing that the king might get the notion that some foul play had been perpetrated by the Jews with regard to Heliodorus, offered sacrifice for the man's recovery. [33] While the high priest was making an atonement, the same young men appeared again to Heliodorus dressed in the same clothing, and they stood and said, "Be very grateful to the high priest Onias, since for his sake the Lord has granted you your life. [34] And see that you, who have been

weighed ca. 75 lb (34 kg). **14–21:** A purple passage, typical of Hellenistic "pathetic" historiography meant to make readers share in the emotions of the characters depicted by vivid rhetoric, as if they were being watched on stage. **15:** *The law about deposits*, see Ex 22.7–13. **19:** *Sackcloth* was a common sign of self-humiliation or mourning, used to support appeals for divine aid; compare 10.25 and Esth 4.1. *Young women who were kept indoors*, cf. Sir 42.9–12. **22–23:** *They . . . Heliodorus,* the author often emphasizes the opposition of the two sides set for a showdown; cf. 10.28; 15.25–26. **26:** *Two young men*, angelic figures, as in 10.30 and 3 Macc 6.18. **34:**

flogged by heaven, report to all people the majestic power of God." Having said this they vanished.

35 Then Heliodorus offered sacrifice to the Lord and made very great vows to the Savior of his life, and having bidden Onias farewell, he marched off with his forces to the king. 36 He bore testimony to all concerning the deeds of the supreme God, which he had seen with his own eyes. 37 When the king asked Heliodorus what sort of person would be suitable to send on another mission to Jerusalem, he replied, 38 "If you have any enemy or plotter against your government, send him there, for you will get him back thoroughly flogged, if he survives at all; for there is certainly some power of God about the place. 39 For he who has his dwelling in heaven watches over that place himself and brings it aid, and he strikes and destroys those who come to do it injury." 40 This was the outcome of the episode of Heliodorus and the protection of the treasury.

4 The previously mentioned Simon, who had informed about the money against[a] his own country, slandered Onias, saying that it was he who had incited Heliodorus and had been the real cause of the misfortune. 2 He dared to designate as a plotter against the government the man who was the benefactor of the city, the protector of his compatriots, and a zealot for the laws. 3 When his hatred progressed to such a degree that even murders were committed by one of Simon's approved agents, 4 Onias recognized that the rivalry was serious and that Apollonius son of Menestheus,[b] and governor of Coelesyria and Phoenicia, was intensifying the malice of Simon. 5 So he appealed to the king, not accusing his compatriots but having in view the welfare, both public and private, of all the people. 6 For he saw that without the king's attention public affairs could not again reach a peaceful settlement, and that Simon would not stop his folly.

7 When Seleucus died and Antiochus, who was called Epiphanes, succeeded to the kingdom, Jason the brother of Onias obtained the high priesthood by corruption, 8 promising the king at an interview[c] three hundred sixty talents of silver, and from another source of revenue eighty talents. 9 In addition to this he promised to pay one hundred fifty more if permission were given to establish by his authority a gymnasium and a body of youth for it, and to enroll the people of Jerusalem as citizens of Antioch. 10 When the king assented and Jason[d] came to office, he at once shifted his compatriots over to the Greek way of life.

11 He set aside the existing royal concessions to the Jews, secured through John

[a] Gk *and*
[b] Vg Compare verse 21: Meaning of Gk uncertain
[c] Or *by a petition*
[d] Gk *he*

Flogged by heaven, in answer to prayers of vv. 15,20; note esp. v. 39. **36:** *He bore testimony*, as do others in this book who learned the same lesson (8.36; 9.17; 11.13). **39:** *Dwelling in heaven*, an important belief for Diaspora Jews; compare 5.19 and Acts 7.47–50.

4.1–6: Simon plots against Onias again. See 3.4n. The hostility resumes between the two rival Jewish families, contrasting in good Diaspora fashion the Jewish troublemaker Simon to the providential monarch. **4–5:** *Coelesyria*, see 3.5n.

4.7–17: Jason's reforms; "Antioch in Jerusalem." 7: *When Seleucus died*, 175 BCE. He was said to have been assassinated by Heliodorus (see 3.7). After the Roman defeat of Antiochus III at the battle of Magnesia (190 BCE) and Antiochus's capitulation to Rome in the subsequent Treaty of Apamea, one of his sons, *Antiochus* IV, was held hostage in Rome while another, *Seleucus* IV, reigned on the Syrian throne. With the death of *Seleucus*, *Antiochus* IV returned to Syria and ascended to the throne, being replaced in Rome by Demetrius I, Seleucus's young son; see 14.1n. **8:** *Talent*, see 3.11n. **9:** *Gymnasium*, a Greek school, the place not only of sport but also of political and cultural education, in short, the hallmark and bearer of Hellenism; cf. 1 Macc 1.14. *As citizens of Antioch*, that is, Jason received permission to establish a "polis", a Greek-style city-state in which citizenship status was essential to participation in political and economic life, called "Antioch in Jerusalem." **11:** *The existing royal concessions*, privileges recorded by Josephus granted by Antiochus III upon the establishment of Seleucid rule in Judea around 200 BCE, including the promise that Jewish law would be observed. The establishment of Antioch in Jerusalem is taken, by our pious author, to abrogate or undercut those privileges. *John the father of*

the father of Eupolemus, who went on the mission to establish friendship and alliance with the Romans; and he destroyed the lawful ways of living and introduced new customs contrary to the law. 12 He took delight in establishing a gymnasium right under the citadel, and he induced the noblest of the young men to wear the Greek hat. 13 There was such an extreme of Hellenization and increase in the adoption of foreign ways because of the surpassing wickedness of Jason, who was ungodly and no true[a] high priest, 14 that the priests were no longer intent upon their service at the altar. Despising the sanctuary and neglecting the sacrifices, they hurried to take part in the unlawful proceedings in the wrestling arena after the signal for the discus-throwing, 15 disdaining the honors prized by their ancestors and putting the highest value upon Greek forms of prestige. 16 For this reason heavy disaster overtook them, and those whose ways of living they admired and wished to imitate completely became their enemies and punished them. 17 It is no light thing to show irreverence to the divine laws—a fact that later events will make clear.

18 When the quadrennial games were being held at Tyre and the king was present, 19 the vile Jason sent envoys, chosen as being Antiochian citizens from Jerusalem, to carry three hundred silver drachmas for the sacrifice to Hercules. Those who carried the money, however, thought best not to use it for sacrifice, because that was inappropriate, but to expend it for another purpose. 20 So this money was intended by the sender for the sacrifice to Hercules, but by the decision of its carriers it was applied to the construction of triremes.

21 When Apollonius son of Menestheus was sent to Egypt for the coronation[b] of Philometor as king, Antiochus learned that Philometor[c] had become hostile to his government, and he took measures for his own security. Therefore upon arriving at Joppa he proceeded to Jerusalem. 22 He was welcomed magnificently by Jason and the city, and ushered in with a blaze of torches and with shouts. Then he marched his army into Phoenicia.

23 After a period of three years Jason sent Menelaus, the brother of the previously mentioned Simon, to carry the money to the king and to complete the records of essential business. 24 But he, when presented to the king, extolled him with an air of authority, and secured the high priesthood for himself,

[a] Gk lacks *true*
[b] Meaning of Gk uncertain
[c] Gk *he*

Eupolemus is said, here, to have negotiated those privileges, just as his son, Eupolemus, was later to be a Jewish ambassador to Rome (1 Macc 8.17). The move from the father's Hebrew name to the son's Greek name illustrates the rise of Hellenism in contemporary Jerusalem, as does "Jason son of Eleazar," Eupolemus's partner (1 Macc 8.17). **12:** *The Greek hat* was broad-rimmed; symbolic of the acceptance of Greek culture, it also allows our author to show off here with an impressive pun (Gk "hypotasson . . . hypo petason," "induced . . . the hat"). **16–17:** An authorial excursus asserting that sin will not go unpunished.

4.18–22: Two pictures of life in Antioch in Jerusalem. The first story (vv. 18–20) shows that one may be a citizen of a "polis" and still avoid idolatry, and the second (vv. 21–22) shows the Jews were good subjects of the Seleucid king. **18:** *Tyre,* a major city north of Palestine. Regular games had been held there since the late fourth century BCE. **19:** *Envoys* were commonly sent by Greek cities to observe games and celebrations in others. A drachma was equivalent to a day's wages for a laborer. *Hercules*, the Greek name of the god Melkart of Tyre. **20:** *Triremes* were standard Phoenician, Greek, and Roman war ships, with three benches of rowers on each side. **21–22:** *Apollonius*, see v. 4. *Coronation*, or perhaps a coming-of-age ceremony. Ptolemy VI *Philometor* (ca. 180–145 BCE) became *hostile* to Syria, and claimed Palestine, which is why the Seleucid king travels east to secure his relationship with Jerusalem before proceeding to *Phoenicia*, the coastal plain. *Jason and the city*, as at 3.9, the high priest serves as something of a mayor; compare Sir 50.1–4.

4.23–50: Menelaus. The quality of the high priest now goes from bad to worse. If Jason, who supplanted Onias (4.7–8), was guilty of institutionalizing Hellenization in Jerusalem, Menelaus, who supplanted Jason (v. 26!), was a cruel (v. 25) and negligent (v. 27) governor who corruptly sought his own enrichment (v. 32) and did not shrink from murder (v. 34) and bribery (v. 45). He held onto his position, or tried to, until ca. 162 BCE

outbidding Jason by three hundred talents of silver. [25] After receiving the king's orders he returned, possessing no qualification for the high priesthood, but having the hot temper of a cruel tyrant and the rage of a savage wild beast. [26] So Jason, who after supplanting his own brother was supplanted by another man, was driven as a fugitive into the land of Ammon. [27] Although Menelaus continued to hold the office, he did not pay regularly any of the money promised to the king. [28] When Sostratus the captain of the citadel kept requesting payment—for the collection of the revenue was his responsibility—the two of them were summoned by the king on account of this issue. [29] Menelaus left his own brother Lysimachus as deputy in the high priesthood, while Sostratus left Crates, the commander of the Cyprian troops.

[30] While such was the state of affairs, it happened that the people of Tarsus and of Mallus revolted because their cities had been given as a present to Antiochis, the king's concubine. [31] So the king went hurriedly to settle the trouble, leaving Andronicus, a man of high rank, to act as his deputy. [32] But Menelaus, thinking he had obtained a suitable opportunity, stole some of the gold vessels of the temple and gave them to Andronicus; other vessels, as it happened, he had sold to Tyre and the neighboring cities. [33] When Onias became fully aware of these acts, he publicly exposed them, having first withdrawn to a place of sanctuary at Daphne near Antioch. [34] Therefore Menelaus, taking Andronicus aside, urged him to kill Onias. Andronicus[a] came to Onias, and resorting to treachery, offered him sworn pledges and gave him his right hand; he persuaded him, though still suspicious, to come out from the place of sanctuary; then, with no regard for justice, he immediately put him out of the way.

[35] For this reason not only Jews, but many also of other nations, were grieved and displeased at the unjust murder of the man. [36] When the king returned from the region of Cilicia, the Jews in the city[b] appealed to him with regard to the unreasonable murder of Onias, and the Greeks shared their hatred of the crime. [37] Therefore Antiochus was grieved at heart and filled with pity, and wept because of the moderation and good conduct of the deceased. [38] Inflamed with anger, he immediately stripped off the purple robe from Andronicus, tore off his clothes, and led him around the whole city to that very place where he had committed the outrage against Onias, and there he dispatched the bloodthirsty fellow. The Lord thus repaid him with the punishment he deserved.

[39] When many acts of sacrilege had been committed in the city by Lysimachus with the connivance of Menelaus, and when report of them had spread abroad, the populace gathered against Lysimachus, because many of the gold vessels had already been stolen. [40] Since the crowds were becoming aroused and filled with anger, Lysimachus armed about three thousand men and launched an unjust attack, under the leadership of a certain Auranus, a man advanced in years and no less advanced in folly. [41] But when the Jews[c] became aware that Lysimachus was attacking them, some picked up stones, some blocks of wood, and others took handfuls of the ashes that were lying around, and threw them in wild confusion at Lysimachus and his men. [42] As a result, they wounded many of them, and killed some, and put all the rest to flight;

[a] Gk *He*
[b] Or *in each city*
[c] Gk *they*

(see 13.3–8). **26:** *Land of Ammon*, east of the Jordan, near modern Amman. **30:** *Tarsus . . . Mallus* were cities in southeastern Asia Minor. Hellenistic kings often provided a wife or concubine with a regular income by giving her a city. Antiochus, being extravagant (see 1 Macc 3.30), was often in need of money. **31:** It is important for our author to claim that when injustice was done the king was absent, and that upon his return (v. 36) the king was enraged and meted out well-deserved punishment. **33:** *Sanctuary at Daphne*, of Apollo. Daphne is about 5 mi (8 km) from Antioch. Andronicus is thus shown to have violated the sanctity of a Greek temple in order to murder the Jewish high priest. **35–36:** *Not only Jews . . . other nations . . . Greeks*, the author insists on the basic unity of humanity and especially upon the Greeks' respect for Jews (see also v. 49 and 12.30–31); after all, Onias was a *man*. **37:** *Moderation and good conduct* were appropriate to a Hellenistic gentleman; cf. 15.12. **38:** *The Lord,*

the temple robber himself they killed close by the treasury.

43 Charges were brought against Menelaus about this incident. 44 When the king came to Tyre, three men sent by the senate presented the case before him. 45 But Menelaus, already as good as beaten, promised a substantial bribe to Ptolemy son of Dorymenes to win over the king. 46 Therefore Ptolemy, taking the king aside into a colonnade as if for refreshment, induced the king to change his mind. 47 Menelaus, the cause of all the trouble, he acquitted of the charges against him, while he sentenced to death those unfortunate men, who would have been freed uncondemned if they had pleaded even before Scythians. 48 And so those who had spoken for the city and the villages[a] and the holy vessels quickly suffered the unjust penalty. 49 Therefore even the Tyrians, showing their hatred of the crime, provided magnificently for their funeral. 50 But Menelaus, because of the greed of those in power, remained in office, growing in wickedness, having become the chief plotter against his compatriots.

5 About this time Antiochus made his second invasion of Egypt. 2 And it happened that, for almost forty days, there appeared over all the city golden-clad cavalry charging through the air, in companies fully armed with lances and drawn swords— 3 troops of cavalry drawn up, attacks and counterattacks made on this side and on that, brandishing of shields, massing of spears, hurling of missiles, the flash of golden trappings, and armor of all kinds. 4 Therefore everyone prayed that the apparition might prove to have been a good omen.

5 When a false rumor arose that Antiochus was dead, Jason took no fewer than a thousand men and suddenly made an assault on the city. When the troops on the wall had been forced back and at last the city was being taken, Menelaus took refuge in the citadel. 6 But Jason kept relentlessly slaughtering his compatriots, not realizing that success at the cost of one's kindred is the greatest misfortune, but imagining that he was setting up trophies of victory over enemies and not over compatriots. 7 He did not, however, gain control of the government; in the end he got only disgrace from his conspiracy, and fled again into the country of the Ammonites. 8 Finally he met a miserable end. Accused[b] before Aretas the ruler of the Arabs, fleeing from city to city, pursued by everyone, hated as a rebel against the laws, and abhorred as the executioner of his country and his compatriots, he was cast ashore in Egypt. 9 There he who had driven many from their

[a] Other ancient authorities read *the people*
[b] Cn: Gk *Imprisoned*

an explicit statement of dual causality: Antiochus did the Lord's work. **39:** *The city*, Jerusalem. **42:** *Killed close by the treasury*, frequently the punishment fits the crime in 2 Maccabees, thus demonstrating God's equitable management of history; see also vv. 16,26,38. For Menelaus's own end, see 13.8. **45:** *Dorymenes* had fought for Ptolemy IV against Antiochus III; his son *Ptolemy* had been governor of Cyprus and had deserted to Antiochus IV (see 10.12–13). **47:** *Scythians*, a proverbially brutal people north of the Black Sea; see 7.4n. **48:** *The city and the villages and the holy vessels*, see textual note *a*. The reference first of all to the city, and only thereafter to the holy vessels, although the issue pertained to the latter, is typical for the orientation of this book; see 3.1n.

5.1–27: Antiochus IV desecrates the Temple. 1–4: Apparition over Jerusalem. **1:** *Antiochus made his second invasion of Egypt* in the spring of 168 BCE, the first having occurred in 170. The second was successful, although a Roman ultimatum forced him to withdraw (Dan 11.29–30). This humiliation may have created the "false rumor" of Antiochus's death (v. 5). **2–4:** *There appeared over all the city*, an apparition of a military nature. Because its meaning was ambiguous, all the Jerusalemites could do was pray that it be for the good; the rest of the chapter shows it was not. **5–10:** Jason attempts to take Jerusalem. Jason, who had been ousted by Menelaus and expelled from the city (4.26), now attempts a comeback. Because Jason had been forced out of the city (v. 7), although Menelaus had withdrawn to the *citadel* (the Temple mount, v. 5), there was probably a nationalist rebellion against Seleucid rule at the same time, as Antiochus inferred (v. 11). But our author prefers to ignore that; compare 3.4n. **6:** *Compatriots*, lit. "fellow citizens." *Trophies* commemorate victories over *enemies* (15.6), not *compatriots,* lit. "members of his people." In this sentence, the Diaspora author uses first a political (city-oriented) category and then two ethnic ones ("kindred," "members of his people"). **8:** *Aretas* I, king of Nabatean

own country into exile died in exile, having embarked to go to the Lacedaemonians in hope of finding protection because of their kinship. [10] He who had cast out many to lie unburied had no one to mourn for him; he had no funeral of any sort and no place in the tomb of his ancestors.

[11] When news of what had happened reached the king, he took it to mean that Judea was in revolt. So, raging inwardly, he left Egypt and took the city by storm. [12] He commanded his soldiers to cut down relentlessly everyone they met and to kill those who went into their houses. [13] Then there was massacre of young and old, destruction of boys, women, and children, and slaughter of young girls and infants. [14] Within the total of three days eighty thousand were destroyed, forty thousand in hand-to-hand fighting, and as many were sold into slavery as were killed.

[15] Not content with this, Antiochus[a] dared to enter the most holy temple in all the world, guided by Menelaus, who had become a traitor both to the laws and to his country. [16] He took the holy vessels with his polluted hands, and swept away with profane hands the votive offerings that other kings had made to enhance the glory and honor of the place. [17] Antiochus was elated in spirit, and did not perceive that the Lord was angered for a little while because of the sins of those who lived in the city, and that this was the reason he was disregarding the holy place. [18] But if it had not happened that they were involved in many sins, this man would have been flogged and turned back from his rash act as soon as he came forward, just as Heliodorus had been, whom King Seleucus sent to inspect the treasury. [19] But the Lord did not choose the nation for the sake of the holy place, but the place for the sake of the nation. [20] Therefore the place itself shared in the misfortunes that befell the nation and afterward participated in its benefits; and what was forsaken in the wrath of the Almighty was restored again in all its glory when the great Lord became reconciled.

[21] So Antiochus carried off eighteen hundred talents from the temple, and hurried away to Antioch, thinking in his arrogance that he could sail on the land and walk on the sea, because his mind was elated. [22] He left governors to oppress the people: at Jerusalem, Philip, by birth a Phrygian and in character more barbarous than the man who appointed him; [23] and at Gerizim, Andronicus; and besides these Menelaus, who lorded it over his compatriots worse than the others did. In his malice toward the Jewish citizens,[b] [24] Antiochus[a] sent Apollonius, the captain

[a] Gk *he*

[b] Or *worse than the others did in his malice toward the Jewish citizens*

Arabia, south and east of Palestine; his capital was at Petra. **9:** Rejected in Egypt, Jason fled to the *Lacedaemonians* in Sparta; other Jewish sources (e.g., 1 Macc 12.7,21) allege a kinship between the Jews and Spartans. **10:** *Unburied . . . no funeral*, a common theme in this book (9.15,28; 12.39; 13.7). **11–16:** Antiochus attacks Jerusalem thinking that all Judea, not just the villain Jason, was in revolt. He was *raging inwardly* because the Romans had forced him out of Egypt (the Roman envoy, Popillius Laenas, had threatened him with war if he attempted to annex Egypt; see 1 Macc 1.20); both his foreign and his domestic programs were collapsing. **12–13:** This account of murder of young and old, outside and inside, seems to allude to Deut 32.25. (On Deut 32 as the basic biblical subtext of this book, see the Introduction.) **15:** Even Jews were forbidden to enter *the most holy* parts of the *temple*. That the high priest Menelaus would guide Antiochus further indicts him as unfit (4.25). **16:** The relative lack of interest in ritual details (only "holy vessels"; contrast 1 Macc 1.21–23), and the need to underline that most Gentile kings are benevolent and respectful to Jews, are typically Diasporan.

5.17–20: Authorial excursus (cf. 4.16–17). The author explains that the Temple could suffer this profanation and robbery because it was secondary to the people; for a similar argument see Mk 2.27. **17:** *For a little while . . . disregarding* is the author's Greek way of rendering the biblical notion of God's hiding his face (Deut 32.20), something which he does at times "for a little while" (Isa 54.7–8) due to the Jews' sins. **18:** *Heliodorus*, see ch 3.

5.21–27: Further troubles. 21: *Thinking in his arrogance that he could sail on the land and walk on the sea* describes Antiochus according to the standard Greek topos of an arrogant oriental monarch. **22:** *Phrygia,* a region of western Asia Minor. **22–23:** *The people: at Jerusalem . . . at Gerizim,* the author considers Samaritans to be Jews, although they worshiped at a different temple. The author's evenhandedness reflects the situation of Diaspora

of the Mysians, with an army of twenty-two thousand, and commanded him to kill all the grown men and to sell the women and boys as slaves. 25 When this man arrived in Jerusalem, he pretended to be peaceably disposed and waited until the holy sabbath day; then, finding the Jews not at work, he ordered his troops to parade under arms. 26 He put to the sword all those who came out to see them, then rushed into the city with his armed warriors and killed great numbers of people.

27 But Judas Maccabeus, with about nine others, got away to the wilderness, and kept himself and his companions alive in the mountains as wild animals do; they continued to live on what grew wild, so that they might not share in the defilement.

6 Not long after this, the king sent an Athenian[a] senator[b] to compel the Jews to forsake the laws of their ancestors and no longer to live by the laws of God; 2 also to pollute the temple in Jerusalem and to call it the temple of Olympian Zeus, and to call the one in Gerizim the temple of Zeus-the-Friend-of-Strangers, as did the people who lived in that place.

3 Harsh and utterly grievous was the onslaught of evil. 4 For the temple was filled with debauchery and reveling by the Gentiles, who dallied with prostitutes and had intercourse with women within the sacred precincts, and besides brought in things for sacrifice that were unfit. 5 The altar was covered with abominable offerings that were forbidden by the laws. 6 People could neither keep the sabbath, nor observe the festivals of their ancestors, nor so much as confess themselves to be Jews.

7 On the monthly celebration of the king's birthday, the Jews[c] were taken, under bitter constraint, to partake of the sacrifices; and when a festival of Dionysus was celebrated, they were compelled to wear wreaths of ivy and to walk in the procession in honor of Dionysus. 8 At the suggestion of the people of Ptolemais[d] a decree was issued to the neighboring Greek cities that they should adopt the same policy toward the Jews and make them partake of the sacrifices, 9 and should kill those who did not choose to change over to Greek customs. One could see, therefore, the misery that had come upon them. 10 For example, two women were brought in for having circumcised their children. They publicly paraded them around the city, with their babies hanging at their breasts, and then hurled them down headlong from the wall. 11 Others who had assembled in the caves nearby, in order to observe the seventh day secretly, were betrayed to Philip and were

[a] Other ancient authorities read *Antiochian*
[b] Or *Geron an Athenian*
[c] Gk *they*
[d] Cn: Gk *suggestion of the Ptolemies* (or *of Ptolemy*)

Jews who worshiped at neither; cf. Jn 4.21. **24:** *Captain of the Mysians*, lit. "Mysarch," commander of mercenary troops from Mysia, a region of Asia Minor. **25:** *Parade under arms* recalls the apparition in vv. 1–3 and clarifies its meaning. **27:** *Judas Maccabeus*, the third son of Mattathias, of the Hasmonean family (1 Macc 2.1–28). Mention of him here provides a ray of hope throughout the next two chapters of suffering. He will reappear, with a much larger force, at the beginning of ch 8. *Live on what grew wild*, in observance of Jewish dietary laws that prohibited the consumption of unclean animals; cf. 11.31; 1 Macc 1.62–63; Dan 1.8.

6.1–11: Decrees against Judaism. If Jason made Hellenization available in the social, political, and economic spheres, Antiochus now pollutes the Jews' Temple and attempts to force new rituals upon them which, however Semitic or syncretistic, were viewed by many Jews as Greek customs (v. 9), because a Greek king imposed them. **1:** *Athenian*, Antiochus's ties to Athens are well documented; compare 9.15. **2:** As at 5.22–23, the author has no problems about drawing a parallel between the Temple of Jerusalem and that of the Samaritans, which was considered illegitimate by some Jerusalemite Jews. **4:** *The temple* was polluted; see also 1 Macc 1.46–59 and Dan 11.31. **7:** Antiochus's *birthday* was celebrated on the twenty-fifth of each month (1 Macc 1.58–59). *Dionysus*, the Greek god of wine and harvest. **8:** *Ptolemais*, the Hellenistic city founded at Acco, north of Haifa. **10–11:** These first stories of martyrs are paralleled at 1 Macc 1.60–61 and 2.29–38. In contrast to 1 Maccabees, however, our "pathetic" work (see 3.14–21n.) refers (as at 3.19) to the mothers' breasts, not their necks; and as a Diaspora work it praises the martyrs in the caves who refused to fight on the sabbath, as opposed to 1 Macc 2, which uses them as foils for the Hasmoneans.

all burned together, because their piety kept them from defending themselves, in view of their regard for that most holy day.

12 Now I urge those who read this book not to be depressed by such calamities, but to recognize that these punishments were designed not to destroy but to discipline our people. 13 In fact, it is a sign of great kindness not to let the impious alone for long, but to punish them immediately. 14 For in the case of the other nations the Lord waits patiently to punish them until they have reached the full measure of their sins; but he does not deal in this way with us, 15 in order that he may not take vengeance on us afterward when our sins have reached their height. 16 Therefore he never withdraws his mercy from us. Although he disciplines us with calamities, he does not forsake his own people. 17 Let what we have said serve as a reminder; we must go on briefly with the story.

18 Eleazar, one of the scribes in high position, a man now advanced in age and of noble presence, was being forced to open his mouth to eat swine's flesh. 19 But he, welcoming death with honor rather than life with pollution, went up to the rack of his own accord, spitting out the flesh, 20 as all ought to go who have the courage to refuse things that it is not right to taste, even for the natural love of life.

21 Those who were in charge of that unlawful sacrifice took the man aside because of their long acquaintance with him, and privately urged him to bring meat of his own providing, proper for him to use, and to pretend that he was eating the flesh of the sacrificial meal that had been commanded by the king, 22 so that by doing this he might be saved from death, and be treated kindly on account of his old friendship with them. 23 But making a high resolve, worthy of his years and the dignity of his old age and the gray hairs that he had reached with distinction and his excellent life even from childhood, and moreover according to the holy God-given law, he declared himself quickly, telling them to send him to Hades.

24 "Such pretense is not worthy of our time of life," he said, "for many of the young might suppose that Eleazar in his ninetieth year had gone over to an alien religion, 25 and through my pretense, for the sake of living a brief moment longer, they would be led astray because of me, while I defile and disgrace my old age. 26 Even if for the present I would avoid the punishment of mortals, yet whether I live or die I will not escape the hands of the Almighty. 27 Therefore, by bravely giving up my life now, I will show myself worthy of my old age 28 and leave to the young a noble example of how to die a good death willingly and nobly for the revered and holy laws."

When he had said this, he went[a] at once to the rack. 29 Those who a little before had acted toward him with goodwill now changed to ill will, because the words he had uttered were in their opinion sheer madness.[b] 30 When he was about to die under the blows, he groaned aloud and said: "It is clear to the Lord in his holy knowledge that, though I might have been saved from death, I am enduring terrible sufferings in my body under this beating, but in my soul I am glad to suffer these things because I fear him."

31 So in this way he died, leaving in his death an example of nobility and a memorial of courage, not only to the young but to the great body of his nation.

[a] Other ancient authorities read *was dragged*
[b] Meaning of Gk uncertain

6.12–17: Authorial excursus (cf. 4.16–17; 5.17–20). The author explains to his readers that it is God's graciousness to his people that brings him to allow punishment for sins as they occur, thus enabling atonement and reconciliation. **12:** *To discipline*, as in Deut 8.5. **14:** *Full measure of their sins*, which would then bring upon them irrevocable punishment; Gen 15.16. **16:** *He does not forsake his own people,* Ps 94.14.

6.18–31 Martyrdom of Eleazar. 18: *Scribes* were scholars of the Torah; cf. 1 Macc 7.12. 4 Macc 5.4 adds, on unknown authority but not improbably, that Eleazar was a priest. *Swine's flesh* is the best known of biblically prohibited meats (Lev 11.7–8). In this case the problem is compounded because the meat was sacrificed in a pagan rite (v. 21). **23:** *Hades*, the Gk name of the underworld (Heb "Sheol"). **28:** *Leave to the young a noble example*, Eleazar is presented as a Jewish Socrates; his speech resembles Socrates's final speech in Plato's *Apology*. **30:** *Body . . . soul,* a distinction that reflects the influence of Greek anthropology on Jewish thought. *Fear,* revere. **31:** *Not only to the young*, as he said in v. 28; the next chapter, however, focuses on the young.

7 It happened also that seven brothers and their mother were arrested and were being compelled by the king, under torture with whips and thongs, to partake of unlawful swine's flesh. [2] One of them, acting as their spokesman, said, "What do you intend to ask and learn from us? For we are ready to die rather than transgress the laws of our ancestors."

[3] The king fell into a rage, and gave orders to have pans and caldrons heated. [4] These were heated immediately, and he commanded that the tongue of their spokesman be cut out and that they scalp him and cut off his hands and feet, while the rest of the brothers and the mother looked on. [5] When he was utterly helpless, the king[a] ordered them to take him to the fire, still breathing, and to fry him in a pan. The smoke from the pan spread widely, but the brothers[b] and their mother encouraged one another to die nobly, saying, [6] "The Lord God is watching over us and in truth has compassion on us, as Moses declared in his song that bore witness against the people to their faces, when he said, 'And he will have compassion on his servants.'"[c]

[7] After the first brother had died in this way, they brought forward the second for their sport. They tore off the skin of his head with the hair, and asked him, "Will you eat rather than have your body punished limb by limb?" [8] He replied in the language of his ancestors and said to them, "No." Therefore he in turn underwent tortures as the first brother had done. [9] And when he was at his last breath, he said, "You accursed wretch, you dismiss us from this present life, but the King of the universe will raise us up to an everlasting renewal of life, because we have died for his laws."

[10] After him, the third was the victim of their sport. When it was demanded, he quickly put out his tongue and courageously stretched forth his hands, [11] and said nobly, "I got these from Heaven, and because of his laws I disdain them, and from him I hope to get them back again." [12] As a result the king himself and those with him were astonished at the young man's spirit, for he regarded his sufferings as nothing.

[13] After he too had died, they maltreated and tortured the fourth in the same way. [14] When he was near death, he said, "One cannot but choose to die at the hands of mortals and to cherish the hope God gives of being raised again by him. But for you there will be no resurrection to life!"

[15] Next they brought forward the fifth and maltreated him. [16] But he looked at the king,[d] and said, "Because you have authority among mortals, though you also are mortal, you do what you please. But do not think that God has forsaken our people. [17] Keep on, and see how his mighty power will torture you and your descendants!"

[18] After him they brought forward the sixth. And when he was about to die, he said, "Do not deceive yourself in vain. For we are suffering these things on our own account, because of our sins against our own God. Therefore[e] astounding things have happened. [19] But do not think that you will go unpunished for having tried to fight against God!"

[a] Gk *he*
[b] Gk *they*
[c] Gk *slaves*
[d] Gk *at him*
[e] Lat: Other ancient authorities lack *Therefore*

7.1–42: Martyrdom of seven brothers and their mother. This story—which has a life of its own in Jewish literature, is the principal subject of 4 Maccabees, and may be inspired by Jer 15.9—may have been appropriated from an independent source, as is suggested by the king's presence and by the absence of political formulations so typical of this book. **1:** *The king* is Antiochus IV (v. 24), although he returned to Syria in ch 5 and imposed the decrees through his agents. **2:** *Ancestors*, lit. "fathers," who are thus made to compete with the king; compare "language of his ancestors" (i.e., Hebrew) in vv. 8,21,27. **4:** *Scalp*, lit. "cut him around the Scythian way"; see 4.47n. **6:** *As Moses declared*, Deut 32.36. On Deut 32, see Introduction. **9:** *Raise us up*, resurrection is a recurrent theme in this chapter; see also 12.43–45 and 14.46. This belief's only clear attestation in the Hebrew Bible, Dan 12.1–3, seems to be a response to the same persecutions. **11:** *Heaven*, a circumlocution for God; see v. 34. **18:** *Because of our sins*, as in v. 32 and throughout this book; "our" is both specific (as in 12.40) and collective,

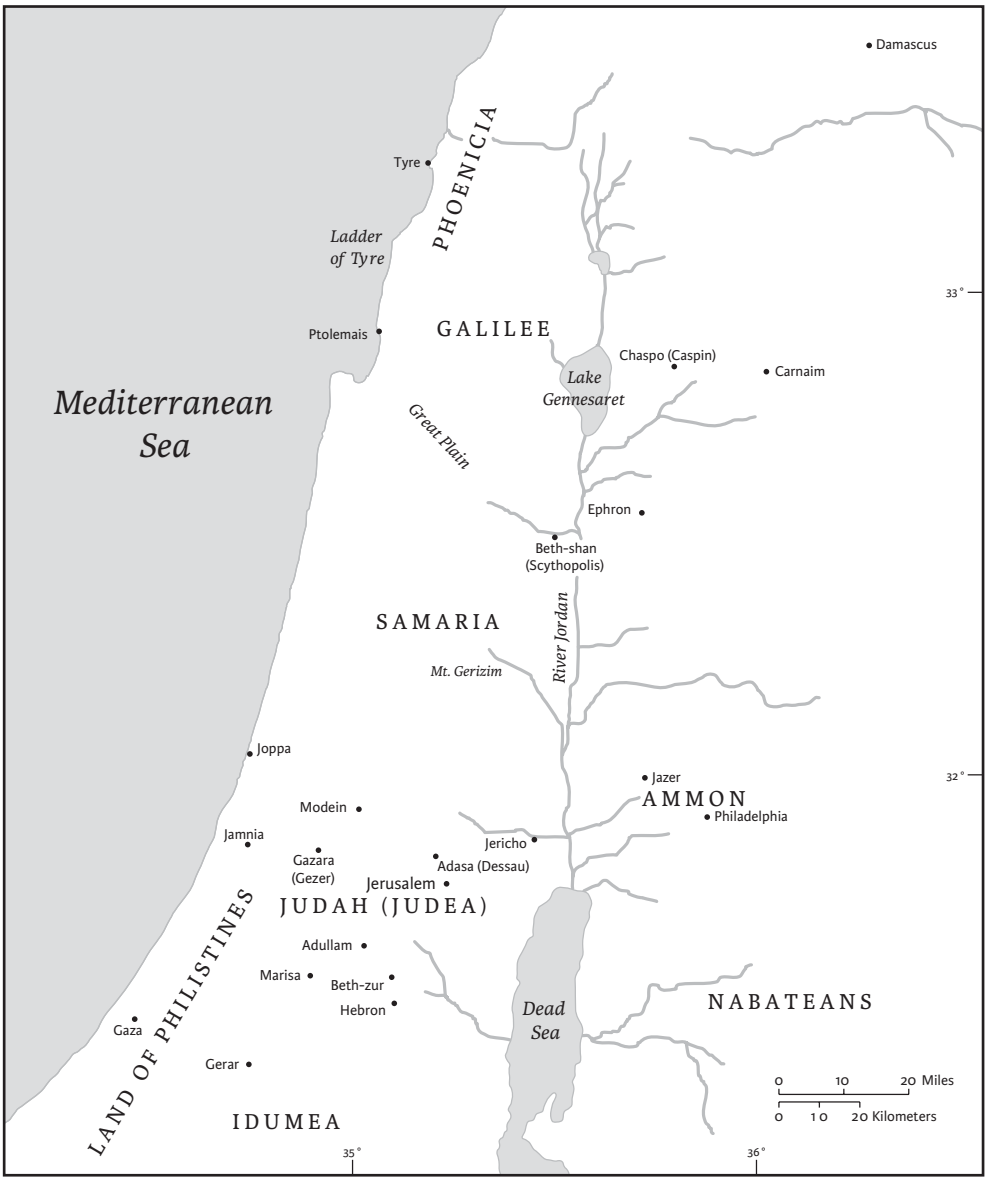
20 The mother was especially admirable
and worthy of honorable memory. Although
she saw her seven sons perish within a single
day, she bore it with good courage because of
her hope in the Lord. 21 She encouraged each
of them in the language of their ancestors.
Filled with a noble spirit, she reinforced her
woman's reasoning with a man's courage, and
said to them, 22 "I do not know how you came
into being in my womb. It was not I who gave
you life and breath, nor I who set in order
the elements within each of you. 23 Therefore
the Creator of the world, who shaped the
beginning of humankind and devised the
origin of all things, will in his mercy give life
and breath back to you again, since you now
forget yourselves for the sake of his laws."

24 Antiochus felt that he was being treated
with contempt, and he was suspicious of her
reproachful tone. The youngest brother being
still alive, Antiochus[a] not only appealed to
him in words, but promised with oaths that
he would make him rich and enviable if he
would turn from the ways of his ancestors,
and that he would take him for his Friend and
entrust him with public affairs. 25 Since the
young man would not listen to him at all, the
king called the mother to him and urged her
to advise the youth to save himself. 26 After
much urging on his part, she undertook to
persuade her son. 27 But, leaning close to
him, she spoke in their native language as
follows, deriding the cruel tyrant: "My son,
have pity on me. I carried you nine months
in my womb, and nursed you for three years,
and have reared you and brought you up to
this point in your life, and have taken care
of you.[b] 28 I beg you, my child, to look at the
heaven and the earth and see everything that
is in them, and recognize that God did not
make them out of things that existed.[c] And
in the same way the human race came into
being. 29 Do not fear this butcher, but prove
worthy of your brothers. Accept death, so
that in God's mercy I may get you back again
along with your brothers."

30 While she was still speaking, the young
man said, "What are you[d] waiting for? I will
not obey the king's command, but I obey the
command of the law that was given to our an-
cestors through Moses. 31 But you,[e] who have
contrived all sorts of evil against the Hebrews,
will certainly not escape the hands of God.
32 For we are suffering because of our own
sins. 33 And if our living Lord is angry for a lit-
tle while, to rebuke and discipline us, he will
again be reconciled with his own servants.[f]
34 But you, unholy wretch, you most defiled
of all mortals, do not be elated in vain and
puffed up by uncertain hopes, when you raise
your hand against the children of heaven.
35 You have not yet escaped the judgment
of the almighty, all-seeing God. 36 For our
brothers after enduring a brief suffering have
drunk[g] of ever-flowing life, under God's cov-
enant; but you, by the judgment of God, will
receive just punishment for your arrogance.
37 I, like my brothers, give up body and life for
the laws of our ancestors, appealing to God to
show mercy soon to our nation and by trials
and plagues to make you confess that he alone
is God, 38 and through me and my brothers to
bring to an end the wrath of the Almighty that
has justly fallen on our whole nation."

[a] Gk *he*
[b] Or *have borne the burden of your education*
[c] Or *God made them out of things that did not exist*
[d] The Gk here for *you* is plural
[e] The Gk here for *you* is singular
[f] Gk *slaves*
[g] Cn: Gk *fallen*

as in the excurses (4.16–17; 5.18). *Astounding things have happened,* namely, your successes against the Jews. **22:** *It was not I who gave you life,* The mother's speech appears to combine references to Sir 1.1–3, which it refutes, with technical vocabulary from Greek philosophy (*set in order the elements*; Plato, *Theaetetus* 210e; Aristotle, *Metaphysics* 998a.23). The author argues that resurrection is a mystery analogous to the creation of the world, or of a human being. Just as God caused something to exist that had not existed previously (see v. 28), so God can resurrect a person who has ceased to exist. **24:** *His Friend*, see 1.14n. **28:** *Did not make them out of things that existed*, this verse was understood by Origen (185–254 CE) and subsequent Christian authors to be a statement of the doctrine that God created the universe out of nothing. **33:** *Angry for a little while*, see 5.17n. *Reconciled with his own servants,* alluding to Deut 32.36; see v. 6 above and 8.29. **34:** *Children of heaven*, the Jews; see v.11n. **38:** *Through me and my brothers to bring to an end the wrath*, their deaths are not in vain, but rather effective; con-



Places associated with the campaigns of the Maccabees in 2 Macc 8–15.

39 The king fell into a rage, and handled
him worse than the others, being exasper-
ated at his scorn. 40 So he died in his integrity,
putting his whole trust in the Lord.
41 Last of all, the mother died, after her
sons.
42 Let this be enough, then, about the eat-
ing of sacrifices and the extreme tortures.

8 Meanwhile Judas, who was also called
Maccabeus, and his companions secretly
entered the villages and summoned their
kindred and enlisted those who had contin-
ued in the Jewish faith, and so they gathered
about six thousand. 2 They implored the Lord
to look upon the people who were oppressed
by all; and to have pity on the temple that
had been profaned by the godless; 3 to have
mercy on the city that was being destroyed
and about to be leveled to the ground; to
hearken to the blood that cried out to him;
4 to remember also the lawless destruction
of the innocent babies and the blasphemies
committed against his name; and to show his
hatred of evil.
5 As soon as Maccabeus got his army
organized, the Gentiles could not withstand
him, for the wrath of the Lord had turned to
mercy. 6 Coming without warning, he would
set fire to towns and villages. He captured
strategic positions and put to flight not a
few of the enemy. 7 He found the nights most
advantageous for such attacks. And talk of
his valor spread everywhere.
8 When Philip saw that the man was gain-
ing ground little by little, and that he was
pushing ahead with more frequent successes,
he wrote to Ptolemy, the governor of Coele-
syria and Phoenicia, to come to the aid of the
king's government. 9 Then Ptolemy[a] promptly
appointed Nicanor son of Patroclus, one of
the king's chief[b] Friends, and sent him, in
command of no fewer than twenty thou-
sand Gentiles of all nations, to wipe out the
whole race of Judea. He associated with him
Gorgias, a general and a man of experience
in military service. 10 Nicanor determined to
make up for the king the tribute due to the
Romans, two thousand talents, by selling the
captured Jews into slavery. 11 So he immedi-
ately sent to the towns on the seacoast, invit-
ing them to buy Jewish slaves and promising
to hand over ninety slaves for a talent, not
expecting the judgment from the Almighty
that was about to overtake him.
12 Word came to Judas concerning Nica-
nor's invasion; and when he told his com-
panions of the arrival of the army, 13 those
who were cowardly and distrustful of God's
justice ran off and got away. 14 Others sold all
their remaining property, and at the same
time implored the Lord to rescue those who
had been sold by the ungodly Nicanor before
he ever met them, 15 if not for their own sake,
then for the sake of the covenants made with
their ancestors, and because he had called
them by his holy and glorious name. 16 But
Maccabeus gathered his forces together, to
the number six thousand, and exhorted them

[a] Gk *he*
[b] Gk *one of the first*

trast 1 Macc 1.62–63; 2.29–41; 3.8. In 1 Macc it is not the death of the martyrs but Judas's valor that turns away the wrath. In 2 Macc the deaths increase the suffering of Israel to such a degree that God is moved to intervene for them; cf. Deut 32.36; Bar 4.

8.1–7: Judas begins the revolt. See 1 Macc 3.1–41. **2–4:** The troops' prayer summarizes the events narrated by the book so far. **3:** *The blood that cried out to him,* cf. Gen 4.10. **4:** *Innocent babies*, 6.10; in context, this also refers, with some exaggeration, to the seven sons of ch 7. **7:** *The nights,* see 10:28; 12:6,9; 13:15; and especially 1 Macc 4:1–25.

8.8–36: First victory over Nicanor. See 1 Macc 3.38–4.25. **8:** *Philip*, see 5.22. *Ptolemy* (see 10.12–13, 1 Macc 3.38). **9:** *Nicanor son of Patroclus*, according to 1 Macc 3–4, *Gorgias* was the main figure in this campaign, but 2 Macc makes Nicanor the principal villain. Chs 14–15 narrate Judas's further clashes with him, and the book ends with the establishment of a festival commemorating his final defeat. **10:** *The tribute due to the Romans* imposed by the Treaty of Apamea (188 BCE; see 4.7n.); the Seleucids were in arrears. *Talent,* see 3.11n. **11:** *Ninety slaves for a talent* was half or less of the usual price. **13:** *Ran off*, 1 Macc 3.55–56 portrays this as part of a ceremony mandated by Deut 20.5–8, but 2 Macc uses the occasion to emphasize the courage of those who remained. **15:** *Covenants,* see 1.2n. *Because he had called them by his . . . name,* a standard argument in prayers asking God to

not to be frightened by the enemy and not to fear the great multitude of Gentiles who were wickedly coming against them, but to fight nobly, [17] keeping before their eyes the lawless outrage that the Gentiles[a] had committed against the holy place, and the torture of the derided city, and besides, the overthrow of their ancestral way of life. [18] "For they trust to arms and acts of daring," he said, "but we trust in the Almighty God, who is able with a single nod to strike down those who are coming against us, and even, if necessary, the whole world."

[19] Moreover, he told them of the occasions when help came to their ancestors; how, in the time of Sennacherib, when one hundred eighty-five thousand perished, [20] and the time of the battle against the Galatians that took place in Babylonia, when eight thousand Jews[b] fought along with four thousand Macedonians; yet when the Macedonians were hard pressed, the eight thousand, by the help that came to them from heaven, destroyed one hundred twenty thousand Galatians[c] and took a great amount of booty.

[21] With these words he filled them with courage and made them ready to die for their laws and their country; then he divided his army into four parts. [22] He appointed his brothers also, Simon and Joseph and Jonathan, each to command a division, putting fifteen hundred men under each. [23] Besides, he appointed Eleazar to read aloud[d] from the holy book, and gave the watchword, "The help of God"; then, leading the first division himself, he joined battle with Nicanor.

[24] With the Almighty as their ally, they killed more than nine thousand of the enemy, and wounded and disabled most of Nicanor's army, and forced them all to flee. [25] They captured the money of those who had come to buy them as slaves. After pursuing them for some distance, they were obliged to return because the hour was late. [26] It was the day before the sabbath, and for that reason they did not continue their pursuit. [27] When they had collected the arms of the enemy and stripped them of their spoils, they kept the sabbath, giving great praise and thanks to the Lord, who had preserved them for that day and allotted it to them as the beginning of mercy. [28] After the sabbath they gave some of the spoils to those who had been tortured and to the widows and orphans, and distributed the rest among themselves and their children. [29] When they had done this, they made common supplication and implored the merciful Lord to be wholly reconciled with his servants.[e]

[30] In encounters with the forces of Timothy and Bacchides they killed more than twenty thousand of them and got possession of some exceedingly high strongholds, and they divided a very large amount of plunder, giving to those who had been tortured and to the orphans and widows, and also to the aged, shares equal to their own. [31] They collected the arms of the enemy,[f] and carefully stored all of them in strategic places; the

[a] Gk *they*
[b] Gk lacks *Jews*
[c] Gk lacks *Galatians*
[d] Meaning of Gk uncertain
[e] Gk *slaves*
[f] Gk *their arms*

intervene: God's own reputation was at stake; cf. Ex 32.12; Deut 32.27; 1 Macc 4.33. **19:** *Sennacherib*, king of Assyria; see Isa 37.36; 2 Kings 19.35; this miracle is also cited at 15.22 . **20:** *Galatians*, a people of Asia Minor, known for their invasions westward in the third century BCE and for their service as mercenaries; the battle mentioned here is otherwise unknown. If "Jews" is omitted (see textual note *b*), Judas would be citing a case in which God helps worthy people regardless of their identity; see 4.35–36n. **21:** *Four parts*, Judas commanded the first (v. 23). **22:** *His brothers*, see 1 Macc 2.2–5. Although they scarcely figure in 2 Macc, *Simon* was high priest from 142 to 134 BCE (see 1 Macc 13–16), and *Jonathan* from 160 to 143 or 142 (see 1 Macc 9.23–12.53). *Joseph,* perhaps John is meant; see 1 Macc 2.2; 9.35–36. **23:** *Eleazar*, another brother, was killed at Beth-zechariah (1 Macc 2.5; 6.43–46). **25:** *Captured the money of those who had come to buy them*, the punishment fitting the crime, as often in this book (4.42n.). **26:** *Day before the sabbath* required preparations; compare 12.38; Mk 15.42. 1 Macc 4.15–16 has no such religious explanation; rather, the Jews broke off the pursuit when it became too dangerous. **27–29:** *Beginning of mercy . . . wholly reconciled with his servants,* completes the process predicted at 7.33. **30–33:** This scene is located here, although out of place chronologically, to illustrate the pious practice of sharing spoils

rest of the spoils they carried to Jerusalem.
32 They killed the commander of Timothy's
forces, a most wicked man, and one who had
greatly troubled the Jews. 33 While they were
celebrating the victory in the city of their
ancestors, they burned those who had set fire
to the sacred gates, Callisthenes and some
others, who had fled into one little house;
so these received the proper reward for their
impiety.[a]

34 The thrice-accursed Nicanor, who had
brought the thousand merchants to buy the
Jews, 35 having been humbled with the help
of the Lord by opponents whom he regarded
as of the least account, took off his splen-
did uniform and made his way alone like a
runaway slave across the country until he
reached Antioch, having succeeded chiefly
in the destruction of his own army! 36 So he
who had undertaken to secure tribute for
the Romans by the capture of the people of
Jerusalem proclaimed that the Jews had a
Defender, and that therefore the Jews were
invulnerable, because they followed the laws
ordained by him.

9 About that time, as it happened, Antio-
chus had retreated in disorder from the
region of Persia. 2 He had entered the city
called Persepolis and attempted to rob the
temples and control the city. Therefore the
people rushed to the rescue with arms, and
Antiochus and his army were defeated,[b] with
the result that Antiochus was put to flight by
the inhabitants and beat a shameful retreat.
3 While he was in Ecbatana, news came to
him of what had happened to Nicanor and
the forces of Timothy. 4 Transported with
rage, he conceived the idea of turning upon
the Jews the injury done by those who had
put him to flight; so he ordered his charioteer
to drive without stopping until he completed
the journey. But the judgment of heaven rode
with him! For in his arrogance he said, "When
I get there I will make Jerusalem a cemetery
of Jews."

5 But the all-seeing Lord, the God of
Israel, struck him with an incurable and in-
visible blow. As soon as he stopped speaking
he was seized with a pain in his bowels, for
which there was no relief, and with sharp
internal tortures— 6 and that very justly, for
he had tortured the bowels of others with
many and strange inflictions. 7 Yet he did
not in any way stop his insolence, but was
even more filled with arrogance, breathing
fire in his rage against the Jews, and giv-
ing orders to drive even faster. And so it
came about that he fell out of his chariot
as it was rushing along, and the fall was so
hard as to torture every limb of his body.
8 Thus he who only a little while before had
thought in his superhuman arrogance that
he could command the waves of the sea, and
had imagined that he could weigh the high
mountains in a balance, was brought down
to earth and carried in a litter, making the
power of God manifest to all. 9 And so the
ungodly man's body swarmed with worms,
and while he was still living in anguish and
pain, his flesh rotted away, and because of

[a] Meaning of Gk uncertain
[b] Gk *they were defeated*

with the needy (see Num 31.25–47; 1 Sam 30.21–25). **34:** *Thrice-accursed Nicanor*, as in 15.3. **35:** *Having succeeded chiefly in the destruction of his own army*, the author loves to gloat; compare e.g., v. 25; 3.28; 5.9–10; 9.8–10. **36:** *Proclaimed,* like Heliodorus (see 3.39n.), *that the Jews had a Defender*, i.e., God; compare 11.13.

9.1–12: Antiochus's retreat and illness. See 1 Macc 6.1–16. Antiochus IV Epiphanes began his eastern campaign in 165 BCE, leaving behind his young son Antiochus Eupator with a guardian, Lysias (1 Macc 3.31). 2 Macc simplifies matters by first mentioning that pair only after recounting Antiochus IV's demise; see 10.10–11. For another version of the king's defeat and death, see 1.11–17. **1:** *Antiochus* went to *Persia* to strengthen his authority there and to get funds. **2:** *Persepolis*, the capital of Persia, near modern Shiraz, founded by Darius I. **3:** Antiochus was on his way to Babylon (1 Macc 6.4) but apparently went north by way of Ecbatana (modern Hamadan). **4:** *But the judgment of heaven rode with him*, as elsewhere in this chapter, the author employs irony: Antiochus thinks he will punish the Jews but does not even know his own nemesis is riding along with him. **5:** *Incurable*, as in Isa 14.6. That chapter, on the fall of the king of Babylon, informs other parts of this chapter as well. **6:** *Tortured the bowels*, both by inflicting pain and by forcing Jews to eat forbidden foods (chs 6–7). **8:** *Command the waves of the sea*, 5.21. *Weigh the high mountains in a balance* is something only God can do (Isa 40.12).

the stench the whole army felt revulsion at his decay. 10 Because of his intolerable stench no one was able to carry the man who a little while before had thought that he could touch the stars of heaven. 11 Then it was that, broken in spirit, he began to lose much of his arrogance and to come to his senses under the scourge of God, for he was tortured with pain every moment. 12 And when he could not endure his own stench, he uttered these words, "It is right to be subject to God; mortals should not think that they are equal to God."[a]

13 Then the abominable fellow made a vow to the Lord, who would no longer have mercy on him, stating 14 that the holy city, which he was hurrying to level to the ground and to make a cemetery, he was now declaring to be free; 15 and the Jews, whom he had not considered worth burying but had planned to throw out with their children for the wild animals and for the birds to eat, he would make, all of them, equal to citizens of Athens; 16 and the holy sanctuary, which he had formerly plundered, he would adorn with the finest offerings; and all the holy vessels he would give back, many times over; and the expenses incurred for the sacrifices he would provide from his own revenues; 17 and in addition to all this he also would become a Jew and would visit every inhabited place to proclaim the power of God. 18 But when his sufferings did not in any way abate, for the judgment of God had justly come upon him, he gave up all hope for himself and wrote to the Jews the following letter, in the form of a supplication. This was its content:

19 "To his worthy Jewish citizens, Antiochus their king and general sends hearty greetings and good wishes for their health and prosperity. 20 If you and your children are well and your affairs are as you wish, I am glad. As my hope is in heaven, 21 I remember with affection your esteem and goodwill. On my way back from the region of Persia I suffered an annoying illness, and I have deemed it necessary to take thought for the general security of all. 22 I do not despair of my condition, for I have good hope of recovering from my illness, 23 but I observed that my father, on the occasions when he made expeditions into the upper country, appointed his successor, 24 so that, if anything unexpected happened or any unwelcome news came, the people throughout the realm would not be troubled, for they would know to whom the government was left. 25 Moreover, I understand how the princes along the borders and the neighbors of my kingdom keep watching for opportunities and waiting to see what will happen. So I have appointed my son Antiochus to be king, whom I have often entrusted and commended to most of you when I hurried off to the upper provinces; and I have written to him what is written here. 26 I therefore urge and beg you to remember the public

[a] Or *not think thoughts proper only to God*

9: *Worms*, a common motif in narratives about the death of tyrants, e.g., Jdt 16.17; Acts 12.23. *Stench*, from Joel 2.20, of "the northerner," who was easily identified as Antiochus Epiphanes (the "king of the north" of Dan 11). **10:** *Touch the stars of heaven*, Isa 14.13.

9.13–27: Antiochus's vow and letter to the Jews. The author enjoys himself, concocting promises and self-humiliation by the desperate king. **14:** *Free,* of taxes; perhaps also having asylum status. **15:** *Not considered worth burying,* see 5.10on. **16:** Cf. 3.3; 5.16. Antiochus's promises conform to his brother's practice (3.3). **17:** *To proclaim the power of God*, as did Heliodorus (3.37–39) and Nicanor (8.36). **17–18:** *Would visit . . . had justly come upon him*, the Greek verbs are identical, ironically underlining the contrast between Antiochus's confident promise and his inability to fulfill it. **19–27:** The letter is no supplication (v. 18). Some scholars consider this to be an authentic letter, but one that was addressed only to Jews loyal to the king, bidding them to support his *son Antiochus* V (vv. 25–27); cf. the authentic letters in 11.16,22,27,34. If it is authentic, it does not fit the context. Alternatively, it may be an ironic composition by the author, designed to make Antiochus appear ridiculous. **19:** *Citizens* means fellow-citizens (as in 5.6, "compatriots"), reflecting Antiochus's promise to become a Jew. By naming the addressees first Antiochus ascribes them greater importance, another example of the author's humor; contrast the authentic letters in ch 11. **23:** *My father,* Antiochus III, who appointed Seleucus IV as his successor. *The upper country,* i.e., Babylonia and Persia, the inlands of Asia, as in 1 Macc 3.37; 6.1. **25:** *What is written here,* lit. "What is written below," as if the letter had an appendix: more spoofing of official letters (such as 1 Macc 11.31; 12.7).

and private services rendered to you and to maintain your present goodwill, each of you, toward me and my son. [27] For I am sure that he will follow my policy and will treat you with moderation and kindness."

[28] So the murderer and blasphemer, having endured the more intense suffering, such as he had inflicted on others, came to the end of his life by a most pitiable fate, among the mountains in a strange land. [29] And Philip, one of his courtiers, took his body home; then, fearing the son of Antiochus, he withdrew to Ptolemy Philometor in Egypt.

10 Now Maccabeus and his followers, the Lord leading them on, recovered the temple and the city; [2] they tore down the altars that had been built in the public square by the foreigners, and also destroyed the sacred precincts. [3] They purified the sanctuary, and made another altar of sacrifice; then, striking fire out of flint, they offered sacrifices, after a lapse of two years, and they offered incense and lighted lamps and set out the bread of the Presence. [4] When they had done this, they fell prostrate and implored the Lord that they might never again fall into such misfortunes, but that, if they should ever sin, they might be disciplined by him with forbearance and not be handed over to blasphemous and barbarous nations. [5] It happened that on the same day on which the sanctuary had been profaned by the foreigners, the purification of the sanctuary took place, that is, on the twenty-fifth day of the same month, which was Chislev. [6] They celebrated it for eight days with rejoicing, in the manner of the festival of booths, remembering how not long before, during the festival of booths, they had been wandering in the mountains and caves like wild animals. [7] Therefore, carrying ivy-wreathed wands and beautiful branches and also fronds of palm, they offered hymns of thanksgiving to him who had given success to the purifying of his own holy place. [8] They decreed by public edict, ratified by vote, that the whole nation of the Jews should observe these days every year.

[9] Such then was the end of Antiochus, who was called Epiphanes.

[10] Now we will tell what took place under Antiochus Eupator, who was the son of that ungodly man, and will give a brief summary of the principal calamities of the wars. [11] This man, when he succeeded to the kingdom, appointed one Lysias to have charge of the government and to be chief governor of Coelesyria and Phoenicia. [12] Ptolemy, who was called Macron, took the lead in showing justice to the Jews because of the wrong that had been done to them, and attempted to maintain peaceful relations with them. [13] As a result he was accused before Eupator by the king's Friends.

Cf. 11.17n. **26:** *Your present goodwill*, the way this contradicts the facts so blatantly again constitutes authorial humor.

9.28–29: Antiochus's death. *Philip* apparently tried to seize the Seleucid government (1 Macc 6.55–56) without success and so went over to their enemy, Ptolemy VI (see 4.21). As cuneiform evidence attests, Antiochus died late in 164 BCE, around the same time as the rededication of the Temple.

10.1–8: Rededication of the Temple (cf. 1 Macc 4.36–61). This passage, needed to support the invitation in the letters prefaced to the book, seems to have been inserted by the Judean authors of those letters. It interrupts the preceding account, which continues in 10.9, and in contrast to the book as a whole displays an interest in the Temple and an antipathy for Gentiles. **1:** *The temple and the city*, historical order reversed; contrast 3.1–3; 4.48; 15.17. **3:** *Striking fire out of flint*, lit. "igniting rocks and extracting fire from them"; see 1.10–2.18n. The *incense, lamps,* and *bread of the Presence*, prescribed by Ex 30.7–8; 25.30. **4:** *Disciplined*, see 6.12n. **5–6:** *Chislev . . . festival of booths*, (December 164 BCE); see 1.9,18. The Hanukkah festival, celebrated *for eight days* like Solomon's dedication of the first Temple (1 Kings 8.65–66) and Hezekiah's reconsecration (2 Chr 29.17), commemorates this event. See also 1 Macc 4.52–59. *In the mountains and caves like wild animals*, see 5.27. **7:** *Ivy-wreathed wands*, contrast 6.7. *Fronds of palm*, cf. 1 Macc 13.51; Jn 12.13.

10.9–13: Antiochus V Eupator ascends to throne. See 9.1–12n. *Antiochus* V, son of Antiochus IV Epiphanes, ruled 164–162 BCE, when he was murdered by order of Demetrius I at the age of eleven. **10:** *Eupator, who was the son of that ungodly man* is ironic, since "Eupator" means "who has a good father." **11:** *Lysias,* see 1 Macc 3.32–33. **12:** *Ptolemy Macron*, see 4.45. We know no more about his fair policy toward the Jews. **13:** *Philometor*, see 1.10on.

He heard himself called a traitor at every turn, because he had abandoned Cyprus, which Philometor had entrusted to him, and had gone over to Antiochus Epiphanes. Unable to command the respect due his office,[a] he took poison and ended his life.

14 When Gorgias became governor of the region, he maintained a force of mercenaries, and at every turn kept attacking the Jews. 15 Besides this, the Idumeans, who had control of important strongholds, were harassing the Jews; they received those who were banished from Jerusalem, and endeavored to keep up the war. 16 But Maccabeus and his forces, after making solemn supplication and imploring God to fight on their side, rushed to the strongholds of the Idumeans. 17 Attacking them vigorously, they gained possession of the places, and beat off all who fought upon the wall, and slaughtered those whom they encountered, killing no fewer than twenty thousand.

18 When at least nine thousand took refuge in two very strong towers well equipped to withstand a siege, 19 Maccabeus left Simon and Joseph, and also Zacchaeus and his troops, a force sufficient to besiege them; and he himself set off for places where he was more urgently needed. 20 But those with Simon, who were money-hungry, were bribed by some of those who were in the towers, and on receiving seventy thousand drachmas let some of them slip away. 21 When word of what had happened came to Maccabeus, he gathered the leaders of the people, and accused these men of having sold their kindred for money by setting their enemies free to fight against them. 22 Then he killed these men who had turned traitor, and immediately captured the two towers. 23 Having success at arms in everything he undertook, he destroyed more than twenty thousand in the two strongholds.

24 Now Timothy, who had been defeated by the Jews before, gathered a tremendous force of mercenaries and collected the cavalry from Asia in no small number. He came on, intending to take Judea by storm. 25 As he drew near, Maccabeus and his men sprinkled dust on their heads and girded their loins with sackcloth, in supplication to God. 26 Falling upon the steps before the altar, they implored him to be gracious to them and to be an enemy to their enemies and an adversary to their adversaries, as the law declares. 27 And rising from their prayer they took up their arms and advanced a considerable distance from the city; and when they came near the enemy they halted. 28 Just as dawn was breaking, the two armies joined battle, the one having as pledge of success and victory not only their valor but also their reliance on the Lord, while the other made rage their leader in the fight.

29 When the battle became fierce, there appeared to the enemy from heaven five resplendent men on horses with golden bridles, and they were leading the Jews. 30 Two of them took Maccabeus between them, and shielding him with their own armor and weapons, they kept him from being wounded. They showered arrows and thunderbolts on the enemy, so that, confused and blinded, they were thrown into disorder and cut to pieces. 31 Twenty thousand five hundred were slaughtered, besides six hundred cavalry.

32 Timothy himself fled to a stronghold called Gazara, especially well garrisoned,

[a] Cn: Meaning of Gk uncertain

In claiming that Seleucid courtiers condemned Ptolemy Macron for moving his loyalty to the Seleucids, our author is condemning them, as usual; cf. 14.11.

10.14–23: Fighting the Idumeans. Cf. 1 Macc 5.3–5. **14:** *The region,* of Idumea (southern Palestine) according to 12.32, which explains the link to the next verse. **15:** *Those who were banished from Jerusalem*, apparently by Judas when he retook the city. **17:** *Twenty thousand*, a favorite number (see also v. 23; 8.9,30). **20:** *Drachma*, see 4.19n.

10.24–38: Fighting Timothy. 24: *Timothy, who had been defeated by the Jews before*, this might be a secondary gloss (see 8.30–33n.). *To take Judea,* but according to 1 Macc 5.6–8,11 this warfare was in Transjordan; see v. 32n. **25:** *Sprinkled dust*, or possibly "ashes," as in Esth 4.1; cf. 14.15 and Josh 7.6. **26:** *The steps before the altar*, compare Joel 2.17 and see 9.9n. *As the law declares,* at Ex 23.22. The very next verse there promises that God's angel will go before the Jews; see below, v. 29. **28:** *The one . . . the other*, cf. 3:22–23n. **29:** *Horses with golden bridles*, as at 3.25. **32:**

where Chaereas was commander. [33] Then Maccabeus and his men were glad, and they besieged the fort for four days. [34] The men within, relying on the strength of the place, kept blaspheming terribly and uttering wicked words. [35] But at dawn of the fifth day, twenty young men in the army of Maccabeus, fired with anger because of the blasphemies, bravely stormed the wall and with savage fury cut down everyone they met. [36] Others who came up in the same way wheeled around against the defenders and set fire to the towers; they kindled fires and burned the blasphemers alive. Others broke open the gates and let in the rest of the force, and they occupied the city. [37] They killed Timothy, who was hiding in a cistern, and his brother Chaereas, and Apollophanes. [38] When they had accomplished these things, with hymns and thanksgivings they blessed the Lord who shows great kindness to Israel and gives them the victory.

11 Very soon after this, Lysias, the king's guardian and kinsman, who was in charge of the government, being vexed at what had happened, [2] gathered about eighty thousand infantry and all his cavalry and came against the Jews. He intended to make the city a home for Greeks, [3] and to levy tribute on the temple as he did on the sacred places of the other nations, and to put up the high priesthood for sale every year. [4] He took no account whatever of the power of God, but was elated with his ten thousands of infantry, and his thousands of cavalry, and his eighty elephants. [5] Invading Judea, he approached Beth-zur, which was a fortified place about five stadia[a] from Jerusalem, and pressed it hard.

[6] When Maccabeus and his men got word that Lysias[b] was besieging the strongholds, they and all the people, with lamentations and tears, prayed the Lord to send a good angel to save Israel. [7] Maccabeus himself was the first to take up arms, and he urged the others to risk their lives with him to aid their kindred. Then they eagerly rushed off together. [8] And there, while they were still near Jerusalem, a horseman appeared at their head, clothed in white and brandishing weapons of gold. [9] And together they all praised the merciful God, and were strengthened in heart, ready to assail not only humans but the wildest animals or walls of iron. [10] They advanced in battle order, having their heavenly ally, for the Lord had mercy on them. [11] They hurled themselves like lions against the enemy, and laid low eleven thousand of them and sixteen hundred cavalry, and forced all the rest to flee. [12] Most of them got away stripped and wounded, and Lysias himself escaped by disgraceful flight.

[13] As he was not without intelligence, he pondered over the defeat that had befallen him, and realized that the Hebrews were invincible because the mighty God fought

[a] Meaning of Gk uncertain
[b] Gk *he*

Gazara (Gezer) was conquered by the Hasmoneans only decades later (1 Macc 13.43–48); here we should probably read (as in 1 Macc 5.8) "Jazer," a town in Transjordan, west of Amman. *Chaereas*, Timothy's brother, according to v. 37. **37:** *Timothy, who was hiding in a cistern*. A *cistern* was a large pit with plaster walls that stored water. The author often denies his enemies honorable death in battle; compare 8.34–35; 9.1–2; 11.12; 12.35.

11.1–15: Beth-zur campaign. Compare 1 Macc 4.26–35 and 6.31. Beth-zur was a fortress 16 mi (25 km) south-southeast of Jerusalem. **1:** *Lysias*, see 9.1–12n. *Kinsman*, honorific usage, as at 1 Macc 11.31; compare v. 22, "brother." **2:** *He intended,* lit. "thinking"; see v. 4n. **3:** *High priesthood for sale every year,* which would demean it greatly, for traditionally, until Jason (4.7; cf. 4.24), it had been held for life and passed from father to son. **4:** *He took no account whatever*, lit. "not thinking more," responding to the verb in v. 2: i.e., Lysias depended upon his own thoughts, and did not give more consideration to the power of God. He will learn: see v. 13. *Elephants*, often used to force openings in opposing ranks of soldiers (cf. 1 Macc 1.17; 3.34; 6.34–35. **5:** *Five stadia*, lit. "five schoinoi"; a "schoinos" was a Persian measure popular in Egypt, equivalent to ca. thirty stadia (see 12.10–28n.), so the distance here is approximately 18 mi (29 km), which is close to the actual distance of 16 mi (26 km). **6:** *A good angel*, as at 15.23; see 10.26n. **12:** *Lysias himself escaped by disgraceful flight,* see 10.37n. **13–15:** According to 1 Macc 4.35 no peace was made, but Lysias returned to Antioch for reinforcements. He may have heard of Antiochus's death and hastened home to take control. **13:** *God fought on their side,* as at 8.36.

on their side. So he sent to them [14] and persuaded them to settle everything on just terms, promising that he would persuade the king, constraining him to be their friend.[a] [15] Maccabeus, having regard for the common good, agreed to all that Lysias urged. For the king granted every request in behalf of the Jews which Maccabeus delivered to Lysias in writing.

[16] The letter written to the Jews by Lysias was to this effect:

"Lysias to the people of the Jews, greetings. [17] John and Absalom, who were sent by you, have delivered your signed communication and have asked about the matters indicated in it. [18] I have informed the king of everything that needed to be brought before him, and he has agreed to what was possible. [19] If you will maintain your goodwill toward the government, I will endeavor in the future to help promote your welfare. [20] And concerning such matters and their details, I have ordered these men and my representatives to confer with you. [21] Farewell. The one hundred forty-eighth year,[b] Dioscorinthius twenty-fourth."

[22] The king's letter ran thus:

"King Antiochus to his brother Lysias, greetings. [23] Now that our father has gone on to the gods, we desire that the subjects of the kingdom be undisturbed in caring for their own affairs. [24] We have heard that the Jews do not consent to our father's change to Greek customs, but prefer their own way of living and ask that their own customs be allowed them. [25] Accordingly, since we choose that this nation also should be free from disturbance, our decision is that their temple be restored to them and that they shall live according to the customs of their ancestors. [26] You will do well, therefore, to send word to them and give them pledges of friendship, so that they may know our policy and be of good cheer and go on happily in the conduct of their own affairs."

[27] To the nation the king's letter was as follows:

"King Antiochus to the senate of the Jews and to the other Jews, greetings. [28] If you are well, it is as we desire. We also are in good health. [29] Menelaus has informed us that you wish to return home and look after your own affairs. [30] Therefore those who go home by the thirtieth of Xanthicus will have our pledge of friendship and full permission [31] for the Jews to enjoy their own food and laws, just as formerly, and none of them shall be molested in any way for what may have been done in ignorance. [32] And I have also sent Menelaus to encourage you.

[a] Meaning of Gk uncertain
[b] 164 B.C.

11.16–38: Four official letters. These are usually assumed to be authentic, but their location here, after the death of Antiochus IV (ch 9) and ascent of Eupator to the throne (ch 10), is problematic. True, the second letter is definitely by Antiochus Eupator, who refers to his father's death in v. 23. But the other three bear dates in 164 BCE, when Antiochus IV Epiphanes was still alive and ruling, although campaigning in the east; see 9.28–29n. The author's mistaken assumption that all four letters are from the period after that king's death caused problems in the narrative; see 12.1n., 12.10n., and 13.23n.

11.16–21: Lysias's letter to the Jews. 17: *John*, perhaps Judas's brother (1 Macc 2.2); for *Absalom*, see 1 Macc 11.70; 13.11. *Your signed communication,* read "your communication attached below"; the reference is to the document mentioned in v. 15, which was unfortunately not preserved. **18:** *And he has agreed*, read "and I have agreed" (see vv. 35–36); Lysias distinguishes between decisions he is authorized to take and others that require the king's attention. **19:** *Maintain your goodwill*, Lysias diplomatically ignores the warfare. **21:** *The one hundred forty-eighth year* of the Seleucid era ran from autumn 165 to autumn 164; the name of the month is corrupt. The date is before Judas rededicated the Temple.

11.22–26: The king's letter to Lysias. 24: *We have heard that the Jews do not consent*, more diplomatic understatement. **25:** *Temple be restored . . . live according to the customs of their ancestors*, Antiochus rescinds his father's decrees against Judaism (ch 6), ignoring the fact that the Temple was already in Jewish hands.

11.27–33: The king's letter to the Jews. 29: *Menelaus* as late as spring 164 BCE was attempting to mediate between Antiochus and the Jews. **30:** *Thirtieth of Xanthicus*, equivalent to Heb Nisan (March/April). **31:** *Their own food and laws*, the special emphasis upon food corresponds to that focus of the decrees (chs 6–7; 1 Macc 1.62–63). **33:** *Xanthicus fifteenth*, the amnesty's deadline was only two weeks later (v. 30), which is unlikely. Given

33 Farewell. The one hundred forty-eighth year,[a] Xanthicus fifteenth."

34 The Romans also sent them a letter, which read thus:

"Quintus Memmius and Titus Manius, envoys of the Romans, to the people of the Jews, greetings. 35 With regard to what Lysias the kinsman of the king has granted you, we also give consent. 36 But as to the matters that he decided are to be referred to the king, as soon as you have considered them, send some one promptly so that we may make proposals appropriate for you. For we are on our way to Antioch. 37 Therefore make haste and send messengers so that we may have your judgment. 38 Farewell. The one hundred forty-eighth year,[a] Xanthicus fifteenth."

12 When this agreement had been reached, Lysias returned to the king, and the Jews went about their farming.

2 But some of the governors in various places, Timothy and Apollonius son of Gennaeus, as well as Hieronymus and Demophon, and in addition to these Nicanor the governor of Cyprus, would not let them live quietly and in peace. 3 And the people of Joppa did so ungodly a deed as this: they invited the Jews who lived among them to embark, with their wives and children, on boats that they had provided, as though there were no ill will to the Jews;[b] 4 and this was done by public vote of the city. When they accepted, because they wished to live peaceably and suspected nothing, the people of Joppa[c] took them out to sea and drowned them, at least two hundred. 5 When Judas heard of the cruelty visited on his compatriots, he gave orders to his men 6 and, calling upon God, the righteous judge, attacked the murderers of his kindred. He set fire to the harbor by night, burned the boats, and massacred those who had taken refuge there. 7 Then, because the city's gates were closed, he withdrew, intending to come again and root out the whole community of Joppa. 8 But learning that the people in Jamnia meant in the same way to wipe out the Jews who were living among them, 9 he attacked the Jamnites by night and set fire to the harbor and the fleet, so that the glow of the light was seen in Jerusalem, thirty miles[d] distant.

10 When they had gone more than a mile[e] from there, on their march against Timothy, at least five thousand Arabs with five

[a] 164 B.C.
[b] Gk *to them*
[c] Gk *they*
[d] Gk *two hundred forty stadia*
[e] Gk *nine stadia*

the identity of the date in v. 38, which too is suspicious, it is likely that this date is corrupt.

11.34–38: Letter of the Romans to the Jews. 34: *The Romans* in this period were periodically sending embassies to the East. Judas apparently asked them to use their influence with the Seleucids, just as a few years later he would establish a mutual defense pact with them (1 Macc 8). **35–36:** *What Lysias . . . has granted . . . referred to the king*, see v. 18n.

12.1–9: Clashes in coastal towns. 1: *This agreement,* lit. "these covenants." But the documents in ch 11 are not covenants; they are one–sided decisions. Chapter 13, in contrast, does end with "covenants" (13.25, same term in Greek). Given the author's difficulties coordinating ch 13 with earlier material (see 13.1–26n.), perhaps it originally preceded ch 12. *The Jews went about their farming,* a pastoral image of returning "to their own affairs" (11.23,26,29). **2:** *Timothy*, 8.30–33; 10.24–37. *Governor of Cyprus*, read "Cypriarch," i.e., commander of mercenaries from Cyprus (cf. 5.24n.). **3:** *Joppa*, Jaffa, next to modern Tel Aviv; a major port on the Mediterranean, later conquered by the Hasmoneans (1 Macc 12.33–34). **8:** *Jamnia*, ca. 14 mi (22 km) south of Joppa; compare v. 40 and 1 Macc 5.58.

12.10–28: Fighting in Transjordan. This section parallels much of 1 Macc 5, which contains a fuller account. The order is confused here, for "one mile" (v. 10, lit. "nine stadia"; a stadion was ca. 625 ft [190 m]) would not take Judas's forces from the Mediterranean coast to Transjordan; "ninety–five miles" (v. 17) could. Perhaps the two stories have been erroneously exchanged. **10:** *Timothy,* some confusion is present here too, as he had been killed at 10.37; see 11.16–38n. **10–11:** *Arabs . . . nomads,* the author often varies his terminology; compare "no light matter . . . not easy" in 2.26–27 and "festival of weeks . . . Pentecost" in 12.31–32. 1 Macc 5.25 identifies these Arabs as Nabateans and claims they were peaceable from the outset; 2 Macc first allows Judas another heroic

hundred cavalry attacked them. 11 After a hard fight, Judas and his companions, with God's help, were victorious. The defeated nomads begged Judas to grant them pledges of friendship, promising to give him livestock and to help his people[a] in all other ways. 12 Judas, realizing that they might indeed be useful in many ways, agreed to make peace with them; and after receiving his pledges they went back to their tents.

13 He also attacked a certain town that was strongly fortified with earthworks[b] and walls, and inhabited by all sorts of Gentiles. Its name was Caspin. 14 Those who were within, relying on the strength of the walls and on their supply of provisions, behaved most insolently toward Judas and his men, railing at them and even blaspheming and saying unholy things. 15 But Judas and his men, calling upon the great Sovereign of the world, who without battering rams or engines of war overthrew Jericho in the days of Joshua, rushed furiously upon the walls. 16 They took the town by the will of God, and slaughtered untold numbers, so that the adjoining lake, a quarter of a mile[c] wide, appeared to be running over with blood.

17 When they had gone ninety-five miles[d] from there, they came to Charax, to the Jews who are called Toubiani. 18 They did not find Timothy in that region, for he had by then left there without accomplishing anything, though in one place he had left a very strong garrison. 19 Dositheus and Sosipater, who were captains under Maccabeus, marched out and destroyed those whom Timothy had left in the stronghold, more than ten thousand men. 20 But Maccabeus arranged his army in divisions, set men[a] in command of the divisions, and hurried after Timothy, who had with him one hundred twenty thousand infantry and two thousand five hundred cavalry. 21 When Timothy learned of the approach of Judas, he sent off the women and the children and also the baggage to a place called Carnaim; for that place was hard to besiege and difficult of access because of the narrowness of all the approaches. 22 But when Judas's first division appeared, terror and fear came over the enemy at the manifestation to them of him who sees all things. In their flight they rushed headlong in every direction, so that often they were injured by their own men and pierced by the points of their own swords. 23 Judas pressed the pursuit with the utmost vigor, putting the sinners to the sword, and destroyed as many as thirty thousand.

24 Timothy himself fell into the hands of Dositheus and Sosipater and their men. With great guile he begged them to let him go in safety, because he held the parents of most of them, and the brothers of some, to whom no consideration would be shown. 25 And when with many words he had confirmed his solemn promise to restore them unharmed, they let him go, for the sake of saving their kindred.

26 Then Judas[e] marched against Carnaim and the temple of Atargatis, and slaughtered twenty-five thousand people. 27 After the rout and destruction of these, he marched also against Ephron, a fortified town where Lysias lived with multitudes of people of all nationalities.[b] Stalwart young men took their stand before the walls and made a vigorous defense; and great stores of war engines and missiles were there. 28 But the Jews[f] called upon the Sovereign who with power shatters

[a] Gk *them*
[b] Meaning of Gk uncertain
[c] Gk *two stadia*
[d] Gk *seven hundred fifty stadia*
[e] Gk *he*
[f] Gk *they*

victory before they make peace. **13:** *All sorts of Gentiles* is pejorative, as in v. 27. *Caspin*, ca. 10 mi (16 km) east of Lake Gennesaret (the Sea of Galilee). **15:** *Overthrew Jericho*, Josh 6.1–21. **16:** *Adjoining lake,* perhaps a swamp. **17:** *Charax*, "fortified camp"; location unknown. *Toubiani*, Jews associated with the Tobiad family (3.11n.); cf. 1 Macc 5.13. **21:** *Women . . . children . . . baggage,* lit. "women, children, and other baggage," reflecting patriarchal values. *Carnaim,* farther east in Transjordan (1 Macc 5.26–27). **22:** *Manifestation*, epiphany; see 2.21n. *Injured by their own men*, a literary convention in battle scenes. **26:** *Carnaim,* see v. 21n. *Atargatis* was a Syrian goddess, corresponding to the Canaanite Ashtoreth; cf. "Ashteroth-karnaim" in Gen 14.5. **27:** *Ephron*, ca. 8 mi (13 km) east of the Jordan River, opposite Scythopolis (v. 29; 1 Macc 5.46–51). *War engines*, large catapults.

the might of his enemies, and they got the town into their hands, and killed as many as twenty-five thousand of those who were in it.

29 Setting out from there, they hastened to Scythopolis, which is seventy-five miles[a] from Jerusalem. 30 But when the Jews who lived there bore witness to the goodwill that the people of Scythopolis had shown them and their kind treatment of them in times of misfortune, 31 they thanked them and exhorted them to be well disposed to their race in the future also. Then they went up to Jerusalem, as the festival of weeks was close at hand.

32 After the festival called Pentecost, they hurried against Gorgias, the governor of Idumea, 33 who came out with three thousand infantry and four hundred cavalry. 34 When they joined battle, it happened that a few of the Jews fell. 35 But a certain Dositheus, one of Bacenor's men, who was on horseback and was a strong man, caught hold of Gorgias, and grasping his cloak was dragging him off by main strength, wishing to take the accursed man alive, when one of the Thracian cavalry bore down on him and cut off his arm; so Gorgias escaped and reached Marisa.

36 As Esdris and his men had been fighting for a long time and were weary, Judas called upon the Lord to show himself their ally and leader in the battle. 37 In the language of their ancestors he raised the battle cry, with hymns; then he charged against Gorgias's troops when they were not expecting it, and put them to flight.

38 Then Judas assembled his army and went to the city of Adullam. As the seventh day was coming on, they purified themselves according to the custom, and kept the sabbath there.

39 On the next day, as had now become necessary, Judas and his men went to take up the bodies of the fallen and to bring them back to lie with their kindred in the sepulchres of their ancestors. 40 Then under the tunic of each one of the dead they found sacred tokens of the idols of Jamnia, which the law forbids the Jews to wear. And it became clear to all that this was the reason these men had fallen. 41 So they all blessed the ways of the Lord, the righteous judge, who reveals the things that are hidden; 42 and they turned to supplication, praying that the sin that had been committed might be wholly blotted out. The noble Judas exhorted the people to keep themselves free from sin, for they had seen with their own eyes what had happened as the result of the sin of those who had fallen. 43 He also took up a collection, man by man, to the amount of two thousand drachmas of silver, and sent it to Jerusalem to provide for a sin offering. In doing this he acted very well and honorably, taking account of the resurrection. 44 For if he were not expecting that those who had fallen would rise again, it would have been superfluous and foolish to pray for the dead. 45 But if he was looking to the splendid reward that is laid up for those who fall asleep in godliness, it was a holy and pious thought. Therefore he made atonement for the dead, so that they might be delivered from their sin.

13 In the one hundred forty-ninth year[b] word came to Judas and his men that Antiochus Eupator was coming with a great

[a] Gk *six hundred stadia*
[b] 163 B.C.

12.29–31: Return to Jerusalem. 29: *Scythopolis* (Hellenistic Beth-shan), a major city west of the Jordan River, ca. 16 mi (26 km) south of the Sea of Galilee (Judg 1.27; 1 Kings 4.12). **31:** *Went up*, the usual verb for pilgrimage to Jerusalem; e.g. 1 Sam 1.3; Acts 21.15. **31–32:** *Festival of weeks . . . Pentecost*, this holiday comes seven weeks ("Pentecost" = fifty [days]) after Passover (Lev 23.15–16; Acts 2.1). **35:** *Thracians* were well-known mercenaries in the Hellenistic period. *Marisa* was a major Idumean town, 20 mi (32 km) southwest of Jerusalem. **37:** *Language of their ancestors,* i.e., Hebrew. **38:** *Adullam*, ca. 10 mi (16 km) southeast of Marisa. **40:** Although only "a few" Jews had died (v. 34), it is important for the author that it is sin, not the chances of war, that caused their death. *Sacred tokens of the idols of Jamnia,* probably taken as booty. *Which the law forbids*, see Num 33.52; Deut 7.25–26. **43–45:** The author expounds upon Judas's care for the dead as evidence of his belief that their lives did not end with death; see 7.9n. **45:** *Fall asleep*, a common metaphor for death.

13.1–26: A new invasion. This chapter, which makes no allusion to ch 11, reports yet another campaign by Lysias and Antiochus Eupator that focuses on Beth-zur (vv. 18–22). This is problematic, both because no at-

army against Judea, [2] and with him Lysias, his guardian, who had charge of the government. Each of them had a Greek force of one hundred ten thousand infantry, five thousand three hundred cavalry, twenty-two elephants, and three hundred chariots armed with scythes.

[3] Menelaus also joined them and with utter hypocrisy urged Antiochus on, not for the sake of his country's welfare, but because he thought that he would be established in office. [4] But the King of kings aroused the anger of Antiochus against the scoundrel; and when Lysias informed him that this man was to blame for all the trouble, he ordered them to take him to Beroea and to put him to death by the method that is customary in that place. [5] For there is a tower there, fifty cubits high, full of ashes, and it has a rim running around it that on all sides inclines precipitously into the ashes. [6] There they all push to destruction anyone guilty of sacrilege or notorious for other crimes. [7] By such a fate it came about that Menelaus the lawbreaker died, without even burial in the earth. [8] And this was eminently just; because he had committed many sins against the altar whose fire and ashes were holy, he met his death in ashes.

[9] The king with barbarous arrogance was coming to show the Jews things far worse than those that had been done[a] in his father's time. [10] But when Judas heard of this, he ordered the people to call upon the Lord day and night, now if ever to help those who were on the point of being deprived of the law and their country and the holy temple, [11] and not to let the people who had just begun to revive fall into the hands of the blasphemous Gentiles. [12] When they had all joined in the same petition and had implored the merciful Lord with weeping and fasting and lying prostrate for three days without ceasing, Judas exhorted them and ordered them to stand ready.

[13] After consulting privately with the elders, he determined to march out and decide the matter by the help of God before the king's army could enter Judea and get possession of the city. [14] So, committing the decision to the Creator of the world and exhorting his troops to fight bravely to the death for the laws, temple, city, country, and commonwealth, he pitched his camp near Modein. [15] He gave his troops the watchword, "God's victory," and with a picked force of the bravest young men, he attacked the king's pavilion at night and killed as many as two thousand men in the camp. He stabbed[b] the leading elephant and its rider. [16] In the end they filled the camp with terror and confusion and withdrew in triumph. [17] This happened, just as day was dawning, because the Lord's help protected him.

[18] The king, having had a taste of the daring of the Jews, tried strategy in attacking their positions. [19] He advanced against Beth-

[a] Or *the worst of the things that had been done*
[b] Meaning of Gk uncertain

tempt is made to coordinate this narrative with that of ch 11, and because according to the parallel narrative in 1 Maccabees this second campaign began around Beth-zur (1 Macc 6.31) but quickly moved north to Beth-zechariah (1 Macc 6.32–47), which is not mentioned here. Similarly, Philip's role is puzzling; see 13.23n. It appears that the author was confused. **3–8:** Death of Menelaus. This interruptive interlude takes care of a loose end. **3:** *Menelaus*, see 4.23–50n. **4:** *King of kings*, a typical Persian epithet. Here it refers to God. *Beroea*, Aleppo in northern Syria. **5:** *Fifty cubits high*, cf. Esth 7.9; a cubit was ca. 18 in (45 cm). This method was Persian; we are not told here whether the ashes were hot, so that Menelaus died by burning, or cold, and so by suffocating. **7:** *Without even burial*, see 5.10n. **8:** The apparent artificiality of this explanation of poetic justice shows how important the notion is for 2 Macc; see 4.42n. **9:** To explain why the invasion continued although the real troublemaker had been recognized and executed, the author can only claim that the king's attitude toward the Jews changed for the worse; no reason is given. **11:** *Just begun to revive*, so relapse would be all the worse; cf. 14.36. **12:** *Fasting . . . for three days*, as in Esth 4.16. **14:** *Modein*, ca. 20 mi (32 km) northwest of Jerusalem, the hometown of the Hasmoneans (1 Macc 2.1). **15:** *Watchword*, as in 8.23. *Leading elephant and its rider*, cf. 1 Macc 6.43–46, where Eleazar dies after heroically killing the lead elephant. **16:** According to 1 Macc 6.47, the Jews fled. **19:** *Beth-zur,*

zur, a strong fortress of the Jews, was turned back, attacked again,[a] and was defeated. [20] Judas sent in to the garrison whatever was necessary. [21] But Rhodocus, a man from the ranks of the Jews, gave secret information to the enemy; he was sought for, caught, and put in prison. [22] The king negotiated a second time with the people in Beth-zur, gave pledges, received theirs, withdrew, attacked Judas and his men, was defeated; [23] he got word that Philip, who had been left in charge of the government, had revolted in Antioch; he was dismayed, called in the Jews, yielded and swore to observe all their rights, settled with them and offered sacrifice, honored the sanctuary and showed generosity to the holy place. [24] He received Maccabeus, left Hegemonides as governor from Ptolemais to Gerar, [25] and went to Ptolemais. The people of Ptolemais were indignant over the treaty; in fact they were so angry that they wanted to annul its terms.[b] [26] Lysias took the public platform, made the best possible defense, convinced them, appeased them, gained their goodwill, and set out for Antioch. This is how the king's attack and withdrawal turned out.

14 Three years later, word came to Judas and his men that Demetrius son of Seleucus had sailed into the harbor of Tripolis with a strong army and a fleet, [2] and had taken possession of the country, having made away with Antiochus and his guardian Lysias.

[3] Now a certain Alcimus, who had formerly been high priest but had willfully defiled himself in the times of separation,[c] realized that there was no way for him to be safe or to have access again to the holy altar, [4] and went to King Demetrius in about the one hundred fifty-first year,[d] presenting to him a crown of gold and a palm, and besides these some of the customary olive branches from the temple. During that day he kept quiet. [5] But he found an opportunity that furthered his mad purpose when he was invited by Demetrius to a meeting of the council and was asked about the attitude and intentions of the Jews. He answered:

[6] "Those of the Jews who are called Hasideans, whose leader is Judas Maccabeus, are keeping up war and stirring up sedition, and will not let the kingdom attain tranquility. [7] Therefore I have laid aside my ancestral glory—I mean the high priesthood—and have

[a] Or *faltered*
[b] Meaning of Gk uncertain
[c] Other ancient authorities read *of mixing*
[d] 161 B.C.

see 11.1–15n. **23:** *Philip, who had been left in charge of the government, had revolted*, this comment is confusing, since 9.29 reported that Philip had fled to Egypt out of fear of Eupator; see 11.16–38n. **24:** *Received Maccabeus,* formally taking leave of him, as at 3.35. *Hegemonides*, like Heliodorus (3.7) and Ptolemy Macron (10:12), this Seleucid official is known from inscriptions. *From Ptolemais to Gerar*, the Palestinian coastal region from Acco down to below Gaza; for this administrative district, see also 1 Macc 11.59 and 15.38. **25:** *The treaty*, see 12.1n.

14.1–25: Alcimus and Nicanor. Enter a new villain, Alcimus, said to have formerly been high priest, which is possible if Antiochus V appointed him after the death of Menelaus. He incites the new Seleucid king against Judas, and a royal expedition is sent out, commanded by Nicanor, who is taken by the author, perhaps mistakenly, to be identical with the "thrice-accursed" (8.34; 15.3) villain of ch 8. According to 1 Macc 7.12–25 the first campaign incited by Alcimus was commanded by Bacchides; 2 Macc assigns it to Nicanor in light of its general focus upon him, culminating in his defeat in ch 15 and the festival established to celebrate it (15.36); cf. 8.9n. **1:** *Three years later,* about 162 or 161 BCE. *Demetrius* I, *son of Seleucus* IV (reigned 162–150), had been sent to Rome to replace Antiochus IV Epiphanes as a hostage. When Seleucus IV died in 175 BCE, Demetrius was still a child, and Antiochus assumed the throne (see 4.7n.). After the death of Antiochus IV, Demetrius viewed his cousin Antiochus V Eupator as a usurper (see 4.7n.). Demetrius escaped from Rome in the late summer of 162 BCE and quickly established himself upon the Seleucid throne. *Tripolis,* in northern Lebanon. **2:** See 1 Macc 7.3–4. **3:** *A certain Alcimus,* alone; compare 1 Macc 7.5, where he leads a delegation; see 3.4n. *Times of separation* refers to the days of Antiochus's decrees. **4:** *Crown of gold and a palm,* customary gifts to kings; compare 1 Macc 13.37. **6–11:** Alcimus's speech is meant to be understood as self-serving. His concern for the commonweal is a parody serving to contrast him with Onias (4.1–6) **6:** *Hasideans,* meaning "pious ones"; see also 1 Macc 7.13 where they are a party separate from the Maccabees, and Judas is not their leader. In 1 Macc their pious peace-seeking is represented as naïve, and many of them are killed, making them, in 1 Macc 1.62–63 and 2.29–38, foils for the

now come here, [8] first because I am genuinely concerned for the interests of the king, and second because I have regard also for my compatriots. For through the folly of those whom I have mentioned our whole nation is now in no small misfortune. [9] Since you are acquainted, O king, with the details of this matter, may it please you to take thought for our country and our hard-pressed nation with the gracious kindness that you show to all. [10] For as long as Judas lives, it is impossible for the government to find peace." [11] When he had said this, the rest of the king's Friends,[a] who were hostile to Judas, quickly inflamed Demetrius still more. [12] He immediately chose Nicanor, who had been in command of the elephants, appointed him governor of Judea, and sent him off [13] with orders to kill Judas and scatter his troops, and to install Alcimus as high priest of the great[b] temple. [14] And the Gentiles throughout Judea, who had fled before[c] Judas, flocked to join Nicanor, thinking that the misfortunes and calamities of the Jews would mean prosperity for themselves.

[15] When the Jews[d] heard of Nicanor's coming and the gathering of the Gentiles, they sprinkled dust on their heads and prayed to him who established his own people forever and always upholds his own heritage by manifesting himself. [16] At the command of the leader, they[e] set out from there immediately and engaged them in battle at a village called Dessau.[c] [17] Simon, the brother of Judas, had encountered Nicanor, but had been temporarily[f] checked because of the sudden consternation created by the enemy.

[18] Nevertheless Nicanor, hearing of the valor of Judas and his troops and their courage in battle for their country, shrank from deciding the issue by bloodshed. [19] Therefore he sent Posidonius, Theodotus, and Mattathias to give and receive pledges of friendship. [20] When the terms had been fully considered, and the leader had informed the people, and it had appeared that they were of one mind, they agreed to the covenant. [21] The leaders[d] set a day on which to meet by themselves. A chariot came forward from each army; seats of honor were set in place; [22] Judas posted armed men in readiness at key places to prevent sudden treachery on the part of the enemy; so they duly held the consultation.

[23] Nicanor stayed on in Jerusalem and did nothing out of the way, but dismissed the flocks of people that had gathered. [24] And he kept Judas always in his presence; he was warmly attached to the man. [25] He urged him to marry and have children; so Judas[e] married, settled down, and shared the common life.

[26] But when Alcimus noticed their goodwill for one another, he took the covenant that had been made and went to Demetrius. He told him that Nicanor was disloyal to the government, since he had appointed that conspirator against the kingdom, Judas, to be his successor. [27] The king became excited and, provoked by the false accusations of that depraved man, wrote to Nicanor, stating that he was displeased with the covenant and commanding him to send Maccabeus to Antioch as a prisoner without delay.

[28] When this message came to Nicanor, he was troubled and grieved that he had to annul their agreement when the man had done no wrong. [29] Since it was not possible to oppose the king, he watched for an opportunity to accomplish this by a stratagem. [30] But Maccabeus, noticing that Nicanor was more aus-

[a] Gk *of the Friends*
[b] Gk *greatest*
[c] Meaning of Gk uncertain
[d] Gk *they*
[e] Gk *he*
[f] Other ancient authorities read *slowly*

smarter, more violent, Hasmoneans. Cf. 15.27n. **11:** *Friends,* see 1.14n. **14:** Cf. 8.11. **15:** *Dust*, see 10.25n. **16:** *Dessau,* precise location uncertain. **17:** As at 10.20, Simon is something of a foil for Judas, although not condemned. **18:** *Country*, lit. "fatherland"; see 7.2n. **23–25:** Idyllic relations between Nicanor and Judas. The author again portrays mutual respect between Jew and Gentile, as long as troublemakers do not interfere; see 4.35–36n.

14.26–15.36: Alcimus and Nicanor, continued. As elsewhere (3.4; 12.2), the idyll is destroyed, and so the story resumes, with a heavy "But." Alcimus again misrepresents the good relations between Nicanor and Judas to Demetrius, and the king responds by renewing his orders to Nicanor to assert royal rule and arrest Judas.

tere in his dealings with him and was meeting him more rudely than had been his custom, concluded that this austerity did not spring from the best motives. So he gathered not a few of his men, and went into hiding from Nicanor. 31 When the latter became aware that he had been cleverly outwitted by the man, he went to the great[a] and holy temple while the priests were offering the customary sacrifices, and commanded them to hand the man over. 32 When they declared on oath that they did not know where the man was whom he wanted, 33 he stretched out his right hand toward the sanctuary, and swore this oath: "If you do not hand Judas over to me as a prisoner, I will level this shrine of God to the ground and tear down the altar, and build here a splendid temple to Dionysus."

34 Having said this, he went away. Then the priests stretched out their hands toward heaven and called upon the constant Defender of our nation, in these words: 35 "O Lord of all, though you have need of nothing, you were pleased that there should be a temple for your habitation among us; 36 so now, O holy One, Lord of all holiness, keep undefiled forever this house that has been so recently purified."

37 A certain Razis, one of the elders of Jerusalem, was denounced to Nicanor as a man who loved his compatriots and was very well thought of and for his goodwill was called father of the Jews. 38 In former times, when there was no mingling with the Gentiles, he had been accused of Judaism, and he had most zealously risked body and life for Judaism. 39 Nicanor, wishing to exhibit the enmity that he had for the Jews, sent more than five hundred soldiers to arrest him; 40 for he thought that by arresting[b] him he would do them an injury. 41 When the troops were about to capture the tower and were forcing the door of the courtyard, they ordered that fire be brought and the doors burned. Being surrounded, Razis[c] fell upon his own sword, 42 preferring to die nobly rather than to fall into the hands of sinners and suffer outrages unworthy of his noble birth. 43 But in the heat of the struggle he did not hit exactly, and the crowd was now rushing in through the doors. He courageously ran up on the wall, and bravely threw himself down into the crowd. 44 But as they quickly drew back, a space opened and he fell in the middle of the empty space. 45 Still alive and aflame with anger, he rose, and though his blood gushed forth and his wounds were severe he ran through the crowd; and standing upon a steep rock, 46 with his blood now completely drained from him, he tore out his entrails, took them in both hands and hurled them at the crowd, calling upon the Lord of life and spirit to give them back to him again. This was the manner of his death.

15 When Nicanor heard that Judas and his troops were in the region of Samaria, he made plans to attack them with complete safety on the day of rest. 2 When the Jews who were compelled to follow him said, "Do not destroy so savagely and barbarously, but show respect for the day that he who sees all things has honored and hallowed above other

[a] Gk *greatest*
[b] Meaning of Gk uncertain
[c] Gk *he*

Nicanor has no choice but to obey, and so the way is paved for a new clash. **28–33:** Cf. 1 Macc 7.30–38. **30:** Cf. Gen 31.2. **33:** *Stretched out his right hand*, usually a gesture of prayer (3.20; 15.12), but here it is a threat, apparently modeled on Isa 10.32, where it is ascribed to an Assyrian king leading an army against Jerusalem. The threatening gesture is answered first in the next verse and then, conclusively, at 15.32. **34:** *Toward heaven*, to protect the Temple, as in 3.39. **35:** In contrast to the parallel in 1 Macc 7.36–38, the Diaspora theology of 2 Macc emphasizes that God resides in heaven, not in what the Bible calls "the house of God." **36:** *Been so recently purified,* see 10.1–8; 13.11.

14.37–46: Martyrdom of Razis. This account of martyrdom functions similarly to those in chs 6–7. It is the premise of the victory over Nicanor depicted in the next chapter. **37:** *Father of the Jews*, honorifically; compare 11.1n. **38:** *Risked body and life for Judaism*, the reference to *Judaism* shows that Razis fought, in his way, for the same cause as did Judas and his men in theirs (2.21; 8.1). **42:** *Die nobly*, like Eleazar (6.28). **43–44:** *Courageously . . . bravely*: the Diaspora author emphasizes that martyrs share the same qualities as heroic soldiers. **46:** See 7.9n.

15.1–36: Death of Nicanor. 1: *Attack . . . on the day of rest*, cf. 5.25; 8.26. **3:** *Thrice-accursed* Nicanor, as 8.34.

days," [3] the thrice-accursed wretch asked if there were a sovereign in heaven who had commanded the keeping of the sabbath day. [4] When they declared, "It is the living Lord himself, the Sovereign in heaven, who ordered us to observe the seventh day," [5] he replied, "But I am a sovereign also, on earth, and I command you to take up arms and finish the king's business." Nevertheless, he did not succeed in carrying out his abominable design.

[6] This Nicanor in his utter boastfulness and arrogance had determined to erect a public monument of victory over Judas and his forces. [7] But Maccabeus did not cease to trust with all confidence that he would get help from the Lord. [8] He exhorted his troops not to fear the attack of the Gentiles, but to keep in mind the former times when help had come to them from heaven, and so to look for the victory that the Almighty would give them. [9] Encouraging them from the law and the prophets, and reminding them also of the struggles they had won, he made them the more eager. [10] When he had aroused their courage, he issued his orders, at the same time pointing out the perfidy of the Gentiles and their violation of oaths. [11] He armed each of them not so much with confidence in shields and spears as with the inspiration of brave words, and he cheered them all by relating a dream, a sort of vision,[a] which was worthy of belief.

[12] What he saw was this: Onias, who had been high priest, a noble and good man, of modest bearing and gentle manner, one who spoke fittingly and had been trained from childhood in all that belongs to excellence, was praying with outstretched hands for the whole body of the Jews. [13] Then in the same fashion another appeared, distinguished by his gray hair and dignity, and of marvelous majesty and authority. [14] And Onias spoke, saying, "This is a man who loves the family of Israel and prays much for the people and the holy city—Jeremiah, the prophet of God." [15] Jeremiah stretched out his right hand and gave to Judas a golden sword, and as he gave it he addressed him thus: [16] "Take this holy sword, a gift from God, with which you will strike down your adversaries."

[17] Encouraged by the words of Judas, so noble and so effective in arousing valor and awaking courage in the souls of the young, they determined not to carry on a campaign[b] but to attack bravely, and to decide the matter by fighting hand to hand with all courage, because the city and the sanctuary and the temple were in danger. [18] Their concern for wives and children, and also for brothers and sisters[c] and relatives, lay upon them less heavily; their greatest and first fear was for the consecrated sanctuary. [19] And those who had to remain in the city were in no little distress, being anxious over the encounter in the open country.

[20] When all were now looking forward to the coming issue, and the enemy was already close at hand with their army drawn up for battle, the elephants[d] strategically stationed and the cavalry deployed on the flanks, [21] Maccabeus, observing the masses that were in front of him and the varied supply of arms and the savagery of the elephants, stretched out his hands toward heaven and called upon the Lord who works wonders; for he knew that it is not by arms, but as the Lord[e] decides, that he gains the victory for those who deserve it. [22] He called upon him in these words: "O Lord, you sent your angel in the time of King Hezekiah of Judea, and he killed fully one hundred eighty-five thousand in the camp of Sennacherib. [23] So now, O Sovereign of the heavens, send a good angel to spread terror and trembling before us. [24] By the

[a] Meaning of Gk uncertain
[b] Or *to remain in camp*
[c] Gk *for brothers*
[d] Gk *animals*
[e] Gk *he*

4–5: *Sovereign in heaven . . . sovereign also, on earth*, see 3.22–23n. **8–9:** Cf. v. 22 and 8.19. **9:** *The law and the prophets*, the Torah (Pentateuch) and the prophetic books were now regarded as scripture (see Prologue to Sirach). **10:** *Violation of oaths*, 11.27–32; 14.18–29. **12–16:** Judas receives the support of both priest (Onias) and prophet (Jeremiah) to defend the Jews on the Sabbath; compare the treatment of the sabbath question in 1 Macc 2.39–41. **12:** On *Onias's* qualities, see 4.37n. *Was praying*, as a priest invoking God's blessing upon a congregation; see Lev 9.22 and Sir 50.20. **20:** *Elephants . . . cavalry*, compare 1 Macc 6.34–38. **22:** See 8.19n. **23:** *Good angel*, as at

might of your arm may these blasphemers who come against your holy people be struck down." With these words he ended his prayer.

25 Nicanor and his troops advanced with trumpets and battle songs, 26 but Judas and his troops met the enemy in battle with invocations to God and prayers. 27 So, fighting with their hands and praying to God in their hearts, they laid low at least thirty-five thousand, and were greatly gladdened by God's manifestation.

28 When the action was over and they were returning with joy, they recognized Nicanor, lying dead, in full armor. 29 Then there was shouting and tumult, and they blessed the Sovereign Lord in the language of their ancestors. 30 Then the man who was ever in body and soul the defender of his people, the man who maintained his youthful goodwill toward his compatriots, ordered them to cut off Nicanor's head and arm and carry them to Jerusalem. 31 When he arrived there and had called his compatriots together and stationed the priests before the altar, he sent for those who were in the citadel. 32 He showed them the vile Nicanor's head and that profane man's arm, which had been boastfully stretched out against the holy house of the Almighty. 33 He cut out the tongue of the ungodly Nicanor and said that he would feed it piecemeal to the birds and would hang up these rewards of his folly opposite the sanctuary. 34 And they all, looking to heaven, blessed the Lord who had manifested himself, saying, "Blessed is he who has kept his own place undefiled!" 35 Judas[a] hung Nicanor's head from the citadel, a clear and conspicuous sign to everyone of the help of the Lord. 36 And they all decreed by public vote never to let this day go unobserved, but to celebrate the thirteenth day of the twelfth month—which is called Adar in the Aramaic language—the day before Mordecai's day.

37 This, then, is how matters turned out with Nicanor, and from that time the city has been in the possession of the Hebrews. So I will here end my story.

38 If it is well told and to the point, that is what I myself desired; if it is poorly done and mediocre, that was the best I could do. 39 For just as it is harmful to drink wine alone, or, again, to drink water alone, while wine mixed with water is sweet and delicious and enhances one's enjoyment, so also the style of the story delights the ears of those who read the work. And here will be the end.

[a] Gk *He*

11.6. **24:** *Might of your arm,* Ex 15.16. **27:** *Fighting with their hands and praying,* Ps 149.6. **29:** *Shouting and tumult*, words that usually bespeak fear; see 3.30; 10.30; 11.25; 12.37; 13.16. Indeed, some fear is expected among those who witness divine intervention, even on their behalf; compare Ex 14.30–31; Ps 52.6; Mk 4.41; Lk 1.65. *Language of their ancestors*, i.e., Hebrew; Palestinian Jews spoke Aramaic, but formal prayer, using the language of scripture, was typically in Hebrew. **30–36:** Disposition of Nicanor's corpse; cf. 1 Macc 7.47–49. **31:** *The citadel*, the garrison north of the Temple was still held by the Syrians (1 Macc 1.33; 6.18), but the Jews had built another fort (1 Macc 4.60). **32:** See 14.33. **34:** *Who has kept his own place undefiled*, answering, verbatim, the prayer of 14.36. **35:** 1 Sam 31.9; Jdt 14.1; 1 Macc 7.47. **36:** *Decreed by public vote*, as at 10.8. Compare 1 Macc 7.48–49. *Adar*, February/March. *Aramaic*, the contemporary vernacular, as opposed to Hebrew, "the language of their ancestors" (12.37; 15.29; cf. 7.8,21,27). *Mordecai's day*, the festival of Purim, celebrated on the fourteenth day of Adar (Esth 9.21). There is evidence for the celebration of Nicanor's Day even centuries later.

15.37–39: Conclusion. 37: *So I will here end*, by using the first person the author reintroduces himself and thus announces the conclusion of his work, clearly explaining that it is the restoration of Jerusalem that ends his story, thus closing the circle that began with the idyllic Jerusalem of 3.1–3. The fact that the city was under Seleucid rule in ch 3 and now it was *in the possession of the Hebrews* does not interest the Diaspora author. For the history of Jerusalem, and the revolt, from this point on, see 1 Macc 8ff. **39:** *Harmful to drink wine alone*, in the Greco-Roman world it was usual to drink wine mixed with water; only barbarians, famously the Scythians (see 4.47n.), drank it undiluted. As at 2.29, the author emphasizes that his job was only to beautify Jason of Cyrene's work, making it more palatable and enjoyable.

(b) The books from 1 Esdras through 3 Maccabees are recognized as Deuterocanonical Scripture by the Greek and the Russian Orthodox Churches. They are not so recognized by the Roman Catholic Chruch, but 1 Esdras and the Prayer of Manasseh (together with 2 Esdras) are placed in an appendix to the Latin Vulgate Bible.

1 ESDRAS

NAME AND CANONICAL STATUS

First Esdras (the Greek form of Ezra) is one of several books bearing the name of Ezra. It is included in the canon by Greek and Russian Orthodox churches. Known in the early Greek mss as Esdras Apocrypha or 1 Esdras; the book is called 3 Esdras in the Latin Vulgate Bible, where it was often placed in an appendix after the New Testament.

DATE OF COMPOSITION AND LITERARY HISTORY

The book has been preserved in Greek and reflects Hellenistic values and vocabulary. Although the latest events it narrates are from the mid-fifth century, it probably dates in its current form to the second century BCE. It is unclear whether the book is a translation of an earlier Hebrew or Aramaic version (possibly as ancient as Ezra-Nehemiah) or a late adaptation of 2 Chronicles and Ezra-Nehemiah composed originally in Greek. The work in Greek was used by the late first-century CE historian Josephus for his account of the return from the exile.

With one significant exception, the book repeats, with minor (yet often significant) variations, sections from the books of 2 Chronicles and Ezra-Nehemiah. First Esdras begins with King Josiah's Passover celebration in Jerusalem in 622 BCE, reproducing the substance of 2 Chr 35.1–36.21. It continues directly with all of the canonical book of Ezra (with a few changes), which describes the return to Judea beginning in 538 BCE, followed by Nehemiah 8, which describes events that ostensibly (in 1 Esdras) transpired in 458–457 BCE in which Ezra participated. The only material unique to 1 Esdras is the story of the three young bodyguards in the court of King Darius (3.1–5.6).

STRUCTURE AND CONTENTS

Although the book largely overlaps other biblical books, its compositional pattern offers a distinct perspective on the history it recounts. It traces a trajectory between Josiah's Passover (1.1–24) and an unnamed holy day in the time of Ezra (9.49–55 || Neh 8:1–13). The destruction of Jerusalem, exile, and rebuilding that it narrates are framed by celebrations, which imply complete restoration and a return to the "good old days." It thereby depicts a more positive historical development than the longer report in Ezra-Nehemiah, which begins and concludes with challenges rather than festivities. The main divisions of the book are:

1.1–24	An ideal state of affairs: Josiah's Passover celebration (=2 Chr 35.1–27)
1.25–58	Decline and destruction (=2 Chr 36.1–21)
2.1–9.55 [except 3.1-5.6]	Stages of return and restoration (=Ezra 1–10 and Neh 8):
2.1–30	Initial preparations for a return and rebuilding (||Ezra 1 and 4.7–24)
3.1–5.6	The three bodyguards and the commissioning of Zerubbabel
5.7–7.15	Zerubbabel leads the rebuilding of the altar and the temple (||Ezra 2:1–4:6 and 5.1–6.22)
8.1–9.55	Ezra leads the reforms and introduces the law (||Ezra 7–9; Neh 8.1–13a)

INTERPRETATION AND GUIDE TO READING

The book begins and concludes with a ceremony in Jerusalem in front of the Temple—highlighting the unquestioned centrality of the Temple. The troubled time between the ceremonies—namely, the destruction of the Temple and Jerusalem, and the exile to Babylon—is treated as a brief period, followed immediately by a gradual but effective restoration of the altar, the Temple, and the community. Whereas the book of Ezra-Nehemiah contrasts the preexilic period with that of the return from exile, 1 Esdras, like Chronicles, underscores continuities between them. First Esdras also contrasts with the accounts in Ezra-Nehemiah in glorifying leaders, especially King David's descendant Zerubbabel, whose role it expands significantly. In particular, the lengthy story (unique to 1 Esdras) of the three bodyguards in Darius's court focuses on Zerubbabel's achievements. This story portrays

Zerubbabel as the wise hero who wins Darius's support for the reconstruction of the Temple and successfully accomplishes his goal. Ezra the priest also rises to a higher level than in Ezra-Nehemiah, explicitly called a chief priest (but see Ezra 7.5n.). Ezra's prominence is further increased by the absence of collaboration with Nehemiah (who is portrayed in Nehemiah 1–13 as a governor responsible for rebuilding Jerusalem's walls). In First Esdras, Ezra is the dominant figure in the final stages of the restoration and the climax of the entire story (8.1–9.55).

Tamara Cohn Eskenazi

1 Josiah kept the passover to his Lord in Jerusalem; he killed the passover lamb on the fourteenth day of the first month, [2] having placed the priests according to their divisions, arrayed in their vestments, in the temple of the Lord. [3] He told the Levites, the temple servants of Israel, that they should sanctify themselves to the Lord and put the holy ark of the Lord in the house that King Solomon, son of David, had built; [4] and he said, "You need no longer carry it on your shoulders. Now worship the Lord your God and serve his people Israel; prepare yourselves by your families and kindred, [5] in accordance with the directions of King David of Israel and the magnificence of his son Solomon. Stand in order in the temple according to the groupings of the ancestral houses of you Levites, who minister before your kindred the people of Israel, [6] and kill the passover lamb and prepare the sacrifices for your kindred, and keep the passover according to the commandment of the Lord that was given to Moses."

[7] To the people who were present Josiah gave thirty thousand lambs and kids, and three thousand calves; these were given from the king's possessions, as he promised, to the people and the priests and Levites. [8] Hilkiah, Zechariah, and Jehiel,[a] the chief officers of the temple, gave to the priests for the passover two thousand six hundred sheep and three hundred calves. [9] And Jeconiah and Shemaiah and his brother Nethanel, and Hashabiah and Ochiel and Joram, captains over thousands, gave the Levites for the passover five thousand sheep and seven hundred calves.

[10] This is what took place. The priests and the Levites, having the unleavened bread, stood in proper order according to kindred [11] and the grouping of the ancestral houses, before the people, to make the offering to the Lord as it is written in the book of Moses; this they did in the morning. [12] They roasted the passover lamb with fire, as required; and they boiled the sacrifices in bronze pots and caldrons, with a pleasing odor, [13] and carried them to all the people. Afterward they prepared the passover for themselves and for their kindred the priests, the sons of Aaron, [14] because the priests were offering the fat until nightfall; so the Levites prepared it for themselves and for their kindred the priests, the sons of Aaron. [15] The temple singers, the sons of Asaph, were in their place according to the arrangement made by David, and also Asaph, Zechariah, and Eddinus, who represented the king. [16] The gatekeepers were at each gate; no one needed to interrupt his

[a] Gk *Esyelus*

1.1–24: An ideal state of affairs: Josiah's Passover celebration (2 Chr 35.1–19). This event constitutes a high point just prior to the destruction of Jerusalem and its Temple. According to 2 Kings 23.21–23 and 2 Chr 34.14–33, the Passover celebration of 622 BCE was the culmination of the religious reforms of Josiah, king of Judah (640–609 BCE). First Esdras does not include an account of the reforms. The author of 1 Esdras is interested in the continuity between the First and Second Temples, and thus shapes its narrative as a movement from one high point (Passover celebration under Josiah) to another, at the time of Ezra (1 Esdras 9), with the destruction and exile but a brief interlude (1 Esdras 1.25–58), followed directly by return and restoration. **3:** *The Levites* were religious functionaries; the priests (v.2) were a subgroup of Levites who, according to tradition, were descended from Aaron, the first priest (see Ex 28.1) with unique responsibilities for the sanctuary. For rules concerning Levites, see 1 Chr 3.1–5.1. **5:** For an understanding of David's role, see 1 Chr 23; 28.13,21; 2 Chr 8.14. **6:** For Passover rules, see Ex 12.1–13; Deut 16.1–8. **7–9:** The list of offerings differs slightly from that in 2 Chr 35.7–9.

daily duties, for their kindred the Levites prepared the passover for them.

17 So the things that had to do with the sacrifices to the Lord were accomplished that day: the passover was kept 18 and the sacrifices were offered on the altar of the Lord, according to the command of King Josiah. 19 And the people of Israel who were present at that time kept the passover and the festival of unleavened bread seven days. 20 No passover like it had been kept in Israel since the times of the prophet Samuel; 21 none of the kings of Israel had kept such a passover as was kept by Josiah and the priests and Levites and the people of Judah and all of Israel who were living in Jerusalem. 22 In the eighteenth year of the reign of Josiah this passover was kept.

23 And the deeds of Josiah were upright in the sight of the Lord, for his heart was full of godliness. 24 In ancient times the events of his reign have been recorded—concerning those who sinned and acted wickedly toward the Lord beyond any other people or kingdom, and how they grieved the Lord[a] deeply, so that the words of the Lord fell upon Israel.

25 After all these acts of Josiah, it happened that Pharaoh, king of Egypt, went to make war at Carchemish on the Euphrates, and Josiah went out against him. 26 And the king of Egypt sent word to him saying, "What have we to do with each other, O king of Judea? 27 I was not sent against you by the Lord God, for my war is at the Euphrates. And now the Lord is with me! The Lord is with me, urging me on! Stand aside, and do not oppose the Lord."

28 Josiah, however, did not turn back to his chariot, but tried to fight with him, and did not heed the words of the prophet Jeremiah from the mouth of the Lord. 29 He joined battle with him in the plain of Megiddo, and the commanders came down against King Josiah. 30 The king said to his servants, "Take me away from the battle, for I am very weak." And immediately his servants took him out of the line of battle. 31 He got into his second chariot; and after he was brought back to Jerusalem he died, and was buried in the tomb of his ancestors.

32 In all Judea they mourned for Josiah. The prophet Jeremiah lamented for Josiah, and the principal men, with the women,[b] have made lamentation for him to this day; it was ordained that this should always be done throughout the whole nation of Israel. 33 These things are written in the book of the histories of the kings of Judea; and every one of the acts of Josiah, and his splendor, and his understanding of the law of the Lord, and the things that he had done before, and these that are now told, are recorded in the book of the kings of Israel and Judah.

34 The men of the nation took Jeconiah[c] son of Josiah, who was twenty-three years old, and made him king in succession to his father Josiah. 35 He reigned three months in Judah and Jerusalem. Then the king of Egypt deposed him from reigning in Jerusalem, 36 and fined the nation one hundred talents of silver and one talent of gold. 37 The king of Egypt made his brother Jehoiakim king of Judea and Jerusalem. 38 Jehoiakim put the nobles in prison, and seized his brother Zarius and brought him back from Egypt.

[a] Gk *him*
[b] Or *their wives*
[c] 2 Kings 23.30; 2 Chr 36.1 *Jehoahaz*

12: See 2 Chr 35.13n. **20:** Cf. 2 Kings 23.22. **22:** *The eighteenth year,* 622 BCE. **23–24:** The evaluation of Josiah in 1 Esdras elaborates on Chronicles.

1.25–58: Decline and destruction. 25-33: Josiah's death and the beginning of decline in 1 Esdras largely follow the account in 2 Chr 35.20–27, omitting the report that Josiah disguised himself, and that he was struck by an arrow. **28:** The author of 1 Esdras probably found the Chronicler's account difficult because it depicts the Pharaoh as a prophet, and revised it to suggest that Josiah's death resulted from ignoring the warning of Jeremiah, though no passage in the book of Jeremiah explicitly relates to the battle in which Josiah died. **33:** Josiah is the last good king in the books of Kings and Chronicles, and his death in 609 BCE marks the end of an era.

1.34–49: The last kings of Judah (2 Chr 36.1–14). The good king Josiah is followed by evil kings. **34:** *Jeconiah* as successor to Josiah does not appear in 2 Chr or 2 Kings, and is probably an error for Jehoahaz (ruled briefly in 609 BCE; see 2 Kings 23.30–31; 2 Chr 36.1–2). Jeconiah is an alternate form of the name of Jehoiachin (see v. 43); see Jer 28.4; cf. Jer 22.24. *Men of the nation,* this corresponds to "the people of the land" of 2 Chr 36.1; in preexilic times these were probably landowners who often came to the support of reforming kings or who themselves

39 Jehoiakim was twenty-five years old
when he began to reign in Judea and Jerusalem; he did what was evil in the sight of the
Lord. 40 King Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon
came up against him; he bound him with a
chain of bronze and took him away to Babylon. 41 Nebuchadnezzar also took some holy
vessels of the Lord, and carried them away,
and stored them in his temple in Babylon.
42 But the things that are reported about
Jehoiakim,[a] and his uncleanness and impiety,
are written in the annals of the kings.

43 His son Jehoiachin[b] became king in
his place; when he was made king he was
eighteen years old, 44 and he reigned three
months and ten days in Jerusalem. He did
what was evil in the sight of the Lord. 45 A
year later Nebuchadnezzar sent and removed
him to Babylon, with the holy vessels of the
Lord, 46 and made Zedekiah king of Judea and
Jerusalem.

Zedekiah was twenty-one years old, and
he reigned eleven years. 47 He also did what
was evil in the sight of the Lord, and did
not heed the words that were spoken by the
prophet Jeremiah from the mouth of the
Lord. 48 Although King Nebuchadnezzar had
made him swear by the name of the Lord,
he broke his oath and rebelled; he stiffened
his neck and hardened his heart and transgressed the laws of the Lord, the God of
Israel. 49 Even the leaders of the people and of
the priests committed many acts of sacrilege
and lawlessness beyond all the unclean deeds
of all the nations, and polluted the temple of
the Lord in Jerusalem—the temple that God
had made holy. 50 The God of their ancestors sent his messenger to call them back,
because he would have spared them and his
dwelling place. 51 But they mocked his messengers, and whenever the Lord spoke, they
scoffed at his prophets, 52 until in his anger
against his people because of their ungodly
acts he gave command to bring against them
the kings of the Chaldeans. 53 These killed
their young men with the sword around their
holy temple, and did not spare young man or
young woman,[c] old man or child, for he gave
them all into their hands. 54 They took all
the holy vessels of the Lord, great and small,
the treasure chests of the Lord, and the royal
stores, and carried them away to Babylon.
55 They burned the house of the Lord, broke
down the walls of Jerusalem, burned their
towers with fire, 56 and utterly destroyed all
its glorious things. The survivors he led away
to Babylon with the sword, 57 and they were
servants to him and to his sons until the
Persians began to reign, in fulfillment of the
word of the Lord by the mouth of Jeremiah,
58 saying, "Until the land has enjoyed its sabbaths, it shall keep sabbath all the time of its
desolation until the completion of seventy
years."

2 In the first year of Cyrus as king of the
Persians, so that the word of the Lord
by the mouth of Jeremiah might be accomplished— 2 the Lord stirred up the spirit of

[a] Gk *him*
[b] Gk *Jehoiakim*
[c] Gk *virgin*

instituted reforms (2 Kings 12.18,20; 21.24; 23.30). **36:** A talent weighed about 75 lb (34 kg). **38:** The author recasts 2 Chr 36.4, in which Neco of Egypt removed Jehoahaz from the throne and installed Josiah's elder son Eliakim as king, changing his name to Jehoiakim. Jehoahaz was taken to Egypt, where presumably he died (Jer 22.10–12). In 1 Esdras, Jehoiakim brings up his brother Zarius from Egypt; the name Zarius may be a corruption of Jehoahaz or of Zedekiah, both of whom were brothers of Jehoiakim (2 Kings 24.17; 2 Chr 36.4,10). **39:** According to 2 Chr 36.5, Jehoiakim reigned eleven years (608–598). **43:** 1 Esdras (in contrast to 2 Chr and 2 Kings) gives the name Jehoiakim rather than Jehoiachin to this king's son and successor; but the king's age at the beginning of his reign is more credible (eighteen years; not eight, as in 2 Chr 36.9; cf. 2 Kings 24.8); he ruled in 597. **46:** *Zedekiah,* the last king of Judah, ruled 597–586.

1.50–58: Jerusalem falls to the Babylonians (2 Chr 36.15–21). **52: Chaldeans**, a late biblical name for the Babylonians. **58:** To keep sabbath means here that the land is to lie untended, as in the seventh or sabbatical years, until the exiles return (Jer 25.11–12; 29.10; cf. Lev 25.1–7; 26.27–39,43). Like Chronicles, 1 Esdras stresses the temporary nature of exile, in contrast to 2 Kings 25 and Jer 52, which present it as a tragedy with only a glimmer of hope.

2.1–9.55: Stages of return and restoration. Except for the new material in 3.1–5.6, from here on 1 Esdras

King Cyrus of the Persians, and he made a proclamation throughout all his kingdom and also put it in writing:

3 "Thus says Cyrus king of the Persians:
The Lord of Israel, the Lord Most High, has
made me king of the world, 4 and he has com-
manded me to build him a house at Jerusa-
lem, which is in Judea. 5 If any of you, there-
fore, are of his people, may your Lord be with
you; go up to Jerusalem, which is in Judea,
and build the house of the Lord of Israel—he
is the Lord who dwells in Jerusalem— 6 and
let each of you, wherever you may live, be
helped by the people of your place with gold
and silver, 7 with gifts and with horses and
cattle, besides the other things added as vo-
tive offerings for the temple of the Lord that
is in Jerusalem."

8 Then arose the heads of families of the tribes of Judah and Benjamin, and the priests and the Levites, and all whose spirit the Lord had stirred to go up to build the house in Jerusalem for the Lord; 9 their neighbors helped them with everything, with silver and gold, with horses and cattle, and with a very great number of votive offerings from many whose hearts were stirred.

10 King Cyrus also brought out the holy vessels of the Lord that Nebuchadnezzar had carried away from Jerusalem and stored in his temple of idols. 11 When King Cyrus of the Persians brought these out, he gave them to Mithridates, his treasurer, 12 and by him they were given to Sheshbazzar,[a] the governor of Judea. 13 The number of these was: one thousand gold cups, one thousand silver cups, twenty-nine silver censers, thirty gold bowls, two thousand four hundred ten silver bowls, and one thousand other vessels. 14 All the vessels were handed over, gold and silver, five thousand four hundred sixty-nine, 15 and they were carried back by Sheshbazzar with the returning exiles from Babylon to Jerusalem.

16 In the time of King Artaxerxes of the Persians, Bishlam, Mithridates, Tabeel, Rehum,

[a] Gk *Sanabassaros*

follows Ezra 1–10 and Neh 8, reshaping the material through artful composition that shifts the emphases from the community to exceptional leaders, mostly Zerubbabel the governor and Ezra the priest and scribe. Some changes in sequence highlight these emphases (see 2.16–30).

2.1–15: Cyrus, king of Persia permits the exiles to return (Ezra 1.1–11). The text is almost identical with the end of 2 Chr and the beginning of Ezra, which are also nearly identical. **1:** *First year of Cyrus,* 538 BCE; the year after he conquered Babylon. **3–7:** The substance of the decree is consistent with Persian religious and political policy; ancient inscriptions depict Cyrus as the restorer of several temples. *Jeremiah* lived through the destruction of Judah and repeatedly promised a restoration; see, e.g., Jer 29.10. **8–9:** These verses sum up the enthusiastic response by the people to the decree, a response that leads to the reconstruction described in 5.47–7.15. **8:** *Judah and Benjamin,* these tribes had constituted the Southern Kingdom of Judah. They now represent the sole remnant of the twelve tribes of ancient Israel. According to 2 Kings 17, the other tribes were deported, and their land was repopulated by foreigners. **10–15:** The return of the sacred vessels symbolizes continuity with the destroyed Temple, whose looting is described in 1.54. The inventory of the sacred vessels is smoother in 1 Esdras than in Ezra. **12:** *Sheshbazzar,* a Jewish leader and the first governor of the province of Yehud (Judea) appointed by the Persians. He may have been a descendant of David.

2.16–30: Opposition to the rebuilding of the Temple and the city walls (Ezra 4.7–24). This account in Ezra 4 represents a later stage in the process of return and reconstruction, describing opposition to rebuilding the walls of Jerusalem in the time of Artaxerxes I (465–424 BCE), after the Temple had been founded (Ezra 3). Its location in the Ezra narrative is out of chronological order and seeks to explain why Zerubbabel and Joshua were unable to finish rebuilding the Temple. Here it serves to explain why nothing was accomplished until the hero Zerubbabel took charge. The sequence is still out of chronological order because it presents Artaxerxes (who ruled after Darius I) as preceding Darius. The fact that the Persian Empire had several kings with the same names may have facilitated this error. As in Ezra 4, adversaries led by Samarians (from the former Northern Kingdom of Israel) allege seditious activities by the returnees and successfully halt the rebuilding of Jerusalem. Historical records show that Cyrus was followed by Cambyses (530–522) and after him by Darius I (522–486). Josephus (*Ant.* 11.2.1–3), who typically follows 1 Esdras, substitutes Cambyses for Artaxerxes, thus providing the correct sequence of Persian kings. **16–20:** The opponents' letter claims that rebuilding the Temple and city

Beltethmus, the scribe Shimshai, and the rest of their associates, living in Samaria and other places, wrote him the following letter, against those who were living in Judea and Jerusalem:

17 "To King Artaxerxes our lord, your servants the recorder Rehum and the scribe Shimshai and the other members of their council, and the judges in Coelesyria and Phoenicia: 18 Let it now be known to our lord the king that the Jews who came up from you to us have gone to Jerusalem and are building that rebellious and wicked city, repairing its market places and walls and laying the foundations for a temple. 19 Now if this city is built and the walls finished, they will not only refuse to pay tribute but will even resist kings. 20 Since the building of the temple is now going on, we think it best not to neglect such a matter, 21 but to speak to our lord the king, in order that, if it seems good to you, search may be made in the records of your ancestors. 22 You will find in the annals what has been written about them, and will learn that this city was rebellious, troubling both kings and other cities, 23 and that the Jews were rebels and kept setting up blockades in it from of old. That is why this city was laid waste. 24 Therefore we now make known to you, O lord and king, that if this city is built and its walls finished, you will no longer have access to Coelesyria and Phoenicia."

25 Then the king, in reply to the recorder Rehum, Beltethmus, the scribe Shimshai, and the others associated with them and living in Samaria and Syria and Phoenicia, wrote as follows:

26 "I have read the letter that you sent me. So I ordered search to be made, and it has been found that this city from of old has fought against kings, 27 that the people in it were given to rebellion and war, and that mighty and cruel kings ruled in Jerusalem and exacted tribute from Coelesyria and Phoenicia. 28 Therefore I have now issued orders to prevent these people from building the city and to take care that nothing more be done 29 and that such wicked proceedings go no further to the annoyance of kings."

30 Then, when the letter from King Artaxerxes was read, Rehum and the scribe Shimshai and their associates went quickly to Jerusalem, with cavalry and a large number of armed troops, and began to hinder the builders. And the building of the temple in Jerusalem stopped until the second year of the reign of King Darius of the Persians.

3 Now King Darius gave a great banquet for all that were under him, all that were born in his house, and all the nobles of Media

walls will lead to rebellion. **16:** The name *Beltethmus* is an awkward Greek transliteration of the Aramaic title ("be'el te'em") of the office ("royal deputy") held by Rehum. **17:** *Rehum,* designated "the royal deputy" in Ezra 4.8; the title is supported by Josephus. The persons named are officials of the region called "Beyond the River" (Ezra 4.10), which included the lands of (Coele-) Syria, Phoenicia, Samaria, and Judah. **20:** The account differs from that in Ezra 4.14, which contains no reference to the rebuilding of the Temple at this point. However, Ezra 4.24 states that work on the Temple stopped. This revision and reworking of material is consistent with the focus of 1 Esdras on the Temple. **21:** *Records of your ancestors,* the Assyrians and Babylonians kept careful records, and the Persians inherited and enlarged their bureaucracy. Here, as in ch 8, written records play a crucial role in establishing authority. **24:** Revolt in Jerusalem will endanger Persian rule throughout the western region of the empire. **25–30:** The king's investigation confirms the danger inherent in the rebuilding of the city, and he issues an order to stop it. **29:** Ezra 4.21 includes "until I make a decree," setting the stage for a reversal at a later date. **30:** *Until the second year of . . . Darius,* King Darius I (522–486), the ruler in the subsequent narrative, is identified also in Haggai and Zechariah as the Persian king during whose reign the Temple was rebuilt. 1 Esdras (like Ezra 1–6) does not allow for the prospect that work on the Temple stopped because of Judean inertia (as Haggai and Zechariah indicate) but rather attributes the neglect to external opposition.

3.1–7.15: Zerubbabel leads the return and restoration. In 1 Esdras, Samarian opponents successfully stop rebuilding before any restoration takes place (in contrast to Ezra 3–6, where Zerubbabel and Joshua lead in laying the Temple's foundation before being stopped). This arrangement of the narrative magnifies the accomplishments of Zerubbabel, making him responsible for the very first successful return. Here, then, Zerubbabel wins King Darius's favor and as a result receives permission to go and restore the Temple.

3.1–5.6: The three young bodyguards in the court of Darius. This lively story, unique to 1 Esdras, describes

and Persia, [2] and all the satraps and generals and governors that were under him in the hundred twenty-seven satrapies from India to Ethiopia. [3] They ate and drank, and when they were satisfied they went away, and King Darius went to his bedroom; he went to sleep, but woke up again.

[4] Then the three young men of the bodyguard, who kept guard over the person of the king, said to one another, [5] "Let each of us state what one thing is strongest; and to the one whose statement seems wisest, King Darius will give rich gifts and great honors of victory. [6] He shall be clothed in purple, and drink from gold cups, and sleep on a gold bed,[a] and have a chariot with gold bridles, and a turban of fine linen, and a necklace around his neck; [7] and because of his wisdom he shall sit next to Darius and shall be called Kinsman of Darius."

[8] Then each wrote his own statement, and they sealed them and put them under the pillow of King Darius, [9] and said, "When the king wakes, they will give him the writing; and to the one whose statement the king and the three nobles of Persia judge to be wisest the victory shall be given according to what is written." [10] The first wrote, "Wine is strongest." [11] The second wrote, "The king is strongest." [12] The third wrote, "Women are strongest, but above all things truth is victor."[b]

[13] When the king awoke, they took the writing and gave it to him, and he read it. [14] Then he sent and summoned all the nobles of Persia and Media and the satraps and generals and governors and prefects, [15] and he took his seat in the council chamber, and the writing was read in their presence. [16] He said, "Call the young men, and they shall explain their statements." So they were summoned, and came in. [17] They said to them, "Explain to us what you have written."

Then the first, who had spoken of the strength of wine, began and said: [18] "Gentlemen, how is wine the strongest? It leads astray the minds of all who drink it. [19] It makes equal the mind of the king and the orphan, of the slave and the free, of the poor and the rich. [20] It turns every thought to feasting and mirth, and forgets all sorrow and debt. [21] It makes all hearts feel rich, forgets kings and satraps, and makes everyone talk in millions.[c] [22] When people drink they forget to be friendly with friends and kindred, and

[a] Gk *on gold*
[b] Or *but truth is victor over all things*
[c] Gk *talents*

how Zerubbabel found favor in King Darius's eyes. It magnifies the role of Zerubbabel, the last Davidic heir to have political power, making him the first great hero of the restoration. In Ezra-Nehemiah, Zerubbabel is no more prominent than his co-worker, Jeshua the priest. Although Zerubbabel the governor is a key figure in Haggai and Zechariah, along with the high priest Joshua (Jeshua in Ezra-Nehemiah and 1 Esdras), no other text suggests direct contact between him and the king. The story probably originated as a secular tale praising the relative strength of kings, wine, and women, to which praise of truth was added (4.33–41); it has close parallels in Greek literature. The author of 1 Esdras adopted the story, identified the third, wisest youth with Zerubbabel (4.13), and added a sequel to the tale, relating how Darius rewarded Zerubbabel by supporting the rebuilding of Jerusalem and its Temple (4.42–5.6). Josephus, who includes this story (*Ant.* 11.3.2–9), has a slightly different version of it.

3.1–17a: The three royal bodyguards plan a contest. The royal banquet scene is a favorite Hellenistic motif, though this case is unusual in that the bodyguards, not the king, choose the entertainment. **1–3:** Although the location is not explicitly mentioned, the Persian capital Susa may be implied (cf. Esth 1.2–3). *Media,* one of the two main original kingdoms of the Persian Empire, in northern Iran. **2:** *Satraps,* high officials in the Persian government, usually provincial governors. There were only about twenty provinces (satrapies) during Darius's reign (522–486 BCE); this number was later increased, and the total one hundred twenty-seven became conventional in later Jewish literature (Esth 1.1; Josephus, *Ant.* 11.3.2). **4–12:** The three bodyguards decide of their own initiative to entertain the king, thereby bringing riches and honor to one of them. In Josephus (*Ant.* 11.3.2), the king proposes the contest. **13–17a:** The entire court is assembled to hear the three men defend their respective answers; the scene accurately depicts court practices in the ancient world.

3.17b–24: The first guard praises the strength of wine. As the great equalizer of society, wine takes away the capacity for discernment and remembrance, overpowering king and commoner alike.

before long they draw their swords. 23 And when they recover from the wine, they do not remember what they have done. 24 Gentlemen, is not wine the strongest, since it forces people to do these things?" When he had said this, he stopped speaking.

4 Then the second, who had spoken of the strength of the king, began to speak: 2 "Gentlemen, are not men strongest, who rule over land and sea and all that is in them? 3 But the king is stronger; he is their lord and master, and whatever he says to them they obey. 4 If he tells them to make war on one another, they do it; and if he sends them out against the enemy, they go, and conquer mountains, walls, and towers. 5 They kill and are killed, and do not disobey the king's command; if they win the victory, they bring everything to the king—whatever spoil they take and everything else. 6 Likewise those who do not serve in the army or make war but till the soil; whenever they sow and reap, they bring some to the king; and they compel one another to pay taxes to the king. 7 And yet he is only one man! If he tells them to kill, they kill; if he tells them to release, they release; 8 if he tells them to attack, they attack; if he tells them to lay waste, they lay waste; if he tells them to build, they build; 9 if he tells them to cut down, they cut down; if he tells them to plant, they plant. 10 All his people and his armies obey him. Furthermore, he reclines, he eats and drinks and sleeps, 11 but they keep watch around him, and no one may go away to attend to his own affairs, nor do they disobey him. 12 Gentlemen, why is not the king the strongest, since he is to be obeyed in this fashion?" And he stopped speaking.

13 Then the third, who had spoken of women and truth (and this was Zerubbabel), began to speak: 14 "Gentlemen, is not the king great, and are not men many, and is not wine strong? Who is it, then, that rules them, or has the mastery over them? Is it not women? 15 Women gave birth to the king and to every people that rules over sea and land. 16 From women they came; and women brought up the very men who plant the vineyards from which comes wine. 17 Women make men's clothes; they bring men glory; men cannot exist without women. 18 If men gather gold and silver or any other beautiful thing, and then see a woman lovely in appearance and beauty, 19 they let all those things go, and gape at her, and with open mouths stare at her, and all prefer her to gold or silver or any other beautiful thing. 20 A man leaves his own father, who brought him up, and his own country, and clings to his wife. 21 With his wife he ends his days, with no thought of his father or his mother or his country. 22 Therefore you must realize that women rule over you!

"Do you not labor and toil, and bring everything and give it to women? 23 A man takes his sword, and goes out to travel and rob and steal and to sail the sea and rivers; 24 he faces lions, and he walks in darkness, and when he steals and robs and plunders, he brings it back to the woman he loves. 25 A man loves his wife more than his father or his mother. 26 Many men have lost their minds because of women, and have become slaves because of them. 27 Many have perished, or stumbled, or sinned because of women. 28 And now do you not believe me?

"Is not the king great in his power? Do not all lands fear to touch him? 29 Yet I have seen him with Apame, the king's concubine, the daughter of the illustrious Bartacus; she would sit at the king's right hand 30 and take the crown from the king's head and put it on her own, and slap the king with her left hand. 31 At this the king would gaze at her with mouth agape. If she smiles at him, he laughs; if she loses her temper with him, he flatters

4.1–12: The second guard praises the strength of kings. The unchecked power of ancient kings is accurately portrayed here, but this passage should not be viewed as a polemic against kingship.

4.13–32: The third guard praises the strength of women as well as wisdom. He first depicts women as those who give birth to kings, who receive from men the treasures won in warfare through heroic deeds, who can humiliate their masters, including kings, and yet are sought after and fawned upon even by those whom they humiliate. **13:** *The third . . . (and this was Zerubbabel),* according to 1 Chr 3.19, Zerubbabel is a descendant of David. His name is added here as the traditional tale is incorporated into 1 Esdras (see 3.1–5.6n.). **20:** *Clings to his wife,* see Gen 2.24. **29:** *Apame, the king's concubine,* is not mentioned in other ancient sources.

her, so that she may be reconciled to him.
32 Gentlemen, why are not women strong,
since they do such things?"

33 Then the king and the nobles looked at
one another; and he began to speak about
truth: 34 "Gentlemen, are not women strong?
The earth is vast, and heaven is high, and
the sun is swift in its course, for it makes the
circuit of the heavens and returns to its place
in one day. 35 Is not the one who does these
things great? But truth is great, and stronger
than all things. 36 The whole earth calls upon
truth, and heaven blesses it. All God's works[a]
quake and tremble, and with him there is
nothing unrighteous. 37 Wine is unrighteous,
the king is unrighteous, women are unright-
eous, all human beings are unrighteous, all
their works are unrighteous, and all such
things. There is no truth in them and in their
unrighteousness they will perish. 38 But truth
endures and is strong forever, and lives and
prevails forever and ever. 39 With it there
is no partiality or preference, but it does
what is righteous instead of anything that is
unrighteous or wicked. Everyone approves its
deeds, 40 and there is nothing unrighteous in
its judgment. To it belongs the strength and
the kingship and the power and the majesty
of all the ages. Blessed be the God of truth!"
41 When he stopped speaking, all the people
shouted and said, "Great is truth, and strong-
est of all!"

42 Then the king said to him, "Ask what you
wish, even beyond what is written, and we
will give it to you, for you have been found
to be the wisest. You shall sit next to me, and
be called my Kinsman." 43 Then he said to
the king, "Remember the vow that you made
on the day when you became king, to build
Jerusalem, 44 and to send back all the vessels
that were taken from Jerusalem, which Cyrus
set apart when he began[b] to destroy Babylon,
and vowed to send them back there. 45 You
also vowed to build the temple, which the
Edomites burned when Judea was laid waste
by the Chaldeans. 46 And now, O lord the
king, this is what I ask and request of you,
and this befits your greatness. I pray there-
fore that you fulfill the vow whose fulfillment
you vowed to the King of heaven with your
own lips."

47 Then King Darius got up and kissed him,
and wrote letters for him to all the treasur-
ers and governors and generals and satraps,
that they should give safe conduct to him and
to all who were going up with him to build
Jerusalem. 48 And he wrote letters to all the
governors in Coelesyria and Phoenicia and
to those in Lebanon, to bring cedar timber
from Lebanon to Jerusalem, and to help him
build the city. 49 He wrote in behalf of all the
Jews who were going up from his kingdom to
Judea, in the interest of their freedom, that
no officer or satrap or governor or treasurer
should forcibly enter their doors; 50 that all
the country that they would occupy should
be theirs without tribute; that the Idumeans
should give up the villages of the Jews that
they held; 51 that twenty talents a year should

[a] Gk *All the works*
[b] Cn: Gk *vowed*

4.33–41: Zerubbabel adds praise of truth. This addition to the original story was probably made prior to the story's adaptation to the Jewish author's purpose. Truth is portrayed in imagery familiar in Greek literature, although the Jewish adapter of the story may have modified the original to conform to the meaning of the Hebrew word for truth, which conveys firmness and reliability. **40:** A clever maneuver by a Jewish adapter of the story to suggest that truth is virtually equivalent to the will of God. **41:** The Latin Vulgate translation of the people's response, "Magna est veritas et praevalet," became a famous proverb.

4.42–57: Zerubbabel's reward. At Zerubbabel's request, Darius agrees to authorize Zerubbabel to return to Jerusalem and rebuild the Temple, with generous support from the Persian treasury. **43:** This improbable vow of Darius to rebuild Jerusalem and its Temple upon his accession to kingship is not otherwise attested and is likely the creation of the author. **45:** *Edomites,* this group is not mentioned in 1.55 as having burned the Temple, but see Ob 11–14 and Ps 137.7. **48–57:** Darius magnificently supports the program outlined by Zerubbabel. The extravagant royal support depicted here is improbable. A more plausible version is found in the decree Darius issues later after receiving a report about building activities (Ezra 6.1–13; 1 Esd 6.23–34). **50:** *Idumeans,* a later designation of the Edomites. The demand that they give back their villages to the returning exiles implies that Edomites encroached upon Judean land during the exile.

be given for the building of the temple until it was completed, [52] and an additional ten talents a year for burnt offerings to be offered on the altar every day, in accordance with the commandment to make seventeen offerings; [53] and that all who came from Babylonia to build the city should have their freedom, they and their children and all the priests who came. [54] He wrote also concerning their support and the priests' vestments in which[a] they were to minister. [55] He wrote that the support for the Levites should be provided until the day when the temple would be finished and Jerusalem built. [56] He wrote that land and wages should be provided for all who guarded the city. [57] And he sent back from Babylon all the vessels that Cyrus had set apart; everything that Cyrus had ordered to be done, he also commanded to be done and to be sent to Jerusalem.

[58] When the young man went out, he lifted up his face to heaven toward Jerusalem, and praised the King of heaven, saying, [59] "From you comes the victory; from you comes wisdom, and yours is the glory. I am your servant. [60] Blessed are you, who have given me wisdom; I give you thanks, O Lord of our ancestors."

[61] So he took the letters, and went to Babylon and told this to all his kindred. [62] And they praised the God of their ancestors, because he had given them release and permission [63] to go up and build Jerusalem and the temple that is called by his name; and they feasted, with music and rejoicing, for seven days.

5 After this the heads of ancestral houses were chosen to go up, according to their tribes, with their wives and sons and daughters, and their male and female servants, and their livestock. [2] And Darius sent with them a thousand cavalry to take them back to Jerusalem in safety, with the music of drums and flutes; [3] all their kindred were making merry. And he made them go up with them.

[4] These are the names of the men who went up, according to their ancestral houses in the tribes, over their groups: [5] the priests, the descendants of Phinehas son of Aaron; Jeshua son of Jozadak son of Seraiah and Joakim son of Zerubbabel son of Shealtiel, of the house of David, of the lineage of Phares, of the tribe of Judah, [6] who spoke wise words before King Darius of the Persians, in the second year of his reign, in the month of Nisan, the first month.

[7] These are the Judeans who came up out of their sojourn in exile, whom King Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon had carried away to Babylon [8] and who returned to Jerusalem and the rest of Judea, each to his own town. They came with Zerubbabel and Jeshua, Nehemiah, Seraiah, Resaiah, Eneneus, Mordecai, Beelsarus, Aspharasus, Reeliah, Rehum, and Baanah, their leaders.

[9] The number of those of the nation and their leaders: the descendants of Parosh, two thousand one hundred seventy-two. The descendants of Shephatiah, four hundred seventy-two. [10] The descendants of Arah, seven hundred fifty-six. [11] The descendants of Pahath-moab, of the descendants of Jeshua and Joab, two thousand eight hundred twelve. [12] The descendants of Elam, one thousand two hundred fifty-four. The descendants of Zattu, nine hundred forty-five. The descendants of Chorbe, seven hundred five. The descendants of Bani, six hundred forty-eight. [13] The descendants of Bebai, six hundred twenty-three. The descendants of

[a] Gk *in what priestly vestments*

4.58–60: Zerubbabel's prayer. The language of this prayer resembles a prayer of Daniel (Dan 2.20–23) and may be dependent upon it.

4.61–5.6: Preparations for the return to Judah. Zerubbabel journeys (perhaps from Susa) to Babylon and there recruits leaders from the priestly and royal families for the returning exiles (5.4–6). The genealogies of the leaders are hopelessly confused. The material unique to 1 Esdras concludes here, with the rest of the book paralleling Ezra 2–10 and Neh 8.

5.7–46: A list of the returning exiles (Ezra 2.1–70 and Neh 7.6–73a). The list in 1 Esdras differs somewhat from that in Ezra 2 and Nehemiah 7, both in the names and numbers listed. The totals, however, are identical, and the numbers of the priests and Levites are almost identical in the three lists, an indication that priestly and levitical genealogies were more carefully preserved than others. **6:** *Nisan,* March-April. **9–23:** Lay Israelites are

Azgad, one thousand three hundred twenty-two. 14 The descendants of Adonikam, six hundred sixty-seven. The descendants of Bigvai, two thousand sixty-six. The descendants of Adin, four hundred fifty-four. 15 The descendants of Ater, namely of Hezekiah, ninety-two. The descendants of Kilan and Azetas, sixty-seven. The descendants of Azaru, four hundred thirty-two. 16 The descendants of Annias, one hundred one. The descendants of Arom. The descendants of Bezai, three hundred twenty-three. The descendants of Arsiphurith, one hundred twelve. 17 The descendants of Baiterus, three thousand five. The descendants of Bethlomon, one hundred twenty-three. 18 Those from Netophah, fifty-five. Those from Anathoth, one hundred fifty-eight. Those from Bethasmoth, forty-two. 19 Those from Kiriatharim, twenty-five. Those from Chephirah and Beeroth, seven hundred forty-three. 20 The Chadiasans and Ammidians, four hundred twenty-two. Those from Kirama and Geba, six hundred twenty-one. 21 Those from Macalon, one hundred twenty-two. Those from Betolio, fifty-two. The descendants of Niphish, one hundred fifty-six. 22 The descendants of the other Calamolalus and Ono, seven hundred twenty-five. The descendants of Jerechus, three hundred forty-five. 23 The descendants of Senaah, three thousand three hundred thirty.

24 The priests: the descendants of Jedaiah son of Jeshua, of the descendants of Anasib, nine hundred seventy-two. The descendants of Immer, one thousand and fifty-two. 25 The descendants of Pashhur, one thousand two hundred forty-seven. The descendants of Charme, one thousand seventeen.

26 The Levites: the descendants of Jeshua and Kadmiel and Bannas and Sudias, seventy-four. 27 The temple singers: the descendants of Asaph, one hundred twenty-eight. 28 The gatekeepers: the descendants of Shallum, the descendants of Ater, the descendants of Talmon, the descendants of Akkub, the descendants of Hatita, the descendants of Shobai, in all one hundred thirty-nine.

29 The temple servants: the descendants of Esau, the descendants of Hasupha, the descendants of Tabbaoth, the descendants of Keros, the descendants of Sua, the descendants of Padon, the descendants of Lebanah, the descendants of Hagabah, 30 the descendants of Akkub, the descendants of Uthai, the descendants of Ketab, the descendants of Hagab, the descendants of Subai, the descendants of Hana, the descendants of Cathua, the descendants of Geddur, 31 the descendants of Jairus, the descendants of Daisan, the descendants of Noeba, the descendants of Chezib, the descendants of Gazera, the descendants of Uzza, the descendants of Phinoe, the descendants of Hasrah, the descendants of Basthai, the descendants of Asnah, the descendants of Maani, the descendants of Nephisim, the descendants of Acuph,[a] the descendants of Hakupha, the descendants of Asur, the descendants of Pharakim, the descendants of Bazluth, 32 the descendants of Mehida, the descendants of Cutha, the descendants of Charea, the descendants of Barkos, the descendants of Serar, the descendants of Temah, the descendants of Neziah, the descendants of Hatipha.

33 The descendants of Solomon's servants: the descendants of Assaphioth, the descendants of Peruda, the descendants of Jaalah, the descendants of Lozon, the descendants of Isdael, the descendants of Shephatiah, 34 the descendants of Agia, the descendants of Pochereth-hazzebaim, the descendants of Sarothie, the descendants of Masiah, the descendants of Gas, the descendants of Addus, the descendants of Subas, the descendants of Apherra, the descendants of Barodis, the descendants of Shaphat, the descendants of Allon.

35 All the temple servants and the descendants of Solomon's servants were three hundred seventy-two.

36 The following are those who came up from Tel-melah and Tel-harsha, under the leadership of Cherub, Addan, and Immer,

[a] Other ancient authorities read *Acub* or *Acum*

listed by family ancestral names (vv. 9–17, 21b–23) and towns of origin (vv. 18–21a). **24–25:** *Priests* include four families claiming descent from Aaron (cf. 1 Chr 24). **26–27:** *Levites* are listed according to their Temple functions in the postexilic period. **29–35:** Other Temple personnel and miscellaneous groups. **36–37:** The inability of some

[37] though they could not prove by their ancestral houses or lineage that they belonged to Israel: the descendants of Delaiah son of Tobiah, and the descendants of Nekoda, six hundred fifty-two.

[38] Of the priests the following had assumed the priesthood but were not found registered: the descendants of Habaiah, the descendants of Hakkoz, and the descendants of Jaddus who had married Agia, one of the daughters of Barzillai, and was called by his name. [39] When a search was made in the register and the genealogy of these men was not found, they were excluded from serving as priests. [40] And Nehemiah and Attharias[a] told them not to share in the holy things until a high priest should appear wearing Urim and Thummim.[b]

[41] All those of Israel, twelve or more years of age, besides male and female servants, were forty-two thousand three hundred sixty; [42] their male and female servants were seven thousand three hundred thirty-seven; there were two hundred forty-five musicians and singers. [43] There were four hundred thirty-five camels, and seven thousand thirty-six horses, two hundred forty-five mules, and five thousand five hundred twenty-five donkeys.

[44] Some of the heads of families, when they came to the temple of God that is in Jerusalem, vowed that, to the best of their ability, they would erect the house on its site, [45] and that they would give to the sacred treasury for the work a thousand minas of gold, five thousand minas of silver, and one hundred priests' vestments.

[46] The priests, the Levites, and some of the people[c] settled in Jerusalem and its vicinity; and the temple singers, the gatekeepers, and all Israel in their towns.

[47] When the seventh month came, and the Israelites were all in their own homes,

[a] Or *the governor*
[b] Gk *Manifestation and Truth*
[c] Or *those who were of the people*

returnees to prove their Israelite ancestry is recorded, but without mention of any repercussions. **38–40:** Proof of legitimate priestly genealogies is needed for any who may serve in the Temple in order to preserve the holiness of the Temple and protect the community from danger. Priests whose credentials are in question cannot serve until a mechanism for verification becomes available. **38:** *Barzillai,* see 2 Sam 17.27; 19.31. The adoption of the father-in-law's name suggests that Barzillai did not have a male heir. **40:** The name *Nehemiah,* not found in the parallel in Ezra-Nehemiah, is added here to compensate for the fact that 1 Esdras omits the story of Nehemiah (who, according to Neh 5.14 and 8.9 was the governor at the time of Ezra) in order to focus on Zerubbabel as governor and Ezra as high priest. *Attharias*, in Neh 8:9 a similar word, understood as the title "governor," describes Nehemiah. *Urim and Thummim* are the sacred lots used by the priests to receive oracular decisions (Ex 28.30; Lev 8.8; Deut 33.8; 1 Sam 14.41). This type of divine communication was a means of verification in the absence of other sources. **41:** The total of 42,360 returnees exceeds the sum total of the several groups listed but is identical with that in Ezra 2.66 and Neh 7.64. This larger number may include women and older children. *Twelve or more years,* this detail, which marks a boy's entry into formal standing in the community. is unique to 1 Esdras (see Luke 2:42 for a later allusion to this life stage). **45:** The precise monetary value of this contribution to the Temple (for which different amounts are given in Ezra 2.69) is uncertain because the value of the mina fluctuated. Nevertheless, the passage suggests that the community invested a great deal in restoring its Temple. The *priests' vestments* are specialized garments for official service.

5.47–73: Work on the Temple commences and is interrupted (Ezra 3.1–4.5; cf. Josephus, *Ant.* 11.4.1–3). Ezra 3–6 places the building of the Temple in both the reign of Cyrus (539–530 BCE) and that of Darius (522–486), merging several returns of exiles in a chronologically confusing fashion. First Esdras offers a more coherent and historically credible sequence, with Sheshbazzar beginning the work under Cyrus, and Zerubbabel working only under Darius. The likely sequence of events is that Sheshbazzar returned to Yehud shortly after 538, restored the sacrificial altar, reestablished public worship and perhaps even attempted to start building the Temple by laying its foundation, but with little success. The work on the Temple only resumed around 520 with Zerubbabel and Jeshua (during King Darius's reign). The prophets Haggai and Zechariah encouraged the community to complete the Temple, and the Temple was finally dedicated in 515.

5.47–55: Building the altar and resumption of sacrifices. The restoration of the altar and a functioning

they gathered with a single purpose in the square before the first gate toward the east. 48 Then Jeshua son of Jozadak, with his fellow priests, and Zerubbabel son of Shealtiel, with his kinsmen, took their places and prepared the altar of the God of Israel, 49 to offer burnt offerings upon it, in accordance with the directions in the book of Moses the man of God. 50 And some joined them from the other peoples of the land. And they erected the altar in its place, for all the peoples of the land were hostile to them and were stronger than they; and they offered sacrifices at the proper times and burnt offerings to the Lord morning and evening. 51 They kept the festival of booths, as it is commanded in the law, and offered the proper sacrifices every day, 52 and thereafter the regular offerings and sacrifices on sabbaths and at new moons and at all the consecrated feasts. 53 And all who had made any vow to God began to offer sacrifices to God, from the new moon of the seventh month, though the temple of God was not yet built. 54 They gave money to the masons and the carpenters, and food and drink 55 and carts[a] to the Sidonians and the Tyrians, to bring cedar logs from Lebanon and convey them in rafts to the harbor of Joppa, according to the decree that they had in writing from King Cyrus of the Persians.

56 In the second year after their coming to the temple of God in Jerusalem, in the second month, Zerubbabel son of Shealtiel and Jeshua son of Jozadak made a beginning, together with their kindred and the levitical priests and all who had come back to Jerusalem from exile; 57 and they laid the foundation of the temple of God on the new moon of the second month in the second year after they came to Judea and Jerusalem. 58 They appointed the Levites who were twenty or more years of age to have charge of the work of the Lord. And Jeshua arose, and his sons and kindred and his brother Kadmiel and the sons of Jeshua Emadabun and the sons of Joda son of Iliadun, with their sons and kindred, all the Levites, pressing forward the work on the house of God with a single purpose.

So the builders built the temple of the Lord. 59 And the priests stood arrayed in their vestments, with musical instruments and trumpets, and the Levites, the sons of Asaph, with cymbals, 60 praising the Lord and blessing him, according to the directions of King David of Israel; 61 they sang hymns, giving thanks to the Lord, "For his goodness and his glory are forever upon all Israel." 62 And all the people sounded trumpets and shouted with a great shout, praising the Lord for the erection of the house of the Lord. 63 Some of the levitical priests and heads of ancestral houses, old men who had seen the former house, came to the building of this one with outcries and loud weeping, 64 while many

[a] Meaning of Gk uncertain

priesthood indicates the resumption of sacrificial worship, a central means of religious expression in the ancient world. Here 1 Esdras credits Zerubbabel and Jeshua (v. 48) with the successful rebuilding, beginning with the altar itself, now during the reign of Darius. Ezra 3 places this event earlier, still at the time of Cyrus. **47:** *The seventh month,* Tishri (September–October). **49:** *The book of Moses,* the Torah. Conformity to God's teachings embodied in the Torah plays a major role in accounts of the restoration period. **50:** Although the returnees elsewhere oppose marriages with peoples of the land, they do allow persons to join the community under certain conditions that are not specified in this text. This phrase does not appear in the parallel in Ezra 3, but the idea appears in Ezra 6.21. **51:** *The festival of booths* is celebrated in autumn, beginning on the fifteenth day of the seventh month (Lev 23.34). **52:** *New moons,* see Num 29.6. **55:** Sidon and Tyre helped build Solomon's Temple (1 Kings 5–7).

5.56–65: The Temple's foundation is laid (Ezra 3.8–13). **56:** Ezra 3 implies the second year of Cyrus, but 1 Esdras implies the second year of Darius (520 BCE), a date which more closely conforms to material in Haggai and Zechariah. **59–62:** Celebration of temple-foundings is a common ancient Near Eastern practice. **61:** The quoted words paraphrase a frequently occurring refrain in late Psalms (e.g., 106.1; 107.1; 118.1, 136.1). **63:** *The former house,* Solomon's Temple, destroyed in 586. *Loud weeping,* the founding of the Temple is an emotionally charged event. It is unclear whether the tears of the old result from sorrow about what had been lost (since the new Temple is presumably smaller than the one they remember) or from joy at seeing the beginning of restoration and the fulfillment of earlier hopes.

came with trumpets and a joyful noise, [65] so that the people could not hear the trumpets because of the weeping of the people.

For the multitude sounded the trumpets loudly, so that the sound was heard far away; [66] and when the enemies of the tribe of Judah and Benjamin heard it, they came to find out what the sound of the trumpets meant. [67] They learned that those who had returned from exile were building the temple for the Lord God of Israel. [68] So they approached Zerubbabel and Jeshua and the heads of the ancestral houses and said to them, "We will build with you. [69] For we obey your Lord just as you do and we have been sacrificing to him ever since the days of King Esar-haddon[a] of the Assyrians, who brought us here." [70] But Zerubbabel and Jeshua and the heads of the ancestral houses in Israel said to them, "You have nothing to do with us in building the house for the Lord our God, [71] for we alone will build it for the Lord of Israel, as Cyrus, the king of the Persians, has commanded us." [72] But the peoples of the land pressed hard[b] upon those in Judea, cut off their supplies, and hindered their building; [73] and by plots and demagoguery and uprisings they prevented the completion of the building as long as King Cyrus lived. They were kept from building for two years, until the reign of Darius.

6 Now in the second year of the reign of Darius, the prophets Haggai and Zechariah son of Iddo prophesied to the Jews who were in Judea and Jerusalem; they prophesied to them in the name of the Lord God of Israel. [2] Then Zerubbabel son of Shealtiel and Jeshua son of Jozadak began to build the house of the Lord that is in Jerusalem, with the help of the prophets of the Lord who were with them.

[3] At the same time Sisinnes the governor of Syria and Phoenicia and Sathrabuzanes and their associates came to them and said, [4] "By whose order are you building this house and this roof and finishing all the other things? And who are the builders that are finishing these things?" [5] Yet the elders of the Jews were dealt with kindly, for the providence of the Lord was over the captives; [6] they were not prevented from building until word could be sent to Darius concerning them and a report made.

[7] A copy of the letter that Sisinnes the governor of Syria and Phoenicia, and Sathrabuzanes, and their associates the local rulers in Syria and Phoenicia, wrote and sent to Darius:

[8] "To King Darius, greetings. Let it be fully known to our lord the king that, when we went to the country of Judea and entered the city of Jerusalem, we found the elders of the Jews, who had been in exile, [9] building in the city of Jerusalem a great new house for the Lord, of hewn stone, with costly timber laid in the walls. [10] These operations are going on rapidly, and the work is prospering in their hands and being completed with all splendor and care. [11] Then we asked these elders, 'At whose command are you build-

[a] Gk *Asbasareth*
[b] Meaning of Gk uncertain

5.66–73: Enemies interrupt the work of the returned exiles (Ezra 4.1–5). The returnees refuse to rebuild the Temple with outsiders who by their own admission did not belong to the Israelite community. 2 Kings 17 describes the resettling of non-Israelites in the territory of Samaria after its destruction by Assyria in 722 BCE. **69:** Instead of *Esar-haddon,* the Assyrian king who ruled 681–669 BCE, Josephus (*Ant.* 11.4.3) has Shalmaneser (727–722) as in 2 Kings 17.3; 18.9. **73:** This verse smoothes over the more problematic sequence in Ezra 3–6 (which inserts material from the reign of later kings, Xerxes and Artaxerxes, at this point; see Ezra 4.6–24).

6.1–34: Temple work resumes (Ezra 5.1–6.12). The prophets Haggai and Zechariah encourage the resumption of work on the Temple and succeed in gaining support for Zerubbabel and Jeshua (Joshua; cf. Hag 1.1–4; 2.1–4; Zech 4.9; 6.15). Although investigated by the governor of the entire Persian province Beyond the River (west of Babylon and encompassing Judah as well as Lebanon and Syria), the Judeans nonetheless are able to work with no interruption. **3:** *Sisinnes the governor of Syria and Phoenicia* is Tattenai in Ezra 5.3, and governor of the province Beyond the River, namely the Persian province west of Babylon, including Judah; *Phoenicia* corresponds to modern Lebanon. *Sathrabuzanes* is Shethar-bozenai in Ezra 5.3.

6.7–22: The governor's report and request. In this letter, the provincial governor seeks to find out whether King Darius will confirm and authorize the permission to build the Temple first granted by Cyrus. The report is

ing this house and laying the foundations of this structure?' [12] In order that we might inform you in writing who the leaders are, we questioned them and asked them for a list of the names of those who are at their head. [13] They answered us, 'We are the servants of the Lord who created the heaven and the earth. [14] The house was built many years ago by a king of Israel who was great and strong, and it was finished. [15] But when our ancestors sinned against the Lord of Israel who is in heaven, and provoked him, he gave them over into the hands of King Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon, king of the Chaldeans; [16] and they pulled down the house, and burned it, and carried the people away captive to Babylon. [17] But in the first year that Cyrus reigned over the country of Babylonia, King Cyrus wrote that this house should be rebuilt. [18] And the holy vessels of gold and of silver, which Nebuchadnezzar had taken out of the house in Jerusalem and stored in his own temple, these King Cyrus took out again from the temple in Babylon, and they were delivered to Zerubbabel and Sheshbazzar[a] the governor [19] with the command that he should take all these vessels back and put them in the temple at Jerusalem, and that this temple of the Lord should be rebuilt on its site. [20] Then this Sheshbazzar, after coming here, laid the foundations of the house of the Lord that is in Jerusalem. Although it has been in process of construction from that time until now, it has not yet reached completion.' [21] Now therefore, O king, if it seems wise to do so, let search be made in the royal archives of our lord[b] the king that are in Babylon; [22] if it is found that the building of the house of the Lord in Jerusalem was done with the consent of King Cyrus, and if it is approved by our lord the king, let him send us directions concerning these things."

[23] Then Darius commanded that search be made in the royal archives that were deposited in Babylon. And in Ecbatana, the fortress that is in the country of Media, a scroll[c] was found in which this was recorded: [24] "In the first year of the reign of King Cyrus, he ordered the building of the house of the Lord in Jerusalem, where they sacrifice with perpetual fire; [25] its height to be sixty cubits and its width sixty cubits, with three courses of hewn stone and one course of new native timber; the cost to be paid from the treasury of King Cyrus; [26] and that the holy vessels of the house of the Lord, both of gold and of silver, which Nebuchadnezzar took out of the house in Jerusalem and carried away to Babylon, should be restored to the house in Jerusalem, to be placed where they had been."

[27] So Darius[d] commanded Sisinnes the governor of Syria and Phoenicia, and Sathrabuzanes, and their associates, and those who were appointed as local rulers in Syria and Phoenicia, to keep away from the place, and to permit Zerubbabel, the servant of the Lord and governor of Judea, and the elders of the Jews to build this house of the Lord on its site. [28] "And I command that it be built completely, and that full effort be made to help those who have returned from the exile of Judea, until the house of the Lord is finished; [29] and that out of the tribute of Coelesyria and Phoenicia a portion be scrupulously given to these men, that is, to Zerubbabel the governor, for sacrifices to the Lord, for bulls and rams and lambs, [30] and likewise wheat and salt and wine and oil, regularly every

[a] Gk *Sanabassarus*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *of Cyrus*
[c] Other authorities read *passage*
[d] Gk *he*

neutral in tone. **14:** *A king of Israel,* namely Solomon (1 Kings 6). **15:** *Chaldeans,* the Babylonians; see 1.52n. **18:** *Zerubbabel,* who is more prominent in 1 Esdras than in Ezra 3–6, is added here and in vv. 27, 29; only *Sheshbazzar* is mentioned in Ezra 5.14 and in Josephus (*Ant.* 11.4.4).

6.23–34: Darius's authorization of rebuilding and generous support for the Temple. The king's investigation recovers a copy of Cyrus's memorandum, which King Darius then confirms, thus adding his support to the Judeans' rebuilding efforts. In following the account in Ezra 5–6, 1 Esdras ignores the earlier report (1 Esd 5.42–57) in which Darius authorizes the bodyguard Zerubbabel to build the Temple; this reflects the complicated history of composition of 1 Esdras. **23:** *Ecbatana* was the summer residence of Persian kings, now Hamadan in Iran. **24–26:** The discovered copy of Cyrus's authorization confirms the claims of the Judean builders. See

year, without quibbling, for daily use as the priests in Jerusalem may indicate, [31] in order that libations may be made to the Most High God for the king and his children, and prayers be offered for their lives."

[32] He commanded that if anyone should transgress or nullify any of the things herein written,[a] a beam should be taken out of the house of the perpetrator, who then should be impaled upon it, and all property forfeited to the king.

[33] "Therefore may the Lord, whose name is there called upon, destroy every king and nation that shall stretch out their hands to hinder or damage that house of the Lord in Jerusalem.

[34] "I, King Darius, have decreed that it be done with all diligence as here prescribed."

7 Then Sisinnes the governor of Coelesyria and Phoenicia, and Sathrabuzanes, and their associates, following the orders of King Darius, [2] supervised the holy work with very great care, assisting the elders of the Jews and the chief officers of the temple. [3] The holy work prospered, while the prophets Haggai and Zechariah prophesied; [4] and they completed it by the command of the Lord God of Israel. So with the consent of Cyrus and Darius and Artaxerxes, kings of the Persians, [5] the holy house was finished by the twenty-third day of the month of Adar, in the sixth year of King Darius. [6] And the people of Israel, the priests, the Levites, and the rest of those who returned from exile who joined them, did according to what was written in the book of Moses. [7] They offered at the dedication of the temple of the Lord one hundred bulls, two hundred rams, four hundred lambs, [8] and twelve male goats for the sin of all Israel, according to the number of the twelve leaders of the tribes of Israel; [9] and the priests and the Levites stood arrayed in their vestments, according to kindred, for the services of the Lord God of Israel in accordance with the book of Moses; and the gatekeepers were at each gate.

[10] The people of Israel who came from exile kept the passover on the fourteenth day of the first month, after the priests and the Levites were purified together. [11] Not all of the returned captives were purified, but the Levites were all purified together,[b] [12] and they sacrificed the passover lamb for all the returned captives and for their kindred the priests and for themselves. [13] The people of Israel who had returned from exile ate it, all those who had separated themselves from the abominations of the peoples of the land and sought the Lord. [14] They also kept the festival of unleavened bread seven days, rejoicing before the Lord, [15] because he had changed the will of the king of the Assyrians concerning them, to strengthen their hands for the service of the Lord God of Israel.

8 After these things, when Artaxerxes the king of the Persians, was reigning, Ezra came, the son of Seraiah, son of Aza-

[a] Other authorities read *stated above* or *added in writing*

[b] Meaning of Gk uncertain

Ezra 6.3–5n. **25:** A cubit is about 18 in (45 cm). **27-34:** Darius's own support exceeds that of Cyrus. **32:** Ezra 6.11 prescribes further that the houses of violators of the decree be made a dunghill.

7.1–9: The Temple is completed (Ezra 6.13–18). At last, the builders are able to complete work on the Temple in 516 BCE and celebrate their success. **4:** *Artaxerxes* I (465–424 BCE) appears here anachronistically (see 8.1–9.36). This reference to him is taken from Ezra 6.14, where it functions ideologically, linking all the stages of the return. The verse is more problematic in 1 Esdras because, unlike Ezra-Nehemiah (see Neh 1–6), this book does not depict any Temple-building activities under Artaxerxes; Josephus omits the name. **5:** February-March, 516 BCE. **7–8:** Compare the account of the dedication of the first Temple (1 Kings 8.8,63). **9:** Compare Ezra 6.18.

7.10–15: The Passover celebration (Ezra 6.19–22). The celebration marks the restoration of Jewish life, resuming life and practices that were first disrupted with Josiah's death in ch 1. **11:** *Not all . . . were purified,* this comment is not in Ezra 6, but is perhaps borrowed from 2 Chr 30.18. **13:** Contrary to Ezra 6.21, the account here suggests that only the returned exiles participated in the Passover. But see 5.50. **15:** *The king of the Assyrians,* an anachronistic reference to the Persian king, alluding to the earliest exile by Assyria, which is now reversed. Josephus (*Ant.* 11.4.8) refers to the Persian king.

8.1–9.55: Final return and restoration under Ezra (Ezra 7.1–10.44; Neh 7.73–8.12). Ezra, who like Zerubbabel is a key figure in 1 Esdras, is first introduced here. 1 Esdras closely parallels Ezra-Nehemiah on the matters they

riah, son of Hilkiah, son of Shallum, [2] son of Zadok, son of Ahitub, son of Amariah, son of Uzzi, son of Bukki, son of Abishua, son of Phineas, son of Eleazar, son of Aaron the high[a] priest. [3] This Ezra came up from Babylon as a scribe skilled in the law of Moses, which was given by the God of Israel; [4] and the king showed him honor, for he found favor before the king[b] in all his requests. [5] There came up with him to Jerusalem some of the people of Israel and some of the priests and Levites and temple singers and gatekeepers and temple servants, [6] in the seventh year of the reign of Artaxerxes, in the fifth month (this was the king's seventh year); for they left Babylon on the new moon of the first month and arrived in Jerusalem on the new moon of the fifth month, by the prosperous journey that the Lord gave them.[c] [7] For Ezra possessed great knowledge, so that he omitted nothing from the law of the Lord or the commandments, but taught all Israel all the ordinances and judgments.

[8] The following is a copy of the written commission from King Artaxerxes that was delivered to Ezra the priest and reader of the law of the Lord:

[9] "King Artaxerxes to Ezra the priest and reader of the law of the Lord, greeting. [10] In accordance with my gracious decision, I have given orders that those of the Jewish nation and of the priests and Levites and others in our realm, those who freely choose to do so, may go with you to Jerusalem. [11] Let as many as are so disposed, therefore, leave with you, just as I and the seven Friends who are my counselors have decided, [12] in order to look into matters in Judea and Jerusalem, in accordance with what is in the law of the Lord, [13] and to carry to Jerusalem the gifts for the Lord of Israel that I and my Friends have vowed, and to collect for the Lord in Jerusalem all the gold and silver that may be found in the country of Babylonia, [14] together with what is given by the nation for the temple of their Lord that is in Jerusalem, both gold and silver for bulls and rams and lambs and what goes with them, [15] so as to offer sacrifices on the altar of their Lord that is in Jerusalem. [16] Whatever you and your kindred are minded to do with the gold and silver, perform it in accordance with the will of your God; [17] deliver the holy vessels of the Lord that are given you for the use of the temple of your God that is in Jerusalem. [18] And whatever else occurs to

[a] Gk *the first*
[b] Gk *him*
[c] Other authorities add *for him* or *upon him*

both discuss, although its author ignores the work of Nehemiah (Neh 1–7), as Sirach ignores the work of Ezra (Sir 49.13). Given the interest of the author of 1 Esdras in the Temple and its personnel, it is not surprising that Ezra the priest, rather than Nehemiah the governor, is highlighted. For the author of 1 Esdras, the restoration was accomplished by a descendant of King David—Zerubbabel—and by the priest Ezra. Both 1 Esdras and Ezra 7 set the mission of Ezra at the time of King Artaxerxes of Persia, most likely Artaxerxes I (465–424 BCE), although some scholars have suggested that it was at the time of the later king, Artaxerxes II (404–358 BCE).

8.1–7: Ezra's credentials and mission (Ezra 7.1–10). **1–2:** The genealogy is briefer than that in Ezra 7.1–5 but establishes the impeccable credentials of Ezra as belonging to the most important priestly line. **3:** *Scribe,* a highly educated person, often in an important advisory position to kings. **6:** *The seventh year . . . of Artaxerxes* was 458 BCE if Artaxerxes I is meant. *The fifth month,* Ab (July-August). *The new moon of the first month,* i.e., Nisan (March-April), two weeks before Passover. The dates may be symbolic, reflecting the Exodus from Egypt in the first month (Ex 12.2; Num 33.3) and the destruction of the Temple in the fifth (2 Kings 25.8). However, five months would be a reasonable time for a journey from Babylon to Jerusalem.**7:** A paraphrase of Ezra 7.10 defining Ezra's qualifications as scribe and teacher. *Law of the Lord,* the book of Torah ("the law of Moses," v. 3), some early version of the Pentateuch. *Law,* Gk "nomos," an equivalent term for Hebrew "torah," a term that can refer to a specific work as well as to authoritative, normative teachings.

8.8–24: The letter of Artaxerxes authorizing Ezra (Ezra 7.12–26). Ezra is authorized to lead a return to Judah, bring extensive gifts for the Temple, and teach the law of Ezra's God, namely the distinctive Jewish tradition that now has the backing of the king. **11:** *The seven Friends* or counselors of the king (see Ezra 7.14) are referred to in Esth 1.14 and Herodotus, *Histories* 3.84. **13–17:** The royal privileges include financial support for the Temple by the king himself, voluntary contributions from Babylonian Jews for the Temple, and a free hand to use the sur-

you as necessary for the temple of your God, you may provide out of the royal treasury.

19 "I, King Artaxerxes, have commanded the treasurers of Syria and Phoenicia that whatever Ezra the priest and reader of the law of the Most High God sends for, they shall take care to give him, 20 up to a hundred talents of silver, and likewise up to a hundred cors of wheat, a hundred baths of wine, and salt in abundance. 21 Let all things prescribed in the law of God be scrupulously fulfilled for the Most High God, so that wrath may not come upon the kingdom of the king and his sons. 22 You are also informed that no tribute or any other tax is to be laid on any of the priests or Levites or temple singers or gatekeepers or temple servants or persons employed in this temple, and that no one has authority to impose any tax on them.

23 "And you, Ezra, according to the wisdom of God, appoint judges and justices to judge all those who know the law of your God, throughout all Syria and Phoenicia; and you shall teach it to those who do not know it. 24 All who transgress the law of your God or the law of the kingdom shall be strictly punished, whether by death or some other punishment, either fine or imprisonment."

25 Then Ezra the scribe said,[a] "Blessed be the Lord alone, who put this into the heart of the king, to glorify his house that is in Jerusalem, 26 and who honored me in the sight of the king and his counselors and all his Friends and nobles. 27 I was encouraged by the help of the Lord my God, and I gathered men from Israel to go up with me."

28 These are the leaders, according to their ancestral houses and their groups, who went up with me from Babylon, in the reign of King Artaxerxes: 29 Of the descendants of Phineas, Gershom. Of the descendants of Ithamar, Gamael. Of the descendants of David, Hattush son of Shecaniah. 30 Of the descendants of Parosh, Zechariah, and with him a hundred fifty men enrolled. 31 Of the descendants of Pahath-moab, Eliehoenai son of Zerahiah, and with him two hundred men. 32 Of the descendants of Zattu, Shecaniah son of Jahaziel, and with him three hundred men. Of the descendants of Adin, Obed son of Jonathan, and with him two hundred fifty men. 33 Of the descendants of Elam, Jeshaiah son of Gotholiah, and with him seventy men. 34 Of the descendants of Shephatiah, Zeraiah son of Michael, and with him seventy men. 35 Of the descendants of Joab, Obadiah son of Jehiel, and with him two hundred twelve men. 36 Of the descendants of Bani, Shelomith son of Josiphiah, and with him a hundred sixty men. 37 Of the descendants of Bebai, Zechariah son of Bebai, and with him twenty-eight men. 38 Of the descendants of Azgad, Johanan son of Hakkatan, and with him a hundred ten men. 39 Of the descendants of Adonikam, the last ones, their names being Eliphelet, Jeuel, and Shemaiah, and with them seventy men. 40 Of the descendants of Bigvai, Uthai son of Istalcurus, and with him seventy men.

41 I assembled them at the river called Theras, and we encamped there three days,

[a] Other ancient authorities lack *Then Ezra the scribe said*

plus. **18:** Artaxerxes virtually gives Ezra a blank check, showing great trust in Ezra. **19–22:** Artaxerxes assures a generous year's supply of provisions for the Temple. **19:** Additional support is to come from local officials. **20:** A *talent* was 75 lb (34 kg); a *cor* 6.5 bu (230 L); and a *bath* about 6 gal (23 L). **22:** Temple personnel are exempt from all taxes. **23–24:** Ezra is given authority to appoint judges throughout the entire province in order to maintain Jewish law. **24:** *The law of your God or the law of the kingdom,* the imperial authorization of the specific Jewish Law is important in that it grants the Jewish community the ability to preserve its distinctive religious heritage. The king's letter presents royal law and Jewish law as equally binding.

8.25–60: Ezra's report: leading the exiles to Jerusalem (Ezra 7.27–8.30). In a first-person account (sometimes called "the Ezra memoir"), Ezra describes his response to the royal letter, his prayer of thanks, and preparations for the journey to Jerusalem. **25–27:** Ezra's first words are a prayer of thanksgiving. **28–40:** Having thanked God, Ezra lists the names of exiles who went to Jerusalem with him. The list differs only slightly from the parallel in Ezra, although the numbers are higher, with a total of about 1,700 males. **29:** *Hattush,* several persons with this name appear in the Hebrew Bible but here and in the parallel in Ezra 8.2 only this Hattush is identified as a descendant of David.

8.41–60: Communal preparations (Ezra 8.15–30) include surveying the company, fasting, and commis-

and I inspected them. 42 When I found there none of the descendants of the priests or of the Levites, 43 I sent word to Eliezar, Iduel, Maasmas, 44 Elnathan, Shemaiah, Jarib, Nathan, Elnathan, Zechariah, and Meshullam, who were leaders and men of understanding; 45 I told them to go to Iddo, who was the leading man at the place of the treasury, 46 and ordered them to tell Iddo and his kindred and the treasurers at that place to send us men to serve as priests in the house of our Lord. 47 And by the mighty hand of our Lord they brought us competent men of the descendants of Mahli son of Levi, son of Israel, namely Sherebiah[a] with his descendants and kinsmen, eighteen; 48 also Hashabiah and Annunus and his brother Jeshaiah, of the descendants of Hananiah, and their descendants, twenty men; 49 and of the temple servants, whom David and the leaders had given for the service of the Levites, two hundred twenty temple servants; the list of all their names was reported.

50 There I proclaimed a fast for the young men before our Lord, to seek from him a prosperous journey for ourselves and for our children and the livestock that were with us. 51 For I was ashamed to ask the king for foot soldiers and cavalry and an escort to keep us safe from our adversaries; 52 for we had said to the king, "The power of our Lord will be with those who seek him, and will support them in every way." 53 And again we prayed to our Lord about these things, and we found him very merciful.

54 Then I set apart twelve of the leaders of the priests, Sherebiah and Hashabiah, and ten of their kinsmen with them; 55 and I weighed out to them the silver and the gold and the holy vessels of the house of our Lord, which the king himself and his counselors and the nobles and all Israel had given. 56 I weighed and gave to them six hundred fifty talents of silver, and silver vessels worth a hundred talents, and a hundred talents of gold, 57 and twenty golden bowls, and twelve bronze vessels of fine bronze that glittered like gold. 58 And I said to them, "You are holy to the Lord, and the vessels are holy, and the silver and the gold are vowed to the Lord, the Lord of our ancestors. 59 Be watchful and on guard until you deliver them to the leaders of the priests and the Levites, and to the heads of the ancestral houses of Israel, in Jerusalem, in the chambers of the house of our Lord." 60 So the priests and the Levites who took the silver and the gold and the vessels that had been in Jerusalem carried them to the temple of the Lord.

61 We left the river Theras on the twelfth day of the first month; and we arrived in Jerusalem by the mighty hand of our Lord, which was upon us; he delivered us from every enemy on the way, and so we came to Jerusalem. 62 When we had been there three days, the silver and the gold were weighed and delivered in the house of our Lord to the priest Meremoth son of Uriah; 63 with him was Eleazar son of Phinehas, and with them were Jozabad son of Jeshua and Moeth son of Binnui,[b] the Levites. 64 The whole was counted and weighed, and the weight of everything was recorded at that very time. 65 And those

[a] Gk *Asbebias*
[b] Gk *Sabannus*

sioning cult personnel as conveyers of vessels for the Temple. **41:** *The river . . . Theras* is probably a tributary of the Euphrates. **42–49:** Because neither priests nor Levites were among the group first assembled by Ezra, special measures had to be taken to secure the required number of both (Ezra 8 mentions only missing Levites). **45:** *The treasury,* Ezra 8.17 mentions a place name, Casiphia, of unknown location. The treasure may be derived from interpretation of Casiphia, a word related to silver (Heb "kesep"). **50:** Fasting prior to an important undertaking was common, especially in the postexilic period (2 Chr 20.3; Esth 4.16). **56:** *Talents* weighed about 34 kg (75 lb) each. **58:** Holy objects could be entrusted only to those who were holy themselves.

8.61–67: Arrival in Jerusalem (Ezra 8.31–36). Upon arriving, Ezra ensured that the treasures were turned over to the Jerusalem Temple personnel. This is followed by sacrifices to God and delivering the king's orders to the provincial officers, who are given no choice but to respect Ezra's mission. **61:** *Twelfth day of the first month* (Nisan [March-April]), two days before the Passover commemorating the Exodus. A new Exodus may be implicit; however, for reasons of weather, spring was the season for expeditions (see 2 Sam 11.1).

who had returned from exile offered sacrifices to the Lord, the God of Israel, twelve bulls for all Israel, ninety-six rams, [66] seventy-two lambs, and as a thank offering twelve male goats—all as a sacrifice to the Lord. [67] They delivered the king's orders to the royal stewards and to the governors of Coelesyria and Phoenicia; and these officials[a] honored the people and the temple of the Lord.

[68] After these things had been done, the leaders came to me and said, [69] "The people of Israel and the rulers and the priests and the Levites have not put away from themselves the alien peoples of the land and their pollutions, the Canaanites, the Hittites, the Perizzites, the Jebusites, the Moabites, the Egyptians, and the Edomites. [70] For they and their descendants have married the daughters of these people,[b] and the holy race has been mixed with the alien peoples of the land; and from the beginning of this matter the leaders and the nobles have been sharing in this iniquity."

[71] As soon as I heard these things I tore my garments and my holy mantle, and pulled out hair from my head and beard, and sat down in anxiety and grief. [72] And all who were ever moved at[c] the word of the Lord of Israel gathered around me, as I mourned over this iniquity, and I sat grief-stricken until the evening sacrifice. [73] Then I rose from my fast, with my garments and my holy mantle torn, and kneeling down and stretching out my hands to the Lord [74] I said,

"O Lord, I am ashamed and confused before your face. [75] For our sins have risen higher than our heads, and our mistakes have mounted up to heaven [76] from the times of our ancestors, and we are in great sin to this day. [77] Because of our sins and the sins of our ancestors, we with our kindred and our kings and our priests were given over to the kings of the earth, to the sword and exile and plundering, in shame until this day. [78] And now in some measure mercy has come to us from you, O Lord, to leave to us a root and a name in your holy place, [79] and to uncover a light for us in the house of the Lord our God, and to give us food in the time of our servitude. [80] Even in our bondage we were not forsaken by our Lord, but he brought us into favor with the kings of the Persians, so that they have given us food [81] and glorified the temple of our Lord, and raised Zion from desolation, to give us a stronghold in Judea and Jerusalem.

[82] "And now, O Lord, what shall we say, when we have these things? For we have transgressed your commandments, which you gave by your servants the prophets, saying, [83] 'The land that you are entering to take possession of is a land polluted with the pollution of the aliens of the land, and they have filled it with their uncleanness. [84] Therefore do not give your daughters in marriage to their de-

[a] Gk *they*
[b] Gk *their daughters*
[c] Or *zealous for*

8.68–9.36: The crisis of mixed marriages in Judah (Ezra 9.1–10.44). Ezra records that he was told about marriages of Judeans and "alien people of the land," which he viewed as violation of God's commandments. It appears that Ezra and his supporters considered the ethnic and religious cohesiveness of the returned exiles to be in danger when living as a minority in the land, among more numerous ethnicities and groups. This best explains the harsh, separatist measures that Ezra and his supporters take to protect communal boundaries. 1 Esdras follows the parallel in Ezra 9–10 with but a few, albeit important, differences.

8.68–70: The nature of the crisis (Ezra 9.1–2). Some members of the community, including leaders, have married women from the residents of the land, who are described as "alien." The parallel in Ezra 9.1–2 charges that the objectionable people's practices were like the ancient Canaanites, Moabites, and other groups mentioned in Deuteronomy as proscribed (see Deut 7.1–5 and 23.4–7). 1 Esdras gives the impression that the peoples of the land are in fact these earlier proscribed groups. **70:** *Holy,* that is dedicated to God. *Race,* lit. "seed" (offspring).

8.71–90: Ezra's response to the crisis: mourning and prayer (Ezra 9.3–15). Ezra interprets for the community the significance of mixed marriages, noting that they may again cause an exile. **71:** *Holy,* Ezra 9.3 does not ascribe holiness to Ezra's mantle; the addition in 1 Esdras stresses Ezra's significant position as high priest (see note on 9.39). **82–85:** The prophetic books contain no such statement; the author may have in mind such passages as Lev 18.24–30 and Deut 7.3–4, attributed to Moses as a prophet.

scendants, and do not take their daughters for your descendants; [85] do not seek ever to have peace with them, so that you may be strong and eat the good things of the land and leave it for an inheritance to your children forever.' [86] And all that has happened to us has come about because of our evil deeds and our great sins. For you, O Lord, lifted the burden of our sins [87] and gave us such a root as this; but we turned back again to transgress your law by mixing with the uncleanness of the peoples of the land. [88] Were you not angry enough with us to destroy us without leaving a root or seed or name? [89] O Lord of Israel, you are faithful; for we are left as a root to this day. [90] See, we are now before you in our iniquities; for we can no longer stand in your presence because of these things."

[91] While Ezra was praying and making his confession, weeping and lying on the ground before the temple, there gathered around him a very great crowd of men and women and youths from Jerusalem; for there was great weeping among the multitude. [92] Then Shecaniah son of Jehiel, one of the men of Israel, called out, and said to Ezra, "We have sinned against the Lord, and have married foreign women from the peoples of the land; but even now there is hope for Israel. [93] Let us take an oath to the Lord about this, that we will put away all our foreign wives, with their children, [94] as seems good to you and to all who obey the law of the Lord. [95] Rise up[a] and take action, for it is your task, and we are with you to take strong measures." [96] Then Ezra rose up and made the leaders of the priests and Levites of all Israel swear that they would do this. And they swore to it.

9 Then Ezra set out and went from the court of the temple to the chamber of Jehohanan son of Eliashib, [2] and spent the night there; and he did not eat bread or drink water, for he was mourning over the great iniquities of the multitude. [3] And a proclamation was made throughout Judea and Jerusalem to all who had returned from exile that they should assemble at Jerusalem, [4] and that if any did not meet there within two or three days, in accordance with the decision of the ruling elders, their livestock would be seized for sacrifice and the men themselves[b] expelled from the multitude of those who had returned from the captivity.

[5] Then the men of the tribe of Judah and Benjamin assembled at Jerusalem within three days; this was the ninth month, on the twentieth day of the month. [6] All the multitude sat in the open square before the temple, shivering because of the bad weather that prevailed. [7] Then Ezra stood up and said to them, "You have broken the law and married foreign women, and so have increased the sin of Israel. [8] Now then make confession and give glory to the Lord the God of our ancestors, [9] and do his will; separate yourselves from the peoples of the land and from your foreign wives."

[10] Then all the multitude shouted and said with a loud voice, "We will do as you have said. [11] But the multitude is great and it is winter, and we are not able to stand in the open air. This is not a work we can do in one day or two, for we have sinned too much in these things. [12] So let the leaders of the multitude stay, and let all those in our settlements who have foreign wives come at the time appointed, [13] with the elders and judges of each place,

[a] Other ancient authorities read *as seems good to you." And all who obeyed the law of the Lord rose and said to Ezra,* [95]*"Rise up*

[b] Gk *he himself*

8.91–9.36: The people repent and dismiss their foreign wives (Ezra 10.1–44). As in Ezra 10, the account switches from a first-person report ("the Ezra Memoirs") to a third-person report about Ezra's reforms. **8.91–96:** A proposal to remove foreign wives is made. **93:** The children of such marriages are to be sent away as well, thereby not being separated from their mothers. **9.1–17:** Ezra leads the communal process toward dismissing foreign wives. **1:** *The chamber,* an office within the Temple complex that as a priest, Ezra may use. **4:** The ruling elders issue orders for the entire community to assemble; Ezra exercises religious, not political, authority in the land. **7:** *The law,* an allusion to Deut 7.3. **8:** *To give glory to the Lord* is to acknowledge themselves to be in the wrong (cf. Josh 7.19). **5–6:** Cold weather and heavy rains are typical of the *ninth month,* Chislev (November-December). **11–13:** Because of the severe winter weather and the complexity of the task, it is agreed that the separation should be handled by a committee, with the help of leaders from various districts. The multitude

until we are freed from the wrath of the Lord over this matter."

14 Jonathan son of Asahel and Jahzeiah son of Tikvah[a] undertook the matter on these terms, and Meshullam and Levi and Shabbethai served with them as judges. 15 And those who had returned from exile acted in accordance with all this.

16 Ezra the priest chose for himself the leading men of their ancestral houses, all of them by name; and on the new moon of the tenth month they began their sessions to investigate the matter. 17 And the cases of the men who had foreign wives were brought to an end by the new moon of the first month.

18 Of the priests, those who were brought in and found to have foreign wives were: 19 of the descendants of Jeshua son of Jozadak and his kindred, Maaseiah, Eliezar, Jarib, and Jodan. 20 They pledged themselves to put away their wives, and to offer rams in expiation of their error. 21 Of the descendants of Immer: Hanani and Zebadiah and Maaseiah and Shemaiah and Jehiel and Azariah. 22 Of the descendants of Pashhur: Elioenai, Maaseiah, Ishmael, and Nathanael, and Gedaliah, and Salthas.

23 And of the Levites: Jozabad and Shimei and Kelaiah, who was Kelita, and Pethahiah and Judah and Jonah. 24 Of the temple singers: Eliashib and Zaccur.[b] 25 Of the gatekeepers: Shallum and Telem.[c]

26 Of Israel: of the descendants of Parosh: Ramiah, Izziah, Malchijah, Mijamin, and Eleazar, and Asibias, and Benaiah. 27 Of the descendants of Elam: Mattaniah and Zechariah, Jezrielus and Abdi, and Jeremoth and Elijah. 28 Of the descendants of Zamoth: Eliadas, Eliashib, Othoniah, Jeremoth, and Zabad and Zerdaiah. 29 Of the descendants of Bebai: Jehohanan and Hananiah and Zabbai and Emathis. 30 Of the descendants of Mani: Olamus, Mamuchus, Adaiah, Jashub, and Sheal and Jeremoth. 31 Of the descendants of Addi: Naathus and Moossias, Laccunus and Naidus, and Bescaspasmys and Sesthel, and Belnuus and Manasseas. 32 Of the descendants of Annan, Elionas and Asaias and Melchias and Sabbaias and Simon Chosamaeus. 33 Of the descendants of Hashum: Mattenai and Mattattah and Zabad and Eliphelet and Manasseh and Shimei. 34 Of the descendants of Bani: Jeremai, Momdius, Maerus, Joel, Mamdai and Bedeiah and Vaniah, Carabasion and Eliashib and Mamitanemus, Eliasis, Binnui, Elialis, Shimei, Shelemiah, Nethaniah. Of the descendants of Ezora: Shashai, Azarel, Azael, Samatus, Zambris, Joseph. 35 Of the descendants of Nooma: Mazitias, Zabad, Iddo, Joel, Benaiah. 36 All these had married foreign women, and they put them away together with their children.

37 The priests and the Levites and the Israelites settled in Jerusalem and in the

[a] Gk *Thocanos*
[b] Gk *Bacchurus*
[c] Gk *Tolbanes*

is dismissed. **16–17:** Investigating the cases of intermarriage takes three months, from the first of the tenth month, Tebet (December-January) to the first of the first month, Nisan (March-April). **18–36:** Ezra 10.18–44. The list of those who put away foreign wives, which includes priests, Levites, and the laity, may have been preserved in the Temple archives. **20:** The priests, whose violation of genealogical purity endangers the sanctity of the Temple, are required to make a guilt offering in expiation of the sin. **36:** *They put them away,* only 1 Esdras specifies that the women and children were expelled. The parallel in Ezra 10.44 does not; verses 18–44 only indicate that priests put away their wives. Many translators, however, append 1 Esd 9.36 to Ezra 10.44.

9.37–55: The restoration is complete with Ezra's public reading of the law (Neh 7.73–8.12). First Esdras concludes with a grand celebration, reminiscent of the Passover celebration with which the book began (see ch 1), thereby rendering the destruction and exile as a temporary crisis that has been fully overcome by the end of the book; 1 Esdras departs markedly from Ezra-Nehemiah at this juncture. In Ezra-Nehemiah the reading of the Torah (NRSV "law"; see 8.7n.) follows the rebuilding of Jerusalem's walls under Nehemiah's leadership (Neh 1–6). For the author of 1 Esdras, the only important leaders are David's descendant Zerubbabel and Ezra the priest, who together restore (rather than transform) Israel's institutions and communal life. The celebrative, public reading of the book constitutes the completion of the restoration. Thus the ceremony recalls Sinai as the receiving of God's teachings by the entire people, transforming them into "the people of the Book." **37:** *The new moon* or first day of the seventh month, Tishri (September-October), was a day of holy convocation (Lev 23.23–

country. On the new moon of the seventh month, when the people of Israel were in their settlements, [38] the whole multitude gathered with one accord in the open square before the east gate of the temple; [39] they told Ezra the chief priest and reader to bring the law of Moses that had been given by the Lord God of Israel. [40] So Ezra the chief priest brought the law, for all the multitude, men and women, and all the priests to hear the law, on the new moon of the seventh month. [41] He read aloud in the open square before the gate of the temple from early morning until midday, in the presence of both men and women; and all the multitude gave attention to the law. [42] Ezra the priest and reader of the law stood on the wooden platform that had been prepared; [43] and beside him stood Mattathiah, Shema, Ananias, Azariah, Uriah, Hezekiah, and Baalsamus on his right, [44] and on his left Pedaiah, Mishael, Malchijah, Lothasubus, Nabariah, and Zechariah. [45] Then Ezra took up the book of the law in the sight of the multitude, for he had the place of honor in the presence of all. [46] When he opened the law, they all stood erect. And Ezra blessed the Lord God Most High, the God of hosts, the Almighty, [47] and the multitude answered, "Amen." They lifted up their hands, and fell to the ground and worshiped the Lord. [48] Jeshua and Anniuth and Sherebiah, Jadinus, Akkub, Shabbethai, Hodiah, Maiannas and Kelita, Azariah and Jozabad, Hanan, Pelaiah, the Levites, taught the law of the Lord,[a] at the same time explaining what was read.

[49] Then Attharates[b] said to Ezra the chief priest and reader, and to the Levites who were teaching the multitude, and to all, [50] "This day is holy to the Lord"—now they were all weeping as they heard the law— [51] "so go your way, eat the fat and drink the sweet, and send portions to those who have none; [52] for the day is holy to the Lord; and do not be sorrowful, for the Lord will exalt you." [53] The Levites commanded all the people, saying, "This day is holy; do not be sorrowful." [54] Then they all went their way, to eat and drink and enjoy themselves, and to give portions to those who had none, and to make great rejoicing; [55] because they were inspired by the words which they had been taught. And they came together.[c]

[a] Other ancient authorities add *and read the law of the Lord to the multitude*

[b] Or *the governor*

[c] The Greek text ends abruptly: compare Neh 8.13

24; Num 29.1). The date for the ceremony is September 444 (or perhaps 443). **38:** *The east gate of the temple,* Neh 8 does not mention the Temple and includes no other priests except Ezra in this ceremony of reading. **39:** *They told Ezra*, the people, not Ezra, initiate the ceremony. Ezra is not identified elsewhere as *the chief priest. The law of Moses*, i.e., the Torah. From the people's reaction and other details in Ezra-Nehemiah, scholars conclude that some form of today's Pentateuch, especially Deuteronomy, is being used. **40–41:** Both men and women participate in this ceremony of hearing and receiving the Torah (see Deut 31.12). **42:** The *platform* erected for Ezra probably continued the tradition whereby kings would appear before the people to reaffirm the covenant law on the festal occasion (cf. 2 Chr 20.5; 23.13; 29.4). It also served a practical need: to make the book of the Torah visible and audible to all. **43:** *Beside him stood . . .* Ezra's assistants include laity, as well as Levites, who are elsewhere connected to the study of the law. Their participation expresses broadened access to the authoritative teachings, a move away from exclusive control by priests (see Jer 18.18). **48:** The *Levites* explained the law to the people or possibly translated it into Aramaic for those who may not have been familiar with Hebrew.

9.49–55: The concluding celebration. 49: *Attharates* (see also 5.40) is a corruption of "tirshatha" (governor) in Neh 8.9. The author of 1 Esdras does not intend to indicate that Nehemiah, the named governor in Neh 8.9, was a participant in the festivity. **50–55:** The people are to rejoice even though the words of the law cause them to recognize their sin, because the law is associated with joy. **55:** *They came together,* some consider the ending abrupt, with the continuation in the parallel in Neh 8 (a second gathering and the feast of booths in Neh 8.13–18) a more fitting conclusion. Nevertheless, coming together as a community around the law and celebrating in the Temple in Jerusalem constitute an appropriate ending for a book that began with a celebration under Josiah in the same location.

THE PRAYER OF MANASSEH

NAME AND DATE

Manasseh, the idolatrous seventh-century BCE king of Judah, uttered a prayer, according to 2 Chr 33, while lying in shackles as a captive of Babylon. The Chronicler suggests that he had before him a text containing the king's actual words; the Prayer of Manasseh purports to be that very source. In reality, this composition was most likely written around the turn of the Common Era, perhaps even in Greek rather than in Hebrew.

CANONICAL STATUS AND LOCATION

Evidence for the Prayer of Manasseh is first found in a Syriac translation of a third-century CE Greek work, the *Didascalia Apostolorum*, and in the fourth-century Greek work *The Apostolic Constitutions.* It is appended to the Psalter in a few manuscripts of the Septuagint, and though beloved by many Christian communities, became canonical only in the Eastern Orthodox churches.

STRUCTURE, CONTENTS, AND INTERPRETATION

This prayer for forgiveness follows a typical structure: praise of God (vv. 1–8), lament (vv. 9–10), petition (vv. 11–13), and vow of additional praise (vv. 14–15). Like other late biblical prayers (Ezra 9.1–15; Neh 1.4–11; 9.6–37; Dan 9.4–19; Bar 1.15–3.8), it dwells on sin in order to emphasize the extent of the need for divine intervention. Such sin must be removed for the petitioner to be released from suffering. The way the prayer uses an emergent doctrine of repentance is novel. With his power, God has "made heaven and earth with all their order" (v. 2), and, in his mercy, he has "appointed repentance for sinners" (v. 7). Manasseh praises God for his creation of the world and thereby gains an opportunity to remind him that he also "created" repentance at that time. He establishes the basis, as a penitent, on which he can expect, even demand, to have his petition favorably received.

The distinctive theology of repentance found in the prayer may be profitably compared to a variety of late Hebrew and Greek texts. Nehemiah 1.8–9 and Bar 3.5–7 allude to a divine promise based on the book of Deuteronomy to redeem those who turn away from sin, but the focus of these texts is on the nation, not individuals. With its interest in the individual sinner, the Prayer of Manasseh resembles rabbinic texts with their interpretation of Deuteronomy's promise as applying to individuals and their view that repentance was established at the time of creation. The notion that repentance is a grant ("promised," v. 7; "appointed," vv. 8–9) probably comes from Greek military terminology; amnesty is granted to those who repent of their rebellion. The sense of repentance as having an established existence is also found in such Greek texts as the pagan *Tabula of Cebes*, the Hellenistic Jewish *Joseph and Aseneth* and the Christian *Shepherd of Hermas*.

David Lambert

[1] O Lord Almighty,
God of our ancestors,
of Abraham and Isaac and Jacob
and of their righteous offspring;
[2] you who made heaven and earth
with all their order;
[3] who shackled the sea by your word of command,
who confined the deep
and sealed it with your terrible and glorious name;
[4] at whom all things shudder,
and tremble before your power,
[5] for your glorious splendor cannot be borne,
and the wrath of your threat to sinners is unendurable;
[6] yet immeasurable and unsearchable

1–8: Praise of the creator. 1: *God of our ancestors*, Ex 3.15–16; Dan 2.23; cf. Acts 3.13. *Their righteous offspring*, an unusual phrase, which may indicate that the prayer was meant to be uttered by a convert. **3:** The restraining of the sea by the creator is a common poetic theme of the Bible (Pss 29.10; 104.7–9; 148.5–6; Job 38.8–11). **5:** God's power, exemplified by creation and his mastery over the deep, naturally leads to the utter destruction of

is your promised mercy,
[7] for you are the Lord Most High,
of great compassion, long-suffering, and very merciful,
and you relent at human suffering.
O Lord, according to your great goodness
you have promised repentance and forgiveness
to those who have sinned against you,
and in the multitude of your mercies
you have appointed repentance for sinners,
so that they may be saved.[a]
[8] Therefore you, O Lord, God of the righteous,
have not appointed repentance for the righteous,
for Abraham and Isaac and Jacob, who did not sin against you,
but you have appointed repentance for me, who am a sinner.
[9] For the sins I have committed are more in number than the sand of the sea;
my transgressions are multiplied, O Lord, they are multiplied!
I am not worthy to look up and see the height of heaven
because of the multitude of my iniquities.
[10] I am weighted down with many an iron fetter,
so that I am rejected[b] because of my sins,
and I have no relief;
for I have provoked your wrath
and have done what is evil in your sight,
setting up abominations and multiplying offenses.
[11] And now I bend the knee of my heart,
imploring you for your kindness.
[12] I have sinned, O Lord, I have sinned,
and I acknowledge my transgressions.
[13] I earnestly implore you,
forgive me, O Lord, forgive me!
Do not destroy me with my transgressions!
Do not be angry with me forever or store up evil for me;
do not condemn me to the depths of the earth.
For you, O Lord, are the God of those who repent,
[14] and in me you will manifest your goodness;
for, unworthy as I am, you will save me according to your great mercy,
[15] and I will praise you continually all the days of my life.
For all the host of heaven sings your praise,
and yours is the glory forever. Amen.

[a] Other ancient authorities lack *O Lord, according . . . be saved*

[b] Other ancient authorities read *so that I cannot lift up my head*

sinners. **6–7:** His power is tempered by equally boundless mercy. In late biblical texts (e.g. 2 Chr 30.9), the "turn away from sin" enables divine mercy to operate. In the Prayer, God's establishment of repentance as a perennial opportunity is itself an expression of his mercy. **7:** Cf. Ex 34.6–7; the Greek is very close to the LXX translation of Joel 2.13 and Jon 4.21.

9–10: Lament. A presentation of the central problem: the petitioner's sin has ruined him. **10:** *An iron fetter*, cf. 2 Chr 33.11. *I . . . have done what is evil in your sight*, Ps 51.4 (LXX 50.6).

11–13: Petition. 11: *And now*, the dramatic climax. *I bend the knee*, usually an act of supplication. *Of my heart* probably serves as an indication of the supplicant's inner sincerity. That Manasseh is bound in fetters (v. 10), makes "bending the knee of the heart" ironically the only method of prostration available.

14–15: Vow of praise. Reminder of how heeding the petitioner's request will benefit God. Such a vow is often found at the end of laments in the Psalms (e.g., 22.22–31; 80.18). **15:** *Host of heaven*, the multitude of angelic beings (Job 38.7; Neh 9.6; cf. Lk 2.13).

PSALM 151

CANONICAL STATUS, ANCIENT VERSIONS, AND DATE OF COMPOSITION

Although Psalm 151 does not appear in the Masoretic Text, it is the final psalm in the book of Psalms in the Greek Septuagint (LXX). One manuscript of the Septuagint contains a postscript to Psalm 151 that reads "the 151 Psalms of David," thus attributing the entire collection to King David. Other Septuagint manuscripts, however, contain a superscription to the psalm that indicates it is "outside the number" (of 150 psalms). A more expansive version of Psalm 151 was discovered among the Dead Sea Scrolls toward the end of the long psalms scroll from Cave 11 (11QPsa). This version comprises two distinct psalms, referred to as Psalm 151A (roughly LXX Ps 151) and 151B (fragmentary), each with its own superscription. The psalm also appears in somewhat expanded form as the first of five additional psalms in the Syriac translation. Psalm 151 is part of the canon of Orthodox churches and is included in the Apocrypha.

Psalm 151 was likely composed no later than the third century BCE when the exact content and ordering of the book of Psalms was not yet fixed. Such fluidity in form and content suggests that the psalms were used, memorized, and transmitted orally.

CONTENTS

In contrast to the final psalms of the canonical Psalter (146–150), which all offer praise to the LORD, Psalm 151 focuses on David, making explicit reference to incidents from David's life as described in 1 Samuel 16–17.

Verses 1 and 4b–5 of the psalm form a unit (with framed references to "brothers," "father's sheep") before the transition in vv. 6–7 to David's conflict with Goliath.

Judith H. Newman

This psalm is ascribed to David as his own composition (though it is outside the number[a]), after he had fought in single combat with Goliath.

[1] I was small among my brothers,
and the youngest in my father's house;
I tended my father's sheep.

[2] My hands made a harp;
my fingers fashioned a lyre.

[3] And who will tell my Lord?
The Lord himself; it is he who hears.[b]

[4] It was he who sent his messenger[c]
and took me from my father's sheep,
and anointed me with his
anointing oil.

[5] My brothers were handsome and tall,
but the Lord was not pleased with them.

[6] I went out to meet the Philistine,[d]
and he cursed me by his idols.

[7] But I drew his own sword;
I beheaded him, and took away disgrace
from the people of Israel.

[a] Other ancient authorities add *of the one hundred fifty* (psalms)
[b] Other ancient authorities add *everything*; others add *me*; others read *who will hear me*
[c] Or *angel*
[d] Or *foreigner*

1: *The youngest,* cf. 1 Sam 16.11; 17.14. **2:** David's ability to play the *lyre* allowed him to soothe Saul's "evil spirit" (1 Sam 16.14–23; 18.10). Such musical ability was closely associated with the gift of poetry in antiquity and likely contributed to David's reputation as the author of the psalms. **4:** *His messenger,* specified in 11QPsa as the prophet Samuel; see 1 Sam 16.1–13. **6–7:** The focus of the psalm shifts to David's feat of slaying "the Philistine" Goliath (1 Sam 17). *Idols*, see 1 Sam 17.43. On Israel's subjugation by Goliath as a "disgrace" see Sir 47.4.

3 MACCABEES

NAME AND CANONICAL STATUS

The title of the book known as 3 Maccabees is a misnomer, for it is not a historical account of the Maccabees but a fictional story about Egyptian Jews under Ptolemy IV Philopator (221–204 BCE), half a century before the Maccabean period. The book is preserved in the Greek Septuagint (LXX) and the Syriac Peshitta, as well as in most manuscripts of the Armenian Bible. It is not, however, included in the Latin Vulgate. This may explain why it was not included in the canon of the Roman Catholic Church or in the traditional Protestant Apocrypha. It is included in the canon of the Eastern Orthodox churches.

CONTENTS

Third Maccabees begins with a brief account of how Ptolemy was saved from assassination at the battle of Raphia by the intervention of a Jew (1.1–5). This brief story of Jewish loyalty provides a foil against which the king's hostility to the Jews must be seen. The second episode (1.6–2.24) tells of the king's unsuccessful attempt to enter the holy of holies in the Jerusalem Temple. The desecration is averted by divine intervention in response to the prayer of the high priest Simon. The third episode, which takes up most of the book, describes the persecution of the Jews in Egypt. Upon his return there, the king determines to take vengeance upon the Jews for his humiliation in Jerusalem. He radically alters their legal status and attempts to force them to worship the Greek god Dionysus, promising to those who comply full citizenship in Alexandria (2.25–33). The vast majority of Jews resist, and with great cruelty they are herded together to be registered, tortured, and put to death. Again divine intervention averts disaster; after forty days the writing materials have been exhausted, and the registration cannot be completed (3.1–4.21). Finally, the king decrees that drugged elephants be turned upon the Jews, who have been detained in the city's arena. Twice this is providentially delayed, and the third miracle occurs in answer to the prayer of the aged priest Eleazar, paralleling the prayer of the high priest in the second episode. The elephants turn on the king's forces, and he repents, allowing the Jews to return to their homes (5.1–6.21). The book ends with a royal letter decreeing protection for the Jews, who punish those of their number who had apostatized, and rejoice at the providential deliverance (ch 7).

DATE AND HISTORICAL CONTEXT

The work was originally written in Greek by an unknown Egyptian Jew. The date of composition is disputed. Some scholars argue that the language of the book and its familiarity with the terminology of the Ptolemaic court argue for a date about 100 BCE. Others hold that the threatened change in the status of the Jews, and the promise of Alexandrian citizenship to those who abandoned their religion, reflect the situation of the Alexandrian Jews after Rome conquered Egypt in 30 BCE. Non-Jews were subjected to a new tax, called the "laographia" (the word used in connection with the change of status in 3 Macc 2.28). Citizenship normally required the worship of other gods, and so was unacceptable to most Jews, but some Jews who abandoned their religion rose to prominence in Roman service (most notably Tiberius Julius Alexander, nephew of the philosopher Philo). The book is not a historical account, although it does depict some earlier historical events, such as the battle of Raphia, known from other sources.

Although the book is written in a bombastic style, it provides a colorful drama of danger and deliverance. It also conveys a strict message of the need for solidarity in the Jewish community.

GUIDE TO READING

Third Maccabees belongs to a narrative genre that was especially popular among Jews who lived in the Diaspora, outside the land of Israel. Other examples are found in the book of Esther and in Daniel 2–6. These stories tell of some great danger that threatens the Jewish community, which is then averted, either through heroic action (Esther) or, more typically, through divine intervention. Such stories provided both entertainment and edification, allowing the Jewish readers to confront their fears of destruction and then allaying those fears by the happy ending.

John J. Collins

1 When Philopator learned from those who returned that the regions that he had controlled had been seized by Antiochus, he gave orders to all his forces, both infantry and cavalry, took with him his sister Arsinoë, and marched out to the region near Raphia, where the army of Antiochus was encamped. [2] But a certain Theodotus, determined to carry out the plot he had devised, took with him the best of the Ptolemaic arms that had been previously issued to him,[a] and crossed over by night to the tent of Ptolemy, intending single-handed to kill him and thereby end the war. [3] But Dositheus, known as the son of Drimylus, a Jew by birth who later changed his religion and apostatized from the ancestral traditions, had led the king away and arranged that a certain insignificant man should sleep in the tent; and so it turned out that this man incurred the vengeance meant for the king.[b] [4] When a bitter fight resulted, and matters were turning out rather in favor of Antiochus, Arsinoë went to the troops with wailing and tears, her locks all disheveled, and exhorted them to defend themselves and their children and wives bravely, promising to give them each two minas of gold if they won the battle. [5] And so it came about that the enemy was routed in the action, and many captives also were taken. [6] Now that he had foiled the plot, Ptolemy[c] decided to visit the neighboring cities and encourage them. [7] By doing this, and by endowing their sacred enclosures with gifts, he strengthened the morale of his subjects.

[8] Since the Jews had sent some of their council and elders to greet him, to bring him gifts of welcome, and to congratulate him on what had happened, he was all the more eager to visit them as soon as possible. [9] After he had arrived in Jerusalem, he offered sacrifice to the supreme God[d] and made thank offerings and did what was fitting for the holy place.[e] Then, upon entering the place and being impressed by its excellence and its beauty, [10] he marveled at the good order of the temple, and conceived a desire to enter the sanctuary. [11] When they said that this was not permitted, because not even members of their own nation were allowed to enter,

[a] Or *the best of the Ptolemaic soldiers previously put under his command*
[b] Gk *that one*
[c] Gk *he*
[d] Gk *the greatest God*
[e] Gk *the place*

1.1–7: The battle of Raphia (217 BCE). The abruptness with which the book opens and the use of the Greek conjunctive particle "de" may indicate that the introduction to 3 Maccabees has not survived (see also 2.25n.). Alternatively, the account of the battle may have been excerpted from a historical source. It resembles the account given by the second-century BCE historian Polybius (book 5), who also reports a plot to kill the king, but not the role of Dositheus in foiling it. **1:** Ptolemy IV [Philopator] was king of Egypt 221–204. *From those who returned,* fugitives who had escaped. *Antiochus* III, later called the Great, was king of Syria 223–187. *Raphia,* a city of Palestine, three miles from Gaza and not far from the Egyptian frontier. *Arsinoë,* Ptolemy's sister, who became his wife, was later put to death at the instigation of her husband. **2:** *Theodotus* had been chief commander of the Egyptian forces in Syria, but subsequently became disaffected and deserted to Antiochus III (Polybius, 5.40). **3:** *Dositheus* is mentioned in Hibeh papyrus 90 as priest of Alexander in 222 BCE, a very exalted position, and he is also mentioned in earlier papyri as a Ptolemaic administrator. The papyri, however, do not identify him as Jewish. *A certain insignificant* man, Polybius identifies the man as Andreas, the king's physician. **4:** *Two minas*, ca. 2.5 lb (1.1 kg). **5:** According to Polybius (5.86.5–6), Antiochus lost nearly 10,000 infantry, 300 cavalry, and 4,000 prisoners; Ptolemy lost 1,500 infantry and 700 cavalry.

1.8–15: Ptolemy attempts to enter the sanctuary at Jerusalem. 9: Reference to *the supreme God,* Greek "megistos theos," occurs frequently in 3 Maccabees (1.9,16; 3.11; 4.16; 5.25; 7.22) as well as in 2 Maccabees (3.36). The God of the Jews was often known as The Most High God in antiquity. It was customary for kings to show respect to local deities. According to Josephus (*Ant.* 11.336), Alexander the Great had offered sacrifice in the Jerusalem Temple. *The holy place,* an alternative term for "the Temple" in 3 Maccabees and other Jewish literature. **10:** No attempt by a Ptolemy to enter the holy of holies is otherwise known. The Roman general Pompey did enter it in 63 BCE, but the closest parallel to 3 Maccabees on this point is found in the story of Heliodorus in 2 Macc 3, although the details of the stories are different (Heliodorus was attempting to seize the Temple treasure). **11:** *High priest . . . once a year,* Lev 16.2,34.

not even all of the priests, but only the high priest who was pre-eminent over all—and he only once a year—the king was by no means persuaded. 12 Even after the law had been read to him, he did not cease to maintain that he ought to enter, saying, "Even if those men are deprived of this honor, I ought not to be." 13 And he inquired why, when he entered every other temple,[a] no one there had stopped him. 14 And someone answered thoughtlessly that it was wrong to take that as a portent.[b] 15 "But since this has happened," the king[c] said, "why should not I at least enter, whether they wish it or not?"

16 Then the priests in all their vestments prostrated themselves and entreated the supreme God[d] to aid in the present situation and to avert the violence of this evil design, and they filled the temple with cries and tears; 17 those who remained behind in the city were agitated and hurried out, supposing that something mysterious was occurring. 18 Young women who had been secluded in their chambers rushed out with their mothers, sprinkled their hair with dust,[e] and filled the streets with groans and lamentations. 19 Those women who had recently been arrayed for marriage abandoned the bridal chambers[f] prepared for wedded union, and, neglecting proper modesty, in a disorderly rush flocked together in the city. 20 Mothers and nurses abandoned even newborn children here and there, some in houses and some in the streets, and without a backward look they crowded together at the most high temple. 21 Various were the supplications of those gathered there because of what the king was profanely plotting. 22 In addition, the bolder of the citizens would not tolerate the completion of his plans or the fulfillment of his intended purpose. 23 They shouted to their compatriots to take arms and die courageously for the ancestral law, and created a considerable disturbance in the holy place;[g] and being barely restrained by the old men and the elders,[h] they resorted to the same posture of supplication as the others. 24 Meanwhile the crowd, as before, was engaged in prayer, 25 while the elders near the king tried in various ways to change his arrogant mind from the plan that he had conceived. 26 But he, in his arrogance, took heed of nothing, and began now to approach, determined to bring the aforesaid plan to a conclusion. 27 When those who were around him observed this, they turned, together with our people, to call upon him who has all power to defend them in the present trouble and not to overlook this unlawful and haughty deed. 28 The continuous, vehement, and concerted cry of the crowds[i] resulted in an immense uproar; 29 for it seemed that not only the people but also the walls and the whole earth around echoed, because indeed all at that time[j] preferred death to the profanation of the place.

2 Then the high priest Simon, facing the sanctuary, bending his knees and extending his hands with calm dignity, prayed as

[a] Or *entered the temple precincts*
[b] Or *to boast of this*
[c] Gk *he*
[d] Gk *the greatest God*
[e] Other ancient authorities add *and ashes*
[f] Or *the canopies*
[g] Gk *the place*
[h] Other ancient authorities read *priests*
[i] Other ancient authorities read *vehement cry of the assembled crowds*
[j] Other ancient authorities lack *at that time*

1.16–29: Jewish reaction to Ptolemy's determination to enter the sanctuary. Compare the reaction to the attempt of Heliodorus in 2 Macc 3.14–21, and also the historical episodes when Pontius Pilate introduced the sacrilegious Roman standards into Jerusalem (Josephus, *War* 1.169–74; *Ant.* 18.55–59) and when Caligula attempted to have his statue installed in the Temple (*War* 2.184–203; *Ant.* 18.269–72). **18:** *Young women* were not permitted to appear in public before marriage; cf. 2 Macc 3.19. **19:** For other references to bridal chambers see Joel 2.16; 2 Esd 16.33–34; Bar 2.23. **23:** *Die courageously for the ancestral law,* 1 Macc 2.40; 3.21; 13.3–4; 2 Macc 8.21. It is noteworthy that the militants are restrained by the elders here, in contrast to the Maccabean rebellion and to the later Jewish revolt against Rome.

2.1–20: The prayer of Simon, the high priest. Simon II, son of Onias II and called "the Just," was high priest about 219–196 BCE (see Sir 50.1n.). The prayer is in a classic Jewish form that, like Eleazar's prayer in 6.1–15, follows the pattern of Ps 105 and 106 in confessing the sins of the people but calling on God to deliver them as he

follows:[a] 2 "Lord, Lord, king of the heavens,
and sovereign of all creation, holy among
the holy ones, the only ruler, almighty, give
attention to us who are suffering grievously
from an impious and profane man, puffed
up in his audacity and power. 3 For you,
the creator of all things and the governor
of all, are a just Ruler, and you judge those
who have done anything in insolence and
arrogance. 4 You destroyed those who in the
past committed injustice, among whom were
even giants who trusted in their strength and
boldness, whom you destroyed by bringing
on them a boundless flood. 5 You consumed
with fire and sulfur the people of Sodom who
acted arrogantly, who were notorious for
their vices;[b] and you made them an example
to those who should come afterward. 6 You
made known your mighty power by inflict-
ing many and varied punishments on the
audacious Pharaoh who had enslaved your
holy people Israel. 7 And when he pursued
them with chariots and a mass of troops,
you overwhelmed him in the depths of the
sea, but carried through safely those who
had put their confidence in you, the Ruler
over the whole creation. 8 And when they
had seen works of your hands, they praised
you, the Almighty. 9 You, O King, when you
had created the boundless and immeasurable
earth, chose this city and sanctified this place
for your name, though you have no need of
anything; and when you had glorified it by
your magnificent manifestation,[c] you made it
a firm foundation for the glory of your great
and honored name. 10 And because you love
the house of Israel, you promised that if we
should have reverses and tribulation should
overtake us, you would listen to our peti-
tion when we come to this place and pray.
11 And indeed you are faithful and true. 12 And
because oftentimes when our fathers were
oppressed you helped them in their humilia-
tion, and rescued them from great evils, 13 see
now, O holy King, that because of our many
and great sins we are crushed with suffering,
subjected to our enemies, and overtaken by
helplessness. 14 In our downfall this auda-
cious and profane man undertakes to violate
the holy place on earth dedicated to your glo-
rious name. 15 For your dwelling is the heaven
of heavens, unapproachable by human be-
ings. 16 But because you graciously bestowed
your glory on your people Israel, you sanctified this place. 17 Do not punish us for the
defilement committed by these men, or call
us to account for this profanation, otherwise
the transgressors will boast in their wrath
and exult in the arrogance of their tongue,
saying, 18 'We have trampled down the house
of the sanctuary as the houses of the abomi-
nations are trampled down.' 19 Wipe away our
sins and disperse our errors, and reveal your
mercy at this hour. 20 Speedily let your mer-
cies overtake us, and put praises in the mouth
of those who are downcast and broken in
spirit, and give us peace."

21 Thereupon God, who oversees all
things, the first Father of all, holy among the
holy ones, having heard the lawful supplica-
tion, scourged him who had exalted himself
in insolence and audacity. 22 He shook him
on this side and that as a reed is shaken
by the wind, so that he lay helpless on the
ground and, besides being paralyzed in
his limbs, was unable even to speak, since

[a] Other ancient authorities lack verse 1
[b] Other ancient authorities read *secret in their vices*
[c] Or *epiphany*

did in the past. **2:** *Holy among the holy ones,* Isa 57.15 LXX. The *holy ones* are members of the divine council (see Deut 33.2; Ps 89.5), in this period understood as angels. **3:** Ex 18.11; Ps 31.23. **4:** *Giants,* the race of heroes whose origins are described in Gen 6.1–4, also mentioned in Wis 14.6; Sir 16.7; Bar 3.26; *1 Enoch* 7.2; 15.8. **5:** *Sodom,* Gen 19.24; Deut 29.23; Wis 10.7. *An example,* cf. 2 Pet 2.6. **6:** Exodus 5–12. *Your holy people Israel,* Ex 19.6; Wis 10.15. **7:** *Overwhelmed him,* Exodus 14. **8:** *They praised,* Ex 15.1–21; Wis 19.8–9. **9:** *This city,* Jerusalem. *Place,* see 1.9n. *No need of anything,* 2 Macc 14.35–36. **10:** *Promised . . . you would listen,* Deut 30.1–6; 1 Kings 8.33–34,48–50. **12:** *Our fathers . . . you . . . rescued,* 1 Sam 12.10–11; Pss 22.4–5; 106.43; Neh 9.28. **13:** *Because of our many and great sins,* even though the Jewish community has done nothing wrong in this instance, such confession of sin was a standard element in prayers of this type. **14:** *Glorious name,* Jdt 9.8. **15:** *The heaven of heavens,* 1 Kings 8.27; Isa 66.1. **18:** *Trampled down,* Isa 63.18; Dan 8.13; 1 Macc 3.45. **19:** *Wipe away our sins,* Ps 51.2,9. **20:** *Mercies,* Ps 79.8,13.

2.21–24: The punishment of Ptolemy. 21: *Holy ones,* v. 2n. **22:** *Paralyzed,* compare the punishment of Heli-

he was smitten[a] by a righteous judgment. 23 Then both friends and bodyguards, seeing the severe punishment that had overtaken him, and fearing that he would lose his life, quickly dragged him out, panic-stricken in their exceedingly great fear. 24 After a while he recovered, and though he had been punished, he by no means repented, but went away uttering bitter threats.

25 When he arrived in Egypt, he increased in his deeds of malice, abetted by the previously mentioned drinking companions and comrades, who were strangers to everything just. 26 He was not content with his uncounted licentious deeds, but even continued with such audacity that he framed evil reports in the various localities; and many of his friends, intently observing the king's purpose, themselves also followed his will. 27 He proposed to inflict public disgrace on the Jewish community,[b] and he set up a stone[c] on the tower in the courtyard with this inscription: 28 "None of those who do not sacrifice shall enter their sanctuaries, and all Jews shall be subjected to a registration involving poll tax and to the status of slaves. Those who object to this are to be taken by force and put to death; 29 those who are registered are also to be branded on their bodies by fire with the ivy-leaf symbol of Dionysus, and they shall also be reduced to their former limited status." 30 In order that he might not appear to be an enemy of all, he inscribed below: "But if any of them prefer to join those who have been initiated into the mysteries, they shall have equal citizenship with the Alexandrians."

31 Now some, however, with an obvious abhorrence of the price to be exacted for maintaining the religion of their city,[d] readily gave themselves up, since they expected to enhance their reputation by their future association with the king. 32 But the majority acted firmly with a courageous spirit and did not abandon their religion; and by paying money in exchange for life they confidently attempted to save themselves from the registration. 33 They remained resolutely hopeful of obtaining help, and they abhorred those who separated themselves from them, considering them to be enemies of the Jewish nation,[b] and depriving them of companionship and mutual help.

3 When the impious king comprehended this situation, he became so infuriated that not only was he enraged against those Jews who lived in Alexandria, but was still

[a] Other ancient authorities read *pierced*
[b] Gk *the nation*
[c] Gk *stele*
[d] Meaning of Gk uncertain

odorus (2 Macc 3.24–30) and of Antiochus (2 Macc 9.5–6). **23:** *Friends,* the higher officers and courtiers of the king (4 Macc 8.5n.). *Lose his life,* cf. 2 Macc 3.31. **24:** *By no means repented,* compare Antiochus Epiphanes in 2 Macc 9.7 (Antiochus is subsequently forced to repent).

2.25–33: Hostile measures against the Jews of Egypt. 25: These *companions* have not, in fact, been *previously mentioned* in the present text of 3 Maccabees; this is additional evidence that the opening section has been lost (see 1.1–7n.). **26:** *Friends,* see v. 23n. **28:** The Jews are forbidden to *enter their sanctuaries,* that is, their synagogues. Synagogue worship was disrupted during a pogrom in Alexandria in 38 CE. *Registration,* for which the Greek term, "laographia," literally means census, is often used in connection with taxation. It is especially associated with the *poll tax* imposed by the Romans in 24 BCE. This is the only tax that is known to have entailed a reduction of the status of the Jews, since it classified them with the Egyptians, not with the Greeks. **29:** Ptolemy Philopator was in fact a devotee of the Greek god Dionysus. Branding was associated with the worship of Dionysus, and the king himself may have been branded. Judaism was sometimes thought by Gentile observers to be a form of the worship of Dionysus (see especially Plutarch, *Table Talk* 4.6.1–2). According to 2 Macc 6.7, Antiochus Epiphanes tried to make the people of Jerusalem observe the festival of Dionysus. Branding was also used to identify slaves in case they ran away. 3 Maccabees seems to confuse the two kinds of branding. *Their former limited status,* perhaps referring to the status of Jewish captives before they were released by Ptolemy II (see *Letter of Aristeas* 22). **32:** *Paying money,* as bribes. **33:** *Enemies of the Jewish nation,* renegade Jews are viewed with even greater opprobrium than the Gentile persecutors.

3.1–10: The Jews and their neighbors. 1: The distinction between Jews in *Alexandria* and those in the *countryside* is made also in 4.11–12. The emphasis on Jews from the countryside is odd and may reflect a historical

more bitterly hostile toward those in the countryside; and he ordered that all should promptly be gathered into one place, and put to death by the most cruel means. 2 While these matters were being arranged, a hostile rumor was circulated against the Jewish nation by some who conspired to do them ill, a pretext being given by a report that they hindered others[a] from the observance of their customs. 3 The Jews, however, continued to maintain goodwill and unswerving loyalty toward the dynasty; 4 but because they worshiped God and conducted themselves by his law, they kept their separateness with respect to foods. For this reason they appeared hateful to some; 5 but since they adorned their style of life with the good deeds of upright people, they were established in good repute with everyone. 6 Nevertheless those of other races paid no heed to their good service to their nation, which was common talk among all; 7 instead they gossiped about the differences in worship and foods, alleging that these people were loyal neither to the king nor to his authorities, but were hostile and greatly opposed to his government. So they attached no ordinary reproach to them.

8 The Greeks in the city, though wronged in no way, when they saw an unexpected tumult around these people and the crowds that suddenly were forming, were not strong enough to help them, for they lived under tyranny. They did try to console them, being grieved at the situation, and expected that matters would change; 9 for such a great community ought not be left to its fate when it had committed no offense. 10 And already some of their neighbors and friends and business associates had taken some of them aside privately and were pledging to protect them and to exert more earnest efforts for their assistance.

11 Then the king, boastful of his present good fortune, and not considering the might of the supreme God,[b] but assuming that he would persevere constantly in his same purpose, wrote this letter against them:

12 "King Ptolemy Philopator to his generals and soldiers in Egypt and all its districts, greetings and good health:

13 "I myself and our government are faring well. 14 When our expedition took place in Asia, as you yourselves know, it was brought to conclusion, according to plan, by the gods' deliberate alliance with us in battle, 15 and we considered that we should not rule the nations inhabiting Coelesyria and Phoenicia by the power of the spear, but should cherish them with clemency and great benevolence, gladly treating them well. 16 And when we had granted very great revenues to the temples in the cities, we came on to Jerusalem also, and went up to honor the temple of those wicked people, who never cease from their folly. 17 They accepted our presence by word, but insincerely by deed, because when we proposed to enter their inner temple and honor it with magnificent and most beautiful offerings, 18 they were carried away by their traditional arrogance, and excluded us from entering; but they were spared the exercise of

[a] Gk *them*
[b] Gk *the greatest God*

attempt by Ptolemy to take a census of the Jews in rural areas. **2:** The *rumor* maliciously represents the Jews as hostile to the best interests of the state (cf. Esth 3.8), whereas the author insists on their loyalty. Some scholars think 3 Maccabees was written by a Jew from the countryside. His Greek is less sophisticated than that of Alexandrian Jews, such as Philo. **4:** *Separateness with respect to foods* was one of the barriers between Jew and Gentile, cf. 1 Macc 1.62–63; 2 Macc 11.30–31. Many Hellenistic Jewish writings avoid the subject. For a defense of the observance of Jewish dietary rules, by explaining them allegorically, see the *Letter of Aristeas,* 128–66. **5:** Deut 4.5–6. **7:** For similar charges see Esth 3.8; Add Esth 13.4–5. **8:** *The Greeks,* the elite, cultivated class, in distinction from *those of other races* (v. 6). The Alexandrian Greeks were bitter enemies of the Jews in the Roman period, but the author portrays a relationship of support and respect between the two groups, even though the king and his friends were obviously Greek.

3.11–30: Ptolemy orders the arrest of all Jews in his kingdom. 11: The king is *boastful,* and therefore guilty of "hubris," the sin that leads to disaster in Greek tragedy. *Assuming that he would persevere,* an anticipatory reference to the calamity that came upon him by which he forgot his own previous commands (5.27–28). **15:** *Coelesyria,* western Syria. *Phoenicia,* modern Lebanon. *Benevolence,* Greek "philanthropia" (see vv. 18,20), was

our power because of the benevolence that we have toward all. [19] By maintaining their manifest ill-will toward us, they become the only people among all nations who hold their heads high in defiance of kings and their own benefactors, and are unwilling to regard any action as sincere.

[20] "But we, when we arrived in Egypt victorious, accommodated ourselves to their folly and did as was proper, since we treat all nations with benevolence. [21] Among other things, we made known to all our amnesty toward their compatriots here, both because of their alliance with us and the myriad affairs liberally entrusted to them from the beginning; and we ventured to make a change, by deciding both to deem them worthy of Alexandrian citizenship and to make them participants in our regular religious rites.[a] [22] But in their innate malice they took this in a contrary spirit, and disdained what is good. Since they incline constantly to evil, [23] they not only spurn the priceless citizenship, but also both by speech and by silence they abominate those few among them who are sincerely disposed toward us; in every situation, in accordance with their infamous way of life, they secretly suspect that we may soon alter our policy. [24] Therefore, fully convinced by these indications that they are ill-disposed toward us in every way, we have taken precautions so that, if a sudden disorder later arises against us, we shall not have these impious people behind our backs as traitors and barbarous enemies. [25] Therefore we have given orders that, as soon as this letter arrives, you are to send to us those who live among you, together with their wives and children, with insulting and harsh treatment, and bound securely with iron fetters, to suffer the sure and shameful death that befits enemies. [26] For when all of these have been punished, we are sure that for the remaining time the government will be established for ourselves in good order and in the best state. [27] But those who shelter any of the Jews, whether old people or children or even infants, will be tortured to death with the most hateful torments, together with their families. [28] Any who are willing to give information will receive the property of those who incur the punishment, and also two thousand drachmas from the royal treasury, and will be awarded their freedom.[b] [29] Every place detected sheltering a Jew is to be made unapproachable and burned with fire, and shall become useless for all time to any mortal creature." [30] The letter was written in the above form.

4 In every place, then, where this decree arrived, a feast at public expense was arranged for the Gentiles with shouts and gladness, for the inveterate enmity that had long ago been in their minds was now made evident and outspoken. [2] But among the Jews there was incessant mourning, lamentation, and tearful cries; everywhere their hearts were burning, and they groaned because of the unexpected destruction that had suddenly been decreed for them. [3] What district or city, or what habitable place at all, or what streets were not filled with mourning and wailing for them? [4] For with such a harsh and ruthless spirit were they being sent off, all together, by the generals in the several cities, that at the sight of their unusual punishments, even some of their enemies, perceiving the common object of pity before their eyes, reflected

[a] Other ancient authorities read *partners of our regular priests*

[b] Gk *crowned with freedom*

regarded as a major political virtue during the Hellenistic period. **21:** For the confidence placed in Jews, see 6.25 and Josephus, *Ag. Ap.* 2.49, who says that Ptolemy VI Philometor gave two Jewish generals, Onias and Dositheus, command of his whole army. Jews were often employed in Egypt as mercenaries. *Alexandrian citizenship* normally entailed participation in Greek religious ceremonies. Alexandrian Greeks, such as the first-century CE scholar Apion, complained that the Jews wanted the privileges of citizenship but were unwilling to fulfill the religious obligations that it usually entailed. **24:** *Behind our backs,* cf. Ex 1.10. **28:** *Awarded their freedom,* another rendering is "crowned at the Eleutheria" (a festival of Dionysus; see 2.29n.). **29:** *Useless for all time,* cf. Add Esth 16.24.

4.1–21: The Jews brought to Alexandria and imprisoned. 1: *Enmity* on the part of native-born Egyptians for the Jews is assumed in 3 Maccabees; contrast the depiction of the Greeks in 3.8. **2:** *Mourning, lamentation, and*

on the uncertainty of life and shed tears at the most miserable expulsion of these people. [5] For a multitude of gray-headed old men, sluggish and bent with age, was being led away, forced to march at a swift pace by the violence with which they were driven in such a shameful manner. [6] And young women who had just entered the bridal chamber[a] to share married life exchanged joy for wailing, their myrrh-perfumed hair sprinkled with ashes, and were carried away unveiled, all together raising a lament instead of a wedding song, as they were torn by the harsh treatment of the heathen.[b] [7] In bonds and in public view they were violently dragged along as far as the place of embarkation. [8] Their husbands, in the prime of youth, their necks encircled with ropes instead of garlands, spent the remaining days of their marriage festival in lamentations instead of good cheer and youthful revelry, seeing death immediately before them.[c] [9] They were brought on board like wild animals, driven under the constraint of iron bonds; some were fastened by the neck to the benches of the boats, others had their feet secured by unbreakable fetters, [10] and in addition they were confined under a solid deck, so that, with their eyes in total darkness, they would undergo treatment befitting traitors during the whole voyage.

[11] When these people had been brought to the place called Schedia, and the voyage was concluded as the king had decreed, he commanded that they should be enclosed in the hippodrome that had been built with a monstrous perimeter wall in front of the city, and that was well suited to make them an obvious spectacle to all coming back into the city and to those from the city[d] going out into the country, so that they could neither communicate with the king's forces nor in any way claim to be inside the circuit of the city.[e] [12] And when this had happened, the king, hearing that the Jews' compatriots from the city frequently went out in secret to lament bitterly the ignoble misfortune of their kindred, [13] ordered in his rage that these people be dealt with in precisely the same fashion as the others, not omitting any detail of their punishment. [14] The entire race was to be registered individually, not for the hard labor that has been briefly mentioned before, but to be tortured with the outrages that he had ordered, and at the end to be destroyed in the space of a single day. [15] The registration of these people was therefore conducted with bitter haste and zealous intensity from the rising of the sun until its setting, coming to an end after forty days but still uncompleted.

[16] The king was greatly and continually filled with joy, organizing feasts in honor of all his idols, with a mind alienated from truth and with a profane mouth, praising speechless things that are not able even to communicate or to come to one's help, and uttering improper words against the supreme God.[f] [17] But after the previously mentioned interval of time the scribes declared to the king that they were no longer able to take the census of the Jews because of their immense number, [18] though most of them were still in the country, some still residing in their homes, and some at the place;[g] the task was impossible for all the generals in Egypt. [19] After he had threatened them severely, charging that they had been bribed to contrive a means of escape, he was clearly convinced about the matter [20] when they said and proved that

[a] Or *the canopy*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *as though torn by heathen whelps*
[c] Gk *seeing Hades already lying at their feet*
[d] Gk *those of them*
[e] Or *claim protection of the walls*; meaning of Gk uncertain
[f] Gk *the greatest God*
[g] Other ancient authorities read *on the way*

tearful cries, cf. Esth 4.3. **11:** *Schedia,* a promontory about three miles from Alexandria. *The hippodrome* (arena) was situated at the east or Canobic gate of Alexandria; according to Strabo (17.1.10,16) a canal joined Schedia and the Canobic gate. *Inside . . . the city,* implies that Jews living in Alexandria (see v. 12, *compatriots from the city*) had been thus far unmolested (but cf. 3.1). **14:** *Mentioned before,* see 2.28. The registration for poll tax and slave status is transformed into an instrument for the execution of *the entire race* of Jews. **16:** *Speechless things,* see Ps 115.3–7; Jer 10.5; Hab 2.18; Bar 6.7. *Supreme God,* see 1.9n. **17:** *Their immense number,* an obvious hyperbole. **19:** *Bribed,* see 2.32.

both the paper[a] and the pens they used for writing had already given out. [21] But this was an act of the invincible providence of him who was aiding the Jews from heaven.

5 Then the king, completely inflexible, was filled with overpowering anger and wrath; so he summoned Hermon, keeper of the elephants, [2] and ordered him on the following day to drug all the elephants—five hundred in number—with large handfuls of frankincense and plenty of unmixed wine, and to drive them in, maddened by the lavish abundance of drink, so that the Jews might meet their doom. [3] When he had given these orders he returned to his feasting, together with those of his Friends and of the army who were especially hostile toward the Jews. [4] And Hermon, keeper of the elephants, proceeded faithfully to carry out the orders. [5] The servants in charge of the Jews[b] went out in the evening and bound the hands of the wretched people and arranged for their continued custody through the night, convinced that the whole nation would experience its final destruction. [6] For to the Gentiles it appeared that the Jews were left without any aid, [7] because in their bonds they were forcibly confined on every side. But with tears and a voice hard to silence they all called upon the Almighty Lord and Ruler of all power, their merciful God and Father, praying [8] that he avert with vengeance the evil plot against them and in a glorious manifestation rescue them from the fate now prepared for them. [9] So their entreaty ascended fervently to heaven.

[10] Hermon, however, when he had drugged the pitiless elephants until they had been filled with a great abundance of wine and satiated with frankincense, presented himself at the courtyard early in the morning to report to the king about these preparations. [11] But the Lord[c] sent upon the king a portion of sleep, that beneficence that from the beginning, night and day, is bestowed by him who grants it to whomever he wishes. [12] And by the action of the Lord he was overcome by so pleasant and deep a sleep[d] that he quite failed in his lawless purpose and was completely frustrated in his inflexible plan. [13] Then the Jews, since they had escaped the appointed hour, praised their holy God and again implored him who is easily reconciled to show the might of his all-powerful hand to the arrogant Gentiles.

[14] But now, since it was nearly the middle of the tenth hour, the person who was in charge of the invitations, seeing that the guests were assembled, approached the king and nudged him. [15] And when he had with difficulty roused him, he pointed out that the hour of the banquet was already slipping by, and he gave him an account of the situation. [16] The king, after considering this, returned to his drinking, and ordered those present for the banquet to recline opposite him. [17] When this was done he urged them to give themselves over to revelry and to make the present[e] portion of the banquet joyful by celebrating all the more. [18] After the party had been going on for some time, the king summoned Hermon and with sharp threats demanded to know why the Jews had been allowed to remain alive through the present day. [19] But when he, with the corroboration of the king's[f] Friends, pointed out that while it was still night he had carried out completely the order given him, [20] the king,[c] possessed by a savagery

[a] Or *paper factory*
[b] Gk *them*
[c] Gk *he*
[d] Other ancient authorities add *from evening until the ninth hour*
[e] Other ancient authorities read *delayed* (Gk *untimely*)
[f] Gk *his*

5.1–51: Ptolemy orders the execution of the Jews, but is thwarted. A variant of this story is told in Josephus, *Ag. Ap.* 2.53–55, but there the Ptolemy is Ptolemy VIII Euergetes II Physcon (144–117 BCE). **1:** *Hermon,* the name of the keeper of the elephants, recalls the figure of Haman in Esther. **2:** *Elephants—five hundred* is an exaggeration; according to Polybius, Ptolemy had seventy-three elephants at the battle of Raphia. After Alexander the Great encountered them in India, war-*elephants* were often a component of Hellenistic armies; see 1 Macc 1.17. Similar stimulation of war-elephants is reported in 1 Macc 6.34. **3:** *Returned to his feasting,* 4.16. **7:** *Father,* see Isa 63.16; Mal 2.10; Tob 13.4; Wis 11.10. **11:** The divine gift of *sleep* is extolled by Roman poets (e.g., Seneca, *Hercules Furens* 1065–78; Statius, *Silvae* 5.4); see Ps 127.2. **14:** *Middle of the tenth hour,* 3:30 pm. **19:** *Friends,* see 2.23n. **20:** *Phalaris,*

worse than that of Phalaris, said that the Jews[a] were benefited by today's sleep, "but," he added, "tomorrow without delay prepare the elephants in the same way for the destruction of the lawless Jews!" [21] When the king had spoken, all those present readily and joyfully with one accord gave their approval, and all went to their own homes. [22] But they did not so much employ the duration of the night in sleep as in devising all sorts of insults for those they thought to be doomed.

[23] Then, as soon as the cock had crowed in the early morning, Hermon, having equipped[b] the animals, began to move them along in the great colonnade. [24] The crowds of the city had been assembled for this most pitiful spectacle and they were eagerly waiting for daybreak. [25] But the Jews, at their last gasp—since the time had run out—stretched their hands toward heaven and with most tearful supplication and mournful dirges implored the supreme God[c] to help them again at once. [26] The rays of the sun were not yet shed abroad, and while the king was receiving his Friends, Hermon arrived and invited him to come out, indicating that what the king desired was ready for action. [27] But he, on receiving the report and being struck by the unusual invitation to come out—since he had been completely overcome by incomprehension—inquired what the matter was for which this had been so zealously completed for him. [28] This was the act of God who rules over all things, for he had implanted in the king's mind a forgetfulness of the things he had previously devised. [29] Then Hermon and all the king's Friends[d] pointed out that the animals and the armed forces were ready, "O king, according to your eager purpose."[e] [30] But at these words he was filled with an overpowering wrath, because by the providence of God his whole mind had been deranged concerning these matters; and with a threatening look he said, [31] "If your parents or children were present, I would have prepared them to be a rich feast for the savage animals instead of the Jews, who give me no ground for complaint and have exhibited to an extraordinary degree a full and firm loyalty to my ancestors. [32] In fact you would have been deprived of life instead of these, if it were not for an affection arising from our nurture in common and your usefulness." [33] So Hermon suffered an unexpected and dangerous threat, and his eyes wavered and his face fell. [34] The king's Friends one by one sullenly slipped away and dismissed[f] the assembled people to their own occupations. [35] Then the Jews, on hearing what the king had said, praised the manifest Lord God, King of kings, since this also was his aid that they had received.

[36] The king, however, reconvened the party in the same manner and urged the guests to return to their celebrating. [37] After summoning Hermon he said in a threatening tone, "How many times, you poor wretch, must I give you orders about these things? [38] Equip[g] the elephants now once more for the destruction of the Jews tomorrow!" [39] But the officials who were at table with him, wondering at his instability of mind, remonstrated as follows: [40] "O king, how long will you put us to the test, as though we are idiots, ordering now for a third time that they be destroyed, and again revoking your decree in the matter?[h] [41] As a result the city is in a tumult because of its expectation; it is crowded with masses of people, and also in constant danger of being plundered."

[42] At this the king, a Phalaris in everything and filled with madness, took no account of the changes of mind that had come about within him for the protection of the Jews, and he firmly swore an irrevocable oath that he would send them to death[i] without

[a] Gk *they*
[b] Or *armed*
[c] Gk *the greatest God*
[d] Gk *all the Friends*
[e] Other ancient authorities read *pointed to the beasts and the armed forces, saying, "They are ready, O king, according to your eager purpose."*
[f] Other ancient authorities read *he dismissed*
[g] Or *Arm*
[h] Other ancient authorities read *when the matter is in hand*
[i] Gk *Hades*

tyrant of Agrigentum in Sicily (ca. 570–554 BCE) whose cruelty was proverbial (Polybius 12.25). **28:** *The act of God,* cf. Prov 21.1. **29:** An addition in several Greek manuscripts indicates that though Ptolemy was moved by compassion and determined to release the Jews, Hermon influenced him to proceed with his plans to destroy

delay, mangled by the knees and feet of the animals, [43] and would also march against Judea and rapidly level it to the ground with fire and spear, and by burning to the ground the temple inaccessible to him[a] would quickly render it forever empty of those who offered sacrifices there. [44] Then the Friends and officers departed with great joy, and they confidently posted the armed forces at the places in the city most favorable for keeping guard.

[45] Now when the animals had been brought virtually to a state of madness, so to speak, by the very fragrant draughts of wine mixed with frankincense and had been equipped with frightful devices, the elephant keeper [46] entered at about dawn into the courtyard—the city now being filled with countless masses of people crowding their way into the hippodrome—and urged the king on to the matter at hand. [47] So he, when he had filled his impious mind with a deep rage, rushed out in full force along with the animals, wishing to witness, with invulnerable heart and with his own eyes, the grievous and pitiful destruction of the aforementioned people.

[48] When the Jews saw the dust raised by the elephants going out at the gate and by the following armed forces, as well as by the trampling of the crowd, and heard the loud and tumultuous noise, [49] they thought that this was their last moment of life, the end of their most miserable suspense, and giving way to lamentation and groans they kissed each other, embracing relatives and falling into one another's arms[b]—parents and children, mothers and daughters, and others with babies at their breasts who were drawing their last milk. [50] Not only this, but when they considered the help that they had received before from heaven, they prostrated themselves with one accord on the ground, removing the babies from their breasts, [51] and cried out in a very loud voice, imploring the Ruler over every power to manifest himself and be merciful to them, as they stood now at the gates of death.[c]

6 Then a certain Eleazar, famous among the priests of the country, who had attained a ripe old age and throughout his life had been adorned with every virtue, directed the elders around him to stop calling upon the holy God, and he prayed as follows:
[2] "King of great power, Almighty God Most High, governing all creation with mercy,
[3] look upon the descendants of Abraham,
O Father, upon the children of the sainted Jacob, a people of your consecrated portion who are perishing as foreigners in a foreign land. [4] Pharaoh with his abundance of chariots, the former ruler of this Egypt, exalted with lawless insolence and boastful tongue, you destroyed together with his arrogant army by drowning them in the sea, manifesting the light of your mercy on the nation of Israel. [5] Sennacherib exulting in his countless forces, oppressive king of the Assyrians, who had already gained control of the whole world by the spear and was lifted up against your holy city, speaking grievous words with boasting and insolence, you, O Lord, broke in pieces, showing your power to many nations.
[6] The three companions in Babylon who had

[a] Gk *us*
[b] Gk *falling upon their necks*
[c] Gk *Hades*

them. **42:** *Phalaris,* see v. 20n. **45:** The *frightful devices* were probably scythes, knives, and other military equipment attached to different parts of the bodies of the elephants. **49:** *Embracing,* but according to 6.27 they are still bound. **50–51:** The author continues to build up his thesis that God was the only resort for the captives, and that their hope would not be frustrated. **51:** *Gates of death,* Pss 9.13; 107.18.

6.1–15: The prayer of Eleazar. Like Simon's prayer in 2.1–20, it is plainly Jewish in form and style, containing doxology, thanksgiving for God's earlier interventions in Israel's history, and petition for a new miracle. The emphasis is on the exclusiveness and separate standing of Israel before God (v. 3). Eleazar expects God's intervention, not on account of Israel's virtues or merits, but because of divine mercy. Unlike many Jewish prayers from this period, however, there is little confession of sin (but see v. 10). **1:** *Eleazar,* the name of one of Aaron's sons (Ex 6.23), of a martyr in 2 Macc 6 and 4 Macc 5–6, and of a high priest in the *Letter of Aristeas. Priests* were always numerous in the Jewish community. There was a Jewish temple at Leontopolis in Egypt, erected by an exiled high priest (Onias IV) in the second century BCE, in defiance of Deuteronomistic law (Deut 12). **4:** *Pharaoh,* Ex 14.28. **5:** *Sennacherib,* 2 Kings 18.13; 19.35–37. **6:** *Three companions in Babylon,* Dan 3.22,27; Song of Thr 22–27.

voluntarily surrendered their lives to the flames so as not to serve vain things, you rescued unharmed, even to a hair, moistening the fiery furnace with dew and turning the flame against all their enemies. 7 Daniel, who through envious slanders was thrown down into the ground to lions as food for wild animals, you brought up to the light unharmed. 8 And Jonah, wasting away in the belly of a huge, sea-born monster, you, Father, watched over and restored[a] unharmed to all his family. 9 And now, you who hate insolence, all-merciful and protector of all, reveal yourself quickly to those of the nation of Israel[b]—who are being outrageously treated by the abominable and lawless Gentiles.

10 "Even if our lives have become entangled in impieties in our exile, rescue us from the hand of the enemy, and destroy us, Lord, by whatever fate you choose. 11 Let not the vain-minded praise their vanities[c] at the destruction of your beloved people, saying, 'Not even their god has rescued them.' 12 But you, O Eternal One, who have all might and all power, watch over us now and have mercy on us who by the senseless insolence of the lawless are being deprived of life in the manner of traitors. 13 And let the Gentiles cower today in fear of your invincible might, O honored One, who have power to save the nation of Jacob. 14 The whole throng of infants and their parents entreat you with tears. 15 Let it be shown to all the Gentiles that you are with us, O Lord, and have not turned your face from us; but just as you have said, 'Not even when they were in the land of their enemies did I neglect them,' so accomplish it, O Lord."

16 Just as Eleazar was ending his prayer, the king arrived at the hippodrome with the animals and all the arrogance of his forces. 17 And when the Jews observed this they raised great cries to heaven so that even the nearby valleys resounded with them and brought an uncontrollable terror upon the army. 18 Then the most glorious, almighty, and true God revealed his holy face and opened the heavenly gates, from which two glorious angels of fearful aspect descended, visible to all but the Jews. 19 They opposed the forces of the enemy and filled them with confusion and terror, binding them with immovable shackles. 20 Even the king began to shudder bodily, and he forgot his sullen insolence. 21 The animals turned back upon the armed forces following them and began trampling and destroying them.

22 Then the king's anger was turned to pity and tears because of the things that he had devised beforehand. 23 For when he heard the shouting and saw them all fallen headlong to destruction, he wept and angrily threatened his Friends, saying, 24 "You are committing treason and surpassing tyrants in cruelty; and even me, your benefactor, you are now attempting to deprive of dominion and life by secretly devising acts of no advantage to the kingdom. 25 Who has driven from their homes those who faithfully kept our country's fortresses, and foolishly gathered every one of them here? 26 Who is it that has so lawlessly encompassed with outrageous treatment those who from the beginning differed from[d] all nations in their goodwill toward us and often have accepted willingly the worst of human dangers? 27 Loose and untie their unjust bonds! Send them back to their homes in peace, begging pardon for your former actions![e] 28 Release the children of the almighty and living God of heaven, who from the time of our ancestors until now has granted an unimpeded and notable sta-

[a] Other ancient authorities read *rescued and restored*; others, *mercifully restored*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *to the saints of Israel*
[c] Or *bless their vain gods*
[d] Or *excelled above*
[e] Other ancient authorities read *revoking your former commands*

7: *Daniel,* Dan 6.22. **8:** *Jonah,* Jon 2.10. **11:** Ps 115.2. **13:** *Let the Gentiles cower,* the prayer overlooks the exception made for the Greeks in 3.8. **15:** *As you have said,* Lev 26.44.

6.16–29: The Jews are delivered, and the king now favors them. 18: *Most glorious,* Greek "megalodoxos," compare *1 Enoch* 14.20 and *Testament of Levi* 3.4, where God is called "the Great Glory." *Angels of fearful aspect,* for similar terror-inspiring apparitions, see 2 Macc 3.25–29; 10.29. **21:** *The animals turned* upon the king's own *forces,* a detail found also in Josephus's account (*Ag. Ap.* 2.5). For the principle, see Pss 7.15–16; 9.15–16; 35.8; 57.6. **25:** *Faithfully,* see 3.21n.; contrast the king's language in 3.24. **28:** *Children of . . . God,* Wis 18.13.

bility to our government." [29] These then were the things he said; and the Jews, immediately released, praised their holy God and Savior, since they now had escaped death.

[30] Then the king, when he had returned to the city, summoned the official in charge of the revenues and ordered him to provide to the Jews both wines and everything else needed for a festival of seven days, deciding that they should celebrate their rescue with all joyfulness in that same place in which they had expected to meet their destruction. [31] Accordingly those disgracefully treated and near to death,[a] or rather, who stood at its gates, arranged for a banquet of deliverance instead of a bitter and lamentable death, and full of joy they apportioned to celebrants the place that had been prepared for their destruction and burial. [32] They stopped their chanting of dirges and took up the song of their ancestors, praising God, their Savior and worker of wonders.[b] Putting an end to all mourning and wailing, they formed choruses[c] as a sign of peaceful joy. [33] Likewise also the king, after convening a great banquet to celebrate these events, gave thanks to heaven unceasingly and lavishly for the unexpected rescue that he[d] had experienced. [34] Those who had previously believed that the Jews would be destroyed and become food for birds, and had joyfully registered them, groaned as they themselves were overcome by disgrace, and their fire-breathing boldness was ignominiously[e] quenched.

[35] The Jews, as we have said before, arranged the aforementioned choral group[f] and passed the time in feasting to the accompaniment of joyous thanksgiving and psalms. [36] And when they had ordained a public rite for these things in their whole community and for their descendants, they instituted the observance of the aforesaid days as a festival, not for drinking and gluttony, but because of the deliverance that had come to them through God. [37] Then they petitioned the king, asking for dismissal to their homes. [38] So their registration was carried out from the twenty-fifth of Pachon to the fourth of Epeiph,[g] for forty days; and their destruction was set for the fifth to the seventh of Epeiph,[h] the three days [39] on which the Lord of all most gloriously revealed his mercy and rescued them all together and unharmed. [40] Then they feasted, being provided with everything by the king, until the fourteenth day,[i] on which also they made the petition for their dismissal. [41] The king granted their request at once and wrote the following letter for them to the generals in the cities, magnanimously expressing his concern:

7 "King Ptolemy Philopator to the generals in Egypt and all in authority in his government, greetings and good health:

[2] "We ourselves and our children are faring well, the great God guiding our affairs according to our desire. [3] Certain of our friends, frequently urging us with malicious intent, persuaded us to gather together the Jews of the kingdom in a body and to punish them

[a] Gk *Hades*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *praising Israel and the wonder-working God*; or *praising Israel's Savior, the wonder-working God*
[c] Or *dances*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *they*
[e] Other ancient authorities read *completely*
[f] Or *dance*
[g] July 7—August 15
[h] August 16—18
[i] August 25

6.30–41: The Jews celebrate their deliverance. 32: *The song of their ancestors,* perhaps Ps 136, which often was used earlier as a hymn of thanksgiving (1 Chr 16.41; 2 Chr 5.13; 7.3; Ezra 3.11). **34:** *Food for birds*, Gen 40.19; Deut 28.26; Ezek 39.4; 2 Macc 9.15. **36:** The institution of Jewish festivals is a common feature in this period (Esth 9.20–23; 1 Macc 4.59; 7.49; 13.51–52).

7.1–9: Ptolemy's letter on behalf of the Jews. Compare the letters of Ahasuerus (Esth 8; Add Esth 16.1–24), of Nebuchadnezzar (Dan 4), and of Antiochus Epiphanes (2 Macc 9.19–27). **2:** *Children,* Philopator had only one legitimate son, born in 210 BCE, who reigned later as Ptolemy V Epiphanes (204–180). Either the author had no knowledge of Philopator's family life, or the king is using a general term for the members of his court. **3:** The

with barbarous penalties as traitors; [4] for they declared that our government would never be firmly established until this was accomplished, because of the ill-will that these people had toward all nations. [5] They also led them out with harsh treatment as slaves, or rather as traitors, and, girding themselves with a cruelty more savage than that of Scythian custom, they tried without any inquiry or examination to put them to death. [6] But we very severely threatened them for these acts, and in accordance with the clemency that we have toward all people we barely spared their lives. Since we have come to realize that the God of heaven surely defends the Jews, always taking their part as a father does for his children, [7] and since we have taken into account the friendly and firm goodwill that they had toward us and our ancestors, we justly have acquitted them of every charge of whatever kind. [8] We also have ordered all people to return to their own homes, with no one in any place[a] doing them harm at all or reproaching them for the irrational things that have happened. [9] For you should know that if we devise any evil against them or cause them any grief at all, we always shall have not a mortal but the Ruler over every power, the Most High God, in everything and inescapably as an antagonist to avenge such acts. Farewell."

[10] On receiving this letter the Jews[b] did not immediately hurry to make their departure, but they requested of the king that at their own hands those of the Jewish nation who had willfully transgressed against the holy God and the law of God should receive the punishment they deserved. [11] They declared that those who for the belly's sake had transgressed the divine commandments would never be favorably disposed toward the king's government. [12] The king[c] then, admitting and approving the truth of what they said, granted them a general license so that freely, and without royal authority or supervision, they might destroy those everywhere in his kingdom who had transgressed the law of God. [13] When they had applauded him in fitting manner, their priests and the whole multitude shouted the Hallelujah and joyfully departed. [14] And so on their way they punished and put to a public and shameful death any whom they met of their compatriots who had become defiled. [15] In that day they put to death more than three hundred men; and they kept the day as a joyful festival, since they had destroyed the profaners. [16] But those who had held fast to God even to death and had received the full enjoyment of deliverance began their departure from the city, crowned with all sorts of very fragrant flowers, joyfully and loudly giving thanks to the one God of their ancestors, the eternal Savior[d] of Israel, in words of praise and all kinds of melodious songs.

[17] When they had arrived at Ptolemais, called "rose-bearing" because of a characteristic of the place, the fleet waited for them, in accordance with the common desire, for seven days. [18] There they celebrated their deliverance,[e] for the king had generously provided all things to them for their journey until all of them arrived at their own houses. [19] And when they had all landed in peace with appropriate thanksgiving, there too in

[a] Other ancient authorities read *way*
[b] Gk *they*
[c] Gk *He*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *the holy Savior*; others, *the holy one*
[e] Gk *they made a cup of deliverance*

king seeks to exonerate himself, blaming others (see 6.24). **4:** *Ill-will,* 3.2,7. **5:** *Scythian custom,* see 2 Macc 4.47n.; 4 Macc 10.7n. The Scythians were known for barbarism. **6:** *Threatened them,* that is, the enemies of the Jews. *Father,* 5.7n.; Ps 103.13. **8:** *In any place* through which the Jews might pass on their return.

7.10–23: The Jews punish the renegades and return home. 10: *They requested of the king*, in the Hellenistic and Roman periods the Jews were often obliged to seek permission from their foreign rulers to carry out their own laws pertaining to capital punishment (Deut 13.6–18; Esth 8.8–11). **13:** *Hallelujah*, see Ps 105n.; Tob 13.18. **17:** This *Ptolemais* was probably not the city of this name near Thebes in Upper Egypt, but "Ptolemais at the harbor" in the Arsinoite nome (province), about twelve miles from present-day Cairo. *Rose-bearing* is not elsewhere applied to Ptolemais. **22–23:** The book closes with a benediction to the *supreme God*; cf. 4 Macc 18.24.

like manner they decided to observe these days as a joyous festival during the time of their stay. [20] Then, after inscribing them as holy on a pillar and dedicating a place of prayer at the site of the festival, they departed unharmed, free, and overjoyed, since at the king's command they had all of them been brought safely by land and sea and river to their own homes. [21] They also possessed greater prestige among their enemies, being held in honor and awe; and they were not subject at all to confiscation of their belongings by anyone. [22] Besides, they all recovered all of their property, in accordance with the registration, so that those who held any of it restored it to them with extreme fear.[a] So the supreme God perfectly performed great deeds for their deliverance. [23] Blessed be the Deliverer of Israel through all times! Amen.

[a] Other ancient authorities read *with a very large supplement*

This page intentionally left blank

(c) The following book is included in the Slavonic Bible as 3 Esdras, but is not found in the Greek. It is included in the Appendix to the Latin Vulgate Bible as 4 Esdras.

2 ESDRAS

NAME

The book known as 2 Esdras is actually a composite work made up of three separate writings: 5 Ezra (chs 1–2), 4 Ezra (chs 3–14), and 6 Ezra (chs 15–16). "Esdras" is the Greek form of the name "Ezra.".

CANONICAL STATUS

2 Esdras is considered "apocryphal"—that is, noncanonical but instructive—in both the Roman Catholic and Protestant traditions. Since the Council of Trent (1546), it has been placed, together with 1 Esdras and the Prayer of Manasseh, in an appendix to the Latin Vulgate Bible. 2 Esdras is not included in the Septuagint or in any Jewish canon.

AUTHORSHIP

Traditionally, 2 Esdras has been considered a writing of the biblical figure Ezra. For modern scholars, however, "Ezra" is a pseudonym, and all three components of 2 Esdras are thought to be of unknown authorship. It should be noted that 6 Ezra, as it stands, is anonymous.

DATE AND HISTORICAL CONTEXT

Fourth Ezra, the longest and most complex of the three parts of 2 Esdras, is also the earliest. Written in Hebrew by an anonymous Jew in Israel near the end of the first century CE, it sets forth its author's anguished reflections on the destruction of Jerusalem and its Temple by the Romans in 70 CE. Sometime in the second century CE, 4 Ezra was translated into Greek and, subsequently, into many other languages. Although both the original Hebrew text and the Greek translation were lost over time, the book is known in no less than eight versions: Latin, Syriac, Ethiopic, Georgian, Armenian, two independent Arabic versions, and a fragmentary Coptic version. This large number of translations attests to the book's immense popularity in the many Christian churches of the early Middle Ages.

Fifth Ezra, a Christian writing of the second or third century CE, is also attributed to Ezra. It was composed in either Greek or Latin; its place of composition is uncertain.

Sixth Ezra is a Christian composition of the third century, probably from Asia Minor. Although 6 Ezra survives in full only in Latin, a fourth-century Greek parchment fragment of 15.57–59 found at Oxyrhynchus, Egypt, indicates that the book was composed in Greek.

Some time before 400 CE, a Latin form of 6 Ezra was appended to the end of 4 Ezra. In turn, a Latin form of 5 Ezra was later added to the end of that composite, probably before 450. Then, prior to 800, 5 Ezra was moved to the beginning of the collection, resulting in the form of the book known today.

STRUCTURE AND CONTENTS

The author of 4 Ezra adopts the pseudonym "Ezra," whom he presents as living after the destruction of the First Temple by the Babylonians in 586 BCE, and the author also refers to Rome by the pseudonym "Babylon." Thus he writes on two levels, comparing his own situation with that of his biblical hero. The book's central concern is the issue of theodicy: How could a just God allow such misfortunes to happen to God's chosen people?

The author of 4 Ezra is a deeply reflective and highly imaginative thinker, who with skill and sophistication presents divergent theological viewpoints in different parts of the book. In the first three of the book's seven "visions," Ezra, the book's spirited and loquacious hero, persuasively argues a profoundly humanistic viewpoint that stresses the ideals of God's mercy, justice, and care for humanity, especially Israel. Ezra is rebuffed time and again, however, by an angel, who emphasizes the limitations of human reasoning.

In the fourth vision, the book's central and pivotal section, Ezra experiences a profound psychological shift from his previous attitude to a state of unquestioning acceptance of God's will. As a sign of this transition he receives a mystical vision of the heavenly Jerusalem. Equipped with his newly acquired state of mind, Ezra in the last

section of the book receives two further mystical visions (the fifth and sixth), both indicating that the true solution to the problem of God's justice is an apocalyptic one: The suffering righteous will receive their reward at the end of the world. Finally, in the climactic seventh vision, the inspired Ezra is granted permission by God to rewrite the scriptures that had been burned by the "Babylonians," but with one variation: In addition to the traditional books of the Hebrew canon, he writes seventy secret books meant for the "wise" among his people. Fourth Ezra's author thus displays his penchant for mystical, esoteric, and apocalyptic modes of thinking, and his conviction that these hold the answers to the ethical and theological dilemmas of Israel, and indeed of all humankind.

Fifth Ezra reflects the growing tension between Christian and Jewish communities. It indicts the people of Israel for their sins and "predicts" the coming of a new people (the Christians) who will inherit the promises originally made to Israel. One is best advised to read the book as a pseudonymous effort by an anonymous Christian author to place a "prophecy" of the coming of Christianity in the mouth of a respected Jewish figure of the fifth century BCE. The "prophecy" is made more convincing by the fact that the author strives to be historically authentic, never referring to "Christianity" explicitly and never mentioning Jesus by name.

In 6 Ezra, an anonymous prophet predicts terrible catastrophes that will afflict the whole earth as a result of human iniquity and warns God's "elect" to abstain from sin if they wish to escape the calamities. The book reflects a situation in which its Christian community was experiencing persecution and strives to convince its audience to stand firm. The author seeks to make sense of the severe persecution threatening the Christian community, and, as in the case of 4 Ezra, 6 Ezra's eschatology is presented as a solution to a situation of extreme social and religious challenge.

INTERPRETATION

Because of its position on the margins of the canon, 2 Esdras has not received a great deal of interpretive attention. Traditional exegetes have generally interpreted 2 Esdras as a genuine prophecy of future events by the biblical figure Ezra. Modern scholars, however, tend to regard it as prophecy formulated after the fact, or as inspired by historical exigencies of the periods in which the book's components were written.

Theodore A. Bergren

COMPRISING WHAT IS SOMETIMES CALLED 5 EZRA (CHAPTERS 1—2), 4 EZRA (CHAPTERS 3—14), AND 6 EZRA (CHAPTERS 15—16)

1 The book[a] of the prophet Ezra son of Seraiah, son of Azariah, son of Hilkiah, son of Shallum, son of Zadok, son of Ahitub, **2** son of Ahijah, son of Phinehas, son of Eli, son of Amariah, son of Azariah, son of Meraimoth, son of Arna, son of Uzzi, son of Borith, son of Abishua, son of Phinehas, son of Eleazar, **3** son of Aaron, of the tribe of Levi, who was a captive in the country of the Medes in the reign of Artaxerxes, king of the Persians.[b]

4 The word of the Lord came to me, saying, **5** "Go, declare to my people their evil deeds, and to their children the iniquities that they have committed against me, so that they may tell[c] their children's children **6** that the sins of their parents have increased in them, for they have forgotten me and have offered sacrifices to strange gods. **7** Was it not I who brought them out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage? But they have angered me and despised my counsels. **8** Now you,

[a] Other ancient authorities read *The second book*
[b] Other ancient authorities, which place chapters 1 and 2 after 16.78, lack verses 1-3 and begin the chapter: *The word of the Lord that came to Ezra son of Chusi in the days of King Nebuchadnezzar, saying, "Go,*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *nourish*

Chapters 1—2 comprise a separate literary composition also known as 5 Ezra (see Introduction).

1.1—3: Ascription. Ezra is given a high-priestly genealogy similar to Ezra 7.1—5 and 1 Esd 8.1—2, but with several differences (cf. 1 Sam 14.3). **1:** *Prophet* is unusual; Ezra is usually called "priest" or "scribe" (Ezra 7.6,11; see 2 Esd 12.42n.). **3:** Probably *Artaxerxes* I (465—424 BCE).

1.4—2.9: A prophetic indictment against Israel. 1.4—23: Prophetic historical recital of God's benefits during the Exodus (cf. Pss 78; 106; Neh 9). **4:** *The word of the Lord came . . .* , a typical expression in narratives about prophets. **5:** Isa 58.1; Ezek 23.36; Joel 1.3. **6:** *Strange gods,* cf. Deut 32.16. **7:** *Was it not I . . . ?*, the Exodus was God's

pull out the hair of your head and hurl[a] all evils upon them, for they have not obeyed my law—they are a rebellious people. [9] How long shall I endure them, on whom I have bestowed such great benefits? [10] For their sake I have overthrown many kings; I struck down Pharaoh with his servants and all his army. [11] I destroyed all nations before them, and scattered in the east the peoples of two provinces,[b] Tyre and Sidon; I killed all their enemies.

[12] "But speak to them and say, Thus says the Lord: [13] Surely it was I who brought you through the sea, and made safe highways for you where there was no road; I gave you Moses as leader and Aaron as priest; [14] I provided light for you from a pillar of fire, and did great wonders among you. Yet you have forgotten me, says the Lord.

[15] "Thus says the Lord Almighty:[c] The quails were a sign to you; I gave you camps for your protection, and in them you complained. [16] You have not exulted in my name at the destruction of your enemies, but to this day you still complain.[d] [17] Where are the benefits that I bestowed on you? When you were hungry and thirsty in the wilderness, did you not cry out to me, [18] saying, 'Why have you led us into this wilderness to kill us? It would have been better for us to serve the Egyptians than to die in this wilderness.' [19] I pitied your groanings and gave you manna for food; you ate the bread of angels. [20] When you were thirsty, did I not split the rock so that waters flowed in abundance? Because of the heat I clothed you with the leaves of trees.[e] [21] I divided fertile lands among you; I drove out the Canaanites, the Perizzites, and the Philistines[f] before you. What more can I do for you? says the Lord. [22] Thus says the Lord Almighty:[c] When you were in the wilderness, at the bitter stream, thirsty and blaspheming my name, [23] I did not send fire on you for your blasphemies, but threw a tree into the water and made the stream sweet.

[24] "What shall I do to you, O Jacob? You, Judah, would not obey me. I will turn to other nations and will give them my name, so that they may keep my statutes. [25] Because you have forsaken me, I also will forsake you. When you beg mercy of me, I will show you no mercy. [26] When you call to me, I will not listen to you; for you have defiled your hands with blood, and your feet are swift to commit murder. [27] It is not as though you had forsaken me; you have forsaken yourselves, says the Lord.

[28] "Thus says the Lord Almighty: Have I not entreated you as a father entreats his sons or a mother her daughters or a nurse her children, [29] so that you should be my people and I should be your God, and that you should be my children and I should be your father? [30] I gathered you as a hen gath-

[a] Other ancient authorities read *and shake out*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *Did I not destroy the city of Bethsaida because of you, and to the south burn two cities . . . ?*
[c] Other ancient authorities lack *Almighty*
[d] Other ancient authorities read verse 16, *Your pursuer with his army I sank in the sea, but still the people complain also concerning their own destruction.*
[e] Other ancient authorities read *I made for you trees with leaves*
[f] Other ancient authorities read *Perizzites and their children*

paradigmatic mighty act for Israel. **8:** Ezra is to *pull out* his *hair* as a prophetic sign signaling his disgust with the people (see Ezra 9.3; Neh 13.25; Jer 6.19). *Rebellious people*, see Deut 28.50; Isa 30.9. **9:** *How long shall I endure them . . . ?* Frequent rhetorical questions like this highlight God's exasperation (see Num 14.27). **10:** Ex 14.28; Pss 135.9–11; 136.17. **11:** The scattering of the peoples of *Tyre and Sidon* is not recorded in other Exodus traditions. **13:** Ex 14.21–22,29; Num 33.1; Pss 77.20; 78.13. **14:** Ex 13.21. *You have forgotten me*, God indicts the people. **15:** Ex 16.13; Num 11.1,31–34; Deut 1.27; Ps 105.40; Wis 15.2–3. **17–18:** Num 14.3; Ps 77.11. **19:** *The bread of angels*, manna; Ps 78.24–25; Ex 16.13–16; Num 11.4–9; Wis 16.20. **20:** *Split the rock,* Num 20.11; Wis 11.4. *I clothed you with the leaves*, this is not mentioned in other Exodus traditions; protection from the heat is sometimes attributed to the pillar of cloud (Ex 13.21). **22–23:** Ex 15.22–25; Sir 38.5.

1.24–34: Pronouncement of judgment against Israel. 24: Isa 43.22. *I will turn to other nations*, the pivotal point of 5 Ezra, in which God decisively rejects the former nation (see Mt 21.43). See also Ex 32.10; Num 14.12. **25:** Jer 13.14. **26:** Prov 1.28; Isa 1.15; 59.3,7; Jer 7.16. **29:** Lev 26.12; Jer 7.23 24.7; 2 Cor 6.16–18; Heb 8.10. **30–33:** Compare

ers her chicks under her wings. But now, what shall I do to you? I will cast you out from my presence. 31 When you offer oblations to me, I will turn my face from you; for I have rejected your[a] festal days, and new moons, and circumcisions of the flesh.[b] 32 I sent you my servants the prophets, but you have taken and killed them and torn their bodies[c] in pieces; I will require their blood of you, says the Lord.[d]

33 "Thus says the Lord Almighty: Your house is desolate; I will drive you out as the wind drives straw; 34 and your sons will have no children, because with you[e] they have neglected my commandment and have done what is evil in my sight. 35 I will give your houses to a people that will come, who without having heard me will believe. Those to whom I have shown no signs will do what I have commanded. 36 They have seen no prophets, yet will recall their former state.[f] 37 I call to witness the gratitude of the people that is to come, whose children rejoice with gladness;[g] though they do not see me with bodily eyes, yet with the spirit they will believe the things I have said.

38 "And now, father,[h] look with pride and see the people coming from the east; 39 to them I will give as leaders Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, and Hosea and Amos and Micah and Joel and Obadiah and Jonah 40 and Nahum and Habakkuk, Zephaniah, Haggai, Zechariah and Malachi, who is also called the messenger of the Lord.[i]

2 "Thus says the Lord: I brought this people out of bondage, and I gave them commandments through my servants the prophets; but they would not listen to them, and made my counsels void. 2 The mother who bore them[j] says to them, 'Go, my children, because I am a widow and forsaken. 3 I brought you up with gladness; but with mourning and sorrow I have lost you, because you have sinned before the Lord God and have done what is evil in my sight.[k] 4 But now what can I do for you? For I am a widow and forsaken. Go, my children, and ask for mercy from the Lord.' 5 Now I call upon you, father, as a witness in addition to the mother of the

[a] Other ancient authorities read *I have not commanded for you*
[b] Other ancient authorities lack *of the flesh*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *the bodies of the apostles*
[d] Other ancient authorities add *Thus says the Lord Almighty: Recently you also laid hands on me, crying out before the judge's seat for him to deliver me to you. You took me as a sinner, not as a father who freed you from slavery, and you delivered me to death by hanging me on the tree; these are the things you have done. Therefore, says the Lord, let my Father and his angels return and judge between you and me; if I have not kept the commandment of the Father, if I have not nourished you, if I have not done the things my Father commanded, I will contend in judgment with you, says the Lord.*
[e] Other ancient authorities lack *with you*
[f] Other ancient authorities read *their iniquities*
[g] Other ancient authorities read *The apostles bear witness to the coming people with joy*
[h] Other ancient authorities read *brother*
[i] Other ancient authorities read *and Jacob, Elijah and Enoch, Zechariah and Hosea, Amos, Joel, Micah, Obadiah, Zephaniah,* [40]*Nahum, Jonah, Mattia* (or *Mattathias), Habakkuk, and twelve angels with flowers*
[j] Other ancient authorities read *They begat for themselves a mother who*
[k] Other ancient authorities read *in his sight*

Mt 23.30–38. This is the closest New Testament parallel in 5 Ezra, and it suggests Christian authorship. See also Lk 11.49–51; 13.34–35. **31:** Isa 1.11–15. The rejection of circumcision also reveals the Christian identity of the author. **32:** Jer 7.25; 25.4. **33:** Job 21.18; Ps 1.4; Jer 13.24.

1.35–40: Description and vision of the coming people. Emphasis is placed on the untutored goodness of the *people that will come*. **35:** *A people that will come*, that is, the Gentile Christians. *Signs*, cf. Num 14.11. **36–37:** Heb 2.3–4; 1 Pet 1.8–12. *With bodily eyes*, Jn 20.29. **38:** God addresses Ezra as *father*, a term of respect. The people coming *from the east* suggests a return from exile (see Bar 4.36–37; 5.5). **39–40:** The three patriarchs, and the twelve minor prophets arranged in the order of the Septuagint (see Mt 8.11–12; Lk 13.28–29).

2.1–9: Further pronouncement of judgment. The "mother" of the old people is consigned to destruction. **1:** Jer 7.25–26; Ezra 9.10–11; Dan 9.10. **2:** *The mother who bore them*, Jerusalem (Isa 49.21; 54.1). **2–4:** This section, like 1.38, draws on the last chapters of the book of Baruch (Bar 4.8–23). **5:** This time it is God who is invoked as

children, because they would not keep my covenant, [6] so that you may bring confusion on them and bring their mother to ruin, so that they may have no offspring. [7] Let them be scattered among the nations; let their names be blotted out from the earth, because they have despised my covenant.

[8] "Woe to you, Assyria, who conceal the unrighteous within you! O wicked nation, remember what I did to Sodom and Gomorrah, [9] whose land lies in lumps of pitch and heaps of ashes.[a] That is what I will do to those who have not listened to me, says the Lord Almighty."

[10] Thus says the Lord to Ezra: "Tell my people that I will give them the kingdom of Jerusalem, which I was going to give to Israel. [11] Moreover, I will take back to myself their glory, and will give to these others the everlasting habitations, which I had prepared for Israel.[b] [12] The tree of life shall give them fragrant perfume, and they shall neither toil nor become weary. [13] Go[c] and you will receive; pray that your days may be few, that they may be shortened. The kingdom is already prepared for you; be on the watch! [14] Call, O call heaven and earth to witness: I set aside evil and created good; for I am the Living One, says the Lord.

[15] "Mother, embrace your children; bring them up with gladness, as does a dove; strengthen their feet, because I have chosen you, says the Lord. [16] And I will raise up the dead from their places, and bring them out from their tombs, because I recognize my name in them. [17] Do not fear, mother of children, for I have chosen you, says the Lord. [18] I will send you help, my servants Isaiah and Jeremiah. According to their counsel I have consecrated and prepared for you twelve trees loaded with various fruits, [19] and the same number of springs flowing with milk and honey, and seven mighty mountains on which roses and lilies grow; by these I will fill your children with joy.

[20] "Guard the rights of the widow, secure justice for the ward, give to the needy, defend the orphan, clothe the naked, [21] care for the injured and the weak, do not ridicule the lame, protect the maimed, and let the blind have a vision of my splendor. [22] Protect the old and the young within your walls. [23] When you find any who are dead, commit them to the grave and mark it,[d] and I will give you the first place in my resurrection. [24] Pause and be quiet, my people, because your rest will come.

[25] "Good nurse, nourish your children; strengthen their feet. [26] Not one of the servants[e] whom I have given you will perish, for I will require them from among your number. [27] Do not be anxious, for when the day of tribulation and anguish comes, others

[a] Other ancient authorities read *Gomorrah, whose land descends to hell*
[b] Lat *for those*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *Seek*
[d] Or *seal it*; or *mark them and commit them to the grave*
[e] Or *slaves*

father, in conjunction with Jerusalem as *mother* (cf. 1.38). **6:** *Bring their mother to ruin*, a reference to the fall of Jerusalem in 70 or 135 CE (cf. Mt 22.1–14). **7:** *Let them be scattered,* as punishment, see Lev 26.33; Deut 4.27; Ps 44.11; Jer 9.16. The endurance of *names* is a form of immortality (see Sir 41:11–13). **8–9:** Woe against Assyria. The exact significance of this reference is uncertain; some scholars view *Assyria* as a reference to Rome. Here Assyria is cursed for concealing the Jews (cf. Zeph 2.13-3.5). *Sodom and Gomorrah*, Gen 19.

2.10–41: Prophetic exhortation of the new people. 10–14: Blessing and instruction; listing of eschatological delights. **10:** *My people*, the newly chosen Christians. See Mt 21.43. **11:** *Everlasting habitations*, dwelling places in the world to come; see Lk 16.9; Jn 14.2–3; 2 Cor 5.1,4; Rev 21.3. **12:** *Tree of life,* Gen 2.9; 3.17–19,22; Rev 2.7; 22.2,14; *1 Enoch* 24.4–25.7. **13:** Mt 7.7–8; 13.20,33–37; 14.34–38; 24.22; 25.34; Mk 13.37; Jn 16.24. **14:** *Heaven and earth*, Deut 4.26; Isa 1.2. *Living One*, Rev 1.18.

2.15–32: Exhortation of the mother. In distinction to 2.2–6, it is now the church, not Jerusalem, that is addressed as *mother*. **15:** *Dove*, Song 2.13–14. *Chosen,* Isa 44.1–2; 49.7; **16:** Resurrection is promised; see Isa 26.19; Ezek 37.12; Rev 3.12; 14.1; 22.4. **18–19:** *1 Enoch* 24–25; 31–32; 48; Hermas *Sim*. 9. **18:** *Twelve trees*, Rev 22.2. **19:** *Springs . . . mountains*, *1 Enoch* 18.6; 24.2–3; 32.1; 48.1. **20–23:** A recital of the traditional "works of mercy" of the church (see Isa 58.6–10; Tob 1.17–19; Mt 25.35–45; Hermas *Mand*. 8.10). **22:** *The old and the young*, Joel 2.16. **23:** Concern for proper burial, cf. Ezek 39.15; Sir 38.16. **24:** *Rest*, an eschatological reward; cf. Dan 12.13; Heb 3.18–19.

shall weep and be sorrowful, but you shall rejoice and have abundance. [28] The nations shall envy you, but they shall not be able to do anything against you, says the Lord. [29] My power will protect[a] you, so that your children may not see hell.[b]

[30] "Rejoice, O mother, with your children, because I will deliver you, says the Lord. [31] Remember your children that sleep, because I will bring them out of the hiding places of the earth, and will show mercy to them; for I am merciful, says the Lord Almighty. [32] Embrace your children until I come, and proclaim mercy to them; because my springs run over, and my grace will not fail."

[33] I, Ezra, received a command from the Lord on Mount Horeb to go to Israel. When I came to them they rejected me and refused the Lord's commandment. [34] Therefore I say to you, O nations that hear and understand, "Wait for your shepherd; he will give you everlasting rest, because he who will come at the end of the age is close at hand. [35] Be ready for the rewards of the kingdom, because perpetual light will shine on you forevermore. [36] Flee from the shadow of this age, receive the joy of your glory; I publicly call on my savior to witness.[c] [37] Receive what the Lord has entrusted to you and be joyful, giving thanks to him who has called you to the celestial kingdoms. [38] Rise, stand erect and see the number of those who have been sealed at the feast of the Lord. [39] Those who have departed from the shadow of this age have received glorious garments from the Lord. [40] Take again your full number, O Zion, and close the list of your people who are clothed in white, who have fulfilled the law of the Lord. [41] The number of your children, whom you desired, is now complete; implore the Lord's authority that your people, who have been called from the beginning, may be made holy."

[42] I, Ezra, saw on Mount Zion a great multitude that I could not number, and they all were praising the Lord with songs. [43] In their midst was a young man of great stature, taller than any of the others, and on the head of each of them he placed a crown, but he was more exalted than they. And I was held spellbound. [44] Then I asked an angel, "Who are these, my lord?" [45] He answered and said to me, "These are they who have put off mortal clothing and have put on the immortal, and have confessed the name of God. Now they are being crowned, and receive palms." [46] Then I said to the angel, "Who is that young man who is placing crowns on them and putting palms in their hands?" [47] He answered and said to me, "He is the Son of God, whom they confessed in the world." So I began to praise those who had stood valiantly for the name of the Lord.[d] [48] Then the angel said to me, "Go, tell my people how great and how many are the wonders of the Lord God that you have seen."

---

3 In the thirtieth year after the destruction of the city, I was in Babylon—I, Salathiel, who am also called Ezra. I was troubled as I

[a] Lat *hands will cover*
[b] Lat *Gehenna*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *I testify that my savior has been commissioned by the Lord*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *to praise and glorify the Lord*

25: *Nurse*, the church; cf. 2.15; Num 11.12. **26:** Jn 17.12; 18.9. **27–32:** The author emphasizes eschatology and resurrection. **31:** *Sleep*, i.e., death; Dan 12.2. *Hiding places*, cf. *1 Enoch* 22. **32:** See 2.15n.

2.33–41: Description of the glorified state to be enjoyed by God's newly chosen people. 33: *On Mount Horeb*, depicting Ezra as a second Moses; see 14.1–4,30,37–38; Ex 3.1. *Rejected me*, Acts 13.46. **34:** *Nations*, Gentiles; *Shepherd*, Christ; cf. 1 Pet 5.4. **35:** *Light will shine*, cf. Isa 9.2; 60.19–20; Rev 21.23–25; 22.5. **38:** *Sealed*, Rev 7.4. **39:** *Glorious garments*, *1 Enoch* 62.15–16. See also Bar 5.1–3; Rev 3.4–5. **40:** *Full number*, see 4.36–37; Rev 6.11; *Clothed in white*, Rev 3.4; 6.11; 7.14; *1 Enoch* 71.1. **41:** *1 Enoch* 47.4.

2.42–48: Ezra's vision of a great multitude (cf. Rev 7.9–17). **42:** *Mount Zion*, contrasted here with the *Mount Horeb* of 2.33. *Great multitude*, 13.5,12,35; Rev 7.9; 14.1; 2 Bar 40; *1 Enoch* 39.12–40.1. *Songs*, Rev 14.1–5; 15.2–4. **43:** *Young man*, a messianic figure, here referring to Jesus. See 13.5,35; Rev 14.1; *Gospel of Peter* 40; Hermas *Sim*. 9.6.1. *Crown*, 2 Tim 4.8; 1 Pet 5.4; Rev 2.10; 3.11. *Spellbound*, 13.11; Rev 17.6–7. **44–47:** Rev 7.13–14. **45:** *Put off mortal clothing*, 1 Cor 15.53–54; 2 Cor 5.2–4. *Palms*, Rev 7.9. **47:** *Son of God*, here a Christian designation, can also be Jewish (see 7.28–29; 13.32,37,52). *Confessed in the world*, signifying Christian martyrs.

lay on my bed, and my thoughts welled up in my heart, [2] because I saw the desolation of Zion and the wealth of those who lived in Babylon. [3] My spirit was greatly agitated, and I began to speak anxious words to the Most High, and said, [4] "O sovereign Lord, did you not speak at the beginning when you planted[a] the earth—and that without help—and commanded the dust[b] [5] and it gave you Adam, a lifeless body? Yet he was the creation of your hands, and you breathed into him the breath of life, and he was made alive in your presence. [6] And you led him into the garden that your right hand had planted before the earth appeared. [7] And you laid upon him one commandment of yours; but he transgressed it, and immediately you appointed death for him and for his descendants. From him there sprang nations and tribes, peoples and clans without number. [8] And every nation walked after its own will; they did ungodly things in your sight and rejected your commands, and you did not hinder them. [9] But again, in its time you brought the flood upon the inhabitants of the world and destroyed them. [10] And the same fate befell all of them: just as death came upon Adam, so the flood upon them. [11] But you left one of them, Noah with his household, and all the righteous who have descended from him.

[12] "When those who lived on earth began to multiply, they produced children and peoples and many nations, and again they began to be more ungodly than were their ancestors. [13] And when they were committing iniquity in your sight, you chose for yourself one of them, whose name was Abraham; [14] you loved him, and to him alone you revealed the end of the times, secretly by night. [15] You made an everlasting covenant with him, and promised him that you would never forsake his descendants; and you gave him Isaac, and to Isaac you gave Jacob and Esau. [16] You set apart Jacob for yourself, but Esau you rejected; and Jacob became a great multitude. [17] And when you led his descendants out of Egypt, you brought them to Mount Sinai. [18] You bent down the heavens and shook[c] the earth, and moved the world, and caused the depths to tremble, and troubled the times. [19] Your glory passed through the four gates of fire and earthquake and wind and ice, to give

[a] Other ancient authorities read *formed*
[b] Syr Ethiop: Lat *people* or *world*
[c] Syr Ethiop Arab 1 Georg: Lat *set fast*

Chapters 3–14 comprise a separate literary composition also known as 4 Ezra (see Introduction).

3.1–5.20: The first vision. 3.1–3: Introduction. 1: *The thirtieth year after the destruction* of Jerusalem by Nebuchadnezzar in 586 BCE (2 Kings 25.1–21) would be 556. The date specified may imply that the author was writing about 100 CE (i.e., thirty years after the fall of Jerusalem in 70 CE). The historical Ezra lived almost a century after the claimed setting of the book. *Babylon*, the historical Ezra was born in Babylon, then led a group of exiled Jews returning to Jerusalem about 458 BCE; see Ezra 7.7n. *Salathiel* is the Greek form of "Shealtiel" (Ezra 3.2; 5.2; Neh 12.1), appropriately meaning in Hebrew, "I asked God." The identification of Salathiel with Ezra has never been adequately explained. *On my bed*, cf. Dan 7.1. **2:** *Zion*, Jerusalem. **3:** *My spirit was greatly agitated*, the author immediately signals Ezra's emotional sensitivity.

3.4–36: Addressing God, the author raises perplexing questions. What is the origin of sin with its consequent misery? How can Israel's continuing affliction be reconciled with God's justice? Each of the first four visions opens with a long, reflective prayer of Ezra addressed to God (see 5.23–30; 6.38–59; 9.29–37). Here Ezra presents a historical review of God's interactions with humanity and with Israel. **4–5:** The creation of *Adam*, based on Gen 2.7, draws on the concept of creation by divine speech in Gen 1. **6–8:** Adam's disobedience (see Gen 2.16–17; 3.1–13) gives rise to sin and death for all humans. **7:** The words *immediately you appointed death* imply that Adam was not originally intended to be mortal (see Gen 3.22; cf. Wis 1.13–14; 2.23–24). *Death for him and his descendants,* see also 3.21,26; 4.30; 7.*116–118*. Similar ideas are expressed by Paul in Rom 5.12–21; 1 Cor 15.21–22. **8:** Gen 6.12. **9–11:** *The flood* (Gen 6.11–8.22). **12–15:** The choice of and covenant with Abraham (Gen 12.1; 17.5). **14:** *The end of the times* is not the topic of Gen 15. See, however, *The Apocalypse of Abraham*, roughly contemporary with chs 3–14. *By night*, Gen 15.5,12,17. **15–16:** *Jacob and Esau,* Gen 25.19–26. **17–19:** The Exodus and the giving of the law. **18:** Compare Ex 19.16–18; Ps 68.7–8. **19:** *Four gates*, according to certain early Jewish cosmological models, meteorological phenomena passed from heaven to earth through *gates* in the heavenly firmament, here enumerated as *four*. See *1 Enoch* 36.1,76; cf. Ps 78.23; 1 Kings 19.11–12. Here God's

the law to the descendants of Jacob, and your commandment to the posterity of Israel.

20 "Yet you did not take away their evil heart from them, so that your law might produce fruit in them. 21 For the first Adam, burdened with an evil heart, transgressed and was overcome, as were also all who were descended from him. 22 Thus the disease became permanent; the law was in the hearts of the people along with the evil root; but what was good departed, and the evil remained. 23 So the times passed and the years were completed, and you raised up for yourself a servant, named David. 24 You commanded him to build a city for your name, and there to offer you oblations from what is yours. 25 This was done for many years; but the inhabitants of the city transgressed, 26 in everything doing just as Adam and all his descendants had done, for they also had the evil heart. 27 So you handed over your city to your enemies.

28 "Then I said in my heart, Are the deeds of those who inhabit Babylon any better? Is that why it has gained dominion over Zion? 29 For when I came here I saw ungodly deeds without number, and my soul has seen many sinners during these thirty years.[a] And my heart failed me, 30 because I have seen how you endure those who sin, and have spared those who act wickedly, and have destroyed your people, and protected your enemies, 31 and have not shown to anyone how your way may be comprehended.[b] Are the deeds of Babylon better than those of Zion? 32 Or has another nation known you besides Israel? Or what tribes have so believed the covenants as these tribes of Jacob? 33 Yet their reward has not appeared and their labor has borne no fruit. For I have traveled widely among the nations and have seen that they abound in wealth, though they are unmindful of your commandments. 34 Now therefore weigh in a balance our iniquities and those of the inhabitants of the world; and it will be found which way the turn of the scale will incline. 35 When have the inhabitants of the earth not sinned in your sight? Or what nation has kept your commandments so well? 36 You may indeed find individuals who have kept your commandments, but nations you will not find."

4 Then the angel that had been sent to me, whose name was Uriel, answered 2 and said to me, "Your understanding has utterly failed regarding this world, and do you think you can comprehend the way of the Most High?" 3 Then I said, "Yes, my lord." And he replied to me, "I have been sent to show you three ways, and to put before you three problems. 4 If you can solve one of them for me, then I will show you the way you desire to see, and will teach you why the heart is evil."

5 I said, "Speak, my lord."

[a] Ethiop Arab 1 Arm: Lat Syr *in this thirtieth year*
[b] Syr; compare Ethiop: Lat *how this way should be forsaken*

glory descends through these *gates* to *give the law* on Mount Sinai. **20–27:** The tendency to sin is universal and permanent. **20:** *You did not take away*, here, as in 3.8 (*you did not hinder them*), Ezra implies that God bears some responsibility for human sinfulness. *Evil heart*, possibly, in the Hebrew (now lost), the evil "yetser," an inclination or tendency to sin (Gen 6.5; 2 Esd 4.30–31). The "yetser" can also be an inclination to good (Isa 26.3; 1 Chr 29.18). *Fruit*, see 8.6. **22:** Contrast 9.34–37. *Evil root*, cf. 8.53. **23–27:** *David*, see 1 Sam 16.1–13; 2 Sam 7.1–17; Ps 89.19–29. The *city* is Jerusalem. **27:** *Handed over your city*, the Babylonian conquest of Jerusalem in 586 BCE (2 Kings 25.1–21). **28–36:** Ezra questions whether the deeds of Babylon are any better than those of Israel. **28:** *Babylon*, here, as regularly in the book, stands for Rome (compare Rev 14.8). **30–31:** Here the author expresses the essence of the problem: God permits evildoers to continue in their wickedness, does not spare the suffering people of God, and does not let anyone understand why this should be so. **33–36:** Ezra claims that God's judgment regarding the present world order has been faulty. **34:** *Scale*, see Job 31.6; Dan 5.27; *1 Enoch* 4.1; 61.8. **36:** *Individuals* among the Gentiles.

4.1–25: Dialogic dispute between Ezra and the angel Uriel. The message is that God's ways are beyond human understanding. **1–12:** Three riddles illustrate the limitations of human knowledge. **1:** *Angel*, representing the viewpoint of God. The name *Uriel* in Hebrew means "God is my fire" (or "my light"). According to *1 Enoch* 20.2, Uriel is a watcher over both the world and Tartaros, the lowest part of hell (cf. 2 Pet 2.4, textual note *e*). **5:** The angel's method of instructing Ezra regularly employs analogies drawn from nature;

And he said to me, "Go, weigh for me the weight of fire, or measure for me a blast[a] of wind, or call back for me the day that is past."

[6] I answered and said, "Who of those that have been born can do that, that you should ask me about such things?"

[7] And he said to me, "If I had asked you, 'How many dwellings are in the heart of the sea, or how many streams are at the source of the deep, or how many streams are above the firmament, or which are the exits of Hades, or which are the entrances[b] of paradise?' [8] perhaps you would have said to me, 'I never went down into the deep, nor as yet into Hades, neither did I ever ascend into heaven.' [9] But now I have asked you only about fire and wind and the day—things that you have experienced and from which you cannot be separated, and you have given me no answer about them." [10] He said to me, "You cannot understand the things with which you have grown up; [11] how then can your mind comprehend the way of the Most High? And how can one who is already worn out[c] by the corrupt world understand incorruption?"[d] When I heard this, I fell on my face[e] [12] and said to him, "It would have been better for us not to be here than to come here and live in ungodliness, and to suffer and not understand why."

[13] He answered me and said, "I went into a forest of trees of the plain, and they made a plan [14] and said, 'Come, let us go and make war against the sea, so that it may recede before us and so that we may make for ourselves more forests.' [15] In like manner the waves of the sea also made a plan and said, 'Come, let us go up and subdue the forest of the plain so that there also we may gain more territory for ourselves.' [16] But the plan of the forest was in vain, for the fire came and consumed it; [17] likewise also the plan of the waves of the sea was in vain,[f] for the sand stood firm and blocked it. [18] If now you were a judge between them, which would you undertake to justify, and which to condemn?"

[19] I answered and said, "Each made a foolish plan, for the land has been assigned to the forest, and the locale of the sea a place to carry its waves."

[20] He answered me and said, "You have judged rightly, but why have you not judged so in your own case? [21] For as the land has been assigned to the forest and the sea to its waves, so also those who inhabit the earth can understand only what is on the earth, and he who is[g] above the heavens can understand what is above the height of the heavens."

[22] Then I answered and said, "I implore you, my lord, why[h] have I been endowed with the power of understanding? [23] For I did not wish to inquire about the ways above, but about those things that we daily experience: why Israel has been given over to the Gentiles in disgrace; why the people whom you loved has been given over to godless tribes, and the law of our ancestors has been brought to destruction and the written covenants no longer exist. [24] We pass from the world like locusts, and our life is like a mist,[i] and we are not worthy to obtain mercy. [25] But what will he do for his[j] name that is invoked over us? It is about these things that I have asked."

[a] Syr Ethiop Arab 1 Arab 2 Georg *a measure*
[b] Syr Compare Ethiop Arab 2 Arm: Lat lacks *of Hades, or which are the entrances*
[c] Meaning of Lat uncertain
[d] Syr Ethiop *the way of the incorruptible?*
[e] Syr Ethiop Arab 1: Meaning of Lat uncertain
[f] Lat lacks *was in vain*
[g] Or *those who are*
[h] Syr Ethiop Arm: Meaning of Lat uncertain
[i] Syr Ethiop Arab Georg: Lat *a trembling*
[j] Ethiop adds *holy*

see 4.13–21,28–32,40–42,48–50; 5.36–37,46–55. **7:** *How many dwellings . . . ?* In many apocalypses, these types of questions are in fact issues of proper concern. **8:** See Deut 30.11–13. *Hades*, the underworld. **10–11:** See Job 38–41; Jn 3.12. **12:** For the seer, to live without understanding of life's meaning is intolerable. **13–21:** Parable of the conflict between the forest and the sea. **18–19:** As a skillful teacher, the angel leads Ezra to answer his own question; see also 5.36–40, 46–47; 7.*52–58*. **21:** Isa 55.8–9. **22–25:** Ezra protests that he is inquiring only about the meaning of earthly, historical happenings, not about cosmic events. **24:** Ps 109.23; Wis 2.4.

4.26–52: Dialogic prediction regarding the future. 26–32: The angel's concern shifts to the end of the present, evil age and the distinction between this age and the next. This section marks the beginning of the

[26] He answered me and said, "If you are alive, you will see, and if you live long,[a] you will often marvel, because the age is hurrying swiftly to its end. [27] It will not be able to bring the things that have been promised to the righteous in their appointed times, because this age is full of sadness and infirmities. [28] For the evil about which[b] you ask me has been sown, but the harvest of it has not yet come. [29] If therefore that which has been sown is not reaped, and if the place where the evil has been sown does not pass away, the field where the good has been sown will not come. [30] For a grain of evil seed was sown in Adam's heart from the beginning, and how much ungodliness it has produced until now—and will produce until the time of threshing comes! [31] Consider now for yourself how much fruit of ungodliness a grain of evil seed has produced. [32] When heads of grain without number are sown, how great a threshing floor they will fill!"

[33] Then I answered and said, "How long?[b] When will these things be? Why are our years few and evil?" [34] He answered me and said, "Do not be in a greater hurry than the Most High. You, indeed, are in a hurry for yourself,[c] but the Highest is in a hurry on behalf of many. [35] Did not the souls of the righteous in their chambers ask about these matters, saying, 'How long are we to remain here?[d] And when will the harvest of our reward come?' [36] And the archangel Jeremiel answered and said, 'When the number of those like yourselves is completed;[e] for he has weighed the age in the balance, [37] and measured the times by measure, and numbered the times by number; and he will not move or arouse them until that measure is fulfilled.'"

[38] Then I answered and said, "But, O sovereign Lord, all of us also are full of ungodliness. [39] It is perhaps on account of us that the time of threshing is delayed for the righteous—on account of the sins of those who inhabit the earth."

[40] He answered me and said, "Go and ask a pregnant woman whether, when her nine months have been completed, her womb can keep the fetus within her any longer."

[41] And I said, "No, lord, it cannot."

He said to me, "In Hades the chambers of the souls are like the womb. [42] For just as a woman who is in labor makes haste to escape the pangs of birth, so also do these places hasten to give back those things that were committed to them from the beginning. [43] Then the things that you desire to see will be disclosed to you."

[44] I answered and said, "If I have found favor in your sight, and if it is possible, and if I am worthy, [45] show me this also: whether more time is to come than has passed, or whether for us the greater part has gone by. [46] For I know what has gone by, but I do not know what is to come."

[47] And he said to me, "Stand at my right side, and I will show you the interpretation of a parable."

[48] So I stood and looked, and lo, a flaming furnace passed by before me, and when the

[a] Syr: Lat *live*
[b] Syr Ethiop: Meaning of Lat uncertain
[c] Syr Ethiop Arab Arm: Meaning of Lat uncertain
[d] Syr Ethiop Arab 2 Georg: Lat *How long do I hope thus?*
[e] Syr Ethiop Arab 2: Lat *number of seeds is completed for you*

angel's esoteric eschatological teaching, the main focus of 4 Ezra. **28–32:** *Harvest*, the time of judgment. Cf. Mt 3.12; 13.24–30. **29:** Cf. the fourth vision, 9.26–10.59. **30:** The *grain of evil seed*, or evil "yetser" (see 3.20n.) *sown in Adam's heart*, introduced in 3.7–27, must ripen and be harvested before the coming, righteous age can appear. **33–52:** Ezra's questions concerning the time of the end. **33:** *How long?*, the question is a prophetic and apocalyptic commonplace; see 4.35; 6.59; Isa 6.11; Dan 8.13; 12.6; Zech 1.12; Rev 6.10. Ezra's concerns, like the angel's, also move to the end of the age. **34:** An exhortation to patience in the face of coming judgment. **35–37:** This passage is similar to Rev 6.9–11. **35:** *Souls of the righteous in their chambers*, according to Jewish thought of the time, the souls of the righteous dead are placed in "chambers," or "treasuries," to await the last judgment (see 2.31; 4.41; 7.32,*80,95,101*; *1 Enoch* 22; *2 Apoc. Bar*. 21.23). **36:** *Archangel Jeremiel*, see *1 Enoch* 20.8, *Apoc. Zeph*. 6.11–17; *2 Bar.* 53–74. In *1 Enoch* 20.8 the angel, called Remiel, is "in charge of those who rise." *When the number . . . is completed*, cf. 2.40–41; Rev 6.11. **36–37:** *Weighed . . . measured . . . numbered*, God has determined the times and periods of history (see Sir 36.10). **40–43:** The analogy of *a woman who is in labor* explains the inevitability of the end (cf. 5.46–55; 16.38–39; 1 Thess 5.3). **41:** *Hades*, the underworld. *Chambers*, see v. 35n. **44–50:** The seer

flame had gone by I looked, and lo, the smoke remained. 49 And after this a cloud full of water passed before me and poured down a heavy and violent rain, and when the violent rainstorm had passed, drops still remained in the cloud.[a]

50 He said to me, "Consider it for yourself; for just as the rain is more than the drops, and the fire is greater than the smoke, so the quantity that passed was far greater; but drops and smoke remained."

51 Then I prayed and said, "Do you think that I shall live until those days? Or who will be alive in those days?"

52 He answered me and said, "Concerning the signs about which you ask me, I can tell you in part; but I was not sent to tell you concerning your life, for I do not know.

5 "Now concerning the signs: lo, the days are coming when those who inhabit the earth shall be seized with great terror,[b] and the way of truth shall be hidden, and the land shall be barren of faith. 2 Unrighteousness shall be increased beyond what you yourself see, and beyond what you heard of formerly. 3 And the land that you now see ruling shall be a trackless waste, and people shall see it desolate. 4 But if the Most High grants that you live, you shall see it thrown into confusion after the third period;[c]
and the sun shall suddenly begin to shine at night,
and the moon during the day.
5 Blood shall drip from wood,
and the stone shall utter its voice;
the peoples shall be troubled,
and the stars shall fall.[d]
6 And one shall reign whom those who inhabit the earth do not expect, and the birds shall fly away together; 7 and the Dead Sea[e] shall cast up fish; and one whom the many do not know shall make his voice heard by night, and all shall hear his voice.[f] 8 There shall be chaos also in many places, fire shall often break out, the wild animals shall roam beyond their haunts, and menstruous women shall bring forth monsters. 9 Salt waters shall be found in the sweet, and all friends shall conquer one another; then shall reason hide itself, and wisdom shall withdraw into its chamber, 10 and it shall be sought by many but shall not be found, and unrighteousness and unrestraint shall increase on earth. 11 One country shall ask its neighbor, 'Has righteousness, or anyone who does right, passed through you?' And it will answer, 'No.' 12 At that time people shall hope but not obtain; they shall labor, but their ways shall not prosper. 13 These are the signs that I am permitted to tell you, and if you pray again, and weep as you do now, and fast for seven days, you shall hear yet greater things than these."

14 Then I woke up, and my body shuddered violently, and my soul was so troubled that it fainted. 15 But the angel who had come and talked with me held me and strengthened me and set me on my feet.

[a] Lat *in it*
[b] Syr Ethiop: Meaning of Lat uncertain
[c] Literally *after the third*; Ethiop *after three months*; Arm *after the third vision*; Georg *after the third day*
[d] Ethiop Compare Syr and Arab: Meaning of Lat uncertain
[e] Lat *Sea of Sodom*
[f] Cn: Lat *fish; and it shall make its voice heard by night, which the many have not known, but all shall hear its voice.*

asks what proportion of time remains; he is told by a parable that the end is near (see 5.50–55; 14.10–12). **48:** *Flaming furnace . . . smoke*, see also Gen 15.17; Zech 12.6.

5.1–13: Direct prediction of the future by the angel, who uses classical apocalyptic "signs" to describe the end of this age (cf. the "synoptic apocalypse" in Mt 24.4–31; Mk 13.5–27; Lk 21.8–28). Each of the first three visions contains similar lists of apocalyptic signs (see 6.11–29; 7.26–44; 8.63–9.13). **2:** Mt 24.12. **3:** Rome will be destroyed. **4–9:** The natural order, mirroring the moral order, will be confused and overturned (cf. Joel 2.10; Mt 24.3–35; Mk 13.3–31; Lk 21.7–28). **4:** The reference to *the third period* is cryptic (cf. 14.10–12). **5:** *The stone shall utter its voice*, Hab 2.11; Lk 19.40. **7:** Cf. Ezek 47.8–10. **8a:** Syriac, "There shall be chasms also in many places" (cf. Zech 14.4). **8:** *Menstruous women*, cf. 6.21; Mt 24.19; Mk 13.17. **9–11:** *Wisdom*, personified as in the wisdom literature, *shall withdraw*, another classic apocalyptic theme (cf. Isa 59.14–15; 2 *Apoc. Bar*. 48.36). **13:** For the author, fasting, prayer, and mourning prepared one to receive a divine revelation; he refers to four such preparatory periods of seven days (5.20; 6.35; 9.23–25; 12.51).

5.14–20: Transition to the second vision. 14: *Then I woke up*, from the dream vision. *My soul . . . fainted*, cf.

16 Now on the second night Phaltiel, a chief
of the people, came to me and said, "Where
have you been? And why is your face sad?
17 Or do you not know that Israel has been
entrusted to you in the land of their exile?
18 Rise therefore and eat some bread, and do
not forsake us, like a shepherd who leaves the
flock in the power of savage wolves."
19 Then I said to him, "Go away from me
and do not come near me for seven days;
then you may come to me."
He heard what I said and left me. 20 So I
fasted seven days, mourning and weeping, as
the angel Uriel had commanded me.
21 After seven days the thoughts of my
heart were very grievous to me again. 22 Then
my soul recovered the spirit of understanding,
and I began once more to speak words in the
presence of the Most High. 23 I said, "O sover-
eign Lord, from every forest of the earth and
from all its trees you have chosen one vine,
24 and from all the lands of the world you have
chosen for yourself one region,[a] and from all
the flowers of the world you have chosen for
yourself one lily, 25 and from all the depths of
the sea you have filled for yourself one river,
and from all the cities that have been built
you have consecrated Zion for yourself, 26 and
from all the birds that have been created you
have named for yourself one dove, and from
all the flocks that have been made you have
provided for yourself one sheep, 27 and from
all the multitude of peoples you have gotten
for yourself one people; and to this people,
whom you have loved, you have given the law
that is approved by all. 28 And now, O Lord,
why have you handed the one over to the
many, and dishonored[b] the one root beyond
the others, and scattered your only one
among the many? 29 And those who opposed
your promises have trampled on those who
believed your covenants. 30 If you really hate
your people, they should be punished at your
own hands."
31 When I had spoken these words, the
angel who had come to me on a previous
night was sent to me. 32 He said to me, "Listen
to me, and I will instruct you; pay attention to
me, and I will tell you more."
33 Then I said, "Speak, my lord." And he
said to me, "Are you greatly disturbed in mind
over Israel? Or do you love him more than his
Maker does?"
34 I said, "No, my lord, but because of my
grief I have spoken; for every hour I suffer
agonies of heart, while I strive to understand
the way of the Most High and to search out
some part of his judgment."
35 He said to me, "You cannot." And I said,
"Why not, my lord? Why then was I born?
Or why did not my mother's womb become
my grave, so that I would not see the travail
of Jacob and the exhaustion of the people of
Israel?"
36 He said to me, "Count up for me those
who have not yet come, and gather for me the
scattered raindrops, and make the withered
flowers bloom again for me; 37 open for me
the closed chambers, and bring out for me
the winds shut up in them, or show me the
picture of a voice; and then I will explain to
you the travail that you ask to understand."[c]

[a] Ethiop: Lat *pit*
[b] Syr Ethiop Arab: Lat *prepared*
[c] Lat *see*

Dan 7.28; 8.27; 10.9–10,17b–19. **16–19:** *Phaltiel, a chief of the people*, named only here, tries unsuccessfully to dissuade Ezra from his solitary visionary quest. See also 12.40–51.

5.21–6.34: The second vision. 5.21–22: Introduction; cf. 3.1–3.

5.23–30: Addressing God, the seer reiterates his complaints of divine injustice in dealing with Israel. 23–28: In this series of comparisons, most of the *chosen* elements are biblical figures representing Israel: the *vine* (v. 23), Ps 80.8–15; Jer 2.21; the *lily* (v. 24), Song 2.2 (interpreted allegorically); Hos 14.5; the *river* (v. 25), Isa 8.6; the city of *Zion* (v. 25), Ps 132.13; the *dove* (v. 26), Ps 74.19; the *sheep* (v. 26), Ps 79.13; Isa 53.7; the *root* (v. 28), *1 Enoch* 93.8. The author has a penchant for compiling similar, long lists of synonymous or analogous elements (see 5.36–37; 6.1–5; 8.52–54; 10.21–23). **27:** The claim that God has *loved* Israel (see Deut 7.8) is contrasted with the idea of *hate* in v. 30. **30:** Ezra wishes that punishment would come directly from God, not human agents; see also 2 Sam 24.14; Sir 2.18.

5.31–40: Dialogic dispute with the angel. The issue of contention is the same as in the first vision. **31:** *The angel who had come to me*, see 4.1n. **33:** The angel answers Ezra's concern for God's *love* for Israel. **35:** Job 3.11;

38 I said, "O sovereign Lord, who is able to
know these things except him whose dwell-
ing is not with mortals? 39 As for me, I am
without wisdom, and how can I speak con-
cerning the things that you have asked me?"
40 He said to me, "Just as you cannot do
one of the things that were mentioned, so
you cannot discover my judgment, or the
goal of the love that I have promised to my
people."
41 I said, "Yet, O Lord, you have charge of
those who are alive at the end, but what will
those do who lived before me, or we, our-
selves, or those who come after us?"
42 He said to me, "I shall liken my judgment
to a circle;[a] just as for those who are last there
is no slowness, so for those who are first
there is no haste."
43 Then I answered and said, "Could you
not have created at one time those who have
been and those who are and those who will
be, so that you might show your judgment
the sooner?"
44 He replied to me and said, "The creation
cannot move faster than the Creator, nor can
the world hold at one time those who have
been created in it."
45 I said, "How have you said to your ser-
vant that you[b] will certainly give life at one
time to your creation? If therefore all crea-
tures will live at one time[c] and the creation
will sustain them, it might even now be able
to support all of them present at one time."
46 He said to me, "Ask a woman's womb,
and say to it, 'If you bear ten[d] children, why
one after another?' Request it therefore to
produce ten at one time."
47 I said, "Of course it cannot, but only
each in its own time."
48 He said to me, "Even so I have given
the womb of the earth to those who from
time to time are sown in it. 49 For as an infant
does not bring forth, and a woman who has
become old does not bring forth any longer,
so I have made the same rule for the world
that I created."
50 Then I inquired and said, "Since you
have now given me the opportunity, let me
speak before you. Is our mother, of whom
you have told me, still young? Or is she now
approaching old age?"
51 He replied to me, "Ask a woman who
bears children, and she will tell you. 52 Say to
her, 'Why are those whom you have borne
recently not like those whom you bore before,
but smaller in stature?' 53 And she herself will
answer you, 'Those born in the strength of
youth are different from those born during
the time of old age, when the womb is failing.'
54 Therefore you also should consider that you
and your contemporaries are smaller in stat-
ure than those who were before you, 55 and
those who come after you will be smaller than
you, as born of a creation that already is aging
and passing the strength of youth."
56 I said, "I implore you, O Lord, if I have
found favor in your sight, show your servant
through whom you will visit your creation."

6 He said to me, "At the beginning of the
circle of the earth, before[e] the portals
of the world were in place, and before the

[a] Or *crown*
[b] Syr Ethiop Arab 1: Meaning of Lat uncertain
[c] Lat lacks *If . . . one time*
[d] Syr Ethiop Arab 2 Arm: Meaning of Lat uncertain
[e] Meaning of Lat uncertain: Compare Syr *The beginning by the hand of humankind, but the end by my own hands. For as before the land of the world existed there, and before*; Ethiop: *At first by the Son of Man, and afterwards I myself. For before the earth and the lands were created, and before*

10.18–19; Jer 20.17. **36–40:** As in the first vision (4.5), the angel poses unanswerable riddles from nature. **40:** *My . . . I*, the angel speaks in God's name.

5.41–6.10: Dialogic prediction concerning the future. 5.41–49: Ezra's concern is for fair treatment of all at the judgment. **41:** *You have charge*, Ezra immediately resumes his questioning about the details of the end. The problem of the faithful who die before the end time was also an issue in early Christianity (1 Thess 4.13–15). **45:** *How have you said . . . ?* Ezra points out an apparent contradiction in the logic: *All . . . will live at one time*, namely at the resurrection. **48:** *The womb of the earth*, see Job 1.21. **50–55:** As in the first vision (4.44–46), Ezra asks about the timing of the end. **54:** Ezra's generation being *smaller in stature* shows that the end is near. Various traditions refer to an ancient race of giants (Gen 6.4; Num 13.33; Deut 3.11; *1 Enoch* 6–11). **5.56–6.6:** To Ezra's question concerning an eschatological agent, the angel responds that God alone will act. **6.1:** *Portals of the*

assembled winds blew, [2] and before the rumblings of thunder sounded, and before the flashes of lightning shone, and before the foundations of paradise were laid, [3] and before the beautiful flowers were seen, and before the powers of movements[a] were established, and before the innumerable hosts of angels were gathered together, [4] and before the heights of the air were lifted up, and before the measures of the firmaments were named, and before the footstool of Zion was established, [5] and before the present years were reckoned and before the imaginations of those who now sin were estranged, and before those who stored up treasures of faith were sealed— [6] then I planned these things, and they were made through me alone and not through another; just as the end shall come through me alone and not through another."

[7] I answered and said, "What will be the dividing of the times? Or when will be the end of the first age and the beginning of the age that follows?"

[8] He said to me, "From Abraham to Isaac,[b] because from him were born Jacob and Esau, for Jacob's hand held Esau's heel from the beginning. [9] Now Esau is the end of this age, and Jacob is the beginning of the age that follows. [10] The beginning of a person is the hand, and the end of a person is the heel;[c] seek for nothing else, Ezra, between the heel and the hand, Ezra!"

[11] I answered and said, "O sovereign Lord, if I have found favor in your sight, [12] show your servant the last of your signs of which you showed me a part on a previous night."

[13] He answered and said to me, "Rise to your feet and you will hear a full, resounding voice. [14] And if the place where you are standing is greatly shaken [15] while the voice is speaking, do not be terrified; because the word concerns the end, and the foundations of the earth will understand [16] that the speech concerns them. They will tremble and be shaken, for they know that their end must be changed."

[17] When I heard this, I got to my feet and listened; a voice was speaking, and its sound was like the sound of mighty[d] waters. [18] It said, "The days are coming when I draw near to visit the inhabitants of the earth, [19] and when I require from the doers of iniquity the penalty of their iniquity, and when the humiliation of Zion is complete. [20] When the seal is placed upon the age that is about to pass away, then I will show these signs: the books shall be opened before the face of the firmament, and all shall see my judgment[e] together. [21] Children a year old shall speak with their voices, and pregnant women shall give birth to premature children at three and four months, and these shall live and leap about. [22] Sown places shall suddenly appear unsown, and full storehouses shall suddenly be found to be empty; [23] the trumpet shall sound aloud, and when all hear it, they shall suddenly be terrified. [24] At that time friends shall make war on friends like enemies, the earth and those who inhabit it shall be terrified, and the springs of the fountains shall stand still, so that for three hours they shall not flow.

[25] "It shall be that whoever remains after all that I have foretold to you shall be saved

[a] Or *earthquakes*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *to Abraham*
[c] Syr: Meaning of Lat uncertain
[d] Lat *many*
[e] Syr: Lat lacks *my judgment*

world, here, as elsewhere, the author shows a fascination with natural phenomena and their origins (vv. 1–5). **4:** *Footstool*, see Pss 99.5; 132.7. **7–10:** The division of the ages. In allegorical language the seer is told that the present corrupt age (symbolized by *Esau*) will be followed immediately, without a break, by the glorious age to come (symbolized by *Jacob*). **8:** *Heel*, see Gen 25.26.

6.11–29: Direct prediction of the future, this time in response to Ezra's query (6.11–12). As in 5.1–13, the author uses classical apocalyptic signs. **14–16:** God's appearance causes the very foundations of the earth to shake; see Joel 3.16. **17:** *A voice . . . like the sound of mighty waters* signifies direct address by God. The image is developed from the vision of Ezekiel (Ezek 1.24–25). Compare Rev 1.15; 14.2; 19.6. **18:** *Visit*, bring judgment. **20:** *The books shall be opened*, the heavenly books in which are written the deeds of humankind (Dan 7.10; 12.1; Mal 3.16; cf. Ex 32.32; Ps 69.28). The motif is also common in Christian writings roughly contemporary with chs 3–14 (Lk 10.20; Heb 12.23; Rev 20.12). **23:** *The trumpet shall sound*, a common eschatological motif (1 Cor 15.52; 1 Thess

and shall see my salvation and the end of my world. 26 And they shall see those who were taken up, who from their birth have not tasted death; and the heart of the earth's[a] inhabitants shall be changed and converted to a different spirit. 27 For evil shall be blotted out, and deceit shall be quenched; 28 faithfulness shall flourish, and corruption shall be overcome, and the truth, which has been so long without fruit, shall be revealed."

29 While he spoke to me, little by little the place where I was standing began to rock to and fro.[b] 30 And he said to me, "I have come to show you these things this night.[c] 31 If therefore you will pray again and fast again for seven days, I will again declare to you greater things than these,[d] 32 because your voice has surely been heard by the Most High; for the Mighty One has seen your uprightness and has also observed the purity that you have maintained from your youth. 33 Therefore he sent me to show you all these things, and to say to you: 'Believe and do not be afraid! 34 Do not be quick to think vain thoughts concerning the former times; then you will not act hastily in the last times.'"

35 Now after this I wept again and fasted seven days in the same way as before, in order to complete the three weeks that had been prescribed for me. 36 Then on the eighth night my heart was troubled within me again, and I began to speak in the presence of the Most High. 37 My spirit was greatly aroused, and my soul was in distress.

38 I said, "O Lord, you spoke at the beginning of creation, and said on the first day, 'Let heaven and earth be made,' and your word accomplished the work. 39 Then the spirit was blowing, and darkness and silence embraced everything; the sound of human voices was not yet there.[e] 40 Then you commanded a ray of light to be brought out from your storechambers, so that your works could be seen.

41 "Again, on the second day, you created the spirit of the firmament, and commanded it to divide and separate the waters, so that one part might move upward and the other part remain beneath.

42 "On the third day you commanded the waters to be gathered together in a seventh part of the earth; six parts you dried up and kept so that some of them might be planted and cultivated and be of service before you. 43 For your word went forth, and at once the work was done. 44 Immediately fruit came forth in endless abundance and of varied appeal to the taste, and flowers of inimitable color, and odors of inexpressible fragrance. These were made on the third day.

45 "On the fourth day you commanded the brightness of the sun, the light of the moon, and the arrangement of the stars to come into being; 46 and you commanded them to serve humankind, about to be formed.

47 "On the fifth day you commanded the seventh part, where the water had been gathered together, to bring forth living creatures, birds, and fishes; and so it was done. 48 The dumb and lifeless water produced living creatures, as it was commanded, so that therefore the nations might declare your wondrous works.

[a] Syr Compare Ethiop Arab 1 Arm: Lat lacks *earth's*
[b] Syr Ethiop Compare Arab Arm: Meaning of Lat uncertain
[c] Syr Compare Ethiop: Meaning of Lat uncertain
[d] Syr Ethiop Arab 1 Arm: Lat adds *by day*
[e] Syr Ethiop: Lat *was not yet from you*

4.16). **25:** *See my salvation*, see 7.27; 9.8; 13.48,50; Ps 98.3; Isa 52.10; Lk 2.30. **26:** *Those who were taken up*, such as Enoch (Gen 5.24; Sir 44.16) and Elijah (2 Kings 2.11–12); cf. 8.19; 14.9. **26–28:** The transition from evil to truth.

6.30–34: The conclusion of the vision (compare 5.14–20). **34:** The seer is cautioned against being presumptuous.

6.35–9.25: The third vision. 6.35–7.44: The first section of the third vision. 6.35–37: Introduction (cf. 3.1–3 and 5.21–22). **35:** *I . . . fasted seven days*, see 5.13n. *The three weeks* (cf. Dan 10.2–3), so far only two fasts of seven days have been mentioned (here and at 5.20). The author may be referring to this as Ezra's third vision.

6.38–59: Addressing God, the seer recounts God's work in six days of creation. If the world was created for Israel (v. 55), why has the nation not possessed its inheritance? This is similar in theme and content to the addresses in 3.4–36 and 5.23–30. **38–54:** A summary of creation, roughly following Gen 1. **42:** *A seventh part . . . six parts*, although there is no exact parallel to this division in Genesis or other literature, explorers like Christopher

49 "Then you kept in existence two living creatures;[a] the one you called Behemoth[b] and
the name of the other Leviathan. 50 And you
separated one from the other, for the seventh
part where the water had been gathered
together could not hold them both. 51 And
you gave Behemoth[b] one of the parts that
had been dried up on the third day, to live in
it, where there are a thousand mountains;
52 but to Leviathan you gave the seventh part,
the watery part; and you have kept them to
be eaten by whom you wish, and when you
wish.

53 "On the sixth day you commanded the
earth to bring forth before you cattle, wild an-
imals, and creeping things; 54 and over these
you placed Adam, as ruler over all the works
that you had made; and from him we have all
come, the people whom you have chosen.

55 "All this I have spoken before you,
O Lord, because you have said that it was
for us that you created this world.[c] 56 As for
the other nations that have descended from
Adam, you have said that they are nothing,
and that they are like spittle, and you have
compared their abundance to a drop from
a bucket. 57 And now, O Lord, these nations,
which are reputed to be as nothing, domineer
over us and devour us. 58 But we your people,
whom you have called your firstborn, only
begotten, zealous for you,[d] and most dear,
have been given into their hands. 59 If the
world has indeed been created for us, why do
we not possess our world as an inheritance?
How long will this be so?"

7 When I had finished speaking these
words, the angel who had been sent to me
on the former nights was sent to me again.
2 He said to me, "Rise, Ezra, and listen to the
words that I have come to speak to you."

3 I said, "Speak, my lord." And he said to
me, "There is a sea set in a wide expanse so
that it is deep and vast, 4 but it has an en-
trance set in a narrow place, so that it is like
a river. 5 If there are those who wish to reach
the sea, to look at it or to navigate it, how can
they come to the broad part unless they pass
through the narrow part? 6 Another example:
There is a city built and set on a plain, and it
is full of all good things; 7 but the entrance to
it is narrow and set in a precipitous place, so
that there is fire on the right hand and deep
water on the left. 8 There is only one path
lying between them, that is, between the fire
and the water, so that only one person can
walk on the path. 9 If now the city is given
to someone as an inheritance, how will the
heir receive the inheritance unless by passing
through the appointed danger?"

10 I said, "That is right, lord." He said to
me, "So also is Israel's portion. 11 For I made
the world for their sake, and when Adam
transgressed my statutes, what had been
made was judged. 12 And so the entrances of
this world were made narrow and sorrow-
ful and toilsome; they are few and evil, full
of dangers and involved in great hardships.
13 But the entrances of the greater world are
broad and safe, and yield the fruit of im-
mortality. 14 Therefore unless the living pass
through the difficult and futile experiences,
they can never receive those things that have
been reserved for them. 15 Now therefore why
are you disturbed, seeing that you are to per-
ish? Why are you moved, seeing that you are
mortal? 16 Why have you not considered in
your mind what is to come, rather than what
is now present?"

[a] Syr Ethiop: Lat *two souls*
[b] Other Lat authorities read *Enoch*
[c] Syr Ethiop Arab 2: Lat *the firstborn world* Compare Arab 1 *first world*
[d] Meaning of Lat uncertain

Columbus took this verse as an indicator of the world's layout. **49–52:** The land creature *Behemoth* and the sea creature *Leviathan* are two primeval monsters frequently found in Israelite mythology (see Job 7.12; 26.12–13; Pss 74.12–15; 89.10–11; Isa 30.7; 51.9–10). Their eschatological function is to serve as food for the elect (*2 Apoc. Bar.* 29.4; *1 Enoch* 60.7–10). **55:** *For us* (Israel) *that you created this world*, a notion developed from such passages as Ex 4.22; Deut 10.15; 14.2. See 7.11. **56:** *A drop from a bucket*, Isa 40.15 (note especially the Septuagint version).

7.1–25: Dispute between Ezra and the angel. It is necessary first to undergo the trials of this world before one can receive the rewards of the next. **1:** *The former nights*, 4.1; 5.31. **3–9:** The angel tells two parables, of a sea and a city, to illustrate his point. **3:** *Sea*, the world to come. **4:** *Narrow place,* see also Mt 7.13–14; Lk 13.24. **11:** By implication, the *world* was created entirely good for Israel's *sake, and when Adam transgressed*, that inheritance

17 Then I answered and said, "O sovereign Lord, you have ordained in your law that the righteous shall inherit these things, but that the ungodly shall perish. 18 The righteous, therefore, can endure difficult circumstances while hoping for easier ones; but those who have done wickedly have suffered the difficult circumstances and will never see the easier ones."

19 He said to me, "You are not a better judge than the Lord,[a] or wiser than the Most High! 20 Let many perish who are now living, rather than that the law of God that is set before them be disregarded! 21 For the Lord[b] strictly commanded those who came into the world, when they came, what they should do to live, and what they should observe to avoid punishment. 22 Nevertheless they were not obedient, and spoke against him;

they devised for themselves vain thoughts,
23 and proposed to themselves wicked frauds;
they even declared that the Most High does not exist,
and they ignored his ways.
24 They scorned his law,
and denied his covenants;
they have been unfaithful to his statutes,
and have not performed his works.

25 That is the reason, Ezra, that empty things are for the empty, and full things are for the full.

26 "For indeed the time will come, when the signs that I have foretold to you will come to pass, that the city that now is not seen shall appear,[c] and the land that now is hidden shall be disclosed. 27 Everyone who has been delivered from the evils that I have foretold shall see my wonders. 28 For my son the Messiah[d] shall be revealed with those who are with him, and those who remain shall rejoice four hundred years. 29 After those years my son the Messiah shall die, and all who draw human breath.[e] 30 Then the world shall be turned back to primeval silence for seven days, as it was at the first beginnings, so that no one shall be left. 31 After seven days the world that is not yet awake shall be roused, and that which is corruptible shall perish. 32 The earth shall give up those who are asleep in it, and the dust those who rest there in silence; and the chambers shall give up the souls that have been committed to them. 33 The Most High shall be revealed on the seat of judgment, and compassion shall pass away, and patience shall be withdrawn.[f] 34 Only judgment shall remain, truth shall stand, and faithfulness shall grow strong. 35 Recompense shall follow, and the reward shall be manifested; righteous deeds shall awake, and unrighteous deeds shall not sleep.[g] *36* The pit[h] of torment shall appear,

[a] Other ancient authorities read *God*; Ethiop Georg *the only One*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *God*
[c] Arm: Lat Syr *that the bride shall appear, even the city appearing*
[d] Syr Arab 1: Ethiop *my Messiah*; Arab 2 *the Messiah*; Arm *the Messiah of God*; Lat *my son Jesus*
[e] Arm *all who have continued in faith and in patience*
[f] Lat *shall gather together*
[g] The passage from verse *36* to verse *105*, formerly missing, has been restored to the text
[h] Syr Ethiop: Lat *place*

was despoiled (see 3.7,21). **12–13:** *This world . . . evil* is contrasted with the *greater world* to come. **17:** Cf. Deut 8.1; Ps 37.9. **17–18:** The seer exhibits a heartfelt, characteristic concern for *the ungodly* but is told that their punishment is deserved (vv. 19–25). **21:** *Commanded,* Deut 30:15–19.

7.26–44: Direct prediction of the future by the angel, again using classical apocalyptic *signs* (cf. 5.1–13; 6.11–29). In this section the focus is on God's judgment (cf. Mt 25.31–46). **26:** *The city*, the heavenly Jerusalem; see 10.25–54. **28:** *My son the Messiah*, a term used often in this book (see 13.32,37,52; 14.9). The precise connection between this term and Christian notions of Jesus "the Messiah" as "son of God" is uncertain, and in any event is indirect. *Those who are with him*, 13.52; 14.9. **29:** *My son the Messiah shall die*, this idea is unparalleled in Jewish sources. **30:** *Primeval silence*, as before creation. See 6.39. **32:** Dan 12.2. *Chambers*, see 4.35n. Resurrection precedes the day of judgment. **33–34:** On the day of judgment, *only judgment shall remain*; mercy is put aside (see *7.104–5*). ***36–105:*** These verses are lacking from the standard editions of the Latin Vulgate, and from the King James Version. They are present in the Syriac, Ethiopic, Arabic, and Armenian versions, and in seven Latin manuscripts. The section was probably deliberately cut out of an ancestor of most surviving Latin manuscripts for dogmatic reasons, because the passage contains an emphatic denial of the value of prayers for the dead (v. 105). ***36–38:*** There exist only two possible destinations for those who are judged: a place of reward and a place

and opposite it shall be the place of rest; and the furnace of hell[a] shall be disclosed, and opposite it the paradise of delight. *37* Then the Most High will say to the nations that have been raised from the dead, 'Look now, and understand whom you have denied, whom you have not served, whose commandments you have despised. *38* Look on this side and on that; here are delight and rest, and there are fire and torments.' Thus he will[b] speak to them on the day of judgment— *39* a day that has no sun or moon or stars, *40* or cloud or thunder or lightning, or wind or water or air, or darkness or evening or morning, *41* or summer or spring or heat or winter[c] or frost or cold, or hail or rain or dew, *42* or noon or night, or dawn or shining or brightness or light, but only the splendor of the glory of the Most High, by which all shall see what has been destined. *43* It will last as though for a week of years. *44* This is my judgment and its prescribed order; and to you alone I have shown these things."

45 I answered and said, "O sovereign Lord, I said then and[d] I say now: Blessed are those who are alive and keep your commandments! *46* But what of those for whom I prayed? For who among the living is there that has not sinned, or who is there among mortals that has not transgressed your covenant? *47* And now I see that the world to come will bring delight to few, but torments to many. *48* For an evil heart has grown up in us, which has alienated us from God,[e] and has brought us into corruption and the ways of death, and has shown us the paths of perdition and removed us far from life—and that not merely for a few but for almost all who have been created."

49 He answered me and said, "Listen to me, Ezra,[f] and I will instruct you, and will admonish you once more. *50* For this reason the Most High has made not one world but two. *51* Inasmuch as you have said that the righteous are not many but few, while the ungodly abound, hear the explanation for this.

52 "If you have just a few precious stones, will you add to them lead and clay?"[g] *53* I said, "Lord, how could that be?" *54* And he said to me, "Not only that, but ask the earth and she will tell you; defer to her, and she will declare it to you. *55* Say to her, 'You produce gold and silver and bronze, and also iron and lead and clay; *56* but silver is more abundant than gold, and bronze than silver, and iron than bronze, and lead than iron, and clay than lead.' *57* Judge therefore which things are precious and desirable, those that are abundant or those that are rare?"

58 I said, "O sovereign Lord, what is plentiful is of less worth, for what is more rare is more precious."

59 He answered me and said, "Consider within yourself[h] what you have thought, for the person who has what is hard to get rejoices more than the person who has what is plentiful. *60* So also will be the judgment[i] that I have promised; for I will rejoice over the few who shall be saved, because it is they who have made my glory to prevail now, and through them my name has now been honored. *61* I will not grieve over the great number of those who perish; for it is they who are now like a mist, and are similar to a flame and

[a] Lat Syr Ethiop *Gehenna*
[b] Syr Ethiop Arab 1: Lat *you shall*
[c] Or *storm*
[d] Syr: Lat *And I answered, "I said then, O Lord, and*
[e] Cn: Lat Syr Ethiop *from these*
[f] Syr Arab 1 Georg: Lat Ethiop lack *Ezra*
[g] Arab 1: Meaning of Lat Syr Ethiop uncertain
[h] Syr Ethiop Arab 1: Meaning of Lat uncertain
[i] Syr Arab 1: Lat *creation*

of punishment. See also *7.79–99*. *36*: *Pit*, Isa 38.17–18; Rev 9.2. *39–43:* A description of the day of judgment; cf. Gen 8.22; Zech 14.6–7. *42:* Isa 60.19–20; Rev 21.23. *42: The glory of the Most High* is the revelation of God's appearance, see 3.19; *7.60,112,122*. *43*: *A week of years*, seven years; cf. Dan 9.24,26.

7.45–8.3: **The second section of the third vision.** *45–74:* **Dispute between Ezra and the angel.** God rejoices over the few who will be saved and does not lament the many wicked who perish. *45–48*: Ezra again bemoans the fate of sinners. *46*: Cf. 1 Kings 8.46; Prov 20.9. *48*: *An evil heart*, see 3.20n. *The ways of death* affect nearly all; see 3.7–11. *52–57*: *Precious*, that is, the righteous, as opposed to common metals and substances; see the

smoke—they are set on fire and burn hotly, and are extinguished."

62 I replied and said, "O earth, what have you brought forth, if the mind is made out of the dust like the other created things? 63 For it would have been better if the dust itself had not been born, so that the mind might not have been made from it. 64 But now the mind grows with us, and therefore we are tormented, because we perish and we know it. 65 Let the human race lament, but let the wild animals of the field be glad; let all who have been born lament, but let the cattle and the flocks rejoice. 66 It is much better with them than with us; for they do not look for a judgment, and they do not know of any torment or salvation promised to them after death. 67 What does it profit us that we shall be preserved alive but cruelly tormented? 68 For all who have been born are entangled in[a] iniquities, and are full of sins and burdened with transgressions. 69 And if after death we were not to come into judgment, perhaps it would have been better for us."

70 He answered me and said, "When the Most High made the world and Adam and all who have come from him, he first prepared the judgment and the things that pertain to the judgment. 71 But now, understand from your own words—for you have said that the mind grows with us. 72 For this reason, therefore, those who live on earth shall be tormented, because though they had understanding, they committed iniquity; and though they received the commandments, they did not keep them; and though they obtained the law, they dealt unfaithfully with what they received. 73 What, then, will they have to say in the judgment, or how will they answer in the last times? 74 How long the Most High has been patient with those who inhabit the world!—and not for their sake, but because of the times that he has foreordained."

75 I answered and said, "If I have found favor in your sight, O Lord, show this also to your servant: whether after death, as soon as everyone of us yields up the soul, we shall be kept in rest until those times come when you will renew the creation, or whether we shall be tormented at once?"

76 He answered me and said, "I will show you that also, but do not include yourself with those who have shown scorn, or number yourself among those who are tormented. 77 For you have a treasure of works stored up with the Most High, but it will not be shown to you until the last times. 78 Now concerning death, the teaching is: When the decisive decree has gone out from the Most High that a person shall die, as the spirit leaves the body to return again to him who gave it, first of all it adores the glory of the Most High. 79 If it is one of those who have shown scorn and have not kept the way of the Most High, who have despised his law and hated those who fear God— 80 such spirits shall not enter into habitations, but shall immediately wander about in torments, always grieving and sad, in seven ways. 81 The first way, because they have scorned the law of the Most High. 82 The second way, because they cannot now make a good repentance so that they may live. 83 The third way, they shall see the reward laid up for those who have trusted the covenants of the Most High. 84 The fourth way, they shall consider the torment laid up for themselves in the last days. 85 The fifth way, they shall see how the habitations of the others are guarded by angels in profound quiet. 86 The sixth way, they shall see how some of them will cross

[a] Syr *defiled with*

similar arguments in 8.1–3. ***62–69*:** Ezra's heated lament (*better if . . . had not been born*) is typical of his reactions to the angel's arguments (see 4.12; 5.35). ***64–68*:** The *human race*, aware of their sins and their fate, are worse off than the blissfully ignorant *wild animals*. Knowledge has adverse effects; cf. Gen 3.7. ***72*:** Humans who are sinful deserve their fate.

***7.75–101*: Dialogic prediction of the future.** The state of souls after death and before the judgment. ***76–77*:** *Do not include yourself*, the angel repeatedly asserts that Ezra is specially favored by God (see 6.32–33; 7.44; 8.19,47–54; 13.53–56; 14.9). ***77*:** *A treasure of works*, 8.33,36. Cf. Mt 6.20; Mk 10.21; Lk 12.33. ***79–99*:** The fates of two different types of souls, good and evil, are laid out in parallel fashion. ***80–87*:** Seven kinds of torment for the wicked; cf. Lk 16.19–31. ***80*:** *Habitations*, elsewhere called "chambers," see 4.35n. ***85*:** *Guarded by angels*, see v.

over[a] into torments. 87 The seventh way, which is worse[b] than all the ways that have been mentioned, because they shall utterly waste away in confusion and be consumed with shame,[c] and shall wither with fear at seeing the glory of the Most High in whose presence they sinned while they were alive, and in whose presence they are to be judged in the last times.

88 "Now this is the order of those who have kept the ways of the Most High, when they shall be separated from their mortal body.[d] 89 During the time that they lived in it,[c] they laboriously served the Most High, and withstood danger every hour so that they might keep the law of the Lawgiver perfectly. 90 Therefore this is the teaching concerning them: 91 First of all, they shall see with great joy the glory of him who receives them, for they shall have rest in seven orders. 92 The first order, because they have striven with great effort to overcome the evil thought that was formed with them, so that it might not lead them astray from life into death. 93 The second order, because they see the perplexity in which the souls of the ungodly wander and the punishment that awaits them. 94 The third order, they see the witness that he who formed them bears concerning them, that throughout their life they kept the law with which they were entrusted. 95 The fourth order, they understand the rest that they now enjoy, being gathered into their chambers and guarded by angels in profound quiet, and the glory waiting for them in the last days. 96 The fifth order, they rejoice that they have now escaped what is corruptible and shall inherit what is to come; and besides they see the straits and toil[e] from which they have been delivered, and the spacious liberty that they are to receive and enjoy in immortality. 97 The sixth order, when it is shown them how their face is to shine like the sun, and how they are to be made like the light of the stars, being incorruptible from then on. 98 The seventh order, which is greater than all that have been mentioned, because they shall rejoice with boldness, and shall be confident without confusion, and shall be glad without fear, for they press forward to see the face of him whom they served in life and from whom they are to receive their reward when glorified. 99 This is the order of the souls of the righteous, as henceforth is announced;[f] and the previously mentioned are the ways of torment that those who would not give heed shall suffer hereafter."

100 Then I answered and said, "Will time therefore be given to the souls, after they have been separated from the bodies, to see what you have described to me?"

101 He said to me, "They shall have freedom for seven days, so that during these seven days they may see the things of which you have been told, and afterwards they shall be gathered in their habitations."

102 I answered and said, "If I have found favor in your sight, show further to me, your servant, whether on the day of judgment the righteous will be able to intercede for the ungodly or to entreat the Most High for them— 103 fathers for sons or sons for parents, brothers for brothers, relatives for their kindred, or friends for those who are most dear."

104 He answered me and said, "Since you have found favor in my sight, I will show you this also. The day of judgment is decisive[g] and displays to all the seal of truth. Just as now a father does not send his son, or a son his father, or a master his servant, or a friend his dearest friend, to be ill[a] or sleep or eat or

[a] Cn: Meaning of Lat uncertain
[b] Lat Syr Ethiop *greater*
[c] Syr Ethiop: Meaning of Lat uncertain
[d] Lat *the corruptible vessel*
[e] Syr Ethiop: Lat *fullness*
[f] Syr: Meaning of Lat uncertain
[g] Lat *bold*

95; *1 Enoch* 100.5. ***87*: *Glory,*** see 6.14–16; 7.42n. ***88–99*:** Seven kinds of joyous rest for the righteous. Compare the teaching regarding death in Dan 12.2–3; Wis 3–5. ***92*: *The evil thought***, the evil "yetser" (see 3.20n.). ***95*: *Chambers,*** see 4.35n. ***97*: *Sun . . . stars***, v. 125; Dan 12.3; Mt 13.43; *2 Bar.* 51. ***98*: *To see the face*** of God (Ex 33.20; 1 Jn 3.2; Rev 22.4). *Reward*, cf. Rev 22.12. ***99–101*: *The souls of the righteous*** are gathered in their *habitations* (see 4.35n.), while the souls of the unjust wander aimlessly.

7.102–115: **Dispute between Ezra and the angel**, mainly concerning the idea that there will be no interces-

be healed in his place, *105* so no one shall ever pray for another on that day, neither shall anyone lay a burden on another;[b] for then all shall bear their own righteousness and unrighteousness."

36 *106* I answered and said, "How then do we find that first Abraham prayed for the people of Sodom, and Moses for our ancestors who sinned in the desert, 37 *107* and Joshua after him for Israel in the days of Achan, 38 *108* and Samuel in the days of Saul,[c] and David for the plague, and Solomon for those at the dedication, 39 *109* and Elijah for those who received the rain, and for the one who was dead, that he might live, 40 *110* and Hezekiah for the people in the days of Sennacherib, and many others prayed for many? 41 *111* So if now, when corruption has increased and unrighteousness has multiplied, the righteous have prayed for the ungodly, why will it not be so then as well?"

42 *112* He answered me and said, "This present world is not the end; the full glory does not[d] remain in it;[e] therefore those who were strong prayed for the weak. 43 *113* But the day of judgment will be the end of this age and the beginning[f] of the immortal age to come, in which corruption has passed away, 44 *114* sinful indulgence has come to an end, unbelief has been cut off, and righteousness has increased and truth has appeared. 45 *115* Therefore no one will then be able to have mercy on someone who has been condemned in the judgment, or to harm[g] someone who is victorious."

46 *116* I answered and said, "This is my first and last comment: it would have been better if the earth had not produced Adam, or else, when it had produced him, had restrained him from sinning. 47 *117* For what good is it to all that they live in sorrow now and expect punishment after death? 48 *118* O Adam, what have you done? For though it was you who sinned, the fall was not yours alone, but ours also who are your descendants. 49 *119* For what good is it to us, if an immortal time has been promised to us, but we have done deeds that bring death? 50 *120* And what good is it that an everlasting hope has been promised to us, but we have miserably failed? 51 *121* Or that safe and healthful habitations have been reserved for us, but we have lived wickedly? 52 *122* Or that the glory of the Most High will defend those who have led a pure life, but we have walked in the most wicked ways? 53 *123* Or that a paradise shall be revealed, whose fruit remains unspoiled and in which are abundance and healing, but we shall not enter it 54 *124* because we have lived in perverse ways?[h] 55 *125* Or that the faces of those who practiced self-control shall shine more than the stars, but our faces shall be blacker than darkness? 56 *126* For while we lived and committed iniquity we did not consider what we should suffer after death."

57 *127* He answered and said, "This is the significance of the contest that all who are born on earth shall wage: 58 *128* if they are defeated they shall suffer what you have said, but if they are victorious they shall receive what I have said.[i] 59 *129* For this is the way of which Moses, while he was alive, spoke to the peo-

[a] Syr Ethiop Arm: Lat *to understand*
[b] Syr Ethiop: Lat lacks *on that . . . another*
[c] Syr Ethiop Arab 1: Lat Arab 2 Arm lack *in the days of Saul*
[d] Lat lacks *not*
[e] Or *the glory does not continuously abide in it*
[f] Syr Ethiop: Lat lacks *the beginning*
[g] Syr Ethiop: Lat *overwhelm*
[h] Cn: Lat Syr *places*
[i] Syr Ethiop Arab 1: Lat *what I say*

sion for the evil on the day of judgment (cf. Deut 24.16; Jer 31.30; Ezek 18.1–32). ***104*: *Decisive***, 7.33–34. ***106*:** At v. *106* we come to the continuation of ch 7 as preserved in the standard editions of the Latin Vulgate (see. vv. *36–105*n.); NRSV resumes the Latin numbering here, designating verses *106–140* as 36–70, but with the numbers *106–140* in italics added as well. ***106*: *Abraham***, Gen 18.23; ***Moses***, Ex 32.11. ***107*: *Joshua***, Josh 7.6–7. ***108*: *Samuel***, 1 Sam 7.9; 12.23. ***David***, 2 Sam 24.17. ***Solomon***, 1 Kings 8.22–23,30. ***109*: *Elijah***, 1 Kings 18.42,45; 17.20–21. ***110*: *Hezekiah***, 2 Kings 19.15–19. ***112–115*:** The angel again contrasts the present and future ages. ***7.116–8.3*:** Further dispute between Ezra and the angel, returning to the issue of the seeming unfairness of the human condition. ***7.116–126*:** Ezra again laments the fate of humans (cf. 4.12,22–24; 5.35; 7.62–69). ***116*: *My first . . . comment***, 3.5–7. See also Job 3. ***118*:** 3.7–10; 4.30–31. ***123*: *Fruit***, cf. Ezek 47.12; Rev 22.2. ***125*: *Shine more than the stars***, see 7.97n. ***Darkness***, *1 Enoch* 62.10. ***127–131*:** The idea of life as a *contest*, in which one can be *defeated* or *victorious*. ***129*: *Moses***, Deut 30.19. ***130*: *Prophets***, 2 Chr 36.15–16; cf. Mt 5.17; 23.31–37. ***132–140*:** As the angel had quoted scripture

ple, saying, 'Choose life for yourself, so that you may live!' [60] *130* But they did not believe him or the prophets after him, or even myself who have spoken to them. [61] *131* Therefore there shall not be[a] grief at their destruction, so much as joy over those to whom salvation is assured."

[62] *132* I answered and said, "I know, O Lord, that the Most High is now called merciful, because he has mercy on those who have not yet come into the world; [63] *133* and gracious, because he is gracious to those who turn in repentance to his law; [64] *134* and patient, because he shows patience toward those who have sinned, since they are his own creatures; [65] *135* and bountiful, because he would rather give than take away;[b] [66] *136* and abundant in compassion, because he makes his compassions abound more and more to those now living and to those who are gone and to those yet to come— [67] *137* for if he did not make them abound, the world with those who inhabit it would not have life— [68] *138* and he is called the giver, because if he did not give out of his goodness so that those who have committed iniquities might be relieved of them, not one ten-thousandth of humankind could have life; [69] *139* and the judge, because if he did not pardon those who were created by his word and blot out the multitude of their sins,[c] [70] *140* there would probably be left only very few of the innumerable multitude."

8 He answered me and said, "The Most High made this world for the sake of many, but the world to come for the sake of only a few. [2] But I tell you a parable, Ezra. Just as, when you ask the earth, it will tell you that it provides a large amount of clay from which earthenware is made, but only a little dust from which gold comes, so is the course of the present world. [3] Many have been created, but only a few shall be saved."

[4] I answered and said, "Then drink your fill of understanding,[d] O my soul, and drink wisdom, O my heart. [5] For not of your own will did you come into the world,[e] and against your will you depart, for you have been given only a short time to live. [6] O Lord above us, grant to your servant that we may pray before you, and give us a seed for our heart and cultivation of our understanding so that fruit may be produced, by which every mortal who bears the likeness[f] of a human being may be able to live. [7] For you alone exist, and we are a work of your hands, as you have declared. [8] And because you give life to the body that is now fashioned in the womb, and furnish it with members, what you have created is preserved amid fire and water, and for nine months the womb[g] endures your creature that has been created in it. [9] But that which keeps and that which is kept shall both be kept by your keeping.[e] And when the womb gives up again what has been created in it, [10] you have commanded that from the members themselves (that is, from the breasts) milk, the fruit of the breasts, should be supplied, [11] so that what has been fashioned may be nourished for a time; and afterwards you will still guide it in your mercy. [12] You have nurtured it in your righteousness, and instructed it in your law, and reproved it in your wisdom. [13] You put it to death as your creation, and make it live as your work. [14] If then you will suddenly and quickly[h] destroy what with so great labor was fashioned by your command, to what purpose was it made? [15] And now I will speak

[a] Syr: Lat *there was not*
[b] Or *he is ready to give according to requests*
[c] Lat *contempts*
[d] Syr: Lat *Then release understanding*
[e] Syr: Meaning of Lat uncertain
[f] Syr: Lat *place*
[g] Lat *what you have formed*
[h] Syr: Lat *will with a light command*

(Deut 30.19), the seer responds with a rabbinic-like exegesis, or "midrash," of Ex 34.6–7. He pleads that God *is now called merciful . . . and gracious . . . and patient. 138: Life*, eternal life. **8.1–3:** The angel repeats the arguments and parable used in *7.52–61*. **3:** Cf. Mt 22.14.

8.4–9.25: The third section of the third vision. 8.4–19a: Monologue of Ezra: Why should God wonderfully fashion and sustain all humankind, only to destroy a great majority? **6:** Ezra seeks *a seed . . . so that fruit may be produced* that will counteract the effect of the *evil seed . . . sown in Adam's heart* (4.30). **7:** *You alone* exist, a confession of God's sovereignty, see Deut 4.35; 6.4; Isa 44.6; 45.11; 60.21. **8–14:** The enigma of God's creative activity

out: About all humankind you know best; but I will speak about your people, for whom I am grieved, [16] and about your inheritance, for whom I lament, and about Israel, for whom I am sad, and about the seed of Jacob, for whom I am troubled. [17] Therefore I will pray before you for myself and for them, for I see the failings of us who inhabit the earth; [18] and now also[a] I have heard of the swiftness of the judgment that is to come. [19] Therefore hear my voice and understand my words, and I will speak before you."

The beginning of the words of Ezra's prayer,[b] before he was taken up. He said: [20] "O Lord, you who inhabit eternity,[c] whose eyes are exalted[d] and whose upper chambers are in the air, [21] whose throne is beyond measure and whose glory is beyond comprehension, before whom the hosts of angels stand trembling [22] and at whose command they are changed to wind and fire,[e] whose word is sure and whose utterances are certain, whose command is strong and whose ordinance is terrible, [23] whose look dries up the depths and whose indignation makes the mountains melt away, and whose truth is established[f] forever— [24] hear, O Lord, the prayer of your servant, and give ear to the petition of your creature; attend to my words. [25] For as long as I live I will speak, and as long as I have understanding I will answer. [26] O do not look on the sins of your people, but on those who serve you in truth. [27] Do not take note of the endeavors of those who act wickedly, but of the endeavors of those who have kept your covenants amid afflictions. [28] Do not think of those who have lived wickedly in your sight, but remember those who have willingly acknowledged that you are to be feared. [29] Do not will the destruction of those who have the ways of cattle, but regard those who have gloriously taught your law.[g] [30] Do not be angry with those who are deemed worse than wild animals, but love those who have always put their trust in your glory. [31] For we and our ancestors have passed our lives in ways that bring death;[h] but it is because of us sinners that you are called merciful. [32] For if you have desired to have pity on us, who have no works of righteousness, then you will be called merciful. [33] For the righteous, who have many works laid up with you, shall receive their reward in consequence of their own deeds. [34] But what are mortals, that you are angry with them; or what is a corruptible race, that you are so bitter against it? [35] For in truth there is no one among those who have been born who has not acted wickedly; among those who have existed[i] there is no one who has not done wrong. [36] For in this, O Lord, your righteousness and goodness will

[a] Syr: Lat *but*
[b] Syr Ethiop; Lat *beginning of Ezra's words*
[c] Or *you who abide forever*
[d] Another Lat text reads *whose are the highest heavens*
[e] Syr: Lat *they whose service takes the form of wind and fire*
[f] Arab 2: Other authorities read *truth bears witness*
[g] Syr *have received the brightness of your law*
[h] Syr Ethiop: Meaning of Lat uncertain
[i] Syr: Meaning of Lat uncertain

and providential care followed by destruction recalls Job 10.8–13. **15–16:** The seer leaves the fate of *humankind* in God's hands, and speaks particularly about Israel, God's *inheritance* (Ps 28.9). **17:** *I will pray*, in 8.19b–36.

8.19b–36: Ezra's prayer, a beautiful and liturgically structured piece (invocation to God, whose attributes are recalled, vv. 20–23; petitions, interspersed with confession and intercessions, vv. 24–35; concluding ascription of praise, v. 36). This prayer also occurs separately, with the title "Confessio Esdrae," in the section of canticles and hymns contained in many manuscripts of the Latin Vulgate Bible. This circumstance probably accounts for the presence (in v. 19b) of a superscription in the third person. **19b:** The words *before he was taken up* point to the belief that Ezra, like Enoch and Elijah, was taken up to heaven without dying (see 6.26n.). **20:** *Upper chambers,* see Ps 104.3; Amos 9.6. **21:** *Hosts of angels* are a traditional element in the description of the heavenly throne room; see 1 Kings 22.19; Isa 6.2–3; Dan 7.9–10; Rev 5.11–12; 7.11–12. **22:** *Wind and fire*, Ps 104.4; Heb 1.7. **23:** *Dries up*, Isa 50.2; 51.10. *Mountains melt*, Mic 1.4; Sir 16.18–19. **26–36:** A strikingly developed series of rhetorical contrasts between sinners and the righteous introduces an appeal to the mercy of God, the quality highlighted in the influential liturgical formula found in Ex 34.6–7. See also 7.*132–140*n. **33–36:** Ezra is concerned not for those who have *many works laid up* with God (see 7.77), but for those who have *no store of good works* (v. 36). **34:** Cf. Ps 8.4.

be declared, when you are merciful to those who have no store of good works."

37 He answered me and said, "Some things you have spoken rightly, and it will turn out according to your words. 38 For indeed I will not concern myself about the fashioning of those who have sinned, or about their death, their judgment, or their destruction; 39 but I will rejoice over the creation of the righteous, over their pilgrimage also, and their salvation, and their receiving their reward. 40 As I have spoken, therefore, so it shall be.

41 "For just as the farmer sows many seeds in the ground and plants a multitude of seedlings, and yet not all that have been sown will come up[a] in due season, and not all that were planted will take root; so also those who have been sown in the world will not all be saved."

42 I answered and said, "If I have found favor in your sight, let me speak. 43 If the farmer's seed does not come up, because it has not received your rain in due season, or if it has been ruined by too much rain, it perishes.[b] 44 But people, who have been formed by your hands and are called your own image because they are made like you, and for whose sake you have formed all things—have you also made them like the farmer's seed? 45 Surely not, O Lord[c] above! But spare your people and have mercy on your inheritance, for you have mercy on your own creation."

46 He answered me and said, "Things that are present are for those who live now, and things that are future are for those who will live hereafter. 47 For you come far short of being able to love my creation more than I love it. But you have often compared yourself[d] to the unrighteous. Never do so! 48 But even in this respect you will be praiseworthy before the Most High, 49 because you have humbled yourself, as is becoming for you, and have not considered yourself to be among the righteous. You will receive the greatest glory, 50 for many miseries will affect those who inhabit the world in the last times, because they have walked in great pride. 51 But think of your own case, and inquire concerning the glory of those who are like yourself, 52 because it is for you that paradise is opened, the tree of life is planted, the age to come is prepared, plenty is provided, a city is built, rest is appointed,[e] goodness is established and wisdom perfected beforehand. 53 The root of evil[f] is sealed up from you, illness is banished from you, and death[g] is hidden; Hades has fled and corruption has been forgotten;[h] 54 sorrows have passed away, and in the end the treasure of immortality is made manifest. 55 Therefore do not ask any more questions about the great number of those who perish. 56 For when they had opportunity to choose, they despised the Most High, and were contemptuous of his law, and abandoned his ways. 57 Moreover, they have even trampled on his righteous ones, 58 and said in their hearts that there is no God—though they knew well that they must die. 59 For just as the things that I have predicted await[i] you, so the thirst and torment that are prepared await them. For the Most High did not intend that anyone should be destroyed; 60 but those who were created have themselves defiled the name of him who made them, and have been ungrateful to him

[a] Syr Ethiop *will live*; Lat *will be saved*
[b] Cn: Compare Syr Arab 1 Arm Georg 2: Meaning of Lat uncertain
[c] Ethiop Arab Compare Syr: Lat lacks *O Lord*
[d] Syr Ethiop: Lat *brought yourself near*
[e] Syr Ethiop: Lat *allowed*
[f] Lat lacks *of evil*
[g] Syr Ethiop Arm: Lat lacks *death*
[h] Syr: Lat *Hades and corruption have fled into oblivion*; or *corruption has fled into Hades to be forgotten*
[i] Syr: Lat *will receive*

8.37–62a: Dispute between Ezra and the angel. 37–40: God's reply to Ezra's prayer is characteristic (see *7.60–61*; *7.127–131*). As after *7.132–140*, Ezra's plea for mercy goes unacknowledged. In stating that God will *not concern* himself with sinners but will *rejoice over . . . the righteous*, the angel playfully admits that Ezra has ironically *spoken rightly* about *some things*, namely, in Ezra's plea (vv. 26–36) that God ignore the wicked and pay attention only to the righteous. **41–45:** To God's analogy of *seeds* (cf. Mt 13.3–9), Ezra protests that surely humans are more valuable than plants. **46–62a:** The final divine reply: The seer is assured that his lot is with the blessed and is advised to think no more about sinners, who deserve their doom because they have *despised the Most High* (v. 56). **46:** 7.14–18,25. **47:** See 5.33; *7.76–77*n. **48–54:** The angel praises Ezra's character and offers a list of delights awaiting *those who are like* him (see 14.9). **52:** *Paradise*, *7.123; tree of life*, Gen 2.9; Rev 2.7; 22.2. *City*, the

who prepared life for them now. 61 Therefore my judgment is now drawing near; 62 I have not shown this to all people, but only to you and a few like you."

Then I answered and said, 63 "O Lord, you have already shown me a great number of the signs that you will do in the last times, but you have not shown me when you will do them."

9 He answered me and said, "Measure carefully in your mind, and when you see that some of the predicted signs have occurred, 2 then you will know that it is the very time when the Most High is about to visit the world that he has made. 3 So when there shall appear in the world earthquakes, tumult of peoples, intrigues of nations, wavering of leaders, confusion of princes, 4 then you will know that it was of these that the Most High spoke from the days that were of old, from the beginning. 5 For just as with everything that has occurred in the world, the beginning is evident,[a] and the end manifest; 6 so also are the times of the Most High: the beginnings are manifest in wonders and mighty works, and the end in penalties[b] and in signs.

7 "It shall be that all who will be saved and will be able to escape on account of their works, or on account of the faith by which they have believed, 8 will survive the dangers that have been predicted, and will see my salvation in my land and within my borders, which I have sanctified for myself from the beginning. 9 Then those who have now abused my ways shall be amazed, and those who have rejected them with contempt shall live in torments. 10 For as many as did not acknowledge me in their lifetime, though they received my benefits, 11 and as many as scorned my law while they still had freedom, and did not understand but despised it[c] while an opportunity of repentance was still open to them, 12 these must in torment acknowledge it[c] after death. 13 Therefore, do not continue to be curious about how the ungodly will be punished; but inquire how the righteous will be saved, those to whom the age belongs and for whose sake the age was made."[d]

14 I answered and said, 15 "I said before, and I say now, and will say it again: there are more who perish than those who will be saved, 16 as a wave is greater than a drop of water."

17 He answered me and said, "As is the field, so is the seed; and as are the flowers, so are the colors; and as is the work, so is the product; and as is the farmer, so is the threshing floor. 18 For there was a time in this age when I was preparing for those who now exist, before the world was made for them to live in, and no one opposed me then, for no one existed; 19 but now those who have been created in this world, which is supplied both with an unfailing table and an inexhaustible pasture,[e] have become corrupt in their ways. 20 So I considered my world, and saw that it was lost. I saw that my earth was in peril because of the devices of those who[f] had come into it. 21 And I saw and spared some[g] with great difficulty, and saved for myself one grape out of a cluster, and one plant out of a great forest.[h] 22 So let the multitude perish that has been born in vain, but let my grape

[a] Syr: Ethiop *is in the word*; Meaning of Lat uncertain
[b] Syr: Lat Ethiop *in effects*
[c] Or *me*
[d] Syr: Lat *saved, and whose is the age and for whose sake the age was made and when*
[e] Cn: Lat *law*
[f] Cn: Lat *devices that*
[g] Lat *them*
[h] Syr Ethiop Arab 1: Lat *tribe*

heavenly Jerusalem; see 7.26; 10.27,44,54. **53:** *Hades*, the realm of the dead. **58:** Cf. Pss 14.1; 53.1. **59:** *Torment,* 7.*80–87*. **61:** *Drawing near*, see 4.50; 5.55. **62:** *Only to you,* see 7.44. *A few like you*, see 8.51; 14.9,46.

8.62b–9.22: Direct prediction of the future by the angel, now in response to Ezra's request, and again using the key word *signs* (v. 63) (cf. 5.1–13; 6.11–29; 7.26–44). **8.63:** *When*, see 4.33; Mk 13.4. **9.1–4:** The author uses classical apocalyptic signs (see Mk 13.7–8,29). **7:** *Able to escape*, cf. 13.23; Mk 13.14–16. The author counts both *works* and *faith* as valid criteria for salvation. **8:** *See my salvation*, cf. Mk 13.13. *Within my borders*, 12.34; 13.48. **9:** *Torments,* 7.*79–87.* **11:** *Scorned . . . despised*, 7.22–24,*37,72,79–81*; 8.56–60. **13:** 8.38–39,55. *For whose sake*, 6.59; 7.11. **14–22:** The final explanation of why so few are saved: The many *have become corrupt in their ways.* Cf. Gen 6.5, where the corruption of humankind provokes the flood, which kills all but Noah and his family. **22:** *Let the multitude perish*, God disclaims responsibility for the fates of the mass of humanity.

and my plant be saved, because with much labor I have perfected them.

23 "Now, if you will let seven days more pass—do not, however, fast during them, 24 but go into a field of flowers where no house has been built, and eat only of the flowers of the field, and taste no meat and drink no wine, but eat only flowers— 25 and pray to the Most High continually, then I will come and talk with you."

26 So I went, as he directed me, into the field that is called Ardat;[a] there I sat among the flowers and ate of the plants of the field, and the nourishment they afforded satisfied me. 27 After seven days, while I lay on the grass, my heart was troubled again as it was before. 28 Then my mouth was opened, and I began to speak before the Most High, and said, 29 "O Lord, you showed yourself among us, to our ancestors in the wilderness when they came out from Egypt and when they came into the untrodden and unfruitful wilderness; 30 and you said, 'Hear me, O Israel, and give heed to my words, O descendants of Jacob. 31 For I sow my law in you, and it shall bring forth fruit in you, and you shall be glorified through it forever.' 32 But though our ancestors received the law, they did not keep it and did not observe the[b] statutes; yet the fruit of the law did not perish—for it could not, because it was yours. 33 Yet those who received it perished, because they did not keep what had been sown in them. 34 Now this is the general rule that, when the ground has received seed, or the sea a ship, or any dish food or drink, and when it comes about that what was sown or what was launched or what was put in is destroyed, 35 they are destroyed, but the things that held them remain; yet with us it has not been so. 36 For we who have received the law and sinned will perish, as well as our hearts that received it; 37 the law, however, does not perish but survives in its glory."

38 When I said these things in my heart, I looked around,[c] and on my right I saw a woman; she was mourning and weeping with a loud voice, and was deeply grieved at heart; her clothes were torn, and there were ashes on her head. 39 Then I dismissed the thoughts with which I had been engaged, and turned to her 40 and said to her, "Why are you weeping, and why are you grieved at heart?"

41 She said to me, "Let me alone, my lord, so that I may weep for myself and continue to mourn, for I am greatly embittered in spirit and deeply distressed."

42 I said to her, "What has happened to you? Tell me."

43 And she said to me, "Your servant was barren and had no child, though I lived with my husband for thirty years. 44 Every hour and every day during those thirty years I prayed to the Most High, night and day. 45 And after thirty years God heard your servant, and looked upon my low estate, and considered my distress, and gave me a son. I rejoiced greatly over him, I and my husband

[a] Syr Ethiop *Arpad*; Arm *Ardab*

[b] Lat *my*

[c] Syr Arab Arm: Lat *I looked about me with my eyes*

9.23–25: Conclusion and injunctions. Ezra's prescribed diet of *flowers* recalls Dan 1.8–16 (cf. 2 Macc 5.27). **24:** *Where no house has been built*, see 10.51–54.

9.26–10.59: The fourth vision. 9.26–28: Introduction. 26: *Ardat*, an unknown location. **27:** *As it was before*, before each of the first three visions.

9.29–37: Ezra's address. Instead of challenging God, as he had done in the first three visions, Ezra praises the *law*, which *survives in its glory* despite the perishing of humankind, its vessel. **29:** An allusion to the theophany at Mount Sinai, Ex 19.9; 24.10; Deut 4.12. **30–37:** Unlike the normal case, where the container outlasts what is placed in it, with humankind it is just the opposite: We perish, while God's law, implanted within us, survives intact. **30:** *Hear me, O Israel*, Deut 6.4. **31:** See 3.20.

9.38–10.4: The first part of the vision. Ezra converses with a disconsolate woman. The sudden departure from the pattern of the first three visions, wherein the angel had appeared, signals a shift in tone. **9.38:** *Clothes were torn, ashes*, signs of mourning; Josh 7.6; Job 2.12–13. **39:** *I dismissed the thoughts*, for the first time in the book, Ezra turns his attention from his own concerns to those of another (see also 10.5). **40:** Now it is the woman who is *weeping* and *grieved*, as Ezra had been during the first three visions. **45:** *After thirty years*, see 3.1. Like Sarah (Gen 18.11–14), Hannah (1 Sam 1.20), and Elizabeth (Lk 1.24), the woman conceives a child in her old

and all my neighbors;[a] and we gave great glory to the Mighty One. [46] And I brought him up with much care. [47] So when he grew up and I came to take a wife for him, I set a day for the marriage feast.

10 "But it happened that when my son entered his wedding chamber, he fell down and died. [2] So all of us put out our lamps, and all my neighbors[a] attempted to console me; I remained quiet until the evening of the second day. [3] But when all of them had stopped consoling me, encouraging me to be quiet, I got up in the night and fled, and I came to this field, as you see. [4] And now I intend not to return to the town, but to stay here; I will neither eat nor drink, but will mourn and fast continually until I die."

[5] Then I broke off the reflections with which I was still engaged, and answered her in anger and said, [6] "You most foolish of women, do you not see our mourning, and what has happened to us? [7] For Zion, the mother of us all, is in deep grief and great distress. [8] It is most appropriate to mourn now, because we are all mourning, and to be sorrowful, because we are all sorrowing; you are sorrowing for one son, but we, the whole world, for our mother.[b] [9] Now ask the earth, and she will tell you that it is she who ought to mourn over so many who have come into being upon her. [10] From the beginning all have been born of her, and others will come; and, lo, almost all go[c] to perdition, and a multitude of them will come to doom. [11] Who then ought to mourn the more, she who lost so great a multitude, or you who are grieving for one alone? [12] But if you say to me, 'My lamentation is not like the earth's, for I have lost the fruit of my womb, which I brought forth in pain and bore in sorrow; [13] but it is with the earth according to the way of the earth—the multitude that is now in it goes as it came'; [14] then I say to you, 'Just as you brought forth in sorrow, so the earth also has from the beginning given her fruit, that is, humankind, to him who made her.' [15] Now, therefore, keep your sorrow to yourself, and bear bravely the troubles that have come upon you. [16] For if you acknowledge the decree of God to be just, you will receive your son back in due time, and will be praised among women. [17] Therefore go into the town to your husband."

[18] She said to me, "I will not do so; I will not go into the city, but I will die here."

[19] So I spoke again to her, and said, [20] "Do not do that, but let yourself be persuaded—for how many are the adversities of Zion?—and be consoled because of the sorrow of Jerusalem. [21] For you see how our sanctuary has been laid waste, our altar thrown down, our temple destroyed; [22] our harp has been laid low, our song has been silenced, and our rejoicing has been ended; the light of our lampstand has been put out, the ark of our covenant has been plundered, our holy things have been polluted, and the name by which we are called has been almost profaned; our

[a] Literally *all my citizens*
[b] Compare Syr: Meaning of Lat uncertain
[c] Literally *walk*

age. **10.1:** Cf. Tob 7.11; 8.10. **4:** *Mourn and fast*, as Ezra had done previously.

10.5–24: The second part of the vision. Ezra tries to convince the woman of the relative insignificance of her own sorrows in relation to the broader concerns of *the whole world* (v. 8), just as the angel had done with Ezra in the earlier visions. **5:** *Broke off the reflections*, as before (*dismissed the thoughts*, 9.39), Ezra is forced to leave aside his prior concerns. **5–6:** *In anger . . . you most foolish*, Ezra's highly emotional disposition, evident in the first three visions, continues here, but is redirected. **7:** *Zion, the mother of us all*, Isa 50.1; Jer 50.12; Bar 4.8–*5.9*; Gal 4.26. For *Zion* in *deep grief*, see Lam 1.12–22. **9-10:** Ezra's arguments recall those of the angel in the first three visions. **9:** *Ask the earth*, who is also the mother of all humankind (v. 10). Thus, the figure of the mother functions on three levels: Ezra's interlocutor, Zion (Jerusalem), and the whole earth. **10:** This is the perspective Ezra refused to accept in the third vision. **16:** *If you acknowledge*, as the angel had earlier encouraged Ezra to do. *You will receive your son back in due time*, perhaps in the resurrection; Heb 11.35; 2 Macc 7.23,29. **18:** *I will not*, the woman's stubbornness recalls Ezra's earlier attitude. **21–23:** Ezra sadly recalls the desolation of Jerusalem (cf. Lam 1.10; 2.7; 1 Macc 1.36–40; 2.7–13); ultimately, this refers to the destruction of the city in 70 CE. **22:** *Harp* symbolizes the service of praise. The extinction of the perpetually burning lamp marked the cessation of Temple services. *Our holy things* are enumerated in 1 Macc 4.49–51. *The name* "Israel" was bestowed by God (Gen 32.28).

children[a] have suffered abuse, our priests have been burned to death, our Levites have gone into exile, our virgins have been defiled, and our wives have been ravished; our righteous men[b] have been carried off, our little ones have been cast out, our young men have been enslaved and our strong men made powerless. 23 And, worst of all, the seal of Zion has been deprived of its glory, and given over into the hands of those that hate us. 24 Therefore shake off your great sadness and lay aside your many sorrows, so that the Mighty One may be merciful to you again, and the Most High may give you rest, a respite from your troubles."

25 While I was talking to her, her face suddenly began to shine exceedingly; her countenance flashed like lightning, so that I was too frightened to approach her, and my heart was terrified. While[c] I was wondering what this meant, 26 she suddenly uttered a loud and fearful cry, so that the earth shook at the sound. 27 When I looked up, the woman was no longer visible to me, but a city was being built,[d] and a place of huge foundations showed itself. I was afraid, and cried with a loud voice and said, 28 "Where is the angel Uriel, who came to me at first? For it was he who brought me into this overpowering bewilderment; my end has become corruption, and my prayer a reproach."

29 While I was speaking these words, the angel who had come to me at first came to me, and when he saw me 30 lying there like a corpse, deprived of my understanding, he grasped my right hand and strengthened me and set me on my feet, and said to me, 31 "What is the matter with you? And why are you troubled? And why are your understanding and the thoughts of your mind troubled?"

32 I said, "It was because you abandoned me. I did as you directed, and went out into the field, and lo, what I have seen and can still see, I am unable to explain."

33 He said to me, "Stand up like a man, and I will instruct you."

34 I said, "Speak, my lord; only do not forsake me, so that I may not die before my time.[e] 35 For I have seen what I did not know, and I hear[f] what I do not understand 36 —or is my mind deceived, and my soul dreaming? 37 Now therefore I beg you to give your servant an explanation of this bewildering vision."

38 He answered me and said, "Listen to me, and I will teach you, and tell you about the things that you fear; for the Most High has revealed many secrets to you. 39 He has seen your righteous conduct, and that you have sorrowed continually for your people and mourned greatly over Zion. 40 This therefore is the meaning of the vision. 41 The woman who appeared to you a little while ago, whom you saw mourning and whom you began to console 42 (you do not now see the form of a woman, but there appeared to you a city being built)[g] 43 and who

[a] Ethiop *free men*
[b] Syr *our seers*
[c] Syr Ethiop Arab 1: Lat lacks *I was too . . . terrified. While*
[d] Lat: Syr Ethiop Arab 1 Arab 2 Arm *but there was an established city*
[e] Syr Ethiop Arab: Lat *die to no purpose*
[f] Other ancient authorities read *have heard*
[g] Lat: Syr Ethiop Arab 1 Arab 2 Arm *an established city*

23: *The seal . . . has been deprived of its glory*, i.e., the city is under enemy control. **24:** In Ezra's final words to the woman, he has fully become a consoler to her, just as the angel earlier had been to him.

10.25–27a: A vision of the transformed Jerusalem. 25: *Suddenly began to shine*, the figure of the woman had only been a foil for the inner transformation of Ezra, who is now worthy to receive the vision. **27:** *A city was being built*, Zech 2.1–5; Rev 21.9–21. Jerusalem, whose destruction was movingly described in vv. 21–23, is being transformed or rebuilt in a way open only to visionary experience.

10.27b–37: The appearance of the angel. 28: *At first*, 4.1. Although the angel (Uriel; 4.1) has had no part in this vision, it is he upon whom Ezra immediately calls for guidance. **30:** *Like a corpse*, cf. Dan 8.18; 10.9; Rev 1.17. **32:** *And can still see*, the vision is still before the seer's eyes. The seer is *unable to explain* the vision, much as he had earlier been unable to come to terms with the angel's more rational explanations. **33:** Cf. Job 38.3; 40.7; see 5.15; 6.13,17; 7.2. **34–37:** Cf. 12.3b–9; 13.13b–15. **34:** *Do not forsake me*, Ezra's plea is ironic. See 5.18 and 12.41, where Ezra's compatriots beg him not to "forsake" them.

10.38–54: Interpretation of the vision. 38–39: See 7.76–77n. **44:** *Zion*, the transformed Jerusalem. **45:** *Three*

told you about the misfortune of her son—this is the interpretation: 44 The woman whom you saw is Zion, which you now behold as a city being built.[a] 45 And as for her telling you that she was barren for thirty years, the reason is that there were three thousand[b] years in the world before any offering was offered in it.[c] 46 And after three thousand[d] years Solomon built the city, and offered offerings; then it was that the barren woman bore a son. 47 And as for her telling you that she brought him up with much care, that was the period of residence in Jerusalem. 48 And as for her saying to you, 'My son died as he entered his wedding chamber,' and that misfortune had overtaken her,[e] this was the destruction that befell Jerusalem. 49 So you saw her likeness, how she mourned for her son, and you began to console her for what had happened.[f] 50 For now the Most High, seeing that you are sincerely grieved and profoundly distressed for her, has shown you the brilliance of her glory, and the loveliness of her beauty. 51 Therefore I told you to remain in the field where no house had been built, 52 for I knew that the Most High would reveal these things to you. 53 Therefore I told you to go into the field where there was no foundation of any building, 54 because no work of human construction could endure in a place where the city of the Most High was to be revealed.

55 "Therefore do not be afraid, and do not let your heart be terrified; but go in and see the splendor or[g] the vastness of the building, as far as it is possible for your eyes to see it, 56 and afterward you will hear as much as your ears can hear. 57 For you are more blessed than many, and you have been called to be with[h] the Most High as few have been. 58 But tomorrow night you shall remain here, 59 and the Most High will show you in those dream visions what the Most High will do to those who inhabit the earth in the last days."

So I slept that night and the following one, as he had told me.

11 On the second night I had a dream: I saw rising from the sea an eagle that had twelve feathered wings and three heads. 2 I saw it spread its wings over[i] the whole earth, and all the winds of heaven blew upon it, and the clouds were gathered around it.[j] 3 I saw that out of its wings there grew opposing wings; but they became little, puny wings. 4 But its heads were at rest; the middle head was larger than the other heads, but it too was at rest with them. 5 Then I saw that the eagle flew with its wings, and it reigned over the earth and over those who inhabit it. 6 And I saw how all things under heaven were subjected to it, and no one spoke against it—not a single creature that was on the earth. 7 Then I saw the eagle rise upon its talons, and it uttered a cry to its wings, saying, 8 "Do not all watch at the same time; let each sleep in its

[a] Cn: Lat *an established city*
[b] Most Lat Mss read *three*
[c] Cn: Lat Syr Arab Arm *her*
[d] Syr Ethiop Arab Arm: Lat *three*
[e] Or *him*
[f] Most Lat Mss and Arab 1 add *These were the things to be opened to you*
[g] Other ancient authorities read *and*
[h] Or *been named by*
[i] Arab 2 Arm: Lat Syr Ethiop *in*
[j] Syr: Compare Ethiop Arab: Lat lacks *the clouds* and *around it*

thousand years, the time between the creation of the world and construction of the Temple. **46:** *A son*, the historical Jerusalem. *Solomon*, although David established Jerusalem as an Israelite city, Solomon built the Temple (1 Kings 5–6). **48:** *The destruction*, see 10.21–23 and note. In its context, this passage refers to the destruction of Jerusalem in 586 BCE. **49:** Zion, in the universal sense, *mourned for* the destruction of her physical manifestation, the earthly city. **49–50:** Ezra's vision is a direct reward for his sincere consolation of the mourning woman (see 10.41).

10.55–59: Conclusion and injunctions. 55–56: *Go in and see*, the city is conceived as still present to Ezra (see vv. 32,42,44). **59:** The remainder of the book will consist of *dream visions* rather than argumentation.

11.1–12.51: The fifth vision (the eagle vision). **11.1–12.3a: Description of the vision. 11.1:** The interpretation of the fifth vision that is set forth in the notes to 11.1–12.3a anticipates that given in the text of 2 Esdras itself in 12.10–36. *From the sea*, Dan 7.3; Rev 13.1. *An eagle*, symbol of the Roman Empire, used on the standards of Roman legions **2:** *Spread its wings*, asserted its dominion. *The winds*, 13.2; Dan 7.2. At the time of 4 Ezra's composition, the Romans ruled almost the *whole* inhabited *earth*. **3:** *Opposing wings*, symbolizing usurpers who revolted

own place, and watch in its turn; [9] but let the heads be reserved for the last."

[10] I looked again and saw that the voice did not come from its heads, but from the middle of its body. [11] I counted its rival wings, and there were eight of them. [12] As I watched, one wing on the right side rose up, and it reigned over all the earth. [13] And after a time its reign came to an end, and it disappeared, so that even its place was no longer visible. Then the next wing rose up and reigned, and it continued to reign a long time. [14] While it was reigning its end came also, so that it disappeared like the first. [15] And a voice sounded, saying to it, [16] "Listen to me, you who have ruled the earth all this time; I announce this to you before you disappear. [17] After you no one shall rule as long as you have ruled, not even half as long."

[18] Then the third wing raised itself up, and held the rule as the earlier ones had done, and it also disappeared. [19] And so it went with all the wings; they wielded power one after another and then were never seen again. [20] I kept looking, and in due time the wings that followed[a] also rose up on the right[b] side, in order to rule. There were some of them that ruled, yet disappeared suddenly; [21] and others of them rose up, but did not hold the rule.

[22] And after this I looked and saw that the twelve wings and the two little wings had disappeared, [23] and nothing remained on the eagle's body except the three heads that were at rest and six little wings.

[24] As I kept looking I saw that two little wings separated from the six and remained under the head that was on the right side; but four remained in their place. [25] Then I saw that these little wings[c] planned to set themselves up and hold the rule. [26] As I kept looking, one was set up, but suddenly disappeared; [27] a second also, and this disappeared more quickly than the first. [28] While I continued to look the two that remained were planning between themselves to reign together; [29] and while they were planning, one of the heads that were at rest (the one that was in the middle) suddenly awoke; it was greater than the other two heads. [30] And I saw how it allied the two heads with itself, [31] and how the head turned with those that were with it and devoured the two little wings[c] that were planning to reign. [32] Moreover this head gained control of the whole earth, and with much oppression dominated its inhabitants; it had greater power over the world than all the wings that had gone before.

[33] After this I looked again and saw the head in the middle suddenly disappear, just as the wings had done. [34] But the two heads remained, which also in like manner ruled over the earth and its inhabitants. [35] And while I looked, I saw the head on the right side devour the one on the left.

[36] Then I heard a voice saying to me, "Look in front of you and consider what you see." [37] When I looked, I saw what seemed to be a lion roused from the forest, roaring; and I heard how it uttered a human voice to the eagle, and spoke, saying, [38] "Listen and I will speak to you. The Most High says to you, [39] 'Are you not the one that remains of the four beasts that I had made to reign in my world, so that the end of my times might come through them? [40] You, the fourth that has come, have conquered all the beasts that have gone before; and you have held sway over the world with great terror, and over all the earth with grievous oppression; and for so long you have lived on the earth with deceit.[d] [41] You have judged the earth, but not with truth, [42] for you have oppressed the meek and injured the peaceable; you have hated those who tell the truth, and have loved liars; you have destroyed the homes of those who brought forth fruit, and have laid low the walls of those who did you no harm.

[a] Syr Arab 2 *the little wings*
[b] Some Ethiop Mss read *left*
[c] Syr: Lat *underwings*
[d] Syr Arab Arm: Lat Ethiop *The fourth came, however, and conquered . . . and held sway . . . and for so long lived*

against the Roman emperors. *But they became little*, they were subdued. **11:** *Rival wings*, the "opposing wings" of v. 3. **13:** *Its reign came to an end*, the ruler symbolized by the wing perished. **35:** At this point, only the *head on the right* and the two little wings under it remain. **37:** The *lion* is a symbol of the messiah; cf. Rev 5.5. **39:** *Four beasts*, Dan 7. In Daniel, however, the fourth beast is not an eagle but a horned monster. **40:** *With grievous oppression*, at this time in history, after the Romans had destroyed Jerusalem and its Temple, they were considered evil op-

43 Your insolence has come up before the
Most High, and your pride to the Mighty One.
44 The Most High has looked at his times; now
they have ended, and his ages have reached
completion. 45 Therefore you, eagle, will surely
disappear, you and your terrifying wings, your
most evil little wings, your malicious heads,
your most evil talons, and your whole worth-
less body, 46 so that the whole earth, freed
from your violence, may be refreshed and
relieved, and may hope for the judgment and
mercy of him who made it.'"

12 While the lion was saying these words
to the eagle, I looked 2 and saw that the
remaining head had disappeared. The two
wings that had gone over to it rose up and[a]
set themselves up to reign, and their reign
was brief and full of tumult. 3 When I looked
again, they were already vanishing. The
whole body of the eagle was burned, and the
earth was exceedingly terrified.

Then I woke up in great perplexity of
mind and great fear, and I said to my spirit,
4 "You have brought this upon me, because
you search out the ways of the Most High. 5 I
am still weary in mind and very weak in my
spirit, and not even a little strength is left
in me, because of the great fear with which
I have been terrified tonight. 6 Therefore I
will now entreat the Most High that he may
strengthen me to the end."

7 Then I said, "O sovereign Lord, if I have
found favor in your sight, and if I have been
accounted righteous before you beyond many
others, and if my prayer has indeed come up
before your face, 8 strengthen me and show
me, your servant, the interpretation and
meaning of this terrifying vision so that you
may fully comfort my soul. 9 For you have
judged me worthy to be shown the end of the
times and the last events of the times."

10 He said to me, "This is the interpreta-
tion of this vision that you have seen: 11 The
eagle that you saw coming up from the sea
is the fourth kingdom that appeared in a
vision to your brother Daniel. 12 But it was
not explained to him as I now explain to you
or have explained it. 13 The days are coming
when a kingdom shall rise on earth, and it
shall be more terrifying than all the king-
doms that have been before it. 14 And twelve
kings shall reign in it, one after another. 15 But
the second that is to reign shall hold sway
for a longer time than any other one of the
twelve. 16 This is the interpretation of the
twelve wings that you saw.

17 "As for your hearing a voice that
spoke, coming not from the eagle's[b] heads
but from the midst of its body, this is the
interpretation: 18 In the midst of[c] the time
of that kingdom great struggles shall arise,
and it shall be in danger of falling; never-
theless it shall not fall then, but shall regain
its former power.[d] 19 As for your seeing
eight little wings[e] clinging to its wings, this
is the interpretation: 20 Eight kings shall
arise in it, whose times shall be short and
their years swift; 21 two of them shall perish
when the middle of its time draws near; and
four shall be kept for the time when its end
approaches, but two shall be kept until the
end.

22 "As for your seeing three heads at rest,
this is the interpretation: 23 In its last days
the Most High will raise up three kings,[f] and

[a] Ethiop: Lat lacks *rose up and*
[b] Lat *his*
[c] Syr Arm: Lat *After*
[d] Ethiop Arab 1 Arm: Lat Syr *its beginning*
[e] Syr: Lat *underwings*
[f] Syr Ethiop Arab Arm: Lat *kingdoms*

pressors by the Jews. **44:** God's judgment of the fourth beast is a sign that the *ages have reached completion* (see 11.39). **12.3a:** This is the beginning of the end times.

12.3b–9: The seer's response. Ezra, terrified, seeks an explanation of the vision (cf. 10.27–37; 13.13b–20).

12.10–36: The interpretation. 11: *The fourth kingdom* in Daniel's vision (Dan 7.7) symbolized the Greek or Macedonian Empire; here, however, it is reinterpreted (cf. v. 12) to refer to the Roman Empire (see 11.1n.; 11.39n.). **13:** *The days are coming*, since the seer is represented as prophesying during the exile, the rise of the Roman Empire is depicted as a future event. **14:** *Kings*, the Roman emperors. **15:** *The second* king is Augustus (ruled 27 BCE–14 CE); cf. 11.17. **18:** There is nothing in the vision that corresponds to what is said in this verse. The author may refer to *the time of . . . great struggles* for power that followed the death of Nero in 68 CE. **19:** *Little wings*, 11.3,11. **20–21:** These apparently represent imperial usurpers or pretenders; they cannot be identified precisely.

they[a] shall renew many things in it, and shall rule the earth [24] and its inhabitants more oppressively than all who were before them. Therefore they are called the heads of the eagle, [25] because it is they who shall sum up his wickedness and perform his last actions. [26] As for your seeing that the large head disappeared, one of the kings[b] shall die in his bed, but in agonies. [27] But as for the two who remained, the sword shall devour them. [28] For the sword of one shall devour him who was with him; but he also shall fall by the sword in the last days.

[29] "As for your seeing two little wings[c] passing over to[d] the head which was on the right side, [30] this is the interpretation: It is these whom the Most High has kept for the eagle's[e] end; this was the reign which was brief and full of tumult, as you have seen.

[31] "And as for the lion whom you saw rousing up out of the forest and roaring and speaking to the eagle and reproving him for his unrighteousness, and as for all his words that you have heard, [32] this is the Messiah[f] whom the Most High has kept until the end of days, who will arise from the offspring of David, and will come and speak[g] with them. He will denounce them for their ungodliness and for their wickedness, and will display before them their contemptuous dealings. [33] For first he will bring them alive before his judgment seat, and when he has reproved them, then he will destroy them. [34] But in mercy he will set free the remnant of my people, those who have been saved throughout my borders, and he will make them joyful until the end comes, the day of judgment, of which I spoke to you at the beginning. [35] This is the dream that you saw, and this is its interpretation. [36] And you alone were worthy to learn this secret of the Most High. [37] Therefore write all these things that you have seen in a book, put it[h] in a hidden place; [38] and you shall teach them to the wise among your people, whose hearts you know are able to comprehend and keep these secrets. [39] But as for you, wait here seven days more, so that you may be shown whatever it pleases the Most High to show you." Then he left me.

[40] When all the people heard that the seven days were past and I had not returned to the city, they all gathered together, from the least to the greatest, and came to me and spoke to me, saying, [41] "How have we offended you, and what harm have we done you, that you have forsaken us and sit in this place? [42] For of all the prophets you alone are left to us, like a cluster of grapes from the vintage, and like a lamp in a dark place, and like a haven for a ship saved from a storm. [43] Are not the disasters that have befallen us enough? [44] Therefore if you forsake us, how much better it would have been for us if we also had been consumed in the burning of Zion. [45] For we are no better than those who died there." And they wept with a loud voice.

Then I answered them and said, [46] "Take courage, O Israel; and do not be sorrowful, O house of Jacob; [47] for the Most High has you in remembrance, and the Mighty One has not forgotten you in your struggle. [48] As for me, I have neither forsaken you nor withdrawn

[a] Syr Ethiop Arm: Lat *he*
[b] Lat *them*
[c] Arab 1: Lat *underwings*
[d] Syr Ethiop: Lat lacks *to*
[e] Lat *his*
[f] Literally *anointed one*
[g] Syr: Lat lacks *of days . . . and speak*
[h] Ethiop Arab 1 Arab 2 Arm: Lat Syr *them*

22: *Three heads*, the Flavian emperors (Vespasian, 69–79 CE; Titus, 79–81; and Domitian, 81–96). **23–25:** 11.30–32. **26:** The *large head*, Vespasian. Vespasian did *die in his bed*, perhaps a rarity for Roman emperors, but the attendant *agonies* are otherwise unattested. **30:** *As you have seen*, vv. 2–3. **32:** *Messiah*, 7.28–29n.; *1 Enoch* 62.7. **33-34:** See *2 Bar.* 40. **33:** Here, unlike earlier in the book (6.6; 7.28–44), the Messiah functions as eschatological judge. **34:** *Throughout my borders*, 9.8; 13.48. *He will make them joyful*, 7.28. This verse envisions a second *day of judgment* after that described in v. 33.

12.37–39: Conclusion and injunctions. 37–38: The angel's command to *write* a secret *book* for the *wise* anticipates 14.23–26,37–48 (cf. Isa 8.16; Dan 12.3–4; Rev 1.11; 22.10).

12.40–51: The seer comforts those who were grieved because of his absence (cf. 5.16–19). **40:** *The seven days*, 9.23,27. **42:** Only here and in 1.1 in biblical and apocryphal literature is Ezra called a prophet. *Cluster of grapes*, see 9.21. **44–45:** The people's lament recalls Ezra's earlier words (4.12; 5.35; 7.63). **46–47:** Ezra's reply in

from you; but I have come to this place to pray on account of the desolation of Zion, and to seek mercy on account of the humiliation of our[a] sanctuary. [49] Now go to your homes, every one of you, and after these days I will come to you." [50] So the people went into the city, as I told them to do. [51] But I sat in the field seven days, as the angel[b] had commanded me; and I ate only of the flowers of the field, and my food was of plants during those days.

13 After seven days I dreamed a dream in the night. [2] And lo, a wind arose from the sea and stirred up[c] all its waves. [3] As I kept looking the wind made something like the figure of a man come up out of the heart of the sea. And I saw[d] that this man flew[e] with the clouds of heaven; and wherever he turned his face to look, everything under his gaze trembled, [4] and whenever his voice issued from his mouth, all who heard his voice melted as wax melts[f] when it feels the fire.

[5] After this I looked and saw that an innumerable multitude of people were gathered together from the four winds of heaven to make war against the man who came up out of the sea. [6] And I looked and saw that he carved out for himself a great mountain, and flew up on to it. [7] And I tried to see the region or place from which the mountain was carved, but I could not.

[8] After this I looked and saw that all who had gathered together against him, to wage war with him, were filled with fear, and yet they dared to fight. [9] When he saw the onrush of the approaching multitude, he neither lifted his hand nor held a spear or any weapon of war; [10] but I saw only how he sent forth from his mouth something like a stream of fire, and from his lips a flaming breath, and from his tongue he shot forth a storm of sparks.[g] [11] All these were mingled together, the stream of fire and the flaming breath and the great storm, and fell on the onrushing multitude that was prepared to fight, and burned up all of them, so that suddenly nothing was seen of the innumerable multitude but only the dust of ashes and the smell of smoke. When I saw it, I was amazed.

[12] After this I saw the same man come down from the mountain and call to himself another multitude that was peaceable. [13] Then many people[h] came to him, some of whom were joyful and some sorrowful; some of them were bound, and some were bringing others as offerings.

Then I woke up in great terror, and prayed to the Most High, and said, [14] "From the beginning you have shown your servant these wonders, and have deemed me worthy to have my prayer heard by you; [15] now show me the interpretation of this dream also. [16] For as I consider it in my mind, alas for those who will be left in those days! And still more, alas for those who are not left! [17] For those who are not left will be sad [18] because they understand the things that are reserved for the last days, but cannot attain them. [19] But alas for those also who are left, and for that very reason! For they shall see great dangers and much distress, as these dreams show. [20] Yet it is better[i] to come into these things,[j] though

[a] Syr Ethiop: Lat *your*
[b] Literally *he*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *I saw a wind arise from the sea and stir up*
[d] Syr: Lat lacks *the wind . . . I saw*
[e] Syr Ethiop Arab Arm: Lat *grew strong*
[f] Syr: Lat *burned as the earth rests*
[g] Meaning of Lat uncertain
[h] Lat Syr Arab 2 literally *the faces of many people*
[i] Ethiop Compare Arab 2: Lat *easier*
[j] Syr: Lat *this*

turn recalls the earlier encouragement of the angel. **51:** 9.24–26. Ezra's vegetarian diet is clearly linked to the onset of his dream visions.

13.1–58: The sixth vision (the man from the sea). **1–13a: Description of the vision. 2:** *A wind . . . from the sea*, 11.1–2; Dan 7.2. **3:** *Something like the figure of a man*, a messianic figure (cf. Dan 7.13), later in the vision called God's *Son* (13.32; Ezek 1.26). *Flew with the clouds*, Isa 19.1; Dan 7.13; Mk 13.26; Rev 1.7. **4:** *As wax melts*, Mic 1.4; Jdt 16.15. **5:** *Innumerable multitude,* see 13.33–34n. *Four winds of heaven*, Dan 7.2. **6:** *Carved out*, Dan 2.45. **10:** Cf. Isa 11.4; 2 Thess 2.8. **11:** *Burned up*, 12.3; cf. Rev 20.9. **12:** See *2 Bar.* 40.2. **13a:** *Some . . . were bound*, Jews who came from captivity. *Others as offerings*, cf. Isa 66.20.

13.13b–20a: The seer prays that God will interpret the vision to him. See *7.116–126*n.; 10.34–37n. **14:** *My prayer*, 9.25–37. **20:** Contrast 4.12.

incurring peril, than to pass from the world like a cloud, and not to see what will happen in the last days."

He answered me and said, [21] "I will tell you the interpretation of the vision, and I will also explain to you the things that you have mentioned. [22] As for what you said about those who survive, and concerning those who do not survive,[a] this is the interpretation: [23] The one who brings the peril at that time will protect those who fall into peril, who have works and faith toward the Almighty. [24] Understand therefore that those who are left are more blessed than those who have died.

[25] "This is the interpretation of the vision: As for your seeing a man come up from the heart of the sea, [26] this is he whom the Most High has been keeping for many ages, who will himself deliver his creation; and he will direct those who are left. [27] And as for your seeing wind and fire and a storm coming out of his mouth, [28] and as for his not holding a spear or weapon of war, yet destroying the onrushing multitude that came to conquer him, this is the interpretation: [29] The days are coming when the Most High will deliver those who are on the earth. [30] And bewilderment of mind shall come over those who inhabit the earth. [31] They shall plan to make war against one another, city against city, place against place, people against people, and kingdom against kingdom. [32] When these things take place and the signs occur that I showed you before, then my Son will be revealed, whom you saw as a man coming up from the sea.[b]

[33] "Then, when all the nations hear his voice, all the nations shall leave their own lands and the warfare that they have against one another; [34] and an innumerable multitude shall be gathered together, as you saw, wishing to come and conquer him. [35] But he shall stand on the top of Mount Zion. [36] And Zion shall come and be made manifest to all people, prepared and built, as you saw the mountain carved out without hands. [37] Then he, my Son, will reprove the assembled nations for their ungodliness (this was symbolized by the storm), [38] and will reproach them to their face with their evil thoughts and the torments with which they are to be tortured (which were symbolized by the flames), and will destroy them without effort by means of the law[c] (which was symbolized by the fire).

[39] "And as for your seeing him gather to himself another multitude that was peaceable, [40] these are the nine[d] tribes that were taken away from their own land into exile in the days of King Hoshea, whom Shalmaneser, king of the Assyrians, made captives; he took them across the river, and they were taken into another land. [41] But they formed this plan for themselves, that they would leave the multitude of the nations and go to a more distant region, where no human beings had ever lived, [42] so that there at least they might keep their statutes that they had not kept in their own land. [43] And they went in by the narrow passages of the Euphrates river. [44] For at that time the Most High performed signs for them, and stopped the channels of the river until they had crossed over. [45] Through that region there was a long way to go, a journey of a year and a half; and that country is called Arzareth.[e]

[46] "Then they lived there until the last times; and now, when they are about to come again, [47] the Most High will stop[f] the channels of the river again, so that they may be able to cross over. Therefore you saw the multitude

[a] Syr Arab 1: Lat lacks *and . . . not survive*
[b] Syr and most Lat Mss lack *from the sea*
[c] Syr: Lat *effort and the law*
[d] Other Lat Mss *ten*; Syr Ethiop Arab 1 Arm *nine and a half*
[e] That is *Another Land*
[f] Syr: Lat *stops*

13.20b–55: The interpretation. 21: *Things . . . mentioned*, in vv. 16–20. **23:** *The one who brings the peril*, the Messiah; vv. 3–13a. *Works and faith*, see 9.7n. **24:** Contrast 5.41–42. **26:** *He whom the Most High has been keeping for many ages*, the Messiah, v. 52; 12.32. **31:** Cf. Isa 19.2; Mt 24.7. **32:** Cf. 6.20; 7.26–28; 9.1–2; Mk 13.29. **33–34:** Cf. Rev 16.14–16; 19.19; 20.7–9. **35:** Cf. Heb 12.22–24; Rev 14.1; *2 Bar.* 40. **36:** *Zion shall come and be made manifest*, 7.26; 10.25–54; Rev 21.2,9–14. *Without hands*, Dan 2.34,45. **37–38:** *Reprove . . . reproach . . . destroy*, as in 11.37–46; 12.31–33. **40:** 2 Kings 17.1–6. *The nine tribes*, the northern kingdom of Israel (usually "ten tribes"; see textual note *d*). *The river*, the Euphrates. **44:** *Stopped . . . the river*, cf. Josh 3.14–16. **45:** *Arzareth*, Heb for "Another Land" (cf.

gathered together in peace. [48] But those who are left of your people, who are found within my holy borders, shall be saved.[a] [49] Therefore when he destroys the multitude of the nations that are gathered together, he will defend the people who remain. [50] And then he will show them very many wonders."

[51] I said, "O sovereign Lord, explain this to me: Why did I see the man coming up from the heart of the sea?"

[52] He said to me, "Just as no one can explore or know what is in the depths of the sea, so no one on earth can see my Son or those who are with him, except in the time of his day.[b] [53] This is the interpretation of the dream that you saw. And you alone have been enlightened about this, [54] because you have forsaken your own ways and have applied yourself to mine, and have searched out my law; [55] for you have devoted your life to wisdom, and called understanding your mother. [56] Therefore I have shown you these things; for there is a reward laid up with the Most High. For it will be that after three more days I will tell you other things, and explain weighty and wondrous matters to you."

[57] Then I got up and walked in the field, giving great glory and praise to the Most High for the wonders that he does[c] from time to time, [58] and because he governs the times and whatever things come to pass in their seasons. And I stayed there three days.

14 On the third day, while I was sitting under an oak, suddenly a voice came out of a bush opposite me and said, "Ezra, Ezra!" [2] And I answered, "Here I am, Lord," and I rose to my feet. [3] Then he said to me, "I revealed myself in a bush and spoke to Moses when my people were in bondage in Egypt; [4] and I sent him and led[d] my people out of Egypt; and I led him up on Mount Sinai, where I kept him with me many days. [5] I told him many wondrous things, and showed him the secrets of the times and declared to him[e] the end of the times. Then I commanded him, saying, [6] 'These words you shall publish openly, and these you shall keep secret.' [7] And now I say to you: [8] Lay up in your heart the signs that I have shown you, the dreams that you have seen, and the interpretations that you have heard; [9] for you shall be taken up from among humankind, and henceforth you shall live with my Son and with those who are like you, until the times are ended. [10] The age has lost its youth, and the times begin to grow old. [11] For the age is divided into twelve parts, and nine[f] of its parts have already passed, [12] as well as half of the tenth part; so two of its parts remain, besides half of the tenth part.[g] [13] Now therefore, set your house in order, and reprove your people; comfort the lowly among them, and instruct those that are wise.[h] And now renounce the life that is corruptible, [14] and put away from you mortal thoughts; cast away from you the burdens of humankind, and divest yourself now of your weak nature; [15] lay to one side the thoughts that are most grievous to you, and hurry to escape from these times. [16] For evils worse than those that you have now seen

[a] Syr: Lat lacks *shall be saved*
[b] Syr: Ethiop *except when his time and his day have come*. Lat lacks *his*
[c] Lat *did*
[d] Syr Arab 1 Arab 2 *he led*
[e] Syr Ethiop Arab Arm: Lat lacks *declared to him*
[f] Cn: Lat Ethiop *ten*
[g] Syr lacks verses 11, 12: Ethiop *For the world is divided into ten parts, and has come to the tenth, and half of the tenth remains. Now . . .*
[h] Lat lacks *and . . . wise*

Deut 29.28). **47:** *Will stop . . . the river*, cf. Isa 11.15–16. **48:** *Within my . . . borders*, presumably the borders of Israel (cf. 9.8; 12.34). This answers the seer's previous questions about the fate of Israel. **52:** *Those who are with him*, perhaps "those who were taken up," 6.26. Cf. 8.51; 14.9. **53–55:** See 7.76–77n.

13.56–58: Conclusion and injunctions. Ezra's giving *great glory and praise* to God shows the change in attitude that he has experienced since his earlier petulance.

14.1–48: The seventh vision (the legend of Ezra and the holy scriptures). **1–18: God speaks to Ezra. 1–2:** *A bush . . . "Here I am,"* cf. Ex 3.4. **2:** *I rose*, in contrast to previous occasions, when Ezra was asked to rise (6.13; 7.2; 10.33). **3:** This chapter explicitly draws a parallel between Ezra and *Moses*. **4:** Cf. Ex 34.28. **5–6:** The biblical Moses was never instructed to *keep* some teachings *secret*. Further, see 12.37–38; 14.26,45–47. **5:** *Secrets . . . the end of the times,* see 3.14n. **9:** *You shall be taken up*, see 6.26n. *My Son*, the Messiah (7.28–29; 13.32,37,52). *Those who are like you*, 8.51; cf. 13.52. **10:** 4.44–50n.; 5.50–55. **11:** See *2 Bar.* 53–70 for a similar division of world history into

happen shall take place hereafter. 17 For the weaker the world becomes through old age, the more shall evils be increased upon its inhabitants. 18 Truth shall go farther away, and falsehood shall come near. For the eagle[a] that you saw in the vision is already hurrying to come."

19 Then I answered and said, "Let me speak[b] in your presence, Lord. 20 For I will go, as you have commanded me, and I will reprove the people who are now living; but who will warn those who will be born hereafter? For the world lies in darkness, and its inhabitants are without light. 21 For your law has been burned, and so no one knows the things which have been done or will be done by you. 22 If then I have found favor with you, send the holy spirit into me, and I will write everything that has happened in the world from the beginning, the things that were written in your law, so that people may be able to find the path, and that those who want to live in the last days may do so."

23 He answered me and said, "Go and gather the people, and tell them not to seek you for forty days. 24 But prepare for yourself many writing tablets, and take with you Sarea, Dabria, Selemia, Ethanus, and Asiel—these five, who are trained to write rapidly; 25 and you shall come here, and I will light in your heart the lamp of understanding, which shall not be put out until what you are about to write is finished. 26 And when you have finished, some things you shall make public, and some you shall deliver in secret to the wise; tomorrow at this hour you shall begin to write."

27 Then I went as he commanded me, and I gathered all the people together, and said, 28 "Hear these words, O Israel. 29 At first our ancestors lived as aliens in Egypt, and they were liberated from there 30 and received the law of life, which they did not keep, which you also have transgressed after them. 31 Then land was given to you for a possession in the land of Zion; but you and your ancestors committed iniquity and did not keep the ways that the Most High commanded you. 32 And since he is a righteous judge, in due time he took from you what he had given. 33 And now you are here, and your people[c] are farther in the interior.[d] 34 If you, then, will rule over your minds and discipline your hearts, you shall be kept alive, and after death you shall obtain mercy. 35 For after death the judgment will come, when we shall live again; and then the names of the righteous shall become manifest, and the deeds of the ungodly shall be disclosed. 36 But let no one come to me now, and let no one seek me for forty days."

37 So I took the five men, as he commanded me, and we proceeded to the field, and remained there. 38 And on the next day a voice called me, saying, "Ezra, open your mouth and drink what I give you to drink." 39 So I opened my mouth, and a full cup was offered to me; it was full of something like water, but its color was like fire. 40 I took it and drank; and when I had drunk it, my heart poured forth understanding, and wisdom increased in my breast, for my spirit retained its memory, 41 and my mouth was opened and was no longer closed. 42 Moreover, the Most High gave understanding to the five men, and

[a] Syr Ethiop Arab Arm: Meaning of Lat uncertain
[b] Most Lat Mss lack *Let me speak*
[c] Lat *brothers*
[d] Syr Ethiop Arm: Lat *are among you*

twelve parts. **16–18:** Mk 13.7–8. **18:** 5.9–11. *The eagle*, chs 11–12.

14.19–26: Ezra's prayer for inspiration to restore the holy scriptures is granted. 20: *Who will warn?*, Ezra's characteristic concern for his fellow Jews finally bears fruit in his desire to rewrite the scriptures. *Without light*, without the light of God's law (cf. Ps 19.8b). **21:** According to one tradition, the *law* had *been burned* by the Babylonians when they destroyed Jerusalem in 586 BCE (4.23). **22:** *The holy spirit* will guide Ezra in rewriting the law. **23:** *Forty days*, cf. Ex 24.18; 34.28; Deut 9.9,18. **26:** *Some things . . . make public*, namely, the rewritten books of the Jewish scriptures. *Some . . . deliver in secret*, namely, some extracanonical books (see 12.37–38; 14.5–6,45–47).

14.27–36: Ezra reproves the people (14.13,20), reminding them of the reasons for their state of exile. **28:** See 9.30; Deut 6.4. **33:** *Farther*, apparently referring to the ten northern tribes (13.39–45).

14.37–48: The revelation of scriptures. 37: *The five men*, v. 24. *The field*, the same one in which Ezra has received the fourth through the seventh visions (see 9.24). **39:** *A full cup* of inspiration, containing the fire of the spirit (v. 22). **42:** *Using characters that they did not know*, in a new script for Hebrew, the Aramaic square

by turns they wrote what was dictated, using characters that they did not know.[a] They sat forty days; they wrote during the daytime, and ate their bread at night. [43] But as for me, I spoke in the daytime and was not silent at night. [44] So during the forty days, ninety-four[b] books were written. [45] And when the forty days were ended, the Most High spoke to me, saying, "Make public the twenty-four[c] books that you wrote first, and let the worthy and the unworthy read them; [46] but keep the seventy that were written last, in order to give them to the wise among your people. [47] For in them is the spring of understanding, the fountain of wisdom, and the river of knowledge." [48] And I did so.[d]

---

15 [e] Speak in the ears of my people the words of the prophecy that I will put in your mouth, says the Lord, [2] and cause them to be written on paper; for they are trustworthy and true. [3] Do not fear the plots against you, and do not be troubled by the unbelief of those who oppose you. [4] For all unbelievers shall die in their unbelief.[f]

[5] Beware, says the Lord, I am bringing evils upon the world, the sword and famine, death and destruction, [6] because iniquity has spread throughout every land, and their harmful doings have reached their limit. [7] Therefore, says the Lord, [8] I will be silent no longer concerning their ungodly acts that they impiously commit, neither will I tolerate their wicked practices. Innocent and righteous blood cries out to me, and the souls of the righteous cry out continually. [9] I will surely avenge them, says the Lord, and will receive to myself all the innocent blood from among them. [10] See, my people are being led like a flock to the slaughter; I will not allow them to live any longer in the land of Egypt, [11] but I will bring them out with a mighty hand and with an uplifted arm, and will strike Egypt with plagues, as before, and will destroy all its land.

[12] Let Egypt mourn, and its foundations, because of the plague of chastisement and castigation that the Lord will bring upon it. [13] Let the farmers that till the ground mourn, because their seed shall fail to grow[g] and their trees shall be ruined by blight and hail and by a terrible tempest. [14] Alas for the world and for those who live in it! [15] For the sword and misery draw near them, and nation shall rise up to fight against nation, with swords in their

[a] Syr Compare Ethiop Arab 2 Arm: Meaning of Lat uncertain
[b] Syr Ethiop Arab 1 Arm: Meaning of Lat uncertain
[c] Syr Arab 1: Lat lacks *twenty-four*
[d] Syr adds *in the seventh year of the sixth week, five thousand years and three months and twelve days after creation. At that time Ezra was caught up, and taken to the place of those who are like him, after he had written all these things. And he was called the scribe of the knowledge of the Most High for ever and ever*. Ethiop Arab 1 Arm have a similar ending
[e] Chapters 15 and 16 (except 15.57-59, which has been found in Greek) are extant only in Lat
[f] Other ancient authorities add *and all who believe shall be saved by their faith*
[g] Lat lacks *to grow*

characters. **45:** *Twenty-four books* is one traditional reckoning of the Hebrew canon: the five books of the Law (Gen, Ex, Lev, Num, Deut), eight books of the Prophets (the former prophets: Josh; Judg; 1 and 2 Sam [as one book]; 1 and 2 Kings [as one book]; the latter prophets: Isa; Jer; Ezek; and the Twelve [as one book]), and eleven books of the Writings (Ps; Prov; Job; Song; Ruth; Lam; Eccl; Esth; Dan; Ezra-Neh [as one book]; 1 and 2 Chr [as one book]). **46:** *The seventy* are esoteric, apocryphal books (see 12.37–38; 14.26). **48:** The original version of 4 Ezra probably ended with an account of Ezra's being taken up into heaven and functioning as a heavenly scribe (see textual note *d;* cf. 8.19bn.; 14.9). This ending was apparently dropped from the Latin version to make way for the prophecies of chs 15–16 when they were added at a later time.

Chapters 15–16 comprise a separate literary composition also known as 6 Ezra (see Introduction).

15.1–4: The commissioning of the prophet, who in this context is not named. See Jer 1.7–9; 26.2; Hab 2.2. **2:** Cf. Rev 21.5,22b. **3:** Cf. Jer 18.20–23.

15.5–16.34: Prediction of worldwide catastrophes. 15.5–27: God will destroy the world because of human sinfulness. 8: *Innocent and righteous blood cries out*, cf. Gen 4.10; Rev 6.9–10. **9:** Cf. Deut 32.43. **10–11:** *Egypt* and the *plagues* are probably symbols for the author's own situation of crisis. Cf. Ps 44.22; Isa 53.7. See also Deut 4.34; 26.8; Jer 51.40. **13:** Joel 1.11. **14:** The destruction will be universal. **15–17:** Cf. 2 Chr 15.5–6. **15:** *Nation* . . .

hands. 16 For there shall be unrest among people; growing strong against one another, they shall in their might have no respect for their king or the chief of their leaders. 17 For a person will desire to go into a city, and shall not be able to do so. 18 Because of their pride the cities shall be in confusion, the houses shall be destroyed, and people shall be afraid. 19 People shall have no pity for their neighbors, but shall make an assault upon[a] their houses with the sword, and plunder their goods, because of hunger for bread and because of great tribulation.

20 See how I am calling together all the kings of the earth to turn to me, says God, from the rising sun and from the south, from the east and from Lebanon; to turn and repay what they have given them. 21 Just as they have done to my elect until this day, so I will do, and will repay into their bosom. Thus says the Lord God: 22 My right hand will not spare the sinners, and my sword will not cease from those who shed innocent blood on earth. 23 And a fire went forth from his wrath, and consumed the foundations of the earth and the sinners, like burnt straw. 24 Alas for those who sin and do not observe my commandments, says the Lord;[b] 25 I will not spare them. Depart, you faithless children! Do not pollute my sanctuary. 26 For God[c] knows all who sin against him; therefore he will hand them over to death and slaughter. 27 Already calamities have come upon the whole earth, and you shall remain in them; God[c] will not deliver you, because you have sinned against him.

28 What a terrifying sight, appearing from the east! 29 The nations of the dragons of Arabia shall come out with many chariots, and from the day that they set out, their hissing shall spread over the earth, so that all who hear them will fear and tremble. 30 Also the Carmonians, raging in wrath, shall go forth like wild boars[d] from the forest, and with great power they shall come and engage them in battle, and with their tusks they shall devastate a portion of the land of the Assyrians with their teeth. 31 And then the dragons,[e] remembering their origin, shall become still stronger; and if they combine in great power and turn to pursue them, 32 then these shall be disorganized and silenced by their power, and shall turn and flee.[f] 33 And from the land of the Assyrians an enemy in ambush shall attack them and destroy one of them, and fear and trembling shall come upon their army, and indecision upon their kings.

34 See the clouds from the east, and from the north to the south! Their appearance is exceedingly threatening, full of wrath and storm. 35 They shall clash against one another and shall pour out a heavy tempest on the earth, and their own tempest;[g] and there shall be blood from the sword as high as a horse's belly 36 and a man's thigh and a camel's hock. 37 And there shall be fear and great trembling on the earth; those who see that wrath shall be horror-stricken, and they shall be seized with trembling. 38 After that, heavy storm clouds shall be stirred up from the south, and from the north, and another part from the west. 39 But the winds from the east shall prevail over the cloud that was[h] raised in wrath, and shall dispel it; and the tempest[g] that was to cause destruction by the east wind shall be driven violently toward the south and west. 40 Great and mighty

[a] Cn: Lat *shall empty*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *God*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *the Lord*
[d] Other ancient authorities lack *like wild boars*
[e] Cn: Lat *dragon*
[f] Other ancient authorities read *turn their face to the north*
[g] Meaning of Lat uncertain
[h] Literally *that he*

against nation, cf. Mk 13.8. **18:** Cf. Lk 21.26. *Confusion* and social unrest is the result of pride; cf. Gen 11.7–8. **20:** Ps 72.11. **21:** Isa 65.6. **22–27:** Woes against *sinners*. **23:** Cf. Jer 4.4.

15.28–33: A vision of warfare in the east. This section may reflect conflicts between Odenathus of Palmyra (*dragons of Arabia*) and Shapur I of Persia (*Carmonians*) that took place on the eastern borders of the Roman Empire between 261 and 267 CE. **30:** *The Carmonians*, from Carmania (Kerman in modern Iran), a southern province of the Parthian Empire.

15.34–63: A vision of destructive storm clouds. The exact historical referents of this section, if any, are un-

clouds, full of wrath and tempest, shall rise and destroy all the earth and its inhabitants, and shall pour out upon every high and lofty place[a] a terrible tempest, [41] fire and hail and flying swords and floods of water, so that all the fields and all the streams shall be filled with the abundance of those waters. [42] They shall destroy cities and walls, mountains and hills, trees of the forests, and grass of the meadows, and their grain. [43] They shall go on steadily to Babylon and blot it out. [44] They shall come to it and surround it; they shall pour out on it the tempest[b] and all its fury;[c] then the dust and smoke shall reach the sky, and all who are around it shall mourn for it. [45] And those who survive shall serve those who have destroyed it.

[46] And you, Asia, who share in the splendor of Babylon and the glory of her person— [47] woe to you, miserable wretch! For you have made yourself like her; you have decked out your daughters for prostitution to please and glory in your lovers, who have always lusted after you. [48] You have imitated that hateful one in all her deeds and devices.[d] Therefore God[e] says, [49] I will send evils upon you: widowhood, poverty, famine, sword, and pestilence, bringing ruin to your houses, bringing destruction and death. [50] And the glory of your strength shall wither like a flower when the heat shall rise that is sent upon you. [51] You shall be weakened like a wretched woman who is beaten and wounded, so that you cannot receive your mighty lovers. [52] Would I have dealt with you so violently, says the Lord, [53] if you had not killed my chosen people continually, exulting and clapping your hands and talking about their death when you were drunk?

[54] Beautify your face! [55] The reward of a prostitute is in your lap; therefore you shall receive your recompense. [56] As you will do to my chosen people, says the Lord, so God will do to you, and will hand you over to adversities. [57] Your children shall die of hunger, and you shall fall by the sword; your cities shall be wiped out, and all your people who are in the open country shall fall by the sword. [58] Those who are in the mountains and highlands[f] shall perish of hunger, and they shall eat their own flesh in hunger for bread and drink their own blood in thirst for water. [59] Unhappy above all others, you shall come and suffer fresh miseries. [60] As they pass by they shall crush the hateful[g] city, and shall destroy a part of your land and abolish a portion of your glory, when they return from devastated Babylon. [61] You shall be broken down by them like stubble,[h] and they shall be like fire to you. [62] They shall devour you and your cities, your land and your mountains; they shall burn with fire all your forests and your fruitful trees. [63] They shall carry your children away captive, plunder your wealth, and mar the glory of your countenance.

16 Woe to you, Babylon and Asia! Woe to you, Egypt and Syria! [2] Bind on sackcloth and cloth of goats' hair,[i] and wail for your children, and lament for them; for your destruction is at hand. [3] The sword has been sent upon you, and who is there to turn it back? [4] A fire has been sent upon you, and who is there to quench it? [5] Calamities have been sent upon you, and who is there to drive

[a] Or *eminent person*
[b] Meaning of Lat uncertain
[c] Other ancient authorities add *until they destroy it to its foundations*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *devices, and you have followed after that one about to gratify her magnates and leaders so that you may be made proud and be pleased by her fornications*
[e] Other ancient authorities read *the Lord*
[f] Gk: Lat omits *and highlands*
[g] Another reading is *idle* or *unprofitable*
[h] Other ancient authorities read *like dry straw*
[i] Other ancient authorities lack *cloth of goats' hair*

clear. **35:** *As high as . . .* , cf. Rev 14.20. **43:** *Babylon*, Rome. **43–44:** Cf. Rev 18.9–10,15; 19.3. **46–63:** Polemic against *Asia*, imitator of the corrupt *splendor of Babylon* (Rome). *Asia*, here and in 16.1, probably designates the whole of Asia Minor. **47–48:** Cf. Ezek 16.33; Rev 14.8; 17.2–5; 18.3. **49:** Cf. Rev 18.7–8. **50:** Cf. Rev 17.16. **51:** Cf. Jer 3.1; etc.; Rev 18.9–10. **52–53:** Cf. Rev 17.6; 18.24. **56:** Cf. Rev 19.2. **57–59:** This section survives in Greek in a parchment fragment from Oxyrhynchus, Egypt. **57:** Cf. Jer 18.21. **60:** Cf. Rev 18.21. *The hateful city*, Babylon/Rome. **63:** Cf. Rev 18.14.

16.1–17: The inevitability of God's judgment (cf. Am 3.3–8). **1–2:** A reprise of ch 15. **2:** *Sackcloth and cloth of*

them away? [6] Can one drive off a hungry lion in the forest, or quench a fire in the stubble once it has started to burn?[a] [7] Can one turn back an arrow shot by a strong archer? [8] The Lord God sends calamities, and who will drive them away? [9] Fire will go forth from his wrath, and who is there to quench it? [10] He will flash lightning, and who will not be afraid? He will thunder, and who will not be terrified? [11] The Lord will threaten, and who will not be utterly shattered at his presence? [12] The earth and its foundations quake, the sea is churned up from the depths, and its waves and the fish with them shall be troubled at the presence of the Lord and the glory of his power. [13] For his right hand that bends the bow is strong, and his arrows that he shoots are sharp and when they are shot to the ends of the world will not miss once. [14] Calamities are sent forth and shall not return until they come over the earth. [15] The fire is kindled, and shall not be put out until it consumes the foundations of the earth. [16] Just as an arrow shot by a mighty archer does not return, so the calamities that are sent upon the earth shall not return. [17] Alas for me! Alas for me! Who will deliver me in those days?

[18] The beginning of sorrows, when there shall be much lamentation; the beginning of famine, when many shall perish; the beginning of wars, when the powers shall be terrified; the beginning of calamities, when all shall tremble. What shall they do, when the calamities come? [19] Famine and plague, tribulation and anguish are sent as scourges for the correction of humankind. [20] Yet for all this they will not turn from their iniquities, or ever be mindful of the scourges. [21] Indeed, provisions will be so cheap upon earth that people will imagine that peace is assured for them, and then calamities shall spring up on the earth—the sword, famine, and great confusion. [22] For many of those who live on the earth shall perish by famine; and those who survive the famine shall die by the sword. [23] And the dead shall be thrown out like dung, and there shall be no one to console them; for the earth shall be left desolate, and its cities shall be demolished. [24] No one shall be left to cultivate the earth or to sow it. [25] The trees shall bear fruit, but who will gather it? [26] The grapes shall ripen, but who will tread them? For in all places there shall be great solitude; [27] a person will long to see another human being, or even to hear a human voice. [28] For ten shall be left out of a city; and two, out of the field, those who have hidden themselves in thick groves and clefts in the rocks. [29] Just as in an olive orchard three or four olives may be left on every tree, [30] or just as, when a vineyard is gathered, some clusters may be left[b] by those who search carefully through the vineyard, [31] so in those days three or four shall be left by those who search their houses with the sword. [32] The earth shall be left desolate, and its fields shall be plowed up,[c] and its roads and all its paths shall bring forth thorns, because no sheep will go along them. [33] Virgins shall mourn because they have no bridegrooms; women shall mourn because they have no husbands; their daughters shall mourn, because they have no help. [34] Their bridegrooms shall be killed in war, and their husbands shall perish of famine.

[35] Listen now to these things, and understand them, you who are servants of the Lord. [36] This is the word of the Lord; receive it and do not disbelieve what the Lord says.[d] [37] The calamities draw near, and are not delayed. [38] Just as a pregnant woman, in the ninth month when the time of her delivery draws near, has great pains around her womb for two or three hours beforehand, but when the child comes forth from the womb, there will not be a moment's delay, [39] so the calamities will not

[a] Other ancient authorities read *fire when dry straw has been set on fire*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *a cluster may remain exposed*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *be for briers*
[d] Cn: Lat *do not believe the gods of whom the Lord speaks*

goats' hair, signs of mourning. **9:** Cf. Jer 4.4. **12–13:** 6.14–16n.; 2 Sam 22.8,16; Pss 7.3; 18.7,14–15; Isa 51.15; Sir 16.19. **14:** Cf. Jer 30.23–24. **15:** Cf. Deut 32.22; 2 Pet 3.10. **17:** A plaintive, personal interlude by the prophet.

16.18–34: Prediction of desolation on the earth. 19: Calamity is for the *correction of humankind*, see Amos 4.6–12. **20:** Cf. Hag 2.17; Rev 9.20–21. **23:** Cf. Jer 9.22. **28:** Cf. Am 5.3. **29–31:** Cf. Isa 17.6. **30:** *Clusters*, see 9.21; 12.42. **32:** Cf. Isa 7.23–25. **33:** Cf. Isa 33.8. **34:** Cf. Joel 1.8.

16.35–78: Exhortation of God's people. 35–52: Advice and instruction. 38–39: 4.40–42; cf. 1 Thess 5.3. **40–**

delay in coming upon the earth, and the world will groan, and pains will seize it on every side.

40 Hear my words, O my people; prepare for battle, and in the midst of the calamities be like strangers on the earth. 41 Let the one who sells be like one who will flee; let the one who buys be like one who will lose; 42 let the one who does business be like one who will not make a profit; and let the one who builds a house be like one who will not live in it; 43 let the one who sows be like one who will not reap; so also the one who prunes the vines, like one who will not gather the grapes; 44 those who marry, like those who will have no children; and those who do not marry, like those who are widowed. 45 Because of this, those who labor, labor in vain; 46 for strangers shall gather their fruits, and plunder their goods, overthrow their houses, and take their children captive; for in captivity and famine they will produce their children.[a] 47 Those who conduct business, do so only to have it plundered; the more they adorn their cities, their houses and possessions, and their persons, 48 the more angry I will be with them for their sins, says the Lord. 49 Just as a respectable and virtuous woman abhors a prostitute, 50 so righteousness shall abhor iniquity, when she decks herself out, and shall accuse her to her face when he comes who will defend the one who searches out every sin on earth.

51 Therefore do not be like her or her works. 52 For in a very short time iniquity will be removed from the earth, and righteousness will reign over us. 53 Sinners must not say that they have not sinned;[b] for God[c] will burn coals of fire on the head of everyone who says, "I have not sinned before God and his glory." 54 The Lord[d] certainly knows everything that people do; he knows their imaginations and their thoughts and their hearts. 55 He said, "Let the earth be made," and it was made, and "Let the heaven be made," and it was made. 56 At his word the stars were fixed in their places, and he knows the number of the stars. 57 He searches the abyss and its treasures; he has measured the sea and its contents; 58 he has confined the sea in the midst of the waters;[e] and by his word he has suspended the earth over the water. 59 He has spread out the heaven like a dome and made it secure upon the waters; 60 he has put springs of water in the desert, and pools on the tops of the mountains, so as to send rivers from the heights to water the earth. 61 He formed human beings and put a heart in the midst of each body, and gave each person breath and life and understanding 62 and the spirit[f] of Almighty God,[g] who surely made all things and searches out hidden things in hidden places. 63 He knows your imaginations and what you think in your hearts! Woe to those who sin and want to hide their sins! 64 The Lord will strictly examine all their works, and will make a public spectacle of all of you. 65 You shall be put to shame when your sins come out before others, and your own iniquities shall stand as your accusers on that day. 66 What will you do? Or how will you hide your sins before the Lord and his glory? 67 Indeed, God[h] is the judge; fear him! Cease from your sins, and forget your iniquities, never to commit them again; so God[h] will lead you forth and deliver you from all tribulation.

68 The burning wrath of a great multitude is kindled over you; they shall drag some of you away and force you to eat what was sacri-

[a] Other ancient authorities read *therefore those who are married may know that they will produce children for captivity and famine*
[b] Other ancient authorities add *or the unjust done injustice*
[c] Lat *for he*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *Lord God*
[e] Other ancient authorities read *confined the world between the waters and the waters*
[f] Or *breath*
[g] Other ancient authorities read *of the Lord Almighty*
[h] Other ancient authorities read *the Lord*

47: Every form of worldly activity is useless. See Deut 28.30–33,38–42; 1 Cor 7.29–31. **46:** Cf. Lev 26.16; Deut 28.33.

16.53–67: The impossibility of hiding sins from God. 53: Cf. Prov 25.22. **54:** Cf. Ps 33.15; Sir 15.18–19; 39.19. **55–62:** This recital of God's acts of creation underscores God's omniscience; cf. Job 38; Sir 43. **55:** See Gen 1.6,9. **56:** Cf. Ps 147.4. **58-59:** Cf. Ps 136.6; Prov 8.29; Isa 44.24. **59:** Cf. Isa 40.22; Ps 104.2. **60:** Cf. Ps 107.35; Isa 41.18. **61-62:** Cf. Job 32.8; 33.4. **62:** Cf. Rev 2.23.

16.68–73: Prediction of persecutions. These descriptions have close parallels with third- and early fourth-

ficed to idols. [69] And those who consent to eat shall be held in derision and contempt, and shall be trampled under foot. [70] For in many places[a] and in neighboring cities there shall be a great uprising against those who fear the Lord. [71] They shall[b] be like maniacs, sparing no one, but plundering and destroying those who continue to fear the Lord.[c] [72] For they shall destroy and plunder their goods, and drive them out of house and home. [73] Then the tested quality of my elect shall be manifest, like gold that is tested by fire.

[74] Listen, my elect ones, says the Lord; the days of tribulation are at hand, but I will deliver you from them. [75] Do not fear or doubt, for God[d] is your guide. [76] You who keep my commandments and precepts, says the Lord God, must not let your sins weigh you down, or your iniquities prevail over you. [77] Woe to those who are choked by their sins and overwhelmed by their iniquities! They are like a field choked with underbrush and its path[e] overwhelmed with thorns, so that no one can pass through. [78] It is shut off and given up to be consumed by fire.

[a] Meaning of Lat uncertain
[b] Other ancient authorities read *For people, because of their misfortunes, shall*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *fear God*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *the Lord*
[e] Other ancient authorities read *seed*

century Roman persecutions of Christians. **68:** Eating food *sacrificed to idols* was forbidden for many Jewish and early Christian groups. See Ex 34.15; Acts 15.20,29; 1 Cor 8.1–13; 10.14–22; Rev 2.14,20; 4 Macc 5.2. **73:** Cf. Zech 13.9; 1 Pet 1.7. **74:** Cf. Dan 12.1.

16.74–78: Concluding instructions to the elect. 77–78: Cf. 2 Sam 23.6–7; Heb 6.8. **77:** Cf. Prov 5.22.

(d) The following book appears in an appendix to the Greek Bible.

4 MACCABEES

NAME

This book is linked with 1 and 2 Maccabees on the basis of its focus on the events also related in them, the conflict between Jewish factions that eventually precipitated the persecution by the Seleucid king Antiochus IV Epiphanes (reigned 175–164 BCE) and the Jewish revolt led by Judas Maccabeus. In 4 Maccabees, however, the family of Judas Maccabeus and its exploits are never mentioned. The focus is rather on the torture and death of the martyrs (see 2 Macc 7). The work was also known as *On the Supremacy of Reason* in the early church (Eusebius, *Hist. eccl.* 3.10.6; Jerome, *De vir. ill.* 13).

CANONICAL STATUS

No modern religious community regards the work as strictly canonical, although it is included in two important copies of the Bible from the fourth and fifth century Christian Church.

AUTHORSHIP

The anonymous author is a Torah-observant Jew who exhibits a greater mastery of Greek language, philosophy, literature, and rhetoric than any canonical author. The church fathers Eusebius and Jerome both attributed the work to Josephus, the first-century CE Jewish historian, though it does not suit his style, greater historical accuracy, and more indulgent attitude toward assimilation.

DATE AND HISTORICAL CONTEXT

Plausible arguments have been made for a date of composition anywhere between 20 and 130 CE, with a date later in that range more likely. Many earlier scholars thought that 4 Maccabees was written in Alexandria in Egypt, the generally assumed place of origin for Hellenistic Jewish literature. But the interest in these martyrs in Antioch (in northern Syria), and the fact that the literary epitaph in 17.9–10 reflects the wording of actual Jewish epitaphs in Cilicia (in southeast Turkey), point to an origin in the northeast Mediterranean basin. The author does not write in response to any known crisis affecting the Jewish community, but instead addresses the everyday challenge of maintaining pride in, and commitment to, the Jewish way of life in an often hostile environment.

LITERARY HISTORY

4 Maccabees is a thoroughly original composition rather than the product of editing various sources. The author has read 2 Macc 3–7, but completely recasts the story in keeping with his own interests and goals. The work appears to have been written, in Greek, for oral delivery on a particular occasion (1.10; 3.20), perhaps during a celebration of Hanukkah, which celebrates the reconsecration of the Temple in 164 BCE, or a festival connected with the giving of the Torah (e.g., the Feast of Weeks).

STRUCTURE AND CONTENTS

The author presents the work as a philosophical demonstration of the popular maxim that reason is able to master the passions, with the added dimension that Torah observance provides the most effective training to achieve this goal. The work has two main parts: a more deductive development of the thesis (1.13–3.18), and a narrative demonstration of the thesis focused on the historical example of nine martyrs (3.19–17.6). The combination of logical argumentation and extended examples is found in other Greek and Roman ethical works. The author prepares the hearers for this two-part structure (1.1,7–8,12), and the two parts of the work are thoroughly integrated, as its outline shows:

1:1–12	**Introduction**
1:13–3:18	**Development of the thesis**
1:13–30a	Definitions of terms and relationships
1:30b–3:18	Evidence from the scriptures
3:19–17:24	**Narrative demonstration of the thesis**
3:19–4:26	Historical background
5:1–6:30	The example of Eleazar
6:31–7:23	Reflection on Eleazar's example
8:1–12:19	The example of the seven brothers
13:1–14:10	Reflection on the seven brothers' example
14:11–17:6	The example of the mother and reflection
17:7–18:24	**Epilogue**
17:7–18:5	Summary of the martyrs' accomplishments and exhortation
18:6–19	The mother's testimony to feminine virtue and additional exhortation
18:20–24	Conclusion

INTERPRETATION

Fourth Maccabees is one of several texts from the Second Temple period interpreting the Jewish law and way of life in terms of Greco-Roman philosophy. Rather than using an allegorical approach, as did Philo of Alexandria, this author casts the Torah as a training program in the right exercise of reason and the cultivation of the cardinal virtues of justice, courage, self-control, and wisdom. It belongs thus to a larger literary movement promoting the Jewish way of life in close dialogue with the Greek cultural milieu.

As with other Jewish writings composed in Greek, it was not influential in the rabbinic Judaism that emerged in the wake of the disastrous revolts against Rome (66–70 and 132–35 CE). While early Christian authors recognized its philosophical dimensions, 4 Maccabees exercised its most enduring influence in the development of Christian martyrology during the second through fourth centuries.

GUIDE TO READING

The author gives several cues concerning how the work is to be read. He uses the language of "demonstration" (1.1; 3.19), suggesting that it can be read as an essay marshaling evidence for an ethical thesis: reason can rise above the passions and choose the path of virtue. He uses the language of praise or eulogy (1.10), suggesting that it can also be read as a celebration of the achievement of particular individuals, whose virtue is therefore to be imitated by all who strive for a praiseworthy remembrance. His exhortations to the audience (1.1, 18.1) and his interest in demonstrating that the Jewish law provides the surest path to ethical virtue add a third dimension, that of the "protreptic speech" that promotes a particular philosophy or way of life as worth following. Finally, the work can be read as resistance literature, both within the frame of the story of the martyrdoms and from the vantage point of an author who has mastered the dominant culture's tools as resources for promoting a minority culture's way of life.

David A. deSilva

1 The subject that I am about to discuss is most philosophical, that is, whether devout reason is sovereign over the emotions. So it is right for me to advise you to pay earnest attention to philosophy. [2] For the subject is essential to everyone who is seeking knowledge, and in addition it includes the praise of the highest virtue—I mean, of course, rational judgment. [3] If, then, it is evident that reason rules over those emotions that hinder self-control, namely, gluttony and lust, [4] it is also clear that it masters the emotions that hinder one from justice, such as malice, and those that stand in the way of courage, namely anger, fear, and pain. [5] Some might perhaps ask, "If reason rules the emotions, why is it not sovereign over forgetfulness and ignorance?" Their attempt at argument is ridiculous![a] [6] For reason does not rule its own emotions, but those that are opposed to justice, courage, and self-control;[b] and it is not for the purpose of destroying them, but so that one may not give way to them.

[7] I could prove to you from many and various examples that reason[c] is dominant over the emotions, [8] but I can demonstrate it best from the noble bravery of those who died for the sake of virtue, Eleazar and the seven brothers and their mother. [9] All of these, by despising sufferings that bring death, demonstrated that reason controls the emotions. [10] On this anniversary[d] it is fitting for me to praise for their virtues those who, with their mother, died for the sake of nobility and goodness, but I would also call them blessed for the honor in which they are held. [11] All people, even their torturers, marveled at their courage and endurance, and they became the cause of the downfall of tyranny over their nation. By their endurance they conquered the tyrant, and thus their native land was purified through them. [12] I shall shortly have an opportunity to speak of this; but, as my custom is, I shall begin by stating my main principle, and then I shall turn to their story, giving glory to the all-wise God.

[13] Our inquiry, accordingly, is whether reason is sovereign over the emotions. [14] We shall decide just what reason is and what emotion is, how many kinds of emotions there are, and whether reason rules over all these.

[a] Or *They are attempting to make my argument ridiculous!*
[b] Other ancient authorities add *and rational judgment*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *devout reason*
[d] Gk *At this time*

1.1–12: Introduction. 1: *Reason . . . emotions*, the Greek word translated "emotions" includes desires and drives, emotional responses, and physical sensations. Greco-Roman philosophical writers regularly promoted mastery of these experiences, or self-mastery, as the path to lead a consistently virtuous life. *Devout reason*, the mind shaped by training in and obedience to the Jewish Torah (2.21–23; 5.19–26; 18.1–2). The author will claim for Judaism the status of a *philosophy* (as do the first-century CE Jewish writers Josephus and Philo), and argue for its superiority for achieving the Greek ideal of virtue. **3–4:** These topics are covered sequentially in 1.30–2.6a, 2.6b–3.18, and 5.1–17.6. **4:** *Anger* is more properly an obstacle to justice, not to courage, and is so treated in 2.6b,16–20. **5–6a:** The first-century CE Roman writer Cicero (*Fin.* 5.1.3.36), as well as Philo (*Migr.* 206), made similar distinctions between voluntary and involuntary defects or passions, holding the individual morally responsible only for the former. **6b:** The author, aware of this larger debate, aligns himself with philosophers promoting mastery and moderation of the emotions, drives, and sensations rather than with hardline Stoics who sought to eliminate such experiences; see also 3.2–18. **7:** *Examples* function here, as in Greek rhetoric generally, as a form of inductive proof. The extreme case of the martyrs will prove the general rule. **8:** See 2 Macc 6.18–7.42. **10:** Those who are most committed to the Jewish law thus achieve *nobility and goodness*, the highest Greek ideal. **11:** The author avoids all mention of the Maccabean revolutionaries throughout the speech and locates the cause for Judea's liberation squarely in the martyrs' effective, nonviolent resistance to imperialism.

1.13–3.18: Development of the thesis. 1.13–30a: Definitions of terms. 13: The author is not, strictly speaking, concerned with *whether*, but rather what enables reason to achieve such mastery. **16–17:** The author shares this definition of *wisdom* with Greco-Roman philosophers but reveals his particular allegiance to the Jewish "philosophy" by naming the Torah, *the law,* as the path to this *wisdom* (Sir 1:26; 19:20; Wis 6:17–20). *Education* (Gk "paideia") was what distinguished the civilized Greeks from the barbarians; the author claims for Torah-

15 Now reason is the mind that with sound
logic prefers the life of wisdom. 16 Wisdom,
next, is the knowledge of divine and human
matters and the causes of these. 17 This, in
turn, is education in the law, by which we
learn divine matters reverently and human
affairs to our advantage. 18 Now the kinds of
wisdom are rational judgment, justice, cour-
age, and self-control. 19 Rational judgment is
supreme over all of these, since by means of
it reason rules over the emotions. 20 The two
most comprehensive types[a] of the emotions
are pleasure and pain; and each of these is by
nature concerned with both body and soul.
21 The emotions of both pleasure and pain have
many consequences. 22 Thus desire precedes
pleasure and delight follows it. 23 Fear precedes
pain and sorrow comes after. 24 Anger, as a per-
son will see by reflecting on this experience,
is an emotion embracing pleasure and pain.
25 In pleasure there exists even a malevolent
tendency, which is the most complex of all the
emotions. 26 In the soul it is boastfulness, cov-
etousness, thirst for honor, rivalry, and malice;
27 in the body, indiscriminate eating, gluttony,
and solitary gormandizing.

28 Just as pleasure and pain are two plants
growing from the body and the soul, so there
are many offshoots of these plants,[b] 29 each
of which the master cultivator, reason,
weeds and prunes and ties up and waters and
thoroughly irrigates, and so tames the jungle
of habits and emotions. 30 For reason is the
guide of the virtues, but over the emotions it
is sovereign.

Observe now, first of all, that rational judg-
ment is sovereign over the emotions by virtue
of the restraining power of self-control. 31 Self-
control, then, is dominance over the desires.
32 Some desires are mental, others are physical,
and reason obviously rules over both. 33 Oth-
erwise, how is it that when we are attracted to
forbidden foods we abstain from the pleasure
to be had from them? Is it not because reason
is able to rule over appetites? I for one think
so. 34 Therefore when we crave seafood and
fowl and animals and all sorts of foods that are
forbidden to us by the law, we abstain because
of domination by reason. 35 For the emotions
of the appetites are restrained, checked by the
temperate mind, and all the impulses of the
body are bridled by reason.

2 And why is it amazing that the de-
sires of the mind for the enjoyment of
beauty are rendered powerless? 2 It is for
this reason, certainly, that the temperate
Joseph is praised, because by mental effort[c]
he overcame sexual desire. 3 For when he
was young and in his prime for intercourse,
by his reason he nullified the frenzy[d] of the
passions. 4 Not only is reason proved to rule
over the frenzied urge of sexual desire, but
also over every desire.[e] 5 Thus the law says,
"You shall not covet your neighbor's wife or

[a] Or *sources*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *these emotions*
[c] Other ancient authorities add *in reasoning*
[d] Or *gadfly*
[e] Or *all covetousness*

observance the status and fruits of such education. **18–19:** The four cardinal virtues of Platonic and Stoic ethics. The elevation of *rational judgment* as supreme emerges from the focus on the contest between reason and the emotions. **20:** The author follows Aristotle's twofold classification of the emotions based on *pleasure* and *pain* (*Rh.* 2.1–11) rather than the fourfold Stoic classification of desire, pain, pleasure, and fear; but see 1.22–23. **24:** The definition of anger as a mixture of pleasure and pain is particularly Aristotelian (*Rh*. 2.2.1–2). **28–29:** The author employs common agricultural analogies for the cultivation of the soul. *Habits*, predispositions particularly associated with the stages of life like youth, adulthood, and old age. The author treats the mastery of these challenges specifically in 2.3; 7.13–14.

1.30b–3.18: Evidence from the scriptures. 1.33–34: The author offers the ability of Jews to observe the dietary restrictions of the Torah (here, Lev 11.4–23,41–42; Deut 14.4–21) as proof of the power of self-control over desire. The commandments, however, also provide the training necessary to develop self-control (2.6b–9; 5.22–26). This represents a significant defense against Gentile ridicule of the Torah's restrictions as barbaric or superstitious (Josephus, *Ag. Ap.* 2.137; Tacitus, *Hist*. 5.4.3; Juvenal, *Sat*. 14.98–99; Plutarch, *Mor*. 169C). **2.2:** *Joseph* (Gen 39.7–12) is a model of temperance also in *T. Jos.* 2.7–10.4. **3:** *Young*, see 1.29n. **5:** Ex 20.17; Deut 5.21. **6a:** Contrast Paul's claim that the commandment awakens sin, rather than proves that sin can be mastered (Rom 7.7–24). **6b:** *Justice* involves giving to each person his or her due, which includes giving

anything that is your neighbor's." [6] In fact, since the law has told us not to covet, I could prove to you all the more that reason is able to control desires.

Just so it is with the emotions that hinder one from justice. [7] Otherwise how could it be that someone who is habitually a solitary gormandizer, a glutton, or even a drunkard can learn a better way, unless reason is clearly lord of the emotions? [8] Thus, as soon as one adopts a way of life in accordance with the law, even though a lover of money, one is forced to act contrary to natural ways and to lend without interest to the needy and to cancel the debt when the seventh year arrives. [9] If one is greedy, one is ruled by the law through reason so that one neither gleans the harvest nor gathers the last grapes from the vineyard.

In all other matters we can recognize that reason rules the emotions. [10] For the law prevails even over affection for parents, so that virtue is not abandoned for their sakes. [11] It is superior to love for one's wife, so that one rebukes her when she breaks the law. [12] It takes precedence over love for children, so that one punishes them for misdeeds. [13] It is sovereign over the relationship of friends, so that one rebukes friends when they act wickedly. [14] Do not consider it paradoxical when reason, through the law, can prevail even over enmity. The fruit trees of the enemy are not cut down, but one preserves the property of enemies from marauders and helps raise up what has fallen.[a]

[15] It is evident that reason rules even[b] the more violent emotions: lust for power, vainglory, boasting, arrogance, and malice. [16] For the temperate mind repels all these malicious emotions, just as it repels anger—for it is sovereign over even this. [17] When Moses was angry with Dathan and Abiram, he did nothing against them in anger, but controlled his anger by reason. [18] For, as I have said, the temperate mind is able to get the better of the emotions, to correct some, and to render others powerless. [19] Why else did Jacob, our most wise father, censure the households of Simeon and Levi for their irrational slaughter of the entire tribe of the Shechemites, saying, "Cursed be their anger"? [20] For if reason could not control anger, he would not have spoken thus. [21] Now when God fashioned human beings, he planted in them emotions and inclinations, [22] but at the same time he enthroned the mind among the senses as a sacred governor over them all. [23] To the mind he gave the law; and one who lives subject to this will rule a kingdom that is temperate, just, good, and courageous.

[a] Or *the beasts that have fallen*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *through*

God God's due by honoring God's right thus to regulate human relationships. **8–9:** *Lend without interest*, Ex 22:25; Deut 23:19–20; *the seventh year*, Deut 15:1–2,9; *neither gleans*, so as to leave something for the poor, Ex 23:10–11; Lev 19:9–10. Specific commandments of the Torah provide ways to remedy specific vices. **10–13:** Commitment to virtue must outweigh even positive emotions like love for one's family and friends (cf. Deut 13.6–11). The author will return to this topic at length (13.19–14.1; 14.13–20; 15.4–23). **12:** See Prov 13.24; 19.18; 23.13–14; 29.15,17. **14:** Ex 23.4–5; Deut 20.19–20,24. Far from being a law that promotes hatred of foreigners (a frequent criticism; Diod. Sic. 34/35.1.1–4; Tacitus, *Hist*. 5.5; Josephus, *Ag. Ap.* 2.121), the Torah teaches kindness and humaneness toward one's enemies. **17:** When challenged by Dathan and Abiram, Moses acted justly by submitting the matter to God's adjudication (Num 16.1–35). **19–20:** Jacob's deathbed censure of Simeon and Levi (Gen 49:7) for their refusal to reconcile with the inhabitants of Shechem after the seduction of their sister Dinah (see Gen 34:1–31) indicates that reason should be expected to master anger. Other Jewish authors praise Simeon and Levi for this act, suggesting that Jacob was at fault (Jdt 8.2–4; *T. Levi* 5–6). **21–23:** The author regards inclinations and emotions to be part of God's design of the human being, and therefore aligns with the schools that seek to master rather than eliminate them. Diligent observance of the Torah promises the enjoyment of the "kingship" familiar from Stoic discourse, the exercise of perfect rule over the passions and enjoyment of the fruits of virtuous self-governance. **2.24–3.2:** See 1.5–6a n. **3.2–5:** See 1.6b n. **6–18:** The story of David's thirst (2 Sam 23.13–17; 1 Chr 11.15–19) provides a proof from example of the position taken in 3.2. David regards the water as *blood* (v. 15) because the soldiers risked their lives. Although he still experiences thirst at the close (hence does not eliminate his craving), David does not allow it to lead him

[24] How is it then, one might say, that if reason is master of the emotions, it does not control forgetfulness and ignorance?

3 [1] But this argument is entirely ridiculous; for it is evident that reason rules not over its own emotions, but over those of the body. [2] No one of us[a] can eradicate that kind of desire, but reason can provide a way for us not to be enslaved by desire. [3] No one of us can eradicate anger from the mind, but reason can help to deal with anger. [4] No one of us can eradicate malice, but reason can fight at our side so that we are not overcome by malice. [5] For reason does not uproot the emotions but is their antagonist.

[6] Now this can be explained more clearly by the story of King David's thirst. [7] David had been attacking the Philistines all day long, and together with the soldiers of his nation had killed many of them. [8] Then when evening fell, he[b] came, sweating and quite exhausted, to the royal tent, around which the whole army of our ancestors had encamped. [9] Now all the rest were at supper, [10] but the king was extremely thirsty, and though springs were plentiful there, he could not satisfy his thirst from them. [11] But a certain irrational desire for the water in the enemy's territory tormented and inflamed him, undid and consumed him. [12] When his guards complained bitterly because of the king's craving, two staunch young soldiers, respecting[c] the king's desire, armed themselves fully, and taking a pitcher climbed over the enemy's ramparts. [13] Eluding the sentinels at the gates, they went searching throughout the enemy camp [14] and found the spring, and from it boldly brought the king a drink. [15] But David,[d] though he was burning with thirst, considered it an altogether fearful danger to his soul to drink what was regarded as equivalent to blood. [16] Therefore, opposing reason to desire, he poured out the drink as an offering to God. [17] For the temperate mind can conquer the drives of the emotions and quench the flames of frenzied desires; [18] it can overthrow bodily agonies even when they are extreme, and by nobility of reason spurn all domination by the emotions.

[19] The present occasion now invites us to a narrative demonstration of temperate reason.

[20] At a time when our ancestors were enjoying profound peace because of their observance of the law and were prospering, so that even Seleucus Nicanor, king of Asia, had both appropriated money to them for the temple service and recognized their commonwealth— [21] just at that time certain persons attempted a revolution against the public harmony and caused many and various disasters.

4 Now there was a certain Simon, a political opponent of the noble and good man, Onias, who then held the high priesthood for life. When despite all manner of slander he was unable to injure Onias in the eyes of the nation, he fled the country with the purpose of betraying it. [2] So he came to Apollonius, governor of Syria, Phoenicia, and Cilicia, and said, [3] "I have come here because I am loyal to the king's government, to report that in the Jerusalem treasuries there are deposited tens of thousands in private funds, which are not the property of the temple but belong to

[a] Gk *you*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *he hurried and*
[c] Or *embarrassed because of*
[d] Gk *he*

into an act of pride (hence he masters his craving). The author modifies the story to underscore the severity of David's thirst and the irrational element of his desire for water beyond his reach (3.10 has no parallel in the biblical narratives).

3.19–17.24: Narrative demonstration of the thesis. 3.19–4.26: Historical background. A highly condensed version of 2 Macc 3:1–6:11. **3.19:** The martyrdoms provide the primary proof from historical example for the author's thesis, a connection made explicit in 6.31–35; 13.1–5; 16.1–2. **20–21:** *Seleucus Nicanor,* Seleucus IV Philopator (king of Syria, 187–175 BCE), not Seleucus I Nicator (305–281). Jerusalem is portrayed as the ideal Greek city-state, exhibiting *peace*, lawful *observance*, and *public harmony* through observing its native way of life; ironically, the Hellenization of the city will destroy this ideal. **4.1:** *Simon*, see 2 Macc 3.4; 4.1–6. *Onias* III was the legitimate high priest (son of the Simon celebrated in Sir 50.1–21). **3:** *Private funds* were deposited in temples for safekeeping. **5:** In 2 Macc 3.7–8 Heliodorus, not Apollonius, is put in command. **7:** Burdensome tribute imposed by Rome led the Seleucid kings to raid several temple treasur-

King Seleucus." [4] When Apollonius learned the details of these things, he praised Simon for his service to the king and went up to Seleucus to inform him of the rich treasure. [5] On receiving authority to deal with this matter, he proceeded quickly to our country accompanied by the accursed Simon and a very strong military force. [6] He said that he had come with the king's authority to seize the private funds in the treasury. [7] The people indignantly protested his words, considering it outrageous that those who had committed deposits to the sacred treasury should be deprived of them, and did all that they could to prevent it. [8] But, uttering threats, Apollonius went on to the temple. [9] While the priests together with women and children were imploring God in the temple to shield the holy place that was being treated so contemptuously, [10] and while Apollonius was going up with his armed forces to seize the money, angels on horseback with lightning flashing from their weapons appeared from heaven, instilling in them great fear and trembling. [11] Then Apollonius fell down half dead in the temple area that was open to all, stretched out his hands toward heaven, and with tears begged the Hebrews to pray for him and propitiate the wrath of the heavenly army. [12] For he said that he had committed a sin deserving of death, and that if he were spared he would praise the blessedness of the holy place before all people. [13] Moved by these words, the high priest Onias, although otherwise he had scruples about doing so, prayed for him so that King Seleucus would not suppose that Apollonius had been overcome by human treachery and not by divine justice. [14] So Apollonius,[a] having been saved beyond all expectations, went away to report to the king what had happened to him.

[15] When King Seleucus died, his son Antiochus Epiphanes succeeded to the throne, an arrogant and terrible man, [16] who removed Onias from the priesthood and appointed Onias's[b] brother Jason as high priest. [17] Jason[c] agreed that if the office were conferred on him he would pay the king three thousand six hundred sixty talents annually. [18] So the king appointed him high priest and ruler of the nation. [19] Jason[c] changed the nation's way of life and altered its form of government in complete violation of the law, [20] so that not only was a gymnasium constructed at the very citadel[d] of our native land, but also the temple service was abolished. [21] The divine justice was angered by these acts and caused Antiochus himself to make war on them. [22] For when he was warring against Ptolemy in Egypt, he heard that a rumor of his death had spread and that the people of Jerusalem

[a] Gk *he*
[b] Gk *his*
[c] Gk *He*
[d] Or *high place*

ies (see 1 Macc 6.9–13; 2 Macc 1.11–17; 9.1–2,13–16), despite the taboos against sacrilege. **9–12:** As long as the people adhere to the Torah, they enjoy God's patronage and protection from their enemies (compare 3 Macc 1.8–2.24). **13:** Perhaps better, "Moved by these words, although in other respects concerned so that King Seleucus would not suppose that Apollonius had been overcome . . . , the high priest Onias prayed for him." Onias is not scrupulous about offering prayers for Apollonius. **15:** *Antiochus* IV *Epiphanes* (reigned 175–164 BCE) was in fact the son of Antiochus III (the Great) and the brother of *Seleucus* IV. **16–17:** *Jason*, Onias's younger brother and an avid reformer. The (exaggerated) sum he offers as a bribe signals the breadth of his support among Jerusalem's elite. **19–20:** Like many cities following Alexander the Great's conquests in the late fourth century BCE, Jerusalem's plan is now altered to conform to the pattern of the Greek city. *Gymnasium*, a center for Greek education and enculturation as well as athletic contests. According to 2 Macc 4.10–15, *the temple service* was not abolished under Jason, only neglected. **21:** God uses the Gentile king Antiochus IV to punish the people who turned from the covenant (see Deut 28.49–50), as for example he had used Nebuchadnezzar in 586 BCE. The author affirms Deuteronomy's theology of history, encouraging the hearers to follow the Torah as the means to advance the peace and prosperity of the Jewish community. **22–23:** *Ptolemy* VI Philometor (180–145 BCE). 2 Macc 5.5–12 cites rumors of an insurrection in Jerusalem as the reason for Antiochus's response. This author, by contrast, portrays Antiochus's persecution of the Jews as an irrational, heated response to their joy at the rumor of his death; cf. 8.2; 9.10–11.

had rejoiced greatly. He speedily marched against them, [23] and after he had plundered them he issued a decree that if any of them were found observing the ancestral law they should die. [24] When, by means of his decrees, he had not been able in any way to put an end to the people's observance of the law, but saw that all his threats and punishments were being disregarded [25] —even to the extent that women, because they had circumcised their sons, were thrown headlong from heights along with their infants, though they had known beforehand that they would suffer this— [26] when, I say, his decrees were despised by the people, he himself tried through torture to compel everyone in the nation to eat defiling foods and to renounce Judaism.

5 The tyrant Antiochus, sitting in state with his counselors on a certain high place, and with his armed soldiers standing around him, [2] ordered the guards to seize each and every Hebrew and to compel them to eat pork and food sacrificed to idols. [3] If any were not willing to eat defiling food, they were to be broken on the wheel and killed. [4] When many persons had been rounded up, one man, Eleazar by name, leader of the flock, was brought[a] before the king. He was a man of priestly family, learned in the law, advanced in age, and known to many in the tyrant's court because of his philosophy.[b]

[5] When Antiochus saw him he said, [6] "Before I begin to torture you, old man, I would advise you to save yourself by eating pork, [7] for I respect your age and your gray hairs. Although you have had them for so long a time, it does not seem to me that you are a philosopher when you observe the religion of the Jews. [8] When nature has granted it to us, why should you abhor eating the very excellent meat of this animal? [9] It is senseless not to enjoy delicious things that are not shameful, and wrong to spurn the gifts of nature. [10] It seems to me that you will do something even more senseless if, by holding a vain opinion concerning the truth, you continue to despise me to your own hurt. [11] Will you not awaken from your foolish philosophy, dispel your futile reasonings, adopt a mind appropriate to your years, philosophize according to the truth of what is beneficial, [12] and have compassion on your old age by honoring my humane advice? [13] For consider this: if there is some power watching over this religion of yours, it will excuse you from any transgression that arises out of compulsion."

[14] When the tyrant urged him in this fashion to eat meat unlawfully, Eleazar asked to have a word. [15] When he had received permission to speak, he began to address the people as follows: [16] "We, O Antiochus, who have been persuaded to govern our lives by the divine law, think that there is no compulsion more powerful than our obedience to the law. [17] Therefore we consider that we should not transgress it in any respect. [18] Even if, as you suppose, our law were not truly divine and we had wrongly held it to be divine, not even so would it be right for us to invalidate our reputation for piety. [19] Therefore do not suppose that it would be a petty sin if we were to eat defiling food; [20] to transgress the law in

[a] Or *was the first of the flock to be brought*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *his advanced age*

5.1–6.30: The example of Eleazar. 5.1–4: Antiochus is presented throughout the book as a stereotypical *tyrant*, inventing cruel torments, displaying arrogance, and suppressing time-honored, local laws. The scene of the tyrant confronting the sage is familiar in Greco-Roman philosophical texts, except that here an aged Jewish priest is cast in the role of the sage. **5–38:** The "speech duel" between Antiochus and Eleazar gives the author an opportunity to state and refute the dominant culture's case against Judaism. **7–8:** Philosophers claimed that the universal law of *nature* trumped the imperfect, particularistic laws of any one people. The prohibition of pork (see Lev 11.7; Deut 14.8) was frequently targeted for ridicule as a barbaric peculiarity that flew in the face of nature. **9:** Antiochus critiques the avoidance of pork as unjust, as it shows ingratitude toward *the gifts of nature*, and a sign of ignorance concerning what is truly permissible and what is truly shameful. **13:** Transgression of a law under compulsion was excusable according to Greek philosophers. **15:** Eleazar addresses not only the tyrant, but also the audience, which includes the other Jewish captives. He seeks as much to encourage the latter as to answer the former. **19–21:** Like the Stoics, Eleazar considers all sins to be *of equal seriousness* since all show

matters either small or great is of equal seriousness, [21] for in either case the law is equally despised. [22] You scoff at our philosophy as though living by it were irrational, [23] but it teaches us self-control, so that we master all pleasures and desires, and it also trains us in courage, so that we endure any suffering willingly; [24] it instructs us in justice, so that in all our dealings we act impartially,[a] and it teaches us piety, so that with proper reverence we worship the only living God.

[25] "Therefore we do not eat defiling food; for since we believe that the law was established by God, we know that in the nature of things the Creator of the world in giving us the law has shown sympathy toward us. [26] He has permitted us to eat what will be most suitable for our lives,[b] but he has forbidden us to eat meats that would be contrary to this. [27] It would be tyrannical for you to compel us not only to transgress the law, but also to eat in such a way that you may deride us for eating defiling foods, which are most hateful to us. [28] But you shall have no such occasion to laugh at me, [29] nor will I transgress the sacred oaths of my ancestors concerning the keeping of the law, [30] not even if you gouge out my eyes and burn my entrails. [31] I am not so old and cowardly as not to be young in reason on behalf of piety. [32] Therefore get your torture wheels ready and fan the fire more vehemently! [33] I do not so pity my old age as to break the ancestral law by my own act. [34] I will not play false to you, O law that trained me, nor will I renounce you, beloved self-control. [35] I will not put you to shame, philosophical reason, nor will I reject you, honored priesthood and knowledge of the law. [36] You, O king,[c] shall not defile the honorable mouth of my old age, nor my long life lived lawfully. [37] My ancestors will receive me as pure, as one who does not fear your violence even to death. [38] You may tyrannize the ungodly, but you shall not dominate my religious principles, either by words or through deeds."

6 When Eleazar in this manner had made eloquent response to the exhortations of the tyrant, the guards who were standing by dragged him violently to the instruments of torture. [2] First they stripped the old man, though he remained adorned with the gracefulness of his piety. [3] After they had tied his arms on each side they flogged him, [4] while a herald who faced him cried out, "Obey the king's commands!" [5] But the courageous and noble man, like a true Eleazar, was unmoved, as though being tortured in a dream; [6] yet while the old man's eyes were raised to heaven, his flesh was being torn by scourges, his blood flowing, and his sides were being cut to pieces. [7] Although he fell to the ground because his body could not endure the agonies, he kept his reason upright and unswerving. [8] One of the cruel guards rushed at him and began to kick him in the side to make him get up again after he fell. [9] But he bore the pains and scorned the punishment and endured the tortures. [10] Like a noble athlete the old man, while being beaten, was victorious over his torturers; [11] in fact, with his face bathed in sweat, and gasping heavily for breath, he amazed even his torturers by his courageous spirit.

[a] Or *so that we hold in balance all our habitual inclinations*
[b] Or *souls*
[c] Gk lacks *O king*

equal affront to God, whether or not an outsider like Antiochus considers the particular issue weighty. **22–24:** Eleazar counters Antiochus's challenge to Judaism's status as a worthy philosophy (5.7,11) with the functional proof that obedience to the Torah nurtures the cardinal virtues prized by Platonic and Stoic philosophers (*piety* replaces "rational judgment" here; see 1.18). **25–26:** *In the nature of things*, lit., "according to nature." Stoics sought to live in accordance with the divine order inherent in creation. Eleazar counters Antiochus's criticism that the Torah contradicts nature (5.8–9) by affirming the Torah's origin in the mind of the *Creator* of nature, thus providing an even more reliable guide to virtue. **29:** *Sacred oaths*, Ex 24.3,7; Josh 24.18,21,24. **38:** Eleazar exhibits the freedom of the sage prized by Stoic philosophy. **6.2:** Eleazar's honor was not diminished by the degrading treatment he received. **5:** *Like a true Eleazar*, "Eleazar" means "God has helped," hence, "like someone truly helped by God." **7:** Keeping *reason upright* is the goal of the sage, even as it is for Eleazar. **10:** The victim becomes the victor by being able to endure, without capitulation, more than the torturers can inflict. Comparing Eleazar to *a noble athlete* reflects widespread philosophical usage of athletic imagery to transform passive

12 At that point, partly out of pity for his
old age, 13 partly out of sympathy from their
acquaintance with him, partly out of admiration for his endurance, some of the king's
retinue came to him and said, 14 "Eleazar, why
are you so irrationally destroying yourself
through these evil things? 15 We will set before you some cooked meat; save yourself by
pretending to eat pork."

16 But Eleazar, as though more bitterly tormented by this counsel, cried out: 17 "Never
may we, the children of Abraham,[a] think so
basely that out of cowardice we feign a role
unbecoming to us! 18 For it would be irrational
if having lived in accordance with truth up
to old age and having maintained in accordance with law the reputation of such a life,
we should now change our course 19 and
ourselves become a pattern of impiety to the
young by setting them an example in the eating of defiling food. 20 It would be shameful if
we should survive for a little while and during that time be a laughingstock to all for our
cowardice, 21 and be despised by the tyrant
as unmanly by not contending even to death
for our divine law. 22 Therefore, O children of
Abraham, die nobly for your religion! 23 And
you, guards of the tyrant, why do you delay?"

24 When they saw that he was so courageous in the face of the afflictions, and that he
had not been changed by their compassion,
the guards brought him to the fire. 25 There
they burned him with maliciously contrived
instruments, threw him down, and poured
stinking liquids into his nostrils. 26 When he
was now burned to his very bones and about
to expire, he lifted up his eyes to God and said,
27 "You know, O God, that though I might have
saved myself, I am dying in burning torments
for the sake of the law. 28 Be merciful to your
people, and let our punishment suffice for
them. 29 Make my blood their purification, and
take my life in exchange for theirs." 30 After he
said this, the holy man died nobly in his tortures; even in the tortures of death he resisted,
by virtue of reason, for the sake of the law.

31 Admittedly, then, devout reason is sovereign over the emotions. 32 For if the emotions
had prevailed over reason, we would have
testified to their domination. 33 But now that
reason has conquered the emotions, we
properly attribute to it the power to govern. 34 It is right for us to acknowledge the
dominance of reason when it masters even
external agonies. It would be ridiculous to
deny it.[b] 35 I have proved not only that reason
has mastered agonies, but also that it masters
pleasures and in no respect yields to them.

7 For like a most skillful pilot, the reason
of our father Eleazar steered the ship of
religion over the sea of the emotions, 2 and
though buffeted by the stormings of the
tyrant and overwhelmed by the mighty waves
of tortures, 3 in no way did he turn the rudder
of religion until he sailed into the haven of
immortal victory. 4 No city besieged with
many ingenious war machines has ever held
out as did that most holy man. Although his
sacred life was consumed by tortures and
racks, he conquered the besiegers with the
shield of his devout reason. 5 For in setting
his mind firm like a jutting cliff, our father
Eleazar broke the maddening waves of the
emotions. 6 O priest, worthy of the priesthood, you neither defiled your sacred teeth

[a] Or *O children of Abraham*
[b] Syr: Meaning of Gk uncertain

endurance into active resistance. This imagery recurs in 9.23; 11.20; 12.11,14; 13.13,15; 16.16; 17.11–16. **12–23:** See 2 Macc 6.21–22. Eleazar's rejection of the ruse recalls Socrates' rejection of the escape planned by his friends. Neither consented to purchasing a few more years of life at the cost of preserving the virtue of that life unblemished (5.36; 6.18–21; Plato, *Cri.* 52A–54C). Eleazar cannot maintain his private integrity without also preserving his public witness and example. **28–29:** The author combines the belief that a display of covenant obedience would bring an end to God's wrath upon the disobedient nation (Deut 30.1–5) with the sacrificial practice of using a victim's blood to atone for a life (Lev 17.11) to interpret the significance of the martyrdoms (cf. 17.21–22). This is an instructive parallel development to early Christian reflection on the death of Jesus as an act of atonement for the unrighteous. Greek drama also frequently features voluntary deaths as sacrifices that allow others to live or a nation to survive.

6.31–7.23: Reflection on Eleazar's example. 6.31–35: See 3.19n. **7.1–5:** The author uses a series of images familiar from popular ethical philosophy to praise Eleazar's achievement of mastery over emotions and sensa-

nor profaned your stomach, which had room only for reverence and purity, by eating defiling foods. [7] O man in harmony with the law and philosopher of divine life! [8] Such should be those who are administrators of the law, shielding it with their own blood and noble sweat in sufferings even to death. [9] You, father, strengthened our loyalty to the law through your glorious endurance, and you did not abandon the holiness that you praised, but by your deeds you made your words of divine[a] philosophy credible. [10] O aged man, more powerful than tortures; O elder, fiercer than fire; O supreme king over the passions, Eleazar! [11] For just as our father Aaron, armed with the censer, ran through the multitude of the people and conquered the fiery[b] angel, [12] so the descendant of Aaron, Eleazar, though being consumed by the fire, remained unmoved in his reason. [13] Most amazing, indeed, though he was an old man, his body no longer tense and firm,[c] his muscles flabby, his sinews feeble, he became young again [14] in spirit through reason; and by reason like that of Isaac he rendered the many-headed rack ineffective. [15] O man of blessed age and of venerable gray hair and of law-abiding life, whom the faithful seal of death has perfected!

[16] If, therefore, because of piety an aged man despised tortures even to death, most certainly devout reason is governor of the emotions. [17] Some perhaps might say, "Not all have full command of their emotions, because not all have prudent reason." [18] But as many as attend to religion with a whole heart, these alone are able to control the passions of the flesh, [19] since they believe that they, like our patriarchs Abraham and Isaac and Jacob, do not die to God, but live to God. [20] No contradiction therefore arises when some persons appear to be dominated by their emotions because of the weakness of their reason. [21] What person who lives as a philosopher by the whole rule of philosophy, and trusts in God, [22] and knows that it is blessed to endure any suffering for the sake of virtue, would not be able to overcome the emotions through godliness? [23] For only the wise and courageous are masters of their emotions.

8 For this is why even the very young, by following a philosophy in accordance with devout reason, have prevailed over the most painful instruments of torture. [2] For when the tyrant was conspicuously defeated in his first attempt, being unable to compel an aged man to eat defiling foods, then in violent rage he commanded that others of the Hebrew captives be brought, and that any who ate defiling food would be freed after eating, but if any were to refuse, they would be tortured even more cruelly.

[3] When the tyrant had given these orders, seven brothers—handsome, modest, noble, and accomplished in every way—were brought before him along with their aged mother. [4] When the tyrant saw them, grouped about their mother as though a chorus, he was pleased with them. And struck by

[a] Other ancient authorities lack *divine*
[b] Other ancient authorities lack *fiery*
[c] Gk *the tautness of the body already loosed*

tions. **6:** Far from devaluing his body, Eleazar honors it in his choice of endurance over capitulation. **9:** Consistency in word and speech is the test of the value of one's *philosophy*, or way of life. **11–12:** *Aaron*, see Num 16.41–50; Wis 18.20–25. Both priests courageously took a stand in a place of great danger for the sake of the nation in order to perform an act of expiation. **14:** *Isaac,* see Gen 22.1–19. **15:** *The faithful seal of death . . . perfected*, because Eleazar preserved his honor and virtue intact to the end, and they are now unassailable forever. **18:** *Religion*, specifically Judaism, is here affirmed as essential to achieving the ethical goal of the Greco-Roman philosophers. **19:** Freedom from the fear of death is essential if one is to be free to make the sacrifices that virtue sometimes demands.

8.1–12.19: The example of the seven brothers. 8.2: *Conspicuously defeated,* Antiochus is aware that the martyrs' effective resistance unto death publicly shames him. *In violent rage,* Antiochus fails to master his own emotions, giving them instead the upper hand. The Greco-Syrian king falls short of the Greek ideal so fully embodied by the non-Greek martyrs (see 9.10–11), and is indeed unfit to rule others (Plato, *Gorg*. 491D; Dio Chrys., *Or*. 62.1). **3–5:** Embodying the Greek ideal of male beauty and skill, the brothers do not lack the potential for success in the Greek world. **4:** *Chorus*, an image from the Greek stage, often speaking in unison and represent-

their appearance and nobility, he smiled at them, and summoned them nearer and said, [5] "Young men, with favorable feelings I admire each and every one of you, and greatly respect the beauty and the number of such brothers. Not only do I advise you not to display the same madness as that of the old man who has just been tortured, but I also exhort you to yield to me and enjoy my friendship. [6] Just as I am able to punish those who disobey my orders, so I can be a benefactor to those who obey me. [7] Trust me, then, and you will have positions of authority in my government if you will renounce the ancestral tradition of your national life. [8] Enjoy your youth by adopting the Greek way of life and by changing your manner of living. [9] But if by disobedience you rouse my anger, you will compel me to destroy each and every one of you with dreadful punishments through tortures. [10] Therefore take pity on yourselves. Even I, your enemy, have compassion for your youth and handsome appearance. [11] Will you not consider this, that if you disobey, nothing remains for you but to die on the rack?"

[12] When he had said these things, he ordered the instruments of torture to be brought forward so as to persuade them out of fear to eat the defiling food. [13] When the guards had placed before them wheels and joint-dislocators, rack and hooks[a] and catapults[b] and caldrons, braziers and thumbscrews and iron claws and wedges and bellows, the tyrant resumed speaking: [14] "Be afraid, young fellows; whatever justice you revere will be merciful to you when you transgress under compulsion."

[15] But when they had heard the inducements and saw the dreadful devices, not only were they not afraid, but they also opposed the tyrant with their own philosophy, and by their right reasoning nullified his tyranny. [16] Let us consider, on the other hand, what arguments might have been used if some of them had been cowardly and unmanly. Would they not have been the following? [17] "O wretches that we are and so senseless! Since the king has summoned and exhorted us to accept kind treatment if we obey him, [18] why do we take pleasure in vain resolves and venture upon a disobedience that brings death? [19] O men and brothers, should we not fear the instruments of torture and consider the threats of torments, and give up this vain opinion and this arrogance that threatens to destroy us? [20] Let us take pity on our youth and have compassion on our mother's age; [21] and let us seriously consider that if we disobey we are dead! [22] Also, divine justice will excuse us for fearing the king when we are under compulsion. [23] Why do we banish ourselves from this most pleasant life and deprive ourselves of this delightful world? [24] Let us not struggle against compulsion[c] or take hollow pride in being put to the rack. [25] Not even the law itself would arbitrarily put us to death for fearing the instruments of torture. [26] Why does such contentiousness excite us and such a fatal stubbornness please us, when we can live in peace if we obey the king?"

[27] But the youths, though about to be tortured, neither said any of these things nor even seriously considered them. [28] For they were contemptuous of the emotions and sovereign over agonies, [29] so that as soon as the tyrant had ceased counseling them to eat defiling food, all with one voice together, as from one mind, said:

9 "Why do you delay, O tyrant? For we are ready to die rather than transgress our ancestral commandments; [2] we are obviously putting our forebears to shame unless we should practice ready obedience to the

[a] Meaning of Gk uncertain
[b] Here and elsewhere in 4 Macc an instrument of torture
[c] Or *fate*

ing a single role. The image underscores their harmonious agreement (see 8.29–9.9; 13.8–18; 17.23). **5:** *Friendship* here indicates personal patronage and the promise of holding offices in the king's government (see 8.7). **9:** *You will compel me*, the king is less free than his victims, who cannot be compelled by his most coercive tortures. **14:** See 5.13n. **16–26:** The author creates a hypothetical response to throw the brothers' actual resolve into sharper relief. While it may seem reasonable enough, it is also laced with expressions of cowardice found elsewhere (e.g., Aristotle, *Virt*. 6.5–6; Sophocles, *Ant*. 58–68). If members of the audience have similarly rationalized the loosening of adherence to the Torah's commandments, the effect will be to shame and challenge them. **29:**

law and to Moses[a] our counselor. [3] Tyrant and counselor of lawlessness, in your hatred for us do not pity us more than we pity ourselves.[b] [4] For we consider this pity of yours, which insures our safety through transgression of the law, to be more grievous than death itself. [5] You are trying to terrify us by threatening us with death by torture, as though a short time ago you learned nothing from Eleazar. [6] And if the aged men of the Hebrews because of their religion lived piously[c] while enduring torture, it would be even more fitting that we young men should die despising your coercive tortures, which our aged instructor also overcame. [7] Therefore, tyrant, put us to the test; and if you take our lives because of our religion, do not suppose that you can injure us by torturing us. [8] For we, through this severe suffering and endurance, shall have the prize of virtue and shall be with God, on whose account we suffer; [9] but you, because of your bloodthirstiness toward us, will deservedly undergo from the divine justice eternal torment by fire."

[10] When they had said these things, the tyrant was not only indignant, as at those who are disobedient, but also infuriated, as at those who are ungrateful. [11] Then at his command the guards brought forward the eldest, and having torn off his tunic, they bound his hands and arms with thongs on each side. [12] When they had worn themselves out beating him with scourges, without accomplishing anything, they placed him upon the wheel. [13] When the noble youth was stretched out around this, his limbs were dislocated, [14] and with every member disjointed he denounced the tyrant, saying, [15] "Most abominable tyrant, enemy of heavenly justice, savage of mind, you are mangling me in this manner, not because I am a murderer, or as one who acts impiously, but because I protect the divine law." [16] And when the guards said, "Agree to eat so that you may be released from the tortures," [17] he replied, "You abominable lackeys, your wheel is not so powerful as to strangle my reason. Cut my limbs, burn my flesh, and twist my joints; [18] through all these tortures I will convince you that children of the Hebrews alone are invincible where virtue is concerned." [19] While he was saying these things, they spread fire under him, and while fanning the flames[b] they tightened the wheel further. [20] The wheel was completely smeared with blood, and the heap of coals was being quenched by the drippings of gore, and pieces of flesh were falling off the axles of the machine. [21] Although the ligaments joining his bones were already severed, the courageous youth, worthy of Abraham, did not groan, [22] but as though transformed by fire into immortality, he nobly endured the rackings. [23] "Imitate me, brothers," he said. "Do not leave your post in my struggle[d] or renounce our courageous family ties. [24] Fight the sacred and noble battle for religion. Thereby the just Providence of our ancestors may become merciful to our nation and take vengeance on the accursed tyrant." [25] When he had said this, the saintly youth broke the thread of life.

[26] While all were marveling at his courageous spirit, the guards brought in the next eldest, and after fitting themselves with iron gauntlets having sharp hooks, they bound

[a] Other ancient authorities read *knowledge*
[b] Meaning of Gk uncertain
[c] Other ancient authorities read *died*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *post forever*

With one voice, see 8.4n. **9.6:** *More fitting*, because the young were deemed stronger and more courageous than the elderly. **7:** The ideal sage acknowledges no injury from outside, but fears only self-inflicted injury to his or her moral determination. **8–9:** Expectation of reward or punishment after death underlies the martyrs' commitment to the Law throughout the work. **10–11:** See 8.2n. **12:** See 6.10n. **15:** The first brother refuses to accept the deviant status that the tortures are meant to inscribe on him: he is in the right, and the imperial power is acting unjustly. **17–18:** The sage refuses to allow physical maltreatment to give an enemy leverage against his or her will, thus remaining *invincible* (also 11.21,27). The claim that *children of the Hebrews alone* achieve the Greek philosophical ideal encourages the audience to prize their own distinctive heritage in the context of Greek cultural imperialism (see 7.18–19). **21:** *Did not groan*, a familiar topic of fortitude (e.g., Plutarch, *Mor.* 234A, 498E). **23–24:** Military imagery transforms the endurance of degrading torture into the battle line against the enemy that must be held at all costs, hence an opportunity to display courage. **25:** *Thread of life*, an image from Greek

him to the torture machine and catapult.
27 Before torturing him, they inquired if he
were willing to eat, and they heard his noble
decision.[a] 28 These leopard-like beasts tore out
his sinews with the iron hands, flayed all his
flesh up to his chin, and tore away his scalp.
But he steadfastly endured this agony and
said, 29 "How sweet is any kind of death for the
religion of our ancestors!" 30 To the tyrant he
said, "Do you not think, you most savage ty-
rant, that you are being tortured more than I,
as you see the arrogant design of your tyranny
being defeated by our endurance for the sake
of religion? 31 I lighten my pain by the joys that
come from virtue, 32 but you suffer torture by
the threats that come from impiety. You will
not escape, you most abominable tyrant, the
judgments of the divine wrath."

10 When he too had endured a glorious
death, the third was led in, and many
repeatedly urged him to save himself by tast-
ing the meat. 2 But he shouted, "Do you not
know that the same father begot me as well
as those who died, and the same mother bore
me, and that I was brought up on the same
teachings? 3 I do not renounce the noble kin-
ship that binds me to my brothers."[b] 5 En-
raged by the man's boldness, they disjointed
his hands and feet with their instruments,
dismembering him by prying his limbs from
their sockets, 6 and breaking his fingers and
arms and legs and elbows. 7 Since they were
not able in any way to break his spirit,[c] they
abandoned the instruments[d] and scalped him
with their fingernails in a Scythian fashion.
8 They immediately brought him to the wheel,
and while his vertebrae were being dislocated
by this, he saw his own flesh torn all around
and drops of blood flowing from his entrails.
9 When he was about to die, he said, 10 "We,
most abominable tyrant, are suffering be-
cause of our godly training and virtue, 11 but
you, because of your impiety and bloodthirst-
iness, will undergo unceasing torments."

12 When he too had died in a manner
worthy of his brothers, they dragged in the
fourth, saying, 13 "As for you, do not give way
to the same insanity as your brothers, but
obey the king and save yourself." 14 But he said
to them, "You do not have a fire hot enough
to make me play the coward. 15 No—by the
blessed death of my brothers, by the eternal
destruction of the tyrant, and by the everlast-
ing life of the pious, I will not renounce our
noble family ties. 16 Contrive tortures, tyrant,
so that you may learn from them that I am
a brother to those who have just now been
tortured." 17 When he heard this, the blood-
thirsty, murderous, and utterly abominable
Antiochus gave orders to cut out his tongue.
18 But he said, "Even if you remove my organ
of speech, God hears also those who are mute.
19 See, here is my tongue; cut it off, for in spite
of this you will not make our reason speech-
less. 20 Gladly, for the sake of God, we let our
bodily members be mutilated. 21 God will visit
you swiftly, for you are cutting out a tongue
that has been melodious with divine hymns."

11 When he too died, after being cruelly
tortured, the fifth leaped up, saying,
2 "I will not refuse, tyrant, to be tortured for
the sake of virtue. 3 I have come of my own
accord, so that by murdering me you will incur
punishment from the heavenly justice for even

[a] Other ancient authorities read *having heard his noble decision, they tore him to shreds*
[b] Other ancient authorities add verse 4, *So if you have any instrument of torture, apply it to my body; for you cannot touch my soul, even if you wish."*
[c] Gk *to strangle him*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *they tore off his skin*

mythology. **28:** The representatives of Greek civilization become more and more like barbarians and *beasts* as the speech progresses. **29:** Compare Horace, *Odes* 3.2.13: "Sweet and fitting it is to die for one's country." **31–32:** Plato taught that virtue brought its own sweetness, and vice its own punishment (*Gorg*. 470E–471A; 507B; also Plutarch, *Mor*. 498C–E). **10.5:** *Boldness* was an ideal of Greek democracy, especially important as a means of critique where democracy was threatened or replaced by tyranny or monarchy. *Enraged*, Antiochus's lackeys share in the king's failure to master their own passions (8.2; 9.10–11). **7:** The representatives of Greek culture show themselves to be the true barbarians; the Scythians, in the vicinity of the Black Sea, had a reputation for cruelty (2 Macc 4.47; 3 Macc 7.5). **15:** The fourth brother rejects the torturers' assessment of his brothers' conduct as "madness" (Gk "manian," 10.13), asserting instead that they died a *blessed* (Gk "makarion") death because they maintained their integrity to the end. **11.1, 3:** *Of my own accord*, by seizing what little initiative is available, the

more crimes. [4] Hater of virtue, hater of humankind, for what act of ours are you destroying us in this way? [5] Is it because[a] we revere the Creator of all things and live according to his virtuous law? [6] But these deeds deserve honors, not tortures."[b] [9] While he was saying these things, the guards bound him and dragged him to the catapult; [10] they tied him to it on his knees, and fitting iron clamps on them, they twisted his back[c] around the wedge on the wheel,[d] so that he was completely curled back like a scorpion, and all his members were disjointed. [11] In this condition, gasping for breath and in anguish of body, [12] he said, "Tyrant, they are splendid favors that you grant us against your will, because through these noble sufferings you give us an opportunity to show our endurance for the law."

[13] When he too had died, the sixth, a mere boy, was led in. When the tyrant inquired whether he was willing to eat and be released, he said, [14] "I am younger in age than my brothers, but I am their equal in mind. [15] Since to this end we were born and bred, we ought likewise to die for the same principles. [16] So if you intend to torture me for not eating defiling foods, go on torturing!" [17] When he had said this, they led him to the wheel. [18] He was carefully stretched tight upon it, his back was broken, and he was roasted[e] from underneath. [19] To his back they applied sharp spits that had been heated in the fire, and pierced his ribs so that his entrails were burned through. [20] While being tortured he said, "O contest befitting holiness, in which so many of us brothers have been summoned to an arena of sufferings for religion, and in which we have not been defeated! [21] For religious knowledge, O tyrant, is invincible. [22] I also, equipped with nobility, will die with my brothers, [23] and I myself will bring a great avenger upon you, you inventor of tortures and enemy of those who are truly devout. [24] We six boys have paralyzed your tyranny. [25] Since you have not been able to persuade us to change our mind or to force us to eat defiling foods, is not this your downfall? [26] Your fire is cold to us, and the catapults painless, and your violence powerless. [27] For it is not the guards of the tyrant but those of the divine law that are set over us; therefore, unconquered, we hold fast to reason."

12 When he too, thrown into the caldron, had died a blessed death, the seventh and youngest of all came forward. [2] Even though the tyrant had been vehemently reproached by the brothers, he felt strong compassion for this child when he saw that he was already in fetters. He summoned him to come nearer and tried to persuade him, saying, [3] "You see the result of your brothers' stupidity, for they died in torments because of their disobedience. [4] You too, if you do not obey, will be miserably tortured and die before your time, [5] but if you yield to persuasion you will be my friend and a leader in the government of the kingdom." [6] When he had thus appealed to him, he sent for the boy's mother to show compassion on her who had been bereaved of so many sons and to influence her to persuade the surviving son to obey and save himself.

[a] Other ancient authorities read *Or does it seem evil to you that*

[b] Other authorities add verses 7 and 8, *[7]If you but understood human feelings and had hope of salvation from God— [8]but, as it is, you are a stranger to God and persecute those who serve him."*

[c] Gk *loins*

[d] Meaning of Gk uncertain

[e] Other ancient authorities add *by fire*

fifth brother comes forward as a contender rather than a victim. **4:** The charge of hatred of humanity, frequently leveled against the Jews by those who held the Jewish law to be xenophobic (see 2.14n.), is turned back upon those who would persecute the Jews on account of their different religion and way of life. **6:** See 9.15n. **12:** The ideal sage engages hardships as a means of demonstrating commitment to virtue. These are the only *favors* the pious Jews will accept from Antiochus (contrast 8.6–7). **20:** *Contest . . . arena*, see 6.10n. *Not been defeated*, since their wills could not be corrupted. **24–25:** Antiochus has failed in his primary goal of forcing assimilation. **26:** *Fire is cold*, in the sense of powerless or ineffective to subvert the Judeans' will. The martyrs have not, however, extinguished the awareness of pain, as a Stoic might strive to do (11.11; 14.9–10). **12.2:** *Vehemently reproached*, better, "frightfully abused." With skillful irony, the author suggests that Antiochus is the one who has been beaten down here. **6:** Although the author presents Antiochus as acting out of *compassion* here, persuading the last brother to surrender would also effectively cancel his previous seven defeats. **7:** The use of the *Hebrew*

7 But when his mother had exhorted him in
the Hebrew language, as we shall tell a little
later, 8 he said, "Let me loose, let me speak to
the king and to all his friends that are with
him." 9 Extremely pleased by the boy's declara-
tion, they freed him at once. 10 Running to the
nearest of the braziers, 11 he said, "You profane
tyrant, most impious of all the wicked, since
you have received good things and also your
kingdom from God, were you not ashamed to
murder his servants and torture on the wheel
those who practice religion? 12 Because of this,
justice has laid up for you intense and eternal
fire and tortures, and these throughout all
time[a] will never let you go. 13 As a man, were
you not ashamed, you most savage beast, to
cut out the tongues of men who have feelings
like yours and are made of the same elements
as you, and to maltreat and torture them in
this way? 14 Surely they by dying nobly fulfilled
their service to God, but you will wail bitterly
for having killed without cause the contestants
for virtue." 15 Then because he too was about to
die, he said, 16 "I do not desert the excellent ex-
ample[b] of my brothers, 17 and I call on the God
of our ancestors to be merciful to our nation;[c]
18 but on you he will take vengeance both in this
present life and when you are dead." 19 After he
had uttered these imprecations, he flung him-
self into the braziers and so ended his life.[d]

13 Since, then, the seven brothers
despised sufferings even unto death,
everyone must concede that devout reason is
sovereign over the emotions. 2 For if they had
been slaves to their emotions and had eaten
defiling food, we would say that they had
been conquered by these emotions. 3 But in
fact it was not so. Instead, by reason, which is
praised before God, they prevailed over their
emotions. 4 The supremacy of the mind over
these cannot be overlooked, for the brothers[e]
mastered both emotions and pains. 5 How
then can one fail to confess the sovereignty of
right reason over emotion in those who were
not turned back by fiery agonies? 6 For just as
towers jutting out over harbors hold back the
threatening waves and make it calm for those
who sail into the inner basin, 7 so the seven-
towered right reason of the youths, by fortify-
ing the harbor of religion, conquered the
tempest of the emotions. 8 For they constitut-
ed a holy chorus of religion and encouraged
one another, saying, 9 "Brothers, let us die like
brothers for the sake of the law; let us imitate
the three youths in Assyria who despised the
same ordeal of the furnace. 10 Let us not be
cowardly in the demonstration of our piety."
11 While one said, "Courage, brother," another
said, "Bear up nobly," 12 and another reminded
them, "Remember whence you came, and the
father by whose hand Isaac would have sub-
mitted to being slain for the sake of religion."
13 Each of them and all of them together look-
ing at one another, cheerful and undaunted,
said, "Let us with all our hearts consecrate

[a] Gk *throughout the whole age*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *the witness*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *my race*
[d] Gk *and so gave up*; other ancient authorities read *gave up his spirit* or *his soul*
[e] Gk *they*

language here both hides the meaning of her speech from the king and is an act of resistance to Greek imperialism. When the speech is actually recounted *a little later*, however, the mother speaks to all her sons during Eleazar's ordeal (16.15–25). **11, 13:** The last brother charges Antiochus with injustice against the God who gave him his authority (cf. Dan 4:25), since he has used that power to harm God's loyal clients rather than benefit them and serve God's cause. He also condemns Antiochus for violating the universal bond of humanity that unites all people by brutally torturing fellow human beings. The charges that Jews do not give the gods their due and violate the universal bond of humanity are thus again turned back upon the dominant culture. **19:** The youngest brother seizes what little control he can by committing suicide; see 17.1n. Contrast 2 Macc 7.39–40.

13.1–14.10: Reflection on the seven brothers' example. 13.1–5: See 3.19n. **8:** The brothers' harmony in their collective commitment to the Torah helps each individually to remain steadfast. Such harmony (see 8.4n.) was considered a valuable civic virtue, since it enhanced social reinforcement of the group's norms. **9:** Dan 3 (esp. 3.17–18). The *three youths*, together with Daniel himself (Dan 6), were prototypes of resistance against a tyrant's coercive threats and laws for the sake of maintaining their piety; see also 16.21; 18.12–13. **12:** Gen 22.1–19. The mother will also be compared to Abraham, with whom she shared a willingness to put obedience to God's command above the life of her children (14.20; 15.28). **13:** The brothers regard obedience to God to the point of death

ourselves to God, who gave us our lives,[a] and let us use our bodies as a bulwark for the law. [14] Let us not fear him who thinks he is killing us, [15] for great is the struggle of the soul and the danger of eternal torment lying before those who transgress the commandment of God. [16] Therefore let us put on the full armor of self-control, which is divine reason. [17] For if we so die,[b] Abraham and Isaac and Jacob will welcome us, and all the fathers will praise us." [18] Those who were left behind said to each of the brothers who were being dragged away, "Do not put us to shame, brother, or betray the brothers who have died before us."

[19] You are not ignorant of the affection of family ties, which the divine and all-wise Providence has bequeathed through the fathers to their descendants and which was implanted in the mother's womb. [20] There each of the brothers spent the same length of time and was shaped during the same period of time; and growing from the same blood and through the same life, they were brought to the light of day. [21] When they were born after an equal time of gestation, they drank milk from the same fountains. From such embraces brotherly-loving souls are nourished; [22] and they grow stronger from this common nurture and daily companionship, and from both general education and our discipline in the law of God.

[23] Therefore, when sympathy and brotherly affection had been so established, the brothers were the more sympathetic to one another. [24] Since they had been educated by the same law and trained in the same virtues and brought up in right living, they loved one another all the more. [25] A common zeal for nobility strengthened their goodwill toward one another, and their concord, [26] because they could make their brotherly love more fervent with the aid of their religion. [27] But although nature and companionship and virtuous habits had augmented the affection of family ties, those who were left endured for the sake of religion, while watching their brothers being maltreated and tortured to death.

14 Furthermore, they encouraged them to face the torture, so that they not only despised their agonies, but also mastered the emotions of brotherly love.

[2] O reason,[c] more royal than kings and freer than the free! [3] O sacred and harmonious concord of the seven brothers on behalf of religion! [4] None of the seven youths proved coward or shrank from death, [5] but all of them, as though running the course toward immortality, hastened to death by torture. [6] Just as the hands and feet are moved in harmony with the guidance of the mind, so those holy youths, as though moved by an immortal spirit of devotion, agreed to go to death for its sake. [7] O most holy seven, brothers in harmony! For just as the seven days of creation move in choral dance around religion, [8] so these youths, forming a chorus, encircled the sevenfold fear of tortures and dissolved it. [9] Even now, we ourselves shudder as we hear of the suffering of these young men; they not only saw what was happening, not only heard the direct word of threat, but also bore the sufferings patiently, and in agonies of fire at that. [10] What could

[a] Or *souls*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *suffer*
[c] Or *O minds*

a fitting return of gratitude for the gift of life itself; see also 16.18–19. **14:** *Who thinks he is killing*, see 9.7n.; cf. Mt 10.28. **19–26:** Almost every detail in the author's discussion of the love between siblings has a counterpart in Greco-Roman philosophical discussions of this topic, another indication of how immersed the author was in Greek culture and learning while remaining fully committed to the Jewish way of life. **13.27–14.1:** Because of their training in the Torah, the brothers are able to strengthen rather than weaken each other's resolve, enabling one another to walk in line with virtue, thus fulfilling the Aristotelian ideal of friendship. **14.2:** The sage cannot be compelled to sacrifice virtue, bowing to any external pressure, and so remains *free* and exercises *royal* self-governance. **7:** *Seven* was mystically associated with the harmony of God's creation and created order (Philo, *Opif.* 90–128). **8:** *Chorus*, see 8.4n. and 13.8n. **9:** The author has justifiable confidence in his power of vivid description to make his audience squirm. He has used this rhetorical technique in order to heighten the audience's appreciation of the sensations the martyrs withstood, so as to embolden them to remain steadfast in their commitment to the Jewish way of life in the face of far less daunting difficulties.

be more excruciatingly painful than this? For the power of fire is intense and swift, and it consumed their bodies quickly.

[11] Do not consider it amazing that reason had full command over these men in their tortures, since the mind of woman despised even more diverse agonies, [12] for the mother of the seven young men bore up under the rackings of each one of her children.

[13] Observe how complex is a mother's love for her children, which draws everything toward an emotion felt in her inmost parts. [14] Even unreasoning animals, as well as human beings, have a sympathy and parental love for their offspring. [15] For example, among birds, the ones that are tame protect their young by building on the housetops, [16] and the others, by building at the tops of mountains and the depths of chasms, in holes of trees, and on tree-tops, hatch the nestlings and ward off the intruder. [17] If they are not able to keep the intruder[a] away, they do what they can to help their young by flying in circles around them in the anguish of love, warning them with their own calls. [18] And why is it necessary to demonstrate sympathy for children by the example of unreasoning animals, [19] since even bees at the time for making honeycombs defend themselves against intruders and, as though with an iron dart, sting those who approach their hive and defend it even to the death? [20] But sympathy for her children did not sway the mother of the young men; she was of the same mind as Abraham.

15 O reason of the children, tyrant over the emotions! O religion, more desirable to the mother than her children! [2] Two courses were open to this mother, that of religion, and that of preserving her seven sons for a time, as the tyrant had promised. [3] She loved religion more, the religion that preserves them for eternal life according to God's promise.[b] [4] In what manner might I express the emotions of parents who love their children? We impress upon the character of a small child a wondrous likeness both of mind and of form. Especially is this true of mothers, who because of their birth pangs have a deeper sympathy toward their offspring than do the fathers. [5] Considering that mothers are the weaker sex and give birth to many, they are more devoted to their children.[c] [6] The mother of the seven boys, more than any other mother, loved her children. In seven pregnancies she had implanted in herself tender love toward them, [7] and because of the many pains she suffered with each of them she had sympathy for them; [8] yet because of the fear of God she disdained the temporary safety of her children. [9] Not only so, but also because of the nobility of her sons and their ready obedience to the law, she felt a greater tenderness toward them. [10] For they were righteous and self-controlled and brave and magnanimous, and loved their brothers and their mother, so that they obeyed her even to death in keeping the ordinances.

[11] Nevertheless, though so many factors influenced the mother to suffer with them out of love for her children, in the case of none of them were the various tortures strong enough to pervert her reason. [12] But each child separately and all of them together the mother urged on to death for religion's sake. [13] O sacred nature and affection of parental love, yearning of parents toward offspring, nurture and indomitable suffering by mothers! [14] This mother, who saw them tortured and burned one by one, because of religion

[a] Gk *it*

[b] Gk *according to God*

[c] Or *For to the degree that mothers are weaker and the more children they bear, the more they are devoted to their children.*

14.11–17.6: The example of the mother and reflection. The climactic example of the Torah's ability to empower the mind for mastery of the emotions is the mother of the seven brothers. **14.11:** *Since the mind of woman*, perhaps more accurately, "since even the mind of a woman." Women were generally held to be more prone to yield to the emotions and sensations than men (Aristotle, *Pol.* 1.13; Philo, *Leg. all.* 2.44–50), with the result that a female's mastery of such overwhelming experiences proves the efficacy of the Torah as a philosophical way of life beyond contradiction. **13–20:** The author's description of love for offspring once again shares many details with Greco-Roman writings on the topic; see 13.19–26n. **20:** See 13.12n. **15.1:** *O reason . . . O religion . . .!* The author makes extensive use of "apostrophe" (direct address to some ideal or person not physically present) throughout his oration in order to heighten its emotionally evocative power. **2–3:** *For a time . . . for eternal*

did not change her attitude. [15] She watched the flesh of her children being consumed by fire, their toes and fingers scattered[a] on the ground, and the flesh of the head to the chin exposed like masks.

[16] O mother, tried now by more bitter pains than even the birth pangs you suffered for them! [17] O woman, who alone gave birth to such complete devotion! [18] When the firstborn breathed his last, it did not turn you aside, nor when the second in torments looked at you piteously nor when the third expired; [19] nor did you weep when you looked at the eyes of each one in his tortures gazing boldly at the same agonies, and saw in their nostrils the signs of the approach of death. [20] When you saw the flesh of children burned upon the flesh of other children, severed hands upon hands, scalped heads upon heads, and corpses fallen on other corpses, and when you saw the place filled with many spectators of the torturings, you did not shed tears. [21] Neither the melodies of sirens nor the songs of swans attract the attention of their hearers as did the voices of the children in torture calling to their mother. [22] How great and how many torments the mother then suffered as her sons were tortured on the wheel and with the hot irons! [23] But devout reason, giving her heart a man's courage in the very midst of her emotions, strengthened her to disregard, for the time, her parental love.

[24] Although she witnessed the destruction of seven children and the ingenious and various rackings, this noble mother disregarded all these[b] because of faith in God. [25] For as in the council chamber of her own soul she saw mighty advocates—nature, family, parental love, and the rackings of her children— [26] this mother held two ballots, one bearing death and the other deliverance for her children. [27] She did not approve the deliverance that would preserve the seven sons for a short time, [28] but as the daughter of God-fearing Abraham she remembered his fortitude.

[29] O mother of the nation, vindicator of the law and champion of religion, who carried away the prize of the contest in your heart! [30] O more noble than males in steadfastness, and more courageous than men in endurance! [31] Just as Noah's ark, carrying the world in the universal flood, stoutly endured the waves, [32] so you, O guardian of the law, overwhelmed from every side by the flood of your emotions and the violent winds, the torture of your sons, endured nobly and withstood the wintry storms that assail religion.

16 If, then, a woman, advanced in years and mother of seven sons, endured seeing her children tortured to death, it must be admitted that devout reason is sovereign over the emotions. [2] Thus I have demonstrated not only that men have ruled over the emotions, but also that a woman has despised the fiercest tortures. [3] The lions surrounding Daniel were not so savage, nor was the raging fiery furnace of Mishael so intensely hot, as was her innate parental love, inflamed as she saw her seven sons tortured in such varied ways. [4] But the mother quenched so many and such great emotions by devout reason.

[5] Consider this also: If this woman, though a mother, had been fainthearted, she would

[a] Or *quivering*

[b] Other ancient authorities read *having bidden them farewell, surrendered them*

life, see 9.8–9n. **4–7:** See 14.11n.; 14.13–20n. **8:** See 9.8–9n. **16–17:** *O mother . . . O woman,* see 15.1n. **18–22:** The author provides a concentrated summary of the brothers' sufferings to sharpen the audience's impression of the assaults that tortured the mother, pressing upon her to cry out and beg her sons to save themselves (see 12.6; 16.12). **19:** *Gazing boldly*, literally, "gazing bull-like," a classical Greek expression (Aristophanes, *Ran*. 804; Plato, *Phaed.* 1176). **21:** *The melodies of sirens* were so irresistible they lured sailors to their death (Homer, *Od.* 12.44–52), and *swans* (which do not sing) were believed to sing a beautiful song just before they died. **26:** *Two ballots*, a judicial image, one for acquittal, one for condemnation. **28:** See 13.12n. **30:** *More courageous than men*, an especially poignant pun in Greek where "courageous" ("andreia") is derived from the noun for "male human being" ("aner, andros"), like English "manly." See also 15.23; 16.14. Plutarch celebrates the stories of women who exemplified courage greater than or equal to men ("On the Bravery of Women," *Mor*. 242E–263C), with whose stories the mother's story shares several traits. **31–32:** See 7.1–3n. Philo gives a similar interpretation of Noah's ark (*Quaest. in Gen.* 2.18). **16.1–4:** See 3.19n. **2:** *Not only that men . . . but also that a woman*, see 14.11n. **3:**

have mourned over them and perhaps spoken as follows: [6] "O how wretched am I and many times unhappy! After bearing seven children, I am now the mother of none! [7] O seven childbirths all in vain, seven profitless pregnancies, fruitless nurturings and wretched nursings! [8] In vain, my sons, I endured many birth pangs for you, and the more grievous anxieties of your upbringing. [9] Alas for my children, some unmarried, others married and without offspring.[a] I shall not see your children or have the happiness of being called grandmother. [10] Alas, I who had so many and beautiful children am a widow and alone, with many sorrows.[b] [11] And when I die, I shall have none of my sons to bury me."

[12] Yet that holy and God-fearing mother did not wail with such a lament for any of them, nor did she dissuade any of them from dying, nor did she grieve as they were dying. [13] On the contrary, as though having a mind like adamant and giving rebirth for immortality to the whole number of her sons, she implored them and urged them on to death for the sake of religion. [14] O mother, soldier of God in the cause of religion, elder and woman! By steadfastness you have conquered even a tyrant, and in word and deed you have proved more powerful than a man. [15] For when you and your sons were arrested together, you stood and watched Eleazar being tortured, and said to your sons in the Hebrew language, [16] "My sons, noble is the contest to which you are called to bear witness for the nation. Fight zealously for our ancestral law. [17] For it would be shameful if, while an aged man endures such agonies for the sake of religion, you young men were to be terrified by tortures. [18] Remember that it is through God that you have had a share in the world and have enjoyed life, [19] and therefore you ought to endure any suffering for the sake of God. [20] For his sake also our father Abraham was zealous to sacrifice his son Isaac, the ancestor of our nation; and when Isaac saw his father's hand wielding a knife[c] and descending upon him, he did not cower. [21] Daniel the righteous was thrown to the lions, and Hananiah, Azariah, and Mishael were hurled into the fiery furnace and endured it for the sake of God. [22] You too must have the same faith in God and not be grieved. [23] It is unreasonable for people who have religious knowledge not to withstand pain."

[24] By these words the mother of the seven encouraged and persuaded each of her sons to die rather than violate God's commandment. [25] They knew also that those who die for the sake of God live to God, as do Abraham and Isaac and Jacob and all the patriarchs.

17 Some of the guards said that when she also was about to be seized and put to death she threw herself into the flames so that no one might touch her body.

[2] O mother, who with your seven sons nullified the violence of the tyrant, frustrated his evil designs, and showed the courage of your faith! [3] Nobly set like a roof on the pillars of your sons, you held firm and unswerving against the earthquake of the tortures. [4] Take courage, therefore, O holy-minded mother,

[a] Gk *without benefit*
[b] Or *much to be pitied*
[c] Gk *sword*

Daniel, Dan 6.1–24. *Mishael*, also called Meshach, Dan 1.7; 3.1–30. **5–11:** As for the brothers (8.16–26), the author provides a speech reflective of the mind-set that the mother refused to adopt. Almost every element in the hypothetical lament composed for the mother reflects the laments of bereaved mothers in the tragedies of Euripides (see especially *Tro.* 380–82, 473–88, 503–505, 758–60). Having raised many children only to lose them in a single struggle, the mother is worthy of comparison with Queen Hecuba of Troy. **12–13:** The author stresses, however, that despite similar loss she did not grieve like Hecuba, since she considered the faithful deaths of her sons the best course for them and for her. Her pregnancies were not profitless (v. 7) since she gave *rebirth for immortality* to all her sons. *Dissuade*, see 12.6–7. *Adamant,* here a hard metal or diamond. **15:** *Hebrew*, see 12.7n. **16:** *Noble . . . contest*, see 6.10n. The martyrs *bear witness* in this public arena to the value of the Jewish way of life and the nation's character. *Fight zealously*, again turning the passive experience of victimization into active resistance. **18–19:** See 13.12–13n. **20:** *Abraham . . . Isaac*, Gen 22.1–19. **21:** *Daniel . . . Mishael*, see 13.9n.; 16.3n. **22:** *Have the same faith*, or "show the same loyalty toward God." **25:** See 7.19n.; 9.8–9n. **17.1:** The mother commits suicide rather than allow herself to be inappropriately handled by other men. Suicide under such circumstances

maintaining firm an enduring hope in God.
[5] The moon in heaven, with the stars, does not stand so august as you, who, after lighting the way of your star-like seven sons to piety, stand in honor before God and are firmly set in heaven with them. [6] For your children were true descendants of father Abraham.[a]

[7] If it were possible for us to paint the history of your religion as an artist might, would not those who first beheld it have shuddered as they saw the mother of the seven children enduring their varied tortures to death for the sake of religion? [8] Indeed it would be proper to inscribe on their tomb these words as a reminder to the people of our nation:[b]

[9] "Here lie buried an aged priest and an aged woman and seven sons, because of the violence of the tyrant who wished to destroy the way of life of the Hebrews. [10] They vindicated their nation, looking to God and enduring torture even to death."

[11] Truly the contest in which they were engaged was divine, [12] for on that day virtue gave the awards and tested them for their endurance. The prize was immortality in endless life. [13] Eleazar was the first contestant, the mother of the seven sons entered the competition, and the brothers contended. [14] The tyrant was the antagonist, and the world and the human race were the spectators. [15] Reverence for God was victor and gave the crown to its own athletes. [16] Who did not admire the athletes of the divine[c] legislation? Who were not amazed?

[17] The tyrant himself and all his council marveled at their[d] endurance, [18] because of which they now stand before the divine throne and live the life of eternal blessedness. [19] For Moses says, "All who are consecrated are under your hands." [20] These, then, who have been consecrated for the sake of God,[e] are honored, not only with this honor, but also by the fact that because of them our enemies did not rule over our nation, [21] the tyrant was punished, and the homeland purified—they having become, as it were, a ransom for the sin of our nation. [22] And through the blood of those devout ones and their death as an atoning sacrifice, divine Providence preserved Israel that previously had been mistreated.

[23] For the tyrant Antiochus, when he saw the courage of their virtue and their endurance under the tortures, proclaimed them to his soldiers as an example for their own endurance, [24] and this made them brave and courageous for infantry battle and siege, and he ravaged and conquered all his enemies.

18 O Israelite children, offspring of the seed of Abraham, obey this law and exercise piety in every way, [2] knowing that devout reason is master of all emotions, not only of sufferings from within, but also of those from without.

[a] Gk *For your childbearing was from Abraham the father*; other ancient authorities read *For… Abraham the servant*
[b] Or *as a memorial to the heroes of our people*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *true*
[d] Other ancient authorities add *virtue and*
[e] Other ancient authorities lack *for the sake of God*

(see also 12.19) was considered noble (1 Sam 31.1–6; 2 Macc 14.41–46; Josephus, *J.W.* 7.324–34, 377; Plutarch, *Mor.* 253D-E). **5:** The hearers are invited to imagine the martyrs enjoying their eternal reward, confirming their hope.

17.7–18.24: Epilogue. 17.7–18.5: Summary of the martyrs' accomplishments and exhortation. 17.7: Jurists were known to bring a painting of the crime into a courtroom to sway a jury's emotions (Quintilian, *Inst.* 6.1.32), although the author does not regard this as *possible* here, whether because of scruples about images (Ex 20.4) or good taste. *Religion,* better "piety." **8–10:** Literary epitaphs often appear in Greek speeches about the dead. **11–16:** See 6.10n. **20–22:** The martyrs' deaths are ennobled further by stressing the benefit they brought to their nation (see also 1.11; 18.4). **19:** Deut 33.3. **21–22:** *Atoning sacrifice* translates the Greek "hilasterion" (perhaps better "propitiation"), a term also used in Rom 3.25 to interpret the significance of a violent death in obedience to God's covenant. See 6.28–29n. **23–24:** The idea of becoming an example that even one's enemies would recognize and admire appears elsewhere; while historically improbable in this case, it is nevertheless rhetorically effective. *Ravaged and conquered*, a rhetorical flourish meant to underscore the power of the martyrs' example of courage. In fact, Antiochus suffered crushing defeat in the East shortly after leaving Jerusalem (see 1 Macc 6.1–4; 2 Macc 9.1), as 18.5 implies. **18.1–2:** The philosophical demonstration (18.2) ultimately serves a protreptic goal, namely promoting continued or intensified commitment to the Jewish way of life, particular the commandments of the Torah. An exhortation to imitate the virtuous conduct of the fallen is common in eulogistic speeches.

3 Therefore those who gave over their bodies in suffering for the sake of religion were not only admired by mortals, but also were deemed worthy to share in a divine inheritance. 4 Because of them the nation gained peace, and by reviving observance of the law in the homeland they ravaged the enemy. 5 The tyrant Antiochus was both punished on earth and is being chastised after his death. Since in no way whatever was he able to compel the Israelites to become pagans and to abandon their ancestral customs, he left Jerusalem and marched against the Persians.

6 The mother of seven sons expressed also these principles to her children: 7 "I was a pure virgin and did not go outside my father's house; but I guarded the rib from which woman was made.[a] 8 No seducer corrupted me on a desert plain, nor did the destroyer, the deceitful serpent, defile the purity of my virginity. 9 In the time of my maturity I remained with my husband, and when these sons had grown up their father died. A happy man was he, who lived out his life with good children, and did not have the grief of bereavement. 10 While he was still with you, he taught you the law and the prophets. 11 He read to you about Abel slain by Cain, and Isaac who was offered as a burnt offering, and about Joseph in prison. 12 He told you of the zeal of Phinehas, and he taught you about Hananiah, Azariah, and Mishael in the fire. 13 He praised Daniel in the den of the lions and blessed him. 14 He reminded you of the scripture of Isaiah, which says, 'Even though you go through the fire, the flame shall not consume you.' 15 He sang to you songs of the psalmist David, who said, 'Many are the afflictions of the righteous.' 16 He recounted to you Solomon's proverb, 'There is a tree of life for those who do his will.' 17 He confirmed the query of Ezekiel, 'Shall these dry bones live?' 18 For he did not forget to teach you the song that Moses taught, which says, 19 'I kill and I make alive: this is your life and the length of your days.'"

20 O bitter was that day—and yet not bitter—when that bitter tyrant of the Greeks quenched fire with fire in his cruel caldrons, and in his burning rage brought those seven sons of the daughter of Abraham to the catapult and back again to more[b] tortures, 21 pierced the pupils of their eyes and cut out their tongues, and put them to death with various tortures. 22 For these crimes divine justice pursued and will pursue the accursed tyrant. 23 But the sons of Abraham with their victorious mother are gathered together into the chorus of the fathers, and have received pure and immortal[c] souls from God, 24 to whom be glory forever and ever. Amen.

[a] Gk *the rib that was built*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *to all his*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *victorious*

18.6–19: The mother's testimony to feminine virtue and additional exhortation. This second speech of the mother is possibly a later addition, but nevertheless one well crafted to suit the larger text. **7–9a:** Though celebrated mainly for her courage, the mother here reflects on her careful preservation throughout her life of her modesty and chastity, quintessential female virtues in the ancient world. **7:** *Rib*, Gen 2.22. **8:** *Desert plain*, Deut 22.25–27. *Serpent*, Gen 3.13; cf. 2 Cor 11.2–3. **10:** The father laudably fulfilled the obligations to teach his children (Deut 4.9; 6.7; 11.19) the scriptures (*the law and the prophets*). **11:** As *Abel* was attacked by *Cain* (Gen 4.8), so the ungodly continue to assault the pious. *Isaac*, Gen 22.1–19. *Joseph* endured prison rather than transgress virtue (Gen 39.1–23). **12a:** *Phinehas* exemplified zeal for the Torah and watchfulness against assimilation (Num 25.1–9; Sir 45.23–24; 1 Macc 2.26, 54). **12b:** *Hananiah . . . Daniel*, see 13.9n. **14–19:** The quotations from scripture encourage perseverance in hardship for the sake of covenant loyalty. **14:** Isa 43.2. The firm conviction in an afterlife allows the promise to remain true in an ultimate sense. **15:** Ps 34.19. The context may be important and assumed, as the constant refrain of this psalm speaks of God's deliverance of the righteous from every trial (Ps 34.4, 6, 7, 17, 19). **16:** Prov 3.18, slightly altered. **17:** Ezek 37.2–3, as appropriate a question in Ezekiel's valley as in the courtyard where the tortures occurred. Even those who were "burned to the very bones" (6.26) will not fail to enjoy God's reward. **18:** *Song,* Deut 31.30–32.44. **19:** Deut 32.39; 30.20. The word order is crucial and climactic: God will *make alive* those righteous whom he has permitted to be killed. *Length of your days* is now transferred to eternity.

18.20–24: Conclusion. 18.20: Speaking of a *tyrant of the Greeks* is a bitterly ironic criticism of the imperialism of Alexander the Great and his successors, since the Greeks prized themselves on perfecting democracy. **22–24:** The fates after death of martyrs and tyrant, foundational to the martyrs' resistance, are here confirmed in the author's closing sentences. Now the *chorus* (see 8.4n.) is in heaven.

This page intentionally left blank

This page intentionally left blank

THE NEW TESTAMENT

The new covenant
commonly called
The New Testament of our
Lord and Savior Jesus Christ

New Revised Standard Version

This page intentionally left blank

INTRODUCTION TO THE GOSPELS

THE LITERARY GENRE OF THE GOSPELS

The English word "gospel" originally meant "good news," and it is an exact translation of the Gk word *euangelion* (from which the English word "evangelist" is derived). The opening of Mark's Gospel, "The beginning of the good news [or "gospel"] of Jesus Christ, the Son of God" (1.1), uses the word "gospel" for the message about salvation through Jesus. In the New Testament the word "gospel" (Gk *euangelion*) refers either to the act of preaching (1 Thess 1.5, NRSV: "our message of the gospel") or its content (Acts 15.7, NRSV: "message of the good news"; 20.24, NRSV: "good news"). Outside the New Testament and other early Christian writings, the term is used for happy announcements, such as a military victory, the birth of a son, or a wedding. An inscription from 9 BCE uses the noun (in the plural) to refer to the past event of the birth of the Roman emperor Augustus: "the birthday of the god was for the world the beginning of 'joyful messages' which have gone forth because of him." The idea that an emperor's birth, coming of age, and ascent to the throne was "good news" for the world would have come to mind when Christian missionaries came preaching "good news." Not until the mid-second century CE was the word for "gospel" used of a literary genre (Justin Martyr, *Dialogue with Trypho* 10.2; Irenaeus, *Adv. Haer.* 50.26.6).

The use of the word "gospel" in Mark's introduction presumably led to its being adopted as the designation for written accounts of the ministry, teaching, death, and resurrection of Jesus. Short formulas in Paul's letters show that the "good news" of early preaching focused on the death, resurrection, and exaltation of Jesus (1 Thess 1.9–10; Rom 1.2–4; 1 Cor 15.3–5). Mark expanded this to include Jesus' own preaching of the kingdom of God (Mk 1.14–15). So far as we know, Mark was the first to create a distinctive literary form by combining early Christian preaching about Jesus with a narrative account of Jesus' life and ministry. Writings that some scholars date earlier than Mark are collections of sayings with little or no narrative framework.

By presenting a narrative about Jesus as the basis of Christian preaching (see Lk 1.1–4), the Gospel writers (the "evangelists") assume that the life of Jesus provides evidence to support Christian beliefs about him. By providing an account of Jesus from the time of his emergence on the public stage through his trial and death, Mark presents a "life" (Gk *bios*) of his subject. The ancient *bios* should not be confused with a modern biography, which explicates the subject's origins, family, cultural influences, and character development, and tends to emphasize uniqueness and individuality. Ancient writers often characterized persons as types, and the narratives of their lives reflected a view that individuals had fixed characters from birth rather than personalities that developed through life.

Still, scholars disagree over the extent to which the Gospels follow conventions of ancient biography. Because the story of Jesus concerns a figure with a crucial place in the history of God's relationship with Israel, it is closer to Jewish accounts of Moses or a prophet like Elijah than to typical Greek and Roman biographies of rulers or philosophers (e.g., Xenophon, *Agesilaus*; Isocrates, *Evagoras*; Tacitus, *Agricola*; Lucian, *Demonax*), which had a wider scope, including an account of the preliminary education of the subject of the biography. Greco-Roman biographies were addressed to a social and literary elite, which may explain why the Gospels, addressed to a much broader audience, do not match them very closely. Philo's *Life of Moses* adopts a Hellenistic-style laudatory biography for a Jewish subject. Echoes of the life of Moses as related in the book of Exodus and other Jewish sources appear in Matthew's version of the birth and infancy of Jesus (Mt 1–2).

Since the genre "biography" emerged from Greek historical writing, the question of whether the Gospels belong to this genre often involves a prior judgment concerning their historical plausibility. Scholars who reject biography as a description of the Gospels often overemphasize the ideological or legendary elements found in the narratives. They prefer to read the Gospels as etiological legends that explain the emergence of a new religion or as ideological representations of the Christology of particular early Christian communities. Such writings do not intend to provide historical information about their subject. Rather, they operate like myths and symbols to support Christian beliefs and practices.

Second-century CE authors, on the other hand, both adherents of Christianity like Justin Martyr and opponents like Celsus, presumed that the evangelists intended to provide information. Justin Martyr's designation of the Gospels as "memoirs" (Gk *hypomnemata*; *1 Apology* 1.67.3) suggests something less than a full literary biography, something more like a gathering of notes about the subject and his teaching. This perception may have been enhanced by the fact that early Christians disseminated their writings using a codex (similar to a bound book) rather than a scroll. Though some modern readers think of the codex as a technological advance over the scroll, the ancients did not. Serious literary works were copied onto scrolls. Notes, preliminary drafts, and all sorts of records were kept in codices. Thus their physical appearance would suggest to an ancient reader that the Gospels were more educational handbooks than examples of high literary art. Papias's comment that Mark is "not in order" (Eusebius, *Hist. eccl.* 3.39.5) shows that even some Christian readers considered it an unfinished composition. Papias also noted that Matthew was a more polished work (Eusebius, *Hist. eccl.* 3.39.16). Luke's prologue states that he intends to correct the deficiencies in earlier accounts (1.1–4). Such comments indicate that Mark's earliest readers treated the Gospel as a rough life of Jesus. A "biography" of this type naturally invited expansions in content and revisions of style like those that Matthew and Luke subsequently undertook.

THE SOURCES OF THE GOSPELS

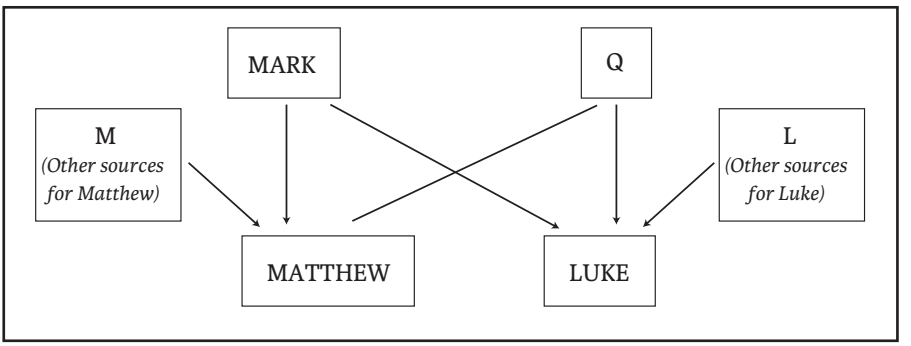
A historical genre does not necessarily guarantee historical accuracy or reliability, and neither the evangelists nor their first readers engaged in historical analysis. Their aim was to confirm Christian faith (Lk 1.4; Jn 20.31). Scholars generally agree that the Gospels were written forty to sixty years after the death of Jesus. They thus do not present eyewitness or contemporary accounts of Jesus' life and teaching. Even the language has changed. Though Greek had become the common language used between groups whose primary languages were different in the eastern Roman Empire, and inscriptions and fragments of Greek translations of the Hebrew Bible show that Greek was used even among Jews within Judea, Jesus, his disciples, and the crowds would have spoken Aramaic, a Semitic language closely related to Hebrew, which it had replaced as the principal spoken language of Palestine. Despite scholarly efforts to detect an underlying Aramaic original for Mark or Matthew, it is probable that all the evangelists wrote in the common ("koine") Greek of their day. Further, the vast majority of Hebrew Bible citations in the New Testament are taken from the Greek translation of the Hebrew Bible (the Septuagint).

Large sections of Matthew, Mark, and Luke repeat stories about and sayings of Jesus in nearly identical words. Hence these three Gospels are referred to as the "Synoptic" Gospels (from Gk *synoptikos*, "viewed together"). On a linguistic level, both Luke and Matthew improve on Mark's style, smoothing out inelegant expressions and repetitions. Luke eliminates Mark's characteristic use of parataxis (one short phrase following another without indicating how they are related) by employing balancing particles and subordinate clauses. Matthew follows Mark's outline, though the insertion of considerable sections of discourse material may obscure that relationship for the casual reader. Luke knows most of Mark but has no parallels to Mk 6.45–8.26; whether Luke chose to omit this section or had a different version of Mark remains unclear. Detailed analysis of the traditions shared by Matthew, Mark, and Luke provides strong support for the view that Mark was the earliest Gospel. But, given its rough, draftlike composition, both Matthew and Luke revised it extensively.

Further study of additional material shared by Matthew and Luke shows a number of close verbal parallels in passages such as the temptation of Jesus (Mt 4.2–11; Lk 4.2–13), the Beatitudes (Lk 6.20–23; Mt 5.3,6,4,11–12), the parable of the lost sheep (Lk 15.4–7; Mt 18.12–14), and the Lord's Prayer (Lk 11.2–4; Mt 6.9–13). These parallels include various types of sayings, controversy stories, and parables. Scholars have hypothesized that a collection of such material must have been circulating in the early churches, and they have designated it with the symbol "Q," from the German *Quelle* ("source"). In 1945, a library of religious treatises in Coptic was discovered near Nag Hammadi in Egypt. They included just such a "sayings book," the *Gospel of Thomas*. Subsequently, sayings from a variant tradition of this Gospel in Greek were identified among Greek papyri. The *Gospel of Thomas* is not "Q": Some of its sayings and parables appear to have been taken from the Synoptic Gospels rather than from earlier oral tradition. But its discovery provides evidence that such sayings collections existed.

Scholars presume that the Gospel writers may have had other such notebook-like collections of material such as parables and miracle stories. Presumably additional items, such as genealogies, hymnic prayers, and legends in the infancy narratives of Matthew and Luke, were not created by the evangelists but come from

earlier tradition. Similarly, some of the material found only in Matthew or in Luke is not likely to be the author's creation. The following diagram shows the understanding of a majority of scholars about the sources and literary relationships of the Synoptic Gospels.



Four Source Hypothesis. In composing their Gospels, both Matthew and Luke independently used two earlier sources: the gospel of Mark, and "Q," the collection of sayings of Jesus. Each also used other sources specific to each of them

There may also have been an earlier narrative of the passion and death of Jesus; some scholars think that most of Mark's narrative came from such a source, while others maintain that there is no evidence for such an account. The origin of the story of Jesus' passion is unclear, and some details may have been based on biblical descriptions of the suffering righteous one.

While the Synoptic Gospels have a close relationship based on their literary connections, the Fourth Gospel, the Gospel of John, presents a much greater puzzle. Its chronology of Jesus' ministry is quite different from that of the Synoptics, as are many narrative details. Jesus spends three years preaching, during which he journeys between Galilee and Jerusalem; in the Synoptic Gospels he visits Jerusalem only once, at the end of a ministry that apparently lasted less than a year. The episode denouncing the sellers in the Temple, which enrages the religious authorities and leads to his death in the Synoptics, occurs near the beginning of the three-year ministry in John (Jn 2.13–22). John claims that Jesus' popularity with Jerusalem crowds after he dramatically restored Lazarus to life awakened political fears for the safety of the nation (Jn 11.45–57; 12.9–11). John's account of the passion also differs markedly: There is no agony. Conscious of his unity with the Father and the cross as his exaltation and return to preexistent glory, Jesus controls all the events; he engages Pilate, the Roman governor, in an ironic discussion of kingship; and John has a disciple-witness, a resident of Jerusalem, who does not flee with the others. Is this unnamed "disciple whom Jesus loved" (Jn 21.7,20; cf. 19.26; 20.2) a symbolic creation of the Evangelist? Some scholars think so; others suggest that he was a historical individual, the source of much of the Fourth Gospel's unique tradition and theology, as the text alleges (19.35; 21.24). What led the author of the Gospel of John to compose such a unique variant on an outline of Jesus' life that still has a recognizable similarity to Mark (and in some instances to Luke)? Some scholars use the parallels as indications of a shorter sketch of Jesus' life known to both authors. Others think that the Gospel of Mark, and perhaps also Luke, were already circulating in the Evangelist's area. He assumed that readers knew some other account of Jesus' life and teaching, and formulated a different version of who Jesus is and what he taught based on the insight that Jesus of Nazareth was not just a miracle-worker, a prophet, or a charismatic Jewish teacher, but the incarnate Son of God. That claim constitutes the flash point between Jesus and the Jewish authorities throughout the narrative.

The Evangelists did more than compile a notebook of traditions about Jesus. Rather, each shaped the narrative to emphasize particular features of Jesus and his teaching. Readers may approach every Gospel in a similar way, asking what are the special characteristics of Jesus and of his followers in each Evangelist's presentation of Jesus and of those who follow Jesus.

THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO MATTHEW

LOCATION IN CANON

Matthew is the first book of the New Testament. Its primacy of place is appropriate for several reasons. As the Gospel that draws most extensively on the Hebrew Scriptures, Matthew functions as a bridge between the two Testaments by showing how prophetic "fulfillment citations" from the Hebrew Bible were fulfilled in the person of Jesus. Matthew was also the Gospel most frequently employed by the early church. Its arrangement of the teaching of Jesus into five prominent discourses, including the Sermon on the Mount, made it easy to use it for the catechetical instruction of recent converts. Further, the Gospel's inclusion of the accounts of the birth and resurrection of Jesus offered a more comprehensive biographical shape to Jesus' life than is found in the Gospel of Mark, which follows Matthew in the canonical order.

AUTHORSHIP, DATE, AND PLACE OF COMPOSITION

Some scholars have seen the Gospel's replacement of Mark's tax-collector Levi (Mk 2.13–17) with Matthew (9.9–13) as a sort of authorial signature. Yet, the fact that the Evangelist was so reliant upon Mark and a collection of Jesus' sayings ("Q") seems to point to a later, unknown, author. The Gospel's time of writing is likewise unknown. As it appears to be familiar with events of the first Jewish Revolt (66–70 CE; see 22.7), Matthew must have been composed sometime afterward. Since, however, Christian writers show a broad familiarity with the Gospel from an early period, it cannot date from much beyond the final decade of the first century. Scholars usually settle on the 80s CE as a likely decade for the Gospel's composition.

Evidence for the Gospel's place of composition is also largely conjectural. The author's familiarity with Judaism and his acquaintance with the geography of Palestine are two of the chief considerations. Thus, large cities proximate to Palestine with a substantial Jewish presence are the most plausible locales. Syrian Antioch, the third largest city in the Roman Empire, has the added distinction of being associated with Matthew in church tradition. Nevertheless, other sites continue to be proposed, such as Caesarea Maritima or Sepphoris, a Greco-Roman city located near Nazareth. Certainty is hardly possible.

LITERARY FORM

A proper reading of the Gospel requires being attuned to its literary form. For instance, it is important to remember that the division into chapters and verses is a relatively recent modification (1551 CE) and occasionally overlooks natural divisions in the Gospel. Temporarily disregarding chapter and verse numbers will bring out the literary contours of the text and allow one to approximate the experience of the Gospel's first readers.

Without doubt, the most distinctive of these literary contours are the Gospel's five discourses. More of Matthew is devoted to Jesus' teaching than any other Gospel (estimates are Matthew 43 percent; Mark 20 percent; Luke 37 percent; and John 34 percent).

The Evangelist has assembled five discourses comprising different aspects of Jesus' teaching, probably a deliberate parallel to the five books of the Torah/Pentateuch. Each of these discourses ends with the phrase, "when Jesus had finished saying these things . . ." The first, the Sermon on the Mount (chs 5–7), is justly famous as an encapsulation of the "entry requirements of the kingdom," while a number of "parables of the kingdom" can be found in ch 13's "parable discourse." Taken together, the discourses afford an overview of the progress of the kingdom: it begins with teaching about the kingdom (chs 5–7), moves to the preaching of the kingdom (ch 10), its mysteries (ch 13), its application to the church (ch 18), and finally, its implications for the last days and final judgment (chs 24–25).

That the last discourse contains parables of judgment is characteristic of Matthew as a whole; in fact, each of his discourses ends with references to judgment. His view of the world is highly polarized. One either walks according to Jesus' "way of righteousness" and produces spiritual fruit, or one does not. For Matthew, the consequences of this decision are momentous: the coming judgment will be swift, unexpected, and inexorable.

Another of the Gospel's literary contours is the way in which it approximates the ancient Greek literary form of the *bios* ("life"). The *bios* differs from modern biography in its concern to provide episodes that reveal the underlying character of its subject. Rather than display the psychological development of Jesus, Matthew depicts him as the humble and compassionate Messiah over the entirety of his Gospel. Jesus acts throughout the Gospel as the exemplar for every Christian.

INTERPRETATION

Matthew's utility for the Christian church is no coincidence. The issues of his own church and community were of pressing importance to the Evangelist; Matthew's is the only Gospel to use the word "church" expressly (Gk *ekklesia,* 16.18; 18.17) and to include issues of church authority and discipline (ch 18). Matthew's Gospel gives vivid insights into the concerns of his own church. The evangelist has telescoped the experiences of Christians in his day with the story of Jesus so that Jesus' words and actions apply to both the time of Jesus and that of Matthew a half century later.

This procedure explains some of the Gospel's apparent anomalies. One of the most striking is the narrative's conflicted portrayal of Jewish piety and religious leaders. Its high regard for the Jewish Torah (5.17–20; 23.1–3) is noteworthy, as is the extensive use of prophecies from the Hebrew Bible, and its occasional disdain for non-Jews (5.47; 6.7,32; 16.17). These features suggest a positive assessment of Judaism. On the other hand, the Gospel displays a strident and unrelenting condemnation of the Jewish leadership—the chief priests, elders, Sadducees, Pharisees, and scribes. These groups are indiscriminately paired with each other in a manner inconsistent with the historical distinctions between these groups in Jesus' day. The Gospel's treatment of the Pharisees, routinely condemned as hypocrites (e.g., 23.5–7), in particular, has led many scholars to suggest that their portrayal reflects later tensions between Matthew's church and emergent Rabbinic Judaism. In other words, the conflict between Jesus and the Pharisees reflects tensions that emerged fifty years after Jesus' death.

The crucifixion narrative also displays this telescoping of perspective. Responsibility for Jesus' passion is shifted from Pontius Pilate and the Romans to the Jewish people and their leadership (27.20–25). The horrific pronouncement "His blood be on us and on our children!" (27.25) is Matthew's way of attributing the destruction of Jerusalem and the Temple in 70 CE to Israel's rejection of Jesus. The vehemence with which the evangelist expresses such sentiments was likely intended to shock both Jewish Christians and their Jewish neighbors into reconsidering the claims made by the Gospel, and discounting rival claims being advanced by the leadership of emergent Rabbinic Judaism, such as the Jewish explanation for the resurrection of Jesus (Matt 27.52–66; 28.11–15).

While such deliberately shocking rhetoric was characteristic of debates between groups in the first century CE, its long-term consequences have been disastrous. Subsequent non-Jewish Christians interpreted the Gospel as a warrant to exact retribution from Jews for the death of Jesus and persecution of his first followers. A proper reading of the Gospel, therefore, requires being attuned to the polemical context in which it was written, and recognizing that the conflict between emerging Rabbinic Judaism and the smaller Jewish Christian minority ceased being relevant nearly two millennia ago.

What remains unchanged about the Gospel of Matthew, however, is its place as one of the richest and most fascinating documents within the Christian Bible—one that will reward long and detailed study with treasures both new and old (13.52).

J. R. C. Cousland

1 An account of the genealogy[a] of Jesus the Messiah,[b] the son of David, the son of Abraham.

2 Abraham was the father of Isaac, and
Isaac the father of Jacob, and Jacob the
father of Judah and his brothers, 3 and Judah
the father of Perez and Zerah by Tamar,
and Perez the father of Hezron, and Hezron
the father of Aram, 4 and Aram the father
of Aminadab, and Aminadab the father
of Nahshon, and Nahshon the father of
Salmon, 5 and Salmon the father of Boaz by
Rahab, and Boaz the father of Obed by Ruth,
and Obed the father of Jesse, 6 and Jesse the
father of King David.

And David was the father of Solomon by
the wife of Uriah, 7 and Solomon the father
of Rehoboam, and Rehoboam the father of
Abijah, and Abijah the father of Asaph,[c] 8 and
Asaph[c] the father of Jehoshaphat, and Je-
hoshaphat the father of Joram, and Joram the
father of Uzziah, 9 and Uzziah the father of
Jotham, and Jotham the father of Ahaz, and
Ahaz the father of Hezekiah, 10 and Hezekiah
the father of Manasseh, and Manasseh the
father of Amos,[d] and Amos[d] the father of
Josiah, 11 and Josiah the father of Jechoniah
and his brothers, at the time of the deporta-
tion to Babylon.

12 And after the deportation to Babylon:
Jechoniah was the father of Salathiel, and
Salathiel the father of Zerubbabel, 13 and
Zerubbabel the father of Abiud, and Abiud
the father of Eliakim, and Eliakim the father
of Azor, 14 and Azor the father of Zadok,
and Zadok the father of Achim, and Achim
the father of Eliud, 15 and Eliud the father of
Eleazar, and Eleazar the father of Matthan,
and Matthan the father of Jacob, 16 and Jacob
the father of Joseph the husband of Mary,
of whom Jesus was born, who is called the
Messiah.[e]

17 So all the generations from Abraham
to David are fourteen generations; and
from David to the deportation to Babylon,
fourteen generations; and from the deporta-
tion to Babylon to the Messiah,[e] fourteen
generations.

18 Now the birth of Jesus the Messiah[b] took
place in this way. When his mother Mary had
been engaged to Joseph, but before they lived
together, she was found to be with child from
the Holy Spirit. 19 Her husband Joseph, being
a righteous man and unwilling to expose her
to public disgrace, planned to dismiss her
quietly. 20 But just when he had resolved to do
this, an angel of the Lord appeared to him in
a dream and said, "Joseph, son of David, do
not be afraid to take Mary as your wife, for

[a] Or *birth*
[b] Or *Jesus Christ*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *Asa*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *Amon*
[e] Or *the Christ*

1.1–17: Jesus' genealogy (Lk 3.23–38). **1:** *Jesus,* "Jeshua" (Heb "Yeshua'") is a later, abbreviated, form of the name "Joshua," meaning "The Lord (YHWH) is help (or salvation)." *Messiah,* Gk "Christos," "Anointed One." Those anointed by God—typically kings or priests—were set apart by God for a specific purpose (1 Sam 10.1). The designation *son* indicates Jesus' familial descent. That he is both the s*on of David,* the king, and *son of Abraham,* the patriarch, demonstrates that Jesus is a scion of the royal family of David, and a true Israelite. **2–17:** The genealogy continues the "descent" motif by furnishing a stylized ancestral tree consisting of roughly three groups of *fourteen*: from Abraham to David, from David to *the deportation to Babylon* in 586 BCE (2 Kings 24.8–16), and from the deportation to Jesus. The numerical value of David's name in Hebrew is fourteen, which may account for this arrangement. While this genealogy is not complete (cf. 1 Chr 3.11–12), it establishes that David and Abraham were Jesus' forebears. Genealogies are common in the Hebrew Bible (e.g., 1 Chr 1–9) and were a matter of pride and importance for demonstrating one's status as true Israelites (Neh 7.61–4). Jesus' genealogy is unusual, however, not simply because it includes women, but also because it features non-Israelite (i.e., Gentile) women, some of questionable repute: *Tamar* (v. 3; Gen 38), *Rahab* (v. 5; Josh 2.1–21; 6.22–25), *Ruth* (v. 5; Ruth 2–4), and Bathsheba, *the wife of Uriah* (v. 6; 2 Sam 11–12). Their inclusion may prefigure Mary's own marital dilemma (vv. 18–19), and the coming mission to the Gentiles (28.18–20).

1.18–25: The conception and birth of Jesus Christ (Lk 2.1–7). Chapter 1 stresses that Jesus was of the line of David, but then indicates that Mary was a virgin and Joseph was not his father. This apparent difficulty is resolved by Joseph's formal adoption of Jesus, which legally situates Jesus within Joseph's line. **20:** Dreams are

the child conceived in her is from the Holy Spirit. 21 She will bear a son, and you are to name him Jesus, for he will save his people from their sins." 22 All this took place to fulfill what had been spoken by the Lord through the prophet:

23 "Look, the virgin shall conceive and bear
a son,
and they shall name him
Emmanuel,"

which means, "God is with us." 24 When Joseph awoke from sleep, he did as the angel of the Lord commanded him; he took her as his wife, 25 but had no marital relations with her until she had borne a son;[a] and he named him Jesus.

2 In the time of King Herod, after Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judea, wise men[b] from the East came to Jerusalem, 2 asking, "Where is the child who has been born king of the Jews? For we observed his star at its rising,[c] and have come to pay him homage." 3 When King Herod heard this, he was frightened, and all Jerusalem with him; 4 and calling together all the chief priests and scribes of the people, he inquired of them where the Messiah[d] was to be born. 5 They told him, "In Bethlehem of Judea; for so it has been written by the prophet:

6 'And you, Bethlehem, in the land of
Judah,
are by no means least among the rulers
of Judah;
for from you shall come a ruler
who is to shepherd[e] my people Israel.'"

7 Then Herod secretly called for the wise men[b] and learned from them the exact time when the star had appeared. 8 Then he sent them to Bethlehem, saying, "Go and search diligently for the child; and when you have found him, bring me word so that I may also go and pay him homage." 9 When they had heard the king, they set out; and there, ahead of them, went the star that they had seen at its rising,[c] until it stopped over the place where the child was. 10 When they saw that the star had stopped,[f] they were overwhelmed with joy. 11 On entering the house, they saw the child with Mary his mother; and they knelt down and paid him homage. Then, opening their treasure chests, they offered him gifts of gold, frankincense, and myrrh. 12 And having been warned in a dream not to return to Herod, they left for their own country by another road.

13 Now after they had left, an angel of the Lord appeared to Joseph in a dream and said, "Get up, take the child and his mother, and flee to Egypt, and remain there until I

[a] Other ancient authorities read *her firstborn son*
[b] Or *astrologers*; Gk *magi*
[c] Or *in the East*
[d] Or *the Christ*
[e] Or *rule*
[f] Gk *saw the star*

a common means of revelation in Matthew (2.12,13,19–20,22; 27.19). **21:** The angel's reference to Jesus "saving his people" probably alludes to Jesus' name (see v. 1n.). **23:** The first of Matthew's fulfillment citations (Isa 7.14), showing how Jesus' life conforms to prophecies of the Hebrew Bible.

2.1–12: The visit of the wise men. 1: *King Herod* is Herod the Great (ruled 37–4 BCE), who was confirmed as the client king of Judea by the emperor Augustus (31 BCE–14 CE). Herod was only partly Jewish and was notorious for reacting savagely to potential rivals, particularly Jewish rivals. *Bethlehem* was David's hometown and where he was anointed king of Israel (1 Sam 16.1–13). The *wise men* or Magi were a class of Parthian (Persian) priests, renowned as astrologers. **2:** As Gentiles, the Magi do not ask for the king of Israel, but for the *king of the Jews* (27.11,37). The *star* has been variously explained as a supernova, a comet, or a notable conjunction of the planets, but its meaning is probably symbolic; see Num 24.17. **4:** The *chief priests* would have included the current high priest and a larger priestly college, based in Jerusalem. The *scribes* were lawyers, teachers, and interpreters of the Torah (Sir 39.1–11). **5–6:** Mic 5.1,3; cf. 2 Sam 5.2. **11:** *Frankincense* and *myrrh* were costly, resinous gums derived from trees and shrubs (Isa 60.6; Song 3.6). Because of their aromatic qualities they were often employed in religious rituals. The mention of three gifts is probably the origin of the postbiblical tradition that there were three wise men.

2.13–23: The escape to Egypt and return. 15: A fulfillment citation from Hos 11.1, where *son* refers to the people of Israel (Ex 4.22). The citation calls to mind Israel's sojourn in Egypt and God's mighty deliverance of Israel

tell you; for Herod is about to search for the child, to destroy him." 14 Then Joseph[a] got up, took the child and his mother by night, and went to Egypt, 15 and remained there until the death of Herod. This was to fulfill what had been spoken by the Lord through the prophet, "Out of Egypt I have called my son."

16 When Herod saw that he had been tricked by the wise men,[b] he was infuriated, and he sent and killed all the children in and around Bethlehem who were two years old or under, according to the time that he had learned from the wise men.[b] 17 Then was fulfilled what had been spoken through the prophet Jeremiah:

18 "A voice was heard in Ramah,
wailing and loud lamentation,
Rachel weeping for her children;
she refused to be consoled, because
they are no more."

19 When Herod died, an angel of the Lord suddenly appeared in a dream to Joseph in Egypt and said, 20 "Get up, take the child and his mother, and go to the land of Israel, for those who were seeking the child's life are dead." 21 Then Joseph[a] got up, took the child and his mother, and went to the land of Israel. 22 But when he heard that Archelaus was ruling over Judea in place of his father Herod, he was afraid to go there. And after being warned in a dream, he went away to the district of Galilee. 23 There he made his home in a town called Nazareth, so that what had been spoken through the prophets might be fulfilled, "He will be called a Nazorean."

3 In those days John the Baptist appeared in the wilderness of Judea, proclaiming, 2 "Repent, for the kingdom of heaven has come near."[c] 3 This is the one of whom the prophet Isaiah spoke when he said,

"The voice of one crying out in the
wilderness:
'Prepare the way of the Lord,
make his paths straight.'"

4 Now John wore clothing of camel's hair with a leather belt around his waist, and his food was locusts and wild honey. 5 Then the people of Jerusalem and all Judea were going out to him, and all the region along the Jordan, 6 and they were baptized by him in the river Jordan, confessing their sins.

7 But when he saw many Pharisees and Sadducees coming for baptism, he said to them, "You brood of vipers! Who warned you to flee from the wrath to come? 8 Bear

[a] Gk *he*
[b] Or *astrologers*; Gk *magi*
[c] Or *is at hand*

through Moses. **16:** Herod's action recalls the command of the king of Egypt in Ex 1.16. **18:** A fulfillment citation from Jer 31.15. The tomb of *Rachel*, the wife of Jacob, the father of the twelve "tribes" of Israel, was near Bethlehem (Gen 35.16–20). **20:** Cf. Ex 4.19. **22:** Upon Herod's death in 4 BCE, his kingdom was divided among his sons *Archelaus* (4 BCE–6 CE), ethnarch (prince) over Judea, Samaria, and Idumea; Herod Antipas (4 BCE–39 CE), tetrarch (minor prince) over Galilee and Perea; and Philip (4 BCE–33/34 CE), tetrarch of smaller territories northeast of the Sea of Galilee. **23:** *Nazareth* in Jesus' day was not so much a "city" (NRSV *town*) as a village. *Nazorean*, this fulfillment citation does not explicitly correspond to any passage in the Hebrew Bible, though it echoes passages such as Isa 11.12 and Judg 13.5.

3.1–12: The preaching of John the Baptist (Mk 1.1–8; Lk 3.1–9,15–17; Jn 1.19–28; Josephus, *Ant*. 18.116–19). **1:** *In those days*, a general reference to the time when Jesus began his public ministry. *John the Baptist*, the prophetic forerunner of Jesus. In Matthew, although John is subordinate to Jesus, their ministries display strong parallels (compare 3.2 with 4.17). *Wilderness of Judea*, the barren eastern slopes of the Judean mountains that face the Dead Sea and lower Jordan valley. **2:** *Kingdom of heaven* is Matthew's circumlocution for kingdom of God, one that avoids mentioning the name of God directly (though the phrase "kingdom of God" remains unchanged at 6.33; 12.28; 21.31,43). The kingdom of heaven (or God) refers to the absolute rule of God over human affairs. Its establishment marks the onset of the new age and God's ultimate dominion. **3:** A fulfillment citation from Isa 40.3 (Mk 1.2–3; cf. CD 10.16; 16.15). John acts as a herald announcing the coming of the king. **4:** John's manner of dress recalled the prophet Elijah (2 Kings 1.8) while his *food* was that of an ascetic; *locusts* are one of the few types of insects not regarded as unclean (Lev 11.20–23). In Matthew, John is more closely identified with Elijah than in the other Gospels (17.11–13). **7:** The Pharisees and Sadducees were two of the most important groups of

fruit worthy of repentance. 9 Do not presume
to say to yourselves, 'We have Abraham as
our ancestor'; for I tell you, God is able from
these stones to raise up children to Abraham.
10 Even now the ax is lying at the root of the
trees; every tree therefore that does not bear
good fruit is cut down and thrown into the
fire.

11 "I baptize you with[a] water for repen-
tance, but one who is more powerful than I is
coming after me; I am not worthy to carry his
sandals. He will baptize you with[a] the Holy
Spirit and fire. 12 His winnowing fork is in his
hand, and he will clear his threshing floor and
will gather his wheat into the granary; but the
chaff he will burn with unquenchable fire."

13 Then Jesus came from Galilee to John
at the Jordan, to be baptized by him. 14 John
would have prevented him, saying, "I need to
be baptized by you, and do you come to me?"
15 But Jesus answered him, "Let it be so now;
for it is proper for us in this way to fulfill all
righteousness." Then he consented. 16 And
when Jesus had been baptized, just as he
came up from the water, suddenly the heav-
ens were opened to him and he saw the Spirit
of God descending like a dove and alighting
on him. 17 And a voice from heaven said, "This
is my Son, the Beloved,[b] with whom I am well
pleased."

4 Then Jesus was led up by the Spirit into
the wilderness to be tempted by the
devil. 2 He fasted forty days and forty nights,
and afterwards he was famished. 3 The
tempter came and said to him, "If you are
the Son of God, command these stones to
become loaves of bread." 4 But he answered,
"It is written,

'One does not live by bread alone,
but by every word that comes from the
mouth of God.'"

5 Then the devil took him to the holy
city and placed him on the pinnacle of the
temple, 6 saying to him, "If you are the Son of
God, throw yourself down; for it is written,

'He will command his angels concerning
you,'
and 'On their hands they will bear you
up,
so that you will not dash your foot against
a stone.'"

7 Jesus said to him, "Again it is written, 'Do not
put the Lord your God to the test.'"

8 Again, the devil took him to a very high
mountain and showed him all the kingdoms
of the world and their splendor; 9 and he
said to him, "All these I will give you, if you
will fall down and worship me." 10 Jesus said
to him, "Away with you, Satan! for it is writ-
ten,

'Worship the Lord your God,
and serve only him.'"

[a] Or *in*
[b] Or *my beloved Son*

the Second Temple period, though little can be said with certainty about membership in either. The *Pharisees* appear to have been a reform movement in Judaism, advocating stringent observance of the Law and their own "oral Torah." The *Sadducees* may have been the aristocratic descendants of Zadok the priest (2 Sam 8.17), who considered the written, but not the "oral Torah" binding on Israel. In contrast to the Pharisees (Acts 23.6–10), they did not believe in resurrection (22.22–23). **8:** *Repentance*, the beginning of a new relationship with God. **12:** A *winnowing fork* was a forked shovel that was used to toss the threshed grain into the wind, separating the kernels of *wheat* from the husks and straw, the *chaff*, which was blown away.

3.13–17: The baptism of Jesus (Mk 1.9–11; Lk 3.21–22; Jn 1.31–34). **15:** *Righteousness* is a central theme in Matthew, and means acting in accordance with the will of God. It furnishes the justification for the greater (Jesus) being baptized by the lesser (the Baptist; 11.11). **16:** *Spirit*, 28.19; Gen 1.2; Isa 61.1. **17:** *My beloved Son* (see textual note *b*), 17.5; Ps 2.7; Isa 42.1.

4.1–11: The temptation of Jesus (Mk 1.12–13; Lk 4.1–13). **1:** *The devil*, a transcendent evil being, also described in this chapter as the tempter (v. 3) and Satan ("the enemy"; v. 10). **2:** The *forty days* recall the testing of Israel in the wilderness (Ex 34.28), and Elijah's forty-day journey into the Sinai wilderness (1 Kings 19.8). **3:** *Son of God*, the most comprehensive christological designation for Jesus in Matthew (3.17; 16.16; 17.5; 27.54; 28.19). **4:** Deut 8.3. **5:** *Holy city*, Jerusalem; cf. 27.53; *pinnacle*, possibly the southeast corner of the Temple's terrace where there was a steep drop to the Kidron Valley below. **6:** Ps 91.11–12. **7:** Deut 6.16. **8:** Mountains figure prominently in Matthew as places of revelation (5.1; 14.23; 15.29; 17.1; 24.3; 28.16). **10:** Deut 6.13. All of Jesus' responses to Satan are

11 Then the devil left him, and suddenly angels came and waited on him.

12 Now when Jesus[a] heard that John had been arrested, he withdrew to Galilee. 13 He left Nazareth and made his home in Capernaum by the sea, in the territory of Zebulun and Naphtali, 14 so that what had been spoken through the prophet Isaiah might be fulfilled:

15 "Land of Zebulun, land of Naphtali,
on the road by the sea, across the
Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles—
16 the people who sat in darkness
have seen a great light,
and for those who sat in the region and
shadow of death
light has dawned."

17 From that time Jesus began to proclaim, "Repent, for the kingdom of heaven has come near."[b]

18 As he walked by the Sea of Galilee, he saw two brothers, Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea—for they were fishermen. 19 And he said to them, "Follow me, and I will make you fish for people." 20 Immediately they left their nets and followed him. 21 As he went from there, he saw two other brothers, James son of Zebedee and his brother John, in the boat with their father Zebedee, mending their nets, and he called them. 22 Immediately they left the boat and their father, and followed him.

23 Jesus[c] went throughout Galilee, teaching in their synagogues and proclaiming the good news[d] of the kingdom and curing every disease and every sickness among the people. 24 So his fame spread throughout all Syria, and they brought to him all the sick, those who were afflicted with various diseases and pains, demoniacs, epileptics, and paralytics, and he cured them. 25 And great crowds followed him from Galilee, the Decapolis, Jerusalem, Judea, and from beyond the Jordan.

5 When Jesus[a] saw the crowds, he went up the mountain; and after he sat down, his disciples came to him. 2 Then he began to speak, and taught them, saying:

3 "Blessed are the poor in spirit, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

4 "Blessed are those who mourn, for they will be comforted.

[a] Gk *he*
[b] Or *is at hand*
[c] Gk *He*
[d] Gk *gospel*

citations from Deuteronomy. **11:** The *angels* feed Jesus as they had once fed Elijah (1 Kings 19.5–8).

4.12–25: The beginning of the Galilean ministry (Mk 1.14–20; Lk 4.14–15; 5.1–11; 6.17–19). **12:** *Galilee* was a region in northern Israel, one of the chief areas of Jesus' activity. It was separated from Judea (and Jerusalem) by Samaria. **13:** *Capernaum*, a village on the northwest shore of the Sea of Galilee. Fishing was an important and lucrative economic activity in the region. **15–16:** Fulfillment citation of Isa 9.1–2. The name "Galilee" is derived from the Hebrew phrase "circle *of the Gentiles*" (Isa 8.23). After the fall of the Northern Kingdom of Israel to Assyria (722 BCE), much of the area had been repopulated by Gentiles, although by Jesus' day it was predominantly Jewish. **17:** Some scholars argue that the phrase *from that time* marks the beginning of the second of three major divisions in the Gospel; cf. 16.21. **18:** *Sea of Galilee*, not a sea but a fresh-water lake, also known as Gennesaret (Lk 5.1) and the Lake of Tiberias (Jn 21.1). **24:** *Syria* is mentioned in no other Gospel; many scholars think that its capital, Antioch-on-the-Orontes, was the location of Matthew's church. *Demoniacs,* those thought to be possessed by demons. **25:** The *crowds* generally represent the Jewish people as distinguished from their leaders. *Decapolis*: A league of some ten cities with all but Scythopolis (earlier Beth-shan) situated east of the Jordan River. Their populations were largely Gentile, though they also contained substantial Jewish minorities.

5.1–7.29: The first discourse: The Sermon on the Mount. Matthew postpones his account of the Galilean ministry in order to introduce Jesus' teaching in the Sermon on the Mount, the first and longest of Jesus' five discourses in Matthew (compare the much briefer "Sermon on the Plain" in Lk 6.20–49). Its prominence within Matthew testifies to its importance for understanding Jesus and the requirements for "entering the kingdom." Whether the Sermon advocates an idealized or a realizable ethic continues to be debated. **1:** *Mountain*, recalling the figure of Moses giving the law to Israel (Ex 19–24). Just as the Law of Moses had five books, the Gospel of Matthew contains five discourses of Jesus. *He sat down*, the posture normally assumed by Jewish teachers.

5 "Blessed are the meek, for they will
inherit the earth.
6 "Blessed are those who hunger and thirst
for righteousness, for they will be filled.
7 "Blessed are the merciful, for they will
receive mercy.
8 "Blessed are the pure in heart, for they
will see God.
9 "Blessed are the peacemakers, for they
will be called children of God.
10 "Blessed are those who are persecuted
for righteousness' sake, for theirs is the king-
dom of heaven.
11 "Blessed are you when people revile
you and persecute you and utter all kinds
of evil against you falsely[a] on my account.
12 Rejoice and be glad, for your reward is
great in heaven, for in the same way they
persecuted the prophets who were before
you.
13 "You are the salt of the earth; but if salt
has lost its taste, how can its saltiness be re-
stored? It is no longer good for anything, but
is thrown out and trampled under foot.
14 "You are the light of the world. A city
built on a hill cannot be hid. 15 No one after
lighting a lamp puts it under the bushel bas-
ket, but on the lampstand, and it gives light
to all in the house. 16 In the same way, let your
light shine before others, so that they may
see your good works and give glory to your
Father in heaven.

17 "Do not think that I have come to abol-
ish the law or the prophets; I have come
not to abolish but to fulfill. 18 For truly I tell
you, until heaven and earth pass away, not
one letter,[b] not one stroke of a letter, will
pass from the law until all is accomplished.
19 Therefore, whoever breaks[c] one of the
least of these commandments, and teaches
others to do the same, will be called least in
the kingdom of heaven; but whoever does
them and teaches them will be called great
in the kingdom of heaven. 20 For I tell you,
unless your righteousness exceeds that of the
scribes and Pharisees, you will never enter
the kingdom of heaven.
21 "You have heard that it was said to those
of ancient times, 'You shall not murder'; and
'whoever murders shall be liable to judgment.'
22 But I say to you that if you are angry with a
brother or sister,[d] you will be liable to judg-
ment; and if you insult[e] a brother or sister,[f]
you will be liable to the council; and if you
say, 'You fool,' you will be liable to the hell[g]

[a] Other ancient authorities lack *falsely*
[b] Gk *one iota*
[c] Or *annuls*
[d] Gk *a brother*; other ancient authorities add *without cause*
[e] Gk *say Raca to* (an obscure term of abuse)
[f] Gk *a brother*
[g] Gk *Gehenna*

Disciples, for Jesus' named disciples, see 9.9–13; 10.2. **5.3–12: The Beatitudes** (Lk 6.20–23). Luke has only four beatitudes to Matthew's nine, and his four have a more this-worldly focus. **3:** The term "Beatitudes" is derived from the Latin word "beatus," meaning "blessed" or "favored by God." Matthew's beatitudes emphasize that God's blessings will be bestowed on believers in the new age (Isa 61.2). *The poor in spirit*, Lk 6.20 has "the poor." **4.** *Mourn*, perhaps for one's sins. **5:** *Meek*, Ps 37.11. **8:** *Pure in heart,* Pss 24.4; 73.1. **12:** *Persecuted the prophets*, Matthew assumes that all true prophets were persecuted (1 Kings 19.10; Neh 9.26), John the Baptist and Jesus among them.

5.13–16: Salt and light (Mk 9.50; Lk 14.34–35). **13:** *Lost its taste*, genuine salt can leach away from impure salt, leaving only a tasteless residue. **16:** *Father* is one of Jesus' favorite expressions for God in Matthew.

5.17–20: Teaching about the law. The rest of ch 5 deals with issues relating to the Torah. **17:** *Prophets*, the second of the three divisions of the Hebrew Bible. **18:** The phrase *truly* ("amen") *I tell you* in Jesus' mouth frequently involves pronouncements pertaining to the end time. *Until . . . all*: both temporal clauses refer to the end of the present age and the onset of the eschatological age. The verse suggests that the Torah remained in force among Jewish Christians in Matthew's church.

5.21–48: The outworking of the law (Lk 6.27–36; cf. Lev 19.18; *m. Abot* 1.12). The phrase "you have heard that it was said" occurs six times in ch 5, each followed by a reference to one of the commandments in the Hebrew Bible. In three of these "antitheses," Jesus' purpose is not to abrogate the Law, but to express the deeper significance of God's commandments. **21:** Ex 20.13; Deut 5.17. **22:** *I say to you* occurs twelve other times in the Sermon, and emphasizes Jesus' unprecedented authority to determine God's will (7.29; 28.18). *Council,* the Sanhedrin;

of fire. 23 So when you are offering your gift at
the altar, if you remember that your brother
or sister[a] has something against you, 24 leave
your gift there before the altar and go; first be
reconciled to your brother or sister,[a] and then
come and offer your gift. 25 Come to terms
quickly with your accuser while you are on
the way to court[b] with him, or your accuser
may hand you over to the judge, and the judge
to the guard, and you will be thrown into
prison. 26 Truly I tell you, you will never get
out until you have paid the last penny.

27 "You have heard that it was said, 'You
shall not commit adultery.' 28 But I say to
you that everyone who looks at a woman
with lust has already committed adultery
with her in his heart. 29 If your right eye
causes you to sin, tear it out and throw it
away; it is better for you to lose one of your
members than for your whole body to be
thrown into hell.[c] 30 And if your right hand
causes you to sin, cut it off and throw it
away; it is better for you to lose one of your
members than for your whole body to go
into hell.[c]

31 "It was also said, 'Whoever divorces
his wife, let him give her a certificate of
divorce.' 32 But I say to you that anyone who
divorces his wife, except on the ground of
unchastity, causes her to commit adultery;
and whoever marries a divorced woman
commits adultery.

33 "Again, you have heard that it was said to
those of ancient times, 'You shall not swear
falsely, but carry out the vows you have made
to the Lord.' 34 But I say to you, Do not swear
at all, either by heaven, for it is the throne of
God, 35 or by the earth, for it is his footstool,
or by Jerusalem, for it is the city of the great
King. 36 And do not swear by your head, for
you cannot make one hair white or black.
37 Let your word be 'Yes, Yes' or 'No, No';
anything more than this comes from the evil
one.[d]

38 "You have heard that it was said, 'An
eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth.'
39 But I say to you, Do not resist an evil-
doer. But if anyone strikes you on the right
cheek, turn the other also; 40 and if anyone
wants to sue you and take your coat, give
your cloak as well; 41 and if anyone forces
you to go one mile, go also the second mile.
42 Give to everyone who begs from you, and
do not refuse anyone who wants to borrow
from you.

43 "You have heard that it was said, 'You
shall love your neighbor and hate your
enemy.' 44 But I say to you, Love your enemies
and pray for those who persecute you, 45 so
that you may be children of your Father in
heaven; for he makes his sun rise on the
evil and on the good, and sends rain on the
righteous and on the unrighteous. 46 For if
you love those who love you, what reward
do you have? Do not even the tax collectors
do the same? 47 And if you greet only your
brothers and sisters,[e] what more are you
doing than others? Do not even the Gentiles
do the same? 48 Be perfect, therefore, as your
heavenly Father is perfect.

[a] Gk *your brother*
[b] Gk lacks *to court*
[c] Gk *Gehenna*
[d] Or *evil*
[e] Gk *your brothers*

see 26.59n. **24:** *Gift*, true worship of God requires full reconciliation with one's neighbors. **25:** Imprisonment for debt was a Gentile, not a Jewish, practice. **27:** For the remaining three antitheses, Jesus proposes a different ethic for his followers. *Adultery*, cf. Ex. 20.14; Deut 5.18; cf. 5.32; 15.19; 19.9. Jesus not only condemns adultery but even entertaining thoughts that would lead to adultery. **31:** *Divorce*, Deut 24.1–4; cf. 19.7–9. Jesus indicates that the only justification for divorcing one's wife is sexual infidelity; otherwise the divorce is invalid, and any future marriages adulterous. **33:** Lev 19.12; Num 30.2; Deut 23.21. **34–36:** *Heaven, earth,* and *Jerusalem* are all circumlocutions for "God;" they, along with one's *head*, are in God's keeping and, therefore, not under humans' dominion. **35:** Isa 66.1; Ps 48.2. **38:** Jesus qualifies the law of retaliation, the "lex talionis" ("an eye for an eye . . .," Ex 21.23–24; Lev 24.19–20; Deut 19.21), by advocating the return of good for evil. **40:** Cf. Ex 22.26–27; Deut 24.12–13. **43:** *Love your neighbor* quotes Lev 19.18, but *hate your enemy* is not found in the Hebrew Bible. **44:** *Those who persecute you*, Matthew's version (cf. Lk 6.27–28) may refer to actual persecution experienced by his church, demonstrating the radical nature of the commandment (cf. 10.17). **46:** *Tax collectors* though Jewish, were popularly regarded as unclean, Roman collaborators. **47:** *Gentiles* occasionally have a negative connotation in the Gospel

6 "Beware of practicing your piety before others in order to be seen by them; for then you have no reward from your Father in heaven.

2 "So whenever you give alms, do not sound a trumpet before you, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, so that they may be praised by others. Truly I tell you, they have received their reward. 3 But when you give alms, do not let your left hand know what your right hand is doing, 4 so that your alms may be done in secret; and your Father who sees in secret will reward you.[a]

5 "And whenever you pray, do not be like the hypocrites; for they love to stand and pray in the synagogues and at the street corners, so that they may be seen by others. Truly I tell you, they have received their reward. 6 But whenever you pray, go into your room and shut the door and pray to your Father who is in secret; and your Father who sees in secret will reward you.[a]

7 "When you are praying, do not heap up empty phrases as the Gentiles do; for they think that they will be heard because of their many words. 8 Do not be like them, for your Father knows what you need before you ask him.

9 "Pray then in this way:
Our Father in heaven,
hallowed be your name.
10 Your kingdom come.
Your will be done,
on earth as it is in heaven.
11 Give us this day our daily bread.[b]
12 And forgive us our debts,
as we also have forgiven our debtors.
13 And do not bring us to the time of trial,[c]
but rescue us from the evil one.[d]
14 For if you forgive others their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you; 15 but if you do not forgive others, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.

16 "And whenever you fast, do not look dismal, like the hypocrites, for they disfigure their faces so as to show others that they are fasting. Truly I tell you, they have received their reward. 17 But when you fast, put oil on your head and wash your face, 18 so that your fasting may be seen not by others but by your Father who is in secret; and your Father who sees in secret will reward you.[a]

19 "Do not store up for yourselves treasures on earth, where moth and rust[e] consume and where thieves break in and steal; 20 but store up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust[e] consumes and where thieves do not break in and steal. 21 For where your treasure is, there your heart will be also.

22 "The eye is the lamp of the body. So, if your eye is healthy, your whole body will be

[a] Other ancient authorities add *openly*
[b] Or *our bread for tomorrow*
[c] Or *us into temptation*
[d] Or *from evil.* Other ancient authorities add, in some form, *For the kingdom and the power and the glory are yours forever. Amen.*
[e] Gk *eating*

(5.47; 6.7,32; 15.26; 16.17). **48:** The word *perfect* occurs only here and at 19.21 in the Gospels. This understanding of "perfection" is closely linked with the love commandment (19.19).

6.1–18: Almsgiving, prayer, and fasting. 1: This segment opens with a general principle, followed by three particular applications. True piety or righteousness, which is inconspicuous, is contrasted with false piety, which is motivated by ostentation. **2:** Giving *alms* involved not only the donation of money but also the performance of other merciful and charitable actions. Sounding a *trumpet* is probably metaphorical (as in "blow your own horn"). *Hypocrites* originally signified "actors." Here the word takes on some of that sense; elsewhere in Matthew it is used more pejoratively, particularly of the Pharisees and scribes, in the sense of "frauds," not the outstanding examples of piety people thought them to be. **5:** Performance of the daily Jewish prayers in the morning, at noon, and in the evening (Lk 11.2–4). *Stand*, standing with the face directed toward Jerusalem was the typical Jewish posture for prayer (1 Kings 8.35–48; Mk 11.25; Lk 18.13). **9:** *Pray*, Matthew's version of the Lord's Prayer is considerably longer than Luke's (11.2–4). The final doxology (see textual note *d*) appears to have been added later under the influence of 1 Chr 29.1–13. **17:** *Oil on your head*, anointing and washing oneself were a feature of day-to-day hygiene and not necessarily a sign of festivity.

6.19–34: Life and livelihood (Lk 12.22–34; 11.34–36). This section illustrates how to live in the world, without

full of light; 23 but if your eye is unhealthy,
your whole body will be full of darkness. If
then the light in you is darkness, how great is
the darkness!

24 "No one can serve two masters; for a
slave will either hate the one and love the
other, or be devoted to the one and despise
the other. You cannot serve God and wealth.[a]

25 "Therefore I tell you, do not worry about
your life, what you will eat or what you will
drink,[b] or about your body, what you will
wear. Is not life more than food, and the body
more than clothing? 26 Look at the birds of
the air; they neither sow nor reap nor gather
into barns, and yet your heavenly Father
feeds them. Are you not of more value than
they? 27 And can any of you by worrying add
a single hour to your span of life?[c] 28 And why
do you worry about clothing? Consider the
lilies of the field, how they grow; they neither
toil nor spin, 29 yet I tell you, even Solomon
in all his glory was not clothed like one of
these. 30 But if God so clothes the grass of the
field, which is alive today and tomorrow is
thrown into the oven, will he not much more
clothe you—you of little faith? 31 Therefore
do not worry, saying, 'What will we eat?' or
'What will we drink?' or 'What will we wear?'
32 For it is the Gentiles who strive for all these
things; and indeed your heavenly Father
knows that you need all these things. 33 But
strive first for the kingdom of God[d] and his[e]
righteousness, and all these things will be
given to you as well.

34 "So do not worry about tomorrow, for
tomorrow will bring worries of its own. To-
day's trouble is enough for today.

7 "Do not judge, so that you may not be
judged. 2 For with the judgment you make
you will be judged, and the measure you give
will be the measure you get. 3 Why do you
see the speck in your neighbor's[f] eye, but do
not notice the log in your own eye? 4 Or how
can you say to your neighbor,[g] 'Let me take
the speck out of your eye,' while the log is
in your own eye? 5 You hypocrite, first take
the log out of your own eye, and then you
will see clearly to take the speck out of your
neighbor's[f] eye.

6 "Do not give what is holy to dogs; and do
not throw your pearls before swine, or they
will trample them under foot and turn and
maul you.

7 "Ask, and it will be given you; search,
and you will find; knock, and the door will
be opened for you. 8 For everyone who asks
receives, and everyone who searches finds,
and for everyone who knocks, the door will
be opened. 9 Is there anyone among you who,
if your child asks for bread, will give a stone?
10 Or if the child asks for a fish, will give a
snake? 11 If you then, who are evil, know how
to give good gifts to your children, how much
more will your Father in heaven give good
things to those who ask him!

12 "In everything do to others as you would
have them do to you; for this is the law and
the prophets.

13 "Enter through the narrow gate; for the
gate is wide and the road is easy[h] that leads to
destruction, and there are many who take it.
14 For the gate is narrow and the road is hard
that leads to life, and there are few who find it.

[a] Gk *mammon*
[b] Other ancient authorities lack *or what you will drink*
[c] Or *add one cubit to your height*
[d] Other ancient authorities lack *of God*
[e] Or *its*
[f] Gk *brother's*
[g] Gk *brother*
[h] Other ancient authorities read *for the road is wide and easy*

being subject to it. **22–23:** A sincere *eye is healthy* and has no hidden agenda, while an "unhealthy" or insincere eye was thought to occlude the entry of *light*. **26–30:** These verses demonstrate a "less to greater" ("a fortiori") argument, where one establishes a greater premise from a lesser one (cf. 12.9–11). **29:** *Solomon*, 1 Kings 10; 2 Chr 1. **30:** *Thrown into the oven*, grass was used to fire baking ovens. **32:** 5.47n.

7.1–6: Judging others (Lk 6.37–38,41–42). **1:** *Be judged*, by God. **6:** *Holy*, meat from the sacrifice or possibly the deeper truths of the Gospel; *dogs* were considered scavengers and *swine* were unclean animals.

7.7–23: The way of righteousness (Lk 11.9–13; 6.43–44; 13.24–27). The following sayings from Q embody Matthew's ethic of righteousness. **12:** The "Golden Rule" epitomizing Jesus' ethical teaching. A similar principle is attributed to the Pharisee Hillel (*b. Shabb* 31a; cf. Tob 4.15). **13:** *Narrow gate*, a metaphor for entering

15 "Beware of false prophets, who come
to you in sheep's clothing but inwardly are
ravenous wolves. 16 You will know them by
their fruits. Are grapes gathered from thorns,
or figs from thistles? 17 In the same way, every
good tree bears good fruit, but the bad tree
bears bad fruit. 18 A good tree cannot bear
bad fruit, nor can a bad tree bear good fruit.
19 Every tree that does not bear good fruit is
cut down and thrown into the fire. 20 Thus
you will know them by their fruits.

21 "Not everyone who says to me, 'Lord,
Lord,' will enter the kingdom of heaven, but
only the one who does the will of my Father
in heaven. 22 On that day many will say to
me, 'Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy in your
name, and cast out demons in your name,
and do many deeds of power in your name?'
23 Then I will declare to them, 'I never knew
you; go away from me, you evildoers.'

24 "Everyone then who hears these words
of mine and acts on them will be like a wise
man who built his house on rock. 25 The rain
fell, the floods came, and the winds blew and
beat on that house, but it did not fall, because
it had been founded on rock. 26 And everyone
who hears these words of mine and does not
act on them will be like a foolish man who
built his house on sand. 27 The rain fell, and
the floods came, and the winds blew and beat
against that house, and it fell—and great was
its fall!"

28 Now when Jesus had finished saying
these things, the crowds were astounded at
his teaching, 29 for he taught them as one hav-
ing authority, and not as their scribes.

8 When Jesus[a] had come down from the
mountain, great crowds followed him;
2 and there was a leper[b] who came to him and
knelt before him, saying, "Lord, if you choose,
you can make me clean." 3 He stretched out
his hand and touched him, saying, "I do
choose. Be made clean!" Immediately his
leprosy[b] was cleansed. 4 Then Jesus said to
him, "See that you say nothing to anyone; but
go, show yourself to the priest, and offer the
gift that Moses commanded, as a testimony
to them."

5 When he entered Capernaum, a cen-
turion came to him, appealing to him 6 and
saying, "Lord, my servant is lying at home
paralyzed, in terrible distress." 7 And he said
to him, "I will come and cure him." 8 The cen-

[a] Gk *he*

[b] The terms *leper* and *leprosy* can refer to several diseases

the kingdom of God. **15:** *False prophets*, possibly itinerant Christian prophets 7.22; 23.34; *Did.* 11.7–12. **16:** *Fruits*, repentance and righteous behavior. **22:** *That day*, the day of judgment. *In your name*, "on behalf of" or "with the authority of." **23:** *Evildoers*, Ps 6.8.

7.24–29: The two foundations (Lk 6.47–49). **24:** *These words of mine*, obedience to Jesus' words, as to the will of God (7.21), is the only way to achieve righteousness and enter the kingdom. In the Sermon, Jesus has provided his hearers with a solid foundation of *rock* (16.18). **28:** The *crowds*, not mentioned at the beginning of the discourse, appear as the audience beyond the inner circle of disciples. Their presence suggests that Jesus' words are directed not only to the disciples but to all followers of Jesus. **29:** *Scribes*, 2.4n. All five of Matthew's discourses close with a reference to judgment.

8.1–9.38: The deeds of the Messiah. Matthew follows his epitome of Jesus' teaching with a collection of Jesus' miracles: the Messiah of word is succeeded by the Messiah of deed. While Matthew conforms to the order of Mark in a general way, he has made considerable use of Q and his own traditions (two of which are doublets; see 9.27–31 and 9.32–34). To create the Messiah of deed sequence Matthew has introduced five miracle stories so that chs 8–9 form a composite of ten miracle accounts interleaved with two discipleship narratives (8.18–22; 9.9–17).

8.1–4: The cleansing of a leper (Mk 1.40–45; Lk 5.12–16). Matthew emphasizes Jesus' divine calm by eliminating Mark's reference to Jesus' emotions (1.41,43). **2:** *Make me clean*, the skin condition of lepers rendered them ceremonially unclean (Lev 13.1–59; Num 5.1–4). **3:** *Leprosy* was a serious skin disease, including what we describe as leprosy (Hansen's disease), as well as many other disorders such as psoriasis, lupus, ringworm, and favus. **4:** *The gift that Moses commanded*, offerings for the cleansing of a leper (Lev. 14.10–32). This leper heeds Jesus' command to tell no one (contrast Mk 1.40–5).

8.5–17: Many healings (Lk 7.1–10; Jn 4.43–54; Mk 1.29–34; Lk 4.38–41). **5:** *Centurion*, a Roman officer com-

turion answered, "Lord, I am not worthy to have you come under my roof; but only speak the word, and my servant will be healed. 9 For I also am a man under authority, with soldiers under me; and I say to one, 'Go,' and he goes, and to another, 'Come,' and he comes, and to my slave, 'Do this,' and the slave does it." 10 When Jesus heard him, he was amazed and said to those who followed him, "Truly I tell you, in no one[a] in Israel have I found such faith. 11 I tell you, many will come from east and west and will eat with Abraham and Isaac and Jacob in the kingdom of heaven, 12 while the heirs of the kingdom will be thrown into the outer darkness, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth." 13 And to the centurion Jesus said, "Go; let it be done for you according to your faith." And the servant was healed in that hour.

14 When Jesus entered Peter's house, he saw his mother-in-law lying in bed with a fever; 15 he touched her hand, and the fever left her, and she got up and began to serve him. 16 That evening they brought to him many who were possessed with demons; and he cast out the spirits with a word, and cured all who were sick. 17 This was to fulfill what had been spoken through the prophet Isaiah, "He took our infirmities and bore our diseases."

18 Now when Jesus saw great crowds around him, he gave orders to go over to the other side. 19 A scribe then approached and said, "Teacher, I will follow you wherever you go." 20 And Jesus said to him, "Foxes have holes, and birds of the air have nests; but the Son of Man has nowhere to lay his head." 21 Another of his disciples said to him, "Lord, first let me go and bury my father." 22 But Jesus said to him, "Follow me, and let the dead bury their own dead."

23 And when he got into the boat, his disciples followed him. 24 A windstorm arose on the sea, so great that the boat was being swamped by the waves; but he was asleep. 25 And they went and woke him up, saying, "Lord, save us! We are perishing!" 26 And he said to them, "Why are you afraid, you of little faith?" Then he got up and rebuked the winds and the sea; and there was a dead calm. 27 They were amazed, saying, "What sort of man is this, that even the winds and the sea obey him?"

28 When he came to the other side, to the country of the Gadarenes,[b] two demoniacs coming out of the tombs met him. They were so fierce that no one could pass that way. 29 Suddenly they shouted, "What have you to do with us, Son of God? Have you come here to torment us before the time?" 30 Now a large herd of swine was feeding at some distance from them. 31 The demons begged him, "If you cast us out, send us into the herd of swine." 32 And he said to them, "Go!" So they came out and entered the swine; and

[a] Other ancient authorities read *Truly I tell you, not even*

[b] Other ancient authorities read *Gergesenes*; others, *Gerasenes*

manding about a hundred men. **6:** *Servant*, or "child." **8:** *I am not worthy*, contact with Gentiles could make Jews ceremonially unclean (Acts 10.28; *m. Avoda Zara*) **10:** *Faith*, in Matthew the two figures commended by Jesus for their faith are Gentiles (cf. 15.28). **11:** *Eat . . . in the kingdom*, the messianic banquet (22.1–10; Isa 25.6). **12:** *1 Enoch* 10.4–6; 62.11. *Gnashing of teeth*, an indication of sharp pain or vexation. This phrase, which occurs six times in Matthew, expresses the dire consequences of exclusion from the kingdom (13.42,50; 22.13; 24.51; 25.30; cf. Lk 12.47; 13.28). **17:** A fulfillment citation of Isaiah 53.4. Matthew's form of the citation emphasizes physical rather than spiritual healing.

8.18–22: Would-be followers of Jesus (Lk 9.57–62). **18:** *Other side*, the eastern shore of the Sea of Galilee. **20:** *Son of Man*, an enigmatic self-designation used by Jesus that has at least three senses in Matthew: Jesus as a human being; Jesus as a figure who must suffer and die; Jesus as divine judge at the end of days (cf. Dan 7.13–14). The first sense is in view here. **21:** *Bury my father,* although the burial of kinsmen was among the most pressing of sacred duties for Jews (Tob 1.18–19), it is entirely eclipsed by the call to follow Jesus.

8.23–34: The calming of a storm and the healing of two demoniacs (Mk 4.35–5.20; Lk 8.22–39). **26:** This nature miracle is Jesus' only nonhealing miracle in the first half of the Gospel. **28:** *Gadarenes*, Matthew situates the healing in Gadara, instead of Gerasa (Mk 5.1), which was located ca. 35 mi (56 km) from the sea. Gadara's territory was far closer to the Sea of Galilee. **29:** *Before the time*, the day of judgment. **30:** *Swine* suggest a Gentile region (7.6n.).

suddenly, the whole herd rushed down the steep bank into the sea and perished in the water. 33 The swineherds ran off, and on going into the town, they told the whole story about what had happened to the demoniacs. 34 Then the whole town came out to meet Jesus; and when they saw him, they begged him to leave their neighborhood.

9 1 And after getting into a boat he crossed the sea and came to his own town.

2 And just then some people were carrying a paralyzed man lying on a bed. When Jesus saw their faith, he said to the paralytic, "Take heart, son; your sins are forgiven." 3 Then some of the scribes said to themselves, "This man is blaspheming." 4 But Jesus, perceiving their thoughts, said, "Why do you think evil in your hearts? 5 For which is easier, to say, 'Your sins are forgiven,' or to say, 'Stand up and walk'? 6 But so that you may know that the Son of Man has authority on earth to forgive sins"—he then said to the paralytic—"Stand up, take your bed and go to your home." 7 And he stood up and went to his home. 8 When the crowds saw it, they were filled with awe, and they glorified God, who had given such authority to human beings.

9 As Jesus was walking along, he saw a man called Matthew sitting at the tax booth; and he said to him, "Follow me." And he got up and followed him.

10 And as he sat at dinner[a] in the house, many tax collectors and sinners came and were sitting[b] with him and his disciples. 11 When the Pharisees saw this, they said to his disciples, "Why does your teacher eat with tax collectors and sinners?" 12 But when he heard this, he said, "Those who are well have no need of a physician, but those who are sick. 13 Go and learn what this means, 'I desire mercy, not sacrifice.' For I have come to call not the righteous but sinners."

14 Then the disciples of John came to him, saying, "Why do we and the Pharisees fast often,[c] but your disciples do not fast?" 15 And Jesus said to them, "The wedding guests cannot mourn as long as the bridegroom is with them, can they? The days will come when the bridegroom is taken away from them, and then they will fast. 16 No one sews a piece of unshrunk cloth on an old cloak, for the patch pulls away from the cloak, and a worse tear is made. 17 Neither is new wine put into old wineskins; otherwise, the skins burst, and the wine is spilled, and the skins are destroyed; but new wine is put into fresh wineskins, and so both are preserved."

18 While he was saying these things to them, suddenly a leader of the synagogue[d] came in and knelt before him, saying, "My daughter has just died; but come and lay your hand on her, and she will live." 19 And Jesus got up and followed him, with his disciples. 20 Then suddenly a woman who had been suffering from hemorrhages for twelve years came up behind him and touched the fringe of his cloak, 21 for she said to herself, "If I only touch his cloak, I will be made well." 22 Jesus turned, and seeing her he said, "Take heart, daughter; your faith has made you well." And instantly the woman was made well. 23 When Jesus came to the leader's house and saw the flute players and the crowd making a commotion, 24 he said, "Go away; for the girl is not dead but sleeping." And they laughed at him. 25 But when the crowd had been put outside, he went in and took her by the hand, and the girl got up. 26 And the report of this spread throughout that district.

[a] Gk *reclined*
[b] Gk *were reclining*
[c] Other ancient authorities lack *often*
[d] Gk lacks *of the synagogue*

9.1–17: The ministry in Capernaum (Mk 2.1–22; Lk 5.17–39). **1:** *His own town*, Capernaum. **3:** *Blaspheming*, they accuse Jesus of dishonoring God's name because he claims that he, like God, can forgive sins. **8:** *To human beings*, Jesus' own authority to forgive has been bequeathed to Matthew's church. **9:** The change of Levi's name (Mk 2.14) has led some scholars to consider "Matthew" to be the evangelist's own signature; see also 5.46n. **13:** Jesus cites Hos. 6.6 here and again at 12.7. **15:** *Bridegroom*, Jesus' association with the coming of the kingdom makes him a festal figure like a bridegroom (cf. 22.1–14).

9.18–34: Four healings (Mk 5.21–43; Lk 8.40–56). **21:** *Touch his cloak*, if the hemorrhage was menstrual, the woman was ritually impure and would have made Jesus impure by touching him. **23:** *Flute players* were a feature of funeral rites. **27–31:** This healing narrative is a doublet of 20.29–34. The evangelist frequently doubles

27 As Jesus went on from there, two blind
men followed him, crying loudly, "Have
mercy on us, Son of David!" 28 When he en-
tered the house, the blind men came to him;
and Jesus said to them, "Do you believe that
I am able to do this?" They said to him, "Yes,
Lord." 29 Then he touched their eyes and said,
"According to your faith let it be done to you."
30 And their eyes were opened. Then Jesus
sternly ordered them, "See that no one knows
of this." 31 But they went away and spread the
news about him throughout that district.

32 After they had gone away, a demoniac who
was mute was brought to him. 33 And when the
demon had been cast out, the one who had
been mute spoke; and the crowds were amazed
and said, "Never has anything like this been
seen in Israel." 34 But the Pharisees said, "By the
ruler of the demons he casts out the demons."[a]

35 Then Jesus went about all the cities and
villages, teaching in their synagogues, and
proclaiming the good news of the kingdom,
and curing every disease and every sickness.
36 When he saw the crowds, he had compas-
sion for them, because they were harassed
and helpless, like sheep without a shepherd.
37 Then he said to his disciples, "The harvest
is plentiful, but the laborers are few; 38 there-
fore ask the Lord of the harvest to send out
laborers into his harvest."

10 Then Jesus[b] summoned his twelve
disciples and gave them authority over
unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to cure
every disease and every sickness. 2 These are
the names of the twelve apostles: first, Simon,
also known as Peter, and his brother Andrew;
James son of Zebedee, and his brother John;
3 Philip and Bartholomew; Thomas and Mat-
thew the tax collector; James son of Alphaeus,
and Thaddaeus;[c] 4 Simon the Cananaean, and
Judas Iscariot, the one who betrayed him.

5 These twelve Jesus sent out with the fol-
lowing instructions: "Go nowhere among the
Gentiles, and enter no town of the Samaritans,
6 but go rather to the lost sheep of the house
of Israel. 7 As you go, proclaim the good news,
'The kingdom of heaven has come near.'[d]
8 Cure the sick, raise the dead, cleanse the
lepers,[e] cast out demons. You received without
payment; give without payment. 9 Take no
gold, or silver, or copper in your belts, 10 no bag
for your journey, or two tunics, or sandals, or a
staff; for laborers deserve their food. 11 What-

[a] Other ancient authorities lack this verse
[b] Gk *he*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *Lebbaeus*, or *Lebbaeus called Thaddaeus*
[d] Or *is at hand*
[e] The terms *leper* and *leprosy* can refer to several diseases

the number of figures in his sources (8.28–34; 9.27–31), possibly in keeping with the Jewish legal tradition of furnishing double witnesses to testify to the truth of something (Deut 19.15). **27:** The sick and marginalized often address Jesus as *Son of David* (1.1) in order to be healed. In the other Gospels the title does not have such therapeutic associations. **32–34:** A doublet of 12.22–24. **34:** *Ruler of the demons*: cf. 12.24–32.

9.35–38: The compassion of Jesus. 35: *Their synagogues* may indicate that Jewish Christians in Matthew's day were no longer participants in Jewish synagogues. In Jesus' day, synagogue buildings were well established as places of worship. **36:** Jesus' compassion for the leaderless people of Israel is a defining feature of Matthew's Jesus; cf. Num 27.17; Ezek 34.5. **37:** Normally a symbol for the final judgment, the *harvest* appears here as a metaphor for Jesus' mission, and forms a fitting introduction to the mission discourse.

10.1–11.1: The second (mission) discourse. This discourse appears to reflect both the time of Jesus and that of the early church. While Jesus delimits the disciples' mission to the people of Israel (10.5–6), the discourse goes on to speak of a later phase where the disciples were dragged before governors and provided testimony to the Gentiles (10.18).

10.1–15: The commissioning of the twelve (Mk 3.13–19; Lk 6.12–16; Mk 6.7–13; Lk 9.1–6). The miraculous acts performed by Jesus now become a feature of the disciples' own ministry. **2:** *Twelve apostles*, this is the first time Matthew explicitly names the twelve; their number reflects the twelve tribes of Israel (19.28). **3:** Matthew has added *tax collector*. **4:** *Iscariot* may mean "from Kerioth," a town in southern Judea. **5:** *Gentiles*, only Matthew has Jesus delimit his own and his disciples' ministry to *Israel. Samaritans* were the inhabitants of Samaria, a region that had been part of the Northern Kingdom of Israel until its defeat by the Assyrians in 722 BCE. Those Jews who were not deported were thought to have intermarried with Gentiles, and their descendants, the Samari-

ever town or village you enter, find out who in it is worthy, and stay there until you leave. 12 As you enter the house, greet it. 13 If the house is worthy, let your peace come upon it; but if it is not worthy, let your peace return to you. 14 If anyone will not welcome you or listen to your words, shake off the dust from your feet as you leave that house or town. 15 Truly I tell you, it will be more tolerable for the land of Sodom and Gomorrah on the day of judgment than for that town.

16 "See, I am sending you out like sheep into the midst of wolves; so be wise as serpents and innocent as doves. 17 Beware of them, for they will hand you over to councils and flog you in their synagogues; 18 and you will be dragged before governors and kings because of me, as a testimony to them and the Gentiles. 19 When they hand you over, do not worry about how you are to speak or what you are to say; for what you are to say will be given to you at that time; 20 for it is not you who speak, but the Spirit of your Father speaking through you. 21 Brother will betray brother to death, and a father his child, and children will rise against parents and have them put to death; 22 and you will be hated by all because of my name. But the one who endures to the end will be saved. 23 When they persecute you in one town, flee to the next; for truly I tell you, you will not have gone through all the towns of Israel before the Son of Man comes.

24 "A disciple is not above the teacher, nor a slave above the master; 25 it is enough for the disciple to be like the teacher, and the slave like the master. If they have called the master of the house Beelzebul, how much more will they malign those of his household!

26 "So have no fear of them; for nothing is covered up that will not be uncovered, and nothing secret that will not become known. 27 What I say to you in the dark, tell in the light; and what you hear whispered, proclaim from the housetops. 28 Do not fear those who kill the body but cannot kill the soul; rather fear him who can destroy both soul and body in hell.[a] 29 Are not two sparrows sold for a penny? Yet not one of them will fall to the ground apart from your Father. 30 And even the hairs of your head are all counted. 31 So do not be afraid; you are of more value than many sparrows.

32 "Everyone therefore who acknowledges me before others, I also will acknowledge before my Father in heaven; 33 but whoever denies me before others, I also will deny before my Father in heaven.

34 "Do not think that I have come to bring peace to the earth; I have not come to bring peace, but a sword.

35 For I have come to set a man against his father,
and a daughter against her mother,
and a daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law;
36 and one's foes will be members of one's own household.

37 Whoever loves father or mother more than me is not worthy of me; and whoever loves son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me; 38 and whoever does not take up the cross and follow me is not worthy of me. 39 Those who find their life will lose it, and those who lose their life for my sake will find it.

40 "Whoever welcomes you welcomes me, and whoever welcomes me welcomes the one who sent me. 41 Whoever welcomes a

[a] Gk *Gehenna*

tans, were reviled by Jews (see Jn 4.9). **6:** *Lost sheep of the house of Israel*, see 9.36n. **15:** *Sodom and Gomorrah,* Gen 18.16–19.39.

10.16–25: Coming persecutions (Mk 13.9–13; Lk 21.12–17). **17:** *Their synagogues,* see 9.35n. **18:** *Governors*, Roman officials, including prefects and procurators. *Gentiles*, an anticipation of the post-resurrection mission (28.19). **23:** *Son of Man*, most scholars interpret this difficult verse as a reference to Jesus' return (the Second Coming or Parousia). **25:** *They*, the Pharisees (9.34; 12.24). *Beelzebul*, a ruler of demons often identified with Satan; originally the name for the Canaanite deity Baal-zebul, "Baal (or "Lord") the Prince" (2 Kings 1.2–6). See 9.34; 12.24.

10.26–11.1: The consequences of mission (Lk 12.2–9; 12.51–53; 14.26–27; Mk 9.41). **26:** *Them*, the scribes and Pharisees. **29:** *Sparrows*, the least expensive of edible birds. **34–39:** The affliction and pain that must come prior to the messianic age of peace. **38:** *Cross*, a Roman punishment reserved for slaves and rebels. The condemned

prophet in the name of a prophet will receive a prophet's reward; and whoever welcomes a righteous person in the name of a righteous person will receive the reward of the righteous; [42] and whoever gives even a cup of cold water to one of these little ones in the name of a disciple—truly I tell you, none of these will lose their reward."

11 Now when Jesus had finished instructing his twelve disciples, he went on from there to teach and proclaim his message in their cities.

[2] When John heard in prison what the Messiah[a] was doing, he sent word by his[b] disciples [3] and said to him, "Are you the one who is to come, or are we to wait for another?" [4] Jesus answered them, "Go and tell John what you hear and see: [5] the blind receive their sight, the lame walk, the lepers[c] are cleansed, the deaf hear, the dead are raised, and the poor have good news brought to them. [6] And blessed is anyone who takes no offense at me."

[7] As they went away, Jesus began to speak to the crowds about John: "What did you go out into the wilderness to look at? A reed shaken by the wind? [8] What then did you go out to see? Someone[d] dressed in soft robes? Look, those who wear soft robes are in royal palaces. [9] What then did you go out to see? A prophet?[e] Yes, I tell you, and more than a prophet. [10] This is the one about whom it is written,

'See, I am sending my messenger ahead of you,
who will prepare your way before you.'

[11] Truly I tell you, among those born of women no one has arisen greater than John the Baptist; yet the least in the kingdom of heaven is greater than he. [12] From the days of John the Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven has suffered violence,[f] and the violent take it by force. [13] For all the prophets and the law prophesied until John came; [14] and if you are willing to accept it, he is Elijah who is to come. [15] Let anyone with ears[g] listen!

[16] "But to what will I compare this generation? It is like children sitting in the marketplaces and calling to one another,

[17] 'We played the flute for you, and you did not dance;
we wailed, and you did not mourn.'

[18] For John came neither eating nor drinking, and they say, 'He has a demon'; [19] the Son of Man came eating and drinking, and they say, 'Look, a glutton and a drunkard, a friend of tax collectors and sinners!' Yet wisdom is vindicated by her deeds."[h]

[20] Then he began to reproach the cities in which most of his deeds of power had been done, because they did not repent. [21] "Woe

[a] Or *the Christ*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *two of his*
[c] The terms *leper* and *leprosy* can refer to several diseases
[d] Or *Why then did you go out? To see someone*
[e] Other ancient authorities read *Why then did you go out? To see a prophet?*
[f] Or *has been coming violently*
[g] Other ancient authorities add *to hear*
[h] Other ancient authorities read *children*

were forced to carry their cross to the place of execution (27.32). **41:** *In the name of a prophet*, i.e., because he is a prophet. **42:** *Little ones*, those disciples occupying a humble or lowly position (18.6).

11.2–19: The messengers from John the Baptist (Lk 7.18–35). **2:** *Prison*, Herod's stronghold Machaerus, 5 mi (8 km) east of the Dead Sea (see 14.1–12). **3:** *The one who is to come*, the Messiah. **5:** *The blind . . . to them*, the deeds predicted of the Messiah (Isa 35.5–6; 61.1). **5:** *Lepers*: 8.3n. **11:** *The least*: The least are greater through having witnessed the kingdom's arrival in Jesus and through having been given the opportunity to act on that knowledge (5.19; 18.4). **12:** As had happened with many true prophets, violence would soon be visited on John and Jesus. **14:** John is the *Elijah* to come before the day of the Lord: he ushers in the kingdom (Mal 3.1; cf. 17.12–13). **15:** 13.9. **16:** *This generation*, the entire generation of Israel contemporaneous with Jesus. **19:** *Son of Man*, 8.20n. *Wisdom*, Jesus, like John, embodies wisdom, and is justified by his actions (11.4–5).

11.20–24: Woes to unrepentant cities (Lk 10.13–15). **21:** A woe oracle against Galilean towns for failing to respond to Jesus. *Chorazin* has been identified with Kerazeh, a town situated close to Capernaum. After Jerusalem and Capernaum, *Bethsaida* is the place most commonly associated with Jesus' ministry in the Gospels (Mk 8.22–6). *Sackcloth*, a rough fabric worn as a symbol of mourning and repentance. **21–23:** *Tyre* and *Sidon,* on the Mediterranean coast north of Israel, were often linked in prophetic oracles (Isa 23; Jer 25.22; 27.3–7; 47.4; Ezek

to you, Chorazin! Woe to you, Bethsaida! For if the deeds of power done in you had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes. 22 But I tell you, on the day of judgment it will be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon than for you. 23 And you, Capernaum,

will you be exalted to heaven?

No, you will be brought down to Hades.

For if the deeds of power done in you had been done in Sodom, it would have remained until this day. 24 But I tell you that on the day of judgment it will be more tolerable for the land of Sodom than for you."

25 At that time Jesus said, "I thank[a] you, Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because you have hidden these things from the wise and the intelligent and have revealed them to infants; 26 yes, Father, for such was your gracious will.[b] 27 All things have been handed over to me by my Father; and no one knows the Son except the Father, and no one knows the Father except the Son and anyone to whom the Son chooses to reveal him.

28 "Come to me, all you that are weary and are carrying heavy burdens, and I will give you rest. 29 Take my yoke upon you, and learn from me; for I am gentle and humble in heart, and you will find rest for your souls. 30 For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light."

12 At that time Jesus went through the grainfields on the sabbath; his disciples were hungry, and they began to pluck heads of grain and to eat. 2 When the Pharisees saw it, they said to him, "Look, your disciples are doing what is not lawful to do on the sabbath." 3 He said to them, "Have you not read what David did when he and his companions were hungry? 4 He entered the house of God and ate the bread of the Presence, which it was not lawful for him or his companions to eat, but only for the priests. 5 Or have you not read in the law that on the sabbath the priests in the temple break the sabbath and yet are guiltless? 6 I tell you, something greater than the temple is here. 7 But if you had known what this means, 'I desire mercy and not sacrifice,' you would not have condemned the guiltless. 8 For the Son of Man is lord of the sabbath."

9 He left that place and entered their synagogue; 10 a man was there with a withered hand, and they asked him, "Is it lawful to cure on the sabbath?" so that they might accuse him. 11 He said to them, "Suppose one of you has only one sheep and it falls into a pit on the sabbath; will you not lay hold of it and lift it out? 12 How much more valuable is a human being than a sheep! So it is lawful to do good on the sabbath." 13 Then he said to the man, "Stretch out your hand." He stretched it out, and it was restored, as sound as the other. 14 But the Pharisees went out and conspired against him, how to destroy him.

15 When Jesus became aware of this, he departed. Many crowds[c] followed him, and he cured all of them, 16 and he ordered them not to make him known. 17 This was to fulfill what had been spoken through the prophet Isaiah:

18 "Here is my servant, whom I have
chosen,

[a] Or *praise*
[b] Or *for so it was well-pleasing in your sight*
[c] Other ancient authorities lack *crowds*

28.11–23; Joel 3.4–8), while *Sodom* was a stock example of an evil and unrepentant city (see 10.15n.).

11.25–30: Come to me and rest (Lk 11.21–22). **28:** *Heavy burdens*, 23.4. *Rest*, a defining feature of the new age (*1 Enoch* 63.6). **29:** *Yoke,* either Jesus' way of life or his teaching of the Torah's requirements. Jesus may be addressing his disciples here, but it is more likely the crowds of Israel (v. 7).

12.1–8: Plucking grain on the sabbath (Mk 2.23–28; Lk 6.1–5). **1:** *Grainfields*, wheat or barley. *Sabbath*, Ex 20.8–11; 34.21. Plucking grain was considered to be "work." **3:** *David*, 1 Sam 21.1–6. **4:** Priests were permitted to eat the *bread of the Presence* once it had been replaced with freshly consecrated loaves (Ex 25.30; Lev 24.5–9). **7:** A second citation (see 9.13) of Hos 6.6. For God, acts of mercy outweigh ritual observances. **8:** *Lord of the sabbath*, Jesus' authority exceeds even that of divinely established institutions.

12.9–21: The healing Messiah (Mk 3.1–6; Lk 6.6–11). **10:** Healing would be permitted if the afflicted person was unlikely to survive the sabbath. See also 6.26–30n. **11:** *One sheep,* most authorities permitted the rescue of animals on the sabbath (cf. *m. Shabb* 18.3; for a ruling against doing so, see CD 11.13–14). **15–21:** Isa 42.1–4, the longest fulfillment citation in Matthew. Here the servanthood of Jesus is strongly emphasized.

my beloved, with whom my soul is well
pleased.
I will put my Spirit upon him,
and he will proclaim justice to the
Gentiles.
19 He will not wrangle or cry aloud,
nor will anyone hear his voice in the
streets.
20 He will not break a bruised reed
or quench a smoldering wick
until he brings justice to victory.
21 And in his name the Gentiles will
hope."

22 Then they brought to him a demoniac who was blind and mute; and he cured him, so that the one who had been mute could speak and see. 23 All the crowds were amazed and said, "Can this be the Son of David?" 24 But when the Pharisees heard it, they said, "It is only by Beelzebul, the ruler of the demons, that this fellow casts out the demons." 25 He knew what they were thinking and said to them, "Every kingdom divided against itself is laid waste, and no city or house divided against itself will stand. 26 If Satan casts out Satan, he is divided against himself; how then will his kingdom stand? 27 If I cast out demons by Beelzebul, by whom do your own exorcists[a] cast them out? Therefore they will be your judges. 28 But if it is by the Spirit of God that I cast out demons, then the kingdom of God has come to you. 29 Or how can one enter a strong man's house and plunder his property, without first tying up the strong man? Then indeed the house can be plundered. 30 Whoever is not with me is against me, and whoever does not gather with me scatters. 31 Therefore I tell you, people will be forgiven for every sin and blasphemy, but blasphemy against the Spirit will not be forgiven. 32 Whoever speaks a word against the Son of Man will be forgiven, but whoever speaks against the Holy Spirit will not be forgiven, either in this age or in the age to come.

33 "Either make the tree good, and its fruit good; or make the tree bad, and its fruit bad; for the tree is known by its fruit. 34 You brood of vipers! How can you speak good things, when you are evil? For out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaks. 35 The good person brings good things out of a good treasure, and the evil person brings evil things out of an evil treasure. 36 I tell you, on the day of judgment you will have to give an account for every careless word you utter; 37 for by your words you will be justified, and by your words you will be condemned."

38 Then some of the scribes and Pharisees said to him, "Teacher, we wish to see a sign from you." 39 But he answered them, "An evil and adulterous generation asks for a sign, but no sign will be given to it except the sign of the prophet Jonah. 40 For just as Jonah was three days and three nights in the belly of the sea monster, so for three days and three nights the Son of Man will be in the heart of the earth. 41 The people of Nineveh will rise up at the judgment with this generation and condemn it, because they repented at the proclamation of Jonah, and see, something greater than Jonah is here! 42 The queen of the South will rise up at the judgment with this generation and condemn it, because she came from the ends of the earth to listen to the wisdom of Solomon, and see, something greater than Solomon is here!

43 "When the unclean spirit has gone out of a person, it wanders through waterless regions looking for a resting place, but it finds none. 44 Then it says, 'I will return to my house from which I came.' When it comes, it finds it empty, swept, and put in order.

[a] Gk *sons*

12.22–37: Jesus and Beelzebul (Mk 3.20–30; Lk 11.14–23; 12.10; 6.43–45). **22–24:** A doublet of 9.32–34. **23:** The title *Son of David* is synonymous with the Messiah of Israel (1.1; 9.27n.; Ezek 34; *Pss. Sol.* 17). The crowds merely broach the question of Jesus' identity, but their question is framed in such a way as to expect a negative answer: "This isn't . . . , is it?" **24:** *Beelzebul*, 10.25n. **31:** *Blasphemy*, impious denigration. **33:** 7.17. **34:** 3.7. **37:** Jas 3.1–12.

12.38–45: The demand for a sign (Mk 8.11–12; Lk 11.29–32; 11.24–26). **38:** 16.1n. **39:** *Adulterous*, unfaithful to God. *Sign of the prophet Jonah*, Jesus' resurrection after three days and nights. **41:** *Nineveh*, capital of the Assyrian empire, proverbial for its size and power. It was the subject of numerous prophetic oracles (Jon; Nah; Zeph 2.13; Tob 14). **42:** *Queen of the South*, the queen of Sheba (1 Kings 10.1–13; 2 Chr 9.1–12). **43:** *Waterless regions*, demons

45 Then it goes and brings along seven other
spirits more evil than itself, and they enter
and live there; and the last state of that per-
son is worse than the first. So will it be also
with this evil generation."

46 While he was still speaking to the
crowds, his mother and his brothers were
standing outside, wanting to speak to him.
47 Someone told him, "Look, your mother
and your brothers are standing outside,
wanting to speak to you."[a] 48 But to the one
who had told him this, Jesus[b] replied, "Who
is my mother, and who are my brothers?"
49 And pointing to his disciples, he said,
"Here are my mother and my brothers!
50 For whoever does the will of my Father
in heaven is my brother and sister and
mother."

13 That same day Jesus went out of the
house and sat beside the sea. 2 Such
great crowds gathered around him that he
got into a boat and sat there, while the whole
crowd stood on the beach. 3 And he told them
many things in parables, saying: "Listen! A
sower went out to sow. 4 And as he sowed,
some seeds fell on the path, and the birds
came and ate them up. 5 Other seeds fell on
rocky ground, where they did not have much
soil, and they sprang up quickly, since they
had no depth of soil. 6 But when the sun rose,
they were scorched; and since they had no
root, they withered away. 7 Other seeds fell
among thorns, and the thorns grew up and
choked them. 8 Other seeds fell on good soil
and brought forth grain, some a hundredfold,
some sixty, some thirty. 9 Let anyone with
ears[c] listen!"

10 Then the disciples came and asked him,
"Why do you speak to them in parables?"
11 He answered, "To you it has been given to
know the secrets[d] of the kingdom of heaven,
but to them it has not been given. 12 For to
those who have, more will be given, and they
will have an abundance; but from those who
have nothing, even what they have will be
taken away. 13 The reason I speak to them in
parables is that 'seeing they do not perceive,
and hearing they do not listen, nor do they
understand.' 14 With them indeed is fulfilled
the prophecy of Isaiah that says:

'You will indeed listen, but never
understand,
and you will indeed look, but never
perceive.
15 For this people's heart has grown dull,
and their ears are hard of hearing,
and they have shut their eyes;
so that they might not look with
their eyes,
and listen with their ears,
and understand with their heart and
turn—
and I would heal them.'

16 But blessed are your eyes, for they see, and
your ears, for they hear. 17 Truly I tell you,
many prophets and righteous people longed

[a] Other ancient authorities lack verse 47
[b] Gk *he*
[c] Other ancient authorities add *to hear*
[d] Or *mysteries*

were thought to reside in deserts (4.1; Tob 8.3). **45:** *Seven* often symbolizes "completeness," here suggesting complete possession. *This evil generation*, 11.16n.

12.46–50: The mother and brothers of Jesus (Mk 3.31–35; Lk 8.19–21). Obedience to God the Father is not only the most fundamental of familial obligations (8.21n.), it is also the ultimate basis of kinship.

13.1–53: The third discourse (the parable discourse). The word "parable" is derived from Gk "parabole," "a placing beside," where a literary figure or story illumines something "placed beside" it—here, the nature of the kingdom of heaven: "It is the same with the kingdom of heaven as when . . ." In ch 13, only the parable of the sower is not introduced as a "kingdom" parable (but see v. 19). Four of the parables in this chapter and one of the interpretations (vv. 36–43) are unique to Matthew. The theme of growth in the first four parables emphasizes the inexorable expansion of the kingdom.

13.1–23: The parable of the sower and its interpretation (Mk 4.1–20; Lk 8.4–15). **1:** *Sea*, of Galilee. *Sat,* 5.1n. **2:** *Crowds,* 4.25n. **8:** These yields are exceptional, but not impossible. **11:** *Secrets*, the mysteries of the end of days (Dan 2.28). **13:** Where Mk 4.12 suggests that the purpose of Jesus' parabolic speech is to promote incomprehension, Matthew indicates that Jesus speaks in parables as a consequence of incomprehension by Jesus' audience. **14–15:** Isa 6.9–10. **16:** The disciples are *blessed* because, unlike "this people" (v. 15), they comprehend Jesus and

to see what you see, but did not see it, and to hear what you hear, but did not hear it.

18 "Hear then the parable of the sower. 19 When anyone hears the word of the kingdom and does not understand it, the evil one comes and snatches away what is sown in the heart; this is what was sown on the path. 20 As for what was sown on rocky ground, this is the one who hears the word and immediately receives it with joy; 21 yet such a person has no root, but endures only for a while, and when trouble or persecution arises on account of the word, that person immediately falls away.[a] 22 As for what was sown among thorns, this is the one who hears the word, but the cares of the world and the lure of wealth choke the word, and it yields nothing. 23 But as for what was sown on good soil, this is the one who hears the word and understands it, who indeed bears fruit and yields, in one case a hundredfold, in another sixty, and in another thirty."

24 He put before them another parable: "The kingdom of heaven may be compared to someone who sowed good seed in his field; 25 but while everybody was asleep, an enemy came and sowed weeds among the wheat, and then went away. 26 So when the plants came up and bore grain, then the weeds appeared as well. 27 And the slaves of the householder came and said to him, 'Master, did you not sow good seed in your field? Where, then, did these weeds come from?' 28 He answered, 'An enemy has done this.' The slaves said to him, 'Then do you want us to go and gather them?' 29 But he replied, 'No; for in gathering the weeds you would uproot the wheat along with them. 30 Let both of them grow together until the harvest; and at harvest time I will tell the reapers, Collect the weeds first and bind them in bundles to be burned, but gather the wheat into my barn.'"

31 He put before them another parable: "The kingdom of heaven is like a mustard seed that someone took and sowed in his field; 32 it is the smallest of all the seeds, but when it has grown it is the greatest of shrubs and becomes a tree, so that the birds of the air come and make nests in its branches."

33 He told them another parable: "The kingdom of heaven is like yeast that a woman took and mixed in with[b] three measures of flour until all of it was leavened."

34 Jesus told the crowds all these things in parables; without a parable he told them nothing. 35 This was to fulfill what had been spoken through the prophet:[c]

"I will open my mouth to speak in parables;
I will proclaim what has been hidden from the foundation of the world."[d]

36 Then he left the crowds and went into the house. And his disciples approached him, saying, "Explain to us the parable of the weeds of the field." 37 He answered, "The one who sows the good seed is the Son of Man; 38 the field is the world, and the good seed are the children of the kingdom; the weeds are the children of the evil one, 39 and the enemy who sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the age, and the reapers are angels. 40 Just as the weeds are collected and burned up with fire, so will it be at the end of the age. 41 The Son of Man will send his angels, and

[a] Gk *stumbles*
[b] Gk *hid in*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *the prophet Isaiah*
[d] Other ancient authorities lack *of the world*

his message. **18–23:** In the Gospels only a few of Jesus' parables are provided with interpretations. **19:** *Does not understand it*, a characteristic Matthean addition.

13.24–33: Three parables of growth (Mk 4.30–32; Lk 13.18–21). **25:** *Weeds*, perhaps darnel, a weed resembling wheat. **31:** *Mustard seed*, the precise species cannot be determined, though mustard seed was popularly regarded as the smallest of seeds planted by farmers. **32:** *Tree*, actually a shrub growing to a height of ca. 10 ft (3 m). *Birds*, Ezek 17.23; Dan 4.10–12. **33:** *Yeast*, not yeast but leaven, a remnant of fermented dough used as a "starter" for raising a new batch of dough. *Three measures*, ca. 2/3 bu (21 L).

13.34–35: The use of parables (Mk 4.33–34). A fulfillment citation (Ps 78.2) attributed to Asaph the seer (2 Chr 29.30). In this half of the discourse Jesus' teaching is reserved for the disciples.

13.36–43: The parable of the weeds explained. 36: *House*, 13.1. **38:** *Children of the kingdom*, those worthy of the kingdom. **41:** *Out of his kingdom*, some scholars have identified the kingdom with the church, but in view

they will collect out of his kingdom all causes of sin and all evildoers, [42] and they will throw them into the furnace of fire, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth. [43] Then the righteous will shine like the sun in the kingdom of their Father. Let anyone with ears[a] listen!

[44] "The kingdom of heaven is like treasure hidden in a field, which someone found and hid; then in his joy he goes and sells all that he has and buys that field.

[45] "Again, the kingdom of heaven is like a merchant in search of fine pearls; [46] on finding one pearl of great value, he went and sold all that he had and bought it.

[47] "Again, the kingdom of heaven is like a net that was thrown into the sea and caught fish of every kind; [48] when it was full, they drew it ashore, sat down, and put the good into baskets but threw out the bad. [49] So it will be at the end of the age. The angels will come out and separate the evil from the righteous [50] and throw them into the furnace of fire, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

[51] "Have you understood all this?" They answered, "Yes." [52] And he said to them, "Therefore every scribe who has been trained for the kingdom of heaven is like the master of a household who brings out of his treasure what is new and what is old." [53] When Jesus had finished these parables, he left that place.

[54] He came to his hometown and began to teach the people[b] in their synagogue, so that they were astounded and said, "Where did this man get this wisdom and these deeds of power? [55] Is not this the carpenter's son? Is not his mother called Mary? And are not his brothers James and Joseph and Simon and Judas? [56] And are not all his sisters with us? Where then did this man get all this?" [57] And they took offense at him. But Jesus said to them, "Prophets are not without honor except in their own country and in their own house." [58] And he did not do many deeds of power there, because of their unbelief.

14 At that time Herod the ruler[c] heard reports about Jesus; [2] and he said to his servants, "This is John the Baptist; he has been raised from the dead, and for this reason these powers are at work in him." [3] For Herod had arrested John, bound him, and put him in prison on account of Herodias, his brother Philip's wife,[d] [4] because John had been telling him, "It is not lawful for you to have her." [5] Though Herod[e] wanted to put him to death, he feared the crowd, because they regarded him as a prophet. [6] But when Herod's birthday came, the daughter of Herodias danced before the company, and she pleased Herod [7] so much that he promised on oath to grant her whatever she might ask. [8] Prompted by her mother, she said, "Give me the head of John the Baptist here on a platter." [9] The king was grieved, yet out of regard for his oaths and for the guests, he

[a] Other ancient authorities add *to hear*
[b] Gk *them*
[c] Gk *tetrarch*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *his brother's wife*
[e] Gk *he*

of v. 38 it is better understood as the world. *Causes of sin*, 16.23; 18.7. *Evildoers*, 7.23. **42:** 8.12n. **43:** *Shine like the sun*, Dan 12.3.

13.44–53: Four more parables. 44: *Field*, in the absence of banks, valuables were often buried for safekeeping (25.25). **47:** *Net*, a seine net. **51:** The final parable in the chapter. *Understood*, in contrast to Jesus' disciples in Mk 4.13,33–34, here the disciples confirm their understanding of Jesus' teaching. **52:** *Scribe*, perhaps a self-portrait of the Gospel's author, or an indication of early Christian scribes (23.34). *His treasure*, the storeroom from which he draws his understanding of Jesus' ministry (the *new*) and of the Jewish Scriptures (the *old*).

13.54–58: The rejection of Jesus at Nazareth (Mk 6.1–6; Lk 4.16–30). **54:** *His hometown*, Nazareth. **55:** *Carpenter's son* contrasts with "carpenter" (Mk 6.3). The word translated here as "carpenter" can also mean "builder" or "stonemason." What Mk 6.5 describes as an inability to perform mighty deeds becomes, in Matthew, an unwillingness to do so in the face of the Nazarenes' disbelief (13.58). *His brothers*, Mk 6.3; Jude 1.

14.1–12: The death of John the Baptist (Mk 6.14–29; Lk 9.7–9). **1:** *Herod*, Matthew uses the correct designation "Herod the Tetrarch" (see textual note *c*) for Herod Antipas (2.22n.) in contrast to the "King Herod" of Mk 6.14. **4:** Lev 18.16; 20.21. **6:** *Daughter of Herodias*, Josephus identifies her as Salome (*Ant*. 18.136; for Josephus's account of John's death, see *Ant*. 18.116–19). Compare Esth 2.9.

commanded it to be given; [10] he sent and had John beheaded in the prison. [11] The head was brought on a platter and given to the girl, who brought it to her mother. [12] His disciples came and took the body and buried it; then they went and told Jesus.

[13] Now when Jesus heard this, he withdrew from there in a boat to a deserted place by himself. But when the crowds heard it, they followed him on foot from the towns. [14] When he went ashore, he saw a great crowd; and he had compassion for them and cured their sick. [15] When it was evening, the disciples came to him and said, "This is a deserted place, and the hour is now late; send the crowds away so that they may go into the villages and buy food for themselves." [16] Jesus said to them, "They need not go away; you give them something to eat." [17] They replied, "We have nothing here but five loaves and two fish." [18] And he said, "Bring them here to me." [19] Then he ordered the crowds to sit down on the grass. Taking the five loaves and the two fish, he looked up to heaven, and blessed and broke the loaves, and gave them to the disciples, and the disciples gave them to the crowds. [20] And all ate and were filled; and they took up what was left over of the broken pieces, twelve baskets full. [21] And those who ate were about five thousand men, besides women and children.

[22] Immediately he made the disciples get into the boat and go on ahead to the other side, while he dismissed the crowds. [23] And after he had dismissed the crowds, he went up the mountain by himself to pray. When evening came, he was there alone, [24] but by this time the boat, battered by the waves, was far from the land,[a] for the wind was against them. [25] And early in the morning he came walking toward them on the sea. [26] But when the disciples saw him walking on the sea, they were terrified, saying, "It is a ghost!" And they cried out in fear. [27] But immediately Jesus spoke to them and said, "Take heart, it is I; do not be afraid."

[28] Peter answered him, "Lord, if it is you, command me to come to you on the water." [29] He said, "Come." So Peter got out of the boat, started walking on the water, and came toward Jesus. [30] But when he noticed the strong wind,[b] he became frightened, and beginning to sink, he cried out, "Lord, save me!" [31] Jesus immediately reached out his hand and caught him, saying to him, "You of little faith, why did you doubt?" [32] When they got into the boat, the wind ceased. [33] And those in the boat worshiped him, saying, "Truly you are the Son of God."

[34] When they had crossed over, they came to land at Gennesaret. [35] After the people of that place recognized him, they sent word throughout the region and brought all who were sick to him, [36] and begged him that they might touch even the fringe of his cloak; and all who touched it were healed.

15 Then Pharisees and scribes came to Jesus from Jerusalem and said, [2] "Why do your disciples break the tradition of the elders? For they do not wash their hands before they eat." [3] He answered them, "And why do you break the commandment of God for the sake of your tradition? [4] For God said,[c] 'Honor your father and your mother,' and, 'Whoever speaks evil of father or mother must surely die.' [5] But you say that whoever tells father or mother, 'Whatever support you might have had from me is given to God,'[d]

[a] Other ancient authorities read *was out on the sea*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *the wind*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *commanded, saying*
[d] Or *is an offering*

14.13–36: The feeding of the five thousand and the walking on the water (Mk 6.30–56; Lk 9.10–17; Jn 6.1–21). These are the only miracles found in all four Gospels. There is a doublet for the feeding in 15.32–38; cf. also 1 Kings 17.8–16; 2 Kings 4.42–44. **19:** *Looked . . . blessed . . . broke . . . gave . . . ,* the language suggests a liturgical action; cf. 26.26. **21:** Matthew increases the magnitude of the miracle by adding *besides women and children*. **22:** The *other side* of the Sea of Galilee. **25:** *Early in the morning*, lit., "in the fourth watch of the night," i.e., between 3 and 6 AM. **27:** *It is I*, lit., "I am," a reference to the divine name (Ex 3.14). **28:** Peter's walking on the water is unique to Matthew and brings out both the role of Peter as the representative of the disciples, and his—and their—need for faith. **34:** *Gennesaret*, either a narrow plain on the west side of the Sea, or a town on that plain; 4.18n.

15.1–20: The tradition of the elders (Mk 7.1–23). **2:** *Tradition of the elders*, Pharisaic oral law designed to elucidate and protect the law of Moses (3.8n.). *Wash*, eat food in a state of ritual purity. **3:** Hand-washing was a

then that person need not honor the father.[a] 6 So, for the sake of your tradition, you make void the word[b] of God. 7 You hypocrites! Isaiah prophesied rightly about you when he said:

8 'This people honors me with their lips,
but their hearts are far from me;
9 in vain do they worship me,
teaching human precepts as doctrines.'"

10 Then he called the crowd to him and said to them, "Listen and understand: 11 it is not what goes into the mouth that defiles a person, but it is what comes out of the mouth that defiles." 12 Then the disciples approached and said to him, "Do you know that the Pharisees took offense when they heard what you said?" 13 He answered, "Every plant that my heavenly Father has not planted will be uprooted. 14 Let them alone; they are blind guides of the blind.[c] And if one blind person guides another, both will fall into a pit." 15 But Peter said to him, "Explain this parable to us." 16 Then he said, "Are you also still without understanding? 17 Do you not see that whatever goes into the mouth enters the stomach, and goes out into the sewer? 18 But what comes out of the mouth proceeds from the heart, and this is what defiles. 19 For out of the heart come evil intentions, murder, adultery, fornication, theft, false witness, slander. 20 These are what defile a person, but to eat with unwashed hands does not defile."

21 Jesus left that place and went away to the district of Tyre and Sidon. 22 Just then a Canaanite woman from that region came out and started shouting, "Have mercy on me, Lord, Son of David; my daughter is tormented by a demon." 23 But he did not answer her at all. And his disciples came and urged him, saying, "Send her away, for she keeps shouting after us." 24 He answered, "I was sent only to the lost sheep of the house of Israel." 25 But she came and knelt before him, saying, "Lord, help me." 26 He answered, "It is not fair to take the children's food and throw it to the dogs." 27 She said, "Yes, Lord, yet even the dogs eat the crumbs that fall from their masters' table." 28 Then Jesus answered her, "Woman, great is your faith! Let it be done for you as you wish." And her daughter was healed instantly.

29 After Jesus had left that place, he passed along the Sea of Galilee, and he went up the mountain, where he sat down. 30 Great crowds came to him, bringing with them the lame, the maimed, the blind, the mute, and many others. They put them at his feet, and he cured them, 31 so that the crowd was amazed when they saw the mute speaking, the maimed whole, the lame walking, and the blind seeing. And they praised the God of Israel.

32 Then Jesus called his disciples to him and said, "I have compassion for the crowd, because they have been with me now for three days and have nothing to eat; and I do not want to send them away hungry, for they might faint on the way." 33 The disciples said to him, "Where are we to get enough bread in the desert to feed so great a crowd?" 34 Jesus asked them, "How many loaves have you?" They said, "Seven, and a few small fish." 35 Then ordering the crowd to sit down on the ground, 36 he took the seven loaves and the fish; and after giving thanks he broke them and gave them to the disciples, and the disciples gave them to the crowds. 37 And all

[a] Other ancient authorities add *or the mother*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *law*; others, *commandment*
[c] Other ancient authorities lack *of the blind*

Pharisaic *tradition*, not stipulated by the Torah. **4:** *God said*, Ex 20.12; 21.17; Lev 20.9; Deut 5.16. **7–9:** Isa 29.13. **11:** *Defiles*, renders one ritually unclean. **14:** *Blind guides*, 23.16,24. **15:** Significantly, Matthew stops short of Mark's conclusion, "Thus he declared all foods clean" (Mk 7.19).

15.21–28: The Canaanite woman's faith (Mk 7.24–30). **21:** *District*, perhaps the largely Jewish enclave in Syria bordering on northwest Galilee. **22:** *Canaanite* replaces Mark's more accurate, political designation "Syrophoenician." The archaic term "Canaanite" may be designed to recall Israel's traditional enemies (Deut 7.1). *Son of David,* see 9.27n. **24:** The limited mission to Israel enjoined on the disciples at 10.5–6 also applies to Jesus' own ministry. **27:** *Dogs*, "little dogs" or household pets as metaphors for Gentiles. **28:** Like the Roman centurion (8.5–10), the Gentile woman is praised for exemplary *faith*.

15.29–39: The feeding and healing of many people (Mk 8.1–10). There is a doublet to the feeding in 14.13–23.

of them ate and were filled; and they took up the broken pieces left over, seven baskets full. 38 Those who had eaten were four thousand men, besides women and children. 39 After sending away the crowds, he got into the boat and went to the region of Magadan.[a]

16 The Pharisees and Sadducees came, and to test Jesus[b] they asked him to show them a sign from heaven. 2 He answered them, "When it is evening, you say, 'It will be fair weather, for the sky is red.' 3 And in the morning, 'It will be stormy today, for the sky is red and threatening.' You know how to interpret the appearance of the sky, but you cannot interpret the signs of the times.[c] 4 An evil and adulterous generation asks for a sign, but no sign will be given to it except the sign of Jonah." Then he left them and went away.

5 When the disciples reached the other side, they had forgotten to bring any bread. 6 Jesus said to them, "Watch out, and beware of the yeast of the Pharisees and Sadducees." 7 They said to one another, "It is because we have brought no bread." 8 And becoming aware of it, Jesus said, "You of little faith, why are you talking about having no bread? 9 Do you still not perceive? Do you not remember the five loaves for the five thousand, and how many baskets you gathered? 10 Or the seven loaves for the four thousand, and how many baskets you gathered? 11 How could you fail to perceive that I was not speaking about bread? Beware of the yeast of the Pharisees and Sadducees!" 12 Then they understood that he had not told them to beware of the yeast of bread, but of the teaching of the Pharisees and Sadducees.

13 Now when Jesus came into the district of Caesarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, "Who do people say that the Son of Man is?" 14 And they said, "Some say John the Baptist, but others Elijah, and still others Jeremiah or one of the prophets." 15 He said to them, "But who do you say that I am?" 16 Simon Peter answered, "You are the Messiah,[d] the Son of the living God." 17 And Jesus answered him, "Blessed are you, Simon son of Jonah! For flesh and blood has not revealed this to you, but my Father in heaven. 18 And I tell you, you are Peter,[e] and on this rock[f] I will build my church, and the gates of Hades will not prevail against it. 19 I will give you the keys of the kingdom of heaven, and whatever you bind on earth will be bound

[a] Other ancient authorities read *Magdala* or *Magdalan*
[b] Gk *him*
[c] Other ancient authorities lack 2*When it is . . . of the times*
[d] Or *the Christ*
[e] Gk *Petros*
[f] Gk *petra*

30: 9.35–36n. **38:** The four thousand may be Gentiles but are more likely Israelites. **39:** *Magadan* (see textual note *a*) replaces Mark's "district of Dalmanutha" (Mk 8.10); both locales are unknown.

16.1–12: The Pharisees and Sadducees (Mk 8.11–21; Lk 12.54–56). **1:** 3.7n. *Sign*, probably a cosmic event. **4:** *Sign of Jonah,* see 12.38–41. **6:** Here *yeast* (leaven) is a metaphor for teaching, but teaching that has the capacity to corrupt everything with which it comes into contact. At 13.33 the metaphor is used positively. **8:** 14.28n. **9:** 14.13–21. **10:** 15.32–39.

16.13–20: Peter's confession about Jesus (Mk 8.27–30; Lk 9.18–21). **13:** *Caesarea Philippi*, a city 25 mi (40 km) north of the Sea of Galilee, formerly Baneas and renamed by Philip in honor of Augustus. It is to be distinguished from Caesarea Maritima, the Hellenistic city redesigned and expanded by Herod the Great on the Mediterranean coast that served as the headquarters of the Roman governor (Acts 8.40; 21.8,16). *Son of Man*, 8.20n. **14:** *Jeremiah*, Matthew's inclusion of Jeremiah among the prophets emphasizes the parallels between Jesus and Jeremiah (also mentioned in Mt 2.17; 27.9). **16:** *Son of the living God* is found only in Matthew's version of Peter's confession (cf. 26.63; Ps 42.2). The title has strong messianic overtones (4Q174.10–14). **17:** *Son of Jonah,* either a variant of "son of John" (Jn 1.42) or an indication that Peter has a prophetic gift like Jonah's. *Flesh and blood*, humans. **18:** This promise to Peter is found only in Matthew. *Peter . . . rock*, Jesus' nickname for Simon (Gk "petros") means "stone" or "rock." The same pun works with its Aramaic equivalent, Kephas (1 Cor 1.12; 15.5; Gal 1.18). *Church*, the only occurrences of the word "church" ("ekklesia") in the Gospels are here and at 18.17. *Hades* is the Greek term for both the god of the dead and his realm, the latter roughly equivalent to Heb Sheol, the shadowy domain of all the dead. The *gates of Hades* may mean the "powers of death." **19:** *Keys*, a symbolic ascription of power (see Isa 22.22), bequeathing Peter the authority to oversee admission to the church (cf. 18.18).

in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth will be loosed in heaven." 20 Then he sternly ordered the disciples not to tell anyone that he was[a] the Messiah.[b]

21 From that time on, Jesus began to show his disciples that he must go to Jerusalem and undergo great suffering at the hands of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and on the third day be raised. 22 And Peter took him aside and began to rebuke him, saying, "God forbid it, Lord! This must never happen to you." 23 But he turned and said to Peter, "Get behind me, Satan! You are a stumbling block to me; for you are setting your mind not on divine things but on human things."

24 Then Jesus told his disciples, "If any want to become my followers, let them deny themselves and take up their cross and follow me. 25 For those who want to save their life will lose it, and those who lose their life for my sake will find it. 26 For what will it profit them if they gain the whole world but forfeit their life? Or what will they give in return for their life?

27 "For the Son of Man is to come with his angels in the glory of his Father, and then he will repay everyone for what has been done. 28 Truly I tell you, there are some standing here who will not taste death before they see the Son of Man coming in his kingdom."

17 Six days later, Jesus took with him Peter and James and his brother John and led them up a high mountain, by themselves. 2 And he was transfigured before them, and his face shone like the sun, and his clothes became dazzling white. 3 Suddenly there appeared to them Moses and Elijah, talking with him. 4 Then Peter said to Jesus, "Lord, it is good for us to be here; if you wish, I[c] will make three dwellings[d] here, one for you, one for Moses, and one for Elijah." 5 While he was still speaking, suddenly a bright cloud overshadowed them, and from the cloud a voice said, "This is my Son, the Beloved;[e] with him I am well pleased; listen to him!" 6 When the disciples heard this, they fell to the ground and were overcome by fear. 7 But Jesus came and touched them, saying, "Get up and do not be afraid." 8 And when they looked up, they saw no one except Jesus himself alone.

9 As they were coming down the mountain, Jesus ordered them, "Tell no one about the vision until after the Son of Man has been raised from the dead." 10 And the disciples asked him, "Why, then, do the scribes say that Elijah must come first?" 11 He replied, "Elijah is indeed coming and will restore all things; 12 but I tell you that Elijah has already come, and they did not recognize him, but they did to him whatever they pleased. So also the Son of Man is about to suffer at their hands." 13 Then the disciples understood that he was speaking to them about John the Baptist.

14 When they came to the crowd, a man came to him, knelt before him, 15 and said, "Lord, have mercy on my son, for he is an epileptic and he suffers terribly; he often falls into the fire and often into the water. 16 And I brought him to your disciples, but they could not cure him." 17 Jesus answered, "You faithless and perverse generation, how much longer must I be with you? How much longer must

[a] Other ancient authorities add *Jesus*
[b] Or *the Christ*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *we*
[d] Or *tents*
[e] Or *my beloved Son*

16.21–28: Jesus foretells his death and resurrection (Mk 8.31–9.1; Lk 9.22–27). **21:** The phrase *from that time on* may be a marker signaling the last third of the Gospel (4.17n.). The first of three passion predictions (17.22–23; 20.17–19; cf. 26.1–2). **23:** *Stumbling block* or obstacle. **24:** 10.38n. **28:** *Some standing here*, possibly a reference to Jesus' transfiguration (17.1–13).

17.1–13: The transfiguration of Jesus (Mk 9.2–13; Lk 9.28–36). **1:** *High mountain*, traditionally identified with Mount Tabor or, because of its proximity to Caesarea Philippi, with Mount Hermon. The setting is reminiscent of God's revelation to Moses, and later Elijah, on Sinai (Horeb) (Ex 34.1–9; 1 Kings 19.1–18). **3:** *Moses and Elijah* symbolize, respectively, the Law and the prophets, the first two divisions of the Hebrew Bible. **5:** *My Son*, 3.17n. **10:** *Elijah must come first*, according to the traditional interpretation of Mal 4.5, Elijah would come "before the day of the Lord." **12:** *Elijah has already come* in the person of John the Baptist.

17.14–21: The healing of a boy with a demon (Mk 9.14–29; Lk 9.37–43). **17:** *Faithless and perverse generation*,

I put up with you? Bring him here to me."
18 And Jesus rebuked the demon,[a] and it[b] came
out of him, and the boy was cured instantly.
19 Then the disciples came to Jesus privately
and said, "Why could we not cast it out?" 20 He
said to them, "Because of your little faith. For
truly I tell you, if you have faith the size of a[c]
mustard seed, you will say to this mountain,
'Move from here to there,' and it will move;
and nothing will be impossible for you."[d]

22 As they were gathering[e] in Galilee, Jesus
said to them, "The Son of Man is going to
be betrayed into human hands, 23 and they
will kill him, and on the third day he will be
raised." And they were greatly distressed.

24 When they reached Capernaum, the
collectors of the temple tax[f] came to Peter and
said, "Does your teacher not pay the temple
tax?"[f] 25 He said, "Yes, he does." And when
he came home, Jesus spoke of it first, asking,
"What do you think, Simon? From whom do
kings of the earth take toll or tribute? From
their children or from others?" 26 When Peter[g]
said, "From others," Jesus said to him, "Then
the children are free. 27 However, so that we do
not give offense to them, go to the sea and cast
a hook; take the first fish that comes up; and
when you open its mouth, you will find a coin;[h]
take that and give it to them for you and me."

18 At that time the disciples came to Jesus
and asked, "Who is the greatest in
the kingdom of heaven?" 2 He called a child,
whom he put among them, 3 and said, "Truly
I tell you, unless you change and become like
children, you will never enter the kingdom
of heaven. 4 Whoever becomes humble like
this child is the greatest in the kingdom of
heaven. 5 Whoever welcomes one such child
in my name welcomes me.

6 "If any of you put a stumbling block
before one of these little ones who believe
in me, it would be better for you if a great
millstone were fastened around your neck
and you were drowned in the depth of the
sea. 7 Woe to the world because of stumbling
blocks! Occasions for stumbling are bound
to come, but woe to the one by whom the
stumbling block comes!

8 "If your hand or your foot causes you
to stumble, cut it off and throw it away; it is
better for you to enter life maimed or lame
than to have two hands or two feet and to be
thrown into the eternal fire. 9 And if your eye
causes you to stumble, tear it out and throw it
away; it is better for you to enter life with one

[a] Gk *it* or *him*
[b] Gk *the demon*
[c] Gk *faith as a grain of*
[d] Other ancient authorities add verse 21, *But this kind does not come out except by prayer and fasting*
[e] Other ancient authorities read *living*
[f] Gk *didrachma*
[g] Gk *he*
[h] Gk *stater*; the stater was worth two didrachmas

Jesus' disciples; cf. Deut 32.5,20. **20:** *Little faith* is the main problem besetting Jesus' disciples in Matthew. *Mustard seed*, 13.31n.

17.22–23: Jesus' second prediction of his death and resurrection (Mk 9.30–32; Lk 9.43–45). **22:** *Were gathering*, in order to visit Jerusalem for Passover. **23:** Whereas in Mk 9.32 the disciples are perplexed, Matthew's disciples are *greatly distressed*.

17.24–27: Payment of the temple tax. 24: *Temple tax*, lit., "the didrachma." This "double drachma" was equivalent to half a shekel, an amount enjoined on all Israel (Ex 30.11–16). Used in Jesus' day for sacrifices and the upkeep of the Temple, the tax (the "fiscus judaicus") continued to be levied by Rome after the Temple's destruction in 70 CE, as a penalty for the Jewish people's revolt. **26:** *The children are free*, just as a king's children are tax-exempt, so too are God's children, i.e., Jesus and his brothers and sisters (12.50). **27:** *Give offense,* offend the devout people who collect the tax.

18.1–35: The fourth discourse, on community or church. This discourse focuses on community interrelations and church discipline—specifically the need for the church to care for their disadvantaged and forgive one another.

18.1–9: The greatest in the kingdom and temptations to sin (Mk 9.33–37; 42–48; Lk 9.46–48; 17.1–2). **3–6:** *Children* and *little ones*, humble Christian disciples. **6:** *Great millstone*, a stone harnessed to a donkey to grind grain. *Sea*, millstones were sometimes used as anchors (cf. Rev 18.21). **9:** *Hell,* lit., "Gehenna," the valley of Ben Hinnom to the immediate south of Jerusalem, formerly a place of child sacrifice (Jer 7.31), used in Jesus' day as

eye than to have two eyes and to be thrown into the hell[a] of fire.

10 "Take care that you do not despise one of these little ones; for, I tell you, in heaven their angels continually see the face of my Father in heaven.[b] 12 What do you think? If a shepherd has a hundred sheep, and one of them has gone astray, does he not leave the ninety-nine on the mountains and go in search of the one that went astray? 13 And if he finds it, truly I tell you, he rejoices over it more than over the ninety-nine that never went astray. 14 So it is not the will of your[c] Father in heaven that one of these little ones should be lost.

15 "If another member of the church[d] sins against you,[e] go and point out the fault when the two of you are alone. If the member listens to you, you have regained that one.[f] 16 But if you are not listened to, take one or two others along with you, so that every word may be confirmed by the evidence of two or three witnesses. 17 If the member refuses to listen to them, tell it to the church; and if the offender refuses to listen even to the church, let such a one be to you as a Gentile and a tax collector. 18 Truly I tell you, whatever you bind on earth will be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth will be loosed in heaven. 19 Again, truly I tell you, if two of you agree on earth about anything you ask, it will be done for you by my Father in heaven. 20 For where two or three are gathered in my name, I am there among them."

21 Then Peter came and said to him, "Lord, if another member of the church[g] sins against me, how often should I forgive? As many as seven times?" 22 Jesus said to him, "Not seven times, but, I tell you, seventy-seven[h] times.

23 "For this reason the kingdom of heaven may be compared to a king who wished to settle accounts with his slaves. 24 When he began the reckoning, one who owed him ten thousand talents[i] was brought to him; 25 and, as he could not pay, his lord ordered him to be sold, together with his wife and children and all his possessions, and payment to be made. 26 So the slave fell on his knees before him, saying, 'Have patience with me, and I will pay you everything.' 27 And out of pity for him, the lord of that slave released him and forgave him the debt. 28 But that same slave, as he went out, came upon one of his fellow slaves who owed him a hundred denarii;[j] and seizing him by the throat, he said, 'Pay what you owe.' 29 Then his fellow slave fell down and pleaded with him, 'Have patience with me, and I will pay you.' 30 But he refused; then he went and threw him into prison until he would pay the debt. 31 When his fellow slaves saw what had happened, they were greatly distressed, and they went and reported to their lord all that had taken place. 32 Then his lord summoned him and said to him, 'You wicked slave! I forgave you all that debt because you pleaded with me. 33 Should you not have had mercy

a Gk *Gehenna*
b Other ancient authorities add verse 11, *For the Son of Man came to save the lost*
c Other ancient authorities read *my*
d Gk *If your brother*
e Other ancient authorities lack *against you*
f Gk *the brother*
g Gk *if my brother*
h Or *seventy times seven*
i A talent was worth more than fifteen years' wages of a laborer
j The denarius was the usual day's wage for a laborer

a garbage dump and incinerator.

18.10–20: Lost sheep and sinning brothers (Lk 15.3–7; 17.3). **10:** *Their angels*, both individuals and nations were thought to have guardian angels (Dan 10.20–21; Acts 12.15). *Face of my Father*, receive God's special attention. **12:** Luke's parable varies considerably; in Matthew the emphasis is not on the shepherd's joy at finding the lost sheep, but on his responsibility not to lose a straying sheep. **15:** *Alone*, to avoid publicly shaming the church member. *Witnesses*, 9.27–31n. **17:** *Gentile . . . tax collector*, 5.46,47n. **18:** 16.16. This authority is extended to the church as a whole.

18.21–35: The parable of the unforgiving servant. 21–22: *Seven*, 12.45n.; cf. Gen 4.24. **23:** *A king*, God. **24:** *Ten thousand talents*, a vast sum amounting to more than the entire tribute paid by Galilee to Rome over a fifteen-year period. A talent was equivalent to six thousand denarii (a denarius was a day-laborer's wage). **25:** *Ordered him to be sold*, slaves, their families and possessions were chattel. **28:** *A hundred denarii*, roughly three month's

on your fellow slave, as I had mercy on you?' 34 And in anger his lord handed him over to be tortured until he would pay his entire debt. 35 So my heavenly Father will also do to every one of you, if you do not forgive your brother or sister[a] from your heart."

19 When Jesus had finished saying these things, he left Galilee and went to the region of Judea beyond the Jordan. 2 Large crowds followed him, and he cured them there.

3 Some Pharisees came to him, and to test him they asked, "Is it lawful for a man to divorce his wife for any cause?" 4 He answered, "Have you not read that the one who made them at the beginning 'made them male and female,' 5 and said, 'For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh'? 6 So they are no longer two, but one flesh. Therefore what God has joined together, let no one separate." 7 They said to him, "Why then did Moses command us to give a certificate of dismissal and to divorce her?" 8 He said to them, "It was because you were so hard-hearted that Moses allowed you to divorce your wives, but from the beginning it was not so. 9 And I say to you, whoever divorces his wife, except for unchastity, and marries another commits adultery."[b]

10 His disciples said to him, "If such is the case of a man with his wife, it is better not to marry." 11 But he said to them, "Not everyone can accept this teaching, but only those to whom it is given. 12 For there are eunuchs who have been so from birth, and there are eunuchs who have been made eunuchs by others, and there are eunuchs who have made themselves eunuchs for the sake of the kingdom of heaven. Let anyone accept this who can."

13 Then little children were being brought to him in order that he might lay his hands on them and pray. The disciples spoke sternly to those who brought them; 14 but Jesus said, "Let the little children come to me, and do not stop them; for it is to such as these that the kingdom of heaven belongs." 15 And he laid his hands on them and went on his way.

16 Then someone came to him and said, "Teacher, what good deed must I do to have eternal life?" 17 And he said to him, "Why do you ask me about what is good? There is only one who is good. If you wish to enter into life, keep the commandments." 18 He said to him, "Which ones?" And Jesus said, "You shall not murder; You shall not commit adultery; You shall not steal; You shall not bear false witness; 19 Honor your father and mother; also, You shall love your neighbor as yourself." 20 The young man said to him, "I have kept all these;[c] what do I still lack?" 21 Jesus said to him, "If you wish to be perfect, go, sell your possessions, and give the money[d] to the poor, and you will have treasure in heaven; then come, follow me." 22 When the young man heard this word, he went away grieving, for he had many possessions.

23 Then Jesus said to his disciples, "Truly I tell you, it will be hard for a rich person to enter the kingdom of heaven. 24 Again I tell

[a] Gk *brother*

[b] Other ancient authorities read *except on the ground of unchastity, causes her to commit adultery*; others add at the end of the verse *and he who marries a divorced woman commits adultery*

[c] Other ancient authorities add *from my youth*

[d] Gk lacks *the money*

wages. **30:** 5.25n. **34:** *Tortured*, to ascertain the location of the slave's money or to coerce money from his family.

19.1–20.34: Jesus moves from Galilee to Judea. In Matthew, this transition marks Jesus' first (and final) trip to Judea.

19.1–12: Teaching about divorce (Mk 10.1–12). **1:** *Beyond the Jordan*, the Transjordan or Perea, regions on the east side of the Jordan river. Galileans traveling to Jerusalem for Passover would often cross over the Jordan to bypass Samaria (Lk 9.51–56). **2:** *Large crowds*, 4.25n. **3:** The Pharisaic schools of Hillel and Shammai both permitted divorce but differed over the appropriate grounds. **4–5:** Gen 1.27; 2.24. **7:** *Moses*, Deut 24.1–4. **9:** *Except for unchastity*, this exception clause has been added by Matthew. **12:** *Made themselves eunuchs*, hyperbole for the voluntary practice of celibacy; a eunuch is a castrated male.

19.13–30: Little children and the rich young man (Mk 10.13–31; Lk 18.15–30). **13–15:** Cf. 18.1–5. **17:** *Only one*, God; Mk 10.18. To *enter into life* means both "to enter the kingdom" and "to gain eternal life" (vv. 16,23,24). **19:** Ex 20.12–16; Deut 5.16–20; Matthew adds the love commandment from Lev 19.18 (cf. 22.39). **21:** *Perfect*, 5.48. **22:**

you, it is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than for someone who is rich to enter the kingdom of God." [25] When the disciples heard this, they were greatly astounded and said, "Then who can be saved?" [26] But Jesus looked at them and said, "For mortals it is impossible, but for God all things are possible."

[27] Then Peter said in reply, "Look, we have left everything and followed you. What then will we have?" [28] Jesus said to them, "Truly I tell you, at the renewal of all things, when the Son of Man is seated on the throne of his glory, you who have followed me will also sit on twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel. [29] And everyone who has left houses or brothers or sisters or father or mother or children or fields, for my name's sake, will receive a hundredfold,[a] and will inherit eternal life. [30] But many who are first will be last, and the last will be first.

20 "For the kingdom of heaven is like a landowner who went out early in the morning to hire laborers for his vineyard. [2] After agreeing with the laborers for the usual daily wage,[b] he sent them into his vineyard. [3] When he went out about nine o'clock, he saw others standing idle in the marketplace; [4] and he said to them, 'You also go into the vineyard, and I will pay you whatever is right.' So they went. [5] When he went out again about noon and about three o'clock, he did the same. [6] And about five o'clock he went out and found others standing around; and he said to them, 'Why are you standing here idle all day?' [7] They said to him, 'Because no one has hired us.' He said to them, 'You also go into the vineyard.' [8] When evening came, the owner of the vineyard said to his manager, 'Call the laborers and give them their pay, beginning with the last and then going to the first.' [9] When those hired about five o'clock came, each of them received the usual daily wage.[b] [10] Now when the first came, they thought they would receive more; but each of them also received the usual daily wage.[b] [11] And when they received it, they grumbled against the landowner, [12] saying, 'These last worked only one hour, and you have made them equal to us who have borne the burden of the day and the scorching heat.' [13] But he replied to one of them, 'Friend, I am doing you no wrong; did you not agree with me for the usual daily wage?[b] [14] Take what belongs to you and go; I choose to give to this last the same as I give to you. [15] Am I not allowed to do what I choose with what belongs to me? Or are you envious because I am generous?'[c] [16] So the last will be first, and the first will be last."[d]

[17] While Jesus was going up to Jerusalem, he took the twelve disciples aside by themselves, and said to them on the way, [18] "See, we are going up to Jerusalem, and the Son of Man will be handed over to the chief priests and scribes, and they will condemn him to death; [19] then they will hand him over to the Gentiles to be mocked and flogged and crucified; and on the third day he will be raised."

[20] Then the mother of the sons of Zebedee came to him with her sons, and kneeling before him, she asked a favor of him. [21] And he said to her, "What do you want?" She said to him, "Declare that these two sons of mine will sit, one at your right hand and one at your left, in your kingdom." [22] But Jesus answered, "You do not know what you are asking. Are you able to drink the cup that I

[a] Other ancient authorities read *manifold*
[b] Gk *a denarius*
[c] Gk *is your eye evil because I am good?*
[d] Other ancient authorities add *for many are called but few are chosen*

Young, only found in Matthew. **24:** *Camel*, the largest animal in the region (23.24). **28:** *Renewal*, the new age on earth, featuring a general resurrection. *Thrones*, Dan 7.9–14. **30:** 20.16.

20.1–16: The workers in the vineyard. 2: 18.28n. **15:** *Envious*, lit., "Is your eye evil?" (cf. 6.22–23n.). **16:** See 19.30.

20.17–19: A third time Jesus foretells his death and resurrection (Mk 10.32–34; Lk 18.31–34). **17–19:** Cf. 16.21–28; 17.22–23. This prediction explicitly indicts the Gentiles in Jesus' death.

20.20–28: The request of James and John (Mk 10.35–45). In contrast to Mark, the request here originates with their mother. **21:** *Right . . . left*, indicates those figures who, flanking a monarch, would rank as second and

am about to drink?"[a] They said to him, "We are able." 23 He said to them, "You will indeed drink my cup, but to sit at my right hand and at my left, this is not mine to grant, but it is for those for whom it has been prepared by my Father."

24 When the ten heard it, they were angry with the two brothers. 25 But Jesus called them to him and said, "You know that the rulers of the Gentiles lord it over them, and their great ones are tyrants over them. 26 It will not be so among you; but whoever wishes to be great among you must be your servant, 27 and whoever wishes to be first among you must be your slave; 28 just as the Son of Man came not to be served but to serve, and to give his life a ransom for many."

29 As they were leaving Jericho, a large crowd followed him. 30 There were two blind men sitting by the roadside. When they heard that Jesus was passing by, they shouted, "Lord,[b] have mercy on us, Son of David!" 31 The crowd sternly ordered them to be quiet; but they shouted even more loudly, "Have mercy on us, Lord, Son of David!" 32 Jesus stood still and called them, saying, "What do you want me to do for you?" 33 They said to him, "Lord, let our eyes be opened." 34 Moved with compassion, Jesus touched their eyes. Immediately they regained their sight and followed him.

21 When they had come near Jerusalem and had reached Bethphage, at the Mount of Olives, Jesus sent two disciples, 2 saying to them, "Go into the village ahead of you, and immediately you will find a donkey tied, and a colt with her; untie them and bring them to me. 3 If anyone says anything to you, just say this, 'The Lord needs them.' And he will send them immediately.[c]" 4 This took place to fulfill what had been spoken through the prophet, saying,

5 "Tell the daughter of Zion,
Look, your king is coming to you,
humble, and mounted on a donkey,
and on a colt, the foal of a donkey."

6 The disciples went and did as Jesus had directed them; 7 they brought the donkey and the colt, and put their cloaks on them, and he sat on them. 8 A very large crowd[d] spread their cloaks on the road, and others cut branches from the trees and spread them on the road. 9 The crowds that went ahead of him and that followed were shouting,

"Hosanna to the Son of David!
Blessed is the one who comes in the
name of the Lord!
Hosanna in the highest heaven!"

10 When he entered Jerusalem, the whole city was in turmoil, asking, "Who is this?" 11 The crowds were saying, "This is the prophet Jesus from Nazareth in Galilee."

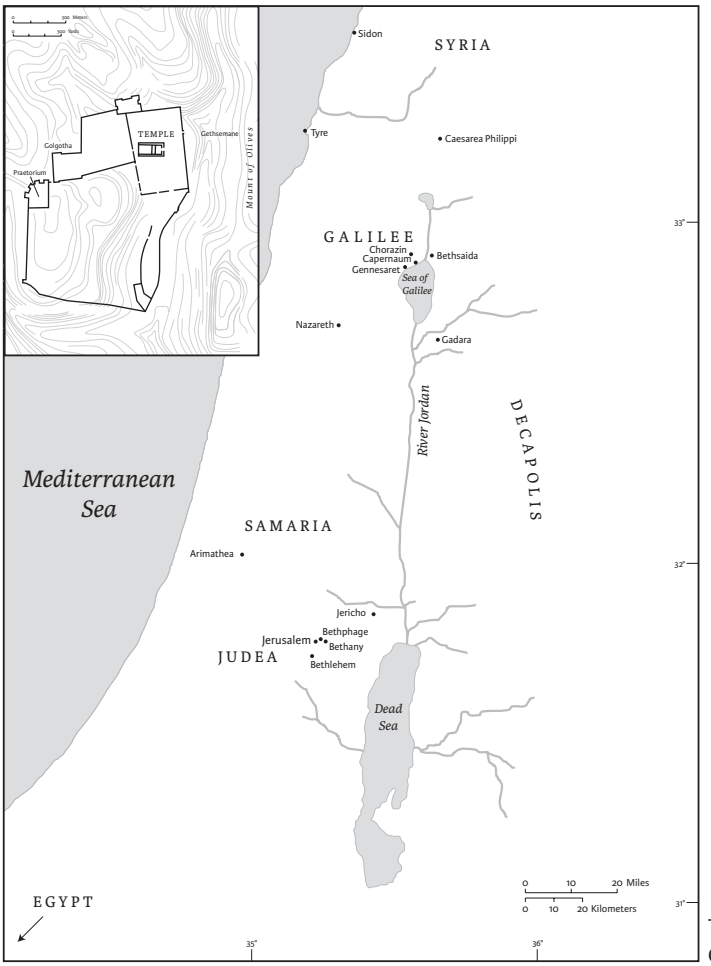
[a] Other ancient authorities add *or to be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with?*
[b] Other ancient authorities lack *Lord*
[c] Or *'The Lord needs them and will send them back immediately.'*
[d] Or *Most of the crowd*

third in authority. **23:** *My cup*, Acts 12.2 mentions James' martyrdom; according to postbiblical tradition, his brother John was also martyred. **28:** *Ransom*, the price paid to liberate a slave.

20.29–34: The healing of two blind men (Mk 10.46–52; Lk 18.35–43); a doublet of 9.27–31. **29:** *Jericho*, city and oasis 15 mi (24 km) east of Jerusalem and 8 mi (13 km) north of the Dead Sea. **30:** *Two blind men*, in Mk 10.46 the single blind man is identified as Bartimaeus, son of Timaeus. **31:** *Son of David,* see 9.27n.

21.1–11: The triumphal entry into Jerusalem (Mk 11.1–11; Lk 19.28–38; Jn 12:12–19). **1:** *Bethphage* ("House of Figs"), a village on the Mount of Olives ca. 1 mi (1.6 km) east of the Jerusalem Temple. **2:** *Village*, perhaps Bethany (see v. 17; Mk 11.1). *Donkey*, instead of a warhorse connoting a military leader (*Pss. Sol.* 17), Jesus rides a donkey symbolizing peace (Zech 9.9–10). **4–5:** A composite fulfillment citation of Isa 62.11 and Zech 9.9. *Daughter of Zion*, Jerusalem and its residents. **7:** *Colt*, while Zechariah refers to only one donkey, expressed by poetic parallelism, Matthew's fulfillment citation interprets the expression as two: a donkey and its foal. **8:** *Cloaks*, an act of royal homage; 2 Kings 9.13. **9:** The cry *Hosanna* (lit., in Heb "Help" or "Save, I pray") had become by Jesus' day an exclamation of praise. *Blessed*, a citation of Ps 118.26, which was used as a traditional greeting for pilgrims arriving in Jerusalem for the great festivals. **11:** *Prophet*, 21.46. Not a reference to the prophet resembling Moses (Deut 18.18).

21.12–27: The Temple and the fig tree (Mk 11.12–24; 27–33; Lk 19.45–48; 20.1–8). **12:** In Jn 2.13–22 this episode



The geography of the Gospel of Matthew.

12 Then Jesus entered the temple[a] and drove
out all who were selling and buying in the
temple, and he overturned the tables of the
money changers and the seats of those who
sold doves. 13 He said to them, "It is written,
'My house shall be called a house of prayer';
but you are making it a den of robbers."
14 The blind and the lame came to him in
the temple, and he cured them. 15 But when
the chief priests and the scribes saw the
amazing things that he did, and heard[b] the
children crying out in the temple, "Hosanna
to the Son of David," they became angry
16 and said to him, "Do you hear what these
are saying?" Jesus said to them, "Yes; have
you never read,
'Out of the mouths of infants and nursing
babies
you have prepared praise for yourself'?"
17 He left them, went out of the city to
Bethany, and spent the night there.

[a] Other ancient authorities add *of God*
[b] Gk lacks *heard*

is situated early in Jesus' ministry, in Mk 11.11–19 on the day after Jesus' arrival in Jerusalem. *Selling and buying*, animals for sacrifice. *Money changers*, Roman money had to be changed into Tyrian shekels, the only currency acceptable for use within the Temple. *Doves*, offerings typical of the poor (Lev 5.7–10). Business transactions took place in the large outer Court of the Gentiles; it was here that Jesus' "cleansing" took place. **13:** *Written*, Isa 56.7; Jer 7.11. **14:** Jesus' cleansing culminates in the healing of the *blind and the lame*, who were normally excluded

18 In the morning, when he returned to the
city, he was hungry. 19 And seeing a fig tree by
the side of the road, he went to it and found
nothing at all on it but leaves. Then he said to
it, "May no fruit ever come from you again!"
And the fig tree withered at once. 20 When the
disciples saw it, they were amazed, saying,
"How did the fig tree wither at once?" 21 Jesus
answered them, "Truly I tell you, if you have
faith and do not doubt, not only will you do
what has been done to the fig tree, but even
if you say to this mountain, 'Be lifted up and
thrown into the sea,' it will be done. 22 What-
ever you ask for in prayer with faith, you will
receive."

23 When he entered the temple, the chief
priests and the elders of the people came to
him as he was teaching, and said, "By what
authority are you doing these things, and
who gave you this authority?" 24 Jesus said to
them, "I will also ask you one question; if you
tell me the answer, then I will also tell you by
what authority I do these things. 25 Did the
baptism of John come from heaven, or was
it of human origin?" And they argued with
one another, "If we say, 'From heaven,' he
will say to us, 'Why then did you not believe
him?' 26 But if we say, 'Of human origin,' we
are afraid of the crowd; for all regard John as
a prophet." 27 So they answered Jesus, "We do
not know." And he said to them, "Neither will
I tell you by what authority I am doing these
things.

28 "What do you think? A man had two
sons; he went to the first and said, 'Son,
go and work in the vineyard today.' 29 He
answered, 'I will not'; but later he changed
his mind and went. 30 The father[a] went to the
second and said the same; and he answered,
'I go, sir'; but he did not go. 31 Which of the
two did the will of his father?" They said,
"The first." Jesus said to them, "Truly I tell
you, the tax collectors and the prostitutes are
going into the kingdom of God ahead of you.
32 For John came to you in the way of right-
teousness and you did not believe him, but
the tax collectors and the prostitutes believed
him; and even after you saw it, you did not
change your minds and believe him.

33 "Listen to another parable. There was
a landowner who planted a vineyard, put a
fence around it, dug a wine press in it, and
built a watchtower. Then he leased it to ten-
ants and went to another country. 34 When
the harvest time had come, he sent his slaves
to the tenants to collect his produce. 35 But
the tenants seized his slaves and beat one,
killed another, and stoned another. 36 Again
he sent other slaves, more than the first; and
they treated them in the same way. 37 Finally
he sent his son to them, saying, 'They will
respect my son.' 38 But when the tenants saw
the son, they said to themselves, 'This is the
heir; come, let us kill him and get his inherit-
ance.' 39 So they seized him, threw him out
of the vineyard, and killed him. 40 Now when
the owner of the vineyard comes, what will
he do to those tenants?" 41 They said to him,
"He will put those wretches to a miserable
death, and lease the vineyard to other tenants
who will give him the produce at the harvest
time."

42 Jesus said to them, "Have you never read
in the scriptures:

'The stone that the builders rejected
has become the cornerstone;[b]
this was the Lord's doing,
and it is amazing in our eyes'?

43 Therefore I tell you, the kingdom of God
will be taken away from you and given to
a people that produces the fruits of the

[a] Gk *He*
[b] Or *keystone*

from the Temple (Lev 21.16–23). **16:** Ps 8.2. **19:** *Fig tree*, "it was not the season for figs" (Mk 11.13) is omitted. As fig trees often symbolized Jerusalem or the Temple, Jesus' action is best understood as a prophecy of judgment (23.37–24.2). **23:** *Authority*, 7.29; 9.6–8. **25:** *From heaven*, from God.

21.28–22.14: Three parables (Mk 12.1–12; Lk 20.9–19; Lk 14.15–24). **21.28–32:** The first of three consecutive parables condemning the Jewish religious leadership. **31:** *The tax collectors and the prostitutes*, the people who were presumed to have the lowest morals (5.46n.). **33–37:** The second parable is an allegory based on Isa 5.1–7, outlining the history of God and Israel. The *vineyard* is a metaphor for Israel, with God as the *landowner*, the Jewish leadership as the *tenants*, the prophets as the *slaves*, and Jesus as the *son*. **42:** Ps 118.22–23; *cornerstone*, the keystone of an arch. **43:** *A people that produces the fruits*, a reference to the Christian church and its practice

kingdom.[a] 44 The one who falls on this stone will be broken to pieces; and it will crush anyone on whom it falls."[b]

45 When the chief priests and the Pharisees heard his parables, they realized that he was speaking about them. 46 They wanted to arrest him, but they feared the crowds, because they regarded him as a prophet.

22 Once more Jesus spoke to them in parables, saying: 2 "The kingdom of heaven may be compared to a king who gave a wedding banquet for his son. 3 He sent his slaves to call those who had been invited to the wedding banquet, but they would not come. 4 Again he sent other slaves, saying, 'Tell those who have been invited: Look, I have prepared my dinner, my oxen and my fat calves have been slaughtered, and everything is ready; come to the wedding banquet.' 5 But they made light of it and went away, one to his farm, another to his business, 6 while the rest seized his slaves, mistreated them, and killed them. 7 The king was enraged. He sent his troops, destroyed those murderers, and burned their city. 8 Then he said to his slaves, 'The wedding is ready, but those invited were not worthy. 9 Go therefore into the main streets, and invite everyone you find to the wedding banquet.' 10 Those slaves went out into the streets and gathered all whom they found, both good and bad; so the wedding hall was filled with guests.

11 "But when the king came in to see the guests, he noticed a man there who was not wearing a wedding robe, 12 and he said to him, 'Friend, how did you get in here without a wedding robe?' And he was speechless. 13 Then the king said to the attendants, 'Bind him hand and foot, and throw him into the outer darkness, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.' 14 For many are called, but few are chosen."

15 Then the Pharisees went and plotted to entrap him in what he said. 16 So they sent their disciples to him, along with the Herodians, saying, "Teacher, we know that you are sincere, and teach the way of God in accordance with truth, and show deference to no one; for you do not regard people with partiality. 17 Tell us, then, what you think. Is it lawful to pay taxes to the emperor, or not?" 18 But Jesus, aware of their malice, said, "Why are you putting me to the test, you hypocrites? 19 Show me the coin used for the tax." And they brought him a denarius. 20 Then he said to them, "Whose head is this, and whose title?" 21 They answered, "The emperor's." Then he said to them, "Give therefore to the emperor the things that are the emperor's, and to God the things that are God's." 22 When they heard this, they were amazed; and they left him and went away.

23 The same day some Sadducees came to him, saying there is no resurrection;[c] and they asked him a question, saying, 24 "Teacher, Moses said, 'If a man dies childless, his brother shall marry the widow, and raise up children for his brother.' 25 Now there were seven brothers among us; the first married, and died childless, leaving the widow to his brother. 26 The second did the same, so also the third, down to the seventh. 27 Last of all, the woman herself died. 28 In the resurrection, then, whose wife of the seven will she be? For all of them had married her."

29 Jesus answered them, "You are wrong, because you know neither the scriptures nor the power of God. 30 For in the resurrection

[a] Gk *the fruits of it*
[b] Other ancient authorities lack verse 44
[c] Other ancient authorities read *who say that there is no resurrection*

of righteousness. **44:** If this verse is Matthean (see textual note *b*), it refers to the dire consequences of misunderstanding who Jesus is. **46:** *Prophet,* v. 11. **22.1–14:** The third parable. **7:** *Burned their city,* an allusion to the destruction of Jerusalem in 70 CE. **11–14:** These four verses are a Matthean addition to the parable. **11:** A *wedding robe* may suggest the righteous deeds necessary for believers to enter the kingdom (see Mt 7.21–23). **13:** 8.12n.

22.15–46: Attempts to ensnare Jesus (Mk 12.13–37; Lk 20.20–44; 10.25–28). The preceding three parables are followed by three trick questions meant to entrap Jesus in his own words. **16:** *Herodians*, possibly supporters of Herod Antipas and his family. **17:** *Taxes*, on agricultural yield and personal property amounting to about a denarius a year. *Emperor*, Tiberius Caesar (14–37 CE). **18:** *Hypocrites*, 6.2n. **20:** A typical silver denarius of Tiberias' day would have his portrait on the obverse and the Latin inscription "Tiberius Caesar Augustus, Son of the Divine Augustus" on the reverse. **23:** *Sadducees*, 3.7n. **24:** *Moses said*, Deut 25.5; cf. Gen 38.7–11. **30:** *Marry*,

they neither marry nor are given in marriage, but are like angels[a] in heaven. 31 And as for the resurrection of the dead, have you not read what was said to you by God, 32 'I am the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob'? He is God not of the dead, but of the living." 33 And when the crowd heard it, they were astounded at his teaching.

34 When the Pharisees heard that he had silenced the Sadducees, they gathered together, 35 and one of them, a lawyer, asked him a question to test him. 36 "Teacher, which commandment in the law is the greatest?" 37 He said to him, " 'You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind.' 38 This is the greatest and first commandment. 39 And a second is like it: 'You shall love your neighbor as yourself.' 40 On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets."

41 Now while the Pharisees were gathered together, Jesus asked them this question: 42 "What do you think of the Messiah?[b] Whose son is he?" They said to him, "The son of David." 43 He said to them, "How is it then that David by the Spirit[c] calls him Lord, saying,

44 'The Lord said to my Lord,
"Sit at my right hand,
until I put your enemies under your feet"'?

45 If David thus calls him Lord, how can he be his son?" 46 No one was able to give him an answer, nor from that day did anyone dare to ask him any more questions.

23 Then Jesus said to the crowds and to his disciples, 2 "The scribes and the Pharisees sit on Moses' seat; 3 therefore, do whatever they teach you and follow it; but do not do as they do, for they do not practice what they teach. 4 They tie up heavy burdens, hard to bear,[d] and lay them on the shoulders of others; but they themselves are unwilling to lift a finger to move them. 5 They do all their deeds to be seen by others; for they make their phylacteries broad and their fringes long. 6 They love to have the place of honor at banquets and the best seats in the synagogues, 7 and to be greeted with respect in the marketplaces, and to have people call them rabbi. 8 But you are not to be called rabbi, for you have one teacher, and you are all students.[e] 9 And call no one your father on earth, for you have one Father—the one in heaven. 10 Nor are you to be called instructors, for you have one instructor, the Messiah.[f] 11 The greatest among you will be your servant. 12 All who exalt themselves will be humbled, and all who humble themselves will be exalted.

13 "But woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you lock people out of the

[a] Other ancient authorities add *of God*
[b] Or *Christ*
[c] Gk *in spirit*
[d] Other ancient authorities lack *hard to bear*
[e] Gk *brothers*
[f] Or *the Christ*

in the coming age men no longer marry and women are no longer given in marriage. *Like angels*, since angels are eternal, they do not need to reproduce; the same holds true for the resurrected dead. **32:** Ex 3.6. Otherwise God would have said, "I *was* the God of Abraham." **34–40:** For Matthew, the love commandment is preeminent; all other commandments are subsidiary and to be interpreted and performed out of love for God and one's neighbor. **37:** Deut 6.5. **39:** 19.19; Lev 19.18. **44–45:** Jesus replies with a query of his own. In Ps 110.1 David (reputed author of the Psalms) describes the *Lord* (God) as speaking to *my Lord* (the Messiah). How can David's Lord be his son, since it is invariably sons who call their fathers "my lord"?

23.1–39: The denunciation of the scribes and Pharisees (Mk 12.38–40; Lk 11.37–52; 13.34–35; 20.45–47). This chapter contains the harshest and most sustained criticism of the scribes and Pharisees in the Gospels. Some scholars regard ch 23 as part of Matthew's fifth discourse (chs 24–25), but Matthew shifts the latter to a new setting (see 24.1). **2:** *Moses' seat*, a stone seat for synagogue leaders or a receptacle for the Torah scroll. **3:** *Do whatever they teach you*, a surprising directive from Matthew's Jesus. It may mean, "Follow their guidelines if you must, but by no means follow their example." **4:** *Heavy burdens*, contrast 11.30. **5:** *Phylacteries*, small cases, often made of leather, containing scriptural passages such as Deut 6.4–9. They were strapped to the left arm and forehead during prayer (Deut 6.8). *Fringes*, tassels ("tsitsit") attached to the corners of an outer garment or prayer shawl (Num 15.38). **6:** *Place of honor*, normally, the place nearest the host. **7:** *Rabbi*, a designation of respect; lit., "my great one" or "my teacher." **9:** *Father*, do not use "father" as an honorific title. **13:** *Woe*, lit., "Alas!"

kingdom of heaven. For you do not go in yourselves, and when others are going in, you stop them.[a] [15] Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you cross sea and land to make a single convert, and you make the new convert twice as much a child of hell[b] as yourselves.

[16] "Woe to you, blind guides, who say, 'Whoever swears by the sanctuary is bound by nothing, but whoever swears by the gold of the sanctuary is bound by the oath.' [17] You blind fools! For which is greater, the gold or the sanctuary that has made the gold sacred? [18] And you say, 'Whoever swears by the altar is bound by nothing, but whoever swears by the gift that is on the altar is bound by the oath.' [19] How blind you are! For which is greater, the gift or the altar that makes the gift sacred? [20] So whoever swears by the altar, swears by it and by everything on it; [21] and whoever swears by the sanctuary, swears by it and by the one who dwells in it; [22] and whoever swears by heaven, swears by the throne of God and by the one who is seated upon it.

[23] "Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you tithe mint, dill, and cummin, and have neglected the weightier matters of the law: justice and mercy and faith. It is these you ought to have practiced without neglecting the others. [24] You blind guides! You strain out a gnat but swallow a camel!

[25] "Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you clean the outside of the cup and of the plate, but inside they are full of greed and self-indulgence. [26] You blind Pharisee! First clean the inside of the cup,[c] so that the outside also may become clean.

[27] "Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you are like whitewashed tombs, which on the outside look beautiful, but inside they are full of the bones of the dead and of all kinds of filth. [28] So you also on the outside look righteous to others, but inside you are full of hypocrisy and lawlessness.

[29] "Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you build the tombs of the prophets and decorate the graves of the righteous, [30] and you say, 'If we had lived in the days of our ancestors, we would not have taken part with them in shedding the blood of the prophets.' [31] Thus you testify against yourselves that you are descendants of those who murdered the prophets. [32] Fill up, then, the measure of your ancestors. [33] You snakes, you brood of vipers! How can you escape being sentenced to hell?[b] [34] Therefore I send you prophets, sages, and scribes, some of whom you will kill and crucify, and some you will flog in your synagogues and pursue from town to town, [35] so that upon you may come all the righteous blood shed on earth, from the blood of righteous Abel to the blood of Zechariah son of Barachiah, whom you murdered between the sanctuary and the altar. [36] Truly I tell you, all this will come upon this generation.

[37] "Jerusalem, Jerusalem, the city that kills the prophets and stones those who are sent to it! How often have I desired to gather your children together as a hen gathers her brood under her wings, and you were not willing! [38] See, your house is left to you, desolate.[d] [39] For I tell you, you will not see me again until you say, 'Blessed is the one who comes in the name of the Lord.'"

[a] Other authorities add here (or after verse 12) verse 14, *Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you devour widows' houses and for the sake of appearance you make long prayers; therefore you will receive the greater condemnation*

[b] Gk *Gehenna*

[c] Other ancient authorities add *and of the plate*

[d] Other ancient authorities lack *desolate*

The seven woes given here contrast with the beatitudes at 5.3–12. **15:** *Hypocrites*, 6.2n. *You cross sea and land*, "you do everything possible." *New convert*, a proselyte, or Gentile convert to Judaism. **16:** *Gold of the sanctuary*, perhaps the Temple treasury, which was also used as a bank. **25:** *Cup . . . plate* may symbolize the Pharisees themselves. **27:** Tombs were *whitewashed* during festivals to prevent pilgrims from touching them and polluting themselves by contact with the dead. **34:** *Prophets . . . scribes*, Christian missionaries. *Synagogues,* see 9.35n. **35:** *Abel*, Gen 4.8–11. The allusion to *Zechariah, son of Barachiah* likely conflates Zechariah the martyr (son of Jehoiada, 2 Chr 24.20–22) with Zechariah the prophet (son of Berechiah, Zech 1.1). **38:** *Your house*, Jerusalem. **39:** Ps 118.26; cf. Mt 21.9.

24.1–51: The fifth (apocalyptic) discourse. As with the mission discourse (ch 10), it is not clear whether

24 As Jesus came out of the temple and was going away, his disciples came to point out to him the buildings of the temple. [2] Then he asked them, "You see all these, do you not? Truly I tell you, not one stone will be left here upon another; all will be thrown down."

[3] When he was sitting on the Mount of Olives, the disciples came to him privately, saying, "Tell us, when will this be, and what will be the sign of your coming and of the end of the age?" [4] Jesus answered them, "Beware that no one leads you astray. [5] For many will come in my name, saying, 'I am the Messiah!'[a] and they will lead many astray. [6] And you will hear of wars and rumors of wars; see that you are not alarmed; for this must take place, but the end is not yet. [7] For nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom, and there will be famines[b] and earthquakes in various places: [8] all this is but the beginning of the birth pangs.

[9] "Then they will hand you over to be tortured and will put you to death, and you will be hated by all nations because of my name. [10] Then many will fall away,[c] and they will betray one another and hate one another. [11] And many false prophets will arise and lead many astray. [12] And because of the increase of lawlessness, the love of many will grow cold. [13] But the one who endures to the end will be saved. [14] And this good news[d] of the kingdom will be proclaimed throughout the world, as a testimony to all the nations; and then the end will come.

[15] "So when you see the desolating sacrilege standing in the holy place, as was spoken of by the prophet Daniel (let the reader understand), [16] then those in Judea must flee to the mountains; [17] the one on the housetop must not go down to take what is in the house; [18] the one in the field must not turn back to get a coat. [19] Woe to those who are pregnant and to those who are nursing infants in those days! [20] Pray that your flight may not be in winter or on a sabbath. [21] For at that time there will be great suffering, such as has not been from the beginning of the world until now, no, and never will be. [22] And if those days had not been cut short, no one would be saved; but for the sake of the elect those days will be cut short. [23] Then if anyone says to you, 'Look! Here is the Messiah!'[a] or 'There he is!'—do not believe it. [24] For false messiahs[e] and false prophets will appear and produce great signs and omens, to lead astray, if possible, even the elect. [25] Take note, I have told you beforehand. [26] So, if they say to you, 'Look! He is in the wilderness,' do not go out. If they say, 'Look! He is in the inner rooms,' do not believe it. [27] For as the lightning comes from the east and flashes as far as the west, so will be the coming of the Son of Man. [28] Wherever the corpse is, there the vultures will gather.

[a] Or *the Christ*
[b] Other ancient authorities add *and pestilences*
[c] Or *stumble*
[d] Or *gospel*
[e] Or *christs*

these prophetic words speak of events that are imminent or had already occurred when the Gospel was written; probably they combine both perspectives. Matthew regards some of the tribulations as consequent upon the destruction of Jerusalem in 70 CE and others as the prelude to the Second Coming.

24.1–14: The Temple's destruction and the beginning of woes (Mk 13.1–13; Lk 21.5–19). **2:** *Buildings of the temple*, the Jerusalem Temple was one of the most magnificent sanctuaries of the ancient world. The reconstruction begun by Herod the Great spanned eighty years (20 BCE–63 CE) and came to include separate courtyards for Gentiles, Jewish women, Jewish males, and priests. **3:** *Mount of Olives*, a low mountain facing the east side of the Temple from across the Kidron Valley. Jesus and his disciples may have camped here during the crowded Passover festival. Zech 14.1–10 indicates that the Messiah would appear here. **8:** *Birth pangs*, a metaphor for the onset of the end-time woes. **14:** See 28.19–20.

24.15–28: The great tribulation (Mk 13.14–23; Lk 21.20–24). **15:** *Desolating sacrilege standing in the holy place*, the image of Zeus Olympios erected in the Temple by Antiochus Epiphanes in 167 BCE (Dan 9.27; 11.31; 12.11; 1 Macc 1.54; 6.7). The phrase may also refer to Gaius Caligula's attempt in 40 CE to install an image of himself in the Jerusalem Temple. *The reader*, either an editorial aside (as it is translated above) or Jesus' reference to the readers of Daniel. **16:** *Mountains* had caves where one might hide. **19:** Lk.23.28–31. **20:** *Winter or on a sabbath*, times when travel was difficult or prohibited.

29 "Immediately after the suffering of those days
the sun will be darkened,
and the moon will not give its light;
the stars will fall from heaven,
and the powers of heaven will be shaken.
30 Then the sign of the Son of Man will appear in heaven, and then all the tribes of the earth will mourn, and they will see 'the Son of Man coming on the clouds of heaven' with power and great glory. 31 And he will send out his angels with a loud trumpet call, and they will gather his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.

32 "From the fig tree learn its lesson: as soon as its branch becomes tender and puts forth its leaves, you know that summer is near. 33 So also, when you see all these things, you know that he[a] is near, at the very gates. 34 Truly I tell you, this generation will not pass away until all these things have taken place. 35 Heaven and earth will pass away, but my words will not pass away.

36 "But about that day and hour no one knows, neither the angels of heaven, nor the Son,[b] but only the Father. 37 For as the days of Noah were, so will be the coming of the Son of Man. 38 For as in those days before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day Noah entered the ark, 39 and they knew nothing until the flood came and swept them all away, so too will be the coming of the Son of Man. 40 Then two will be in the field; one will be taken and one will be left. 41 Two women will be grinding meal together; one will be taken and one will be left. 42 Keep awake therefore, for you do not know on what day[c] your Lord is coming. 43 But understand this: if the owner of the house had known in what part of the night the thief was coming, he would have stayed awake and would not have let his house be broken into. 44 Therefore you also must be ready, for the Son of Man is coming at an unexpected hour.

45 "Who then is the faithful and wise slave, whom his master has put in charge of his household, to give the other slaves[d] their allowance of food at the proper time? 46 Blessed is that slave whom his master will find at work when he arrives. 47 Truly I tell you, he will put that one in charge of all his possessions. 48 But if that wicked slave says to himself, 'My master is delayed,' 49 and he begins to beat his fellow slaves, and eats and drinks with drunkards, 50 the master of that slave will come on a day when he does not expect him and at an hour that he does not know. 51 He will cut him in pieces[e] and put him with the hypocrites, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

25 "Then the kingdom of heaven will be like this. Ten bridesmaids[f] took their lamps and went to meet the bridegroom.[g] 2 Five of them were foolish, and five were wise. 3 When the foolish took their lamps, they took no oil with them; 4 but the wise took flasks of oil with their lamps. 5 As the bridegroom was delayed, all of them became drowsy and slept. 6 But at midnight there was a shout, 'Look! Here is the bridegroom! Come out to meet him.' 7 Then all those bridesmaids[f] got up and trimmed their lamps. 8 The foolish said to the wise, 'Give us some of your oil, for our lamps are going out.' 9 But the wise replied, 'No! there will not be enough for you and for us; you had better go to the dealers and buy some for yourselves.' 10 And while they went to buy it, the bridegroom came, and those who were ready went with him into the wedding banquet; and the door was shut.

[a] Or *it*
[b] Other ancient authorities lack *nor the Son*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *at what hour*
[d] Gk *to give them*
[e] Or *cut him off*
[f] Gk *virgins*
[g] Other ancient authorities add *and the bride*

24.29–51: The coming of the Son of Man (Mk 13.24–37; Lk 21.25–33: Lk 17.26–30, 34–36; Lk 12.41–48). **29:** Isa 13.1; 34.4. **30:** The Son of Man is himself the *sign*; see Dan 7.13. **31:** *Trumpet,* see Isa 27.13; Zech 9.14; 1 Thess 4.16. **35:** Cf. 5.18. **38:** *Noah*, Gen 7.7. **51:** *Cut him in pieces*, perhaps a figurative expression for "cut off from the community" (1QS 2.16–17).

25.1–30: Two parables of the end-times (Lk 19.11–27). **1:** *Lamps*, torches made from rags wrapped around the end of a pole and soaked in olive oil. *Bridegroom*, 9.15n. **2:** *Foolish . . . wise*, 7.24–27. **7:** *Trimmed their lamps*, cut

11 Later the other bridesmaids[a] came also, saying, 'Lord, lord, open to us.' 12 But he replied, 'Truly I tell you, I do not know you.' 13 Keep awake therefore, for you know neither the day nor the hour.[b]

14 "For it is as if a man, going on a journey, summoned his slaves and entrusted his property to them; 15 to one he gave five talents,[c] to another two, to another one, to each according to his ability. Then he went away. 16 The one who had received the five talents went off at once and traded with them, and made five more talents. 17 In the same way, the one who had the two talents made two more talents. 18 But the one who had received the one talent went off and dug a hole in the ground and hid his master's money. 19 After a long time the master of those slaves came and settled accounts with them. 20 Then the one who had received the five talents came forward, bringing five more talents, saying, 'Master, you handed over to me five talents; see, I have made five more talents.' 21 His master said to him, 'Well done, good and trustworthy slave; you have been trustworthy in a few things, I will put you in charge of many things; enter into the joy of your master.' 22 And the one with the two talents also came forward, saying, 'Master, you handed over to me two talents; see, I have made two more talents.' 23 His master said to him, 'Well done, good and trustworthy slave; you have been trustworthy in a few things, I will put you in charge of many things; enter into the joy of your master.' 24 Then the one who had received the one talent also came forward, saying, 'Master, I knew that you were a harsh man, reaping where you did not sow, and gathering where you did not scatter seed; 25 so I was afraid, and I went and hid your talent in the ground. Here you have what is yours.' 26 But his master replied, 'You wicked and lazy slave! You knew, did you, that I reap where I did not sow, and gather where I did not scatter? 27 Then you ought to have invested my money with the bankers, and on my return I would have received what was my own with interest. 28 So take the talent from him, and give it to the one with the ten talents. 29 For to all those who have, more will be given, and they will have an abundance; but from those who have nothing, even what they have will be taken away. 30 As for this worthless slave, throw him into the outer darkness, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.'

31 "When the Son of Man comes in his glory, and all the angels with him, then he will sit on the throne of his glory. 32 All the nations will be gathered before him, and he will separate people one from another as a shepherd separates the sheep from the goats, 33 and he will put the sheep at his right hand and the goats at the left. 34 Then the king will say to those at his right hand, 'Come, you that are blessed by my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world; 35 for I was hungry and you gave me food, I was thirsty and you gave me something to drink, I was a stranger and you welcomed me, 36 I was naked and you gave me clothing, I was sick and you took care of me, I was in prison and you visited me.' 37 Then the righteous will answer him, 'Lord, when was it that we saw you hungry and gave you food, or thirsty and gave you something to drink? 38 And when was it that we saw you a stranger and welcomed you, or naked and gave you clothing? 39 And when was it that we saw you sick or in prison and visited you?' 40 And the

[a] Gk *virgins*

[b] Other ancient authorities add *in which the Son of Man is coming*

[c] A talent was worth more than fifteen years' wages of a laborer

away the charred cloth wicks and added more oil. **13:** 24.42. **14:** *Slaves*, in Jesus' day, it was not unusual to entrust slaves with large amounts of money and responsibility. **15:** *Talents*, 18.24n. This parable furnishes the basis for the English word "talent." **18:** 13.44n. **19:** The delay of the parousia (Jesus' return). **23:** *Joy of your master*, possibly the messianic banquet (8.11n.). **29:** Cf. 13.12.

25.31–46: The judgment of the nations. 31: *The Son of Man*, 8.20n. **32:** 24.9; 28.19; Isa 66.18; Joel 3.2. **33:** *Right*, the auspicious side, while *left* was the bad or unlucky side. The distinction between sheep and goats may reside in the fabrics the two produce: goats produce dark hair, which was used to make ill-omened sackcloth (11.21n.), while white wool was a sign of prosperity.

king will answer them, 'Truly I tell you, just as you did it to one of the least of these who are members of my family,[a] you did it to me.' 41 Then he will say to those at his left hand, 'You that are accursed, depart from me into the eternal fire prepared for the devil and his angels; 42 for I was hungry and you gave me no food, I was thirsty and you gave me nothing to drink, 43 I was a stranger and you did not welcome me, naked and you did not give me clothing, sick and in prison and you did not visit me.' 44 Then they also will answer, 'Lord, when was it that we saw you hungry or thirsty or a stranger or naked or sick or in prison, and did not take care of you?' 45 Then he will answer them, 'Truly I tell you, just as you did not do it to one of the least of these, you did not do it to me.' 46 And these will go away into eternal punishment, but the righteous into eternal life."

26 When Jesus had finished saying all these things, he said to his disciples, 2 "You know that after two days the Passover is coming, and the Son of Man will be handed over to be crucified."

3 Then the chief priests and the elders of the people gathered in the palace of the high priest, who was called Caiaphas, 4 and they conspired to arrest Jesus by stealth and kill him. 5 But they said, "Not during the festival, or there may be a riot among the people."

6 Now while Jesus was at Bethany in the house of Simon the leper,[b] 7 a woman came to him with an alabaster jar of very costly ointment, and she poured it on his head as he sat at the table. 8 But when the disciples saw it, they were angry and said, "Why this waste? 9 For this ointment could have been sold for a large sum, and the money given to the poor." 10 But Jesus, aware of this, said to them, "Why do you trouble the woman? She has performed a good service for me. 11 For you always have the poor with you, but you will not always have me. 12 By pouring this ointment on my body she has prepared me for burial. 13 Truly I tell you, wherever this good news[c] is proclaimed in the whole world, what she has done will be told in remembrance of her."

14 Then one of the twelve, who was called Judas Iscariot, went to the chief priests 15 and said, "What will you give me if I betray him to you?" They paid him thirty pieces of silver. 16 And from that moment he began to look for an opportunity to betray him.

17 On the first day of Unleavened Bread the disciples came to Jesus, saying, "Where do you want us to make the preparations for you to eat the Passover?" 18 He said, "Go into the city to a certain man, and say to him, 'The Teacher says, My time is near; I will keep the Passover at your house with my disciples.'" 19 So the disciples did as Jesus had directed them, and they prepared the Passover meal.

20 When it was evening, he took his place with the twelve;[d] 21 and while they were eating, he said, "Truly I tell you, one of you will betray me." 22 And they became greatly distressed and began to say to him one after another, "Surely not I, Lord?" 23 He answered, "The one who has dipped his hand into the bowl with me will betray me. 24 The Son of Man goes as it is written of him, but woe to that one by whom the Son of Man is betrayed! It would have been better for that one not to have been born." 25 Judas, who

[a] Gk *these my brothers*
[b] The terms *leper* and *leprosy* can refer to several diseases
[c] Or *gospel*
[d] Other ancient authorities add *disciples*

26.1–16: Preliminaries to the Passover (Mk 14.3–11; Lk 22.3–6; Jn 12.1–8). **1:** The conclusion of Jesus' final discourse. **2:** *Passover*, the annual Jewish festival celebrating Israel's exodus from Egypt (Ex 12.1–20). **3:** *Caiaphas*, high priest ca.18–36 CE, was the son-in-law of the high priest Annas (6–15 CE; 26.57). **5:** *Riots* were always a possibility during the major festivals. **6:** *Bethany,* a village on the Mount of Olives just east of Jerusalem. **7:** *Alabaster jar*, a small vial or bottle called an alabastron. **14:** *Judas Iscariot*, 10.4n. *Thirty pieces of silver*, tetradrachmas worth about one hundred and twenty denarii, a third of a year's wages; cf. Zech 11.12.

26.17–35: The Passover and Lord's Supper (Mk 14.12–31; Lk 22.7–23,31–34 Jn 13.21–30, 36–38; cf. 1 Cor 11.23–25). **17:** *First day*, the fourteenth of Nisan (March-April), sometimes described as "the preparation of the Passover." It marks the beginning of the week-long festival. **25:** *Rabbi*, a title for Jesus that is typically used by non-disciples in Matthew (23.7n.); Judas is the only disciple to use the title in Matthew. *You have said so* means

betrayed him, said, "Surely not I, Rabbi?" He replied, "You have said so."

26 While they were eating, Jesus took a loaf of bread, and after blessing it he broke it, gave it to the disciples, and said, "Take, eat; this is my body." 27 Then he took a cup, and after giving thanks he gave it to them, saying, "Drink from it, all of you; 28 for this is my blood of the[a] covenant, which is poured out for many for the forgiveness of sins. 29 I tell you, I will never again drink of this fruit of the vine until that day when I drink it new with you in my Father's kingdom."

30 When they had sung the hymn, they went out to the Mount of Olives.

31 Then Jesus said to them, "You will all become deserters because of me this night; for it is written,

'I will strike the shepherd,
and the sheep of the flock will be
scattered.'

32 But after I am raised up, I will go ahead of you to Galilee." 33 Peter said to him, "Though all become deserters because of you, I will never desert you." 34 Jesus said to him, "Truly I tell you, this very night, before the cock crows, you will deny me three times." 35 Peter said to him, "Even though I must die with you, I will not deny you." And so said all the disciples.

36 Then Jesus went with them to a place called Gethsemane; and he said to his disciples, "Sit here while I go over there and pray." 37 He took with him Peter and the two sons of Zebedee, and began to be grieved and agitated. 38 Then he said to them, "I am deeply grieved, even to death; remain here, and stay awake with me." 39 And going a little farther, he threw himself on the ground and prayed, "My Father, if it is possible, let this cup pass from me; yet not what I want but what you want." 40 Then he came to the disciples and found them sleeping; and he said to Peter, "So, could you not stay awake with me one hour? 41 Stay awake and pray that you may not come into the time of trial;[b] the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak." 42 Again he went away for the second time and prayed, "My Father, if this cannot pass unless I drink it, your will be done." 43 Again he came and found them sleeping, for their eyes were heavy. 44 So leaving them again, he went away and prayed for the third time, saying the same words. 45 Then he came to the disciples and said to them, "Are you still sleeping and taking your rest? See, the hour is at hand, and the Son of Man is betrayed into the hands of sinners. 46 Get up, let us be going. See, my betrayer is at hand."

47 While he was still speaking, Judas, one of the twelve, arrived; with him was a large crowd with swords and clubs, from the chief priests and the elders of the people. 48 Now the betrayer had given them a sign, saying, "The one I will kiss is the man; arrest him." 49 At once he came up to Jesus and said, "Greetings, Rabbi!" and kissed him. 50 Jesus said to him, "Friend, do what you are here to do." Then they came and laid hands on Jesus and arrested him. 51 Suddenly, one of those with Jesus put his hand on his sword, drew it, and struck the slave of the high priest, cutting off his ear. 52 Then Jesus said to him, "Put your sword back into its place; for all who take the sword will perish by the sword. 53 Do you think that I cannot appeal to my Father, and he will at once send me more than twelve legions of angels? 54 But how then would the scriptures be fulfilled, which say it must happen in this way?" 55 At that hour Jesus said to the crowds, "Have you come out with swords and clubs to arrest me as though I were a bandit? Day after day I sat in the temple teaching, and you did not arrest me. 56 But all

[a] Other ancient authorities add *new*
[b] Or *into temptation*

"Yes." **26:** Cf. 14.19; 15.36. **28:** *Blood of the covenant*, Ex 24.8. **30:** *The hymn*, the second half of the Hallel Psalms (113–18). **31:** *I will strike . . .*, Zech 13.7. **32:** See 28.7,10,16–20.

26.36–56: The arrest in Gethsemane (Mk 14.32–50; Lk 22.39–53; Jn 18.3–12). **36:** *Gethsemane*, the name means "garden of oil," so the site was likely an olive grove on the Mount of Olives (Lk 22.39) with olive presses nearby. **37:** *Sons of Zebedee*, James and John (4.21; 17.1; 20.20–23n.). **38:** Cf. Ps 42.6; Jon 4.9. **39:** *Cup,* see 20.22. **49:** *Rabbi*, see 26.25n. **53:** In the Roman army a *legion* was about five thousand soldiers. **56:** *Scriptures*, not individual passages, but the Jewish scriptures as a whole.

this has taken place, so that the scriptures of the prophets may be fulfilled." Then all the disciples deserted him and fled.

57 Those who had arrested Jesus took him to Caiaphas the high priest, in whose house the scribes and the elders had gathered. 58 But Peter was following him at a distance, as far as the courtyard of the high priest; and going inside, he sat with the guards in order to see how this would end. 59 Now the chief priests and the whole council were looking for false testimony against Jesus so that they might put him to death, 60 but they found none, though many false witnesses came forward. At last two came forward 61 and said, "This fellow said, 'I am able to destroy the temple of God and to build it in three days.'" 62 The high priest stood up and said, "Have you no answer? What is it that they testify against you?" 63 But Jesus was silent. Then the high priest said to him, "I put you under oath before the living God, tell us if you are the Messiah,[a] the Son of God." 64 Jesus said to him, "You have said so. But I tell you,

> From now on you will see the Son of Man
> seated at the right hand of Power
> and coming on the clouds of heaven."

65 Then the high priest tore his clothes and said, "He has blasphemed! Why do we still need witnesses? You have now heard his blasphemy. 66 What is your verdict?" They answered, "He deserves death." 67 Then they spat in his face and struck him; and some slapped him, 68 saying, "Prophesy to us, you Messiah![a] Who is it that struck you?"

69 Now Peter was sitting outside in the courtyard. A servant-girl came to him and said, "You also were with Jesus the Galilean." 70 But he denied it before all of them, saying, "I do not know what you are talking about." 71 When he went out to the porch, another servant-girl saw him, and she said to the bystanders, "This man was with Jesus of Nazareth."[b] 72 Again he denied it with an oath, "I do not know the man." 73 After a little while the bystanders came up and said to Peter, "Certainly you are also one of them, for your accent betrays you." 74 Then he began to curse, and he swore an oath, "I do not know the man!" At that moment the cock crowed. 75 Then Peter remembered what Jesus had said: "Before the cock crows, you will deny me three times." And he went out and wept bitterly.

27 When morning came, all the chief priests and the elders of the people conferred together against Jesus in order to bring about his death. 2 They bound him, led him away, and handed him over to Pilate the governor.

3 When Judas, his betrayer, saw that Jesus[c] was condemned, he repented and brought back the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and the elders. 4 He said, "I have sinned by betraying innocent[d] blood." But they said, "What is that to us? See to it yourself." 5 Throwing down the pieces of silver in the temple, he departed; and he went and hanged himself. 6 But the chief priests, taking the pieces of silver, said, "It is not lawful to put them into the treasury, since they are blood money." 7 After conferring together, they used them to buy the potter's field as a place to bury foreigners. 8 For this reason that field has been called the Field of Blood to this day. 9 Then was fulfilled what had been spoken through the prophet Jeremiah,[e] "And they took[f] the thirty pieces of silver, the price of the one on whom a price had been set,[g] on whom some of the people of

[a] Or *Christ*
[b] Gk *the Nazorean*
[c] Gk *he*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *righteous*
[e] Other ancient authorities read *Zechariah* or *Isaiah*
[f] Or *I took*
[g] Or *the price of the precious One*

26.57–27.2: Jesus before the council and Pilate (Mk 14.53–15.1; Lk 22.54–23.2; Jn 18.13–27). **26.59:** *Whole council*, the Sanhedrin, the highest council of the Jews, possessing judicial authority in noncapital cases. **61:** Cf. 24.2. **63:** *Messiah, the Son of God*, 16.16n. **64:** *You have said so*: Jesus' response confirms the high priest's identification (25.25n.; 27.11). *Son of Man,* 8.20n. Cf. Ps 110.1; Dan 7.13. **75:** 26.34. **27.2:** *Pilate the governor*, Roman administrator of Judea, 26–36 CE.

27.3–10: The death of Judas. Compare Acts 1.18–20. **9–10:** A fulfillment citation from Zech 11.12–13, with echoes of Jer 32.6–9.

Israel had set a price, [10] and they gave[a] them for the potter's field, as the Lord commanded me."

[11] Now Jesus stood before the governor; and the governor asked him, "Are you the King of the Jews?" Jesus said, "You say so." [12] But when he was accused by the chief priests and elders, he did not answer. [13] Then Pilate said to him, "Do you not hear how many accusations they make against you?" [14] But he gave him no answer, not even to a single charge, so that the governor was greatly amazed.

[15] Now at the festival the governor was accustomed to release a prisoner for the crowd, anyone whom they wanted. [16] At that time they had a notorious prisoner, called Jesus[b] Barabbas. [17] So after they had gathered, Pilate said to them, "Whom do you want me to release for you, Jesus[b] Barabbas or Jesus who is called the Messiah?"[c] [18] For he realized that it was out of jealousy that they had handed him over. [19] While he was sitting on the judgment seat, his wife sent word to him, "Have nothing to do with that innocent man, for today I have suffered a great deal because of a dream about him." [20] Now the chief priests and the elders persuaded the crowds to ask for Barabbas and to have Jesus killed. [21] The governor again said to them, "Which of the two do you want me to release for you?" And they said, "Barabbas." [22] Pilate said to them, "Then what should I do with Jesus who is called the Messiah?"[c] All of them said, "Let him be crucified!" [23] Then he asked, "Why, what evil has he done?" But they shouted all the more, "Let him be crucified!"

[24] So when Pilate saw that he could do nothing, but rather that a riot was beginning, he took some water and washed his hands before the crowd, saying, "I am innocent of this man's blood;[d] see to it yourselves." [25] Then the people as a whole answered, "His blood be on us and on our children!" [26] So he released Barabbas for them; and after flogging Jesus, he handed him over to be crucified.

[27] Then the soldiers of the governor took Jesus into the governor's headquarters,[e] and they gathered the whole cohort around him. [28] They stripped him and put a scarlet robe on him, [29] and after twisting some thorns into a crown, they put it on his head. They put a reed in his right hand and knelt before him and mocked him, saying, "Hail, King of the Jews!" [30] They spat on him, and took the reed and struck him on the head. [31] After mocking him, they stripped him of the robe and put his own clothes on him. Then they led him away to crucify him.

[32] As they went out, they came upon a man from Cyrene named Simon; they compelled this man to carry his cross. [33] And when they came to a place called Golgotha (which means Place of a Skull), [34] they offered him wine to drink, mixed with gall; but when he tasted it, he would not drink it. [35] And when they had crucified him, they divided his clothes among themselves by casting lots;[f] [36] then they sat down there and kept watch over him. [37] Over his head they put the charge against him, which read, "This is Jesus, the King of the Jews."

[38] Then two bandits were crucified with him, one on his right and one on his left.

[a] Other ancient authorities read *I gave*
[b] Other ancient authorities lack *Jesus*
[c] Or *the Christ*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *this righteous blood*, or *this righteous man's blood*
[e] Gk *the praetorium*
[f] Other ancient authorities add *in order that what had been spoken through the prophet might be fulfilled, "They divided my clothes among themselves, and for my clothing they cast lots."*

27.11–31: Jesus on trial before Pilate (Mk 15.2–20; Lk 23.3–5,13–25; Jn 18.33–19.16). **11:** 26.64n. **16:** *Barabbas*, ("son of the Father") was a common name in Israel. **19:** *Judgment seat*, a raised, paved area outside Pilate's residence. *Dream*, this episode is unique to Matthew. **24:** *Washed his hands*, Deut 21.6; Ps 73.13. **25:** *Children*, an indication that the next generation would experience the destruction of Jerusalem in 70 CE. **27:** *The governor's headquarters* (see textual note *e*), Pilate's residence (Jn 19.13). *Whole cohort*, ca. 600–1,000 men.

27.32–56: The crucifixion and death of Jesus (Mk 15.21–41; Lk 23.26–49; Jn 19.17–30). **32:** *Simon*, Mk 15.21. **34:** *Gall*, a bitter, poisonous plant (see Ps 69.21). **35:** See Ps 22.18. **37:** *King of the Jews*, the official charge against

39 Those who passed by derided[a] him, shaking their heads 40 and saying, "You who would destroy the temple and build it in three days, save yourself! If you are the Son of God, come down from the cross." 41 In the same way the chief priests also, along with the scribes and elders, were mocking him, saying, 42 "He saved others; he cannot save himself.[b] He is the King of Israel; let him come down from the cross now, and we will believe in him. 43 He trusts in God; let God deliver him now, if he wants to; for he said, 'I am God's Son.'" 44 The bandits who were crucified with him also taunted him in the same way.

45 From noon on, darkness came over the whole land[c] until three in the afternoon. 46 And about three o'clock Jesus cried with a loud voice, "Eli, Eli, lema sabachthani?" that is, "My God, my God, why have you forsaken me?" 47 When some of the bystanders heard it, they said, "This man is calling for Elijah." 48 At once one of them ran and got a sponge, filled it with sour wine, put it on a stick, and gave it to him to drink. 49 But the others said, "Wait, let us see whether Elijah will come to save him."[d] 50 Then Jesus cried again with a loud voice and breathed his last.[e] 51 At that moment the curtain of the temple was torn in two, from top to bottom. The earth shook, and the rocks were split. 52 The tombs also were opened, and many bodies of the saints who had fallen asleep were raised. 53 After his resurrection they came out of the tombs and entered the holy city and appeared to many. 54 Now when the centurion and those with him, who were keeping watch over Jesus, saw the earthquake and what took place, they were terrified and said, "Truly this man was God's Son!"[f]

55 Many women were also there, looking on from a distance; they had followed Jesus from Galilee and had provided for him. 56 Among them were Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James and Joseph, and the mother of the sons of Zebedee.

57 When it was evening, there came a rich man from Arimathea, named Joseph, who was also a disciple of Jesus. 58 He went to Pilate and asked for the body of Jesus; then Pilate ordered it to be given to him. 59 So Joseph took the body and wrapped it in a clean linen cloth 60 and laid it in his own new tomb, which he had hewn in the rock. He then rolled a great stone to the door of the tomb and went away. 61 Mary Magdalene and the other Mary were there, sitting opposite the tomb.

62 The next day, that is, after the day of Preparation, the chief priests and the Pharisees gathered before Pilate 63 and said, "Sir, we remember what that impostor said while he was still alive, 'After three days I will rise again.' 64 Therefore command the tomb to be made secure until the third day; otherwise his disciples may go and steal him away, and tell the people, 'He has been raised from the dead,' and the last deception would be worse than the first." 65 Pilate said to them, "You have a guard[g] of soldiers; go, make it as secure as you can."[h] 66 So they went with the guard and made the tomb secure by sealing the stone.

[a] Or *blasphemed*
[b] Or *is he unable to save himself?*
[c] Or *earth*
[d] Other ancient authorities add *And another took a spear and pierced his side, and out came water and blood*
[e] Or *gave up his spirit*
[f] Or *a son of God*
[g] Or *Take a guard*
[h] Gk *you know how*

Jesus was inscribed on a tablet. The charge suggests that he was considered a political threat (2.2). **46:** *Eli . . .*, an Aramaic translation of Ps 22.1. The invocation to God ("Eli," "my God") sounds similar to the name Elijah ("The Lord is my God"). **47:** *Elijah* was popularly regarded as a helper to those in need. **51:** *The curtain of the temple,* a large tapestry that hung in front of the Holy of Holies, the innermost room of the Temple. *The earth shook*, 28.2. **53:** *The holy city,* Jerusalem. **54:** *God's Son*, the first acclamation of Jesus as Son of God by a Gentile. **56:** *Mary Magdalene*, 27.61; 28.1; Mk 16.9; Lk 8.2. Magdala was a fishing town on the west coast of the Sea of Galilee, northwest of Tiberias. *Sons of Zebedee,* see 26.37n.

27.57–66: The burial of Jesus and the guard at the tomb. (Mk 15.42–47; Lk 23.50–56; Jn 19.38–42). **61:** *Other Mary*, the mother of James and Joseph (27.56; 28.1). **62:** *After the day of Preparation*, the sabbath (Saturday). Friday was the day of Preparation. *The Pharisees*, last mentioned at 23.29, were not involved in Jesus' crucifixion. **65:** *Guard of soldiers,* Roman soldiers, not the Temple police.

28 After the sabbath, as the first day of the week was dawning, Mary Magdalene and the other Mary went to see the tomb. [2] And suddenly there was a great earthquake; for an angel of the Lord, descending from heaven, came and rolled back the stone and sat on it. [3] His appearance was like lightning, and his clothing white as snow. [4] For fear of him the guards shook and became like dead men. [5] But the angel said to the women, "Do not be afraid; I know that you are looking for Jesus who was crucified. [6] He is not here; for he has been raised, as he said. Come, see the place where he[a] lay. [7] Then go quickly and tell his disciples, 'He has been raised from the dead,[b] and indeed he is going ahead of you to Galilee; there you will see him.' This is my message for you." [8] So they left the tomb quickly with fear and great joy, and ran to tell his disciples. [9] Suddenly Jesus met them and said, "Greetings!" And they came to him, took hold of his feet, and worshiped him. [10] Then Jesus said to them, "Do not be afraid; go and tell my brothers to go to Galilee; there they will see me."

[11] While they were going, some of the guard went into the city and told the chief priests everything that had happened. [12] After the priests[c] had assembled with the elders, they devised a plan to give a large sum of money to the soldiers, [13] telling them, "You must say, 'His disciples came by night and stole him away while we were asleep.' [14] If this comes to the governor's ears, we will satisfy him and keep you out of trouble." [15] So they took the money and did as they were directed. And this story is still told among the Jews to this day.

[16] Now the eleven disciples went to Galilee, to the mountain to which Jesus had directed them. [17] When they saw him, they worshiped him; but some doubted. [18] And Jesus came and said to them, "All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. [19] Go therefore and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, [20] and teaching them to obey everything that I have commanded you. And remember, I am with you always, to the end of the age."[d]

[a] Other ancient authorities read *the Lord*
[b] Other ancient authorities lack *from the dead*
[c] Gk *they*
[d] Other ancient authorities add *Amen*

28.1–15: The resurrection of Jesus and the guards' report (Mk 16.1–8; Lk 24.1–12; Jn 20.1–10). **1:** *First day of the week*, Sunday. *The other Mary*, 27.61n. **2:** 27.51. **7:** *Galilee*, 26.32; Mk 16.7; contrast Acts 1.4; Jn 20.19. **9:** Here, as in the other Gospels, Jesus' women disciples are the first to witness the risen Jesus. **10:** *My brothers*, Jesus identifies his disciples as "brothers," indicating his ongoing love for them despite their lapses. **14:** *Governor's ears*, an investigation before Pilate. **15:** Not *among the Jews* but "among Jews," i.e., among Jews who had not accepted the Christian message.

28.16–20: The commissioning of the disciples (Mk 16.14–18; Lk 24.36–49; Jn 20.19–23; Acts 1.6–8). **17:** *Some doubted*, doubt still characterizes some of the disciples in Matthew. **18:** *All authority*, 7.29n.; 9.6. **19:** *All nations*, all people, including the Jews. *I am with you*, 18.20; cf. 1.23.

THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO MARK

AUTHORSHIP AND DATE

Although the Gospel is anonymous, an ancient tradition ascribes it to John Mark (mentioned in Acts 12.12; 15.37), who is supposed to have composed it at Rome as a summary of Peter's preaching (see 1 Pet 5.13). Modern scholars find little first-century CE evidence to support this tradition. Mark is the shortest of the four canonical Gospels and is generally thought to be the earliest and to have been used as a source for both Matthew and Luke. The vague references to the destruction of Jerusalem in Mark 13 (contrast Mt 22.7; Lk 19.43) could be clues that the Gospel was composed just prior to the Jewish revolt that began in 66 CE and the Roman reconquest and destruction of Jerusalem and the Temple in 70 CE.

STYLE AND CONTENT

The language of the Gospel is that of popular spoken Greek. Its style features rapid sequences of brief and vivid concrete episodes linked simply by "and" or "and immediately," frequently omitted in translation for less awkward reading in English. The narrative often shifts from the past tense into the present tense, enlivening the action. The content of the Gospel consists mostly of stories about Jesus' actions and disputes with scribes and Pharisees, including some of Jesus' sayings, with two speeches (one mostly of parables) interrupting the rapid flow of episodes. Mark appears to have drawn upon a rich variety of oral traditions of Jesus' actions and teachings, including chains of miracle stories, sets of parables, and stories of controversies with the Pharisees. Some scholars think that the Gospel may have been a text that was still performed orally by Christian storytellers. The overall narrative weaves sequences of episodes together into a complex plot with several interrelated themes and conflicts. In the earliest manuscripts, Mark ends abruptly at 16.8. This (apparently original) open ending invites the reader to continue the story of Jesus and the kingdom. In some later manuscripts Mark's story was "completed" with resurrection appearances of amalgamated elements from the other canonical Gospels, to make it conform to their common pattern.

STRUCTURE

The Gospel story unfolds in an escalating series of steps. After Jesus' baptism by John, he proclaims the kingdom of God and manifests its miraculous power in rural Galilee as the renewal of Israel, over against the Jerusalem priestly establishment and its representatives, the scribes and Pharisees (chs 1–3). In the first long speech of the Gospel, Jesus then teaches the mysterious plan of the kingdom in parables to large audiences and especially to his disciples (4.1–34). Jesus continues his program of the renewal of Israel in a sustained program of sea crossings, exorcisms, healings, and wilderness feedings reminiscent of the activities of Moses and Elijah (the great prophets of the past who, respectively, founded and renewed Israel), along with continuing disputes with the scribes and Pharisees (4.35–8.21). In the next step of the story, one framed by healings of blind men that highlight the disciples' misunderstanding, Jesus repeatedly makes clear that, besides being a new prophet equal in significance to Moses and Elijah in his restoration of covenantal Israel, it is necessary that he carry out the agenda of a martyr-messiah of Israel who must be condemned by the rulers, be killed, and rise again (8.22–10.52). After his dramatic messianic entry into Jerusalem and his provocative prophetic condemnation of the Temple, Jesus confronts the Jerusalem priestly establishment and its representatives (chs 11–12). In a second major speech, Jesus warns the disciples about fanatical misinterpretation of the coming political struggles (ch 13). In the final section of the Gospel, following Jesus' last meal with the disciples and his betrayal and arrest by the rulers' posse, he is accused of treason, blasphemy, and insurrection, condemned, and turned over to Pilate, the Roman governor, who orders him executed by crucifixion (chs 14–15). The Gospel then ends abruptly with the story of the empty tomb and the women's fear (16.1–8).

INTERPRETATION

Modern readers often hear the Gospel as a story of Christian discipleship, but it is much more than that. Mark is a story of multiple conflicts, exciting to read and with a compelling message. In the dominant conflict that builds to a climax throughout the Gospel, Jesus' challenge to the Jewish religious leaders and their Roman imperial overlords escalates from his preaching and practice of the kingdom of God in the village gatherings of Galilee to his dramatic demonstration against the Temple and confrontation with the rulers in Jerusalem. That results in his

torturous death by crucifixion at the hands of the Romans as an insurrectionary. In Jesus' exorcisms, moreover, God is winning the struggle with Satan and the demonic "unclean spirits" (1.27; 5.10–12) that have taken possession of the people like an occupying Roman legion. Surprisingly, a conflict between Jesus and the very disciples he designates as representative of the renewed people of Israel also develops in the course of the story. Although Jesus teaches them the mystery of the kingdom, they persistently fail to understand what he is teaching and doing, and at the end they betray, deny, and desert him. By contrast with the misunderstanding and faithless disciples, women, who play an increasingly prominent role in Mark's story, serve as models of faithfulness.

The Gospel of Mark presents Jesus' preaching and manifestation of the kingdom of God as a decisive new development in the history of Israel, not as the beginning of a new religion. Indeed, in this story religion is inseparable from the social, political, economic, even the physiological aspects of life. Throughout the Gospel, Jesus is portrayed in terms of popular Israelite memories of the great prophets, especially Moses, who had led Israel's Exodus from subjection to alien rule in Egypt; Elijah, who had led the renewal of Israel in resistance to oppressive monarchs; and Jeremiah, who had proclaimed God's judgment on the Temple and the rulers based there. At the beginning, in the middle, and toward the end, Mark also presents Jesus as a specially designated son of God, or king. Jesus, however, turns out to be a messiah (anointed one) who is a martyr, in contrast to the disciples' expectations that Jesus would be invested with political power in Jerusalem. And Jesus' role as both prophet and martyr-messiah is pointedly distinguished from the expectations of the Jewish elite, such as the scribes (see esp. 9.11–13; 12.35–37).

GUIDE TO READING

Because the Gospel presents a sustained narrative of escalating conflicts, it should be read as a whole so its components are understood in their connection with the overall story—a story that did not end at the tomb, as the prophecy of a new encounter between Jesus and his disciples reminds the audience (14.27–28; 16.7).

Richard A. Horsley

1 The beginning of the good news[a] of Jesus Christ, the Son of God.[b]
[2] As it is written in the prophet Isaiah,[c]
"See, I am sending my messenger ahead of you,[d]
who will prepare your way;
[3] the voice of one crying out in the wilderness:
'Prepare the way of the Lord,
make his paths straight,'"
[4] John the baptizer appeared[e] in the wilderness, proclaiming a baptism of repentance for the forgiveness of sins. [5] And people from the whole Judean countryside and all

[a] Or *gospel*
[b] Other ancient authorities lack *the Son of God*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *in the prophets*
[d] Gk *before your face*
[e] Other ancient authorities read *John was baptizing*

1.1–13: Preparing the way of the Lord. 1: In the context of the Roman Empire, *the good news* (gospel) *of Jesus Christ,* i.e., Jesus the "anointed" king of Israel, a people subject to Rome, would have been understood over against the "gospel" of Caesar as the "Savior" who brought peace to the world. *Son of God* is missing in the earliest manuscripts.

1.2–8: John's baptism of repentance (Mt 3.1–12; Lk 3.1–20; Jn 1.6–15,19–28) preparing the *way* as the new Exodus and covenant renewal. **2–3:** See Ex 23.20; Mal 3.1 (cf. Mt 11.10; Lk 7.27); Isa 40.3. That this is not all a quotation from Isaiah suggests that it is rooted in a popular (non-scribal) oral conflation of "prophecies." It is not clear whether *my messenger ahead of you* refers to John sent ahead of Jesus, or Jesus sent ahead of the addressees. *"Prepare the way of the Lord"* proclaims a new Exodus, as in Isa 40. The *wilderness,* also suggestive of a new Exodus, was a place where other popular prophets and movements often originated (e.g., Acts 5.36; cf. Josephus, *Ant.* 20.5.1). **4–5:** Acts 13.24. *Baptism of repentance for the forgiveness of sins,* John proclaims and performs a ritual of entrance into God's renewed covenant with Israel in which those ready to change their ways are baptized as forgiven for having broken the covenantal laws. 5: *The whole Judean countryside and all the people of Jerusalem,* i.e., all the people of Israel, from the capital city as well as from the villages, were baptized. 6: John's garb evokes an image of the prophet Elijah, as in 2 Kings 1.8; cf. 9.11–13. Jesus is also taken to be Elijah in 6.15; 8.28; 15.35–36. 7–8: John also proclaims *one . . . more powerful* who will bring the enabling divine power of the *Holy Spirit.*

the people of Jerusalem were going out to him, and were baptized by him in the river Jordan, confessing their sins. 6 Now John was clothed with camel's hair, with a leather belt around his waist, and he ate locusts and wild honey. 7 He proclaimed, "The one who is more powerful than I is coming after me; I am not worthy to stoop down and untie the thong of his sandals. 8 I have baptized you with[a] water; but he will baptize you with[a] the Holy Spirit."

9 In those days Jesus came from Nazareth of Galilee and was baptized by John in the Jordan. 10 And just as he was coming up out of the water, he saw the heavens torn apart and the Spirit descending like a dove on him. 11 And a voice came from heaven, "You are my Son, the Beloved;[b] with you I am well pleased."

12 And the Spirit immediately drove him out into the wilderness. 13 He was in the wilderness forty days, tempted by Satan; and he was with the wild beasts; and the angels waited on him.

14 Now after John was arrested, Jesus came to Galilee, proclaiming the good news[c] of God,[d] 15 and saying, "The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God has come near;[e] repent, and believe in the good news."[c]

16 As Jesus passed along the Sea of Galilee, he saw Simon and his brother Andrew casting a net into the sea—for they were fishermen. 17 And Jesus said to them, "Follow me and I will make you fish for people." 18 And immediately they left their nets and followed him. 19 As he went a little farther, he saw James son of Zebedee and his brother John, who were in their boat mending the nets. 20 Immediately he called them; and they left their father Zebedee in the boat with the hired men, and followed him.

21 They went to Capernaum; and when the sabbath came, he entered the synagogue and taught. 22 They were astounded at his teaching, for he taught them as one having authority, and not as the scribes. 23 Just then there was in their synagogue a man with an

[a] Or *in*
[b] Or *my beloved Son*
[c] Or *gospel*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *of the kingdom*
[e] Or *is at hand*

1.9–11: Jesus' baptism (Mt 3.13–17; Lk 3.21–22; Jn 1.29–34). Jesus himself is baptized into the renewal movement that began before him. *From Nazareth of Galilee,* a small village about 25 km (16 mi) west of the Sea of Galilee in the district now governed by "King" Herod Antipas (see 6.14), son of Herod the Great. 10–11: *The heavens torn apart,* as the divine *Spirit* breaks through empowering Jesus as the anointed king of Israel. A traditional designation for the king was "son of God," as in 2 Sam 7.14; Pss 2.7; 89.26 (cf. Lk 9.35). *Beloved,* cf. Isa 42.1.

1.12–13: Jesus' testing (cf. the particular "temptations" added in Mt 4.1–11; Lk 4.1–13). Jesus undergoes a forty-day time of trial and testing in the wilderness for a prophet, such as Elijah in 1 Kings 19.8; cf. Ex 24.18. The battle against Satan (see 3.23–27) is already engaged.

1.14–3.35: Proclaiming and manifesting the kingdom of God as the renewal of Israel, over against the Jerusalem priestly rulers.

1.14–15: Jesus' opening proclamation of the kingdom of God (Mt 4.12–17; Lk 4.14–15). **14:** *John was arrested* (see 6.17) indicates the ominous situation as Jesus begins his mission centered in Galilee, a remote area of a country subjected to Rome. **15:** A summary of Jesus' program and of the Gospel according to Mark. At the right time, in fulfillment of long-standing yearnings and hopes, God is finally acting to reestablish his beneficent will for the people. *Repent,* return to God's way, in response to the good news of God's action.

1.16–20: Call of disciples (Mt 4.18–22; Lk 5.1–11; Jn 1.35–42). *Sea of Galilee* or the Lake of Gennesaret is a large lake in a deep basin mostly surrounded by high hills. *Simon,* also called Peter (3.16).

1.21–28: Exorcism and teaching with authority (Mt 7.28–29; Lk 4.33–37). **21–22:** *Capernaum,* a village at the north of the Lake, is the base of Jesus' activity in Galilee and the surrounding areas. *The synagogue* is the village assembly, here gathering on the sabbath (when Jesus performs the ensuing exorcism); at this time village assemblies apparently did not yet construct public buildings in which to gather. *His teaching* is inclusive of his healings and exorcisms, as the rest of this story indicates. *Authority,* the Greek word also means "power." *Scribes,* the literate elite of scholars-lawyers who represented the Jerusalem priestly rulers. **23:** *A man with an*

unclean spirit, [24] and he cried out, "What have you to do with us, Jesus of Nazareth? Have you come to destroy us? I know who you are, the Holy One of God." [25] But Jesus rebuked him, saying, "Be silent, and come out of him!" [26] And the unclean spirit, convulsing him and crying with a loud voice, came out of him. [27] They were all amazed, and they kept on asking one another, "What is this? A new teaching—with authority! He[a] commands even the unclean spirits, and they obey him." [28] At once his fame began to spread throughout the surrounding region of Galilee.

[29] As soon as they[b] left the synagogue, they entered the house of Simon and Andrew, with James and John. [30] Now Simon's mother-in-law was in bed with a fever, and they told him about her at once. [31] He came and took her by the hand and lifted her up. Then the fever left her, and she began to serve them.

[32] That evening, at sunset, they brought to him all who were sick or possessed with demons. [33] And the whole city was gathered around the door. [34] And he cured many who were sick with various diseases, and cast out many demons; and he would not permit the demons to speak, because they knew him.

[35] In the morning, while it was still very dark, he got up and went out to a deserted place, and there he prayed. [36] And Simon and his companions hunted for him. [37] When they found him, they said to him, "Everyone is searching for you." [38] He answered, "Let us go on to the neighboring towns, so that I may proclaim the message there also; for that is what I came out to do." [39] And he went throughout Galilee, proclaiming the message in their synagogues and casting out demons.

[40] A leper[c] came to him begging him, and kneeling[d] he said to him, "If you choose, you can make me clean." [41] Moved with pity,[e] Jesus[f] stretched out his hand and touched him, and said to him, "I do choose. Be made

[a] Or *A new teaching! With authority he*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *he*
[c] The terms *leper* and *leprosy* can refer to several diseases
[d] Other ancient authorities lack *kneeling*
[e] Other ancient authorities read *anger*
[f] Gk *he*

unclean spirit, possessed by an alien force or demon. **24:** In Mark the unclean spirits immediately recognize who Jesus is, as again in 1.34; 3.11; 5.7. *Holy One of God,* a prophet possessed of divine power, as Elisha, 2 Kings 4.9. **25–26:** The exorcism involves a violent struggle. In Pss 6.9; 68.31; 78.6; 80.16; Zech 3.2 and the War Scroll from Qumran (1QM14.9–11), the Heb equivalent of the Gk term here translated "rebuke" referred to God defeating foreign conquerors or even Satan. Jesus is defeating the alien demonic forces in battle. **27:** With v. 22 these exclamations frame Jesus' exorcism: In contrast to the scribal "authorities," Jesus teaches and acts with authority and power over the unclean spirits for the benefit of the people. In Jesus' struggle against the superhuman demonic spirits his political conflict with the rulers and their scribal representatives is also engaged. **28:** From his very first exorcism, Jesus' fame spreads rapidly throughout the region; see also 1.45; 3.7–8.

1.29–34: Healings and exorcisms (Mt 8.14–17; Lk 4.38–41). **30–31:** The first of several key healings of women in Mark; see 5.21–43. **32–34:** A Markan summary, cf. 1.39; 3.7–8. **33:** Mark often uses *city* with reference to a village. **34:** *Not permit the demons to speak,* Jesus commands the demons, who know who he is, not to make him known (see 3.12) and sometimes asks people who witness healings not to tell anyone (e.g., 1.44; 5.43; 7.36). Nevertheless, his fame spreads rapidly and widely (e.g., 1.37; 1.45; 3.7–8; 7.36). The readers of Mark, of course, like the demons, know who he is from the beginning (1.1).

1.35–39: Summary of Jesus' activity (Mt 4.23–25; Lk 4.42–44). A Markan summary of Jesus' program of proclaiming the kingdom of God and exorcism of demons throughout the villages of Galilee. **39:** *In their synagogues,* the Greek word means "assemblies." Jesus' proclamations, exorcisms, and healings take place largely in the village assemblies (see vv. 21–22n.).

1.40–45: Healing a leper (Mt 8.2–4; Lk 5.12–16). *Leper,* a person suffering from skin lesions of any sort, and interpreted in priestly sources (see Lev 13–14) as a channel of "unclean" contamination for individuals and society. **40–42:** The leper dares Jesus to declare him *clean,* and Jesus responds to the challenge, in defiance of the elaborate and costly procedures prescribed in biblical law. **41:** *Moved with pity,* some manuscripts have "with anger" (see textual note *e*), which is the more difficult, hence the preferred reading; Jesus is angry at the institutionalized procedures and prescribed offerings in the Temple necessary for the "leper" to be declared free of

clean!" 42 Immediately the leprosy[a] left him, and he was made clean. 43 After sternly warning him he sent him away at once, 44 saying to him, "See that you say nothing to anyone; but go, show yourself to the priest, and offer for your cleansing what Moses commanded, as a testimony to them." 45 But he went out and began to proclaim it freely, and to spread the word, so that Jesus[b] could no longer go into a town openly, but stayed out in the country; and people came to him from every quarter.

2 When he returned to Capernaum after some days, it was reported that he was at home. 2 So many gathered around that there was no longer room for them, not even in front of the door; and he was speaking the word to them. 3 Then some people[c] came, bringing to him a paralyzed man, carried by four of them. 4 And when they could not bring him to Jesus because of the crowd, they removed the roof above him; and after having dug through it, they let down the mat on which the paralytic lay. 5 When Jesus saw their faith, he said to the paralytic, "Son, your sins are forgiven." 6 Now some of the scribes were sitting there, questioning in their hearts, 7 "Why does this fellow speak in this way? It is blasphemy! Who can forgive sins but God alone?" 8 At once Jesus perceived in his spirit that they were discussing these questions among themselves; and he said to them, "Why do you raise such questions in your hearts? 9 Which is easier, to say to the paralytic, 'Your sins are forgiven,' or to say, 'Stand up and take your mat and walk'? 10 But so that you may know that the Son of Man has authority on earth to forgive sins"—he said to the paralytic— 11 "I say to you, stand up, take your mat and go to your home." 12 And he stood up, and immediately took the mat and went out before all of them; so that they were all amazed and glorified God, saying, "We have never seen anything like this!"

13 Jesus[d] went out again beside the sea; the whole crowd gathered around him, and he taught them. 14 As he was walking along, he saw Levi son of Alphaeus sitting at the tax booth, and he said to him, "Follow me." And he got up and followed him.

15 And as he sat at dinner[e] in Levi's[f] house, many tax collectors and sinners were also sit-

[a] The terms *leper* and *leprosy* can refer to several diseases
[b] Gk *he*
[c] Gk *they*
[d] Gk *He*
[e] Gk *reclined*
[f] Gk *his*

the stigma (*clean*). **44:** Since Jesus has already made the man clean, his instructions must be intended either as a demonstrative *testimony* or "witness" against the priest and the costly offerings required by their code (Lev 14.10–32) or as a facetious remark (the now-clean man does pointedly disobey the instructions).

2.1–12: Healing paralysis and forgiveness of sins (Mt 9.1–8; Lk 5.17–26). This controversy story, which is also a healing story, begins a series of controversies in which the scribes (see 1.21–22n.) and Pharisees attack or question Jesus, whose sharp response is decisive. The scribes were the literate expert interpreters and guardians of the official law codes, the Pharisees a particular party or faction within the wider class of scribes. Both were based in the Jerusalem Temple (3.22; 7.1) and worked for and represented the priestly rulers in dealings with the people. **4:** Houses often had a flat roof consisting of mud plaster over a wood framework. **5–11:** Jesus equates the declaration *"Your sins are forgiven"* with *"Stand up . . . and walk."* The man's paralysis is believed to be due to his own sin (or that of his parents; see Ex 34.7; Jn 9.2). The scribes, the authorities who socially reinforced such self-blame for illness and misfortune, accuse Jesus of *blasphemy,* a capital offense (Lev 24.16), since forgiveness can be done by *God alone* through the established procedures in the Temple, according to these his official interpreters. The accusation prefigures that by the high priest at his trial (Mk 14.64). Again Jesus asserts his own prophetic authority and power over against the scribes, as in 1.22–27. *Son of Man* means either "human being" or refers to Jesus as an exalted figure representative of a finally restored Israel (derived from Dan 7.13), or both.

2.13–17: Eating with sinners (Mt 9.9–13; Lk 5.27–32). **14:** *Levi,* identified as "Matthew" in Mt 9.9, is a customs officer at Capernaum, a border village, presumably working under an officer of Herod Antipas. **15–16:** *Eating with sinners and tax collectors* (or rather "toll collectors") would have entailed contact with impure people and social outcasts, according to *the scribes of the Pharisees.*

ting[a] with Jesus and his disciples—for there were many who followed him. [16] When the scribes of[b] the Pharisees saw that he was eating with sinners and tax collectors, they said to his disciples, "Why does he eat[c] with tax collectors and sinners?" [17] When Jesus heard this, he said to them, "Those who are well have no need of a physician, but those who are sick; I have come to call not the righteous but sinners."

[18] Now John's disciples and the Pharisees were fasting; and people[d] came and said to him, "Why do John's disciples and the disciples of the Pharisees fast, but your disciples do not fast?" [19] Jesus said to them, "The wedding guests cannot fast while the bridegroom is with them, can they? As long as they have the bridegroom with them, they cannot fast. [20] The days will come when the bridegroom is taken away from them, and then they will fast on that day.

[21] "No one sews a piece of unshrunk cloth on an old cloak; otherwise, the patch pulls away from it, the new from the old, and a worse tear is made. [22] And no one puts new wine into old wineskins; otherwise, the wine will burst the skins, and the wine is lost, and so are the skins; but one puts new wine into fresh wineskins."[e]

[23] One sabbath he was going through the grainfields; and as they made their way his disciples began to pluck heads of grain. [24] The Pharisees said to him, "Look, why are they doing what is not lawful on the sabbath?" [25] And he said to them, "Have you never read what David did when he and his companions were hungry and in need of food? [26] He entered the house of God, when Abiathar was high priest, and ate the bread of the Presence, which it is not lawful for any but the priests to eat, and he gave some to his companions." [27] Then he said to them, "The sabbath was made for humankind, and not humankind for the sabbath; [28] so the Son of Man is lord even of the sabbath."

3 Again he entered the synagogue, and a man was there who had a withered hand. [2] They watched him to see whether he would cure him on the sabbath, so that they might accuse him. [3] And he said to the man who had the withered hand, "Come forward." [4] Then he said to them, "Is it lawful to do good or to do harm on the sabbath, to save life or to kill?" But they were silent. [5] He looked around at them with anger; he was grieved at their hardness of heart and said to the man, "Stretch out your hand." He stretched it out, and his hand was restored. [6] The Pharisees went out and immediately conspired with the Herodians against him, how to destroy him.

[a] Gk *reclining*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *and*
[c] Other ancient authorities add *and drink*
[d] Gk *they*
[e] Other ancient authorities lack *but one puts new wine into fresh wineskins*

2.18–22: Fasting (Mt 9.14–17; Lk 5.33–39). **19:** A wedding feast, one of the principal times of celebration and feasting among peasants, was a traditional symbol of the future time of fulfillment, a time of justice and plenty; cf. Isa 62.5; Lk 17.22. **20:** *The bridegroom . . . taken away,* after the crucifixion when Jesus, understood as the bridegroom, is gone. **21–22:** With Jesus' preaching and manifestation of the kingdom something new has come, calling for suspension of old forms such as fasting.

2.23–28: The sabbath and hunger (Mt 12.1–8; Lk 6.1–5). **23–24:** The disciples' action may have violated the Pharisees' restrictions against travel as well as harvesting on the sabbath, meant to implement the fourth commandment (Ex 20.8–10). **25–26:** Jesus' reply summarizes a story about David commandeering food for his soldiers that appears in 1 Sam 21.1–6, in which Ahimelech, Abiathar's father, is the priest (cf. 2 Sam 15.35). The point of the story: David's men were *hungry,* a detail not found in 1 Sam 21. **27:** Ex 23.12; Deut 5.14–15. **28:** *Son of Man,* even more clearly than in 2.10, could mean either "human being," in parallelism with "humankind" in v. 27, or the future Jesus as an exalted figure representing a renewed Israel.

3.1–6: Healing on the sabbath (Mt 12.9–14; Lk 6.6–11). **1:** *Synagogue,* see 1.21–22n. **2–4:** Having already performed an exorcism on the sabbath (1.22–27), Jesus now pointedly performs a healing on the sabbath in the presence of the Pharisees, who remain silent. **5:** Juxtaposition of Jesus' anger and grief at the Pharisees' program and his compassion in curing the man's withered hand. **6:** In response to this and Jesus' previous actions, the Pharisees conspire with the *Herodians,* representatives of Herod Antipas, the ruler of Galilee, *to destroy him.*

3.7–12: Summary of Jesus' activity (Mt 4.24–25; 12.15–21; Lk 6.17–19; 4.41). A summary of Jesus' program and

7 Jesus departed with his disciples to the
sea, and a great multitude from Galilee fol-
lowed him; 8 hearing all that he was doing,
they came to him in great numbers from
Judea, Jerusalem, Idumea, beyond the Jordan,
and the region around Tyre and Sidon. 9 He
told his disciples to have a boat ready for him
because of the crowd, so that they would not
crush him; 10 for he had cured many, so that all
who had diseases pressed upon him to touch
him. 11 Whenever the unclean spirits saw him,
they fell down before him and shouted, "You
are the Son of God!" 12 But he sternly ordered
them not to make him known.

13 He went up the mountain and called to
him those whom he wanted, and they came
to him. 14 And he appointed twelve, whom he
also named apostles,[a] to be with him, and to
be sent out to proclaim the message, 15 and to
have authority to cast out demons. 16 So he
appointed the twelve:[b] Simon (to whom he
gave the name Peter); 17 James son of Zebedee
and John the brother of James (to whom he
gave the name Boanerges, that is, Sons of
Thunder); 18 and Andrew, and Philip, and Bar-
tholomew, and Matthew, and Thomas, and
James son of Alphaeus, and Thaddaeus, and
Simon the Cananaean, 19 and Judas Iscariot,
who betrayed him.

Then he went home; 20 and the crowd came
together again, so that they could not even eat.
21 When his family heard it, they went out to
restrain him, for people were saying, "He has
gone out of his mind." 22 And the scribes who
came down from Jerusalem said, "He has Beel-
zebul, and by the ruler of the demons he casts
out demons." 23 And he called them to him, and
spoke to them in parables, "How can Satan cast
out Satan? 24 If a kingdom is divided against
itself, that kingdom cannot stand. 25 And if a
house is divided against itself, that house will
not be able to stand. 26 And if Satan has risen up
against himself and is divided, he cannot stand,
but his end has come. 27 But no one can enter a
strong man's house and plunder his property
without first tying up the strong man; then
indeed the house can be plundered.

28 "Truly I tell you, people will be forgiven
for their sins and whatever blasphemies they
utter; 29 but whoever blasphemes against the
Holy Spirit can never have forgiveness, but is
guilty of an eternal sin"— 30 for they had said,
"He has an unclean spirit."

[a] Other ancient authorities lack *whom he also named apostles*

[b] Other ancient authorities lack *So he appointed the twelve*

the burgeoning response it evokes. **8:** Peoples of Israelite heritage from all these areas flock to Jesus, indicating that a renewal of all Israel is happening. *The region around* indicates that they are mainly from rural villages. See map on p. 1800.

3.13–19a: Appointing the twelve (Mt 10.1–4; Lk 6.12–16). **13–14:** *Up the mountain . . . appointed twelve,* suggests a new Sinai, on which Jesus is constituting a renewed Israel symbolized by the twelve. **14–15:** The twelve are invested with the same proclamation (of the kingdom) and authority and power to exorcize demons as Jesus, an extension of his program.

3.19b–35: Defeat of Satan, and the new community (Mt 12.22–27; Lk 11.14–23; 12.10; 16.43–45). In a repeated narrative technique, Mark "sandwiches" one story into another. **21:** To those who knew Jesus before he assumed the role of prophet or are concerned lest he be seized by the authorities, he appears to be *out of his mind* (cf. 6.1–3). **22–27:** Both Jesus and the scribes (see 1.21–22n.) think that current personal and social-political life is caught in the struggle for dominion between God and Satan. **22:** The threatened scribes attribute Jesus' power to demonic possession: He is a witch! *Beelzebul,* possibly "Lord of the (divine) house" (cf. Mt 10.25), or "Baal, the prince," originally a title of the Canaanite storm and fertility god (2 Kings 1.2), later demonized into the chief power of evil. **23:** *In parables,* in extended metaphors or analogies; cf. 4.2,33. **24–26:** A kingdom was thought of as a household on a large scale, and both kingdom and household were metaphors for God's and Satan's power or control. Jesus argues both that the scribes' charge is absurd and that even assuming they are right, Satan's rule is at an end. **27:** By analogy, in his exorcism of demons Jesus (the "more powerful one," 1.7) has broken into Satan's house, tied up "the strong man," and "plundered his property." This further implies that God's is now the only kingdom left, by which Jesus is acting. **28–30:** From Mark's viewpoint, attacks on Jesus during his mission can be forgiven, but not attacks against the *Holy Spirit* acting in his movement. **31–35:** Not necessarily an attack on his family (but see v. 21), but rather an indication that within the Jesus-movement and its communi-

31 Then his mother and his brothers came;
and standing outside, they sent to him and
called him. 32 A crowd was sitting around him;
and they said to him, "Your mother and your
brothers and sisters[a] are outside, asking for
you." 33 And he replied, "Who are my mother
and my brothers?" 34 And looking at those who
sat around him, he said, "Here are my mother
and my brothers! 35 Whoever does the will of
God is my brother and sister and mother."

4 Again he began to teach beside the sea.
Such a very large crowd gathered around
him that he got into a boat on the sea and
sat there, while the whole crowd was beside
the sea on the land. 2 He began to teach them
many things in parables, and in his teaching
he said to them: 3 "Listen! A sower went out
to sow. 4 And as he sowed, some seed fell on
the path, and the birds came and ate it up.
5 Other seed fell on rocky ground, where it did
not have much soil, and it sprang up quickly,
since it had no depth of soil. 6 And when the
sun rose, it was scorched; and since it had no
root, it withered away. 7 Other seed fell among
thorns, and the thorns grew up and choked
it, and it yielded no grain. 8 Other seed fell
into good soil and brought forth grain, grow-
ing up and increasing and yielding thirty and
sixty and a hundredfold." 9 And he said, "Let
anyone with ears to hear listen!"

10 When he was alone, those who were
around him along with the twelve asked him
about the parables. 11 And he said to them,
"To you has been given the secret[b] of the
kingdom of God, but for those outside, every-
thing comes in parables; 12 in order that

'they may indeed look, but not perceive,
and may indeed listen, but not
understand;
so that they may not turn again and be
forgiven.'"

13 And he said to them, "Do you not
understand this parable? Then how will you
understand all the parables? 14 The sower
sows the word. 15 These are the ones on the
path where the word is sown: when they hear,
Satan immediately comes and takes away the
word that is sown in them. 16 And these are the
ones sown on rocky ground: when they hear
the word, they immediately receive it with joy.
17 But they have no root, and endure only for a
while; then, when trouble or persecution aris-
es on account of the word, immediately they
fall away.[c] 18 And others are those sown among
the thorns: these are the ones who hear the
word, 19 but the cares of the world, and the lure
of wealth, and the desire for other things come
in and choke the word, and it yields nothing.
20 And these are the ones sown on the good
soil: they hear the word and accept it and bear
fruit, thirty and sixty and a hundredfold."

21 He said to them, "Is a lamp brought in to
be put under the bushel basket, or under the
bed, and not on the lampstand? 22 For there is
nothing hidden, except to be disclosed; nor is
anything secret, except to come to light. 23 Let
anyone with ears to hear listen!" 24 And he
said to them, "Pay attention to what you hear;
the measure you give will be the measure you

[a] Other ancient authorities lack *and sisters*
[b] Or *mystery*
[c] Or *stumble*

ties, those who do *the will of God* are Jesus' and each others' *brother and sister and mother.*

4.1–34: Teaching the mystery of the kingdom of God in parables (Mt 13; Lk 8.4–18; 13.18–21). **2:** *In parables,* in extended metaphors or analogies. **3–8:** Parable of the sower and the seeds. Despite all the obstacles, there is an amazing and unprecedented bumper crop (normal good yield was 7 to 1). **10:** The rest of the teaching is directed to the twelve (3.16–19) and other members of the movement. **11–12:** *The secret of the kingdom of God,* to them is disclosed the "mystery" or hidden plan of God (cf. Dan 2.28) for the fulfillment of history in the kingdom of God now being proclaimed and manifested. Since outsiders do not understand this "mystery" or "plan," the parables are opaque to them, just as Isaiah's contemporaries did not understand his prophecies (Isa 6.9–10). **13–20:** Explains the parable of the sower allegorically, with each principal symbol of the analogy standing for some aspect of the listeners' experiences of the effects of Jesus' preaching of the kingdom—and corresponding to later episodes in Mark. **15:** The struggle with Satan continues, as it also will in Peter's misunderstanding in 8.29–33. **16–17:** Cf. 9.42–48; 13.19,24; 14.27,29. **18–19:** *The lure of wealth,* cf. 10.17–22,25. **21–23:** These sayings repeat and reinforce the message of 4.3–10,20; the kingdom, *hidden* now, will *come to light.* **24–25:** These sayings make most sense as a warning not to accept any cynical "realistic" advice that the established power-relations

get, and still more will be given you. 25 For to those who have, more will be given; and from those who have nothing, even what they have will be taken away."

26 He also said, "The kingdom of God is as if someone would scatter seed on the ground, 27 and would sleep and rise night and day, and the seed would sprout and grow, he does not know how. 28 The earth produces of itself, first the stalk, then the head, then the full grain in the head. 29 But when the grain is ripe, at once he goes in with his sickle, because the harvest has come."

30 He also said, "With what can we compare the kingdom of God, or what parable will we use for it? 31 It is like a mustard seed, which, when sown upon the ground, is the smallest of all the seeds on earth; 32 yet when it is sown it grows up and becomes the greatest of all shrubs, and puts forth large branches, so that the birds of the air can make nests in its shade."

33 With many such parables he spoke the word to them, as they were able to hear it; 34 he did not speak to them except in parables, but he explained everything in private to his disciples.

35 On that day, when evening had come, he said to them, "Let us go across to the other side." 36 And leaving the crowd behind, they took him with them in the boat, just as he was. Other boats were with him. 37 A great windstorm arose, and the waves beat into the boat, so that the boat was already being swamped. 38 But he was in the stern, asleep on the cushion; and they woke him up and said to him, "Teacher, do you not care that we are perishing?" 39 He woke up and rebuked the wind, and said to the sea, "Peace! Be still!" Then the wind ceased, and there was a dead calm. 40 He said to them, "Why are you afraid? Have you still no faith?" 41 And they were filled with great awe and said to one another, "Who then is this, that even the wind and the sea obey him?"

5 They came to the other side of the sea, to the country of the Gerasenes.[a] 2 And when he had stepped out of the boat, immediately a man out of the tombs with an unclean spirit met him. 3 He lived among the tombs; and no one could restrain him any more, even with a chain; 4 for he had often been restrained with shackles and chains, but the chains he wrenched apart, and the shackles he broke in pieces; and no one had the strength to subdue him. 5 Night and day among the tombs and on the mountains he was always howling and bruising himself with stones. 6 When he saw Jesus from a distance, he ran and bowed down before him; 7 and he shouted at the top of his voice, "What have you to do with me, Jesus, Son of the Most High God? I adjure you by God, do not torment me." 8 For he had said to him, "Come out of the man, you unclean spirit!" 9 Then Jesus[b] asked him, "What is your

[a] Other ancient authorities read *Gergesenes*; others, *Gadarenes*

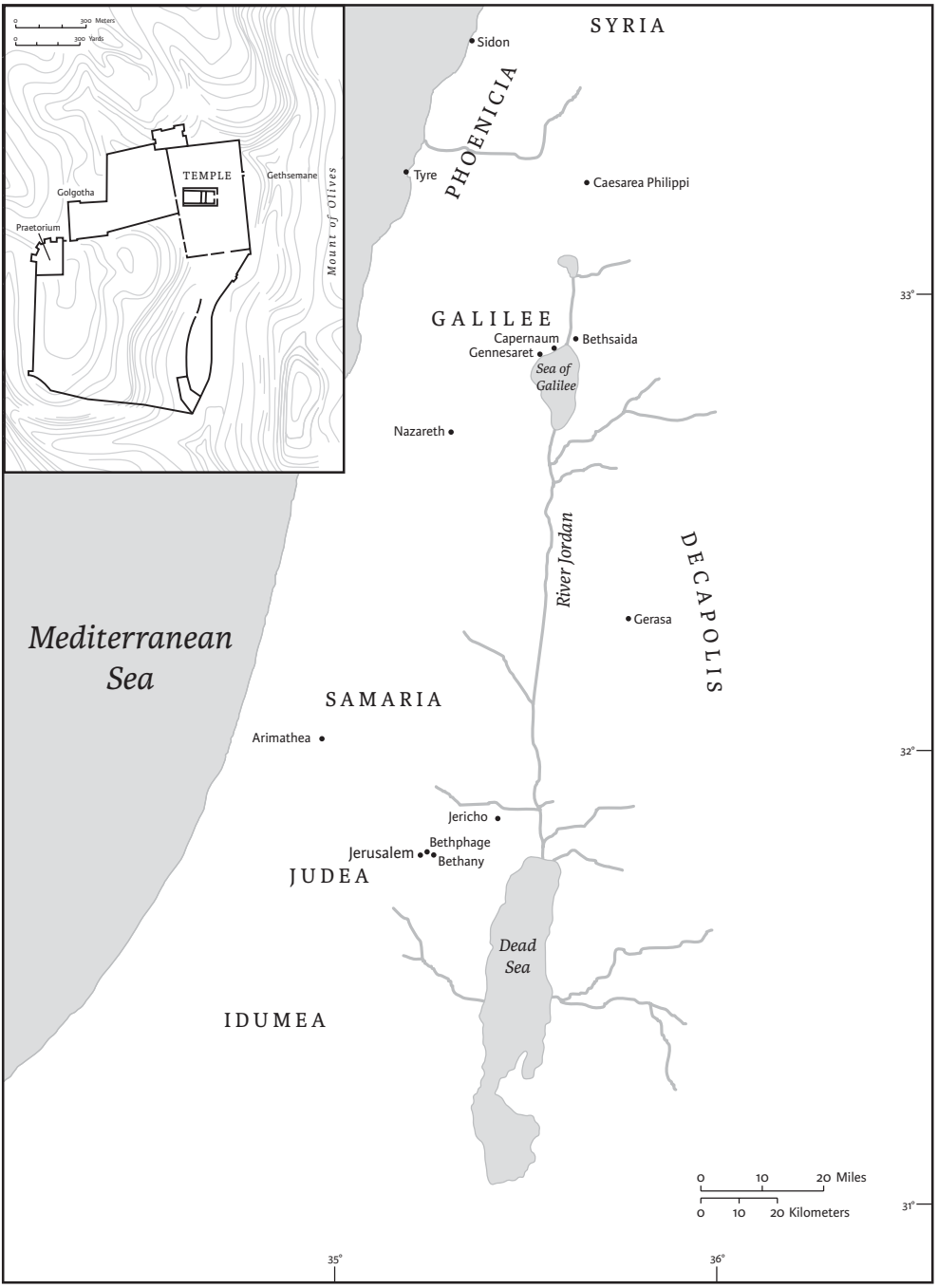
[b] Gk *he*

will inevitably continue. **26–29:** The kingdom of God will surely come to full fruition, just as the seed inevitably sprouts, grows, and produces a harvest (cf. Joel 3.13). **30–32:** The climax of the process by which the kingdom of God is growing is like the tiniest seed producing a large bush that provides homes for the birds. Note the modest metaphor, in contrast with the imperial metaphor of the cedar tree in Ezek 17; 31; Dan 4.

4.35–8.21: Continuing the prophetic renewal of Israel (and other peoples) despite opposition and the disciples' misunderstanding. This section is organized around two sequences of Moses- and Elijah-like sea crossings, exorcisms, healings, and wilderness feedings.

4.35–41: First sea crossing (Mt 8.18,23–27; Lk 8.22–25; cf. Mk 6.45–52). Emphasis falls on the disciples' lack of faith and their *great awe . . . "that even the wind and the sea obey him."* Control of the sea is a divine characteristic (e.g., Job 26.12; 38.8–11; see Ps 89.9; cf. Ps 89.25).

5.1–20: Exorcism of the demon whose name is "Legion" (Mt 8.28–34; Lk 8.26–39). This is the most embellished such episode in Mark. **1:** The territory of the city of Gerasa (modern Jerash) was in central Transjordan; its population was largely non-Jewish. Mt 8.28 situates this event in Gadara, southeast of the Sea of Galilee, a setting that better fits the narrative. **2–5:** The man's possession by the alien force generated such violence that his community had not been able to restrain him, even with chains. **7:** *Most High God* is not an Israelite but a Hellenistic name, found mainly in Luke-Acts. **9:** Once the unclean spirit is cast out, it is possible to find



The geography of the Gospel of Mark.

name?" He replied, "My name is Legion; for we are many." [10] He begged him earnestly not to send them out of the country. [11] Now there on the hillside a great herd of swine was feeding; [12] and the unclean spirits[a] begged him, "Send us into the swine; let us enter them." [13] So he gave them permission. And the unclean spirits came out and entered the swine; and the herd, numbering about two thousand, rushed down the steep bank into the sea, and were drowned in the sea.

[14] The swineherds ran off and told it in the city and in the country. Then people came to see what it was that had happened. [15] They came to Jesus and saw the demoniac sitting there, clothed and in his right mind, the very man who had had the legion; and they were afraid. [16] Those who had seen what had happened to the demoniac and to the swine reported it. [17] Then they began to beg Jesus[b] to leave their neighborhood. [18] As he was getting into the boat, the man who had been possessed by demons begged him that he might be with him. [19] But Jesus[c] refused, and said to him, "Go home to your friends, and tell them how much the Lord has done for you, and what mercy he has shown you." [20] And he went away and began to proclaim in the Decapolis how much Jesus had done for him; and everyone was amazed.

[21] When Jesus had crossed again in the boat[d] to the other side, a great crowd gathered around him; and he was by the sea. [22] Then one of the leaders of the synagogue named Jairus came and, when he saw him, fell at his feet [23] and begged him repeatedly, "My little daughter is at the point of death. Come and lay your hands on her, so that she may be made well, and live." [24] So he went with him.

And a large crowd followed him and pressed in on him. [25] Now there was a woman who had been suffering from hemorrhages for twelve years. [26] She had endured much under many physicians, and had spent all that she had; and she was no better, but rather grew worse. [27] She had heard about Jesus, and came up behind him in the crowd and touched his cloak, [28] for she said, "If I but touch his clothes, I will be made well." [29] Immediately her hemorrhage stopped; and she felt in her body that she was healed of her disease. [30] Immediately aware that power had gone forth from him, Jesus turned about in the crowd and said, "Who touched my clothes?" [31] And his disciples said to him, "You see the crowd pressing in on you; how can you say, 'Who touched me?'" [32] He looked all around to see who had done it. [33] But the woman, knowing what had happened to her, came in fear and trembling, fell down before him, and told him the whole truth. [34] He said to her, "Daughter, your faith has made you well; go in peace, and be healed of your disease."

[a] Gk *they*
[b] Gk *him*
[c] Gk *he*
[d] Other ancient authorities lack *in the boat*

out its identity. A *legion* was a division (usually consisting of about five or six thousand troops) of the Roman military, who had conquered and, in effect, still occupied the country. **11–13:** Having entered the herd of pigs (which Jews were not permitted to eat, Lev 11.7; Deut 14.8), the Roman "legion" of unclean spirits, in a military image, charged into the sea and were destroyed, alluding to the destruction of Pharaoh's army in Israel's Exodus deliverance (Ex 15.4). Cf. the image of the (Temple-) mount "thrown into the sea," 11.23. **14–17:** The people were apprehensive that Jesus had disrupted their delicately balanced adjustment to the alien possession. **20:** The liberated man carried the good news about Jesus' actions into the wider *Decapolis,* the district of "ten cities" in the Jordan valley and in Transjordan. They were Hellenistic in character, with a largely non-Israelite population.

5.21–43: Healings of Jairus's daughter and the hemorrhaging woman (Mt 9.18–26; Lk 8.40–56). Again (see 3.19b–25) Mark has "sandwiched" one story into another. The healings of both the woman who had been hemorrhaging for twelve years and the almost dead twelve-year-old woman are also symbolic of Jesus' renewal of Israel. **22:** *Leaders of the synagogue,* i.e., of the village assembly. **25–26:** The woman is poverty-stricken from the worsening hemorrhaging that no physicians could stop. According to the official Jerusalem purity code (Lev 15.25–30), she would have been "unclean." It is doubtful that this code affected village life. The story itself does not mention ritual purity. **27–33:** The initiative and action are entirely hers, Jesus being the passive conduit through which the healing power goes forth. **34:** Her confidence that she would be healed is a paradigm of trust

35 While he was still speaking, some people
came from the leader's house to say, "Your
daughter is dead. Why trouble the teacher any
further?" 36 But overhearing[a] what they said,
Jesus said to the leader of the synagogue, "Do
not fear, only believe." 37 He allowed no one
to follow him except Peter, James, and John,
the brother of James. 38 When they came to
the house of the leader of the synagogue, he
saw a commotion, people weeping and wail-
ing loudly. 39 When he had entered, he said to
them, "Why do you make a commotion and
weep? The child is not dead but sleeping."
40 And they laughed at him. Then he put them
all outside, and took the child's father and
mother and those who were with him, and
went in where the child was. 41 He took her by
the hand and said to her, "Talitha cum," which
means, "Little girl, get up!" 42 And immediately
the girl got up and began to walk about (she
was twelve years of age). At this they were
overcome with amazement. 43 He strictly or-
dered them that no one should know this, and
told them to give her something to eat.

6 He left that place and came to his
hometown, and his disciples followed
him. 2 On the sabbath he began to teach in
the synagogue, and many who heard him
were astounded. They said, "Where did this
man get all this? What is this wisdom that
has been given to him? What deeds of power
are being done by his hands! 3 Is not this the
carpenter, the son of Mary[b] and brother of
James and Joses and Judas and Simon, and are
not his sisters here with us?" And they took
offense[c] at him. 4 Then Jesus said to them,
"Prophets are not without honor, except in
their hometown, and among their own kin,
and in their own house." 5 And he could do no
deed of power there, except that he laid his
hands on a few sick people and cured them.
6 And he was amazed at their unbelief.

Then he went about among the villages
teaching. 7 He called the twelve and began to
send them out two by two, and gave them au-
thority over the unclean spirits. 8 He ordered
them to take nothing for their journey except
a staff; no bread, no bag, no money in their
belts; 9 but to wear sandals and not to put on
two tunics. 10 He said to them, "Wherever
you enter a house, stay there until you leave
the place. 11 If any place will not welcome you
and they refuse to hear you, as you leave,
shake off the dust that is on your feet as a
testimony against them." 12 So they went out
and proclaimed that all should repent. 13 They
cast out many demons, and anointed with oil
many who were sick and cured them.

14 King Herod heard of it, for Jesus'[d] name
had become known. Some were[e] saying, "John
the baptizer has been raised from the dead;
and for this reason these powers are at work in
him." 15 But others said, "It is Elijah." And others
said, "It is a prophet, like one of the prophets
of old." 16 But when Herod heard of it, he said,
"John, whom I beheaded, has been raised."

[a] Or *ignoring*; other ancient authorities read *hearing*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *son of the carpenter and of Mary*
[c] Or *stumbled*
[d] Gk *his*
[e] Other ancient authorities read *He was*

(*faith*) in the renewal that is happening through Jesus. **41:** The phrase *talitha cum* is Aramaic; cf. 7.34; 14.36; 15.34. **42:** The young woman, at twelve approaching marriage, appears to be dead, yet Jesus restores her to life and, presumably, the ability to reproduce new life in and of Israel.

6.1–6a: Rejection in his hometown (Mt. 13.53–58; Lk 4.16–30). Those who knew Jesus from his early years, before he was called into service as a prophet mediating extraordinary powers, cannot respond in faith as others can; cf. 3.21. **5:** The powers that work through such a prophet are dependent on people's positive response with faith.

6.6b–13: Commissioning the twelve (Mt 10.1,9–11,14; Lk 9.1–6; cf. Lk 10.2–16). Jesus commissions the twelve, appointed as symbolic heads of the renewed Israel in 3.13–19, to expand his mission of proclamation, exorcism, and healing. They work in villages, staying in sympathetic households, building the renewal movement.

6.14–29: Herod's execution of John (Mt 14.1–12; Lk 9.7–9). **14–16:** *Herod,* Antipas, son of Herod the Great, technically appointed tetrarch, but popularly known as "King," ruled Galilee and part of Transjordan 4 BCE–39 CE. Clearly people were responding to and identifying Jesus out of their cultivation of popular tradition as "Elijah" or "one of the prophets." Herod, however, is anxiously superstitious because he had beheaded John.

17 For Herod himself had sent men who arrested John, bound him, and put him in prison on account of Herodias, his brother Philip's wife, because Herod[a] had married her. 18 For John had been telling Herod, "It is not lawful for you to have your brother's wife." 19 And Herodias had a grudge against him, and wanted to kill him. But she could not, 20 for Herod feared John, knowing that he was a righteous and holy man, and he protected him. When he heard him, he was greatly perplexed;[b] and yet he liked to listen to him. 21 But an opportunity came when Herod on his birthday gave a banquet for his courtiers and officers and for the leaders of Galilee. 22 When his daughter Herodias[c] came in and danced, she pleased Herod and his guests; and the king said to the girl, "Ask me for whatever you wish, and I will give it." 23 And he solemnly swore to her, "Whatever you ask me, I will give you, even half of my kingdom." 24 She went out and said to her mother, "What should I ask for?" She replied, "The head of John the baptizer." 25 Immediately she rushed back to the king and requested, "I want you to give me at once the head of John the Baptist on a platter." 26 The king was deeply grieved; yet out of regard for his oaths and for the guests, he did not want to refuse her. 27 Immediately the king sent a soldier of the guard with orders to bring John's[d] head. He went and beheaded him in the prison, 28 brought his head on a platter, and gave it to the girl. Then the girl gave it to her mother. 29 When his disciples heard about it, they came and took his body, and laid it in a tomb.

30 The apostles gathered around Jesus, and told him all that they had done and taught. 31 He said to them, "Come away to a deserted place all by yourselves and rest a while." For many were coming and going, and they had no leisure even to eat. 32 And they went away in the boat to a deserted place by themselves. 33 Now many saw them going and recognized them, and they hurried there on foot from all the towns and arrived ahead of them. 34 As he went ashore, he saw a great crowd; and he had compassion for them, because they were like sheep without a shepherd; and he began to teach them many things. 35 When it grew late, his disciples came to him and said, "This is a deserted place, and the hour is now very late; 36 send them away so that they may go into the surrounding country and villages and buy something for themselves to eat." 37 But he answered them, "You give them something to eat." They said to him, "Are we to go and buy two hundred denarii[e] worth of bread, and give it to them to eat?" 38 And he said to them, "How many loaves have you? Go and

[a] Gk *he*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *he did many things*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *the daughter of Herodias herself*
[d] Gk *his*
[e] The denarius was the usual day's wage for a laborer

17–29: A popular tale of the decadent life at Herod's court and of the gruesome beheading of John that sounds an ominous note for Jesus' prophetic renewal of Israel over against the king appointed by Rome. **17–18:** Royal marriages were instruments of international politics. John's prophecy against Herod Antipas's marriage to his brother's wife, which was illegal (Lev 18.16; 20.21) and which alienated the Nabatean king Aretas IV, father of his first wife, was politically incendiary (see Josephus, *J.W.* 2.182; *Ant.* 18.240–44). **19–20:** Herod's and Herodias's respective feelings about John are reminiscent of Ahab's and Jezebel's stances toward Elijah in 1 Kings 18–19,21. **21:** *Leaders*, better "the first ones," i.e., high-ranking officials at court. **22:** *His daughter,* called Salome by Josephus (*Ant.* 18.5.136). **29:** John also had disciples, and perhaps headed a prophetic movement parallel to that of Jesus.

6.30–44: Wilderness feeding of five thousand (Mt 14.13–21; Lk 9.10–17; Jn 6.1–13; cf. Mk 8.1–10). First of two wilderness feedings reminiscent of God's feeding early Israel in the wilderness through Moses (Ex 16; Num 11). **30–33:** In need of a temporary retreat from the rigors of their mission, Jesus and his apostles withdraw, but hordes of people clamor to them even in the wilderness. **34:** *Sheep without a shepherd,* a frequent image for a people without a prophet or king to lead them (see Num 27.17; 1 Kings 22.17; Ezek 34.8; Zech 10.2). Coming right after Herod's execution of John, it also alludes to the prophetic tradition of political criticism of predatory and exploitative kings who become rich by "fleecing" rather than caring for their people (see Ezek 34.2–5; Zech 11.4–17). **35–37:** The disciples' suggestion and protest both represent a misunderstanding of Jesus' program. That the villagers could no longer feed themselves from their own produce and had to become laborers to earn

see." When they had found out, they said, "Five, and two fish." [39] Then he ordered them to get all the people to sit down in groups on the green grass. [40] So they sat down in groups of hundreds and of fifties. [41] Taking the five loaves and the two fish, he looked up to heaven, and blessed and broke the loaves, and gave them to his disciples to set before the people; and he divided the two fish among them all. [42] And all ate and were filled; [43] and they took up twelve baskets full of broken pieces and of the fish. [44] Those who had eaten the loaves numbered five thousand men.

[45] Immediately he made his disciples get into the boat and go on ahead to the other side, to Bethsaida, while he dismissed the crowd. [46] After saying farewell to them, he went up on the mountain to pray.

[47] When evening came, the boat was out on the sea, and he was alone on the land. [48] When he saw that they were straining at the oars against an adverse wind, he came towards them early in the morning, walking on the sea. He intended to pass them by. [49] But when they saw him walking on the sea, they thought it was a ghost and cried out; [50] for they all saw him and were terrified. But immediately he spoke to them and said, "Take heart, it is I; do not be afraid." [51] Then he got into the boat with them and the wind ceased. And they were utterly astounded, [52] for they did not understand about the loaves, but their hearts were hardened.

[53] When they had crossed over, they came to land at Gennesaret and moored the boat. [54] When they got out of the boat, people at once recognized him, [55] and rushed about that whole region and began to bring the sick on mats to wherever they heard he was. [56] And wherever he went, into villages or cities or farms, they laid the sick in the marketplaces, and begged him that they might touch even the fringe of his cloak; and all who touched it were healed.

7 Now when the Pharisees and some of the scribes who had come from Jerusalem gathered around him, [2] they noticed that some of his disciples were eating with defiled hands, that is, without washing them. [3] (For the Pharisees, and all the Jews, do not eat unless they thoroughly wash their hands,[a] thus observing the tradition of the elders; [4] and they do not eat anything from the market unless they wash it;[b] and there are also many other traditions that they observe, the washing of cups, pots, and bronze kettles.[c]) [5] So the Pharisees and the scribes asked him, "Why do your disciples not live[d] according to the tradition of the elders, but eat with defiled hands?" [6] He said to them, "Isaiah

[a] Meaning of Gk uncertain
[b] Other ancient authorities read *and when they come from the marketplace, they do not eat unless they purify themselves*
[c] Other ancient authorities add *and beds*
[d] Gk *walk*

money to buy food is just the problem! **38–44:** One of the dreams of peasants, who are always economically marginal and therefore hungry, is a future good time when food is plentiful (cf. Lk 6.20–21). Both the multiplication of the food and the twelve baskets left over suggest that this story is reminiscent of Elijah-Elisha stories of feeding in times of famine (e.g., 2 Kings 4.42–44) and of their restoration of Israel symbolized in its twelve tribes. **39–40:** Groups of hundreds and fifties are an allusion to Moses' organization of Israel following the Exodus (Ex 18.21–25). **41:** Christian readers usually find eucharistic overtones in Jesus' blessing and breaking of the loaves (cf. 14.22).

6.45–52: Second sea crossing (Mt 14.22–33; Jn 6.15–21; cf. Mk 4.35–41). **45:** *Bethsaida,* a village at the north of the Sea of Galilee, transformed into a small "city" by Herod Philip. **47–52:** Again the disciples are terrified, not only at the wind but also at the apparition. **50:** Mark compares Jesus to God, using the phrase "I am" (Gk "ego eimi," NRSV: "It is I"; cf. Ex 3.14). **51–52:** Yet the disciples not only lack faith, as in 4.40, but *their hearts were hardened,* as had occurred with enemies of God in earlier times (e.g., Ex 7.3,14; Deut 2.30; Josh 11.20; 1 Sam 6.6).

6.53–56: A summary passage highlighting the widening response to Jesus. Mt 14.34–36. **56:** *His cloak . . . were healed,* cf. 5.25–34.

7.1–23: Traditions of the elders vs. the commandment of God (Mt 15.1–20). **1–5:** As representatives of the Jerusalem Temple, the political-economic as well as religious capital of Judea, the Pharisees and scribes cultivated oral *tradition of the elders* supplementary to the law of Moses, in this story focused on purity codes for processing and eating food. **3–4:** The parenthetical explanation claims that "all the Judeans/NRSV "all the

prophesied rightly about you hypocrites, as it is written,

'This people honors me with their lips,
but their hearts are far from me;
7 in vain do they worship me,
teaching human precepts as doctrines.'
8 You abandon the commandment of God and hold to human tradition."

9 Then he said to them, "You have a fine way of rejecting the commandment of God in order to keep your tradition! 10 For Moses said, 'Honor your father and your mother'; and, 'Whoever speaks evil of father or mother must surely die.' 11 But you say that if anyone tells father or mother, 'Whatever support you might have had from me is Corban' (that is, an offering to God[a])— 12 then you no longer permit doing anything for a father or mother, 13 thus making void the word of God through your tradition that you have handed on. And you do many things like this."

14 Then he called the crowd again and said to them, "Listen to me, all of you, and understand: 15 there is nothing outside a person that by going in can defile, but the things that come out are what defile."[b]

17 When he had left the crowd and entered the house, his disciples asked him about the parable. 18 He said to them, "Then do you also fail to understand? Do you not see that whatever goes into a person from outside cannot defile, 19 since it enters, not the heart but the stomach, and goes out into the sewer?" (Thus he declared all foods clean.) 20 And he said, "It is what comes out of a person that defiles. 21 For it is from within, from the human heart, that evil intentions come: fornication, theft, murder, 22 adultery, avarice, wickedness, deceit, licentiousness, envy, slander, pride, folly. 23 All these evil things come from within, and they defile a person."

24 From there he set out and went away to the region of Tyre.[c] He entered a house and did not want anyone to know he was there. Yet he could not escape notice, 25 but a woman whose little daughter had an unclean spirit immediately heard about him, and she came and bowed down at his feet. 26 Now the woman was a Gentile, of Syrophoenician origin. She begged him to cast the demon out of her daughter. 27 He said to her, "Let the children be fed first, for it is not fair to take the children's food and throw it to the dogs." 28 But she answered him, "Sir,[d] even the dogs under the table eat the children's crumbs." 29 Then he said to her, "For saying that, you may go—the demon has left your daughter." 30 So she went home, found the child lying on the bed, and the demon gone.

31 Then he returned from the region of Tyre, and went by way of Sidon towards the Sea of Galilee, in the region of the Decapo-

[a] Gk lacks *to God*
[b] Other ancient authorities add verse 16, *"Let anyone with ears to hear listen"*
[c] Other ancient authorities add *and Sidon*
[d] Or *Lord*; other ancient authorities prefix *Yes*

Jews"), not just the Pharisees, observed their hand-washing regulations. **6–8:** In reply, quoting Isa 29.13 (LXX), Jesus claims that the Pharisees in effect replace the basic covenantal *commandment of God* with their merely *human tradition.* **9–13:** Jesus focuses the dispute in concrete terms on the *commandment of God* concerning *Honor your father and your mother* (cf. Ex 20.12; 21.17), which includes economic support in their declining years. He claims that the Pharisees make it void with their *tradition* of *Corban,* encouraging people to dedicate the produce of their land to the Jerusalem Temple—thus siphoning off produce that otherwise could have been used to support parents. *Corban* is an Aramaic word meaning "offering dedicated (to God)." **14–19a:** Addresses purity codes with a touch of earthy humor regarding eating and resultant bodily functions. **17:** *Parable* here has the sense of "riddle." **19b:** Perhaps a later addition to the text. **20–23:** Shifts the focus from bodily functions to the inner motivations of "defiling," socially destructive behavior.

7.24–30: The Syrophoenician woman (Mt 15.21–28). **24–26:** In *the region of Tyre,* not in the city itself, a "Greek" woman intrudes with her plea on behalf of her possessed daughter. **27–28:** To Jesus' insistence that the manifestation of the kingdom (*food*) is primarily for Israelites (*children*), she gives a reply that wins the debate. **29–30:** The representative figure of the peoples surrounding Israel insists on receiving the benefits of the kingdom, and her insistence produces precisely that.

7.31–37: Healing the deaf (Mt 15.29–31). Healing the deaf-mute, which is symbolic of a more general restoration of hearing and speech, confirms that the kingdom of God and the movement of renewal has extended to

lis. 32 They brought to him a deaf man who had an impediment in his speech; and they begged him to lay his hand on him. 33 He took him aside in private, away from the crowd, and put his fingers into his ears, and he spat and touched his tongue. 34 Then looking up to heaven, he sighed and said to him, "Ephphatha," that is, "Be opened." 35 And immediately his ears were opened, his tongue was released, and he spoke plainly. 36 Then Jesus[a] ordered them to tell no one; but the more he ordered them, the more zealously they proclaimed it. 37 They were astounded beyond measure, saying, "He has done everything well; he even makes the deaf to hear and the mute to speak."

8 In those days when there was again a great crowd without anything to eat, he called his disciples and said to them, 2 "I have compassion for the crowd, because they have been with me now for three days and have nothing to eat. 3 If I send them away hungry to their homes, they will faint on the way—and some of them have come from a great distance." 4 His disciples replied, "How can one feed these people with bread here in the desert?" 5 He asked them, "How many loaves do you have?" They said, "Seven." 6 Then he ordered the crowd to sit down on the ground; and he took the seven loaves, and after giving thanks he broke them and gave them to his disciples to distribute; and they distributed them to the crowd. 7 They had also a few small fish; and after blessing them, he ordered that these too should be distributed. 8 They ate and were filled; and they took up the broken pieces left over, seven baskets full. 9 Now there were about four thousand people. And he sent them away. 10 And immediately he got into the boat with his disciples and went to the district of Dalmanutha.[b]

11 The Pharisees came and began to argue with him, asking him for a sign from heaven, to test him. 12 And he sighed deeply in his spirit and said, "Why does this generation ask for a sign? Truly I tell you, no sign will be given to this generation." 13 And he left them, and getting into the boat again, he went across to the other side.

14 Now the disciples[c] had forgotten to bring any bread; and they had only one loaf with them in the boat. 15 And he cautioned them, saying, "Watch out—beware of the yeast of the Pharisees and the yeast of Herod."[d] 16 They said to one another, "It is because we have no bread." 17 And becoming aware of it, Jesus said to them, "Why are you talking about having no bread? Do you still not perceive or understand? Are your hearts hardened? 18 Do you have eyes, and fail to see? Do you have ears, and fail to hear? And do you not remember? 19 When I broke the five loaves for the five thousand, how many baskets full of broken pieces did you collect?" They said to him, "Twelve." 20 "And the seven for the four thousand, how many baskets full of broken pieces did you collect?" And they said to him, "Seven." 21 Then he said to them, "Do you not yet understand?"

[a] Gk *he*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *Mageda* or *Magdala*
[c] Gk *they*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *the Herodians*

the peoples round about Israel. **34:** The word *ephphatha* is Aramaic; see 5.41n.

8.1–9: Wilderness feeding of four thousand (Mt 15.32–38; cf. Mk 6.30–44). As he had fed the earlier crowd in the wilderness, implicitly composed of Israelites, now Jesus also feeds the surrounding peoples in the wilderness. *Seven* is symbolic of the surrounding peoples, as twelve was of Israel (6.43). The two wilderness feedings echo the two accounts of the giving of food to the Israelites in the wilderness (Ex 16; Num 11).

8.10–12: No sign will be given (Mt 16.1–4; 12.28–39; Lk 11.29; 11.16; 12.54–56). This passage would make better sense if v. 10 were in one paragraph with vv. 11–12, and v. 13 were joined to the following paragraph (vv. 14–21). Blind to the sequences of Moses- and Elijah-like actions Jesus has just taken, the Pharisees again press Jesus, asking *for a sign from heaven, to test him,* which they do again in 10.2 and 12.15. **10:** *Dalmanutha,* the parallel in Mt 15.39 reads "Magadan" (see note there).

8.13–21: The disciples misunderstand (Mt 16.4–12; Lk 12.1). In a bridge to the next section, the disciples simply do not understand what is happening, either the scheming of the religious and political authorities seeking to destroy Jesus (cf. 3.6) or the renewal movement underway among the surrounding peoples as well as among Israelite villages. **17–18:** 4.9–12; 6.52. **19:** 6.41–44. **20:** 8.5–8.

22 They came to Bethsaida. Some people[a] brought a blind man to him and begged him to touch him. 23 He took the blind man by the hand and led him out of the village; and when he had put saliva on his eyes and laid his hands on him, he asked him, "Can you see anything?" 24 And the man[b] looked up and said, "I can see people, but they look like trees, walking." 25 Then Jesus[b] laid his hands on his eyes again; and he looked intently and his sight was restored, and he saw everything clearly. 26 Then he sent him away to his home, saying, "Do not even go into the village."[c]

27 Jesus went on with his disciples to the villages of Caesarea Philippi; and on the way he asked his disciples, "Who do people say that I am?" 28 And they answered him, "John the Baptist; and others, Elijah; and still others, one of the prophets." 29 He asked them, "But who do you say that I am?" Peter answered him, "You are the Messiah."[d] 30 And he sternly ordered them not to tell anyone about him.

31 Then he began to teach them that the Son of Man must undergo great suffering, and be rejected by the elders, the chief priests, and the scribes, and be killed, and after three days rise again. 32 He said all this quite openly. And Peter took him aside and began to rebuke him. 33 But turning and looking at his disciples, he rebuked Peter and said, "Get behind me, Satan! For you are setting your mind not on divine things but on human things."

34 He called the crowd with his disciples, and said to them, "If any want to become my followers, let them deny themselves and take up their cross and follow me. 35 For those who want to save their life will lose it, and those who lose their life for my sake, and for the sake of the gospel,[e] will save it. 36 For what will it profit them to gain the whole world and forfeit their life? 37 Indeed, what can they give in return for their life? 38 Those who are ashamed of me and of my words[f] in this adulterous and sinful generation, of them the Son of Man will also be ashamed

[a] Gk *They*
[b] Gk *he*
[c] Other ancient authorities add *or tell anyone in the village*
[d] Or *the Christ*
[e] Other ancient authorities read *lose their life for the sake of the gospel*
[f] Other ancient authorities read *and of mine*

8.22–10.52: Jesus confirms and continues his prophetic role in the renewal of Israel while announcing his agenda as martyr-messiah to the misunderstanding disciples.

8.22–26: Healing of a blind man (Jn 9.1–7). This restoration of a blind man's sight and that of Bartimaeus in 10.46–52 frame this part of Mark in which the disciples are "blind" to what is said and done.

8.27–33: Jesus' first announcement and Peter's misunderstanding (Mt 16.13–23; Lk 9.18–22). **27:** *The villages of Caesarea Philippi,* villages subject to Herod Philip in the northernmost area of (formerly) Israelite territory. **28:** Again, not surprisingly given his program, Jesus is popularly understood as Elijah, one of the prophets, or even John. **29–30:** There is very little evidence for expectations of "the messiah," which was hardly standardized at the time. The role and title *the Messiah* would fit Jesus' subsequent actions (e.g., in 11.2–10) and statements about him, but not his previous actions in Mark. **31:** The translation softens a key Greek term: "it is necessary that . . . ," i.e., in God's plan, given the historical situation. *The Son of Man,* meaning "human being" or the future figure representing a restored Israel, or both (see 2.10n.), is clearly Jesus' self-reference. This is the first of three clear announcements that "it is necessary" that he be condemned by the rulers, be killed, and rise again (see 9.31–32; 10.32–34). **32–33:** Following Peter's rebuke (presumably about having to be killed), Jesus in turn rebukes Peter in startling terms, contrasting the purpose or will of God for human beings with the purposes those human beings would have for themselves. Jesus will be a martyr-messiah.

8.34–9.1: The cost of following Jesus (Mt 16.24–28; Lk 9.23–27; cf. Mt 10.28–33; Lk 12.4–9). Pointedly telling *the crowd* to join the *disciples*, Jesus warns that, like himself, his followers must also be prepared to suffer martyrdom for the gospel, the cause of the kingdom. **34:** *Take up their cross,* the Romans used crucifixion as a gruesome means of terrorizing subject peoples by hanging rebels and agitators from crosses for several days until they suffocated to death. They required condemned provincials to carry the crossbeam on which they were about to be hung. **38:** How the followers stand toward Jesus and his gospel when facing trial will determine how the Son of Man will stand toward them when, in God's final condemnation of the oppressive empire,

when he comes in the glory of his Father
9 with the holy angels." [1] And he said to them, "Truly I tell you, there are some standing here who will not taste death until they see that the kingdom of God has come with[a] power."

[2] Six days later, Jesus took with him Peter and James and John, and led them up a high mountain apart, by themselves. And he was transfigured before them, [3] and his clothes became dazzling white, such as no one[b] on earth could bleach them. [4] And there appeared to them Elijah with Moses, who were talking with Jesus. [5] Then Peter said to Jesus, "Rabbi, it is good for us to be here; let us make three dwellings,[c] one for you, one for Moses, and one for Elijah." [6] He did not know what to say, for they were terrified. [7] Then a cloud overshadowed them, and from the cloud there came a voice, "This is my Son, the Beloved;[d] listen to him!" [8] Suddenly when they looked around, they saw no one with them any more, but only Jesus.

[9] As they were coming down the mountain, he ordered them to tell no one about what they had seen, until after the Son of Man had risen from the dead. [10] So they kept the matter to themselves, questioning what this rising from the dead could mean. [11] Then they asked him, "Why do the scribes say that Elijah must come first?" [12] He said to them, "Elijah is indeed coming first to restore all things. How then is it written about the Son of Man, that he is to go through many sufferings and be treated with contempt? [13] But I tell you that Elijah has come, and they did to him whatever they pleased, as it is written about him."

[14] When they came to the disciples, they saw a great crowd around them, and some scribes arguing with them. [15] When the whole crowd saw him, they were immediately overcome with awe, and they ran forward to greet him. [16] He asked them, "What are you arguing about with them?" [17] Someone from the crowd answered him, "Teacher, I brought you my son; he has a spirit that makes him unable to speak; [18] and whenever it seizes him, it dashes him down; and he foams and grinds his teeth and becomes rigid; and I asked your disciples to cast it out, but they could not do so." [19] He answered them, "You faithless generation, how much longer must I be among you? How much longer must I put up with you? Bring him to me." [20] And they brought the boy[e] to him. When the spirit saw him, immediately it convulsed the boy,[e] and he fell on the ground and rolled about, foaming at the mouth. [21] Jesus[f] asked the father, "How long has this been happening to him?"

[a] Or *in*
[b] Gk *no fuller*
[c] Or *tents*
[d] Or *my beloved Son*
[e] Gk *him*
[f] Gk *He*

he comes in judgment as well as restoration of the people (cf. Mk 13.26–27; 14.62; Dan 7.13–14). **9.1:** *The kingdom of God* will *come with power* already during their lifetime.

9.2–8: Transfiguration of Jesus (Mt 17.1–8; Lk 9.28–36). **2–4:** The mountain setting is reminiscent of Moses and the elders of Israel on Sinai (Ex 24). *Transfigured . . . dazzling white,* in the disciples' visionary experience, Jesus appears as a vindicated martyr (see Dan 11.36; Rev 3.5,18; 4.4; 6.9–11; 7.9,13–14), linked to what he had just told the disciples in 8.31. With him are Elijah and Moses, the prophetic restorer and founder of Israel, respectively, whose great actions of deliverance Jesus' actions, just performed in 4.35–8.26, resemble. **5–6:** Peter, mystified and *terrified,* addresses Jesus not as "messiah," but as *Rabbi,* as he does again in 11.21 when he is again mystified, and as Judas does in his betrayal, 14.45. **7:** Now Peter, James, and John hear the same voice that Jesus heard at his baptism in 1.11.

9.9–13: Correction of scribal teaching about Elijah (Mt 17.9–13). **9–11:** The disciples, still not understanding the necessity of his martyrdom, remain oriented toward the teachings of the Jerusalem scribes, as in Sir 48.10 (cf. Mal 4.4–5). **12–13:** First pointing to the obvious contradiction between the official scribal teaching and what he has just told them, mockingly couching it in scribal terms as scriptural, "it is written," he asserts that in fact Elijah has already come in John, and he was ignominiously killed.

9.14–29: Healing of epileptic child (Mt 17.14–21; Lk 9.37–42). Since Matthew and Luke have no parallels to vv. 15–16,21–27 of this unusually elaborate story in Mark, the text may have been much shorter originally.

And he said, "From childhood. 22 It has often cast him into the fire and into the water, to destroy him; but if you are able to do anything, have pity on us and help us." 23 Jesus said to him, "If you are able!—All things can be done for the one who believes." 24 Immediately the father of the child cried out,[a] "I believe; help my unbelief!" 25 When Jesus saw that a crowd came running together, he rebuked the unclean spirit, saying to it, "You spirit that keeps this boy from speaking and hearing, I command you, come out of him, and never enter him again!" 26 After crying out and convulsing him terribly, it came out, and the boy was like a corpse, so that most of them said, "He is dead." 27 But Jesus took him by the hand and lifted him up, and he was able to stand. 28 When he had entered the house, his disciples asked him privately, "Why could we not cast it out?" 29 He said to them, "This kind can come out only through prayer."[b]

30 They went on from there and passed through Galilee. He did not want anyone to know it; 31 for he was teaching his disciples, saying to them, "The Son of Man is to be betrayed into human hands, and they will kill him, and three days after being killed, he will rise again." 32 But they did not understand what he was saying and were afraid to ask him.

33 Then they came to Capernaum; and when he was in the house he asked them, "What were you arguing about on the way?" 34 But they were silent, for on the way they had argued with one another who was the greatest. 35 He sat down, called the twelve, and said to them, "Whoever wants to be first must be last of all and servant of all." 36 Then he took a little child and put it among them; and taking it in his arms, he said to them, 37 "Whoever welcomes one such child in my name welcomes me, and whoever welcomes me welcomes not me but the one who sent me."

38 John said to him, "Teacher, we saw someone[c] casting out demons in your name, and we tried to stop him, because he was not following us." 39 But Jesus said, "Do not stop him; for no one who does a deed of power in my name will be able soon afterward to speak evil of me. 40 Whoever is not against us is for us. 41 For truly I tell you, whoever gives you a cup of water to drink because you bear the name of Christ will by no means lose the reward.

42 "If any of you put a stumbling block before one of these little ones who believe in me,[d] it would be better for you if a great millstone were hung around your neck and you were thrown into the sea. 43 If your hand causes you to stumble, cut it off; it is better for you to enter life maimed than to have two hands and to go to hell,[e] to the unquenchable fire.[f] 45 And if your foot causes you to stumble, cut it off; it is better for you to enter life lame than to have two feet and to be thrown into hell.[e,f] 47 And if your eye causes you to stumble, tear it out; it is better for you to enter the kingdom of God with one eye than

[a] Other ancient authorities add *with tears*
[b] Other ancient authorities add *and fasting*
[c] Other ancient authorities add *who does not follow us*
[d] Other ancient authorities lack *in me*
[e] Gk *Gehenna*
[f] Verses 44 and 46 (which are identical with verse 48) are lacking in the best ancient authorities

9.30–37: Second announcement and misunderstanding (Mt 17.22–23; 18.1–5; Lk 9.43–48). Despite his teaching, again (see 8.31n.), that the Son of Man would be killed and rise again, the disciples still do not understand, as illustrated in their blithe discussion of *who was the greatest.* **36–37:** A *child* was the lowest-status person in a household.

9.38–41: Unknown exorcist (Lk 9.49–50). An allusion to the story in Num 11.27–29. The movement is not to be defensive or controlling.

9.42–50: Warning on discipline (Mt 18.6–9; 5.29–30; 5.13; Lk 17.1–2; 14.34–35). A series of warnings on male sexual discipline, judging from references in rabbinic literature, beginning with sexual abuse of children. **43:** *Hand* probably refers to prohibition of masturbation (See *Mishnah Niddah* 2.1). *Hell,* lit., "Gehenna," the valley of the son of Hinnom (2 Kings 23.10; Jer 7.31), symbolizing the place of eternal punishment by fire. **45:** *Foot* is a standard euphemism in Heb for the male genitals (Isa 6.2; 7.20), and there is probably double-entendre here.

to have two eyes and to be thrown into hell,[a] 48 where their worm never dies, and the fire is never quenched.

49 "For everyone will be salted with fire.[b] 50 Salt is good; but if salt has lost its saltiness, how can you season it?[c] Have salt in yourselves, and be at peace with one another."

10 He left that place and went to the region of Judea and[d] beyond the Jordan. And crowds again gathered around him; and, as was his custom, he again taught them.

2 Some Pharisees came, and to test him they asked, "Is it lawful for a man to divorce his wife?" 3 He answered them, "What did Moses command you?" 4 They said, "Moses allowed a man to write a certificate of dismissal and to divorce her." 5 But Jesus said to them, "Because of your hardness of heart he wrote this commandment for you. 6 But from the beginning of creation, 'God made them male and female.' 7 'For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife,[e] 8 and the two shall become one flesh.' So they are no longer two, but one flesh. 9 Therefore what God has joined together, let no one separate."

10 Then in the house the disciples asked him again about this matter. 11 He said to them, "Whoever divorces his wife and marries another commits adultery against her; 12 and if she divorces her husband and marries another, she commits adultery."

13 People were bringing little children to him in order that he might touch them; and the disciples spoke sternly to them. 14 But when Jesus saw this, he was indignant and said to them, "Let the little children come to me; do not stop them; for it is to such as these that the kingdom of God belongs. 15 Truly I tell you, whoever does not receive the kingdom of God as a little child will never enter it." 16 And he took them up in his arms, laid his hands on them, and blessed them.

17 As he was setting out on a journey, a man ran up and knelt before him, and asked him, "Good Teacher, what must I do to inherit eternal life?" 18 Jesus said to him, "Why do you call me good? No one is good but God alone. 19 You know the commandments: 'You shall not murder; You shall not commit adultery; You shall not steal; You shall not bear false witness; You shall not defraud; Honor your father and mother.'" 20 He said to him, "Teacher, I have kept all these since my youth." 21 Jesus, looking at him, loved him and said, "You lack one thing; go, sell what you own, and give the money[f] to the poor, and you will have treasure in heaven; then come, follow me." 22 When he heard this, he was shocked and went away grieving, for he had many possessions.

[a] Gk *Gehenna*
[b] Other ancient authorities either add or substitute *and every sacrifice will be salted with salt*
[c] Or *how can you restore its saltiness?*
[d] Other ancient authorities lack *and*
[e] Other ancient authorities lack *and be joined to his wife*
[f] Gk lacks *the money*

47: *Eye* here refers to lustful gazes. **48:** See Isa 66.24.

10.1–16: Marriage and children in the kingdom (Mt 19.1–15; Lk 18.15–17). **1:** Jesus moves into Israelite territory beyond Galilee, now concentrating on teaching. **2–12:** The first step in a series of covenantal instructions and exhortations focuses on (the commandment against) adultery (Ex 20.12; Deut 5.18), i.e., on marriage and divorce. **3–4:** See Deut 24.1–4; Jer 3.8. **5–9:** To the Pharisees' focus on divorce as a male prerogative, Jesus insists upon the equality of marriage intended in the creation stories, Gen 1.27; 2.24. **10–12:** Cf. Mt 5.31–32. The juxtaposition of vv. 2–9 and vv. 11–12 indicates that Jesus' restrictive interpretation of the commandment against adultery, allowing divorce but prohibiting remarriage, was grounded in creation. Jesus' formulation with both the man and the woman as active agents stands in contrast to the ancient assumption that adultery was an offense against the husband. **13–16:** Not an idealization of childhood. Against the disciples' restriction of access to Jesus and his movement, Jesus uses children, who occupied the lowest status in society, as a symbol for how one should receive the kingdom.

10.17–31: Egalitarian economic relations in the kingdom (Mt 19.16–30; Lk 18.18–30). An exhortation for egalitarian covenantal economic relations. **17:** The man's address is flattering and his question unusual for Mark, in which the common people have more concrete concerns. **19:** Recitation of covenantal commandments, Ex 20.12–16, adding *defraud*. **21–22:** Jesus' test exposes the man as adamantly attached to his wealth, which (from the covenantal viewpoint) he might have gained by defrauding peasants by charging interest on loans, etc.,

23 Then Jesus looked around and said to his
disciples, "How hard it will be for those who
have wealth to enter the kingdom of God!"
24 And the disciples were perplexed at these
words. But Jesus said to them again, "Chil-
dren, how hard it is[a] to enter the kingdom of
God! 25 It is easier for a camel to go through
the eye of a needle than for someone who is
rich to enter the kingdom of God." 26 They
were greatly astounded and said to one
another,[b] "Then who can be saved?" 27 Jesus
looked at them and said, "For mortals it is
impossible, but not for God; for God all things
are possible."

28 Peter began to say to him, "Look, we
have left everything and followed you."
29 Jesus said, "Truly I tell you, there is no one
who has left house or brothers or sisters or
mother or father or children or fields, for
my sake and for the sake of the good news,[c]
30 who will not receive a hundredfold now in
this age—houses, brothers and sisters, moth-
ers and children, and fields, with persecu-
tions—and in the age to come eternal life.
31 But many who are first will be last, and the
last will be first."

32 They were on the road, going up to Jeru-
salem, and Jesus was walking ahead of them;
they were amazed, and those who followed
were afraid. He took the twelve aside again
and began to tell them what was to happen
to him, 33 saying, "See, we are going up to Je-
rusalem, and the Son of Man will be handed
over to the chief priests and the scribes, and
they will condemn him to death; then they
will hand him over to the Gentiles; 34 they will
mock him, and spit upon him, and flog him,
and kill him; and after three days he will rise
again."

35 James and John, the sons of Zebe-
dee, came forward to him and said to him,
"Teacher, we want you to do for us whatever
we ask of you." 36 And he said to them, "What
is it you want me to do for you?" 37 And they
said to him, "Grant us to sit, one at your right
hand and one at your left, in your glory."
38 But Jesus said to them, "You do not know
what you are asking. Are you able to drink
the cup that I drink, or be baptized with the
baptism that I am baptized with?" 39 They re-
plied, "We are able." Then Jesus said to them,
"The cup that I drink you will drink; and with
the baptism with which I am baptized, you
will be baptized; 40 but to sit at my right hand
or at my left is not mine to grant, but it is for
those for whom it has been prepared."

41 When the ten heard this, they began
to be angry with James and John. 42 So Jesus

[a] Other ancient authorities add *for those who trust in riches*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *to him*
[c] Or *gospel*

thus also violating the commandment against stealing. **23–25:** Jesus consolidates the point just illustrated with a little proverbial peasant humor: It is impossible for a rich person to enter the kingdom of God. **26–27:** Jesus' reply to the disciples' incomprehension, although precisely how it connects with the previous discussion is unclear. **28–31:** To Peter's anxious plea, Jesus' reply is serious about the concrete restoration (houses, fields, families) but teasingly facetious as well. The obvious exaggeration about the degree is canceled out by the *persecutions,* and the promise of *eternal life in the age to come* is a throw-away line mocking the rich man's concern (v. 17).

10.32–45: Egalitarian social-political relations in the kingdom and the third announcement and misunderstanding (Mt 20.17–28; Lk 18.31–34, 22.24–27). Mark uses Jesus' third explanation to the disciples that the Son of Man will be condemned, killed, and rise again (see 8.31n.), combined with the disciples' stubborn misunderstanding, as a foil for exhortation on egalitarian social-political relations in the movement and its communities. **32–34:** The tone becomes ominous as they head toward Jerusalem and the climax of Jesus' escalating conflict with the rulers there, as explicitly dramatized in the details added to this third announcement of his destiny there. **35–37:** James and John's request indicates that they have completely misunderstood Jesus' mission and movement as well as refused to hear what Jesus has repeatedly told them. **38–40:** They claim they are prepared to follow the path of Jesus into martyrdom for the cause, which he promises will happen. But he rejects their request as presumptuous. On the metaphor of *cup,* see 14.24,36; Isa 51.17; Lam 4.21. **41–45:** The request for positions of power and privilege results in conflict among the disciples. But in contrast to the imperial practices of the nations, there will be no rulers in Jesus' movement or communities. Rather, would-be leaders must take

called them and said to them, "You know that among the Gentiles those whom they recognize as their rulers lord it over them, and their great ones are tyrants over them. 43 But it is not so among you; but whoever wishes to become great among you must be your servant, 44 and whoever wishes to be first among you must be slave of all. 45 For the Son of Man came not to be served but to serve, and to give his life a ransom for many."

46 They came to Jericho. As he and his disciples and a large crowd were leaving Jericho, Bartimaeus son of Timaeus, a blind beggar, was sitting by the roadside. 47 When he heard that it was Jesus of Nazareth, he began to shout out and say, "Jesus, Son of David, have mercy on me!" 48 Many sternly ordered him to be quiet, but he cried out even more loudly, "Son of David, have mercy on me!" 49 Jesus stood still and said, "Call him here." And they called the blind man, saying to him, "Take heart; get up, he is calling you." 50 So throwing off his cloak, he sprang up and came to Jesus. 51 Then Jesus said to him, "What do you want me to do for you?" The blind man said to him, "My teacher,[a] let me see again." 52 Jesus said to him, "Go; your faith has made you well." Immediately he regained his sight and followed him on the way.

11 When they were approaching Jerusalem, at Bethphage and Bethany, near the Mount of Olives, he sent two of his disciples 2 and said to them, "Go into the village ahead of you, and immediately as you enter it, you will find tied there a colt that has never been ridden; untie it and bring it. 3 If anyone says to you, 'Why are you doing this?' just say this, 'The Lord needs it and will send it back here immediately.'" 4 They went away and found a colt tied near a door, outside in the street. As they were untying it, 5 some of the bystanders said to them, "What are you doing, untying the colt?" 6 They told them what Jesus had said; and they allowed them to take it. 7 Then they brought the colt to Jesus and threw their cloaks on it; and he sat on it. 8 Many people spread their cloaks on the road, and others spread leafy branches that they had cut in the fields. 9 Then those who went ahead and those who followed were shouting,

"Hosanna!
Blessed is the one who comes in the name of the Lord!
10 Blessed is the coming kingdom of our ancestor David!
Hosanna in the highest heaven!"

[a] Aramaic *Rabbouni*

the role of servants, following the paradigm of the Son of Man, Jesus, whose martyrdom will be a ransom (paid for redemption from slavery or indebtedness; see God's "ransom" or "redemption" of Israel from subjection to Egypt, Ex. 6.6; 15.13; Isa 43.1–7) of many.

10.46–52: Healing of the blind Bartimaeus (Mt 20.29–34; Lk 18.35–43). The second healing of a blind man (see 8.22–26) that frames and completes this section focuses partly on the blindness of the disciples. **46:** *Jericho* is in the Jordan Valley ca. 21 km (13 mi) east-northeast of Jerusalem; a secondary road connected the two cities (see 11.1; Lk 10.30). *Bartimaeus* means *son of Timaeus* in Aramaic. **47–48:** Though blind, Bartimaeus nevertheless sees or knows that Jesus is the *Son of David.* In some circles a "son of David" was expected to restore the fortunes of Israel as king (2 Sam 5.1–5). In Mk 12.35–37 Jesus himself explains that the messiah is not the "son of David." **52:** After his sight is restored, he pointedly *followed* Jesus *on the way,* in striking contrast to the disciples, who remained blind to what was happening.

11.1–13.2: Confronting the rulers and ruling institutions in Jerusalem.

11.1–11: A messianic demonstration (Mt 21.1–9; Lk 19.28–38; Jn 12.12–15). As Jesus and his followers enter into the capital city, they stage a "messianic" demonstration, in fulfillment of the prophecy of Zech 9.9–10 of a peasant king riding on a donkey (cf. 1 Kings 1.38), not in an imperial war-chariot. **1:** *Bethphage and Bethany,* villages just east of Jerusalem. **8:** *Spread their cloaks on the road,* before the messiah, the "anointed" king, just as was done when Elisha anointed Jehu to lead the rebellion against the oppressive dynasty founded by Omri (2 Kings 9.1–13). The *leafy branches* appear to have a similar significance; cf. the "palm branches" waved in victorious celebration (with hymns, etc.) of the newly established independence of Jerusalem and Judea in 1 Macc 13.51. **9:** The throng shouts a psalm of thanksgiving (Ps 118.25–26) for victory over Israel's enemies, one that was sung at the Passover festival. *Hosanna* means "Save us!" **10:** Added to the psalm, linking the festal demonstration with

11 Then he entered Jerusalem and went into
the temple; and when he had looked around
at everything, as it was already late, he went
out to Bethany with the twelve.
12 On the following day, when they came
from Bethany, he was hungry. 13 Seeing in
the distance a fig tree in leaf, he went to see
whether perhaps he would find anything on
it. When he came to it, he found nothing but
leaves, for it was not the season for figs. 14 He
said to it, "May no one ever eat fruit from you
again." And his disciples heard it.
15 Then they came to Jerusalem. And he
entered the temple and began to drive out
those who were selling and those who were
buying in the temple, and he overturned the
tables of the money changers and the seats
of those who sold doves; 16 and he would not
allow anyone to carry anything through the
temple. 17 He was teaching and saying, "Is it
not written,

'My house shall be called a house of prayer
for all the nations'?
But you have made it a den of
robbers."

18 And when the chief priests and the scribes
heard it, they kept looking for a way to kill
him; for they were afraid of him, because the
whole crowd was spellbound by his teach-
ing. 19 And when evening came, Jesus and his
disciples[a] went out of the city.
20 In the morning as they passed by, they
saw the fig tree withered away to its roots.
21 Then Peter remembered and said to him,
"Rabbi, look! The fig tree that you cursed has
withered." 22 Jesus answered them, "Have[b]
faith in God. 23 Truly I tell you, if you say
to this mountain, 'Be taken up and thrown
into the sea,' and if you do not doubt in your
heart, but believe that what you say will
come to pass, it will be done for you. 24 So
I tell you, whatever you ask for in prayer,
believe that you have received[c] it, and it will
be yours.
25 "Whenever you stand praying, forgive,
if you have anything against anyone; so that

[a] Gk *they*: other ancient authorities read *he*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *"If you have*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *are receiving*

the hope of Israel's future restoration and independence led by the anointed "son of David," as in Bartimaeus's repeated cry in 10.48–49 that just preceded the demonstration. **11:** On *the temple*, see 11.12–25n. *Looked around,* after the messianic demonstration in seeming anticipation of the restoration of Israel, Jesus enters Jerusalem, but only to reconnoiter before launching his aggressive face-off with the rulers the next day.

11.12–25 [26]: Prophetic demonstration against the Temple (Mt 21.12–13,18–22; Lk 19.45–48). Mark again sandwiches one story into another (cf. 3.19b–35; 5.21–43), framing the prophetic demonstration against the Temple with the cursing of the fig tree (which is bearing no fruit), a figure for God's judgment in Israelite tradition (e.g., Isa 34.4; Jer 5.17). The *temple* in Jerusalem was the political-economic center of power as well as the sanctuary where the priests offered sacrifices to God. Supported by the tithes and offerings of the people, it had been rebuilt. In 20 BCE Herod the Great had mounted a massive rebuilding of the Temple into a vast complex of colonnades and shops as well as a center of Jewish pilgrimage and one of the wonders of the Roman imperial world. **15–16:** Jesus took forcible action against the sellers and buyers in the large Court of the Gentiles, the principal open public space in Jerusalem, where anyone—including non-Israelites—could go. Commerce, including moneychanging, was necessary in connection with sacrifices and offerings in the semi-monetarized Temple economy. **17:** Quoting Isa 56.7, and Jeremiah's prophecy against the first Temple (Jer 7.11), Jesus interprets his action as a prophetic demonstration of God's condemnation of the Temple. *Den of robbers* is better translated "bandits' stronghold," conveying more the original sense in Jeremiah that the rulers plunder the people like bandits and then seek refuge in the Temple. **18–19:** In response to Jesus' prophetic demonstration, the Jerusalem rulers intensify the long-standing scheme to kill him, known since 3.6. In preindustrial cities, rulers had to worry at festival times about touching off mob action by taking repressive measures against agitators, as indicated in 14.1–2. But Jesus and his disciples strategically withdraw from the city at evening. **20–24:** This astounding statement about the mount of the Temple upon which Jesus has just demonstrated God's condemnation says, in effect, to trust God to do what has been prophesied. **25–[26]:** Early manuscripts omit v. 26, as does the NRSV translation. If original to Mark, it establishes mutual forgiveness (as in the Lord's Prayer, Lk 11.2–4) as the focus of prayer, now that the Temple, the official site for prayer and for obtaining divine forgiveness (see Lev 6.7), stands under God's condemnation.

your Father in heaven may also forgive you your trespasses."[a]

27 Again they came to Jerusalem. As he was walking in the temple, the chief priests, the scribes, and the elders came to him 28 and said, "By what authority are you doing these things? Who gave you this authority to do them?" 29 Jesus said to them, "I will ask you one question; answer me, and I will tell you by what authority I do these things. 30 Did the baptism of John come from heaven, or was it of human origin? Answer me." 31 They argued with one another, "If we say, 'From heaven,' he will say, 'Why then did you not believe him?' 32 But shall we say, 'Of human origin'?"—they were afraid of the crowd, for all regarded John as truly a prophet. 33 So they answered Jesus, "We do not know." And Jesus said to them, "Neither will I tell you by what authority I am doing these things."

12 Then he began to speak to them in parables. "A man planted a vineyard, put a fence around it, dug a pit for the wine press, and built a watchtower; then he leased it to tenants and went to another country. 2 When the season came, he sent a slave to the tenants to collect from them his share of the produce of the vineyard. 3 But they seized him, and beat him, and sent him away empty-handed. 4 And again he sent another slave to them; this one they beat over the head and insulted. 5 Then he sent another, and that one they killed. And so it was with many others; some they beat, and others they killed. 6 He had still one other, a beloved son. Finally he sent him to them, saying, 'They will respect my son.' 7 But those tenants said to one another, 'This is the heir; come, let us kill him, and the inheritance will be ours.' 8 So they seized him, killed him, and threw him out of the vineyard. 9 What then will the owner of the vineyard do? He will come and destroy the tenants and give the vineyard to others.

10 Have you not read this scripture:

'The stone that the builders rejected
has become the cornerstone;[b]
11 this was the Lord's doing,
and it is amazing in our eyes'?"

12 When they realized that he had told this parable against them, they wanted to arrest him, but they feared the crowd. So they left him and went away.

13 Then they sent to him some Pharisees and some Herodians to trap him in what

[a] Other ancient authorities add verse 26, *"But if you do not forgive, neither will your Father in heaven forgive your trespasses."*

[b] Or *keystone*

11.27–33: Jesus' authority (Mt 21.23–27; Lk 20.1–8; cf. Jn 2.18–22). The first in a series of sharp charges and countercharges in the escalating conflict between Jesus and the Roman-backed Jewish priestly rulers and their representatives. **27–28:** *The chief priests, the scribes, and the elders,* authorized presumably by God as well as imperial Rome, challenge Jesus on the *authority* by which he acts and speaks, referring to the confrontation regarding "authority and power" with which the whole gospel story began in 1.22–28. **29–30:** In his counter question Jesus cleverly entraps them and exposes their lack of authority among the people, while avoiding any statement that might seem to justify his seizure by them.

12.1–12: Parable of the vineyard (Mt 21.33–46; Lk 20.9–19). Building on the traditional image of Israel as the vineyard of God in Isa 5.1–7, Jesus tells a parable that invites listeners to see the chief priests, who were themselves absentee landlords of estates with tenant labor, as tenants of God's vineyard. It also resonated with the resentment of indebted peasants who feared nothing more than becoming such share-cropping tenants on their own ancestral land and would have reveled at such role-reversal. In Mark the parable virtually passes over into allegory, with the landlord's "slaves" being analogous to the prophets God sent to "tenants" to demand the fruit of justice, and the *beloved son* clearly being Jesus himself, as in 1.11 and 9.7, and the rejected *stone* becoming the *cornerstone* (citing Ps 118.22–23) of the new political-religious order that will replace the Temple establishment.

12.13–17: Paying taxes to the emperor (Mt 22.15–22; Lk 20.20–26). As in 3.6, the representatives of both the Jerusalem priestly establishment and Herod Antipas's regime conspire to entrap Jesus into giving some pretext to arrest and kill him. **14:** They preface the entrapping question with heavy, insincere flattery. *Is it lawful to pay taxes to the emperor?* A genuine dilemma. In the strict adherence to the covenantal law (commandment) of Moses, supposedly advocated by the Pharisees themselves, it was not lawful because God was their exclusive sovereign. Yet the Romans treated nonpayment of tribute as rebellion. Some decades earlier the teacher Judas and

he said. 14 And they came and said to him, "Teacher, we know that you are sincere, and show deference to no one; for you do not regard people with partiality, but teach the way of God in accordance with truth. Is it lawful to pay taxes to the emperor, or not? 15 Should we pay them, or should we not?" But knowing their hypocrisy, he said to them, "Why are you putting me to the test? Bring me a denarius and let me see it." 16 And they brought one. Then he said to them, "Whose head is this, and whose title?" They answered, "The emperor's." 17 Jesus said to them, "Give to the emperor the things that are the emperor's, and to God the things that are God's." And they were utterly amazed at him.

18 Some Sadducees, who say there is no resurrection, came to him and asked him a question, saying, 19 "Teacher, Moses wrote for us that if a man's brother dies, leaving a wife but no child, the man[a] shall marry the widow and raise up children for his brother. 20 There were seven brothers; the first married and, when he died, left no children; 21 and the second married the widow[b] and died, leaving no children; and the third likewise; 22 none of the seven left children. Last of all the woman herself died. 23 In the resurrection[c] whose wife will she be? For the seven had married her."

24 Jesus said to them, "Is not this the reason you are wrong, that you know neither the scriptures nor the power of God? 25 For when they rise from the dead, they neither marry nor are given in marriage, but are like angels in heaven. 26 And as for the dead being raised, have you not read in the book of Moses, in the story about the bush, how God said to him, 'I am the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob'? 27 He is God not of the dead, but of the living; you are quite wrong."

28 One of the scribes came near and heard them disputing with one another, and seeing that he answered them well, he asked him, "Which commandment is the first of all?" 29 Jesus answered, "The first is, 'Hear, O Israel: the Lord our God, the Lord is one; 30 you shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind, and with all your strength.' 31 The second is this, 'You shall love your neighbor as yourself.' There is no other commandment greater than these." 32 Then the scribe said to him, "You are right, Teacher; you have truly said that 'he is one, and besides him there is no other'; 33 and 'to love him with all the heart, and with all the understanding, and with all the strength,' and 'to love one's neighbor as oneself,'—this is much more important than all whole burnt offerings and sacrifices." 34 When Jesus saw that he answered wisely, he said to him, "You are not

[a] Gk *his brother*
[b] Gk *her*
[c] Other ancient authorities add *when they rise*

the Pharisee Saddok had led a movement to refuse payment of the tribute, appealing to the same covenantal commandment, that God was their true and sole ruler (Acts 5.37; Josephus, *Ant*. 18.4–23). **16:** Turning the trick question back upon the questioners, Jesus exposes their own collaboration with the Romans by asking them to show him a coin—literally forcing their hand. **17:** Jesus ingeniously gives an ambiguous answer that does not literally advocate nonpayment of tribute to the emperor, but could be understood that way by those committed to the first commandment of the covenantal law of Moses: *the things that are the emperor's,* i.e., nothing; *the things that are God's,* i.e., everything.

12.18–27: Dispute with the Sadducees (Mt 22.23–33; Lk 20.27–40). **18–23:** The Sadducees, the aristocratic priestly party of property, power, and privilege, denied that there could be a future resurrection of the dead. While their question took the form of academic casuistry, their focus on levirate marriage (Deut 25.5) hinted at their real agenda: the protection of property rights and power through patriarchal marriage that perpetuated the male lineage. **24–25:** Life after resurrection will not involve marriage. **26–27:** God's words to Moses (Ex 3.6) speak of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob in the present tense, i.e., as *living* not *dead.*

12.28–34: Love your neighbor (Mt 22.34–40; Lk 10.25–28). The polemic softens, but the argument sets up the sharp condemnation of the scribes in 12.38–44. **29–31:** Jesus satisfies the scribe by immediately reciting Deut 6.4, but he quickly insists that love of God means love of neighbor by reciting Lev 19.18 as well, which climaxes a series of prohibitions against exploiting and oppressing the poor (cf. Lev 19.9–17; Lk 6.27–36; Mt 5.38–48). **32–33:** The scribe admits that love of God and love of neighbor are more important than the elaborate

far from the kingdom of God." After that no one dared to ask him any question.

35 While Jesus was teaching in the temple, he said, "How can the scribes say that the Messiah[a] is the son of David? 36 David himself, by the Holy Spirit, declared,

'The Lord said to my Lord,
"Sit at my right hand,
until I put your enemies under your feet."'

37 David himself calls him Lord; so how can he be his son?" And the large crowd was listening to him with delight.

38 As he taught, he said, "Beware of the scribes, who like to walk around in long robes, and to be greeted with respect in the marketplaces, 39 and to have the best seats in the synagogues and places of honor at banquets! 40 They devour widows' houses and for the sake of appearance say long prayers. They will receive the greater condemnation."

41 He sat down opposite the treasury, and watched the crowd putting money into the treasury. Many rich people put in large sums. 42 A poor widow came and put in two small copper coins, which are worth a penny. 43 Then he called his disciples and said to them, "Truly I tell you, this poor widow has put in more than all those who are contributing to the treasury. 44 For all of them have contributed out of their abundance; but she out of her poverty has put in everything she had, all she had to live on."

13 As he came out of the temple, one of his disciples said to him, "Look, Teacher, what large stones and what large buildings!" 2 Then Jesus asked him, "Do you see these great buildings? Not one stone will be left here upon another; all will be thrown down."

3 When he was sitting on the Mount of Olives opposite the temple, Peter, James, John, and Andrew asked him privately, 4 "Tell us, when will this be, and what will be the sign that all these things are about to be accomplished?" 5 Then Jesus began to say to them, "Beware that no one leads you astray. 6 Many will come in my name and say, 'I am he!'[b] and they will lead many astray. 7 When you hear of wars and rumors of wars, do not

[a] Or *the Christ*
[b] Gk *I am*

sacrifices at the Temple, from which he draws his living. **34:** The scribe does not "resign" his position, and Jesus does not invite him into the movement. Jesus has outmaneuvered all segments of the Temple establishment in the series of attacks and counterattacks from 11.27.

12.35–37: How can the messiah be David's son? (Mt 22.41–46; Lk 20.41–44). This passage constitutes a rejection of any triumphalist restoration of the Davidic state (which Bartimaeus and the shouts of the crowd may have suggested; see 10.47–48n.; 11.10), reciting one of the imperial Davidic psalms (Ps 110.1) in the refutation.

12.38–44: Beware of the scribes (Mt 23.1,6; Lk 20.45–47; 21.1–4; 11.43; 14.7–11). **38–40:** Condemnation of the scribes, moving from their craving for honor to a concrete example of their exploitation of the poor. *Widows' houses* refers to all their inheritance and resources. **41–44:** Illustrates how the scribes "devour widow's houses": by inducing them to give their meager resources to the Temple. For this "they will receive the greater condemnation" (v. 40), confirmed by the immediately ensuing prophecy of the destruction of the Temple which they serve (13.1–2).

13.1–2: Destruction of Jerusalem and the Temple (Mt 24.1–3; Lk 21.5–7). This section of the Gospel, which began with Jesus' prophetic demonstration against the Temple (11.15–17), ends with his prophecy of its destruction—also implicating those whose base of power it constituted.

13.3–37: Exhortation not to be distracted from the movement by distressing events (Mt 24.3–36; Lk 21.7–36). Jesus' second speech uses prophetic and apocalyptic motifs in order to caution against an apocalyptic interpretation of historical crises of resistance, repression, and reconquest under Roman imperial rule, but to remain disciplined and vigilant in the struggle, despite persecution. The Israelite prophetic and Judean revelatory traditions are framed, balanced, and interpreted by the exhortation in vv. 5–6,9–13, and 28–37, particularly by the carefully positioned and repeated "beware/ be alert" in vv. 5,9,23,33. Judging from v. 14, these paragraphs must be written from a viewpoint outside both Jerusalem and Judea. **3:** Addressed through Peter and other disciples to the whole movement. **4:** Despite this apparent link with the destruction of the Temple just prophesied in v. 2, nothing in the rest of ch 13 implies that the events prophesied have anything to do with Jerusalem. **6:** *I*

be alarmed; this must take place, but the end is still to come. 8 For nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom; there will be earthquakes in various places; there will be famines. This is but the beginning of the birth pangs.

9 "As for yourselves, beware; for they will hand you over to councils; and you will be beaten in synagogues; and you will stand before governors and kings because of me, as a testimony to them. 10 And the good news[a] must first be proclaimed to all nations. 11 When they bring you to trial and hand you over, do not worry beforehand about what you are to say; but say whatever is given you at that time, for it is not you who speak, but the Holy Spirit. 12 Brother will betray brother to death, and a father his child, and children will rise against parents and have them put to death; 13 and you will be hated by all because of my name. But the one who endures to the end will be saved.

14 "But when you see the desolating sacrilege set up where it ought not to be (let the reader understand), then those in Judea must flee to the mountains; 15 the one on the housetop must not go down or enter the house to take anything away; 16 the one in the field must not turn back to get a coat. 17 Woe to those who are pregnant and to those who are nursing infants in those days! 18 Pray that it may not be in winter. 19 For in those days there will be suffering, such as has not been from the beginning of the creation that God created until now, no, and never will be. 20 And if the Lord had not cut short those days, no one would be saved; but for the sake of the elect, whom he chose, he has cut short those days. 21 And if anyone says to you at that time, 'Look! Here is the Messiah!'[b] or 'Look! There he is!'—do not believe it. 22 False messiahs[c] and false prophets will appear and produce signs and omens, to lead astray, if possible, the elect. 23 But be alert; I have already told you everything.

24 "But in those days, after that suffering,
the sun will be darkened,
and the moon will not give its light,
25 and the stars will be falling from heaven,
and the powers in the heavens will be
shaken.
26 Then they will see 'the Son of Man coming in clouds' with great power and glory. 27 Then he will send out the angels, and gather his elect from the four winds, from the ends of the earth to the ends of heaven.

28 "From the fig tree learn its lesson: as soon as its branch becomes tender and puts forth its leaves, you know that summer is near. 29 So also, when you see these things taking place, you know that he[d] is near, at the very gates. 30 Truly I tell you, this generation will not pass away until all these things have taken place. 31 Heaven and earth will pass away, but my words will not pass away.

[a] Gk *gospel*
[b] Or *the Christ*
[c] Or *christs*
[d] Or *it*

am he, lit., "I am"; see 6.50n. **7–8:** Stereotypical phrases from Israelite prophetic and Judean revelatory literature. *Rumors of wars* may refer to the intense resistance to the order of Emperor Gaius Caligula (37–41 CE) to install his bust in the Temple. *Famines* may refer to the disastrous effects of the severe drought in the late 40s. **9–13:** Cf. Lk 12.2–12,51–53; Mk 8.34–38. Far from being distracted by wars and famines, the movement should expect repressions, but not worry, expect to be hated by all, but endure. **14a:** A shift from the past to the present and future, from the readers' standpoint. *The desolating sacrilege,* cf. Dan 9.27; 11.31; 12.11. In contrast to Mt 24.15, nothing in Mark's vague phrase or the literary context points to Jerusalem or the Temple, let alone its destruction. **14b–20:** Anticipation of events in Judea and Galilee, where political conflict escalated during the 50s and 60s, based on long experience of how the Romans reacted to actual or perceived resistance with severe repressive measures and "scorched earth" reconquest of the people. **21–22:** Other prophets and messiahs were already familiar features in Judea in particular, and more appeared around the mid-first century. **24–25:** Traditional prophetic portrayal of God's coming in judgment, drawn from Isa 13.10; 34.4; Ezek 32.7–8; Joel 2.10,31; 3.15. **26–27:** In contrast to Dan 7.13, where the "human-like one" symbolizes the elect generally, *the Son of Man* here presides over the gathering of the elect (cf. Zech 2.6; Deut 30.4). **28–31:** Reassurance that the resolution of the historical crisis is near, as symbolized by the impending coming of the Son of Man, and that Jesus' words are utterly credible. **28:** Reverses the image of the fig tree from 11.12–14, now symbolizing new blessing for the people. **30:** Cf. 9.1. **31:** Cf.

32 "But about that day or hour no one knows,
neither the angels in heaven, nor the Son, but
only the Father. 33 Beware, keep alert;[a] for you
do not know when the time will come. 34 It is
like a man going on a journey, when he leaves
home and puts his slaves in charge, each with
his work, and commands the doorkeeper to be
on the watch. 35 Therefore, keep awake—for
you do not know when the master of the house
will come, in the evening, or at midnight, or at
cockcrow, or at dawn, 36 or else he may find you
asleep when he comes suddenly. 37 And what I
say to you I say to all: Keep awake."

14 It was two days before the Passover
and the festival of Unleavened Bread.
The chief priests and the scribes were looking
for a way to arrest Jesus[b] by stealth and kill
him; 2 for they said, "Not during the festival,
or there may be a riot among the people."

3 While he was at Bethany in the house
of Simon the leper,[c] as he sat at the table, a
woman came with an alabaster jar of very
costly ointment of nard, and she broke open
the jar and poured the ointment on his
head. 4 But some were there who said to one
another in anger, "Why was the ointment
wasted in this way? 5 For this ointment could
have been sold for more than three hundred
denarii,[d] and the money given to the poor."
And they scolded her. 6 But Jesus said, "Let
her alone; why do you trouble her? She has
performed a good service for me. 7 For you
always have the poor with you, and you can
show kindness to them whenever you wish;
but you will not always have me. 8 She has
done what she could; she has anointed my
body beforehand for its burial. 9 Truly I tell
you, wherever the good news[e] is proclaimed
in the whole world, what she has done will be
told in remembrance of her."

10 Then Judas Iscariot, who was one of the
twelve, went to the chief priests in order to
betray him to them. 11 When they heard it,
they were greatly pleased, and promised to
give him money. So he began to look for an
opportunity to betray him.

12 On the first day of Unleavened Bread,
when the Passover lamb is sacrificed, his
disciples said to him, "Where do you want
us to go and make the preparations for you
to eat the Passover?" 13 So he sent two of his
disciples, saying to them, "Go into the city,
and a man carrying a jar of water will meet
you; follow him, 14 and wherever he enters,
say to the owner of the house, 'The Teacher
asks, Where is my guest room where I may
eat the Passover with my disciples?' 15 He will
show you a large room upstairs, furnished
and ready. Make preparations for us there."
16 So the disciples set out and went to the city,
and found everything as he had told them;
and they prepared the Passover meal.

[a] Other ancient authorities add *and pray*
[b] Gk *him*
[c] The terms *leper* and *leprosy* can refer to several diseases
[d] The denarius was the usual day's wage for a laborer
[e] Or *gospel*

Isa 51.6; 40.8. **32–37:** Since no one knows precisely when the crisis will be resolved, they must simply maintain discipline and *Keep awake.*

14.1–15.47: Jesus' death as martyr-messiah (Mt 26.1–27.66; Lk 22.1–23.56; Jn 18.1–19.42). **1–2:** *Passover and the festival of Unleavened Bread,* in March/April, celebrated Israel's deliverance from foreign rule in ancient Egypt. Repressive actions by rulers repeatedly touched off massive protest demonstrations at Passover. The concern of the Jerusalem rulers and their representatives to kill Jesus, signaled in 3.6 and indicated again in 11.18 and 12.12, finally focuses on a specific plot.

14.3–8: Anointing for burial (Mt 26.6–13; Jn 12.1–8). As a prophet had poured oil on the head of (anointed, made a messiah of) David and other popular kings leading Israel, so *a woman . . . poured ointment on* Jesus' head, but to prepare his body for burial. In reply to strenuous objections, Jesus recognizes what she has done as part of the gospel itself. **3:** *Nard* was imported from the Himalayan mountains.

14.10–11: Anticipation of betrayal (Mt 26.14–16; Lk 22.3–6). It is from within the twelve, representatives of the renewed Israel, that the betrayal comes.

14.12–25: The Last Supper (Mt 26.17–29; Lk 22.7–20). **12–16:** Just as the chief priests and scribes had resorted to covert means "to arrest Jesus by stealth" (14.1), so Jesus and his disciples are now operating covertly, "underground," as indicated by Jesus' instructions for discreet movement inside the city and the carefully planned

17 When it was evening, he came with the
twelve. 18 And when they had taken their
places and were eating, Jesus said, "Truly I
tell you, one of you will betray me, one who is
eating with me." 19 They began to be dis-
tressed and to say to him one after another,
"Surely, not I?" 20 He said to them, "It is one
of the twelve, one who is dipping bread[a] into
the bowl[b] with me. 21 For the Son of Man goes
as it is written of him, but woe to that one by
whom the Son of Man is betrayed! It would
have been better for that one not to have
been born."

22 While they were eating, he took a loaf of
bread, and after blessing it he broke it, gave
it to them, and said, "Take; this is my body."
23 Then he took a cup, and after giving thanks
he gave it to them, and all of them drank from
it. 24 He said to them, "This is my blood of
the[c] covenant, which is poured out for many.
25 Truly I tell you, I will never again drink
of the fruit of the vine until that day when I
drink it new in the kingdom of God."

26 When they had sung the hymn, they
went out to the Mount of Olives. 27 And Jesus
said to them, "You will all become deserters;
for it is written,

'I will strike the shepherd,
and the sheep will be scattered.'

28 But after I am raised up, I will go before you
to Galilee." 29 Peter said to him, "Even though
all become deserters, I will not." 30 Jesus said
to him, "Truly I tell you, this day, this very
night, before the cock crows twice, you will
deny me three times." 31 But he said vehe-
mently, "Even though I must die with you, I
will not deny you." And all of them said the
same.

32 They went to a place called Gethsemane;
and he said to his disciples, "Sit here while
I pray." 33 He took with him Peter and James
and John, and began to be distressed and
agitated. 34 And he said to them, "I am deeply
grieved, even to death; remain here, and keep
awake." 35 And going a little farther, he threw
himself on the ground and prayed that, if it
were possible, the hour might pass from him.
36 He said, "Abba,[d] Father, for you all things
are possible; remove this cup from me; yet,
not what I want, but what you want." 37 He
came and found them sleeping; and he said
to Peter, "Simon, are you asleep? Could you
not keep awake one hour? 38 Keep awake and
pray that you may not come into the time
of trial;[e] the spirit indeed is willing, but the
flesh is weak." 39 And again he went away and
prayed, saying the same words. 40 And once
more he came and found them sleeping, for
their eyes were very heavy; and they did not
know what to say to him. 41 He came a third
time and said to them, "Are you still sleeping
and taking your rest? Enough! The hour has

[a] Gk lacks *bread*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *same bowl*
[c] Other ancient authorities add *new*
[d] Aramaic for *Father*
[e] Or *into temptation*

signal of a *man carrying a jar of water* (a task that a woman would usually have performed). **18:** Cf. Ps 41.9. **20:** *Dipping bread into the bowl with me,* the common meal was the most intimate form of fellowship. **22–25:** Mt 26.26–29; Lk 22.15–20; 1 Cor 11.23–26. Jesus' words at the Last Supper became the words of institution of the regularly celebrated Lord's Supper. **22:** *My body,* without "for you" as in 1 Cor 11.24, clearly a collective symbol of the community. **24:** *My blood of the covenant,* thus renewing the covenant between God and the people, alluding to the covenant ceremony on Sinai (Ex 24.4–8). *For many,* see Isa 53.12. **25:** The Supper is eaten in anticipation of celebrating it *new in the kingdom of God,* whereas in 1 Cor 11.25–26 it is eaten also in memory.

14.26–52: Agony and betrayal in Gethsemane (Mt 26.30–56; Lk 22.31–53). Jesus' prediction of the disciples' desertion and their actual desertion frames his agonized prayer over his impending martyrdom and his enemies' surreptitious seizure of him. **26:** The Passover ended with the singing of Pss 115–118. **27:** Zech 13.7; Jn 16.32. See 6.34n. **28:** Although the disciples are all about to desert, the movement will continue as Jesus will go back to Galilee after his martyr's death; see 16.7. **29–31:** Cf. 8.34; 14.66–72; Jn 13.36–38; 18.15–18,25–27. **32:** *Gethsemane,* meaning "garden of oil," was an olive orchard or "garden" (Jn 18.1) on the slope of the Mount of Olives just east of Jerusalem. **33–35:** *Distressed and agitated . . . deeply grieved, even to death . . . threw himself on the ground.* The language and action are very strong, v. 34 echoing Pss 42.5,11; 43.5. **36:** *Abba,* Aramaic for "father" (see 5.41n.). *This cup,* refers to both vv. 23–24 and 10.39, implicating the disciples, especially James and John. **37–41:** The disciples are utterly incapable of doing what Jesus had emphasized in teaching about future crises; see 13.35–37.

come; the Son of Man is betrayed into the hands of sinners. 42 Get up, let us be going. See, my betrayer is at hand."

43 Immediately, while he was still speaking, Judas, one of the twelve, arrived; and with him there was a crowd with swords and clubs, from the chief priests, the scribes, and the elders. 44 Now the betrayer had given them a sign, saying, "The one I will kiss is the man; arrest him and lead him away under guard." 45 So when he came, he went up to him at once and said, "Rabbi!" and kissed him. 46 Then they laid hands on him and arrested him. 47 But one of those who stood near drew his sword and struck the slave of the high priest, cutting off his ear. 48 Then Jesus said to them, "Have you come out with swords and clubs to arrest me as though I were a bandit? 49 Day after day I was with you in the temple teaching, and you did not arrest me. But let the scriptures be fulfilled." 50 All of them deserted him and fled.

51 A certain young man was following him, wearing nothing but a linen cloth. They caught hold of him, 52 but he left the linen cloth and ran off naked.

53 They took Jesus to the high priest; and all the chief priests, the elders, and the scribes were assembled. 54 Peter had followed him at a distance, right into the courtyard of the high priest; and he was sitting with the guards, warming himself at the fire. 55 Now the chief priests and the whole council were looking for testimony against Jesus to put him to death; but they found none. 56 For many gave false testimony against him, and their testimony did not agree. 57 Some stood up and gave false testimony against him, saying, 58 "We heard him say, 'I will destroy this temple that is made with hands, and in three days I will build another, not made with hands.'" 59 But even on this point their testimony did not agree. 60 Then the high priest stood up before them and asked Jesus, "Have you no answer? What is it that they testify against you?" 61 But he was silent and did not answer. Again the high priest asked him, "Are you the Messiah,[a] the Son of the Blessed One?" 62 Jesus said, "I am; and

'you will see the Son of Man
seated at the right hand of the Power,'
and 'coming with the clouds of heaven.'"

63 Then the high priest tore his clothes and said, "Why do we still need witnesses? 64 You have heard his blasphemy! What is your

[a] Or *the Christ*

43–50: Emphasis is on the excessive force used by the Jerusalem rulers in their covert action to capture Jesus, as if Jesus were a violent bandit-chieftain. Jesus mocks their reluctance simply to seize him when he had been teaching in the Temple courtyard, which betrays their lack of "authority" and their political impotence with the people. **45:** *Rabbi,* see 9.5–6n. **47:** In contrast to Mt 26.52–53, Lk 22.51, and Jn 18.10–11, Jesus in Mark does not rebuke the spontaneous violent response by *one of those who stood near* (not necessarily a disciple, although identified as Peter in Jn 18.10). **49:** *Let the scriptures be fulfilled,* Jesus' arrest, trial, and death in particular proceed "as written" in the scripture (vv. 21,27; etc.); *fulfilled,* only here and 1.15, marks a highly significant point in the overall gospel story. **51–52:** *Young man . . . naked,* presumably symbolic in the narrative, of the disciples now standing exposed as unfaithful deserters and of Jesus as defenseless before the rulers. The "young man" appears once more in the narrative in 16.5–7.

14.53–72: Jesus condemned by chief priests and council and Peter's denial (Mt 26.57–75; Lk 22.54–71). Jesus is condemned twice, first by the ruling chief priest and council, then by the Roman governor. While the accounts are integral parts of the Gospel, not historical transcripts, they have historical plausibility against the background of Roman imperial rule in Judea. **53:** Convening the council at night would have been highly unusual, but by this point due process was hardly a concern of the Jerusalem rulers. **55–59:** Although Jesus had been speaking and acting in public (see v. 49), the council had no witnesses with credible testimony to justify his execution. The *false testimony* appears to be a confusing parody of Jesus' prophetic condemnation of the Temple and his renewal of Israel (the "house of God" "not made with hands"?) in opposition to the Temple (the "house of God" "made with hands"?). **61–62:** *The Messiah,* it is unclear whether this is a charge. *"I am"* would be an uncharacteristic answer for Jesus (but see 6.50n.). It stands in sharp contrast with his answer to Pilate in 15.2: "You say so," and both Mt 26.64 and Lk 22.70 have "You say (that I am)," which suggests that Mk 14.62 also originally read "You say so" or "Am I?" But in immediately confessing *the Son of Man . . . coming with the clouds of heaven* (quoting Dan 7.13 and Ps 110.1), Jesus gives the high priest all he needs for condemnation. **63–64:**

decision?" All of them condemned him as deserving death. 65 Some began to spit on him, to blindfold him, and to strike him, saying to him, "Prophesy!" The guards also took him over and beat him.

66 While Peter was below in the courtyard, one of the servant-girls of the high priest came by. 67 When she saw Peter warming himself, she stared at him and said, "You also were with Jesus, the man from Nazareth." 68 But he denied it, saying, "I do not know or understand what you are talking about." And he went out into the forecourt.[a] Then the cock crowed.[b] 69 And the servant-girl, on seeing him, began again to say to the bystanders, "This man is one of them." 70 But again he denied it. Then after a little while the bystanders again said to Peter, "Certainly you are one of them; for you are a Galilean." 71 But he began to curse, and he swore an oath, "I do not know this man you are talking about." 72 At that moment the cock crowed for the second time. Then Peter remembered that Jesus had said to him, "Before the cock crows twice, you will deny me three times." And he broke down and wept.

15 As soon as it was morning, the chief priests held a consultation with the elders and scribes and the whole council. They bound Jesus, led him away, and handed him over to Pilate. 2 Pilate asked him, "Are you the King of the Jews?" He answered him, "You say so." 3 Then the chief priests accused him of many things. 4 Pilate asked him again, "Have you no answer? See how many charges they bring against you." 5 But Jesus made no further reply, so that Pilate was amazed.

6 Now at the festival he used to release a prisoner for them, anyone for whom they asked. 7 Now a man called Barabbas was in prison with the rebels who had committed murder during the insurrection. 8 So the crowd came and began to ask Pilate to do for them according to his custom. 9 Then he answered them, "Do you want me to release for you the King of the Jews?" 10 For he realized that it was out of jealousy that the chief priests had handed him over. 11 But the chief priests stirred up the crowd to have him release Barabbas for them instead. 12 Pilate spoke to them again, "Then what do you wish me to do[c] with the

[a] Or *gateway*
[b] Other ancient authorities lack *Then the cock crowed*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *what should I do*

Blasphemy would presumably refer to the confession of being the Son of Man, rather than his threat against the Temple. For the prescribed punishment, see Lev 24.16. See also 2.7. **66–72:** Cf. v. 54. Peter's denial of Jesus is juxtaposed to and simultaneous with Jesus' confession and condemnation. Even the servants of the high priest share the prejudice against and contempt of Galileans such as Jesus, "the man from Nazareth," and Peter. **71:** Peter's third denial is very strong language. *I do not know this man* had double meaning: As indicated repeatedly throughout the Gospel, Peter indeed does not understand who Jesus is and what he is doing. **72:** See v. 30.

15.1–15: Jesus condemned by Pilate (Mt 27.1–2,11–26; Lk 23.1–5,18–25; Jn 18.28–40; 19.4–16). The second trial, before the Roman governor Pilate (26–37 CE). **1:** This further *consultation* suggests that the specific charge(s) against Jesus were still not clear, and that this continued in the hearing before Pilate (v. 3). **2:** It is the Roman governor who defines the charge as one of indigenous kingship in potential insurrection against the Roman order. The formulation of the question is that of outsiders to Israel, who viewed Galileans and others subject to Herodian rulers as "Judeans." It is surely significant also that the title *King of the Jews* (i.e., Judeans) occurs only in speech by Pilate or the Roman soldiers and the inscription on the cross presumably placed there by Pilate's order, in vv. 2,9,12,18,26, in contrast with "the Messiah, the King of Israel," used by the chief priests and scribes in v. 32. Thus Jesus' answer: "That is what *you* say." **4–5:** As in 14.60–61, Jesus is just "above it all," or is deliberately refusing to cooperate in his own interrogation. **6–15:** There is no evidence outside the New Testament of such a custom by Roman governors of Judea generally. Mark does not in any way suggest that "the Jews" demanded Jesus' death. The crowd is stirred up by the chief priests. Infamous in sources outside the New Testament for his tough stance, provocations, and violence as Roman governor, Pilate is portrayed here as an experienced imperial official who understands both that Jesus is politically more dangerous to the Roman order than an anti-imperial assassin and how to mollify the crowd while manipulating them into a choice. On crucifixion as the intensely cruel Roman form of torture and execution for provincial rebels, see 8.34n. Beating was standard treatment of political prisoners, whether they were to be executed or not.

man you call[a] the King of the Jews?" [13] They shouted back, "Crucify him!" [14] Pilate asked them, "Why, what evil has he done?" But they shouted all the more, "Crucify him!" [15] So Pilate, wishing to satisfy the crowd, released Barabbas for them; and after flogging Jesus, he handed him over to be crucified.

[16] Then the soldiers led him into the courtyard of the palace (that is, the governor's headquarters[b]); and they called together the whole cohort. [17] And they clothed him in a purple cloak; and after twisting some thorns into a crown, they put it on him. [18] And they began saluting him, "Hail, King of the Jews!" [19] They struck his head with a reed, spat upon him, and knelt down in homage to him. [20] After mocking him, they stripped him of the purple cloak and put his own clothes on him. Then they led him out to crucify him.

[21] They compelled a passer-by, who was coming in from the country, to carry his cross; it was Simon of Cyrene, the father of Alexander and Rufus. [22] Then they brought Jesus[c] to the place called Golgotha (which means the place of a skull). [23] And they offered him wine mixed with myrrh; but he did not take it. [24] And they crucified him, and divided his clothes among them, casting lots to decide what each should take.

[25] It was nine o'clock in the morning when they crucified him. [26] The inscription of the charge against him read, "The King of the Jews." [27] And with him they crucified two bandits, one on his right and one on his left.[d] [29] Those who passed by derided[e] him, shaking their heads and saying, "Aha! You who would destroy the temple and build it in three days, [30] save yourself, and come down from the cross!" [31] In the same way the chief priests, along with the scribes, were also mocking him among themselves and saying, "He saved others; he cannot save himself. [32] Let the Messiah,[f] the King of Israel, come down from the cross now, so that we may see and believe." Those who were crucified with him also taunted him.

[33] When it was noon, darkness came over the whole land[g] until three in the afternoon. [34] At three o'clock Jesus cried out with a loud voice, "Eloi, Eloi, lema sabachthani?" which

[a] Other ancient authorities lack *the man you call*
[b] Gk *the praetorium*
[c] Gk *him*
[d] Other ancient authorities add verse 28, *And the scripture was fulfilled that says, "And he was counted among the lawless."*
[e] Or *blasphemed*
[f] Or *the Christ*
[g] Or *earth*

15.16–38: The crucifixion (Mt 27.27–48; Lk 23.18–43). **16–20:** Along with the *purple cloak* symbolizing royalty, the mockery, by the whole cohort, of Jesus as "King of the Judeans," includes several allusions to worship of the Roman emperor whom Jesus has the audacity to challenge: The crown of thorns suggests the laurel wreath crowning the emperor's head, the hailing suggests the acclamation of the emperor, and kneeling in homage suggests the prostration to the emperor. The mutual hostility between Mark's Jesus and the imperial army is unmistakably intense. **16:** A *cohort* consisted of about five hundred soldiers. **21:** *Simon of Cyrene,* a peasant *coming in from the country,* had perhaps moved back to Judea from the Diaspora Jewish community in Cyrene, west of Egypt; his sons apparently later joined the movement. This Simon in effect replaces Peter, whose original name was Simon, and who had just proven incapable of "taking up his cross" by denying Jesus instead of himself (8.34; 14.66–72). Perhaps they "compel" Simon to carry the cross because Jesus is already too weak from repeated beatings, 14.65; 15.15,19. Once hung on the cross he died more quickly than expected (vv. 44–45). **23:** Jesus declines the offer of a sedative to mitigate the pain. **24:** *Casting lots,* see Ps 22.18; the first of three allusions to this psalm. **26:** The inscription indicates the crime: As "King of the Judeans" Jesus threatened to bring about a rebellion against the law and order of the empire, which was maintained by such gruesome, terrorizing violence against subject peoples. **27:** *Two bandits,* perhaps actually ancient "Robin Hoods"; but the Romans used the term contemptuously to demean rebels against Roman rule. *On his right . . . on his left,* cf. 10.37–40; not James and John, but the two "bandits" undergo the baptism of death with Jesus. **29–30:** *Shaking their heads,* cf. Ps 22.7–8. The mocking passers-by would appear to be hostile, using the same terms as the false witnesses in 14.56–58. **31:** *He saved others; he cannot save himself,* double meaning: cf. 8.34; 10.45. **33–38:** Mt 27.45–53; Lk 23.44–48. **33:** *Darkness came over the whole land,* crisis in the natural order indicating God coming in judgment (cf. Joel 2.2; Am 5.18–20; Zeph 1.15). **34:** *"Eloi, Eloi,"* Jesus crying out in abandonment in the words of Ps 22.1 in

means, "My God, my God, why have you forsaken me?"[a] [35] When some of the bystanders heard it, they said, "Listen, he is calling for Elijah." [36] And someone ran, filled a sponge with sour wine, put it on a stick, and gave it to him to drink, saying, "Wait, let us see whether Elijah will come to take him down." [37] Then Jesus gave a loud cry and breathed his last. [38] And the curtain of the temple was torn in two, from top to bottom. [39] Now when the centurion, who stood facing him, saw that in this way he[b] breathed his last, he said, "Truly this man was God's Son!"[c]

[40] There were also women looking on from a distance; among them were Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James the younger and of Joses, and Salome. [41] These used to follow him and provided for him when he was in Galilee; and there were many other women who had come up with him to Jerusalem.

[42] When evening had come, and since it was the day of Preparation, that is, the day before the sabbath, [43] Joseph of Arimathea, a respected member of the council, who was also himself waiting expectantly for the kingdom of God, went boldly to Pilate and asked for the body of Jesus. [44] Then Pilate wondered if he were already dead; and summoning the centurion, he asked him whether he had been dead for some time. [45] When he learned from the centurion that he was dead, he granted the body to Joseph. [46] Then Joseph[d] bought a linen cloth, and taking down the body,[e] wrapped it in the linen cloth, and laid it in a tomb that had been hewn out of the rock. He then rolled a stone against the door of the tomb. [47] Mary Magdalene and Mary the mother of Joses saw where the body[e] was laid.

16 When the sabbath was over, Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James, and Salome bought spices, so that they might go and anoint him. [2] And very early on the first day of the week, when the sun had risen, they went to the tomb. [3] They had been saying to one another, "Who will roll away the stone for us from the entrance to the tomb?" [4] When they looked up, they saw that the stone, which was very large, had already been rolled back. [5] As they entered

[a] Other ancient authorities read *made me a reproach*
[b] Other ancient authorities add *cried out and*
[c] Or *a son of God*
[d] Gk *he*
[e] Gk *it*

Aramaic (see 5.41n.). **35–36:** Voyeurs, misinterpreting the word "Eloi," suggest that he is calling for Elijah, and want to revive him, prolonging the ordeal, to see if Elijah comes. **37–38:** As Jesus dies, the curtain of the Temple (see Ex 26.33), separating but also protecting the people from the presence of God, is torn in two, in judgment on the Temple's mediation of the Holy but also opening access to God for the people; see also 1.10.

15.39–47: Jesus' burial (Mt 27.54–61; Lk 23.49–56). Three interrelated responses to Jesus' death: by a military representative of the Roman rulers, by a representative of the Jerusalem religious establishment, and by loyal women followers. **39:** Just as Jesus' other opponents earlier in the Gospel know who he is, so the Roman centurion (the equivalent of a company commander) presiding at his crucifixion recognizes that he was truly "a son of God." While neither a confession of faith (the centurion continues his duties in 15.44–45) nor the final resolution of the "messianic secret," contrary to previous interpretations, Mark ironically has the officer who presides at Jesus' execution recognize his true identity. He also confirms to Pilate that Jesus is dead in 15.44–45. **40–41:** As the disciples, commissioned as the leaders of the movement, consistently misunderstood, women were healed by Jesus as symbolic of the renewal of Israel. Now, after the disciples had betrayed, denied, and abandoned Jesus, some of the many women who had followed him and provided for him stood by him, at a distance, throughout the ordeal. Neither of the two women named here has been mentioned earlier. Both will witness the burial site (v. 47) and the empty tomb (16.1). **42–46:** *Joseph of Arimathea,* a *member of the council* that had condemned Jesus (see 14.64), but like the scribe in 12.28–34, interested in the kingdom of God, asked for the body. Apparently eager to dispose of it *before the sabbath,* he *wrapped it,* and secured it in a rock tomb sealed with a heavy stone (cf. 16.3n), without even a gesture of proper burial rites. **47:** Although the disciples, having completely disappeared, make no effort to afford Jesus proper burial (contrast John's disciples in 6.22), the two Marys witness *where the body was laid.*

16.1–8: The empty tomb, the call back to Galilee, and *they were afraid* (Mt 28.1–8a; Lk 24.1–11). **1:** The women go finally to perform proper rites of burial. **3:** The disk-shaped stone rolled in a groove to close the tomb's entry. **5:** The

the tomb, they saw a young man, dressed in a white robe, sitting on the right side; and they were alarmed. 6 But he said to them, "Do not be alarmed; you are looking for Jesus of Nazareth, who was crucified. He has been raised; he is not here. Look, there is the place they laid him. 7 But go, tell his disciples and Peter that he is going ahead of you to Galilee; there you will see him, just as he told you." 8 So they went out and fled from the tomb, for terror and amazement had seized them; and they said nothing to anyone, for they were afraid.[a]

THE SHORTER ENDING OF MARK

⟦And all that had been commanded them they told briefly to those around Peter. And afterward Jesus himself sent out through them, from east to west, the sacred and imperishable proclamation of eternal salvation.[b]⟧

THE LONGER ENDING OF MARK

9 ⟦Now after he rose early on the first day of the week, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, from whom he had cast out seven demons. 10 She went out and told those who had been with him, while they were mourning and weeping. 11 But when they heard that he was alive and had been seen by her, they would not believe it.

12 After this he appeared in another form to two of them, as they were walking into the country. 13 And they went back and told the rest, but they did not believe them.

14 Later he appeared to the eleven themselves as they were sitting at the table; and he upbraided them for their lack of faith and stubbornness, because they had not believed those who saw him after he had risen.[c] 15 And he said to them, "Go into all the world and proclaim the good news[d] to the whole creation. 16 The one who believes and is baptized will be saved; but the one who does not believe will be condemned. 17 And these signs will accompany those who believe: by using my name they will cast out demons; they will speak in new tongues; 18 they will pick up snakes in their hands,[e] and if they drink any deadly thing, it will not hurt them; they will lay their hands on the sick, and they will recover."

[a] Some of the most ancient authorities bring the book to a close at the end of verse 8. One authority concludes the book with the shorter ending; others include the shorter ending and then continue with verses 9-20. In most authorities verses 9-20 follow immediately after verse 8, though in some of these authorities the passage is marked as being doubtful.

[b] Other ancient authorities add *Amen*

[c] Other ancient authorities add, in whole or in part, *And they excused themselves, saying, "This age of lawlessness and unbelief is under Satan, who does not allow the truth and power of God to prevail over the unclean things of the spirits. Therefore reveal your righteousness now"—thus they spoke to Christ. And Christ replied to them, "The term of years of Satan's power has been fulfilled, but other terrible things draw near. And for those who have sinned I was handed over to death, that they may return to the truth and sin no more, that they may inherit the spiritual and imperishable glory of righteousness that is in heaven."*

[d] Or *gospel*

[e] Other ancient authorities lack *in their hands*

young man (cf. 14.51–52) is *dressed in a white robe,* as a martyr vindicated by God would be dressed (cf. Dan 11.35; Rev 7.9,13), reminiscent of Jesus' garments becoming "dazzling white" in the transfiguration, 9.3. **6:** The "young man" tells the women *He has been raised;* there was apparently no resurrection appearance in the original text of Mark that ended at 16.8. **7:** The risen Jesus is *going ahead . . . to Galilee* (cf. 14.28), where they *will see him,* in the same way as Jesus twice before said people would "see the Son of Man coming with the clouds of heaven," i.e., the standard symbol of the renewed Israel. Jesus is vindicated and his movement is to continue. Mark's Gospel is open-ended and must be completed by the hearers and readers of the Gospel. **8:** The narrative ends with the women terrified. Obviously, however, they eventually told the tale, or Mark's Gospel could not have been written.

16.9–20: Two attempts to provide a more satisfactory ending to the Gospel of Mark. The shorter ending. Although present in some manuscripts, this ending is clearly different from the rest of Mark in style and understanding of Jesus. It was evidently not added before the fourth century CE. **The longer ending.** Possibly written in the early second century and appended to the Gospel later in the second century. These sentences borrow

19 So then the Lord Jesus, after he had spoken to them, was taken up into heaven and sat down at the right hand of God. 20 And they went out and proclaimed the good news everywhere, while the Lord worked with them and confirmed the message by the signs that accompanied it.[a]]]

[a] Other ancient authorities add *Amen*

some motifs from the other Gospels and contain several unusual apocryphal elements. **9–10:** Mary is alone in Jn 20.1–2,11–19. *Seven demons,* Lk 8.2. **11:** Lk 24.11,22–25; Jn 20.19–29. **12–13:** Lk 24.12–35. **13:** Cf. Lk 24.34. **14–18:** Mt 28.19; Lk 24.47. **16:** Acts 2.37–42; 10.47–48; Rom 10.9. **17–18:** Exorcisms, Acts 8.6–7; 16.18; 19.11–20; *new tongues,* Acts 2.4–11n.; 10.46; 19.6; and possibly 1 Cor 12.10,28; 14.2–33; snakes and drinking poison lack New Testament parallels. **19–20:** Jesus' exaltation, Phil 2.9–11; Heb 1.3; *taken up,* Acts 1.2,11,22; *right hand of God,* Ps 110.1; Acts 7.55; Heb 1.3.

THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO LUKE

NAME AND AUTHORSHIP

The Third Gospel, traditionally called the Gospel according to Luke, is a unique literary and theological contribution to the story of Jesus Christ. The oldest traditions of the Christian church identify Luke, a physician who was a traveling companion and co-worker with Paul (Philem 1.24; Col 4.14), as the author of the Gospel and its sequel, the Acts of the Apostles. At times the tradition further identifies Luke as a Syrian from Antioch, but practically nothing else is remembered of the writer of the Third Gospel. The earliest of these traditions about the author are from the late second century, and scholarly analysis of the Gospel and Acts raises critical questions about the accuracy of the attribution of the writings to the Luke who was Paul's associate. The strongest argument in favor of identifying Luke the physician as the author of the Gospel and Acts is the relative obscurity of this figure in early Christianity. Yet, even defenders of the traditional identity of Luke recognize difficulties with that connection. Though Luke's familiarity with Judaism is extensive, he seems to have more book-knowledge than practical experience of its particular rituals and beliefs. Similarly, when Luke provides details about Palestinian locations and practices, they exhibit a tendency toward setting the story in an urban environment rather than the predominantly nonurban village culture that Jesus would have known. Above all, Luke never mentions in Acts that Paul wrote letters nor does he use theological themes from the letters attributed to the apostle.

SOURCES

Luke's Gospel is dependent on other earlier writings, especially the Gospel according to Mark. That Luke knew and used still other materials, both oral and written, in composing this Gospel is certain, if not demonstrable. In fact, Luke shares a body of material (probably in written form) with the author of the Gospel according to Matthew that accounts for approximately one-fifth of the overall Gospel story. Scholars designate this common material as "Q" (German "Quelle," "source"). Whether Luke had additional written sources for episodes and teaching found only in his Gospel—such as the account of Jesus' birth, childhood, certain parables, and some materials peculiar to Luke's account of Jesus' passion and resurrection—is debated, though possible. Luke's concern with sources—with acknowledging and using them profitably—is clear from his prologue to the Gospel (1.1–4). (See Introduction to the Gospels, p. 1743.)

DATE AND PLACE OF COMPOSITION

The time and place of the writing of this Gospel are uncertain. Tradition identifies Luke's account with both Antioch and Rome (where Acts comes to its end), but no firm tradition specifies a precise time and place of composition. Any major urban center in the Greek-speaking areas of the Roman empire would be a suitable location for such a document to be written and read. As for its date, all one can say with certainty is that Luke wrote this account after Mark composed his Gospel. The typical suggestion that Luke wrote around 85 CE is plausible, though the Gospel could have been completed five to fifteen years earlier or even five to ten years later.

STYLE, CONTENTS, AND STRUCTURE

In telling this story, Luke demonstrates an ability to write in different literary styles. The initial four verses of the book are a single Greek sentence that forms a highly stylized introductory statement typical of ancient historical writings. The language is formal and refined in a fashion familiar to well-educated citizens of the Roman empire in the first century CE. After this distinctive preface, however, the narrative shifts into a style of Greek reminiscent of the Septuagint (the ancient Greek translation of the Hebrew Bible). (In the annotations, places where Luke's quotations from the scriptures follow the Septuagint rather than the Hebrew are marked with the standard abbreviation for the Septuagint, LXX.) This Semitic-influenced form of Greek permeates the stories about the birth and childhood of Jesus. The Septuagint-like style lightens into a more normal (and more typically secular) form of first-century Greek (called "koine") in the narrative that comprises the remainder of the Gospel. As situations shift in the story, the language used varies appropriately to suit the locale and characters in the narrative. Luke's appreciation of stylistic variation in narrative communication is apparent

from his skilled employment of this technique. Indeed, it seems that the Gospel communicates the universal significance of its story of God's salvation in and through Jesus Christ in the variety of styles that Luke uses to tell the story. Readers from different religious, ethnic, and social backgrounds would find one level or another of the overall account familiar and, thereby, a point of identity and entry into the story of Jesus Christ.

In broad strokes, Luke tells the same basic story that one reads in the other canonical Gospels: Jesus appears, ministers in Galilee, and moves to Judea and Jerusalem where he encounters deadly hostility that leads to his suffering, death, and resurrection. Yet, Luke's story of Jesus has logic and content that distinguish it among the four Gospels. The advent of Jesus among pious Jews, who observed ancestral traditions, highlights the continuity of Jesus' story with the history of Israel and presents it as the fulfillment of his people's hopes. In Luke's remembrance of Jesus, one finds an emphasis on God's compassion as Jesus reaches out to live and work among the marginal members of his society. Women, the less-than-pious, tax collectors, the poor, the sick, the oppressed, and even noble Pharisees are present and interact with Jesus more prominently in this account than in any other. As stated in Acts, "Jesus of Nazareth . . . went about doing good . . . for God was with him" (Acts 10.38). Both the coming of Jesus and his ministry of compassion are the direct results of God's anointing Jesus with the power of the Holy Spirit. Such an outpouring of the Spirit was neither unprecedented nor singular, however. The same Spirit of God that was active in the history of Israel is clearly present in the infancy stories concerning John the Baptist and Jesus with which the Gospel begins, and later reappears in Acts as the church spreads the message of salvation to all the peoples of the known world.

Luke has structured the narrative in a deliberate and logical way. A prologue (1.1–4) prepares readers for the significance of the story that follows. The infancy and childhood of Jesus is told in a series of scenes that alternate with an account of the origins of John the Baptist so that readers understand the role of both these figures in God's bringing salvation to all humanity, though Jesus is clearly presented as superior to the Baptist in this arrangement (1.5–2.52). As an adult Jesus prepares for his ministry through an encounter with John (then, readers learn Jesus' genealogy), and he undergoes temptations by the devil (3.1–4.13); Jesus ministers in Galilee, provoking controversy, calling disciples, preaching, working miracles, teaching, commissioning the initial ministry of his followers, and dealing compassionately with the masses of people (4.14–9.50). Jesus and his followers journey to Jerusalem and he ministers along the way (9.51–19.27). Jesus enters Jerusalem, working in the Temple area and teaching about the future (19.28–21.38). Jesus directs the Last Supper, suffers, dies, and is buried (22.1–23.56), and Jesus' empty tomb is found before he appears to the disciples and then ascends to heaven (24.1–53).

INTERPRETATION

The carefully crafted beginning of Luke's narrative contains anticipations of the story that follows and declarations that highlight the significance of the whole story. The narrative unfolds smoothly. Initial incidents are told in such a way that they anticipate later developments in the narrative. Readers who become actively involved with Luke's account will find hints and signals that provoke questions and expectations that are answered after one has read the whole story. In general, wondering about the nature of salvation, the character of the kingdom of God, the reality of repentance, and the person and work of Jesus as the Lord—God's messiah, son, and savior—will lead readers to ask about the deeper significance of the story that Luke is telling. Luke's primary concern is to inform the reader who Jesus of Nazareth was—and now, who he is as the suffering, crucified savior and the risen, exalted Lord. Furthermore, in the wake of Luke's purposeful presentation of the person and work of Jesus Christ, there is another dimension of the story that preserves and communicates Jesus' teaching about what it means to be his follower. Discipleship is a secondary theme that is closely related to the primary theme of Jesus' identity and significance. Discipleship, however, is sometimes a difficult dimension of the story for contemporary readers to grasp, for discipleship is a way of life as a member of the repentant and saved people of God. For Luke, one is not a disciple alone, but one finds profound personal significance in becoming one of the people of God who live as citizens of God's kingdom in a manner consistent with God's intentions for the life of all humanity as brought and taught, shown and known in Jesus Christ.

Luke's elegantly crafted account of Jesus' life and teaching shows him to be "the Lord," God's son who is the universal savior of humanity. Jesus inaugurates a mission to all humankind as the kingdom of God draws near

to the ordinary lives of people in Jesus' person and work. Luke's version of Jesus' story presents Jesus' coming among humanity—in birth, life, ministry, suffering, death, and resurrection—as the fulfillment of God's promises of salvation, which brings peace and well-being in a definitive way. This saving event inaugurated the final stage of God's dealings with humanity in anticipation of the "Last Day," "the Day of the Lord." Jesus himself and, in turn, his disciples call people to true repentance, which means a new relationship to God and to other human beings in a manner of life that embodies God's will for human existence.

Marion L. Soards

1 Since many have undertaken to set down
an orderly account of the events that
have been fulfilled among us, [2] just as they
were handed on to us by those who from the
beginning were eyewitnesses and servants of
the word, [3] I too decided, after investigating
everything carefully from the very first,[a] to
write an orderly account for you, most excel-
lent Theophilus, [4] so that you may know the
truth concerning the things about which you
have been instructed.

[5] In the days of King Herod of Judea, there
was a priest named Zechariah, who belonged
to the priestly order of Abijah. His wife was a
descendant of Aaron, and her name was Eliza-
beth. [6] Both of them were righteous before
God, living blamelessly according to all the
commandments and regulations of the Lord.
[7] But they had no children, because Elizabeth
was barren, and both were getting on in years.

[8] Once when he was serving as priest
before God and his section was on duty, [9] he
was chosen by lot, according to the custom of
the priesthood, to enter the sanctuary of the
Lord and offer incense. [10] Now at the time of
the incense offering, the whole assembly of
the people was praying outside. [11] Then there
appeared to him an angel of the Lord, stand-
ing at the right side of the altar of incense.
[12] When Zechariah saw him, he was terrified;
and fear overwhelmed him. [13] But the angel
said to him, "Do not be afraid, Zechariah,
for your prayer has been heard. Your wife
Elizabeth will bear you a son, and you will
name him John. [14] You will have joy and glad-
ness, and many will rejoice at his birth, [15] for
he will be great in the sight of the Lord. He
must never drink wine or strong drink; even
before his birth he will be filled with the Holy

[a] Or *for a long time*

1.1–4: The prologue (Mt 1.1; Mk 1.1). See Acts 1.1–2. Jn 20.30–31; 21.25 show similar awareness of sources used by the Gospel writers. This literary prologue resembles the openings of many classical or Hellenistic Greek works, particularly histories. Accordingly, Luke refers to previous early Christian writings, acknowledges sources, and explains the need or purpose of his own work. **3:** *Theophilus* means "friend of God" and may address a person of prominent social standing, since Theophilus is designated "most excellent," terminology typically applied to persons of high official or socioeconomic status. If Theophilus is a specific prominent person, then, he is likely to be the patron of the author of the Gospel, one who would use his influence to have the Gospel copied and distributed. While the address may be to a specific person, the symbolic sense of the name may designate any ideal Christian, as it has been understood since the earliest interpretations of Luke's Gospel.

1.5–2.52: The infancy and childhood of Jesus.

1.5–25: The annunciation of the birth of John the Baptist. 5: *In the days of King Herod of Judea* refers broadly to 37–4 BCE. The specific time in view in this story is probably 7–6 BCE (see Mt 2.1,15). *The priestly order of Abijah* was the eighth of twenty-four divisions of priests (1 Chr 24.10) who served twice annually, for one week at a time, in the Jerusalem Temple. These priests were Levites who served God both in behalf of and in the place of the firstborn males of all the tribes of Israel (Num 3.11–13). As *a descendant of Aaron,* Israel's first priest, Elizabeth was also from a priestly family. **5–7:** The mention of Elizabeth, the righteousness of the couple, their childlessness, and their advanced age all anticipate the appearance of the angel and are not directly related to Zechariah's Temple service. The description also echoes images and lines from the Hebrew Bible (Gen 15.3; 16.1; 25.2; 29.31; Judg 13.2–3; 1 Sam 1.2; Ex 30.6–8). **9:** The privilege of offering the incense was normally granted only once in a lifetime. **13:** The name *John* (Heb "J[eh]ohanan") means "The Lord has shown favor." **15:** Num 6.1–4; Judg

Spirit. 16 He will turn many of the people of
Israel to the Lord their God. 17 With the spirit
and power of Elijah he will go before him, to
turn the hearts of parents to their children,
and the disobedient to the wisdom of the
righteous, to make ready a people prepared
for the Lord." 18 Zechariah said to the angel,
"How will I know that this is so? For I am an
old man, and my wife is getting on in years."
19 The angel replied, "I am Gabriel. I stand in
the presence of God, and I have been sent to
speak to you and to bring you this good news.
20 But now, because you did not believe my
words, which will be fulfilled in their time,
you will become mute, unable to speak, until
the day these things occur."

21 Meanwhile the people were waiting for
Zechariah, and wondered at his delay in the
sanctuary. 22 When he did come out, he could
not speak to them, and they realized that he
had seen a vision in the sanctuary. He kept
motioning to them and remained unable to
speak. 23 When his time of service was ended,
he went to his home.

24 After those days his wife Elizabeth con-
ceived, and for five months she remained in
seclusion. She said, 25 "This is what the Lord
has done for me when he looked favorably
on me and took away the disgrace I have
endured among my people."

26 In the sixth month the angel Gabriel was
sent by God to a town in Galilee called Naza-
reth, 27 to a virgin engaged to a man whose
name was Joseph, of the house of David. The
virgin's name was Mary. 28 And he came to
her and said, "Greetings, favored one! The
Lord is with you."[a] 29 But she was much per-
plexed by his words and pondered what sort
of greeting this might be. 30 The angel said
to her, "Do not be afraid, Mary, for you have
found favor with God. 31 And now, you will
conceive in your womb and bear a son, and
you will name him Jesus. 32 He will be great,
and will be called the Son of the Most High,
and the Lord God will give to him the throne
of his ancestor David. 33 He will reign over the
house of Jacob forever, and of his kingdom
there will be no end." 34 Mary said to the
angel, "How can this be, since I am a virgin?"[b]
35 The angel said to her, "The Holy Spirit will
come upon you, and the power of the Most
High will overshadow you; therefore the child
to be born[c] will be holy; he will be called Son
of God. 36 And now, your relative Elizabeth
in her old age has also conceived a son; and
this is the sixth month for her who was said
to be barren. 37 For nothing will be impossible
with God." 38 Then Mary said, "Here am I, the
servant of the Lord; let it be with me accord-
ing to your word." Then the angel departed
from her.

39 In those days Mary set out and went
with haste to a Judean town in the hill coun-
try, 40 where she entered the house of Zecha-
riah and greeted Elizabeth. 41 When Elizabeth
heard Mary's greeting, the child leaped in
her womb. And Elizabeth was filled with the
Holy Spirit 42 and exclaimed with a loud cry,
"Blessed are you among women, and blessed
is the fruit of your womb. 43 And why has this
happened to me, that the mother of my Lord

[a] Other ancient authorities add *Blessed are you among women*
[b] Gk *I do not know a man*
[c] Other ancient authorities add *of you*

13.4–5; 1 Sam 1.11 LXX. **17:** *He will go before him,* that is, he will be the forerunner of the messiah (Mal 4.5–6; Mt 11.14); on *Elijah,* see 1 Kings 17–19; 21. **19:** *Gabriel* is one of two angels named in the Hebrew Bible (Dan 8.16; 9.21). **25:** Among Jews sterility was regarded as a sign of divine disfavor and therefore a *disgrace* (see Gen 16.2; 25.21; 30.23; 1 Sam 1.1–18; Lev 20.20–21; Ps 128.3; Jer 22.30).

1.26–38: The annunciation of Jesus' birth. 26: *In the sixth month,* after the conception of John. *Nazareth,* a small village (cf. Jn 1.46) in southern Galilee. **27:** There is a clear emphasis on Mary's status as a *virgin*, a term used twice in this verse; see 1.34. *Mary*, Gk "Mariam," from Heb "Miryam." **31:** *Jesus,* the Greek form of the Hebrew name Joshua, meaning "The Lord has saved" (see Mt 1.21). **32:** *The Son of the Most High* implies both divinity (see Sir 4.10) and royal authority (see 2 Sam 7.13–16; cf. Lk 2.35,76; 6.35; 8.28; Acts 7.48; 16.17). **32–33:** Jesus will fulfil the expectation that David's heir will reign eternally; see 2 Sam 7.12–17. **36:** *Elizabeth . . . conceived,* the angel offers Mary some corroboration, on which she acts (v. 39).

1.39–56: Mary and Elizabeth. 41: Elizabeth's being *filled with the Holy Spirit* may also acknowledge the presence and the power of the Holy Spirit at work in relation to the unborn John *in her womb.* **43:** Prior to his birth

comes to me? 44 For as soon as I heard the
sound of your greeting, the child in my womb
leaped for joy. 45 And blessed is she who
believed that there would be[a] a fulfillment of
what was spoken to her by the Lord."
46 And Mary[b] said,
"My soul magnifies the Lord,
47 and my spirit rejoices in God my
Savior,
48 for he has looked with favor on the
lowliness of his servant.
Surely, from now on all generations will
call me blessed;
49 for the Mighty One has done great things
for me,
and holy is his name.
50 His mercy is for those who fear him
from generation to generation.
51 He has shown strength with his arm;
he has scattered the proud in the
thoughts of their hearts.
52 He has brought down the powerful from
their thrones,
and lifted up the lowly;
53 he has filled the hungry with good
things,
and sent the rich away empty.
54 He has helped his servant Israel,
in remembrance of his mercy,
55 according to the promise he made to our
ancestors,
to Abraham and to his descendants
forever."
56 And Mary remained with her about
three months and then returned to her home.
57 Now the time came for Elizabeth to give
birth, and she bore a son. 58 Her neighbors
and relatives heard that the Lord had shown
his great mercy to her, and they rejoiced with
her.
59 On the eighth day they came to circum-
cise the child, and they were going to name
him Zechariah after his father. 60 But his
mother said, "No; he is to be called John."
61 They said to her, "None of your relatives
has this name." 62 Then they began motion-
ing to his father to find out what name he
wanted to give him. 63 He asked for a writing
tablet and wrote, "His name is John." And
all of them were amazed. 64 Immediately his
mouth was opened and his tongue freed, and
he began to speak, praising God. 65 Fear came
over all their neighbors, and all these things
were talked about throughout the entire
hill country of Judea. 66 All who heard them
pondered them and said, "What then will this
child become?" For, indeed, the hand of the
Lord was with him.
67 Then his father Zechariah was filled
with the Holy Spirit and spoke this prophecy:
68 "Blessed be the Lord God of Israel,
for he has looked favorably on his
people and redeemed them.
69 He has raised up a mighty savior[c] for us
in the house of his servant David,
70 as he spoke through the mouth of his
holy prophets from of old,
71 that we would be saved from our
enemies and from the hand of all
who hate us.
72 Thus he has shown the mercy promised
to our ancestors,
and has remembered his holy covenant,
73 the oath that he swore to our ancestor
Abraham,
to grant us 74 that we, being rescued
from the hands of our enemies,
might serve him without fear, 75 in holiness
and righteousness
before him all our days.

[a] Or *believed, for there will be*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *Elizabeth*
[c] Gk *a horn of salvation*

Jesus is designated *Lord.* **44:** *Joy* indicates the positive nature of the relationship of John the Baptist and Jesus. **46–55:** These verses form the first of four "canticles" or "hymns" in the infancy narrative of Luke. This "song" is the "Magnificat" (so called from its first word in the Latin or Vulgate translation); compare the prayer of Hannah in 1 Sam 2.1–10, a passage to which these verses relate. **55:** Gen 17.7; 18.18; 22.17; Mic 7.20.

1.57–80: The birth and naming of John. 58: Here, *the Lord* refers to God. **59:** Lev 12.3; Gen 17.12; Lk 2.21. **65:** *Fear* (rendered "awe" in 5.26) designates humble, reverent recognition of the limits of human understanding and power before God (2.9; 7.16; Acts 2.43,46–47; 5.5,11; 19.17). **66:** The question anticipates the appearance of the adult John, 3.1–18. **67–79:** The second hymn, called the "Benedictus." **69:** *A mighty savior,* lit., "a horn of salvation," uses a biblical metaphor ("horn") for power (Pss 18.3; 75.5–6; 89.18; 112.9; 148.14) and here refers to

76 And you, child, will be called the prophet
of the Most High;
for you will go before the Lord to
prepare his ways,
77 to give knowledge of salvation to his
people
by the forgiveness of their sins.
78 By the tender mercy of our God,
the dawn from on high will break upon[a]
us,
79 to give light to those who sit in darkness
and in the shadow of death,
to guide our feet into the way of peace."
80 The child grew and became strong in spirit, and he was in the wilderness until the day he appeared publicly to Israel.

2 In those days a decree went out from Emperor Augustus that all the world should be registered. 2 This was the first registration and was taken while Quirinius was governor of Syria. 3 All went to their own towns to be registered. 4 Joseph also went from the town of Nazareth in Galilee to Judea, to the city of David called Bethlehem, because he was descended from the house and family of David. 5 He went to be registered with Mary, to whom he was engaged and who was expecting a child. 6 While they were there, the time came for her to deliver her child. 7 And she gave birth to her firstborn son and wrapped him in bands of cloth, and laid him in a manger, because there was no place for them in the inn.

8 In that region there were shepherds living in the fields, keeping watch over their flock by night. 9 Then an angel of the Lord stood before them, and the glory of the Lord shone around them, and they were terrified. 10 But the angel said to them, "Do not be afraid; for see—I am bringing you good news of great joy for all the people: 11 to you is born this day in the city of David a Savior, who is the Messiah,[b] the Lord. 12 This will be a sign for you: you will find a child wrapped in bands of cloth and lying in a manger." 13 And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host,[c] praising God and saying,

14 "Glory to God in the highest heaven,
and on earth peace among those whom
he favors!"[d]

15 When the angels had left them and gone into heaven, the shepherds said to one another, "Let us go now to Bethlehem and see this thing that has taken place, which the Lord has made known to us." 16 So they went with haste and found Mary and Joseph, and the child lying in the manger. 17 When they saw this, they made known what had been told them about this child; 18 and all who heard it were amazed at what the shepherds told them. 19 But Mary treasured all these

[a] Other ancient authorities read *has broken upon*
[b] Or *the Christ*
[c] Gk *army*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *peace, goodwill among people*

one who will bring salvation; see Pss 92.10–11; 132.17–18. **76:** See 3.4. **80:** Compare 1.80 with 2.52. These words cover a period of approximately thirty years (see 3.23). *In the wilderness,* see 3.4.

2.1–7: The birth of Jesus (Mt 1.18–25). **1:** General censuses of Roman citizens are known from 28 BCE, 8 BCE, and 14 CE; but outside the New Testament this enrollment under Caesar *Augustus* is not attested. Caesar *Augustus* reigned 27 BCE–14 CE. His rule marked a time of peace, the "pax Augusta", which caused the populace to hail him as lord and savior of the world. **2:** *Quirinius* was at this time legate or commissioner of *Augustus* in a war against a rebellious tribe, the Homonadenses. As such he was a military governor of Syria, while civil administration was in the hands of Varus. It is possible that *Quirinius* was affiliated with Syria as a governmental authority on two different occasions, 6–4 BCE and 6–9 CE. *City of David called Bethlehem*, see 1 Sam 1–13. **7:** *Firstborn son* indicates nothing about Mary's subsequent childbearing; the word is more a technical term in reference to the child upon which God laid full claim (Num 3.11–13). *Bands of cloth* were normally used to bundle and provide warmth and comfort for infants. *Manger*, a feeding trough for animals.

2.8–20: Annunciation to shepherds and their visit (cf. Mt 2.1–12). **8:** That the shepherds were *living in the fields* indicates nothing about the season of Jesus' birth. **11:** Jesus is identified by three primary titles of Christian belief, *Savior, Messiah,* and *Lord* (see Mt 1.21; 16.16; Jn 4.42; Acts 2.36; 5.31; Phil 2.11). The designation of the newborn Jesus as Lord is striking (see 1.43), for that word in Greek ("kyrios") is the precise term used consistently throughout the LXX to translate the tetragrammaton, God's holy and personal name (Heb "YHWH"). **14:** The

words and pondered them in her heart. 20 The shepherds returned, glorifying and praising God for all they had heard and seen, as it had been told them.

21 After eight days had passed, it was time to circumcise the child; and he was called Jesus, the name given by the angel before he was conceived in the womb.

22 When the time came for their purification according to the law of Moses, they brought him up to Jerusalem to present him to the Lord 23 (as it is written in the law of the Lord, "Every firstborn male shall be designated as holy to the Lord"), 24 and they offered a sacrifice according to what is stated in the law of the Lord, "a pair of turtledoves or two young pigeons."

25 Now there was a man in Jerusalem whose name was Simeon;[a] this man was righteous and devout, looking forward to the consolation of Israel, and the Holy Spirit rested on him. 26 It had been revealed to him by the Holy Spirit that he would not see death before he had seen the Lord's Messiah.[b] 27 Guided by the Spirit, Simeon[c] came into the temple; and when the parents brought in the child Jesus, to do for him what was customary under the law, 28 Simeon[d] took him in his arms and praised God, saying,

29 "Master, now you are dismissing your
servant[e] in peace,
according to your word;
30 for my eyes have seen your salvation,
31 which you have prepared in the
presence of all peoples,
32 a light for revelation to the Gentiles
and for glory to your people Israel."

33 And the child's father and mother were amazed at what was being said about him. 34 Then Simeon[a] blessed them and said to his mother Mary, "This child is destined for the falling and the rising of many in Israel, and to be a sign that will be opposed 35 so that the inner thoughts of many will be revealed—and a sword will pierce your own soul too."

36 There was also a prophet, Anna[f] the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Asher. She was of a great age, having lived with her husband seven years after her marriage, 37 then as a widow to the age of eighty-four. She never left the temple but worshiped there with fasting and prayer night and day. 38 At that moment she came, and began to praise God and to speak about the child[g] to all who were looking for the redemption of Jerusalem.

39 When they had finished everything required by the law of the Lord, they returned to Galilee, to their own town of Nazareth. 40 The child grew and became strong, filled with wisdom; and the favor of God was upon him.

41 Now every year his parents went to Jerusalem for the festival of the Passover. 42 And when he was twelve years old, they went up as usual for the festival. 43 When the festival was ended and they started to return, the boy Jesus stayed behind in Jerusalem, but his parents did not know it. 44 Assuming that he was in the group of travelers, they went a day's journey. Then they started to look for him among their

[a] Gk *Symeon*
[b] Or *the Lord's Christ*
[c] Gk *In the Spirit, he*
[d] Gk *he*
[e] Gk *slave*
[f] Gk *Hanna*
[g] Gk *him*

third hymn. **19:** See 1.66; 2.51.

2.21–38: Jesus' circumcision and presentation. 21: See 1.59. **22–23:** Ex 13.2,12,15; Lev 5.11; 12.8. The phrase *their purification* is ambiguous and likely refers to the parents, though there was no rite of purification for the father (or the newborn). Luke's interest in this ritual is to recognize the occasion of the parents' taking Jesus to the Temple. **25–38:** *Simeon* and *Anna,* not otherwise known, acclaim Jesus as savior and redeemer. **29–32:** The fourth hymn, whose opening words in Latin are "Nunc dimittis." **30–31:** See 3.6. **32:** See Isa 49.6; 46.13. **32:** See Acts 2.21; 10.28,34–35; 22.21. **33:** Luke calls Joseph the *father* of Jesus (notwithstanding 1.34–35) since he was Mary's husband and Jesus' legal father (cf. Mt 13.55; Lk 2.48; 3.23).

2.39–40: Jesus' childhood in Nazareth (Mt 2.22–23).

2.41–52: Young Jesus in the Temple. This story of Jesus' boyhood is unique to Luke among the canonical Gospels, though later legendary writings also show interest in this otherwise unknown period of Jesus' life.

relatives and friends. 45 When they did
not find him, they returned to Jerusalem
to search for him. 46 After three days they
found him in the temple, sitting among
the teachers, listening to them and asking
them questions. 47 And all who heard him
were amazed at his understanding and his
answers. 48 When his parents[a] saw him they
were astonished; and his mother said to
him, "Child, why have you treated us like
this? Look, your father and I have been
searching for you in great anxiety." 49 He
said to them, "Why were you searching for
me? Did you not know that I must be in my
Father's house?"[b] 50 But they did not under-
stand what he said to them. 51 Then he went
down with them and came to Nazareth, and
was obedient to them. His mother treasured
all these things in her heart.

52 And Jesus increased in wisdom and in
years,[c] and in divine and human favor.

3 In the fifteenth year of the reign of
Emperor Tiberius, when Pontius Pilate
was governor of Judea, and Herod was ruler[d]
of Galilee, and his brother Philip ruler[d] of
the region of Ituraea and Trachonitis, and
Lysanias ruler[d] of Abilene, 2 during the high
priesthood of Annas and Caiaphas, the word
of God came to John son of Zechariah in
the wilderness. 3 He went into all the region
around the Jordan, proclaiming a baptism of
repentance for the forgiveness of sins, 4 as
it is written in the book of the words of the
prophet Isaiah,

"The voice of one crying out in the
wilderness:
'Prepare the way of the Lord,
make his paths straight.
5 Every valley shall be filled,
and every mountain and hill shall be
made low,
and the crooked shall be made straight,
and the rough ways made smooth;
6 and all flesh shall see the salvation of
God.'"

7 John said to the crowds that came out
to be baptized by him, "You brood of vipers!
Who warned you to flee from the wrath to
come? 8 Bear fruits worthy of repentance.
Do not begin to say to yourselves, 'We have
Abraham as our ancestor'; for I tell you, God
is able from these stones to raise up children
to Abraham. 9 Even now the ax is lying at the
root of the trees; every tree therefore that
does not bear good fruit is cut down and
thrown into the fire."

[a] Gk *they*
[b] Or *be about my Father's interests?*
[c] Or *in stature*
[d] Gk *tetrarch*

41: Ex 23.15; Deut 16.1–8. **49:** *My Father's house* recognizes the special relationship between Jesus and God and contrasts with Mary's reference to Joseph as "your father" (v. 48). **51:** See 2.19. **52:** 1 Sam 2.26; Lk 1.80; 2.40.

3.1–4.13: Jesus' preparation for ministry (Mt 3.1–4.11; Mk 1.2–13).

3.1–6: The appearance of John the Baptist (Mt 3.1–6; Mk 1.2–6). **1:** *Tiberius* Caesar succeeded Augustus in 14 CE and ruled until 37. Thus, depending on the manner of reckoning years, sometime between 26 and 29 CE is indicated. *Pontius Pilate,* a Roman governor, held authority in *Judea,* Samaria, and Idumea 26–36 CE; see 23.1, etc. The remainder of the kingdom of Herod the Great had been divided between his sons *Herod* Antipas who ruled Galilee and Perea (23.6–7) and Philip (see map on p. 1800). Initially another son, Herod Archelaus, had ruled Judea as ethnarch from 4 BCE, but he was deposed and banished for incompetence and replaced by a Roman official in 6 CE (see Mt 2.22). Lysanias was a Roman tetrarch of Abilenem ca. 25–30 CE. **2:** *Annas* was high priest 6–15 CE when the Romans deposed him. He was followed by relatives; initially by his son, Eleazar; then by his son-in-law *Caiaphas* (18–36 CE), and thereafter by four more sons. Because Jewish custom was for the high priest to serve for life, even when out of office, Annas's influence and authority continued to be recognized by the population. **3:** A summary statement of the shape and substance of John's ministry. Proclamation led to baptism, *a baptism of repentance,* a symbolic act of cleansing to indicate realignment with the will of God in forgiveness of the one baptized. **4–6:** Isa 40.3–5. **6:** *All flesh* refers to all humanity and emphasizes that God's salvation was universal in character; see 2.30–32; Acts 2.21.

3.7–9: John's call to repentance (Mt 3.7–10). **8:** The assertion to have *Abraham as . . . ancestor* was a claim to privileged standing with God through natural birth (see Jn 8.33,39; Rom 2.28–29). **9:** *Fire,* a symbol of judgment, often eschatological judgment (see 3.16; 16.24).

10 And the crowds asked him, "What then
should we do?" 11 In reply he said to them,
"Whoever has two coats must share with
anyone who has none; and whoever has food
must do likewise." 12 Even tax collectors came
to be baptized, and they asked him, "Teacher,
what should we do?" 13 He said to them, "Col-
lect no more than the amount prescribed
for you." 14 Soldiers also asked him, "And we,
what should we do?" He said to them, "Do not
extort money from anyone by threats or false
accusation, and be satisfied with your wages."

15 As the people were filled with expecta-
tion, and all were questioning in their hearts
concerning John, whether he might be the
Messiah,[a] 16 John answered all of them by say-
ing, "I baptize you with water; but one who
is more powerful than I is coming; I am not
worthy to untie the thong of his sandals. He
will baptize you with[b] the Holy Spirit and fire.
17 His winnowing fork is in his hand, to clear
his threshing floor and to gather the wheat
into his granary; but the chaff he will burn
with unquenchable fire."

18 So, with many other exhortations, he
proclaimed the good news to the people.
19 But Herod the ruler,[c] who had been rebuked
by him because of Herodias, his brother's
wife, and because of all the evil things that
Herod had done, 20 added to them all by shut-
ting up John in prison.

21 Now when all the people were baptized,
and when Jesus also had been baptized and
was praying, the heaven was opened, 22 and
the Holy Spirit descended upon him in bod-
ily form like a dove. And a voice came from
heaven, "You are my Son, the Beloved;[d] with
you I am well pleased."[e]

23 Jesus was about thirty years old when
he began his work. He was the son (as was
thought) of Joseph son of Heli, 24 son of Mat-
that, son of Levi, son of Melchi, son of Jannai,
son of Joseph, 25 son of Mattathias, son of
Amos, son of Nahum, son of Esli, son of Nag-
gai, 26 son of Maath, son of Mattathias, son of
Semein, son of Josech, son of Joda, 27 son of
Joanan, son of Rhesa, son of Zerubbabel, son
of Shealtiel,[f] son of Neri, 28 son of Melchi, son
of Addi, son of Cosam, son of Elmadam, son of
Er, 29 son of Joshua, son of Eliezer, son of Jorim,
son of Matthat, son of Levi, 30 son of Simeon,
son of Judah, son of Joseph, son of Jonam, son
of Eliakim, 31 son of Melea, son of Menna, son of
Mattatha, son of Nathan, son of David, 32 son
of Jesse, son of Obed, son of Boaz, son of Sala,[g]
son of Nahshon, 33 son of Amminadab, son
of Admin, son of Arni,[h] son of Hezron, son of
Perez, son of Judah, 34 son of Jacob, son of Isaac,

[a] Or *the Christ*
[b] Or *in*
[c] Gk *tetrarch*
[d] Or *my beloved Son*
[e] Other ancient authorities read *You are my Son, today I have begotten you*
[f] Gk *Salathiel*
[g] Other ancient authorities read *Salmon*
[h] Other ancient authorities read *Amminadab, son of Aram*; others vary widely

3.10–14: John's directions to the crowd. 11: *Two coats,* lit., "two tunics," usually worn as undergarments. Sharing possessions is a theme of Luke and Acts; see 4.18; 6.30; 10.7,25–37; Acts 2.42–47; 4.32–37.

3.15–18: John's heralding of the messiah (Mt 3.11–12; Mk 1.7–8). **16:** *He will baptize you with the Holy Spirit and fire,* a promise or prophecy fulfilled at Pentecost (Acts 2.1–4). **17:** *Winnowing fork,* a tool used in threshing grain. **18:** John's judgmental message about the coming of the Messiah is, nevertheless, characterized as *good news*: 4.17–21.

3.19–20: John's imprisonment by Herod. Herod Antipas had divorced the daughter of the Nabatean king in order to marry his niece, Herodias, who had been married to Antipas's brother, Herod Philip. In Luke, John's imprisonment is placed before the baptism of Jesus; cf. Mt 14.3–4; Mk 6.17–18.

3.21–22: The baptism of Jesus (Mt 3.13–17; Mk 1.9–11). **21:** Prayer is a regular activity of Jesus and a prominent theme in Luke's portrait (5.16; 6.12; 9.18,28; 11.1; 22.32,41–46). **22:** See Ps 2.7; Isa 42.1. The *voice* from heaven speaks again at the Transfiguration (9.35).

3.23–38: The genealogy of Jesus (Mt 1.1–17). Luke traces the lineage of Jesus back to Adam, the first human (Gen 5.1); linking Jesus' line with God's original creation shows Jesus' common humanity and establishes his credentials as the universal savior. **23–38:** The genealogy traced through the line of Joseph includes the paragons David and Abraham as well as other notable figures. **23–27:** The persons named from *Heli* to *Zerubbabel* are otherwise unknown. For the rest of the genealogy cf. Gen 5.3–32; 11.10–26; Ruth 4.18–22; 1 Chr 1.1–4,24–28; 2.1–15.

son of Abraham, son of Terah, son of Nahor,
35 son of Serug, son of Reu, son of Peleg, son
of Eber, son of Shelah, 36 son of Cainan, son of
Arphaxad, son of Shem, son of Noah, son of
Lamech, 37 son of Methuselah, son of Enoch,
son of Jared, son of Mahalaleel, son of Cainan,
38 son of Enos, son of Seth, son of Adam, son
of God.

4 Jesus, full of the Holy Spirit, returned
from the Jordan and was led by the Spirit
in the wilderness, 2 where for forty days he
was tempted by the devil. He ate nothing at
all during those days, and when they were
over, he was famished. 3 The devil said to
him, "If you are the Son of God, command
this stone to become a loaf of bread." 4 Jesus
answered him, "It is written, 'One does not
live by bread alone.'"
5 Then the devil[a] led him up and showed
him in an instant all the kingdoms of the
world. 6 And the devil[a] said to him, "To you I
will give their glory and all this authority; for
it has been given over to me, and I give it to
anyone I please. 7 If you, then, will worship
me, it will all be yours." 8 Jesus answered him,
"It is written,

'Worship the Lord your God,
and serve only him.'"

9 Then the devil[a] took him to Jerusalem,
and placed him on the pinnacle of the temple, saying to him, "If you are the Son of God,
throw yourself down from here, 10 for it is
written,

'He will command his angels concerning
you,
to protect you,'

11 and

'On their hands they will bear you up,
so that you will not dash your foot
against a stone.'"

12 Jesus answered him, "It is said, 'Do not put
the Lord your God to the test.'" 13 When the
devil had finished every test, he departed
from him until an opportune time.

14 Then Jesus, filled with the power of the
Spirit, returned to Galilee, and a report about
him spread through all the surrounding
country. 15 He began to teach in their synagogues and was praised by everyone.
16 When he came to Nazareth, where he
had been brought up, he went to the synagogue on the sabbath day, as was his custom.
He stood up to read, 17 and the scroll of the
prophet Isaiah was given to him. He unrolled
the scroll and found the place where it was
written:

18 "The Spirit of the Lord is upon me,
because he has anointed me
to bring good news to the poor.
He has sent me to proclaim release to the
captives
and recovery of sight to the blind,
to let the oppressed go free,
19 to proclaim the year of the Lord's
favor."

20 And he rolled up the scroll, gave it back to
the attendant, and sat down. The eyes of all
in the synagogue were fixed on him. 21 Then
he began to say to them, "Today this scripture has been fulfilled in your hearing." 22 All

[a] Gk *he*

4.1–13: The temptation of Jesus (Mt 4.1–11; Mk 1.12–13). Note the emphasis on the (Holy) Spirit. The order of the temptations differs from Matthew's, but the particular tests are the same. **2:** The mention of *forty days* in relation to the stay in the "wilderness" recalls Israel's forty years of wandering in the wilderness after the Exodus (Deut 8.2; see also Deut 9.9; 1 Kings 19.8). **4:** Deut 8.3. **8:** Deut 6.13; 10.20. **10–11:** Ps 91.11–12. **12:** Deut 6.16. **13:** *Until an opportune time,* see 22.3,28,53.

4.14–9.50: Jesus' ministry in Galilee (Mt 4.12–18.35; Mk 1.14–9.50).

4.14–15: The beginning of the Galilean ministry (Mt 4.12–17; Mk 1.14–15). **14:** Luke mentions Jesus' fame repeatedly, see v. 37; 5.15; 7.17. **15:** Synagogues, local places of Jewish worship and instruction; see 4.44.

4.16–30: Jesus in Nazareth (Mt 13.53–58; Mk 6.1–6). Luke has transposed this incident to make it a frontispiece at the outset of Jesus' ministry. The parallel account in Mark 6.1–6 follows earlier appearances and work in Galilee; statements in Luke's version of this incident seem out of sequence because Jesus has not yet engaged in the specific ministry to which he refers in this speech (v. 23). The details given here of synagogue worship are the earliest accounts of them. **17:** *The scroll of . . . Isaiah was given to* Jesus by the attendant of the synagogue (v. 20). Scrolls were kept in a special place in the synagogue and were given to readers by the attendant. **18–19:** Isa

spoke well of him and were amazed at the gracious words that came from his mouth. They said, "Is not this Joseph's son?" 23 He said to them, "Doubtless you will quote to me this proverb, 'Doctor, cure yourself!' And you will say, 'Do here also in your hometown the things that we have heard you did at Capernaum.'" 24 And he said, "Truly I tell you, no prophet is accepted in the prophet's hometown. 25 But the truth is, there were many widows in Israel in the time of Elijah, when the heaven was shut up three years and six months, and there was a severe famine over all the land; 26 yet Elijah was sent to none of them except to a widow at Zarephath in Sidon. 27 There were also many lepers[a] in Israel in the time of the prophet Elisha, and none of them was cleansed except Naaman the Syrian." 28 When they heard this, all in the synagogue were filled with rage. 29 They got up, drove him out of the town, and led him to the brow of the hill on which their town was built, so that they might hurl him off the cliff. 30 But he passed through the midst of them and went on his way.

31 He went down to Capernaum, a city in Galilee, and was teaching them on the sabbath. 32 They were astounded at his teaching, because he spoke with authority. 33 In the synagogue there was a man who had the spirit of an unclean demon, and he cried out with a loud voice, 34 "Let us alone! What have you to do with us, Jesus of Nazareth? Have you come to destroy us? I know who you are, the Holy One of God." 35 But Jesus rebuked him, saying, "Be silent, and come out of him!" When the demon had thrown him down before them, he came out of him without having done him any harm. 36 They were all amazed and kept saying to one another, "What kind of utterance is this? For with authority and power he commands the unclean spirits, and out they come!" 37 And a report about him began to reach every place in the region.

38 After leaving the synagogue he entered Simon's house. Now Simon's mother-in-law was suffering from a high fever, and they asked him about her. 39 Then he stood over her and rebuked the fever, and it left her. Immediately she got up and began to serve them.

40 As the sun was setting, all those who had any who were sick with various kinds of diseases brought them to him; and he laid his hands on each of them and cured them. 41 Demons also came out of many, shouting, "You are the Son of God!" But he rebuked them and would not allow them to speak, because they knew that he was the Messiah.[b]

42 At daybreak he departed and went into a deserted place. And the crowds were looking

[a] The terms *leper* and *leprosy* can refer to several diseases

[b] Or *the Christ*

61.1; 58.6; 61.2. **22:** The initial reaction to Jesus was strikingly positive. **24–27:** Traditions of the prophets (1 Kings 17.8–16; 2 Kings 5.1–14) illustrate that foreigners sometimes experienced God's aid when Israel did not. **28:** The hostile reaction comes in response to Jesus' references to Gentiles (vv. 24–27), not to his apparent messianic claims (v. 21).

4.31–37: Jesus in the synagogue at Capernaum (Mt 4.13; 7.28–29; Mk 1.21–28). Demons were thought of as nonmaterial existences of a personal kind, hostile to human welfare and rebellious against God. The Gospels reflect widespread dread of demons and a general sense of helplessness before demonic activity. Jesus is portrayed here and elsewhere (11.20–22) as one who can deliver persons from demonic oppression and from Satan himself (see 13.16). **31:** This incident is the first of five sabbath healings or exorcisms by Jesus (4.31,38; 6.6; 13.10; 14.1). **32:** Jesus produced astonishment; 2.48; 9.43. **34–36:** The *demon* recognized Jesus' true identity, whereas the people were simply amazed; see 4.41.

4.38–39: The healing of Simon Peter's mother-in-law (Mt 8.14–15; Mk 1.29–31). While not stated explicitly, this incident is another "sabbath healing" (see 4.31n.). Simon Peter is more fully introduced in 5.1–11; 6.13–14. **38–39:** *Simon* a Greek personal name meaning "flat-nosed," is used in the New Testament as an alternative for the Hebrew name "Simeon," which means "hearing."

4.40–41: Healings and exorcisms at sunset (Mt 8.16–17; Mk 1.32–34). With the sabbath ending at sundown, people began to present their problems and maladies to Jesus for attention and healing.

4.42–44: Departure and further preaching in Galilee (Mt 4.23; Mk 1.35–39). **44:** This is the only express men-

for him; and when they reached him, they wanted to prevent him from leaving them. 43 But he said to them, "I must proclaim the good news of the kingdom of God to the other cities also; for I was sent for this purpose." 44 So he continued proclaiming the message in the synagogues of Judea.[a]

5 Once while Jesus[b] was standing beside the lake of Gennesaret, and the crowd was pressing in on him to hear the word of God, 2 he saw two boats there at the shore of the lake; the fishermen had gone out of them and were washing their nets. 3 He got into one of the boats, the one belonging to Simon, and asked him to put out a little way from the shore. Then he sat down and taught the crowds from the boat. 4 When he had finished speaking, he said to Simon, "Put out into the deep water and let down your nets for a catch." 5 Simon answered, "Master, we have worked all night long but have caught nothing. Yet if you say so, I will let down the nets." 6 When they had done this, they caught so many fish that their nets were beginning to break. 7 So they signaled their partners in the other boat to come and help them. And they came and filled both boats, so that they began to sink. 8 But when Simon Peter saw it, he fell down at Jesus' knees, saying, "Go away from me, Lord, for I am a sinful man!" 9 For he and all who were with him were amazed at the catch of fish that they had taken; 10 and so also were James and John, sons of Zebedee, who were partners with Simon. Then Jesus said to Simon, "Do not be afraid; from now on you will be catching people." 11 When they had brought their boats to shore, they left everything and followed him.

12 Once, when he was in one of the cities, there was a man covered with leprosy.[c] When he saw Jesus, he bowed with his face to the ground and begged him, "Lord, if you choose, you can make me clean." 13 Then Jesus[b] stretched out his hand, touched him, and said, "I do choose. Be made clean." Immediately the leprosy[c] left him. 14 And he ordered him to tell no one. "Go," he said, "and show yourself to the priest, and, as Moses commanded, make an offering for your cleansing, for a testimony to them." 15 But now more than ever the word about Jesus[d] spread abroad; many crowds would gather to hear him and to be cured of their diseases. 16 But he would withdraw to deserted places and pray.

17 One day, while he was teaching, Pharisees and teachers of the law were sitting near by (they had come from every village of Galilee and Judea and from Jerusalem); and the power of the Lord was with him to heal.[e] 18 Just then some men came, carrying a paralyzed man on a bed. They were trying to bring him in and lay him before Jesus;[d] 19 but finding no way to bring him in because of the crowd, they went up on the roof and let him down with his bed

[a] Other ancient authorities read *Galilee*
[b] Gk *he*
[c] The terms *leper* and *leprosy* can refer to several diseases
[d] Gk *him*
[e] Other ancient authorities read *was present to heal them*

tion outside the Fourth Gospel of Jesus' early Judean ministry (but compare the implication of Mt 23.37 and Lk 13.34). Here, however, Luke may simply employ *Judea* to refer to the broader Palestinian region as the land of the Jews.

5.1–11: The great catch of fish (Mt 13.1–3a; 4.18–22; Mk 4.1–2; 1.16–20); Jn 21.4–7. **1:** *Lake of Gennesaret,* Sea of Galilee.

5.12–16: The healing of a leper (Mt 8.1–4; Mk 1.40–45). **12–16:** The biblical descriptions of *leprosy* make clear that the term was a generic reference to skin ailments from psoriasis to true leprosy, as well as mold, mildew, and fungus. **14:** Lev 13.2–3; 14.2–32. Jesus' touching this man countered the common religious assumption that such contact rendered a person unclean. The healing demonstrates the power of God in Jesus overcoming that which was deemed unclean.

5.17–26: Healing and forgiveness of sins (Mt 9.1–8; Mk 2.1–12). **17:** The *Pharisees* were lay persons who were part of a religious movement (a sectarian group within Judaism) that was devoted to strict and faithful observance of the law of Moses. The concern of the Pharisees was with both the written form of the law and the interpretation of the law offered and preserved in oral tradition. *The law* is the law of Moses or the Torah. **19:** *Through the tiles* is Luke's adjustment of Mark's story to present a tiled roof rather than the mud-plaster roof in which

through the tiles into the middle of the crowd[a] in front of Jesus. 20 When he saw their faith, he said, "Friend,[b] your sins are forgiven you." 21 Then the scribes and the Pharisees began to question, "Who is this who is speaking blasphemies? Who can forgive sins but God alone?" 22 When Jesus perceived their questionings, he answered them, "Why do you raise such questions in your hearts? 23 Which is easier, to say, 'Your sins are forgiven you,' or to say, 'Stand up and walk'? 24 But so that you may know that the Son of Man has authority on earth to forgive sins"—he said to the one who was paralyzed—"I say to you, stand up and take your bed and go to your home." 25 Immediately he stood up before them, took what he had been lying on, and went to his home, glorifying God. 26 Amazement seized all of them, and they glorified God and were filled with awe, saying, "We have seen strange things today."

27 After this he went out and saw a tax collector named Levi, sitting at the tax booth; and he said to him, "Follow me." 28 And he got up, left everything, and followed him.

29 Then Levi gave a great banquet for him in his house; and there was a large crowd of tax collectors and others sitting at the table[c] with them. 30 The Pharisees and their scribes were complaining to his disciples, saying, "Why do you eat and drink with tax collectors and sinners?" 31 Jesus answered, "Those who are well have no need of a physician, but those who are sick; 32 I have come to call not the righteous but sinners to repentance."

33 Then they said to him, "John's disciples, like the disciples of the Pharisees, frequently fast and pray, but your disciples eat and drink." 34 Jesus said to them, "You cannot make wedding guests fast while the bridegroom is with them, can you? 35 The days will come when the bridegroom will be taken away from them, and then they will fast in those days." 36 He also told them a parable: "No one tears a piece from a new garment and sews it on an old garment; otherwise the new will be torn, and the piece from the new will not match the old. 37 And no one puts new wine into old wineskins; otherwise the new wine will burst the skins and will be spilled, and the skins will be destroyed. 38 But new wine must be put into fresh wineskins. 39 And no one after drinking old wine desires new wine, but says, 'The old is good.'"[d]

6 One sabbath[e] while Jesus[f] was going through the grainfields, his disciples plucked some heads of grain, rubbed them in their hands, and ate them. 2 But some of the Pharisees said, "Why are you doing what is not lawful[g] on the sabbath?" 3 Jesus answered,

[a] Gk *into the midst*
[b] Gk *Man*
[c] Gk *reclining*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *better*; others lack verse 39
[e] Other ancient authorities read *On the second first sabbath*
[f] Gk *he*
[g] Other ancient authorities add *to do*

Mark's account says the people "dug" a hole through which to lower the paralytic. **20:** The connection here between forgiveness of sins and healing reflects an ancient belief that sickness resulted from sin (see Ex 34.7; Jn 9.2). **21:** *Scribes,* the group called "teachers of the law" at 5.17, were Jewish specialists in the law of Moses. Luke also refers to these persons as "lawyers," e.g., 7.30. **21:** "Blasphemy" was a capital offense; see Lev 24.14–16. **24:** *Son of Man,* Jesus' self-designation here and in other Gospel accounts is an ambiguous title that can be understood either to refer to Jesus as a human being among humans (e.g., Ps 8.4; Ezek 2.1) or to identify Jesus with the apocalyptic figure of Dan 7.13–14, who was often understood to be the coming messiah and deputy of God.

5.27–32: The call of Levi (Mt 9.9–13; Mk 2.13–17). **27:** Tax collectors worked directly or indirectly for the Roman overlords and were generally despised by the Jewish population. *Levi* is identified by some as Matthew (6.15; cf. Mt 10.3).

5.33–39: Debate about fasting (Mt 9.14–17; Mk 2.18–22). **34–35:** Jesus' words refer to him as the *bridegroom* and to days *when the bridegroom will be taken away from them* as the time after his death and resurrection. **36:** *Parable,* memorable word-pictures or stories that captured and communicated in sometimes cryptic form the essence of Jesus' message concerning God and God's kingdom. **39:** Found only in Luke, this saying is difficult to interpret. It may be ironic, indicating that contentment with *the old* prevents openness to the *new.*

6.1–11: Eating and healing on the sabbath (Mt 12.1–14; Mk 2.23–3.6). **2:** Harvesting violated the sabbath

"Have you not read what David did when he and his companions were hungry? [4] He entered the house of God and took and ate the bread of the Presence, which it is not lawful for any but the priests to eat, and gave some to his companions?" [5] Then he said to them, "The Son of Man is lord of the sabbath."

[6] On another sabbath he entered the synagogue and taught, and there was a man there whose right hand was withered. [7] The scribes and the Pharisees watched him to see whether he would cure on the sabbath, so that they might find an accusation against him. [8] Even though he knew what they were thinking, he said to the man who had the withered hand, "Come and stand here." He got up and stood there. [9] Then Jesus said to them, "I ask you, is it lawful to do good or to do harm on the sabbath, to save life or to destroy it?" [10] After looking around at all of them, he said to him, "Stretch out your hand." He did so, and his hand was restored. [11] But they were filled with fury and discussed with one another what they might do to Jesus.

[12] Now during those days he went out to the mountain to pray; and he spent the night in prayer to God. [13] And when day came, he called his disciples and chose twelve of them, whom he also named apostles: [14] Simon, whom he named Peter, and his brother Andrew, and James, and John, and Philip, and Bartholomew, [15] and Matthew, and Thomas, and James son of Alphaeus, and Simon, who was called the Zealot, [16] and Judas son of James, and Judas Iscariot, who became a traitor.

[17] He came down with them and stood on a level place, with a great crowd of his disciples and a great multitude of people from all Judea, Jerusalem, and the coast of Tyre and Sidon. [18] They had come to hear him and to be healed of their diseases; and those who were troubled with unclean spirits were cured. [19] And all in the crowd were trying to touch him, for power came out from him and healed all of them.

[20] Then he looked up at his disciples and said:

"Blessed are you who are poor,
for yours is the kingdom of God.
[21] "Blessed are you who are hungry now,
for you will be filled.
"Blessed are you who weep now,
for you will laugh.
[22] "Blessed are you when people hate you, and when they exclude you, revile you, and defame you[a] on account of the Son of Man.
[23] Rejoice in that day and leap for joy, for surely your reward is great in heaven; for that is what their ancestors did to the prophets.
[24] "But woe to you who are rich,
for you have received your consolation.

[a] Gk *cast out your name as evil*

rest (Ex 34.21). **3–4:** Luke's version of this story does not name the priest as in Mk 2.23–26. **3:** 1 Sam 21.1–6. **4:** Lev 24.5–9. **5:** See 5.24n. **6:** See 4.31n. **11:** The Gk word "anioa" translated "fury" more exactly means "lack of understanding."

6.12–16: Jesus' selection of the twelve (Mt 10.1–4; Mk 3.13–19a). Other lists of the twelve occur at Mt 10.2–4; Mk 3.16–19; Acts 1.13; while there is variation, Peter is always named first and Judas Iscariot is always named last. **13:** "The twelve" (8.1; Acts 6.2; etc.) are a recognized and remembered group in early Christianity, and Luke designates the *twelve* to be *apostles* in such a way that the two titles are strictly equated. "Apostle" (from the Gk verb "apostellein," "to send") occurs in the New Testament to designate a Christian who was commissioned to preach the gospel, essentially as a missionary. **14:** The "name" *Peter* is a nickname, meaning "rock." **15:** Zealots were a distinct faction of revolutionaries in the Jewish war with Rome of 66–70 CE, but whether this designation indicates that this *Simon* was zealous in a political fashion is debatable since it is unlikely that a Zealot party existed during Jesus' life. **16:** *Iscariot* is a peculiar term that probably means "the man from Kerioth" (see Josh 15.25); if so, then this Judas was the only Judean among the twelve.

6.17–49: The Sermon on the Plain (Mt 5–7).

6.17–19: The occasion of the preaching (Mt 4.24–5.2; Mk 3.7–13a). **18:** *Unclean spirits* designates "spirits" that are contrary to God. "Clean" and "unclean" were religious terms, not strictly descriptions of sanitary conditions, and can be understood as categories of "holiness" or "sanctity." **19:** Luke emphasizes both that the throngs pressed on Jesus and that Jesus was a source of miraculous power.

6.20–23: The beatitudes (Mt 5.3–12). The focus is on economic and social conditions, not spiritual states.

25 "Woe to you who are full now,
for you will be hungry.
"Woe to you who are laughing now,
for you will mourn and weep.
26 "Woe to you when all speak well of you,
for that is what their ancestors did to the
false prophets.
27 "But I say to you that listen, Love your
enemies, do good to those who hate you,
28 bless those who curse you, pray for those
who abuse you. 29 If anyone strikes you on the
cheek, offer the other also; and from anyone
who takes away your coat do not withhold
even your shirt. 30 Give to everyone who begs
from you; and if anyone takes away your
goods, do not ask for them again. 31 Do to oth-
ers as you would have them do to you.
32 "If you love those who love you, what
credit is that to you? For even sinners love
those who love them. 33 If you do good to
those who do good to you, what credit is that
to you? For even sinners do the same. 34 If
you lend to those from whom you hope to
receive, what credit is that to you? Even sin-
ners lend to sinners, to receive as much again.
35 But love your enemies, do good, and lend,
expecting nothing in return.[a] Your reward
will be great, and you will be children of the
Most High; for he is kind to the ungrateful
and the wicked. 36 Be merciful, just as your
Father is merciful.
37 "Do not judge, and you will not be
judged; do not condemn, and you will not be
condemned. Forgive, and you will be forgiv-
en; 38 give, and it will be given to you. A good
measure, pressed down, shaken together,
running over, will be put into your lap; for the
measure you give will be the measure you get
back."
39 He also told them a parable: "Can a
blind person guide a blind person? Will not
both fall into a pit? 40 A disciple is not above
the teacher, but everyone who is fully quali-
fied will be like the teacher. 41 Why do you
see the speck in your neighbor's[b] eye, but
do not notice the log in your own eye? 42 Or
how can you say to your neighbor,[c] 'Friend,[c]
let me take out the speck in your eye,' when
you yourself do not see the log in your own
eye? You hypocrite, first take the log out of
your own eye, and then you will see clearly
to take the speck out of your neighbor's[b]
eye.
43 "No good tree bears bad fruit, nor again
does a bad tree bear good fruit; 44 for each
tree is known by its own fruit. Figs are not
gathered from thorns, nor are grapes picked
from a bramble bush. 45 The good person out
of the good treasure of the heart produces
good, and the evil person out of evil treasure
produces evil; for it is out of the abundance
of the heart that the mouth speaks.
46 "Why do you call me 'Lord, Lord,' and
do not do what I tell you? 47 I will show you
what someone is like who comes to me, hears
my words, and acts on them. 48 That one is
like a man building a house, who dug deeply
and laid the foundation on rock; when a flood
arose, the river burst against that house but
could not shake it, because it had been well
built.[d] 49 But the one who hears and does not
act is like a man who built a house on the

[a] Other ancient authorities read *despairing of no one*
[b] Gk *brother's*
[c] Gk *brother*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *founded upon the rock*

6.24–26: The woes. These verses provide a point-by-point antithesis to the previous statements of blessing in vv. 20–23. Again, actual circumstances are the point of Jesus' statements. In Jesus' declarations of blessings and woes, the earthly status of those addressed will be reversed in the divinely determined future.

6.27–36: The love of enemies (Mt 5.38–48; 7.12). Jesus demands love and forbids spite or retaliation. **28:** In Luke, Jesus gives an example of this on the cross in 23.34, if that verse is authentic. **31:** Luke's version of the "Golden Rule," see Mt 7.12. **34–35:** For Israelite laws concerning loans, see Ex 22.25; Lev 25.36–37; Deut 23.19–20. **36:** Cf. Mt 5.48; God's own actions and character provide the standard.

6.37–42: On judging others (Mt 7.1–5; 12.36–37; 15.14; Mk 4.24–25). **41–42:** The form of this teaching is hyperbole.

6.43–45: The sources of good and evil (Mt 7.15–20; 12.33–35). Cf. Jas 3.11–12. **45:** *Heart*, for the ancients the heart was the body's mental and spiritual center.

6.46–49: The wise and the foolish builders (Mt 7.21–27). Cf. Jas 1.22–25.

ground without a foundation. When the river burst against it, immediately it fell, and great was the ruin of that house."

7 After Jesus[a] had finished all his sayings in the hearing of the people, he entered Capernaum. [2] A centurion there had a slave whom he valued highly, and who was ill and close to death. [3] When he heard about Jesus, he sent some Jewish elders to him, asking him to come and heal his slave. [4] When they came to Jesus, they appealed to him earnestly, saying, "He is worthy of having you do this for him, [5] for he loves our people, and it is he who built our synagogue for us." [6] And Jesus went with them, but when he was not far from the house, the centurion sent friends to say to him, "Lord, do not trouble yourself, for I am not worthy to have you come under my roof; [7] therefore I did not presume to come to you. But only speak the word, and let my servant be healed. [8] For I also am a man set under authority, with soldiers under me; and I say to one, 'Go,' and he goes, and to another, 'Come,' and he comes, and to my slave, 'Do this,' and the slave does it." [9] When Jesus heard this he was amazed at him, and turning to the crowd that followed him, he said, "I tell you, not even in Israel have I found such faith." [10] When those who had been sent returned to the house, they found the slave in good health.

[11] Soon afterwards[b] he went to a town called Nain, and his disciples and a large crowd went with him. [12] As he approached the gate of the town, a man who had died was being carried out. He was his mother's only son, and she was a widow; and with her was a large crowd from the town. [13] When the Lord saw her, he had compassion for her and said to her, "Do not weep." [14] Then he came forward and touched the bier, and the bearers stood still. And he said, "Young man, I say to you, rise!" [15] The dead man sat up and began to speak, and Jesus[a] gave him to his mother. [16] Fear seized all of them; and they glorified God, saying, "A great prophet has risen among us!" and "God has looked favorably on his people!" [17] This word about him spread throughout Judea and all the surrounding country.

[18] The disciples of John reported all these things to him. So John summoned two of his disciples [19] and sent them to the Lord to ask, "Are you the one who is to come, or are we to wait for another?" [20] When the men had come to him, they said, "John the Baptist has sent us to you to ask, 'Are you the one who is to come, or are we to wait for another?'" [21] Jesus[c] had just then cured many people of diseases, plagues, and evil spirits, and had given sight to many who were blind. [22] And he answered them, "Go and tell John what you have seen and heard: the blind receive their sight, the lame walk, the lepers[d] are cleansed, the deaf hear, the dead are raised, the poor have good news brought to them. [23] And blessed is anyone who takes no offense at me."

[a] Gk *he*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *Next day*
[c] Gk *He*
[d] The terms *leper* and *leprosy* can refer to several diseases

7.1–10: The centurion's slave (Mt 8.5–13). This story parallels the account of Peter's conversion of the Gentile centurion Cornelius, who was also generous to the Jews; see Acts 10.2,34–35. **2:** *Centurion,* an officer in charge of a company of 100 soldiers. Clearly a Gentile, this particular centurion was either an employee of Herod Antipas, a member of the Roman police force, or an official attached to the customs service. **3:** *Elders,* leaders in the Jewish community. **6:** According to Acts 10.28, the house of a Gentile was considered unclean, and entering such a home defiled a Jew (see also *m. Oholot* 18.7). **9:** Though Luke lacks the climactic utterance of Mt 8.13, his intent is the same: The faith of a Gentile is acceptable to Jesus (4.27; 5.32).

7.11–17: The widow's son at Nain. Cf. 1 Kings 17.17–24; 2 Kings 4.32–37; see Lk 4.25–26. **11:** *Nain,* about 37 km (23 mi) southwest of Capernaum. **12:** Cemeteries were usually located outside a city or town. This description of the widow implies that she is utterly destitute with the death of her son. **16:** Apparently the similarity of Jesus' action to that of Elijah in raising the only son of a widow of Zarephath (1 Kings 17) elicits the reaction of the crowd. **17:** See 4.42–44n.

7.18–35: Jesus and John the Baptist (Mt 11.2–19). **18:** *John* the Baptist was at this time in prison (see 2.9) at Machaerus, east of the Dead Sea. **19:** *Lord,* Luke's own title for Jesus. *The one who is to come,* the messiah.

24 When John's messengers had gone,
Jesus[a] began to speak to the crowds about
John:[b] "What did you go out into the wilder-
ness to look at? A reed shaken by the wind?
25 What then did you go out to see? Someone[c]
dressed in soft robes? Look, those who put
on fine clothing and live in luxury are in royal
palaces. 26 What then did you go out to see?
A prophet? Yes, I tell you, and more than a
prophet. 27 This is the one about whom it is
written,

'See, I am sending my messenger ahead of
you,
who will prepare your way before you.'

28 I tell you, among those born of women no
one is greater than John; yet the least in the
kingdom of God is greater than he." 29 (And
all the people who heard this, including the
tax collectors, acknowledged the justice of
God,[d] because they had been baptized with
John's baptism. 30 But by refusing to be bap-
tized by him, the Pharisees and the lawyers
rejected God's purpose for themselves.)

31 "To what then will I compare the people
of this generation, and what are they like?
32 They are like children sitting in the market-
place and calling to one another,

'We played the flute for you, and you did
not dance;
we wailed, and you did not weep.'

33 For John the Baptist has come eating no
bread and drinking no wine, and you say, 'He
has a demon'; 34 the Son of Man has come
eating and drinking, and you say, 'Look, a
glutton and a drunkard, a friend of tax collec-
tors and sinners!' 35 Nevertheless, wisdom is
vindicated by all her children."

36 One of the Pharisees asked Jesus[b] to
eat with him, and he went into the Phari-
see's house and took his place at the table.
37 And a woman in the city, who was a sin-
ner, having learned that he was eating in
the Pharisee's house, brought an alabaster
jar of ointment. 38 She stood behind him at
his feet, weeping, and began to bathe his
feet with her tears and to dry them with
her hair. Then she continued kissing his
feet and anointing them with the oint-
ment. 39 Now when the Pharisee who had
invited him saw it, he said to himself, "If
this man were a prophet, he would have
known who and what kind of woman this is
who is touching him—that she is a sinner."
40 Jesus spoke up and said to him, "Simon,
I have something to say to you." "Teacher,"
he replied, "speak." 41 "A certain creditor
had two debtors; one owed five hundred
denarii,[e] and the other fifty. 42 When they
could not pay, he canceled the debts for
both of them. Now which of them will love
him more?" 43 Simon answered, "I suppose
the one for whom he canceled the greater
debt." And Jesus[a] said to him, "You have
judged rightly." 44 Then turning toward the
woman, he said to Simon, "Do you see this
woman? I entered your house; you gave me
no water for my feet, but she has bathed my
feet with her tears and dried them with her
hair. 45 You gave me no kiss, but from the
time I came in she has not stopped kissing
my feet. 46 You did not anoint my head with
oil, but she has anointed my feet with oint-

[a] Gk *he*
[b] Gk *him*
[c] Or *Why then did you go out? To see someone*
[d] Or *praised God*
[e] The denarius was the usual day's wage for a laborer

22: This verse contains phrases from Isa 29.18; 42.18; 26.19; see also Isa 35.5–6; 61.1; Lk 4.18–19. **24–30:** Jesus' statements concerning John indicate the nature of the relationship between them. John is Jesus' precursor, the messenger mentioned in Mal 3.1 and identified in Mal 3.23 as Elijah. John, then, is an Elijah-like figure, not Elijah reincarnated. **27:** Ex 23.20; Mal 3.1. **28:** A pivotal point arises with the ministries of John and Jesus. **30:** *The Pharisees and the lawyers* are specific, not simply all, members of their classes. **33:** *Demon* possession is offered as the explanation of unconventional behavior or attitudes that were deemed unacceptable or inappropriate. **35:** The personification of "Wisdom" is a way to speak of God and God's purposes; thus, Wisdom's *children* are those who do God's will.

7.36–50: Simon the Pharisee, Jesus, and the woman with the ointment (Mt 26.6–13; Mk 14.3–9; Jn 12.1–8). **37:** Houses seem to have been open to intrusion of this kind (cf. Mk 1.33; 2.2). The story seems to presuppose a previous encounter between Jesus and the woman, a story not told in this Gospel. **38:** Jesus reclined at the banquet table, stretching out his feet on a couch. The motivation for the woman's anointing Jesus' feet rather than

ment. 47 Therefore, I tell you, her sins, which were many, have been forgiven; hence she has shown great love. But the one to whom little is forgiven, loves little." 48 Then he said to her, "Your sins are forgiven." 49 But those who were at the table with him began to say among themselves, "Who is this who even forgives sins?" 50 And he said to the woman, "Your faith has saved you; go in peace."

8 Soon afterwards he went on through cities and villages, proclaiming and bringing the good news of the kingdom of God. The twelve were with him, 2 as well as some women who had been cured of evil spirits and infirmities: Mary, called Magdalene, from whom seven demons had gone out, 3 and Joanna, the wife of Herod's steward Chuza, and Susanna, and many others, who provided for them[a] out of their resources.

4 When a great crowd gathered and people from town after town came to him, he said in a parable: 5 "A sower went out to sow his seed; and as he sowed, some fell on the path and was trampled on, and the birds of the air ate it up. 6 Some fell on the rock; and as it grew up, it withered for lack of moisture. 7 Some fell among thorns, and the thorns grew with it and choked it. 8 Some fell into good soil, and when it grew, it produced a hundredfold." As he said this, he called out, "Let anyone with ears to hear listen!"

9 Then his disciples asked him what this parable meant. 10 He said, "To you it has been given to know the secrets[b] of the kingdom of God; but to others I speak[c] in parables, so that

'looking they may not perceive,
and listening they may not understand.'

11 "Now the parable is this: The seed is the word of God. 12 The ones on the path are those who have heard; then the devil comes and takes away the word from their hearts, so that they may not believe and be saved. 13 The ones on the rock are those who, when they hear the word, receive it with joy. But these have no root; they believe only for a while and in a time of testing fall away. 14 As for what fell among the thorns, these are the ones who hear; but as they go on their way, they are choked by the cares and riches and pleasures of life, and their fruit does not mature. 15 But as for that in the good soil, these are the ones who, when they hear the word, hold it fast in an honest and good heart, and bear fruit with patient endurance.

16 "No one after lighting a lamp hides it under a jar, or puts it under a bed, but puts it

[a] Other ancient authorities read *him*
[b] Or *mysteries*
[c] Gk lacks *I speak*

his head, which was the normal action, is uncertain. **47:** *Hence she has shown great love,* her great love proving that her many sins had been forgiven. Cf. v. 48; 5.20. **50:** Cf. 8.48; 17.19; 18.42. The story combines the ideas of faith, salvation, forgiveness, and peace.

8.1–3: Jesus' tour and the ministering women. These verses recall the itinerant character of Jesus' preaching, teaching, and healing. His entourage included the unusual combination of male and female followers. Given ancient Palestinian attitudes toward women, this association of these Galilean women with Jesus' ministry is remarkable, as is the mixture of the sexes among the followers. Many of those persons mentioned here later follow Jesus to Jerusalem and witness his arrest, crucifixion, death, burial, empty tomb, and resurrection appearances. See 23.49. **2:** *Mary, called Magdalene,* apparently came from Magdala on the western coast of the Sea of Galilee. There is no evidence to identify her with the woman in 7.36–50. **3:** Herod's *steward* was probably a domestic administrator. *Others,* i.e., other women.

8.4–8: Parable of the sower (Mt 13.1–9; Mk 4.1–9). **4–8:** The parable invites allegorization, which follows in 8.11–15.

8.9–10: Jesus' explanation of parables (Mt 13.10–17; Mk 4.1–10). **10:** Paraphrase of Isa 6.9–10. See Mk 4.11; Mt 13.11; Jer 5.21; Ezek 12.2. The meaning of the statement is enigmatic and implies that parables deliberately created obscurity while actually revealing a message.

8.11–15: Interpretation of the parable of the sower (Mt 13.18–23; Mk 4.13–20). **15:** The words *honest and good,* here spoken of the heart (cf. Mk 7.21–23), echo the classical Greek description of the true gentleman. *Heart,* see 6.45n.

8.16–18: On obedient listening (Mt 5.15; 10.26; 13.12; Mk 4.21–25).

on a lampstand, so that those who enter may see the light. 17 For nothing is hidden that will not be disclosed, nor is anything secret that will not become known and come to light. 18 Then pay attention to how you listen; for to those who have, more will be given; and from those who do not have, even what they seem to have will be taken away."

19 Then his mother and his brothers came to him, but they could not reach him because of the crowd. 20 And he was told, "Your mother and your brothers are standing outside, wanting to see you." 21 But he said to them, "My mother and my brothers are those who hear the word of God and do it."

22 One day he got into a boat with his disciples, and he said to them, "Let us go across to the other side of the lake." So they put out, 23 and while they were sailing he fell asleep. A windstorm swept down on the lake, and the boat was filling with water, and they were in danger. 24 They went to him and woke him up, shouting, "Master, Master, we are perishing!" And he woke up and rebuked the wind and the raging waves; they ceased, and there was a calm. 25 He said to them, "Where is your faith?" They were afraid and amazed, and said to one another, "Who then is this, that he commands even the winds and the water, and they obey him?"

26 Then they arrived at the country of the Gerasenes,[a] which is opposite Galilee. 27 As he stepped out on land, a man of the city who had demons met him. For a long time he had worn[b] no clothes, and he did not live in a house but in the tombs. 28 When he saw Jesus, he fell down before him and shouted at the top of his voice, "What have you to do with me, Jesus, Son of the Most High God? I beg you, do not torment me"— 29 for Jesus[c] had commanded the unclean spirit to come out of the man. (For many times it had seized him; he was kept under guard and bound with chains and shackles, but he would break the bonds and be driven by the demon into the wilds.) 30 Jesus then asked him, "What is your name?" He said, "Legion"; for many demons had entered him. 31 They begged him not to order them to go back into the abyss.

32 Now there on the hillside a large herd of swine was feeding; and the demons[d] begged Jesus[e] to let them enter these. So he gave them permission. 33 Then the demons came

[a] Other ancient authorities read *Gadarenes*; others, *Gergesenes*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *a man of the city who had had demons for a long time met him. He wore*
[c] Gk *he*
[d] Gk *they*
[e] Gk *him*

8.19–21: Jesus' true relatives (Mt 12.46–50; Mk 3.31–35). **19:** *Brothers,* four names are given in Mk 6.3, and there is also a mention of sisters. A variety of explanations come from the early church, usually arguing that they were sons of Joseph by a previous marriage, or that they were cousins, or that they were the natural children of Joseph and Mary. **21:** Luke seems to soften Mark's version of Jesus' reply, not reporting items such as Mk 3.20–21,33, so that the natural family of Jesus is not rejected as Jesus highlights the importance of obedience to God as the essential criterion for intimacy and mutual concern among Jesus' followers.

8.22–25: Winds and water obey (Mt 8.23–27; Mk 4.35–41). Power over the elements is a divine capacity often celebrated in the Psalms and other texts (see Ps 107.28–30).

8.26–39: The Gerasene demoniac (Mt 8.28–34; Mk 5.1–20). **26:** *Gerasenes,* the territory of the city of Gerasa (modern Jerash) was in central Transjordan; its population was largely non-Jewish. Mt 8.28 situates this event in Gadara, southeast of the Sea of Galilee, a setting that fits the narrative somewhat better. **28:** The demon-possessed man recognized Jesus' true identity. **30:** The inquiry after the name of the demon-possessed man probably reflects the ancient idea that knowledge of the name of a supernatural power gave one an advantage over it (see, e.g., Gen 32.29). *Legion,* the technical term for a division of the Roman army, usually consisting of about five thousand troops; thus the name suggests a horde of demons (see 11.24–26). **31:** *Abyss,* a place of confinement for demonic forces which, though hostile to God, are ultimately under his control (Rev 9.1–11; 11.7; 17.8; 20.1–3). The words attribute a judicial authority to Jesus (as do Mt 7.21–23; 11.20–24). **32:** *Swine,* Jews were prohibited from eating pork (Lev 11.7; Deut 14.8), but the pigs were raised for the large Gentile population that lived in sections of Palestine. Contrast Jesus' instructions to "declare how much God has done for you" with the man's action of "proclaiming throughout the city how much Jesus has done for him."

out of the man and entered the swine, and the herd rushed down the steep bank into the lake and was drowned.

34 When the swineherds saw what had happened, they ran off and told it in the city and in the country. 35 Then people came out to see what had happened, and when they came to Jesus, they found the man from whom the demons had gone sitting at the feet of Jesus, clothed and in his right mind. And they were afraid. 36 Those who had seen it told them how the one who had been possessed by demons had been healed. 37 Then all the people of the surrounding country of the Gerasenes[a] asked Jesus[b] to leave them; for they were seized with great fear. So he got into the boat and returned. 38 The man from whom the demons had gone begged that he might be with him; but Jesus[c] sent him away, saying, 39 "Return to your home, and declare how much God has done for you." So he went away, proclaiming throughout the city how much Jesus had done for him.

40 Now when Jesus returned, the crowd welcomed him, for they were all waiting for him. 41 Just then there came a man named Jairus, a leader of the synagogue. He fell at Jesus' feet and begged him to come to his house, 42 for he had an only daughter, about twelve years old, who was dying.

As he went, the crowds pressed in on him. 43 Now there was a woman who had been suffering from hemorrhages for twelve years; and though she had spent all she had on physicians,[d] no one could cure her. 44 She came up behind him and touched the fringe of his clothes, and immediately her hemorrhage stopped. 45 Then Jesus asked, "Who touched me?" When all denied it, Peter[e] said, "Master, the crowds surround you and press in on you." 46 But Jesus said, "Someone touched me; for I noticed that power had gone out from me." 47 When the woman saw that she could not remain hidden, she came trembling; and falling down before him, she declared in the presence of all the people why she had touched him, and how she had been immediately healed. 48 He said to her, "Daughter, your faith has made you well; go in peace."

49 While he was still speaking, someone came from the leader's house to say, "Your daughter is dead; do not trouble the teacher any longer." 50 When Jesus heard this, he replied, "Do not fear. Only believe, and she will be saved." 51 When he came to the house, he did not allow anyone to enter with him, except Peter, John, and James, and the child's father and mother. 52 They were all weeping and wailing for her; but he said, "Do not weep; for she is not dead but sleeping." 53 And they laughed at him, knowing that she was dead. 54 But he took her by the hand and called out, "Child, get up!" 55 Her spirit returned, and she got up at once. Then he directed them to give her something to eat. 56 Her parents were astounded; but he ordered them to tell no one what had happened.

9 Then Jesus[c] called the twelve together and gave them power and authority over all demons and to cure diseases, 2 and he sent them out to proclaim the kingdom of God and to heal. 3 He said to them, "Take nothing for your journey, no staff, nor bag, nor bread, nor money—not even an extra tunic. 4 Whatever house you enter, stay there, and leave from there. 5 Wherever they do not welcome you, as you are leaving that town shake

[a] Other ancient authorities read *Gadarenes*; others, *Gergesenes*
[b] Gk *him*
[c] Gk *he*
[d] Other ancient authorities lack *and though she had spent all she had on physicians*
[e] Other ancient authorities add *and those who were with him*

8.40–56: Jairus's daughter and the hemorrhaging woman (Mt 9.18–26; Mk 5.21–43). **41:** *Leader of the synagogue,* one who held responsibility for overseeing and arranging the worship and life of the congregation. **42:** Parallel elements in the two stories incorporate them into a larger whole—e.g., *daughter*, 8.42 and 48; *twelve years*, 8.42 and 43. **43:** Cf. Lev 15.25–30. Since the exact nature of this issue of blood is not specified, precise diagnoses are speculative. Cf. 7.50. **55:** Cf. 1 Kings 17.22.

9.1–6: Commissioning the twelve (Mt 10.1–14; Mk 6.6b–13). The sharing of power by Jesus with the disciples indicates their continuation and extension of his ministry as seen in the preceding stories. **3–4:** These instructions contrast with the practices of Cynic philosophers. **3:** The command to *take nothing for [*the*] journey* forces

the dust off your feet as a testimony against them." [6] They departed and went through the villages, bringing the good news and curing diseases everywhere.

[7] Now Herod the ruler[a] heard about all that had taken place, and he was perplexed, because it was said by some that John had been raised from the dead, [8] by some that Elijah had appeared, and by others that one of the ancient prophets had arisen. [9] Herod said, "John I beheaded; but who is this about whom I hear such things?" And he tried to see him.

[10] On their return the apostles told Jesus[b] all they had done. He took them with him and withdrew privately to a city called Bethsaida. [11] When the crowds found out about it, they followed him; and he welcomed them, and spoke to them about the kingdom of God, and healed those who needed to be cured.

[12] The day was drawing to a close, and the twelve came to him and said, "Send the crowd away, so that they may go into the surrounding villages and countryside, to lodge and get provisions; for we are here in a deserted place." [13] But he said to them, "You give them something to eat." They said, "We have no more than five loaves and two fish—unless we are to go and buy food for all these people." [14] For there were about five thousand men. And he said to his disciples, "Make them sit down in groups of about fifty each." [15] They did so and made them all sit down. [16] And taking the five loaves and the two fish, he looked up to heaven, and blessed and broke them, and gave them to the disciples to set before the crowd. [17] And all ate and were filled. What was left over was gathered up, twelve baskets of broken pieces.

[18] Once when Jesus[c] was praying alone, with only the disciples near him, he asked them, "Who do the crowds say that I am?" [19] They answered, "John the Baptist; but others, Elijah; and still others, that one of the ancient prophets has arisen." [20] He said to them, "But who do you say that I am?" Peter answered, "The Messiah[d] of God."

[21] He sternly ordered and commanded them not to tell anyone, [22] saying, "The Son of Man must undergo great suffering, and be rejected by the elders, chief priests, and scribes, and be killed, and on the third day be raised."

[23] Then he said to them all, "If any want to become my followers, let them deny themselves and take up their cross daily and follow me. [24] For those who want to save

[a] Gk *tetrarch*
[b] Gk *him*
[c] Gk *he*
[d] Or *The Christ*

the twelve to rely completely on God for their ministry. **5:** The act of shaking off dust was a graphic demonstration of renunciation of further responsibility for those who did not welcome the twelve; cf. 10.10–12.

9.7–9: Herod's curiosity about Jesus (Mt 14.1–2; Mk 6.14–16). *Herod* Antipas, son of Herod the Great; see 3.1n. Cf. 9.18–19. **9:** *John I beheaded,* see Mk 6.17–29.

9.10–11: The apostles' return and the crowds' following Jesus (Mt 14.12–14; Mk 6.30–34). **10:** *Bethsaida,* located just north of the Sea of Galilee.

9.12–17: Feeding of the five thousand (Mt 14.15–21; Mk 6.35–44; Jn 6.5–14). The one story from the account of Jesus' ministry that occurs in all four canonical Gospels. **14:** *Five thousand men*, not counting any women and children. **16:** The language of this sentence anticipates the account of the Last Supper in 22.17–20.

9.18–20: Peter's confession (Mt 16.13–19; Mk 8.27–29). **19:** The answers to Jesus' question illustrate the variety of expectations (some messianic) among Jews of Jesus' day. *The Messiah of God,* translates Gk "ho christos tou theou," lit., "God's anointed one," a title that typically named a royal Davidic leader who would reconstitute the former political glory of Israel for the people and the nation.

9.21–22: Jesus' command to silence and first prediction of his death (Mt 16.20–21; Mk 8.30–31). Jesus' forceful direction to silence probably reflects his attempt to prevent misunderstandings of his "messianic" work. In turn, Luke's version of this first prediction does not include the attempt of Peter to redirect Jesus' thinking and commitments, so that Peter's previous confession (9.20) maintains more force in this version of the story than in Mark's account, in which Jesus sharply rebukes him (Mk 8.32–33).

9.23–27: The requirements of discipleship (Mt 16.24–28; Mk 8.34–9.1). *Take up their cross daily and follow me,* the Greek is not cast in the plural (*any . . . their*) but in the singular (lit., "anyone . . . his"), so that the challenge

their life will lose it, and those who lose their life for my sake will save it. 25 What does it profit them if they gain the whole world, but lose or forfeit themselves? 26 Those who are ashamed of me and of my words, of them the Son of Man will be ashamed when he comes in his glory and the glory of the Father and of the holy angels. 27 But truly I tell you, there are some standing here who will not taste death before they see the kingdom of God."

28 Now about eight days after these sayings Jesus[a] took with him Peter and John and James, and went up on the mountain to pray. 29 And while he was praying, the appearance of his face changed, and his clothes became dazzling white. 30 Suddenly they saw two men, Moses and Elijah, talking to him. 31 They appeared in glory and were speaking of his departure, which he was about to accomplish at Jerusalem. 32 Now Peter and his companions were weighed down with sleep; but since they had stayed awake,[b] they saw his glory and the two men who stood with him. 33 Just as they were leaving him, Peter said to Jesus, "Master, it is good for us to be here; let us make three dwellings,[c] one for you, one for Moses, and one for Elijah"—not knowing what he said. 34 While he was saying this, a cloud came and overshadowed them; and they were terrified as they entered the cloud. 35 Then from the cloud came a voice that said, "This is my Son, my Chosen;[d] listen to him!" 36 When the voice had spoken, Jesus was found alone. And they kept silent and in those days told no one any of the things they had seen.

37 On the next day, when they had come down from the mountain, a great crowd met him. 38 Just then a man from the crowd shouted, "Teacher, I beg you to look at my son; he is my only child. 39 Suddenly a spirit seizes him, and all at once he[e] shrieks. It convulses him until he foams at the mouth; it mauls him and will scarcely leave him. 40 I begged your disciples to cast it out, but they could not." 41 Jesus answered, "You faithless and perverse generation, how much longer must I be with you and bear with you? Bring your son here." 42 While he was coming, the demon dashed him to the ground in convulsions. But Jesus rebuked the unclean spirit, healed the boy, and gave him back to his father. 43 And all were astounded at the greatness of God.

While everyone was amazed at all that he was doing, he said to his disciples, 44 "Let these words sink into your ears: The Son of Man is going to be betrayed into human hands." 45 But they did not understand this saying; its meaning was concealed from

[a] Gk *he*
[b] Or *but when they were fully awake*
[c] Or *tents*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *my Beloved*
[e] Or *it*

is intensely personal. The temporal qualifier *daily* makes clear the ongoing character of discipleship. **26:** Jesus' words anticipate a final day of divine judgment. **27:** Jesus' enigmatic statement invites various interpretations; one is that it refers to the time after the resurrection.

9.28–36: The Transfiguration (Mt 17.1–9; Mk 9.2–10). This account recalls an intense religious experience, the exact nature of which is uncertain. The aura of unnatural brilliance is associated with mystical experiences elsewhere (Ex 34.29–35; Acts 9.3). **28:** *About eight days,* may merely indicate the passage of a week, but in the early church "the eighth day" became a designation for both the Lord's day and the day of Jesus' resurrection, the first day of a new creation. **30:** *Moses and Elijah,* two paragons of the faith of Israel: Moses was the lawgiver and Elijah the great prophet. **31:** *Departure,* lit., "exodus," probably referring to Jesus' death, resurrection, and ascension. **32:** The sleepy condition of the disciples may indicate that this event transpired at night (cf. 22.45). **33:** Peter's suggestion concerning *three dwellings* demonstrates his desire to preserve the experience. **34:** The association of God with a cloud in reminiscent of Israel's exodus experience of God, see Ex 13.17–22. **35:** The *voice* is clearly that of God (see 3.22), and the command, *listen to him,* focuses the attention and obedience of the disciples on Jesus above all others.

9.37–43a: Jesus heals an afflicted boy (Mt 17.14–21; Mk 9.14–29). The description of the boy's malady leads some scholars to conclude that the boy had epilepsy, but any diagnosis is speculative.

9.43b–45: A second prediction (Mt 17.22–23; Mk 9.30–32). Cf. 9.22; 18.31–33. **44:** 9.22; 18.31–34; 17.25. **45:** The comment is based on the view that (a) the messiah's death was not part of the disciples' Jewish faith, and

them, so that they could not perceive it. And they were afraid to ask him about this saying.

46 An argument arose among them as to which one of them was the greatest. 47 But Jesus, aware of their inner thoughts, took a little child and put it by his side, 48 and said to them, "Whoever welcomes this child in my name welcomes me, and whoever welcomes me welcomes the one who sent me; for the least among all of you is the greatest."

49 John answered, "Master, we saw someone casting out demons in your name, and we tried to stop him, because he does not follow with us." 50 But Jesus said to him, "Do not stop him; for whoever is not against you is for you."

51 When the days drew near for him to be taken up, he set his face to go to Jerusalem. 52 And he sent messengers ahead of him. On their way they entered a village of the Samaritans to make ready for him; 53 but they did not receive him, because his face was set toward Jerusalem. 54 When his disciples James and John saw it, they said, "Lord, do you want us to command fire to come down from heaven and consume them?"[a] 55 But he turned and rebuked them. 56 Then[b] they went on to another village.

57 As they were going along the road, someone said to him, "I will follow you wherever you go." 58 And Jesus said to him, "Foxes have holes, and birds of the air have nests; but the Son of Man has nowhere to lay his head." 59 To another he said, "Follow me." But he said, "Lord, first let me go and bury my father." 60 But Jesus[c] said to him, "Let the dead bury their own dead; but as for you, go and proclaim the kingdom of God." 61 Another said, "I will follow you, Lord; but let me first say farewell to those at my home." 62 Jesus said to him, "No one who puts a hand to the plow and looks back is fit for the kingdom of God."

10 After this the Lord appointed seventy[d] others and sent them on ahead of him in pairs to every town and place where he himself intended to go. 2 He said to them, "The harvest is plentiful, but the laborers

[a] Other ancient authorities add *as Elijah did*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *rebuked them, and said, "You do not know what spirit you are of,* 56*for the Son of Man has not come to destroy the lives of human beings but to save them." Then*
[c] Gk *he*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *seventy-two*

(b) spiritual truth must be revealed (see 24.16).

9.46–48: True greatness (Mt 18.1–5; Mk 9.33–37). An acted parable rejecting self-centered ambition. **47:** The reception of the *little child* requires generosity without expectation of gain.

9.49–50: The unknown exorcist (Mk 9.38–41). This incident records Jesus' repudiation of intolerance, though contrast the statement in 11.23, which indicates the necessity of aligning actions and concerns with Jesus' values and work.

9.51–19.27: Jesus' journey to Jerusalem with his followers (Mt 19.1–20.34; Mk 10.1–52). This section, most of which is found only in Luke, reports the ministry of Jesus in Samaria and Judea.

9.51: Jesus' resolve to go to Jerusalem (Mt 19.1–2; Mk 10.1). *To be taken up,* explicitly refers to the ascension, but probably also designates Jesus' suffering, death, and resurrection that led to his departure into heaven. *He set his face to go to Jerusalem,* states Jesus' resolve using a Semitic idiom (see Isa 50.7).

9.52–56: Samaritans' rejection of Jesus. 52–53: The Samaritans did not help pilgrims going to keep a feast at what they regarded as the wrong sanctuary (cf. Jn 4.20). **52:** *Samaritan* is a geographical designation used also to name an inhabitant of Samaria, which was originally the capital of the former Northern Kingdom of Israel that fell to the Assyrians in 722 BCE. *Samaritan* became a term for persons living between Judea and Galilee who came to be regarded as a distinct ethnic and religious group. Tensions existed between Samaritans and Jews after the return of the Jews from exile in Babylon (538 BCE) and remained, as this story recognizes, in Jesus' day. **54:** Incorporates wordings parallel to 2 Kings 1.10–12. Elijah had called down fire from heaven on hostile troops (see 2 Kings 1.9–16). See 9.3–5 for Jesus' instructions for dealing with rejection.

9.57–62: The demands of following Jesus (Mt 8.18–22). **59:** From the statement that follows (v. 60), the man's father was almost certainly not yet dead; rather, the man used this responsibility to procrastinate complete commitment to discipleship. **60:** *Let the dead bury their own dead,* suggests that the spiritually dead should be left to bury the physically dead. **61:** See 1 Kings 19.20.

10.1–12: The mission of the seventy (Mt 9.37–38; 10.7–16). **1:** 9.1–5,51–52; Mk 6.7–11. **4:** *Greet no one,* which

are few; therefore ask the Lord of the harvest to send out laborers into his harvest. 3 Go on your way. See, I am sending you out like lambs into the midst of wolves. 4 Carry no purse, no bag, no sandals; and greet no one on the road. 5 Whatever house you enter, first say, 'Peace to this house!' 6 And if anyone is there who shares in peace, your peace will rest on that person; but if not, it will return to you. 7 Remain in the same house, eating and drinking whatever they provide, for the laborer deserves to be paid. Do not move about from house to house. 8 Whenever you enter a town and its people welcome you, eat what is set before you; 9 cure the sick who are there, and say to them, 'The kingdom of God has come near to you.'[a] 10 But whenever you enter a town and they do not welcome you, go out into its streets and say, 11 'Even the dust of your town that clings to our feet, we wipe off in protest against you. Yet know this: the kingdom of God has come near.'[b] 12 I tell you, on that day it will be more tolerable for Sodom than for that town.

13 "Woe to you, Chorazin! Woe to you, Bethsaida! For if the deeds of power done in you had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago, sitting in sackcloth and ashes. 14 But at the judgment it will be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon than for you. 15 And you, Capernaum,

will you be exalted to heaven?

No, you will be brought down to Hades.

16 "Whoever listens to you listens to me, and whoever rejects you rejects me, and whoever rejects me rejects the one who sent me."

17 The seventy[c] returned with joy, saying, "Lord, in your name even the demons submit to us!" 18 He said to them, "I watched Satan fall from heaven like a flash of lightning. 19 See, I have given you authority to tread on snakes and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy; and nothing will hurt you. 20 Nevertheless, do not rejoice at this, that the spirits submit to you, but rejoice that your names are written in heaven."

21 At that same hour Jesus[d] rejoiced in the Holy Spirit[e] and said, "I thank[f] you, Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because you have hidden these things from the wise and the intelligent and have revealed them to infants; yes, Father, for such was your gracious will.[g] 22 All things have been handed over to me by my Father; and no one knows who the Son is except the Father, or who the Father is except the Son and anyone to whom the Son chooses to reveal him."

23 Then turning to the disciples, Jesus[d] said to them privately, "Blessed are the eyes that see what you see! 24 For I tell you that many prophets and kings desired to see what you see, but did not see it, and to hear what you hear, but did not hear it."

[a] Or *is at hand for you*
[b] Or *is at hand*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *seventy-two*
[d] Gk *he*
[e] Other authorities read *in the spirit*
[f] Or *praise*
[g] Or *for so it was well-pleasing in your sight*

might cause delay, underscoring the urgency of the mission. **9–11:** The emphasis here on *the kingdom of God* distinguishes these instructions from those given at 9.3–5. **5:** 1 Sam 25.6. **7:** Deut 24.15. **10–11:** Cf. 9.5n. **12:** Gen 19.24–28.

10.13–15: Woes to unrepentant cities (Mt 11.20–24). **13:** *Chorazin,* a town 3 km (2 mi) north of Capernaum. Tyre and Sidon were Gentile cities on the Mediterranean coast north of Galilee. *Sackcloth and ashes* recalls the repentance of Nineveh in Jon 3. **15:** The words echo Isa 14.13–15 (see v. 18). *Hades*, equivalent to Heb "Sheol," the abode of the dead.

10.16: Jesus' interpretation of the mission (Mt 10.40).

10.17–20: Return of the seventy (Mt 11.25–27). **17:** *Even the demons submit to us,* unlike the twelve (9.1), the seventy had not been promised this power. **18:** *I watched Satan fall from heaven,* alluding to the victory of the seventy over the demons; cf. Isa 14.15; Jn 12.31; Rev 12.7–12. **20:** Jesus did not regard exorcism in itself as a sign of God's kingdom (11.19). *Written in heaven,* Dan 12.1; Ps 69.28; Ex 32.32.

10.21–22: Jesus' thanksgiving to God (Mt 11.25–27). **21:** *In the Holy Spirit,* in communion with God. **22:** Cf. Jn 3.35; 10.14–15; 13.1; 17.25.

10.23–24: Jesus' blessing of the disciples (Mt 13.16–17).

25 Just then a lawyer stood up to test Jesus.[a]
"Teacher," he said, "what must I do to inherit
eternal life?" 26 He said to him, "What is
written in the law? What do you read there?"
27 He answered, "You shall love the Lord your
God with all your heart, and with all your
soul, and with all your strength, and with all
your mind; and your neighbor as yourself."
28 And he said to him, "You have given the
right answer; do this, and you will live."
29 But wanting to justify himself, he asked
Jesus, "And who is my neighbor?" 30 Jesus re-
plied, "A man was going down from Jerusalem to
Jericho, and fell into the hands of robbers, who
stripped him, beat him, and went away, leaving
him half dead. 31 Now by chance a priest was
going down that road; and when he saw him,
he passed by on the other side. 32 So likewise a
Levite, when he came to the place and saw him,
passed by on the other side. 33 But a Samaritan
while traveling came near him; and when he saw
him, he was moved with pity. 34 He went to him
and bandaged his wounds, having poured oil
and wine on them. Then he put him on his own
animal, brought him to an inn, and took care of
him. 35 The next day he took out two denarii,[b]
gave them to the innkeeper, and said, 'Take care
of him; and when I come back, I will repay you
whatever more you spend.' 36 Which of these
three, do you think, was a neighbor to the man
who fell into the hands of the robbers?" 37 He
said, "The one who showed him mercy." Jesus
said to him, "Go and do likewise."
38 Now as they went on their way, he
entered a certain village, where a woman
named Martha welcomed him into her home.
39 She had a sister named Mary, who sat at
the Lord's feet and listened to what he was
saying. 40 But Martha was distracted by her
many tasks; so she came to him and asked,
"Lord, do you not care that my sister has left
me to do all the work by myself? Tell her
then to help me." 41 But the Lord answered
her, "Martha, Martha, you are worried and
distracted by many things; 42 there is need of
only one thing.[c] Mary has chosen the better
part, which will not be taken away from her."

11 He was praying in a certain place, and
after he had finished, one of his disci-
ples said to him, "Lord, teach us to pray, as
John taught his disciples." 2 He said to them,
"When you pray, say:

Father,[d] hallowed be your name.
Your kingdom come.[e]
3 Give us each day our daily bread.[f]
4 And forgive us our sins,
for we ourselves forgive everyone
indebted to us.
And do not bring us to the time of trial."[g]

[a] Gk *him*
[b] The denarius was the usual day's wage for a laborer
[c] Other ancient authorities read *few things are necessary, or only one*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *Our Father in heaven*
[e] A few ancient authorities read *Your Holy Spirit come upon us and cleanse us.* Other ancient authorities add *Your will be done, on earth as in heaven*
[f] Or *our bread for tomorrow*
[g] Or *us into temptation.* Other ancient authorities add *but rescue us from the evil one* (or *from evil*)

10.25–28: A lawyer's question (Mt 22.34–40; Mk 12.28–34; cf. Lk 18.9–14). **25:** *Lawyer,* an expert in the law of Moses, probably synonymous with "scribe" and likely affiliated with or belonging to the party of the Pharisees. **27:** Deut 6.5; Lev 19.18. **27:** Josh 22.5.

10.29–37: Parable of the Good Samaritan. 29: *Justify himself* means to show himself to be righteous, acceptable to God. **30:** *Down from Jerusalem to Jericho,* about 18 mi (30 km) with a drop in elevation from about 2,500 ft (760 m) above sea level to about 820 ft (250 m) below sea level. The road between the cities was notoriously dangerous. **31–33:** The *priest* represented the highest religious leadership among the Jews; the *Levite* (v. 32) belonged to minor clergy below the priest. In contrast, it was a *Samaritan* (see 9.52n.), a foreigner not expected to show sympathy to Jews, who was moved with pity. **34:** The *oil* served as a salve (see Isa 1.6) and the *wine* as an antiseptic. **35:** *Two denarii* would provide approximately two months of lodging in an ancient inn.

10.38–42: Martha and Mary. This enigmatic account affirms the importance of listening to Jesus and at the same time the account shows Jesus' openness to and acceptance of women among his followers. According to Jn 11.1, Martha and Mary were the sisters of Lazarus and lived in Bethany, just east of Jerusalem.

11.1–4: The Lord's Prayer. This model prayer appears in a more elaborate form in Mt 6.9–13. In both Matthew and Luke there is an eschatological cast to the petitions, yet the concerns specified are related to daily life.

5 And he said to them, "Suppose one of you
has a friend, and you go to him at midnight
and say to him, 'Friend, lend me three loaves
of bread; 6 for a friend of mine has arrived,
and I have nothing to set before him.' 7 And he
answers from within, 'Do not bother me; the
door has already been locked, and my children
are with me in bed; I cannot get up and give
you anything.' 8 I tell you, even though he will
not get up and give him anything because he
is his friend, at least because of his persistence
he will get up and give him whatever he needs.
9 "So I say to you, Ask, and it will be given
you; search, and you will find; knock, and the
door will be opened for you. 10 For every-
one who asks receives, and everyone who
searches finds, and for everyone who knocks,
the door will be opened. 11 Is there anyone
among you who, if your child asks for[a] a fish,
will give a snake instead of a fish? 12 Or if the
child asks for an egg, will give a scorpion?
13 If you then, who are evil, know how to give
good gifts to your children, how much more
will the heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit[b]
to those who ask him!"
14 Now he was casting out a demon that
was mute; when the demon had gone out,
the one who had been mute spoke, and the
crowds were amazed. 15 But some of them
said, "He casts out demons by Beelzebul,
the ruler of the demons." 16 Others, to test
him, kept demanding from him a sign from
heaven. 17 But he knew what they were
thinking and said to them, "Every kingdom
divided against itself becomes a desert, and
house falls on house. 18 If Satan also is divided
against himself, how will his kingdom stand?
—for you say that I cast out the demons by
Beelzebul. 19 Now if I cast out the demons by
Beelzebul, by whom do your exorcists[c] cast
them out? Therefore they will be your judges.
20 But if it is by the finger of God that I cast
out the demons, then the kingdom of God
has come to you. 21 When a strong man, fully
armed, guards his castle, his property is safe.
22 But when one stronger than he attacks him
and overpowers him, he takes away his armor
in which he trusted and divides his plunder.
23 Whoever is not with me is against me, and
whoever does not gather with me scatters.
24 "When the unclean spirit has gone out
of a person, it wanders through waterless
regions looking for a resting place, but not
finding any, it says, 'I will return to my house
from which I came.' 25 When it comes, it finds
it swept and put in order. 26 Then it goes and
brings seven other spirits more evil than it-
self, and they enter and live there; and the last
state of that person is worse than the first."
27 While he was saying this, a woman in the
crowd raised her voice and said to him, "Blessed
is the womb that bore you and the breasts that
nursed you!" 28 But he said, "Blessed rather are
those who hear the word of God and obey it!"
29 When the crowds were increasing,
he began to say, "This generation is an evil

[a] Other ancient authorities add *bread, will give a stone; or if your child asks for*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *the Father give the Holy Spirit from heaven*
[c] Gk *sons*

11.5–8: Teaching about persistence (Mt 7.7–11). Cf. Lk 18.1–5. **5–8:** Following the Lord's Prayer, this parable in Luke relates to persistence in prayer.

11.9–13: A parabolic admonition and assurance concerning prayer (Mt 7.7–11). **9–13:** The promise of *the Holy Spirit* focuses the substance of petitions in prayers in a pointed fashion.

11.14–23: The Beelzebul controversy (Mt 12.22–30; Mk 3.22–27). **15:** *Beelzebul, the ruler of the demons,* Satan (see v. 18); Beelzebul was originally a title of the Canaanite storm and fertility god Baal (see 2 Kings 1.2). **16:** The request for a sign comes almost immediately after Jesus restores the power of speech to one afflicted with muteness. **20:** Ex 8.19. *Finger* stands for God's power. *The kingdom of God has come to you* indicates Jesus' interpretation of the meaning of his ministry. **21–22:** Jesus seems to cast himself in this parable as the *one stronger than he*. **23:** Cf. 9.50. This statement registers the uncompromising demands of Jesus' call to discipleship, and in relation to the preceding parable the saying declares that in the struggle between Jesus and Beelzebul neutrality is not an option.

11.24–26: The return of unclean spirits (Mt 12.43–45).

11.27–28: True blessedness. Cf. 8.21.

11.29–32: The sign of Jonah (Mt 12.38–42; Mk 8.11–12). **29:** *The sign of Jonah* was given through Jonah's preach-

generation; it asks for a sign, but no sign will be given to it except the sign of Jonah. 30 For just as Jonah became a sign to the people of Nineveh, so the Son of Man will be to this generation. 31 The queen of the South will rise at the judgment with the people of this generation and condemn them, because she came from the ends of the earth to listen to the wisdom of Solomon, and see, something greater than Solomon is here! 32 The people of Nineveh will rise up at the judgment with this generation and condemn it, because they repented at the proclamation of Jonah, and see, something greater than Jonah is here!

33 "No one after lighting a lamp puts it in a cellar,[a] but on the lampstand so that those who enter may see the light. 34 Your eye is the lamp of your body. If your eye is healthy, your whole body is full of light; but if it is not healthy, your body is full of darkness. 35 Therefore consider whether the light in you is not darkness. 36 If then your whole body is full of light, with no part of it in darkness, it will be as full of light as when a lamp gives you light with its rays."

37 While he was speaking, a Pharisee invited him to dine with him; so he went in and took his place at the table. 38 The Pharisee was amazed to see that he did not first wash before dinner. 39 Then the Lord said to him, "Now you Pharisees clean the outside of the cup and of the dish, but inside you are full of greed and wickedness. 40 You fools! Did not the one who made the outside make the inside also? 41 So give for alms those things that are within; and see, everything will be clean for you.

42 "But woe to you Pharisees! For you tithe mint and rue and herbs of all kinds, and neglect justice and the love of God; it is these you ought to have practiced, without neglecting the others. 43 Woe to you Pharisees! For you love to have the seat of honor in the synagogues and to be greeted with respect in the marketplaces. 44 Woe to you! For you are like unmarked graves, and people walk over them without realizing it."

45 One of the lawyers answered him, "Teacher, when you say these things, you insult us too." 46 And he said, "Woe also to you lawyers! For you load people with burdens hard to bear, and you yourselves do not lift a finger to ease them. 47 Woe to you! For you build the tombs of the prophets whom your ancestors killed. 48 So you are witnesses and approve of the deeds of your ancestors; for they killed them, and you build their tombs. 49 Therefore also the Wisdom of God said, 'I will send them prophets and apostles, some of whom they will kill and persecute,' 50 so that this generation may be charged with the blood of all the prophets shed since the foundation of the world, 51 from the blood of Abel to the blood of Zechariah, who perished between the altar and the sanctuary. Yes, I tell you, it will be charged against this generation. 52 Woe to you lawyers! For you have taken away the key of knowledge; you did not enter yourselves, and you hindered those who were entering."

53 When he went outside, the scribes and the Pharisees began to be very hostile toward him and to cross-examine him about many things, 54 lying in wait for him, to catch him in something he might say.

[a] Other ancient authorities add *or under the bushel basket*

ing to the Ninevites; here, Jesus is not referring to his resurrection. **30:** Jon 3.4. **31:** 1 Kings 10.1–10; 2 Chr 9.1–9.

11.33: Light and sight (Mt 5.15; Mk 4.21). Cf. 8.16.

11.34–36: The healthy eye (Mt 6.22–23). **34–36:** One theory of vision held that the eye produced fire or light, which made sight possible.

11.37–54: Sayings against Pharisees and lawyers (Mt 15.1–9; Mk 7.1–9; Mt 23.1–36, in different order). **37:** 7.36; 14.1. **38:** *Wash before dinner,* ceremonial washing (lit., "baptize before dinner"; cf. Mk 7.1–5). **39–41:** Mt 23.25–26. Jesus turns back the Pharisees' criticism that the outside is unwashed by insisting that the inner life is equal in importance to the outer (v. 40), indeed, that it exercises a cleansing or corrupting power over the outer (v. 41; Mk 7.23). **41:** *Alms*, charitable gifts for the poor. **42:** *Tithe,* see Deut 14.22–29. *Mint and rue* were common herbs of little value. **44:** Graves were carefully marked and even whitewashed (Mt 23.27) to prevent defilement through unintentional contact with the dead. **49:** *The Wisdom of God said,* introduces an apparent quotation, but from neither the Hebrew Bible nor the nonbiblical writings of Judaism. **49:** Cf. Jer 7.25–26. **51:** *Abel* is the first person murdered in the Bible (Gen 4.8), and *Zechariah* seems to be the person murdered in 2 Chr 24.20–22. **54:**

12 Meanwhile, when the crowd gathered by the thousands, so that they trampled on one another, he began to speak first to his disciples, "Beware of the yeast of the Pharisees, that is, their hypocrisy. 2 Nothing is covered up that will not be uncovered, and nothing secret that will not become known. 3 Therefore whatever you have said in the dark will be heard in the light, and what you have whispered behind closed doors will be proclaimed from the housetops.

4 "I tell you, my friends, do not fear those who kill the body, and after that can do nothing more. 5 But I will warn you whom to fear: fear him who, after he has killed, has authority[a] to cast into hell.[b] Yes, I tell you, fear him! 6 Are not five sparrows sold for two pennies? Yet not one of them is forgotten in God's sight. 7 But even the hairs of your head are all counted. Do not be afraid; you are of more value than many sparrows.

8 "And I tell you, everyone who acknowledges me before others, the Son of Man also will acknowledge before the angels of God; 9 but whoever denies me before others will be denied before the angels of God. 10 And everyone who speaks a word against the Son of Man will be forgiven; but whoever blasphemes against the Holy Spirit will not be forgiven. 11 When they bring you before the synagogues, the rulers, and the authorities, do not worry about how[c] you are to defend yourselves or what you are to say; 12 for the Holy Spirit will teach you at that very hour what you ought to say."

13 Someone in the crowd said to him, "Teacher, tell my brother to divide the family inheritance with me." 14 But he said to him, "Friend, who set me to be a judge or arbitrator over you?" 15 And he said to them, "Take care! Be on your guard against all kinds of greed; for one's life does not consist in the abundance of possessions." 16 Then he told them a parable: "The land of a rich man produced abundantly. 17 And he thought to himself, 'What should I do, for I have no place to store my crops?' 18 Then he said, 'I will do this: I will pull down my barns and build larger ones, and there I will store all my grain and my goods. 19 And I will say to my soul, Soul, you have ample goods laid up for many years; relax, eat, drink, be merry.' 20 But God said to him, 'You fool! This very night your life is being demanded of you. And the things you have prepared, whose will they be?' 21 So it is with those who store up treasures for themselves but are not rich toward God."

22 He said to his disciples, "Therefore I tell you, do not worry about your life, what you will eat, or about your body, what you

[a] Or *power*
[b] Gk *Gehenna*
[c] Other ancient authorities add *or what*

Cf. 6.11; 19.47–48; 20.19–20; 22.2.

12.1: The yeast of the Pharisees (Mt 16.5–6; Mk 8.14–15). **1:** Leaven/yeast was often a symbol of corruption for ancient Jews; cf. 1 Cor 5.6–8.

12.2–9: Calls to fearless confession (Mt 10.26–33). **5:** *Him who . . . has authority to cast into hell,* God alone. *Hell* is "Gehenna," not Hades as in 10.5; Gehenna was a deep ravine to the south of Jerusalem. Human sacrifices were allegedly made there during the Judean monarchy (2 Kings 23.10), and it came to symbolize the place of eternal punishment. **6:** The *penny* ("assarion") was one-sixteenth of a denarius (see 12.59n.). **8–9:** Cf. 9.26; Mk 8.38.

12.10: Blaspheming the Holy Spirit (Mt 12.31–32; Mk 3.28–30). Blasphemy *against the Holy Spirit* is attributing the genuine work of the Spirit to the forces of evil rather than to God.

12.11–12: Aid from the Holy Spirit (Mt 10.19–20; Mk 13.11).

12.13–15: Warning against greed. 13: According to Deut 21.17 the oldest son received double the younger's share. Jesus shows no interest in ensuring equitable division and subsequently warns against greed and material self-satisfaction.

12.16–21: Parable of the rich fool. 19: *Relax, eat, drink, be merry,* see Eccl 8.15. The maxim is reminiscent of similar declarations in Tob 7.10; *1 Enoch* 97.8–9; Euripides; Meander. **20:** Cf. Jer 17.11; Lk 12.33–34. The declaration by God in Greek is difficult, reading literally, "Fool! In this night your soul they demand from you." The subject "they" may be a circumlocution for God, but more likely it is "the things" that now own the man and that claim his life.

will wear. 23 For life is more than food, and
the body more than clothing. 24 Consider the
ravens: they neither sow nor reap, they have
neither storehouse nor barn, and yet God
feeds them. Of how much more value are
you than the birds! 25 And can any of you by
worrying add a single hour to your span of
life?[a] 26 If then you are not able to do so small
a thing as that, why do you worry about the
rest? 27 Consider the lilies, how they grow:
they neither toil nor spin;[b] yet I tell you, even
Solomon in all his glory was not clothed like
one of these. 28 But if God so clothes the grass
of the field, which is alive today and tomor-
row is thrown into the oven, how much more
will he clothe you—you of little faith! 29 And
do not keep striving for what you are to eat
and what you are to drink, and do not keep
worrying. 30 For it is the nations of the world
that strive after all these things, and your
Father knows that you need them. 31 Instead,
strive for his[c] kingdom, and these things will
be given to you as well.

32 "Do not be afraid, little flock, for it is
your Father's good pleasure to give you the
kingdom. 33 Sell your possessions, and give
alms. Make purses for yourselves that do not
wear out, an unfailing treasure in heaven,
where no thief comes near and no moth
destroys. 34 For where your treasure is, there
your heart will be also.

35 "Be dressed for action and have your
lamps lit; 36 be like those who are waiting for
their master to return from the wedding ban-
quet, so that they may open the door for him
as soon as he comes and knocks. 37 Blessed
are those slaves whom the master finds alert
when he comes; truly I tell you, he will fasten
his belt and have them sit down to eat, and
he will come and serve them. 38 If he comes
during the middle of the night, or near dawn,
and finds them so, blessed are those slaves.

39 "But know this: if the owner of the
house had known at what hour the thief was
coming, he[d] would not have let his house be
broken into. 40 You also must be ready, for the
Son of Man is coming at an unexpected hour."

41 Peter said, "Lord, are you telling this par-
able for us or for everyone?" 42 And the Lord
said, "Who then is the faithful and prudent
manager whom his master will put in charge
of his slaves, to give them their allowance of
food at the proper time? 43 Blessed is that slave
whom his master will find at work when he
arrives. 44 Truly I tell you, he will put that one
in charge of all his possessions. 45 But if that
slave says to himself, 'My master is delayed
in coming,' and if he begins to beat the other
slaves, men and women, and to eat and drink
and get drunk, 46 the master of that slave will
come on a day when he does not expect him
and at an hour that he does not know, and
will cut him in pieces,[e] and put him with the
unfaithful. 47 That slave who knew what his
master wanted, but did not prepare himself
or do what was wanted, will receive a severe
beating. 48 But the one who did not know and
did what deserved a beating will receive a
light beating. From everyone to whom much
has been given, much will be required; and
from the one to whom much has been en-
trusted, even more will be demanded.

49 "I came to bring fire to the earth, and
how I wish it were already kindled! 50 I have a
baptism with which to be baptized, and what
stress I am under until it is completed! 51 Do

[a] Or *add a cubit to your stature*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *Consider the lilies; they neither spin nor weave*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *God's*
[d] Other ancient authorities add *would have watched and*
[e] Or *cut him off*

12.22–32: Anxiety concerning life (Mt 6.25–34). **24:** *Ravens*, members of the crow family, act as scavengers and are listed among the unclean birds in the Hebrew Bible (Lev 11.15; Deut 14.14; cf. Job 38.41). **27:** See 1 Kings 10. **32:** *Flock* refers to the messiah's people (Ezek 34.23).

12.33–34: Treasure in heaven (Mt 6.19–21). Compare Mk 10.21; Lk 18.22; Acts 2.45; 4.32–35.

12.35–48: Sayings on watchfulness and faithfulness (Mt 24.42–51). **35:** *Dressed for action,* lit., "your loins girded"; see Ex 12.11. **37:** The language suggests the messianic banquet (13.29; 14.15; 22.16), to which a marriage feast served as an analogy. For the action of this master in serving the servants, see 17.7–8; cf. Jn 13.3–16; Lk 22.27. **40:** Cf. Mk 13.35; 1 Thess 5.2. **48:** 8.18; 19.26.

12.49–53: The controversial character of Jesus' mission (Mt 10.34–36). **49:** *Fire,* a symbol of judgment (Mt

you think that I have come to bring peace to the earth? No, I tell you, but rather division! 52 From now on five in one household will be divided, three against two and two against three; 53 they will be divided:

father against son
and son against father,
mother against daughter
and daughter against mother,
mother-in-law against her daughter-in-law
and daughter-in-law against mother-in-law."

54 He also said to the crowds, "When you see a cloud rising in the west, you immediately say, 'It is going to rain'; and so it happens. 55 And when you see the south wind blowing, you say, 'There will be scorching heat'; and it happens. 56 You hypocrites! You know how to interpret the appearance of earth and sky, but why do you not know how to interpret the present time?

57 "And why do you not judge for yourselves what is right? 58 Thus, when you go with your accuser before a magistrate, on the way make an effort to settle the case,[a] or you may be dragged before the judge, and the judge hand you over to the officer, and the officer throw you in prison. 59 I tell you, you will never get out until you have paid the very last penny."

13 At that very time there were some present who told him about the Galileans whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices. 2 He asked them, "Do you think that because these Galileans suffered in this way they were worse sinners than all other Galileans? 3 No, I tell you; but unless you repent, you will all perish as they did. 4 Or those eighteen who were killed when the tower of Siloam fell on them—do you think that they were worse offenders than all the others living in Jerusalem? 5 No, I tell you; but unless you repent, you will all perish just as they did."

6 Then he told this parable: "A man had a fig tree planted in his vineyard; and he came looking for fruit on it and found none. 7 So he said to the gardener, 'See here! For three years I have come looking for fruit on this fig tree, and still I find none. Cut it down! Why should it be wasting the soil?' 8 He replied, 'Sir, let it alone for one more year, until I dig around it and put manure on it. 9 If it bears fruit next year, well and good; but if not, you can cut it down.'"

10 Now he was teaching in one of the synagogues on the sabbath. 11 And just then there appeared a woman with a spirit that had crippled her for eighteen years. She was bent over and was quite unable to stand up straight. 12 When Jesus saw her, he called her over and said, "Woman, you are set free from your ailment." 13 When he laid his hands on her, immediately she stood up straight and began praising God. 14 But the leader of the synagogue, indignant because Jesus had cured on the sabbath, kept saying to the crowd, "There are six days on which work ought to be done; come on those days and be cured, and not on the sabbath day." 15 But the Lord answered him and said, "You hypocrites! Does not each of you on the sabbath untie his ox or his donkey from the manger, and lead it away to give it water? 16 And ought not this woman,

[a] Gk *settle with him*

3.11; 7.19; Mk 9.48; Lk 3.16). **50:** *Baptism,* Jesus' death. **53:** Incorporates phrases from Mic 7.6.

12.54–56: Interpreting the times (Mt 16.2–3). Winds from the west blew off the Mediterranean, those from the south off the desert. Jesus says there are signs of crisis that human beings neglect.

12.57–59: Settling with an accuser (Mt 5.25–26). **59:** *Penny,* Greek "lepton," the smallest Greek coin in circulation. There were two lepta to a quadrans ("penny" in Mt 5.26; Mk 12.42), eight to an assarion ("penny" in Lk 12.6), and one hundred twenty-eight to a denarius, the daily wage in Mt 20.2.

13.1–9: Parable of the unfruitful fig tree (compare Mt 21.18–19; Mk 11.12–14). **1:** The Galileans had been slain by the order of Pilate (see 3.1n.) while sacrificing in the Temple at Jerusalem. This incident is otherwise unattested. **2:** The reports carried with them questions of a deeper meaning. According to common Jewish belief, painful experiences were signs of God's judgments (see 5.20n.). Jesus issues a call to repentance so that catastrophe would not overtake his hearers. **4:** *Siloam,* in the southeast corner of Jerusalem, where the pool of Siloam (Isa 8.6; Neh 3.15; Jn 9.7) was located. **7:** See 3.9.

13.10–17: Healing of a crippled woman on the sabbath. A similar sabbath healing follows in 14.1–6; see

a daughter of Abraham whom Satan bound for eighteen long years, be set free from this bondage on the sabbath day?" 17 When he said this, all his opponents were put to shame; and the entire crowd was rejoicing at all the wonderful things that he was doing.

18 He said therefore, "What is the kingdom of God like? And to what should I compare it? 19 It is like a mustard seed that someone took and sowed in the garden; it grew and became a tree, and the birds of the air made nests in its branches."

20 And again he said, "To what should I compare the kingdom of God? 21 It is like yeast that a woman took and mixed in with[a] three measures of flour until all of it was leavened."

22 Jesus[b] went through one town and village after another, teaching as he made his way to Jerusalem. 23 Someone asked him, "Lord, will only a few be saved?" He said to them, 24 "Strive to enter through the narrow door; for many, I tell you, will try to enter and will not be able. 25 When once the owner of the house has got up and shut the door, and you begin to stand outside and to knock at the door, saying, 'Lord, open to us,' then in reply he will say to you, 'I do not know where you come from.' 26 Then you will begin to say, 'We ate and drank with you, and you taught in our streets.' 27 But he will say, 'I do not know where you come from; go away from me, all you evildoers!' 28 There will be weeping and gnashing of teeth when you see Abraham and Isaac and Jacob and all the prophets in the kingdom of God, and you yourselves thrown out. 29 Then people will come from east and west, from north and south, and will eat in the kingdom of God. 30 Indeed, some are last who will be first, and some are first who will be last."

31 At that very hour some Pharisees came and said to him, "Get away from here, for Herod wants to kill you." 32 He said to them, "Go and tell that fox for me,[c] 'Listen, I am casting out demons and performing cures today and tomorrow, and on the third day I finish my work. 33 Yet today, tomorrow, and the next day I must be on my way, because it is impossible for a prophet to be killed outside of Jerusalem.' 34 Jerusalem, Jerusalem, the city that kills the prophets and stones those who are sent to it! How often have I desired to gather your children together as a hen gathers her brood under her wings, and you were not willing! 35 See, your house is left to you. And I tell you, you will not see me until the time comes when[d] you say, 'Blessed is the one who comes in the name of the Lord.'"

14 On one occasion when Jesus[e] was going to the house of a leader of the Pharisees to eat a meal on the sabbath,

[a] Gk *hid in*
[b] Gk *He*
[c] Gk lacks *for me*
[d] Other ancient authorities lack *the time comes when*
[e] Gk *he*

4.31n.; cf. 8.43–48. **14:** Ex 20.9–10. Lev 23.3; Deut 5.13–14. **16:** Jesus relates the physical disorder of the woman to the work of Satan (cf. 11.14). Such afflictions conflict with God's purpose of salvation in his covenant with Abraham and are the concern of Jesus' ministry (4.18).

13.18–19: Parable of the mustard seed (Mt 13.31–32; Mk 4.30–32). **19:** The last phrase of this verse reflects the wording of Ps 104.12; Dan 4.12,21.

13.20–21: Parable of the yeast (Mt 13.33). This parable, like the preceding one (vv. 18–19), contrasts the future grandeur of the kingdom with the seemingly small start that was occurring in the ministry of Jesus. **21:** *Three measures,* ca. 63 dry quarts (69 liters).

13.22–30: The necessity of discipline for salvation (Mt 7.13–14,22–23; 8.11–12; 19.30; Mk 10.31). **27:** The wording of this verse bears similarities to Ps 6.8. **29:** Ps 107.3.

13.31–33: Report and reply concerning Herod. 31: Some Pharisees who appear to be well intentioned toward Jesus are noteworthy and show that not all Pharisees were negatively disposed toward Jesus. *Here,* Herod's domain of Galilee and Perea (see 3.1n.). **32:** *Fox,* an unflattering metaphor. Jesus denies that Herod's intended opposition can hinder his ministry, which has not reached its goal. **33:** *It is impossible . . .* , bitter irony that leads to the ensuing laments (see 13.34–35; 19.41–42).

13.34–35: Jesus' lament over Jerusalem (Mt 23.37–39). **35:** See Jer 22.5. The quotation is from Ps 118.26; see Lk 19.37–38.

14.1–6: Healing of a man with dropsy on the sabbath. This healing story forms the second part of a balanced

they were watching him closely. 2 Just then, in front of him, there was a man who had dropsy. 3 And Jesus asked the lawyers and Pharisees, "Is it lawful to cure people on the sabbath, or not?" 4 But they were silent. So Jesus[a] took him and healed him, and sent him away. 5 Then he said to them, "If one of you has a child[b] or an ox that has fallen into a well, will you not immediately pull it out on a sabbath day?" 6 And they could not reply to this.

7 When he noticed how the guests chose the places of honor, he told them a parable. 8 "When you are invited by someone to a wedding banquet, do not sit down at the place of honor, in case someone more distinguished than you has been invited by your host; 9 and the host who invited both of you may come and say to you, 'Give this person your place,' and then in disgrace you would start to take the lowest place. 10 But when you are invited, go and sit down at the lowest place, so that when your host comes, he may say to you, 'Friend, move up higher'; then you will be honored in the presence of all who sit at the table with you. 11 For all who exalt themselves will be humbled, and those who humble themselves will be exalted."

12 He said also to the one who had invited him, "When you give a luncheon or a dinner, do not invite your friends or your brothers or your relatives or rich neighbors, in case they may invite you in return, and you would be repaid. 13 But when you give a banquet, invite the poor, the crippled, the lame, and the blind. 14 And you will be blessed, because they cannot repay you, for you will be repaid at the resurrection of the righteous."

15 One of the dinner guests, on hearing this, said to him, "Blessed is anyone who will eat bread in the kingdom of God!" 16 Then Jesus[a] said to him, "Someone gave a great dinner and invited many. 17 At the time for the dinner he sent his slave to say to those who had been invited, 'Come; for everything is ready now.' 18 But they all alike began to make excuses. The first said to him, 'I have bought a piece of land, and I must go out and see it; please accept my regrets.' 19 Another said, 'I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I am going to try them out; please accept my regrets.' 20 Another said, 'I have just been married, and therefore I cannot come.' 21 So the slave returned and reported this to his master. Then the owner of the house became angry and said to his slave, 'Go out at once into the streets and lanes of the town and bring in the poor, the crippled, the blind, and the lame.' 22 And the slave said, 'Sir, what you ordered has been done, and there is still room.' 23 Then the master said to the slave, 'Go out into the roads and lanes, and compel people to come in, so that my house may be filled. 24 For I tell you,[c] none of those who were invited will taste my dinner.'"

25 Now large crowds were traveling with him; and he turned and said to them, 26 "Whoever comes to me and does not hate father and mother, wife and children, brothers and sisters, yes, and even life itself, cannot be my disciple. 27 Whoever does not carry the cross and follow me cannot be my disciple. 28 For which of you, intending to

[a] Gk *he*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *a donkey*
[c] The Greek word for *you* here is plural

pair with the foregoing account of Jesus' healing the crippled woman (13.1–16), exhibiting Luke's concern to show the inclusive nature of Jesus' ministry. **2:** *Dropsy,* swelling from abnormal fluid retention. **5:** The variant reading, "a donkey" instead of "a child" (see note *b*) was a scribal alteration to make this verse conform to the wording of 13.15. Cf. Ex 23.5; Deut 22.4.

14.7–14: Parable on humility. 8: Prov 25.6–7. **11:** See 13.30; 18.14; Mt 18.4; 23.12.

14.15–24: Parable of the great dinner (Mt 22.1–14). **18–20:** Cf. Deut 20.5–8. **24:** *You* is plural here, whereas the master in the parable was speaking to only one servant ("you" singular). Thus, Jesus seems to have completed the parabolic form in v. 23 and, now, he speaks to the guests directly in this verse (v. 24) as a reply to the statement by the guest in v. 15. *My dinner* suggests the messianic banquet (see 12.37n.).

14.25–33: The costs of discipleship (Mt 10.37–38). A series of sayings declaring the necessity of the disciples' total devotion to following Jesus. **26:** Jn 12.25. *Hate* is vivid language; the parallel passage in Mt 10.37 is

build a tower, does not first sit down and estimate the cost, to see whether he has enough to complete it? 29 Otherwise, when he has laid a foundation and is not able to finish, all who see it will begin to ridicule him, 30 saying, 'This fellow began to build and was not able to finish.' 31 Or what king, going out to wage war against another king, will not sit down first and consider whether he is able with ten thousand to oppose the one who comes against him with twenty thousand? 32 If he cannot, then, while the other is still far away, he sends a delegation and asks for the terms of peace. 33 So therefore, none of you can become my disciple if you do not give up all your possessions.

34 "Salt is good; but if salt has lost its taste, how can its saltiness be restored?[a] 35 It is fit neither for the soil nor for the manure pile; they throw it away. Let anyone with ears to hear listen!"

15 Now all the tax collectors and sinners were coming near to listen to him. 2 And the Pharisees and the scribes were grumbling and saying, "This fellow welcomes sinners and eats with them."

3 So he told them this parable: 4 "Which one of you, having a hundred sheep and losing one of them, does not leave the ninety-nine in the wilderness and go after the one that is lost until he finds it? 5 When he has found it, he lays it on his shoulders and rejoices. 6 And when he comes home, he calls together his friends and neighbors, saying to them, 'Rejoice with me, for I have found my sheep that was lost.' 7 Just so, I tell you, there will be more joy in heaven over one sinner who repents than over ninety-nine righteous persons who need no repentance.

8 "Or what woman having ten silver coins,[b] if she loses one of them, does not light a lamp, sweep the house, and search carefully until she finds it? 9 When she has found it, she calls together her friends and neighbors, saying, 'Rejoice with me, for I have found the coin that I had lost.' 10 Just so, I tell you, there is joy in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner who repents."

11 Then Jesus[c] said, "There was a man who had two sons. 12 The younger of them said to his father, 'Father, give me the share of the property that will belong to me.' So he divided his property between them. 13 A few days later the younger son gathered all he had and traveled to a distant country, and there he squandered his property in dissolute living. 14 When he had spent everything, a severe famine took place throughout that country, and he began to be in need. 15 So he went and hired himself out to one of the citizens of that country, who sent him to his fields to feed the pigs. 16 He would gladly have filled himself with[d] the pods that the pigs were eating; and no one gave him anything. 17 But when he came to himself he said, 'How many of my father's hired hands have bread enough and to spare, but here I am dying of hunger! 18 I will get up and go to my father, and I will say to him, "Father, I have sinned against heaven and before you; 19 I am no longer worthy to be called your son; treat me like one of your

a Or *how can it be used for seasoning?*
b Gk *drachmas,* each worth about a day's wage for a laborer
c Gk *he*
d Other ancient authorities read *filled his stomach with*

softer. **27:** See Mk 8.34. **31–32:** Possibly alludes to some contemporary event. **33:** The stark severity of this statement suggests that it is to be understood as hyperbole. See 12.33; 18.22.

14.34–35: Saying about salt (Mt 5.13; Mk 9.49–50). This saying warns against lackadaisical discipleship. Ancient salt was not pure sodium chloride, so the other material in the salt could go bad and cause the salt to be no good.

15.1–7: Parable of the lost sheep (Mt 18.12–14). God is frequently called the shepherd, both of Israel (e.g., Pss 78.52; 80.1; 100.3) and of the individual (Ps 23); for the image of lost sheep, see Ps 119.176; Jer 50.6; Ezek 34.15–16. **6–7:** The mention of joy anticipates the declarations of joy in the following two parables, which share the theme of lost and found.

15.8–10: Parable of the lost coin. The woman sweeping and seeking the coin is freely cast in the parable to depict the activity of God. **8:** The coins are Greek drachmas; see note *b.*

15.11–32: Parable of the lost prodigal son. 12: On inheritance, see Deut 21.17. See 12.13n. **15:** *Pigs,* see 8.32n.

hired hands."' [20] So he set off and went to his father. But while he was still far off, his father saw him and was filled with compassion; he ran and put his arms around him and kissed him. [21] Then the son said to him, 'Father, I have sinned against heaven and before you; I am no longer worthy to be called your son.'[a] [22] But the father said to his slaves, 'Quickly, bring out a robe—the best one—and put it on him; put a ring on his finger and sandals on his feet. [23] And get the fatted calf and kill it, and let us eat and celebrate; [24] for this son of mine was dead and is alive again; he was lost and is found!' And they began to celebrate.

[25] "Now his elder son was in the field; and when he came and approached the house, he heard music and dancing. [26] He called one of the slaves and asked what was going on. [27] He replied, 'Your brother has come, and your father has killed the fatted calf, because he has got him back safe and sound.' [28] Then he became angry and refused to go in. His father came out and began to plead with him. [29] But he answered his father, 'Listen! For all these years I have been working like a slave for you, and I have never disobeyed your command; yet you have never given me even a young goat so that I might celebrate with my friends. [30] But when this son of yours came back, who has devoured your property with prostitutes, you killed the fatted calf for him!' [31] Then the father[b] said to him, 'Son, you are always with me, and all that is mine is yours. [32] But we had to celebrate and rejoice, because this brother of yours was dead and has come to life; he was lost and has been found.'"

16 Then Jesus[b] said to the disciples, "There was a rich man who had a manager, and charges were brought to him that this man was squandering his property. [2] So he summoned him and said to him, 'What is this that I hear about you? Give me an accounting of your management, because you cannot be my manager any longer.' [3] Then the manager said to himself, 'What will I do, now that my master is taking the position away from me? I am not strong enough to dig, and I am ashamed to beg. [4] I have decided what to do so that, when I am dismissed as manager, people may welcome me into their homes.' [5] So, summoning his master's debtors one by one, he asked the first, 'How much do you owe my master?' [6] He answered, 'A hundred jugs of olive oil.' He said to him, 'Take your bill, sit down quickly, and make it fifty.' [7] Then he asked another, 'And how much do you owe?' He replied, 'A hundred containers of wheat.' He said to him, 'Take your bill and make it eighty.' [8] And his master commended the dishonest manager because he had acted shrewdly; for the children of this age are more shrewd in dealing with their own generation than are the children of light. [9] And I tell you, make friends for yourselves

[a] Other ancient authorities add *Treat me like one of your hired servants*

[b] Gk *he*

22–24: His place as son is freely restored, though his inheritance is gone. The parable illustrates God's grace toward those who rebel and return. **22:** *Robe,* a festal garment (not worn while working); *ring,* symbol of authority; *sandals,* slaves would have been barefooted. Cf. Gen 41.42; Zech 3.4. **23:** *Fatted calf,* a luxury; see 1 Sam 28.24; Am 6.4. **25–32:** Rivalry between brothers is a common biblical theme (see Gen 4.2–8; 25.27–34; 27.1–36; 37.1–4). Note the elder son's pique ("this son of yours," v. 30). **31:** See v. 12n.

16.1–9: Parable of the dishonest manager. The culmination of this enigmatic story appears to be v. 8, and Jesus' exposition follows in v. 9. The meaning of the story for those hearing Jesus' teaching is that the dishonest manager was prudent in using the things of this life to ensure the future, so believers should do the same. More generally, however, the probable sense of the story itself is that the steward was dishonest in his squandering his master's estate. When confronted, he does not necessarily engage in dishonest behavior (in fact he is praised for his actions), but he calls in the debtors and reduces their bills by eliminating his own commission. Thus, he shrewdly uses material goods to win gratitude from his master's debtors. **8:** *His master,* lit., "the lord"; perhaps indicating a reference by Luke to Jesus ("the Lord") rather than being the words of Jesus' conclusion to the parable. *Children of light,* those who are spiritually enlightened; this phrase appears in Jn 12.36; Eph 5.8; 1 Thess 5.5, as well as in the Dead Sea Scrolls where it is contrasted with the phrase "children of darkness." **9:** *Wealth,* lit., "mammon," is the Greek transliteration of a Semitic word probably meaning "that in which one trusts."

by means of dishonest wealth[a] so that when it is gone, they may welcome you into the eternal homes.[b]

10 "Whoever is faithful in a very little is faithful also in much; and whoever is dishonest in a very little is dishonest also in much. 11 If then you have not been faithful with the dishonest wealth,[a] who will entrust to you the true riches? 12 And if you have not been faithful with what belongs to another, who will give you what is your own? 13 No slave can serve two masters; for a slave will either hate the one and love the other, or be devoted to the one and despise the other. You cannot serve God and wealth."[a]

14 The Pharisees, who were lovers of money, heard all this, and they ridiculed him. 15 So he said to them, "You are those who justify yourselves in the sight of others; but God knows your hearts; for what is prized by human beings is an abomination in the sight of God.

16 "The law and the prophets were in effect until John came; since then the good news of the kingdom of God is proclaimed, and everyone tries to enter it by force.[c] 17 But it is easier for heaven and earth to pass away, than for one stroke of a letter in the law to be dropped.

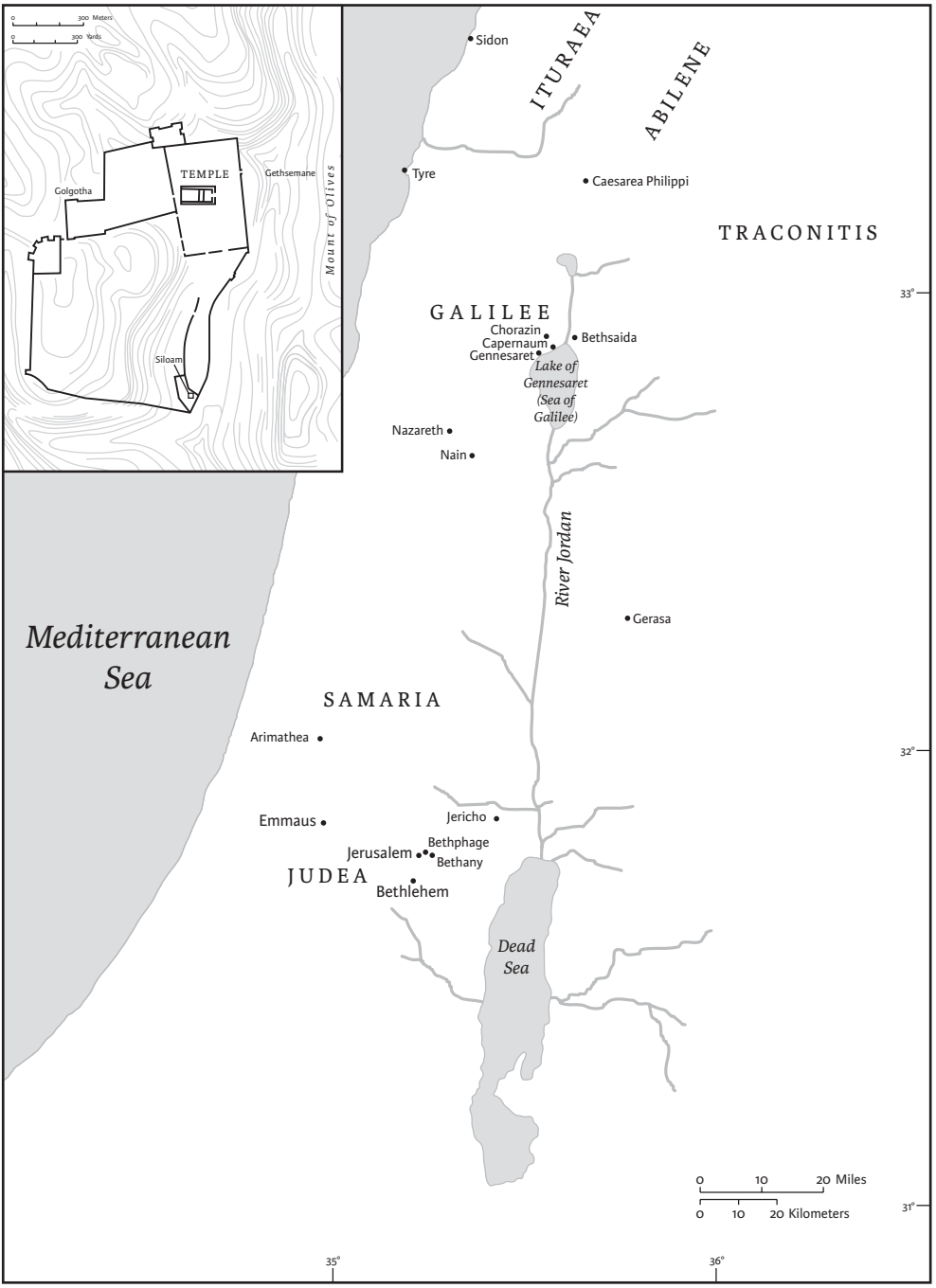
18 "Anyone who divorces his wife and marries another commits adultery, and whoever marries a woman divorced from her husband commits adultery.

19 "There was a rich man who was dressed in purple and fine linen and who feasted sumptuously every day. 20 And at his gate lay a poor man named Lazarus, covered with sores, 21 who longed to satisfy his hunger with what fell from the rich man's table; even the dogs would come and lick his sores. 22 The poor man died and was carried away by the angels to be with Abraham.[d] The rich man also died and was buried. 23 In Hades, where he was being tormented, he looked up and saw Abraham far away with Lazarus by his side.[e] 24 He called out, 'Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus to dip the tip of his finger in water and cool my tongue; for I am in agony in these flames.' 25 But Abraham said, 'Child, remember that during your lifetime you received your good things, and Lazarus in like manner evil things; but now he is comforted here, and you are in agony. 26 Besides all this, between you and us a great chasm has been fixed, so that those who might want to pass from here to you cannot do so, and no one can cross from there to us.' 27 He said, 'Then, father, I beg you to send him to my father's house— 28 for I have five brothers—that he may warn them, so that they will not also come into this place of torment.' 29 Abraham replied, 'They have Moses and the prophets; they should listen to them.' 30 He said, 'No, father Abraham; but

[a] Gk *mammon*
[b] Gk *tents*
[c] Or *everyone is strongly urged to enter it*
[d] Gk *to Abraham's bosom*
[e] Gk *in his bosom*

16.10–18: A series of sayings. 10–12: Sayings on faithfulness. The sayings take the form of "from lesser to greater." **11,13:** *Wealth,* see v. 9n. **13:** The impossibility of serving two masters (Mt 6.24; cf. Deut 6.13). **14–15:** Strong criticism of the Pharisees. **16–17:** Sayings concerning the law (Mt 11.12–13; 5.18; cf. Lk 21.33). **16:** Here, John the Baptist is presented as the figure through whom the fulfillment of God's promises began to appear. *The law and the prophets,* the first two parts of what became the three divisions of the Hebrew Bible, the Torah or "law" of Moses, and the prophets (the books of Joshua through 2 Kings and Isaiah through Malachi; see the Prologue to Sirach; 2 Macc 15.9; Lk 16.29; 24.27,44). **18:** Saying concerning divorce (Mt 19.9; Mk 10.11–12). This statement may condemn the simultaneous actions of divorce and marrying another; in other words, a divorce that occurred to facilitate remarriage. Herod Antipas had done exactly that; see 3.19–20n.

16.19–31: Parable of the rich man and Lazarus. A clear emphasis of this parable (vv. 27–31) is that the Hebrew Bible speaks an urgent and sufficient call to repentance (v. 17). As a whole the story seems to illustrate vv. 10–15. **19:** The *rich man,* though unnamed, is commonly called "Dives," which is Latin for "rich man." *Purple* was an expensive cloth dyed with the liquid obtained from a species of shellfish. **20:** The person named here is not to be identified with the Lazarus of Jn 11.1–44; 12.1,9. **21–22:** The moral character of Lazarus is passed over to illustrate the fatal deficiency in the life of the indifferent rich man and the impossibility of altering his condemnation. **22:** *With Abraham,* traditional terminology for a blessed condition in the afterlife; see 13.28–29. **23:** *Hades*, 10.15n.



The geography of the Gospel of Luke.

if someone goes to them from the dead, they will repent.' 31 He said to him, 'If they do not listen to Moses and the prophets, neither will they be convinced even if someone rises from the dead.'"

17 Jesus[a] said to his disciples, "Occasions for stumbling are bound to come, but woe to anyone by whom they come! 2 It would be better for you if a millstone were hung around your neck and you were thrown into the sea than for you to cause one of these little ones to stumble. 3 Be on your guard! If another disciple[b] sins, you must rebuke the offender, and if there is repentance, you must forgive. 4 And if the same person sins against you seven times a day, and turns back to you seven times and says, 'I repent,' you must forgive."

5 The apostles said to the Lord, "Increase our faith!" 6 The Lord replied, "If you had faith the size of a[c] mustard seed, you could say to this mulberry tree, 'Be uprooted and planted in the sea,' and it would obey you.

7 "Who among you would say to your slave who has just come in from plowing or tending sheep in the field, 'Come here at once and take your place at the table'? 8 Would you not rather say to him, 'Prepare supper for me, put on your apron and serve me while I eat and drink; later you may eat and drink'? 9 Do you thank the slave for doing what was commanded? 10 So you also, when you have done all that you were ordered to do, say, 'We are worthless slaves; we have done only what we ought to have done!'"

11 On the way to Jerusalem Jesus[d] was going through the region between Samaria and Galilee. 12 As he entered a village, ten lepers[e] approached him. Keeping their distance, 13 they called out, saying, "Jesus, Master, have mercy on us!" 14 When he saw them, he said to them, "Go and show yourselves to the priests." And as they went, they were made clean. 15 Then one of them, when he saw that he was healed, turned back, praising God with a loud voice. 16 He prostrated himself at Jesus'[f] feet and thanked him. And he was a Samaritan. 17 Then Jesus asked, "Were not ten made clean? But the other nine, where are they? 18 Was none of them found to return and give praise to God except this foreigner?" 19 Then he said to him, "Get up and go on your way; your faith has made you well."

20 Once Jesus[d] was asked by the Pharisees when the kingdom of God was coming, and he answered, "The kingdom of God is not coming with things that can be observed; 21 nor will they say, 'Look, here it is!' or 'There it is!' For, in fact, the kingdom of God is among[g] you."

[a] Gk *He*
[b] Gk *your brother*
[c] Gk *faith as a grain of*
[d] Gk *he*
[e] The terms *leper* and *leprosy* can refer to several diseases
[f] Gk *his*
[g] Or *within*

29: *Moses and the prophets,* see v. 16n. **31:** *Rises from the dead,* a clear reference to Jesus' resurrection (see 9.22) and the ensuing refusal of some to believe it.

17.1–3a: The peril of causing temptation (Mt 18.6–7; Mk 9.42). **2:** *Millstone,* stone (used in pairs) to grind grain; it was typically made of basalt and ca. 12–18 in (30–40 cm) in diameter and 2–4 in (5–10 cm) thick. *Little ones,* disciples.

17.3b–4: Sayings concerning forgiveness (Mt 18.15,21–22).

17.5–6: Saying concerning faith (Mt 17.19–21; Mk 9.28–29). **6:** *The size of a mustard seed,* see Mk 4.31.

17.7–10: The obligation to obedience. For the apostles, obedience to God is a duty to be fulfilled and not an occasion for reward; yet, cf. 12.35–38.

17.11–19: The cleansing of ten lepers. (See 5.12–16n.) **12:** Lev 13.45–46. **14:** *Priests,* Lev 13.2–3; 14.2–32. **16:** *Samaritan,* see 9.52n. **17:** *The other nine* were, presumably, Jews. **18:** The Gk word translated *foreigner* more literally means "another race," 7.9n. **19:** 7.50; 8.48; 18.42. *Made you well,* lit., "saved you."

17.20–21: The coming of the kingdom of God. 20: 19.11; 21.7; Acts 1.6. **21:** The questioners had in mind a kingdom bringing material and political benefits. Jesus shifted the emphasis from future expectation to the observable presence of the kingdom in his ministry; see 11.20.

17.22–37: The day of the Son of Man (Mt 24.17–18,23,26–28,37–41; Mk 13.14–16,19–23). Mt 24 has similar

22 Then he said to the disciples, "The days
are coming when you will long to see one of
the days of the Son of Man, and you will not
see it. 23 They will say to you, 'Look there!' or
'Look here!' Do not go, do not set off in pursuit.
24 For as the lightning flashes and lights up
the sky from one side to the other, so will the
Son of Man be in his day.[a] 25 But first he must
endure much suffering and be rejected by this
generation. 26 Just as it was in the days of Noah,
so too it will be in the days of the Son of Man.
27 They were eating and drinking, and marry-
ing and being given in marriage, until the day
Noah entered the ark, and the flood came and
destroyed all of them. 28 Likewise, just as it was
in the days of Lot: they were eating and drink-
ing, buying and selling, planting and building,
29 but on the day that Lot left Sodom, it rained
fire and sulfur from heaven and destroyed all of
them 30 —it will be like that on the day that the
Son of Man is revealed. 31 On that day, anyone
on the housetop who has belongings in the
house must not come down to take them away;
and likewise anyone in the field must not turn
back. 32 Remember Lot's wife. 33 Those who try
to make their life secure will lose it, but those
who lose their life will keep it. 34 I tell you, on
that night there will be two in one bed; one will
be taken and the other left. 35 There will be two
women grinding meal together; one will be
taken and the other left."[b] 37 Then they asked
him, "Where, Lord?" He said to them, "Where
the corpse is, there the vultures will gather."

18 Then Jesus[c] told them a parable about
their need to pray always and not to lose
heart. 2 He said, "In a certain city there was a
judge who neither feared God nor had respect
for people. 3 In that city there was a widow
who kept coming to him and saying, 'Grant me
justice against my opponent.' 4 For a while he
refused; but later he said to himself, 'Though I
have no fear of God and no respect for anyone,
5 yet because this widow keeps bothering me, I
will grant her justice, so that she may not wear
me out by continually coming.'"[d] 6 And the Lord
said, "Listen to what the unjust judge says. 7 And
will not God grant justice to his chosen ones
who cry to him day and night? Will he delay
long in helping them? 8 I tell you, he will quickly
grant justice to them. And yet, when the Son of
Man comes, will he find faith on earth?"

9 He also told this parable to some who
trusted in themselves that they were right-
eous and regarded others with contempt:
10 "Two men went up to the temple to pray,
one a Pharisee and the other a tax collector.
11 The Pharisee, standing by himself, was
praying thus, 'God, I thank you that I am not
like other people: thieves, rogues, adulterers,
or even like this tax collector. 12 I fast twice a
week; I give a tenth of all my income.' 13 But
the tax collector, standing far off, would not
even look up to heaven, but was beating his
breast and saying, 'God, be merciful to me, a
sinner!' 14 I tell you, this man went down to

[a] Other ancient authorities lack *in his day*
[b] Other ancient authorities add verse 36, *"Two will be in the field; one will be taken and the other left."*
[c] Gk *he*
[d] Or *so that she may not finally come and slap me in the face*

teachings in a different order and setting. **24:** The coming will be sudden and discernible to all. **25:** 9.22. An allusion to Jesus' suffering and death. **26–36:** The emphasis is on the unexpected nature of events. **26–27:** Gen 6.5–8; 7.6–24. **28–30:** Gen 18.16–19.28. **31:** *On the housetop,* a flat-top roof reached by an exterior staircase. **32:** Gen 19.26. **33:** 9.24. **[36]:** This verse is a scribal addition to Luke to incorporate a saying from Mt 24.20. **37:** Mt 24.28. The questioners wish to know *where* the messiah and his people will be located. Instead of answering them directly, Jesus warns: As surely as vultures find the carcass, so surely will divine judgment come; therefore always be ready!

18.1–8: Parable of the unjust judge and the persistent widow. 1: The aim is carefully stated (cf. 11.5–8), perhaps because the details are incongruous (as in 16.1–9). **3:** Cf. Deut 27.19. **8:** *Comes,* from heaven, in judgment (see Dan 7.13–14). This verse links the parable with 17.20–37.

18.9–14: Parable of the Pharisee and the tax collector. 9: *Righteous,* that is, acceptable to God because of their strict observance of the law. **10:** Tax collector, see 5.27n. **11:** *Standing by himself, was praying thus,* more literally, "standing to himself these things prayed," a suggestively ambiguous statement. **12:** *Twice a week,* Mondays and Thursdays; such a practice was apparently voluntary rather than prescribed. **13:** *Beating his breast*, a sign of contrition. **14:** *Justified* means "right with God" or "accepted by God." *All who exalt*

his home justified rather than the other; for all who exalt themselves will be humbled, but all who humble themselves will be exalted."

15 People were bringing even infants to him that he might touch them; and when the disciples saw it, they sternly ordered them not to do it. 16 But Jesus called for them and said, "Let the little children come to me, and do not stop them; for it is to such as these that the kingdom of God belongs. 17 Truly I tell you, whoever does not receive the kingdom of God as a little child will never enter it."

18 A certain ruler asked him, "Good Teacher, what must I do to inherit eternal life?" 19 Jesus said to him, "Why do you call me good? No one is good but God alone. 20 You know the commandments: 'You shall not commit adultery; You shall not murder; You shall not steal; You shall not bear false witness; Honor your father and mother.'" 21 He replied, "I have kept all these since my youth." 22 When Jesus heard this, he said to him, "There is still one thing lacking. Sell all that you own and distribute the money[a] to the poor, and you will have treasure in heaven; then come, follow me." 23 But when he heard this, he became sad; for he was very rich. 24 Jesus looked at him and said, "How hard it is for those who have wealth to enter the kingdom of God! 25 Indeed, it is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than for someone who is rich to enter the kingdom of God."

26 Those who heard it said, "Then who can be saved?" 27 He replied, "What is impossible for mortals is possible for God."

28 Then Peter said, "Look, we have left our homes and followed you." 29 And he said to them, "Truly I tell you, there is no one who has left house or wife or brothers or parents or children, for the sake of the kingdom of God, 30 who will not get back very much more in this age, and in the age to come eternal life."

31 Then he took the twelve aside and said to them, "See, we are going up to Jerusalem, and everything that is written about the Son of Man by the prophets will be accomplished. 32 For he will be handed over to the Gentiles; and he will be mocked and insulted and spat upon. 33 After they have flogged him, they will kill him, and on the third day he will rise again." 34 But they understood nothing about all these things; in fact, what he said was hidden from them, and they did not grasp what was said.

35 As he approached Jericho, a blind man was sitting by the roadside begging. 36 When he heard a crowd going by, he asked what was happening. 37 They told him, "Jesus of Nazareth[b] is passing by." 38 Then he shouted, "Jesus, Son of David, have mercy on me!" 39 Those who were in front sternly ordered him to be quiet; but he shouted even more loudly, "Son of David, have mercy on me!" 40 Jesus stood still and ordered the man to be brought to him; and when he came near, he

[a] Gk lacks *the money*

[b] Gk *the Nazorean*

themselves . . . , see 14.11n.

18.15–17: Jesus and the little children (Mt 19.13–15; Mk 10.13–16). Located between the preceding parable and the subsequent incident with the rich ruler, this brief story with its sayings contrasts humility with self-righteousness and self-satisfaction.

18.18–30: The rich ruler, wealth, and salvation (Mt 19.16–30; Mk 10.17–31). **18:** 10.25. **20:** The order of the commandments, varying from the Hebrew Bible, follows the ancient Greek translation, the Septuagint (LXX); see Ex 20.12–16; Deut 5.16–20. **22:** *Treasure in heaven,* see 12.33–34. See 14.33n. **23:** The story does not tell what the rich ruler ultimately did in relation to Jesus' statement at 18.22. **26:** To be *saved* refers to the same spiritual experience as to *inherit eternal life* (v. 18), and to *enter the kingdom of God* (v. 25). **27:** Gen 18.14; Job 42.2; Jer 32.17; Lk 1.37. **28:** 5.1–11. **30:** *In this age, and in the age to come,* traditional apocalyptic language contrasting the present evil age and the age of God's kingdom or reign.

18.31–34: Jesus' third prediction of his death (Mt 20.17–19; Mk 10.32–34). Cf. 9.22,44–45; 17.25. The details of this prediction form an outline of the events in chs 22–24. **31:** *Everything that is written . . . by the prophets,* an allusion to passages such as Ps 22; Isa 53; Zech 13.7.

18.35–43: Healing of a blind man (Mt 20.29–34; Mk 10.46–52). **38:** *Son of David,* a phrase identifying Jesus with the messianic expectations associated with the dynasty founded by David, probably indicating political

asked him, [41] "What do you want me to do for you?" He said, "Lord, let me see again." [42] Jesus said to him, "Receive your sight; your faith has saved you." [43] Immediately he regained his sight and followed him, glorifying God; and all the people, when they saw it, praised God.

19 He entered Jericho and was passing through it. [2] A man was there named Zacchaeus; he was a chief tax collector and was rich. [3] He was trying to see who Jesus was, but on account of the crowd he could not, because he was short in stature. [4] So he ran ahead and climbed a sycamore tree to see him, because he was going to pass that way. [5] When Jesus came to the place, he looked up and said to him, "Zacchaeus, hurry and come down; for I must stay at your house today." [6] So he hurried down and was happy to welcome him. [7] All who saw it began to grumble and said, "He has gone to be the guest of one who is a sinner." [8] Zacchaeus stood there and said to the Lord, "Look, half of my possessions, Lord, I will give to the poor; and if I have defrauded anyone of anything, I will pay back four times as much." [9] Then Jesus said to him, "Today salvation has come to this house, because he too is a son of Abraham. [10] For the Son of Man came to seek out and to save the lost."

[11] As they were listening to this, he went on to tell a parable, because he was near Jerusalem, and because they supposed that the kingdom of God was to appear immediately. [12] So he said, "A nobleman went to a distant country to get royal power for himself and then return. [13] He summoned ten of his slaves, and gave them ten pounds,[a] and said to them, 'Do business with these until I come back.' [14] But the citizens of his country hated him and sent a delegation after him, saying, 'We do not want this man to rule over us.' [15] When he returned, having received royal power, he ordered these slaves, to whom he had given the money, to be summoned so that he might find out what they had gained by trading. [16] The first came forward and said, 'Lord, your pound has made ten more pounds.' [17] He said to him, 'Well done, good slave! Because you have been trustworthy in a very small thing, take charge of ten cities.' [18] Then the second came, saying, 'Lord, your pound has made five pounds.' [19] He said to him, 'And you, rule over five cities.' [20] Then the other came, saying, 'Lord, here is your pound. I wrapped it up in a piece of cloth, [21] for I was afraid of you, because you are a harsh man; you take what you did not deposit, and reap what you did not sow.' [22] He said to him, 'I will judge you by your own words, you wicked slave! You knew, did you, that I was a harsh man, taking what I did not deposit and reaping what I did not sow? [23] Why then did you not put my money into the bank? Then when I returned, I could have collected it with interest.' [24] He said to the bystanders, 'Take the pound from him and give it to the one who has ten pounds.' [25] (And they said to him, 'Lord, he has ten pounds!') [26] 'I tell you, to all those who have, more will be given; but from those who have nothing, even what they have will be taken away. [27] But as for these enemies of mine who did not want me to be king over them—bring them here and slaughter them in my presence.'"

[a] The mina, rendered here by *pound,* was about three months' wages for a laborer

and nationalistic aspirations. **42:** See 17.19n.

19.1–10: Zacchaeus's salvation. Although he is rich, Zacchaeus's response to Jesus is a striking contrast to that of the rich man in 18.18–23. **1:** Because of its location *Jericho* was an important customs center. **2:** As *chief tax collector* Zacchaeus had contracted with the Roman overlords for the right to collect revenues (lit., "tolls") in the district. His neighbors despised him for sharing in the Roman domination (v. 7). **7:** 5.29–30; 15.1–2. **8:** *I will give,* henceforth, a vow amounting to repentance. *Four times as much,* cf. Ex 22.1; Lev 6.5; Num 5.6–7. **9:** *Salvation,* or the kingdom of God, *has come* in Jesus' presence and message and evinces itself in Zacchaeus's transformation. **10:** A summary of Jesus' ministry in the entire Gospel; see ch 15.

19.11–27: Parable of the ten pounds (Mt 25.14–30; Mk 13.34). The parable may allude to the journey of Archelaus to Rome in 4 BCE to assure his succession to his father Herod's throne; his mission was opposed by a delegation of leaders from Judea (Josephus *Ant.* 17.9.4; 17.10). **11:** 9.51; 13.22; 17.11; 18.31. **13:** *Ten pounds,* lit., "ten minas," golden coins, each of which equaled a hundred drachmas (see 15.8n.). **17:** 16.10. **26:** See 8.18.

28 After he had said this, he went on ahead,
going up to Jerusalem.
29 When he had come near Bethphage and
Bethany, at the place called the Mount of
Olives, he sent two of the disciples, 30 saying,
"Go into the village ahead of you, and as you
enter it you will find tied there a colt that has
never been ridden. Untie it and bring it here.
31 If anyone asks you, 'Why are you untying
it?' just say this, 'The Lord needs it.'" 32 So
those who were sent departed and found it
as he had told them. 33 As they were untying
the colt, its owners asked them, "Why are
you untying the colt?" 34 They said, "The Lord
needs it." 35 Then they brought it to Jesus; and
after throwing their cloaks on the colt, they
set Jesus on it. 36 As he rode along, people
kept spreading their cloaks on the road. 37 As
he was now approaching the path down from
the Mount of Olives, the whole multitude
of the disciples began to praise God joyfully
with a loud voice for all the deeds of power
that they had seen, 38 saying,

"Blessed is the king
who comes in the name of the Lord!
Peace in heaven,
and glory in the highest heaven!"

39 Some of the Pharisees in the crowd said to
him, "Teacher, order your disciples to stop."
40 He answered, "I tell you, if these were
silent, the stones would shout out."
41 As he came near and saw the city, he
wept over it, 42 saying, "If you, even you, had
only recognized on this day the things that
make for peace! But now they are hidden
from your eyes. 43 Indeed, the days will come
upon you, when your enemies will set up
ramparts around you and surround you, and
hem you in on every side. 44 They will crush
you to the ground, you and your children
within you, and they will not leave within
you one stone upon another; because you did
not recognize the time of your visitation from
God."[a]
45 Then he entered the temple and began
to drive out those who were selling things
there; 46 and he said, "It is written,

'My house shall be a house of prayer';
but you have made it a den of robbers."

47 Every day he was teaching in the temple.
The chief priests, the scribes, and the leaders
of the people kept looking for a way to kill
him; 48 but they did not find anything they
could do, for all the people were spellbound
by what they heard.

20 One day, as he was teaching the people in the temple and telling the good
news, the chief priests and the scribes came
with the elders 2 and said to him, "Tell us, by
what authority are you doing these things?
Who is it who gave you this authority?" 3 He
answered them, "I will also ask you a question, and you tell me: 4 Did the baptism of
John come from heaven, or was it of human

[a] Gk lacks *from God*

19.28–21.38: Jesus' ministry in Jerusalem (Mt 21.1–24.36; Mk 11.1–13.37).

19.28–40: The entry into Jerusalem (Mt 21.1–9; Mk 11.1–10; Jn 12.12–18). **29:** *Bethphage and Bethany,* villages just east of Jerusalem. **30:** Zech. 9.9. **31:** While the situation in the story shows that it is "Jesus" who needs the colt, the saying could be understood to mean "God needs it." **32:** 22.13. **36:** Cf. 2 Kings 9.13. **37:** The road crossed a ridge into the Kidron valley. **38:** Incorporates a phrase from Ps 118.26; see Zech 9.9; Lk 13.35. This scene depicts a royal entry, naming Jesus as *king,* a title that will be used in the charges against Jesus before Pilate in 23.2. Portions of this verse echo the words of the angels at 2.14. **39–40:** Hab 2.11.

19.41–44: Weeping over Jerusalem. See 13.33–34; cf. 23.27–31. These verses may reflect historical knowledge of the actual destruction of Jerusalem in 70 CE. **42–44:** The "you" here is a singular form, indicating that Jesus spoke to "Jerusalem." **43:** 21.20–24; 21.6; Isa 29.3; Jer 6.6; Ezek 4.2. *Your enemies,* the Roman army. *Ramparts,* palisade that would keep out all supplies of food. **44:** Ps 137.9; Hos 10.14; 13.16. *Children*, the inhabitants of Jerusalem.

19.45–46: Cleansing of the Temple (Mt 21.12–13; Mk 11.15–17; Jn 2.13–17). In this display of authority in the Temple, Jesus dramatically acts out Mal 3.1–2. **45:** *Selling* the prescribed offerings, as in 2.24; Lev 1.14. **46:** Isa 56.7; Jer 7.11.

19.47–48: The religious leaders' hostility toward Jesus (Mk 11.18–19). **47:** *The chief priests, the scribes, and the leaders of the people* were Jesus' adversaries once he reached Jerusalem.

20.1–8: Questioning Jesus' authority (Mt 21.23–27; Mk 11.27–33; Jn 2.18–22). **4:** *The baptism of John*, 3.3–21.

origin?" [5] They discussed it with one another, saying, "If we say, 'From heaven,' he will say, 'Why did you not believe him?' [6] But if we say, 'Of human origin,' all the people will stone us; for they are convinced that John was a prophet." [7] So they answered that they did not know where it came from. [8] Then Jesus said to them, "Neither will I tell you by what authority I am doing these things."

[9] He began to tell the people this parable: "A man planted a vineyard, and leased it to tenants, and went to another country for a long time. [10] When the season came, he sent a slave to the tenants in order that they might give him his share of the produce of the vineyard; but the tenants beat him and sent him away empty-handed. [11] Next he sent another slave; that one also they beat and insulted and sent away empty-handed. [12] And he sent still a third; this one also they wounded and threw out. [13] Then the owner of the vineyard said, 'What shall I do? I will send my beloved son; perhaps they will respect him.' [14] But when the tenants saw him, they discussed it among themselves and said, 'This is the heir; let us kill him so that the inheritance may be ours.' [15] So they threw him out of the vineyard and killed him. What then will the owner of the vineyard do to them? [16] He will come and destroy those tenants and give the vineyard to others." When they heard this, they said, "Heaven forbid!" [17] But he looked at them and said, "What then does this text mean:

'The stone that the builders rejected
has become the cornerstone'?[a]

[18] Everyone who falls on that stone will be broken to pieces; and it will crush anyone on whom it falls." [19] When the scribes and chief priests realized that he had told this parable against them, they wanted to lay hands on him at that very hour, but they feared the people.

[20] So they watched him and sent spies who pretended to be honest, in order to trap him by what he said, so as to hand him over to the jurisdiction and authority of the governor. [21] So they asked him, "Teacher, we know that you are right in what you say and teach, and you show deference to no one, but teach the way of God in accordance with truth. [22] Is it lawful for us to pay taxes to the emperor, or not?" [23] But he perceived their craftiness and said to them, [24] "Show me a denarius. Whose head and whose title does it bear?" They said, "The emperor's." [25] He said to them, "Then give to the emperor the things that are the emperor's, and to God the things that are God's." [26] And they were not able in the presence of the people to trap him by what he said; and being amazed by his answer, they became silent.

[27] Some Sadducees, those who say there is no resurrection, came to him [28] and asked him a question, "Teacher, Moses wrote for us that if a man's brother dies, leaving a wife but no children, the man[b] shall marry the widow and raise up children for his brother. [29] Now there were seven brothers; the first married, and died childless; [30] then the second [31] and the third married her, and so in the same way all seven died childless. [32] Finally the woman also died. [33] In the resurrection, therefore,

[a] Or *keystone*
[b] Gk *his brother*

20.9–19: Parable of the vineyard and tenants (Mt 21.33–46; Mk 12.1–12). **9:** Isa 5.1–7. **13:** The use of *beloved* (see 3.22) identifies the son with Jesus. **15:** The murder of the son outside the vineyard may reflect Jesus' crucifixion outside the city of Jerusalem; see Jn 19.17; Heb 13.12; cf. Acts 7.52–53. **17:** Ps 118.22; see Isa 28.16; Acts 4.11. **18:** Isa 8.14–15. **19:** Lk 19.47.

20.20–26: Paying taxes to the emperor (Mt 22.15–22; Mk 12.13–17). **20:** *Honest* translates a Greek word that normally means "correct according to the law," i.e., "righteous." It is used here in the same sense of false pretense that it has in Mt 23.28. **22–25:** A falsified version of this incident lies behind the charge against Jesus before Pilate in 23.2. **24:** *Denarius,* a coin that had the head of the emperor on one side. Strict, pious Jews did not use these Roman coins, but specially minted Jewish coinage.

20.27–40: Question concerning resurrection (Mt 22.23–33; Mk 12.18–27). **27:** *Sadducees* were the elite class of landed Jerusalem gentry who operated the Temple and wielded power from that religious base of operations; cf. Acts 4.1–2; 23.6–10. **27:** Sadducees recognized only the Pentateuch (first five books of the Hebrew Bible) as authoritative, so they denied resurrection because they insisted that it was not taught there. **28:** The question

whose wife will the woman be? For the seven had married her."

34 Jesus said to them, "Those who belong to this age marry and are given in marriage; 35 but those who are considered worthy of a place in that age and in the resurrection from the dead neither marry nor are given in marriage. 36 Indeed they cannot die anymore, because they are like angels and are children of God, being children of the resurrection. 37 And the fact that the dead are raised Moses himself showed, in the story about the bush, where he speaks of the Lord as the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob. 38 Now he is God not of the dead, but of the living; for to him all of them are alive." 39 Then some of the scribes answered, "Teacher, you have spoken well." 40 For they no longer dared to ask him another question.

41 Then he said to them, "How can they say that the Messiah[a] is David's son? 42 For David himself says in the book of Psalms,

'The Lord said to my Lord,
"Sit at my right hand,
43 until I make your enemies your
footstool."'

44 David thus calls him Lord; so how can he be his son?"

45 In the hearing of all the people he said to the[b] disciples, 46 "Beware of the scribes, who like to walk around in long robes, and love to be greeted with respect in the marketplaces, and to have the best seats in the synagogues and places of honor at banquets. 47 They devour widows' houses and for the sake of appearance say long prayers. They will receive the greater condemnation."

21 He looked up and saw rich people putting their gifts into the treasury; 2 he also saw a poor widow put in two small copper coins. 3 He said, "Truly I tell you, this poor widow has put in more than all of them; 4 for all of them have contributed out of their abundance, but she out of her poverty has put in all she had to live on."

5 When some were speaking about the temple, how it was adorned with beautiful stones and gifts dedicated to God, he said, 6 "As for these things that you see, the days will come when not one stone will be left upon another; all will be thrown down."

7 They asked him, "Teacher, when will this be, and what will be the sign that this is about to take place?" 8 And he said, "Beware that you are not led astray; for many will come in my name and say, 'I am he!'[c] and, 'The time is near!'[d] Do not go after them.

9 "When you hear of wars and insurrections, do not be terrified; for these things must take place first, but the end will not follow immediately." 10 Then he said to them,

a Or *the Christ*
b Other ancient authorities read *his*
c Gk *I am*
d Or *at hand*

reflects the practice of levirate marriage in Deut 25.5–10; see Gen 38.8. **34–36:** Human relations in marriage do not exist in the same way beyond death. Jesus distinguishes two ages and kinds of existence. Mortals are part of this age by their physical birth, and of the age to come by resurrection. **37:** Ex 3.6. Jesus cites the words of Moses from the Pentateuch to refute the Sadduccees' argument. **39:** Note the praise of Jesus by the *scribes,* affirmation that shows that all scribes were not simply aligned against Jesus.

20.41–44: A question about David's son (Mt 22.41–46; Mk 12.35–37a). **42–43:** Ps 110.1. No solution is given for the riddle that Jesus offered. **44:** King David was traditionally viewed as the author of most of the Psalms. The question is: How can the messiah be David's descendant if David calls him *Lord?* Ps 110 was frequently referred to in early Christian writings; see Acts 2.34–35; 1 Cor 15.25; Heb 1.5.

20.45–47: Warning concerning the scribes (Mt 23.1–36; Mk 12.37b–40). **46:** 11.43.

21.1–4: The widow's offering (Mk 12.41–44). **1:** *The treasury* refers here to a container (shaped like an inverted trumpet for protection against theft) to receive offerings; there were thirteen of these receptacles in "the court of the women" of the Temple; in Jn 8.20 the term refers to a room in the Temple. **2:** The *copper coin* (Gk "lepton") was of little monetary value (see 12.59n.) but of great cost to this giver.

21.5–6: Foretelling the destruction of the Temple (Mt 24.1–2; Mk 13.1–2). Jesus' teachings in these and the following verses are related to the material in Mk 13, but Luke's version of that eschatological discourse has distinctive elements and perspectives. **6:** See 19.44n.

21.7–11: Sayings about end-time signs (Mt 24.3–8; Mk 13.3–8). **7:** 17.20; Acts 1.6. **10:** 2 Chr 15.6; Isa 19.2.

"Nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom; [11] there will be great earthquakes, and in various places famines and plagues; and there will be dreadful portents and great signs from heaven.

[12] "But before all this occurs, they will arrest you and persecute you; they will hand you over to synagogues and prisons, and you will be brought before kings and governors because of my name. [13] This will give you an opportunity to testify. [14] So make up your minds not to prepare your defense in advance; [15] for I will give you words[a] and a wisdom that none of your opponents will be able to withstand or contradict. [16] You will be betrayed even by parents and brothers, by relatives and friends; and they will put some of you to death. [17] You will be hated by all because of my name. [18] But not a hair of your head will perish. [19] By your endurance you will gain your souls.

[20] "When you see Jerusalem surrounded by armies, then know that its desolation has come near.[b] [21] Then those in Judea must flee to the mountains, and those inside the city must leave it, and those out in the country must not enter it; [22] for these are days of vengeance, as a fulfillment of all that is written. [23] Woe to those who are pregnant and to those who are nursing infants in those days! For there will be great distress on the earth and wrath against this people; [24] they will fall by the edge of the sword and be taken away as captives among all nations; and Jerusalem will be trampled on by the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles are fulfilled.

[25] "There will be signs in the sun, the moon, and the stars, and on the earth distress among nations confused by the roaring of the sea and the waves. [26] People will faint from fear and foreboding of what is coming upon the world, for the powers of the heavens will be shaken. [27] Then they will see 'the Son of Man coming in a cloud' with power and great glory. [28] Now when these things begin to take place, stand up and raise your heads, because your redemption is drawing near."

[29] Then he told them a parable: "Look at the fig tree and all the trees; [30] as soon as they sprout leaves you can see for yourselves and know that summer is already near. [31] So also, when you see these things taking place, you know that the kingdom of God is near. [32] Truly I tell you, this generation will not pass away until all things have taken place. [33] Heaven and earth will pass away, but my words will not pass away.

[34] "Be on guard so that your hearts are not weighed down with dissipation and drunkenness and the worries of this life, and that day does not catch you unexpectedly, [35] like a trap. For it will come upon all who live on the face of the whole earth. [36] Be alert at all times, praying that you may have the strength to escape all these things that will take place, and to stand before the Son of Man."

[37] Every day he was teaching in the temple, and at night he would go out and spend the night on the Mount of Olives, as it was called.

[a] Gk *a mouth*
[b] Or *is at hand*

21.12–19: Foretelling the persecution of the disciples (Mt 24.9–14; Mk 13.9–13). **14–15:** 12.11–12. These themes developed in the narrative of Acts. **18:** 12.7; Acts 27.34; 1 Sam 14.45.

21.20–24: The desolation of Jerusalem (Mt 24.15–22; Mk 13.14–20. See 19.41–44n.). **20–22:** 19.41–44; 23.28–31; 17.31. **20:** *Armies,* the Roman forces. **22:** Cf. Isa 63.4; Jer 5.29; Hos 9.7. **24:** Isa 63.18; Dan 8.13. *The times of the Gentiles* may mean the divinely imposed limit on Roman dominance, or the extension of salvation to all people (20.16).

21.25–28: The coming of the Son of Man (Mt 24.29–31; Mk 13.24–27). **25–27:** These verses reflect language and elements of thought from Joel 3.3–4; Isa 24.19 (LXX); Pss 65.8; 46.4; 89.10; Wis 5.22; Jon 1.15. **25:** Isa 13.10; Joel 2.10; Zeph 1.15. **26:** Incorporates wording parallel to Isa 34.4. *The powers of the heavens* are likely the celestial bodies mentioned in v. 25. **27:** Incorporates wording parallel to Dan 7.13–14.

21.29–33: The lesson of the fig tree (Mt 24.32–36; Mk 13.28–32). **32:** Cf. 9.27. **33:** 16.17.

21.34–36: Admonition to alertness (cf. Mt 24.43–51; 25.13; Mk 13.33–37). **34–36:** 12.35–48. **34:** 8.14; 12.22; 1 Thess 5.6–7. **36:** 2 Cor 5.10.

21.37–38: Summary concerning Jesus' ministry in Jerusalem. 38: The story of the woman caught in adultery (Jn 8.1–11) appears after this verse in some ancient manuscripts; see Jn 8.11, note *c.*

38 And all the people would get up early in the
morning to listen to him in the temple.

22 Now the festival of Unleavened Bread,
which is called the Passover, was near.
2 The chief priests and the scribes were look-
ing for a way to put Jesus[a] to death, for they
were afraid of the people.

3 Then Satan entered into Judas called
Iscariot, who was one of the twelve; 4 he went
away and conferred with the chief priests and
officers of the temple police about how he
might betray him to them. 5 They were greatly
pleased and agreed to give him money. 6 So he
consented and began to look for an oppor-
tunity to betray him to them when no crowd
was present.

7 Then came the day of Unleavened Bread,
on which the Passover lamb had to be sacri-
ficed. 8 So Jesus[b] sent Peter and John, saying,
"Go and prepare the Passover meal for us that
we may eat it." 9 They asked him, "Where do
you want us to make preparations for it?"
10 "Listen," he said to them, "when you have
entered the city, a man carrying a jar of water
will meet you; follow him into the house he
enters 11 and say to the owner of the house,
'The teacher asks you, "Where is the guest
room, where I may eat the Passover with my
disciples?"' 12 He will show you a large room
upstairs, already furnished. Make prepara-
tions for us there." 13 So they went and found
everything as he had told them; and they
prepared the Passover meal.

14 When the hour came, he took his place
at the table, and the apostles with him. 15 He
said to them, "I have eagerly desired to eat
this Passover with you before I suffer; 16 for
I tell you, I will not eat it[c] until it is fulfilled
in the kingdom of God." 17 Then he took a
cup, and after giving thanks he said, "Take
this and divide it among yourselves; 18 for
I tell you that from now on I will not drink
of the fruit of the vine until the kingdom of
God comes." 19 Then he took a loaf of bread,
and when he had given thanks, he broke it
and gave it to them, saying, "This is my body,
which is given for you. Do this in remem-
brance of me." 20 And he did the same with
the cup after supper, saying, "This cup that
is poured out for you is the new covenant in
my blood.[d] 21 But see, the one who betrays
me is with me, and his hand is on the table.
22 For the Son of Man is going as it has been

[a] Gk *him*
[b] Gk *he*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *never eat it again*
[d] Other ancient authorities lack, in whole or in part, verses 19b-20 (*which is given . . . in my blood*)

22.1–23.56: The Last Supper and Jesus' trials, death, and burial (Mt 26.1–27.61; Mk 14.1–15.47; Jn 13.1–19.42).

22.1–6: The deadly conspiracy against Jesus. 1–2: Mt 26.2–5; Mk 14.1–2; Jn 11.47–53. The word "called" is a concession to the Gentile readers for whom Luke wrote. **3–6:** Mt 26.14–16; Mk 14.10–11; Jn 13.2. **3:** The entry of *Satan* into *Judas* (see 6.16n.) reintroduces the theme from 4.13. Cf. Jn 13.2. **4:** *Chief priests . . .* , see 19.47n. **5:** Judas's motive for betrayal is made explicit here.

22.7–13: Preparations for the Passover (Mt 26.17–19; Mk 14.12–16; Jn 13.1). **7:** Ex 12.18–20; Deut 16.5–8. **10:** The plans appear to rest on some prior arrangement; a man carrying a jar of water would be doing woman's work and would be easily noticeable. **11:** The identity of the householder is unknown. **12:** The *large room upstairs* was on the second floor, probably served by an outside staircase; such rooms were regularly available and rented to pilgrims to Jerusalem.

22.14–20: The Last Supper (Mt 26.26–29; Mk 14.22–25; cf. Jn 6.51–58). **14:** *The hour,* of the meal, after sundown. **15:** 12.49–50. **16:** Jesus thinks of the meal as pointing forward to the meal celebrating the fulfilling of God's kingdom (12.37n.; 13.28–29; 14.15; 22.28–30). **17:** Some Jewish meals included prayers over the cup of wine, and several such prayers might be offered during the meal (see v. 20). Luke's order of events may be related to this practice, or to a variation among early Christians in the way they remembered and observed the "Lord's supper." Luke's inclusion of a cup before the bread, as well as the usual cup after the bread, is unique. Jesus transformed a Jewish devotional meal into a continuing expression of association with himself in death and victory. **19:** 1 Cor 11.23–26. **21:** Ps 41.9; Jn 13.21–30.

22.21–23: The foretelling of the betrayal (Mt 26.21–25; Mk 14.18–21; Jn 13.21–30). **22:** Jesus (*the Son of Man*) moves toward a destiny determined by God and even Judas's actions are a part of a process beyond human control, although Judas is still responsible for his betrayal.

determined, but woe to that one by whom he is betrayed!" 23 Then they began to ask one another which one of them it could be who would do this.

24 A dispute also arose among them as to which one of them was to be regarded as the greatest. 25 But he said to them, "The kings of the Gentiles lord it over them; and those in authority over them are called benefactors. 26 But not so with you; rather the greatest among you must become like the youngest, and the leader like one who serves. 27 For who is greater, the one who is at the table or the one who serves? Is it not the one at the table? But I am among you as one who serves.

28 "You are those who have stood by me in my trials; 29 and I confer on you, just as my Father has conferred on me, a kingdom, 30 so that you may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, and you will sit on thrones judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

31 "Simon, Simon, listen! Satan has demanded[a] to sift all of you like wheat, 32 but I have prayed for you that your own faith may not fail; and you, when once you have turned back, strengthen your brothers." 33 And he said to him, "Lord, I am ready to go with you to prison and to death!" 34 Jesus[b] said, "I tell you, Peter, the cock will not crow this day, until you have denied three times that you know me."

35 He said to them, "When I sent you out without a purse, bag, or sandals, did you lack anything?" They said, "No, not a thing." 36 He said to them, "But now, the one who has a purse must take it, and likewise a bag. And the one who has no sword must sell his cloak and buy one. 37 For I tell you, this scripture must be fulfilled in me, 'And he was counted among the lawless'; and indeed what is written about me is being fulfilled." 38 They said, "Lord, look, here are two swords." He replied, "It is enough."

39 He came out and went, as was his custom, to the Mount of Olives; and the disciples followed him. 40 When he reached the place, he said to them, "Pray that you may not come into the time of trial."[c] 41 Then he withdrew from them about a stone's throw, knelt down, and prayed, 42 "Father, if you are willing, remove this cup from me; yet, not my will but yours be done." 43 Then an angel from heaven appeared to him and gave him strength. 44 In his anguish he prayed more earnestly, and his sweat became like great drops of blood falling down on the ground.[d] 45 When he got up from prayer, he came to the disciples and found them sleeping because of grief, 46 and he said to them, "Why are you sleeping? Get up and pray that you may not come into the time of trial."[c]

47 While he was still speaking, suddenly a crowd came, and the one called Judas, one of the twelve, was leading them. He approached Jesus to kiss him; 48 but Jesus said to him, "Judas, is it with a kiss that you are betraying the Son of Man?" 49 When those who were around him saw what was coming, they asked, "Lord, should we strike with the sword?" 50 Then one of them struck the slave of the high priest and cut off his right ear.

[a] Or *has obtained permission*
[b] Gk *He*
[c] Or *into temptation*
[d] Other ancient authorities lack verses 43 and 44

22.24–30: True discipleship (Mt 20.24–28; Mk 10.41–45). These verses and those of the two sections that follow (21.31–34,35–38) form a brief farewell discourse delivered by Jesus to his disciples. **24:** Jn 13.3–16. **25:** *Benefactors,* a title bestowed on Hellenistic kings. **27:** See 12.37n.

22.31–34: The foretelling of Peter's denial (Mt 26.30–35; Mk 14.26–31; Jn 13.36–38). **31:** Job 1.6–12; . **32:** *You* in this verse is singular (contrast v. 31). **34:** See vv. 54–62.

22.35–38: Sayings about the coming crisis. 35: See 10.4; cf. 9.3. **36:** An example of Jesus' fondness for striking metaphors, but the disciples take it literally (v. 38). **37:** Isa 53.12. **38:** An ironic rebuke.

22.39–46: Jesus' prayer on the Mount of Olives (Mt 26.36–46; Mk 14.32–42; Jn 18.1–2). **40:** See 11.4. **42:** *Cup,* metaphor for that which is allotted by God, whether blessing (Pss 16.5; 116.13) or judgment (Isa 51.17; Lam 4.21). Here it refers to Jesus' suffering and death. **43–44:** Important early manuscripts lack these verses, but they were known to Christian writers of the second century CE and reflect tradition concerning the suffering of Jesus. Whether they were a part of the original text is debatable.

22.47–53: The betrayal and arrest of Jesus (Mt 26.47–56; Mk 14.43–52; Jn 18.2–12). **52:** Isa 53.12. Only in Luke

51 But Jesus said, "No more of this!" And he
touched his ear and healed him. 52 Then Jesus
said to the chief priests, the officers of the
temple police, and the elders who had come
for him, "Have you come out with swords and
clubs as if I were a bandit? 53 When I was with
you day after day in the temple, you did not
lay hands on me. But this is your hour, and
the power of darkness!"

54 Then they seized him and led him away,
bringing him into the high priest's house. But
Peter was following at a distance. 55 When
they had kindled a fire in the middle of the
courtyard and sat down together, Peter sat
among them. 56 Then a servant-girl, seeing
him in the firelight, stared at him and said,
"This man also was with him." 57 But he de-
nied it, saying, "Woman, I do not know him."
58 A little later someone else, on seeing him,
said, "You also are one of them." But Peter
said, "Man, I am not!" 59 Then about an hour
later still another kept insisting, "Surely this
man also was with him; for he is a Galilean."
60 But Peter said, "Man, I do not know what
you are talking about!" At that moment,
while he was still speaking, the cock crowed.
61 The Lord turned and looked at Peter. Then
Peter remembered the word of the Lord, how
he had said to him, "Before the cock crows
today, you will deny me three times." 62 And
he went out and wept bitterly.

63 Now the men who were holding Jesus
began to mock him and beat him; 64 they
also blindfolded him and kept asking him,
"Prophesy! Who is it that struck you?" 65 They
kept heaping many other insults on him.

66 When day came, the assembly of the
elders of the people, both chief priests and
scribes, gathered together, and they brought
him to their council. 67 They said, "If you are
the Messiah,[a] tell us." He replied, "If I tell you,
you will not believe; 68 and if I question you,
you will not answer. 69 But from now on the
Son of Man will be seated at the right hand of
the power of God." 70 All of them asked, "Are
you, then, the Son of God?" He said to them,
"You say that I am." 71 Then they said, "What
further testimony do we need? We have
heard it ourselves from his own lips!"

23 Then the assembly rose as a body and
brought Jesus[b] before Pilate. 2 They
began to accuse him, saying, "We found this
man perverting our nation, forbidding us to
pay taxes to the emperor, and saying that he
himself is the Messiah, a king."[c] 3 Then Pilate
asked him, "Are you the king of the Jews?"
He answered, "You say so." 4 Then Pilate said
to the chief priests and the crowds, "I find
no basis for an accusation against this man."
5 But they were insistent and said, "He stirs
up the people by teaching throughout all
Judea, from Galilee where he began even to
this place."

6 When Pilate heard this, he asked whether
the man was a Galilean. 7 And when he learned
that he was under Herod's jurisdiction, he sent
him off to Herod, who was himself in Jeru-
salem at that time. 8 When Herod saw Jesus,

[a] Or *the Christ*
[b] Gk *him*
[c] Or *is an anointed king*

are the chief priests themselves present. **53:** Jesus' words recognize the moment as a time of supreme evil, see 4.13; 22.3.

22.54–62: Peter's denials (Mt 26.69–75; Mk 14.66–72; Jn 18.25–27). **54–55:** Jn 18.12–16. **56–62:** Jn 18.16–18,25–27. **61:** 22.34. Jesus' turning to face Peter is a detail found only in Luke .

22.63–65: The mockery of Jesus (Mt 26.67–68; 27.27–31a; Mk 14.65; 15.16–20a). See Jn 18.22–24. This scene in Luke's account is located differently in the sequence of the narrative from the parallels in the other Gospels.

22.66–71: Jesus before the council (Mt 27.1; 26.59–65; Mk 15.1; 14.55–63; Jn 18.13–14,19–23). **66:** *Council,* Gk "synedrion," Sanhedrin. **67:** The demand put to Jesus, *If you are the Messiah, tell us,* becomes an element of the charges against Jesus before Pilate in 23.2. **69:** See Ps 110.1; Dan 7.13. **71:** From what follows in 23.1–2, it seems here that Jesus' adversaries (the authorities at the assembly) conclude that he is guilty of sedition.

23.1–5: Jesus before Pilate (Mt 27.1–14; Mk 15.1–5; Jn 18.28–38). **1:** *Pilate,* see 3.1n. **2:** Cf. 19.38; 20.25; see Acts 24.5. The charge is phrased to sound like treason. **3:** Jesus' answer, translated from the Gk as "You say so," more literally is the ambiguous statement, "You yourself say." **4:** 23.14,22,41; Jn 19.4,6; Acts 13.28. Pilate refused to take religious ideas in a political sense. Here, and later, Pilate sought to free Jesus but then yielded to pressures.

23.6–12: Jesus before Herod. Only Luke reports this episode. *Herod* Antipas was a son of Herod the Great

he was very glad, for he had been wanting to see him for a long time, because he had heard about him and was hoping to see him perform some sign. [9] He questioned him at some length, but Jesus[a] gave him no answer. [10] The chief priests and the scribes stood by, vehemently accusing him. [11] Even Herod with his soldiers treated him with contempt and mocked him; then he put an elegant robe on him, and sent him back to Pilate. [12] That same day Herod and Pilate became friends with each other; before this they had been enemies.

[13] Pilate then called together the chief priests, the leaders, and the people, [14] and said to them, "You brought me this man as one who was perverting the people; and here I have examined him in your presence and have not found this man guilty of any of your charges against him. [15] Neither has Herod, for he sent him back to us. Indeed, he has done nothing to deserve death. [16] I will therefore have him flogged and release him."[b]

[18] Then they all shouted out together, "Away with this fellow! Release Barabbas for us!" [19] (This was a man who had been put in prison for an insurrection that had taken place in the city, and for murder.) [20] Pilate, wanting to release Jesus, addressed them again; [21] but they kept shouting, "Crucify, crucify him!" [22] A third time he said to them, "Why, what evil has he done? I have found in him no ground for the sentence of death; I will therefore have him flogged and then release him." [23] But they kept urgently demanding with loud shouts that he should be crucified; and their voices prevailed. [24] So Pilate gave his verdict that their demand should be granted. [25] He released the man they asked for, the one who had been put in prison for insurrection and murder, and he handed Jesus over as they wished.

[26] As they led him away, they seized a man, Simon of Cyrene, who was coming from the country, and they laid the cross on him, and made him carry it behind Jesus. [27] A great number of the people followed him, and among them were women who were beating their breasts and wailing for him. [28] But Jesus turned to them and said, "Daughters of Jerusalem, do not weep for me, but weep for yourselves and for your children. [29] For the days are surely coming when they will say, 'Blessed are the barren, and the wombs that never bore, and the breasts that never nursed.' [30] Then they will begin to say to the mountains, 'Fall on us'; and to the hills, 'Cover us.' [31] For if they do this when the wood is green, what will happen when it is dry?"

[32] Two others also, who were criminals, were led away to be put to death with him. [33] When they came to the place that is called The Skull, they crucified Jesus[c] there with the criminals, one on his right and one on his left. [34] Then Jesus said, "Father, forgive them; for they do not know what they are

[a] Gk *he*

[b] Here, or after verse 19, other ancient authorities add verse 17, *Now he was obliged to release someone for them at the festival*

[c] Gk *him*

(see 3.1n.). Herod [Antipas] had arrested (3.19–20) and beheaded (9.9) John the Baptist. **8:** 9.9; Acts 4.27–28. **9:** Jesus' silence, noted in Mt 27.12 and Mk 15.5, occurs in Luke's account as Jesus stands before Herod Antipas, a scene unique to Luke. **11:** Jn 19.2–3.

23.13–16 [17]: Pilate's declaration of Jesus' innocence. 14: Vv. 4,22,41. **16:** Jn 19.12–14. **[17]:** An addition to Luke's account from Mk 15.6; see note there.

23.18–25: The sentencing of Jesus to death (Mt 27.15–26; Mk 15.6–15; Jn 18.39–40; 19.16; see Acts 3.13–14). **18:** The Barabbas incident is recounted in further detail in Mt 27.15–23; Mk 15.6–14; Jn 18.39–40.

23.26–31: On the way to the cross (Mt 27.31b–32; Mk 15.20b–21; Jn 19.17a). **26:** *Cyrene,* in Libya. *The cross,* i.e., the horizontal cross-beam. **27:** Here *beating their breasts* seems to indicate more mourning than repentance (cf. 18.3; 23.48). **28–32:** 21.23–24; 19.41–44. **30:** Incorporates wording parallel to Hos 10.8. **31:** Cf. Prov 11.31. This proverb may mean either that if the innocent Jesus meets such a fate, then a worse fate awaits the guilty Jerusalem, or that if such takes place with Jesus present and active, what will happen when he is no longer present? Cf. 1 Pet 4.17–18.

23.32: Two criminals with Jesus. The Gk word for *criminal* gives no indication of the nature of the crime(s) committed by these two who were crucified with Jesus.

23.33–38: The scene of the crucifixion (Mt 27.33–43; Mk 15.22–32a; Jn 19.17b–27). **33:** *The Skull,* its Aramaic

doing." [a] And they cast lots to divide his clothing. [35] And the people stood by, watching; but the leaders scoffed at him, saying, "He saved others; let him save himself if he is the Messiah[b] of God, his chosen one!" [36] The soldiers also mocked him, coming up and offering him sour wine, [37] and saying, "If you are the King of the Jews, save yourself!" [38] There was also an inscription over him,[c] "This is the King of the Jews."

[39] One of the criminals who were hanged there kept deriding[d] him and saying, "Are you not the Messiah?[b] Save yourself and us!" [40] But the other rebuked him, saying, "Do you not fear God, since you are under the same sentence of condemnation? [41] And we indeed have been condemned justly, for we are getting what we deserve for our deeds, but this man has done nothing wrong." [42] Then he said, "Jesus, remember me when you come into[e] your kingdom." [43] He replied, "Truly I tell you, today you will be with me in Paradise."

[44] It was now about noon, and darkness came over the whole land[f] until three in the afternoon, [45] while the sun's light failed;[g] and the curtain of the temple was torn in two. [46] Then Jesus, crying with a loud voice, said, "Father, into your hands I commend my spirit." Having said this, he breathed his last. [47] When the centurion saw what had taken place, he praised God and said, "Certainly this man was innocent."[h] [48] And when all the crowds who had gathered there for this spectacle saw what had taken place, they returned home, beating their breasts. [49] But all his acquaintances, including the women who had followed him from Galilee, stood at a distance, watching these things.

[50] Now there was a good and righteous man named Joseph, who, though a member of the council, [51] had not agreed to their plan and action. He came from the Jewish town of Arimathea, and he was waiting expectantly for the kingdom of God. [52] This man went to Pilate and asked for the body of Jesus. [53] Then he took it down, wrapped it in a linen cloth, and laid it in a rock-hewn tomb where no one had ever been laid. [54] It was the day of Preparation, and the sabbath was beginning.[i] [55] The women who had come with him from Galilee followed, and they saw the tomb and

[a] Other ancient authorities lack the sentence *Then Jesus… what they are doing*
[b] Or *the Christ*
[c] Other ancient authorities add *written in Greek and Latin and Hebrew* (that is, *Aramaic*)
[d] Or *blaspheming*
[e] Other ancient authorities read *in*
[f] Or *earth*
[g] Or *the sun was eclipsed.* Other ancient authorities read *the sun was darkened*
[h] Or *righteous*
[i] Gk *was dawning*

name, Golgotha, is found in the other Gospels. **34:** See textual note *a;* cf. Acts 7.60. The final phrase alludes to Ps 22.18. **36:** Ps 69.21.

23.39–43: The exchange between Jesus and the two criminals (Mt 27.44; Mk 15.32b). **41:** Vv. 4,14,22. **42:** The criminal's appeal may be based on the charge against Jesus (vv. 2,3,38); he thinks in terms of 21.27–28. Jesus promises him more than he asked, intimating that God's kingly power is a present reality, not merely future. **43:** *Paradise,* originally a term for the garden of Eden (Gen 2.8–10), was a contemporary term for the lodging place of the righteous dead prior to the resurrection; cf. 16.22.

23.44–48: The death of Jesus (Mt 27.45–54; Mk 15.33–39; Jn 19.28–30). **45:** Ex 26.31–35. *The sun's light failed,* the translation is uncertain; see Am 8.9; Joel 2.31. **46:** Jesus' words quote Ps 31.6. **47:** In the context of Luke's Gospel, the centurion (see 7.2n.) declares Jesus to be "righteous" rather than merely *innocent.* **48:** The cause of this popular agitation is not clear (Zech 12.10), though compare 18.13–14 for a possible meaning of the crowd's reaction.

23.49: Jesus' acquaintances at the crucifixion (Mt 27.55–56; Mk 15.40–41; Jn 19.25–27). See 23.55; cf. 8.1–3; 24.10; Ps 38.11. **49:** Luke often uses *all* to indicate a large number of persons, not actually "all"; cf. 3.21.

23.50–54: The burial of Jesus (Mt 27.57–60; Mk 15.42–46; Jn 19.38–42). **50:** *The council,* 22.66n. **54:** *The sabbath* began at sundown. Luke, perhaps having Gentile readers in mind, indicates the urgency of the burial in Jewish custom.

23.55–56: Women at the burial (Mt 27.61; Mk 15.47–16.1). **55:** Cf. 24.10. **56:** Ex 12.16; 20.10. *Spices and ointments* were applied to the corpse; see Mk 16.1; Jn 19.40.

how his body was laid. 56 Then they returned, and prepared spices and ointments.

On the sabbath they rested according to the commandment.

24 But on the first day of the week, at early dawn, they came to the tomb, taking the spices that they had prepared. 2 They found the stone rolled away from the tomb, 3 but when they went in, they did not find the body.[a] 4 While they were perplexed about this, suddenly two men in dazzling clothes stood beside them. 5 The women[b] were terrified and bowed their faces to the ground, but the men[c] said to them, "Why do you look for the living among the dead? He is not here, but has risen.[d] 6 Remember how he told you, while he was still in Galilee, 7 that the Son of Man must be handed over to sinners, and be crucified, and on the third day rise again." 8 Then they remembered his words, 9 and returning from the tomb, they told all this to the eleven and to all the rest. 10 Now it was Mary Magdalene, Joanna, Mary the mother of James, and the other women with them who told this to the apostles. 11 But these words seemed to them an idle tale, and they did not believe them. 12 But Peter got up and ran to the tomb; stooping and looking in, he saw the linen cloths by themselves; then he went home, amazed at what had happened.[e]

13 Now on that same day two of them were going to a village called Emmaus, about seven miles[f] from Jerusalem, 14 and talking with each other about all these things that had happened. 15 While they were talking and discussing, Jesus himself came near and went with them, 16 but their eyes were kept from recognizing him. 17 And he said to them, "What are you discussing with each other while you walk along?" They stood still, looking sad.[g] 18 Then one of them, whose name was Cleopas, answered him, "Are you the only stranger in Jerusalem who does not know the things that have taken place there in these days?" 19 He asked them, "What things?" They replied, "The things about Jesus of Nazareth,[h] who was a prophet mighty in deed and word before God and all the people, 20 and how our chief priests and leaders handed him over to be condemned to death and crucified him. 21 But we had hoped that he was the one to redeem Israel.[i] Yes, and besides all this, it is now the third day since these things took place. 22 Moreover, some women of our group astounded us. They were at the tomb early this morning, 23 and when they did not find his body there, they came back and told us that they had indeed seen a vision of angels who said that he was alive. 24 Some of those who were with us went to the tomb and found it just as the women had said; but they did not see him." 25 Then he said to them, "Oh, how foolish you are, and how slow of heart to believe all that the prophets have declared! 26 Was it not necessary that the Messiah[j] should suffer these things and then enter into his glory?" 27 Then beginning with Moses and

[a] Other ancient authorities add *of the Lord Jesus*
[b] Gk *They*
[c] Gk *but they*
[d] Other ancient authorities lack *He is not here, but has risen*
[e] Other ancient authorities lack verse 12
[f] Gk *sixty stadia;* other ancient authorities read *a hundred sixty stadia*
[g] Other ancient authorities read *walk along, looking sad?"*
[h] Other ancient authorities read *Jesus the Nazorean*
[i] Or *to set Israel free*
[j] Or *the Christ*

24.1–53: The empty tomb and the resurrection (Mt 28.1–10,16–20; Mk 16.1–8; Jn 20–21).

24.1–12: The women at the tomb (Mt 28.1–8; Mk 16.1–8; Jn 20.1–13). **4:** The *two men* wear clothing that identifies them as angels, not ordinary humans (see v. 23), as do their sudden appearance and supernatural knowledge (vv. 5–7). **6:** 9.22; 13.32–33. *You* here suggests that Jesus' disciples as a group often included others in addition to those of the inner circle. **10:** 8.1–3; Jn 19.25; 20.2. **12:** This verse, though appearing in many ancient manuscripts, may be an addition to the original text of Luke based on Jn 20.3–10.

24.13–35: The Emmaus incident. 13: *Seven miles,* lit., "sixty stadia"; a stade was approximately 180 m (600 ft). The exact location of Emmaus is uncertain. **16:** The inability of these persons to recognize Jesus is typical of initial reactions to Jesus in resurrection stories (cf. 24.37). **19:** 7.16; 13.33; Acts 3.22; 10.38. **26:** *Necessary* because of God's divine plan (see 7.30; Acts 2.23; 13.36; 20.27). **27:** *Moses,* the traditional author of the first five books of the Bible. *The prophets,* a major section of the Jewish scriptures more extensive in scope than the prophetic works

all the prophets, he interpreted to them the things about himself in all the scriptures.

28 As they came near the village to which they were going, he walked ahead as if he were going on. 29 But they urged him strongly, saying, "Stay with us, because it is almost evening and the day is now nearly over." So he went in to stay with them. 30 When he was at the table with them, he took bread, blessed and broke it, and gave it to them. 31 Then their eyes were opened, and they recognized him; and he vanished from their sight. 32 They said to each other, "Were not our hearts burning within us[a] while he was talking to us on the road, while he was opening the scriptures to us?" 33 That same hour they got up and returned to Jerusalem; and they found the eleven and their companions gathered together. 34 They were saying, "The Lord has risen indeed, and he has appeared to Simon!" 35 Then they told what had happened on the road, and how he had been made known to them in the breaking of the bread.

36 While they were talking about this, Jesus himself stood among them and said to them, "Peace be with you."[b] 37 They were startled and terrified, and thought that they were seeing a ghost. 38 He said to them, "Why are you frightened, and why do doubts arise in your hearts? 39 Look at my hands and my feet; see that it is I myself. Touch me and see; for a ghost does not have flesh and bones as you see that I have." 40 And when he had said this, he showed them his hands and his feet.[c] 41 While in their joy they were disbelieving and still wondering, he said to them, "Have you anything here to eat?" 42 They gave him a piece of broiled fish, 43 and he took it and ate in their presence.

44 Then he said to them, "These are my words that I spoke to you while I was still with you—that everything written about me in the law of Moses, the prophets, and the psalms must be fulfilled." 45 Then he opened their minds to understand the scriptures, 46 and he said to them, "Thus it is written, that the Messiah[d] is to suffer and to rise from the dead on the third day, 47 and that repentance and forgiveness of sins is to be proclaimed in his name to all nations, beginning from Jerusalem. 48 You are witnesses[e] of these things. 49 And see, I am sending upon you what my Father promised; so stay here in the city until you have been clothed with power from on high."

50 Then he led them out as far as Bethany, and, lifting up his hands, he blessed them. 51 While he was blessing them, he withdrew from them and was carried up into heaven.[f] 52 And they worshiped him, and[g] returned to Jerusalem with great joy; 53 and they were continually in the temple blessing God.[h]

[a] Other ancient authorities lack *within us*
[b] Other ancient authorities lack *and said to them, "Peace be with you."*
[c] Other ancient authorities lack verse 40
[d] Or *the Christ*
[e] Or *nations. Beginning from Jerusalem* [48]*you are witnesses*
[f] Other ancient authorities lack *and was carried up into heaven*
[g] Other ancient authorities lack *worshiped him, and*
[h] Other ancient authorities add *Amen*

of the Hebrew Bible (see 16.16n.; 24.44; Acts 28.23). **30:** *Took, blessed,* and *broke,* echo the actions of Jesus at the Last Supper (22.19) and the multiplication of the loaves (9.16). **34:** 1 Cor 15.5. Peter's experience is not described. **35:** *Breaking of the bread,* see Acts 2.42; 20.7; 1 Cor 10.16.

24.36–43: Jesus' appearance to his disciples (Jn 20.19–23). See 1 Cor 15.5. The experience of Jesus, affirmed in v. 36, is tentatively interpreted in v. 37 as an encounter with the dead, but this explanation is rejected in v. 39. **39–40:** Cf. Jn 20.25,27. **42:** *Broiled fish,* cf. Jn 21.9–13.

24.44–53: Jesus' final words and withdrawal into heaven (cf. elements of the longer ending of Mark: Mk 16.15,19). **44:** Vv. 26–27; Acts 28.23. The Psalms formed the opening and the longest part of the third division of the Hebrew Bible; see 16.16n. **45:** 24.32. **46:** Hos 6.2; cf. 1 Cor 15.3–4. **47:** Acts 1.4–8; 5.31; 10.43; 13.38; 26.18. **48:** Acts 1.8. **49:** *Power from on high,* the words allude to the energy of the Spirit of God referred to in Joel 2.28–32 (cf. Acts 2.1–21). The new age has begun, but its power is not yet fully realized. **50:** *Bethany,* see 19.29n. **51:** Acts 1.9–11. **52–53:** Acts 1.12–14; 2.46–47.

This page intentionally left blank

THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO JOHN

NAME, AUTHORSHIP, AND DATE

The Fourth Gospel is named for John, the son of Zebedee, one of the Twelve (see Mk 1.19; 3.17; etc.), traditionally thought to be its author and identified as the "beloved disciple" repeatedly mentioned in the Gospel. Modern scholars think it was more likely written by a disciple of John. It may have been the "beloved disciple," who is never called John in the Gospel, or someone to whom he dictated it (see Jn 21.24n.). Most scholars date the Gospel to about 90 CE, although some have proposed an earlier date for it, or for an earlier version of it.

RELATIONSHIP TO THE SYNOPTIC GOSPELS

The author of the Fourth Gospel was apparently familiar with the earlier Synoptic Gospels or with traditions they contain. It includes sayings of Jesus that resemble some in the Synoptics, and such narratives as Jesus and the money changers in the Temple, Jesus multiplying bread and fish, and Jesus walking on water are found in all four Gospels. Moreover, the narrative structure of the Fourth Gospel in general follows that of the earlier Gospels: the preaching of John the Baptist; preaching and healing by Jesus in Galilee and Judea; journey to Jerusalem to celebrate the Passover; arrest, trial, death, burial, and resurrection there; and appearances of Jesus after the resurrection both in Judea and in Galilee.

Within this general framework, however, John is very different in many details and in content. For example, the scene in the Temple, which the Synoptic Gospels place in the week before Jesus' death, appears in John near the beginning of Jesus' ministry (2.13–23). In the Synoptics, the adult Jesus journeys to Jerusalem only once, implying that his ministry lasted less than a year, whereas in John, Jesus makes several journeys to Jerusalem, including three Passovers (2.13; 6.4; 11.55), meaning that his ministry lasted several years. Although there is a Last Supper in John, it is not a Passover meal as in the Synoptic Gospels. Rather, in John the first day of Passover is the day of Jesus' death, when he is symbolically identified as the Passover lamb (see 19.36; cf. 1.29,36), and thus the account of the Last Supper does not include the institution of the Eucharist.

Most significant are the differences in content. John has a very high Christology: Jesus is repeatedly identified and identifies himself as divine. Many of Jesus' speeches in the Gospel reflect this perspective, and they have few parallels in the Synoptic tradition.

HISTORICAL CONTEXT

The Gospel of John thus seems to represent a relatively late stage in the development of earliest Christian beliefs. Its views have much in common with the other Johannine literature, the Letters of John and the book of Revelation. Although it is no longer thought likely that these works have a single author, they do seem to be the product of a "Johannine school," which ancient tradition perhaps correctly locates at Ephesus in western Asia Minor at a time when persecution by Roman authorities was becoming more frequent, and conflicts between Gentile Christians and Jewish Christians as well as between Christians in general and Jews were becoming more intense.

STYLE, STRUCTURE, AND INTERPRETATION

The audience of John consists of Greek speakers, for many Hebrew words are translated into Greek. The "beloved disciple" is considered the "witness" to the story, presumably written in Ephesus. The author (composer and writer), who differs from the "witness," displays sophisticated literary and rhetorical abilities. He knows the encomium that praises a person because of origins (geography and generation), education and training, virtuous actions, and noble death. Here we find two encomiums, one praiseworthy and one condemnatory, both arguing from the same topics. Opponents know that Jesus comes from Nazareth of Galilee, an insignificant place; his father is the peasant Joseph; he never studied; as for his actions, he deceives and violates the Law; and he died a death befitting a sinner. But insiders know that his geography is heaven, God's world; his generation, son of a heavenly Father; his education, God's instruction on what to say and do; his actions virtuous (obedience, courage, and justice); and his death noble. Antitheses like these occur regularly as crowds voice contrasting judgments about Jesus, either sinner or saint.

The Gospel argues through the rhetorical figure "comparison" the superiority of Jesus to Israel's patriarchs: he is "greater than" Jacob (4.12), Abraham (8.52), and Moses (1.17; 3.13–14; 5.45–47). When Jesus says that "I am . . . (something)," he is claiming superiority over some element of Israelite tradition and ritual as well as of nature. "I am . . . bread . . . from heaven" (6.41; not mere manna); "light of the world" (8.12; not mere sunlight); "gate" (10.9; no other broker provides access to God); "noble shepherd" (see 10.11n.; not thieves or bandits); "resurrection and . . . life" (11.25; apart from me, death), and "vine" (15.1). Jesus speaks eight statements, each of which begin with a demand "Unless . . ."; these require something be done, either to join the group (3.3,5; 12.24; 13.8) or remain in it (8.24; 15.4). They all demand behavior surpassing Israel's transformative and confirmatory rituals.

The following division is suggested by the Gospel itself: the prologue (1.1–18); the book of Jesus' signs that he is the revelation of the Father (1.19–12.50); the book of Jesus' glory as it is revealed to those who accept him through his crucifixion, resurrection, and ascension (13.1–20.31); the epilogue, which contains additional accounts of Jesus' postresurrection appearances and comments on the future of Peter and the "beloved disciple" (21.1–25).

The author knows traditional literary forms, such as the shape of a miracle narrative. Commonly noted are (1) the severity of the disease; (2) cure by command or use of spit and mud; (3) proof of the cure; and (4) honor awarded the healer. This form illuminates the structure of many of the "signs," especially 5.1–10; 9.1–11 and 11.38–44. The genre of the "farewell address," known from both Jewish and Greek literature, structures the discourse in John 14–17. It typically contains (1) notice of death or departure (13.33; 14.2–3,28); (2) review of the person's life (14.32; 17.4–8,18,26); (3) relationships to be maintained (14.3–17; 15.1–17); (4) knowledge and revelations given (14.4–11,20–26; 15.25–26); (5) predictions of forthcoming events (14.29; 15.18–25; 16.1–4,29–22); (6) exhortation to virtue ("believe," 14.10–11; "love," 14.21–24; 15.12–17; "abide," 15.1–10); (7) successor named (14.25–26; 16.7–15); and (8) legacy ("greater works," 14.12–14; "name of God" bestowed, 17.6,11–12,26; knowledge, 17.3–8).

Other patterns appear. Four times people request Jesus to act; he refuses, but shortly thereafter acts positively (2.3–7; 4.47–50; 7.3–10; 11.3–7). Only Jesus knows his "hour," and all actions are of his own choosing, a display of his honor and of control. Conflict, which pervades this Gospel, is expressed in forensic trials, which consist of: person charged; witnesses pro and con; judge; sentence and verdict. All trials occur in Jerusalem (chs 5; 7–11; 18–19) where the elite accuse Jesus of violating the sabbath (5.17; 7.21; 9.16) and blasphemy (5.18; 10.33). Witnesses testify both favorably and critically. The judges, who claim to judge according to the law, judge instead according to appearances (7.24; 8.15). Despite their guilty verdict, they cannot execute sentence, and in time they themselves will be judged.

Jesus reveals and conceals. As revealer, he is the Word of God who speaks God's words. But he also conceals in that only insiders hear and know his revelation (e.g., 10.27). Outsiders like Nicodemus barely know the workings of the world of matter and flesh below (see 3.12). In one of the notable patterns here, Jesus uses words with double meanings. Nicodemus must be born "again," he thinks, but Jesus meant "from above." The Samaritan woman discusses "water" with Jesus but never realizes that Jesus is not speaking of well water (4.7–15); nor do the disciples understand Jesus' "food" (4.31–34). Some interpret "I am going . . ." as departure or suicide (7.35; 8.22), not as glorious return to the Father. Jesus hides himself (8.59; 12.36), dissembles with his brothers (7.1–11), speaks in parables (10.1–18) and figures of speech (16.25,29–30). A strategy of mystery and concealment occurs frequently in the pattern of statement, misunderstanding, and clarification. Jesus speaks, but all misunderstand; to insiders he clarifies, but to outsiders, he proves them incapable of understanding (e.g., 3.3–5; 6.51–58; 14.4–6,7–11). Readers appreciate the irony of situations and statements, such as claims by enemies and outsiders to "know" (7.27; 9.29) or the prophecy of Caiaphas (11.48–50).

The Gospel discredits the religious authorities, whom it calls "the Jews," by portraying them as mercenary and uncaring shepherds (10.12–13), as haughty and condescending to the people (7.15,49; 9.34), as being more concerned with worldly honor than divine favor (12.43), and as maliciously plotting to kill Jesus (11.53). Although its scathing portrayal of "the Jews" has opened John to charges of anti-Semitism, a careful reading reveals "the Jews" to be a class designation, not a religious or ethnic grouping; rather than denoting adherents to Judaism in general, the term primarily refers to the hereditary Temple religious authorities. The Gospel further acknowledges their influential status by including among "the Jews" those who have accepted the worldview and class interests of the hereditary religious authorities as their own. This larger group includes the Pharisees (1.19,24) and even the "crowd" of laypersons whose worth the religious authorities dismissed (7.49; cf. 6.22,41). Thus the rejection and persecution of Jesus by "the Jews" is shown to be not only the result of his words and deeds, but a result of the fact that his healings, pronouncements, and person lack the pedigree and imprimatur of the governing religious elite (7.15,48–49; cf. 9.34).

The Gospel of John celebrates Jesus, albeit differently from the other Gospels. Indeed, Jesus is acclaimed Messiah, Son of God, king of Israel, prophet, and Son of Man. But the author understands Jesus in more elevated terms. For example, in the prologue we learn at once that Jesus is a heavenly figure existing with God before the world was created. Thus he is uncreated in the past and brokers God's creative power. Jesus comes from God, is not merely sent by him, and entered this world, becoming flesh. Jesus, moreover, returns to that heavenly world when God glorifies him, God thus vindicating all that he said and did. This descent-ascent motif permeates the narrative, from beginning (1.1–18; 3.13) to end (13.1–3; 20.18).

It is false to claim that Jesus "makes himself" anything, for God makes him equal to himself, especially in terms of creative power (1.1–3; all healings) and eschatological power (5.19–29; 10.17–18; 11.38–44). God gives Jesus his own name, which he in turn gives to the disciples: the name "I AM" in 8.58 (see also 4.26n.; cf. Ex 3.14; Isa 43.10; 46.4) expresses uncreated existence in the past and imperishability in the future. All of Jesus' qualities and endowments serve to make him a superior broker or mediator between God who is patron and the disciples who are clients. Disciples pray always in Jesus' name; God's word and power comes to the world through Jesus. In fact, no one can know or see God except through Jesus. Jesus is the ideal broker because he belongs equally to the patron's world and that of the clients.

GUIDE TO READING

The Gospel is best read straight through, but readers may wish to attend to significant aspects such as the signs, the "I am" sayings, and other characteristics noted in this introduction. The Gospel itself claims that its narrative should be viewed in service to a larger goal: "that . . . you [the reader] may have life" (20.31).

Jerome H. Neyrey

1 In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. **2** He was in the beginning with God. **3** All things came into being through him, and without him not one thing came into being. What has come into being **4** in him was life,[a] and the life was the light of all people. **5** The light shines in the darkness, and the darkness did not overcome it.

6 There was a man sent from God, whose name was John. **7** He came as a witness to testify to the light, so that all might believe through him. **8** He himself was not the light, but he came to testify to the light. **9** The true light, which enlightens everyone, was coming into the world.[b]

10 He was in the world, and the world came into being through him; yet the world did not know him. **11** He came to what was his own,[c] and his own people did not accept him. **12** But

[a] Or *[3]through him. And without him not one thing came into being that has come into being. [4]In him was life*

[b] Or *He was the true light that enlightens everyone coming into the world*

[c] Or *to his own home*

1.1–18: Prologue. The Gospel begins with a prologue containing important topics to be developed. Jesus is eternal (uncreated and imperishable); the Word who speaks God's words; the light of the world; the one who faces rejection and acceptance; is compared with Israel's patriarchs; and mediates God's blessings (creation, grace, and truth). Here also is the plot of the story: Jesus begins with God in heaven, sojourns on earth, and returns there (3.13; 6.62; 13.1–3), which appears in the repeated discussion of where Jesus comes from and where he is going. **3:** Jesus as mediator or broker: *through him* all things were made, and through him come grace and truth (v. 17); later the disciples will address God in his name, that is, through him (14.13–14; 16.26). **5:** The world is hostile to the light and "hates" him (7.7; 15.18–19); this is developed in vv. 10–11, and dramatized in the trials in chs 18–19. **6–8:** In contrast to those rejecting the light, John (the Baptist) acknowledges it, even brokering Jesus to Israel. John's subordination to Jesus is found in 1.15,29–34; 3.27–30. **9:** Jesus, *true light* of the *world* (see 8.12). *True* means "authentic, unique"; cf. "true bread" (6.32); "true vine" (15.1). Disciples walk in light (10.9–10) but many prefer darkness (3.19–20; 12.25–26). **10–11:** *The world did not know him* (i.e., acknowledge him; see 4.44; 7.1–7); nor did *his own* (blood relatives and Israel) become disciples. The Word is in a hostile place. **12–13:** But he meets with acceptance and gives believers kinship with him and God. This depends not on birth, circumcision,

to all who received him, who believed in his name, he gave power to become children of God, 13 who were born, not of blood or of the will of the flesh or of the will of man, but of God.

14 And the Word became flesh and lived among us, and we have seen his glory, the glory as of a father's only son,[a] full of grace and truth. 15 (John testified to him and cried out, "This was he of whom I said, 'He who comes after me ranks ahead of me because he was before me.'") 16 From his fullness we have all received, grace upon grace. 17 The law indeed was given through Moses; grace and truth came through Jesus Christ. 18 No one has ever seen God. It is God the only Son,[b] who is close to the Father's heart,[c] who has made him known.

19 This is the testimony given by John when the Jews sent priests and Levites from Jerusalem to ask him, "Who are you?" 20 He confessed and did not deny it, but confessed, "I am not the Messiah."[d] 21 And they asked him, "What then? Are you Elijah?" He said, "I am not." "Are you the prophet?" He answered, "No." 22 Then they said to him, "Who are you? Let us have an answer for those who sent us. What do you say about yourself?" 23 He said,

"I am the voice of one crying out in the wilderness,

'Make straight the way of the Lord,'"

as the prophet Isaiah said.

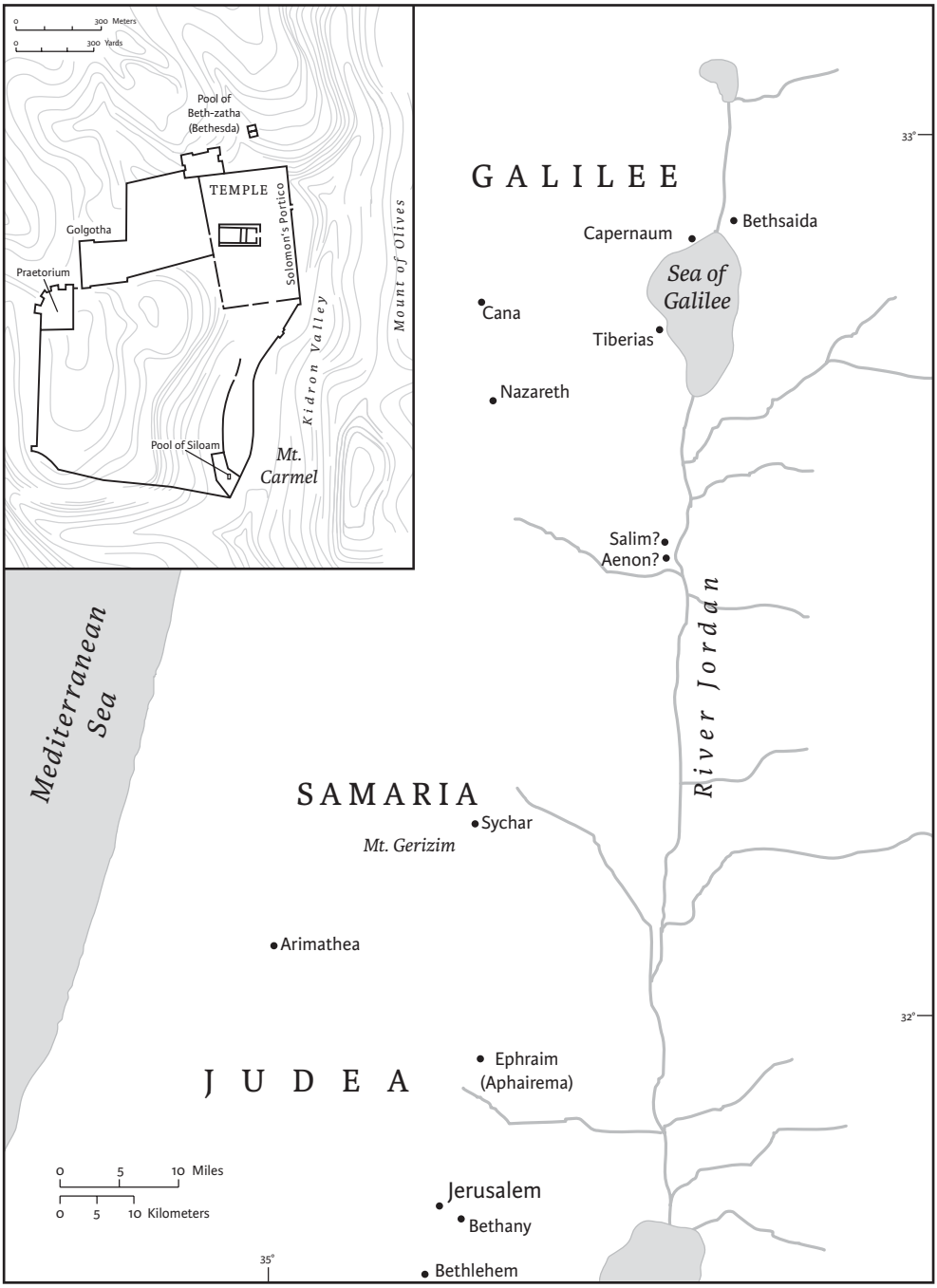
24 Now they had been sent from the Pharisees. 25 They asked him, "Why then are you baptizing if you are neither the Messiah,[d] nor Elijah, nor the prophet?" 26 John answered them, "I baptize with water. Among you stands one whom you do not know, 27 the one who is coming after me; I am not worthy to untie the thong of his sandal." 28 This took place in Bethany across the Jordan where John was baptizing.

29 The next day he saw Jesus coming toward him and declared, "Here is the Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world! 30 This is he of whom I said, 'After me comes a man who ranks ahead of me because he was before me.' 31 I myself did not know him; but I came baptizing with water for this reason, that he might be revealed to Israel." 32 And John testified, "I saw the Spirit descending from heaven like a dove, and it remained on him. 33 I myself did not know him, but the one who sent me to baptize with water said to me, 'He on whom you see the Spirit descend and remain is the one who baptizes with the Holy

[a] Or *the Father's only Son*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *It is an only Son, God,* or *It is the only Son*
[c] Gk *bosom*
[d] Or *the Christ*

or adoption, but on acceptance of Jesus and honoring his name. **14:** Along with Heb 2.11,14,17, this is the clearest statement of Jesus' humanity; he not only "came into the world" (1.10) but suffered thirst, weariness, and death. *Lived among us,* lit., "tented among us," just as the "*glory* of the LORD" took up residence in the tent of meeting (Ex 40.34). **15:** John repeats the statement about Jesus' eternity in 1.1–2. Temporally Jesus follows John but existed before John, from the beginning: John's testimony is quoted by anticipation from v. 30. **16–17:** Moses gave the *law,* the Torah; the comparison of Jesus and Moses inaugurates a pattern, which argues that Jesus was "greater" than Moses (see also 3.14; 5.45–46), Jacob (4.12), and Abraham (8.53).

1.19–34: John's testimony to hostile outsiders and receptive insiders. On John the Baptist, cf. Mt 3.1–17; Mk 1.1–11; Lk 3.1–22. In the Gospel of John, John the Baptist does not actually baptize Jesus. **19–23:** Two groups question John, first priests and Levites, then Pharisees. They do not seek information but attempt to discredit him, with questions acting as weapons. He replies that he is not the *Messiah,* nor *Elijah* the prophet (despite Mt 11.14; Mk 9.11–12; cf. Mal 4.5), nor another prophet (cf. Deut 18.15), but rather the one described in Isa 40.3. **19:** *The Jews,* here, as often in this Gospel, referring to religious authorities in Jerusalem. **24–25:** Pharisees continue the attack, demanding to know why he baptizes. John deflects the attack by talking about the one whom he heralds. **26:** They *do not know* (cf. v. 10) this honorable person in their midst. **28:** *Bethany across the Jordan,* an unknown location, but different from the Bethany in 11.18. **29–30:** John also testifies about Jesus to receptive people as *Lamb of God,* a reference to the Passover lamb (Ex 12), as 19.36 makes explicit; cf. Rev 6.6–14. John admits that he *did not know* him (1.31,33), but God revealed his son to John (cf. Gal 1.15) that he might testify. **30:** cf. v. 15. **32:** The spirit *remained* on Jesus, a word repeatedly used in this Gospel and in 1 and 2 John that signals belonging and attachment; not a transitory Spirit, it remains upon Jesus. As in the Synoptic Gospels (see Mk



The geography of the Gospel of John.

Spirit.' [34] And I myself have seen and have testified that this is the Son of God."[a]

[35] The next day John again was standing with two of his disciples, [36] and as he watched Jesus walk by, he exclaimed, "Look, here is the Lamb of God!" [37] The two disciples heard him say this, and they followed Jesus. [38] When Jesus turned and saw them following, he said to them, "What are you looking for?" They said to him, "Rabbi" (which translated means Teacher), "where are you staying?" [39] He said to them, "Come and see." They came and saw where he was staying, and they remained with him that day. It was about four o'clock in the afternoon. [40] One of the two who heard John speak and followed him was Andrew, Simon Peter's brother. [41] He first found his brother Simon and said to him, "We have found the Messiah" (which is translated Anointed[b]). [42] He brought Simon[c] to Jesus, who looked at him and said, "You are Simon son of John. You are to be called Cephas" (which is translated Peter[d]).

[43] The next day Jesus decided to go to Galilee. He found Philip and said to him, "Follow me." [44] Now Philip was from Bethsaida, the city of Andrew and Peter. [45] Philip found Nathanael and said to him, "We have found him about whom Moses in the law and also the prophets wrote, Jesus son of Joseph from Nazareth." [46] Nathanael said to him, "Can anything good come out of Nazareth?" Philip said to him, "Come and see." [47] When Jesus saw Nathanael coming toward him, he said of him, "Here is truly an Israelite in whom there is no deceit!" [48] Nathanael asked him, "Where did you get to know me?" Jesus answered, "I saw you under the fig tree before Philip called you." [49] Nathanael replied, "Rabbi, you are the Son of God! You are the King of Israel!" [50] Jesus answered, "Do you believe because I told you that I saw you under the fig tree? You will see greater things than these." [51] And he

[a] Other ancient authorities read *is God's chosen one*
[b] Or *Christ*
[c] Gk *him*
[d] From the word for *rock* in Aramaic (*kepha*) and Greek (*petra*), respectively
[e] Both instances of the Greek word for *you* in this verse are plural

1.9–11), this vision tells of a spirit descending and a heavenly voice affirming Jesus' status. **34:** John as eyewitness validly testifies that Jesus is *the Son of God.* John is the first of many such witnesses.

1.35–51: Recruitment of the first disciples. **35–37:** John's testimony about *the Lamb of God* (see 29–30n.) serves to recruit the first disciples. **38–39:** They come to Jesus, asking where he was *staying* ("remaining"), and they "remain" with him. **40–42:** The pattern repeats: a disciple tells another about Jesus (the Messiah), bringing him to Jesus. Jesus accepts this recruit by assigning him a new name. Hebrew and Aramaic words are translated: *Messiah* (i.e., *Anointed*) and *Cephas* (i.e., *Peter*, both mean "rock"), also "Rabbi" (i.e., "Teacher"; v. 38). The Greek-speaking audience of the Gospel seems not to know these languages. **43–44:** The scene shifts from Judea to Galilee, in the north. Philip's recruiter is not named; inasmuch as he comes from *Bethsaida, the city of Andrew and Peter,* on the northwestern shore of the Sea of Galilee, their network helps to recruit him. **45–46:** The recruitment pattern again but with a twist: told that Jesus was the one *about whom Moses . . . and also the prophets wrote*, Nathanael challenges Philip by noting the low status of Nazareth, Jesus' hometown, in southern Galilee. He typifies others who judge by appearances, denying that Jesus can be Messiah because of the insignificance of Nazareth or Galilee (7.40–43). But Nathanael perseveres, which distinguishes him from outsiders who judge by appearance. **47:** Jesus honors Nathanael, setting him apart from those who judge falsely. How can Jesus know him? He reads and knows the minds and hearts of others (2.24–25; Mk 2.8). **48:** Several Rabbinic texts equate gathering figs with studying Torah, suggesting Nathanael's status as student. **49:** Nathanael's confession climaxes the various labels that believers proclaim: Jesus is "Lamb of God," "Messiah" and "the one of whom Moses and the prophets wrote," and *Son of God . . . King of Israel*. This remarkable insight comes from a militant unbeliever. **50:** *Greater things,* probably the series of signs beginning immediately at Cana in ch 2. **51:** Jesus promises a theophany to all of them: they will see the *Son of Man* (cf. 3.13–15n.; Dan 7.13), who first descends from heaven's center, then re-ascends to it, with angels streaming toward him from all directions (cf. Gen 28.12). This vision is realized when he ascends "to my God and your God" (20.18), thus returning to the glory he had before the world was made (17.5).

2.1–12: The first sign. 1: *On the third day*, not necessarily actual, but symbolic time: John's testimony = day one, recruitment = day two, and signs = day three. *Wedding*, a family affair for Jesus and his mother, presum-

said to him, "Very truly, I tell you,[e] you will see heaven opened and the angels of God ascending and descending upon the Son of Man."

2 On the third day there was a wedding in Cana of Galilee, and the mother of Jesus was there. [2] Jesus and his disciples had also been invited to the wedding. [3] When the wine gave out, the mother of Jesus said to him, "They have no wine." [4] And Jesus said to her, "Woman, what concern is that to you and to me? My hour has not yet come." [5] His mother said to the servants, "Do whatever he tells you." [6] Now standing there were six stone water jars for the Jewish rites of purification, each holding twenty or thirty gallons. [7] Jesus said to them, "Fill the jars with water." And they filled them up to the brim. [8] He said to them, "Now draw some out, and take it to the chief steward." So they took it. [9] When the steward tasted the water that had become wine, and did not know where it came from (though the servants who had drawn the water knew), the steward called the bridegroom [10] and said to him, "Everyone serves the good wine first, and then the inferior wine after the guests have become drunk. But you have kept the good wine until now." [11] Jesus did this, the first of his signs, in Cana of Galilee, and revealed his glory; and his disciples believed in him.

[12] After this he went down to Capernaum with his mother, his brothers, and his disciples; and they remained there a few days.

[13] The Passover of the Jews was near, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem. [14] In the temple he found people selling cattle, sheep, and doves, and the money changers seated at their tables. [15] Making a whip of cords, he drove all of them out of the temple, both the sheep and the cattle. He also poured out the coins of the money changers and overturned their tables. [16] He told those who were selling the doves, "Take these things out of here! Stop making my Father's house a marketplace!" [17] His disciples remembered that it was written, "Zeal for your house will consume me." [18] The Jews then said to him, "What sign can you show us for doing this?" [19] Jesus answered them, "Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up." [20] The Jews then said, "This temple has been under construction for forty-six years, and will you raise it up in three days?" [21] But he was speaking of the temple of his body. [22] After he was raised from the dead, his disciples remembered that he had said this;

ably kinfolk of the couple married. The family's honor is on display, taxing its resources. *Cana,* a town in central Galilee, about 8 mi (14 km) north of Nazareth. **3–4:** A request is made, denied, then responded to; this pattern repeats later (4.47–50; 7.3–10; 11.3–7). *The mother,* never named in the Gospel, challenges Jesus by her request to do something he does not wish to do. *Woman* intentionally downplays her claim to blood ties (1.11–13). **4:** *My hour*, cf. 7.30; 8.20; 12.23; 13.1; 17.1. **6–8:** Jesus acts because he chooses to. Wine is needed, so he provides a superabundance of good wine. *Twenty or thirty gallons*, just as bread is multiplied superabundantly (6.1–14), so too is wine (see 10.10). **8–9:** The steward *did not know* where the wine came from, but provides proof of the miracles (cf. 9.18–21; 11.43–44; Mk 2.10–12). **11:** The *first . . . sign* of seven (4.47–50; 5.1–9; 6.1–14; 6.15–21; 9.1–12; 11.17–44). *Signs* are credentials, which the apostles acknowledge: Jesus could not do them unless God were with him (cf. 9.32–33). **12:** *Capernaum*, a town on the northwestern shore of the Sea of Galilee. On Jesus' *brothers,* see 7.3,10; 20.17; 21.23; Mk 6.3.

2.13–25: Jesus and the Temple. In the Synoptic Gospels, this episode occurs at the end of Jesus' ministry (Mt 21.12–17; Mk 11.15–19; Lk 19.45–46); here it is toward the beginning. **13–16:** *Passover*, in this Gospel, Jesus celebrates three Passovers. Here Jesus replaces the Jerusalem Temple, not with another building but with his body; later Jesus is bread, not manna (6.41), and Jesus' body, not the lamb, is sacrifice (13.1). **14:** The Temple alone supplied unblemished sacrificial animals; the half-shekel of Tyre, required for entry, was procured from the *money changers.* **15–17:** Jesus halts sacrificial worship and renders the Temple as non-sacred space. **16:** He attacks the sellers for profaning it by making it a market. **17:** Remembering the event, also interpreting it by means of Ps 69.9: *zeal for your house* is virtuous, despite the attacks by his critics; it *will consume me*, that is, occasion Jesus' death. **18:** *What sign,* this challenge seeks to discredit Jesus. **19:** *Destroy . . . temple . . . three days,* similar to the testimony in Mk 14.58; but Jesus himself speaks here. **20:** Another pattern: Jesus speaks, listeners misunderstand, so Jesus speaks again either in clarification or to demonstrate the listeners' obtuseness. Jesus says *temple . . . three days*; outsiders misunderstand, thinking that he means the Temple whose construction began under Herod the Great in the late first century BCE. **21–22:** Not an earthly *temple* (cf. 4.21) but his risen

and they believed the scripture and the word that Jesus had spoken.

23 When he was in Jerusalem during the Passover festival, many believed in his name because they saw the signs that he was doing. 24 But Jesus on his part would not entrust himself to them, because he knew all people 25 and needed no one to testify about anyone; for he himself knew what was in everyone.

3 Now there was a Pharisee named Nicodemus, a leader of the Jews. 2 He came to Jesus[a] by night and said to him, "Rabbi, we know that you are a teacher who has come from God; for no one can do these signs that you do apart from the presence of God." 3 Jesus answered him, "Very truly, I tell you, no one can see the kingdom of God without being born from above."[b] 4 Nicodemus said to him, "How can anyone be born after having grown old? Can one enter a second time into the mother's womb and be born?" 5 Jesus answered, "Very truly, I tell you, no one can enter the kingdom of God without being born of water and Spirit. 6 What is born of the flesh is flesh, and what is born of the Spirit is spirit.[c] 7 Do not be astonished that I said to you, 'You[d] must be born from above.'[e] 8 The wind[c] blows where it chooses, and you hear the sound of it, but you do not know where it comes from or where it goes. So it is with everyone who is born of the Spirit." 9 Nicodemus said to him, "How can these things be?" 10 Jesus answered him, "Are you a teacher of Israel, and yet you do not understand these things?

11 "Very truly, I tell you, we speak of what we know and testify to what we have seen; yet you[f] do not receive our testimony. 12 If I have told you about earthly things and you do not believe, how can you believe if I tell you about heavenly things? 13 No one has ascended into heaven except the one who descended from heaven, the Son of Man.[g] 14 And just as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, so must the Son of Man be lifted up, 15 that whoever believes in him may have eternal life.[h]

16 "For God so loved the world that he gave his only Son, so that everyone who believes in him may not perish but may have eternal life.

17 "Indeed, God did not send the Son into the world to condemn the world, but in order that the world might be saved through him.

a Gk *him*
b Or *born anew*
c The same Greek word means both *wind* and *spirit*
d The Greek word for *you* here is plural
e Or *anew*
f The Greek word for *you* here and in verse 12 is plural
g Other ancient authorities add *who is in heaven*
h Some interpreters hold that the quotation concludes with verse 15

body, which replaces all temples. After his vindication, believers remember and understand Jesus' remark. **23:** This Gospel contains many people with ambiguous loyalties (3.1–12; 7.1–10; 8.31–45). Hypocrisy and cowardice abound (see 9.22), making it hard to distinguish insiders from outsiders, true from false. **24–25:** Jesus knows all (18.4), especially human hearts; prophets could read hearts and not be fooled by hypocrisy.

3.1–21: Nicodemus listens but does not hear. 1–2: A high-ranking Pharisee comes in darkness to Jesus. *Teacher . . . come from God* reveals little when compared with what insiders had said (1.34,36,41,49). **3–5:** A pattern repeated (see 2.20n.): Jesus speaks, Nicodemus misunderstands a double-meaning word: he thinks Jesus means "again" (see textual note *b*), whereas Jesus meant *from above*. Nicodemus ridicules Jesus' word, thinking about birth as the impossible return to the womb. **5:** *No one can . . . without* introduces absolute claims by Jesus. *Born of water and Spirit* introduces the double–meaning word *Spirit,* which could be "heavenly agent" or "wind" (v. 8). Scholars disagree about whether there is a reference to baptism here. **6:** A typical Johannine dichotomy dividing the world in two: Nicodemus is *flesh,* knowing earthy things. **8:** Nicodemus cannot understand even where the wind comes from or where it goes. **9:** He claimed knowledge (3.2), but is now reduced to questioning, proof that he is flesh. **10:** Nicodemus's remark about Jesus ("a teacher . . . from God," v. 3), is now sarcastically turned back on him. **11–12:** In contrast, "we" speak true testimony about what we *know* and have *seen*, which he cannot *receive*. Even as "flesh," he still cannot understand earthly things, like wind; he is incapable of comprehending *heavenly* things. **13–15:** *The Son of Man* first mentioned in 1.51 was ambiguous; but *Son of Man* refers to the heavenly figure who first descended then re-ascended, confirming his heavenly origin. *Serpent*, see Num 21.9. **16:** God's own plan, who as a benevolent patron, sent his agent Jesus out of love. **17–18:** *Not . . .*

18 Those who believe in him are not condemned; but those who do not believe are condemned already, because they have not believed in the name of the only Son of God. 19 And this is the judgment, that the light has come into the world, and people loved darkness rather than light because their deeds were evil. 20 For all who do evil hate the light and do not come to the light, so that their deeds may not be exposed. 21 But those who do what is true come to the light, so that it may be clearly seen that their deeds have been done in God."[a]

22 After this Jesus and his disciples went into the Judean countryside, and he spent some time there with them and baptized. 23 John also was baptizing at Aenon near Salim because water was abundant there; and people kept coming and were being baptized 24 —John, of course, had not yet been thrown into prison.

25 Now a discussion about purification arose between John's disciples and a Jew.[b] 26 They came to John and said to him, "Rabbi, the one who was with you across the Jordan, to whom you testified, here he is baptizing, and all are going to him." 27 John answered, "No one can receive anything except what has been given from heaven. 28 You yourselves are my witnesses that I said, 'I am not the Messiah,[c] but I have been sent ahead of him.' 29 He who has the bride is the bridegroom. The friend of the bridegroom, who stands and hears him, rejoices greatly at the bridegroom's voice. For this reason my joy has been fulfilled. 30 He must increase, but I must decrease."[d]

31 The one who comes from above is above all; the one who is of the earth belongs to the earth and speaks about earthly things. The one who comes from heaven is above all. 32 He testifies to what he has seen and heard, yet no one accepts his testimony. 33 Whoever has accepted his testimony has certified[e] this, that God is true. 34 He whom God has sent speaks the words of God, for he gives the Spirit without measure. 35 The Father loves the Son and has placed all things in his hands. 36 Whoever believes in the Son has eternal life; whoever disobeys the Son will not see life, but must endure God's wrath.

4 Now when Jesus[f] learned that the Pharisees had heard, "Jesus is making and baptizing more disciples than John" 2 —although it was not Jesus himself but his disciples who baptized— 3 he left Judea and started back to Galilee. 4 But he had to go through Samaria. 5 So he came to a Samaritan city called Sychar, near the plot of ground that Jacob had given to his son Joseph. 6 Jacob's well was

[a] Some interpreters hold that the quotation concludes with verse 15
[b] Other ancient authorities read *the Jews*
[c] Or *the Christ*
[d] Some interpreters hold that the quotation continues through verse 36
[e] Gk *set a seal to*
[f] Other ancient authorities read *the Lord*

condemn . . . but . . . be saved, confirms God's benevolence. **19–21:** God gave grace, but some prefer darkness (3.1; 13.30), where they cannot be seen. But believers come into the light to receive God's saving *judgment*.

3.22–30: John's testimony again (cf. 1.15,29–36). **22–23:** With two groups of baptizers—Jesus and his disciples, and John and his disciples—competition is inevitable; see further 4.1–2. The locations of *Aenon* and *Salim* are uncertain. **24:** See Mk 6.14–29. **27:** All Jesus has and does is because he is God's agent. **28:** John happily holds second place, as his herald. **29:** *Friend,* the best man or groomsman is not a rival of the *bridegroom*; cf. Mk 2.18–20. **30:** Jesus' *increase* does not shame John, because John's *decrease* is voluntary, thus honorable.

3.31–36: Concluding summary. 31: Nicodemus misunderstood the double-meaning word as "again" (3.3), which here describes Jesus who *comes from above* (3.13,31). As "flesh" contrasts with "spirit" (3.6) and "earthly" with "heavenly" knowledge (3.12), so the speaker *from above* is contrasted with the one *of the earth* speaking earthly things. **32:** Cf. 1.10–11. **34:** *Spirit* in 3.5–8 meant "wind," but now is it God's gift *without measure*.

4.1–42: Success in Samaria. 1–2: The Pharisees' concern over Jesus' baptizing balances the controversy with John's disciples (3.22–26). **3:** Chs 3 and 4 are antithetical: from Judea and unbelief to Samaria and acceptance, from night to noon, from water for birth to water of life, from Israelite male to Samaritan female. **4:** *Samaria,* between Judea and Galilee (v. 3), was inhabited by the Samaritans, who worshiped the Lord God and used the Torah. But Jews did not consider Samaritan observances to be authentic; see further v. 9. **5–6:** *Jacob's well,*

there, and Jesus, tired out by his journey, was sitting by the well. It was about noon.

7 A Samaritan woman came to draw water, and Jesus said to her, "Give me a drink." 8 (His disciples had gone to the city to buy food.) 9 The Samaritan woman said to him, "How is it that you, a Jew, ask a drink of me, a woman of Samaria?" (Jews do not share things in common with Samaritans.)[a] 10 Jesus answered her, "If you knew the gift of God, and who it is that is saying to you, 'Give me a drink,' you would have asked him, and he would have given you living water." 11 The woman said to him, "Sir, you have no bucket, and the well is deep. Where do you get that living water? 12 Are you greater than our ancestor Jacob, who gave us the well, and with his sons and his flocks drank from it?" 13 Jesus said to her, "Everyone who drinks of this water will be thirsty again, 14 but those who drink of the water that I will give them will never be thirsty. The water that I will give will become in them a spring of water gushing up to eternal life." 15 The woman said to him, "Sir, give me this water, so that I may never be thirsty or have to keep coming here to draw water."

16 Jesus said to her, "Go, call your husband, and come back." 17 The woman answered him, "I have no husband." Jesus said to her, "You are right in saying, 'I have no husband'; 18 for you have had five husbands, and the one you have now is not your husband. What you have said is true!" 19 The woman said to him, "Sir, I see that you are a prophet. 20 Our ancestors worshiped on this mountain, but you[b] say that the place where people must worship is in Jerusalem." 21 Jesus said to her, "Woman, believe me, the hour is coming when you will worship the Father neither on this mountain nor in Jerusalem. 22 You worship what you do not know; we worship what we know, for salvation is from the Jews. 23 But the hour is coming, and is now here, when the true worshipers will worship the Father in spirit and truth, for the Father seeks such as these to worship him. 24 God is spirit, and those who worship him must worship in spirit and truth." 25 The woman said to him, "I know that Messiah is coming" (who is called Christ). "When he comes, he will proclaim all things to us." 26 Jesus said to her, "I am he,[c] the one who is speaking to you."

27 Just then his disciples came. They were astonished that he was speaking with a woman, but no one said, "What do you want?" or, "Why are you speaking with her?" 28 Then the woman left her water jar and went back to the city. She said to the people, 29 "Come and see a man who told me everything I have ever done! He cannot be the Messiah,[d] can he?" 30 They left the city and were on their way to him.

31 Meanwhile the disciples were urging him, "Rabbi, eat something." 32 But he said to them, "I have food to eat that you do not know about." 33 So the disciples said to one another, "Surely no one has brought him something to eat?" 34 Jesus said to them, "My food is to do the will of him who sent me and to complete his

[a] Other ancient authorities lack this sentence
[b] The Greek word for *you* here and in verses 21 and 22 is plural
[c] Gk *I am*
[d] Or *the Christ*

traditionally located near ancient Shechem, where Jacob acquired land (Gen 33.18–20; Josh 24.32). **7–12:** Jesus speaks (*give me a drink*), which the Samaritan woman understands but never fulfills. Jesus speaks again, but she misunderstands *living water* as flowing water (as opposed to the still water of a well), rather than what Jesus means. If she had understood, gender roles would reverse: the female would ask the male to serve her. **12:** She challenges Jesus by comparing this peasant Jew to the patriarch Jacob. **16–18:** Jesus speaks, and now she dissembles. Jesus, knowing the truth, praises her for her clever evasion, but exposes what she hides: no husband, but five previous ones and now a paramour. **19–20:** She mocks Jesus' prophetic knowledge, testing him to solve an unsolvable problem: where to worship, the holy mountain of the Samaritans, Mount Gerizim, or Jerusalem. **21–24:** The prophet Jesus desacralizes both sites; worship will be apart from fixed temple space. **26:** Jesus' self-revelation makes him greater than previously acknowledged. *I am he,* lit., "I am," (cf. Ex 3.14; Isa 41.4; 43.10; 46.4; see also Jn 6.20; 8.24,28,58; 13.19; 18.5. **27:** Male talking to female in public is irregular. **28–30:** The woman does not go home to call her husband (v. 16), but invites all to *come and see* (cf. 1.46). *Everything I have ever done* can only be her sexual history (4.16–18). She does not acknowledge Jesus as Messiah, but only suggests he might be. **31–34:** Vv. 8–15 dealt with drink; vv. 31–38 emphasize food. Jesus says "*I have food,*" which

work. [35] Do you not say, 'Four months more, then comes the harvest'? But I tell you, look around you, and see how the fields are ripe for harvesting. [36] The reaper is already receiving[a] wages and is gathering fruit for eternal life, so that sower and reaper may rejoice together. [37] For here the saying holds true, 'One sows and another reaps.' [38] I sent you to reap that for which you did not labor. Others have labored, and you have entered into their labor."

[39] Many Samaritans from that city believed in him because of the woman's testimony, "He told me everything I have ever done." [40] So when the Samaritans came to him, they asked him to stay with them; and he stayed there two days. [41] And many more believed because of his word. [42] They said to the woman, "It is no longer because of what you said that we believe, for we have heard for ourselves, and we know that this is truly the Savior of the world."

[43] When the two days were over, he went from that place to Galilee [44] (for Jesus himself had testified that a prophet has no honor in the prophet's own country). [45] When he came to Galilee, the Galileans welcomed him, since they had seen all that he had done in Jerusalem at the festival; for they too had gone to the festival.

[46] Then he came again to Cana in Galilee where he had changed the water into wine. Now there was a royal official whose son lay ill in Capernaum. [47] When he heard that Jesus had come from Judea to Galilee, he went and begged him to come down and heal his son, for he was at the point of death. [48] Then Jesus said to him, "Unless you[b] see signs and wonders you will not believe." [49] The official said to him, "Sir, come down before my little boy dies." [50] Jesus said to him, "Go; your son will live." The man believed the word that Jesus spoke to him and started on his way. [51] As he was going down, his slaves met him and told him that his child was alive. [52] So he asked them the hour when he began to recover, and they said to him, "Yesterday at one in the afternoon the fever left him." [53] The father realized that this was the hour when Jesus had said to him, "Your son will live." So he himself believed, along with his whole household. [54] Now this was the second sign that Jesus did after coming from Judea to Galilee.

5 After this there was a festival of the Jews, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem.

[2] Now in Jerusalem by the Sheep Gate there is a pool, called in Hebrew[c] Beth-zatha,[d] which has five porticoes. [3] In these lay many invalids—blind, lame, and paralyzed.[e] [5] One

[a] Or *[35]…the fields are already ripe for harvesting. [36]The reaper is receiving*

[b] Both instances of the Greek word for *you* in this verse are plural

[c] That is, *Aramaic*

[d] Other ancient authorities read *Bethesda*, others *Bethsaida*

[e] Other ancient authorities add, wholly or in part, *waiting for the stirring of the water; [4]for an angel of the Lord went down at certain seasons into the pool, and stirred up the water; whoever stepped in first after the stirring of the water was made well from whatever disease that person had.*

they misunderstand; Jesus explains: obeying God is food for him (cf. Deut 8.3; Mt 4.4). **35–36:** Jesus expands the metaphor by including harvest of grain, which is recruitment of disciples; cf. Mt 9.37–38. **37–38:** Normally sowers and reapers are the same people; unlike the proverb in Mic 6.15 (see also Deut 6.10–11), here, although they are distinguished, it is done is a positive light. Jesus' command should neutralize any competition. **39–42:** Samaritans first believed for a curious reason: Jesus revealed the woman's personal history. Eventually they believe because of Jesus' own words; the result is a climactic acknowledgment: he is *Savior of the world*, which dismisses earlier ethnic points of conflict.

4.43–54: Progress of the prophet (cf. Mt 8.5–15; Lk 7.1–10). **43–46:** *Cana* (see 2.1n.) and *Galilee* symbolize places favorable to Jesus, not just actual locations. Just as the Galileans saw Jesus' signs earlier, now an official seeks a sign. **46–47:** High-ranking people normally sent messages by an intermediary, but this one comes himself. **48–49:** The earlier pattern of request, refusal, then positive action (2.3–4) recurs. **50–54:** The boy lived and the father *believed*, as Jesus had said to him; in fact his *whole household* believed. *Second sign*, after Cana and the wine (2.1–11), before the feeding (ch 6).

5.1–18: The sign that failed. 1: Jesus attended this unnamed feast as well as Passover (see 2.13–16n.), Booths (7.2), and Dedication (10.22). **2–3:** *Jerusalem,* where Jesus is repeatedly rejected. Water links this episode with 3.5 and 4.7; and *pool* links it with 9.7. See map on p. 1862. **5–9:** Typical miracles have these elements: the severity

man was there who had been ill for thirty-eight years. 6 When Jesus saw him lying there and knew that he had been there a long time, he said to him, "Do you want to be made well?" 7 The sick man answered him, "Sir, I have no one to put me into the pool when the water is stirred up; and while I am making my way, someone else steps down ahead of me." 8 Jesus said to him, "Stand up, take your mat and walk." 9 At once the man was made well, and he took up his mat and began to walk.

Now that day was a sabbath. 10 So the Jews said to the man who had been cured, "It is the sabbath; it is not lawful for you to carry your mat." 11 But he answered them, "The man who made me well said to me, 'Take up your mat and walk.'" 12 They asked him, "Who is the man who said to you, 'Take it up and walk'?" 13 Now the man who had been healed did not know who it was, for Jesus had disappeared in[a] the crowd that was there. 14 Later Jesus found him in the temple and said to him, "See, you have been made well! Do not sin any more, so that nothing worse happens to you." 15 The man went away and told the Jews that it was Jesus who had made him well. 16 Therefore the Jews started persecuting Jesus, because he was doing such things on the sabbath. 17 But Jesus answered them, "My Father is still working, and I also am working." 18 For this reason the Jews were seeking all the more to kill him, because he was not only breaking the sabbath, but was also calling God his own Father, thereby making himself equal to God.

19 Jesus said to them, "Very truly, I tell you, the Son can do nothing on his own, but only what he sees the Father doing; for whatever the Father[b] does, the Son does likewise. 20 The Father loves the Son and shows him all that he himself is doing; and he will show him greater works than these, so that you will be astonished. 21 Indeed, just as the Father raises the dead and gives them life, so also the Son gives life to whomever he wishes. 22 The Father judges no one but has given all judgment to the Son, 23 so that all may honor the Son just as they honor the Father. Anyone who does not honor the Son does not honor the Father who sent him. 24 Very truly, I tell you, anyone who hears my word and believes him who sent me has eternal life, and does not come under judgment, but has passed from death to life.

25 "Very truly, I tell you, the hour is coming, and is now here, when the dead will hear the voice of the Son of God, and those who hear will live. 26 For just as the Father has life in himself, so he has granted the Son also to have life in himself; 27 and he has given him authority to execute judgment, because he is the Son of Man. 28 Do not be astonished at this; for the hour is coming when all who are in their graves will hear his voice 29 and will come out—those who have done good, to the resurrection of life, and those who have done evil, to the resurrection of condemnation.

[a] Or *had left because of*
[b] Gk *that one*

of the disease (*ill for thirty-eight years*); cure, either by the use of spittle and clay (as in 9.5) or by a command (*stand up*); proof of healing (*he . . . began to walk*); and grant of honor to the healer, absent here. Healing on the *sabbath* (5.10; 7.23 and 9.14) persuades many that Jesus is sinner—a judgment by appearances. **7:** *The water is stirred up,* explained by an addition in some manuscripts (see textual note on v. 3). **10–18:** Jesus' first trial begins; the man healed is charged with sabbath violation; he shifts the blame to his healer, whom he *did not know*. This witness brings no glory to the healer, but shame. After meeting Jesus again, he testified who the healer was. Punishment follows crime: they *persecuted* Jesus for *breaking the sabbath.* A defense is offered: if God works on the sabbath, Jesus' working cannot be sinful. The charge is elevated to blasphemy, whose punishment was death (see 10.30–32n.).

5.19–47: Two trials and two defenses. 19–29: The two charges (sabbath violation and blasphemous claims) require different defenses. The first defense denies that Jesus makes himself anything; rather, God honors him: because "the Father loves the Son," Jesus is not vaingloriously claiming anything. But he is truly "equal to God" (v. 18) because God gave him God's two comprehensive powers: lifegiver (cf. 1.1–3) and judge. **21:** God's power over death is exercised by Jesus. **22:** God twice invested Jesus with judgment (5.22,27). **23:** God demands that the respect owed him be given to Jesus. **25,28–29:** Jesus has power over the dead, to call them from tombs, raise them, and reward or punish them. This will be proved in Jesus' own case (10.17–18) and in that of Lazarus

30 "I can do nothing on my own. As I hear,
I judge; and my judgment is just, because I
seek to do not my own will but the will of him
who sent me.
31 "If I testify about myself, my testimony
is not true. 32 There is another who testifies
on my behalf, and I know that his testimony
to me is true. 33 You sent messengers to John,
and he testified to the truth. 34 Not that I ac-
cept such human testimony, but I say these
things so that you may be saved. 35 He was
a burning and shining lamp, and you were
willing to rejoice for a while in his light. 36 But
I have a testimony greater than John's. The
works that the Father has given me to com-
plete, the very works that I am doing, testify
on my behalf that the Father has sent me.
37 And the Father who sent me has himself
testified on my behalf. You have never heard
his voice or seen his form, 38 and you do not
have his word abiding in you, because you do
not believe him whom he has sent.
39 "You search the scriptures because
you think that in them you have eternal
life; and it is they that testify on my behalf.
40 Yet you refuse to come to me to have life.
41 I do not accept glory from human beings.
42 But I know that you do not have the love
of God in[a] you. 43 I have come in my Father's
name, and you do not accept me; if another
comes in his own name, you will accept him.
44 How can you believe when you accept
glory from one another and do not seek the
glory that comes from the one who alone is
God? 45 Do not think that I will accuse you
before the Father; your accuser is Moses, on
whom you have set your hope. 46 If you be-
lieved Moses, you would believe me, for he
wrote about me. 47 But if you do not believe
what he wrote, how will you believe what I
say?"

6 After this Jesus went to the other side of
the Sea of Galilee, also called the Sea of
Tiberias.[b] 2 A large crowd kept following him,
because they saw the signs that he was doing
for the sick. 3 Jesus went up the mountain and
sat down there with his disciples. 4 Now the
Passover, the festival of the Jews, was near.
5 When he looked up and saw a large crowd
coming toward him, Jesus said to Philip, "Where
are we to buy bread for these people to eat?"
6 He said this to test him, for he himself knew
what he was going to do. 7 Philip answered him,
"Six months' wages[c] would not buy enough
bread for each of them to get a little." 8 One of
his disciples, Andrew, Simon Peter's brother,
said to him, 9 "There is a boy here who has five
barley loaves and two fish. But what are they
among so many people?" 10 Jesus said, "Make
the people sit down." Now there was a great
deal of grass in the place; so they[d] sat down,
about five thousand in all. 11 Then Jesus took the
loaves, and when he had given thanks, he dis-
tributed them to those who were seated; so also
the fish, as much as they wanted. 12 When they
were satisfied, he told his disciples, "Gather up
the fragments left over, so that nothing may
be lost." 13 So they gathered them up, and from
the fragments of the five barley loaves, left by
those who had eaten, they filled twelve baskets.
14 When the people saw the sign that he had

[a] Or *among*
[b] Gk *of Galilee of Tiberias*
[c] Gk *Two hundred denarii*; the denarius was the usual day's wage for a laborer
[d] Gk *the men*

(11.43–44). **27:** *Son of Man,* see 1.51n., 3.13–15n. **30–35:** The defense against sabbath violation consists of calling witnesses to testify that Jesus is a saint, not a sinner. *John* the Baptist is acceptable to this court which valued him as *a burning and shining lamp* (see 1.29,34; 3.28–30). **36:** Jesus' second witness—his works—proves God's favor (9.33). **37–38:** God is also Jesus' witness. Although the Israelites never saw God at Sinai (see Deut 4.15), Jesus was face-to-face with God; he alone has seen God (contrast Ex 34.17–23). **39:** Scripture witnesses to Jesus because "Moses . . . wrote about me" (v. 46; cf. 1.45). **40–44:** The trial turns upside down: accusers are accused, the one judged becomes the judge. Jesus charges his accusers with a deadly crime: *You do not have the love of God in you*. Their accuser is Moses, once their defender (Ex 32.11–14; Num 14.13–19). The death sentence they would bring upon Jesus (v. 18) will be turned on them: they will never enjoy "eternal life" (vv. 24,39).

6.1–21: Fourth sign: multiplication of bread. Cf. Mt 14.13–21; Mk 6.32–44; Lk 9.10–17. **1:** *The other side,* the eastern shore. **5–6:** Jesus tests Philip by asking him how the crowd is to be fed; the Synoptic Gospels make Jesus' humanitarian motive explicit.

done, they began to say, "This is indeed the prophet who is to come into the world."

15 When Jesus realized that they were about to come and take him by force to make him king, he withdrew again to the mountain by himself.

16 When evening came, his disciples went down to the sea, 17 got into a boat, and started across the sea to Capernaum. It was now dark, and Jesus had not yet come to them. 18 The sea became rough because a strong wind was blowing. 19 When they had rowed about three or four miles,[a] they saw Jesus walking on the sea and coming near the boat, and they were terrified. 20 But he said to them, "It is I;[b] do not be afraid." 21 Then they wanted to take him into the boat, and immediately the boat reached the land toward which they were going.

22 The next day the crowd that had stayed on the other side of the sea saw that there had been only one boat there. They also saw that Jesus had not got into the boat with his disciples, but that his disciples had gone away alone. 23 Then some boats from Tiberias came near the place where they had eaten the bread after the Lord had given thanks.[c] 24 So when the crowd saw that neither Jesus nor his disciples were there, they themselves got into the boats and went to Capernaum looking for Jesus.

25 When they found him on the other side of the sea, they said to him, "Rabbi, when did you come here?" 26 Jesus answered them, "Very truly, I tell you, you are looking for me, not because you saw signs, but because you ate your fill of the loaves. 27 Do not work for the food that perishes, but for the food that endures for eternal life, which the Son of Man will give you. For it is on him that God the Father has set his seal." 28 Then they said to him, "What must we do to perform the works of God?" 29 Jesus answered them, "This is the work of God, that you believe in him whom he has sent." 30 So they said to him, "What sign are you going to give us then, so that we may see it and believe you? What work are you performing? 31 Our ancestors ate the manna in the wilderness; as it is written, 'He gave them bread from heaven to eat.'" 32 Then Jesus said to them, "Very truly, I tell you, it was not Moses who gave you the bread from heaven, but it is my Father who gives you the true bread from heaven. 33 For the bread of God is that which[d] comes down from heaven and gives life to the world." 34 They said to him, "Sir, give us this bread always."

35 Jesus said to them, "I am the bread of life. Whoever comes to me will never be hungry, and whoever believes in me will never be thirsty. 36 But I said to you that you have seen me and yet do not believe. 37 Everything that the Father gives me will come to me, and anyone who comes to me I will never drive away; 38 for I have come down from heaven, not to do my own will, but the will of him who sent me. 39 And this is the will of him who sent me, that I should lose nothing of all that he has given me, but raise it up on the last day. 40 This is indeed the will of my Father, that all who see the Son and believe in him may have eternal life; and I will raise them up on the last day."

41 Then the Jews began to complain about him because he said, "I am the bread that came down from heaven." 42 They were saying, "Is not this Jesus, the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? How can he now say, 'I have come down from heaven'?" 43 Jesus answered them, "Do not complain among yourselves. 44 No one can come to me

[a] Gk *about twenty-five or thirty stadia*
[b] Gk *I am*
[c] Other ancient authorities lack *after the Lord had given thanks*
[d] Or *he who*

6.16–21: Jesus walks on the sea. Cf. Mt 14.22–27; Mk 6.45–52. Jesus' mysterious presence anticipates his going away but coming back (see 14.3,28). **20:** *It is I,* lit., "I am"; see 4.26n.

6.22–59: Bread from heaven. *The crowd* are not true insiders because they challenge Jesus with hostile questions. Jesus responds by accusing them of hypocrisy and demands acknowledgment as God's agent, declaring that he is the *bread from heaven* (v. 31). **24:** *Capernaum,* see 2.12n. **27:** *Son of Man,* see 3.13–15n. **31–32:** They challenge Jesus with a scripture (see Ex 16.4–5 and Ps 78.24), and he reinterprets each word in it as a reference to himself. **34:** As in 4.15, the questioners misunderstand. **35–40:** Jesus explains: *I am the bread of life . . . come down from heaven.* **41:** They complained, like the Israelites in the wilderness before and after the manna was given (Ex 16.2; Num 11.1). **42:** Reference to Jesus' earthly parents should refute his claim to have *come*

unless drawn by the Father who sent me; and I will raise that person up on the last day. 45 It is written in the prophets, 'And they shall all be taught by God.' Everyone who has heard and learned from the Father comes to me. 46 Not that anyone has seen the Father except the one who is from God; he has seen the Father. 47 Very truly, I tell you, whoever believes has eternal life. 48 I am the bread of life. 49 Your ancestors ate the manna in the wilderness, and they died. 50 This is the bread that comes down from heaven, so that one may eat of it and not die. 51 I am the living bread that came down from heaven. Whoever eats of this bread will live forever; and the bread that I will give for the life of the world is my flesh."

52 The Jews then disputed among themselves, saying, "How can this man give us his flesh to eat?" 53 So Jesus said to them, "Very truly, I tell you, unless you eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink his blood, you have no life in you. 54 Those who eat my flesh and drink my blood have eternal life, and I will raise them up on the last day; 55 for my flesh is true food and my blood is true drink. 56 Those who eat my flesh and drink my blood abide in me, and I in them. 57 Just as the living Father sent me, and I live because of the Father, so whoever eats me will live because of me. 58 This is the bread that came down from heaven, not like that which your ancestors ate, and they died. But the one who eats this bread will live forever." 59 He said these things while he was teaching in the synagogue at Capernaum.

60 When many of his disciples heard it, they said, "This teaching is difficult; who can accept it?" 61 But Jesus, being aware that his disciples were complaining about it, said to them, "Does this offend you? 62 Then what if you were to see the Son of Man ascending to where he was before? 63 It is the spirit that gives life; the flesh is useless. The words that I have spoken to you are spirit and life. 64 But among you there are some who do not believe." For Jesus knew from the first who were the ones that did not believe, and who was the one that would betray him. 65 And he said, "For this reason I have told you that no one can come to me unless it is granted by the Father."

66 Because of this many of his disciples turned back and no longer went about with him. 67 So Jesus asked the twelve, "Do you also wish to go away?" 68 Simon Peter answered him, "Lord, to whom can we go? You have the words of eternal life. 69 We have come to believe and know that you are the Holy One of God."[a] 70 Jesus answered them, "Did I not choose you, the twelve? Yet one of you is a devil." 71 He was speaking of Judas son of Simon Iscariot,[b] for he, though one of the twelve, was going to betray him.

7 After this Jesus went about in Galilee. He did not wish[c] to go about in Judea because the Jews were looking for an

[a] Other ancient authorities read *the Christ, the Son of the living God*

[b] Other ancient authorities read *Judas Iscariot son of Simon;* others, *Judas son of Simon from Karyot* (Kerioth)

[c] Other ancient authorities read *was not at liberty*

down from heaven, a literal understanding. **45:** Isa 54.13. **49–50:** The contrast between Moses' manna and Jesus' true bread looks to results: one dies after eating manna but has eternal life from Jesus' bread. **51–59:** Another instance of statement (v. 51), misunderstanding (v. 52), and restatement (vv. 53–58). In these verses, the author (who does not include an account of the institution of the Lord's Supper) presents teachings with unmistakable eucharistic overtones. So far only bread was discussed, now *blood*. Consumption of blood was taboo to Israel: in the blood was life (Deut 12.23), but life belongs to God alone (Gen 9.4). Ordinarily taking Jesus literally is folly, but here Jesus intends to be both literal and outrageous. **59:** *In the synagogue at Capernaum,* cf. Mk 1.21; Lk 4.31.

6.60–71: Separating wheat from chaff. 60–65: Even some disciples reject Jesus' bread; they too complained (see v. 41n.). **61–62:** If they reject his claim to descend from heaven, his return there will be impossible to accept. **64–65:** Jesus knew from the start both the unbelieving crowds and who would betray him. Knowing all things, he commands the scene. **66–69:** A typical Johannine schism: some leave; others remain, but even they are challenged. **67:** *The twelve,* Jesus' inner circle, mentioned only here and in 20.24 in this Gospel. Peter's confession resembles that at Caesarea Philippi (Mk 8.28–29), substituting *Holy One of God* for "Messiah." **70–71:** Jesus' knowledge of the betrayer (v. 64) indicates that he voluntarily accepts death; see 13.11,21–30.

7.1–10: Blood relationships don't count. 1: *The Jews,* see 1.19n. **2:** *Booths* (also called "Tabernacles"), a seven-

opportunity to kill him. [2] Now the Jewish festival of Booths[a] was near. [3] So his brothers said to him, "Leave here and go to Judea so that your disciples also may see the works you are doing; [4] for no one who wants[b] to be widely known acts in secret. If you do these things, show yourself to the world." [5] (For not even his brothers believed in him.) [6] Jesus said to them, "My time has not yet come, but your time is always here. [7] The world cannot hate you, but it hates me because I testify against it that its works are evil. [8] Go to the festival yourselves. I am not[c] going to this festival, for my time has not yet fully come." [9] After saying this, he remained in Galilee.

[10] But after his brothers had gone to the festival, then he also went, not publicly but as it were[d] in secret. [11] The Jews were looking for him at the festival and saying, "Where is he?" [12] And there was considerable complaining about him among the crowds. While some were saying, "He is a good man," others were saying, "No, he is deceiving the crowd." [13] Yet no one would speak openly about him for fear of the Jews.

[14] About the middle of the festival Jesus went up into the temple and began to teach. [15] The Jews were astonished at it, saying, "How does this man have such learning,[e] when he has never been taught?" [16] Then Jesus answered them, "My teaching is not mine but his who sent me. [17] Anyone who resolves to do the will of God will know whether the teaching is from God or whether I am speaking on my own. [18] Those who speak on their own seek their own glory; but the one who seeks the glory of him who sent him is true, and there is nothing false in him.

[19] "Did not Moses give you the law? Yet none of you keeps the law. Why are you looking for an opportunity to kill me?" [20] The crowd answered, "You have a demon! Who is trying to kill you?" [21] Jesus answered them, "I performed one work, and all of you are astonished. [22] Moses gave you circumcision (it is, of course, not from Moses, but from the patriarchs), and you circumcise a man on the sabbath. [23] If a man receives circumcision on the sabbath in order that the law of Moses may not be broken, are you angry with me because I healed a man's whole body on the sabbath? [24] Do not judge by appearances, but judge with right judgment."

[25] Now some of the people of Jerusalem were saying, "Is not this the man whom they are trying to kill? [26] And here he is, speaking openly, but they say nothing to him! Can it be that the authorities really know that this is the Messiah?[f] [27] Yet we know where this man is from; but when the Messiah[f] comes, no one will know where he is from." [28] Then Jesus cried out as he was teaching in the temple, "You know me, and you know where I am from. I have not come on my own. But the one who sent me is true, and you do not know him. [29] I know him, because I am from him, and he sent me." [30] Then they tried to arrest him, but no one laid hands on him, because his hour had not yet come. [31] Yet many in the crowd believed in him and were saying, "When the Messiah[f] comes, will he do more signs than this man has done?"[g]

[a] Or *Tabernacles*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *wants it*
[c] Other ancient authorities add *yet*
[d] Other ancient authorities lack *as it were*
[e] Or *this man know his letters*
[f] Or *the Christ*
[g] Other ancient authorities read *is doing*

day harvest feast in the fall during which petitions for rains and sunlight were expressed in daily water libations and nightly lighting of menorahs. **3–5:** *Brothers* (see 2.12n.), here opposed to Jesus (cf. 1.12). **6,8:** *My time,* cf. "my hour" in 2.4; 7.30; 8.20; 13.1. **8–10:** Jesus regularly controls his fate with a strategy of secrecy.

7.11–52: Second trial in Jerusalem. 11–13: Another schism: some accuse Jesus of deception, but others praise him (cf. 7.40–44,45–52; 10.19–21). *Fear of the Jews* muzzles possible disciples (9.22; 12.42; 19.38–39). **14–17:** Can Jesus teach if not schooled? His Father taught him (5.20); and godly people recognize this (9.29–30). **18:** Telling false from true speakers: Those who *seek their own glory* are false (5.44); but *the one who seeks the glory of him who sent him* is true (8.50). **25–27:** Testimony against Jesus: "*We know*" where he comes from (see 1.45–46; 6.42), but no one knows where the Messiah comes from. **28–29:** Jesus' challenge, "*You do not know him,*" because you know according to the flesh. But "*I know him, because I am from him.*" **30–31:** A negative schism again (*they*

32 The Pharisees heard the crowd muttering such things about him, and the chief priests and Pharisees sent temple police to arrest him. 33 Jesus then said, "I will be with you a little while longer, and then I am going to him who sent me. 34 You will search for me, but you will not find me; and where I am, you cannot come." 35 The Jews said to one another, "Where does this man intend to go that we will not find him? Does he intend to go to the Dispersion among the Greeks and teach the Greeks? 36 What does he mean by saying, 'You will search for me and you will not find me' and 'Where I am, you cannot come'?"

37 On the last day of the festival, the great day, while Jesus was standing there, he cried out, "Let anyone who is thirsty come to me, 38 and let the one who believes in me drink. As[a] the scripture has said, 'Out of the believer's heart[b] shall flow rivers of living water.'" 39 Now he said this about the Spirit, which believers in him were to receive; for as yet there was no Spirit,[c] because Jesus was not yet glorified.

40 When they heard these words, some in the crowd said, "This is really the prophet." 41 Others said, "This is the Messiah."[d] But some asked, "Surely the Messiah[d] does not come from Galilee, does he? 42 Has not the scripture said that the Messiah[d] is descended from David and comes from Bethlehem, the village where David lived?" 43 So there was a division in the crowd because of him. 44 Some of them wanted to arrest him, but no one laid hands on him.

45 Then the temple police went back to the chief priests and Pharisees, who asked them, "Why did you not arrest him?" 46 The police answered, "Never has anyone spoken like this!" 47 Then the Pharisees replied, "Surely you have not been deceived too, have you? 48 Has any one of the authorities or of the Pharisees believed in him? 49 But this crowd, which does not know the law—they are accursed." 50 Nicodemus, who had gone to Jesus[e] before, and who was one of them, asked, 51 "Our law does not judge people without first giving them a hearing to find out what they are doing, does it?" 52 They replied, "Surely you are not also from Galilee, are you? Search and you will see that no prophet is to arise from Galilee."

8 ⟦ 53 Then each of them went home, 1 while Jesus went to the Mount of Olives. 2 Early in the morning he came again to the temple. All the people came to him and he sat down and began to teach them. 3 The scribes and the Pharisees brought a woman who had been caught in adultery; and making her stand before all of them, 4 they said to him, "Teacher, this woman was caught in the very act of committing adultery. 5 Now in the law Moses commanded us to stone such women. Now what do you say?" 6 They said this to test him, so that they might have some charge to

[a] Or *come to me and drink.* [38]*The one who believes in me, as*
[b] Gk *out of his belly*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *for as yet the Spirit* (others, *Holy Spirit*) *had not been given*
[d] Or *the Christ*
[e] Gk *him*

tried to arrest him), followed by a positive judgment: Will the Messiah do more signs than Jesus? **32–36:** Debate about where Jesus is going. They think he may be going to Jews in *the Dispersion among the Greeks*, but his actual destination—*to him who sent me*—is known only by insiders. *You will search for me* means "seek to kill me," but *"Where I am, you cannot come."* **37–39:** The water ritual of the feast of Tabernacles (see 7.2n.) transformed: Jesus replaces with his water the festal libations; cf. the blood and water from his *heart* at his death (19.34). Jesus is *glorified* only at death when he hands over the Spirit (19:30). **38:** *Scripture has said,* no biblical passage contains these exact words; for the general sense, see Prov 18.4; Isa 44.3; 58.11. **40–43:** Some accept Jesus' testimony, but others reject it, judging according to appearances: the Messiah cannot come from Galilee but must come from Bethlehem; see 1.45–46n. **44:** Jesus tried in absentia: they accuse him, find testimony against him, seek to kill him, but cannot carry out the sentence. **45–48:** Soldiers sent to arrest Jesus return acclaiming him, proof that Jesus is a deceiver. **49:** Who is fit to judge? Not the accursed *crowd*, *which does not know the law*; the *Pharisees* claim to, but they too violate the law. **50–51:** Nicodemus says nothing positive about Jesus but only defends the law. **52:** Another judgment according to appearances.

8.1–11: Jesus and the adulteress. 1: This story is absent in major manuscripts. **3–6:** Opponents *test* Jesus, cit-

bring against him. Jesus bent down and wrote with his finger on the ground. 7 When they kept on questioning him, he straightened up and said to them, "Let anyone among you who is without sin be the first to throw a stone at her." 8 And once again he bent down and wrote on the ground.[a] 9 When they heard it, they went away, one by one, beginning with the elders; and Jesus was left alone with the woman standing before him. 10 Jesus straightened up and said to her, "Woman, where are they? Has no one condemned you?" 11 She said, "No one, sir."[b] And Jesus said, "Neither do I condemn you. Go your way, and from now on do not sin again."]][c]

12 Again Jesus spoke to them, saying, "I am the light of the world. Whoever follows me will never walk in darkness but will have the light of life." 13 Then the Pharisees said to him, "You are testifying on your own behalf; your testimony is not valid." 14 Jesus answered, "Even if I testify on my own behalf, my testimony is valid because I know where I have come from and where I am going, but you do not know where I come from or where I am going. 15 You judge by human standards;[d] I judge no one. 16 Yet even if I do judge, my judgment is valid; for it is not I alone who judge, but I and the Father[e] who sent me. 17 In your law it is written that the testimony of two witnesses is valid. 18 I testify on my own behalf, and the Father who sent me testifies on my behalf." 19 Then they said to him, "Where is your Father?" Jesus answered, "You know neither me nor my Father. If you knew me, you would know my Father also." 20 He spoke these words while he was teaching in the treasury of the temple, but no one arrested him, because his hour had not yet come.

21 Again he said to them, "I am going away, and you will search for me, but you will die in your sin. Where I am going, you cannot come." 22 Then the Jews said, "Is he going to kill himself? Is that what he means by saying, 'Where I am going, you cannot come'?" 23 He said to them, "You are from below, I am from above; you are of this world, I am not of this world. 24 I told you that you would die in your sins, for you will die in your sins unless you believe that I am he."[f] 25 They said to him, "Who are you?" Jesus said to them, "Why do I speak to you at all?[g] 26 I have much to say about you and much to condemn; but the one who sent me is true, and I declare to the world what I have heard from him." 27 They did not understand that he was speaking to them about the Father. 28 So Jesus said, "When you have lifted up the Son of Man, then you will realize that I am he,[f] and that I do nothing on my own, but I speak these things as the Father instructed me. 29 And the one who sent me is with me; he has not left me alone, for I always do what is pleasing to

[a] Other ancient authorities add *the sins of each of them*
[b] Or *Lord*
[c] The most ancient authorities lack 7.53—8.11; other authorities add the passage here or after 7.36 or after 21.25 or after Luke 21.38, with variations of text; some mark the passage as doubtful.
[d] Gk *according to the flesh*
[e] Other ancient authorities read *he*
[f] Gk *I am*
[g] Or *What I have told you from the beginning*

ing the law (Deut 22.23–24) and its punishment. **7:** Jesus' challenge is answered: only the sinless may stone her. **9:** Sinful opponents put to shame. **10–11:** Unlike his challengers, Jesus does not condemn her.

8.12–20: The feast of Tabernacles, continued. 12: Jesus claims to replace the rain (7.37–38) and sunlight (8.12) for which Israel prayed. **13–14:** The trial is resumed: Jesus' testimony is declared invalid; but because Jesus knows his origin and destination, i.e., his authorization, it is *valid.* **15–16:** They judge by appearances (7.24). Jesus does not but does judge because God stands with him (5.22,27). **17–18:** Two valid witnesses (see Deut 19.15): Jesus and the Father who sent him. **19:** *Know* means to acknowledge or honor. **20:** Jesus in public space (cf. 18.20).

8.21–30: Jesus judges. 21–25: Jesus' topic statement contains four points: *Going away* may imply suicide; *search for me,* "attempt to kill"; *die in your sins,* sentence for failing to keep my law (see 4.26n.;7.19,25; 8.58–59); *you cannot come,* because they belong to irreconcilable worlds (see 3.5–8). **28:** *Lifted up,* either lifting Jesus on the cross or his glorious return to heaven. *I am he,* lit., "I am," the name of God in Ex 3.14; here, a being who is both eternal in the past and imperishable in the future.

him." 30 As he was saying these things, many believed in him.

31 Then Jesus said to the Jews who had believed in him, "If you continue in my word, you are truly my disciples; 32 and you will know the truth, and the truth will make you free." 33 They answered him, "We are descendants of Abraham and have never been slaves to anyone. What do you mean by saying, 'You will be made free'?"

34 Jesus answered them, "Very truly, I tell you, everyone who commits sin is a slave to sin. 35 The slave does not have a permanent place in the household; the son has a place there forever. 36 So if the Son makes you free, you will be free indeed. 37 I know that you are descendants of Abraham; yet you look for an opportunity to kill me, because there is no place in you for my word. 38 I declare what I have seen in the Father's presence; as for you, you should do what you have heard from the Father."[a]

39 They answered him, "Abraham is our father." Jesus said to them, "If you were Abraham's children, you would be doing[b] what Abraham did, 40 but now you are trying to kill me, a man who has told you the truth that I heard from God. This is not what Abraham did. 41 You are indeed doing what your father does." They said to him, "We are not illegitimate children; we have one father, God himself." 42 Jesus said to them, "If God were your Father, you would love me, for I came from God and now I am here. I did not come on my own, but he sent me. 43 Why do you not understand what I say? It is because you cannot accept my word. 44 You are from your father the devil, and you choose to do your father's desires. He was a murderer from the beginning and does not stand in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he lies, he speaks according to his own nature, for he is a liar and the father of lies. 45 But because I tell the truth, you do not believe me. 46 Which of you convicts me of sin? If I tell the truth, why do you not believe me? 47 Whoever is from God hears the words of God. The reason you do not hear them is that you are not from God."

48 The Jews answered him, "Are we not right in saying that you are a Samaritan and have a demon?" 49 Jesus answered, "I do not have a demon; but I honor my Father, and you dishonor me. 50 Yet I do not seek my own glory; there is one who seeks it and he is the judge. 51 Very truly, I tell you, whoever keeps my word will never see death." 52 The Jews said to him, "Now we know that you have a demon. Abraham died, and so did the prophets; yet you say, 'Whoever keeps my word will never taste death.' 53 Are you greater than our father Abraham, who died? The prophets also died. Who do you claim to be?" 54 Jesus answered, "If I glorify myself, my glory is nothing. It is my Father who glorifies me, he of whom you say, 'He is our God,' 55 though you do not know him. But I know him; if I would say that I do not know him, I would be a liar like you. But I do know him and I keep his word. 56 Your ancestor Abraham rejoiced that he would see my day; he saw it and was glad." 57 Then the Jews said to him, "You are not yet fifty years old, and have you seen Abraham?"[c] 58 Jesus

[a] Other ancient authorities read *you do what you have heard from your father*

[b] Other ancient authorities read *If you are Abraham's children, then do*

[c] Other ancient authorities read *has Abraham seen you?*

8.31–59: Exposing lies. **31–32:** As judge, Jesus examines their testimony according to his criterion for true discipleship. **31:** *Believed in him,* it is unclear whether this is genuine or a deception. **33:** Abraham had two sons, Ishmael (slave) and Isaac (free); their claim that Isaac was their father is proven false. **34–36:** Slaves of sin (Ishmael) do not remain in the house, but free sons (Isaac) do (Gen 21.9–14). **37:** They are children of Ishmael, sinners trying to kill Jesus. The criterion "continue in my word" (v. 31) is verified: *There is no place in you for my word*. **38–42:** Abraham did not try to kill heavenly messengers at Mamre (Gen 18.1–9). Masking their illegitimacy, they lie, claiming God as father. But if he were, they would do what their Father does, love Jesus. **43:** The criterion repeated. **44:** Their paternity is revealed: the *devil*, a *murderer*, and a *liar*, like them. **48:** *Samaritan,* not one of us; see 4.4n. *Have a demon,* not of God. **49–50:** Denial of demon charge because Jesus honors God and God honors him. **51–52:** Jesus says "*never see death,*" which they misunderstand as "*never taste death.*" **54–55:** God makes Jesus who he is, but they do not know God; Jesus does not lie, for he knows God and keeps his word. **56–58:** Jesus is "greater" than Abraham (v. 53) because Abraham came into being and died but Jesus as divine (*I am*; see

said to them, "Very truly, I tell you, before Abraham was, I am." 59 So they picked up stones to throw at him, but Jesus hid himself and went out of the temple.

9 As he walked along, he saw a man blind from birth. 2 His disciples asked him, "Rabbi, who sinned, this man or his parents, that he was born blind?" 3 Jesus answered, "Neither this man nor his parents sinned; he was born blind so that God's works might be revealed in him. 4 We[a] must work the works of him who sent me[b] while it is day; night is coming when no one can work. 5 As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world." 6 When he had said this, he spat on the ground and made mud with the saliva and spread the mud on the man's eyes, 7 saying to him, "Go, wash in the pool of Siloam" (which means Sent). Then he went and washed and came back able to see. 8 The neighbors and those who had seen him before as a beggar began to ask, "Is this not the man who used to sit and beg?" 9 Some were saying, "It is he." Others were saying, "No, but it is someone like him." He kept saying, "I am the man." 10 But they kept asking him, "Then how were your eyes opened?" 11 He answered, "The man called Jesus made mud, spread it on my eyes, and said to me, 'Go to Siloam and wash.' Then I went and washed and received my sight." 12 They said to him, "Where is he?" He said, "I do not know."

13 They brought to the Pharisees the man who had formerly been blind. 14 Now it was a sabbath day when Jesus made the mud and opened his eyes. 15 Then the Pharisees also began to ask him how he had received his sight. He said to them, "He put mud on my eyes. Then I washed, and now I see." 16 Some of the Pharisees said, "This man is not from God, for he does not observe the sabbath." But others said, "How can a man who is a sinner perform such signs?" And they were divided. 17 So they said again to the blind man, "What do you say about him? It was your eyes he opened." He said, "He is a prophet."

18 The Jews did not believe that he had been blind and had received his sight until they called the parents of the man who had received his sight 19 and asked them, "Is this your son, who you say was born blind? How then does he now see?" 20 His parents answered, "We know that this is our son, and that he was born blind; 21 but we do not know how it is that now he sees, nor do we know who opened his eyes. Ask him; he is of age. He will speak for himself." 22 His parents said this because they were afraid of the Jews; for the Jews had already agreed that anyone who confessed Jesus[c] to be the Messiah[d] would be put out of the synagogue. 23 Therefore his parents said, "He is of age; ask him."

24 So for the second time they called the man who had been blind, and they said to him, "Give glory to God! We know that this man is a sinner." 25 He answered, "I do not know whether he is a sinner. One thing I do know, that though I was blind, now I see." 26 They said to him, "What did he do to you? How did he open your eyes?" 27 He answered them, "I have told you already, and you would not listen. Why do you want to hear it again? Do you also want to become his disciples?" 28 Then they reviled him, saying, "You are his disciple, but we are disciples of Moses. 29 We know that God has spoken to Moses, but as for this man, we do not know where he comes from." 30 The man answered, "Here is an astonishing thing! You do not know where he comes from, and

[a] Other ancient authorities read *I*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *us*
[c] Gk *him*
[d] Or *the Christ*

8.28.) is uncreated and imperishable. **59:** Trying to stone Jesus, they prove their guilt.

9.1–41: A sign, trial, and testimony. 1–12: The healing. **1–3:** Human explanations for blindness are rejected; now it reveals God's works. **4–5:** *Day* includes sunlight and *light* of the world (8.12). **6–7:** As a cure Jesus uses *saliva* and *mud* (cf. Mk 8.23), then commands washing. *Pool*, cf. 5.1–9. *Siloam*, an ancient pool in Jerusalem (see 2 Kings 20.20).

9.13–34: Jesus tried in absentia. 13–17: The man whose sight had been restored repeats the facts and interprets them: Jesus is a *prophet* (see 6.14). **18–23:** To prove whether he was born blind, his parents testify affirmatively that their son was born blind, but they refuse to speak about the healer and the cure because they fear reprisals for witnessing to Jesus (see 12.42–43). **24–27:** Jesus is now on trial. The healed man mocks their demand to repeat the facts of the case, already narrated twice: Will hearing it again make them *disciples*? **30–33:**

yet he opened my eyes. 31 We know that God does not listen to sinners, but he does listen to one who worships him and obeys his will. 32 Never since the world began has it been heard that anyone opened the eyes of a person born blind. 33 If this man were not from God, he could do nothing." 34 They answered him, "You were born entirely in sins, and are you trying to teach us?" And they drove him out.

35 Jesus heard that they had driven him out, and when he found him, he said, "Do you believe in the Son of Man?"[a] 36 He answered, "And who is he, sir?[b] Tell me, so that I may believe in him." 37 Jesus said to him, "You have seen him, and the one speaking with you is he." 38 He said, "Lord,[b] I believe." And he worshiped him. 39 Jesus said, "I came into this world for judgment so that those who do not see may see, and those who do see may become blind." 40 Some of the Pharisees near him heard this and said to him, "Surely we are not blind, are we?" 41 Jesus said to them, "If you were blind, you would not have sin. But now that you say, 'We see,' your sin remains.

10 "Very truly, I tell you, anyone who does not enter the sheepfold by the gate but climbs in by another way is a thief and a bandit. 2 The one who enters by the gate is the shepherd of the sheep. 3 The gatekeeper opens the gate for him, and the sheep hear his voice. He calls his own sheep by name and leads them out. 4 When he has brought out all his own, he goes ahead of them, and the sheep follow him because they know his voice. 5 They will not follow a stranger, but they will run from him because they do not know the voice of strangers." 6 Jesus used this figure of speech with them, but they did not understand what he was saying to them.

7 So again Jesus said to them, "Very truly, I tell you, I am the gate for the sheep. 8 All who came before me are thieves and bandits; but the sheep did not listen to them. 9 I am the gate. Whoever enters by me will be saved, and will come in and go out and find pasture. 10 The thief comes only to steal and kill and destroy. I came that they may have life, and have it abundantly.

11 "I am the good shepherd. The good shepherd lays down his life for the sheep. 12 The hired hand, who is not the shepherd and does not own the sheep, sees the wolf coming and leaves the sheep and runs away—and the wolf snatches them and scatters them. 13 The hired hand runs away because a hired hand does not care for the sheep. 14 I am the good shepherd. I know my own and my own know me, 15 just as the Father knows me and I know the Father. And I lay down my life for the sheep. 16 I have other sheep that do not belong to this fold. I must bring them also, and they will listen to my voice. So there will be one flock, one shepherd. 17 For this reason the Father loves me, because I lay down my life in order to take it up again. 18 No one takes[c] it from me, but I lay it down of my own accord. I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it up again. I have received this command from my Father."

19 Again the Jews were divided because of these words. 20 Many of them were saying,

[a] Other ancient authorities read *the Son of God*
[b] *Sir* and *Lord* translate the same Greek word
[c] Other ancient authorities read *has taken*

Their judgment is judged: if Jesus were not from God, he could do nothing. **34:** The disciples attributed blindness to sin (9.2); now the court judges the man to be a sinner. His fate is that which his parents feared: expulsion from the synagogue.

9.35–41: Final verdicts. Jesus vindicates the man by leading him into greater *believ*ing. He knows that *the Son of Man* is Jesus; his knowledge becomes belief. Ironically, Jesus makes the blind see and the sighted blind (see 12.40). Physical blindness is morally neutral, not so false claims to sight.

10.1–21: Authentic shepherding (cf. Ezek 34.11–16; Pss 23; 78.52; 95.7; Isa 40.10–11). **6:** Jesus' parables and words are generally misunderstood (Mk 4.33–34; 16.25,29). **7–9:** *I am the gate*, Jesus' exclusive claim to be broker of salvation and pasturage. **11:** *Good,* better "noble," a word applied to the death of a soldier or hero when voluntarily accepted, which benefitted the city, when experienced virtuously, when the hero died unconquered, and which was awarded posthumous honors. **12–13:** Hirelings lack virtue, justice, and courage. **14–15:** The noble shepherd manifests justice: his death benefits the sheep and is performed virtuously. **16:** Recruiting envisioned (4:35–38; 17.20–21). **17–18:** Noble death: voluntary, virtuous, and unconquered in death (cf. 5.26), a power that

"He has a demon and is out of his mind. Why listen to him?" [21] Others were saying, "These are not the words of one who has a demon. Can a demon open the eyes of the blind?"

[22] At that time the festival of the Dedication took place in Jerusalem. It was winter, [23] and Jesus was walking in the temple, in the portico of Solomon. [24] So the Jews gathered around him and said to him, "How long will you keep us in suspense? If you are the Messiah,[a] tell us plainly." [25] Jesus answered, "I have told you, and you do not believe. The works that I do in my Father's name testify to me; [26] but you do not believe, because you do not belong to my sheep. [27] My sheep hear my voice. I know them, and they follow me. [28] I give them eternal life, and they will never perish. No one will snatch them out of my hand. [29] What my Father has given me is greater than all else, and no one can snatch it out of the Father's hand.[b] [30] The Father and I are one."

[31] The Jews took up stones again to stone him. [32] Jesus replied, "I have shown you many good works from the Father. For which of these are you going to stone me?" [33] The Jews answered, "It is not for a good work that we are going to stone you, but for blasphemy, because you, though only a human being, are making yourself God." [34] Jesus answered, "Is it not written in your law,[c] 'I said, you are gods'? [35] If those to whom the word of God came were called 'gods'—and the scripture cannot be annulled— [36] can you say that the one whom the Father has sanctified and sent into the world is blaspheming because I said, 'I am God's Son'? [37] If I am not doing the works of my Father, then do not believe me. [38] But if I do them, even though you do not believe me, believe the works, so that you may know and understand[d] that the Father is in me and I am in the Father." [39] Then they tried to arrest him again, but he escaped from their hands.

[40] He went away again across the Jordan to the place where John had been baptizing earlier, and he remained there. [41] Many came to him, and they were saying, "John performed no sign, but everything that John said about this man was true." [42] And many believed in him there.

11 Now a certain man was ill, Lazarus of Bethany, the village of Mary and her sister Martha. [2] Mary was the one who anointed the Lord with perfume and wiped his feet with her hair; her brother Lazarus was ill. [3] So the sisters sent a message to Jesus,[e] "Lord, he whom you love is ill." [4] But when Jesus heard it, he said, "This illness does not lead to death; rather it is for God's glory, so that the Son of God may be glorified through it." [5] Accordingly, though Jesus loved Martha and her sister and Lazarus, [6] after

[a] Or *the Christ*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *My Father who has given them to me is greater than all, and no one can snatch them out of the Father's hand*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *in the law*
[d] Other ancient authorities lack *and understand*; others read *and believe*
[e] Gk *him*

belongs exclusively to God. **19–21:** Cf. 7.20; 8.48; 9.16; 10.20.

10.22–42: Trial in the Temple. This episode resembles the trial before the Sanhedrin in the Synoptic Gospels, especially the question, "Are you the Messiah?" (Mt 26.62–64). **22–24:** *Dedication* (Hanukkah; see 1 Macc 4.36–59), the fourth holy day that Jesus attended in Jerusalem. **25–27:** Because they act in bad faith and do not judge his works properly, they cannot be his disciples. In contrast, true *sheep* hear his *voice*, he acknowledges them, and they *follow* him. **28–29:** *Eternal life*, the promise made in v. 10 is abundant life. Death cannot snatch them from the hands of Jesus or the Father: both have power over death (5.21–29). **30–32:** Jesus' signs and works are evidence of his agency from God, as the healed blind man had said earlier (8.30–33). Stoning was the penalty for blasphemy (Lev 24.16). **33–36:** Jesus defends himself against the charge that he is making himself God by quoting Ps 82.6, which is interpreted as declaring some mortals to be "gods," that is, immortals. All the more is Jesus holy, because God *sanctified and sent* him. **37–38:** Jesus' works attest to his relationship with the Father. **40–42:** Signs do not persuade the Jerusalemites, but the signs work where John testified to Jesus (1.29–34).

11.1–45: The raising of Lazarus. 1–16: Jesus delays. 1–2: Introducing beloved disciples: Lazarus, Mary, Martha. *Bethany*, see v. 18. *Anointed,* see 12.3. **3–6:** Hearing of Lazarus's illness, Jesus reacts predictably (2.4; 4.48; 7.8–9); he will not act until his time is ripe, *for God's glory* and that of the *Son of God* (cf. 9.3). The delay allows

having heard that Lazarus[a] was ill, he stayed two days longer in the place where he was.

7 Then after this he said to the disciples, "Let us go to Judea again." 8 The disciples said to him, "Rabbi, the Jews were just now trying to stone you, and are you going there again?" 9 Jesus answered, "Are there not twelve hours of daylight? Those who walk during the day do not stumble, because they see the light of this world. 10 But those who walk at night stumble, because the light is not in them." 11 After saying this, he told them, "Our friend Lazarus has fallen asleep, but I am going there to awaken him." 12 The disciples said to him, "Lord, if he has fallen asleep, he will be all right." 13 Jesus, however, had been speaking about his death, but they thought that he was referring merely to sleep. 14 Then Jesus told them plainly, "Lazarus is dead. 15 For your sake I am glad I was not there, so that you may believe. But let us go to him." 16 Thomas, who was called the Twin,[b] said to his fellow disciples, "Let us also go, that we may die with him."

17 When Jesus arrived, he found that Lazarus[a] had already been in the tomb four days. 18 Now Bethany was near Jerusalem, some two miles[c] away, 19 and many of the Jews had come to Martha and Mary to console them about their brother. 20 When Martha heard that Jesus was coming, she went and met him, while Mary stayed at home. 21 Martha said to Jesus, "Lord, if you had been here, my brother would not have died. 22 But even now I know that God will give you whatever you ask of him." 23 Jesus said to her, "Your brother will rise again." 24 Martha said to him, "I know that he will rise again in the resurrection on the last day." 25 Jesus said to her, "I am the resurrection and the life.[d] Those who believe in me, even though they die, will live, 26 and everyone who lives and believes in me will never die. Do you believe this?" 27 She said to him, "Yes, Lord, I believe that you are the Messiah,[e] the Son of God, the one coming into the world."

28 When she had said this, she went back and called her sister Mary, and told her privately, "The Teacher is here and is calling for you." 29 And when she heard it, she got up quickly and went to him. 30 Now Jesus had not yet come to the village, but was still at the place where Martha had met him. 31 The Jews who were with her in the house, consoling her, saw Mary get up quickly and go out. They followed her because they thought that she was going to the tomb to weep there. 32 When Mary came where Jesus was and saw him, she knelt at his feet and said to him, "Lord, if you had been here, my brother would not have died." 33 When Jesus saw her weeping, and the Jews who came with her also weeping, he was greatly disturbed in spirit and deeply moved. 34 He said, "Where have you laid him?" They said to him, "Lord, come and see." 35 Jesus began to weep. 36 So the Jews said, "See how he loved him!" 37 But some of them said, "Could not he who opened the eyes of the blind man have kept this man from dying?"

38 Then Jesus, again greatly disturbed, came to the tomb. It was a cave, and a stone

[a] Gk *he*
[b] Gk *Didymus*
[c] Gk *fifteen stadia*
[d] Other ancient authorities lack *and the life*
[e] Or *the Christ*

the severity of the illness to increase. **7–8:** Love characterizes Bethany, hate characterizes Judea. Ironically, raising Lazarus will cause Jesus' death (vv. 45–52). **9–10:** Cf. 9.4–5. **11–15:** Lazarus's sleep is misunderstood as restorative sleep, but Jesus means that he is dead. Sleep is a frequent euphemism for death; see Ps 13.3; Acts 7.60, textual note *a*; 1 Cor 15.6, textual note *b*; 1 Thess 4.13, textual note *b*. **15:** The severity of the disease enhances honor of the healer: cf. 5.5; 9.1.

11.17–37: The lament of the sisters. 17–19: Jerusalemites console the sisters and criticize Jesus. **20–23:** Reproach and implicit petition are followed by the statement that "*Your brother will rise,*" which Martha misunderstands. **24–26:** Misunderstanding is clarified. **27:** Martha still misunderstands: her belief in Jesus as *the Messiah, the Son of God* does not include belief that he is "the resurrection and the life" (v. 25). **28–30:** Private conversations between men and women are unusual (cf. 4.6–25; 20.16–18). **33–35:** First Mary weeps, then the Jews, then Jesus.

11.38–44: Calling forth the dead. Raising Lazarus, the final, greatest sign, proves Jesus' earlier claim in 5.25–29 but is also the catalyst for his death. **38a:** *Greatly disturbed*, one of few emotions ascribed to Jesus; cf.

was lying against it. 39 Jesus said, "Take away the stone." Martha, the sister of the dead man, said to him, "Lord, already there is a stench because he has been dead four days." 40 Jesus said to her, "Did I not tell you that if you believed, you would see the glory of God?" 41 So they took away the stone. And Jesus looked upward and said, "Father, I thank you for having heard me. 42 I knew that you always hear me, but I have said this for the sake of the crowd standing here, so that they may believe that you sent me." 43 When he had said this, he cried with a loud voice, "Lazarus, come out!" 44 The dead man came out, his hands and feet bound with strips of cloth, and his face wrapped in a cloth. Jesus said to them, "Unbind him, and let him go."

45 Many of the Jews therefore, who had come with Mary and had seen what Jesus did, believed in him. 46 But some of them went to the Pharisees and told them what he had done. 47 So the chief priests and the Pharisees called a meeting of the council, and said, "What are we to do? This man is performing many signs. 48 If we let him go on like this, everyone will believe in him, and the Romans will come and destroy both our holy place[a] and our nation." 49 But one of them, Caiaphas, who was high priest that year, said to them, "You know nothing at all! 50 You do not understand that it is better for you to have one man die for the people than to have the whole nation destroyed." 51 He did not say this on his own, but being high priest that year he prophesied that Jesus was about to die for the nation, 52 and not for the nation only, but to gather into one the dispersed children of God. 53 So from that day on they planned to put him to death.

54 Jesus therefore no longer walked about openly among the Jews, but went from there to a town called Ephraim in the region near the wilderness; and he remained there with the disciples.

55 Now the Passover of the Jews was near, and many went up from the country to Jerusalem before the Passover to purify themselves. 56 They were looking for Jesus and were asking one another as they stood in the temple, "What do you think? Surely he will not come to the festival, will he?" 57 Now the chief priests and the Pharisees had given orders that anyone who knew where Jesus[b] was should let them know, so that they might arrest him.

12 Six days before the Passover Jesus came to Bethany, the home of Lazarus, whom he had raised from the dead. 2 There they gave a dinner for him. Martha served, and Lazarus was one of those at the table with him. 3 Mary took a pound of costly perfume made of pure nard, anointed Jesus' feet, and wiped them[c] with her hair. The house was filled with the fragrance of the perfume. 4 But Judas Iscariot, one of his disciples (the one who was about to betray him), said, 5 "Why was this perfume not sold for three hundred denarii[d] and the money given to the poor?" 6 (He said this not because he cared about the poor, but because he was a thief; he kept the common purse and used to steal what was put into it.) 7 Jesus said, "Leave her alone. She bought it[e] so that she might keep it for the day of my burial. 8 You always have the

[a] Or *our temple*; Greek *our place*
[b] Gk *he*
[c] Gk *his feet*
[d] Three hundred denarii would be nearly a year's wages for a laborer
[e] Gk lacks *She bought it*

"weary" (4.6), "troubled" about his own death (12.27; 13.21). **38b–39:** The cave tomb was closed by a round stone rolled in front (Lk 24.2).

11.45–57: The plot to kill Jesus intensifies. 47–48: John did not envy Jesus' success (3.25–30), but this court, threatened by his success, envies him: his honor and fame mean their disgrace. **49–52:** Ironically Caiaphas (who was high priest 18–36 CE) repeats the virtue of the "noble shepherd" (see 10.11n.): one who dies for others. While Caiaphas was promoting Jesus' destruction, he states that Jesus' death will benefit the people. The audience knows the secret: Jesus' enemy, this unwitting prophet; death sentence, death to benefit the people; saving the nation by killing Jesus, Jesus saves it by voluntary death. **53:** Another trial in absentia (7:50–52). **54:** *Ephraim,* also Aphairema, ca. 12 mi (20 km) north of Jerusalem. **55–57:** Another division among the people: folk from the country look for Jesus, while Pharisees' spies are seeking to arrest Jesus.

12.1–11: Jesus returns to Bethany, the home of beloved disciples. 5: Costly perfume: *three hundred denarii*

poor with you, but you do not always have me."

9 When the great crowd of the Jews learned that he was there, they came not only because of Jesus but also to see Lazarus, whom he had raised from the dead. 10 So the chief priests planned to put Lazarus to death as well, 11 since it was on account of him that many of the Jews were deserting and were believing in Jesus.

12 The next day the great crowd that had come to the festival heard that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem. 13 So they took branches of palm trees and went out to meet him, shouting,

"Hosanna!
Blessed is the one who comes in the name
of the Lord—
the King of Israel!"

14 Jesus found a young donkey and sat on it; as it is written:

15 "Do not be afraid, daughter of Zion.
Look, your king is coming,
sitting on a donkey's colt!"

16 His disciples did not understand these things at first; but when Jesus was glorified, then they remembered that these things had been written of him and had been done to him. 17 So the crowd that had been with him when he called Lazarus out of the tomb and raised him from the dead continued to testify.[a] 18 It was also because they heard that he had performed this sign that the crowd went to meet him. 19 The Pharisees then said to one another, "You see, you can do nothing. Look, the world has gone after him!"

20 Now among those who went up to worship at the festival were some Greeks. 21 They came to Philip, who was from Bethsaida in Galilee, and said to him, "Sir, we wish to see Jesus." 22 Philip went and told Andrew; then Andrew and Philip went and told Jesus. 23 Jesus answered them, "The hour has come for the Son of Man to be glorified. 24 Very truly, I tell you, unless a grain of wheat falls into the earth and dies, it remains just a single grain; but if it dies, it bears much fruit. 25 Those who love their life lose it, and those who hate their life in this world will keep it for eternal life. 26 Whoever serves me must follow me, and where I am, there will my servant be also. Whoever serves me, the Father will honor.

27 "Now my soul is troubled. And what should I say—'Father, save me from this hour'? No, it is for this reason that I have come to this hour. 28 Father, glorify your name." Then a voice came from heaven, "I have glorified it, and I will glorify it again." 29 The crowd standing there heard it and said that it was thunder. Others said, "An angel has spoken to him." 30 Jesus answered, "This voice has come for your sake, not for mine. 31 Now is the judgment of this world; now the ruler of this world will be driven out. 32 And I, when I am lifted up from the earth, will draw all people[b] to myself." 33 He said this to indicate the kind of death he was to die. 34 The crowd answered him, "We have heard from the law that the Messiah[c] remains forever. How can you say that the Son of Man must be lifted up? Who is this Son of Man?" 35 Jesus

[a] Other ancient authorities read *with him began to testify that he had called . . . from the dead*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *all things*
[c] Or *the Christ*

was the equivalent of a year's wages. **7:** The anointing, a gesture of hospitality, also anticipates Jesus' burial. **9:** As in 6.26–29, people fixate on Jesus' signs rather than on him. **10–11:** Lazarus also threatened with death, but this time for Jesus' sake.

12.12–36: Confusion in Jerusalem. 12–15: Cf. Mt 21.1–9; Mk 11.1–10; Lk 19.28–38. The people quote Ps 118.26; Jesus' entry is interpreted as a fulfillment of Zeph 3.16; Zech 9.9. **16:** These events, typically, are opaque until Jesus is glorified. **17–19:** Again Lazarus draws crowds, provoking hostile reactions from the religious authorities (11.47–52; 12.9–11). **20:** *Some Greeks*, visitors for Passover, most likely Greek-speaking Jews. 21–22: Compare 1.43–44. **23:** *Hour. . . to be glorified,* Jesus' death; cf. 2.4, challenging these volunteers with difficult discipleship. **24:** *Unless*, an uncompromising demand for disciples (3.3; 8.24; 13.8). The metaphor of seeds dying in order to grow and live explains Jesus' death and return to God. **25:** For this paradoxical saying, cf. Mt 10.39; Mk 8.3; Lk 9.24; 14.26. **26:** True *followers* serve Jesus and share his relationship with God, who honors them. **27–28:** This resembles Jesus' prayers in Mk 14.34–36. Here, however, the prayer is answered. **29:** Again the crowd is divided. **31:** *Ruler of this world,* Satan; see also 14.30n.; 16.11. **32:** *Lifted up*, referring both to the shame of death by crucifixion

said to them, "The light is with you for a little longer. Walk while you have the light, so that the darkness may not overtake you. If you walk in the darkness, you do not know where you are going. 36 While you have the light, believe in the light, so that you may become children of light."

After Jesus had said this, he departed and hid from them. 37 Although he had performed so many signs in their presence, they did not believe in him. 38 This was to fulfill the word spoken by the prophet Isaiah:

"Lord, who has believed our message,
and to whom has the arm of the Lord
been revealed?"

39 And so they could not believe, because Isaiah also said,

40 "He has blinded their eyes
and hardened their heart,
so that they might not look with their eyes,
and understand with their heart and
turn—
and I would heal them."

41 Isaiah said this because[a] he saw his glory and spoke about him. 42 Nevertheless many, even of the authorities, believed in him. But because of the Pharisees they did not confess it, for fear that they would be put out of the synagogue; 43 for they loved human glory more than the glory that comes from God.

44 Then Jesus cried aloud: "Whoever believes in me believes not in me but in him who sent me. 45 And whoever sees me sees him who sent me. 46 I have come as light into the world, so that everyone who believes in me should not remain in the darkness. 47 I do not judge anyone who hears my words and does not keep them, for I came not to judge the world, but to save the world. 48 The one who rejects me and does not receive my word has a judge; on the last day the word that I have spoken will serve as judge, 49 for I have not spoken on my own, but the Father who sent me has himself given me a commandment about what to say and what to speak. 50 And I know that his commandment is eternal life. What I speak, therefore, I speak just as the Father has told me."

13 Now before the festival of the Passover, Jesus knew that his hour had come to depart from this world and go to the Father. Having loved his own who were in the world, he loved them to the end. 2 The devil had already put it into the heart of Judas son of Simon Iscariot to betray him. And during supper 3 Jesus, knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands, and that he had come from God and was going to God, 4 got up from the table,[b] took off his outer robe, and tied a towel around himself. 5 Then he poured water into a basin and began to wash the disciples' feet and to wipe them with the towel that was tied around him. 6 He came to Simon Peter, who said to him, "Lord, are you going to wash my feet?" 7 Jesus answered, "You do not know now what I am doing, but later you will understand." 8 Peter said to him, "You will never wash my feet." Jesus answered, "Unless I wash you, you have no share with me." 9 Simon Peter said to him, "Lord, not my feet only but also my hands and my head!" 10 Jesus said to him, "One who has bathed does not need to wash, except for the feet,[c] but is entirely clean. And you[d] are clean, though not all of you." 11 For he knew

[a] Other ancient witnesses read *when*
[b] Gk *from supper*
[c] Other ancient authorities lack *except for the feet*
[d] The Greek word for *you* here is plural

and the honor of resurrection (see 3.13). **35–36:** Cf. 3.19–20; 11.9–10.

12.37–50: Judgment time. 37: Signs fail to create acceptance of Jesus (6.26–29; 11.45–52). **38–40:** Isaiah prophesied failure: a rejected message (Isa 53.1), and blind eyes (Isa 6.10). **41:** *Saw his glory*, the eternal Jesus appeared to the prophet Isaiah, as he had to Abraham (cf. 8.56; Isa 6.1–6). **42–43:** Fear of expulsion paralyzed even those who believed, like the parents of the blind man (9.22). **44–45:** The only issue for judgment is whether Jesus is God's agent. **47:** Repeats 3.16–17; yet Jesus indeed judges in 8.15–16,31–59.

13.1–20: Foot washing. 1–3: Whereas 1.1–18 stressed Jesus' coming into the world, 13.1–3 focuses on his departure from this world. **1:** In John *the Passover* begins on Friday (see 19.14); contrast Mk.14.12–16; Lk 22.15. **4–5:** Dressed as a servant, Jesus washes their feet, a reversal of roles. **6–11:** Simon Peter challenges Jesus, who demands compliance: *Unless*, the familiar demand (3.3; 6.53; 12.24). By requesting a total bath, Simon misunderstands Jesus, who states that only this washing is necessary. **11:** All disciples are clean except the traitor,

who was to betray him; for this reason he said, "Not all of you are clean."

12 After he had washed their feet, had put on his robe, and had returned to the table, he said to them, "Do you know what I have done to you? 13 You call me Teacher and Lord—and you are right, for that is what I am. 14 So if I, your Lord and Teacher, have washed your feet, you also ought to wash one another's feet. 15 For I have set you an example, that you also should do as I have done to you. 16 Very truly, I tell you, servants[a] are not greater than their master, nor are messengers greater than the one who sent them. 17 If you know these things, you are blessed if you do them. 18 I am not speaking of all of you; I know whom I have chosen. But it is to fulfill the scripture, 'The one who ate my bread[b] has lifted his heel against me.' 19 I tell you this now, before it occurs, so that when it does occur, you may believe that I am he.[c] 20 Very truly, I tell you, whoever receives one whom I send receives me; and whoever receives me receives him who sent me."

21 After saying this Jesus was troubled in spirit, and declared, "Very truly, I tell you, one of you will betray me." 22 The disciples looked at one another, uncertain of whom he was speaking. 23 One of his disciples—the one whom Jesus loved—was reclining next to him; 24 Simon Peter therefore motioned to him to ask Jesus of whom he was speaking. 25 So while reclining next to Jesus, he asked him, "Lord, who is it?" 26 Jesus answered, "It is the one to whom I give this piece of bread when I have dipped it in the dish."[d] So when he had dipped the piece of bread, he gave it to Judas son of Simon Iscariot.[e] 27 After he received the piece of bread,[f] Satan entered into him. Jesus said to him, "Do quickly what you are going to do." 28 Now no one at the table knew why he said this to him. 29 Some thought that, because Judas had the common purse, Jesus was telling him, "Buy what we need for the festival"; or, that he should give something to the poor. 30 So, after receiving the piece of bread, he immediately went out. And it was night.

31 When he had gone out, Jesus said, "Now the Son of Man has been glorified, and God has been glorified in him. 32 If God has been glorified in him,[g] God will also glorify him in himself and will glorify him at once. 33 Little children, I am with you only a little longer. You will look for me; and as I said to the Jews so now I say to you, 'Where I am going, you cannot come.' 34 I give you a new commandment, that you love one another. Just as I have loved you, you also should love one another. 35 By this everyone will know that you are my disciples, if you have love for one another."

36 Simon Peter said to him, "Lord, where are you going?" Jesus answered, "Where I am

[a] Gk *slaves*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *ate bread with me*
[c] Gk *I am*
[d] Gk *dipped it*
[e] Other ancient authorities read *Judas Iscariot son of Simon*; others, *Judas son of Simon from Karyot* (Kerioth)
[f] Gk *After the piece of bread*
[g] Other ancient authorities lack *If God has been glorified in him*

already possessed by the devil (v. 2). **12–14:** Dressed again as *Teacher* and *Lord*, Jesus explains the foot washing as example of a master serving his servants (cf. Mt 10.24; Lk 6.40). **15–16:** Foot washing in 13.4–11 is a one-time status transformation of the disciples, but in 13.12–16, a ceremony exemplifying and confirming that the greater serves the lesser. The master serves, so too the disciples. **17:** First beatitude: acting upon wisdom (cf. 20.29n.).

13.18–19: Judas exposed. The traitor identified in 13.11 is now exposed. **18:** Ps 41.9; see v. 26. **19:** *I am he,* see 8.28,58. **20:** Receiving the agent means acknowledging the sender. **23:** *The one whom Jesus loved,* see 19.26; 20.2; 21.7; 21.20; he is the apparent narrator (21.24). **26–27:** An unusual gesture, because individuals dipped in a common bowl. **29:** Cf. 12.6. **30:** *Night*, a terrible time: when Nicodemus comes (3.2), when no one can work (9.4), what people love (3.19), hence the time for evil.

13.31–38: Tender words. 31–32: To outsiders his death is shame; to insiders, the occasion when God honors the one who honors him. Death is not Jesus' punishment but his voluntary obedience to God. **33:** Restatement of 7.33–34, to be explained in 14.1–3. *Little children,* cf. 1 Jn 2.1,12,28; etc. **34–35:** First statement of the love commandment (15.12–17). *Love*, faithfulness and loyalty, not material support (1 Jn 3.17). **36–38:** Despite Jesus' remark in 13.33, Simon challenges Jesus with a question and a claim: *"I will lay down my life for you"* (cf. 10.11,15,17). But shame, not honor awaits Simon in his triple denial of Jesus (18.15–27).

going, you cannot follow me now; but you will follow afterward." [37] Peter said to him, "Lord, why can I not follow you now? I will lay down my life for you." [38] Jesus answered, "Will you lay down your life for me? Very truly, I tell you, before the cock crows, you will have denied me three times.

14 "Do not let your hearts be troubled. Believe[a] in God, believe also in me. [2] In my Father's house there are many dwelling places. If it were not so, would I have told you that I go to prepare a place for you?[b] [3] And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again and will take you to myself, so that where I am, there you may be also. [4] And you know the way to the place where I am going."[c] [5] Thomas said to him, "Lord, we do not know where you are going. How can we know the way?" [6] Jesus said to him, "I am the way, and the truth, and the life. No one comes to the Father except through me. [7] If you know me, you will know[d] my Father also. From now on you do know him and have seen him."

[8] Philip said to him, "Lord, show us the Father, and we will be satisfied." [9] Jesus said to him, "Have I been with you all this time, Philip, and you still do not know me? Whoever has seen me has seen the Father. How can you say, 'Show us the Father'? [10] Do you not believe that I am in the Father and the Father is in me? The words that I say to you I do not speak on my own; but the Father who dwells in me does his works. [11] Believe me that I am in the Father and the Father is in me; but if you do not, then believe me because of the works themselves. [12] Very truly, I tell you, the one who believes in me will also do the works that I do and, in fact, will do greater works than these, because I am going to the Father. [13] I will do whatever you ask in my name, so that the Father may be glorified in the Son. [14] If in my name you ask me[e] for anything, I will do it.

[15] "If you love me, you will keep[f] my commandments. [16] And I will ask the Father, and he will give you another Advocate,[g] to be with you forever. [17] This is the Spirit of truth, whom the world cannot receive, because it neither sees him nor knows him. You know him, because he abides with you, and he will be in[h] you.

[18] "I will not leave you orphaned; I am coming to you. [19] In a little while the world will no longer see me, but you will see me; because I live, you also will live. [20] On that day you will know that I am in my Father, and you in me, and I in you. [21] They who have my command-

[a] Or *You believe*
[b] Or *If it were not so, I would have told you; for I go to prepare a place for you*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *Where I am going you know, and the way you know*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *If you had known me, you would have known*
[e] Other ancient authorities lack *me*
[f] Other ancient authorities read *me, keep*
[g] Or *Helper*
[h] Or *among*

14.1–14: The household of God. 1: Predictions of future crises should evoke loyalty in the disciples (14.27; 16.1–4,33). **2:** *House,* not a building but household relationships; *prepar*ing *a place* means mediating a relationship between God and disciples. **3:** Jesus never brings them to a *place* (17.15); "*Where I am*," not a location, but relationship of mutual loyalty. **4–6:** *You know the way* is misunderstood by Thomas who claims that they do not know either *place* or *way*. Jesus clarifies: "*I am the way, and the truth and the life*"; he is God's unique, authentic broker (cf. 5.21,26; 6.44). **7:** If they *know* Jesus, they *know* the Father, which illustrates relationships. **8–9:** Knowing includes seeing, but not face to face (1.18). To see Jesus is to see God; to be in relationship with Jesus is to be such with God. **10–11:** Like "house" (v. 2n.) *in* is not spatial but relational. To the two parts of the relationship (the Father and Jesus; Jesus and the disciples) a third is added: the Father and disciple, because Jesus is broker, related to God and representing God's interests, just as he is related to the disciples and loyal to their interests. Thus the Father and the disciples are in relationship because Jesus is broker to both. **12:** Relationship with Jesus gives access to God's power to match and surpass Jesus' works. **13–14:** Petitionary prayer (*ask*) grounded in relationship (*in my name*); cf. Mt 21.22.

14.15–24: Knowing, loving, abiding. 15–17: Loving Jesus brings an *Advocate* (or "Paraclete") who *abides* in those who *know him*. This Advocate brokers the relationship of Jesus and disciples. **18:** *Orphan*s, those lacking home and household relationships, are in crisis. **19:** Confirmation of relationship with Jesus: he will return when raised and they will see and live. **20:** Again, relationships are expressed by *in*, with Jesus as perfect mediator:

ments and keep them are those who love me; and those who love me will be loved by my Father, and I will love them and reveal myself to them." [22] Judas (not Iscariot) said to him, "Lord, how is it that you will reveal yourself to us, and not to the world?" [23] Jesus answered him, "Those who love me will keep my word, and my Father will love them, and we will come to them and make our home with them. [24] Whoever does not love me does not keep my words; and the word that you hear is not mine, but is from the Father who sent me.

[25] "I have said these things to you while I am still with you. [26] But the Advocate,[a] the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in my name, will teach you everything, and remind you of all that I have said to you. [27] Peace I leave with you; my peace I give to you. I do not give to you as the world gives. Do not let your hearts be troubled, and do not let them be afraid. [28] You heard me say to you, 'I am going away, and I am coming to you.' If you loved me, you would rejoice that I am going to the Father, because the Father is greater than I. [29] And now I have told you this before it occurs, so that when it does occur, you may believe. [30] I will no longer talk much with you, for the ruler of this world is coming. He has no power over me; [31] but I do as the Father has commanded me, so that the world may know that I love the Father. Rise, let us be on our way.

15 "I am the true vine, and my Father is the vinegrower. [2] He removes every branch in me that bears no fruit. Every branch that bears fruit he prunes[b] to make it bear more fruit. [3] You have already been cleansed[b] by the word that I have spoken to you. [4] Abide in me as I abide in you. Just as the branch cannot bear fruit by itself unless it abides in the vine, neither can you unless you abide in me. [5] I am the vine, you are the branches. Those who abide in me and I in them bear much fruit, because apart from me you can do nothing. [6] Whoever does not abide in me is thrown away like a branch and withers; such branches are gathered, thrown into the fire, and burned. [7] If you abide in me, and my words abide in you, ask for whatever you wish, and it will be done for you. [8] My Father is glorified by this, that you bear much fruit and become[c] my disciples. [9] As the Father has loved me, so I have loved you; abide in my love. [10] If you keep my commandments, you will abide in my love, just as I have kept my Father's commandments and abide in his love. [11] I have said these things to you so that my joy may be in you, and that your joy may be complete.

[12] "This is my commandment, that you love one another as I have loved you. [13] No one has greater love than this, to lay down one's life for one's friends. [14] You are my friends if you do what I command you. [15] I do not call you servants[d] any longer, because the servant[e]

[a] Or *Helper*
[b] The same Greek root refers to pruning and cleansing
[c] Or *be*
[d] Gk *slaves*
[e] Gk *slave*

Jesus is *in* the Father and *in* them, and they are *in* him. **21:** The same relationships are expressed through *love*. **22:** *Judas* (see Lk 6.16; Acts 1.13) asks: is revelation only for insiders? **23–24:** Jesus replies indirectly: Only insiders *love* him and *keep* his *word*. Only to insiders will Jesus and his Father come and make a *home*, which again is not a place but a relationship. Outsiders do *not love* Jesus or *keep* his *words*.

14.25–31: Comings and goings. 25–26: Now Jesus speaks, but the Advocate/Holy Spirit will speak later. The Advocate functions to link past and future, *remind*ing them of Jesus' words and *teach*ing all things. The Spirit, then, is Jesus' broker. **28:** *Going away*, both Jesus' death and return to God. **29:** Forewarned about the crisis to come means forearmed. **30:** *Ruler of this world,* either the father of lies and murder (8.44; 12.31), or the Roman emperor and his legions in Palestine; see also 16.11.

15.1–25: Exhortations: abide and love. 1–11: The first exhortation. *Abide* occurs nine times and is the focus of the exhortation. As in 14.1–3, it is not spatial but relational, referring to loyalty and faithfulness. On the image of the vine and God as the vinegrower, cf. Isa 5.1–7; Jer 2.21; Ezek 19.10–14; Mk 12.1–12 par. **3:** The disciples are already *cleansed* (13.10); see also textual note *b*. **5–9:** Argument from advantage: those abiding profit, those not abiding perish. **6:** Cf. Mt 3.10; 7.19. **10:** Keeping produces a durable relationship of loving: the disciples *abide* in Jesus' love who *abides in* God's love. **12–17:** The second exhortation: *Love.* **14:** *Friends* expresses the polite relationship of clients and patron. Pilate is a "friend" of Caesar, his patron, not an intimate (19.12). **15:** Not *ser-*

does not know what the master is doing; but I have called you friends, because I have made known to you everything that I have heard from my Father. 16 You did not choose me but I chose you. And I appointed you to go and bear fruit, fruit that will last, so that the Father will give you whatever you ask him in my name. 17 I am giving you these commands so that you may love one another.

18 "If the world hates you, be aware that it hated me before it hated you. 19 If you belonged to the world,[a] the world would love you as its own. Because you do not belong to the world, but I have chosen you out of the world—therefore the world hates you. 20 Remember the word that I said to you, 'Servants[b] are not greater than their master.' If they persecuted me, they will persecute you; if they kept my word, they will keep yours also. 21 But they will do all these things to you on account of my name, because they do not know him who sent me. 22 If I had not come and spoken to them, they would not have sin; but now they have no excuse for their sin. 23 Whoever hates me hates my Father also. 24 If I had not done among them the works that no one else did, they would not have sin. But now they have seen and hated both me and my Father. 25 It was to fulfill the word that is written in their law, 'They hated me without a cause.'

26 "When the Advocate[c] comes, whom I will send to you from the Father, the Spirit of truth who comes from the Father, he will testify on my behalf. 27 You also are to testify because you have been with me from the beginning.

16 "I have said these things to you to keep you from stumbling. 2 They will put you out of the synagogues. Indeed, an hour is coming when those who kill you will think that by doing so they are offering worship to God. 3 And they will do this because they have not known the Father or me. 4 But I have said these things to you so that when their hour comes you may remember that I told you about them.

"I did not say these things to you from the beginning, because I was with you. 5 But now I am going to him who sent me; yet none of you asks me, 'Where are you going?' 6 But because I have said these things to you, sorrow has filled your hearts. 7 Nevertheless I tell you the truth: it is to your advantage that I go away, for if I do not go away, the Advocate[c] will not come to you; but if I go, I will send him to you. 8 And when he comes, he will prove the world wrong about[d] sin and righteousness and judgment: 9 about sin, because they do not believe in me; 10 about righteousness, because I am going to the Father and you will see me no longer; 11 about judgment, because the ruler of this world has been condemned.

12 "I still have many things to say to you, but you cannot bear them now. 13 When the Spirit of truth comes, he will guide you into all the truth; for he will not speak on his own, but will speak whatever he hears, and he will declare to you the things that are to come.

[a] Gk *were of the world*
[b] Gk *Slaves*
[c] Or *Helper*
[d] Or *convict the world of*

vants, but not peers: see 13.13. **16:** A return to the vine imagery of the first exhortation. **17:** *Love one another*, the second exhortation ends as it began (15.12). **18–25:** Exhortation on hatred, balancing the preceding exhortation on love. Hatred is proof that disciples belong to Jesus and not the world. **20:** See 13.16. The disciples are both "friends" because Jesus brokers wisdom (see v. 14n.), and also *servants* because they are followers of the master (see 13.13). **22–24:** When Jesus is *hated,* God who sent him is also *hated.* **25:** Pss 35.19; 69.4.

15.26–27: Testifying. 26: The role of the *Advocate* (see 14.16n.) is not just forensic but also that of a mediator or broker. *I will send*, cf. "The Father will send" (14.26). **26:** As in 8.13–14, there are two witnesses: here the Spirit and the disciples, both confirming Jesus' role as unique broker.

16.1–15: What Jesus now has to say. 1–4a: Predictions defuse crises to come. **4b–7:** Announcement of departure, which causes consternation. Yet his departure is an advantage, because he will send the *Advocate* (see 14.16n.), partly replacement and partly broker. **8:** Like Jesus, the Advocate plays many roles, especially that of forensic witness. **11:** *Ruler of this world,* see 12.31n. **12–15:** The Advocate will clarify to the disciples both things said and not said. As Jesus' agent and broker, he looks back to Jesus' past remarks and looks to what is forthcoming.

14 He will glorify me, because he will take
what is mine and declare it to you. 15 All that
the Father has is mine. For this reason I said
that he will take what is mine and declare it
to you.

16 "A little while, and you will no longer
see me, and again a little while, and you will
see me." 17 Then some of his disciples said
to one another, "What does he mean by
saying to us, 'A little while, and you will no
longer see me, and again a little while, and
you will see me'; and 'Because I am going
to the Father'?" 18 They said, "What does he
mean by this 'a little while'? We do not know
what he is talking about." 19 Jesus knew that
they wanted to ask him, so he said to them,
"Are you discussing among yourselves what
I meant when I said, 'A little while, and you
will no longer see me, and again a little while,
and you will see me'? 20 Very truly, I tell you,
you will weep and mourn, but the world will
rejoice; you will have pain, but your pain will
turn into joy. 21 When a woman is in labor,
she has pain, because her hour has come.
But when her child is born, she no longer
remembers the anguish because of the joy
of having brought a human being into the
world. 22 So you have pain now; but I will see
you again, and your hearts will rejoice, and
no one will take your joy from you. 23 On that
day you will ask nothing of me.[a] Very truly, I
tell you, if you ask anything of the Father in
my name, he will give it to you.[b] 24 Until now
you have not asked for anything in my name.
Ask and you will receive, so that your joy may
be complete.

25 "I have said these things to you in figures
of speech. The hour is coming when I will no
longer speak to you in figures, but will tell
you plainly of the Father. 26 On that day you
will ask in my name. I do not say to you that
I will ask the Father on your behalf; 27 for the
Father himself loves you, because you have
loved me and have believed that I came from
God.[c] 28 I came from the Father and have
come into the world; again, I am leaving the
world and am going to the Father."

29 His disciples said, "Yes, now you are
speaking plainly, not in any figure of speech!
30 Now we know that you know all things, and
do not need to have anyone question you;
by this we believe that you came from God."
31 Jesus answered them, "Do you now believe?
32 The hour is coming, indeed it has come,
when you will be scattered, each one to his
home, and you will leave me alone. Yet I am
not alone because the Father is with me. 33 I
have said this to you, so that in me you may
have peace. In the world you face persecu-
tion. But take courage; I have conquered the
world!"

17 After Jesus had spoken these words, he
looked up to heaven and said, "Father,
the hour has come; glorify your Son so that
the Son may glorify you, 2 since you have
given him authority over all people,[d] to give
eternal life to all whom you have given him.
3 And this is eternal life, that they may know
you, the only true God, and Jesus Christ
whom you have sent. 4 I glorified you on earth
by finishing the work that you gave me to
do. 5 So now, Father, glorify me in your own
presence with the glory that I had in your
presence before the world existed.

[a] Or *will ask me no question*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *Father, he will give it to you in my name*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *the Father*
[d] Gk *flesh*

16.16–24: "A little while." 20: Jesus does not yet explain what he meant but focuses attention on the disciples and their distress. **21–22:** The labor pains of childbirth and the joy of a birth parallel the disciples' experience. **23–24:** Instruction for petitionary prayer, as in 14.13–14; cf. Mt 21.22. **25–33:** Full explanation. **26:** Petitionary prayer with direct access to God, not through broker. **27:** Secure relationships: the Father *loves you* because you love and believe me. **28:** As ideal broker, Jesus belongs both to God's world and the disciples'. He came from the Father into the world and now returns to the Father (1.1–18; 3.13; 13.1–3). **32:** Like sheep *scattered* they will leave Jesus *alone*, yet he is not truly *alone* because of his relationship with God. **33:** A crisis foretold to strengthen them.

17.1–26: Jesus praying. For previous prayers of Jesus, see 11.41–42; 12.27–28. **1:** Mutual glorifying indicates ideal relationship; cf. 8.50,54; 16.14. **3:** *Eternal life*, a two-part confession: to *know you, the only true God* (monotheism) and to acknowledge Jesus Christ as agent (broker). **5:** The relationship demands that God in turn glorify

6 "I have made your name known to those
whom you gave me from the world. They
were yours, and you gave them to me, and
they have kept your word. 7 Now they know
that everything you have given me is from
you; 8 for the words that you gave to me I have
given to them, and they have received them
and know in truth that I came from you; and
they have believed that you sent me. 9 I am
asking on their behalf; I am not asking on
behalf of the world, but on behalf of those
whom you gave me, because they are yours.
10 All mine are yours, and yours are mine; and
I have been glorified in them. 11 And now I am
no longer in the world, but they are in the
world, and I am coming to you. Holy Father,
protect them in your name that you have
given me, so that they may be one, as we are
one. 12 While I was with them, I protected
them in your name that[a] you have given me. I
guarded them, and not one of them was lost
except the one destined to be lost,[b] so that
the scripture might be fulfilled. 13 But now I
am coming to you, and I speak these things in
the world so that they may have my joy made
complete in themselves.[c] 14 I have given them
your word, and the world has hated them
because they do not belong to the world, just
as I do not belong to the world. 15 I am not
asking you to take them out of the world, but
I ask you to protect them from the evil one.[d]
16 They do not belong to the world, just as I
do not belong to the world. 17 Sanctify them
in the truth; your word is truth. 18 As you have
sent me into the world, so I have sent them
into the world. 19 And for their sakes I sanctify
myself, so that they also may be sanctified in
truth.

20 "I ask not only on behalf of these, but
also on behalf of those who will believe in
me through their word, 21 that they may all
be one. As you, Father, are in me and I am in
you, may they also be in us,[e] so that the world
may believe that you have sent me. 22 The glo-
ry that you have given me I have given them,
so that they may be one, as we are one, 23 I in
them and you in me, that they may become
completely one, so that the world may know
that you have sent me and have loved them
even as you have loved me. 24 Father, I desire
that those also, whom you have given me,
may be with me where I am, to see my glory,
which you have given me because you loved
me before the foundation of the world.

25 "Righteous Father, the world does not
know you, but I know you; and these know
that you have sent me. 26 I made your name
known to them, and I will make it known, so
that the love with which you have loved me
may be in them, and I in them."

18 After Jesus had spoken these words,
he went out with his disciples across
the Kidron valley to a place where there was
a garden, which he and his disciples en-

[a] Other ancient authorities read *protected in your name those whom*
[b] Gk *except the son of destruction*
[c] Or *among themselves*
[d] Or *from evil*
[e] Other ancient authorities read *be one in us*

Jesus in heaven, not with earned honor but restoration of Jesus' eternal glory (1.1–2). **6:** Besides petition and praise, Jesus prays a self-focused prayer: Jesus tells God of his honorable behavior, the accomplishment of what he was sent to do. *Name,* not God or "Lord," but "I AM," the name revealed to Moses (Ex 3.14); see 8.28,58. **7–8:** Words given by God to Jesus are given to them, acknowledging him as broker. **9:** Jesus brokers only the needs of insiders. **10:** Sender and agent equally share *all,* establishing Jesus as the ideal broker. **11:** Reason for petition: your broker is in transit to you; petition: You protect them, i.e., keep them loyal. **12:** Again (see. v. 6) a self-focused prayer. **13:** An implied petition: the broker, who is in transit, desires them to have *my joy* in abundance (16.20–22). **14:** As in Jesus' case, the world hates them, for, like him, they do not belong below (7.7; 8.23). **15–17:** Further petitions. **18:** Cf. 20.21. **19:** *Sanctify* means total dedication to God; Jesus *sanctifies* himself so that the disciples might be totally loyal. **20–21:** Petition: Jesus intercedes for them and those recruited by them (v. 18). *One,* unified, in the same proper relationship as Jesus and the Father. *In me . . . in you . . . in us, . . .* recalling the household language of 14.2. **24:** Petition: not contradicting v. 15, but suggesting a relationship with the heavenly Jesus. *See my glory* explains the promise in 1.51. **25–26:** *Know* means "acknowledge"; the world *does not know* God because it rejects God's broker; Jesus knows God as his agent; disciples *know* God because they acknowledge Jesus as agent. That knowledge cements perfect relationships in *love.*

tered. 2 Now Judas, who betrayed him, also
knew the place, because Jesus often met
there with his disciples. 3 So Judas brought a
detachment of soldiers together with police
from the chief priests and the Pharisees,
and they came there with lanterns and
torches and weapons. 4 Then Jesus, know-
ing all that was to happen to him, came
forward and asked them, "Whom are you
looking for?" 5 They answered, "Jesus of
Nazareth."[a] Jesus replied, "I am he."[b] Judas,
who betrayed him, was standing with them.
6 When Jesus[c] said to them, "I am he,"[b] they
stepped back and fell to the ground. 7 Again
he asked them, "Whom are you looking
for?" And they said, "Jesus of Nazareth."[a]
8 Jesus answered, "I told you that I am he.[b]
So if you are looking for me, let these men
go." 9 This was to fulfill the word that he
had spoken, "I did not lose a single one of
those whom you gave me." 10 Then Simon
Peter, who had a sword, drew it, struck
the high priest's slave, and cut off his right
ear. The slave's name was Malchus. 11 Jesus
said to Peter, "Put your sword back into its
sheath. Am I not to drink the cup that the
Father has given me?"

12 So the soldiers, their officer, and the
Jewish police arrested Jesus and bound him.
13 First they took him to Annas, who was the
father-in-law of Caiaphas, the high priest
that year. 14 Caiaphas was the one who had
advised the Jews that it was better to have
one person die for the people.

15 Simon Peter and another disciple fol-
lowed Jesus. Since that disciple was known
to the high priest, he went with Jesus into
the courtyard of the high priest, 16 but Peter
was standing outside at the gate. So the other
disciple, who was known to the high priest,
went out, spoke to the woman who guarded
the gate, and brought Peter in. 17 The woman
said to Peter, "You are not also one of this
man's disciples, are you?" He said, "I am not."
18 Now the slaves and the police had made a
charcoal fire because it was cold, and they
were standing around it and warming them-
selves. Peter also was standing with them and
warming himself.

19 Then the high priest questioned Jesus
about his disciples and about his teaching.
20 Jesus answered, "I have spoken openly
to the world; I have always taught in syna-
gogues and in the temple, where all the
Jews come together. I have said nothing in
secret. 21 Why do you ask me? Ask those who
heard what I said to them; they know what
I said." 22 When he had said this, one of the
police standing nearby struck Jesus on the
face, saying, "Is that how you answer the
high priest?" 23 Jesus answered, "If I have
spoken wrongly, testify to the wrong. But if I
have spoken rightly, why do you strike me?"
24 Then Annas sent him bound to Caiaphas
the high priest.

25 Now Simon Peter was standing and
warming himself. They asked him, "You are
not also one of his disciples, are you?" He

[a] Gk *the Nazorean*
[b] Gk *I am*
[c] Gk *he*

18.1–19.42: The arrest, trials, death, and burial of Jesus (cf. Mt 26.30–27.61; Mk 14.26–15.47; Lk 22.39–23.56).

18.1–11: Jesus surrenders. 1–2: *Across the Kidron valley,* east of the city, to the Mount of Olives. *Garden,* an olive orchard frequented by Jesus, called Gethsemane in Mk 14.32; Mt 26.36; cf. Lk 21.37; 22.39. **4:** Jesus controls events **6:** When Jesus reveals himself as "I AM" (see 4.26n.), his questioners fall to the ground, as at a theophany. **8–9:** The "noble shepherd" (see 10.11n.) rescues all his sheep, except for Judas (17.12); none are snatched (10.28; cf. 6.39). **10:** Peter defends Jesus as an earthly king; cf. 18.36. *Simon Peter . . . Malchus,* both identified by name only in this Gospel. **11:** *Cup,* a metaphor for what God allots; see Ps 16.5; Isa 51.17; Lam 4.21. Jesus shows his nobility by voluntarily and virtuously accepting his fate.

18.12–27: In the high priests' palaces. 12–14: Earlier Caiaphas ironically described Jesus' death as noble (11.50–52) because it benefits others. *Annas* was Caiphas's father-in-law and predecessor as high priest.**15–16:** The beloved disciple acts as a shepherd (see 10.1–3): he talks to the gatekeeper and leads Peter in. Their relationship will be reversed in 21.15–18. **17–18:** Peter cancels all relationship to Jesus, not merely denying knowledge about him, but like the parents of the blind man (9.22) and certain Pharisees (12.42) by cowardly hiding allegiance to Jesus. **19–21:** Public figure in public places, thus honorable (7.26; 10.22–23; Matt 26.55). **25–27:** *The cock crowed,* see 13.38.

denied it and said, "I am not." 26 One of the slaves of the high priest, a relative of the man whose ear Peter had cut off, asked, "Did I not see you in the garden with him?" 27 Again Peter denied it, and at that moment the cock crowed.

28 Then they took Jesus from Caiaphas to Pilate's headquarters.[a] It was early in the morning. They themselves did not enter the headquarters,[a] so as to avoid ritual defilement and to be able to eat the Passover. 29 So Pilate went out to them and said, "What accusation do you bring against this man?" 30 They answered, "If this man were not a criminal, we would not have handed him over to you." 31 Pilate said to them, "Take him yourselves and judge him according to your law." The Jews replied, "We are not permitted to put anyone to death." 32 (This was to fulfill what Jesus had said when he indicated the kind of death he was to die.)

33 Then Pilate entered the headquarters[a] again, summoned Jesus, and asked him, "Are you the King of the Jews?" 34 Jesus answered, "Do you ask this on your own, or did others tell you about me?" 35 Pilate replied, "I am not a Jew, am I? Your own nation and the chief priests have handed you over to me. What have you done?" 36 Jesus answered, "My kingdom is not from this world. If my kingdom were from this world, my followers would be fighting to keep me from being handed over to the Jews. But as it is, my kingdom is not from here." 37 Pilate asked him, "So you are a king?" Jesus answered, "You say that I am a king. For this I was born, and for this I came into the world, to testify to the truth. Everyone who belongs to the truth listens to my voice." 38 Pilate asked him, "What is truth?"

After he had said this, he went out to the Jews again and told them, "I find no case against him. 39 But you have a custom that I release someone for you at the Passover. Do you want me to release for you the King of the Jews?" 40 They shouted in reply, "Not this man, but Barabbas!" Now Barabbas was a bandit.

19 Then Pilate took Jesus and had him flogged. 2 And the soldiers wove a crown of thorns and put it on his head, and they dressed him in a purple robe. 3 They kept coming up to him, saying, "Hail, King of the Jews!" and striking him on the face. 4 Pilate went out again and said to them, "Look, I am bringing him out to you to let you know that I find no case against him." 5 So Jesus came out, wearing the crown of thorns and the purple robe. Pilate said to them, "Here is the man!" 6 When the chief priests and the police saw him, they shouted, "Crucify him! Crucify him!" Pilate said to them, "Take him yourselves and crucify him; I find no case against him." 7 The Jews answered him, "We have a law, and according to that law he ought to die because he has claimed to be the Son of God."

8 Now when Pilate heard this, he was more afraid than ever. 9 He entered his headquarters[a] again and asked Jesus, "Where are you from?" But Jesus gave him no answer. 10 Pilate therefore said to him, "Do you refuse to speak to me? Do you not know that I have power to release you, and power to crucify you?" 11 Jesus answered him, "You would have no

[a] Gk *the praetorium*

18.28–40: In Roman hands. 28: *Pilate's headquarters,* the Praetorium (see textual note *a* and map on p. 1883) was located on the west side of Jerusalem. It was the official residence of Pontius Pilate, the Roman governor of Judea (ca. 26–37 CE). Ironically, killing Jesus is permitted, but ritual impunity must be avoided. **31:** Moreover, the religious authorities are powerless. **36:** Jesus' kingdom is otherworldly, and no threat to Rome or Judea (see 18.10–11). **37–38a:** Pilate's question receives an honest response, but Jesus now challenges with a focus on *truth.* **38b:** Pilate's declaration of Jesus' innocence should end the trial. **39–40:** Jesus, king of the Jews, again rejected by his own in favor of a *bandit* (or revolutionary insurrectionist). The custom of a releasing a prisoner at Passover is attested only in the New Testament.

19.1–16: Jesus' second trial before Pilate. 1: *Flogging*, judicial warning (Lk 23.22); Paul often received such (2 Cor 11.23–25). **2–3:** A mock coronation: crown of thorns; royal purple robe; acclamation. **4–5:** Pilate again declares Jesus innocent, taunting the powerless crowd. **7:** The penalty for blasphemy was death (see 10.39–32n.). **8–9:** Jesus' true origin is known only by insiders (13.1–3; 16.28). *No answer*, silence generally signals defeat; here

power over me unless it had been given you from above; therefore the one who handed me over to you is guilty of a greater sin."
12 From then on Pilate tried to release him, but the Jews cried out, "If you release this man, you are no friend of the emperor. Everyone who claims to be a king sets himself against the emperor."

13 When Pilate heard these words, he brought Jesus outside and sat[a] on the judge's bench at a place called The Stone Pavement, or in Hebrew[b] Gabbatha. 14 Now it was the day of Preparation for the Passover; and it was about noon. He said to the Jews, "Here is your King!" 15 They cried out, "Away with him! Away with him! Crucify him!" Pilate asked them, "Shall I crucify your King?" The chief priests answered, "We have no king but the emperor." 16 Then he handed him over to them to be crucified.

So they took Jesus; 17 and carrying the cross by himself, he went out to what is called The Place of the Skull, which in Hebrew[b] is called Golgotha. 18 There they crucified him, and with him two others, one on either side, with Jesus between them. 19 Pilate also had an inscription written and put on the cross. It read, "Jesus of Nazareth,[c] the King of the Jews." 20 Many of the Jews read this inscription, because the place where Jesus was crucified was near the city; and it was written in Hebrew,[b] in Latin, and in Greek. 21 Then the chief priests of the Jews said to Pilate, "Do not write, 'The King of the Jews,' but, 'This man said, I am King of the Jews.'" 22 Pilate answered, "What I have written I have written." 23 When the soldiers had crucified Jesus, they took his clothes and divided them into four parts, one for each soldier. They also took his tunic; now the tunic was seamless, woven in one piece from the top. 24 So they said to one another, "Let us not tear it, but cast lots for it to see who will get it." This was to fulfill what the scripture says,

"They divided my clothes among
themselves,
and for my clothing they cast lots."

25 And that is what the soldiers did.

Meanwhile, standing near the cross of Jesus were his mother, and his mother's sister, Mary the wife of Clopas, and Mary Magdalene. 26 When Jesus saw his mother and the disciple whom he loved standing beside her, he said to his mother, "Woman, here is your son." 27 Then he said to the disciple, "Here is your mother." And from that hour the disciple took her into his own home.

28 After this, when Jesus knew that all was now finished, he said (in order to fulfill the scripture), "I am thirsty." 29 A jar full of sour wine was standing there. So they put a sponge full of the wine on a branch of hyssop and held it to his mouth. 30 When Jesus had received the wine, he said, "It is finished." Then he bowed his head and gave up his spirit.

[a] Or *seated him*
[b] That is, *Aramaic*
[c] Gk *the Nazorean*

it challenges Pilate. **10–11:** Pilate's power comes from God, not from Caesar. *Greater sin,* rejection by his own surpasses Pilate's injustice. **12:** Pilate cannot release Caesar's rival and be his client (friend). **13:** *Gabbatha,* occurring only here, probably means "the elevated (place)" in Aramaic (see textual note *b*); it was probably near the Praetorium (see 18.28n.) **14–15:** *Noon* on the *day of Preparation*: time when Passover lambs were slaughtered. *We have no king but the emperor,* an example of the "greater sin" (v. 11), rejection of God and of Jesus.

19.17–30: The crucifixion: killing the king. 17: *Golgotha,* in the northwest section of the city; see map on p. 1883. *Hebrew,* see textual note *b.* **18:** *Crucified,* like "flogged" (v. 1), focuses not just on pain but on shame. **19:** The sign states Jesus' "crime," but ironically it is true. **20:** Three languages suggests openness to all (cf. "savior of the world," 4.42). **23–24:** *Clothes,* spoils for executioners, whose refusal to cut the tunic necessitates casting lots, fulfilling Ps 22.18. **25:** *His mother,* unnamed as in 2.4, as also is her sister, who is not mentioned elsewhere in the New Testament. *Mary . . . of Clopas,* perhaps to be identified with the mother of James and Joses (Mk 15.40; etc.). **26–27:** Jesus provides his mother with a new son to protect her. *The disciple whom he loved,* see 13.23n. **28:** *Thirsty,* fulfilling Ps 69.21. **29:** *Hyssop,* a wild shrub whose branches were used for sprinkling liquids in religious rituals. **30:** *Finished,* either life ended or mission accomplished (17.4). *Gave up his Spirit,* a double meaning: "spirit" can mean "breath," but the phrase is also indicative of a Pentecostal event (see 7.39; Acts 2.4).

31 Since it was the day of Preparation, the
Jews did not want the bodies left on the cross
during the sabbath, especially because that
sabbath was a day of great solemnity. So they
asked Pilate to have the legs of the crucified men broken and the bodies removed.
32 Then the soldiers came and broke the legs
of the first and of the other who had been
crucified with him. 33 But when they came to
Jesus and saw that he was already dead, they
did not break his legs. 34 Instead, one of the
soldiers pierced his side with a spear, and at
once blood and water came out. 35 (He who
saw this has testified so that you also may
believe. His testimony is true, and he knows[a]
that he tells the truth.) 36 These things
occurred so that the scripture might be fulfilled, "None of his bones shall be broken."
37 And again another passage of scripture
says, "They will look on the one whom they
have pierced."

38 After these things, Joseph of Arimathea,
who was a disciple of Jesus, though a secret
one because of his fear of the Jews, asked
Pilate to let him take away the body of Jesus.
Pilate gave him permission; so he came and
removed his body. 39 Nicodemus, who had
at first come to Jesus by night, also came,
bringing a mixture of myrrh and aloes,
weighing about a hundred pounds. 40 They
took the body of Jesus and wrapped it with
the spices in linen cloths, according to the
burial custom of the Jews. 41 Now there was a
garden in the place where he was crucified,
and in the garden there was a new tomb in
which no one had ever been laid. 42 And so,
because it was the Jewish day of Preparation,
and the tomb was nearby, they laid Jesus
there.

20 Early on the first day of the week,
while it was still dark, Mary
Magdalene came to the tomb and saw that
the stone had been removed from the tomb.
2 So she ran and went to Simon Peter and the
other disciple, the one whom Jesus loved,
and said to them, "They have taken the Lord
out of the tomb, and we do not know where
they have laid him." 3 Then Peter and the
other disciple set out and went toward the
tomb. 4 The two were running together, but
the other disciple outran Peter and reached
the tomb first. 5 He bent down to look in and
saw the linen wrappings lying there, but
he did not go in. 6 Then Simon Peter came,
following him, and went into the tomb. He
saw the linen wrappings lying there, 7 and
the cloth that had been on Jesus' head, not
lying with the linen wrappings but rolled up
in a place by itself. 8 Then the other disciple,
who reached the tomb first, also went in, and
he saw and believed; 9 for as yet they did not
understand the scripture, that he must rise
from the dead. 10 Then the disciples returned
to their homes.

11 But Mary stood weeping outside the
tomb. As she wept, she bent over to look[b]
into the tomb; 12 and she saw two angels in
white, sitting where the body of Jesus had
been lying, one at the head and the other at
the feet. 13 They said to her, "Woman, why
are you weeping?" She said to them, "They
have taken away my Lord, and I do not
know where they have laid him." 14 When
she had said this, she turned around and
saw Jesus standing there, but she did not

[a] Or *there is one who knows*
[b] Gk lacks *to look*

19.31–42: Final affairs. 31: *Legs . . . broken*: to forestall asphyxiation, the crucified pulled up with their arms and pushed up with their legs. With legs broken, the arms cramp quickly, bringing death. **34:** Either senseless mutilation or fluids suggesting benefits: baptism (*water*) and Eucharist (*blood*; 6.53–56; 1 Jn 5.6–8). **35:** The witness is not the actual writer, but guarantor of the narrative. **36–37:** *Scriptures . . . fulfilled,* a claim that God providentially controls Jesus' death. **36:** Ex 12.46, referring to the Passover lamb; see 1.29–30n. Cf. Ps 34.20. **37:** Zech 12.10. **38:** *Joseph of Arimathea*'s fear of censure (cf. 9.22; 12.42) is balanced by his public attempt to bury Jesus. **39:** *Nicodemus* (3.2), brings excessive spices. **40–42:** An honorable burial: a new tomb, burial clothes, excessive spices, all according to Judean burial customs.

20.1–18: The resurrection (cf. Mt 28; Mk 16; Lk 24). **1:** *The first day of the week,* Sunday. **2–5:** *The one whom Jesus loved* (see 13.23n.) arrives first; not entering indicates respect for Peter; contrast 13.23–25. **6–7:** Peter arrives, inventories the tomb's contents, and leaves knowing nothing. **8:** *The other disciple* sees all Peter saw, but *believed*. **9:** *As yet they did not understand the scripture:* see 2.17 (Ps 69.9); 3.14 (Num 21.9); 19.24 (Ps 22.18); etc.

know that it was Jesus. 15 Jesus said to her, "Woman, why are you weeping? Whom are you looking for?" Supposing him to be the gardener, she said to him, "Sir, if you have carried him away, tell me where you have laid him, and I will take him away." 16 Jesus said to her, "Mary!" She turned and said to him in Hebrew,[a] "Rabbouni!" (which means Teacher). 17 Jesus said to her, "Do not hold on to me, because I have not yet ascended to the Father. But go to my brothers and say to them, 'I am ascending to my Father and your Father, to my God and your God.'" 18 Mary Magdalene went and announced to the disciples, "I have seen the Lord"; and she told them that he had said these things to her.

19 When it was evening on that day, the first day of the week, and the doors of the house where the disciples had met were locked for fear of the Jews, Jesus came and stood among them and said, "Peace be with you." 20 After he said this, he showed them his hands and his side. Then the disciples rejoiced when they saw the Lord. 21 Jesus said to them again, "Peace be with you. As the Father has sent me, so I send you." 22 When he had said this, he breathed on them and said to them, "Receive the Holy Spirit. 23 If you forgive the sins of any, they are forgiven them; if you retain the sins of any, they are retained."

24 But Thomas (who was called the Twin[b]), one of the twelve, was not with them when Jesus came. 25 So the other disciples told him, "We have seen the Lord." But he said to them, "Unless I see the mark of the nails in his hands, and put my finger in the mark of the nails and my hand in his side, I will not believe."

26 A week later his disciples were again in the house, and Thomas was with them. Although the doors were shut, Jesus came and stood among them and said, "Peace be with you." 27 Then he said to Thomas, "Put your finger here and see my hands. Reach out your hand and put it in my side. Do not doubt but believe." 28 Thomas answered him, "My Lord and my God!" 29 Jesus said to him, "Have you believed because you have seen me? Blessed are those who have not seen and yet have come to believe."

30 Now Jesus did many other signs in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this book. 31 But these are written so that you may come to believe[c] that Jesus

[a] That is, *Aramaic*
[b] Gk *Didymus*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *may continue to believe*

11–13: The angels tell Mary nothing, unlike Mt 28.5–7. She repeats her lines (see v. 2). **14:** She *saw,* but *did not know.* **15:** More confusion and ambiguity. **16:** Jesus rarely addresses people by name in this Gospel; exceptions are Lazarus (11.43), Simon, son of John (21.15), now Mary. She addresses Jesus by his role, *Rabbouni* (a variant of "rabbi"), *Teacher* (1.38; 3.2; 11.28; 13.13). **17a:** Only members of his inner circle touch Jesus: Mary (12.3–4); the beloved disciple (13.23); Thomas (20.25,27); Jesus rarely touches others (but see 9.6; 13.5). **17b:** The Gospel's greatest revelation, communicated only to Mary: As Jesus lays down his life, he takes it back (10.17); he travels by his own power. She in turn is sent only to insiders, but her role is of limited duration.

20.19–29: Commissioning. 19–21: *Peace be with you,* a traditional Jewish greeting (e.g., Tob 12.17) is repeated twice, erasing their cowardice (16.32; 18.25–27). *Showed them his hands and his side,* proving he is no ghost (see Lk 24.38–39,41–42). **21:** Typically the risen Jesus commissions disciples to roles of service (Mt 28.16–28; Lk 24.48; Jn 21.15–18). *As the Father has sent . . . I send,"* identical to 17.18, this sending will endure, unlike Mary's. **22:** *Breathed,* cf. Gen 2.7. *Receive the Holy Spirit*, resurrection, "ascension" (v. 17) and "Pentecost" (v. 22) all occur on one day; thus Jesus confirms his brokerage. **24–25:** Thomas, absent from the group, refused the apostles' "gospel" about Jesus. **26:** The setting is the same as in v. 19, but Thomas is in attendance. **27:** *"See . . . reach out your hand,"* gentler treatment than with those demanding signs (2.18; 4.48; 6.2,26). Unlike these previous requests, Jesus gives in to Thomas completely. **28:** Thomas surrenders and honors Jesus as *Lord* and *God.* This recalls 1.1–3 and 5.19–29. **29:** John's second beatitude (see 13.17). In the Synoptic Gospels, the beatitudes honor people suffering for Jesus (Lk 6.22–24); this honors insiders who believe the gospel.

20.30–31: First conclusion to the Gospel. In the Gospel, seven signs have been narrated out of a collection of many. These signs are credentials and proof of Jesus' relationship with God. Thus believing, one has access to eternal *life* by having Jesus as broker, *in his name.*

is the Messiah,[a] the Son of God, and that through believing you may have life in his name.

21 After these things Jesus showed himself again to the disciples by the Sea of Tiberias; and he showed himself in this way. [2] Gathered there together were Simon Peter, Thomas called the Twin,[b] Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, the sons of Zebedee, and two others of his disciples. [3] Simon Peter said to them, "I am going fishing." They said to him, "We will go with you." They went out and got into the boat, but that night they caught nothing.

[4] Just after daybreak, Jesus stood on the beach; but the disciples did not know that it was Jesus. [5] Jesus said to them, "Children, you have no fish, have you?" They answered him, "No." [6] He said to them, "Cast the net to the right side of the boat, and you will find some." So they cast it, and now they were not able to haul it in because there were so many fish. [7] That disciple whom Jesus loved said to Peter, "It is the Lord!" When Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he put on some clothes, for he was naked, and jumped into the sea. [8] But the other disciples came in the boat, dragging the net full of fish, for they were not far from the land, only about a hundred yards[c] off.

[9] When they had gone ashore, they saw a charcoal fire there, with fish on it, and bread. [10] Jesus said to them, "Bring some of the fish that you have just caught." [11] So Simon Peter went aboard and hauled the net ashore, full of large fish, a hundred fifty-three of them; and though there were so many, the net was not torn. [12] Jesus said to them, "Come and have breakfast." Now none of the disciples dared to ask him, "Who are you?" because they knew it was the Lord. [13] Jesus came and took the bread and gave it to them, and did the same with the fish. [14] This was now the third time that Jesus appeared to the disciples after he was raised from the dead.

[15] When they had finished breakfast, Jesus said to Simon Peter, "Simon son of John, do you love me more than these?" He said to him, "Yes, Lord; you know that I love you." Jesus said to him, "Feed my lambs." [16] A second time he said to him, "Simon son of John, do you love me?" He said to him, "Yes, Lord; you know that I love you." Jesus said to him, "Tend my sheep." [17] He said to him the third time, "Simon son of John, do you love me?" Peter felt hurt because he said to him the third time, "Do you love me?" And he said to him, "Lord, you know everything; you know that I love you." Jesus said to him, "Feed my sheep. [18] Very truly, I tell you, when you were younger, you used to fasten your own belt and to go wherever you wished. But when you grow old, you will stretch out your hands, and someone else will fasten a belt around you and take you where you do not wish to go." [19] (He said this to indicate the kind of death by

[a] Or *the Christ*
[b] Gk *Didymus*
[c] Gk *two hundred cubits*

21.1–19: Simon Peter: fisherman, table servant, and shepherd. 1: *By the Sea of Tiberias,* in Galilee (see 6.1). **2:** Typical boats held six comfortably; here, seven: Simon Peter, Thomas, Nathanael (see 1.45–51), the sons of Zebedee (James and John), and two others. **3:** *Simon Peter,* returns to his occupation as a fisherman (Lk 5.1–10). **6:** Abundance is typical of Jesus' benefactions: wine (2.6–7), bread (6.5–13), life (10.10), now fish. **7:** Only the *disciple whom Jesus loved* (see 13.23n.) recognizes Jesus (20.8), upon whom Simon Peter totally depends for knowledge (13.25; 18.15–16). Neither nakedness nor working clothes are suitable for the presence of the Lord. **9–10:** *Fire, fish,* and *bread* provided by Jesus the host. *Fish* and *bread* have eucharistic overtones (see 6.11). **11:** *A hundred fifty-three,* either gematria (a numerical code) for Simon's name or just a very large number. **12–13:** Jesus' service continues the foot washing (13.13–15). **15:** Presumably they speak publicly before the others. *Love* suggests exceptional loyalty; if Peter's triple denial (18.17,25–27) meant rejection of all relationship with Jesus, now his assertion of *love* means the opposite. *Feed my lambs,* Jesus authorizes Peter to be the new shepherd. **17:** *Third time,* paralleling the triple denial. Peter now acknowledges Jesus and professes complete loyalty. **18:** Peter, as "noble" shepherd (see 10.11n.), will die in service of Jesus (10.11,15); his boast in 13.37 ironically will come true. **19:** Peter's death will *glorify* God, as did Jesus' (13.31–32; 17.1). Although now a shepherd, he is still Jesus' sheep: *Follow me.*

which he would glorify God.) After this he said to him, "Follow me."

20 Peter turned and saw the disciple whom Jesus loved following them; he was the one who had reclined next to Jesus at the supper and had said, "Lord, who is it that is going to betray you?" 21 When Peter saw him, he said to Jesus, "Lord, what about him?" 22 Jesus said to him, "If it is my will that he remain until I come, what is that to you? Follow me!" 23 So the rumor spread in the community[a] that this disciple would not die. Yet Jesus did not say to him that he would not die, but, "If it is my will that he remain until I come, what is that to you?"[b]

24 This is the disciple who is testifying to these things and has written them, and we know that his testimony is true. 25 But there are also many other things that Jesus did; if every one of them were written down, I suppose that the world itself could not contain the books that would be written.

[a] Gk *among the brothers*
[b] Other ancient authorities lack *what is that to you*

21.20–25: Rivalry, continued. 20: The disciple's high status comes from his touching Jesus, learning his secrets, courageously standing with him at the cross, and recognizing him (see 13.24n.). **22:** Simon's question challenges Jesus about the status of the disciple. His response resembles 2.3–4; it is none of your business. **23:** Jesus' statement is typically misunderstood. They construe *remain* as *he would not die* (see 5.24; 8.51–52; 1 Cor 15.50–52), but Jesus clarifies.

21.24–25: Second conclusion to the Gospel. *The disciple who is testifying,* most likely the beloved disciple (13.25–26; 19.35; 21.7), as opposed to the one who *has written,* just as Pilate caused the title on the cross to be written by another (19.19). *Other things,* cf. 20.30.

This page intentionally left blank

THE ACTS OF THE APOSTLES

NAME

The anonymous author of the third Gospel and its sequel, the Acts of the Apostles, supplied no titles for these works. By the end of the second century CE this author was thought to be Luke, and his second volume was referred to as "Acts" in the sense of the "activities" or "deeds" of the apostles. As a descriptive title, however, Acts of the Apostles is a misnomer, since Peter is the only one of the twelve apostles whose deeds and speeches are recounted in detail. Paul, the subject of the second half of the book, refers to himself as "apostle" in his letters but is not presented as such by Luke. Nevertheless, the title does capture a key concept of the book, namely, that the twelve apostles collectively guaranteed the early church's continuity with Jesus. In Luke's view they did so because they had been witnesses to everything that happened during Jesus' ministry, and especially to his resurrection (Acts 1.21–22; 10.39–41).

CANONICAL STATUS

Acts is the fifth book of the New Testament, immediately following the four Gospels. Although modern interpreters now understand Luke-Acts as a unified literary work in two parts, in the canonical arrangement the Gospel of John comes between these two books. Moreover, Luke's two works never appear in sequence in any ancient manuscript. In its canonical position, Acts connects the four Gospels to the collection of letters that follow, and its narrative focus, first on Peter and then on Paul, whether by accident or design allows it to function as an appropriate transition from the accounts about Jesus to the writings of the apostles.

AUTHORSHIP

Although Acts nowhere identifies its author, by the end of the second century it was possible to argue that Luke was the obvious candidate, and it has become conventional to refer to the author with this traditional name. This identification was based on the occurrence of Luke's name in Philemon 24 and in two other letters attributed to Paul (Col 4.14; 2 Tim 4.11), and also on passages in Acts in which the author presents himself as a traveling companion of Paul. Irenaeus (ca. 180 CE) pointed to these "we" passages (Acts 16.10–17; 20.5–15; 21.1–18; 27.1–28.16), in which the text shifts from third-person to first-person plural narration, as proof that Luke had been Paul's inseparable collaborator (Irenaeus, *Adv. Haer.* 3.14.1). Many modern scholars, however, challenge the assumption that the "we" passages demonstrate personal familiarity with Paul. In fact, one consequence of Luke's larger narrative goals is that his presentation of Paul is inconsistent with biographical and theological details in Paul's own letters. For example, Luke's denial of the formal status of "apostle" to Paul in Acts is almost unimaginable for an actual companion of Paul. In his letters Paul repeatedly claims to be one divinely called to be an apostle (e.g., Rom 1.1; 1 Cor 1.1; Gal 1.1). Luke's reluctance to use this term for Paul is connected to his view that only the Twelve, who had been present with Jesus throughout his public activity (Acts 1.21–22), were apostles. This disqualifies Paul, even if there is an echo of this contested status within Acts itself (14.4,14).

Although there is reason to doubt the identification of Luke as a companion of Paul, it cannot be denied that Luke admired Paul and viewed his missionary career as decisive for the establishment of Christianity in Asia Minor and Greece. Indeed, Luke's portrayal suggests that Paul's fame and influence extended from Jerusalem to Rome. Luke was probably someone from the Pauline mission area who, a generation or so after Paul, addressed issues facing Christians who found themselves in circumstances different from those addressed by Paul himself. Precisely where Luke carried out this task is uncertain. Ancient tradition placed him in Antioch, but his obvious respect for Paul and the Pauline tradition might indicate that he was connected with any of the cities of the Pauline mission around the Aegean Sea.

DATE

According to its opening words, Acts was written sometime after Luke's Gospel, which scholarly consensus currently dates to 85–95 CE (though some arguments have been advanced for an early second-century date). The considerations on the relation between Luke and Paul just reviewed support this late first-century date. Discrepancies between the undisputed Pauline letters and the narrative about Paul in Acts have long been

recognized, and a temporal gap between the two does much to clarify the situation. During the period in which Luke was writing, Paul's image was undergoing revision (as is shown in the Pastoral Epistles; see 1 and 2 Tim; Titus, p. 2084). For example, Luke does not hesitate to portray Paul as subject to Jewish law; this depiction is consistent with Luke's emphasis on the continuity of the history of Israel and of the church. Moreover, according to Luke it was not Paul's theological arguments but the conversion of Cornelius through Peter, ratified by the apostolic council (Acts 10.1–11.18), that established that Gentile Christians were not required to observe the law of Moses in its entirety. Such contradictions arise because Acts preserves an image of Paul from a period some decades after his death. Thus Paul's role in Acts is dictated not primarily by biographical details but rather by the needs of Luke's theology as well as the circumstances of his readers.

LITERARY HISTORY

Luke gives no information about the sources upon which the narrative presented in Acts is based. He appears to have relied on a mixture of traditional information uncovered by his own investigation (see Lk 1.3) and his imagination about how the founding events unfolded in Jerusalem and reverberated throughout the Mediterranean world. Like many Greek historians, whom Luke imitates in part, Luke supplemented his narrative with speeches appropriate to significant occasions. These speeches, which amount to nearly one-third of the total text, are Luke's own literary creations, inserted into the narrative to instruct and please the reader. They also serve to demonstrate the unity of the earliest Christian preaching, even as they present Luke's own interpretation of the "events" (Lk 1.1) surrounding the emergence of the church. Scholars have attempted to identify traditional material and sources behind Luke's account, but no consensus has emerged from these efforts. To the extent that Luke did use preexisting sources and traditions, his rewriting of them leaves few clues about what they were. While scholars previously have made much of Luke's apparent lack of use of Paul's letters, some now believe that Luke in fact was familiar with at least some of them. It may be that Luke used Paul's letters in a way most appropriate to his narrative genre: not by explicitly citing them but more generally as an aid in fashioning his picture of Paul and the early church.

STRUCTURE AND CONTENTS

The book of Acts tells a dramatic story of the birth and expansion of the church from the time of the ascension of Jesus until the arrival of Paul in Rome. The plot line of Acts begins with Jesus' ascent to heaven. The narrative first portrays the life and dynamic growth of the primitive community in Jerusalem, energized by the Spirit and led by Peter and the apostles up through the martyrdom of Stephen (chs 1–7). The persecution initiated with Stephen's death resulted in mission activity outside Jerusalem highlighted by approaches to non-Jews by Philip (ch 8). After narrating the conversion of Saul (ch 9), Luke presents Peter as the individual through whom God established the inclusion of the Gentiles (10.1–11.18). Next, the early missionary tour of Barnabas and Saul/Paul on behalf of Antioch is narrated (11.19–14.28), along with a story about Peter's miraculous escape from death (ch 12). The center of the book recounts the apostolic council's vindication of the efforts to free the Gentile mission from the requirements of Jewish ritual law (ch 15). Then Paul's further missionary travels are depicted (15.36–21.26) in Philippi, Thessalonica, Athens, Corinth, Ephesus, Miletus, Caesarea, and Jerusalem. Finally, the book recounts Paul's arrest, imprisonment, and trials in Jerusalem and Caesarea, and his transfer to Rome (21.27–28.31), closing with the uplifting image of Paul, while under house arrest, preaching and teaching without hindrance in the capital city of the empire.

INTERPRETATION

Written from the perspective of the late first or perhaps early second century CE, Acts alone among the documents of the earliest Christian period offers a narrative sequel to the accounts of Jesus' words and deeds found in the Gospels. Its author, identified by tradition as Luke, had already produced the Gospel (Acts 1.1–2). His purpose in writing again was more than a matter of antiquarian interest, although Acts can be compared with Hellenistic historical monographs. The account was intended to give Christians of his day an unshakable confidence in their future through an instructive survey of their past. In carrying out that overarching purpose, Acts addresses social and theological problems brought about by the church's relationship to its Jewish heritage and its Greco-Roman cultural and political environment. Luke sought to clarify both how the church was faithful to the God of the Jewish scriptures and how Christianity was not incompatible with civic order and morality in

the cities of the Roman Empire. Luke devotes half of the narrative to Paul, constructing for Christians of the era after Paul an image of this important figure consistent with the stance taken on Jewish and Roman concerns in the book. Beginning with Irenaeus and especially with Eusebius (d. ca. 339 CE), readers drew on Acts more strictly as a historical account or for information useful for solving later theological problems, no longer observing how in Acts Luke addressed the situation of the original audience. Moreover, such later uses were aided and abetted by the canonical arrangement of Luke's works, which gave no indication that his two books were to be read as a single work in two parts. Thus, for most ancient readers and their modern successors, Acts has been viewed not as a supplement to Luke's Gospel in particular but to the Gospels in general.

GUIDE TO READING

For Luke, who was likely a Gentile Christian (though a minority of scholars contend that he was a Diaspora Jew), that God's promises in scripture had been made to the ancient people of God required the church to stand in continuity with Israel. But since most Jews did not accept Jesus as the Messiah, and since the increasingly Gentile Christian community ceased to observe Jewish ritual, this historical continuity had been called into question. Luke responds to this threat by depicting the earliest Christians as faithful Jews in Jerusalem until persecution pushed them out. Then, by means of multiple elaborations of the Cornelius episode (10.1–48; 11.1–18; 15.7–9) and of the story of Paul's conversion (9.1–19; 22.4–16; 26.9–18), he stresses that the entrance of Gentiles into the church is nothing less than an act of God, and so by definition in continuity with Israel's history. It is significant that Luke's ideal Gentile convert is one who continues to practice Jewish piety (10.2), and that Gentile Christians are urged to adhere to conduct that would permit association with Jews (15.20). Luke's portrayal of Paul's visits to synagogues and his Jewish lifestyle serve to reinforce this maintaining of continuity with Jewish roots.

Apart from any value Acts has as a work of history, it is an important example of early Christian theology. Luke develops the idea of the church as a historical entity with its own distinctive era. Moreover, the earliest church, by being confined to Jerusalem, was set apart from the church of Luke's day. The ideal and unrepeatable structures of the early community resulted from the presence of the apostles and eyewitnesses. Luke's concern to highlight the continuity between Israel and the church is expressed by the continued observance of Jewish practices in the early period, implicitly in contrast to Luke's later situation. The gap between Luke's generation and the earlier time is bridged by the endorsement of the Gentile mission in the deliberations of the apostolic council and the promulgation of the apostolic decree (15.20,29; 21.25). The latter pronouncement may have been of practical value for Luke's community by creating the conditions necessary to allow table fellowship between Jewish and Gentile Christians. Luke's portrayal of Christianity's close ties to Judaism and thus as possessing a venerable heritage (24.14) also bolsters his appeal to Roman officials not to concern themselves with internal religious disputes (25.19,20). Acts portrays influential Romans expressing interest in Christianity (13.12; 19.31), or at least concluding that it posed no threat to the state (18.15; 19.37; 23.29; 25.25; 26.32). In this way Luke demonstrates the nonsubversive nature of the church, possibly in an effort to convince citizen elites of his own day that their membership in the Christian community was not incompatible with their status as Roman citizens. Luke's argument is designed for internal consumption; it was neither intended to persuade non-Christians nor would it have been likely to do so.

Key among the factors promoting continuity within the church itself throughout the narrative are the descriptions of the church's proclamation and teaching about Jesus and the constant presence of the Spirit as the prime mover at the crucial junctures of early Christian history (e.g., 8.29; 10.19; 16.6–7). Yet in Acts it is God who occupies the dominant place. Jesus is described as a man whom God legitimated by mighty works, wonders, and signs (2.22). The view of Jesus' death as atoning occurs only once in an expression taken over from earlier tradition (20.28). The focal point of salvation is the resurrection, which is viewed as the turning point of history. The combination of all of these forces allows Luke to portray the successful expansion of the early Christian mission throughout the Roman Empire under the direction of the Spirit according to the purpose of God.

Christopher R. Matthews

1 In the first book, Theophilus, I wrote
about all that Jesus did and taught from
the beginning [2] until the day when he was
taken up to heaven, after giving instruc-
tions through the Holy Spirit to the apostles
whom he had chosen. [3] After his suffering
he presented himself alive to them by many
convincing proofs, appearing to them during
forty days and speaking about the kingdom of
God. [4] While staying[a] with them, he ordered
them not to leave Jerusalem, but to wait there
for the promise of the Father. "This," he said,
"is what you have heard from me; [5] for John
baptized with water, but you will be baptized
with[b] the Holy Spirit not many days from
now."

[6] So when they had come together, they
asked him, "Lord, is this the time when you
will restore the kingdom to Israel?" [7] He
replied, "It is not for you to know the times
or periods that the Father has set by his own
authority. [8] But you will receive power when
the Holy Spirit has come upon you; and you
will be my witnesses in Jerusalem, in all Judea
and Samaria, and to the ends of the earth."
[9] When he had said this, as they were watch-
ing, he was lifted up, and a cloud took him
out of their sight. [10] While he was going and
they were gazing up toward heaven, sud-
denly two men in white robes stood by them.
[11] They said, "Men of Galilee, why do you
stand looking up toward heaven? This Jesus,
who has been taken up from you into heaven,
will come in the same way as you saw him go
into heaven."

[12] Then they returned to Jerusalem from
the mount called Olivet, which is near
Jerusalem, a sabbath day's journey away.
[13] When they had entered the city, they went
to the room upstairs where they were stay-
ing, Peter, and John, and James, and Andrew,
Philip and Thomas, Bartholomew and Mat-
thew, James son of Alphaeus, and Simon the
Zealot, and Judas son of[c] James. [14] All these
were constantly devoting themselves to
prayer, together with certain women, includ-
ing Mary the mother of Jesus, as well as his
brothers.

[a] Or *eating*
[b] Or *by*
[c] Or *the brother of*

1.1–14: Introduction and summary. The author (hereafter, "Luke") summarizes information from *the first book,* the Gospel of Luke. **1:** *Theophilus,* "dear to God"; perhaps a patron sponsoring publication of the two books (note the respectful address "most excellent" in Lk 1.3), or symbolic for any ideal reader. An opening dedication and reference to previous work is a common pattern in ancient literature. **3:** Examples of the *many convincing proofs* are given in Lk 24.13–53. *Appearing to them during forty days,* note that Lk 24.50–53 seems to place the ascension on Easter; *forty,* a symbolic number in the Bible frequently used for important transitions (e.g., Gen 7.12; Ex 24.18; Num 14.23), and here parallels the beginning of Jesus' ministry (Lk 4.2). *Kingdom of God* stands for the Christian proclamation (8.12; 19.8; 20.25) and indicates continuity with the teaching of Jesus (Lk 4.43; 8.1; 9.2,11). **4:** The Gk word translated *staying* means "to eat at the same table with" (see note *a*) and likely refers to Lk 24.30,31,35,41–43. *Promise of the Father,* that is, the Spirit; see Lk 11.13; 24.49. The promise is fulfilled in Acts 2.1–4 (see 2.33). *Jerusalem,* Luke locates all of the significant founding events in this holy city; the other Gospels report resurrection appearances in Galilee. **5:** *John* the Baptist, Lk 3.1–20. The *Holy Spirit* is one of the major characters of Acts. **6–11:** The ascension, cf. Lk 24.44–51. **6:** The apostles suppose that Jesus intends to *restore the kingdom to Israel* (Lk 22.28–30) and reestablish the dominion once enjoyed by David (Lk 1.32). **7:** The nationalistic tenor of the question is deflected. **8:** The theme of the apostles as *witnesses* (Lk 24.48) recurs often (1.22; 2.32; 3.15; 5.32; 10.39,41; 13.31). *Jerusalem . . . Judea . . . Samaria . . . the ends of the earth,* the progress of the mission is given in geographical terms (8.38n.). **9:** Elsewhere in the New Testament the ascension is found only at Lk 24.51 (cf. Mk 16.19). **10:** *Two men in white robes,* angels (24.4; Jn 20.12); in Lk 9.30 the two men are Moses and Elijah. There are other parallels between Luke's Transfiguration account (Lk 9.28–36) and the ascension scene. **11:** *Will come in the same way,* note the cloud in v. 9; Lk 21.27; cf. Mk 14.62; Dan 7.13. **12:** *Olivet,* the Mount of Olives is just east of Jerusalem. *A sabbath day's journey,* about 3,000 ft. (1,000 m.), the distance it was permissible for an observant Jew to walk on the sabbath (*Tr. Eruvin*) without breaking the command not to leave one's "place" on the sabbath (Ex 6.29). **13:** The same list as in Lk 6.14–16, but in a different order (and without Judas Iscariot). **14:** Jesus' family is incorporated into the church. *Brothers,* see Mt 13.55; Mk 6.3; James later appears as the leader of the Jerusalem church (12.17; 15.13; 21.18).

15 In those days Peter stood up among the
believers[a] (together the crowd numbered
about one hundred twenty persons) and said,
16 "Friends,[b] the scripture had to be fulfilled,
which the Holy Spirit through David foretold
concerning Judas, who became a guide for
those who arrested Jesus— 17 for he was num-
bered among us and was allotted his share
in this ministry." 18 (Now this man acquired a
field with the reward of his wickedness; and
falling headlong,[c] he burst open in the middle
and all his bowels gushed out. 19 This became
known to all the residents of Jerusalem, so
that the field was called in their language
Hakeldama, that is, Field of Blood.) 20 "For it
is written in the book of Psalms,

'Let his homestead become desolate,
and let there be no one to live in it';

and

'Let another take his position of overseer.'

21 So one of the men who have accompanied
us during all the time that the Lord Jesus went
in and out among us, 22 beginning from the
baptism of John until the day when he was
taken up from us—one of these must become
a witness with us to his resurrection." 23 So
they proposed two, Joseph called Barsabbas,
who was also known as Justus, and Matthias.
24 Then they prayed and said, "Lord, you know
everyone's heart. Show us which one of these
two you have chosen 25 to take the place[d] in
this ministry and apostleship from which Judas
turned aside to go to his own place." 26 And
they cast lots for them, and the lot fell on Mat-
thias; and he was added to the eleven apostles.

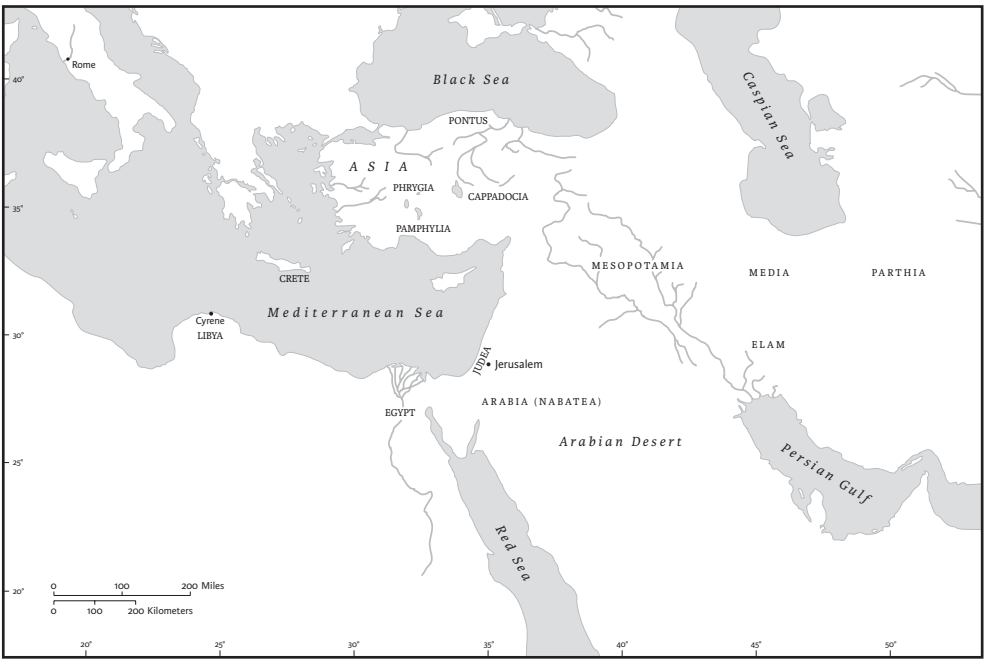
2 When the day of Pentecost had come,
they were all together in one place. 2 And
suddenly from heaven there came a sound
like the rush of a violent wind, and it filled
the entire house where they were sitting.
3 Divided tongues, as of fire, appeared among
them, and a tongue rested on each of them.
4 All of them were filled with the Holy Spirit
and began to speak in other languages, as the
Spirit gave them ability.

5 Now there were devout Jews from every
nation under heaven living in Jerusalem.
6 And at this sound the crowd gathered and
was bewildered, because each one heard
them speaking in the native language of each.
7 Amazed and astonished, they asked, "Are not
all these who are speaking Galileans? 8 And
how is it that we hear, each of us, in our own

[a] Gk *brothers*
[b] Gk *Men, brothers*
[c] Or *swelling up*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *the share*

1.15–26: The restoration of the twelve. The selection of Matthias restores the number of apostles to twelve, corresponding to the twelve tribes of Israel. **16:** *Through David,* in the Psalms quoted in v. 20; King David was traditionally viewed as the author of the Psalms. *Judas,* see Lk 22.3–6,47–48. **17:** *Us,* the apostles. **18:** Compare the gruesome death of Herod Agrippa in 12.23. According to Mt 27.5, Judas hanged himself. **19:** *Their language,* Aramaic, a language closely related to Hebrew; the information is clearly for Luke's Gk readers, not Peter's Aramaic-speaking audience. **20:** Scripture foresaw the situation (Ps 69.25) and dictates a course of action (Ps 109.8). In Acts, citations from the Hebrew Bible are based on the Gk version, the Septuagint. **21:** The requirements stipulated here explain why Paul does not qualify as an apostle in Acts. **22:** *The baptism of John* (Lk 3.1–21) marks the beginning of Jesus' ministry (10.37). To *become a witness . . . to* Jesus' *resurrection* in Acts means to become one of the twelve apostles, who function in a special sense as witnesses (v. 8; 2.32). **23:** Nothing else is known about Joseph and Matthias. **24:** *Know . . . heart,* see Lk 9.47; Acts 15.8. **26:** *Cast lots,* allowing the "Lord" (v. 24; Jesus, or perhaps God) to choose. Lots were widely used in the ancient world for religious and social decisions and are often mentioned in the Hebrew Bible (e.g., Lev 16.8; 1 Sam 10.20–21; 1 Chr 25.8).

2.1–41: The day of Pentecost. The Feast of Weeks or Pentecost (Lev 23.15–21), the spring barley harvest, falls fifty days after Passover. In Jewish tradition the law was given on this day. **1–13:** The coming of the Holy Spirit. **2:** *Rush of a violent wind,* perhaps an allusion to Gen 1.2 ("while a mighty wind swept over the face of the waters" [alternate version]), though this and other features here are typical of theophanies—manifestations of God (Ex 19.16–19; 1 Kings 19.11; Isa 66.15). **3:** John the Baptist had predicted a baptism "with the Holy Spirit and fire" (Lk 3.16; Mt 3.11; cf. Mk 1.8; Jn 1.33). **4:** This baptism (1.5) or filling with the Spirit is clearly foundational for Acts but is not referred to elsewhere in the New Testament (but cf. Jn 20.22). **5:** *Devout Jews from every nation,* emphasizing the universal character of the Pentecost event. **6:** The *other languages* (v. 4) are foreign languages, not the "tongues" of 1 Cor 14.1–33. Perhaps the author thinks of a reversal of the confusion of languages at the tower



2.9–11: The native lands of Pentecost pilgrims.

native language? [9] Parthians, Medes, Elamites,
and residents of Mesopotamia, Judea and Cappadocia, Pontus and Asia, [10] Phrygia and Pamphylia, Egypt and the parts of Libya belonging to Cyrene, and visitors from Rome, both Jews and proselytes, [11] Cretans and Arabs—in our own languages we hear them speaking about God's deeds of power." [12] All were amazed and perplexed, saying to one another, "What does this mean?" [13] But others sneered and said, "They are filled with new wine."

[14] But Peter, standing with the eleven, raised his voice and addressed them, "Men of Judea and all who live in Jerusalem, let this be known to you, and listen to what I say. [15] Indeed, these are not drunk, as you suppose, for it is only nine o'clock in the morning. [16] No, this is what was spoken through the prophet Joel:

[17] 'In the last days it will be, God declares,
that I will pour out my Spirit upon all flesh,
and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy,
and your young men shall see visions,
and your old men shall dream dreams.
[18] Even upon my slaves, both men and women,
in those days I will pour out my Spirit;
and they shall prophesy.
[19] And I will show portents in the heaven above
and signs on the earth below,
blood, and fire, and smoky mist.
[20] The sun shall be turned to darkness
and the moon to blood,
before the coming of the Lord's great and glorious day.

of Babel (Gen 11.1–9). **9–11:** The list of countries and races, generally moving from east to west, suggests universal participation in the Pentecost event. **10:** *Proselytes,* full converts to Judaism. **13:** *Filled with new wine,* i.e., drunk (v. 15). **14–36:** Peter's sermon. Like other Hellenistic historians Luke provides characters with speeches appropriate to their circumstances. These may use traditional material but also convey Luke's viewpoint. The speeches use the same biblical style in which Luke has written the early chapters of Acts. **14:** *Peter* remains the spokesman for the apostles (1.15); individualized actions by the others are not portrayed in Acts. **16:** The event is interpreted as a fulfillment of scripture. **17:** *In the last days* is added to the beginning of the quotation

21 Then everyone who calls on the name of
the Lord shall be saved.'
22 "You that are Israelites,[a] listen to what
I have to say: Jesus of Nazareth,[b] a man at-
tested to you by God with deeds of power,
wonders, and signs that God did through him
among you, as you yourselves know— 23 this
man, handed over to you according to the
definite plan and foreknowledge of God, you
crucified and killed by the hands of those
outside the law. 24 But God raised him up,
having freed him from death,[c] because it was
impossible for him to be held in its power.
25 For David says concerning him,
'I saw the Lord always before me,
for he is at my right hand so that I will
not be shaken;
26 therefore my heart was glad, and my
tongue rejoiced;
moreover my flesh will live in hope.
27 For you will not abandon my soul to
Hades,
or let your Holy One experience
corruption.
28 You have made known to me the ways
of life;
you will make me full of gladness with
your presence.'
29 "Fellow Israelites,[d] I may say to you
confidently of our ancestor David that he
both died and was buried, and his tomb is
with us to this day. 30 Since he was a prophet,
he knew that God had sworn with an oath to
him that he would put one of his descendants
on his throne. 31 Foreseeing this, David[e] spoke
of the resurrection of the Messiah,[f] saying,
'He was not abandoned to Hades,
nor did his flesh experience corruption.'
32 This Jesus God raised up, and of that all of
us are witnesses. 33 Being therefore exalted at[g]
the right hand of God, and having received
from the Father the promise of the Holy
Spirit, he has poured out this that you both
see and hear. 34 For David did not ascend into
the heavens, but he himself says,
'The Lord said to my Lord,
"Sit at my right hand,
35 until I make your enemies your
footstool."'
36 Therefore let the entire house of Israel
know with certainty that God has made him
both Lord and Messiah,[h] this Jesus whom you
crucified."
37 Now when they heard this, they were cut
to the heart and said to Peter and to the other
apostles, "Brothers,[d] what should we do?"
38 Peter said to them, "Repent, and be bap-
tized every one of you in the name of Jesus
Christ so that your sins may be forgiven; and
you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit.
39 For the promise is for you, for your chil-
dren, and for all who are far away, everyone
whom the Lord our God calls to him." 40 And
he testified with many other arguments and
exhorted them, saying, "Save yourselves
from this corrupt generation." 41 So those
who welcomed his message were baptized,

[a] Gk *Men, Israelites*
[b] Gk *the Nazorean*
[c] Gk *the pains of death*
[d] Gk *Men, brothers*
[e] Gk *he*
[f] Or *the Christ*
[g] Or *by*
[h] Or *Christ*

of Joel 2.28–32. **22:** *A man,* Luke does not think of the incarnation of a divine being. *Deeds of power, wonders, and signs,* biblical language (e.g., Deut 4.34; 6.22; 26.8) used often in Acts. **23:** The crucifixion of Jesus by Jews and Gentiles was part of a *plan,* see Lk 22.22; 24.26; Acts 4.27–28. **25:** Ps 16.8–11. *David,* see 1.16n. **29:** *His tomb,* see, e.g., Josephus, *Ant.* 7.392–394. **30:** 2 Sam 7.12–13; Ps 132.11. **31:** *The Messiah* is assumed to come from the line of *David* (cf. Rom 1.3). **32:** *Witnesses,* see 1.22n. **33:** *Exalted,* a reference to the ascension. *The promise,* see 1.4n. **34–35:** Ps 110.1, like Ps 16.8–11 (vv. 25,31), here also refers not to *David* but to Jesus. It was widely used in early Christian thought about Jesus (Mk 12.36; 1 Cor 15.25; Heb 1.13). **36:** *Made him both Lord and Messiah,* apparently at the resurrection. This "adoptionist" christology appears to conflict with Luke's account of Jesus' baptism (Lk 3.21–22); see 10.38n. Such tensions in Acts may indicate the use of sources with contrasting viewpoints. **37–41:** The call to repentance. **37:** Lk 3.10. **38:** Here the gift of the *Spirit* follows baptism, but there is variety elsewhere (8.16; 10.44; 18.26; 19.5–6). **39:** Isa 57.19; Joel 2.32. *All who are far away,* the universal nature of the church is clear from the beginning (cf. Lk 2.32). **41:** *Three thousand persons were added,* illustrating the phenomenal success of Peter's speech.

and that day about three thousand persons were added. 42 They devoted themselves to the apostles' teaching and fellowship, to the breaking of bread and the prayers.

43 Awe came upon everyone, because many wonders and signs were being done by the apostles. 44 All who believed were together and had all things in common; 45 they would sell their possessions and goods and distribute the proceeds[a] to all, as any had need. 46 Day by day, as they spent much time together in the temple, they broke bread at home[b] and ate their food with glad and generous[c] hearts, 47 praising God and having the goodwill of all the people. And day by day the Lord added to their number those who were being saved.

3 One day Peter and John were going up to the temple at the hour of prayer, at three o'clock in the afternoon. 2 And a man lame from birth was being carried in. People would lay him daily at the gate of the temple called the Beautiful Gate so that he could ask for alms from those entering the temple. 3 When he saw Peter and John about to go into the temple, he asked them for alms. 4 Peter looked intently at him, as did John, and said, "Look at us." 5 And he fixed his attention on them, expecting to receive something from them. 6 But Peter said, "I have no silver or gold, but what I have I give you; in the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth,[d] stand up and walk." 7 And he took him by the right hand and raised him up; and immediately his feet and ankles were made strong. 8 Jumping up, he stood and began to walk, and he entered the temple with them, walking and leaping and praising God. 9 All the people saw him walking and praising God, 10 and they recognized him as the one who used to sit and ask for alms at the Beautiful Gate of the temple; and they were filled with wonder and amazement at what had happened to him.

11 While he clung to Peter and John, all the people ran together to them in the portico called Solomon's Portico, utterly astonished. 12 When Peter saw it, he addressed the people, "You Israelites,[e] why do you wonder at this, or why do you stare at us, as though by our own power or piety we had made him walk? 13 The God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob, the God of our ancestors has glorified his servant[f] Jesus, whom you handed over and rejected in the presence of Pilate, though he had decided to release him.

[a] Gk *them*
[b] Or *from house to house*
[c] Or *sincere*
[d] Gk *the Nazorean*
[e] Gk *Men, Israelites*
[f] Or *child*

2.42–47: Life in the first Christian community. (The terms "Christian" and "Christianity" are used here for convenience, but strictly speaking are inaccurate for the time portrayed in the narrative; see 9.2n.; 11.25–26n.) **42:** *The breaking of bread* (v. 46) describes both a common Christian meal (e.g., 20.7,11) and the Lord's Supper (27.33–38; cf. 1 Cor 11.17–34). **43–47:** Luke portrays life in the early Jerusalem community as a golden age. **43:** By performing *wonders and signs* the apostles fulfill Joel's prophecy (2.19) and imitate Jesus (2.22). **44–45:** The ideal use of possessions and money illustrates the proper response to the preaching of Jesus on this subject in the Gospel (see Lk 6.20; 12.13–21,33–34; 14.12–24,33). For community of goods in the Dead Sea scrolls, see 1QS 1.11–12; cf. Josephus, *J.W.* 2.122 on the Essenes. **46:** Members of the growing Christian group are simultaneously devout Jews who remain close to *the temple.*

3.1–10: Peter's healing miracle in the Temple. An illustration of the apostles' "wonders and signs" (2.43). **1:** The apostles center their activity in *the temple* (see 2.46) and so imitate Jesus' practice in Jerusalem (note the distinctive portrayal in Lk 20–21). *John* appears here and elsewhere with *Peter* but with no individualized role. *Three o'clock in the afternoon,* when sacrifice was offered with prayer (Ex 29.39; Lev 6.20; Josephus, *Ant.* 14.65). **2:** *The Beautiful Gate,* perhaps the Nicanor Gate of Corinthian bronze on the east side of the Temple; see Josephus, *J.W.* 5.201. **6:** *The name* is a key concept in Acts (v. 16; 2.21,38), as 4.7–12 will underline (see also 4.17,18,30; 10.43; 19.13).

3.11–26: Peter's explanation. In a second sermon Peter links Jesus with the patriarchs and Moses. **11:** *Solomon's Portico,* a colonnade located by Josephus (*J.W.* 5.185; *Ant.* 20.221) on the east side of the Temple. **13:** The word *servant* recalls Isa 52.13 and the suffering servant of the Lord (4.27; 8.30–35). *Pilate,* Pontius Pilate, the Roman governor of Judea, who sentenced Jesus to death (Lk 3.1; 23.24). Roman responsibility for the death of

14 But you rejected the Holy and Righteous
One and asked to have a murderer given
to you, 15 and you killed the Author of life,
whom God raised from the dead. To this we
are witnesses. 16 And by faith in his name,
his name itself has made this man strong,
whom you see and know; and the faith that
is through Jesus[a] has given him this perfect
health in the presence of all of you.

17 "And now, friends,[b] I know that you
acted in ignorance, as did also your rul-
ers. 18 In this way God fulfilled what he had
foretold through all the prophets, that his
Messiah[c] would suffer. 19 Repent therefore,
and turn to God so that your sins may be
wiped out, 20 so that times of refreshing may
come from the presence of the Lord, and that
he may send the Messiah[d] appointed for you,
that is, Jesus, 21 who must remain in heaven
until the time of universal restoration that
God announced long ago through his holy
prophets. 22 Moses said, 'The Lord your God
will raise up for you from your own people[b] a
prophet like me. You must listen to whatever
he tells you. 23 And it will be that everyone
who does not listen to that prophet will be
utterly rooted out of the people.' 24 And all
the prophets, as many as have spoken, from
Samuel and those after him, also predicted
these days. 25 You are the descendants of the
prophets and of the covenant that God gave
to your ancestors, saying to Abraham, 'And
in your descendants all the families of the
earth shall be blessed.' 26 When God raised
up his servant,[e] he sent him first to you, to
bless you by turning each of you from your
wicked ways."

4 While Peter and John[f] were speaking to
the people, the priests, the captain of the
temple, and the Sadducees came to them,
2 much annoyed because they were teach-
ing the people and proclaiming that in Jesus
there is the resurrection of the dead. 3 So they
arrested them and put them in custody until
the next day, for it was already evening. 4 But
many of those who heard the word believed;
and they numbered about five thousand.

5 The next day their rulers, elders, and
scribes assembled in Jerusalem, 6 with Annas
the high priest, Caiaphas, John,[g] and Alex-
ander, and all who were of the high-priestly
family. 7 When they had made the prisoners[h]
stand in their midst, they inquired, "By what
power or by what name did you do this?"
8 Then Peter, filled with the Holy Spirit, said
to them, "Rulers of the people and elders, 9 if
we are questioned today because of a good
deed done to someone who was sick and are
asked how this man has been healed, 10 let it
be known to all of you, and to all the people
of Israel, that this man is standing before you

[a] Gk *him*
[b] Gk *brothers*
[c] Or *his Christ*
[d] Or *the Christ*
[e] Or *child*
[f] Gk *While they*
[g] Other ancient authorities read *Jonathan*
[h] Gk *them*

Jesus is downplayed here as in Lk 23.4,14–16,20–25; contrast Acts 4.27. **14:** *A murderer,* Barabbas (Lk 23.18–19). **15:** *Author,* the word can mean "pioneer" or "founder" (of a new city); in 5.31 it is "leader" (cf. Heb 2.10; 12.2). The testimony of the *witnesses* is again emphasized (1.22n.). **16:** *Name,* see v. 6n. **17:** *You acted in ignorance,* mitigating the guilt emphasized in vv. 13–15 (see 4.10). Compare 14.16 and 17.30. **18:** The necessity that the *Messiah would suffer* was *foretold,* see Lk 24.25–27,46; Acts 17.2–3; 26.22–23. Recall the "plan" of 2.23. **19:** Lk 3.3. **22:** 7.37. Jesus is successor of Moses (Deut 18.15) as well as David. **23:** Deut 18.19; Lev 23.29. **24:** *These days,* i.e., the last days (2.17). **25:** Gen 12.3; 18.18; 22.18. **26:** *First to you,* implying the later mission to the Gentiles.

4.1–22: Arrest and release of Peter and John. The first of many incidents in which the apostles defend the faith before the authorities. **1–2:** *Captain of the temple,* the officer in charge of the Temple police. *Sadducees,* a circle composed of priestly and lay nobility who according to Luke denied the *resurrection of the dead* (23.6–8). **3:** It was not legal to hold a judicial inquiry at night. **4:** *Five thousand,* the rapid growth of the community of believers continues (see 2.41). This is a recurrent theme in Acts, typically in the face of opposition. **5–6:** Perhaps the *rulers* are priests; with the *elders* and *scribes* they made up the Sanhedrin, or council (v. 15), of which *the high priest* was head. *Annas* held this office from 6–14 CE; *Caiaphas* was his son-in-law (Jn 18.13) and became high priest in 18 CE (Lk 3.2); *John* may be Jonathan, the son of Annas who succeeded Caiaphas in 37 CE. **8–12:** A condensed version of the speeches in chs 2, 3, 10, and 13. The scene in v. 8 represents the fulfillment of Jesus'

in good health by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth,[a] whom you crucified, whom God raised from the dead. [11] This Jesus[b] is

'the stone that was rejected by you, the builders;
it has become the cornerstone.'[c]

[12] There is salvation in no one else, for there is no other name under heaven given among mortals by which we must be saved."

[13] Now when they saw the boldness of Peter and John and realized that they were uneducated and ordinary men, they were amazed and recognized them as companions of Jesus. [14] When they saw the man who had been cured standing beside them, they had nothing to say in opposition. [15] So they ordered them to leave the council while they discussed the matter with one another. [16] They said, "What will we do with them? For it is obvious to all who live in Jerusalem that a notable sign has been done through them; we cannot deny it. [17] But to keep it from spreading further among the people, let us warn them to speak no more to anyone in this name." [18] So they called them and ordered them not to speak or teach at all in the name of Jesus. [19] But Peter and John answered them, "Whether it is right in God's sight to listen to you rather than to God, you must judge; [20] for we cannot keep from speaking about what we have seen and heard." [21] After threatening them again, they let them go, finding no way to punish them because of the people, for all of them praised God for what had happened. [22] For the man on whom this sign of healing had been performed was more than forty years old.

[23] After they were released, they went to their friends[d] and reported what the chief priests and the elders had said to them. [24] When they heard it, they raised their voices together to God and said, "Sovereign Lord, who made the heaven and the earth, the sea, and everything in them, [25] it is you who said by the Holy Spirit through our ancestor David, your servant:[e]

'Why did the Gentiles rage,
and the peoples imagine vain things?
[26] The kings of the earth took their stand,
and the rulers have gathered together
against the Lord and against his Messiah.'[f]

[27] For in this city, in fact, both Herod and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles and the peoples of Israel, gathered together against your holy servant[e] Jesus, whom you anointed, [28] to do whatever your hand and your plan had predestined to take place. [29] And now, Lord, look at their threats, and grant to your servants[g] to speak your word with all boldness, [30] while you stretch out your hand to heal, and signs and wonders are performed through the name of your holy servant[e] Jesus." [31] When they had prayed, the place in which they were gathered together was shaken; and they were all filled with the Holy Spirit and spoke the word of God with boldness.

[32] Now the whole group of those who believed were of one heart and soul, and no one claimed private ownership of any possessions, but everything they owned was held in common. [33] With great power the apostles

[a] Gk *the Nazorean*
[b] Gk *This*
[c] Or *keystone*
[d] Gk *their own*
[e] Or *child*
[f] Or *his Christ*
[g] Gk *slaves*

promise in Lk 12.12; compare the prediction of Lk 21.15. **11:** Ps 118.22 was popular in Christian arguments (Mt 21.42; Mk 12.10; Lk 20.17; 1 Pet 2.7). **12:** *No other name* underlines the answer (v. 10) to the question posed (v. 7) about the name; see 3.6,16; 4.17–18,30. **13:** *Boldness,* this word and its cognates are used often in Acts and connote frank and courageous speech (e.g., 13.46; 18.26). *Uneducated and ordinary men,* lacking legal training. **19:** The reply here and in 5.29 is reminiscent of Socrates' famous words (Plato, *Apology* 29d).

4.23–31: Prayer of the community. 24: Ps 146.6. **25–26:** Ps 2.1–2. **27:** *Servant,* see 3.13n.; the same term is used of David in v. 25. *Herod,* Herod Antipas, Lk 3.1n.; 23.12. *Pontius Pilate,* see 3.13n. **28:** See 2.23n.; 3.18. **29:** *Look at their threats,* a prayer to be shielded from harm. **31:** *The place . . . was shaken,* meaning that the prayer was heard (cf. 16.25–26).

4.32–5.11: The sharing of goods. 4.32–35: The ideal handling of possessions in the early Jerusalem commu-

gave their testimony to the resurrection of the Lord Jesus, and great grace was upon them all. 34 There was not a needy person among them, for as many as owned lands or houses sold them and brought the proceeds of what was sold. 35 They laid it at the apostles' feet, and it was distributed to each as any had need. 36 There was a Levite, a native of Cyprus, Joseph, to whom the apostles gave the name Barnabas (which means "son of encouragement"). 37 He sold a field that belonged to him, then brought the money, and laid it at the apostles' feet.

5 But a man named Ananias, with the consent of his wife Sapphira, sold a piece of property; 2 with his wife's knowledge, he kept back some of the proceeds, and brought only a part and laid it at the apostles' feet. 3 "Ananias," Peter asked, "why has Satan filled your heart to lie to the Holy Spirit and to keep back part of the proceeds of the land? 4 While it remained unsold, did it not remain your own? And after it was sold, were not the proceeds at your disposal? How is it that you have contrived this deed in your heart? You did not lie to us[a] but to God!" 5 Now when Ananias heard these words, he fell down and died. And great fear seized all who heard of it. 6 The young men came and wrapped up his body,[b] then carried him out and buried him.

7 After an interval of about three hours his wife came in, not knowing what had happened. 8 Peter said to her, "Tell me whether you and your husband sold the land for such and such a price." And she said, "Yes, that was the price." 9 Then Peter said to her, "How is it that you have agreed together to put the Spirit of the Lord to the test? Look, the feet of those who have buried your husband are at the door, and they will carry you out." 10 Immediately she fell down at his feet and died. When the young men came in they found her dead, so they carried her out and buried her beside her husband. 11 And great fear seized the whole church and all who heard of these things.

12 Now many signs and wonders were done among the people through the apostles. And they were all together in Solomon's Portico. 13 None of the rest dared to join them, but the people held them in high esteem. 14 Yet more than ever believers were added to the Lord, great numbers of both men and women, 15 so that they even carried out the sick into the streets, and laid them on cots and mats, in order that Peter's shadow might fall on some of them as he came by. 16 A great number of people would also gather from the towns around Jerusalem, bringing the sick and those tormented by unclean spirits, and they were all cured.

17 Then the high priest took action; he and all who were with him (that is, the sect of the Sadducees), being filled with jealousy, 18 arrested the apostles and put them in the public prison. 19 But during the night an angel of the Lord opened the prison doors, brought them out, and said, 20 "Go, stand in the temple and tell the people the whole message about this life." 21 When they heard this, they entered the temple at daybreak and went on with their teaching.

When the high priest and those with him arrived, they called together the council and

[a] Gk *to men*
[b] Meaning of Gk uncertain

nity (see 2.44–45n.). **36–37:** *Levite,* a member of the priestly tribe of Levi. *Barnabas,* who later appears as Paul's missionary companion in 13.1–14.28 (cf. 1 Cor 9.6), embodies the response of the ideal believer. **5.1–11:** The negative example of *Ananias* and *Sapphira.* Compare the story of Achan in Josh 7. **3:** *Satan,* Lk 22.3. The apostles, or perhaps the church, represent *the Holy Spirit;* cf. 9.4; 15.28. **4:** The property was at Ananias's *disposal* (although this contradicts 4.32,34) until he pretended to dedicate all his goods. **11:** *Church,* used here for the first time, designates the entire congregation of believers, which is still restricted to Jerusalem. Elsewhere it means either local communities in Jerusalem (8.1,3; 11.22; 12.5; 15.4,22; 18.22), Antioch (11.26; 13.1; 14.27; 15.3), Ephesus (20.17), and other places (14.23; 15.41; 16.5), or, occasionally, the universal body of all believers (20.28).

5.12–16: Signs and wonders. 12: *Solomon's Portico,* see 3.11n. **13:** *None of the rest,* i.e., nonbelievers; the Christians now stand out as a clearly defined group. **16:** Compare Mk 1.32–34.

5.17–42: Second arrest of the apostles. The motif of obeying God rather than human beings is played out again before the council (cf. ch 4). **19:** *An angel . . . opened the prison doors,* see 12.6–11; cf. 16.25–26. **21:** *Body of*

the whole body of the elders of Israel, and sent to the prison to have them brought. 22 But when the temple police went there, they did not find them in the prison; so they returned and reported, 23 "We found the prison securely locked and the guards standing at the doors, but when we opened them, we found no one inside." 24 Now when the captain of the temple and the chief priests heard these words, they were perplexed about them, wondering what might be going on. 25 Then someone arrived and announced, "Look, the men whom you put in prison are standing in the temple and teaching the people!" 26 Then the captain went with the temple police and brought them, but without violence, for they were afraid of being stoned by the people.

27 When they had brought them, they had them stand before the council. The high priest questioned them, 28 saying, "We gave you strict orders not to teach in this name,[a] yet here you have filled Jerusalem with your teaching and you are determined to bring this man's blood on us." 29 But Peter and the apostles answered, "We must obey God rather than any human authority.[b] 30 The God of our ancestors raised up Jesus, whom you had killed by hanging him on a tree. 31 God exalted him at his right hand as Leader and Savior that he might give repentance to Israel and forgiveness of sins. 32 And we are witnesses to these things, and so is the Holy Spirit whom God has given to those who obey him."

33 When they heard this, they were enraged and wanted to kill them. 34 But a Pharisee in the council named Gamaliel, a teacher of the law, respected by all the people, stood up and ordered the men to be put outside for a short time. 35 Then he said to them, "Fellow Israelites,[c] consider carefully what you propose to do to these men. 36 For some time ago Theudas rose up, claiming to be somebody, and a number of men, about four hundred, joined him; but he was killed, and all who followed him were dispersed and disappeared. 37 After him Judas the Galilean rose up at the time of the census and got people to follow him; he also perished, and all who followed him were scattered. 38 So in the present case, I tell you, keep away from these men and let them alone; because if this plan or this undertaking is of human origin, it will fail; 39 but if it is of God, you will not be able to overthrow them—in that case you may even be found fighting against God!"

They were convinced by him, 40 and when they had called in the apostles, they had them flogged. Then they ordered them not to speak in the name of Jesus, and let them go. 41 As they left the council, they rejoiced that they were considered worthy to suffer dishonor for the sake of the name. 42 And every day in the temple and at home[d] they did not cease to teach and proclaim Jesus as the Messiah.[e]

6 Now during those days, when the disciples were increasing in number, the Hellenists complained against the Hebrews because their widows were being neglected in the daily distribution of food. 2 And the twelve called together the whole community of the disciples and said, "It is not right that we should neglect the word of God in order

[a] Other ancient authorities read *Did we not give you strict orders not to teach in this name?*
[b] Gk *than men*
[c] Gk *Men, Israelites*
[d] Or *from house to house*
[e] Or *the Christ*

the elders, another word for *council* or Sanhedrin. **29:** See 4.19n. **30:** The reference to the *tree* (cross; 10.39; 13.29) recalls Deut 21.22–23, but it is not developed; cf. Gal 3.13. **31:** A concise summary of the theology of Acts. *Leader,* the same Gk word is translated "Author" in 3.15. *Savior,* a term widely used in the Hellenistic world (e.g., 11.19n.). **34:** *A Pharisee* (see 15.5n.), the famous Rabban *Gamaliel,* the Elder, later identified as Paul's teacher (22.3). **36–37:** The historical order of the figures referred to is reversed. *Theudas,* according to Josephus (*Ant.* 20.97–98), raised his revolt (ca. 44–46 CE) some years after Gamaliel's speech. *Judas the Galilean,* a revolutionary leader who in 6 or 7 CE opposed the imposition of new taxes following *the census* of Quirinius (Lk 2.2). **40:** *Had them flogged,* to reinforce the warning.

6.1–7: Choice of the seven. The seven are identified as the first deacons by later tradition but hold no ecclesiastical office here. **1:** *The Hellenists,* Greek-speaking Jewish Christians; the *Hebrews,* Aramaic-speaking Jewish

to wait on tables.[a] [3] Therefore, friends,[b] select from among yourselves seven men of good standing, full of the Spirit and of wisdom, whom we may appoint to this task, [4] while we, for our part, will devote ourselves to prayer and to serving the word." [5] What they said pleased the whole community, and they chose Stephen, a man full of faith and the Holy Spirit, together with Philip, Prochorus, Nicanor, Timon, Parmenas, and Nicolaus, a proselyte of Antioch. [6] They had these men stand before the apostles, who prayed and laid their hands on them.

[7] The word of God continued to spread; the number of the disciples increased greatly in Jerusalem, and a great many of the priests became obedient to the faith.

[8] Stephen, full of grace and power, did great wonders and signs among the people. [9] Then some of those who belonged to the synagogue of the Freedmen (as it was called), Cyrenians, Alexandrians, and others of those from Cilicia and Asia, stood up and argued with Stephen. [10] But they could not withstand the wisdom and the Spirit[c] with which he spoke. [11] Then they secretly instigated some men to say, "We have heard him speak blasphemous words against Moses and God." [12] They stirred up the people as well as the elders and the scribes; then they suddenly confronted him, seized him, and brought him before the council. [13] They set up false witnesses who said, "This man never stops saying things against this holy place and the law; [14] for we have heard him say that this Jesus of Nazareth[d] will destroy this place and will change the customs that Moses handed on to us." [15] And all who sat in the council looked intently at him, and they saw that his face was like the face of an angel.

7 Then the high priest asked him, "Are these things so?" [2] And Stephen replied: "Brothers[e] and fathers, listen to me. The God of glory appeared to our ancestor Abraham when he was in Mesopotamia, before he lived in Haran, [3] and said to him, 'Leave your country and your relatives and go to the land that I will show you.' [4] Then he left the country of the Chaldeans and settled in Haran. After his father died, God had him move from there to this country in which you are now living. [5] He did not give him any of it as a heritage, not even a foot's length, but promised to give it to him as his possession and to his descendants after him, even though he had no child. [6] And God spoke in these terms, that his descendants would be resident aliens in a country belonging to others, who would enslave them and mistreat them during four hundred years. [7] 'But I will judge the nation that they serve,' said God, 'and after that they shall come out and worship me in this place.' [8] Then he gave him the covenant of circumcision. And so Abraham[f] became the father of

[a] Or *keep accounts*
[b] Gk *brothers*
[c] Or *spirit*
[d] Gk *the Nazorean*
[e] Gk *Men, brothers*
[f] Gk *he*

Christians. **2:** *The twelve* is used to designate the apostles only here in Acts. *To wait on tables,* i.e., to feed the hungry. **5:** *Stephen, Philip,* and the other names are Greek. *Proselyte,* a Gentile convert to Judaism, implying that the others were born Jews. **6:** *Laid . . . hands,* a ritual of consecration and appointment; see Num 8.10; 27.23; 1 Tim 4.14; 2 Tim 1.6 (13.3). **7:** Not all *priests* are hostile. Acts throughout reports the partial success of the Christian movement among Jews (21.20n.; 28.24).

6.8–8.1a: Preaching and martyrdom of Stephen. Elements of Stephen's trial and death reflect the passion of Jesus. **6.8:** Stephen does *wonders and signs* like the apostles (2.43; 4.30; 5.12). **9:** Diaspora Jews *argued with Stephen. Freedmen,* former slaves, either Jews or proselytes; an inscription found in Jerusalem possibly refers to this *synagogue. Cyrenians,* from Cyrene in northern Africa (see 11.20n.). *Cilicia,* the southeastern portion of Asia Minor where Paul was from (21.39; 22.3; 23.34). *Asia,* the Roman province of that name in western Asia Minor. **10:** A fulfillment of Jesus' prediction in Lk 21.15. **13:** *False witnesses,* cf. Mk 14.55–57. **14:** *Jesus . . . will destroy this place,* Mk 14.58; Lk 21.6; Jn 2.19. The *change* in *customs* reported by Mk 7.15,19 is not recorded in Lk. These charges had not been made in the earlier examinations of the apostles. **7.2–50:** Stephen's speech contains some thirty citations from the Greek version of the Hebrew Bible (the Septuagint), which was the Bible of the early Christians. Accordingly, Stephen makes reference to *Abraham* (v. 2), *Joseph* (v. 9), *Moses* (v. 20), and others (cf. 13.16–24; Heb 11.4–40). **3:** Gen 12.1; according to Gen 11.31 Abraham was already in Haran (against v. 2). **5:** Gen 12.7; 13.15;

Isaac and circumcised him on the eighth day; and Isaac became the father of Jacob, and Jacob of the twelve patriarchs.

9 "The patriarchs, jealous of Joseph, sold him into Egypt; but God was with him, 10 and rescued him from all his afflictions, and enabled him to win favor and to show wisdom when he stood before Pharaoh, king of Egypt, who appointed him ruler over Egypt and over all his household. 11 Now there came a famine throughout Egypt and Canaan, and great suffering, and our ancestors could find no food. 12 But when Jacob heard that there was grain in Egypt, he sent our ancestors there on their first visit. 13 On the second visit Joseph made himself known to his brothers, and Joseph's family became known to Pharaoh. 14 Then Joseph sent and invited his father Jacob and all his relatives to come to him, seventy-five in all; 15 so Jacob went down to Egypt. He himself died there as well as our ancestors, 16 and their bodies[a] were brought back to Shechem and laid in the tomb that Abraham had bought for a sum of silver from the sons of Hamor in Shechem.

17 "But as the time drew near for the fulfillment of the promise that God had made to Abraham, our people in Egypt increased and multiplied 18 until another king who had not known Joseph ruled over Egypt. 19 He dealt craftily with our race and forced our ancestors to abandon their infants so that they would die. 20 At this time Moses was born, and he was beautiful before God. For three months he was brought up in his father's house; 21 and when he was abandoned, Pharaoh's daughter adopted him and brought him up as her own son. 22 So Moses was instructed in all the wisdom of the Egyptians and was powerful in his words and deeds.

23 "When he was forty years old, it came into his heart to visit his relatives, the Israelites.[b] 24 When he saw one of them being wronged, he defended the oppressed man and avenged him by striking down the Egyptian. 25 He supposed that his kinsfolk would understand that God through him was rescuing them, but they did not understand. 26 The next day he came to some of them as they were quarreling and tried to reconcile them, saying, 'Men, you are brothers; why do you wrong each other?' 27 But the man who was wronging his neighbor pushed Moses[c] aside, saying, 'Who made you a ruler and a judge over us? 28 Do you want to kill me as you killed the Egyptian yesterday?' 29 When he heard this, Moses fled and became a resident alien in the land of Midian. There he became the father of two sons.

30 "Now when forty years had passed, an angel appeared to him in the wilderness of Mount Sinai, in the flame of a burning bush. 31 When Moses saw it, he was amazed at the sight; and as he approached to look, there came the voice of the Lord: 32 'I am the God of your ancestors, the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob.' Moses began to tremble and did not dare to look. 33 Then the Lord said to him, 'Take off the sandals from your feet, for the place where you are standing is holy ground. 34 I have surely seen the mistreatment of my people who are in Egypt and have heard their groaning, and I have come down to rescue them. Come now, I will send you to Egypt.'

35 "It was this Moses whom they rejected when they said, 'Who made you a ruler and a judge?' and whom God now sent as both ruler and liberator through the angel who appeared to him in the bush. 36 He led them out, having performed wonders and signs in Egypt, at the Red Sea, and in the wilderness for forty years. 37 This is the Moses who said to the Israelites, 'God will raise up a prophet for you from your own people[d] as he raised me up.' 38 He is the one who was in the

[a] Gk *they*
[b] Gk *his brothers, the sons of Israel*
[c] Gk *him*
[d] Gk *your brothers*

17.8; 48.4. **6–7:** *Four hundred years,* see Gen 15.13–14; cf. Ex 12.40. **8:** Gen 17.10–13. **9:** Gen 37. **10–16:** Gen 39–50. **14:** *Seventy-five,* according to the Septuagint of Gen 46.27; Ex 1.5. **16:** *Shechem,* but according to Gen 50.13 Jacob was buried at Hebron. *Abraham,* but according to Gen 33.19 and Josh 24.32 it was Jacob who bought the tomb at Shechem. **17–19:** Ex 1–2. **20–22:** Ex 2.1–10. **20:** The importance of *Moses* is stressed by the amount of space devoted to him in the following verses. **23–29:** Ex 2.11–22. **29:** *Midian,* northwestern Arabia, on the east coast of the Gulf of Aqaba (Eilat). **30–34:** Ex 3.1–10. **30:** In Ex 3.1 the mountain is Horeb, not *Sinai.* **35:** Ex 2.14. **37:** *A*

congregation in the wilderness with the angel who spoke to him at Mount Sinai, and with our ancestors; and he received living oracles to give to us. 39 Our ancestors were unwilling to obey him; instead, they pushed him aside, and in their hearts they turned back to Egypt, 40 saying to Aaron, 'Make gods for us who will lead the way for us; as for this Moses who led us out from the land of Egypt, we do not know what has happened to him.' 41 At that time they made a calf, offered a sacrifice to the idol, and reveled in the works of their hands. 42 But God turned away from them and handed them over to worship the host of heaven, as it is written in the book of the prophets:

'Did you offer to me slain victims and sacrifices
forty years in the wilderness, O house of Israel?
43 No; you took along the tent of Moloch,
and the star of your god Rephan,
the images that you made to worship;
so I will remove you beyond Babylon.'

44 "Our ancestors had the tent of testimony in the wilderness, as God[a] directed when he spoke to Moses, ordering him to make it according to the pattern he had seen. 45 Our ancestors in turn brought it in with Joshua when they dispossessed the nations that God drove out before our ancestors. And it was there until the time of David, 46 who found favor with God and asked that he might find a dwelling place for the house of Jacob.[b] 47 But it was Solomon who built a house for him. 48 Yet the Most High does not dwell in houses made with human hands;[c] as the prophet says,

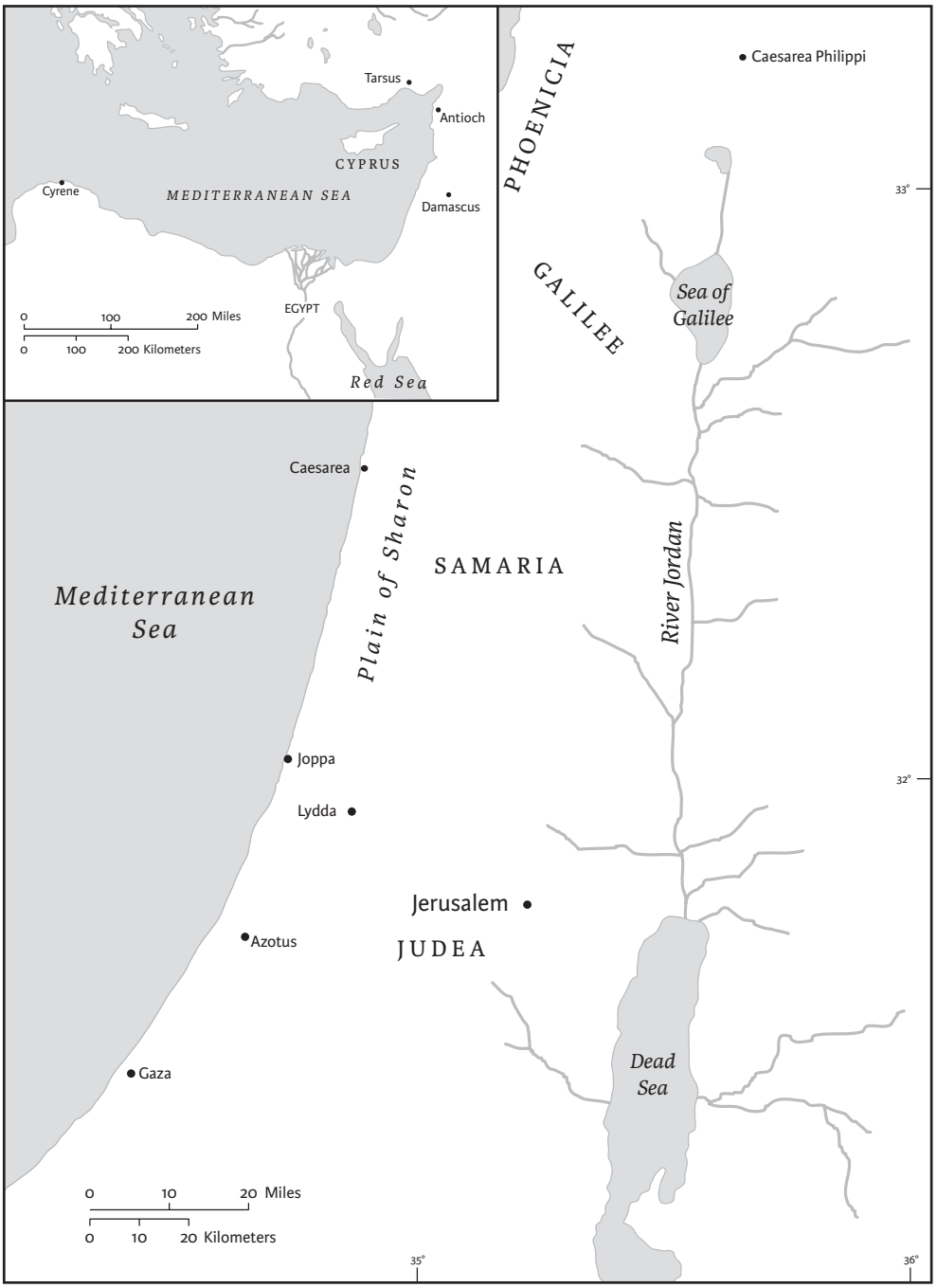
49 'Heaven is my throne,
and the earth is my footstool.
What kind of house will you build for me,
says the Lord,
or what is the place of my rest?
50 Did not my hand make all these things?'

51 "You stiff-necked people, uncircumcised in heart and ears, you are forever opposing the Holy Spirit, just as your ancestors used to do. 52 Which of the prophets did your ancestors not persecute? They killed those who foretold the coming of the Righteous One, and now you have become his betrayers and murderers. 53 You are the ones that received the law as ordained by angels, and yet you have not kept it."

54 When they heard these things, they became enraged and ground their teeth at Stephen.[d] 55 But filled with the Holy Spirit, he gazed into heaven and saw the glory of God and Jesus standing at the right hand of God. 56 "Look," he said, "I see the heavens opened and the Son of Man standing at the right hand of God!" 57 But they covered their ears, and with a loud shout all rushed together against him. 58 Then they dragged him out of the city and began to stone him; and the witnesses laid their coats at the feet of a young man named Saul. 59 While they were stoning Stephen, he prayed, "Lord Jesus, receive my spirit." 60 Then he knelt down and cried out in a loud voice, "Lord,

[a] Gk *he*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *for the God of Jacob*
[c] Gk *with hands*
[d] Gk *him*

prophet, Deut 18.15; see 3.22. **38:** In the Hebrew Bible God, not an *angel,* speaks to Moses and gives him the law (*living oracles*); cf. v. 53. **40:** Ex 32.1. **42–43:** Am 5.25–27 is quoted to support the charge of idolatry raised in vv. 40–42. The *book of the* (twelve minor) *prophets* (Hosea through Malachi) was thought of as a unit. **42:** *The host of heaven,* the stars (2 Kings 17.16), which are associated with various supernatural beings. **43:** *Moloch,* a deity to whom children were offered as sacrifices (Jer 32.35). *Rephan,* an astral deity (Saturn). **44:** *The tent of testimony,* the tabernacle (Ex 27.21), is brought forward in the following verses as preferable to the Temple; compare the "true tent" of Heb 8.1–5. **45:** Josh 3.7–4.18. **46:** Ps 132.5; cf. 2 Sam 7.1–2. **47:** 1 Kings 6. **48:** Since *made with human hands* is language associated with idolatry in the Hebrew Bible (see Ps 115.4; Isa 2.8), its application to the Temple would be offensive to a Jewish audience. Cf. 17.24–25. **49–50:** Isa 66.1–2. **51:** *Stiff-necked people, uncircumcised in heart and ears,* see Ex 33.3,5; Lev 26.41; Jer 9.26; cf. Rom 2.29. **52:** The question is hyperbolic but recalls Lk 11.47–48. **53:** *The law,* being *ordained by angels* (cf. v. 38) is considered valid (Heb 2.2); but Paul used this Jewish tradition to argue that the law is secondary (Gal 3.19). **54–58a:** Here Stephen is described as the victim of a lynching. **55–56:** Lk 22.69. *Son of Man* in the Gospels often denotes Jesus as the glorified heavenly judge;



Chs 8–11: Sites of early Christian missionary activities.

do not hold this sin against them." When
8 he had said this, he died.[a] [1] And Saul approved of their killing him.

That day a severe persecution began against the church in Jerusalem, and all except the apostles were scattered throughout the countryside of Judea and Samaria. [2] Devout men buried Stephen and made loud lamentation over him. [3] But Saul was ravaging the church by entering house after house; dragging off both men and women, he committed them to prison.

[4] Now those who were scattered went from place to place, proclaiming the word. [5] Philip went down to the city[b] of Samaria and proclaimed the Messiah[c] to them. [6] The crowds with one accord listened eagerly to what was said by Philip, hearing and seeing the signs that he did, [7] for unclean spirits, crying with loud shrieks, came out of many who were possessed; and many others who were paralyzed or lame were cured. [8] So there was great joy in that city.

[9] Now a certain man named Simon had previously practiced magic in the city and amazed the people of Samaria, saying that he was someone great. [10] All of them, from the least to the greatest, listened to him eagerly, saying, "This man is the power of God that is called Great." [11] And they listened eagerly to him because for a long time he had amazed them with his magic. [12] But when they believed Philip, who was proclaiming the good news about the kingdom of God and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women. [13] Even Simon himself believed. After being baptized, he stayed constantly with Philip and was amazed when he saw the signs and great miracles that took place.

[14] Now when the apostles at Jerusalem heard that Samaria had accepted the word of God, they sent Peter and John to them. [15] The two went down and prayed for them that they might receive the Holy Spirit [16] (for as yet the Spirit had not come[d] upon any of them; they had only been baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus). [17] Then Peter and John[e] laid their hands on them, and they received the Holy Spirit. [18] Now when Simon saw that the Spirit was given through the laying on of the apostles' hands, he offered them money, [19] saying, "Give me also this power so that anyone on whom I lay my hands may receive the Holy Spirit." [20] But Peter said to him, "May your silver perish with you, because you thought you could obtain God's gift with money! [21] You have no part or share in this, for your heart is not right before God. [22] Repent therefore of this wickedness of yours, and pray to the Lord that, if possible, the intent of your heart may be forgiven you. [23] For I see that you are in the gall of bitterness and the chains of wickedness." [24] Simon answered, "Pray for me

[a] Gk *fell asleep*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *a city*
[c] Or *the Christ*
[d] Gk *fallen*
[e] Gk *they*

elsewhere in the New Testament the term is found only here and in Rev 1.13; 14.14. **58b–8.1:** The presence of *witnesses,* who were legally required to cast the first stones at the offender (Deut 17.7), suggests not a lynching but a judicial execution. **58b:** *Saul,* Luke's dramatic introduction of Paul. His presence may have been suggested by 1 Cor 15.9 and Gal 1.13 but is not confirmed by these references. **59:** Lk 23.46. **60:** See Lk 23.34n.

8.1b–40: Spread of the gospel to Samaria and beyond. Christianity now reaches non-Jewish regions. **1:** *Except the apostles,* although unrealistic, it is important for Luke that the apostles remain in *Jerusalem. Samaria,* between Galilee to the north and Judea to the south, was inhabited by remnants of the northern tribes who worshiped the Lord God and used the Pentateuch. Jews despised them (2 Kings 17.24–41; cf. Mt 10.5). **3:** *Saul was ravaging the church,* 9.1–2; cf. Gal 1.13. **4:** Ironically, severe persecution leads to *proclaiming the word* in new places. **5:** *Philip,* one of the seven mentioned in 6.5, is now active as an evangelist (21.8). All second-century references to this individual consider him to be one of the twelve apostles, but according to the idealized account of Acts the apostles remain in Jerusalem during this period. **9:** Acts displays great interest in distinguishing between *magic* and Christian signs (see 13.6–12; 19.13–20). **12:** Philip breaks religious barriers and fulfills the expectations about Samaritans generated by Luke's Gospel (Lk 10.30–37; 17.11–19) and the promise of 1.8. **14:** *Jerusalem* is represented as coordinating the ever-growing church (see 11.1,22). **16–17:** *Spirit had not come,* see 2.38. *Laid . . . hands,* see 6.6n. **18–24:** The medieval term "simony" (buying church offices) is derived from

to the Lord, that nothing of what you[a] have said may happen to me."

25 Now after Peter and John[b] had testified and spoken the word of the Lord, they returned to Jerusalem, proclaiming the good news to many villages of the Samaritans.

26 Then an angel of the Lord said to Philip, "Get up and go toward the south[c] to the road that goes down from Jerusalem to Gaza." (This is a wilderness road.) 27 So he got up and went. Now there was an Ethiopian eunuch, a court official of the Candace, queen of the Ethiopians, in charge of her entire treasury. He had come to Jerusalem to worship 28 and was returning home; seated in his chariot, he was reading the prophet Isaiah. 29 Then the Spirit said to Philip, "Go over to this chariot and join it." 30 So Philip ran up to it and heard him reading the prophet Isaiah. He asked, "Do you understand what you are reading?" 31 He replied, "How can I, unless someone guides me?" And he invited Philip to get in and sit beside him. 32 Now the passage of the scripture that he was reading was this:

"Like a sheep he was led to the slaughter,
and like a lamb silent before its shearer,
so he does not open his mouth.
33 In his humiliation justice was denied him.
Who can describe his generation?
For his life is taken away from the earth."

34 The eunuch asked Philip, "About whom, may I ask you, does the prophet say this, about himself or about someone else?" 35 Then Philip began to speak, and starting with this scripture, he proclaimed to him the good news about Jesus. 36 As they were going along the road, they came to some water; and the eunuch said, "Look, here is water! What is to prevent me from being baptized?"[d] 38 He commanded the chariot to stop, and both of them, Philip and the eunuch, went down into the water, and Philip[e] baptized him. 39 When they came up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord snatched Philip away; the eunuch saw him no more, and went on his way rejoicing. 40 But Philip found himself at Azotus, and as he was passing through the region, he proclaimed the good news to all the towns until he came to Caesarea.

9 Meanwhile Saul, still breathing threats and murder against the disciples of the Lord, went to the high priest 2 and asked him for letters to the synagogues at Damascus, so that if he found any who belonged to the Way, men or women, he might bring them bound to Jerusalem. 3 Now as he was going along and approaching Damascus, suddenly a light from heaven flashed around him. 4 He fell to the ground and heard a voice saying to him, "Saul, Saul, why

[a] The Greek word for *you* and the verb *pray* are plural
[b] Gk *after they*
[c] Or *go at noon*
[d] Other ancient authorities add all or most of verse 37, *And Philip said, "If you believe with all your heart, you may." And he replied, "I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God."*
[e] Gk *he*

this account. **27:** *An Ethiopian,* see Ps 68.31; Zeph 3.10. *The Candace* was the title of the *queen of the Ethiopians.* Although *he had come to Jerusalem to worship, a eunuch* could not have become a proselyte (Deut 23.1). The passage may envisage fulfillment of Isa 56.3–5. **28:** *He was reading* aloud to himself (as was customary in antiquity); hence Philip *heard him* (v. 30). **32–33:** Isa 53.7–8; see Acts 3.13n. **35:** Cf. Lk 24.27. **38:** As in the case of the Samaritans, the baptism of an Ethiopian eunuch breaks social and ritual barriers (v. 12n.). Since in the ancient Mediterranean world Ethiopia was often considered to be located at the "ends of the earth" (e.g., Homer, *Od.* 1.22–23; Herodotus 3.25), this conversion fulfills the prediction of 1.8. **39:** *The Spirit of the Lord snatched Philip away,* cf. 1 Kings 18.12; 2 Kings 2.16. **40:** *Philip*'s evangelizing journey proceeds along the Mediterranean coast from Gaza (v. 26) through *Azotus* (ancient Ashdod, ca. 23 mi [37 km] north-northeast of Gaza) to *Caesarea* (ca. 55 mi [90 km] farther north). Caesarea was an important seaport and the headquarters of the Roman governor; see 10.1; 21.8.

9.1–19a: The conversion and call of Saul of Tarsus. Slightly different versions are found in 22.4–16; 26.9–18; Paul's own account is in Gal 1.13–17; see 1 Cor 15.8. Key narratives in Acts are stressed by repetition. **1–2:** Acts connects Paul with Jerusalem (7.58; 9.13,26), although Paul claimed he was unknown by sight in Judea (Gal 1.22–23). **2:** *The Way* stands for Christianity (18.25; 19.9,23; 22.4; 24.14,22), but its origin is uncertain. The closest parallels can be found in the Dead Sea Scrolls; cf. Isa 40.3. **3–9:** The passage incorporates various features of theophanies (e.g., 2 Macc 3; Acts 2.2n.) and stories of the call of prophets (e.g., Isa 6.1–13). **4–5:** In persecuting

do you persecute me?" [5] He asked, "Who are you, Lord?" The reply came, "I am Jesus, whom you are persecuting. [6] But get up and enter the city, and you will be told what you are to do." [7] The men who were traveling with him stood speechless because they heard the voice but saw no one. [8] Saul got up from the ground, and though his eyes were open, he could see nothing; so they led him by the hand and brought him into Damascus. [9] For three days he was without sight, and neither ate nor drank.

[10] Now there was a disciple in Damascus named Ananias. The Lord said to him in a vision, "Ananias." He answered, "Here I am, Lord." [11] The Lord said to him, "Get up and go to the street called Straight, and at the house of Judas look for a man of Tarsus named Saul. At this moment he is praying, [12] and he has seen in a vision[a] a man named Ananias come in and lay his hands on him so that he might regain his sight." [13] But Ananias answered, "Lord, I have heard from many about this man, how much evil he has done to your saints in Jerusalem; [14] and here he has authority from the chief priests to bind all who invoke your name." [15] But the Lord said to him, "Go, for he is an instrument whom I have chosen to bring my name before Gentiles and kings and before the people of Israel; [16] I myself will show him how much he must suffer for the sake of my name." [17] So Ananias went and entered the house. He laid his hands on Saul[b] and said, "Brother Saul, the Lord Jesus, who appeared to you on your way here, has sent me so that you may regain your sight and be filled with the Holy Spirit." [18] And immediately something like scales fell from his eyes, and his sight was restored. Then he got up and was baptized, [19] and after taking some food, he regained his strength.

For several days he was with the disciples in Damascus, [20] and immediately he began to proclaim Jesus in the synagogues, saying, "He is the Son of God." [21] All who heard him were amazed and said, "Is not this the man who made havoc in Jerusalem among those who invoked this name? And has he not come here for the purpose of bringing them bound before the chief priests?" [22] Saul became increasingly more powerful and confounded the Jews who lived in Damascus by proving that Jesus[c] was the Messiah.[d]

[23] After some time had passed, the Jews plotted to kill him, [24] but their plot became known to Saul. They were watching the gates day and night so that they might kill him; [25] but his disciples took him by night and let him down through an opening in the wall,[e] lowering him in a basket.

[26] When he had come to Jerusalem, he attempted to join the disciples; and they were all afraid of him, for they did not believe that he was a disciple. [27] But Barnabas took him, brought him to the apostles, and described for them how on the road he had seen the Lord, who had spoken to him, and how in Damascus he had spoken boldly in the name of Jesus. [28] So he went in and out among them in Jerusalem, speaking boldly in the name of the Lord. [29] He spoke and argued with the

[a] Other ancient authorities lack *in a vision*
[b] Gk *him*
[c] Gk *that this*
[d] Or *the Christ*
[e] Gk *through the wall*

the disciples, he persecuted *Jesus* (cf. Mt 25.40). **10:** *Ananias,* evidently one of the leaders of the believers at *Damascus* (see 22.12). Acts does not record how or when Christians first arrived in Damascus. **11:** *The street called Straight,* commonly identified as Darbel-Mostakim, an east-to-west street in the Old City of Damascus. *Tarsus,* see v. 30n. **13:** *Saints,* holy ones, i.e., Christians as sanctified by their faith (see 26.18). **15:** Saul, like the prophets, was chosen for a special purpose (Jer 1.5; Gal 1.15). **17:** *Laid his hands,* see 6.6n.

9.19b–31: Saul's preaching in Damascus and first visit to Jerusalem. 20: *Immediately he began to proclaim Jesus in the synagogues,* this will be the consistent pattern followed by Paul in Acts; according to Paul himself, he went immediately to Arabia (Gal 1.17). *Son of God* occurs only here in Acts; cf. Gal 1.15–16. **24–25:** In 2 Cor 11.32–33 Paul flees the governor of Damascus appointed by Aretas IV, king of the Nabateans. **26:** See vv. 1–2n. In Gal 1.18 Paul states that his first visit to Jerusalem was three years after his conversion. Luke associates Paul with Jerusalem from the beginning. **27–28:** *Barnabas* (see 4.36–37) intercedes with the *apostles* on Paul's behalf. Paul himself (Gal 1.18–19) claimed only to have seen Peter and James, the Lord's brother (not considered an apostle in Acts). **29:** Paul, from the Diaspora himself, contends with the *Hellenists,* namely, Stephen's Greek-speaking,

Hellenists; but they were attempting to kill him. 30 When the believers[a] learned of it, they brought him down to Caesarea and sent him off to Tarsus.

31 Meanwhile the church throughout Judea, Galilee, and Samaria had peace and was built up. Living in the fear of the Lord and in the comfort of the Holy Spirit, it increased in numbers.

32 Now as Peter went here and there among all the believers,[b] he came down also to the saints living in Lydda. 33 There he found a man named Aeneas, who had been bedridden for eight years, for he was paralyzed. 34 Peter said to him, "Aeneas, Jesus Christ heals you; get up and make your bed!" And immediately he got up. 35 And all the residents of Lydda and Sharon saw him and turned to the Lord.

36 Now in Joppa there was a disciple whose name was Tabitha, which in Greek is Dorcas.[c] She was devoted to good works and acts of charity. 37 At that time she became ill and died. When they had washed her, they laid her in a room upstairs. 38 Since Lydda was near Joppa, the disciples, who heard that Peter was there, sent two men to him with the request, "Please come to us without delay." 39 So Peter got up and went with them; and when he arrived, they took him to the room upstairs. All the widows stood beside him, weeping and showing tunics and other clothing that Dorcas had made while she was with them. 40 Peter put all of them outside, and then he knelt down and prayed. He turned to the body and said, "Tabitha, get up." Then she opened her eyes, and seeing Peter, she sat up. 41 He gave her his hand and helped her up. Then calling the saints and widows, he showed her to be alive. 42 This became known throughout Joppa, and many believed in the Lord. 43 Meanwhile he stayed in Joppa for some time with a certain Simon, a tanner.

10 In Caesarea there was a man named Cornelius, a centurion of the Italian Cohort, as it was called. 2 He was a devout man who feared God with all his household; he gave alms generously to the people and prayed constantly to God. 3 One afternoon at about three o'clock he had a vision in which he clearly saw an angel of God coming in and saying to him, "Cornelius." 4 He stared at him in terror and said, "What is it, Lord?" He answered, "Your prayers and your alms have ascended as a memorial before God. 5 Now send men to Joppa for a certain Simon who is called Peter; 6 he is lodging with Simon, a tanner, whose

[a] Gk *brothers*
[b] Gk *all of them*
[c] The name Tabitha in Aramaic and the name Dorcas in Greek mean *a gazelle*

Jewish opponents (6.9–14). **30:** *Tarsus,* Paul's home city according to 21.39 (see 11.25; cf. Gal 1.21), was in Cilicia on the southern coast of Asia Minor. **31:** The familiar note of growth. The persecution of 8.1 has apparently passed. Here *church* moves beyond its usual meaning of a local community (see 5.11n.) to believers spread over a larger geographical area.

9.32–43: Peter in Lydda and Joppa. 32: *Lydda,* northwest of Jerusalem between Azotus and Caesarea (see 8.40n.), about 11 mi (17 km) southeast of Joppa (v. 36). There are already *believers* in both places, perhaps the result of Philip's activity (8.40). **34:** Lk 5.24–25. **35:** *Sharon,* the coastal plain between Joppa and Caesarea. **36–42:** Cf. Lk 8.41–42,49–56 (Mk 5.22–24,35–43); 2 Kings 4.33. **36:** *Joppa,* modern Jaffa, on the coast in the Plain of Sharon, ca. 30 mi (50 km) south of Caesarea. **39:** *Widows,* see 6.1; 1 Tim 5.3–16. **43:** Peter's lodging with *a tanner,* who would be ritually unclean, may suggest preparation for his encounter with Cornelius.

10.1–48: The conversion of Cornelius. This key narrative in which the inclusion of Gentiles is directed by God is essentially repeated in 11.1–18 and referred to in significant terms at 15.7–9. Luke ascribes to Peter the honor of converting the first Gentile; but recall the Ethiopian (8.26–39) and see 11.19–21. **1:** *Caesarea,* see 8.40n. *A centurion,* an officer in the Roman army. Luke may want to show that Roman citizenship was compatible with Christianity (13.7n.; 16.37–38n.; 18.14–15n.; 22.25–29n.; 23.27–30n.; 25.8n.). On "friendly" centurions, see 27.3,43. **2:** Cornelius was *devout* and *feared God,* i.e., worshiped him (see v. 22); although he had not adopted the Jewish religion (i.e., undergone circumcision), he practiced the characteristic acts of Jewish piety: almsgiving and prayer. The similar profile of the centurion in Lk 7.1–10 shows that Luke is particularly interested in Gentiles who practice Jewish piety (v. 35). **3:** *About three o'clock,* the time of afternoon prayer (3.1). Angels often appear in Acts in service of the divine will. **7:** *A devout soldier,* suggests that those with Cornelius shared his piety (see

house is by the seaside." [7] When the angel who spoke to him had left, he called two of his slaves and a devout soldier from the ranks of those who served him, [8] and after telling them everything, he sent them to Joppa.

[9] About noon the next day, as they were on their journey and approaching the city, Peter went up on the roof to pray. [10] He became hungry and wanted something to eat; and while it was being prepared, he fell into a trance. [11] He saw the heaven opened and something like a large sheet coming down, being lowered to the ground by its four corners. [12] In it were all kinds of four-footed creatures and reptiles and birds of the air. [13] Then he heard a voice saying, "Get up, Peter; kill and eat." [14] But Peter said, "By no means, Lord; for I have never eaten anything that is profane or unclean." [15] The voice said to him again, a second time, "What God has made clean, you must not call profane." [16] This happened three times, and the thing was suddenly taken up to heaven.

[17] Now while Peter was greatly puzzled about what to make of the vision that he had seen, suddenly the men sent by Cornelius appeared. They were asking for Simon's house and were standing by the gate. [18] They called out to ask whether Simon, who was called Peter, was staying there. [19] While Peter was still thinking about the vision, the Spirit said to him, "Look, three[a] men are searching for you. [20] Now get up, go down, and go with them without hesitation; for I have sent them." [21] So Peter went down to the men and said, "I am the one you are looking for; what is the reason for your coming?" [22] They answered, "Cornelius, a centurion, an upright and God-fearing man, who is well spoken of by the whole Jewish nation, was directed by a holy angel to send for you to come to his house and to hear what you have to say." [23] So Peter[b] invited them in and gave them lodging.

The next day he got up and went with them, and some of the believers[c] from Joppa accompanied him. [24] The following day they came to Caesarea. Cornelius was expecting them and had called together his relatives and close friends. [25] On Peter's arrival Cornelius met him, and falling at his feet, worshiped him. [26] But Peter made him get up, saying, "Stand up; I am only a mortal." [27] And as he talked with him, he went in and found that many had assembled; [28] and he said to them, "You yourselves know that it is unlawful for a Jew to associate with or to visit a Gentile; but God has shown me that I should not call anyone profane or unclean. [29] So when I was sent for, I came without objection. Now may I ask why you sent for me?"

[30] Cornelius replied, "Four days ago at this very hour, at three o'clock, I was praying in my house when suddenly a man in dazzling clothes stood before me. [31] He said, 'Cornelius, your prayer has been heard and your alms have been remembered before God. [32] Send therefore to Joppa and ask for Simon, who is called Peter; he is staying in the home of Simon, a tanner, by the sea.' [33] Therefore I sent for you immediately, and you have been kind enough to come. So now all of us are here in the presence of God to listen to all that the Lord has commanded you to say."

[34] Then Peter began to speak to them: "I truly understand that God shows no partiality, [35] but in every nation anyone who fears him and does what is right is acceptable to him. [36] You know the message he sent to the people of Israel, preaching peace by Jesus Christ—he is Lord of all. [37] That message spread throughout Judea, beginning in Gali-

[a] One ancient authority reads *two*; others lack the word
[b] Gk *he*
[c] Gk *brothers*

16.15n.,33). **9:** *Noon,* the usual Roman time for luncheon. **14:** *Profane,* only some animals might be eaten (Lev 11). **15:** In Mk 7.14–19 Jesus declared all foods clean, but this statement is not included in Luke's Gospel and Peter seems unaware of it. Some conditions regarding food will still apply at 15.20,29. **16:** *Three times,* for emphasis and warning. **19–20:** The *Spirit*'s message obliquely refers to Cornelius's vision and is reminiscent of the coordinated visions of Ananias and Paul in ch 9. **23:** *Invited them in,* Peter is prepared to associate with Gentiles. **28:** *You yourselves know,* the audience is aware that association with Gentiles can be a cause of defilement for Jews (the centurion in Lk 7.6–7 seems to be sensitive to this). *But God has shown me,* Peter now understands the vision about food (vv. 11–17) to refer allegorically to people—i.e., defilement is no longer an issue. **30:** See v. 3n. **34:** *No partiality,* lit., "God is no respecter of persons"; cf. Rom 2.10–11. **36–43:** A synopsis of Luke's Gospel. **36:**

lee after the baptism that John announced:
38 how God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with
the Holy Spirit and with power; how he went
about doing good and healing all who were
oppressed by the devil, for God was with him.
39 We are witnesses to all that he did both
in Judea and in Jerusalem. They put him to
death by hanging him on a tree; 40 but God
raised him on the third day and allowed him
to appear, 41 not to all the people but to us
who were chosen by God as witnesses, and
who ate and drank with him after he rose
from the dead. 42 He commanded us to preach
to the people and to testify that he is the one
ordained by God as judge of the living and
the dead. 43 All the prophets testify about him
that everyone who believes in him receives
forgiveness of sins through his name."

44 While Peter was still speaking, the Holy
Spirit fell upon all who heard the word. 45 The
circumcised believers who had come with
Peter were astounded that the gift of the
Holy Spirit had been poured out even on the
Gentiles, 46 for they heard them speaking in
tongues and extolling God. Then Peter said,
47 "Can anyone withhold the water for baptiz-
ing these people who have received the Holy
Spirit just as we have?" 48 So he ordered them
to be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ.
Then they invited him to stay for several
days.

11 Now the apostles and the believ-
ers[a] who were in Judea heard that the
Gentiles had also accepted the word of God.
2 So when Peter went up to Jerusalem, the cir-
cumcised believers[b] criticized him, 3 saying,
"Why did you go to uncircumcised men and
eat with them?" 4 Then Peter began to explain
it to them, step by step, saying, 5 "I was in the
city of Joppa praying, and in a trance I saw a
vision. There was something like a large sheet
coming down from heaven, being lowered
by its four corners; and it came close to me.
6 As I looked at it closely I saw four-footed
animals, beasts of prey, reptiles, and birds
of the air. 7 I also heard a voice saying to me,
'Get up, Peter; kill and eat.' 8 But I replied,
'By no means, Lord; for nothing profane or
unclean has ever entered my mouth.' 9 But a
second time the voice answered from heaven,
'What God has made clean, you must not call
profane.' 10 This happened three times; then
everything was pulled up again to heaven.
11 At that very moment three men, sent to me
from Caesarea, arrived at the house where
we were. 12 The Spirit told me to go with them
and not to make a distinction between them
and us.[c] These six brothers also accompanied
me, and we entered the man's house. 13 He
told us how he had seen the angel standing
in his house and saying, 'Send to Joppa and
bring Simon, who is called Peter; 14 he will
give you a message by which you and your
entire household will be saved.' 15 And as
I began to speak, the Holy Spirit fell upon
them just as it had upon us at the beginning.
16 And I remembered the word of the Lord,
how he had said, 'John baptized with water,
but you will be baptized with the Holy Spirit.'
17 If then God gave them the same gift that he

[a] Gk *brothers*
[b] Gk lacks *believers*
[c] Or *not to hesitate*

Lord of all, both Jews and Gentiles. **38:** *God anointed Jesus,* seems to refer to the baptism at Lk 3.22 (see also Lk 4.14); but note Lk 2.11; Acts 2.36n.; 3.20. **39:** *We are witnesses,* also v. 41, see 1.8n.; 1.21–22; *tree,* 5.30n. **41:** Jesus was seen only by those *chosen* (Lk 24.48; Acts 1.8,22). *Ate and drank with him,* 1.4n.; Lk 24.30–31,41–43. **42:** *Judge,* 17.31. **43:** *All the prophets,* Lk 24.25–27,44–47; *forgiveness of sins,* Lk 24.47; Acts 2.38; 13.26,39; *through his name,* 3.6. **44–48:** The *circumcised believers* knew by the *speaking in tongues* (2.4–11) that *the Holy Spirit* fell upon *the Gentiles* before baptism (see 2.38n.).

11.1–18: Peter's defense. The Jerusalem church requires an explanation for the baptism of Gentiles. **1:** News of the new development reaches Jerusalem, cf. 8.14; 11.22. **2:** Up to this point all believers were *circumcised* (see note *b*; at 10.45 the text says "circumcised believers," but the meaning is the same, as v. 18 makes clear). **3:** The question is framed in terms of association with Gentiles, not their entry into the church; cf. Gal 2.12. **4–17:** *Peter* answers by retelling 10.1–48 in abbreviated fashion. **12:** *Not to make a distinction,* clarifies "go . . . without hesitation" in 10.20. *Six,* replaces "some" in 10.23. **14:** Unlike 10.33, here it is made clear that Cornelius is expecting a *message* of salvation (4.12). **15:** See 2.1–4. **16:** See 1.5n. **17–18:** The "Gentile Pentecost" (v. 15; 10.47; 15.8) was an act of *God.* Although the issue of Gentile inclusion seems to be decisively settled, controversy

gave us when we believed in the Lord Jesus Christ, who was I that I could hinder God?" 18 When they heard this, they were silenced. And they praised God, saying, "Then God has given even to the Gentiles the repentance that leads to life."

19 Now those who were scattered because of the persecution that took place over Stephen traveled as far as Phoenicia, Cyprus, and Antioch, and they spoke the word to no one except Jews. 20 But among them were some men of Cyprus and Cyrene who, on coming to Antioch, spoke to the Hellenists[a] also, proclaiming the Lord Jesus. 21 The hand of the Lord was with them, and a great number became believers and turned to the Lord. 22 News of this came to the ears of the church in Jerusalem, and they sent Barnabas to Antioch. 23 When he came and saw the grace of God, he rejoiced, and he exhorted them all to remain faithful to the Lord with steadfast devotion; 24 for he was a good man, full of the Holy Spirit and of faith. And a great many people were brought to the Lord. 25 Then Barnabas went to Tarsus to look for Saul, 26 and when he had found him, he brought him to Antioch. So it was that for an entire year they met with[b] the church and taught a great many people, and it was in Antioch that the disciples were first called "Christians."

27 At that time prophets came down from Jerusalem to Antioch. 28 One of them named Agabus stood up and predicted by the Spirit that there would be a severe famine over all the world; and this took place during the reign of Claudius. 29 The disciples determined that according to their ability, each would send relief to the believers[c] living in Judea; 30 this they did, sending it to the elders by Barnabas and Saul.

12 About that time King Herod laid violent hands upon some who belonged to the church. 2 He had James, the brother of John, killed with the sword. 3 After he saw that it pleased the Jews, he proceeded to arrest Peter also. (This was during the festival of Unleavened Bread.) 4 When he had seized

[a] Other ancient authorities read *Greeks*
[b] Or *were guests of*
[c] Gk *brothers*

will resurface in ch 15.

11.19–26: Mission to the Greeks in Antioch. The narrative now rejoins the mission initiated by the *persecution* following Stephen's death (8.1,4). **19:** *Antioch* on the Orontes River, capital of the Roman province of Syria, which included Galilee and Judea, and according to Josephus (*J.W.* 3.29), the third largest city (after Rome and Alexandria) in the Roman Empire. Antioch was a popular city name in Syria and Asia Minor, reflecting the rule of Antiochus I (whose epithet was "savior"), son of Seleucus I, one of the successors of Alexander the Great. **20:** *Cyrene,* a great North African city (2.10; 6.9; 13.1; Lk 23.26), had a large Jewish colony. *Hellenists* (unlike 6.1 and 9.29) here apparently refers to non-Jewish, Greek-speaking residents of *Antioch.* **22–24:** *Barnabas* came from Cyprus (4.36), and there were Cypriots in Antioch (v. 20). He investigates and expresses approval over the latest developments on behalf of *Jerusalem* (cf. 8.14–17; 11.1–18). Compare his description (v. 24) with that of Stephen (6.5). **25–26:** *Saul* was in *Tarsus* (9.30), cf. Gal 1.21. An extended collaboration with Barnabas is initiated (see Gal 2.1,9,13; 1 Cor 9.6). *Christians,* a Latin word meaning "partisans of Christ," perhaps at first a term of reproach. It occurs elsewhere in the New Testament only at 26.28 and 1 Pet 4.16. It appears to be a term gaining currency in Luke's day that has been retrojected into the time portrayed by the narrative.

11.27–30: Antioch aids Jerusalem. 27: *Prophets* (13.1; 15.32) were numerous in the early church and in Acts characterize the last days (2.17–18). Here they predict the future (see 21.10). According to 1 Cor 14.3–4,31 they teach and build up the church. **28:** *Agabus,* 21.10–11. The *famine* probably occurred in 47 CE; it was not worldwide (see Josephus, *Ant.* 20.51–53,101). The Roman emperor *Claudius* ruled 41–54 CE. **29:** The *relief* operation resembles the arrangements for Paul's collection (20.4n.; 1 Cor 16.2; 2 Cor 9.7); the days of selling all (2.44–45; 4.32–35) are gone. **30:** *Elders,* as Christian leaders are first mentioned here ("old men" in 2.17 translates the same Greek word); their emergence may reflect synagogue practice. According to Gal 2.1–10, Paul's second visit to Jerusalem coincided with the discussion narrated in Acts 15.1–29.

12.1–19: Persecution touches the apostles. 1: *Herod* Agrippa I, grandson of Herod the Great, nephew of Herod Antipas (4.27; 13.1; the Herod of Luke's Gospel), was made king of Judea by Claudius in 41 CE. **2:** An apostle, *James* the son of Zebedee, is martyred. No replacement is made (cf. 1.15–26). **3:** *Peter,* like Jesus, is arrested at

him, he put him in prison and handed him over to four squads of soldiers to guard him, intending to bring him out to the people after the Passover. 5 While Peter was kept in prison, the church prayed fervently to God for him.

6 The very night before Herod was going to bring him out, Peter, bound with two chains, was sleeping between two soldiers, while guards in front of the door were keeping watch over the prison. 7 Suddenly an angel of the Lord appeared and a light shone in the cell. He tapped Peter on the side and woke him, saying, "Get up quickly." And the chains fell off his wrists. 8 The angel said to him, "Fasten your belt and put on your sandals." He did so. Then he said to him, "Wrap your cloak around you and follow me." 9 Peter[a] went out and followed him; he did not realize that what was happening with the angel's help was real; he thought he was seeing a vision. 10 After they had passed the first and the second guard, they came before the iron gate leading into the city. It opened for them of its own accord, and they went outside and walked along a lane, when suddenly the angel left him. 11 Then Peter came to himself and said, "Now I am sure that the Lord has sent his angel and rescued me from the hands of Herod and from all that the Jewish people were expecting."

12 As soon as he realized this, he went to the house of Mary, the mother of John whose other name was Mark, where many had gathered and were praying. 13 When he knocked at the outer gate, a maid named Rhoda came to answer. 14 On recognizing Peter's voice, she was so overjoyed that, instead of opening the gate, she ran in and announced that Peter was standing at the gate. 15 They said to her, "You are out of your mind!" But she insisted that it was so. They said, "It is his angel." 16 Meanwhile Peter continued knocking; and when they opened the gate, they saw him and were amazed. 17 He motioned to them with his hand to be silent, and described for them how the Lord had brought him out of the prison. And he added, "Tell this to James and to the believers."[b] Then he left and went to another place.

18 When morning came, there was no small commotion among the soldiers over what had become of Peter. 19 When Herod had searched for him and could not find him, he examined the guards and ordered them to be put to death. Then he went down from Judea to Caesarea and stayed there.

20 Now Herod[c] was angry with the people of Tyre and Sidon. So they came to him in a body; and after winning over Blastus, the king's chamberlain, they asked for a reconciliation, because their country depended on the king's country for food. 21 On an appointed day Herod put on his royal robes, took his seat on the platform, and delivered a public address to them. 22 The people kept shouting, "The voice of a god, and not of a mortal!" 23 And immediately, because he had not given the glory to God, an angel of the Lord struck

[a] Gk *He*
[b] Gk *brothers*
[c] Gk *he*

Passover season (v. 4), *the festival of Unleavened Bread* (v. 3). **4:** *Four squads of soldiers,* emphasizes the impossibility of escape (similarly v. 6). **6–11:** Cf. 5.17–23; 16.23–28. Miraculous escapes were a staple of ancient literature. **6:** *Bring him out,* for execution. **12:** *John . . . Mark* is connected with Peter elsewhere (1 Pet 5.13), and tradition credited him with authoring the second Gospel as Peter's interpreter (Eusebius, *Hist. eccl.* 3.39.15; 5.8.3). In 12.25–13.13 he travels with Paul and Barnabas. According to Col 4.10 he was Barnabas's cousin (see also Philem 24; 2 Tim 4.11). **13:** *Outer gate,* a significant house is suggested. **15:** A person's guardian *angel* (Mt 18.10) was thought to resemble the person protected. **17:** *James,* the brother of Jesus next in age (1.14n.), soon emerges as the leader of the Jerusalem church (15.13; see Gal 1.19; 2.12). Peter goes to *another place,* appearing one last time at the Jerusalem council (15.7–11).

12.20–23: Death of Herod Agrippa. Josephus (*Ant.* 19.343–353) gives a somewhat similar account in which, after flatterers address Herod as a god, he is stricken by a fatal disease and dies after five days of pain—but he acknowledges the false title and accepts his fate. **23:** Herod's death in 44 CE occurred before the probable date of the famine mentioned at 11.28 — Acts does not necessarily present all events in correct chronological order. *Died,* the Gk word here is used elsewhere in the New Testament only to describe the deaths of Ananias and Sapphira (5.5,10).

him down, and he was eaten by worms and died.

24 But the word of God continued to advance and gain adherents. 25 Then after completing their mission Barnabas and Saul returned to[a] Jerusalem and brought with them John, whose other name was Mark.

13 Now in the church at Antioch there were prophets and teachers: Barnabas, Simeon who was called Niger, Lucius of Cyrene, Manaen a member of the court of Herod the ruler,[b] and Saul. 2 While they were worshiping the Lord and fasting, the Holy Spirit said, "Set apart for me Barnabas and Saul for the work to which I have called them." 3 Then after fasting and praying they laid their hands on them and sent them off.

4 So, being sent out by the Holy Spirit, they went down to Seleucia; and from there they sailed to Cyprus. 5 When they arrived at Salamis, they proclaimed the word of God in the synagogues of the Jews. And they had John also to assist them. 6 When they had gone through the whole island as far as Paphos, they met a certain magician, a Jewish false prophet, named Bar-Jesus. 7 He was with the proconsul, Sergius Paulus, an intelligent man, who summoned Barnabas and Saul and wanted to hear the word of God. 8 But the magician Elymas (for that is the translation of his name) opposed them and tried to turn the proconsul away from the faith. 9 But Saul, also known as Paul, filled with the Holy Spirit, looked intently at him 10 and said, "You son of the devil, you enemy of all righteousness, full of all deceit and villainy, will you not stop making crooked the straight paths of the Lord? 11 And now listen—the hand of the Lord is against you, and you will be blind for a while, unable to see the sun." Immediately mist and darkness came over him, and he went about groping for someone to lead him by the hand. 12 When the proconsul saw what had happened, he believed, for he was astonished at the teaching about the Lord.

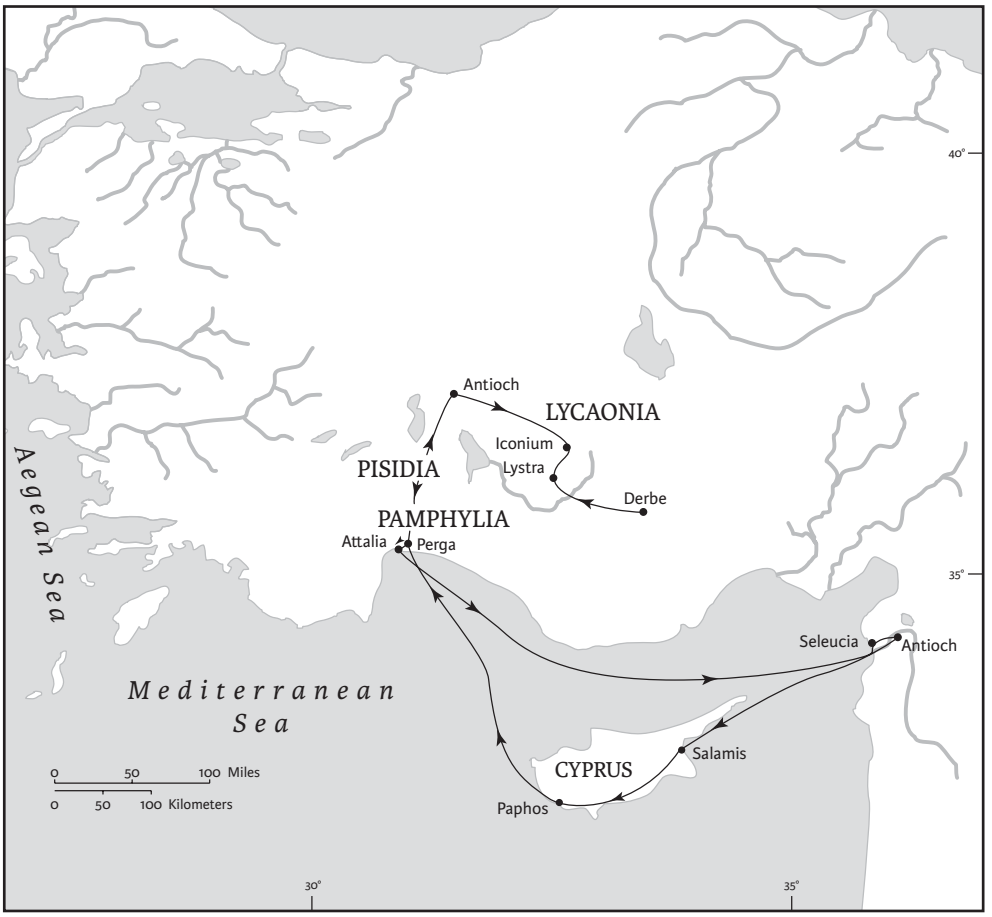
13 Then Paul and his companions set sail from Paphos and came to Perga in Pamphylia. John, however, left them and returned to Jerusalem; 14 but they went on from Perga and came to Antioch in Pisidia. And on the sabbath day they went into the synagogue and sat down. 15 After the reading of the law and the prophets, the officials of the synagogue sent them a message, saying, "Brothers, if you have any word of exhortation for the people, give it." 16 So Paul stood up and with a gesture began to speak:

[a] Other ancient authorities read *from*
[b] Gk *tetrarch*

12.24–13.3: Commission at Antioch. 12.24: The attack on the church's leaders fails to stem growth. **25:** *Barnabas and Saul returned* from *Jerusalem* to Antioch (see note *a*) after the relief visit (11.29–30). **13.1:** *Prophets and teachers* were important leaders in the early church (see 11.27n.; 1 Cor 12.28; Eph 4.11). *Manaen,* Gk form of Heb Menahem. *Herod the ruler,* Herod Antipas (4.27; Lk 3.19; 8.3; 9.7,9; 13.31; 23.7–15), not Herod Agrippa (12.1n.). **2:** As is usual in Acts *the Holy Spirit* initiates new developments. *Set apart,* cf. Rom 1.1; Gal 1.15. **3:** *Laid . . . hands,* see 6.6n.

13.4–12: Cyprus. 4: *Seleucia* Pieria, Antioch's seaport, about 12 mi (20 km) west at the mouth of the Orontes River. **5:** *Salamis,* important port and former capital city at the eastern end of Cyprus. *Synagogues,* there was a large Jewish population on Cyprus. According to Acts, Paul regularly begins mission work in a new place in the local synagogue (13.14; 14.1; 17.1,10,17; 18.4,19; 19.8; see 9.20n.; cf. Rom 1.16). *John,* see 12.12n. According to 11.19, missionaries had previously reached the island. **6:** *Paphos,* capital of Cyprus, located in the extreme west. *Magician,* see 8.9n. *Bar-Jesus,* "son of Jesus [or Joshua]." **7:** The island was a senatorial province ruled by a *proconsul. Sergius Paulus,* another Roman official favorable to Christianity (see 10.1n.). **8:** *Elymas* does not mean "Bar-Jesus." **9:** *Saul* was his Jewish name, used up to this point to stress his origin; *Paul* was his Roman name, the one he was generally known by, and is used from now on in Acts as missionary activity aims at both Jews and Gentiles. **10–11:** Compare Peter's rebuke of Simon (8.20–24).

13.13–52: Journey to Antioch of Pisidia and Iconium. The focus now clearly shifts to Paul as his first work in inner Asia Minor is depicted. **13:** *Perga* is inland 8 mi (13 km) from Attalia (14.25), main seaport of *Pamphylia,* a small province south of the Taurus mountains, between Cilicia and Lycia. *John . . . left,* v. 5; see 15.38. **14:** Strictly, *Antioch* near *Pisidia,* a Roman city and colony (see 11.19n.). *Synagogue,* v. 5n. **15:** One lesson each from *the law and the prophets* was customary. **16:** *Gesture,* an orator's move. *Others who fear God,* here and v. 26 probably equivalent to "devout converts" to Judaism in v. 43 (where "convert" is the Gk word for proselyte; see 6.5n.).



Chs 13–14: First missionary journey of Paul.

"You Israelites,[a] and others who fear God, listen. [17] The God of this people Israel chose our ancestors and made the people great during their stay in the land of Egypt, and with uplifted arm he led them out of it. [18] For about forty years he put up with[b] them in the wilderness. [19] After he had destroyed seven nations in the land of Canaan, he gave them their land as an inheritance [20] for about four hundred fifty years. After that he gave them judges until the time of the prophet Samuel. [21] Then they asked for a king; and God gave them Saul son of Kish, a man of the tribe of Benjamin, who reigned for forty years. [22] When he had removed him, he made David their king. In his testimony about him he said, 'I have found David, son of Jesse, to be a man after my heart, who will carry out all my wishes.' [23] Of this man's posterity God has brought to Israel a Savior, Jesus, as he promised; [24] before his coming John had already proclaimed a baptism of repentance to all the people of Israel. [25] And as John was finishing

[a] Gk *Men, Israelites*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *cared for*

17–25: The survey of biblical history emphasizes the theme of fulfillment in the latter part of the speech (vv. 23,27,29,32,33). **18:** Context requires the reading *he put up with them in the wilderness* with Deut 1.31 (note *b*). **19:** *Seven nations,* Deut 7.1; Josh 3.10; 24.11. **20:** *Four hundred fifty years* from the entrance into Canaan to the building of the Temple may be an approximation. *Samuel*, 1 Sam 4.1. **21:** 1 Sam 8.5; 9.15–17. **22:** Ps 89.20; 1 Sam 13.14. **23:** *Posterity,* see Lk 3.31. *Savior,* see 5.31n. The promise is found in 2 Sam 7.12. **24:** Lk 3.3. **25:** The Baptist's emphatic

his work, he said, 'What do you suppose that I am? I am not he. No, but one is coming after me; I am not worthy to untie the thong of the sandals[a] on his feet.'

26 "My brothers, you descendants of Abraham's family, and others who fear God, to us[b] the message of this salvation has been sent. 27 Because the residents of Jerusalem and their leaders did not recognize him or understand the words of the prophets that are read every sabbath, they fulfilled those words by condemning him. 28 Even though they found no cause for a sentence of death, they asked Pilate to have him killed. 29 When they had carried out everything that was written about him, they took him down from the tree and laid him in a tomb. 30 But God raised him from the dead; 31 and for many days he appeared to those who came up with him from Galilee to Jerusalem, and they are now his witnesses to the people. 32 And we bring you the good news that what God promised to our ancestors 33 he has fulfilled for us, their children, by raising Jesus; as also it is written in the second psalm,

'You are my Son;
today I have begotten you.'

34 As to his raising him from the dead, no more to return to corruption, he has spoken in this way,

'I will give you the holy promises made to David.'

35 Therefore he has also said in another psalm,

'You will not let your Holy One experience corruption.'

36 For David, after he had served the purpose of God in his own generation, died,[c] was laid beside his ancestors, and experienced corruption; 37 but he whom God raised up experienced no corruption. 38 Let it be known to you therefore, my brothers, that through this man forgiveness of sins is proclaimed to you; 39 by this Jesus[d] everyone who believes is set free from all those sins[e] from which you could not be freed by the law of Moses. 40 Beware, therefore, that what the prophets said does not happen to you:

41 'Look, you scoffers!
Be amazed and perish,
for in your days I am doing a work,
a work that you will never believe, even if someone tells you.'"

42 As Paul and Barnabas[f] were going out, the people urged them to speak about these things again the next sabbath. 43 When the meeting of the synagogue broke up, many Jews and devout converts to Judaism followed Paul and Barnabas, who spoke to them and urged them to continue in the grace of God.

44 The next sabbath almost the whole city gathered to hear the word of the Lord.[g] 45 But when the Jews saw the crowds, they were filled with jealousy; and blaspheming, they contradicted what was spoken by Paul. 46 Then both Paul and Barnabas spoke out boldly, saying, "It was necessary that the word of God should be spoken first to you. Since you reject it and judge yourselves to be unworthy of eternal life, we are now turning to the Gentiles. 47 For so the Lord has commanded us, saying,

'I have set you to be a light for the Gentiles, so that you may bring salvation to the ends of the earth.'"

48 When the Gentiles heard this, they were glad and praised the word of the Lord; and as

[a] Gk *untie the sandals*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *you*
[c] Gk *fell asleep*
[d] Gk *this*
[e] Gk *all*
[f] Gk *they*
[g] Other ancient authorities read *God*

denial here (cf. Lk 3.16; Mk 1.7; Mt 3.11; Jn 1.20) may be aimed at those who continued to be his disciples (18.25; 19.3). **26:** *Salvation,* 4.12; in vv. 38–39 it is forgiveness of sins (2.38; 10.43; Lk 24.47). **26–41:** For argument and style compare Peter's speeches in 2.14–36; 3.12–26; 10.34–43. **27:** *Did not recognize . . . or understand,* see 3.17. **28:** *No cause,* Lk 23.4,14–15,22,47. *Pilate,* 3.13n. **29:** *Tree,* 5.30n. **30:** The resurrection is the heart of the gospel in Acts (3.15; 4.10; 10.40. 13.37). **31:** *Witnesses,* 1.8n. **33:** Ps 2.7. *Raising Jesus,* here in the sense of bringing him on the scene (in contrast to v. 34; cf. 3.22,26). **34:** Isa 55.3. **35:** Ps 16.10 (see Acts 2.27). **38:** *Forgiveness of sins,* v. 26n. **39:** *Set free,* Greek "justified"; the only reference to justification by faith in Acts fittingly appears on Paul's lips even if the sense is not fully that found in Paul's letters. **41:** Hab 1.5. **43:** *Devout converts to Judaism,* see v. 16n. **46:** The same dramatic announcement of turning to the *Gentiles* occurs in 18.5–6; 28.25–28. *Spoke out boldly,* 14.3; 18.26;

many as had been destined for eternal life became believers. 49 Thus the word of the Lord spread throughout the region. 50 But the Jews incited the devout women of high standing and the leading men of the city, and stirred up persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and drove them out of their region. 51 So they shook the dust off their feet in protest against them, and went to Iconium. 52 And the disciples were filled with joy and with the Holy Spirit.

14 The same thing occurred in Iconium, where Paul and Barnabas[a] went into the Jewish synagogue and spoke in such a way that a great number of both Jews and Greeks became believers. 2 But the unbelieving Jews stirred up the Gentiles and poisoned their minds against the brothers. 3 So they remained for a long time, speaking boldly for the Lord, who testified to the word of his grace by granting signs and wonders to be done through them. 4 But the residents of the city were divided; some sided with the Jews, and some with the apostles. 5 And when an attempt was made by both Gentiles and Jews, with their rulers, to mistreat them and to stone them, 6 the apostles[a] learned of it and fled to Lystra and Derbe, cities of Lycaonia, and to the surrounding country; 7 and there they continued proclaiming the good news.

8 In Lystra there was a man sitting who could not use his feet and had never walked, for he had been crippled from birth. 9 He listened to Paul as he was speaking. And Paul, looking at him intently and seeing that he had faith to be healed, 10 said in a loud voice, "Stand upright on your feet." And the man[b] sprang up and began to walk. 11 When the crowds saw what Paul had done, they shouted in the Lycaonian language, "The gods have come down to us in human form!" 12 Barnabas they called Zeus, and Paul they called Hermes, because he was the chief speaker. 13 The priest of Zeus, whose temple was just outside the city,[c] brought oxen and garlands to the gates; he and the crowds wanted to offer sacrifice. 14 When the apostles Barnabas and Paul heard of it, they tore their clothes and rushed out into the crowd, shouting, 15 "Friends,[d] why are you doing this? We are mortals just like you, and we bring you good news, that you should turn from these worthless things to the living God, who made the heaven and the earth and the sea and all that is in them. 16 In past generations he allowed all the nations to follow their own ways; 17 yet he has not left himself without a witness in doing good—giving you rains from heaven and fruitful seasons, and filling you with food and your hearts with joy." 18 Even with these words, they scarcely restrained the crowds from offering sacrifice to them.

19 But Jews came there from Antioch and Iconium and won over the crowds. Then they stoned Paul and dragged him out of the city,

[a] Gk *they*
[b] Gk *he*
[c] Or *The priest of Zeus-Outside-the-City*
[d] Gk *Men*

19.8; 26.26; see 4.13n. **47:** Isa 49.6; cf. Lk 2.32. **49:** A typical summary that makes it clear that Acts claims only to be a partial report of the spread of Christianity; cf. 9.10n. **50:** The scene depicted here (see 2 Tim 3.11) is repeated in subsequent accounts (see 14.2,19; 17.5,13). **51:** *They shook the dust off* (18.6) to show that their responsibility ended (Lk 9.5; 10.11; Mt 10.14). *Iconium,* modern Konya, ca. 75 mi (120 km) southeast of Antioch.

14.1–28: Ministry in the Iconium region and return to Antioch. 1: In spite of the announcement of 13.46, *Paul and Barnabas* again start at the *Jewish synagogue.* **2:** 13.50n. **4:** The Gk word *apostles* is used of Paul and Barnabas in Acts only here and in v. 14. Since the term otherwise is limited to the twelve, here the meaning may be "apostles (i.e., emissaries) of the church of Antioch," the church that sent them (13.2–3). **6:** *Lystra,* according to 16.1 the home of Timothy, was a Roman colony 24 mi (40 km) south-southwest of Iconium. *Derbe,* another town in Lycaonia 60 mi (96 km) southeast of Lystra. **7:** In Acts persecution always leads to new opportunities. **8–18:** Cf. 3.1–8. In this and other episodes in Acts Paul replicates the experiences of Peter. **11–12:** According to a myth of this region, the gods *Zeus* and *Hermes* visited Baucis and Philemon *in human form* and rewarded their hospitality (Ovid, *Metamorphoses,* 8.618–724). Paul, *the chief speaker,* was hailed as the messenger of the gods, not the chief god. **14:** *Apostles,* see 14.4n. *Tore their clothes,* a sign of horror and dismay at what they looked upon as blasphemy (cf. Mk 14.63). **15–17:** Cf. 17.22–31; 1 Thess 1.9–10. Paul (v. 15), like Peter (10.26), rejects worship of

supposing that he was dead. 20 But when the disciples surrounded him, he got up and went into the city. The next day he went on with Barnabas to Derbe.

21 After they had proclaimed the good news to that city and had made many disciples, they returned to Lystra, then on to Iconium and Antioch. 22 There they strengthened the souls of the disciples and encouraged them to continue in the faith, saying, "It is through many persecutions that we must enter the kingdom of God." 23 And after they had appointed elders for them in each church, with prayer and fasting they entrusted them to the Lord in whom they had come to believe.

24 Then they passed through Pisidia and came to Pamphylia. 25 When they had spoken the word in Perga, they went down to Attalia. 26 From there they sailed back to Antioch, where they had been commended to the grace of God for the work[a] that they had completed. 27 When they arrived, they called the church together and related all that God had done with them, and how he had opened a door of faith for the Gentiles. 28 And they stayed there with the disciples for some time.

15 Then certain individuals came down from Judea and were teaching the brothers, "Unless you are circumcised according to the custom of Moses, you cannot be saved." 2 And after Paul and Barnabas had no small dissension and debate with them, Paul and Barnabas and some of the others were appointed to go up to Jerusalem to discuss this question with the apostles and the elders. 3 So they were sent on their way by the church, and as they passed through both Phoenicia and Samaria, they reported the conversion of the Gentiles, and brought great joy to all the believers.[b] 4 When they came to Jerusalem, they were welcomed by the church and the apostles and the elders, and they reported all that God had done with them. 5 But some believers who belonged to the sect of the Pharisees stood up and said, "It is necessary for them to be circumcised and ordered to keep the law of Moses."

6 The apostles and the elders met together to consider this matter. 7 After there had been much debate, Peter stood up and said to them, "My brothers,[c] you know that in the early days God made a choice among you, that I should be the one through whom the Gentiles would hear the message of the good news and become believers. 8 And God, who knows the human heart, testified to them by giving them the Holy Spirit, just as he did to us; 9 and in cleansing their hearts by faith he has made no distinction between them and us. 10 Now therefore why are you putting God to the test by placing on the neck of the disciples a yoke that neither our ancestors nor we have been able to bear? 11 On the contrary, we believe that we will be saved through the grace of the Lord Jesus, just as they will."

12 The whole assembly kept silence, and listened to Barnabas and Paul as they told of all the

[a] Or *committed in the grace of God to the work*
[b] Gk *brothers*
[c] Gk *Men, brothers*

himself. **19:** 13.50n. Paul tells of receiving a stoning in 2 Cor 11.25; see 2 Tim 3.11. **20:** Perhaps a miraculous recovery. **23:** In Acts, Paul's churches are ruled by *elders* (cf. 20.17). Their presence may reflect conditions in Luke's day read back into the earlier period (see 15.2n.). The word is not used in Paul's own letters (but see 1 Tim 4.14; 5.17; Titus 1.5). See 11.30n. **25:** *Attalia,* the seaport of Perga (13.13n.). **26:** *Antioch,* their starting point for the *work* (13.2) now *completed.*

15.1–35: Jerusalem affirms the admission of Gentiles. 1: *Certain individuals,* cf. v. 5, Pharisees; Gal 2.4, "false believers." *Unless you are circumcised* and "keep the law" (v. 5), reopens issues seemingly settled with the approval of the "circumcised believers" (11.2n.,18) in 11.1–18. If the right of Gentile admission to the church was confirmed in ch 11, the present discussion may raise the issue of the conditions that might nevertheless apply. **2:** *Were appointed,* in Gal 2.2 Paul says he went "by revelation" (Gal 2.2). *Elders* (11.30n.; 14.23n.) now appear with the *apostles* (vv. 4,6,22,23; 16.4n.) as leaders of the Jerusalem church under James (vv. 13,19). Peter is the only apostle named; the others function as a corporate symbol as they have throughout. **5:** In Acts *Pharisees* are portrayed as *believers* (26.5) or tolerant of Christianity (5.34), often in sharp contrast to Sadducees (4.1–2; 5.17; 23.6–9). **7–9:** Peter's second summary (see 11.1–18) of the events narrated in 10.1–48. *I should be the one,* contrast Gal 2.7–8. **10:** The *yoke* is that of the law (Lk 11.46); Paul's view (Rom 7.12; Phil 3.6) is different. **11:** Peter's words echo Paul's language (Rom 3.24). **12:** 14.27; 15.4. The contentious debate reported in Gal 2 is passed



Chs 15–18: Second missionary journey of Paul.

signs and wonders that God had done through them among the Gentiles. [13] After they finished speaking, James replied, "My brothers,[a] listen to me. [14] Simeon has related how God first looked favorably on the Gentiles, to take from among them a people for his name. [15] This agrees with the words of the prophets, as it is written,

[16] 'After this I will return,
and I will rebuild the dwelling of David,
which has fallen;
from its ruins I will rebuild it,
and I will set it up,
[17] so that all other peoples may seek the
Lord—
even all the Gentiles over whom my
name has been called.
Thus says the Lord, who has been
making these things [18] known
from long ago.'[b]

[19] Therefore I have reached the decision that we should not trouble those Gentiles who are turning to God, [20] but we should write to them to abstain only from things polluted by idols and from fornication and from whatever has been strangled[c] and from blood. [21] For in every city, for generations past,

[a] Gk *Men, brothers*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *things.* [18]*Known to God from of old are all his works.'*
[c] Other ancient authorities lack *and from whatever has been strangled*

over in silence in Acts. **13:** *James,* see 12.17n. **14:** *Simeon,* the Semitic form of Peter's given name, emphasizing connections with Judaism even as the church is becoming a mixed group (v. 19) of Jews and Gentiles (see 14.1; 17.4,11–12; 18.4,8; 19.10). **16–18:** Am 9.11–12; Jer 12.15; Isa 45.21. **20:** *Things polluted by idols,* i.e., food sacrificed to them—prohibiting by extension idolatry itself (note Paul's more liberal stance in 1 Cor 10.27–29). *Whatever has been strangled,* i.e., meat not ritually butchered, which may mean the same thing as *blood* (omitted by some manuscripts), although the latter could mean murder. Suggested backgrounds for the items included in the "apostolic decree" include the so-called Noachian precepts (regulations to be observed by all peoples; see Gen 9.4–6) and the regulations for Gentiles living among Jews in Lev 17–18. The list may have a more practical function (avoid non-kosher food and *fornication*) or stipulate matters beyond compromise (idolatry, murder, and incest). **21:** *Moses,* selections from the Torah (the first five books of the Bible), traditionally thought to have been

Moses has had those who proclaim him, for he has been read aloud every sabbath in the synagogues."

22 Then the apostles and the elders, with the consent of the whole church, decided to choose men from among their members[a] and to send them to Antioch with Paul and Barnabas. They sent Judas called Barsabbas, and Silas, leaders among the brothers, 23 with the following letter: "The brothers, both the apostles and the elders, to the believers[b] of Gentile origin in Antioch and Syria and Cilicia, greetings. 24 Since we have heard that certain persons who have gone out from us, though with no instructions from us, have said things to disturb you and have unsettled your minds,[c] 25 we have decided unanimously to choose representatives[d] and send them to you, along with our beloved Barnabas and Paul, 26 who have risked their lives for the sake of our Lord Jesus Christ. 27 We have therefore sent Judas and Silas, who themselves will tell you the same things by word of mouth. 28 For it has seemed good to the Holy Spirit and to us to impose on you no further burden than these essentials: 29 that you abstain from what has been sacrificed to idols and from blood and from what is strangled[e] and from fornication. If you keep yourselves from these, you will do well. Farewell."

30 So they were sent off and went down to Antioch. When they gathered the congregation together, they delivered the letter. 31 When its members[f] read it, they rejoiced at the exhortation. 32 Judas and Silas, who were themselves prophets, said much to encourage and strengthen the believers.[b] 33 After they had been there for some time, they were sent off in peace by the believers[b] to those who had sent them.[g] 35 But Paul and Barnabas remained in Antioch, and there, with many others, they taught and proclaimed the word of the Lord.

36 After some days Paul said to Barnabas, "Come, let us return and visit the believers[b] in every city where we proclaimed the word of the Lord and see how they are doing." 37 Barnabas wanted to take with them John called Mark. 38 But Paul decided not to take with them one who had deserted them in Pamphylia and had not accompanied them in the work. 39 The disagreement became so sharp that they parted company; Barnabas took Mark with him and sailed away to Cyprus. 40 But Paul chose Silas and set out, the believers[b] commending him to the grace of the Lord. 41 He went through Syria and Cilicia, strengthening the churches.

[a] Gk *from among them*
[b] Gk *brothers*
[c] Other ancient authorities add *saying, 'You must be circumcised and keep the law,'*
[d] Gk *men*
[e] Other ancient authorities lack *and from what is strangled*
[f] Gk *When they*
[g] Other ancient authorities add verse 34, *But it seemed good to Silas to remain there*

written by Moses, *read aloud* in weekly Jewish services. The necessity of the decree (v. 20) is explained in terms of the pervasiveness of Jewish practices, which continued to be observed by Jewish Christians (cf. 21.20–25). **22:** *Silas* may be the Silvanus of 2 Cor 1.19; 1 Thess 1.1; 2 Thess 1.1. He becomes a missionary companion of Paul at 15.40. **28:** *To the Holy Spirit and to us,* see 5.3n. *No further burden than these essentials,* cf. Gal 2.10. **32:** *Prophets,* 13.1n. **35:** 11.26; 14.28.

15.36–16.5: Paul revisits the churches of the previous mission. 15.37–38: *John called Mark . . . had deserted,* see 12.12n.; 13.13. **39:** Compare the *disagreement* here over John *Mark* with the report in Gal 2.11–13 that Barnabas disagreed with Paul over the legitimacy of Jews and Gentiles eating together. According to Acts, this problem had already been dealt with in 10.1–11.18, although the apostolic decree (15.20,29) may have been intended to make such meals acceptable for Jewish Christians. Barnabas and Mark revisit *Cyprus* (13.4–12), which had been omitted on the return journey to Antioch described in 14.24–26. **40:** *Paul* now sets out as an "independent" missionary, accompanied by *Silas* (v. 22). Paul's ties with Antioch may have been strained at this point (see Gal 2.11–14). **16.1:** *Derbe and . . . Lystra,* 14.6n. *Timothy* (17.14–15; 18.5; 19.22; 20.4) was a more important companion of Paul than the picture in Acts suggests (see Rom 16.21; 1 Cor 16.10; 2 Cor 1.1,19; Phil 1.1; 1 Thess 1.1); he is referred to as Paul's "child in the Lord" at 1 Cor 4.17. The pseudonymous letters 1 and 2 Timothy are ostensibly addressed

16 Paul[a] went on also to Derbe and to Lystra, where there was a disciple named Timothy, the son of a Jewish woman who was a believer; but his father was a Greek. [2] He was well spoken of by the believers[b] in Lystra and Iconium. [3] Paul wanted Timothy to accompany him; and he took him and had him circumcised because of the Jews who were in those places, for they all knew that his father was a Greek. [4] As they went from town to town, they delivered to them for observance the decisions that had been reached by the apostles and elders who were in Jerusalem. [5] So the churches were strengthened in the faith and increased in numbers daily.

[6] They went through the region of Phrygia and Galatia, having been forbidden by the Holy Spirit to speak the word in Asia. [7] When they had come opposite Mysia, they attempted to go into Bithynia, but the Spirit of Jesus did not allow them; [8] so, passing by Mysia, they went down to Troas. [9] During the night Paul had a vision: there stood a man of Macedonia pleading with him and saying, "Come over to Macedonia and help us." [10] When he had seen the vision, we immediately tried to cross over to Macedonia, being convinced that God had called us to proclaim the good news to them.

[11] We set sail from Troas and took a straight course to Samothrace, the following day to Neapolis, [12] and from there to Philippi, which is a leading city of the district[c] of Macedonia and a Roman colony. We remained in this city for some days. [13] On the sabbath day we went outside the gate by the river, where we supposed there was a place of prayer; and we sat down and spoke to the women who had gathered there. [14] A certain woman named Lydia, a worshiper of God, was listening to us; she was from the city of Thyatira and a dealer in purple cloth. The Lord opened her heart to listen eagerly to what was said by Paul. [15] When she and her household were baptized, she urged us, saying, "If you have judged me to be faithful to the Lord, come and stay at my home." And she prevailed upon us.

[a] Gk *He*
[b] Gk *brothers*
[c] Other authorities read *a city of the first district*

to him. Timothy's mother (see 2 Tim 1.5) is said to be *Jewish,* while his *father was a Greek.* **3:** That *Paul . . . had him circumcised* seems unimaginable in view of passages such as 1 Cor 7.18 and Gal 5.2. Paul stresses in Gal 2.3 that Titus "was not compelled to be circumcised, though he was a Greek." Timothy's case might be different because his mother was Jewish (v. 1), yet the principle of matrilineal descent (the ethnicity of the child is determined by the mother) does not appear to have been in effect at this time. Luke may have allowed his theme of Paul's faithfulness to the law in all respects (21.23–24; 22.3) to color the narrative here and refute the charge raised in 21.21 in advance. **4:** *The decisions,* the apostolic decree of 15.20. *The apostles* are mentioned here for the last time—their era is now over.

16.6–10: Directed by the Spirit through Asia Minor to Troas. Journey through the interior to the Aegean Sea. **6:** *The region* is probably the country northwest of Iconium where both Phrygians and Galatians lived. *Asia,* the Roman province of that name in western Asia Minor (6.9). **7:** *Opposite Mysia,* a northwestern part of the province of Asia; *Bithynia* was to its east. *Spirit of Jesus,* equivalent to the Holy Spirit in v. 6. **8:** *Troas,* on the western coast of Mysia. **9:** *Macedonia,* a Roman province in Europe including the cities of Philippi, Thessalonica, and Beroea. **10:** The "we" passages (16.10–17; 20.5–15; 21.1–18; 27.1–28.16; see Introduction) begin here and bring additional vividness to the story.

16.11–40: Paul and Silas in Philippi. 11: *Samothrace,* an island in the northern Aegean, midway between Troas and *Neapolis,* the seaport of Philippi. **12:** *Philippi* was *a leading city,* but not the capital, *of Macedonia.* It was populated by discharged soldiers who received grants of land and enjoyed the special civic rights that pertained to a *Roman colony* (freedom from taxation, Roman legal procedures). **13:** The Gk word normally rendered "prayer" in the New Testament can also mean *a place of prayer,* as here, which may or may not imply a building (synagogue). *By the river,* some evidence suggests that Diaspora synagogues were frequently located near water. As usual in Acts, Paul seeks out the Jewish community in a new place. **14:** *Worshiper of God,* the same word is used to describe proselytes in 13.43 but is applied to "women of high standing" in 13.50 in contradistinction to Jews. The term might simply describe *Lydia* as pious or suggest that she is a Jewish sympathizer. *Thyatira* (Rev 2.18–29), a city of Lydia, a country in western Asia Minor, was a center for the dyeing industry. **15:** *She and her household were baptized,* dependents followed the head of the household in religious matters (v. 31; 10.2; 1 Cor

16 One day, as we were going to the place
of prayer, we met a slave-girl who had a spirit
of divination and brought her owners a great
deal of money by fortune-telling. 17 While
she followed Paul and us, she would cry out,
"These men are slaves of the Most High God,
who proclaim to you[a] a way of salvation."
18 She kept doing this for many days. But Paul,
very much annoyed, turned and said to the
spirit, "I order you in the name of Jesus Christ
to come out of her." And it came out that very
hour.

19 But when her owners saw that their hope
of making money was gone, they seized Paul
and Silas and dragged them into the market-
place before the authorities. 20 When they
had brought them before the magistrates,
they said, "These men are disturbing our city;
they are Jews 21 and are advocating customs
that are not lawful for us as Romans to adopt
or observe." 22 The crowd joined in attacking
them, and the magistrates had them stripped
of their clothing and ordered them to be beat-
en with rods. 23 After they had given them a
severe flogging, they threw them into prison
and ordered the jailer to keep them securely.
24 Following these instructions, he put them
in the innermost cell and fastened their feet
in the stocks.

25 About midnight Paul and Silas were
praying and singing hymns to God, and the
prisoners were listening to them. 26 Suddenly
there was an earthquake, so violent that the
foundations of the prison were shaken; and
immediately all the doors were opened and
everyone's chains were unfastened. 27 When
the jailer woke up and saw the prison doors
wide open, he drew his sword and was about
to kill himself, since he supposed that the
prisoners had escaped. 28 But Paul shouted in
a loud voice, "Do not harm yourself, for we
are all here." 29 The jailer[b] called for lights, and
rushing in, he fell down trembling before Paul
and Silas. 30 Then he brought them outside
and said, "Sirs, what must I do to be saved?"
31 They answered, "Believe on the Lord Jesus,
and you will be saved, you and your house-
hold." 32 They spoke the word of the Lord[c] to
him and to all who were in his house. 33 At
the same hour of the night he took them and
washed their wounds; then he and his entire
family were baptized without delay. 34 He
brought them up into the house and set food
before them; and he and his entire household
rejoiced that he had become a believer in God.

35 When morning came, the magistrates
sent the police, saying, "Let those men go."
36 And the jailer reported the message to Paul,
saying, "The magistrates sent word to let you
go; therefore come out now and go in peace."
37 But Paul replied, "They have beaten us in
public, uncondemned, men who are Roman
citizens, and have thrown us into prison; and
now are they going to discharge us in secret?
Certainly not! Let them come and take us
out themselves." 38 The police reported these
words to the magistrates, and they were
afraid when they heard that they were Ro-
man citizens; 39 so they came and apologized
to them. And they took them out and asked
them to leave the city. 40 After leaving the
prison they went to Lydia's home; and when

[a] Other ancient authorities read *to us*
[b] Gk *He*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *word of God*

1.16). **17:** In Lk 8.28 the Gerasene demoniac identifies Jesus as Son of *the Most High God.* The epithet is common for God in the Psalms of the Septuagint. The "we" passage (v. 10n.) stops here and resumes at 20.5. **19:** Acts frowns on *making money* by magical or supernatural means (see 8.18–24; 19.25n.). **20:** *Magistrates,* Gk "generals"; here probably not a military but a civic term (apparently to be distinguished from the "authorities," v. 19). **21:** It was *not lawful* for Jews to make converts of *Romans.* **22–23:** Cf. 2 Cor 11.23–25 ("imprisonments . . . floggings . . . beaten with rods"). **24:** The familiar motif of escape-proof security (5.19–20; 12.6). **26:** *An earthquake,* here a supernatural event (see 4.31). *Doors* open and bonds are loosened for Dionysus in Euripides' *Bacchae* 447–448; see also Ovid, *Metamorphoses* 15.669–671. See 12.6–11n. **27:** *Drew his sword,* a Roman jailer whose prisoner escaped was liable to forfeit his life (cf. 12.19; 27.42). **30:** The question is elicited by the supernatural circumstances. **33:** The entire household is *baptized* (v. 15). **35:** *Police,* lictors, officials who enforced the decisions of a magistrate. **37–38:** With dramatic flair the reader suddenly learns that both *Paul* and Silas are *Roman citizens* protected by law against scourging (22.25; contrast 2 Cor 11.23–25). This surprising increase in Paul's credentials strongly endorses the theme of the compatibility of Christianity with Roman life (see 10.1n.; 13.7n.).

they had seen and encouraged the brothers and sisters[a] there, they departed.

17 After Paul and Silas[b] had passed through Amphipolis and Apollonia, they came to Thessalonica, where there was a synagogue of the Jews. [2] And Paul went in, as was his custom, and on three sabbath days argued with them from the scriptures, [3] explaining and proving that it was necessary for the Messiah[c] to suffer and to rise from the dead, and saying, "This is the Messiah,[c] Jesus whom I am proclaiming to you." [4] Some of them were persuaded and joined Paul and Silas, as did a great many of the devout Greeks and not a few of the leading women. [5] But the Jews became jealous, and with the help of some ruffians in the marketplaces they formed a mob and set the city in an uproar. While they were searching for Paul and Silas to bring them out to the assembly, they attacked Jason's house. [6] When they could not find them, they dragged Jason and some believers[a] before the city authorities,[d] shouting, "These people who have been turning the world upside down have come here also, [7] and Jason has entertained them as guests. They are all acting contrary to the decrees of the emperor, saying that there is another king named Jesus." [8] The people and the city officials were disturbed when they heard this, [9] and after they had taken bail from Jason and the others, they let them go.

[10] That very night the believers[a] sent Paul and Silas off to Beroea; and when they arrived, they went to the Jewish synagogue. [11] These Jews were more receptive than those in Thessalonica, for they welcomed the message very eagerly and examined the scriptures every day to see whether these things were so. [12] Many of them therefore believed, including not a few Greek women and men of high standing. [13] But when the Jews of Thessalonica learned that the word of God had been proclaimed by Paul in Beroea as well, they came there too, to stir up and incite the crowds. [14] Then the believers[a] immediately sent Paul away to the coast, but Silas and Timothy remained behind. [15] Those who conducted Paul brought him as far as Athens; and after receiving instructions to have Silas and Timothy join him as soon as possible, they left him.

[16] While Paul was waiting for them in Athens, he was deeply distressed to see that the city was full of idols. [17] So he argued in the synagogue with the Jews and the devout persons, and also in the marketplace[e] every day with those who happened to be there. [18] Also some Epicurean and Stoic philosophers debated with him. Some said, "What does this babbler want to say?" Others said, "He seems to be a proclaimer of foreign divinities." (This was because he was telling the good news about Jesus and the resurrection.) [19] So they took him and brought

[a] Gk *brothers*
[b] Gk *they*
[c] Or *the Christ*
[d] Gk *politarchs*
[e] Or *civic center*; Gk *agora*

17.1–15: From Thessalonica to Athens. Paul founds churches in Thessalonica and Beroea. **1:** *Amphipolis and Apollonia* were on the Via Egnatia between Philippi and *Thessalonica* (modern Saloniki), capital of the second district of Macedonia. **2:** *His custom,* the pattern of starting a new mission in a synagogue (vv. 1,10,17) is explicitly stated (see 13.5n.; 14.1n.). **3:** See 3.18n. **4:** *Devout Greeks,* see 16.14n. *Leading women,* v. 12; contrast 13.50. **5:** *Jealous,* 13.45. On the typical nature of the scene, see 13.50n.; cf. 1 Thess 2.14–16. **6–7:** *City authorities,* i.e., politarchs, a Macedonian title for non-Roman magistrates. Serious charges of activities that threaten Roman order are made; cf. Lk 23.2. **9:** *Had taken bail from Jason,* had made him financially and legally responsible for future good behavior. **10:** *Beroea,* a city of Macedonia, 36 mi (58 km) west-southwest of Thessalonica. **11–12:** *Jews* and Gentiles believe (15.14n.). *Greek women and men of high standing,* Christianity is attracting people with status (16.37–38n.). **14:** *To the coast,* where he would take a ship to Athens (v. 15).

17.16–34: Paul at Athens. The apostle is portrayed as the first Christian philosopher, using Stoic and Jewish arguments. **16:** *Waiting . . . in Athens,* cf. 1 Thess 3.1–2. *Full of idols,* v. 22; cf. 1 Thess 1.9. **18:** *Epicurean and Stoic philosophers,* recognizable tenets from both groups are incorporated into Paul's speech in vv. 22–31. *Babbler,* a term of disparagement; the Gk word is literally used in reference to birds to mean "picking up seeds," of persons "one who makes a living by picking up scraps" (here implied: "of learning"). *Jesus and* Anastasis (the Gk word for

him to the Areopagus and asked him, "May we know what this new teaching is that you are presenting? 20 It sounds rather strange to us, so we would like to know what it means." 21 Now all the Athenians and the foreigners living there would spend their time in nothing but telling or hearing something new.

22 Then Paul stood in front of the Areopagus and said, "Athenians, I see how extremely religious you are in every way. 23 For as I went through the city and looked carefully at the objects of your worship, I found among them an altar with the inscription, 'To an unknown god.' What therefore you worship as unknown, this I proclaim to you. 24 The God who made the world and everything in it, he who is Lord of heaven and earth, does not live in shrines made by human hands, 25 nor is he served by human hands, as though he needed anything, since he himself gives to all mortals life and breath and all things. 26 From one ancestor[a] he made all nations to inhabit the whole earth, and he allotted the times of their existence and the boundaries of the places where they would live, 27 so that they would search for God[b] and perhaps grope for him and find him—though indeed he is not far from each one of us. 28 For 'In him we live and move and have our being'; as even some of your own poets have said,

'For we too are his offspring.'

29 Since we are God's offspring, we ought not to think that the deity is like gold, or silver, or stone, an image formed by the art and imagination of mortals. 30 While God has overlooked the times of human ignorance, now he commands all people everywhere to repent, 31 because he has fixed a day on which he will have the world judged in righteousness by a man whom he has appointed, and of this he has given assurance to all by raising him from the dead."

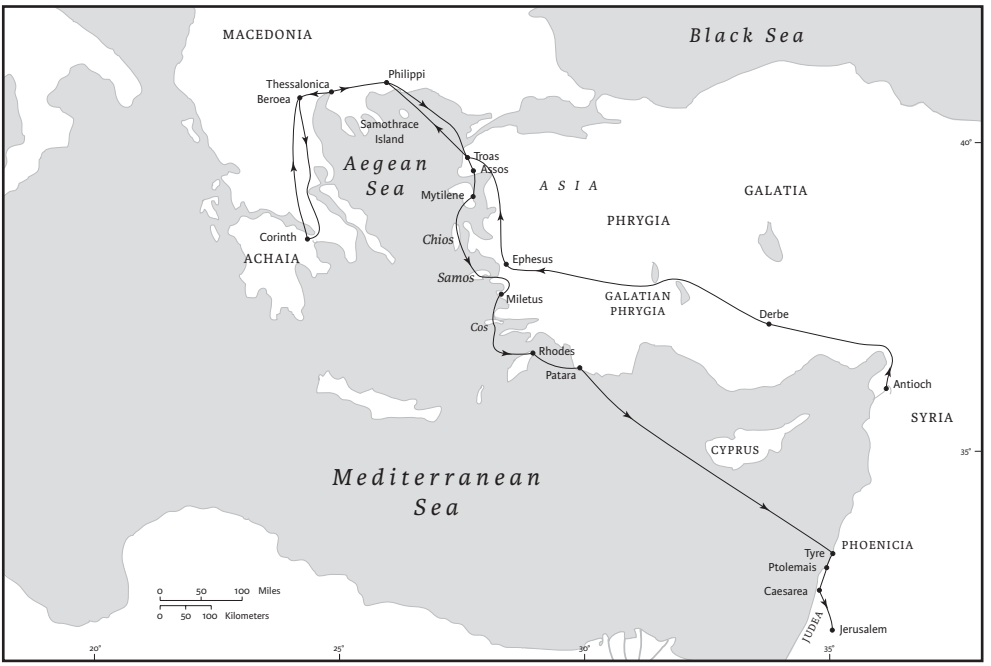
32 When they heard of the resurrection of the dead, some scoffed; but others said, "We will hear you again about this." 33 At that point Paul left them. 34 But some of them joined him and became believers, including Dionysius the Areopagite and a woman named Damaris, and others with them.

18 After this Paul[c] left Athens and went to Corinth. 2 There he found a Jew named Aquila, a native of Pontus, who had recently

[a] Gk *From one*; other ancient authorities read *From one blood*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *the Lord*
[c] Gk *he*

resurrection) are mistaken for two *foreign divinities.* **19:** *Took him,* could either imply arrest or friendly escort, and *Areopagus* could refer either to arraignment before the Council of the Areopagus (essentially the chief Roman court in Athens) or the Areopagus hill west of the Acropolis. The request *"May we know . . . ?"* suggests a more relaxed setting for discussion, though allusions to Socrates before the Areopagus court are surely intended (see v. 34). **21:** The curiosity of *the Athenians* was proverbial. **22–31:** Contrast the approach to Gentiles attributed to Paul in this speech with Rom 1.18–31. **22:** *Extremely religious,* can be taken in a good or bad sense. It connects to "idols" in v. 16 and leads to v. 23. **23:** *To an unknown god,* such an inscription has not been found in Athens to date; the plural form is attested. The scene intends to illustrate the anxiety of the "extremely religious" (v. 22) lest the honor due to any deity be inadvertently omitted and gives Paul an opening to *proclaim* the Christian message. **24–25:** *God* as the creator (14.15) is an idea common to Jews (Gen 1.1) and Greeks (e.g., Plato, *Timaeus*). *Shrines made by human hands,* 7.48n. **26:** *From one ancestor,* Adam. **27:** God created "all nations" (v. 26) to *search for God* (cf. 14.17). That God was near to all people was a Stoic belief. **28:** Although the first quotation is sometimes attributed to Epimenides, its language is probably to be associated with Posidonius (based on Plato); the second quotation is from Aratus (*Phaenomena* 5), a Greek poet of Cilicia educated as a Stoic. In Paul's usage the original pantheistic sense of both "quotations" is reinterpreted. **30:** *Ignorance,* cf. 14.16. **31:** That the *world* will be *judged* (10.42) . . . *by a man,* i.e., Jesus (2.22,36), *appointed* by God has been guaranteed by the resurrection. **32:** *Some scoffed,* Greek thought made no provision for resurrection of the body (e.g., Aeschylus, *Eumenides,* 647–648; cf. 1 Cor 15.12,35), *but others* were intrigued. **34:** The conversion of *Dionysius,* a member of the Areopagus court, contributes to the theme of rulers attracted to Christianity. The note about *Damaris* conforms to a pattern found in both the Gospel (e.g., Lk 15.3–10) and Acts (e.g., 5.1–11) of juxtaposing characters of both genders.

18.1–17: Paul in Corinth. See 1 Cor 1–4 for Paul's own account. **1:** *Corinth,* the old city was famous but was razed in 146 BCE by the Romans. It was refounded as a colony in 44 BCE by Julius Caesar, became the capital of the



Chs 18–21: Third missionary journey of Paul.

come from Italy with his wife Priscilla, because Claudius had ordered all Jews to leave Rome. Paul[a] went to see them, 3 and, because he was of the same trade, he stayed with them, and they worked together—by trade they were tentmakers. 4 Every sabbath he would argue in the synagogue and would try to convince Jews and Greeks.

5 When Silas and Timothy arrived from Macedonia, Paul was occupied with proclaiming the word,[b] testifying to the Jews that the Messiah[c] was Jesus. 6 When they opposed and reviled him, in protest he shook the dust from his clothes[d] and said to them, "Your blood be on your own heads! I am innocent. From now on I will go to the Gentiles." 7 Then he left the synagogue[e] and went to the house of a man named Titius[f] Justus, a worshiper of God; his house was next door to the synagogue. 8 Crispus, the official of the synagogue, became a believer in the Lord, together with all his household; and many of the Corinthians who heard Paul became believers and were baptized. 9 One night the Lord said to Paul in a vision, "Do not be afraid, but speak

[a] Gk *He*
[b] Gk *with the word*
[c] Or *the Christ*
[d] Gk *reviled him, he shook out his clothes*
[e] Gk *left there*
[f] Other ancient authorities read *Titus*

senatorial province of Achaia in 27 BCE, and quickly emerged as an important commercial center owing to its location on the isthmus linking the Peloponnesus to mainland Greece with neighboring seaports to the east and west. **2:** *Pontus,* a Roman province of Asia Minor on the Black Sea. An edict issued by the emperor *Claudius* (see Suetonius, *Claudius* 25) expelling the *Jews* from *Rome* can probably be dated to 49 CE; this verse suggests that the trouble was connected with Jewish Christians. *Aquila* and *Priscilla* (or Prisca) worked with Paul, according to Rom 16.3–5. The fact that a church met in their house (Rom 16.5; 1 Cor 16.19) suggests that they were wealthy. In the epistles (including 2 Tim 4.19) their names appear in reverse order. **3:** *Same trade . . . tentmakers,* see 20.34. *He stayed with them,* possibly "lodged with them." **4:** *Synagogue,* 13.5n.; *Jews and Greeks,* 15.14n. **6:** 13.46n.,51n. *Your blood . . . ,* 2 Sam 1.16; Mt 27.25. **7:** *Worshiper of God,* 16.14n. **8:** *Crispus,* his baptism by Paul is mentioned as an exceptional case in 1 Cor 1.14. The conversion of the *official of the synagogue* (i.e., president; see 13.15) and his

and do not be silent; 10 for I am with you,
and no one will lay a hand on you to harm
you, for there are many in this city who are
my people." 11 He stayed there a year and six
months, teaching the word of God among
them.

12 But when Gallio was proconsul of Acha-
ia, the Jews made a united attack on Paul and
brought him before the tribunal. 13 They said,
"This man is persuading people to worship
God in ways that are contrary to the law."
14 Just as Paul was about to speak, Gallio said
to the Jews, "If it were a matter of crime or
serious villainy, I would be justified in accept-
ing the complaint of you Jews; 15 but since
it is a matter of questions about words and
names and your own law, see to it yourselves;
I do not wish to be a judge of these matters."
16 And he dismissed them from the tribunal.
17 Then all of them[a] seized Sosthenes, the of-
ficial of the synagogue, and beat him in front
of the tribunal. But Gallio paid no attention to
any of these things.

18 After staying there for a considerable
time, Paul said farewell to the believers[b] and
sailed for Syria, accompanied by Priscilla and
Aquila. At Cenchreae he had his hair cut, for
he was under a vow. 19 When they reached
Ephesus, he left them there, but first he
himself went into the synagogue and had a
discussion with the Jews. 20 When they asked
him to stay longer, he declined; 21 but on taking
leave of them, he said, "I[c] will return to you, if
God wills." Then he set sail from Ephesus.

22 When he had landed at Caesarea, he
went up to Jerusalem[d] and greeted the
church, and then went down to Antioch.
23 After spending some time there he depart-
ed and went from place to place through the
region of Galatia[e] and Phrygia, strengthening
all the disciples.

24 Now there came to Ephesus a Jew
named Apollos, a native of Alexandria. He
was an eloquent man, well-versed in the
scriptures. 25 He had been instructed in the
Way of the Lord; and he spoke with burning
enthusiasm and taught accurately the things
concerning Jesus, though he knew only the
baptism of John. 26 He began to speak boldly
in the synagogue; but when Priscilla and
Aquila heard him, they took him aside and
explained the Way of God to him more ac-
curately. 27 And when he wished to cross over
to Achaia, the believers[b] encouraged him
and wrote to the disciples to welcome him.
On his arrival he greatly helped those who
through grace had become believers, 28 for
he powerfully refuted the Jews in public,
showing by the scriptures that the Messiah[f]
is Jesus.

[a] Other ancient authorities read *all the Greeks*
[b] Gk *brothers*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *I must at all costs keep the approaching festival in Jerusalem, but I*
[d] Gk *went up*
[e] Gk *the Galatian region*
[f] Or *the Christ*

household (16.15n.) illustrates the continued success of Paul's mission among Jews (in spite of v. 6) in addition to Gentiles (*many of the Corinthians . . . became believers*). **12:** L. Junius *Gallio,* older brother of the philosopher Seneca, *proconsul of Achaia* about 52 CE. The dating of Gallio's proconsulship is crucial for the chronological reconstruction of Paul's career. **13:** *The law,* could mean the Jewish law (as Gallio takes it in v. 15) or Roman law, i.e., charges of sedition similar to the complaints raised in 16.21 and 17.7 (the latter would make more sense to present before a proconsul). **14–15:** *Gallio* again voices one of the subthemes of the book: Christianity is not a cause of concern for Rome. Roman representatives tend to be either outwardly favorable (e.g., Cornelius, Sergius Paulus) or at worst indifferent to Christianity, suggesting that it need not be viewed as incompatible with Rome (see 10.1n.). **17:** *Sosthenes* may be the one mentioned in 1 Cor 1.1, but the name is common.

18.18–23: End of the second missionary journey and beginning of the third. Paul returns to Antioch and goes back to Asia Minor. **18:** Paul *had his hair cut* as a temporary nazirite *vow* (21.23–24; Num 6.1–21), but the rule was to cut the hair off at the end of the vow. *Cenchreae,* the eastern port of Corinth (Rom 16.1). **19:** *Ephesus,* on the Aegean coast, was the capital of the Roman province of Asia. **22:** *Caesarea,* see 8.40n. *Jerusalem* still appears as the mother church. *Antioch,* see 11.19n. **23:** *The region of Galatia and Phrygia,* see 16.6n.

18.24–28: Apollos in Ephesus. 25: *The Way,* see 9.2n. Although he *taught accurately,* he had not received Christian baptism (13.25n.). **26:** *Speak boldly,* 13.46n. It is not disclosed in what sense things were *explained . . . more accurately.* **27–28:** For his activity in Corinth, see 1 Cor 1.12; 3.1–9,21–23.

19 While Apollos was in Corinth, Paul passed through the interior regions and came to Ephesus, where he found some disciples. [2] He said to them, "Did you receive the Holy Spirit when you became believers?" They replied, "No, we have not even heard that there is a Holy Spirit." [3] Then he said, "Into what then were you baptized?" They answered, "Into John's baptism." [4] Paul said, "John baptized with the baptism of repentance, telling the people to believe in the one who was to come after him, that is, in Jesus." [5] On hearing this, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus. [6] When Paul had laid his hands on them, the Holy Spirit came upon them, and they spoke in tongues and prophesied— [7] altogether there were about twelve of them.

[8] He entered the synagogue and for three months spoke out boldly, and argued persuasively about the kingdom of God. [9] When some stubbornly refused to believe and spoke evil of the Way before the congregation, he left them, taking the disciples with him, and argued daily in the lecture hall of Tyrannus.[a] [10] This continued for two years, so that all the residents of Asia, both Jews and Greeks, heard the word of the Lord.

[11] God did extraordinary miracles through Paul, [12] so that when the handkerchiefs or aprons that had touched his skin were brought to the sick, their diseases left them, and the evil spirits came out of them. [13] Then some itinerant Jewish exorcists tried to use the name of the Lord Jesus over those who had evil spirits, saying, "I adjure you by the Jesus whom Paul proclaims." [14] Seven sons of a Jewish high priest named Sceva were doing this. [15] But the evil spirit said to them in reply, "Jesus I know, and Paul I know; but who are you?" [16] Then the man with the evil spirit leaped on them, mastered them all, and so overpowered them that they fled out of the house naked and wounded. [17] When this became known to all residents of Ephesus, both Jews and Greeks, everyone was awestruck; and the name of the Lord Jesus was praised. [18] Also many of those who became believers confessed and disclosed their practices. [19] A number of those who practiced magic collected their books and burned them publicly; when the value of these books[b] was calculated, it was found to come to fifty thousand silver coins. [20] So the word of the Lord grew mightily and prevailed.

[21] Now after these things had been accomplished, Paul resolved in the Spirit to go through Macedonia and Achaia, and then to go on to Jerusalem. He said, "After I have gone there, I must also see Rome." [22] So he sent two of his helpers, Timothy and Erastus, to Macedonia, while he himself stayed for some time longer in Asia.

[23] About that time no little disturbance broke out concerning the Way. [24] A man named Demetrius, a silversmith who made

[a] Other ancient authorities read *of a certain Tyrannus, from eleven o'clock in the morning to four in the afternoon*

[b] Gk *them*

19.1–41: Paul's long ministry in Ephesus. Paul wrote 1 and 2 Corinthians during the period of more than two years (v. 10; cf. 20.31) portrayed here. **1:** *The interior regions* of Asia Minor (18.23). *Disciples* elsewhere in Acts means Christians. **2:** All who read the Jewish scriptures would know of *a Holy Spirit* (Ps 51.11; Isa 63.10,11). The reference may be to outward signs of the Spirit's presence (v. 6; 10.44–48n.). **3:** *John's baptism,* 13.25n. **5–6:** See 6.6n.; 8.17. **8:** *Synagogue,* 13.5n. *Kingdom of God,* 1.3n. **9:** *The Way,* v. 23; see 9.2n. *Tyrannus,* perhaps a local philosopher; the name appears in inscriptions in Ephesus. The hours mentioned in note *a* suggest the building was available to Paul during siesta time. **10:** During Paul's stay of *two years . . . all the residents of Asia* heard the word (note the churches of Rev 2–3). The mixed character of the audience (*Jews and Greeks*) continues to be noted (15.14n.). **12:** Compare 5.15; on parallels between Peter and Paul, see 14.8–18n. **13:** For *Jewish exorcists,* see Lk 11.19. For use of the *name* outside the circle of Jesus, see Mk 9.38–39. **14:** *Sceva,* a high priest by this name is not known. **15–16:** The story makes it clear that the name (v. 17; 3.6n.) does not belong to the realm of magic. On a number of occasions Acts attempts to distinguish Christian miracle working from the activities of religious charlatans and profiteers (8.18–24; 13.6–12; 16.16–19). **19:** Ephesus was such a noted center of *magic* that magical books were often called "Ephesian Scripts." **21:** *Must . . . see Rome,* 23.11; 27.24; cf. Rom 1.13–15; 15.22–29. **22:** A city treasurer named *Erastus* is mentioned at Rom 16.23; the city of his office is not named, but Romans was likely written in Corinth; the name also appears at 2 Tim 4.20 ("Erastus remained in Corinth"). A Corinthian

silver shrines of Artemis, brought no little business to the artisans. 25 These he gathered together, with the workers of the same trade, and said, "Men, you know that we get our wealth from this business. 26 You also see and hear that not only in Ephesus but in almost the whole of Asia this Paul has persuaded and drawn away a considerable number of people by saying that gods made with hands are not gods. 27 And there is danger not only that this trade of ours may come into disrepute but also that the temple of the great goddess Artemis will be scorned, and she will be deprived of her majesty that brought all Asia and the world to worship her."

28 When they heard this, they were enraged and shouted, "Great is Artemis of the Ephesians!" 29 The city was filled with the confusion; and people[a] rushed together to the theater, dragging with them Gaius and Aristarchus, Macedonians who were Paul's travel companions. 30 Paul wished to go into the crowd, but the disciples would not let him; 31 even some officials of the province of Asia,[b] who were friendly to him, sent him a message urging him not to venture into the theater. 32 Meanwhile, some were shouting one thing, some another; for the assembly was in confusion, and most of them did not know why they had come together. 33 Some of the crowd gave instructions to Alexander, whom the Jews had pushed forward. And Alexander motioned for silence and tried to make a defense before the people. 34 But when they recognized that he was a Jew, for about two hours all of them shouted in unison, "Great is Artemis of the Ephesians!"

35 But when the town clerk had quieted the crowd, he said, "Citizens of Ephesus, who is there that does not know that the city of the Ephesians is the temple keeper of the great Artemis and of the statue that fell from heaven?[c] 36 Since these things cannot be denied, you ought to be quiet and do nothing rash. 37 You have brought these men here who are neither temple robbers nor blasphemers of our[d] goddess. 38 If therefore Demetrius and the artisans with him have a complaint against anyone, the courts are open, and there are proconsuls; let them bring charges there against one another. 39 If there is anything further[e] you want to know, it must be settled in the regular assembly. 40 For we are in danger of being charged with rioting today, since there is no cause that we can give to justify this commotion." 41 When he had said this, he dismissed the assembly.

20 After the uproar had ceased, Paul sent for the disciples; and after encouraging them and saying farewell, he left for Macedonia. 2 When he had gone through those regions and had given the believers[f] much encouragement, he came to Greece, 3 where he stayed for three months. He was about to set sail for Syria when a plot was made against him by the Jews, and so he decided to return through Macedonia. 4 He

[a] Gk *they*
[b] Gk *some of the Asiarchs*
[c] Meaning of Gk uncertain
[d] Other ancient authorities read *your*
[e] Other ancient authorities read *about other matters*
[f] Gk *given them*

inscription mentions a Roman official (an aedile) by this name. **24:** *Shrines,* apparently miniature temples for use in religious ceremonies or as souvenirs or amulets. *Artemis,* chief divinity of Ephesus; her temple was one of the seven wonders of the ancient world. **25:** *Wealth,* the story joins others in which gain by religious means is criticized (see vv. 15–16n.). **29:** The *theater* has been excavated and could seat at least 24,000. **31:** *Asiarchs* (in note *b*) held office in a league of the cities of Asia and promoted the worship of the emperor. They were *friendly to* Paul and so portray again the favorable disposition of high officials toward Christianity. Such acceptance by high-status individuals suggested to Christian readers that social respectability was not beyond their grasp (16.37–38n.). **35:** *Temple keeper,* a designation assumed by Asiatic cities that had built a temple in honor of their patron god or the emperor. *The statue that fell from heaven,* apparently a meteorite. **36–40:** An argument that Christians were entitled to due process and that the actions taken thus far were unwarranted is put into the mouth of the town clerk.

20.1–6: The last visit to Greece. 2: *Through those regions,* revisiting the churches of Philippi, Thessalonica, and Beroea (see 19.21). **3:** *Three months,* at Corinth (see 2 Cor 12.14; 13.1; the problems evident in 2 Corinthians are not mentioned). *A plot . . . by the Jews,* 9.24; 20.19; 23.12. **4:** Paul's companions seem to be local representa-

was accompanied by Sopater son of Pyrrhus from Beroea, by Aristarchus and Secundus from Thessalonica, by Gaius from Derbe, and by Timothy, as well as by Tychicus and Trophimus from Asia. [5] They went ahead and were waiting for us in Troas; [6] but we sailed from Philippi after the days of Unleavened Bread, and in five days we joined them in Troas, where we stayed for seven days.

[7] On the first day of the week, when we met to break bread, Paul was holding a discussion with them; since he intended to leave the next day, he continued speaking until midnight. [8] There were many lamps in the room upstairs where we were meeting. [9] A young man named Eutychus, who was sitting in the window, began to sink off into a deep sleep while Paul talked still longer. Overcome by sleep, he fell to the ground three floors below and was picked up dead. [10] But Paul went down, and bending over him took him in his arms, and said, "Do not be alarmed, for his life is in him." [11] Then Paul went upstairs, and after he had broken bread and eaten, he continued to converse with them until dawn; then he left. [12] Meanwhile they had taken the boy away alive and were not a little comforted.

[13] We went ahead to the ship and set sail for Assos, intending to take Paul on board there; for he had made this arrangement, intending to go by land himself. [14] When he met us in Assos, we took him on board and went to Mitylene. [15] We sailed from there, and on the following day we arrived opposite Chios. The next day we touched at Samos, and[a] the day after that we came to Miletus. [16] For Paul had decided to sail past Ephesus, so that he might not have to spend time in Asia; he was eager to be in Jerusalem, if possible, on the day of Pentecost.

[17] From Miletus he sent a message to Ephesus, asking the elders of the church to meet him. [18] When they came to him, he said to them:

"You yourselves know how I lived among you the entire time from the first day that I set foot in Asia, [19] serving the Lord with all humility and with tears, enduring the trials that came to me through the plots of the Jews. [20] I did not shrink from doing anything helpful, proclaiming the message to you and teaching you publicly and from house to house, [21] as I testified to both Jews and Greeks about repentance toward God and faith toward our Lord Jesus. [22] And now, as a captive to the Spirit,[b] I am on my way to Jerusalem, not knowing what will happen to me there, [23] except that the Holy Spirit testifies to me in every city that imprisonment and persecutions are waiting for me. [24] But I do not count my life of any value to myself, if only I may finish my course and the ministry that I received from the Lord Jesus, to testify to the good news of God's grace.

[25] "And now I know that none of you, among whom I have gone about proclaim-

[a] Other ancient authorities add *after remaining at Trogyllium*

[b] Or *And now, bound in the spirit*

tives of churches that have contributed to the collection for Jerusalem organized by Paul (see 11.29n.) who are traveling with him to deliver it (Rom 15.25–29; 1 Cor 16.3–4). Apart from 24.17 there is no hint of this major project of Paul's in Acts. *Sopater,* perhaps the Sosipater of Rom 16.21. *Aristarchus,* 19.29; 27.2 (Col 4.10; Philem 24). A *Gaius* from Macedonia is mentioned in 19.29, but Derbe is in the same region as *Timothy*'s home (Lystra, see 16.1). *Tychicus,* Eph 6.21; Col 4.7; 2 Tim 4.12; Titus 3.12. *Trophimus,* 2 Tim 4.20. **5:** The "we" passages (16.10n.) resume here at Philippi, the city where the previous passage ended (16.17). **6:** *Days of Unleavened Bread,* 12.3n.

20.7–38: The raising of Eutychus and the speech to the Ephesian elders. 7: *The first day of the week,* Sunday. *Break bread,* see 2.42n.; 27.36–37. **9:** *Eutychus,* a not uncommon name meaning "fortunate." *Three floors,* a tenement-style building is pictured. **10:** An understated miraculous resurrection (cf. 14.19–20). **13:** *Assos,* a port town on the coast, southwest of Troas, opposite the northern end of the island of Lesbos. **14:** *Mitylene,* capital city of Lesbos. **15:** *Chios,* an island south of Lesbos. *Samos,* an island southwest of Chios. *Miletus,* an important port on the western coast of Asia Minor at the mouth of the Meander River. The "we" passages resume again at 21.1. **16:** *Sail past Ephesus,* while on route from Chios to Samos. *Pentecost,* see 2.1–41n. **17:** *Elders,* 14.23n. **18–35:** Paul's "farewell" address, the only speech in Acts explicitly addressed to Christians. It reviews Paul's accomplishments as depicted in Acts and looks forward to paint a picture of the church in Luke's day. **21:** Paul's mission has been consistently portrayed as directed to both *Jews and Greeks.* **24–25:** *Finish my course . . . testify,* a premonition of

ing the kingdom, will ever see my face again. 26 Therefore I declare to you this day that I am not responsible for the blood of any of you, 27 for I did not shrink from declaring to you the whole purpose of God. 28 Keep watch over yourselves and over all the flock, of which the Holy Spirit has made you overseers, to shepherd the church of God[a] that he obtained with the blood of his own Son.[b] 29 I know that after I have gone, savage wolves will come in among you, not sparing the flock. 30 Some even from your own group will come distorting the truth in order to entice the disciples to follow them. 31 Therefore be alert, remembering that for three years I did not cease night or day to warn everyone with tears. 32 And now I commend you to God and to the message of his grace, a message that is able to build you up and to give you the inheritance among all who are sanctified. 33 I coveted no one's silver or gold or clothing. 34 You know for yourselves that I worked with my own hands to support myself and my companions. 35 In all this I have given you an example that by such work we must support the weak, remembering the words of the Lord Jesus, for he himself said, 'It is more blessed to give than to receive.'"

36 When he had finished speaking, he knelt down with them all and prayed. 37 There was much weeping among them all; they embraced Paul and kissed him, 38 grieving especially because of what he had said, that they would not see him again. Then they brought him to the ship.

21 When we had parted from them and set sail, we came by a straight course to Cos, and the next day to Rhodes, and from there to Patara.[c] 2 When we found a ship bound for Phoenicia, we went on board and set sail. 3 We came in sight of Cyprus; and leaving it on our left, we sailed to Syria and landed at Tyre, because the ship was to unload its cargo there. 4 We looked up the disciples and stayed there for seven days. Through the Spirit they told Paul not to go on to Jerusalem. 5 When our days there were ended, we left and proceeded on our journey; and all of them, with wives and children, escorted us outside the city. There we knelt down on the beach and prayed 6 and said farewell to one another. Then we went on board the ship, and they returned home.

7 When we had finished[d] the voyage from Tyre, we arrived at Ptolemais; and we greeted the believers[e] and stayed with them for one day. 8 The next day we left and came to Caesarea; and we went into the house of Philip the evangelist, one of the seven, and stayed with him. 9 He had four unmarried daughters[f] who had the gift of prophecy. 10 While we were staying there for several days, a prophet named Agabus came down from Judea. 11 He came to us and took Paul's belt, bound his own feet and hands with it, and said, "Thus says the Holy Spirit, 'This is the way the Jews in Jerusalem will bind the man who owns this belt and will hand him over to the Gentiles.'" 12 When we heard this, we and

[a] Other ancient authorities read *of the Lord*
[b] Or *with his own blood*; Gk *with the blood of his Own*
[c] Other ancient authorities add *and Myra*
[d] Or *continued*
[e] Gk *brothers*
[f] Gk *four daughters, virgins,*

martyrdom (2 Tim 4.6). **27:** *Purpose of God,* cf. 2.23; 4.28; 5.38–39; 13.36. **28:** *Overseers* (Gk "episkopoi"), used to designate officials in secular institutions; here it indicates those described as elders in v. 17. *Shepherd,* an image for leadership both in the Hebrew Bible (Jer 3.15; 23.1–4; Ezek 34.1–24) and in nonbiblical writings that also appears in the New Testament (Jn 21.15–17; Eph 4.11, "pastors"). In 1 Pet 5.1–4 elders are exhorted to "tend the flock of God." *With his own blood* (note *b*), understanding Jesus as a representative of God. *Church* has universal overtones; see 5.11n. Elsewhere in Luke-Acts, emphasis is placed on the resurrection, not the redemptive death of Christ. **29–30:** Mt 7.15; Mk 13.22; the Pastoral Epistles. **34:** 18.3; 1 Cor 9.1–18. **35:** A saying of *Jesus* not found in the Gospels.

21.1–16: Journey to Jerusalem. 1: The "we" passages (16.10n.) resume. *Cos,* an island off the southwestern coast of Asia Minor. **4:** V. 12; 20.23. **7:** *Ptolemais,* a port town in Phoenicia (modern Akko, near Haifa), 22 mi (35 km) south of Tyre. **8:** *Philip the evangelist* (8.5n.) had arrived in *Caesarea* (8.40n.) some time before. *One of the seven,* see 6.1–7. **9:** Philip's *daughters* became important figures in the church traditions of Hierapolis and Ephesus. **10–11:** *Agabus* (11.28), like Hebrew prophets (1 Kings 11.29–32; Isa 20.2–6), performs

the people there urged him not to go up to Jerusalem. 13 Then Paul answered, "What are you doing, weeping and breaking my heart? For I am ready not only to be bound but even to die in Jerusalem for the name of the Lord Jesus." 14 Since he would not be persuaded, we remained silent except to say, "The Lord's will be done."

15 After these days we got ready and started to go up to Jerusalem. 16 Some of the disciples from Caesarea also came along and brought us to the house of Mnason of Cyprus, an early disciple, with whom we were to stay.

17 When we arrived in Jerusalem, the brothers welcomed us warmly. 18 The next day Paul went with us to visit James; and all the elders were present. 19 After greeting them, he related one by one the things that God had done among the Gentiles through his ministry. 20 When they heard it, they praised God. Then they said to him, "You see, brother, how many thousands of believers there are among the Jews, and they are all zealous for the law. 21 They have been told about you that you teach all the Jews living among the Gentiles to forsake Moses, and that you tell them not to circumcise their children or observe the customs. 22 What then is to be done? They will certainly hear that you have come. 23 So do what we tell you. We have four men who are under a vow. 24 Join these men, go through the rite of purification with them, and pay for the shaving of their heads. Thus all will know that there is nothing in what they have been told about you, but that you yourself observe and guard the law. 25 But as for the Gentiles who have become believers, we have sent a letter with our judgment that they should abstain from what has been sacrificed to idols and from blood and from what is strangled[a] and from fornication." 26 Then Paul took the men, and the next day, having purified himself, he entered the temple with them, making public the completion of the days of purification when the sacrifice would be made for each of them.

27 When the seven days were almost completed, the Jews from Asia, who had seen him in the temple, stirred up the whole crowd. They seized him, 28 shouting, "Fellow Israelites, help! This is the man who is teaching everyone everywhere against our people, our law, and this place; more than that, he has actually brought Greeks into the temple and has defiled this holy place." 29 For they had previously seen Trophimus the Ephesian with him in the city, and they supposed that Paul had brought him into the temple. 30 Then all the city was aroused, and the people rushed together. They seized Paul and dragged him out of the temple, and immediately the doors were shut. 31 While they were trying to kill him, word came to the tribune of the cohort that all Jerusalem was in an uproar. 32 Immediately he took soldiers and centurions and ran down to them. When they saw the tribune and the soldiers, they stopped beating Paul. 33 Then the tribune came, arrested him, and ordered him to be

[a] Other ancient authorities lack *and from what is strangled*

a symbolic act. The prediction is not strictly fulfilled in the chapters that follow. **12:** V. 4. **14:** Paul appears as a heroic figure, cf. Lk 22.42. **16:** *An early disciple,* note Christianity in connection with *Cyprus* at 4.36; 11.19–20; 13.4–12.

21.17–26: Paul's observance of Jewish tradition. 17–20: The *Jerusalem* church accepts Paul and his accomplishments as complementary to their own in a harmonious portrait of unity (cf. Gal 2). **18:** *James,* see 12.17n.; *the elders,* 11.30n. The "we" passage stops here. **20:** *Thousands of believers,* Acts represents the success of Christianity among *Jews* as phenomenal (cf. 6.7). *Zealous for the law,* see 11.2n.; 15.1n., 15.5n.; cf. Gal 2. **21:** *Moses,* see 15.21n. The charge has been anticipated (16.3n.). The informants are not identified (see v. 28). **23–24:** Paul can demonstrate his faithfulness to the law by undergoing *purification* for uncleanness with some others and paying the expenses upon their release from a nazirite *vow* (18.18n.). **25:** He is told of the decree (15.20, 29) as though he had not heard of it (see 16.4).

21.27–40: Uproar in the Temple and arrest of Paul. Seized after a disturbance in the Temple, Paul begins his defense. **28:** It was a capital offense for non-Jews to pass beyond the Court of the Gentiles; an inscription stating this has been discovered (cf. Josephus, *J.W.* 5.193–194; 6.125–126). **29:** *Trophimus,* 20.4; 2 Tim 4.20. **31:** A military *tribune* commanded a *cohort* (a detachment of 1,000 men); this would have been stationed in the cita-

bound with two chains; he inquired who he was and what he had done. 34 Some in the crowd shouted one thing, some another; and as he could not learn the facts because of the uproar, he ordered him to be brought into the barracks. 35 When Paul[a] came to the steps, the violence of the mob was so great that he had to be carried by the soldiers. 36 The crowd that followed kept shouting, "Away with him!"

37 Just as Paul was about to be brought into the barracks, he said to the tribune, "May I say something to you?" The tribune[b] replied, "Do you know Greek? 38 Then you are not the Egyptian who recently stirred up a revolt and led the four thousand assassins out into the wilderness?" 39 Paul replied, "I am a Jew, from Tarsus in Cilicia, a citizen of an important city; I beg you, let me speak to the people." 40 When he had given him permission, Paul stood on the steps and motioned to the people for silence; and when there was a great hush, he addressed them in the Hebrew[c] language, saying:

22 "Brothers and fathers, listen to the defense that I now make before you."

2 When they heard him addressing them in Hebrew,[c] they became even more quiet. Then he said:

3 "I am a Jew, born in Tarsus in Cilicia, but brought up in this city at the feet of Gamaliel, educated strictly according to our ancestral law, being zealous for God, just as all of you are today. 4 I persecuted this Way up to the point of death by binding both men and women and putting them in prison, 5 as the high priest and the whole council of elders can testify about me. From them I also received letters to the brothers in Damascus, and I went there in order to bind those who were there and to bring them back to Jerusalem for punishment.

6 "While I was on my way and approaching Damascus, about noon a great light from heaven suddenly shone about me. 7 I fell to the ground and heard a voice saying to me, 'Saul, Saul, why are you persecuting me?' 8 I answered, 'Who are you, Lord?' Then he said to me, 'I am Jesus of Nazareth[d] whom you are persecuting.' 9 Now those who were with me saw the light but did not hear the voice of the one who was speaking to me. 10 I asked, 'What am I to do, Lord?' The Lord said to me, 'Get up and go to Damascus; there you will be told everything that has been assigned to you to do.' 11 Since I could not see because of the brightness of that light, those who were with me took my hand and led me to Damascus.

12 "A certain Ananias, who was a devout man according to the law and well spoken of by all the Jews living there, 13 came to me; and standing beside me, he said, 'Brother Saul, regain your sight!' In that very hour I regained my sight and saw him. 14 Then he said, 'The God of our ancestors has chosen you to know his will, to see the Righteous One and to hear his own voice; 15 for you will be his witness to all the world of what you have seen and heard. 16 And now why do you delay? Get up, be baptized, and have your sins washed away, calling on his name.'

17 "After I had returned to Jerusalem and while I was praying in the temple, I fell into a trance 18 and saw Jesus[e] saying to me, 'Hurry

[a] Gk *he*
[b] Gk *He*
[c] That is, *Aramaic*
[d] Gk *the Nazorean*
[e] Gk *him*

del Antonia, which had access to the Temple courtyard (see Josephus, *J.W.* 5.244). **33:** Paul's case came into the hands of Roman, not Jewish, authorities. **36:** *Away with him,* 22.22; cf. Lk 23.18. **38:** The question in Greek may be: "Are you not the Egyptian?" Concerning *the Egyptian,* a pseudo-messiah who, with thousands of followers, had planned to take Jerusalem from the Romans, see Josephus, *J.W.* 2.261–263 (which puts the number at about 30,000); *Ant.* 20.169–172. **39:** *Paul* gives assurances that he is not the Egyptian. *Tarsus,* 9.30n.

22.1–29: Defense in the Temple and Roman custody. 1: *Defense* is the principal theme of the next chapters (24.10; 25.8,16; 26.1–2). It has a clear function at the level of the narrative and also allows Luke to endorse Paul for readers who may have had questions about him. **3:** *Brought up,* educated. *Gamaliel,* see 5.34n. *Zealous,* 21.20; in Gal 1.14 as a self-description of Paul. **4–21:** Cf. 9.1–18; 26.9–18. **9:** In 9.7 the companions heard the voice but saw no one. **14–15:** What Ananias says here is roughly parallel to what the Lord tells him in 9.15. **17–21:** The report of the vision is not given in the other conversion accounts. Paul's commission to the Gentiles is signifi-

and get out of Jerusalem quickly, because they will not accept your testimony about me.' 19 And I said, 'Lord, they themselves know that in every synagogue I imprisoned and beat those who believed in you. 20 And while the blood of your witness Stephen was shed, I myself was standing by, approving and keeping the coats of those who killed him.' 21 Then he said to me, 'Go, for I will send you far away to the Gentiles.'"

22 Up to this point they listened to him, but then they shouted, "Away with such a fellow from the earth! For he should not be allowed to live." 23 And while they were shouting, throwing off their cloaks, and tossing dust into the air, 24 the tribune directed that he was to be brought into the barracks, and ordered him to be examined by flogging, to find out the reason for this outcry against him. 25 But when they had tied him up with thongs,[a] Paul said to the centurion who was standing by, "Is it legal for you to flog a Roman citizen who is uncondemned?" 26 When the centurion heard that, he went to the tribune and said to him, "What are you about to do? This man is a Roman citizen." 27 The tribune came and asked Paul,[b] "Tell me, are you a Roman citizen?" And he said, "Yes." 28 The tribune answered, "It cost me a large sum of money to get my citizenship." Paul said, "But I was born a citizen." 29 Immediately those who were about to examine him drew back from him; and the tribune also was afraid, for he realized that Paul was a Roman citizen and that he had bound him.

30 Since he wanted to find out what Paul[c] was being accused of by the Jews, the next day he released him and ordered the chief priests and the entire council to meet. He brought Paul down and had him stand before them.

23 While Paul was looking intently at the council he said, "Brothers,[d] up to this day I have lived my life with a clear conscience before God." 2 Then the high priest Ananias ordered those standing near him to strike him on the mouth. 3 At this Paul said to him, "God will strike you, you whitewashed wall! Are you sitting there to judge me according to the law, and yet in violation of the law you order me to be struck?" 4 Those standing nearby said, "Do you dare to insult God's high priest?" 5 And Paul said, "I did not realize, brothers, that he was high priest; for it is written, 'You shall not speak evil of a leader of your people.'"

6 When Paul noticed that some were Sadducees and others were Pharisees, he called out in the council, "Brothers, I am a Pharisee, a son of Pharisees. I am on trial concerning the hope of the resurrection[e] of the dead." 7 When he said this, a dissension began between the Pharisees and the Sadducees, and the assembly was divided. 8 (The Sadducees say that there is no resurrection, or angel, or spirit; but the Pharisees acknowledge all three.) 9 Then a great clamor arose, and certain scribes of the Pharisees' group stood up and contended, "We find nothing wrong with this man. What if a spirit or an angel has spoken to him?" 10 When the dissension became violent, the tribune, fearing that they would tear Paul to pieces, ordered the soldiers to go down, take him by force, and bring him into the barracks.

[a] Or *up for the lashes*
[b] Gk *him*
[c] Gk *he*
[d] Gk *Men, brothers*
[e] Gk *concerning hope and resurrection*

cantly located in the *temple.* **20:** See 7.58. **24:** *Examined by flogging* to determine the truth of the matter (2 Cor 11.23). **25–29:** That Paul is *a Roman citizen* is disclosed at the last moment; see 16.37–38n. In the early part of the emperor Claudius's reign *citizenship* was often purchased for *a large sum.* The scene increases Paul's status for readers of Acts and reinforces the theme of the compatibility of Christianity and Roman life; there is nothing in Paul's letters to indicate that he was a Roman citizen.

22.30–23.11: Paul before the Sanhedrin. The tribune brings him before it to get evidence, not to try him. **22.30:** The tribune calls for an advisory meeting of the *council;* see 5.21n. **23.2:** *Ananias, high priest* in the reigns of Claudius and Nero, was murdered by rebels about 66 CE. **3:** *Whitewashed wall,* cf. Ezek 13.10–15; Mt 23.27. **5:** Ex 22.28. It is strange that Paul does not recognize the *high priest.* **6:** *Paul* as a *Pharisee* (26.5; Phil 3.5) realizes he can exploit a difference of opinion between *Sadducees* and *Pharisees* over the *resurrection* (see Josephus, *J.W.* 2.163–165). **8:** *Sadducees* denied a *resurrection* (Mk 12.18). **9:** The *Pharisees* side with Paul (see 15.5n.). **10:** Paul is

11 That night the Lord stood near him and
said, "Keep up your courage! For just as you
have testified for me in Jerusalem, so you
must bear witness also in Rome."
12 In the morning the Jews joined in a
conspiracy and bound themselves by an
oath neither to eat nor drink until they had
killed Paul. 13 There were more than forty who
joined in this conspiracy. 14 They went to the
chief priests and elders and said, "We have
strictly bound ourselves by an oath to taste
no food until we have killed Paul. 15 Now then,
you and the council must notify the tribune
to bring him down to you, on the pretext that
you want to make a more thorough examina-
tion of his case. And we are ready to do away
with him before he arrives."
16 Now the son of Paul's sister heard
about the ambush; so he went and gained
entrance to the barracks and told Paul.
17 Paul called one of the centurions and said,
"Take this young man to the tribune, for
he has something to report to him." 18 So
he took him, brought him to the tribune,
and said, "The prisoner Paul called me and
asked me to bring this young man to you;
he has something to tell you." 19 The tribune
took him by the hand, drew him aside
privately, and asked, "What is it that you
have to report to me?" 20 He answered, "The
Jews have agreed to ask you to bring Paul
down to the council tomorrow, as though
they were going to inquire more thoroughly
into his case. 21 But do not be persuaded by
them, for more than forty of their men are
lying in ambush for him. They have bound
themselves by an oath neither to eat nor
drink until they kill him. They are ready
now and are waiting for your consent."
22 So the tribune dismissed the young man,
ordering him, "Tell no one that you have
informed me of this."
23 Then he summoned two of the cen-
turions and said, "Get ready to leave by
nine o'clock tonight for Caesarea with two
hundred soldiers, seventy horsemen, and two
hundred spearmen. 24 Also provide mounts
for Paul to ride, and take him safely to Felix
the governor." 25 He wrote a letter to this
effect:
26 "Claudius Lysias to his Excellency the
governor Felix, greetings. 27 This man was
seized by the Jews and was about to be killed
by them, but when I had learned that he was
a Roman citizen, I came with the guard and
rescued him. 28 Since I wanted to know the
charge for which they accused him, I had him
brought to their council. 29 I found that he
was accused concerning questions of their
law, but was charged with nothing deserving
death or imprisonment. 30 When I was in-
formed that there would be a plot against the
man, I sent him to you at once, ordering his
accusers also to state before you what they
have against him.[a]"
31 So the soldiers, according to their
instructions, took Paul and brought him
during the night to Antipatris. 32 The next day
they let the horsemen go on with him, while
they returned to the barracks. 33 When they
came to Caesarea and delivered the letter
to the governor, they presented Paul also
before him. 34 On reading the letter, he asked
what province he belonged to, and when he
learned that he was from Cilicia, 35 he said,
"I will give you a hearing when your accus-

[a] Other ancient authorities add *Farewell*

rescued from mob violence for a second time by an agent of Rome (21.33–36). **11:** A vision (cf. 18.9–10) provides assurance that martyrdom will not occur in Jerusalem (21.13).

23.12–35: A plot to kill Paul results in his transfer to Caesarea, the seat of the Roman governor. **12:** *Conspiracy,* 9.24; 20.19. **16:** There is no other extant information about Paul's family. The notion of Paul's education in Jerusalem (22.3) could suggest that other family members were there. **17–22:** The prisoner Paul's remarkable access to the commanders shows some favoritism. **23:** *Caesarea,* 8.40n. The number of *soldiers* emphasizes the danger faced. The Gk word translated *spearmen* is obscure. **24:** Antonius *Felix,* procurator of Judea (ca. 52–56 CE), brother of Pallas, a favorite freedman of the emperor Claudius. **26:** *His Excellency,* the same word used in addressing Theophilus (Lk 1.3). **27–30:** The letter summarizes the preceding events and perhaps casts the tribune in a better light. As was the case with Jesus (Lk 23.4,14–16,20–25), Romans find no serious charges (v. 29; cf. 18.14–16). **31:** *Antipatris,* a city in the Plain of Sharon on the main road to Caesarea. **35:** *Herod's headquarters,* a palace built by Herod the Great and occupied by the Roman governors in Palestine.

ers arrive." Then he ordered that he be kept under guard in Herod's headquarters.[a]

24 Five days later the high priest Ananias came down with some elders and an attorney, a certain Tertullus, and they reported their case against Paul to the governor. [2] When Paul[b] had been summoned, Tertullus began to accuse him, saying:

"Your Excellency,[c] because of you we have long enjoyed peace, and reforms have been made for this people because of your foresight. [3] We welcome this in every way and everywhere with utmost gratitude. [4] But, to detain you no further, I beg you to hear us briefly with your customary graciousness. [5] We have, in fact, found this man a pestilent fellow, an agitator among all the Jews throughout the world, and a ringleader of the sect of the Nazarenes.[d] [6] He even tried to profane the temple, and so we seized him.[e] [8] By examining him yourself you will be able to learn from him concerning everything of which we accuse him."

[9] The Jews also joined in the charge by asserting that all this was true.

[10] When the governor motioned to him to speak, Paul replied:

"I cheerfully make my defense, knowing that for many years you have been a judge over this nation. [11] As you can find out, it is not more than twelve days since I went up to worship in Jerusalem. [12] They did not find me disputing with anyone in the temple or stirring up a crowd either in the synagogues or throughout the city. [13] Neither can they prove to you the charge that they now bring against me. [14] But this I admit to you, that according to the Way, which they call a sect, I worship the God of our ancestors, believing everything laid down according to the law or written in the prophets. [15] I have a hope in God—a hope that they themselves also accept—that there will be a resurrection of both[f] the righteous and the unrighteous. [16] Therefore I do my best always to have a clear conscience toward God and all people. [17] Now after some years I came to bring alms to my nation and to offer sacrifices. [18] While I was doing this, they found me in the temple, completing the rite of purification, without any crowd or disturbance. [19] But there were some Jews from Asia—they ought to be here before you to make an accusation, if they have anything against me. [20] Or let these men here tell what crime they had found when I stood before the council, [21] unless it was this one sentence that I called out while standing before them, 'It is about the resurrection of the dead that I am on trial before you today.'"

[22] But Felix, who was rather well informed about the Way, adjourned the hearing with the comment, "When Lysias the tribune comes down, I will decide your case." [23] Then he ordered the centurion to keep him in custody, but to let him have some liberty and not to prevent any of his friends from taking care of his needs.

[24] Some days later when Felix came with his wife Drusilla, who was Jewish, he sent for Paul and heard him speak concerning faith in Christ Jesus. [25] And as he discussed justice, self-control, and the coming judgment, Felix

[a] Gk *praetorium*
[b] Gk *he*
[c] Gk lacks *Your Excellency*
[d] Gk *Nazoreans*
[e] Other ancient authorities add *and we would have judged him according to our law.* [7] *But the chief captain Lysias came and with great violence took him out of our hands,* [8] *commanding his accusers to come before you.*
[f] Other ancient authorities read *of the dead, both of*

24.1–27: Paul before Felix. The apostle denies the charges, and the governor postpones the case. **2–4:** *Tertullus* begins the prosecution with the customary method of opening a speech with praise that is intended to attract the attention and good will of the one being addressed. **5:** *Agitator,* a charge of political sedition (see 16.21; 17.7; 18.13) would be taken seriously by a Roman court. *Sect,* or party, is used in a bad sense here and at 24.14; 28.22; it is used of the Sadducees at 5.17. *Nazarenes,* the term otherwise used in the singular to identify Jesus (2.22; 3.6; 4.10; 6.14; 22.8) is here used in the plural to describe Christians for Christians. **6:** *Profane the temple,* 21.28. **10:** See 22.1n. **14:** *The Way* (see 9.2n.) is compatible with the ancestral religion. **15:** *Resurrection,* here general belief in resurrection as common ground (also v. 21). **16:** *Clear conscience,* 20.20,27,33; 23.1. **17:** *To bring alms,* may connect to 21.23–26 but is reminiscent of Paul's plan in Rom 15.25–29 to deliver the collection (see 11.29n.; 20.4n.). **23:** *Custody,* perhaps protective custody. **24:** *Drusilla* was the sister of Herod Agrippa II and Bernice (25.13); she had left her husband Azizus, king of Emesa, to marry Felix. **25–26:** Cf. Mk 6.20. *Felix* embod-

became frightened and said, "Go away for the present; when I have an opportunity, I will send for you." [26] At the same time he hoped that money would be given him by Paul, and for that reason he used to send for him very often and converse with him.

[27] After two years had passed, Felix was succeeded by Porcius Festus; and since he wanted to grant the Jews a favor, Felix left Paul in prison.

25 Three days after Festus had arrived in the province, he went up from Caesarea to Jerusalem [2] where the chief priests and the leaders of the Jews gave him a report against Paul. They appealed to him [3] and requested, as a favor to them against Paul,[a] to have him transferred to Jerusalem. They were, in fact, planning an ambush to kill him along the way. [4] Festus replied that Paul was being kept at Caesarea, and that he himself intended to go there shortly. [5] "So," he said, "let those of you who have the authority come down with me, and if there is anything wrong about the man, let them accuse him."

[6] After he had stayed among them not more than eight or ten days, he went down to Caesarea; the next day he took his seat on the tribunal and ordered Paul to be brought. [7] When he arrived, the Jews who had gone down from Jerusalem surrounded him, bringing many serious charges against him, which they could not prove. [8] Paul said in his defense, "I have in no way committed an offense against the law of the Jews, or against the temple, or against the emperor." [9] But Festus, wishing to do the Jews a favor, asked Paul, "Do you wish to go up to Jerusalem and be tried there before me on these charges?" [10] Paul said, "I am appealing to the emperor's tribunal; this is where I should be tried. I have done no wrong to the Jews, as you very well know. [11] Now if I am in the wrong and have committed something for which I deserve to die, I am not trying to escape death; but if there is nothing to their charges against me, no one can turn me over to them. I appeal to the emperor." [12] Then Festus, after he had conferred with his council, replied, "You have appealed to the emperor; to the emperor you will go."

[13] After several days had passed, King Agrippa and Bernice arrived at Caesarea to welcome Festus. [14] Since they were staying there several days, Festus laid Paul's case before the king, saying, "There is a man here who was left in prison by Felix. [15] When I was in Jerusalem, the chief priests and the elders of the Jews informed me about him and asked for a sentence against him. [16] I told them that it was not the custom of the Romans to hand over anyone before the accused had met the accusers face to face and had been given an opportunity to make a defense against the charge. [17] So when they met here, I lost no time, but on the next day took my seat on the tribunal and ordered the man to be brought. [18] When the accusers stood up, they did not charge him with any of the crimes[b] that I was expecting. [19] Instead they had certain points of disagreement with him about their own religion and about a certain Jesus, who had died, but whom Paul asserted to be alive. [20] Since I was at a loss how to investigate these questions, I asked whether he wished to go to Jerusalem and be tried there on these

[a] Gk *him*

[b] Other ancient authorities read *with anything*

ies both positive and negative features, but ultimately his corruption means that Paul remains in prison. **27:** *After two years had passed,* either from Felix's appointment or Paul's arrest. *Porcius Festus,* appointed procurator of Judea by the emperor Nero in 60 CE.

25.1–12: Appeal to the emperor. Paul insists on a Roman trial, and Festus consents to send him to Rome. **3:** See 23.12. **8:** Paul maintains that he is both a good Jew and a good Roman citizen. **9:** *Favor,* 24.27. **10:** Paul fears being turned over to a Jewish court; therefore he insists on *the emperor's tribunal,* i.e., trial according to Roman law. **11–12:** Paul's *appeal* to the *emperor* becomes the mechanism that takes him to Rome (19.21; 23.11). Details of the law of appeals are unclear.

25.13–26.32: Paul's defense before Agrippa. Paul's speech is intended to present a model defense of Christianity and allows for the pronouncement of a symbolic Roman acquittal. **25.13:** *King Agrippa,* Herod Agrippa II (ruled 53–ca. 93 CE), sided with the Romans in the First Jewish Revolt. He and his sister *Bernice* were children of Herod Agrippa I (12.1n.). **16:** Roman judicial process is put in a good light. **18–20:** The *accusers* do not bring a

charges.[a] [21] But when Paul had appealed to be kept in custody for the decision of his Imperial Majesty, I ordered him to be held until I could send him to the emperor." [22] Agrippa said to Festus, "I would like to hear the man myself." "Tomorrow," he said, "you will hear him."

[23] So on the next day Agrippa and Bernice came with great pomp, and they entered the audience hall with the military tribunes and the prominent men of the city. Then Festus gave the order and Paul was brought in. [24] And Festus said, "King Agrippa and all here present with us, you see this man about whom the whole Jewish community petitioned me, both in Jerusalem and here, shouting that he ought not to live any longer. [25] But I found that he had done nothing deserving death; and when he appealed to his Imperial Majesty, I decided to send him. [26] But I have nothing definite to write to our sovereign about him. Therefore I have brought him before all of you, and especially before you, King Agrippa, so that, after we have examined him, I may have something to write— [27] for it seems to me unreasonable to send a prisoner without indicating the charges against him."

26 Agrippa said to Paul, "You have permission to speak for yourself." Then Paul stretched out his hand and began to defend himself:

[2] "I consider myself fortunate that it is before you, King Agrippa, I am to make my defense today against all the accusations of the Jews, [3] because you are especially familiar with all the customs and controversies of the Jews; therefore I beg of you to listen to me patiently.

[4] "All the Jews know my way of life from my youth, a life spent from the beginning among my own people and in Jerusalem. [5] They have known for a long time, if they are willing to testify, that I have belonged to the strictest sect of our religion and lived as a Pharisee. [6] And now I stand here on trial on account of my hope in the promise made by God to our ancestors, [7] a promise that our twelve tribes hope to attain, as they earnestly worship day and night. It is for this hope, your Excellency,[b] that I am accused by Jews! [8] Why is it thought incredible by any of you that God raises the dead?

[9] "Indeed, I myself was convinced that I ought to do many things against the name of Jesus of Nazareth.[c] [10] And that is what I did in Jerusalem; with authority received from the chief priests, I not only locked up many of the saints in prison, but I also cast my vote against them when they were being condemned to death. [11] By punishing them often in all the synagogues I tried to force them to blaspheme; and since I was so furiously enraged at them, I pursued them even to foreign cities.

[12] "With this in mind, I was traveling to Damascus with the authority and commission of the chief priests, [13] when at midday along the road, your Excellency,[b] I saw a light from heaven, brighter than the sun, shining around me and my companions. [14] When we had all fallen to the ground, I heard a voice saying to me in the Hebrew[d] language, 'Saul, Saul, why are you persecuting me? It hurts you to kick against the goads.' [15] I asked, 'Who are you, Lord?' The Lord answered, 'I am Jesus whom you are persecuting. [16] But get up and stand on your feet; for I have appeared

[a] Gk *on them*
[b] Gk *O king*
[c] Gk *the Nazorean*
[d] That is, *Aramaic*

charge of sedition (24.5). Cf. 18.13–16; but in this case Festus does not dismiss the charges. **25:** *Nothing deserving death* is the repeated verdict of the Roman authorities handling Paul's case (26.31; cf. Lk 23.4,15,22). *His Imperial Majesty,* lit., "Augustus," one of the imperial titles. **26.1:** The scene set for Paul's speech fulfills 9.15 and Lk 21.12–15. Compare Jesus' appearance before Herod Antipas (Lk 23.6–12). **2:** *Defense,* 22.1n. **3:** The narrative assumes that Agrippa was a practicing Jew. **4:** *Among my own people,* stresses Paul's thoroughly Jewish upbringing (22.3n.; Phil 3.5). **8:** *You,* i.e., the Jewish people. **9–20:** A third account of Paul's conversion (9.1–8; 22.4–16). **10:** *In Jerusalem,* according to 9.1–2 Paul's authorization concerned Damascus. *Saints,* see 9.13n. **14:** Here *all* fall *to the ground* and the *voice* speaks *Hebrew,* quoting a common Greek proverb about the futility of resisting the divine will (cf. 9.4; 22.7); a goad is a pointed stick used to prod an ox or other animals. **16:** Only in

to you for this purpose, to appoint you to serve and testify to the things in which you have seen me[a] and to those in which I will appear to you. [17] I will rescue you from your people and from the Gentiles—to whom I am sending you [18] to open their eyes so that they may turn from darkness to light and from the power of Satan to God, so that they may receive forgiveness of sins and a place among those who are sanctified by faith in me.'

[19] "After that, King Agrippa, I was not disobedient to the heavenly vision, [20] but declared first to those in Damascus, then in Jerusalem and throughout the countryside of Judea, and also to the Gentiles, that they should repent and turn to God and do deeds consistent with repentance. [21] For this reason the Jews seized me in the temple and tried to kill me. [22] To this day I have had help from God, and so I stand here, testifying to both small and great, saying nothing but what the prophets and Moses said would take place: [23] that the Messiah[b] must suffer, and that, by being the first to rise from the dead, he would proclaim light both to our people and to the Gentiles."

[24] While he was making this defense, Festus exclaimed, "You are out of your mind, Paul! Too much learning is driving you insane!" [25] But Paul said, "I am not out of my mind, most excellent Festus, but I am speaking the sober truth. [26] Indeed the king knows about these things, and to him I speak freely; for I am certain that none of these things has escaped his notice, for this was not done in a corner. [27] King Agrippa, do you believe the prophets? I know that you believe." [28] Agrippa said to Paul, "Are you so quickly persuading me to become a Christian?"[c] [29] Paul replied, "Whether quickly or not, I pray to God that not only you but also all who are listening to me today might become such as I am—except for these chains."

[30] Then the king got up, and with him the governor and Bernice and those who had been seated with them; [31] and as they were leaving, they said to one another, "This man is doing nothing to deserve death or imprisonment." [32] Agrippa said to Festus, "This man could have been set free if he had not appealed to the emperor."

27 When it was decided that we were to sail for Italy, they transferred Paul and some other prisoners to a centurion of the Augustan Cohort, named Julius. [2] Embarking on a ship of Adramyttium that was about to set sail to the ports along the coast of Asia, we put to sea, accompanied by Aristarchus, a Macedonian from Thessalonica. [3] The next day we put in at Sidon; and Julius treated Paul kindly, and allowed him to go to his friends to be cared for. [4] Putting out to sea from there, we sailed under the lee of Cyprus, because the winds were against us. [5] After we had sailed across the sea that is off Cilicia and Pamphylia, we came to Myra in Lycia. [6] There the centurion found an Alexandrian ship bound for Italy and put us on board. [7] We sailed slowly for a number of days and arrived with difficulty off Cnidus, and as the wind was against us, we sailed under the lee of Crete off Salmone. [8] Sailing past it

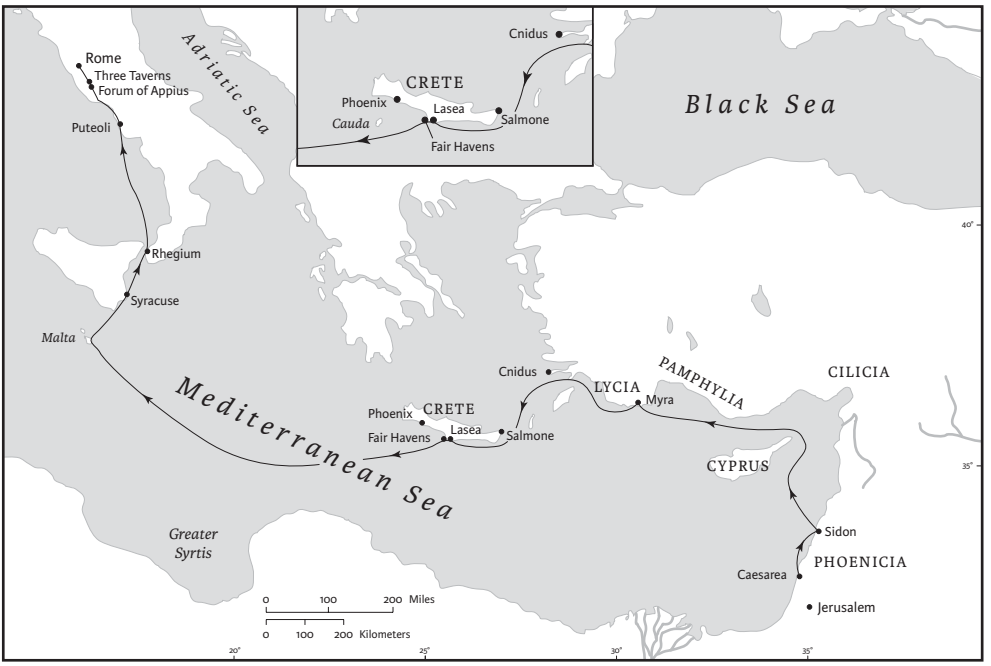
[a] Other ancient authorities read *the things that you have seen*

[b] Or *the Christ*

[c] Or *Quickly you will persuade me to play the Christian*

this account does Paul's commission on the road come directly from Jesus (cf. Gal 1.1); there is no mention of Ananias or Paul's blindness. **20:** Paul's mission is universal, directed to both Jews and Greeks. **21:** *For this reason,* i.e., inclusion of the Gentiles. **22–23:** *The prophets and Moses . . . the Messiah must suffer,* 3.18n.; 10.43; 15.21n.; Lk 24.25–27,44–47. **27:** See v. 3. **28:** *Christian,* see 11.25–26n. **31:** *Nothing to deserve death or imprisonment,* a further "acquittal" (25.25n.). **32:** See 25.11–12n.

27.1–44: Shipwreck. A dangerous winter voyage ends in shipwreck. **1:** The "we" passages (16.10n.) resume here. *The Augustan Cohort,* a unit of this name was stationed in Syria in the first century. **2:** *Adramyttium,* a seaport south of Troas (16.8). *Aristarchus,* 19.29; 20.4. *Thessalonica,* 17.1n. **3:** *Sidon,* a Phoenician seaport, north of Tyre. *Julius treated Paul kindly,* compare the centurions of Lk 7.1–10; 23.47; and Cornelius (10.1–2n.). *Friends,* i.e., Christians. **4:** *Under the lee of Cyprus,* apparently north of the island. **5–6:** *Myra* on the southern coast of Asia Minor was a regular stage in the route of Egyptian grain ships bound for Italy (see v. 38). **7:** *Cnidus,* on the mainland northwest of Rhodes. *Under the lee of Crete,* to its south for shelter from the *wind*; *Salmone* is at the northeast tip of the island. **8:** *Fair Havens,* a bay on the southern coast of Crete. *Lasea,* a city somewhat inland



Chs 27–28: Paul's journey to Rome.

with difficulty, we came to a place called Fair Havens, near the city of Lasea.

9 Since much time had been lost and sailing
was now dangerous, because even the Fast had
already gone by, Paul advised them, 10 saying,
"Sirs, I can see that the voyage will be with
danger and much heavy loss, not only of the
cargo and the ship, but also of our lives." 11 But
the centurion paid more attention to the pilot
and to the owner of the ship than to what Paul
said. 12 Since the harbor was not suitable for
spending the winter, the majority was in favor
of putting to sea from there, on the chance that
somehow they could reach Phoenix, where
they could spend the winter. It was a harbor of
Crete, facing southwest and northwest.

13 When a moderate south wind began to
blow, they thought they could achieve their
purpose; so they weighed anchor and began
to sail past Crete, close to the shore. 14 But
soon a violent wind, called the northeaster,
rushed down from Crete.[a] 15 Since the ship was
caught and could not be turned head-on into
the wind, we gave way to it and were driven.
16 By running under the lee of a small island
called Cauda[b] we were scarcely able to get
the ship's boat under control. 17 After hoisting
it up they took measures[c] to undergird the
ship; then, fearing that they would run on the
Syrtis, they lowered the sea anchor and so
were driven. 18 We were being pounded by the
storm so violently that on the next day they
began to throw the cargo overboard, 19 and on
the third day with their own hands they threw
the ship's tackle overboard. 20 When neither
sun nor stars appeared for many days, and
no small tempest raged, all hope of our being
saved was at last abandoned.

[a] Gk *it*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *Clauda*
[c] Gk *helps*

and east of Fair Havens. **9:** *Sailing was . . . dangerous* after September and ceased from mid-November until mid-March. *The Fast,* the Day of Atonement, in September or October. **16:** *Cauda,* south of Crete. *The ship's boat* (see vv. 30–32) was in tow. **17:** The *measures* undertaken by the crew are not clear. *The Syrtis,* a dangerous shoal west of Cyrene on the north coast of Africa. *Sea anchor,* a conjecture for the Gk word meaning "vessel" or "implement," i.e., a device to slow the ship. **18:** Jon 1.5 and numerous Greek and Roman parallels (e.g., Josephus, *J.W.*

21 Since they had been without food for a
long time, Paul then stood up among them
and said, "Men, you should have listened
to me and not have set sail from Crete and
thereby avoided this damage and loss. 22 I
urge you now to keep up your courage, for
there will be no loss of life among you, but
only of the ship. 23 For last night there stood
by me an angel of the God to whom I belong
and whom I worship, 24 and he said, 'Do not
be afraid, Paul; you must stand before the
emperor; and indeed, God has granted safety
to all those who are sailing with you.' 25 So
keep up your courage, men, for I have faith in
God that it will be exactly as I have been told.
26 But we will have to run aground on some
island."

27 When the fourteenth night had come,
as we were drifting across the sea of Adria,
about midnight the sailors suspected that
they were nearing land. 28 So they took
soundings and found twenty fathoms; a little
farther on they took soundings again and
found fifteen fathoms. 29 Fearing that we
might run on the rocks, they let down four
anchors from the stern and prayed for day to
come. 30 But when the sailors tried to escape
from the ship and had lowered the boat into
the sea, on the pretext of putting out anchors
from the bow, 31 Paul said to the centurion
and the soldiers, "Unless these men stay in
the ship, you cannot be saved." 32 Then the
soldiers cut away the ropes of the boat and
set it adrift.

33 Just before daybreak, Paul urged all of
them to take some food, saying, "Today is
the fourteenth day that you have been in
suspense and remaining without food, having
eaten nothing. 34 Therefore I urge you to take
some food, for it will help you survive; for
none of you will lose a hair from your heads."
35 After he had said this, he took bread; and
giving thanks to God in the presence of all,
he broke it and began to eat. 36 Then all of
them were encouraged and took food for
themselves. 37 (We were in all two hundred
seventy-six[a] persons in the ship.) 38 After they
had satisfied their hunger, they lightened the
ship by throwing the wheat into the sea.

39 In the morning they did not recognize
the land, but they noticed a bay with a beach,
on which they planned to run the ship ashore,
if they could. 40 So they cast off the anchors
and left them in the sea. At the same time
they loosened the ropes that tied the steering-
oars; then hoisting the foresail to the wind,
they made for the beach. 41 But striking a reef,[b]
they ran the ship aground; the bow stuck
and remained immovable, but the stern was
being broken up by the force of the waves.
42 The soldiers' plan was to kill the prisoners,
so that none might swim away and escape;
43 but the centurion, wishing to save Paul, kept
them from carrying out their plan. He ordered
those who could swim to jump overboard
first and make for the land, 44 and the rest to
follow, some on planks and others on pieces
of the ship. And so it was that all were brought
safely to land.

28 After we had reached safety, we then
learned that the island was called Mal-
ta. 2 The natives showed us unusual kindness.
Since it had begun to rain and was cold, they
kindled a fire and welcomed all of us around
it. 3 Paul had gathered a bundle of brushwood
and was putting it on the fire, when a viper,
driven out by the heat, fastened itself on his
hand. 4 When the natives saw the creature
hanging from his hand, they said to one an-
other, "This man must be a murderer; though
he has escaped from the sea, justice has not
allowed him to live." 5 He, however, shook
off the creature into the fire and suffered no
harm. 6 They were expecting him to swell up

[a] Other ancient authorities read *seventy-six*; others, *about seventy-six*
[b] Gk *place of two seas*

1.280). **22:** Cf. v. 10. **24:** 23.11; 25.11–12. **27:** The *sea of Adria* then included the central Mediterranean. **30:** *Escape* of the crew is a popular motif found in Greco-Roman novels. **35–36:** *He took bread,* gave *thanks,* and *broke it,* cf. Lk 22.19; 24.30,35 (see 2.42n.). The meal in which all partake has clear eucharistic overtones. **37:** *Two hundred seventy-six* people on board is quite possible. **41:** *A reef,* Gk "a place of two seas." **42:** The *soldiers* were responsible for the *prisoners*(see 12.19; 16.27). **43:** The "good" *centurion* intervenes (see v. 3n.; 10.1n.).

28.1–10: Paul on Malta. Unharmed though bitten by a viper, Paul heals the father of Publius. **1:** *Malta,* a significant island south of Sicily controlled by the Romans. **2:** *Natives* (lit., "barbarians"), used of non-Greek

or drop dead, but after they had waited a long time and saw that nothing unusual had happened to him, they changed their minds and began to say that he was a god.

7 Now in the neighborhood of that place were lands belonging to the leading man of the island, named Publius, who received us and entertained us hospitably for three days. 8 It so happened that the father of Publius lay sick in bed with fever and dysentery. Paul visited him and cured him by praying and putting his hands on him. 9 After this happened, the rest of the people on the island who had diseases also came and were cured. 10 They bestowed many honors on us, and when we were about to sail, they put on board all the provisions we needed.

11 Three months later we set sail on a ship that had wintered at the island, an Alexandrian ship with the Twin Brothers as its figurehead. 12 We put in at Syracuse and stayed there for three days; 13 then we weighed anchor and came to Rhegium. After one day there a south wind sprang up, and on the second day we came to Puteoli. 14 There we found believers[a] and were invited to stay with them for seven days. And so we came to Rome. 15 The believers[a] from there, when they heard of us, came as far as the Forum of Appius and Three Taverns to meet us. On seeing them, Paul thanked God and took courage.

16 When we came into Rome, Paul was allowed to live by himself, with the soldier who was guarding him.

17 Three days later he called together the local leaders of the Jews. When they had assembled, he said to them, "Brothers, though I had done nothing against our people or the customs of our ancestors, yet I was arrested in Jerusalem and handed over to the Romans. 18 When they had examined me, the Romans[b] wanted to release me, because there was no reason for the death penalty in my case. 19 But when the Jews objected, I was compelled to appeal to the emperor—even though I had no charge to bring against my nation. 20 For this reason therefore I have asked to see you and speak with you,[c] since it is for the sake of the hope of Israel that I am bound with this chain." 21 They replied, "We have received no letters from Judea about you, and none of the brothers coming here has reported or spoken anything evil about you. 22 But we would like to hear from you what you think, for with regard to this sect we know that everywhere it is spoken against."

23 After they had set a day to meet with him, they came to him at his lodgings in great numbers. From morning until evening he explained the matter to them, testifying to the kingdom of God and trying to convince them about Jesus both from the law of Moses and from the prophets. 24 Some were convinced by what he had said, while others refused to believe. 25 So they disagreed with each other; and as they were leaving, Paul made one further statement: "The Holy Spirit was right in saying to your ancestors through the prophet Isaiah,

26 'Go to this people and say,
You will indeed listen, but never
understand,
and you will indeed look, but never
perceive.

[a] Gk *brothers*
[b] Gk *they*
[c] Or *I have asked you to see me and speak with me*

speakers. **4:** *Justice,* here a deity. **5:** Lk 10.19; Mk 16.18 (Ps 91.13). **7:** *Leading man,* a local official on Malta. **8–9:** Lk 4.38–40.

28.11–16: The journey to Rome. Paul goes by sea to Syracuse, Rhegium, and Puteoli, then by land to the capital. **11:** *Three months* (see 27.9n.) would be too soon to have set sail but is just an approximation. *The Twin Brothers,* the Dioscuri, Castor and Pollux, patron deities of sailors. **12:** *Syracuse,* capital city of the island of Sicily. **13:** *Rhegium,* port city on the Italian coast opposite Sicily. *Puteoli,* modern Pozzuoli, on the north side of the Bay of Naples. **14:** *Believers,* there are already Christians at Rome (see 18.2n.). **15:** The *Forum of Appius* was 40 mi (65 km) from Rome, and the *Three Taverns* 30 mi (50 km), both on the Via Appia. **16:** The "we" passages (16.10n.) end here. *By himself,* apparently in private quarters.

28.17–28: Paul and the Jews of Rome. 17: Even as a captive Paul sticks to the pattern of speaking to Jews first (9.20n.; 13.5n.; 17.2n.). **20:** The *hope of Israel* is now bound up with Christianity. **23:** *Kingdom of God,* 1.3n.; *the prophets,* 26.22–23n. **24:** The reception is mixed as it has been all along (17.11–12n.). **26–27:** Isa 6.9–10 is used

[27] For this people's heart has grown dull,
and their ears are hard of hearing,
and they have shut their eyes;
so that they might not look with
their eyes,
and listen with their ears,
and understand with their heart and turn—
and I would heal them.'
[28] Let it be known to you then that this salvation of God has been sent to the Gentiles; they will listen."[a]

[30] He lived there two whole years at his own expense[b] and welcomed all who came to him, [31] proclaiming the kingdom of God and teaching about the Lord Jesus Christ with all boldness and without hindrance.

[a] Other ancient authorities add verse 29, *And when he had said these words, the Jews departed, arguing vigorously among themselves*
[b] Or *in his own hired dwelling*

elsewhere to explain Jewish rejection of the gospel (see Mt 13.14–15; Jn 12.40; cf. Rom 9–11). **28:** The "turn to the *Gentiles*" of 13.46; 18.6 is repeated. It is no more a final rejection than the previous instances were but may indicate the social reality of Luke's day.

28.30–31: Conclusion. Though under house arrest (v. 16) Paul preached *without hindrance* for *two whole years.*

This page intentionally left blank

INTRODUCTION TO THE LETTERS/EPISTLES IN THE NEW TESTAMENT

CLASSIFICATION AND AUTHORSHIP OF THE NEW TESTAMENT LETTERS

Letters, or epistles, are the earliest documents in the New Testament and its most common literary form: Some scholars date 1 Thessalonians before 50 CE, about twenty years before Mark, the earliest of the Gospels, and there are twenty-one separate letters in the New Testament. Thirteen are from Paul or his missionary associates: Romans, 1 and 2 Corinthians, Ephesians, Philippians, Colossians, Galatians, 1 and 2 Thessalonians, 1 and 2 Timothy, Titus, and Philemon. When the book of Hebrews was attributed to Paul, the number of Pauline letters in ancient manuscripts and lists came to fourteen. Another seven letters, which appear to be pseudonymously attributed to other apostles, round out the group: 1 and 2 Peter; 1, 2, and 3 John; James; and Jude. The Greek word *epistole* ("letter") originally referred to an oral communication sent by messenger (Herodotus, *Histories* 4.10.1). Even in the New Testament period, the letter-carrier might be entrusted with crucial information about a letter's content that was conveyed to its recipients orally. Paul often includes missionary associates in the greeting of his letters (1 Cor 1.1; 2 Cor 1.1; Phil 1.1; Col 1.1; 1 Thess 1.1; Philem 1). He omits them in Galatians, where he has no future plans to visit the region, and in Romans, addressed to a church he did not found. Ephesians lacks a specific destination in the best manuscripts and may be an exhortation sent to several churches in Asia Minor by a later disciple of Paul.

Several other Pauline epistles also differ in language and theological emphasis from the major Pauline letters. The Pastoral Epistles (1 and 2 Timothy and Titus; see p. 2084), addressed to his key assistants, treat them as youthful leaders of local churches. The Pastoral Epistles look to a future in which Christians are established in the larger society. While both 1 and 2 Thessalonians have as their principal theme the return of the Lord Jesus in the end time, the second letter seeks to moderate expectations that the last days are at hand. This change in eschatological perspective, as well as its warning against pseudo-Pauline writings, has led some scholars to conclude that 2 Thessalonians was written by a later disciple of Paul as well. Since Paul had a number of close associates in his missionary activities, it would not be surprising if they used a familiar medium, the apostolic letter, to continue dealing with concrete issues in the churches of the Pauline mission. Although many of the letters unquestionably by Paul are considerably longer than ordinary private letters, they address concrete situations in the churches.

Ephesians, however, lacks not only an address but also references to specific individuals or problems. Among the non-Pauline letters, Hebrews and James also appear to be tractates or general exhortations, rather than letters to specific communities. Jude addresses a sharp apocalyptic warning to Christians in general. First John speaks to concrete problems in its church circles, but lacks the form of a letter; 2 and 3 John are both personal letters, though addressed to different problems. First Peter uses the letter form as exhortation for suffering Christians in Asia Minor. Finally, 2 Peter appears to be the latest epistle in the New Testament. It contains a possible allusion to the Gospel account of the transfiguration of Jesus (1.16–18; see Mk 9.2–8) and refers to Christians who misinterpret Paul's letters (3.15–16). Like 2 Timothy, 2 Peter is presented as the last testament of an apostle. It affirms the unity of apostolic teaching concerning the "day of the Lord" (3.1–14) against some who used Paul's authority to deny that God would end the world.

WRITING AND SENDING LETTERS IN THE GRECO-ROMAN WORLD

Letters from Greco-Roman antiquity include imperial decrees addressed to subjects in a particular area, such as that by the Roman emperor Claudius to "the city of Alexandria" in Egypt in 41 CE concerning Jewish agitation for citizen rights; collections of philosophical letters by prominent figures like Cicero, Pliny, and Seneca; and hundreds of papyri from Egypt documenting the concerns of ordinary people. Royal diplomatic correspondence has its own formalities of language, which are echoed in the so-called letters that the heavenly Christ addresses to the angels of the churches in Revelation 2–3. Philosophical letters often use a highly formal rhetoric, which

indicates that such letters were intended to be preserved for posterity. They are typically longer than private letters, which are generally described as "documentary" to distinguish them from such literary creations. Authors often retained copies of and revised literary correspondence before committing it to copying for posterity. Documentary letters existed only for one or more immediate purposes, such as dealing with problems at home, urging an absent husband or son to return, reporting on a military posting, pleading for legal redress, engaging in commerce, describing one's circumstances to family or friends, and recommending the bearer of the letter to its recipient.

The existence of so many letters from private individuals does not necessarily imply a high rate of literacy among craftsmen, traders, or women. A letter could be dictated to a scribe who would be charged with the actual writing. Even those who could write often preferred to employ the services of a scribe (Rom 16.22; Gal 6.11). The letter-carrier or another party might read the letter at its destination and, depending upon the carrier's relationship to the sender, might also interpret the content of the letter. Some documentary letters in Egypt suggest that after the letter had been read in Greek, it would have been translated into the local dialect so that the women in the sender's audience could understand it.

The formal parts of an ancient letter—to be distinguished from other rhetorical patterns authors of literary epistles might use—are straightforward. The opening or superscription identifies sender(s) and recipient(s) and concludes with a greeting or salutation. Epithets, information about geographical locations, and terms of endearment often expand on individuals named. Paul regularly shifts to a Semitic form of salutation, "grace and peace," expanded with reference to God and Christ Jesus (2 Cor 1.2). When his apostolic authority is an issue between himself and the recipients, that note may be attached as a self-designation (2 Cor 1.1; Rom 1.1–5, a community for which Paul is not a founding apostle). In ancient letters, the opening is often followed by a formal statement of the sender's wish for the health of the recipients. Such formulas may also be used to close the letter. Another common formula expresses the sender's prayer to the gods or thanksgiving on behalf of the recipients. In the Pauline letter type, this conventional way of opening a letter usually develops into a much longer thanksgiving or blessing section. That section often previews items from the body of the letter that follows.

After the opening formalities, the body of the letter states the actual business or request that is the reason for the letter. The sender may either give information about his own future travel plans or request it about others. Paul usually has such travel reports near the end of the body of the letter. Various formulas can be used to conclude the letter. Often greetings are given from or to others not mentioned in the body of the letter.

Once the letter was written, the sender had to find a person to deliver the letter to its recipient. Often the presence of someone who was on the way to the desired location provided an opportunity for writing. There was no guaranteed overnight delivery in antiquity! Even letters entrusted to friends for delivery had an uncertain fate. Under the best of circumstances a response was weeks or months away. The sender would ordinarily retain a copy, and some scholars have suggested that the first collection of Paul's letters was due to the apostle's own editing of his copies of Romans, 1 and 2 Corinthians, and Galatians. This hypothesis accounts for the start of the process of collecting and editing Pauline letters, but lacking any specific manuscript evidence, it remains speculative.

THE LETTER OF PAUL TO THE ROMANS

NAME AND AUTHORSHIP

This letter is named for its recipients, the community of believers in Christ in the city of Rome. Although, because of its length, it is the first of the letters of Paul in the New Testament, Romans was probably the latest of Paul's undisputed letters to be written (see "Letters/Epistles in the New Testament," pp. 1973–74).

DATE OF COMPOSITION AND HISTORICAL CONTEXT

The letter was occasioned in part by circumstances in Rome during the reign of the emperor Nero (54–68 CE). Among those to whom Paul sends greetings in ch 16 are Prisca and Aquila, known from Acts 18.2 as among the Jews expelled from Rome by the emperor Claudius around 49 CE. Their presence in Rome at the time Paul writes may reflect Nero's suspension of that edict (Suetonius, *Life of Claudius* 25.3<ED: add to abbr list?>). The recent return of Jews to the imperial capital, including Jewish believers in Christ like Prisca and Aquila, who had been driven out and probably lost property and community ties during their exile, may have aroused tensions within house groups (see 16.5n.) in which non-Judean ("Gentile") believers had become predominant.

Paul's appeal to Gentiles among the Roman faithful not to "boast" over Jews (11.13–36) comes at the end of chs 9–11, the climax of the letter. Paul's argument responds to an incipient anti-Judaism, which was already established among Roman aristocrats and was beginning to emerge among Gentile believers as well. Given the horrors of an anti-Jewish pogrom in Alexandria in Egypt (38–41 CE), and even more recent market tax riots that had turned deadly in Puteoli, a city south of Rome, Paul was concerned to prevent in Rome the sort of civic disturbance in which the city's minority Jewish population would be especially vulnerable. This danger may explain the notorious exhortation to "be subject to the governing authorities" (13.1–7n.). Similarly, Paul's admonitions regarding the "weak in faith," concerned with the observance of diet and special days (14.1–15.13), address tensions between Jews who retained their observance of the law and Gentile believers in Christ who did not.

CONTENTS AND STRUCTURE

The letter to the Romans contains the longest and most complex sustained argument in any of Paul's letters even though it is addressed to believers in Christ whom he has never met (1.13). For these reasons the letter, especially chs 1–8, has often been read as Paul's theological last will and testament, a reflection on and a summary of the gospel of salvation in Christ. It was also intended to persuade the faithful in Rome to support Paul's intended mission to Spain (15.23–24).

Paul had more in view than creating a base for future missionary endeavors. He meant to proclaim to the faithful in Rome the gospel, "the power of God for salvation" (1.15–16; 15.18–19), and by so doing strengthen and encourage them (1.11–12). Romans is, like Paul's other letters, an instrument of moral instruction and exhortation (see 15.14–15).

A dogmatically oriented reading of Romans has traditionally identified a "thesis" in 1.16–17, which is developed in proofs that all humanity has sinned (1.18–3.20) and that God nevertheless justifies human beings through faith, bringing freedom from sin, law, and death (3.21–8.39). On this reading, chs 9–11 have seemed somewhat tangential, as Paul defends his gospel from implications that in it God's covenant with Israel is nullified. Chapters 12–15 are read as stereotyped exhortations with little bearing on the Roman situation (Paul's declaration of confidence in 15.14 being taken at face value), followed by standard greetings in Rom 16.

A different outline follows if we take seriously the indications that chs 9–11 are the climax of the letter. Elements that ordinarily mark the beginning of a letter body appear first at 9.1: the disclosure formula, intensified by an oath, and an expression of deep pathos. The burden of argument in 9–11 is to warn the Gentile audience not to boast against an apparently vanquished Israel. But if these chapters are the letter's climax, all that comes before can be seen as a long *insinuatio*—the "indirect approach" recommended when a speaker's topic is controversial or unpopular (as we may imagine the status of Judeans under Roman rule had become, after recent events in Alexandria, Judea, and Rome itself). Readers may get a sense of the intended rhetorical effect if they

first read 8.18–39—a familiar and much-treasured assurance of the love of God—then follow it immediately with 9.1–4, noticing how the testimony of the Spirit, the status of "children of God," and the theme of separation from God play a role in both passages.

The "theme" of the letter is universal accountability to God's justice, developed first in 1.18–2.16, then augmented rhetorically as Paul calls on a fellow Jew to agree that no one is free from God's judgment (2.17–3.31). Abraham's faithfulness makes him the ancestor of all the faithful, not Jews only (ch 4); salvation in Christ means more than exoneration, it means freedom from the power of sin (chs 5–6), and only on that basis is it freedom from law (ch 7). The exultant description of empowered life in the Spirit as children of God (ch 8) provides a rhetorical foil for the appeal on behalf of Israel, to whom that status first belongs (9.4–5). In this light, the hortatory chs 12–15 are directed to shape a life of respectful mutuality between Jews and Gentiles in Rome.

INTERPRETATION AND GUIDE TO READING

The theme of God's "righteousness" (1.17) or "justice" (as the same Gk word is translated in 3.5) resonates throughout the letter. At stake is God's faithfulness in the face of human faithlessness, as the rhetorical questions that punctuate the letter show (2.3–4,21–23; 3.3,5,7,9,27,29; 4.1; 6.1–3,15–16; 7.7,13; 9.14,19,30; 11.1,11). God's justice is manifest in the uncompromising judgment of all impiety and wickedness, and also in unwavering loyalty to the covenant with Israel. Paul wants the faithful of Rome to respect God's integrity in the salvation offered them through the faithful obedience of Jesus (5.6,18–19; see 3.22,26n.).

Paul is Christ's apostle, obligated to "bring about the obedience of faith among all the Gentiles" (or "nations"), among whom he includes his Roman audience (1.1–6). He declares the gospel of God's salvation to all who believe, Jews and Greeks alike, but "to the Jew first" (1.16). The priority of the Jews in God's plan of salvation is an important theme in the letter (3.1–2; 9.1–4). Paul's mission to Gentiles should provoke his fellow Jews to jealousy (11.13–14), perhaps by convincing them that the last days prophesied by Isaiah were at hand (see 15.12). At last, Paul declares, "all Israel will be saved" (11.26), and all the nations will join Israel in the worship of the one true God (15.7–13).

As he writes, the apostle is about to present to the "saints" in Jerusalem both monetary aid from churches in his mission field (15.25–27) and an embassy of Gentile converts (1 Cor 16.3–4; on the catastrophe of this Jerusalem mission, see Acts 21.27–30). Although the Roman believers have not had the opportunity to contribute to this collection, Paul asks for their prayers (15.30–32). He also invites his readers to participate in the "offering of the Gentiles" (15.15–16) by exhorting them to holy living, which he describes as their sacrificial offering to God (12.1–3; 15.7–9).

The theological convictions expressed in the Letter to the Romans resemble those in letters to congregations Paul himself had founded. Those who have been baptized into Christ must no longer let sin have dominion over them (6.1–14). They are no longer to live as the unbelieving world does (1.18–32), but to give "spiritual worship" to God through sobriety of thought and bodily purity (12.1–3). Just so Paul had reminded the Corinthians, Galatians, and Thessalonians that they must no longer live as "the Gentiles who do not know God," having been sanctified by Christ (1 Cor 6.9–11; Gal 5.22–24; 1 Thess 4.1–5).

Universal accountability before God, Paul's theme in the early chapters of the letter, is more specifically applied in chs 12–15. Rather than being a treatise on salvation in Christ, Romans is a sustained appeal for holy living, directed to Gentiles tempted to look down on their beleaguered Jewish neighbors, within the community of believers in Christ and without. The apostle's call to realize in common life the justice of God which believers celebrate is the letter's enduring legacy.

Neil Elliott

1 Paul, a servant[a] of Jesus Christ, called to
be an apostle, set apart for the gospel
of God, [2] which he promised beforehand
through his prophets in the holy scriptures,
[3] the gospel concerning his Son, who was
descended from David according to the flesh
[4] and was declared to be Son of God with
power according to the spirit[b] of holiness by
resurrection from the dead, Jesus Christ our
Lord, [5] through whom we have received grace
and apostleship to bring about the obedience
of faith among all the Gentiles for the sake
of his name, [6] including yourselves who are
called to belong to Jesus Christ,

[7] To all God's beloved in Rome, who are
called to be saints:

Grace to you and peace from God our
Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

[8] First, I thank my God through Jesus
Christ for all of you, because your faith is
proclaimed throughout the world. [9] For God,
whom I serve with my spirit by announc-
ing the gospel[c] of his Son, is my witness
that without ceasing I remember you always
in my prayers, [10] asking that by God's will I
may somehow at last succeed in coming to
you. [11] For I am longing to see you so that I
may share with you some spiritual gift to
strengthen you— [12] or rather so that we may
be mutually encouraged by each other's
faith, both yours and mine. [13] I want you to
know, brothers and sisters,[d] that I have often
intended to come to you (but thus far have
been prevented), in order that I may reap
some harvest among you as I have among the
rest of the Gentiles. [14] I am a debtor both to
Greeks and to barbarians, both to the wise
and to the foolish [15] —hence my eagerness
to proclaim the gospel to you also who are in
Rome.

[16] For I am not ashamed of the gospel; it is
the power of God for salvation to everyone
who has faith, to the Jew first and also to the
Greek. [17] For in it the righteousness of God is

[a] Gk *slave*
[b] Or *Spirit*
[c] Gk *my spirit in the gospel*
[d] Gk *brothers*

1.1–7: Salutation. Ancient letters began with the names of sender and recipient and a short greeting (see Acts 23.26). Paul's expansion of this form reflects the liturgical context in which his letter would be read. **1:** *A servant . . . called . . . set apart,* the characteristic marks of Israel's prophets (Jer 1.5; Am 7.14). *Apostle,* lit., one "sent forth," i.e., by God (Isa 6.8; Jer 1.7; Ezek 2.3–4). **3:** *Gospel,* see 1.16n. *Descended from David,* messiah in David's royal lineage; cf. the genealogies in Mt 1.1–17; Lk 3.23–28. **4:** *The spirit of holiness,* God's Spirit (see 8.2n.). The corresponding Heb phrase is translated "holy spirit" in Ps 51.11; Isa 63.10–11 (cf. 1QS 4.21; 8.16; 9.3; 1QH 7.6–7; 9.32). **5–6:** Despite the presence of Jews among his audience (see 16.3,7,11), Paul addresses his hearers as Gentiles (1.13–15). **7:** *Saints,* lit., "holy ones."

1.8–17: Thanksgiving. Ancient letters continued with an expression of thanksgiving. Paul's thanksgivings signal important themes in a letter. He describes his obligation to *proclaim the gospel* to the Romans as priestly service (v. 9; see 15.16,25), grounded in the revelation of God's righteousness (vv. 16–17). **10–13:** *By God's will . . . prevented,* apostolic obligations have delayed Paul's visiting the Romans (15.18–22). **11–13:** *Share . . . reap some harvest,* Paul seeks an active response from the Romans (15.14n.). *Strengthen . . . encouraged,* see 1 Thess 3.2. Polite circumspection dominates here and at 15.14–15. **14:** *To Greeks and . . . barbarians,* Paul describes the world as Roman orators saw it, divided into more or less civilized peoples (cf. 1.16n.). **15:** *To you also,* the Romans stand within Paul's mission as apostle to the Gentiles (15.14–19). **16–17:** Often taken as the thesis or theme of the letter, these verses explain Paul's eagerness to *proclaim the gospel* (v. 15) to the Romans. **16:** *I am not ashamed,* a confession of faith (cf. 4 Macc 5.34–38; 6.20; 9.2). Paul's "boast" in God's power is a recurrent theme in the letter (5.1–4,11; 15.17; cf. 1 Thess 1.5; 1 Cor 2.4). *The gospel,* "euangelion," in nonbiblical Greek, celebrated the triumph of a ruler; Paul announces God's triumph. Salvation is the result of the life-giving and right-making *power of God* (see 4.17; 5.11,12–21; 6.1–14; 8.1–4,10–11,21–25; 11.15,23; 15.18–19). *To the Jew first,* 2.9–10; 3.1–2; 9.4. *And also to the Greek,* Paul now describes the world from a Jewish point of view (cf. 1.14). **17:** *The righteousness of God,* or "justice" (as at 3.5). God's character as righteous, which is being *revealed* as God brings human beings into right relationship (see 3.21–26), is a sign of the last days (see 13.11–12). God's vindication before the nations is in view (Ps 98.2; Isa 51.5). *Through faith,* i.e., God's faithfulness (as at 3.3). *For faith,* God's faithfulness elicits human trust. *The one who . . . by faith,* Hab 2.4. Like other Jews, Paul may have read the verse as a messianic prophecy: The Righteous One, the messiah (Acts 3.14; 7.52;

revealed through faith for faith; as it is written, "The one who is righteous will live by faith."[a]

18 For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and wickedness of those who by their wickedness suppress the truth. 19 For what can be known about God is plain to them, because God has shown it to them. 20 Ever since the creation of the world his eternal power and divine nature, invisible though they are, have been understood and seen through the things he has made. So they are without excuse; 21 for though they knew God, they did not honor him as God or give thanks to him, but they became futile in their thinking, and their senseless minds were darkened. 22 Claiming to be wise, they became fools; 23 and they exchanged the glory of the immortal God for images resembling a mortal human being or birds or four-footed animals or reptiles.

24 Therefore God gave them up in the lusts of their hearts to impurity, to the degrading of their bodies among themselves, 25 because they exchanged the truth about God for a lie and worshiped and served the creature rather than the Creator, who is blessed forever! Amen.

26 For this reason God gave them up to degrading passions. Their women exchanged natural intercourse for unnatural, 27 and in the same way also the men, giving up natural intercourse with women, were consumed with passion for one another. Men committed shameless acts with men and received in their own persons the due penalty for their error.

28 And since they did not see fit to acknowledge God, God gave them up to a debased mind and to things that should not be done. 29 They were filled with every kind of wickedness, evil, covetousness, malice. Full of envy, murder, strife, deceit, craftiness, they are gossips, 30 slanderers, God-haters,[b] insolent, haughty, boastful, inventors of evil, rebellious toward parents, 31 foolish, faithless, heartless, ruthless. 32 They know God's decree, that those who practice such things deserve to die—yet they not only do them but even applaud others who practice them.

2 Therefore you have no excuse, whoever you are, when you judge others; for in passing judgment on another you condemn yourself, because you, the judge, are doing the very same things. 2 You say,[c] "We know

[a] Or *The one who is righteous through faith will live*
[b] Or *God-hated*
[c] Gk lacks *You say*

22.14), will live on the basis of faithfulness (see 3.22n.).

1.18–32: An indictment of human wickedness and injustice. Paul argues in 1.18–3.20 that God's justice allows no impunity for any who willfully do wrong. **18:** *The wrath of God,* 2.5; 4.9. God's righteousness (1.17) requires that God no longer pass over sins with forbearance (see 3.25). *Wickedness,* lit., "injustice." **19–23:** Idolatry is an attempt to deny awareness of God, thus evading accountability for one's actions. Its opposite is the "spiritual worship" offered by renewed minds (12.1–2). **20:** *Without excuse,* 2.1; 3.19; compare Wis 13.1–9. **23:** *Images,* idolatry was condemned by the Torah (Ex 20.4–6) and ridiculed by the prophets (Isa 40.18–20; 42.17; 45.16,20; Jer 10.1–16). Like other Jews, Paul attributes the wickedness characteristic of the Greco-Roman world to idolatry. A more irenic tone is attributed to Paul in Acts 17.22–23. **24–27:** *Impurity,* disordered thinking and behavior, to be left behind in baptism (6.6–14; 12.1). **24–25:** *God gave them up,* in a spiral of depravity, injustice leads mortals to suppress their awareness of truth and turn from God (vv. 18–23); God abandons them to increasing wickedness (vv. 24–32). *The Creator, who is blessed forever,* spontaneous praise to God (6.17; 7.25; 9.5; 11.33–36; 16.25–27). **26–27:** *Degrading passions,* while Torah forbids a male lying "with a male as with a woman" (Lev 18.22), Paul's Jewish contemporaries criticized a range of sexual behaviors common in the Greco-Roman world. Although widely read today as a reference to homosexuality, the language of *unnatural* intercourse was more often used in Paul's day to denote not the orientation of sexual desire but its immoderate indulgence, which was believed to weaken the body (*the due penalty*). **28–31:** The spiraling descent into wickedness reaches its nadir in these vices, presented here in a list as elsewhere in the New Testament (e.g., Gal 5.19–21; 1 Tim 1.9–10; 1 Pet 4.3) and in Greek and Roman literature. *Full of envy, murder, strife,* the notorious perversity and brutality of emperors like Gaius (Caligula), or Nero, Paul's contemporary, come readily to mind. **32:** *They know God's decree,* they cannot plead ignorance as an excuse (see 1.20).

2.1–16: All are accountable before God for their works. 1: Paul attacks as hypocritical the presumption that

that God's judgment on those who do such things is in accordance with truth." [3] Do you imagine, whoever you are, that when you judge those who do such things and yet do them yourself, you will escape the judgment of God? [4] Or do you despise the riches of his kindness and forbearance and patience? Do you not realize that God's kindness is meant to lead you to repentance? [5] But by your hard and impenitent heart you are storing up wrath for yourself on the day of wrath, when God's righteous judgment will be revealed. [6] For he will repay according to each one's deeds: [7] to those who by patiently doing good seek for glory and honor and immortality, he will give eternal life; [8] while for those who are self-seeking and who obey not the truth but wickedness, there will be wrath and fury. [9] There will be anguish and distress for everyone who does evil, the Jew first and also the Greek, [10] but glory and honor and peace for everyone who does good, the Jew first and also the Greek. [11] For God shows no partiality.

[12] All who have sinned apart from the law will also perish apart from the law, and all who have sinned under the law will be judged by the law. [13] For it is not the hearers of the law who are righteous in God's sight, but the doers of the law who will be justified. [14] When Gentiles, who do not possess the law, do instinctively what the law requires, these, though not having the law, are a law to themselves. [15] They show that what the law requires is written on their hearts, to which their own conscience also bears witness; and their conflicting thoughts will accuse or perhaps excuse them [16] on the day when, according to my gospel, God, through Jesus Christ, will judge the secret thoughts of all.

[17] But if you call yourself a Jew and rely on the law and boast of your relation to God [18] and know his will and determine what is best because you are instructed in the law, [19] and if you are sure that you are a guide to the blind, a light to those who are in darkness, [20] a corrector of the foolish, a teacher of children, having in the law the embodiment of knowledge and truth, [21] you, then, that teach others, will you not teach yourself? While you preach against stealing, do you steal? [22] You that forbid adultery, do you commit adultery? You that abhor idols, do you rob temples? [23] You that boast in the law, do you dishonor God by breaking the law? [24] For,

God will have mercy on some by exempting them from punishment (2.4). **2:** *You say,* these words, lacking in Gk, have been added to express one interpretation of this passage as a "trap" for "the Jew," who judges those indicted in 1.18–32. Jews are not clearly addressed before 2.17. Here, any are condemned who *know that God's judgment . . . is in accordance with truth,* yet do *the very same things* they condemn in others (2.1,3). **4:** *Do you despise . . . kindness,* the question is rhetorical. Paul warns the baptized not to presume God's grace in 6.1,15. **5:** *Day of wrath,* the time of divine judgment (see Isa 2.12n.; 13.9,13; Lam 2.1; 1 Thess 1.10; etc.), understood in early Christian thought to be imminent and universal (e.g., 13.12; 2 Pet 3.10). God's punishment of sin coheres with God's righteousness (see 1.17–18). **6–11:** Judgment according to one's works: see 2 Cor 11.15; in Jas 2.14–26 the Gk word "erga," translated *deeds* here, is "works." **9–10:** The Jew is first in salvation (1.16; 3.1–2), therefore also in responsibility. *Anguish and distress,* eschatological woe (2 Cor 4.8). **11:** *No partiality,* Deut 10.17; 2 Chr 19.7. No discrimination compromises God's justice. **12:** *Apart from the law,* or "in a lawless manner"; *under the law*, or "while living within the law." The translation given here implies a distinction between Gentiles and Jews. Paul's larger point is that all shall be judged by the same standard: doing what the law requires (v. 15). **13:** *Hearers* and *doers,* Mt 7.21; Jas 1.22–25. *Doers of the law . . . will be justified,* see 3.20n. **14–15:** Ancient Judaism acknowledged righteous Gentiles who did "by nature" *what the law requires,* lit., "the work of the law." For Paul, those who walk according to the Spirit fulfill the law's "just requirement" (8.4). **15:** *Their own conscience also bears witness,* thus they acknowledge the validity of God's law. A similar argument appears in 7.14–22.

2.17–29: Does being a Jew relieve one from accountability to God? Paul makes his point through imaginary conversation with a Jew (the diatribe style). **17:** Although vv. 17–24 have often been read as an "indictment" of the Jew, Paul considers Israel's privileges real (see 3.1–9; 9.1–4). *Boast,* Paul warns repeatedly against groundless boasting before God (see 2.23; 3.27; 4.5; 5.1–3,11; 11.17–20). **21–23:** *Will you not teach yourself?* Paul interrogates an imaginary witness, whose testimony leads to the conclusions in vv. 25–29. Israel's covenantal privileges do not lessen accountability before God. **22:** *Do you rob temples?* While the Torah forbade idolatry, Jews in Paul's day were careful not to dishonor shrines to other gods (Philo, *De Conf. Ling.* 163; Josephus, *Ap.* 269; *Ant.* 4.207).

as it is written, "The name of God is blasphemed among the Gentiles because of you."

25 Circumcision indeed is of value if you
obey the law; but if you break the law, your
circumcision has become uncircumcision.
26 So, if those who are uncircumcised keep
the requirements of the law, will not their
uncircumcision be regarded as circumcision?
27 Then those who are physically uncircum-
cised but keep the law will condemn you that
have the written code and circumcision but
break the law. 28 For a person is not a Jew who
is one outwardly, nor is true circumcision
something external and physical. 29 Rather,
a person is a Jew who is one inwardly, and
real circumcision is a matter of the heart—it
is spiritual and not literal. Such a person
receives praise not from others but from God.

3 Then what advantage has the Jew?
Or what is the value of circumcision?
2 Much, in every way. For in the first place the
Jews[a] were entrusted with the oracles of God.
3 What if some were unfaithful? Will their
faithlessness nullify the faithfulness of God?
4 By no means! Although everyone is a liar, let
God be proved true, as it is written,

"So that you may be justified in your
words,
and prevail in your judging."[b]

5 But if our injustice serves to confirm the
justice of God, what should we say? That God
is unjust to inflict wrath on us? (I speak in
a human way.) 6 By no means! For then how
could God judge the world? 7 But if through
my falsehood God's truthfulness abounds to
his glory, why am I still being condemned as
a sinner? 8 And why not say (as some people
slander us by saying that we say), "Let us do
evil so that good may come"? Their condem-
nation is deserved!

9 What then? Are we any better off?[c] No,
not at all; for we have already charged that
all, both Jews and Greeks, are under the
power of sin, 10 as it is written:

"There is no one who is righteous, not
even one;
11 there is no one who has
understanding,
there is no one who seeks God.
12 All have turned aside, together they have
become worthless;
there is no one who shows kindness,
there is not even one."
13 "Their throats are opened graves;
they use their tongues to deceive."
"The venom of vipers is under their lips."
14 "Their mouths are full of cursing and
bitterness."
15 "Their feet are swift to shed blood;
16 ruin and misery are in their paths,
17 and the way of peace they have not
known."
18 "There is no fear of God before their
eyes."

19 Now we know that whatever the law
says, it speaks to those who are under the law,

[a] Gk *they*
[b] Gk *when you are being judged*
[c] Or *at any disadvantage?*

23: *Do you dishonor God,* some translations render this sentence as a statement, but it is a question in the earliest punctuated Gk manuscript. **24:** Isa 52.5; cf. Ezek 36.20. **25–29:** These verses expand the principle that "all who have sinned under the law will be judged by the law" (v. 12). **26:** *The requirements of the law,* see v. 14; 8.1–4n. **29:** *Real circumcision . . . the heart,* Deut 10.16; 30.6,8; Jer 4.4; 9.26; Ezek 44.9.

3.1–9: God's integrity in the covenant with Israel. 1: Paul continues to question an imaginary dialogue partner, who agrees that the *advantage* of being a Jew is real (see 9.1–4), but does not provide immunity from God's just judgment. **3:** The faithlessness of some Jews—often read as a lack of faith in Christ, but possibly meaning their disobedience—does not alter God's *faithfulness* to the covenant. **4:** Pss 116.11; 51.4. **5:** *The justice of God* (see 1.17n.) requires the judgment of injustice. **8:** *As some people slander us,* it is not clear who is slandering whom. Jews like Philo protested being "slandered" (*Flaccus* 21–23) by hostile stereotypes. In 6.1,15 Paul uses similar language to refute a possible misunderstanding of God's grace in Christ. **9:** *Are we any better off?* This translation echoes v. 2, yet reaches a different conclusion. The Gk may also be translated "Do we have a defense?"

3.10–20: The universality of God's judgment. These quotations from the Hebrew Bible insist that no one may claim to satisfy God's standards. **10–12:** Pss 14.1–2; 53.1–2. **13:** Pss 5.9; 140.3. **14:** Ps 10.7. **15–17:** Prov 1.16; Isa 59.7–8. **18:** Ps 36.1. **19:** The law holds everyone accountable before God, not only Jews (cf. 2.13). The previous

so that every mouth may be silenced, and the whole world may be held accountable to God. [20] For "no human being will be justified in his sight" by deeds prescribed by the law, for through the law comes the knowledge of sin.

[21] But now, apart from law, the righteousness of God has been disclosed, and is attested by the law and the prophets, [22] the righteousness of God through faith in Jesus Christ[a] for all who believe. For there is no distinction, [23] since all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God; [24] they are now justified by his grace as a gift, through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus, [25] whom God put forward as a sacrifice of atonement[b] by his blood, effective through faith. He did this to show his righteousness, because in his divine forbearance he had passed over the sins previously committed; [26] it was to prove at the present time that he himself is righteous and that he justifies the one who has faith in Jesus.[c]

[27] Then what becomes of boasting? It is excluded. By what law? By that of works? No, but by the law of faith. [28] For we hold that a person is justified by faith apart from works prescribed by the law. [29] Or is God the God of Jews only? Is he not the God of Gentiles also? Yes, of Gentiles also, [30] since God is one; and he will justify the circumcised on the ground of faith and the uncircumcised through that same faith. [31] Do we then overthrow the law by this faith? By no means! On the contrary, we uphold the law.

4 What then are we to say was gained by[d] Abraham, our ancestor according to the flesh? [2] For if Abraham was justified by works, he has something to boast about, but not before God. [3] For what does the scripture say? "Abraham believed God, and it was reckoned to him as righteousness." [4] Now to one who works, wages are not reckoned as a gift but as something due. [5] But to one who without works trusts him who justi-

[a] Or *through the faith of Jesus Christ*
[b] Or *a place of atonement*
[c] Or *who has the faith of Jesus*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *say about*

scriptures emphasize sins of false speech (cf. 1.18). **20:** Ps 143.2. The lack of human righteousness is a theme throughout the Psalms and other Jewish writings (e.g., *1 Enoch* 81.5; 1QH 8.20; 17.14–15). *By deeds prescribed by the law,* lit., "works of the law," is Paul's addition to the Psalm text (see 3.28n.; Dan 9.18; 1QH 15.17). The "doers of the law" who "will be justified" (2.13) are not those who merely possess the law, but those who by God's Spirit fulfill its "just requirement" (8.4), by "doing," lit., working, "good" (2.7,10).

3.21–31: The revelation of God's justice. 21–22: *Apart from the law,* where no one might lay hold of the law as a defense from God's judgment. *Disclosed,* see 1.17n. The *righteousness of God* involves God's action in Christ to "justify" (make right) those who trust in God (see 6.1–23). **22:** The alternate translation in note *a, the faith of Jesus Christ,* is increasingly preferred. It conforms this phrase to identically structured phrases in 3.3 ("the faithfulness of God") and 4.12,16 ("the faith of . . . Abraham") and reflects the importance for Paul of Jesus' faithful obedience (5.19; Phil 2.8). **25–26:** Paul emphasizes God's integrity and justice, now "revealed" (1.17), not in putting up with sin but in dealing with it decisively through the *faith of Jesus* (see textual note *c*). *Sacrifice of atonement,* cf. 4 Macc 17.22. The translation in textual note *b* (see Ex 25.17–22) is less likely. *Divine forbearance,* God has patiently withheld wrath, not to indulge sin but to lead sinners to repentance (2.4; see Wis 11.23). **27:** *Boasting* is *excluded* by *the law of faith,* i.e., by the law rightly understood as eliciting trust in God's saving power (see 2.17n.; 4.5; 11.18n.; Deut 9.4–6; Dan 9.18). **28:** *We hold,* Paul's language resembles that of Dead Sea Scroll fragments listing "works of the law" that will be "reckoned as righteousness" for those who perform them (4Q397, 398). Paul's point is that one is *justified by faith,* meaning either one's faithful obedience to God (see 1.5,16), God's faithfulness (as in 3.3), or Jesus' faithfulness (see 3.22n.,26n.). **29–31:** *God is one* (see Deut 6.4), judging Jew and Gentile alike on the basis of *faith,* i.e., faithful obedience (2.13–16), which will indeed *uphold the law* (7.7,12–16).

4.1–25: Abraham as ancestor. 1: *Abraham . . . the flesh,* this translation implies Paul refers only to Jews. The Gk may also be translated "What shall we say: Have we found Abraham to be our ancestor according to the flesh?" which leads to the negative answer in 4.11–12,16 (cf. 9.6–9). Thus Abraham is ancestor of the faithful, Gentiles as well as Jews. **2–5:** Paul finds in Gen 15.6 proof that righteousness was *reckoned* to Abraham as a *gift,* not as *wages* paid as *something due* (6.23). God is free from any obligation to mortals (see 4.16). **5:** God *justifies*

fies the ungodly, such faith is reckoned as righteousness. [6] So also David speaks of the blessedness of those to whom God reckons righteousness apart from works:

[7] "Blessed are those whose iniquities are
forgiven,
and whose sins are covered;
[8] blessed is the one against whom the Lord
will not reckon sin."

[9] Is this blessedness, then, pronounced only on the circumcised, or also on the uncircumcised? We say, "Faith was reckoned to Abraham as righteousness." [10] How then was it reckoned to him? Was it before or after he had been circumcised? It was not after, but before he was circumcised. [11] He received the sign of circumcision as a seal of the righteousness that he had by faith while he was still uncircumcised. The purpose was to make him the ancestor of all who believe without being circumcised and who thus have righteousness reckoned to them, [12] and likewise the ancestor of the circumcised who are not only circumcised but who also follow the example of the faith that our ancestor Abraham had before he was circumcised.

[13] For the promise that he would inherit the world did not come to Abraham or to his descendants through the law but through the righteousness of faith. [14] If it is the adherents of the law who are to be the heirs, faith is null and the promise is void. [15] For the law brings wrath; but where there is no law, neither is there violation.

[16] For this reason it depends on faith, in order that the promise may rest on grace and be guaranteed to all his descendants, not only to the adherents of the law but also to those who share the faith of Abraham (for he is the father of all of us, [17] as it is written, "I have made you the father of many nations")—in the presence of the God in whom he believed, who gives life to the dead and calls into existence the things that do not exist. [18] Hoping against hope, he believed that he would become "the father of many nations," according to what was said, "So numerous shall your descendants be." [19] He did not weaken in faith when he considered his own body, which was already[a] as good as dead (for he was about a hundred years old), or when he considered the barrenness of Sarah's womb. [20] No distrust made him waver concerning the promise of God, but he grew strong in his faith as he gave glory to God, [21] being fully convinced that God was able to do what he had promised. [22] Therefore his faith[b] "was reckoned to him as righteousness." [23] Now the words, "it was reckoned to him," were written not for

[a] Other ancient authorities lack *already*
[b] Gk *Therefore it*

the ungodly, Paul shares his contemporaries' view that God had called Abraham out of idolatry (see Gen 12.1–4; 13.4; 17.9–14,23–27). Abraham's faithful response stands in contrast with the "ungodliness" of the Greco-Roman world (1.18) and provides the prototype for God's justification of the ungodly through Christ's death (5.6). **6–8:** Paul quotes Ps 32.1–2 (LXX) to introduce the theme of *blessedness* (Gen 12.2–3; Gal 3.8). **9–12:** Abraham was justified (Gen 15.6) *before he was circumcised* (Gen 17.24), on account of his *faith*; therefore he could be ancestor of both circumcised (Gen 12.2; 15.13–14) and uncircumcised (Gen 17.5; see v. 17). **12:** *The faith that . . . Abraham had,* his faithful response to God (vv. 5,17). **13–15:** God's promise comes through *the righteousness of faith,* or "faithful righteousness," like that of Abraham (vv. 16,20), not through the law. **14:** *The adherents of the law,* compare "hearers of the law" in 2.13. *Faith is null and the promise is void,* if God's blessing included only those who had already performed the law they possessed (3.3–4; 9.6–9). **15:** *The law brings wrath,* Paul may have in mind the solemn curses pronounced on the disobedient in Lev 26 and Deut 28. *But where there is no law . . . violation,* Abraham did not stand under the law when he responded to God in faith.

4.16–25: Inclusion in the heritage of Abraham's faith. 16: *Not only . . . but also,* Jews and Gentiles alike inherit God's promise as they *share the faith of Abraham.* **17:** Gen 17.5. Abraham's faith in God's promise despite his own "dead" body (v. 19) is an example for all those who trust God *who raised Jesus . . . from the dead* (v. 24). God's power to *call into existence the things that do not exist* is a key theme in the letter (v. 24; 6.4–5,9–11; 8.11; 9.25–26; 11.5). Contrast Abraham's faith with those who refuse to acknowledge God through creation (1.20–22). **18:** Gen 15.5. *Hoping against hope,* see 8.24–25. **19:** See Gen 17.17. **20–21:** God's ability *to do what he had promised* is at stake throughout Romans, especially regarding Israel (3.3–4; 9.6). *Gave glory to God,* again Abraham is contrasted with the ungodly of 1.21–24; see 15.9–12. **22–23:** Gen 15.6.

his sake alone, [24] but for ours also. It will be reckoned to us who believe in him who raised Jesus our Lord from the dead, [25] who was handed over to death for our trespasses and was raised for our justification.

5 Therefore, since we are justified by faith, we[a] have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ, [2] through whom we have obtained access[b] to this grace in which we stand; and we[c] boast in our hope of sharing the glory of God. [3] And not only that, but we[c] also boast in our sufferings, knowing that suffering produces endurance, [4] and endurance produces character, and character produces hope, [5] and hope does not disappoint us, because God's love has been poured into our hearts through the Holy Spirit that has been given to us.

[6] For while we were still weak, at the right time Christ died for the ungodly. [7] Indeed, rarely will anyone die for a righteous person—though perhaps for a good person someone might actually dare to die. [8] But God proves his love for us in that while we still were sinners Christ died for us. [9] Much more surely then, now that we have been justified by his blood, will we be saved through him from the wrath of God.[d] [10] For if while we were enemies, we were reconciled to God through the death of his Son, much more surely, having been reconciled, will we be saved by his life. [11] But more than that, we even boast in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, through whom we have now received reconciliation.

[12] Therefore, just as sin came into the world through one man, and death came through sin, and so death spread to all because all have sinned— [13] sin was indeed in the world before the law, but sin is not reckoned when there is no law. [14] Yet death exercised dominion from Adam to Moses, even over those whose sins were not like the transgression of Adam, who is a type of the one who was to come.

[15] But the free gift is not like the trespass. For if the many died through the one man's trespass, much more surely have the grace of God and the free gift in the grace of the one man, Jesus Christ, abounded for the many. [16] And the free gift is not like the effect of the one man's sin. For the judgment following one trespass brought condemnation, but the free gift following many trespasses brings justification. [17] If, because of the one man's trespass, death exercised dominion through

[a] Other ancient authorities read *let us*
[b] Other ancient authorities add *by faith*
[c] Or *let us*
[d] Gk *the wrath*

5.1–21: The nature of justification in Christ. In light of the preceding argument, Paul declares that those justified in Christ may *boast* (vv. 2–3,11), not merely of being forgiven their sins (see vv. 8–10), but *much more surely,* of being saved from *wrath* (v. 9) and the *dominion* of *death* (vv. 14–17). This chapter prepares for the call to righteous living in ch 6. **1:** Being *justified by faith* (see 3.28n.) means entering God's life-giving and right-making *dominion* (v. 21), as ch 6 will make clear. Justification *by faith* may mean by the faith of Jesus, i.e., his obedience to God as shown in his death (v. 19). Thus Paul can speak of being justified *through Jesus Christ* (vv. 11,21), by Jesus' *blood* (v. 9), i.e., through his *death* (v. 10), or by his *obedience* (v. 19). **2–5:** *Hope* in the coming *glory of God,* see 8.16–25. **2:** *We boast* (or "let us boast," see v. 11), not in our own works (3.27; 4.2) but in God's power. **3:** *Sufferings,* see 8.18,35–36. **5:** *The Holy Spirit,* see 1.4n.; 8.2n. On the work of *the Spirit,* see 8.2–17,23–27. **6:** *While we were still weak,* God's grace preceded any human act that might constitute a claim to righteousness before God (see 3.27; 4.2; 9.11–12,16; regarding the Gentiles, 9.30). **9–11:** Paul stresses that God's saving purpose is *much more* than a reprieve from the punishment due for sins (vv. 15,17). **9–10:** *Justified by his blood . . . reconciled . . . through the death of his Son,* see v. 1n.

5.12–21: Adam and Christ. Christ's saving work surpasses even the effects of Adam's disobedience. (A different comparison of Christ and Adam is made in 1 Cor 15.21–23,45–49.) **12–14:** The catastrophe in Adam's transgression (Gen 3) is greater than the punishments reckoned for individual transgressions. It also introduced the *dominion* of sin (see v. 21; 6.6,12,14), and *much more,* allowed for *death* to invade creation (Gen 3.19,22–24). **14:** *To Moses,* until the law was given to Moses; see v. 20. *The one who was to come,* the messiah. **15–21: Salvation much more than forgiveness. 15–16:** Despite an apparent similarity between their effects on *the many,* Christ's obedience accomplished *much more* than to reverse the effects of Adam's sin. **17–18:** Christ's *act of righteousness* (see

that one, much more surely will those who receive the abundance of grace and the free gift of righteousness exercise dominion in life through the one man, Jesus Christ.

18 Therefore just as one man's trespass led to condemnation for all, so one man's act of righteousness leads to justification and life for all. 19 For just as by the one man's disobedience the many were made sinners, so by the one man's obedience the many will be made righteous. 20 But law came in, with the result that the trespass multiplied; but where sin increased, grace abounded all the more, 21 so that, just as sin exercised dominion in death, so grace might also exercise dominion through justification[a] leading to eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.

6 What then are we to say? Should we continue in sin in order that grace may abound? 2 By no means! How can we who died to sin go on living in it? 3 Do you not know that all of us who have been baptized into Christ Jesus were baptized into his death? 4 Therefore we have been buried with him by baptism into death, so that, just as Christ was raised from the dead by the glory of the Father, so we too might walk in newness of life.

5 For if we have been united with him in a death like his, we will certainly be united with him in a resurrection like his. 6 We know that our old self was crucified with him so that the body of sin might be destroyed, and we might no longer be enslaved to sin. 7 For whoever has died is freed from sin. 8 But if we have died with Christ, we believe that we will also live with him. 9 We know that Christ, being raised from the dead, will never die again; death no longer has dominion over him. 10 The death he died, he died to sin, once for all; but the life he lives, he lives to God. 11 So you also must consider yourselves dead to sin and alive to God in Christ Jesus.

12 Therefore, do not let sin exercise dominion in your mortal bodies, to make you obey their passions. 13 No longer present your members to sin as instruments[b] of wickedness, but present yourselves to God as those who have been brought from death to life, and present your members to God as instruments[b] of righteousness. 14 For sin will have no dominion over you, since you are not under law but under grace.

15 What then? Should we sin because we are not under law but under grace? By no means! 16 Do you not know that if you present yourselves to anyone as obedient slaves, you are slaves of the one whom you obey, either of sin, which leads to death, or of obedience, which leads to righteousness? 17 But thanks be to God that you, having once been slaves of sin, have become obedient from the heart to the form of teaching to which you were entrusted, 18 and that you,

[a] Or *righteousness*
[b] Or *weapons*

8.1–4n.) brought the dominion of *life* (6.13–14,23–24). **20:** The giving of the law is a minor episode, serving only to document sin's dominion through the increase of trespasses (7.7–11). The law could not bring that dominion to an end; God's powerful grace could (8.1–4; CD A 3.1–12).

6.1–23: Life in Christ requires obedience. 1: Compare other leading questions in 4.1; 6.15,21; 7.7,13. *Should we continue in sin,* (see v. 2; 3.8n.) only if grace were simply a matter of being relieved of the punishment for trespasses. But it is "much more" (5.12–21). **2–6:** Baptism is a dying with Christ (v. 6; 7.6; Gal 2.19) to the power of sin, assuring that *we will also live with him* (v. 8). Contrast Eph 2.5–6; Col 2.12–13, where the baptized are said already to be *raised* with Christ. **7–11:** *Whoever has died,* whether Christ, through his own death (v. 10), or those who have been baptized into his death (v. 14); see 7.1–6. **9–10:** The lethal collusion of sin and death is evident (see 5.12–14,21). The Gk word translated *has dominion* is related to the word translated "lord" (see vv. 16–17n.); in 5.21 a different word is used. **12–13:** *Instruments of wickedness . . . of righteousness,* lit., "weapons of injustice . . . of justice." Through martial imagery Paul calls the baptized not to surrender themselves as sin's prisoners of war. **14–15:** If grace provided immunity from the law's verdict, then we might well "continue in sin" (see v. 1). **16–20:** An analogy from slavery. Since war captives were often enslaved, these verses may continue the imagery of vv. 13–14. **16–17:** *Slaves . . . obedient,* human existence is inevitably some form of obedience. Note that Paul refrains here from describing God as "Lord," lit., "master." **17:** *Obedient from the heart,* not in slavish obedience but with

having been set free from sin, have become slaves of righteousness. 19 I am speaking in human terms because of your natural limitations.[a] For just as you once presented your members as slaves to impurity and to greater and greater iniquity, so now present your members as slaves to righteousness for sanctification.

20 When you were slaves of sin, you were free in regard to righteousness. 21 So what advantage did you then get from the things of which you now are ashamed? The end of those things is death. 22 But now that you have been freed from sin and enslaved to God, the advantage you get is sanctification. The end is eternal life. 23 For the wages of sin is death, but the free gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord.

7 Do you not know, brothers and sisters[b]—for I am speaking to those who know the law—that the law is binding on a person only during that person's lifetime? 2 Thus a married woman is bound by the law to her husband as long as he lives; but if her husband dies, she is discharged from the law concerning the husband. 3 Accordingly, she will be called an adulteress if she lives with another man while her husband is alive. But if her husband dies, she is free from that law, and if she marries another man, she is not an adulteress.

4 In the same way, my friends,[b] you have died to the law through the body of Christ, so that you may belong to another, to him who has been raised from the dead in order that we may bear fruit for God. 5 While we were living in the flesh, our sinful passions, aroused by the law, were at work in our members to bear fruit for death. 6 But now we are discharged from the law, dead to that which held us captive, so that we are slaves not under the old written code but in the new life of the Spirit.

7 What then should we say? That the law is sin? By no means! Yet, if it had not been for the law, I would not have known sin. I would not have known what it is to covet if the law had not said, "You shall not covet." 8 But sin, seizing an opportunity in the commandment, produced in me all kinds of covetousness. Apart from the law sin lies dead. 9 I was once alive apart from the law, but when the commandment came, sin revived 10 and I died, and the very commandment that promised life proved to be death to me. 11 For sin, seizing an opportunity in the commandment, deceived me and through it killed me. 12 So the law is holy, and the commandment is holy and just and good.

13 Did what is good, then, bring death to me? By no means! It was sin, working death in me through what is good, in order that sin might be shown to be sin, and through the commandment might become sinful beyond measure.

[a] Gk *the weakness of your flesh*
[b] Gk *brothers*

genuine intention (12.1–2). **18–20:** "Not under law" (v. 15) does not imply freedom from moral obligation. **21:** *The things of which you now are ashamed,* 1.24–32.

7.1–25: A defense of the law. Paul relies on an analogy from marriage law. One is "free from the law" (v. 3) only when free from the circumstances to which the law rightly applies; here, free from the dominion of sin (6.6–11). Just as marriage law remains valid, so the Torah remains *holy* (v. 12), *spiritual* (v. 14), and *good* (v. 16). **1:** *Those who know the law,* i.e., marriage law. Paul may not be presuming specific knowledge of the Torah. **4:** The one who is in Christ has *died to the law,* and is thus "discharged" from it (v. 6). **5:** *Sinful passions, aroused by the law,* 5.20; 7.7–11. **6:** *That which held us captive,* the law, which bound us in our relationship to sin (6.15–23).

7.7–13: Sin's poisonous interaction with the law. 7: Leading questions (see v. 13) express Paul's concern to exonerate the law. *I would not have known sin,* Paul is not speaking autobiographically (v. 9; Phil 3.6); some have suggested he refers to Adam (v. 10). More likely he presents a "speech in character," reflecting a typical human experience of the law. Although the law (here, Ex 20.17; Deut 5.21) aggravates the dominion of sin in one's members, the law itself remains valid. **8:** *Covetousness,* or "desire," was regarded by Paul's contemporaries as the root of all evil (see Jas 1.15; 4 Macc 2.4–6; Philo, *De spec. leg.* 4.84–94), even the source of Adam's sin (Philo, *Leg. all.* 3.115). *Sin lies dead,* cf. 5.13–14. **10:** *Promised life,* possibly an allusion to Lev 18.5, or to Deut 30.6–20; Paul juxtaposes those passages in 10.5–7 (cf. Gal 3.21). **11:** *Sin . . . deceived me,* Gen 3.13. **13:** *That sin might be shown to be sin,* 5.13.

[14] For we know that the law is spiritual; but I am of the flesh, sold into slavery under sin.[a] [15] I do not understand my own actions. For I do not do what I want, but I do the very thing I hate. [16] Now if I do what I do not want, I agree that the law is good. [17] But in fact it is no longer I that do it, but sin that dwells within me. [18] For I know that nothing good dwells within me, that is, in my flesh. I can will what is right, but I cannot do it. [19] For I do not do the good I want, but the evil I do not want is what I do. [20] Now if I do what I do not want, it is no longer I that do it, but sin that dwells within me.

[21] So I find it to be a law that when I want to do what is good, evil lies close at hand. [22] For I delight in the law of God in my inmost self, [23] but I see in my members another law at war with the law of my mind, making me captive to the law of sin that dwells in my members. [24] Wretched man that I am! Who will rescue me from this body of death? [25] Thanks be to God through Jesus Christ our Lord!

So then, with my mind I am a slave to the law of God, but with my flesh I am a slave to the law of sin.

8 There is therefore now no condemnation for those who are in Christ Jesus. [2] For the law of the Spirit[b] of life in Christ Jesus has set you[c] free from the law of sin and of death. [3] For God has done what the law, weakened by the flesh, could not do: by sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and to deal with sin,[d] he condemned sin in the flesh, [4] so that the just requirement of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not according to the flesh but according to the Spirit.[b] [5] For those who live according to the flesh set their minds on the things of the flesh, but those who live according to the Spirit[b] set their minds on the things of the Spirit.[b] [6] To set the mind on the flesh is death, but to set the mind on the Spirit[b] is life and peace. [7] For this reason the mind that is set on the flesh is hostile to God; it does not submit to God's law—indeed it cannot, [8] and those who are in the flesh cannot please God.

[9] But you are not in the flesh; you are in the Spirit,[b] since the Spirit of God dwells in you. Anyone who does not have the Spirit of Christ does not belong to him. [10] But if Christ is in you, though the body is dead because of sin,

[a] Gk *sold under sin*
[b] Or *spirit*
[c] Here the Greek word *you* is singular number; other ancient authorities read *me* or *us*
[d] Or *and as a sin offering*

7.14–25: Even the disobedient acknowledge the rightness of the law's verdict. 14: *The flesh,* where *sin . . . dwells* (vv. 17–20); the Dead Sea Scrolls similarly speak of the "dominion" of sin in the flesh (e.g., 1QH 4.25), or of the "evil impulse" that prevents the fulfillment of God's law, until God intervenes (1QH 13.6). **15–16:** *I do not do what I want,* this is not Paul's view of existence in Christ (see 12.1–2), but an illustration of the point made in 2.15: The law declares God's valid judgment on all human conduct. **18:** *I cannot do it,* 8.4,7–8. **25:** The "I" is hypothetical; Paul has already declared that those baptized into Christ are "no longer . . . enslaved to sin" (6.6).

8.1–39: Life in the Spirit. A turning point in the letter, summing up Paul's previous argument (*therefore,* v. 1) and serving as a foil for the dramatic appeal that follows. **1–4:** The inclination of human *flesh* (see 5.20n.) prevented earlier generations from fulfilling the *just requirement of the law* (2.14–15,26). The law is thus *weakened by the flesh* (v. 3). Now that Christ has satisfied that *just requirement* through his own "act of righteousness" (5.18, translating the same Gk word), those who are *in Christ* or *in the Spirit* (v. 9) likewise fulfill the law's *requirement,* in that they *walk . . . according to the Spirit* (v. 4). **2:** *The law of the Spirit of life* and *of death,* Paul speaks not of two different laws, but of God's law experienced under two opposing dominions, of sin and of righteousness (6.12–14; 7.6). *The Spirit of life,* capitalized to refer to the "Spirit of God" (vv. 9,11,14; "the Spirit that is from God," 1 Cor 2.14). Paul can use the word "spirit" indefinitely (e.g., "a spirit of slavery . . . a spirit of adoption," v. 15), or personally (vv. 26–27; 1 Cor 2.10–14). The latter meaning is conventionally capitalized in Christian usage, i.e., *the Holy Spirit* (5.5; 9.1; 1 Thess 4.8). **3:** *God has done what the law . . . could not do,* Jews in Paul's day regarded Israel's subjection to unjust powers as realizing God's curses on the disobedient (9.31; 10.3). Paul sees Israel's destiny as bound up with Christ's obedience (9.4–5). **5–17:** Life in the Spirit and life in the flesh are contrasted. Paul thinks not of a sharp dualism of "spirit" or "mind" over body, but of different dispositions of the mind (vv. 5–7) corresponding to different ways of comporting one's body (6.12–19; 12.1–2). **7:** *Hostile to God,* 5.10. *Does not submit to God's law,* that is, to the law's "just requirement," which remains the standard of righteous living (v. 4; 2.14–15).

the Spirit[a] is life because of righteousness. [11] If the Spirit of him who raised Jesus from the dead dwells in you, he who raised Christ[b] from the dead will give life to your mortal bodies also through[c] his Spirit that dwells in you.

[12] So then, brothers and sisters,[d] we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live according to the flesh— [13] for if you live according to the flesh, you will die; but if by the Spirit you put to death the deeds of the body, you will live. [14] For all who are led by the Spirit of God are children of God. [15] For you did not receive a spirit of slavery to fall back into fear, but you have received a spirit of adoption. When we cry, "Abba![e] Father!" [16] it is that very Spirit bearing witness[f] with our spirit that we are children of God, [17] and if children, then heirs, heirs of God and joint heirs with Christ—if, in fact, we suffer with him so that we may also be glorified with him.

[18] I consider that the sufferings of this present time are not worth comparing with the glory about to be revealed to us. [19] For the creation waits with eager longing for the revealing of the children of God; [20] for the creation was subjected to futility, not of its own will but by the will of the one who subjected it, in hope [21] that the creation itself will be set free from its bondage to decay and will obtain the freedom of the glory of the children of God. [22] We know that the whole creation has been groaning in labor pains until now; [23] and not only the creation, but we ourselves, who have the first fruits of the Spirit, groan inwardly while we wait for adoption, the redemption of our bodies. [24] For in[g] hope we were saved. Now hope that is seen is not hope. For who hopes[h] for what is seen? [25] But if we hope for what we do not see, we wait for it with patience.

[26] Likewise the Spirit helps us in our weakness; for we do not know how to pray as we ought, but that very Spirit intercedes[i] with sighs too deep for words. [27] And God,[j] who searches the heart, knows what is the mind of the Spirit, because the Spirit[k] intercedes for the saints according to the will of God.[l]

[28] We know that all things work together for good[m] for those who love God, who are

[a] Or *spirit*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *the Christ* or *Christ Jesus* or *Jesus Christ*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *on account of*
[d] Gk *brothers*
[e] Aramaic for *Father*
[f] Or *[15]a spirit of adoption, by which we cry, "Abba! Father!" [16]The Spirit itself bears witness*
[g] Or *by*
[h] Other ancient authorities read *awaits*
[i] Other ancient authorities add *for us*
[j] Gk *the one*
[k] Gk *he* or *it*
[l] Gk *according to God*
[m] Other ancient authorities read *God makes all things work together for good*, or *in all things God works for good*

9–10: Paul shifts from speaking of being "in Christ" (v. 1) or *in the Spirit* to having the Spirit or Christ dwell within oneself (6.22; 7.4). **11:** *He who raised Christ,* 4.17,24; 11.15. **13:** *Deeds of the body,* here Paul uses "body" interchangeably with *flesh.* See 6.6–8. **15–17:** *Adoption* by the Spirit: Those who live according to the Spirit (or by "faith," i.e., faithfulness, 4.12,16) are the *heirs* of the promises given to Abraham, even if not his descendants according to the flesh (4.1,11–14; Gal 4.5–7). **15:** *Abba,* an Aramaic word which Jesus may have used in his own prayer (Mk 14.36), was retained in prayer by early Christians (Gal 4.6). **17:** *If . . . we suffer,* the tension between suffering and hope in the glory to come (5.3–5) is characteristic of life during "this present time" (v. 18; 12.12; 1 Cor 4.8–13).

8.18–39: Suffering, and hope in God's promise. God's purposes toward his children are much greater than the circumstances of *this present time* would indicate. This theme is crucial in chs 9–11. **19–22:** Paul shares an apocalyptic viewpoint that the present age is evil (see Gal 1.4), having been *subjected* by God to malevolent spiritual forces (v. 20; 1 Cor 15.20–28; Phil 3.21). **21:** Creation itself will participate in the liberation of the *children of God.* **22:** *Groaning in labor pains,* a frequent apocalyptic metaphor (2 Esd 4.42; 10.5–14; Mt 24.8; Mk 13.8). **23:** The inner testimony of the Spirit (vv. 16,26–27) is experienced as intense yearning and hope (5.1–5). *Adoption,* lit., "sonship," see 9.4n. **26–27:** If we "groan inwardly" (v. 23), it is because of the Spirit at work in our prayers, interceding *for the saints.* This dramatic language is resumed in 9.1–3. **28–30:** The alternative translations in the footnote represent the reading in the earliest manuscript. Paul means, not that all circumstances of this life are good for us (the lament in 8.36 is genuine), but that amid *all* these *things* God's purpose prevails. *Those . . . who are called,* preeminently Israel (9.4; 11.2); also all those who are "the children of the promise," including Gentiles

called according to his purpose. 29 For those whom he foreknew he also predestined to be conformed to the image of his Son, in order that he might be the firstborn within a large family.[a] 30 And those whom he predestined he also called; and those whom he called he also justified; and those whom he justified he also glorified.

31 What then are we to say about these things? If God is for us, who is against us? 32 He who did not withhold his own Son, but gave him up for all of us, will he not with him also give us everything else? 33 Who will bring any charge against God's elect? It is God who justifies. 34 Who is to condemn? It is Christ Jesus, who died, yes, who was raised, who is at the right hand of God, who indeed intercedes for us.[b] 35 Who will separate us from the love of Christ? Will hardship, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword? 36 As it is written,

"For your sake we are being killed all day long;
we are accounted as sheep to be slaughtered."

37 No, in all these things we are more than conquerors through him who loved us. 38 For I am convinced that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor rulers, nor things present, nor things to come, nor powers, 39 nor height, nor depth, nor anything else in all creation, will be able to separate us from the love of God in Christ Jesus our Lord.

9 I am speaking the truth in Christ—I am not lying; my conscience confirms it by the Holy Spirit— 2 I have great sorrow and unceasing anguish in my heart. 3 For I could wish that I myself were accursed and cut off from Christ for the sake of my own people,[c] my kindred according to the flesh. 4 They are Israelites, and to them belong the adoption, the glory, the covenants, the giving of the law, the worship, and the promises; 5 to them belong the patriarchs, and from them, according to the flesh, comes the Messiah,[d] who is over all, God blessed forever.[e] Amen.

6 It is not as though the word of God had failed. For not all Israelites truly belong to

[a] Gk *among many brothers*
[b] Or *Is it Christ Jesus . . . for us?*
[c] Gk *my brothers*
[d] Or *the Christ*
[e] Or *Messiah, who is God over all, blessed forever*; or *Messiah. May he who is God over all be blessed forever*

(9.8,23–26). *Conformed to the image of his Son,* Phil 3.21; 2 Cor 4.4. Christ the *firstborn,* 1 Cor 15.20; Col 1.18. **31–39:** Previous assurances of God's love (5.1–11) are reaffirmed; despite all present adversities, God's purpose will prevail. **34:** The heavenly Christ *intercedes for us,* as in vv. 26–27 the Spirit intercedes for the saints. **35–36:** *Hardship . . . or sword,* very real afflictions, as Israel's experience testifies; Ps 44.22 is quoted.

Chapters 9–11: The certainty of God's purposes toward Israel. The preceding argument reaches its climax in these extraordinary chapters, which combine earnest emotional appeal (9.1–5; 10.1–2), exegetical argument (9.6–13,25–29,33; 10.5–13,15–21; 11.2–4,8–10), the stylized dialogue of the diatribe (9.14,19–21,30–32; 10.14,18; 11.1,4,7,11; see 2.17-29n.), and the stark pronouncement style of the prophets (11.25–27). The dramatic contrast in tone between chs 8 and 9, and the continuity of theme across chs 8–11, confirm Paul's overarching purpose. Despite present appearances, God has not abandoned promises made to Israel (9.6; 11.1,11–12,29). The same power that raised Jesus Christ from the dead (10.6–9) can restore Israel as well (11.15,23).

9.1–5: Paul's anguish for Israel is deeply personal—he speaks of his *own people* (v. 3)—yet also grounded in God's *promises* (v. 4). **1:** A solemn oath, confirmed by the Spirit (8.16,23,26–27). **2–3:** Paul's willingness to be *cut off from Christ* for the sake of Israel is especially poignant after the assurance in 8.39. **4:** *To them belong the adoption,* lit., "sonship." The same Gk word appeared in 8.15,23. Paul's point is not that the people of Israel are more "naturally" God's children (vv. 6–9; 4.11–12), but that their "sonship" (see Ex 4.22–23; Hos 11.1) is prior to that of the Gentiles called in Christ (11.17–24). *The glory,* Ex 16.10; 24.16–17. *The covenants,* plural because several are recorded in scripture (Gen 15.8; 17.2,7,9; Ex 2.24; 24.8). *Giving of the law,* Israel's privilege (2.17–20). *The worship,* Israel's covenant obligation (Ex 3.12; 4.23; 40.16–33; 1 Kings 8.54–66). *The promises,* of the land (see Gen 15.7; Ex 6.8), or more broadly "the world" (4.13). **5:** *The patriarchs,* Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, see Ex 2.24. *According to the flesh,* see 1.3; 15.8–9. *Messiah . . . God blessed forever,* whether Christ is called God here depends on the punctuation inserted (see textual note *e*). Similar Gk phrases are translated as spontaneous praise to God in 1.25; 11.36; 16.25–27.

Israel, [7] and not all of Abraham's children
are his true descendants; but "It is through
Isaac that descendants shall be named for
you." [8] This means that it is not the children
of the flesh who are the children of God, but
the children of the promise are counted as
descendants. [9] For this is what the promise
said, "About this time I will return and Sarah
shall have a son." [10] Nor is that all; something
similar happened to Rebecca when she had
conceived children by one husband, our
ancestor Isaac. [11] Even before they had been
born or had done anything good or bad (so
that God's purpose of election might con-
tinue, [12] not by works but by his call) she was
told, "The elder shall serve the younger." [13] As
it is written,

"I have loved Jacob,
but I have hated Esau."

[14] What then are we to say? Is there injus-
tice on God's part? By no means! [15] For he says
to Moses,

"I will have mercy on whom I have mercy,
and I will have compassion on whom I
have compassion."

[16] So it depends not on human will or exer-
tion, but on God who shows mercy. [17] For the
scripture says to Pharaoh, "I have raised you
up for the very purpose of showing my power
in you, so that my name may be proclaimed
in all the earth." [18] So then he has mercy on
whomever he chooses, and he hardens the
heart of whomever he chooses.

[19] You will say to me then, "Why then does
he still find fault? For who can resist his will?"
[20] But who indeed are you, a human being, to
argue with God? Will what is molded say to the
one who molds it, "Why have you made me like
this?" [21] Has the potter no right over the clay, to
make out of the same lump one object for spe-
cial use and another for ordinary use? [22] What
if God, desiring to show his wrath and to make
known his power, has endured with much
patience the objects of wrath that are made for
destruction; [23] and what if he has done so in
order to make known the riches of his glory for
the objects of mercy, which he has prepared
beforehand for glory— [24] including us whom he
has called, not from the Jews only but also from
the Gentiles? [25] As indeed he says in Hosea,

"Those who were not my people I will call
'my people,'
and her who was not beloved I will call
'beloved.'"
[26] "And in the very place where it was said
to them, 'You are not my people,'
there they shall be called children of
the living God."

[27] And Isaiah cries out concerning Israel,
"Though the number of the children of Israel
were like the sand of the sea, only a remnant
of them will be saved; [28] for the Lord will

9.6–29: God's unwavering purpose. Paul's concern to vindicate God's *purpose of election* (v. 11) runs throughout these verses, as rhetorical questions in vv. 14,19–24 and 30–32 show. **6:** The theme of all that follows is that *the word of God* has not *failed. Not all Israelites . . . Israel,* or "these who are Israel are not all who are descended from Israel." Paul's point is not to restrict the number of those who are "truly Israel," but to insist, as did other Jews, that being "Abraham's children" (v. 7) was never a matter either of accomplishment or of physical descent (v. 8). Because the promise came to Abraham through faith (4.13), his "true descendants" are "children of the promise." **7:** Though Abraham had other sons (Gen 25.2,12,19), only Isaac was his heir (Gen 21.12). **9:** God's promise was given to Sarah (Gen 18.10), not Hagar; Gal 4.21–31. **10–12:** God chose Jacob, not Esau (Gen 25.21,23), without regard to any human accomplishment (v. 16). **13:** Mal 1.2–3. **14–29:** If election is not the result of human *will or exertion* (v. 16), is God unjust? Paul rejects this conclusion, not by appealing to moral principle, but by affirming God's sovereignty. **15:** Ex 33.19. **17–18:** *Hardens the heart,* see Ex 4.21; Deut 2.30; Josh 11.20. God hardened Pharaoh (Ex 9.16) in order to show God's power (see 11.7–12). **19–21:** Paul drives his point home in diatribe style, using biblical metaphors; see Isa 29.16; 45.9; Jer 18.6; Wis 15.7. **22–24:** *Objects of wrath,* sinners toward whom God has paradoxically shown *much patience,* as in 2.4–5; 3.25–26. *Objects of mercy . . . glory,* not Israel alone (see 9.4; 11.31) but those who are *called . . . from the Gentiles* as well. Paul insists that present circumstances do not reveal God's final purposes. Mortals may not presume God's judgment on others, to vindicate or to condemn (see 8.1; 11.30–32; 14.3–4,10–13). **25–26:** The prophet Hosea spoke of the redemption of Israel (Hos 2.23; 1.10). Paul applies the passage to those God has called, *Jews* and *Gentiles* alike (v. 24). **27–29:** God's preservation of *a remnant* in Israel (Isa 10.22; 1.9) shows God's faithfulness (see 11.1–6). The word *only* does not appear in Gk. Paul's point is not that the circle of the elect is contracting, but that God has preserved a remnant out of faith-

execute his sentence on the earth quickly and decisively."[a] 29 And as Isaiah predicted,

"If the Lord of hosts had not left survivors[b]
to us,
we would have fared like Sodom
and been made like Gomorrah."

30 What then are we to say? Gentiles, who did not strive for righteousness, have attained it, that is, righteousness through faith; 31 but Israel, who did strive for the righteousness that is based on the law, did not succeed in fulfilling that law. 32 Why not? Because they did not strive for it on the basis of faith, but as if it were based on works. They have stumbled over the stumbling stone, 33 as it is written,

"See, I am laying in Zion a stone that will
make people stumble, a rock that will
make them fall,
and whoever believes in him[c] will not
be put to shame."

10 Brothers and sisters,[d] my heart's desire and prayer to God for them is that they may be saved. 2 I can testify that they have a zeal for God, but it is not enlightened. 3 For, being ignorant of the righteousness that comes from God, and seeking to establish their own, they have not submitted to God's righteousness. 4 For Christ is the end of the law so that there may be righteousness for everyone who believes.

5 Moses writes concerning the righteousness that comes from the law, that "the person who does these things will live by them." 6 But the righteousness that comes from faith says, "Do not say in your heart, 'Who will ascend into heaven?'" (that is, to bring Christ down) 7 "or 'Who will descend into the abyss?'" (that is, to bring Christ up from the dead). 8 But what does it say?

"The word is near you,
on your lips and in your heart"

(that is, the word of faith that we proclaim); 9 because[e] if you confess with your lips that Jesus is Lord and believe in your heart that God raised him from the dead, you will be saved. 10 For one believes with the heart and so is justified, and one confesses with the mouth and so is saved. 11 The scripture says, "No one who believes in him will be put to shame." 12 For there is no distinction between Jew and Greek; the same Lord is Lord of all and is generous to all who call on him. 13 For, "Everyone who calls on the name of the Lord shall be saved."

14 But how are they to call on one in whom they have not believed? And how are they

[a] Other ancient authorities read *for he will finish his work and cut it short in righteousness, because the Lord will make the sentence shortened on the earth*
[b] Or *descendants*; Gk *seed*
[c] Or *trusts in it*
[d] Gk *Brothers*
[e] Or *namely, that*

fulness to his promise.

9.30–11.12: What went wrong? Paul addresses the surprising circumstances of Israel and the Gentiles. **9.30–33:** A fixed footrace. The Gk "diokein" ("strive for") can mean "chase after" as in a race. The Gentiles' success and Israel's failure to reach the goal or finish line have nothing to do with effort. Israel *stumbled over the stumbling stone,* tripped up, as it were, by God (v. 33; 11.7–8). **32:** Israel approached the law on the basis of *works* (3.20n.,27). Paul does not elaborate, since he considers the ultimate responsibility for Israel's "hardening" lies with God (11.25–26). He does not speak here (or in 10.3) of the desire to obey the law, but perhaps of what he perceives as Israel's failure in his own day to achieve recognition or public vindication through the keeping of the law, a concern among Jewish apologetic writers. **33:** Isa 8.14–15; 28.16. Other early Christians interpreted these verses in relation to Christ (Mt 21.42; 1 Pet 2.6–8). For Paul, the *stone* laid *in Zion* may be the law itself. **10.1–3:** See 9.1–5. **3:** In Paul's view, Israel failed to submit *to God's righteousness* because they were *ignorant* of the vindication God would bring about through the "faith of Jesus Christ" (see 3.22n.). **4:** *The end of the law* almost certainly means its goal, not its termination (3.31; 7.12,16,22; 9.30–32). **5–13:** Using a common Jewish technique, Paul interprets one passage of scripture (Lev 18.5) in light of others (Deut 30.11–14; cf. Ps 107.26). **5–7:** *The righteousness . . . from the law* and *from faith* are not opposed, since there is only "God's righteousness" (10.3). The promise of life to *the person who does these things* (Lev 18.5) requires not human effort to produce the messiah, but faith in the messiah whom God has sent. Such is Paul's Christological reading of Deut 30.11–14. **9–13:** Salvation through "faith" (1.15–17). **11:** Isa 28.16. **12:** *No distinction,* see 3.22,29. **13:** Joel 2.32. Early Christians often applied to Jesus certain biblical references to the *Lord,* references, which in their original context, refer to God. **14–21:** God's faithfulness

to believe in one of whom they have never heard? And how are they to hear without someone to proclaim him? 15 And how are they to proclaim him unless they are sent? As it is written, "How beautiful are the feet of those who bring good news!" 16 But not all have obeyed the good news;[a] for Isaiah says, "Lord, who has believed our message?" 17 So faith comes from what is heard, and what is heard comes through the word of Christ.[b]

18 But I ask, have they not heard? Indeed they have; for

"Their voice has gone out to all the earth,
and their words to the ends of the world."

19 Again I ask, did Israel not understand? First Moses says,

"I will make you jealous of those who are not a nation;
with a foolish nation I will make you angry."

20 Then Isaiah is so bold as to say,

"I have been found by those who did not seek me;
I have shown myself to those who did not ask for me."

21 But of Israel he says, "All day long I have held out my hands to a disobedient and contrary people."

11 I ask, then, has God rejected his people? By no means! I myself am an Israelite, a descendant of Abraham, a member of the tribe of Benjamin. 2 God has not rejected his people whom he foreknew. Do you not know what the scripture says of Elijah, how he pleads with God against Israel? 3 "Lord, they have killed your prophets, they have demolished your altars; I alone am left, and they are seeking my life." 4 But what is the divine reply to him? "I have kept for myself seven thousand who have not bowed the knee to Baal." 5 So too at the present time there is a remnant, chosen by grace. 6 But if it is by grace, it is no longer on the basis of works, otherwise grace would no longer be grace.[c]

7 What then? Israel failed to obtain what it was seeking. The elect obtained it, but the rest were hardened, 8 as it is written,

"God gave them a sluggish spirit,
eyes that would not see
and ears that would not hear,
down to this very day."

9 And David says,

"Let their table become a snare and a trap,
a stumbling block and a retribution for them;
10 let their eyes be darkened so that they cannot see,
and keep their backs forever bent."

11 So I ask, have they stumbled so as to fall? By no means! But through their stumbling[d] salvation has come to the Gentiles, so as to make Israel[e] jealous. 12 Now if their stumbling[d] means riches for the world, and if their defeat means riches for Gentiles, how much more will their full inclusion mean!

13 Now I am speaking to you Gentiles. Inasmuch then as I am an apostle to the Gentiles,

[a] Or *gospel*
[b] Or *about Christ*; other ancient authorities read *of God*
[c] Other ancient authorities add *But if it is by works, it is no longer on the basis of grace, otherwise work would no longer be work*
[d] Gk *transgression*
[e] Gk *them*

to Israel continues as *good news* is preached to them. **15:** Isa 52.17. **16:** Isa 53.1. *But not all have obeyed,* the disobedience of some in Israel does not alter God's faithfulness (see 3.3). *Good news,* the same word is elsewhere translated "gospel"; see 1.16n. **18:** Ps 19.4. **19:** Deut 32.21. Israel's disobedience does not indicate God's failure; to the contrary, God's purpose is to make Israel jealous. **20–21:** See 11.11–12. The Gentiles are the "foolish nation" (Deut 32.21), *those who did not seek me* (Isa 65.1–2). *All day long,* Paul emphasizes God's persistent faithfulness to a disobedient Israel.

11.1–12: God has preserved a remnant. 1: Paul himself is evidence that God has not *rejected his people.* **2–5:** The *divine reply* to the prophet Elijah was a rebuke for presuming he *alone* was left (1 Kings 19.10,18). Similarly, the *remnant* in Paul's day does not exhaust God's gracious purpose (see vv. 12,15,25–27). **7–12:** Astonishingly, Paul concludes Israel *failed* (9.31–10.4) because they *were hardened* by God (9.18). **8:** Isa 29.10; Deut 29.4; cf. Isa 6.10. **9–10:** Ps 69.22–23. **11–12:** Previous rhetorical questions concerned God's righteousness or faithfulness (3.3,29; 9.14,19); now Paul asks about God's faithfulness to the covenant with Israel. The obedience of the Gentiles will *make Israel jealous* (see 10.19–20). *Their full inclusion,* see vv. 15,26.

I glorify my ministry [14] in order to make my own people[a] jealous, and thus save some of them. [15] For if their rejection is the reconciliation of the world, what will their acceptance be but life from the dead! [16] If the part of the dough offered as first fruits is holy, then the whole batch is holy; and if the root is holy, then the branches also are holy.

[17] But if some of the branches were broken off, and you, a wild olive shoot, were grafted in their place to share the rich root[b] of the olive tree, [18] do not boast over the branches. If you do boast, remember that it is not you that support the root, but the root that supports you. [19] You will say, "Branches were broken off so that I might be grafted in." [20] That is true. They were broken off because of their unbelief, but you stand only through faith. So do not become proud, but stand in awe. [21] For if God did not spare the natural branches, perhaps he will not spare you.[c] [22] Note then the kindness and the severity of God: severity toward those who have fallen, but God's kindness toward you, provided you continue in his kindness; otherwise you also will be cut off. [23] And even those of Israel,[d] if they do not persist in unbelief, will be grafted in, for God has the power to graft them in again. [24] For if you have been cut from what is by nature a wild olive tree and grafted, contrary to nature, into a cultivated olive tree, how much more will these natural branches be grafted back into their own olive tree.

[25] So that you may not claim to be wiser than you are, brothers and sisters,[e] I want you to understand this mystery: a hardening has come upon part of Israel, until the full number of the Gentiles has come in. [26] And so all Israel will be saved; as it is written,

"Out of Zion will come the Deliverer;
he will banish ungodliness from Jacob."
[27] "And this is my covenant with them,
when I take away their sins."

[28] As regards the gospel they are enemies of God[f] for your sake; but as regards election they are beloved, for the sake of their ancestors; [29] for the gifts and the calling of God are irrevocable. [30] Just as you were once disobedient to God but have now received mercy because of their disobedience, [31] so they have now been disobedient in order that, by the mercy shown to you, they too may now[g]

[a] Gk *my flesh*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *the richness*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *neither will he spare you*
[d] Gk lacks *of Israel*
[e] Gk *brothers*
[f] Gk lacks *of God*
[g] Other ancient authorities lack *now*

11.13–36: A warning to the Gentile faithful in Rome. The climax of chs 9–11, these verses reveal the heart of the letter's purpose. Paul is obliged as apostle to the Gentiles to address the believers in Rome (see 1.1–13), and to pronounce the solemn warning that follows (see 15.14–16). **13:** *I glorify my ministry,* 15.18–21. **14:** *To make my own people jealous,* possibly by eliciting their acceptance of the Christ (see 10.14–21), though Paul does not say this explicitly. **15:** *Life from the dead,* see v. 23. **16:** The remnant preserved by God (see 9.27–29; 11.1–5), like a portion of *dough* offered in worship (Num 15.18–21) or the *root* of a tree (Jer 11.16–17), guarantees God's continuing care for the whole of Israel.

11.17–24: The metaphor of the olive tree. The tree, root and branches, is Israel (Jer 11.16; Hos 14.6); the *wild olive shoot* (v. 17) represents the Gentiles who believe in Christ. **17–18:** *Broken off,* the passive voice here and in vv. 19–20 reflects divine action (see v. 21). The grafting, "contrary to nature" (v. 24), of a *wild olive shoot* gives life to the shoot, but does not benefit the root. *Do not boast,* the tone of warning earlier (2.17n.) reaches its target here. **19–21:** Paul concedes the perception among Gentile believers that *branches were broken off,* but warns against pride (see 12.3). **22:** *The kindness . . . severity,* God's kindness is meant to lead to repentance and obedience (see 2.4–10). **24:** Grafting branches from a *wild olive tree . . . into a cultivated olive tree* is more difficult than restoring *natural branches* that have been broken off.

11.25–36: The hardening of Israel. A warning against arrogance on the part of Gentile believers in Christ, the heart of the letter (see 2.1–4; 3.27; 12.3). **25:** *I want you to understand,* such solemn disclosures indicate Paul's concerns in his letters (1 Cor 10.1–6; 12.1; 2 Cor 1.8; 1 Thess 4.13). *This mystery,* a truth revealed by God (Dan 2.18–30,47; 1 Cor 2.7; 13.2; 14.2). *A hardening,* vv. 7–8; 9.18. This hardening is temporary, until *the full number of the Gentiles,* those destined to trust in God, *has come in.* **26:** Isa 59.20–21; 27.9. *All Israel,* in view already in 11.16,23. *Saved,* delivered from *ungodliness* and forgiven their sins. **28–32:** God's mysterious course of action fulfills the

receive mercy. 32 For God has imprisoned all
in disobedience so that he may be merciful
to all.

33 O the depth of the riches and wisdom
and knowledge of God! How unsearchable are
his judgments and how inscrutable his ways!
34 "For who has known the mind of the
Lord?
Or who has been his counselor?"
35 "Or who has given a gift to him,
to receive a gift in return?"
36 For from him and through him and to him
are all things. To him be the glory forever.
Amen.

12 I appeal to you therefore, brothers and sisters,[a] by the mercies of God, to present your bodies as a living sacrifice, holy and acceptable to God, which is your spiritual[b] worship. 2 Do not be conformed to this world,[c] but be transformed by the renewing of your minds, so that you may discern what is the will of God—what is good and acceptable and perfect.[d]

3 For by the grace given to me I say to everyone among you not to think of yourself more highly than you ought to think, but to think with sober judgment, each according to the measure of faith that God has assigned. 4 For as in one body we have many members, and not all the members have the same function, 5 so we, who are many, are one body in Christ, and individually we are members one of another. 6 We have gifts that differ according to the grace given to us: prophecy, in proportion to faith; 7 ministry, in ministering; the teacher, in teaching; 8 the exhorter, in exhortation; the giver, in generosity; the leader, in diligence; the compassionate, in cheerfulness.

9 Let love be genuine; hate what is evil, hold fast to what is good; 10 love one another with mutual affection; outdo one another in showing honor. 11 Do not lag in zeal, be ardent in spirit, serve the Lord.[e] 12 Rejoice in hope, be patient in suffering, persevere in prayer. 13 Contribute to the needs of the saints; extend hospitality to strangers.

14 Bless those who persecute you; bless and do not curse them. 15 Rejoice with those who rejoice, weep with those who weep. 16 Live in harmony with one another; do not be haughty, but associate with the lowly;[f] do not claim to be wiser than you are. 17 Do not repay anyone evil for evil, but take thought for what is noble in the sight of all. 18 If it is possible, so far as it depends on you, live peaceably with all. 19 Beloved, never avenge yourselves, but leave room for the wrath of God;[g] for it is written, "Ven-

[a] Gk *brothers*
[b] Or *reasonable*
[c] Gk *age*
[d] Or *what is the good and acceptable and perfect will of God*
[e] Other ancient authorities read *serve the opportune time*
[f] Or *give yourselves to humble tasks*
[g] Gk *the wrath*

election of Israel (3.2; 9.6; 11.1) and precludes the possibility of human boasting (v. 32; 3.9–30). **34:** Isa 40.13. **35:** Job 35.7; 41.11. **36:** A blessing, as at 1.25; 9.5; 16.25–27.

12.1–15.13: Exhortation to holy living. On the basis of the argument in previous chapters, Paul now exhorts the faithful of Rome to right conduct. **12.1:** Holy living is *spiritual worship* (15.15–16), the opposite of "ungodliness" (1.21–28), made possible through baptism (6.12–23). Paul makes his *appeal* (the Gk phrase marks exhortations in his letters: 1 Cor 1.10; 2 Cor 10.1; 1 Thess 4.1; Philem 9) on the basis of *the mercies of God* (11.22–23,30–32) and the "grace given" to him as apostle (v. 3; 1.5; 15.15). **2:** The faithful are to live no longer as belonging to *this world* (Gal 1.4; Phil 2.15; 1 Cor 7.29–31). The *renewing of . . . minds,* possible because of baptism (6.4), enables discerning *the will of God* (see Phil 1.9; 3.8–9). **3–8: A warning against arrogance. 3:** *I say,* direct speech echoes 11.1,11,13. *Not to think . . . more highly,* similar Gk phrases are translated "do not become proud" in 11.20, and "do not be haughty" in v. 16. **4–8:** *Gifts* are given to nourish the community as *one body in Christ;* 1 Cor 12.4–31 has a similar list.

12.9–21: Goodwill within the community and without. 9–10: *Love,* 13.8–10; 1 Cor 13. **12:** *Hope* and patience in *suffering,* see 5.3–5; 8.18–39. **13:** *Hospitality* was a crucial virtue in the early churches (see 16.1–2; Heb 13.2; 3 Jn 5–8). **14:** Here and in vv. 17,21, Paul may allude to sayings of Jesus (Mt 5.44). **16:** See v. 3n. *The lowly,* almost certainly people (despite the alternative in textual note *f*), as in Lk 1.52; Jas 1.9; the same word is translated "humble" in Mt 11.29; Jas 4.6; 1 Pet 5.5, and "oppressed" throughout the Hebrew Bible. **17:** Mt 5.44. **19:** Deut

geance is mine, I will repay, says the Lord."
20 No, "if your enemies are hungry, feed them;
if they are thirsty, give them something to
drink; for by doing this you will heap burning
coals on their heads." 21 Do not be overcome by
evil, but overcome evil with good.

13 Let every person be subject to the
governing authorities; for there is no
authority except from God, and those authori-
ties that exist have been instituted by God.
2 Therefore whoever resists authority resists
what God has appointed, and those who resist
will incur judgment. 3 For rulers are not a terror
to good conduct, but to bad. Do you wish to
have no fear of the authority? Then do what
is good, and you will receive its approval; 4 for
it is God's servant for your good. But if you do
what is wrong, you should be afraid, for the
authority[a] does not bear the sword in vain! It
is the servant of God to execute wrath on the
wrongdoer. 5 Therefore one must be subject,
not only because of wrath but also because of
conscience. 6 For the same reason you also pay
taxes, for the authorities are God's servants,
busy with this very thing. 7 Pay to all what is
due them—taxes to whom taxes are due, rev-
enue to whom revenue is due, respect to whom
respect is due, honor to whom honor is due.

8 Owe no one anything, except to love one
another; for the one who loves another has
fulfilled the law. 9 The commandments, "You
shall not commit adultery; You shall not mur-
der; You shall not steal; You shall not covet";
and any other commandment, are summed
up in this word, "Love your neighbor as your-
self." 10 Love does no wrong to a neighbor;
therefore, love is the fulfilling of the law.

11 Besides this, you know what time it is,
how it is now the moment for you to wake
from sleep. For salvation is nearer to us now
than when we became believers; 12 the night
is far gone, the day is near. Let us then lay
aside the works of darkness and put on the
armor of light; 13 let us live honorably as in
the day, not in reveling and drunkenness,
not in debauchery and licentiousness, not in
quarreling and jealousy. 14 Instead, put on the
Lord Jesus Christ, and make no provision for
the flesh, to gratify its desires.

14 Welcome those who are weak in faith,[b]
but not for the purpose of quarrel-
ing over opinions. 2 Some believe in eating

[a] Gk *it*
[b] Or *conviction*

32.35. *Wrath,* see 2.5n. **20:** To *heap burning coals . . .* makes enemies feel ashamed and perhaps remorseful (Prov 25.21–22). **21:** Mt 5.39.

13.1–7: Subjection to governing authorities. Sometimes read as Paul's "theology of the state," these verses stand in tension with his view elsewhere of the "rulers of this age" (1 Cor 2.6–8; 15.24–26; 1 Thess 5.3–11), and with his own willingness to suffer punishment from civil authorities (2 Cor 11.23,25–27). This teaching appears conventional (Wis 6.1–3; 1 Pet 2.13–17; 3.13), and there are other attitudes to civil authorities in the New Testament (Acts 5.29; Rev 13.2,5,11–18). These verses may have had a very specific application (see the Introduction). **1:** Empires rise and fall by the will of God (Isa 10.5–6; Jer 27.4–8,11; Dan 3.28–32). *Instituted,* lit., "put in their place"; the Gk word is related to the word translated *be subject.* **2:** Do not *resist* authority; contrast 12.2. *Resists what God has appointed,* 8.7; 9.19. **3–4:** The proper role of civil authorities; Paul was aware they could act otherwise. *God's servant,* a title applied to the Babylonian king Nebuchadrezzar (Jer 27.6), as well as to many leaders of Israel. The authority may punish; the individual Christian may not (12.19–21). *The sword,* a symbol of power over life and death (see 8.35). Paul's remark is in some tension with claims, current at the time, that the emperor Nero did not need the sword to rule. *Wrath,* elsewhere usually "the wrath of God" (1.18; 2.5; 5.9). **5–6:** Proper civil behavior is motivated both by fear of "wrath" (but see v. 3) and *conscience.* **6–7:** *Taxes,* the Roman tribute (as in Mt 22.21; Mk 12.17; Lk 20.25), from which Roman citizens were exempt. *Revenue,* commercial taxes. *Respect,* lit., "fear"; the same word is translated "terror" in v. 3. The one *to whom respect,* or fear, *is due* may be God alone (1 Pet 2.17).

13.8–14: Other exhortations. 8–10: *Love* fulfills *the law,* 2.14; 8.4; 12.9; Mt 22.39–40; Mk 12.31; Gal 5.14; Jas 2.8; 1 Jn 4.11. **9:** Ex 20.13–17; Deut 5.17–21; Lev 19.18. **11–14:** Imminent *salvation,* i.e., the return of Christ, makes it urgent to *wake* to holy and honorable living (1 Thess 5.1–11; Eph 5.8–18). **14:** *Put on the Lord Jesus,* an early metaphor based in the practice of receiving a new garment after baptism (Gal 3.27).

14.1–15.13: Exhortations regarding those considered "weak." The observance of special days (14.5–6) and a

anything, while the weak eat only vegetables. 3 Those who eat must not despise those who abstain, and those who abstain must not pass judgment on those who eat; for God has welcomed them. 4 Who are you to pass judgment on servants of another? It is before their own lord that they stand or fall. And they will be upheld, for the Lord[a] is able to make them stand.

5 Some judge one day to be better than another, while others judge all days to be alike. Let all be fully convinced in their own minds. 6 Those who observe the day, observe it in honor of the Lord. Also those who eat, eat in honor of the Lord, since they give thanks to God; while those who abstain, abstain in honor of the Lord and give thanks to God.

7 We do not live to ourselves, and we do not die to ourselves. 8 If we live, we live to the Lord, and if we die, we die to the Lord; so then, whether we live or whether we die, we are the Lord's. 9 For to this end Christ died and lived again, so that he might be Lord of both the dead and the living.

10 Why do you pass judgment on your brother or sister?[b] Or you, why do you despise your brother or sister?[b] For we will all stand before the judgment seat of God.[c] 11 For it is written,

"As I live, says the Lord, every knee shall bow to me,
and every tongue shall give praise to[d] God."

12 So then, each of us will be accountable to God.[e]

13 Let us therefore no longer pass judgment on one another, but resolve instead never to put a stumbling block or hindrance in the way of another.[f] 14 I know and am persuaded in the Lord Jesus that nothing is unclean in itself; but it is unclean for anyone who thinks it unclean. 15 If your brother or sister[b] is being injured by what you eat, you are no longer walking in love. Do not let what you eat cause the ruin of one for whom Christ died. 16 So do not let your good be spoken of as evil. 17 For the kingdom of God is not food and drink but righteousness and peace and joy in the Holy Spirit. 18 The one who thus serves Christ is acceptable to God and has human approval. 19 Let us then pursue what makes for peace and for mutual upbuilding. 20 Do not, for the sake of food, destroy the work of God. Everything is indeed clean, but it is wrong for you to make others fall by what you eat; 21 it is good not to eat meat or drink wine or do anything that makes your brother or sister[b] stumble.[g] 22 The faith that you have, have as your own conviction before God. Blessed are those who have no reason to condemn themselves because of what they approve. 23 But those who have doubts are condemned if they eat, because they do not act from faith;[h]

[a] Other ancient authorities read *for God*
[b] Gk *brother*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *of Christ*
[d] Or *confess*
[e] Other ancient authorities lack *to God*
[f] Gk *of a brother*
[g] Other ancient authorities add *or be upset or be weakened*
[h] Or *conviction*

kosher diet (vv. 2,14n.) are marks of Jewish observance. They were also objects of ridicule among some Roman satirists, being seen as superstition on the part of the *weak.* Paul warns against such disparaging judgments (v. 3). **14.1–12: Tolerance for others' observance. 1–2:** Those who *eat only vegetables* are most likely keeping kosher by avoiding "unclean" meat (v. 14), or meat "sacrificed to idols" (Acts 15.29; 1 Cor 8.1; Dan 1.3–16; Esth 3.28; 14.17; Jdt 12.1–2). Paul calls them *weak in faith*, not because they adhere to the Torah (see vv. 4,6; 7.12), but perhaps because they are scandalized by Gentile believers who eat nonkosher food (vv. 13,15,20), or because the circumstances of Jews in Rome had been so clearly reduced in the eyes of their neighbors in the wake of the edict of Claudius (see Introduction). **4:** *The Lord is able,* 11.23. **5–9:** Jews and Gentiles can, each in their own way, live *in honor of the Lord.* **11:** Isa 45.23. **13–23: Freedom is not license to give offense. 13:** *Stumbling block . . . hindrance,* 9.32–33; 1 Cor 8.9. **14:** *Nothing is unclean in itself,* lit., "common," as opposed to "clean" (v. 20; 1 Macc 1.47,62; Mk 7.19; Acts 10.14; 11.8). For the observant, however, nonkosher food *is unclean.* **17:** *The kingdom of God,* a rare phrase in Paul's letters (1 Cor 4.20; 6.9–10). **19:** *Peace . . . mutual upbuilding,* 1 Cor 14.3–5,12,26. **20–23:** Faith does not allow one to violate the conscience of others, e.g., by encouraging them to act against their

for whatever does not proceed from faith[a] is sin.[b]

15 We who are strong ought to put up with the failings of the weak, and not to please ourselves. [2] Each of us must please our neighbor for the good purpose of building up the neighbor. [3] For Christ did not please himself; but, as it is written, "The insults of those who insult you have fallen on me." [4] For whatever was written in former days was written for our instruction, so that by steadfastness and by the encouragement of the scriptures we might have hope. [5] May the God of steadfastness and encouragement grant you to live in harmony with one another, in accordance with Christ Jesus, [6] so that together you may with one voice glorify the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ.

[7] Welcome one another, therefore, just as Christ has welcomed you, for the glory of God. [8] For I tell you that Christ has become a servant of the circumcised on behalf of the truth of God in order that he might confirm the promises given to the patriarchs, [9] and in order that the Gentiles might glorify God for his mercy. As it is written,

"Therefore I will confess[c] you among the Gentiles,
and sing praises to your name";

[10] and again he says,

"Rejoice, O Gentiles, with his people";

[11] and again,

"Praise the Lord, all you Gentiles,
and let all the peoples praise him";

[12] and again Isaiah says,

"The root of Jesse shall come,
the one who rises to rule the Gentiles;
in him the Gentiles shall hope."

[13] May the God of hope fill you with all joy and peace in believing, so that you may abound in hope by the power of the Holy Spirit.

[14] I myself feel confident about you, my brothers and sisters,[d] that you yourselves are full of goodness, filled with all knowledge, and able to instruct one another. [15] Nevertheless on some points I have written to you rather boldly by way of reminder, because of the grace given me by God [16] to be a minister of Christ Jesus to the Gentiles in the priestly service of the gospel of God, so that the offering of the Gentiles may be acceptable, sanctified by the Holy Spirit. [17] In Christ Jesus, then, I have reason to boast of my work for God. [18] For I will not venture to speak of anything except what Christ has accomplished[e] through me to win obedience from the Gentiles, by word and deed, [19] by the power of signs and wonders, by the power of the Spirit of God,[f] so that from Jerusalem and as far around as Illyricum I have fully proclaimed the good news[g] of Christ. [20] Thus I make it my ambition to proclaim the good news,[g] not where Christ has already been named, so that

[a] Or *conviction*
[b] Other authorities, some ancient, add here 16.25-27
[c] Or *thank*
[d] Gk *brothers*
[e] Gk *speak of those things that Christ has not accomplished*
[f] Other ancient authorities read *of the Spirit* or *of the Holy Spirit*
[g] Or *gospel*

conscience. **15.1–13: Christ's example. 1:** *We who are strong,* lit., "powerful," a term that could connote status in Roman society. Paul does not speak of the strong "in faith" (in contrast to the *weak in faith* in 14.1). *Put up with the failings of the weak,* lit., "sustain the powerless in their weaknesses" (see Gal 6.2). **2–3:** Ps 69.9 is read in terms of Christ's humbling himself (Phil 2.5–8; 2 Cor 8.9). **4:** See 4.23–25; 1 Cor 9.10. **5–6:** The goal of Paul's exhortation is that Gentiles and Jews should *with one voice glorify . . . God.* **8:** Christ came to *confirm the promises* given to Israel (9.3–5). **9:** Ps 18.49. **10:** Deut 32.43. **11:** Ps 117.1. **12:** Isa 11.10. (The Gk word for *Gentiles* in vv. 9–12 is translated "nations" in the biblical passages that Paul quotes.)

15.14–32: The letter's argument brought to a close. 14–16: Despite confidence in the Romans (1.8,11,12), Paul has written *boldly,* compelled by the *grace given* him (1.5). **16:** *Minister . . . priestly service,* Paul will present a holy *offering* to God, i.e., the Gentile believers themselves (1.9; 12.2). Paul may have in mind Isaiah's prophecies of the "wealth of the nations" being brought to Israel (Isa. 60.4–7, 11; see 66.20); his language also echoes imperial language about the "gifts of the peoples" being brought before Caesar. **17–32: The broader context of Paul's apostolate.** As at the letter's beginning (1.1–15), Paul links his letter to the Romans with his *work for God.* **19:** *Signs and wonders,* 1 Cor 12.10; 2 Cor 12.12; Gal 3.5. *Illyricum,* a Roman province on the east coast of the Adriatic

I do not build on someone else's foundation,
21 but as it is written,

"Those who have never been told of him
shall see,
and those who have never heard of him
shall understand."

22 This is the reason that I have so often
been hindered from coming to you. 23 But
now, with no further place for me in these
regions, I desire, as I have for many years, to
come to you 24 when I go to Spain. For I do
hope to see you on my journey and to be sent
on by you, once I have enjoyed your company
for a little while. 25 At present, however, I am
going to Jerusalem in a ministry to the saints;
26 for Macedonia and Achaia have been
pleased to share their resources with the poor
among the saints at Jerusalem. 27 They were
pleased to do this, and indeed they owe it to
them; for if the Gentiles have come to share
in their spiritual blessings, they ought also
to be of service to them in material things.
28 So, when I have completed this, and have
delivered to them what has been collected,[a]
I will set out by way of you to Spain; 29 and I
know that when I come to you, I will come in
the fullness of the blessing[b] of Christ.

30 I appeal to you, brothers and sisters,[c] by
our Lord Jesus Christ and by the love of the
Spirit, to join me in earnest prayer to God on
my behalf, 31 that I may be rescued from the
unbelievers in Judea, and that my ministry[d]
to Jerusalem may be acceptable to the saints,
32 so that by God's will I may come to you with
joy and be refreshed in your company. 33 The
God of peace be with all of you.[e] Amen.

16 I commend to you our sister Phoebe,
a deacon[f] of the church at Cenchreae,
2 so that you may welcome her in the Lord
as is fitting for the saints, and help her in
whatever she may require from you, for she
has been a benefactor of many and of myself
as well.

3 Greet Prisca and Aquila, who work with
me in Christ Jesus, 4 and who risked their
necks for my life, to whom not only I give
thanks, but also all the churches of the Gen-
tiles. 5 Greet also the church in their house.
Greet my beloved Epaenetus, who was the first
convert[g] in Asia for Christ. 6 Greet Mary, who
has worked very hard among you. 7 Greet An-
dronicus and Junia,[h] my relatives[i] who were in
prison with me; they are prominent among the
apostles, and they were in Christ before I was.
8 Greet Ampliatus, my beloved in the Lord.

[a] Gk *have sealed to them this fruit*
[b] Other ancient authorities add *of the gospel*
[c] Gk *brothers*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *my bringing of a gift*
[e] One ancient authority adds 16.25-27 here
[f] Or *minister*
[g] Gk *first fruits*
[h] Or *Junias*; other ancient authorities read *Julia*
[i] Or *compatriots*

Sea, mentioned only here in the New Testament. *Good news,* see 1.16n. **21:** Isa 52.15. **22–29:** Travel plans and further requests. **23:** *No further place,* Paul sees himself as a herald more than a pastor. **24:** Paul says nothing now of wishing to "proclaim the gospel" to the Romans (1.10–15); perhaps this letter has done that. **25–29:** The *ministry to the saints,* the collection mentioned in 1 Cor 16.1–4; 2 Cor 8–9; Gal 2.10. **26:** *Macedonia and Achaia,* Roman provinces in Greece. **30–33: Apprehensions regarding Jerusalem.** The Roman faithful may participate in the "offering of the Gentiles" (v. 16) through their own holiness (12.2) and their *earnest prayer* for Paul. The *unbelievers in Judea,* perhaps Jews who have not believed in Jesus (see 9.1–5; 10.1–2,14) who are the ultimate targets of his work (11.13–14). On the fate of this *ministry to Jerusalem,* see Acts 21.7–28.31.

16.1–23: A recommendation and greetings. Some early manuscripts do not include 16.1–24; these verses nevertheless appear to be an authentic part of the letter (see also vv. 25–27n.). **1–2:** Paul commends *Phoebe,* an officer of a church in *Cenchreae* near Corinth (Acts 18.18), to the hospitality and support of the Roman believers, thus honoring his obligations to her as his *benefactor.* On the early Christian office of *deacon,* see Phil 1.1; 1 Tim 3.8,12; Titus 1.9. **3–16:** A list of greetings shows Paul's personal connections with the Roman community. Most of the individuals named are mentioned only here; a number are Hebrew names. **3–4:** *Prisca and Aquila,* identified in Acts 18.2 as exiles from Rome, now returned (1 Cor 16.19; 2 Tim 4.19). **5:** Congregations of believers in Christ first met in private homes, or in common areas in the upper floors of apartment buildings. **7:** *Junia,* a woman; many manuscripts read "Junias," an otherwise unattested male Latin name; our earliest manuscript reads "Julia." *Relatives,* fellow Jews (vv. 11,21; 9.3). *The apostles,* Paul uses the term to mean more than the twelve (see 1 Cor

[9] Greet Urbanus, our co-worker in Christ, and my beloved Stachys. [10] Greet Apelles, who is approved in Christ. Greet those who belong to the family of Aristobulus. [11] Greet my relative[a] Herodion. Greet those in the Lord who belong to the family of Narcissus. [12] Greet those workers in the Lord, Tryphaena and Tryphosa. Greet the beloved Persis, who has worked hard in the Lord. [13] Greet Rufus, chosen in the Lord; and greet his mother—a mother to me also. [14] Greet Asyncritus, Phlegon, Hermes, Patrobas, Hermas, and the brothers and sisters[b] who are with them. [15] Greet Philologus, Julia, Nereus and his sister, and Olympas, and all the saints who are with them. [16] Greet one another with a holy kiss. All the churches of Christ greet you.

[17] I urge you, brothers and sisters,[b] to keep an eye on those who cause dissensions and offenses, in opposition to the teaching that you have learned; avoid them. [18] For such people do not serve our Lord Christ, but their own appetites,[c] and by smooth talk and flattery they deceive the hearts of the simple-minded. [19] For while your obedience is known to all, so that I rejoice over you, I want you to be wise in what is good and guileless in what is evil. [20] The God of peace will shortly crush Satan under your feet. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you.[d]

[21] Timothy, my co-worker, greets you; so do Lucius and Jason and Sosipater, my relatives.[e]

[22] I Tertius, the writer of this letter, greet you in the Lord.[f]

[23] Gaius, who is host to me and to the whole church, greets you. Erastus, the city treasurer, and our brother Quartus, greet you.[g]

[25] Now to God[h] who is able to strengthen you according to my gospel and the proclamation of Jesus Christ, according to the revelation of the mystery that was kept secret for long ages [26] but is now disclosed, and through the prophetic writings is made known to all the Gentiles, according to the command of the eternal God, to bring about the obedience of faith— [27] to the only wise God, through Jesus Christ, to whom[i] be the glory forever! Amen.[j]

[a] Or *compatriot*
[b] Gk *brothers*
[c] Gk *their own belly*
[d] Other ancient authorities lack this sentence
[e] Or *compatriots*
[f] Or *I Tertius, writing this letter in the Lord, greet you*
[g] Other ancient authorities add verse 24, *The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with all of you. Amen.*
[h] Gk *the one*
[i] Other ancient authorities lack *to whom.* The verse then reads, *to the only wise God be the glory through Jesus Christ forever. Amen.*
[j] Other ancient authorities lack 16.25-27 or include it after 14.23 or 15.33; others put verse 24 after verse 27

15.5,7; Phil 2.25). **13:** *A mother to me also,* an expression of affection. **16:** *A holy kiss,* a regular part of worship in the early church (1 Cor 16.20; 2 Cor 13.12; 1 Thess 5.26; 1 Pet 5.14).

16.17–20: A warning. *Those who cause dissensions,* otherwise unidentified, are clearly less central to the letter's purpose than those referred to in 1 Cor 5.1–13 or Gal 1.8–9; 6.17. *The teaching,* 6.17. **19:** 1.8. **20:** A concluding blessing (1 Cor 16.23; 1 Thess 5.28). **21:** *Timothy,* introduced in Acts 16.1–3. **22:** *Tertius* wrote down the letter as Paul dictated it; cf. 1 Cor 16.21n.; 1 Pet 5.12. **23:** *Gaius,* perhaps the same person mentioned in 1 Cor 1.14.

16.25–27: A concluding blessing, appearing in different ancient manuscripts after 14.23 or 15.33, or missing altogether. Many scholars consider these verses an addition by later scribes and editors. **25:** *My gospel,* 2.16. *The proclamation,* the Gk "kerygma" is another word for "gospel"; see 1 Cor 1.21–24. **25–26:** *Mystery,* 11.25–27. *The obedience of faith,* 1.5.

THE FIRST LETTER OF PAUL TO THE CORINTHIANS

NAME AND AUTHORSHIP

The letter is named for its recipients, the community of believers in Christ in the Greek city of Corinth (see map 14 in the color map section at the end of the volume). Scholars agree that Paul was its author.

HISTORICAL CONTEXT

First Corinthians affords an unparalleled glimpse into the life of an early Christian community in a Greco-Roman city. The richness of this portrait both reflects the ethical challenges faced by converts rooted in Greco-Roman polytheism, and signals intense experimentation with their new social identity discovered in Messiah Jesus.

Paul's Corinth was a Roman city, refounded by order of Julius Caesar in 44 BCE after its brutal destruction by Mummius in 146 BCE. Caesar populated the colony with numerous freedmen and legionary veterans, but the ethnic mix was more diverse by Paul's day, including Syrians and Egyptians, along with Greeks who had immigrated from surrounding cities. The first-century CE Jewish philosopher Philo speaks of a sizeable Jewish community in Corinth (cf. Acts 18.4,7). Corinth rapidly regained its ancient prosperity owing to its favorable location. By 27 BCE, Corinth was already the capital of the senatorial province of Achaia and the judicial seat of the Roman proconsul (see Acts 18.12). Sharp contrasts between rich and poor were apparent in this flourishing commercial center. But opportunities for social advancement also existed: even freedmen held civic office (see Rom 16.23b), something uncommon elsewhere. The Isthmian Games, hosted by Corinth every two years, drew large crowds. The theater, rehabilitated by the emperor Augustus in the late first century BCE, held more than fifteen thousand spectators. Cynic philosophers like Demetrius, a friend of the Roman thinker Seneca, frequented Corinth. The city was sacred to the goddess Aphrodite, protector of prostitutes, whose famous sanctuary stood on the Acrocorinth, the acropolis. The temple of Asclepius, the god of healing, had extensive dining facilities. Inscriptions and dedications attest to the importance of the worship of the Roman emperor. Paul's choice of this bustling cosmopolis as one of the principal centers of his missionary activity reveals the global reach of his missionary ambition.

The account of Paul's activity in Corinth in Acts 18.1–18 is incomplete and anecdotal, but can be supplemented by information from Paul's letters. Upon arrival in Corinth, Paul found lodging with Aquila and his wife Priscilla, both Jews and of the same trade as Paul. Paul preached in the synagogue every sabbath; were among those whom Paul tried to persuade. In response to opposition from some Jews, Paul withdrew from the synagogue and began preaching in the house of a "godfearer" named Titius Justus. Paul names Stephanas and his household as the first coverts of the Roman province of Achaia in southern Greece (1 Cor 16.15; 1.16). The author of Acts attributes sensational importance to the conversion of the synagogue president Crispus: "Many of the Corinthians who heard Paul became believers and were baptized" (Acts 18.8). As Paul represents it, most of his converts were lower class, lacking in education, wealth, and birth (1 Cor 1.26–28). But Paul also baptized a few elite persons, such as Gaius (1.14), who eventually became the "host . . . to the whole church" (Rom 16.23). After Paul left Corinth, confusion arose among the new converts regarding boundaries between the church and the larger society, prompting Paul to write the letter on association with "immoral" persons and "idolaters," to which reference is made in 1 Cor 5.9–10. While Paul was in Ephesus, the Corinthians sent him a letter, seeking his advice on several issues, including marriage, food sacrificed to idols, spiritual gifts, and other matters (7.1; 8.1; 12.1; 16.1,12). At some point after Paul's founding visit, another Christian teacher visited Corinth, an Alexandrian Jew named Apollos, "an eloquent man, well-versed in the scriptures" (Acts 18.24). Apollos made a strong impression upon the Corinthians, especially upon the elite who valued proficiency in philosophy and rhetoric. Factions formed within the church, with members declaring support for one teacher or another (1 Cor 1.10–12; 3.4).

LITERARY HISTORY

Most scholars view the writing known as 1 Corinthians as a single, unified composition. But its abrupt transitions, frequent changes of theme, and generally loose construction have raised questions about its integ-

rity. Assigning portions of 1 Corinthians to separate letters would be justified only if the passages in question presupposed different situations. This appears possible in three instances: Paul's attitude toward the schisms (contrast 11.18–19 with 1.10–12), Paul's advice on food sacrificed to idols (contrast 10.1–11.1 with 8.1–13), and Paul's announcement of his travel plans (contrast 16.5–9 with 4.17–21). Hence, some scholars have divided 1 Corinthians into three letters, composed in the following order: Letter A, On Association with the Immoral and Idolaters (10.1–22; 6.12–20; 10.23–11.34); Letter B, In Response to the Corinthians' Questions (7–9; 12–16); Letter C, Counsel of Concord (1.1–6.11).

The strongest argument for the unity of the present text derives from rhetorical analysis, which identifies 1 Corinthians as a deliberative appeal for concord (1.1–4.21), with advice on divisive issues organized under subheadings (5.1–16.24). Yet a single letter may not be consistent with the several occasions and sources of information evident in the text: an anonymous report (11.18), the Corinthians' letter (7.1), a visit by Stephanas (16.17), and a report from "Chloe's people" (1.11).

INTERPRETATION

In 1 Corinthians Paul shows remarkable familiarity with the culture of his converts and his facility with its forms of discourse: for example, ch 7 shows Paul conversant with Cynic-Stoic views of marriage (like those of Musonius and Epictetus); 9.24–27 employs an athletic metaphor from the Isthmian Games; ch 13 praises *agape* ("love"), a Christian counterpart to the praise of *eros* ("sexual love") in Plato's *Symposium*; ch 15 offers a reasoned proof of the resurrection of the body, analogous to philosophical arguments for the immortality of the soul in Plato (*Phaedrus*) and Cicero (*Tusculan Disputations*); chs 1–4 utilize the rhetoric and arguments of Greco-Roman politics. In several passages, Paul addresses a group whose opinions on a variety of subjects—eating meat sacrificed to idols, the financial support of missionaries, speaking in tongues, the resurrection of the dead, going to court before unbelievers—diverge sharply from his own. The attitudes of this minority group ("the strong") correlate with those held by persons of high social status and education.

First Corinthians demonstrates Paul's capacity, even in this early period, to think through the social and ethical implications of the new being "in Christ": for example, his exhortation to share with the have-nots at the communal meal, so as to "discern the body" of Christ (11.17–34); and his insight into the paradoxical power of "the word of the cross" to call, redeem, and sanctify the low and despised of this world, "the nothings and nobodies"—a radical statement in the history of Western thought.

Laurence L. Welborn

1 Paul, called to be an apostle of Christ Jesus by the will of God, and our brother Sosthenes,

[2] To the church of God that is in Corinth, to those who are sanctified in Christ Jesus, called to be saints, together with all those who in every place call on the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, both their Lord[a] and ours:

[3] Grace to you and peace from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

[4] I give thanks to my[b] God always for you because of the grace of God that has been given you in Christ Jesus, [5] for in every way you have been enriched in him, in speech and knowledge of every kind— [6] just as the testimony of[c] Christ has been strengthened among you— [7] so that you are not lacking in any spiritual gift as you wait for the revealing of our Lord Jesus Christ. [8] He will also strengthen you to the end, so that you may be blameless on the day of our Lord Jesus Christ. [9] God is faithful; by him you were called into the fellowship of his Son, Jesus Christ our Lord.

[10] Now I appeal to you, brothers and sisters,[d] by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that all of you be in agreement and that there be no divisions among you, but that you be united in the same mind and the same purpose. [11] For it has been reported to me by Chloe's people that there are quarrels among you, my brothers and sisters.[e] [12] What I mean is that each of you says, "I belong to Paul," or "I belong to Apollos," or "I belong to Cephas," or "I belong to Christ." [13] Has Christ been

[a] Gk *theirs*
[b] Other ancient authorities lack *my*
[c] Or *to*
[d] Gk *brothers*
[e] Gk *my brothers*

1.1–3: Prescript and Greeting. The prescript of Paul's letters has the same form found in many papyrus letters of antiquity: the names of the sender and the addressees, with a short greeting. **1:** "Paulos" is the Greek form of a Latin surname or cognomen ("Paulus"), meaning "small, of little significance," perhaps a self-deprecatory nickname expressing the apostle's sense of humility. Paul's sense of being *called* as *an apostle* is vividly described in Gal 1.15–16. *Christ* is not part of the proper name of *Jesus*, but is the Gk translation of Heb "mashiaḥ," "the anointed," that is, the Messiah; Paul is the emissary of Messiah Jesus. It is not certain whether *Sosthenes* named here as a Christian *brother* is the same person as the synagogue president of Acts 18.17. **2:** *Church of God* (Gk "ekklesia theou") may be a translation of Heb "qahal Yahweh" ("assembly of Yahweh") expressing a sense of divine election; but "ekklesia" was the designation of the city "assembly" of Corinth, so that *church of God* may have evoked a sense of belonging to an alternative community. **2b:** This phrase is likely an addition to the prescript, which seeks to make Paul's advice applicable to *all those who in every place call on the name of our Lord Jesus Christ*, an indication that the original letter has been edited. **3:** The greeting *grace and peace* derives from older Jewish formulas (see *Apoc. Bar.* 78.2), but embodies the essence of Paul's own experience of God in Christ.

1.4–9: Thanksgiving. The thanksgiving is a standard feature of the prescripts of Paul's letters, comparable to the assurance of prayer for the addressees of other ancient letters. **4:** Paul gives thanks for the *grace of God . . . given* to the Corinthians, not for their "labor of love" as in 1 Thess 1.3. **5:** Because *speech* and *knowledge* are attainments of which the Corinthians are proud (1.17; 8.1–2; 13.1–2), Paul's selective mention of these gifts has an ironic quality, enhanced by the hyperbolic phrases, *in every way . . . of every kind.* **8:** Paul's assurance that God *will . . . strengthen* the Corinthians contains a mild reproach of their instability. *The day of our Lord* is an apocalyptic term for the Second Coming of Christ, the day of judgment; see 3.13; 4.5.

1.10–17: Divisions in the church. Paul describes the situation in the church of Corinth in terms like those used by political orators to characterize conflicts within city-states: *divisions* and *quarrels* are synonyms for discord, and Paul's appeal to *be in agreement* and *be united in the same mind and the same purpose* echoes the language of speeches on concord. **11:** While *Chloe*, who is mentioned only here in the New Testament, may not have lived in Corinth, Paul's mention of her name without introduction indicates that she and her *people* (probably slaves) were known to the Corinthians. **12:** Paul caricatures the Corinthians' partisanship using slogans like those shouted by fans of star performers in the amphitheater. *Apollos,* from Alexandria in Egypt, was an eloquent early Christian preacher according to Acts 18.24–28; see also 1 Cor 3.4–6; 4.6; 16.12. *Cephas,* the Aramaic form of Peter's name. The climactic slogan, *I belong to Christ*, is added for ironic effect, and does not indicate the existence of a "Christ-party." **13:** Paul's rhetorical question, *Has Christ been divided?* uses a verb related to a

divided? Was Paul crucified for you? Or were you baptized in the name of Paul? 14 I thank God[a] that I baptized none of you except Crispus and Gaius, 15 so that no one can say that you were baptized in my name. 16 (I did baptize also the household of Stephanas; beyond that, I do not know whether I baptized anyone else.) 17 For Christ did not send me to baptize but to proclaim the gospel, and not with eloquent wisdom, so that the cross of Christ might not be emptied of its power.

18 For the message about the cross is foolishness to those who are perishing, but to us who are being saved it is the power of God. 19 For it is written,

"I will destroy the wisdom of the wise,
and the discernment of the discerning I will thwart."

20 Where is the one who is wise? Where is the scribe? Where is the debater of this age? Has not God made foolish the wisdom of the world? 21 For since, in the wisdom of God, the world did not know God through wisdom, God decided, through the foolishness of our proclamation, to save those who believe. 22 For Jews demand signs and Greeks desire wisdom, 23 but we proclaim Christ crucified, a stumbling block to Jews and foolishness to Gentiles, 24 but to those who are the called, both Jews and Greeks, Christ the power of God and the wisdom of God. 25 For God's foolishness is wiser than human wisdom, and God's weakness is stronger than human strength.

26 Consider your own call, brothers and sisters:[b] not many of you were wise by human standards,[c] not many were powerful, not many were of noble birth. 27 But God chose what is foolish in the world to shame the wise; God chose what is weak in the world to shame the strong; 28 God chose what is low and despised in the world, things that are not, to reduce to nothing things that are, 29 so that no one[d] might boast in the presence of

[a] Other ancient authorities read *I am thankful*
[b] Gk *brothers*
[c] Gk *according to the flesh*
[d] Gk *no flesh*

common Greek term for "party": "Has the body of Christ been split into parties?" **14:** Paul's thanksgiving that he *baptized none . . . except Crispus and Gaius* has a note of irony which suggests that Crispus and Gaius may have been involved in forming factions. *Crispus* is the former synagogue president (Acts 18.8), while *Gaius* is described as "the host to the whole church" (Rom 16.23); both are evidently of the highest social standing in the church. **16:** Paul employs the device of a feigned lapse of memory to separate *Stephanas*, his strongest supporter (see 16.15–18), from Crispus and Gaius. **17:** Paul formulates his commission as an apostle antithetically: *not to baptize but to proclaim*. The negative definition of the style and content of Paul's preaching (*not with eloquent wisdom*) suggests how the Corinthians have found Paul's proclamation deficient.

1.18–2.5: The folly of the message about the cross. Paul acknowledges that his preaching is *foolishness* to the educated elite, but asserts that God has confounded the *wisdom* of this world. **18:** Paul provocatively reduces the content of the gospel to a single, shameful event—*the cross*. Greek "moria" (*foolishness*) has a social stigma that does not attach to English "folly": better, "a vulgar joke." **19:** Isa 29.14 (LXX). This text is particularly apt, since it critiques those who take pride in wisdom and foretells the creation of a new order in which the deaf will hear and the blind will see. **20:** Paul's rhetorical questions mock the educated elite by means of culturally specific titles of dignity: the Jewish *scribe* is not merely a skilled copyist but an expert in the scriptures; the *debater* is a philosophical researcher highly esteemed in the Hellenic world. **21:** Paul shapes a playful contrast between two types of *wisdom*: on the one hand, a divine attribute; on the other, a human attainment (cf. Sir 1.9–10; Wis 7; 8). **22:** The *desire* for *wisdom* among the *Greeks* was proverbial: see Herodotus 4.77.1. **23:** The first-century BCE orator Cicero attests the constraint upon discourse about the cross among persons of higher social class: "The mere mention of the word 'cross' is shameful to a Roman citizen and a free man" (*Pro Rabirio* 5.16). **24–25:** In substantiation of the paradox of the *crucified Christ* as *the power* and *wisdom of God*, Paul employs phrases that sound positively blasphemous—*God's foolishness . . . God's weakness*. **26–31:** Paul expounds the social consequences of the divine reversal of wisdom and foolishness. **26–28:** The terms used by Paul to describe the makeup of the community are those employed by Greek writers to designate the major class divisions in civil strife: *wise, powerful,* and *of noble birth* are euphemisms for "the rich," while "the poor" are the *foolish, weak,* and *low* (born). Paul offers a radical explanation of why the majority of those who have been "called" by the gospel of the crucified are persons lacking in education, wealth, and birth: *God chose* (repeated three times for

God. 30 He is the source of your life in Christ Jesus, who became for us wisdom from God, and righteousness and sanctification and redemption, 31 in order that, as it is written, "Let the one who boasts, boast in[a] the Lord."

2 When I came to you, brothers and sisters,[b] I did not come proclaiming the mystery[c] of God to you in lofty words or wisdom. 2 For I decided to know nothing among you except Jesus Christ, and him crucified. 3 And I came to you in weakness and in fear and in much trembling. 4 My speech and my proclamation were not with plausible words of wisdom,[d] but with a demonstration of the Spirit and of power, 5 so that your faith might rest not on human wisdom but on the power of God.

6 Yet among the mature we do speak wisdom, though it is not a wisdom of this age or of the rulers of this age, who are doomed to perish. 7 But we speak God's wisdom, secret and hidden, which God decreed before the ages for our glory. 8 None of the rulers of this age understood this; for if they had, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory. 9 But, as it is written,

"What no eye has seen, nor ear heard,
nor the human heart conceived,
what God has prepared for those who love
him"—

10 these things God has revealed to us through the Spirit; for the Spirit searches everything, even the depths of God. 11 For what human being knows what is truly human except the human spirit that is within? So also no one comprehends what is truly God's except the Spirit of God. 12 Now we have received not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit that is from God, so that we may understand the gifts bestowed on us by God. 13 And we speak of these things in words not taught by human wisdom but taught by the Spirit, interpreting spiritual things to those who are spiritual.[e]

14 Those who are unspiritual[f] do not receive the gifts of God's Spirit, for they are foolishness to them, and they are unable to understand them because they are spiritually discerned. 15 Those who are spiritual discern all things, and they are themselves subject to no one else's scrutiny.

16 "For who has known the mind of the
Lord
so as to instruct him?"

But we have the mind of Christ.

[a] Or *of*
[b] Gk *brothers*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *testimony*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *the persuasiveness of wisdom*
[e] Or *interpreting spiritual things in spiritual language*, or *comparing spiritual things with spiritual*
[f] Or *natural*

emphasis). **31:** Jer 9.23. **2.1–5:** Paul's concession that he did not preach *in lofty words or wisdom* is a rejoinder to an anticipated objection against his assertion that the *crucified Christ* is the wisdom of God: "But little wisdom or eloquence was apparent when you came preaching among us!" Paul adopts the persona of the befuddled orator from comedy and mime in order to establish that, despite his stammering *weakness*, the message about Christ is *the power of God*. Paul's choice of terms belonging to the technical vocabulary of Hellenistic rhetoric (*lofty words, plausible words, demonstration, power*) makes a contrast between his proclamation and that of missionary rivals who have made use of the art of rhetoric. **2:** Paul's use of the perfect participle, *crucified*, to describe more precisely the Christ whom he proclaims is a provocation to the elite: Paul insists that the present significance of Christ, even after his resurrection, consists in nothing other than that he is the crucified.

2.6–16: The wisdom Paul teaches. Paul's claim that he speaks *wisdom among the mature* is perplexing, in light of his previous assertion that he preaches the gospel without eloquent wisdom (1.17; 2.1,4). The seeming contradiction is resolved if 2.6–16 is regarded as Paul's self-parody as a teacher imparting *secret wisdom* to initiates. The brilliance of this strategy is that, by mocking himself and his proclamation, Paul undermines the idea that an apostle is a wise man as defined by the elite, while simultaneously asserting the existence of a paradoxical wisdom capable of transforming those who receive it, despite the ineptitude of its communicators. **6:** *Mature* (Gk "teleios") is a technical term in the mystery religions, designating one who has been fully initiated. *The rulers of this age* may be spiritual, demonic powers, but more likely are political authorities. **9:** The source of this citation is uncertain, but may come from the *Apocalypse of Elijah* (thus the second-century CE exegete Origen), cited here as scripture. **16:** Isa 40.13.

3 And so, brothers and sisters,[a] I could not speak to you as spiritual people, but rather as people of the flesh, as infants in Christ. [2] I fed you with milk, not solid food, for you were not ready for solid food. Even now you are still not ready, [3] for you are still of the flesh. For as long as there is jealousy and quarreling among you, are you not of the flesh, and behaving according to human inclinations? [4] For when one says, "I belong to Paul," and another, "I belong to Apollos," are you not merely human?

[5] What then is Apollos? What is Paul? Servants through whom you came to believe, as the Lord assigned to each. [6] I planted, Apollos watered, but God gave the growth. [7] So neither the one who plants nor the one who waters is anything, but only God who gives the growth. [8] The one who plants and the one who waters have a common purpose, and each will receive wages according to the labor of each. [9] For we are God's servants, working together; you are God's field, God's building.

[10] According to the grace of God given to me, like a skilled master builder I laid a foundation, and someone else is building on it. Each builder must choose with care how to build on it. [11] For no one can lay any foundation other than the one that has been laid; that foundation is Jesus Christ. [12] Now if anyone builds on the foundation with gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, straw— [13] the work of each builder will become visible, for the Day will disclose it, because it will be revealed with fire, and the fire will test what sort of work each has done. [14] If what has been built on the foundation survives, the builder will receive a reward. [15] If the work is burned up, the builder will suffer loss; the builder will be saved, but only as through fire.

[16] Do you not know that you are God's temple and that God's Spirit dwells in you?[b] [17] If anyone destroys God's temple, God will destroy that person. For God's temple is holy, and you are that temple.

[18] Do not deceive yourselves. If you think that you are wise in this age, you should become fools so that you may become wise. [19] For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with God. For it is written,

"He catches the wise in their craftiness,"

[20] and again,

"The Lord knows the thoughts of the wise,
that they are futile."

[21] So let no one boast about human leaders. For all things are yours, [22] whether Paul or Apollos or Cephas or the world or life or death or the present or the future—all belong to you, [23] and you belong to Christ, and Christ belongs to God.

4 Think of us in this way, as servants of Christ and stewards of God's mysteries. [2] Moreover, it is required of stewards that they be found trustworthy. [3] But with me it is a very small thing that I should be judged by you or by any human court. I do not even judge myself. [4] I am not aware of anything against myself, but I am not thereby acquit-

[a] Gk *brothers*

[b] In verses 16 and 17 the Greek word for *you* is plural

3.1–4.21: Apostles as servants of the Lord. 3.1–4: Paul chides the Corinthians in a derisive manner for their spiritual immaturity. **1:** Paul's description of the Corinthians as *infants* uses a metaphor from political rhetoric, comparing the factious with quarrelsome children. **4:** The reduction in the number of slogans from the four of 1.12 to two, *"I belong to Paul," "I to Apollos,"* suggests that Apollos is the focus of the Corinthians' partisanship.

3.5–4.5: In a series of well-constructed metaphors, Paul portrays himself and Apollos as farm workers (3.6–9), construction laborers (3.9–15), and household stewards (4.1–5), in order to emphasize collegiality against partisanship, and to diminish the importance attributed to them. **3.5:** Both Paul and Apollos have been *assigned* positions as *servants* by *the Lord*. **6:** The one who *planted* has priority over the one who has *watered*, and a greater claim upon the produce. **10:** Paul is a *skilled master builder* (Gk "sophos architekton," a technical term of construction work) who has laid the *foundation* of the community, while Apollos is, figuratively, one of the anonymous workers (*someone*) who has added something to the structure. **13:** *The Day,* the day of judgment; see 1.8n. **15:** The expression *as through fire* is a common Greek idiom describing a narrow escape from danger: as the fire ignites, the workers escape from the penalty to be imposed upon their shoddy construction by running through the walls of the burning building. **19:** Job 5.12–13. **20:** Ps 94.11. **22:** *Paul . . . Apollos . . . Cephas,* see 1.12n. **4.3:** Paul's indifference to the possibility that he may be *judged* by the Corinthians employs a Greek verb ("anakrinein") with a technical usage for the preliminary examination of political leaders to establish their

ted. It is the Lord who judges me. 5 Therefore do not pronounce judgment before the time, before the Lord comes, who will bring to light the things now hidden in darkness and will disclose the purposes of the heart. Then each one will receive commendation from God.

6 I have applied all this to Apollos and myself for your benefit, brothers and sisters,[a] so that you may learn through us the meaning of the saying, "Nothing beyond what is written," so that none of you will be puffed up in favor of one against another. 7 For who sees anything different in you?[b] What do you have that you did not receive? And if you received it, why do you boast as if it were not a gift?

8 Already you have all you want! Already you have become rich! Quite apart from us you have become kings! Indeed, I wish that you had become kings, so that we might be kings with you! 9 For I think that God has exhibited us apostles as last of all, as though sentenced to death, because we have become a spectacle to the world, to angels and to mortals. 10 We are fools for the sake of Christ, but you are wise in Christ. We are weak, but you are strong. You are held in honor, but we in disrepute. 11 To the present hour we are hungry and thirsty, we are poorly clothed and beaten and homeless, 12 and we grow weary from the work of our own hands. When reviled, we bless; when persecuted, we endure; 13 when slandered, we speak kindly. We have become like the rubbish of the world, the dregs of all things, to this very day.

14 I am not writing this to make you ashamed, but to admonish you as my beloved children. 15 For though you might have ten thousand guardians in Christ, you do not have many fathers. Indeed, in Christ Jesus I became your father through the gospel. 16 I appeal to you, then, be imitators of me. 17 For this reason I sent[c] you Timothy, who is my beloved and faithful child in the Lord, to remind you of my ways in Christ Jesus, as I teach them everywhere in every church. 18 But some of you, thinking that I am not coming to you, have become arrogant. 19 But I will come to you soon, if the Lord wills, and I will find out not the talk of these arrogant people but their power. 20 For the kingdom of God depends not on talk but on power. 21 What would you prefer? Am I to come to you with a stick, or with love in a spirit of gentleness?

5 It is actually reported that there is sexual immorality among you, and of a kind that is not found even among pagans; for a man is

[a] Gk *brothers*
[b] Or *Who makes you different from another?*
[c] Or *am sending*

qualifications, suggesting that the Corinthians plan to "examine" Paul's apostolic credentials. **5:** *Before the Lord comes,* see 1.8n.; 3.13.

4.6–13: Application. 6: Paul makes clear that he has been teaching with the aid of figures of speech *applied* to himself and Apollos (see 1.12n.). *"Nothing beyond what is written"* is a maxim of uncertain origin whose meaning must be pertinent to the following clause, *so that none of you will be puffed up.* **7–8:** With mounting sarcasm, Paul mocks the pretensions of leading figures in the Corinthian church (*king* was the client's term for a rich patron). Paul ironically reminds these patrons that everything they *have* (spiritually) they have *received* as a *gift*; they have nothing of which to *boast*. **9–13:** Paul expounds the consequences of the message about the cross for himself and his colleagues, who have conformed their lives to the fate of the crucified Christ: they are *fools* (Gk "moroi") in a *spectacle* (Gk "theatron") *exhibited* by God. Paul's vocabulary is explicitly theatrical: like the poor fools in the mime, Paul and his colleagues are *weak, hungry, poorly clothed, beaten* (literally, "given the knuckle-sandwich"), etc. **13:** *Rubbish* and *dregs* were the worst terms of abuse in Greek, originally applied to those unfortunate persons, mostly paupers and the deformed, who were put to death for the purification of the city, because life was assumed to be a burden for them.

4.14–21: Admonition. Paul portrays himself as a solicitous *father*, the Corinthians as unruly *children*, and other ministers of the gospel as *guardians* (Gk "paidagogoi"). That Paul is not altogether pleased with the performance of the guardians is suggested by his hyperbolic reference to their number, *ten thousand*, and by the need for parental intervention. If the Corinthians will not accept instruction from *faithful Timothy* (see Acts 18.5), Paul will come with his *stick* (Gk "rabdos"), standard equipment of the fool in the mime. Paul's warning to the Corinthians is imbued with an ironic consciousness of the possibility of his own discomfiture.

5.1–13: Sexual immorality in the community. 1: The expression *father's wife* is an idiom for "stepmother."

living with his father's wife. 2 And you are arrogant! Should you not rather have mourned, so that he who has done this would have been removed from among you?

3 For though absent in body, I am present in spirit; and as if present I have already pronounced judgment 4 in the name of the Lord Jesus on the man who has done such a thing.[a] When you are assembled, and my spirit is present with the power of our Lord Jesus, 5 you are to hand this man over to Satan for the destruction of the flesh, so that his spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord.[b]

6 Your boasting is not a good thing. Do you not know that a little yeast leavens the whole batch of dough? 7 Clean out the old yeast so that you may be a new batch, as you really are unleavened. For our paschal lamb, Christ, has been sacrificed. 8 Therefore, let us celebrate the festival, not with the old yeast, the yeast of malice and evil, but with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth.

9 I wrote to you in my letter not to associate with sexually immoral persons— 10 not at all meaning the immoral of this world, or the greedy and robbers, or idolaters, since you would then need to go out of the world. 11 But now I am writing to you not to associate with anyone who bears the name of brother or sister[c] who is sexually immoral or greedy, or is an idolater, reviler, drunkard, or robber. Do not even eat with such a one. 12 For what have I to do with judging those outside? Is it not those who are inside that you are to judge? 13 God will judge those outside. "Drive out the wicked person from among you."

6 When any of you has a grievance against another, do you dare to take it to court before the unrighteous, instead of taking it before the saints? 2 Do you not know that the saints will judge the world? And if the world is to be judged by you, are you incompetent to try trivial cases? 3 Do you not know that we are to judge angels—to say nothing of ordinary matters? 4 If you have ordinary cases, then, do you appoint as judges those who have no standing in the church? 5 I say this to your shame. Can it be that there is no one among you wise enough to decide between one believer[c] and another, 6 but a believer[c] goes to court against a believer[c]—and before unbelievers at that?

[a] Or *on the man who has done such a thing in the name of the Lord Jesus*
[b] Other ancient authorities add *Jesus*
[c] Gk *brother*

Paul accurately reports that sexual relations with one's stepmother were prohibited by biblical law (Lev 18.7–8; 20.11; Deut 22.30) as well as by Roman law; according to the *Institutes of Gaius*, "neither can I marry her who has aforetime been my mother-in-law or stepmother." **2:** That the church had taken no disciplinary action suggests that the sinner was a person of high social status. **3–5:** While it is not clear precisely what was involved in the execution of this sentence, Paul's language (*hand this man over to Satan*) indicates a punishment that was drastic and permanent, such as excommunication. **5:** *Flesh* for Paul does not refer to the human body but to an instinct toward sin, a way of life unredeemed by the spirit and oriented toward worldly advantages. *The day of the Lord,* see 1.8n. **6–8:** Paul's metaphor compares immorality in the community with *old yeast* which must be cleansed from the house in preparation for the Jewish festival of Passover, when only *unleavened* bread was to be eaten (Ex 12.15–20). **7:** Paul nowhere else describes *Christ* as *our paschal lamb*; but cf. Jn 1.29; 19.36; Rev 5.12. **9–13: Clarifying a misunderstanding. 9:** Defenders of the unity of 1 Corinthians assume that the *letter* to which Paul refers has been lost. But would the Corinthians have treated one of Paul's letters with such disregard? Alternatively, the letter may be preserved in 1 Cor 10.1–22; 6.12–20; 10.23–11.34, passages which discuss association with the immoral and idolaters; see further Introduction, pp. 1999–2000. **13:** *Drive out the wicked person*, following the instructions of Deut 13.5; 17.7; etc.

6.1–11: Lawsuits between believers. Someone *dares* to do what should be unthinkable for a Christian: *to take another* Christian *to court before the unrighteous*. **1:** The phrase *has a grievance against another* employs a technical expression of legal proceedings frequently attested in Greek sources. In general, only persons of more than moderate wealth had access to the courts. **2:** For the idea that *the saints* (the believers) *will judge the world*, see Dan 7.22 (LXX); Wis 3.8; Rev 3.21; 20.4. **3:** That the angels themselves are subject to judgment, see Jude 6; 2 Pet 2.4. **4:** The lawsuits in question seem to have been *ordinary* civil *cases*, concerned with money or property.

7 In fact, to have lawsuits at all with one another is already a defeat for you. Why not rather be wronged? Why not rather be defrauded? 8 But you yourselves wrong and defraud—and believers[a] at that.

9 Do you not know that wrongdoers will not inherit the kingdom of God? Do not be deceived! Fornicators, idolaters, adulterers, male prostitutes, sodomites, 10 thieves, the greedy, drunkards, revilers, robbers—none of these will inherit the kingdom of God. 11 And this is what some of you used to be. But you were washed, you were sanctified, you were justified in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ and in the Spirit of our God.

12 "All things are lawful for me," but not all things are beneficial. "All things are lawful for me," but I will not be dominated by anything. 13 "Food is meant for the stomach and the stomach for food,"[b] and God will destroy both one and the other. The body is meant not for fornication but for the Lord, and the Lord for the body. 14 And God raised the Lord and will also raise us by his power. 15 Do you not know that your bodies are members of Christ? Should I therefore take the members of Christ and make them members of a prostitute? Never! 16 Do you not know that whoever is united to a prostitute becomes one body with her? For it is said, "The two shall be one flesh." 17 But anyone united to the Lord becomes one spirit with him. 18 Shun fornication! Every sin that a person commits is outside the body; but the fornicator sins against the body itself. 19 Or do you not know that your body is a temple[c] of the Holy Spirit within you, which you have from God, and that you are not your own? 20 For you were bought with a price; therefore glorify God in your body.

7 Now concerning the matters about which you wrote: "It is well for a man not to touch a woman." 2 But because of cases of sexual immorality, each man should have his own wife and each woman her own husband. 3 The

[a] Gk *brothers*
[b] The quotation may extend to the word *other*
[c] Or *sanctuary*

7: Paul's advice resembles that of Jesus in Mt 5.39–40; Lk 6.28–30: nonresistance. **9–11:** Catalogues of vices and virtues are known from Jewish and Greek writers, especially the Stoic philosophers. **9:** *Male prostitutes* (Gk "malakoi," lit., "soft men") were boys and men sodomized by other males, while *sodomites* (Gk "arsenokoitai," lit., "men who bed males"; a word first found here and based on LXX Lev 18.22; 20.13) were men who exercised the dominant role, pederasts.

6.12–20: Christians going to prostitutes. The abrupt beginning of 6.12, and differences of tone and content with 5.1–6.11, suggest that this paragraph originally belonged not here, but possibly between 10.22 and 10.23, with which 6.12–20 has much in common: in both passages, the temptation to immorality is strong and Christians are urged to "flee" (6.18; 10.8,14); in both passages, Paul quotes the Corinthian slogan, *"All things are lawful for me"* (6.12; 10.23). **12:** Paul quotes a slogan of the Corinthians, a proud boast of freedom, asserting liberation from cultural taboos. Paul counters by insisting upon the mutually *beneficial* as the criterion of moral judgment. **13:** Another slogan of the Corinthians, with a background in Cynic philosophy. Paul counters by affirming God's power over the body. **14:** The resurrection of Jesus signals that the body is not meant for corruption but for more life. **15:** Paul appeals to his characteristic idea of the church as the body of Christ (see 12.12–14,27) in order to exclude the possibility of contact with a dangerous polluting agent, the *prostitute*. **16:** Gen. 2.24. **18:** Cf. 10.14 (5.9). That *the fornicator sins against* himself, against his own person (reflected in his *body*), is an idea with Stoic parallels. **19:** Like the community as a whole (cf. 3.16), each believer is *a temple of the Holy Spirit*. **20:** Paul draws upon the custom of sacred manumission: the slave whose freedom was *bought with a price* with money previously deposited in the temple treasury was regarded as the property of the god.

7.1–40: Marriage and sexual relations. In response to the Corinthians' questions, Paul rethinks the most basic relationships, with the result that marriage and other statuses are relativized in importance by the eschatological "calling" from the Lord. **1:** *Now concerning,* a formula introducing the first of several topics about which the Corinthians had asked Paul in their letter; see also 7.25; 8.1; 12.1; 16.1; 16.12. The words *"It is well for a man not to touch a woman"* are a quotation from the Corinthians' letter. *Touch* is an idiom for "have sex with." The quotation may be an expression of extreme asceticism, or may represent an ironic retort by those who claimed freedom from conventional morality (6.12n.) to Paul's warning against immorality in his previous letter.

husband should give to his wife her conjugal rights, and likewise the wife to her husband. [4] For the wife does not have authority over her own body, but the husband does; likewise the husband does not have authority over his own body, but the wife does. [5] Do not deprive one another except perhaps by agreement for a set time, to devote yourselves to prayer, and then come together again, so that Satan may not tempt you because of your lack of self-control. [6] This I say by way of concession, not of command. [7] I wish that all were as I myself am. But each has a particular gift from God, one having one kind and another a different kind.

[8] To the unmarried and the widows I say that it is well for them to remain unmarried as I am. [9] But if they are not practicing self-control, they should marry. For it is better to marry than to be aflame with passion.

[10] To the married I give this command—not I but the Lord—that the wife should not separate from her husband [11] (but if she does separate, let her remain unmarried or else be reconciled to her husband), and that the husband should not divorce his wife.

[12] To the rest I say—I and not the Lord—that if any believer[a] has a wife who is an unbeliever, and she consents to live with him, he should not divorce her. [13] And if any woman has a husband who is an unbeliever, and he consents to live with her, she should not divorce him. [14] For the unbelieving husband is made holy through his wife, and the unbelieving wife is made holy through her husband. Otherwise, your children would be unclean, but as it is, they are holy. [15] But if the unbelieving partner separates, let it be so; in such a case the brother or sister is not bound. It is to peace that God has called you.[b] [16] Wife, for all you know, you might save your husband. Husband, for all you know, you might save your wife.

[17] However that may be, let each of you lead the life that the Lord has assigned, to which God called you. This is my rule in all the churches. [18] Was anyone at the time of his call already circumcised? Let him not seek to remove the marks of circumcision. Was anyone at the time of his call uncircumcised? Let him not seek circumcision. [19] Circumcision is nothing, and uncircumci-

[a] Gk *brother*

[b] Other ancient authorities read *us*

2: Against the temptation to immorality, Paul counsels monogamy and fidelity in marriage; cf. 1 Thess 4.3–5. **3:** *Conjugal rights,* lit., "debt," used here in a technical and euphemistic sense, to denote the obligation of spouses to each other. **4:** That the partnership of marriage includes the bodies of the husband and wife was also affirmed by the Stoic philosopher Musonius. **5:** Paul warns rather strongly (*deprive* is literally "defraud") against withholding conjugal relations, and allows for exceptions only within limits—*by* harmonious *agreement*, for a season, *to devote* oneself *to prayer* (cf. *T. Naph.* 8). **6:** To avoid the impression that he commands sexual relations within marriage, Paul clarifies the point of his previous statement: he has spoken *by way of concession*, to prevent temptation on account of *lack of self-control*. **7:** Paul's *wish* is that all were as he is—unmarried (v. 8) yet self-controlled, a state which he regards as a *gift from God*; yet Paul acknowledges that others have different gifts. **8–9:** Paul counsels celibacy *to the unmarried and widows*, unless they are "out of control." Greek writers describe *passion* as an internal burning; love spells in magical papyri send desire into the body of the beloved as "heat." **10–11:** The *command* of *the Lord* appears to refer to sayings about divorce like those attributed to Jesus in Mk 10.2–12; Mt 5.31–32; 19:3–9. Paul has formulated the command of Jesus in accordance with Roman law under which *the wife* could *divorce her husband*; according to biblical law, divorce was initiated only by the husband (Deut 24.1). To *separate* is a technical term for divorce in Greek sources. **12–16:** Paul offers advice to Christ-believers in mixed marriages. The advice is naturally offered on Paul's own authority, because such marriages were not envisioned by Jesus. If the non-Christian is sympathetically disposed to live with the believer, there should be no divorce. **14:** Paul's statement rests upon the notion that "holiness," like "uncleanness," is a quality transferable within relationships; cf. 1 Clem 46.2. **15:** For *peace* as the goal of Christian life, see 2 Cor 13.11; Rom 14.17. **16:** The term *save* is used here in the sense of conversion; cf. 1 Pet 3.1–2. **17–24:** Paul inserts a paragraph enunciating his general *rule in all the churches,* of which the preceding advice on marriage has been a special application: the *call* of God does not remove a Christian from his or her situation in society, but intensifies obedience to God in the midst of life. **18:** Paul envisions cases of a Jewish convert who might *seek to remove the marks of circumcision*, and of a Gentile convert who might *seek circumcision*, motivated by a desire

sion is nothing; but obeying the commandments of God is everything. 20 Let each of you remain in the condition in which you were called.

21 Were you a slave when called? Do not be concerned about it. Even if you can gain your freedom, make use of your present condition now more than ever.[a] 22 For whoever was called in the Lord as a slave is a freed person belonging to the Lord, just as whoever was free when called is a slave of Christ. 23 You were bought with a price; do not become slaves of human masters. 24 In whatever condition you were called, brothers and sisters,[b] there remain with God.

25 Now concerning virgins, I have no command of the Lord, but I give my opinion as one who by the Lord's mercy is trustworthy. 26 I think that, in view of the impending[c] crisis, it is well for you to remain as you are. 27 Are you bound to a wife? Do not seek to be free. Are you free from a wife? Do not seek a wife. 28 But if you marry, you do not sin, and if a virgin marries, she does not sin. Yet those who marry will experience distress in this life,[d] and I would spare you that. 29 I mean, brothers and sisters,[b] the appointed time has grown short; from now on, let even those who have wives be as though they had none, 30 and those who mourn as though they were not mourning, and those who rejoice as though they were not rejoicing, and those who buy as though they had no possessions, 31 and those who deal with the world as though they had no dealings with it. For the present form of this world is passing away.

[a] Or *avail yourself of the opportunity*
[b] Gk *brothers*
[c] Or *present*
[d] Gk *in the flesh*

for social acceptance in either group. **19:** Paul insists that *circumcision* and *uncircumcision* amount to *nothing*; what matters is keeping *the commandments of God*; cf. Gal 5.6; 6.15; Rom 2.25–26. **20:** Paul plays provocatively with the word "calling" to indicate that something has been added to every *condition*, by virtue of which the Christian can *remain* in his or her calling, yet with a higher vocation. **21:** A *slave* should *not be concerned* about his condition. But what if he is able to become free? Paul's advice has puzzled interpreters; the Greek literally reads "rather make use of" (the words "your present condition now more than ever" have been supplied by the NRSV translators), with the verb lacking an object in the Greek text, and either "slavery" or "freedom" must be supplied to complete the meaning. The context argues for the former, as indicated by the qualifying phrases *even if* and *now more than ever* (lit., "rather"): thus, *even if* a slave has the resources to purchase his freedom, he should rather *make use of* his *present condition*. But there may be a critique of slavery implicit in Paul's choice of the verb *make use of*: the Christian vocation is exercised by *use*, not by possession. **22:** The calling *in the Lord* results in a status reversal: the Christian *slave* has become a *freed person* of Christ, while the free man has become *a slave of Christ*. Paul's thought moves beyond the Stoic consolation of "inner freedom" and implies changes in social relationship and behavior; see Philem 16. **23:** As was the custom in sacred manumission, where the god was imagined to be the purchaser of the slave, so Christ has *bought* the Corinthians *with a price*, whether slave or free, so that they should no longer enslave themselves to *human masters*. **25–38:** Whether *virgins* should *marry* must have been a question raised in the Corinthians' letter to Paul, as indicated by the recurrence of the formula *now concerning* (see 7.1n.). **25:** Paul acknowledges that the advice that follows is his own *opinion*, since he has *no command of the Lord*; cf. 7.10,12. **26:** *The impending crisis* refers to the tribulations expected to occur in the last days before the Second Coming; see also vv. 29,31. **27:** What kind of "bond" is envisioned? Not, evidently, the bond of marriage, but a pledge to preserve the virginity of the young woman, to which the man addressed by Paul has committed himself. **28:** Paul reassures the man and his betrothed that the decision to *marry* is no *sin*, should they prove incapable of keeping their pledge to virginity. **29–31:** Paul shares his belief about the foreshortening of time as justification for urging an adjustment in social, emotional, and economic relations. The participle that Paul chooses (*grown short*) to describe what has happened to *time* in the Christ-event is from a verb used elsewhere in Greek literature of the furling of a ship's sails, of the folding of a bird's wings, of curtains gathered together. An apocalyptic parallel to Paul's account of life according to the principle of *as though . . . not* is found in 2 Esd 16.41b–44: "Let the one who buys like the one who will lose; . . . those who marry, like those who will have no children." But there are important differences: for Paul, the eschatological rupture occurs in the present, and is immanent to every action, whereas 2 Esdras distinguishes present from

32 I want you to be free from anxieties.
The unmarried man is anxious about the
affairs of the Lord, how to please the Lord;
33 but the married man is anxious about
the affairs of the world, how to please his
wife, 34 and his interests are divided. And
the unmarried woman and the virgin are
anxious about the affairs of the Lord, so
that they may be holy in body and spirit;
but the married woman is anxious about
the affairs of the world, how to please her
husband. 35 I say this for your own benefit,
not to put any restraint upon you, but to
promote good order and unhindered devo-
tion to the Lord.

36 If anyone thinks that he is not behaving
properly toward his fiancée,[a] if his passions
are strong, and so it has to be, let him marry
as he wishes; it is no sin. Let them marry.
37 But if someone stands firm in his resolve,
being under no necessity but having his own
desire under control, and has determined in
his own mind to keep her as his fiancée,[a] he
will do well. 38 So then, he who marries his
fiancée[a] does well; and he who refrains from
marriage will do better.

39 A wife is bound as long as her husband
lives. But if the husband dies,[b] she is free to
marry anyone she wishes, only in the Lord.
40 But in my judgment she is more blessed if
she remains as she is. And I think that I too
have the Spirit of God.

8 Now concerning food sacrificed to idols:
we know that "all of us possess knowl-
edge." Knowledge puffs up, but love builds
up. 2 Anyone who claims to know something
does not yet have the necessary knowledge;
3 but anyone who loves God is known by him.

4 Hence, as to the eating of food offered
to idols, we know that "no idol in the world
really exists," and that "there is no God but
one." 5 Indeed, even though there may be
so-called gods in heaven or on earth—as in
fact there are many gods and many lords—
6 yet for us there is one God, the Father, from
whom are all things and for whom we exist,
and one Lord, Jesus Christ, through whom are
all things and through whom we exist.

[a] Gk *virgin*
[b] Gk *falls asleep*

future, and distributes the crisis across different actions. **32–35:** Paul wants his converts to be *free from anxieties*. Epictetus counseled the ideal Cynic to avoid the distractions of marriage; but the goal of Paul's advice is not philosophical self-mastery, but *unhindered devotion to the Lord*. **36–38:** Paul gives particular consideration to a situation which posed a special danger: when the desires of those who have pledged themselves to celibacy threaten to get out of control. In advising marriage in this case, Paul is not compromising his preference for the unmarried state. In Paul's hierarchy of virtue, marriage is good, but celibacy is better. **39–40:** The freedom of a Christian widow to remarry is affirmed, with one proviso: that she marry a fellow Christian. Yet Paul judges the widow to be *more blessed* who *remains* unmarried.

8.1–13: Eating food offered to idols. 1: The formula *now concerning* (see 7.1n.) indicates that this matter had been raised in the Corinthians' letter to Paul. The background was apparently this: Paul's advice in a previous letter (cf. 1 Cor 5.9) to shun the worship of idols (see 1 Cor 10.14–22) proved confusing and difficult for some to follow. What if one were invited to dine in the banquet hall of a sacred precinct? To decline such invitations would be socially disadvantageous (cf. 1 Cor 5.10). In reply, Paul quotes repeatedly from the Corinthians' letter (8.1,4,8), permitting a detailed reconstruction of the social location and religious beliefs of the disputants. *"All of us possess knowledge"* is a quotation from the Corinthians' letter. The content of their knowledge is quoted in 8.4: *"No idol . . . really exists."* As a consequence, eating idol meat is a matter of indifference: *"We are no worse off,"* etc. (8.8; but also see further, below). Perhaps the "strong" represented it as their duty to build up the conscience of the "weak," so that they would not cling to superstitious scruples (8.10). In seeking to identify the "strong" and the "weak," one should bear in mind that the poor seldom had meat as part of their diet, except when it was distributed at public religious festivals, whereas the rich could afford to buy meat in the market, and would have received invitations to dine in temples, owing to their social status. **1:** Paul counters the emphasis upon religious *knowledge* by exposing its tendency to self-inflation; *love* (Gk "agape") is the constructive force of Christian community, praised in ch 13. **3:** Cf. Rom 8.28–30; Gal 4.9; 1 Cor 13.12. **4:** The Corinthians' knowledge that *"no idol in the world really exists"* is grounded in the monotheistic faith to which they have been converted; cf. Deut 4.35; 6.4; Wis 7.17; 13.1; 15.2–3. **5:** Paul acknowledges not that *many gods* exist, but that

[7] It is not everyone, however, who has this knowledge. Since some have become so accustomed to idols until now, they still think of the food they eat as food offered to an idol; and their conscience, being weak, is defiled. [8] "Food will not bring us close to God."[a] We are no worse off if we do not eat, and no better off if we do. [9] But take care that this liberty of yours does not somehow become a stumbling block to the weak. [10] For if others see you, who possess knowledge, eating in the temple of an idol, might they not, since their conscience is weak, be encouraged to the point of eating food sacrificed to idols? [11] So by your knowledge those weak believers for whom Christ died are destroyed.[b] [12] But when you thus sin against members of your family,[c] and wound their conscience when it is weak, you sin against Christ. [13] Therefore, if food is a cause of their falling,[d] I will never eat meat, so that I may not cause one of them[e] to fall.

9 Am I not free? Am I not an apostle? Have I not seen Jesus our Lord? Are you not my work in the Lord? [2] If I am not an apostle to others, at least I am to you; for you are the seal of my apostleship in the Lord.

[3] This is my defense to those who would examine me. [4] Do we not have the right to our food and drink? [5] Do we not have the right to be accompanied by a believing wife,[f] as do the other apostles and the brothers of the Lord and Cephas? [6] Or is it only Barnabas and I who have no right to refrain from working for a living? [7] Who at any time pays the expenses for doing military service? Who plants a vineyard and does not eat any of its

[a] The quotation may extend to the end of the verse
[b] Gk *the weak brother . . . is destroyed*
[c] Gk *against the brothers*
[d] Gk *my brother's falling*
[e] Gk *cause my brother*
[f] Gk *a sister as wife*

they are worshiped as such by others. **6:** Paul quotes an early Christian confession; cf. Rom 11.36; Col 1.15–16. **7:** Paul confronts the "strong" with the reality that some do not share their enlightened attitude toward the gods. Those who have been *accustomed to idols until now* must be Gentiles rather than Jews. The Greek word translated *conscience* does not correspond to the modern conception of an internal guide to moral conduct in the future, but denotes a past misdeed which causes pain. The "strong" have asserted that their consumption of idol meat did not convict them of any wrongdoing, and have alleged that the *conscience* of other Christians is *weak* for harboring such scruples. Paul appropriates the term *conscience* from the "strong" and uses it to express his own true concern that someone for whom the *so-called gods* (v. 5) have existence might be *defiled* by eating *food offered to an idol*. **8:** The entire verse is another quotation from the Corinthians' letter, despite the NRSV's punctuation. **9:** The Greek word translated *liberty* has a meaning closer to "authority" or "right," as in 9.4–6,12,18. **10:** The situation envisioned here is illustrated by the temple of Asclepius at Corinth, which had three dining rooms on the east side of the courtyard. **11–12:** Paul formulates a radical conclusion regarding the relationship between *knowledge* and love: the proper object of religious concern is not an abstract truth about God, but *those weak believers for whom Christ died*. **13:** Paul formulates a general principle of Christian ethics: self-limiting regard for others.

9.1–27: Paul's defense of his means of subsistence, with implications for his legitimacy as an apostle. As if to illustrate the principle of renunciation articulated in 8.13, Paul launches into a spirited defense of his decision not to accept financial support from some at Corinth. The background of the controversy was as follows. While Paul was resident in Corinth, he provided for his own needs by working with his hands (Acts 18.1–3). When other apostles and evangelists subsequently arrived, they accepted patronage from wealthy persons. In retrospect, Paul's refusal of support appeared questionable. Did Paul know he was not entitled to support because he was not really an apostle? Moreover, labor of the sort by which Paul sustained himself was viewed as degrading by persons of high social status. These doubts and questions must have found expression in the Corinthians' letter to Paul. **1:** *Am I not free?* Paul responds to the insinuation that he is not "free" to evangelize because he is a "slave" of his labor. *An apostle . . . seen Jesus*; cf. 15.8; Gal 1.1,11–17. **3:** *Defense,* (Gk "apologia") a speech of defense before a court. On plans to *examine* Paul, see the allusion in 4.3–4. **5:** *The brothers of the Lord* are Jesus' brothers; cf. Mk 6.3; Gal 1.19. *Cephas,* the Aramaic form of Peter's name. **6:** *Barnabas* was Paul's first colleague in mission; see Gal.2.1–10; Acts 9.27; 11.25–26; 13–14. **7–14:** Why does Paul multiply examples of the exercise of a privilege

fruit? Or who tends a flock and does not get any of its milk?

[8] Do I say this on human authority? Does not the law also say the same? [9] For it is written in the law of Moses, "You shall not muzzle an ox while it is treading out the grain." Is it for oxen that God is concerned? [10] Or does he not speak entirely for our sake? It was indeed written for our sake, for whoever plows should plow in hope and whoever threshes should thresh in hope of a share in the crop. [11] If we have sown spiritual good among you, is it too much if we reap your material benefits? [12] If others share this rightful claim on you, do not we still more?

Nevertheless, we have not made use of this right, but we endure anything rather than put an obstacle in the way of the gospel of Christ. [13] Do you not know that those who are employed in the temple service get their food from the temple, and those who serve at the altar share in what is sacrificed on the altar? [14] In the same way, the Lord commanded that those who proclaim the gospel should get their living by the gospel.

[15] But I have made no use of any of these rights, nor am I writing this so that they may be applied in my case. Indeed, I would rather die than that—no one will deprive me of my ground for boasting! [16] If I proclaim the gospel, this gives me no ground for boasting, for an obligation is laid on me, and woe to me if I do not proclaim the gospel! [17] For if I do this of my own will, I have a reward; but if not of my own will, I am entrusted with a commission. [18] What then is my reward? Just this: that in my proclamation I may make the gospel free of charge, so as not to make full use of my rights in the gospel.

[19] For though I am free with respect to all, I have made myself a slave to all, so that I might win more of them. [20] To the Jews I became as a Jew, in order to win Jews. To those under the law I became as one under the law (though I myself am not under the law) so that I might win those under the law. [21] To those outside the law I became as one outside the law (though I am not free from God's law but am under Christ's law) so that I might win those outside the law. [22] To the weak I became weak, so that I might win the weak. I have become all things to all people, that I might by all means save some. [23] I do it all for the sake of the gospel, so that I may share in its blessings.

[24] Do you not know that in a race the runners all compete, but only one receives the prize? Run in such a way that you may win it. [25] Athletes exercise self-control in all things; they do it to receive a perishable wreath, but we an imperishable one. [26] So I do not run aimlessly, nor do I box as though beating the air; [27] but I punish my body and enslave it, so that after proclaiming to others I myself should not be disqualified.

(by the soldier, the planter, the herder, the priest) about which the Corinthians are in agreement, when it is not his exercise of the privilege which is in dispute, but his renunciation of it? For the key to Paul's argumentative strategy, see note on vv. 12b–14 below. **9:** Deut. 25.4. **12b–14:** Paul cleverly reinterprets *the Lord's command* as a *right* of which he has *not made use*. Paul's critics may have pointed out that, by working as a craftsman, Paul had violated the norms of Christian mission—*that those who proclaim the gospel should get their living by the gospel*. **14:** What *the Lord commanded* refers to a saying like that attributed to Jesus in Lk 10.7. **15:** Against those who find his occupation shameful, Paul asserts that it has provided him with *ground for boasting*; see also 2 Cor 11.7–10. **16:** Paul represents his preaching as an *obligation* (lit., "necessity"), not a choice; cf. Rom 1.14–15. **17–18:** By means of a series of well-chosen economic terms, Paul reverses the values of the Corinthian patrons: *reward* is literally "wages"; *commission* (Gk "oikonomia") is "the work of a household-manager"; *free of charge* is a characteristic of benefactors. Paul's point is that evangelists who accept financial support are mere hirelings, whereas he is the true benefactor of the community. **19–23:** Paul portrays himself as a populist leader who identifies with the interests of the common people. Paul justifies his self-lowering action *for the sake of the gospel*: by making himself *a slave to all*, he hopes to *save some*. Paul's upper-class critics may have regarded him as a demagogue, but the poor and weak would have found his self-presentation appealing. **24–27:** In an extended metaphor, Paul compares himself to an athlete in training for the games. His renunciation of financial support should be understood as a form of discipline, an exercise of *self-control*. **25:** The *perishable wreath* may allude specifically to the winner's crown of the Isthmian Games, which was made of withered celery.

10 I do not want you to be unaware, brothers and sisters,[a] that our ancestors were all under the cloud, and all passed through the sea, [2] and all were baptized into Moses in the cloud and in the sea, [3] and all ate the same spiritual food, [4] and all drank the same spiritual drink. For they drank from the spiritual rock that followed them, and the rock was Christ. [5] Nevertheless, God was not pleased with most of them, and they were struck down in the wilderness.

[6] Now these things occurred as examples for us, so that we might not desire evil as they did. [7] Do not become idolaters as some of them did; as it is written, "The people sat down to eat and drink, and they rose up to play." [8] We must not indulge in sexual immorality as some of them did, and twenty-three thousand fell in a single day. [9] We must not put Christ[b] to the test, as some of them did, and were destroyed by serpents. [10] And do not complain as some of them did, and were destroyed by the destroyer. [11] These things happened to them to serve as an example, and they were written down to instruct us, on whom the ends of the ages have come. [12] So if you think you are standing, watch out that you do not fall. [13] No testing has overtaken you that is not common to everyone. God is faithful, and he will not let you be tested beyond your strength, but with the testing he will also provide the way out so that you may be able to endure it.

[14] Therefore, my dear friends,[c] flee from the worship of idols. [15] I speak as to sensible people; judge for yourselves what I say. [16] The cup of blessing that we bless, is it not a sharing in the blood of Christ? The bread that we break, is it not a sharing in the body of Christ? [17] Because there is one bread, we who are many are one body, for we all partake of the one bread. [18] Consider the people of Israel;[d] are not those who eat the sacrifices

[a] Gk *brothers*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *the Lord*
[c] Gk *my beloved*
[d] Gk *Israel according to the flesh*

10.1–22: Warning against participation in the worship of idols. Paul's demand for a complete break with polytheistic sacrificial rituals is significantly more rigorous than his advice on food offered to idols in ch 8, suggesting that this passage belonged (with 6.12–20) to the letter on association with the immoral and idolaters mentioned in 5.9–10. Paul's admonition takes the form of a typological interpretation of Israel's Exodus and wilderness traditions, encouraging the Corinthians to see the danger to their community through the prism of Israel's calamitous idolatry. **1:** The expression *our ancestors* reckons Gentile Christians as belonging to Israel. For Israel *under the cloud*, see Ps 105.39; Wis 10.17; 19.7; on passage *through the sea*, cf. Ex 14.21–22. **2:** Paul typologically constructs Israel's Exodus experience as prefiguring Christian baptism. **3–4:** *Spiritual food* refers to the "manna" of Ex 16.15; cf. Ps 78.24–25; *spiritual drink* is the water struck from the rock by Moses in Ex 17.6; Num 20.7–11; cf. Ps 78.15–16. The tradition that the *rock followed* Israel through the wilderness is found in *Tg. Ps.-J.* on Num 20.19. In a stunning typological substitution, Paul explains that *the rock was Christ*. Using a similar hermeneutical maneuver, the first-century CE Jewish interpreter Philo equates the "rock" with "wisdom" and "manna" with the divine "logos." **5:** For the divine punishment of the wilderness generation, see Num 14.29–30; Jude 5; Heb 3.17. **6:** Paul suggests that *evil desire* is the root of idolatry and immorality; for the background, see Num 11.4–6; Ps 106.14–15. **7:** Paul quotes Ex 32.6, the only scripture cited explicitly in ch 10, because it epitomizes Paul's concern with idolatry and immorality among the Corinthians. **8:** For the close connection of idolatry with sexual immorality, see *T. Reuben* 4. On the *twenty-three thousand* who died by the plague, cf. Num 25.1–9. **9:** That Israel *put* God *to the test*, see Ps 78.18; for *destroyed by serpents*, see Num 21.6. **10:** Num. 16.41,49. **11:** Paul discerns a deeper "typological" purpose in the *things* that *happened* to Israel. Paul's capacity to grasp such correspondences depends upon his eschatological perspective. **12–13:** Paul reassures the Corinthians that God *will provide the way out* of the temptation to participate in polytheistic rituals. **14:** Paul formulates the point of the preceding typological interpretation as an urgent injunction; cf. the similarly formulated warning in 6.18. **15–22:** To dissuade the Corinthians from participating in polytheistic rituals, Paul develops an argument that he hopes will appeal to the *sensible*. The argument rests upon the assumption that religious "fellowship" (Gk "koinonia") is mutually exclusive. **16:** The elasticity of the Greek phrase translated *sharing in* allows both for the social concept "fellowship with" and for the sacramental idea of "participation in" *the blood . . . the body of Christ*. **17:** More than an act of communal sharing, Christians become *one body* through partaking of the *one bread*; cf. 12.13. **20:**

partners in the altar? [19] What do I imply then? That food sacrificed to idols is anything, or that an idol is anything? [20] No, I imply that what pagans sacrifice, they sacrifice to demons and not to God. I do not want you to be partners with demons. [21] You cannot drink the cup of the Lord and the cup of demons. You cannot partake of the table of the Lord and the table of demons. [22] Or are we provoking the Lord to jealousy? Are we stronger than he?

[23] "All things are lawful," but not all things are beneficial. "All things are lawful," but not all things build up. [24] Do not seek your own advantage, but that of the other. [25] Eat whatever is sold in the meat market without raising any question on the ground of conscience, [26] for "the earth and its fullness are the Lord's." [27] If an unbeliever invites you to a meal and you are disposed to go, eat whatever is set before you without raising any question on the ground of conscience. [28] But if someone says to you, "This has been offered in sacrifice," then do not eat it, out of consideration for the one who informed you, and for the sake of conscience— [29] I mean the other's conscience, not your own. For why should my liberty be subject to the judgment of someone else's conscience? [30] If I partake with thankfulness, why should I be denounced because of that for which I give thanks?

[31] So, whether you eat or drink, or whatever you do, do everything for the glory of God. [32] Give no offense to Jews or to Greeks or to the church of God, [33] just as I try to please everyone in everything I do, not seeking my own advantage, but that of many, so that they may be saved. **11** [1] Be imitators of me, as I am of Christ.

[2] I commend you because you remember me in everything and maintain the traditions just as I handed them on to you. [3] But I want you to understand that Christ is the head of every man, and the husband[a] is the head of his wife,[b] and God is the head of Christ. [4] Any man who prays or prophesies with something on his head disgraces his head, [5] but any woman who prays or prophesies with her head unveiled disgraces her head—it is one and the same thing as having her head shaved. [6] For if a woman will not veil herself,

[a] The same Greek word means *man* or *husband*

[b] Or *head of the woman*

Cf. Deut 32.17. **21:** Greek papyri furnish examples of invitations to dine upon the "couch" of deities such as lord Sarapis. **22:** Cf. Deut 32.19,21.

10.23–11.1: Limits upon religious exclusivity. Paul anticipates objections to his advice to shun idolatry and deals with two ambiguous cases; on the meaning of "conscience," see 8.7n. **23:** As in 6.12, Paul quotes a Corinthian slogan and counters with consideration of what is *beneficial* and edifying. **25:** Should all meat *sold in the market* be regarded as idol meat? The question was relevant, because meat markets were often located in the vicinity of temples. **27:** The *meal* is presumably in the private home of an unbeliever. **29b–30:** Because these questions stand in tension with what precedes and follows, some interpreters regard them as the objections of an imaginary interlocutor, while others suggest that they originated as a marginal gloss by one of the "strong" who read Paul's letter. **31–33:** Paul foregoes consideration of further cases and formulates a general rule of conduct.

11.2–16: Hairstyles in the assembly. The point at issue is difficult to determine. Paul seems to insist that charismatic women leaders wear the veil, in accordance with Jewish custom. But v. 15 allows that women have their *hair* as a *covering*. Hence, some interpreters construe *unveiled* (vv. 5,13) more generally as "uncovered," in reference to the loose, disheveled hair of women in the ecstatic worship of Dionysus. But there is little support for this in the text. More interesting than what Paul argues for is what he does not argue against—the Spirit-filled leadership of women. It is assumed that women will *pray* and *prophesy* in the worship assembly (v. 5). **2:** A problematic beginning: How will Paul *maintain the traditions* in the face of the new social identity given in Christ (cf. Gal 3.28)? **3–7:** Paul argues on the basis of a hierarchy of being: *God, Christ, man, woman*. **4:** Jewish men in the time of Paul did not wear a head-covering; see *Gen. Rab.* 17.8. **5–6:** On the potential disgrace of a *woman unveiled* in public, see the comment of Plutarch on Roman custom: "It is more usual for women to go forth in public with their heads covered and men with their heads uncovered" (*Quaestiones Romanae* 267a). For Paul's assumption that *it is disgraceful for a woman to have her hair cut* short, it may be relevant that Roman

then she should cut off her hair; but if it is disgraceful for a woman to have her hair cut off or to be shaved, she should wear a veil. 7 For a man ought not to have his head veiled, since he is the image and reflection[a] of God; but woman is the reflection[a] of man. 8 Indeed, man was not made from woman, but woman from man. 9 Neither was man created for the sake of woman, but woman for the sake of man. 10 For this reason a woman ought to have a symbol of[b] authority on her head,[c] because of the angels. 11 Nevertheless, in the Lord woman is not independent of man or man independent of woman. 12 For just as woman came from man, so man comes through woman; but all things come from God. 13 Judge for yourselves: is it proper for a woman to pray to God with her head unveiled? 14 Does not nature itself teach you that if a man wears long hair, it is degrading to him, 15 but if a woman has long hair, it is her glory? For her hair is given to her for a covering. 16 But if anyone is disposed to be contentious—we have no such custom, nor do the churches of God.

17 Now in the following instructions I do not commend you, because when you come together it is not for the better but for the worse. 18 For, to begin with, when you come together as a church, I hear that there are divisions among you; and to some extent I believe it. 19 Indeed, there have to be factions among you, for only so will it become clear who among you are genuine. 20 When you come together, it is not really to eat the Lord's supper. 21 For when the time comes to eat, each of you goes ahead with your own supper, and one goes hungry and another becomes drunk. 22 What! Do you not have homes to eat and drink in? Or do you show contempt for the church of God and humiliate those who have nothing? What should I say to you? Should I commend you? In this matter I do not commend you!

23 For I received from the Lord what I also handed on to you, that the Lord Jesus on the night when he was betrayed took a loaf of bread, 24 and when he had given thanks, he broke it and said, "This is my body that is for[d] you. Do this in remembrance of me." 25 In the same way he took the cup also, after supper,

[a] Or *glory*
[b] Gk lacks *a symbol of*
[c] Or *have freedom of choice regarding her head*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *is broken for*

portraiture generally depicts women with long hair braided and wound up around their heads. **7:** See Gen 1.27. **8–9:** An argument from the order of creation; see Gen 2.18–23. **10:** *The angels* are probably the "sons of God" in Gen 6.2 who had intercourse with mortal women and fathered a race of giants. Like other Jewish writers of the period (e.g., *T. Reuben* 5.6), Paul evidently fears that the angels will be aroused to lust by the sight of exposed women. **11–12:** *Nevertheless* indicates that Paul breaks off the preceding argument and moves on to emphasize what is important: *in the Lord* there is mutuality and reciprocity between *woman* and *man*. **13–16:** Paul's argument having collapsed, he hands the decision over to the Corinthians, invoking a Stoic argument from *nature* and finally appealing to *custom*.

11.17–34: Divisions at the Lord's Supper. A gulf between the "haves" and the "have-nots" emerged at the very place where the Corinthians should have been most capable of discerning the unity of the body of Christ—at the Lord's Supper. According to the conventions of Greco-Roman dinner parties, the host apportioned the fare according to the status of his guests, reserving the best food and wine for his social equals and intimate friends. **18:** The phrase *come together as a church* designates the weekly assembly of all the Christians of Corinth (cf. 14.23; 16.2), a larger gathering of the several subgroups, or "house churches," for the purpose of eating the Lord's Supper. The whole church evidently met in the home of a wealthy member, such as Gaius (Rom 16.23). **19:** Paul's assertion that *there have to be factions* may reflect an apocalyptic belief about the tribulation expected in the last days, but also may be meant ironically. **20–21:** The contrast between *the Lord's supper* and "the private supper" (NRSV: *your own supper*) makes clear how Paul sees the problem: the privatization of a meal intended for the community. The Greek verb translated *goes ahead* is ambiguous: it may suggest that some (the leisure class) began to eat before others (slaves, laborers) had arrived, but also that some selfishly ate their food while others looked on. In any case, the result is that *one goes hungry and another becomes drunk*. **22:** Paul's question *Do you not have homes?* is heavy with irony against the proprietary class. **23–26:** Paul reminds the Corinthians of the act of self-giving, which established the basis of their fellowship, on the basis of early

saying, "This cup is the new covenant in my blood. Do this, as often as you drink it, in remembrance of me." [26] For as often as you eat this bread and drink the cup, you proclaim the Lord's death until he comes.

[27] Whoever, therefore, eats the bread or drinks the cup of the Lord in an unworthy manner will be answerable for the body and blood of the Lord. [28] Examine yourselves, and only then eat of the bread and drink of the cup. [29] For all who eat and drink[a] without discerning the body,[b] eat and drink judgment against themselves. [30] For this reason many of you are weak and ill, and some have died.[c] [31] But if we judged ourselves, we would not be judged. [32] But when we are judged by the Lord, we are disciplined[d] so that we may not be condemned along with the world.

[33] So then, my brothers and sisters,[e] when you come together to eat, wait for one another. [34] If you are hungry, eat at home, so that when you come together, it will not be for your condemnation. About the other things I will give instructions when I come.

12 Now concerning spiritual gifts,[f] brothers and sisters,[e] I do not want you to be uninformed. [2] You know that when you were pagans, you were enticed and led astray to idols that could not speak. [3] Therefore I want you to understand that no one speaking by the Spirit of God ever says "Let Jesus be cursed!" and no one can say "Jesus is Lord" except by the Holy Spirit.

[4] Now there are varieties of gifts, but the same Spirit; [5] and there are varieties of services, but the same Lord; [6] and there are varieties of activities, but it is the same God who activates all of them in everyone. [7] To each is given the manifestation of the Spirit for the common good. [8] To one is given through the Spirit the utterance of wisdom, and to another the utterance of knowledge according to the same Spirit, [9] to another faith by the same Spirit, to another gifts of healing by the one Spirit, [10] to another the working of miracles, to another prophecy, to another the discernment of spirits, to another various kinds of tongues, to another the interpretation of tongues. [11] All these are activated by one and the same Spirit, who allots to each one individually just as the Spirit chooses.

[a] Other ancient authorities add *in an unworthy manner,*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *the Lord's body*
[c] Gk *fallen asleep*
[d] Or *When we are judged, we are being disciplined by the Lord*
[e] Gk *brothers*
[f] Or *spiritual persons*

tradition; cf. Mk 14.12–25. **25:** Paul's reference to *the cup, after supper* presupposes that a full meal was served between the bread and the wine. **26:** *Until he comes,* see 1.8n. **29:** What is meant by *discerning the body*—the eucharistic bread as Christ's body, or the gathered church as Christ's body, or perhaps both? **33–34:** Paul's counsel that the Corinthians *wait for one another* implies sharing, so as to alleviate the hunger and humiliation of those who have nothing (vv. 21–22).

12–14: On spiritual gifts. Paul counters an overemphasis upon glossolalia (speaking in tongues). Judging from the amount of space devoted to the subject, the gift of tongues must have been highly prized among the Corinthians. Not everyone in the church spoke in tongues (12.30); those who had the gift may have looked down upon those who did not. Paul does not deny the power of speaking in tongues, but interprets that power by ordering the gifts from the greatest (love) to the least (tongues), while affirming that all are necessary for the body of Christ. **12.1:** The formula *now concerning* (see 7.1n.) indicates that a question about *spiritual gifts* had been raised in the Corinthians' letter. **3:** Paul establishes criteria to determine whether a person is *speaking by the Spirit of God*. Did someone in the church at Corinth actually say *"Jesus be cursed!"* in an ecstatic trance? Did the Corinthians hesitate to expel this person because of an overvaluation of spiritual gifts? **4–11:** Paul affirms the diversity of *gifts* within unity. **7:** The guiding principle should be *the common good*. **8–11:** The nine named gifts are ranked: first *wisdom*, last *tongues*. **12–26:** Paul's metaphor of the church as a *body* is derived from Greco-Roman political discourse, where the figure functioned to urge concord. In the well-known fable of Menenius Agrippa, the Roman senator compared a strike by the common people to a revolt of the hands, mouth, and teeth against the belly, resulting in the death of the body. In ancient politics, the body analogy was essentially conservative, portraying the established order as "natural." Paul uses the metaphor subversively

12 For just as the body is one and has
many members, and all the members of the
body, though many, are one body, so it is
with Christ. 13 For in the one Spirit we were
all baptized into one body—Jews or Greeks,
slaves or free—and we were all made to drink
of one Spirit.

14 Indeed, the body does not consist of one
member but of many. 15 If the foot would say,
"Because I am not a hand, I do not belong to
the body," that would not make it any less a
part of the body. 16 And if the ear would say,
"Because I am not an eye, I do not belong to
the body," that would not make it any less a
part of the body. 17 If the whole body were an
eye, where would the hearing be? If the whole
body were hearing, where would the sense
of smell be? 18 But as it is, God arranged the
members in the body, each one of them, as he
chose. 19 If all were a single member, where
would the body be? 20 As it is, there are many
members, yet one body. 21 The eye cannot say
to the hand, "I have no need of you," nor again
the head to the feet, "I have no need of you."
22 On the contrary, the members of the body
that seem to be weaker are indispensable,
23 and those members of the body that we
think less honorable we clothe with greater
honor, and our less respectable members are
treated with greater respect; 24 whereas our
more respectable members do not need this.
But God has so arranged the body, giving the
greater honor to the inferior member, 25 that
there may be no dissension within the body,
but the members may have the same care for
one another. 26 If one member suffers, all suf-
fer together with it; if one member is honored,
all rejoice together with it.

27 Now you are the body of Christ and
individually members of it. 28 And God has
appointed in the church first apostles, second
prophets, third teachers; then deeds of
power, then gifts of healing, forms of assis-
tance, forms of leadership, various kinds of
tongues. 29 Are all apostles? Are all prophets?
Are all teachers? Do all work miracles? 30 Do
all possess gifts of healing? Do all speak in
tongues? Do all interpret? 31 But strive for the
greater gifts. And I will show you a still more
excellent way.

13 If I speak in the tongues of mortals and
of angels, but do not have love, I am
a noisy gong or a clanging cymbal. 2 And if I
have prophetic powers, and understand all
mysteries and all knowledge, and if I have all
faith, so as to remove mountains, but do not
have love, I am nothing. 3 If I give away all my
possessions, and if I hand over my body so
that I may boast,[a] but do not have love, I gain
nothing.

4 Love is patient; love is kind; love is not
envious or boastful or arrogant 5 or rude.

[a] Other ancient authorities read *body to be burned*

to question conventional assumptions about status and honor. **13:** Paul alludes to an early baptismal formula; cf. Gal 3.27–28. **14–21:** Ancient philosophers and orators referred to the *hands* and *feet*, the *eyes* and *ears* in elaborating the society-as-body metaphor, but Paul emphasizes mutuality rather than hierarchy. **22–26:** Paul reverses the values of ancient political rhetoric, which figured the parts of the body representing the ruling class, such as the head and the belly, as most honorable and indispensable. Paul claims, scandalously, that the weaker parts are actually more *indispensable* and *honorable*, that we acknowledge this fact when *we clothe* these private parts, and that *God has so arranged the body* in this paradoxical manner, *giving the greater honor to the inferior member*. **27:** Paul summarizes the argument and applies it to *the body of Christ* metaphor. **28–30:** Because God has established the diversity of gifts in the body, one should not succumb to the ambition to have others' gifts, or to the tendency to privilege one gift over others.

13.1–13: Praise of love. In the context of chs 12–14, Paul's encomium of love serves to devalue the gift of tongues by showing the Corinthians a "more excellent way." Yet, ch 13 is self-contained, and the transitions from 12.31 to 13.1 and from 13.13 to 14.1 are weak, so that some scholars conjecture that ch 13 was conceived and written earlier and independently (possibly as an essay for Paul's school in Ephesus; cf. Acts 19.9) and reused here because of its relevance. With Paul's speech in praise of love, compare Plato *Symp.* 197c–e. **1–3:** The gifts are *nothing* without *love*. **1:** *Tongues of mortals* refers to human speech; *tongues of angels* refers to glossolalia; cf. *T. Job* 48–52; 2 Cor 12.4. Paul's comparative terms, *noisy gong* and *clanging cymbal*, are derived from ancient religious rituals; such sounds lack the warmth of love. **3:** If the alternative reading *my body to be burned* (textual note *a*) is adopted, Paul is probably referring to the notorious Indian philosophers ("gymnosophists") who im-

It does not insist on its own way; it is not irritable or resentful; 6 it does not rejoice in wrongdoing, but rejoices in the truth. 7 It bears all things, believes all things, hopes all things, endures all things.

8 Love never ends. But as for prophecies, they will come to an end; as for tongues, they will cease; as for knowledge, it will come to an end. 9 For we know only in part, and we prophesy only in part; 10 but when the complete comes, the partial will come to an end. 11 When I was a child, I spoke like a child, I thought like a child, I reasoned like a child; when I became an adult, I put an end to childish ways. 12 For now we see in a mirror, dimly,[a] but then we will see face to face. Now I know only in part; then I will know fully, even as I have been fully known. 13 And now faith, hope, and love abide, these three; and the greatest of these is love.

14 Pursue love and strive for the spiritual gifts, and especially that you may prophesy. 2 For those who speak in a tongue do not speak to other people but to God; for nobody understands them, since they are speaking mysteries in the Spirit. 3 On the other hand, those who prophesy speak to other people for their upbuilding and encouragement and consolation. 4 Those who speak in a tongue build up themselves, but those who prophesy build up the church. 5 Now I would like all of you to speak in tongues, but even more to prophesy. One who prophesies is greater than one who speaks in tongues, unless someone interprets, so that the church may be built up.

6 Now, brothers and sisters,[b] if I come to you speaking in tongues, how will I benefit you unless I speak to you in some revelation or knowledge or prophecy or teaching? 7 It is the same way with lifeless instruments that produce sound, such as the flute or the harp. If they do not give distinct notes, how will anyone know what is being played? 8 And if the bugle gives an indistinct sound, who will get ready for battle? 9 So with yourselves; if in a tongue you utter speech that is not intelligible, how will anyone know what is being said? For you will be speaking into the air. 10 There are doubtless many different kinds of sounds in the world, and nothing is without sound. 11 If then I do not know the meaning of a sound, I will be a foreigner to the speaker and the speaker a foreigner to me. 12 So with yourselves; since you are eager for spiritual gifts, strive to excel in them for building up the church.

13 Therefore, one who speaks in a tongue should pray for the power to interpret. 14 For if I pray in a tongue, my spirit prays but my mind is unproductive. 15 What should I do then? I will pray with the spirit, but I will pray with the mind also; I will sing praise with the spirit, but I will sing praise with the mind also. 16 Otherwise, if you say a blessing with the spirit, how can anyone in the position of an outsider say the "Amen" to your thanksgiving, since the outsider does not know what you are saying? 17 For you may give

[a] Gk *in a riddle*
[b] Gk *brothers*

molated themselves to demonstrate their contempt of death. **4–7:** The qualities of love: *patient*, cf. 1 Thess 5.14; Gal 5.22; *kind*, cf. Rom 2.4; *not envious*, cf. 3.3; not *arrogant*, cf. 4.18–19. **5:** Cf. 10.33. **8–13:** Paul emphasizes the imperishability of *love*, in contrast to the limitations of *prophecies*, *tongues*, and *knowledge*, which the Corinthians have overvalued. **8:** The Greek verb translated *ends* is used elsewhere in reference to the wind: love is like a wind that never "subsides." **12:** *In a mirror, dimly*: that is, one does not see the thing itself, but only its reflected image. **13:** For the triad *faith, hope, and love,* cf. 1 Thess 1.3; 5.8; Col 1.4–5.

14.1–40: Prophecy is more edifying than tongues-speaking. 1: *Prophesy*, not in the sense of "predict the future," but "edify" the church, as in v. 3. **2:** Paul shares with Plato, Philo, and others the belief in a higher form of Spirit-inspired speech directed to the divine, but incomprehensible to normal human intelligence. **5:** Paul's concession, *I would like all of you to speak in tongues*, reveals the high value that was set upon this gift, and how many Corinthians earnestly strove for it. By declaring that *one who prophesies is greater than one who speaks in tongues*, Paul reverses the hierarchy of speech-types assumed by the elite, elevating the comprehensible above the esoteric. The new criterion of value is whether the community is edified. **6–12:** Paul devalues the esoteric speech of tongues by comparison with the sounds produced *by lifeless instruments*. **13–19:** In praying, singing, and other acts of worship, Paul counsels cooperation between *spirit* and *mind*. **16:** The word translated *outsider*

thanks well enough, but the other person is not built up. 18 I thank God that I speak in tongues more than all of you; 19 nevertheless, in church I would rather speak five words with my mind, in order to instruct others also, than ten thousand words in a tongue.

20 Brothers and sisters,[a] do not be children in your thinking; rather, be infants in evil, but in thinking be adults. 21 In the law it is written,

"By people of strange tongues
and by the lips of foreigners
I will speak to this people;
yet even then they will not listen to me,"

says the Lord. 22 Tongues, then, are a sign not for believers but for unbelievers, while prophecy is not for unbelievers but for believers. 23 If, therefore, the whole church comes together and all speak in tongues, and outsiders or unbelievers enter, will they not say that you are out of your mind? 24 But if all prophesy, an unbeliever or outsider who enters is reproved by all and called to account by all. 25 After the secrets of the unbeliever's heart are disclosed, that person will bow down before God and worship him, declaring, "God is really among you."

26 What should be done then, my friends?[a] When you come together, each one has a hymn, a lesson, a revelation, a tongue, or an interpretation. Let all things be done for building up. 27 If anyone speaks in a tongue, let there be only two or at most three, and each in turn; and let one interpret. 28 But if there is no one to interpret, let them be silent in church and speak to themselves and to God. 29 Let two or three prophets speak, and let the others weigh what is said. 30 If a revelation is made to someone else sitting nearby, let the first person be silent. 31 For you can all prophesy one by one, so that all may learn and all be encouraged. 32 And the spirits of prophets are subject to the prophets, 33 for God is a God not of disorder but of peace.

(As in all the churches of the saints, 34 women should be silent in the churches. For they are not permitted to speak, but should be subordinate, as the law also says. 35 If there is anything they desire to know, let them ask their husbands at home. For it is shameful for a woman to speak in church.[b] 36 Or did the word of God originate with you? Or are you the only ones it has reached?)

37 Anyone who claims to be a prophet, or to have spiritual powers, must acknowledge that what I am writing to you is a command of the Lord. 38 Anyone who does not recognize this is not to be recognized. 39 So, my friends,[c] be eager to prophesy, and do not forbid speaking in tongues; 40 but all things should be done decently and in order.

15 Now I would remind you, brothers and sisters,[a] of the good news[d] that I proclaimed to you, which you in turn

[a] Gk *brothers*
[b] Other ancient authorities put verses 34-35 after verse 40
[c] Gk *my brothers*
[d] Or *gospel*

(Gk "idiotes") means someone untrained, i.e., not adept at understanding those speaking in tongues. **18–19:** As in the case of food (cf. 8.13), Paul adopts the ethical principle of self-limiting regard for others. **20–25:** The Corinthians have been naïve in failing to consider the effects of speaking in tongues upon nonadept believers as well as unbelievers. **21:** The point of the citation (not found *in the law*, as Paul says, but in Isa 28.11–12) is that the word of the Lord foretold not only the phenomenon of speaking in tongues but also its failure to convince. **22–23:** For unbelievers, *tongues* are a *sign* opposed and spoken against, leading outsiders to the conclusion that Christians are *out of their minds*. **26–33a:** Paul gives instructions for an orderly procedure involving tongues and prophecy in the worship assembly. **33b–36:** Many scholars regard this passage as a later non-Pauline addition, because it disrupts the flow of the argument from v. 33a to v. 37; it contradicts the assumption of 11.5 that women will pray and prophesy in the assembly; it resembles the viewpoint of the Deutero-Pauline letters (see 1 Tim 2.9–15); it exhibits non-Pauline sentiments, e.g., v. 34b, *as the law also says*; and vv. 34–35 appear after 14.40 in some manuscripts. **37–40:** Assertion of authority and summary of the argument of ch 14.

15.1–58: A reasoned proof of the resurrection of the dead. The issue that evokes this argument is identified in v. 12: some of the Corinthians have said, "*There is no resurrection of the dead*." Greeks and Romans who were not skeptical in the face of death tended to believe in the separation of the soul from the body, a belief sanctioned by the oracle at Delphi and popular philosophers. Enlightened persons found the idea of the resur-

received, in which also you stand, [2] through which also you are being saved, if you hold firmly to the message that I proclaimed to you—unless you have come to believe in vain.

[3] For I handed on to you as of first importance what I in turn had received: that Christ died for our sins in accordance with the scriptures, [4] and that he was buried, and that he was raised on the third day in accordance with the scriptures, [5] and that he appeared to Cephas, then to the twelve. [6] Then he appeared to more than five hundred brothers and sisters[a] at one time, most of whom are still alive, though some have died.[b] [7] Then he appeared to James, then to all the apostles. [8] Last of all, as to one untimely born, he appeared also to me. [9] For I am the least of the apostles, unfit to be called an apostle, because I persecuted the church of God. [10] But by the grace of God I am what I am, and his grace toward me has not been in vain. On the contrary, I worked harder than any of them—though it was not I, but the grace of God that is with me. [11] Whether then it was I or they, so we proclaim and so you have come to believe.

[12] Now if Christ is proclaimed as raised from the dead, how can some of you say there is no resurrection of the dead? [13] If there is no resurrection of the dead, then Christ has not been raised; [14] and if Christ has not been raised, then our proclamation has been in vain and your faith has been in vain. [15] We are even found to be misrepresenting God, because we testified of God that he raised Christ—whom he did not raise if it is true that the dead are not raised. [16] For if the dead are not raised, then Christ has not been raised. [17] If Christ has not been raised, your faith is futile and you are still in your sins. [18] Then those also who have died[b] in Christ have perished. [19] If for this life only we have hoped in Christ, we are of all people most to be pitied.

[20] But in fact Christ has been raised from the dead, the first fruits of those who have died.[b] [21] For since death came through a human being, the resurrection of the dead has also come through a human being; [22] for as all die in Adam, so all will be made alive in Christ. [23] But each in his own order: Christ the first fruits, then at his coming those who belong to Christ. [24] Then comes the end,[c] when he hands over the kingdom to God the Father, after he has destroyed every ruler and every authority and power. [25] For he must reign until he has put all his enemies under his feet. [26] The last enemy to be destroyed is death. [27] For "God[c] has put all things in subjection under his feet." But when it says,

[a] Gk *brothers*
[b] Gk *fallen asleep*
[c] Or *Then come the rest*
[d] Gk *he*

rection of the body laughable; cf. Acts 17.32. Paul constructs an argument for the resurrection of the body on the analogy of the philosophical proof of the immortality of the soul in Plato *Phaedr.* 245c–257d; Cicero *Tusculan Disputations* bk. 1; Plutarch *On the Soul*; etc. The major divisions of Paul's discourse are easily recognized and correspond to the sections of his philosophical models: 15.1–34, proof of the fact of the resurrection, established by reasoned arguments; and 15.35–58, discussion of the manner of the resurrection and the nature of the resurrection body, culminating in a "mythological hymn." **15.1–2:** Paul reminds the Corinthians that the resurrection faith belongs to the foundation of Christian tradition. **3–4:** Paul quotes an early creed; cf. Rom 4.24–25; 10.9–10; 1 Thess 5.10. The phrase, *he was buried*, is unique to this instance of the creed and may have been added by Paul for the context here. **5–7:** Within the argument of ch 15, the list of witnesses to Christ's resurrection, which belonged to the tradition that Paul had received, provides the evidential basis for what follows. **5:** *Cephas* is the Aramaic form of Peter's name. **8:** Paul adds his own witness to the tradition. The term translated *one untimely born* refers to an abortion or miscarriage. Paul may be taking up an insult hurled at him by his opponents. **9:** See 9.4–5; 22.4–5; Gal 1.13. **12–34: The reality of the resurrection of the dead. 13–19:** Paul employs a series of rhetorical syllogisms (*if . . . then*) to refute the denial of the resurrection by some at Corinth. **18–19:** Cf. 1 Thess 4.13. **20–28:** Paul argues positively for the resurrection based upon an *order* established by God. **20:** *The first fruits* guarantee the harvest to come. **21–23:** For the *Adam– Christ* typology, see also vv. 45–49; Rom 5.12–21. **23:** Cf. 1 Thess 4.16. **24–25:** On the apocalyptic scenario envisioned here, compare 2 Esd 7.29; Rev 20.4–6; *Pirke Eliezer* 11. **24:** Cf. Rom 5.17. **25:** See Ps 110.1. **26:** For the personification of death, see vv. 54–55; 2 Esd

"All things are put in subjection," it is plain that this does not include the one who put all things in subjection under him. 28 When all things are subjected to him, then the Son himself will also be subjected to the one who put all things in subjection under him, so that God may be all in all.

29 Otherwise, what will those people do who receive baptism on behalf of the dead? If the dead are not raised at all, why are people baptized on their behalf?

30 And why are we putting ourselves in danger every hour? 31 I die every day! That is as certain, brothers and sisters,[a] as my boasting of you—a boast that I make in Christ Jesus our Lord. 32 If with merely human hopes I fought with wild animals at Ephesus, what would I have gained by it? If the dead are not raised,

"Let us eat and drink,
for tomorrow we die."

33 Do not be deceived:

"Bad company ruins good morals."

34 Come to a sober and right mind, and sin no more; for some people have no knowledge of God. I say this to your shame.

35 But someone will ask, "How are the dead raised? With what kind of body do they come?" 36 Fool! What you sow does not come to life unless it dies. 37 And as for what you sow, you do not sow the body that is to be, but a bare seed, perhaps of wheat or of some other grain. 38 But God gives it a body as he has chosen, and to each kind of seed its own body. 39 Not all flesh is alike, but there is one flesh for human beings, another for animals, another for birds, and another for fish. 40 There are both heavenly bodies and earthly bodies, but the glory of the heavenly is one thing, and that of the earthly is another. 41 There is one glory of the sun, and another glory of the moon, and another glory of the stars; indeed, star differs from star in glory.

42 So it is with the resurrection of the dead. What is sown is perishable, what is raised is imperishable. 43 It is sown in dishonor, it is raised in glory. It is sown in weakness, it is raised in power. 44 It is sown a physical body, it is raised a spiritual body. If there is a physical body, there is also a spiritual body. 45 Thus it is written, "The first man, Adam, became a living being"; the last Adam became a life-giving spirit. 46 But it is not the spiritual that is first, but the physical, and then the spiritual. 47 The first man was from the earth, a man of dust; the second man is[b] from heaven. 48 As was the man of dust, so are those who are of the dust; and as is the man of heaven, so are those who are of heaven. 49 Just as we have borne the image of the man of dust, we will[c] also bear the image of the man of heaven.

50 What I am saying, brothers and sisters,[a] is this: flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God, nor does the perishable inherit the imperishable. 51 Listen, I will tell you a mystery! We will not all die,[d] but we

[a] Gk *brothers*
[b] Other ancient authorities add *the Lord*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *let us*
[d] Gk *fall asleep*

8.55. **27:** Ps 8.6. **29–34:** A personal attack on his opponents, appealing to practice, experience, and generally accepted wisdom. **29:** It is not clear what was involved in the Corinthian practice of *baptism on behalf of the dead*. Paul appeals to the practice to suggest to the Corinthians that they have an implicit faith in the resurrection. **32:** Does Paul refer to a real fight *with wild animals* in the arena *at Ephesus*, or to a figurative struggle with adversaries? The quotation is from Isa 22.13. **33:** Paul cites a proverb from a play by the Greek comic writer Menander (third century BCE). **35–50: The nature of the resurrection body.** Through analogies, Paul seeks to make comprehensible that there can be types of *bodies* other than bodies of *flesh*. **36–38:** The first analogy is drawn from a *seed*; the same analogy is used in Jn 12.24. **39:** The second analogy references the different kinds of *flesh* of lower beings. **40–41:** The third analogy points to the difference between *heavenly bodies* and *earthly bodies*, and references the various types of *glory* among celestial bodies. **42–44:** By means of four antitheses, Paul contrasts the resurrected *body* with the present, mortal body. **45:** Gen. 2.7. **45–49:** *The first man . . . the man of dust* is Adam; the *last Adam . . . the second man . . . the man of heaven* is Christ; cf. 15.21–23n. **49:** Christians will be transformed in the resurrection: they will exchange the *image of the man of dust*, which they currently bear as descendants of Adam, for the *image of the man of heaven*, which they will receive through participation in Christ. **50:** Paul clarifies that a resurrection of *flesh and blood* is impossible. **51–57:** Paul discloses a *mystery*, a

will all be changed, 52 in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet. For the trumpet will sound, and the dead will be raised imperishable, and we will be changed. 53 For this perishable body must put on imperishability, and this mortal body must put on immortality. 54 When this perishable body puts on imperishability, and this mortal body puts on immortality, then the saying that is written will be fulfilled:

"Death has been swallowed up in victory."
55 "Where, O death, is your victory?
Where, O death, is your sting?"

56 The sting of death is sin, and the power of sin is the law. 57 But thanks be to God, who gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ.

58 Therefore, my beloved,[a] be steadfast, immovable, always excelling in the work of the Lord, because you know that in the Lord your labor is not in vain.

16 Now concerning the collection for the saints: you should follow the directions I gave to the churches of Galatia. 2 On the first day of every week, each of you is to put aside and save whatever extra you earn, so that collections need not be taken when I come. 3 And when I arrive, I will send any whom you approve with letters to take your gift to Jerusalem. 4 If it seems advisable that I should go also, they will accompany me.

5 I will visit you after passing through Macedonia—for I intend to pass through Macedonia— 6 and perhaps I will stay with you or even spend the winter, so that you may send me on my way, wherever I go. 7 I do not want to see you now just in passing, for I hope to spend some time with you, if the Lord permits. 8 But I will stay in Ephesus until Pentecost, 9 for a wide door for effective work has opened to me, and there are many adversaries.

10 If Timothy comes, see that he has nothing to fear among you, for he is doing the work of the Lord just as I am; 11 therefore let no one despise him. Send him on his way in peace, so that he may come to me; for I am expecting him with the brothers.

12 Now concerning our brother Apollos, I strongly urged him to visit you with the other brothers, but he was not at all willing[b] to come now. He will come when he has the opportunity.

13 Keep alert, stand firm in your faith, be courageous, be strong. 14 Let all that you do be done in love.

15 Now, brothers and sisters,[c] you know that members of the household of Stephanas were the first converts in Achaia, and they

[a] Gk *beloved brothers*
[b] Or *it was not at all God's will for him*
[c] Gk *brothers*

lyrical account of the destiny of those who survive until the resurrection, a Pauline counterpart to the mythological hymn which concludes the philosophical proofs of the immortality of the soul. **52:** Cf. 1 Thess 4.16. **54:** Isa 25.7. **55:** Hos 13.14. **56:** A later gloss reflecting thorough acquaintance with Paul's mature theology; cf. Rom 5.12; 7.7–8,13. **58:** Concluding exhortation.

16.1–24: Advice on administrative and personal matters. 1–4: Paul gives instructions for the implementation of a charitable *collection* for the poor *saints* (believers) in Jerusalem. See further Gal 2.10; 2 Cor 8–9; Rom 15.25–29. **1:** The formula *now concerning* (see 7.1n.) indicates that a question about the collection had been raised in the Corinthians' letter to Paul. **4:** *If it seems advisable,* better "if it is considerable"—that is, the size of the collection: Paul will only take the collection to Jerusalem in person if the sum is worth the effort. **5–8:** Paul's account of his travel plans in this passage contrasts sharply with that in 4.18–19; cf. Acts 19.1, 21–22. **10–11:** Paul is doubtful whether Timothy (see 4.17n.) will be treated with respect by the Corinthians; thus Paul provides the strongest assurance: *he is doing the work of the Lord*. **12:** The formula *now concerning* (see 7.1n.) indicates that the Corinthians had asked about Apollos (see 1.12n.) in their letter to Paul. The eagerness of some in Corinth for Apollos's speedy return is illuminated by Acts 18.27–28. **13–14:** This concluding exhortation signals the end of the letter, after which the paragraph on Stephanas (vv. 15–18) makes a surprising new beginning. **15–18:** Appeal for *recognition* of *Stephanas*. On the *household of Stephanas*, see 1.16n. **15:** The direct address, *brothers* (*and sisters*), communicates a sense of urgency. Why should Paul need to appeal for recognition of *the first converts in Achaia* (the principal Roman province of southern Greece)? Evidently Paul assumed that the congregation, or some of its members, had no strong inclination to grant it. The phrase *devoted themselves to the service of the*

have devoted themselves to the service of
the saints; [16] I urge you to put yourselves at
the service of such people, and of everyone
who works and toils with them. [17] I rejoice
at the coming of Stephanas and Fortunatus
and Achaicus, because they have made up for
your absence; [18] for they refreshed my spirit
as well as yours. So give recognition to such
persons.

[19] The churches of Asia send greetings.
Aquila and Prisca, together with the church
in their house, greet you warmly in the
Lord. [20] All the brothers and sisters[a] send
greetings. Greet one another with a holy
kiss.

[21] I, Paul, write this greeting with my own
hand. [22] Let anyone be accursed who has no
love for the Lord. Our Lord, come![b] [23] The
grace of the Lord Jesus be with you. [24] My love
be with all of you in Christ Jesus.[c]

[a] Gk *brothers*
[b] Gk *Marana tha*. These Aramaic words can also be read *Maran atha*, meaning *Our Lord has come*
[c] Other ancient authorities add *Amen*

saints (i.e., the believers) employs some of the same vocabulary used by Paul in describing the charitable collection in 16.1; 2 Cor 8.4; 9.1. **17:** *Fortunatus* ("Lucky") and *Achaicus* ("the Achaian") are probably Stephanas's slaves or freedmen; their names indicate servile origins. **19:** On *Aquila* and *Prisca* in *Asia* (Minor), see Acts 18.2,18–21,26. **20:** The *holy kiss* was a form of early Christian greeting; cf. 1 Thess 5.26; Rom 16.16; 1 Pet 5.14. **21:** Up to this point Paul had been dictating the letter; now he adds a few words in his *own hand.* **22:** *Our Lord, come!* An early Christian prayer, in Aramaic, expressing hope in an imminent Second Coming of Christ; cf. Rev 22.20.

This page intentionally left blank

THE SECOND LETTER OF PAUL TO THE CORINTHIANS

NAME, AUTHORSHIP, HISTORICAL CONTEXT

See the Introduction to 1 Corinthians.

LITERARY HISTORY

Second Corinthians switches topics and tone rapidly. After a conciliatory passage and before finishing his travelogue (2.5–13), Paul shifts into a self-defense (2.14–5.21) based on an exegetical discussion of Moses' veil in Exodus 34 (3.1–18) and ending in an anxious appeal for reconciliation (6.1–13; 7.2–4 [6.14–7.1 appears to be parenthetical]). Thereupon the travelogue resumes, picking up where it left off at 2.13, and Paul again sounds a conciliatory tone by expressing his complete confidence in the Corinthians (7.5–16). Two chapters (8 and 9) follow on the collection for the poor of Jerusalem that may well be separate solicitation letters. A highly charged polemical section, dripping with sarcasm and irony (10.1–13.10), concludes the letter. These considerations have convinced many scholars that 2 Corinthians is a composite of different letters, even if their precise extent and relative chronology are uncertain (see notes on 2.13; 6.14–7.1; 8.1–9.15; 10.1–18).

Nevertheless, because some motifs occur throughout the letter, some scholars do not subscribe to a partition theory. The relationship between affliction and consolation, for example, first raised in 1.3–11, is the backbone of the arguments in 4.7–10; 4.16–5.10; and 12.7–10. The twin themes of boasting and confidence intimated in 1.12–14 feature prominently in 3.4–18; 8.1–7,24; 9.1–5; and all of chs 10–13. The paradox of power in weakness informs the whole letter: Weakness, not extravagant power, authenticates true ministry, so much so that Paul would allow himself to boast only of his afflictions and sufferings (4.7–5.10; 11.23b–33; 12.1–10). Even if 2 Corinthians is a composite, the different letters were composed within a brief period to deal with specific controversial issues.

CONTENTS AND INTERPRETATION

Paul has a running dispute with the Corinthians over money. He rejects the congregation's patronage by refusing remuneration (1 Cor 9; 2 Cor 11.7,9; 12.16), but he is willing to accept gifts from their rivals in Macedonia (2 Cor 11.8–9; Phil 4.15–18). When he asks the Corinthians to contribute to the collection for Jerusalem (see notes on 8.1–9.15), a project Paul accepted at the Jerusalem meeting (Gal 2.10) and subsequently took to Galatia and Corinth (1 Cor 16.1–4), he and his companion are accused of being "crafty" and "deceitful" (2 Cor 12.16–18).

The arrival of outside missionaries (10.13–15; 11.4) makes a bad situation worse. These opponents of Paul, derisively called "super-apostles" (11.5; 12.11), "false apostles" (11.13), even "Satan's ministers" (11.15), boast of their Jewish credentials (11.22), their spiritual prowess manifested in ecstasies and visions (12.1) and in performing miracles (12.12), weighty recommendation (3.1; 5.12), and elegant speech (11.6). They also appear willing to accept Corinthian patronage (2.17). All of these qualities are perceived to be lacking in Paul (10.1–2,10).

Sensing he is on the verge of losing control of the congregation, Paul visits Corinth a second time, with disastrous results. A member of the congregation grievously offends him (2.5–6), and he departs from Corinth deeply hurt. After this "painful visit" (2.1; 7.2), Paul writes a "letter of tears" (2.4; 7.8), a letter that is either lost or partially preserved in chs 10–13. Despite or perhaps because of its severity, the letter succeeds in bringing the majority of the congregation back to Paul (7.6–7). Relieved at the resolution of the conflict, Paul resumes the collection and sends ahead of his third visit a delegation headed by Titus (8.6,16–24) with a solicitation letter (chs 8–9, which may also be a composite of two separate letters). In Rom 15.26, Paul writes, from Corinth, that he is about to embark on a journey to Jerusalem to deliver the collection from "Macedonia and Achaia." So he appears to have brought the project, finally, to a successful conclusion.

READING GUIDE

The letter is best read straight through, but one can note at various points where shifts in tone or subject occur, and therefore where different letters may have been joined together.

Sze-kar Wan

1 Paul, an apostle of Christ Jesus by the will of God, and Timothy our brother,

To the church of God that is in Corinth, including all the saints throughout Achaia:

[2] Grace to you and peace from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

[3] Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of mercies and the God of all consolation, [4] who consoles us in all our affliction, so that we may be able to console those who are in any affliction with the consolation with which we ourselves are consoled by God. [5] For just as the sufferings of Christ are abundant for us, so also our consolation is abundant through Christ. [6] If we are being afflicted, it is for your consolation and salvation; if we are being consoled, it is for your consolation, which you experience when you patiently endure the same sufferings that we are also suffering. [7] Our hope for you is unshaken; for we know that as you share in our sufferings, so also you share in our consolation.

[8] We do not want you to be unaware, brothers and sisters,[a] of the affliction we experienced in Asia; for we were so utterly, unbearably crushed that we despaired of life itself. [9] Indeed, we felt that we had received the sentence of death so that we would rely not on ourselves but on God who raises the dead. [10] He who rescued us from so deadly a peril will continue to rescue us; on him we have set our hope that he will rescue us again, [11] as you also join in helping us by your prayers, so that many will give thanks on our[b] behalf for the blessing granted us through the prayers of many.

[12] Indeed, this is our boast, the testimony of our conscience: we have behaved in the world with frankness[c] and godly sincerity, not by earthly wisdom but by the grace of God—and all the more toward you. [13] For we

[a] Gk *brothers*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *your*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *holiness*

1.1–2.13: Opening.

1.1–2: Salutation. A standard part of Paul's letters; see 1 Cor 1.1; Phil 1.1; Philem 1. **1:** An *apostle* was a special emissary, but Paul reminds the Corinthians that he was appointed *by* (lit., "through") *the will of God.* Cf. Rom 1.1; 1 Cor 1.1; Gal 1.1. For Paul's self-understanding of his call to be an apostle, see Gal 1.10–17 but also Rom 1.1–6; 1 Cor 9; 15.7–11. *Timothy,* along with Silvanus, was with Paul at the founding of the Corinthian congregation (v. 19; Acts 18.5) and acted as Paul's representative when troubles broke out (1 Cor 4.17; 16.10–11; cf. also Acts 19.22). Elsewhere Paul calls Timothy "my beloved child" (1 Cor 4.17), but here he calls him *brother,* a sign of respect. Elsewhere in 2 Cor the plural "churches" is used; the singular here, *the church of God,* is a collective designation of all the congregations in Corinth. *Saints* refers not to an elite group of believers but to followers of Christ set apart by God. *Achaia,* the Roman senatorial province of which *Corinth* was the capital. **2:** *Grace to you and peace from God . . .* , a standard greeting found in all of Paul's letters except 1 Thess 1.1, where a short form is used.

1.3–7: Paul blesses God for rescuing him and consoling his afflictions. Not the standard thanksgiving that reinforces Paul's relationship with the recipients (e.g., Phil 1.3–11; 1 Thess 1.2–10), but a blessing in the Jewish liturgical tradition that emphasizes the attributes of God. Paul chooses the latter, partly because his relationship with the Corinthians is strained, and partly because he wants to introduce the themes of affliction and *consolation* that are repeated at key points in the letter (see Introduction). **3–4:** Calling God *Father of mercies* is common in Jewish worship; see Rom 12.1; Phil 2.1. *So that we may be able to console . . .* , whatever Paul experienced is for the sake of the Corinthians. **5–7:** Paul invites the Corinthians to be partners in suffering by noting believers' identification with *the sufferings of Christ,* which *are abundant for us;* see 4.10–11; Phil 3.10–11.

1.8–11: God delivers Paul. In recounting God's deliverance, Paul stresses the Corinthians' participation in his ministry. **8:** *Asia,* a Roman senatorial province in modern-day western Turkey that included Ephesus. **9:** There is no consensus on what this ordeal was; possibilities include imprisonment (Phil 1.19–24) and the event behind "I fought with wild animals at Ephesus" (1 Cor 15.32).

1.12–2.13: Paul stresses his bond with the Corinthians. Paul recounts his past dealings with the Corinthians in hopes of cementing his relationship with them.

1.12–14: Paul claims his conduct is a basis of solidarity. 12: *Boast* or confidence is a prominent theme in Paul's letters (e.g., 1 Thess 2.19) but especially in the Corinthian correspondence; "sure" (2 Cor 1.15); "confidence" (3.4; 8.22); "boldness" (3.12; 10.2); "frankly" (6.11); "boasting" (9.2–3; 1 Cor 9.15). It is used here as a synonym of *con-*

write you nothing other than what you can read and also understand; I hope you will understand until the end— 14 as you have already understood us in part—that on the day of the Lord Jesus we are your boast even as you are our boast.

15 Since I was sure of this, I wanted to come to you first, so that you might have a double favor;[a] 16 I wanted to visit you on my way to Macedonia, and to come back to you from Macedonia and have you send me on to Judea. 17 Was I vacillating when I wanted to do this? Do I make my plans according to ordinary human standards,[b] ready to say "Yes, yes" and "No, no" at the same time? 18 As surely as God is faithful, our word to you has not been "Yes and No." 19 For the Son of God, Jesus Christ, whom we proclaimed among you, Silvanus and Timothy and I, was not "Yes and No"; but in him it is always "Yes." 20 For in him every one of God's promises is a "Yes." For this reason it is through him that we say the "Amen," to the glory of God. 21 But it is God who establishes us with you in Christ and has anointed us, 22 by putting his seal on us and giving us his Spirit in our hearts as a first installment.

23 But I call on God as witness against me: it was to spare you that I did not come again to Corinth. 24 I do not mean to imply that we lord it over your faith; rather, we are workers with you for your joy, because you stand firm in the faith.

2 1 So I made up my mind not to make you another painful visit. 2 For if I cause you pain, who is there to make me glad but the one whom I have pained? 3 And I wrote as I did, so that when I came, I might not suffer pain from those who should have made me rejoice; for I am confident about all of you, that my joy would be the joy of all of you. 4 For I wrote you out of much distress and anguish of heart and with many tears, not to cause you pain, but to let you know the abundant love that I have for you.

5 But if anyone has caused pain, he has caused it not to me, but to some extent—not

[a] Other ancient authorities read *pleasure*
[b] Gk *according to the flesh*

science, the human capacity for self-judgment. **13:** *Until the end* can mean "completely," in contrast to "in part" in the next verse. **14:** *On the day of the Lord Jesus,* the Second Coming; see 1 Cor 5.5; Phil 1.6,10; 2.16. Because on that day Paul's sincerity and conscience will be proven blameless (cf. 1 Cor 1.8), that is his basis for boasting.

1.15–2.13: Paul remembers the Corinthians as he travels to Macedonia. Paul often shares his travel plans to stress his relationship with a congregation in spite of his absence (e.g., 1 Thess 2.17–3.3). Here he also responds to misunderstandings caused by his canceled visit. **1.15:** *Double favor* (lit., "double grace") likely refers to the two visits Paul would have made to Corinth on his way to Macedonia and by way of return, which he recounts in the next verse. **16:** *Macedonia,* a Roman province in northern Greece, which included the cities of Philippi and Thessalonica. *Send me on,* Gk "propempein," a technical term for provisioning for a journey or mission (Rom 15.24; 1 Cor 16.6,11; cf. Acts 15.3; 20.38; 21.5; Titus 3.13; 3 Jn 6), including finance, escorts, letters of recommendation. *Judea,* not just southern Palestine but especially Jerusalem. The visit has to do with delivering the collection for the poor in Jerusalem; see 2 Cor 8.1–9.15n.; Rom 15.25–26. Paul's decision to accompany the collection is a slight change of plan from 1 Cor 16.3–4. **17:** *Vacillating,* lit., "trifling." Paul defends himself and his co-workers against the charge that they changed their minds frivolously and claims that his actions cannot be evaluated according to human standards. **18–19:** *"Yes and No,"* a sign of equivocating; see Mt 5.37; Jas 5.12. **19:** *Silvanus,* or Silas, a companion of Paul (see Acts 15.40–18.5; 1 Thess 1.1; 2 Thess 1.1) is mentioned here as cofounder of the Corinthian congregation with *Timothy;* see also 1.1n. **20:** *Amen,* a Hebrew word meaning "certainly" or "let it be so," used in response to someone's statement and in liturgical settings; see Deut 27.14–26; 1 Chr 16.36; Neh 5.13; 8.6; 1 Cor 14.16. **22:** The reception of the *Spirit* as *first installment* (the same Gk word is translated "guarantee" in 5.5) is proof that God's promises will be fulfilled (v. 20). **23:** *I did not come again* refers to the canceled double visit of vv. 15–16. **2.1:** Paul evidently made an unplanned *painful visit* to Corinth, his second, perhaps referred to in 13.2, during which some member of the congregation grievously offended him (see 2.5–11; 7.12). A third visit is anticipated in 12.14,21; 13.1. **3–4:** *I wrote as I did. . . . I wrote you . . . with many tears* (also v. 9), the "letter of tears," written shortly after the "painful visit"; see 7.8,12. The combination of *tears* and *joy* here recalls the twin themes of affliction and consolation in 1.3–11. This letter is either lost or portions of it are preserved in chs 10–13. See Introduction for sequence of events. **5–11:** The "letter of tears" was evidently well received. Paul pleads that

to exaggerate it—to all of you. [6] This punishment by the majority is enough for such a person; [7] so now instead you should forgive and console him, so that he may not be overwhelmed by excessive sorrow. [8] So I urge you to reaffirm your love for him. [9] I wrote for this reason: to test you and to know whether you are obedient in everything. [10] Anyone whom you forgive, I also forgive. What I have forgiven, if I have forgiven anything, has been for your sake in the presence of Christ. [11] And we do this so that we may not be outwitted by Satan; for we are not ignorant of his designs.

[12] When I came to Troas to proclaim the good news of Christ, a door was opened for me in the Lord; [13] but my mind could not rest because I did not find my brother Titus there. So I said farewell to them and went on to Macedonia.

[14] But thanks be to God, who in Christ always leads us in triumphal procession, and through us spreads in every place the fragrance that comes from knowing him. [15] For we are the aroma of Christ to God among those who are being saved and among those who are perishing; [16] to the one a fragrance from death to death, to the other a fragrance from life to life. Who is sufficient for these things? [17] For we are not peddlers of God's word like so many;[a] but in Christ we speak as persons of sincerity, as persons sent from God and standing in his presence.

3 Are we beginning to commend ourselves again? Surely we do not need, as some do, letters of recommendation to you or from you, do we? [2] You yourselves are our letter, written on our[b] hearts, to be known and read by all; [3] and you show that you are a letter of Christ, prepared by us, written not with ink but with the Spirit of the living God, not on tablets of stone but on tablets of human hearts.

[4] Such is the confidence that we have through Christ toward God. [5] Not that we are

[a] Other ancient authorities read *like the others*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *your*

the offender be forgiven now that the whole congregation has meted out appropriate punishment (v. 6). **6:** The identity of *such a person* has never been established; see also 7.12. **11:** *Satan,* Heb "accuser"; see also 11.14; 12.7. Elsewhere in 2 Cor this evil figure is called "the god of this world" (4.4), "Beliar" (6.15), and "serpent" (11.3). **12:** *Troas,* a Roman colony in northwest modern Turkey, a short trip by sea to Philippi; see Acts 16.8–11. **13:** *Titus,* a co-worker like Timothy and Silvanus, was likely the carrier of the "letter of tears" mentioned in 2.3–4; 7.8. With Paul's anxious wait for Titus, the narrative drops off and does not resume until 7.5; see Introduction.

2.14–7.4: Real character of Paul's ministry.

2.14–4.6: The ministry of glory. God is the author of Paul's ministry of glory.

2.14–17: God equips competent ministers. 14: The image of *triumphal procession* is of God the victor leading Paul as captive in a Roman procession. *Fragrance,* and "aroma" (v. 15), could allude to the execution of prisoners at end of the procession, thus combining Roman customs with sacrificial language from the Hebrew Bible (e.g., Lev 1.9). It could also allude to the presence of divine wisdom (Sir 24.15). **15–16:** *Saved . . . perishing* describes the different effects Paul's preaching of the gospel has on his hearers. *Sufficient,* or competent. The rhetorical question suggests that only God can equip competent ministers; see 3.5–6. **17:** Paul disdainfully calls his opponents *peddlers of God's word,* probably alluding to their acceptance and Paul's refusal of financial support from the Corinthians; see 11.8–9n. *Sincerity* anticipates the charges of falsehood and cunning (see 4.2).

3.1–4.6: Ministers of the new covenant of Spirit. 1: *Letters of recommendation,* conventional introductions for itinerant missionaries to the writer's friends and wider circles; see Acts 18.27. Romans 16 is one such letter of recommendation for Phoebe in her travel to Rome. Paul's lack of such letters is seen as a weakness; see also 5.12. **2–3:** Paul reminds the Corinthians that because he founded the congregation, it serves as his *letter of Christ* that documents his qualifications. Mention of *Spirit* recalls the Corinthians' conversion experience; see Gal 3.2–3. *Tablets of stone . . . tablets of human hearts* contrasts the Ten Commandments (Ex 20.1–17; 24.12; 31.18; 34.1) with the "new covenant" of Jer 31.31–33; see also Ezek 36.26–27, where "heart of stone" is explicitly contrasted with "heart of flesh" and the spirit of God will be poured into the people. **4:** *Confidence,* see v. 12 and 1.12–14n. **5–6:** *Competence,* see 2.15–16n. In these two verses the adjective, noun, and verb forms of Gk "hikanos" are used to indicate that it is God who equipped *us* for the task of serving the *new covenant;* see 3.2–3n. *Spirit,* the Holy Spirit, recalls v. 3 and anticipates vv. 17–18. In Paul's binary thinking, since *the Spirit gives life,* i.e., raises to

competent of ourselves to claim anything as coming from us; our competence is from God, [6] who has made us competent to be ministers of a new covenant, not of letter but of spirit; for the letter kills, but the Spirit gives life.

[7] Now if the ministry of death, chiseled in letters on stone tablets,[a] came in glory so that the people of Israel could not gaze at Moses' face because of the glory of his face, a glory now set aside, [8] how much more will the ministry of the Spirit come in glory? [9] For if there was glory in the ministry of condemnation, much more does the ministry of justification abound in glory! [10] Indeed, what once had glory has lost its glory because of the greater glory; [11] for if what was set aside came through glory, much more has the permanent come in glory!

[12] Since, then, we have such a hope, we act with great boldness, [13] not like Moses, who put a veil over his face to keep the people of Israel from gazing at the end of the glory that[b] was being set aside. [14] But their minds were hardened. Indeed, to this very day, when they hear the reading of the old covenant, that same veil is still there, since only in Christ is it set aside. [15] Indeed, to this very day whenever Moses is read, a veil lies over their minds; [16] but when one turns to the Lord, the veil is removed. [17] Now the Lord is the Spirit, and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is freedom. [18] And all of us, with unveiled faces, seeing the glory of the Lord as though reflected in a mirror, are being transformed into the same image from one degree of glory to another; for this comes from the Lord, the Spirit.

4 Therefore, since it is by God's mercy that we are engaged in this ministry, we do not lose heart. [2] We have renounced the shameful things that one hides; we refuse to practice cunning or to falsify God's word; but by the open statement of the truth we commend ourselves to the conscience of everyone in the sight of God. [3] And even if our gospel is veiled, it is veiled to those who are perishing. [4] In their case the god of this world has blinded the minds of the unbelievers, to keep them from seeing the light of the gospel of the glory of Christ, who is the image of God. [5] For we do not proclaim ourselves; we proclaim Jesus Christ as Lord and ourselves as your slaves for Jesus' sake. [6] For it is the God who said, "Let light shine out of darkness," who has shone in our hearts to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ.

[a] Gk *on stones*
[b] Gk *of what*

resurrected life from death (Rom 4.17; 8.11; 1 Cor 15.22,36,45; Gal 3.21; cf. also Jn 5.21; 6.63; 1 Pet 3.18), its opposite, *the letter,* i.e., the written code, must mean death. The letter/Spirit contrast in this context does not mean literal versus inner meaning. *New covenant, not of letter but of spirit,* refers to two competing interpretations of Jeremiah's "new covenant." **7–11:** The controlling imagery is Moses' changed countenance in Ex 34.29–35, which Paul interprets using a rabbinic method of argumentation, from the lesser to the greater. **7:** *Ministry of death,* the fading glory of the old covenant. **12:** *Boldness* connotes fearlessness of appearing before God in the end time; see v. 4 and 1.12–14n. **13:** Paul interprets the *veil* of Moses as covering up the transitory nature of the *glory that was being set aside,* lit., "abolished." **14–15:** The *veil* becomes a metaphor for lack of enlightenment. *Old covenant* refers not to the Hebrew Bible in general but to the Sinai covenant (Ex 24.7) or to the law (2 Chr 34.30), i.e., the written code as such. **15:** *Moses* here refers to the Torah, the law or teaching of Moses that forms the first part of the Jewish scriptures, the first five books of the Bible; see 2 Chr 25.4; Mk 12.26; Acts 15.21. **16:** Paul modifies Ex 34.34 by removing "Moses" and changing "removed" to "is removed," resulting in *the Lord* removing *the veil,* with contrast to the veiled "minds" in vv. 14–15. **17:** Paul hastens to add that "the Lord" of the biblical text refers to *the Spirit,* which guarantees freedom. **18:** *Glory of the Lord* parallels *the Lord, the Spirit* (also vv. 16–17). *Being transformed* refers to a fundamental change in those who remove their veils. *Image,* see Rom 8.29; 1 Cor 15.49; Col 3.10. *From one degree of glory to another* reflects belief in the Greco-Roman world that an encounter with the divine transforms the beholder into its image.

4.1–6: Climax of Paul's self-defense. Paul returns to the question of competence first raised in 2.16. **2–3:** Answers to charges; see 2.17. *Cunning,* see 11.3; 12.16 "crafty." *Conscience,* see 1.12n. **4:** *This world,* see 1 Cor 3.19; 5.10; 7.31 (twice), a synonym in Paul for "the present age" (Gal 1.4) and "the present time" (Rom 3.26; 8.18; 11.5). *God of this world,* see "rulers of this age" (1 Cor 2.6,8; Eph 2.2) and 2.11n. **6:** A paraphrase of Gen 1.3; Ps 112.4; Isa 9.2.

7 But we have this treasure in clay jars, so
that it may be made clear that this extraordinary power belongs to God and does not
come from us. 8 We are afflicted in every way,
but not crushed; perplexed, but not driven to
despair; 9 persecuted, but not forsaken; struck
down, but not destroyed; 10 always carrying in
the body the death of Jesus, so that the life of
Jesus may also be made visible in our bodies.
11 For while we live, we are always being given
up to death for Jesus' sake, so that the life of
Jesus may be made visible in our mortal flesh.
12 So death is at work in us, but life in you.

13 But just as we have the same spirit of
faith that is in accordance with scripture—"I
believed, and so I spoke"—we also believe,
and so we speak, 14 because we know that
the one who raised the Lord Jesus will raise
us also with Jesus, and will bring us with you
into his presence. 15 Yes, everything is for your
sake, so that grace, as it extends to more and
more people, may increase thanksgiving, to
the glory of God.

16 So we do not lose heart. Even though our
outer nature is wasting away, our inner nature
is being renewed day by day. 17 For this slight
momentary affliction is preparing us for an
eternal weight of glory beyond all measure,
18 because we look not at what can be seen but
at what cannot be seen; for what can be seen is
temporary, but what cannot be seen is eternal.

5 For we know that if the earthly tent we
live in is destroyed, we have a building
from God, a house not made with hands,
eternal in the heavens. 2 For in this tent we
groan, longing to be clothed with our heavenly dwelling— 3 if indeed, when we have taken
it off[a] we will not be found naked. 4 For while
we are still in this tent, we groan under our
burden, because we wish not to be unclothed
but to be further clothed, so that what is
mortal may be swallowed up by life. 5 He who
has prepared us for this very thing is God,
who has given us the Spirit as a guarantee.

6 So we are always confident; even though
we know that while we are at home in the
body we are away from the Lord— 7 for we
walk by faith, not by sight. 8 Yes, we do have
confidence, and we would rather be away
from the body and at home with the Lord.
9 So whether we are at home or away, we
make it our aim to please him. 10 For all of
us must appear before the judgment seat of
Christ, so that each may receive recompense
for what has been done in the body, whether
good or evil.

11 Therefore, knowing the fear of the Lord,
we try to persuade others; but we ourselves
are well known to God, and I hope that we
are also well known to your consciences.
12 We are not commending ourselves to you
again, but giving you an opportunity to
boast about us, so that you may be able to
answer those who boast in outward appearance and not in the heart. 13 For if we
are beside ourselves, it is for God; if we are

[a] Other ancient authorities read *put it on*

4.7–5.10: Ministry of hardship. Affliction and consolation, first raised in 1.3–11, are elaborated: Weakness points to God's empowering presence. **4.7:** *Clay jars,* once broken, cannot be mended but must be thrown away. The contrast with *treasure* demonstrates God's power. **8–9:** Catalogue of hardships formulated as antithetical pairs to show the incomparable power of God's glory. See also 6.4–10; 11.23–27; 12.10; Rom 8.35,38–39; 1 Cor 4.11–13; Phil 4.12. The Stoics used catalogues of hardship to demonstrate their indifference to adversity, but for Paul adversity demonstrates the unworthiness of the vessels and the overcoming of adversity documents the power of God. **10–11:** *Carrying . . . the death of Jesus,* the death of Jesus is replicated in Paul's bodily sufferings, with the result that *the life of Jesus may also be made visible;* cf. Gal 2.20. **13:** Ps 116.10. **4.16–5.10:** Paul uses the dualistic language current in Hellenistic thought to express the tension between present afflictions and ongoing renewal. **4.16:** *Lose heart,* see v. 1. The *outer nature* that is *wasting away* is the part that undergoes sufferings and hardships (vv. 8–9) and carries the death of Jesus (vv. 10–11). The *inner nature* is the part that *is being renewed* daily; cf. Rom 12.2. **18:** *Temporary* and *eternal* represent not consecutive but overlapping eras. **5.1:** Paul continues the temporary/permanent contrast with one between *earthly tent,* a reference to the body (see Wis 9.15), and *building from God,* which is *eternal in the heavens.* **5:** *Guarantee,* see 1.22n. **6–8:** *While . . . in the body we are away from the Lord,* see Phil 1.21,23; the body is a barrier to being with Christ more perfectly. **10:** See Rom 14.10.

5.11–6.10: Ministry of reconciliation. 5.11–13: Paul recalls his relationship to the Corinthians. **11:** *Consciences,* see 1.12n.; 4.2. **12:** *Commending,* see 3.1n. *Boast,* see 1.12n. and 3.12n. *Those who boast in outward appearance*

in our right mind, it is for you. 14 For the love of Christ urges us on, because we are convinced that one has died for all; therefore all have died. 15 And he died for all, so that those who live might live no longer for themselves, but for him who died and was raised for them.

16 From now on, therefore, we regard no one from a human point of view;[a] even though we once knew Christ from a human point of view,[a] we know him no longer in that way. 17 So if anyone is in Christ, there is a new creation: everything old has passed away; see, everything has become new! 18 All this is from God, who reconciled us to himself through Christ, and has given us the ministry of reconciliation; 19 that is, in Christ God was reconciling the world to himself,[b] not counting their trespasses against them, and entrusting the message of reconciliation to us. 20 So we are ambassadors for Christ, since God is making his appeal through us; we entreat you on behalf of Christ, be reconciled to God. 21 For our sake he made him to be sin who knew no sin, so that in him we might become the righteousness of God.

6 As we work together with him,[c] we urge you also not to accept the grace of God in vain. 2 For he says,

"At an acceptable time I have listened to you,
and on a day of salvation I have helped you."

See, now is the acceptable time; see, now is the day of salvation! 3 We are putting no obstacle in anyone's way, so that no fault may be found with our ministry, 4 but as servants of God we have commended ourselves in every way: through great endurance, in afflictions, hardships, calamities, 5 beatings, imprisonments, riots, labors, sleepless nights, hunger; 6 by purity, knowledge, patience, kindness, holiness of spirit, genuine love, 7 truthful speech, and the power of God; with the weapons of righteousness for the right hand and for the left; 8 in honor and dishonor, in ill repute and good repute. We are treated as impostors, and yet are true; 9 as unknown, and yet are well known; as dying, and see—we are alive; as punished, and yet not killed; 10 as sorrowful, yet always rejoicing; as poor, yet making many rich; as having nothing, and yet possessing everything.

11 We have spoken frankly to you Corinthians; our heart is wide open to you. 12 There is no restriction in our affections, but only in

[a] Gk *according to the flesh*
[b] Or *God was in Christ reconciling the world to himself*
[c] Gk *As we work together*

likely refers to Paul's opponents who could well be advocating circumcision; 11.5–6,12–15; 12.11. **13:** Paul's opponents may have derided Paul for an apparent lack of ecstatic experiences (12.1,12), to which Paul answers by distinguishing between being *beside ourselves,* lit., "we are ecstatic," and being *in our right mind.* The former has to do with God; the latter has to do with his ministry with the Corinthians; cf. 1 Cor 14.2–5,18–19,27–28. **14–15:** *Love of Christ,* Christ's love for us. *Those who live . . . was raised,* Christ's death enlivens all who by right should be dead, so that they owe their lives to him; Gal 2.19–20; Rom 7.4; 14.7–9. **17:** The reality of *anyone* being *in Christ* documents the onset of the *new creation,* the eschatological cosmic reversal of the primordial fall. The *old* way of looking from a human point of view *has passed away* and is no longer valid. For new creation, see Gal 6.15; but also Eph 2.15; 2 Pet 3.13; Rev 21.1; cf. Rom 8.19–21. For background, see Isa 43.18–19; 65.17; 66.22. **18–19:** As a result of Christ's undoing the damage caused by the primordial rebellion, *trespasses* are canceled (see Rom 4.8) and human beings are *reconciled* to God; Rom 5.10–11; Col 1.20. **21:** *Made him to be sin,* a difficult phrase that may refer to Christ's identification with humanity. The saints can be so embraced by God's reconciliation that *we might become the righteousness of God;* see Rom 1.17; 3.5,21–22,25–26; 10.3 (twice); Phil 3.9; also Mt 6.33; Jas 1.20; 2 Pet 1.1.

6.1–10: Summary of defense. 2: Isa 49.8. **4–5:** Catalogue of hardships; see 4.8–9n. **6–7:** Catalogue of virtues; see Gal 5.22–23; Phil 4.8. **8–10:** These seven contrasting pairs, *impostors, and yet are true . . . having nothing, and yet possessing everything,* are not paradoxes to show the imperturbability of an ideal sage (as in Stoic philosophy), but antitheses answering charges against Paul. This is a summary of his self-defense that began in 2.14. From a human point of view (5.16), Paul and his co-workers might be accused of being *impostors, unknown,* etc., but in the context of the new creation (5.17), they are really *true, known,* etc.

yours. 13 In return—I speak as to children—
open wide your hearts also.

14 Do not be mismatched with unbelievers. For what partnership is there between righteousness and lawlessness? Or what fellowship is there between light and darkness? 15 What agreement does Christ have with Beliar? Or what does a believer share with an unbeliever? 16 What agreement has the temple of God with idols? For we[a] are the temple of the living God; as God said,

"I will live in them and walk among them,
and I will be their God,
and they shall be my people.
17 Therefore come out from them,
and be separate from them, says the Lord,
and touch nothing unclean;
then I will welcome you,
18 and I will be your father,
and you shall be my sons and daughters,
says the Lord Almighty."

7 Since we have these promises, beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from every defilement of body and of spirit, making holiness perfect in the fear of God.

2 Make room in your hearts[b] for us; we have wronged no one, we have corrupted no one, we have taken advantage of no one. 3 I do not say this to condemn you, for I said before that you are in our hearts, to die together and to live together. 4 I often boast about you; I have great pride in you; I am filled with consolation; I am overjoyed in all our affliction.

5 For even when we came into Macedonia, our bodies had no rest, but we were afflicted in every way—disputes without and fears within. 6 But God, who consoles the downcast, consoled us by the arrival of Titus, 7 and not only by his coming, but also by the consolation with which he was consoled about you, as he told us of your longing, your mourning, your zeal for me, so that I rejoiced still more. 8 For even if I made you sorry with my letter, I do not regret it (though I did regret it, for I see that I grieved you with that letter, though only briefly). 9 Now I rejoice, not because you were grieved, but because your grief led to repentance; for you felt a godly grief, so that you were not harmed in any way by us. 10 For godly grief produces a repentance that leads to salvation and brings no regret, but worldly grief produces death. 11 For see what earnestness this godly grief has produced in you, what eagerness to clear yourselves, what indignation, what alarm, what longing, what zeal, what punishment! At every point you have proved yourselves guiltless in the matter. 12 So although I wrote to you, it was not on account of the one who did the wrong, nor on account of the one who

[a] Other ancient authorities read *you*
[b] Gk lacks *in your hearts*

6.11–7.4: Final appeal to the Corinthians. 6.11–13: *Frankly,* see 1.12n. **6.14–7.1:** An abrupt interruption of Paul's appeal in the present context, since 7.2–4 more naturally follows 6.11–13. This passage contains many words used nowhere else by Paul; the stark dualism is also uncharacteristic of him. **14:** *Mismatched,* lit., "misyoked," used only here in the New Testament; see Lev 19.19. *Partnership* (used only here in the New Testament), *fellowship,* and "share" (v. 15) are synonyms meaning "association" in general. *Righteousness and lawlessness,* see Rom 6.19, where the second word is translated "iniquity." *Light and darkness* (see Rom 2.19; 13.12; 1 Cor 4.5; 1 Thess 5.4–5) also undergirds the imagery of 4.3–6, where the same contrast between "believers" and *unbelievers* (v. 15) is also found. **15:** *Beliar,* another name for Satan; see 2.11n. **16a:** *Temple of the living God,* see 1 Cor 3.16. **16b–18:** A chain of citations from Lev 26.12; Ezek 37.27; Isa 52.11; 2 Sam 7.14; Isa 43.6 to show separation from defilement. **7.1:** *Defilement,* used only here in the New Testament. *Body* and *spirit* are not set in opposition here; contrast Gal 5.16–26. *Fear of God,* see 5.11. **7.2–4:** Resumption of appeal in 6.11–13. **3:** *Die . . . live,* Paul reverses the traditional declaration of friendship, "live . . . die," to emphasize his bond with the Corinthians through identification with Christ's death and life. **4:** *Boast,* see 1.12–14n. and 3.12n. *Consolation . . . affliction,* see 1.3–7n. All three themes are introduced in 1.3–14.

7.5–16: Resumption of travelogue (2.12–13). "Afflicted" (v. 5), "consoles" (vv. 6,7,13), "boasting" (v. 14 twice), "confidence" (v. 16), introduced in 1.3–14, are recapitulated throughout this passage; see notes there, and also 7.4n. **6–8:** *Titus* (see 2.13n.) brought news that Paul's *letter* (see 2.3–4n.) had been received favorably; see 2.5–11.

was wronged, but in order that your zeal for us might be made known to you before God. 13 In this we find comfort.

In addition to our own consolation, we rejoiced still more at the joy of Titus, because his mind has been set at rest by all of you. 14 For if I have been somewhat boastful about you to him, I was not disgraced; but just as everything we said to you was true, so our boasting to Titus has proved true as well. 15 And his heart goes out all the more to you, as he remembers the obedience of all of you, and how you welcomed him with fear and trembling. 16 I rejoice, because I have complete confidence in you.

8 We want you to know, brothers and sisters,[a] about the grace of God that has been granted to the churches of Macedonia; 2 for during a severe ordeal of affliction, their abundant joy and their extreme poverty have overflowed in a wealth of generosity on their part. 3 For, as I can testify, they voluntarily gave according to their means, and even beyond their means, 4 begging us earnestly for the privilege[b] of sharing in this ministry to the saints— 5 and this, not merely as we expected; they gave themselves first to the Lord and, by the will of God, to us, 6 so that we might urge Titus that, as he had already made a beginning, so he should also complete this generous undertaking[c] among you. 7 Now as you excel in everything—in faith, in speech, in knowledge, in utmost eagerness, and in our love for you[d]—so we want you to excel also in this generous undertaking.[c]

8 I do not say this as a command, but I am testing the genuineness of your love against the earnestness of others. 9 For you know the generous act[e] of our Lord Jesus Christ, that though he was rich, yet for your sakes he became poor, so that by his poverty you might become rich. 10 And in this matter I am giving my advice: it is appropriate for you who began last year not only to do something but even to desire to do something— 11 now finish doing it, so that your eagerness may be matched by completing it according to your means. 12 For if the eagerness is there, the gift is acceptable according to what one has—not according to what one does not have. 13 I do not mean that there should be relief for others and pressure on you, but it is a question of a fair balance between 14 your present abundance and their need, so that their abundance may be for your need, in order that there may be a fair balance. 15 As it is written,

"The one who had much did not have too much,

[a] Gk *brothers*
[b] Gk *grace*
[c] Gk *this grace*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *your love for us*
[e] Gk *the grace*

12: *The one who did the wrong,* the offender mentioned in 2.6. *The one who was wronged,* Paul himself. **16:** *Confidence* concludes the narrative of vv. 5–16 and anticipates the appeal for the collection in chs 8–9.

8.1–9.15: The collection for the Jerusalem church was meant not only to bring relief to its economic plight but also to show unity between it and the often well-to-do, urban, largely Gentile congregations in the Diaspora; see Gal 2.10; 1 Cor 16.1–4; Rom 15.25–27. Chapters 8 and 9 are probably two separate letters to two different regions in Achaia; see 9.2n.

8.1–24: Letter of appeal to the Corinthians for the collection. 1–7: The Macedonian churches as an example of generosity. **1:** *Grace* (Gk "charis"), used ten times in chs 8–9 to describe the collection, translated in 8.4 as "privilege"; in 8.6,7,19 as "generous undertaking"; in 8.9 as "generous act"; in 8.16 as "thanks"; in 9.8 as "blessing"; in 9.15 as "thanks." Other words used in this connection: Gk "eulogia," "bountiful gift" and "voluntary gift" (9.5); "bountifully" (9.6 twice); "ministry" (Gk "leitourgia"), 9.12; "sharing" (Gk "koinonia"), 8.4; 9.13. This attests to the rich theological significance Paul attaches to the collection. *Macedonia,* see 1.16n. Paul principally has the Philippian and Thessalonian churches in mind, but see 9.2. **2:** *Severe ordeal,* possibly the same event as in Phil 1.29–30. **4:** *Sharing* (Gk "koinonia"), used here to describe the collection (as also in 9.13 and Rom 15.26), also refers to participation in the Eucharist (1 Cor 10.16) and in Christ's suffering (Phil 3.10); see 8.1n. *Saints,* here and in 9.1,12, refers to the Jerusalem believers. **6:** *Titus,* see 2.13n.; 8.16–24. **8–15:** There should be a *fair balance* between those who have more and those who have less. **9:** A close parallel of *though he was rich, . . . he became poor* is 5.21, "He made him into sin who knew no sin . . ."; see also Phil 2.6–8. **15:** *"The one . . . too little,"* Ex 16.18.

and the one who had little did not have
too little."

16 But thanks be to God who put in the
heart of Titus the same eagerness for you
17 that I myself have. For he not only accepted
our appeal, but since he is more eager than
ever, he is going to you of his own accord.
18 With him we are sending the brother who
is famous among all the churches for his
proclaiming the good news;[a] 19 and not only
that, but he has also been appointed by
the churches to travel with us while we are
administering this generous undertaking[b] for
the glory of the Lord himself[c] and to show
our goodwill. 20 We intend that no one should
blame us about this generous gift that we are
administering, 21 for we intend to do what is
right not only in the Lord's sight but also in
the sight of others. 22 And with them we are
sending our brother whom we have often
tested and found eager in many matters, but
who is now more eager than ever because of
his great confidence in you. 23 As for Titus, he
is my partner and co-worker in your service;
as for our brothers, they are messengers[d] of
the churches, the glory of Christ. 24 There-
fore openly before the churches, show them
the proof of your love and of our reason for
boasting about you.

9 Now it is not necessary for me to write
you about the ministry to the saints,
2 for I know your eagerness, which is the
subject of my boasting about you to the
people of Macedonia, saying that Achaia has
been ready since last year; and your zeal has
stirred up most of them. 3 But I am sending
the brothers in order that our boasting about
you may not prove to have been empty in
this case, so that you may be ready, as I said
you would be; 4 otherwise, if some Macedo-
nians come with me and find that you are
not ready, we would be humiliated—to say
nothing of you—in this undertaking.[e] 5 So I
thought it necessary to urge the brothers to
go on ahead to you, and arrange in advance
for this bountiful gift that you have promised,
so that it may be ready as a voluntary gift and
not as an extortion.

6 The point is this: the one who sows spar-
ingly will also reap sparingly, and the one
who sows bountifully will also reap bounti-
fully. 7 Each of you must give as you have
made up your mind, not reluctantly or under
compulsion, for God loves a cheerful giver.
8 And God is able to provide you with every
blessing in abundance, so that by always
having enough of everything, you may share
abundantly in every good work. 9 As it is
written,

"He scatters abroad, he gives to the poor;
his righteousness[f] endures forever."

10 He who supplies seed to the sower and
bread for food will supply and multiply
your seed for sowing and increase the
harvest of your righteousness.[f] 11 You will
be enriched in every way for your great
generosity, which will produce thanksgiv-
ing to God through us; 12 for the rendering
of this ministry not only supplies the needs

[a] Or *the gospel*
[b] Gk *this grace*
[c] Other ancient authorities lack *himself*
[d] Gk *apostles*
[e] Other ancient authorities add *of boasting*
[f] Or *benevolence*

16–24: The sending of Titus and two unnamed *brothers* (vv. 18,22–23) might indicate that the collection is modeled after the Temple tax, which required an entourage representing major contributors for delivery.

9.1–15: A second letter of appeal for the collection. 1: Ch 9 starts the appeal afresh. **2:** *Macedonia,* compared to 8.1, now has to listen to Paul's boasting that *Achaia has been ready since last year.* The boasting might stand in contrast to the unfinished state of the Corinthian collection (8.10–11), which lends support to ch 9 being a separate letter, but in vv. 3–4 Paul is not sure that his boast will be substantiated. **3:** *Brothers,* also v. 5, are probably those mentioned in 8.18,22–23. **5:** *Bountiful gift* and *voluntary gift* both translate Gk "eulogia"; see 8.1n. **7:** *God loves a cheerful giver,* Prov 22.8. **8:** Abundance carries with it the responsibility of sharing. *Enough,* see 1 Tim 6.6 ("contentment); cf. Phil 4.11, where a cognate word is translated "content." The word connotes the Hellenistic philosophical ideal of self-sufficiency transcending all shortcomings and hardships. In contrast, Paul states that God is the basis for such sufficiency. See 12.9n. **9:** Ps 112.9. **10:** *Seed, food,* Isa 55.10. *Harvest of your righteousness,* Hos 10.12. **11–12:** One possible motive for Paul's working tirelessly on the collection is the apocalyptic vision of Gentiles pouring into Jerusalem (Isa 60.4–7; 66.12,18–21; Mic 4.1–2), rendering overflowing *thanksgiving to God.*

of the saints but also overflows with many thanksgivings to God. 13 Through the testing of this ministry you glorify God by your obedience to the confession of the gospel of Christ and by the generosity of your sharing with them and with all others, 14 while they long for you and pray for you because of the surpassing grace of God that he has given you. 15 Thanks be to God for his indescribable gift!

10 I myself, Paul, appeal to you by the meekness and gentleness of Christ—I who am humble when face to face with you, but bold toward you when I am away!— 2 I ask that when I am present I need not show boldness by daring to oppose those who think we are acting according to human standards.[a] 3 Indeed, we live as human beings,[b] but we do not wage war according to human standards;[a] 4 for the weapons of our warfare are not merely human,[c] but they have divine power to destroy strongholds. We destroy arguments 5 and every proud obstacle raised up against the knowledge of God, and we take every thought captive to obey Christ. 6 We are ready to punish every disobedience when your obedience is complete.

7 Look at what is before your eyes. If you are confident that you belong to Christ, remind yourself of this, that just as you belong to Christ, so also do we. 8 Now, even if I boast a little too much of our authority, which the Lord gave for building you up and not for tearing you down, I will not be ashamed of it. 9 I do not want to seem as though I am trying to frighten you with my letters. 10 For they say, "His letters are weighty and strong, but his bodily presence is weak, and his speech contemptible." 11 Let such people understand that what we say by letter when absent, we will also do when present.

12 We do not dare to classify or compare ourselves with some of those who commend themselves. But when they measure themselves by one another, and compare themselves with one another, they do not show good sense. 13 We, however, will not boast beyond limits, but will keep within the field that God has assigned to us, to reach out even as far as you. 14 For we were not

[a] Gk *according to the flesh*
[b] Gk *in the flesh*
[c] Gk *fleshly*

10.1–13.13: Defense of apostolic authority.

10.1–18: Paul attacks his opponents. The ironic and polemical tone of chs 10–13 contrasts sharply with that of the preceding chapters. Paul no longer refers to his opponents obliquely (see 2.17n.; 5.12n.), but pointedly. For these reasons, many scholars think that chs 10–13 are part of another letter (see Introduction). **1–6:** His opponents criticize Paul for lack of power, but Paul insists on demonstrating power through weakness; see 4.7–12n.; 11.30 (summarizing 11.21b–29); 12.9–10 (summarizing 12.1–8); 1 Cor 1.17–25. **1:** *Meekness and gentleness of Christ,* the self-emptying state of Christ as depicted in 8.9; Phil 2.6–8. *I who am . . . when I am away,* alludes to the charge against him; see also v. 10. *Humble,* lit., "base" or "humiliated," see 11.7n. **2:** *Those who think . . . ,* opponents whom Paul addresses throughout the letter only in the third person; see 10.10–11,12; 11.5,12–15,22–23,26; 12.11. Paul appeals to the Corinthians directly and makes them choose between him and his opponents. **3–5:** *Not merely human, but . . . divine power,* Paul admits that he and those like him live as *human beings,* but his *weapons* have superhuman power. *We destroy arguments,* the opponents are characterized as debaters; see also 1 Cor 1.19–20. *Wage war, destroy,* and *take . . . captive,* warfare imagery applied to the religious debate. **6:** Paul hopes that the Corinthians' *obedience* may be *complete.* Paul's threat of "punishment" here is in marked contrast to his commendation of the Corinthians in 7.15 for obedience at the receipt of that letter, lending support to chs 10–13 belonging to a different letter. **7–11:** Paul answers specific charges. **7:** *Just as you belong to Christ, so also do we,* answers the opponents' boasting that they "belong to Christ." **8:** *Boast,* Paul normally boasts of the Corinthians; see 1.12n., 3.12n., but here he boasts of himself, but only by claiming authority as their founder. The proper content of boasting is a bone of contention in chs 10–13. *Building you up . . . tearing you down,* cf. Jer 1.10; Eccl 3.3. **9–11:** *Letters* answers direct charges by the opponents (v. 10) that his personal appearances and speech, unlike his *weighty* letter, are unimpressive. *"His speech contemptible,"* see 11.6. **12–18:** The proper way to boast is within one's territory. **12:** *We do not dare to classify or compare,* standard rhetorical device of calling attention to one's praiseworthy acts in comparison with persons of superiority. Paul denounces the practice here but

overstepping our limits when we reached you; we were the first to come all the way to you with the good news[a] of Christ. [15] We do not boast beyond limits, that is, in the labors of others; but our hope is that, as your faith increases, our sphere of action among you may be greatly enlarged, [16] so that we may proclaim the good news[a] in lands beyond you, without boasting of work already done in someone else's sphere of action. [17] "Let the one who boasts, boast in the Lord." [18] For it is not those who commend themselves that are approved, but those whom the Lord commends.

11 I wish you would bear with me in a little foolishness. Do bear with me! [2] I feel a divine jealousy for you, for I promised you in marriage to one husband, to present you as a chaste virgin to Christ. [3] But I am afraid that as the serpent deceived Eve by its cunning, your thoughts will be led astray from a sincere and pure[b] devotion to Christ. [4] For if someone comes and proclaims another Jesus than the one we proclaimed, or if you receive a different spirit from the one you received, or a different gospel from the one you accepted, you submit to it readily enough. [5] I think that I am not in the least inferior to these super-apostles. [6] I may be untrained in speech, but not in knowledge; certainly in every way and in all things we have made this evident to you.

[7] Did I commit a sin by humbling myself so that you might be exalted, because I proclaimed God's good news[c] to you free of charge? [8] I robbed other churches by accepting support from them in order to serve you. [9] And when I was with you and was in need, I did not burden anyone, for my needs were supplied by the friends[d] who came from Macedonia. So I refrained and will continue to refrain from burdening you in any way. [10] As the truth of Christ is in me, this boast of mine will not be silenced in the regions of Achaia. [11] And why? Because I do not love you? God knows I do!

[12] And what I do I will also continue to do, in order to deny an opportunity to those who want an opportunity to be recognized as our

[a] Or *the gospel*
[b] Other ancient authorities lack *and pure*
[c] Gk *the gospel of God*
[d] Gk *brothers*

parodies it later in his fool's speech; see 11.21b–12.10. **13–16:** *Field* (v. 13), lit., "(measure of) rule (Gk 'kanon')" (also vv. 15,16), probably refers to the proper jurisdiction, i.e., the Gentiles, assigned to Paul and Barnabas at the Jerusalem meeting (Gal 2.9). Paul reminds his Corinthian hearers that he founded the congregation legitimately, *without boasting of work already done in someone else's sphere of action* (v. 16, "kanon"). It is a polemic against the opponents whom Paul accuses of overstepping their bounds, going back on the Jerusalem agreement. *In lands beyond you,* indication that Paul had hoped to use Corinth as a base for further missionary work. If Rom 15.23–24,28 is any indication, a trip to Spain is in view. **17:** Jer 9.23–24, also cited in 1 Cor 1.31.

11.1–12.10: A fool's speech. Paul parodies his opponents' penchant for comparison right after criticizing them for doing the same (10.12).

11.1–15: Appeal to the Corinthians as a fool. 1: *Foolishness* (Gk "aphrosyne") is the opposite of "moderation" or "sober-mindedness" (Gk "sophrosyne"); see "madman" (Gk "paraphronon"), 11.23; 1 Cor 1–3 uses different words for "foolishness" (Gk "moria," "moros"), whose opposite is "wisdom" (Gk "sophia"). **2:** *I promised you in marriage,* Paul presents himself as father of the bride, that is, he is the founder of the Corinthian congregation; see 1.19. **3:** *Serpent,* Satan; see 2.11; 11.14; 1 Cor 7.5. *Deceived Eve,* Gen 3.13. In connection with "marriage" and "virginity" (v. 2), Paul is probably thinking of the Jewish tradition that Satan sexually seduced Eve (see *2 Enoch* 31.6). **4–5:** *Another Jesus, different spirit, different gospel,* reminiscent of language in Gal 1.6–9; see 10.13–16n. **6:** *Untrained in speech,* see 10.10. **7:** *Humbling myself,* lit., "debasing myself"; see also 12.21; Phil 4.12. The adjective is used in 10.1. Christ is said to be "debased" in Phil 2.8. Since Greco-Roman philosophers viewed craftsmen as debased, Paul's use of the word might refer to his continual activity as a craftsman (see 1 Cor 4.12; 1 Thess 2.9) to support himself. **9:** *I did not burden anyone,* see 12.13; 1 Cor 9 for Paul's refusal to accept support from the Corinthians; see 1 Thess 2.9; Phil 4.16,18, for Macedonian support. In the Roman world, accepting support was to place the recipient (client) under the immediate obligation of the benefactor (patron). By not accepting Corinthian support, Paul is refusing the Corinthians the status and authority of patronage; by accepting Macedonian support, Paul is seen as slighting the Corinthian congregation; and by pursuing the collection at

equals in what they boast about. 13 For such boasters are false apostles, deceitful workers, disguising themselves as apostles of Christ. 14 And no wonder! Even Satan disguises himself as an angel of light. 15 So it is not strange if his ministers also disguise themselves as ministers of righteousness. Their end will match their deeds.

16 I repeat, let no one think that I am a fool; but if you do, then accept me as a fool, so that I too may boast a little. 17 What I am saying in regard to this boastful confidence, I am saying not with the Lord's authority, but as a fool; 18 since many boast according to human standards,[a] I will also boast. 19 For you gladly put up with fools, being wise yourselves! 20 For you put up with it when someone makes slaves of you, or preys upon you, or takes advantage of you, or puts on airs, or gives you a slap in the face. 21 To my shame, I must say, we were too weak for that!

But whatever anyone dares to boast of—I am speaking as a fool—I also dare to boast of that. 22 Are they Hebrews? So am I. Are they Israelites? So am I. Are they descendants of Abraham? So am I. 23 Are they ministers of Christ? I am talking like a madman—I am a better one: with far greater labors, far more imprisonments, with countless floggings, and often near death. 24 Five times I have received from the Jews the forty lashes minus one. 25 Three times I was beaten with rods. Once I received a stoning. Three times I was shipwrecked; for a night and a day I was adrift at sea; 26 on frequent journeys, in danger from rivers, danger from bandits, danger from my own people, danger from Gentiles, danger in the city, danger in the wilderness, danger at sea, danger from false brothers and sisters;[b] 27 in toil and hardship, through many a sleepless night, hungry and thirsty, often without food, cold and naked. 28 And, besides other things, I am under daily pressure because of my anxiety for all the churches. 29 Who is weak, and I am not weak? Who is made to stumble, and I am not indignant?

30 If I must boast, I will boast of the things that show my weakness. 31 The God and Father of the Lord Jesus (blessed be he forever!) knows that I do not lie. 32 In Damascus, the governor[c] under King Aretas guarded the city of Damascus in order to[d] seize me, 33 but I was let down in a basket through a window in the wall,[e] and escaped from his hands.

12 It is necessary to boast; nothing is to be gained by it, but I will go on to visions and revelations of the Lord. 2 I know a person in Christ who fourteen years ago was caught up to the third heaven—whether in the body or out of the body I do not know; God knows. 3 And I know that such a person—whether in the body or out of the body I do not know;

[a] Gk *according to the flesh*
[b] Gk *brothers*
[c] Gk *ethnarch*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *and wanted to*
[e] Gk *through the wall*

the same time, Paul could be accused of being unscrupulous; see 12.14–18n. **12–15:** Characterization of Paul's opponents. *Satan,* see 2.11n.

11.16–12.10: Paul compares himself to his opponents. 16–33: Paul lists his hardships as validation of his apostolic authenticity. **16:** *Fool,* see 11.1n. **17–18:** *Boast according to human standards,* a different type of boasting from that of 1.12–14 and much closer to the boasting of 10.8. **22:** *Hebrews . . . Israelites . . . descendants of Abraham,* suggests that they boast of their Jewish pedigree. Paul is proud of his Jewish heritage, ready to declare it unflinchingly whenever the situation calls for it; see Rom 9.4; 11.1; Gal 1.13; Phil 3.5. **23a:** *Madman,* see 11.1n. **23b–27:** Catalogue of hardships used ironically to show the extreme afflictions and weakness of Paul; see notes on 1.3–7; 4.8–9; 10.1. Little is known about details of these hardships. **24:** *Forty lashes minus one,* see Deut 25.3. **32–33:** See Acts 9.23–25. *Damascus,* site of Paul's first contact with the Jesus movement. *Aretas* IV ruled the Nabateans from 9 BCE until his death ca. 41 CE. The Nabateans took control of Damascus in 37 CE, soon after which Paul escaped from the city *in a basket.*

12.1–10: Paul relates an out-of-body experience, since his opponents have claimed such experiences as validation of their spiritual prowess; see 5.13n. **1:** *Visions and revelations,* extrasensory events that endow the seer with power and status; see v. 7; 1 Cor 9.1; 15.5–8; Gal 1.12; 2.1–2. **2–3:** *I know a person* (also v. 5), an oblique reference to himself, following the apocalyptic convention of anonymous authorship; see vv. 7–9. *Third heaven,*

God knows— [4] was caught up into Paradise and heard things that are not to be told, that no mortal is permitted to repeat. [5] On behalf of such a one I will boast, but on my own behalf I will not boast, except of my weaknesses. [6] But if I wish to boast, I will not be a fool, for I will be speaking the truth. But I refrain from it, so that no one may think better of me than what is seen in me or heard from me, [7] even considering the exceptional character of the revelations. Therefore, to keep[a] me from being too elated, a thorn was given me in the flesh, a messenger of Satan to torment me, to keep me from being too elated.[b] [8] Three times I appealed to the Lord about this, that it would leave me, [9] but he said to me, "My grace is sufficient for you, for power[c] is made perfect in weakness." So, I will boast all the more gladly of my weaknesses, so that the power of Christ may dwell in me. [10] Therefore I am content with weaknesses, insults, hardships, persecutions, and calamities for the sake of Christ; for whenever I am weak, then I am strong.

[11] I have been a fool! You forced me to it. Indeed you should have been the ones commending me, for I am not at all inferior to these super-apostles, even though I am nothing. [12] The signs of a true apostle were performed among you with utmost patience, signs and wonders and mighty works. [13] How have you been worse off than the other churches, except that I myself did not burden you? Forgive me this wrong!

[14] Here I am, ready to come to you this third time. And I will not be a burden, because I do not want what is yours but you; for children ought not to lay up for their parents, but parents for their children. [15] I will most gladly spend and be spent for you. If I love you more, am I to be loved less? [16] Let it be assumed that I did not burden you. Nevertheless (you say) since I was crafty, I took you in by deceit. [17] Did I take advantage of you through any of those whom I sent to you? [18] I urged Titus to go, and sent the brother with him. Titus did not take advantage of you, did he? Did we not conduct ourselves with the same spirit? Did we not take the same steps?

[19] Have you been thinking all along that we have been defending ourselves before you? We are speaking in Christ before God. Everything we do, beloved, is for the sake of building you up. [20] For I fear that when I come, I may find you not as I wish, and that you may find me not as you wish; I fear that there may perhaps be quarreling, jealousy, anger, selfishness, slander, gossip, conceit, and disorder. [21] I fear that when I come again, my God may humble me before you, and that I may have to mourn over many who previously sinned and have not repented of the impurity, sexual immorality, and licentiousness that they have practiced.

[a] Other ancient authorities read *To keep*
[b] Other ancient authorities lack *to keep me from being too elated*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *my power*

i.e., *Paradise* (v. 4), where according to mystical Judaism one is granted a vision of the blessed. *In the body or out of the body,* an ecstatic experience. **4:** *Not to be told,* esoteric knowledge not to be divulged to the uninitiated. **7:** Nature of the *thorn* is unknown. **9:** *Sufficient* (Gk "arkein"), a different word from that of 2.6,16; 3.5–6 and a cognate of "enough" of 9.8 (see note there). Unlike the Hellenistic ideal of sufficiency that transcends hardships regardless of one's circumstance (see 9.8), Paul accepts these hardships as real, because in their *weakness* they ironically manifest the *power* of God; see 10.1n. **10:** *Whenever I am weak, then I am strong,* Paul informs his hearers he is equally endowed with extravagant power, but he subordinates it to *weaknesses, insults, hardships, persecutions, and calamities*.

12.11–13: Conclusion of the fool's speech. 11: *Super-apostles,* see 10.2n. *Commending,* see 3.1n. **12:** Paul is not above telling the Corinthians that he too has performed miracles. **13:** See 11.9n.

12.14–13.10: Paul prepares for a third visit. 12.14–18: Paul answers charges that he has been enriching himself through the collection (chs 8–9). **14:** *Third* visit (also v. 21; 13.1), see 2.1n. for the "painful visit," Paul's second to Corinth. *I will not be a burden,* see 11.9n. *Parents,* for Paul as father to his converts, see 11.2. **16:** *(You say) . . . I took you in by deceit,* some Corinthians evidently accused Paul of skimming the collection funds. **18:** *Titus* was sent to oversee the collection in 8.6,16,23; see also 2.13n. *The brother* is the "brother" sent by Paul to accompany Titus in 8.22–23 and not the "brother" elected by the congregations in 8.18. **19–21:** Paul warns the Corinthians to repent before his third visit. **19:** *Building you up,* see 10.8; 13.10. **20–21:** Catalogue of vices, see Rom 1.29–31;

13 This is the third time I am coming to you. "Any charge must be sustained by the evidence of two or three witnesses." [2] I warned those who sinned previously and all the others, and I warn them now while absent, as I did when present on my second visit, that if I come again, I will not be lenient— [3] since you desire proof that Christ is speaking in me. He is not weak in dealing with you, but is powerful in you. [4] For he was crucified in weakness, but lives by the power of God. For we are weak in him,[a] but in dealing with you we will live with him by the power of God.

[5] Examine yourselves to see whether you are living in the faith. Test yourselves. Do you not realize that Jesus Christ is in you?—unless, indeed, you fail to meet the test! [6] I hope you will find out that we have not failed. [7] But we pray to God that you may not do anything wrong—not that we may appear to have met the test, but that you may do what is right, though we may seem to have failed. [8] For we cannot do anything against the truth, but only for the truth. [9] For we rejoice when we are weak and you are strong. This is what we pray for, that you may become perfect. [10] So I write these things while I am away from you, so that when I come, I may not have to be severe in using the authority that the Lord has given me for building up and not for tearing down.

[11] Finally, brothers and sisters,[b] farewell.[c] Put things in order, listen to my appeal,[d] agree with one another, live in peace; and the God of love and peace will be with you. [12] Greet one another with a holy kiss. All the saints greet you.

[13] The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, the love of God, and the communion of[e] the Holy Spirit be with all of you.

[a] Other ancient authorities read *with him*
[b] Gk *brothers*
[c] Or *rejoice*
[d] Or *encourage one another*
[e] Or *and the sharing in*

13.13; 1 Cor 5.10–11; 6.9–10; Gal 5.19–21. **21:** Ironic use of *humble,* here meaning "humiliate"; see 11.7n. **13.1–10:** Previously mentioned themes are resumed in a severe warning of harsh discipline. **1:** *Third* visit, see 12.14n. *"Any . . . witnesses,"* Deut 19.15. **3–4:** *Christ . . . is not weak. . . but is powerful,* the weak/powerful paradox summarized; see 10.1n.; 12.10n. **10:** Strong warning while *away,* so that Paul will not have to resort to *severe* discipline, precisely what the opponents accused Paul of doing (10.10–11). Paul reminds the Corinthians that this is so for the purpose of *building up,* not *tearing down;* see 10.8; 12.19.

13.11–13: Final benediction. 11: *Finally,* a standard device to conclude a discussion. *Farewell* (or "rejoice") . . . *put . . . listen . . . agree . . . live . . . ,* a series of parting exhortations. **12:** *Holy kiss,* see Rom 16.16; 1 Cor 16.20; 1 Thess 5.26. **13:** A full triadic benediction found nowhere else in Paul's letters.

This page intentionally left blank

THE LETTER OF PAUL TO THE GALATIANS

NAME, DATE, AND AUTHORSHIP

The addressees of the Letter to the Galatians are an unspecified number of "the churches of Galatia" (1.2), a Roman province in central Asia Minor where, according to Acts, Paul had preached (Acts 13.14–14.23; cf. 16.6; 18.23). Although Galatians follows the form of a letter to specific churches, there are no references to individuals and little information about Paul's mission in the region. Rather, the letter is Paul's defense of his Gentile mission as a whole and the understanding of the law on which it is based.

The date of the letter's composition is not given. It was written some time between the late 40s and mid 50s CE. Paul would develop his views on the law further in the Letter to the Romans. Paul's authorship is generally accepted by modern scholars.

HISTORICAL CONTEXT

By the middle of the first century CE, although the early Christian movement was still connected to Judaism, an increasing number of its members were Gentiles. The tireless missionary activity of Paul, who saw himself as the apostle to the Gentiles (1.16), had fostered this development. Inevitably the question arose of what relationship Gentile Christians should have toward Judaism. One critical issue concerned the law of Moses. Should Gentile Christians convert to Judaism in the process of becoming Christians? Were they required to observe the Jewish law, at least in part? The Letter to the Galatians belongs to this controversy, and in it Paul states a position on the Jewish law, which was to have far-reaching consequences.

CONTENTS AND INTERPRETATION

Prior to writing Galatians, Paul had been involved in discussions of Gentile observance of the law with the leaders of the Jerusalem church (2.1–10). This meeting may be identical with the council at Jerusalem, reported in Acts 15.1–29. Paul's account of his visit to Jerusalem is very different from the one in Acts. In Galatians Paul insists that no demand was made for Gentiles to observe the law. Subsequently, a conflict in Antioch ensued over table fellowship of Jews and Gentiles (2.11–14). Paul names as his opponents in Antioch "certain people . . . from James," the brother of Jesus (1.19) and leader of the Jerusalem church, and "the circumcision faction," but it is unclear whether the two groups are the same. Nonetheless, they persuaded the rest of the Jews, including Peter and Barnabas, to break off table fellowship with Gentile believers. Paul repeats his accusation against Peter that Peter himself no longer observed Jewish law and customs, yet he could be pressured to impose them on Gentiles.

In the confrontation with Peter, Paul had held that the demands of the Jewish law were an unnecessary burden for Gentiles when even Jewish Christians did not always observe them (2.11–14). Now he argues that the observance of the Jewish law by Gentile Christians is incompatible with acceptance of the gospel (2.15–21). Paul does not address the question of whether Jewish Christians should still keep the law. In an allegorical argument based upon the story of Hagar and Sarah (4.21–31; see Gen 16; 21.1–21) Paul suggests that the Sinai covenant and the community based upon the observance of the law is at odds with the authentic Israel, the community united with the one true heir of Abraham, Jesus Christ (3.16). Earlier in the letter Paul spoke about the law as a provisional measure, a means to discipline those who would inherit Abraham's promise (3.24; cf. 4.1–6). These passages imply that Judaism is redundant, perhaps even an obstacle to God's plan for human salvation. Paul does not draw this conclusion, and in Romans 9–11 he explicitly rebuts it. Paul agrees that Peter and James are "entrusted with the gospel to the circumcised" (2.7–8), and observance of the law was preserved at this time in Jewish Christian communities.

The context of Paul's formulations was a bitter struggle with opponents in Galatia. The content and sharp polemics of the letter were worked out in reply to what Paul knew of his opponents' teaching and of their attacks upon him. Despite the efforts of scholars to identify and reconstruct the arguments of Paul's opponents, they remain a shadowy group. Most commentators describe them as Judaizers because they insisted on circumcision. Whether they belonged to the same opposition that Paul had faced in Antioch or during his visit to the Jerusalem leaders (the "false believers" in 2.4) cannot be decided from Paul's letter. We also have no

evidence that they were missionaries sent by the Jerusalem church and representing James, notwithstanding Paul's earlier conflict in Antioch. Nevertheless, the effect of their controversy with Paul is unmistakable. The opposition forced him to develop a defense of his mission to the Gentiles, which would provide the rationale for a later Christianity independent of its Jewish roots. In recent decades a more careful reading of ancient Jewish literature, supplemented by the discovery of new texts, notably those of the sect of Qumran, has undermined earlier understandings of ancient Judaism as a legalistic religion. We can now see that Paul was participating in internal Jewish debates about the nature and role of the law.

Toward the end of the letter Paul turns to moral exhortation (5.13–6.10) so that his position on the law does not leave the Galatians without ethical guidance. Christian freedom from the law is based on living in the realm of the Spirit. The Spirit is a connecting thread between Paul's law-free gospel and his vision of Christian behavior, between faith and love (5.5–6,18,22–25.).

Sheila Briggs

1 Paul an apostle—sent neither by human commission nor from human authorities, but through Jesus Christ and God the Father, who raised him from the dead— [2] and all the members of God's family[a] who are with me,

To the churches of Galatia:

[3] Grace to you and peace from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ, [4] who gave himself for our sins to set us free from the present evil age, according to the will of our God and Father, [5] to whom be the glory forever and ever. Amen.

[6] I am astonished that you are so quickly deserting the one who called you in the grace of Christ and are turning to a different gospel— [7] not that there is another gospel, but there are some who are confusing you and want to pervert the gospel of Christ. [8] But even if we or an angel[b] from heaven should proclaim to you a gospel contrary to what we proclaimed to you, let that one be accursed! [9] As we have said before, so now I repeat, if anyone proclaims to you a gospel contrary to what you received, let that one be accursed!

[a] Gk *all the brothers*
[b] Or *a messenger*

1.1–5: The salutation, in which Paul stresses his apostolic authority. **1:** *Apostle,* both a witness (Acts 1.22) and a proclaimer (1 Cor 12.28) of the resurrection of Jesus. Paul's apostleship results directly from his experience of the risen Christ. **2:** *Churches of Galatia,* the plural indicates that Paul was addressing several Christian communities; the specific locations are uncertain. Galatia, around modern Ankara in Turkey, was a region named after and occupied by a people of Celtic origins. But Galatia also gave its name to the larger Roman province that extended to the south, to the cities of Iconium, Lystra, and Derbe, where Paul and Barnabas also founded churches (Acts 14.1–23). First-century Jews considered Galatia as coextensive with the ancient land of the descendants of Gomer (Gen 10.2) and also understood it as encompassing the broader area of the Roman province. **3:** *Grace . . . peace,* the combined Greek and Hebrew greeting that Paul typically used (e.g., Rom 1.7; 1 Cor 1.3; 2 Cor 1.2). **4:** *Gave himself for our sins,* in sacrificial death (Mk 10.45) as a sin offering (Lev 4–5). Paul repeats this central early Christian tradition (see also 2.20; 1 Tim 2.6). The *present evil age* implies that there is another age, the "age to come" in Jewish apocalyptic thought (see also 2 Thess 2.7–8). Christ's death, therefore, cancels believers' sin and delivers them for this messianic era.

1.6–2.14: A recapitulation of Paul's life and ministry.

1.6–9: Paul rebukes the Galatians. Unlike Paul's other letters (Rom 1.8–15; 1 Cor 1.4–9), he does not offer thanksgiving for those addressed. Instead he immediately upbraids them for *deserting the one who called you*—not Paul here, but God or God through Christ. The new teaching that the Galatians have accepted is *a different gospel* and not compatible with Paul's instruction. **8–9:** Paul's opponents may have held that their teaching had been revealed by *an angel from heaven,* a common claim in Judaism (reflected in 3.19) and also in folk religions of Asia Minor, spread throughout Galatia. In any case, Paul's revelation comes from a higher source than any angel, Jesus Christ (1.11). *Accursed,* an anathema using a double curse for emphasis.

1.10–12: Paul states the defense of his gospel. His position is not based on expediency: He does not reject

10 Am I now seeking human approval, or
God's approval? Or am I trying to please people? If I were still pleasing people, I would not
be a servant[a] of Christ.
11 For I want you to know, brothers and
sisters,[b] that the gospel that was proclaimed
by me is not of human origin; 12 for I did not
receive it from a human source, nor was I
taught it, but I received it through a revelation of Jesus Christ.
13 You have heard, no doubt, of my earlier
life in Judaism. I was violently persecuting the church of God and was trying to
destroy it. 14 I advanced in Judaism beyond
many among my people of the same age, for
I was far more zealous for the traditions of
my ancestors. 15 But when God, who had set
me apart before I was born and called me
through his grace, was pleased 16 to reveal
his Son to me,[c] so that I might proclaim him
among the Gentiles, I did not confer with any
human being, 17 nor did I go up to Jerusalem
to those who were already apostles before
me, but I went away at once into Arabia, and
afterwards I returned to Damascus.
18 Then after three years I did go up to
Jerusalem to visit Cephas and stayed with
him fifteen days; 19 but I did not see any other
apostle except James the Lord's brother. 20 In
what I am writing to you, before God, I do not
lie! 21 Then I went into the regions of Syria
and Cilicia, 22 and I was still unknown by sight
to the churches of Judea that are in Christ;
23 they only heard it said, "The one who formerly was persecuting us is now proclaiming
the faith he once tried to destroy." 24 And they
glorified God because of me.
2 Then after fourteen years I went up again
to Jerusalem with Barnabas, taking Titus
along with me. 2 I went up in response to a
revelation. Then I laid before them (though
only in a private meeting with the acknowledged leaders) the gospel that I proclaim
among the Gentiles, in order to make sure
that I was not running, or had not run, in
vain. 3 But even Titus, who was with me, was

[a] Gk *slave*
[b] Gk *brothers*
[c] Gk *in me*

observance of the Jewish law by Gentiles as a means of winning more converts through lax requirements. **11–12:** Paul's gospel was directly revealed to him by Jesus Christ. Paul implies that the teaching of his opponents, unlike his *gospel,* is of *human origin.*

1.13–2.14: Paul recounts his background in Judaism, his calling as an apostle, and his mission to the Gentiles. The purpose of this autobiographical sketch is to state the facts, as Paul saw them, of how he became the apostle to the Gentiles.

1.13–24: Paul's conversion, early life in the church, and defense of his apostleship. 13–14: *Persecuting the church of God,* see Acts 8.3; 9.21; 22.4. Paul insists that he was an exemplary Jew (Acts 22.3; Phil 3.4–6) who was *zealous for the traditions of my ancestors,* i.e., for the Jewish law, including its oral traditions, which were upheld in Pharisaic Judaism (Phil 3.5–6). **15–16:** Paul's conversion occurs as a direct result of divine intervention without human mediation in order to fulfill God's plan of revealing Christ to the Gentiles. *Set . . . born,* like a prophet in the Hebrew Bible (Isa 49.1; Jer 1.5). *To me* (lit., "in me"), links the ideas that Christ is revealed to Paul and through Paul to the Gentiles. **17:** *Arabia,* the Nabatean kingdom in Transjordan, of which the capital was Petra. *Damascus* is recorded in Acts 9.8–25 as the place where Paul went immediately after his conversion; see also 2 Cor 11.32–33. **18:** It is unclear whether the *three years* are to be counted from Paul's call or from his return to Damascus. *Cephas* is the Aramaic equivalent of "Peter" (Gk "Petros"; both names mean "rock") and the form of the name favored by Paul. **19:** *James* the brother of Jesus (Mk 6.3; Mt 13.55; 1 Cor 15.7) who became a leading member of the Jerusalem church (Acts 1.14; 15.13; 21.18–19). **21:** *Syria* had Antioch as its capital, and the chief city of *Cilicia* on the southeast coast of Asia Minor was Paul's hometown of Tarsus. **22–23:** Cf. Acts 9.26–30, which gives a different account of all these events.

2.1–10: Paul meets with the Jerusalem leaders. It is difficult to determine the relationship of the visit of Paul and Barnabas to Jerusalem, reported here, with the account of their visit in Acts 15.1–29. If the same events are being described, then we have two radically different versions. **1:** It is unclear whether the *fourteen years* are to be counted from his call or his first Jerusalem visit (1.18). *Barnabas,* a Jewish Christian and Paul's co-missionary, who participated in the mission to Antioch and brought Paul there (see Acts 4.36; 9.27; 11.22–30; 13.1–15.41). *Titus,* a Greek, possibly converted by Paul himself, who also becomes Paul's co-missionary. **3–5:** Paul's opponents,



Places mentioned in Galatians 1–2.

not compelled to be circumcised, though he was a Greek. [4] But because of false believers[a] secretly brought in, who slipped in to spy on the freedom we have in Christ Jesus, so that they might enslave us— [5] we did not submit to them even for a moment, so that the truth of the gospel might always remain with you. [6] And from those who were supposed to be acknowledged leaders (what they actually were makes no difference to me; God shows no partiality)—those leaders contributed nothing to me. [7] On the contrary, when they saw that I had been entrusted with the gospel for the uncircumcised, just as Peter had been entrusted with the gospel for the circumcised [8] (for he who worked through Peter making him an apostle to the circumcised also worked through me in sending me to the Gentiles),

[a] Gk *false brothers*

the *false believers,* both in this earlier conflict and in Galatia, claim that conversion to Judaism is a precondition for membership in the Christian community and therefore demand Titus's circumcision. **6–9:** *Uncircumcised . . . circumcised,* Gentiles and Jews. Paul asserts that the Jerusalem leaders agreed with him in distinguishing between their mission to their fellow Jews and his to the Gentiles, thus conceding his apostolic authority over the latter. The division of labor may not have been so sharply defined (Acts 10). *John,* probably the apostle (Acts

9 and when James and Cephas and John, who were acknowledged pillars, recognized the grace that had been given to me, they gave to Barnabas and me the right hand of fellowship, agreeing that we should go to the Gentiles and they to the circumcised. 10 They asked only one thing, that we remember the poor, which was actually what I was[a] eager to do.

11 But when Cephas came to Antioch, I opposed him to his face, because he stood self-condemned; 12 for until certain people came from James, he used to eat with the Gentiles. But after they came, he drew back and kept himself separate for fear of the circumcision faction. 13 And the other Jews joined him in this hypocrisy, so that even Barnabas was led astray by their hypocrisy. 14 But when I saw that they were not acting consistently with the truth of the gospel, I said to Cephas before them all, "If you, though a Jew, live like a Gentile and not like a Jew, how can you compel the Gentiles to live like Jews?"[b]

15 We ourselves are Jews by birth and not Gentile sinners; 16 yet we know that a person is justified[c] not by the works of the law but through faith in Jesus Christ.[d] And we have come to believe in Christ Jesus, so that we might be justified by faith in Christ,[e] and not by doing the works of the law, because no one will be justified by the works of the law. 17 But if, in our effort to be justified in Christ, we ourselves have been found to be sinners, is Christ then a servant of sin? Certainly not! 18 But if I build up again the very things that I once tore down, then I demonstrate that I am a transgressor. 19 For through the law I died to the law, so that I might live to God. I have been crucified with

[a] Or *had been*
[b] Some interpreters hold that the quotation extends into the following paragraph
[c] Or *reckoned as righteous;* and so elsewhere
[d] Or *the faith of Jesus Christ*
[e] Or *the faith of Christ*

3–4). **10:** Paul organized a collection among the churches he founded to be sent to Jerusalem (Acts 11.29–30; 24.17; Rom 15.25–29; 1 Cor 16.1–3, 2 Cor 8.1–9.15). *The poor* may be a religious expression which identified the Jerusalem Christians as the righteous, humble ones of God (Lk 1.48; Mt 5.3), a usage which we also find in the contemporary Jewish sect of Qumran (1QpHab 12.2–6). It could also be a reference to the physical neediness of the community after the famine of 46/48 CE (Josephus, *Ant.* 20.51).

2.11–14: Paul's confrontation with Peter at Antioch. Some interpreters of the Jewish law, e.g., rabbis in the more liberal school of Hillel, allowed the table fellowship of Jew and non-Jew at the time of Paul. It was possible for Jews to observe dietary and purity laws while eating with Gentiles. Biblical stories of Jews refusing to eat Gentile food take place in hostile or foreign environments where the observance of the dietary laws could not be guaranteed (Dan 1.8–16; Tob 1.10–13; Jdt 10.5). Sharing, or not sharing, a meal was a strong indication of acceptance or nonacceptance (Acts 10.14; 11.3,8). **12:** The *people . . . from James,* messengers from the Jerusalem apostle who insisted on a stricter interpretation of the law, forbidding such table fellowship. **14:** Paul attacks Peter's behavior because it might *compel the Gentiles to live like Jews.* Although the ban on table fellowship did not prohibit Gentiles from being members of the Christian community, it could have relegated those who did not choose full conversion to Judaism to second-class status.

2.15–5.12: Paul's gospel: faith in Christ frees us from law.

2.15–21: Jews and Gentiles are both justified through Christ. Paul states his basic principle: Trusting in Christ, including the sacrifice of his death, is what makes one righteous. **15:** *Gentile sinners,* Gentiles were sinners in Jewish eyes because they were idolaters, i.e., adherents of non-Jewish religions. **16:** *Works of the law*, the exact meaning of this phrase is much debated. In this context it certainly refers to practices such as dietary laws and sabbath observance that marked Jewish identity. But it might also include the ethical as well as the ritual requirements of the law, or it might characterize the particular standard of observance being advocated by Paul's opponents as a condition of belonging to the Christian community. *Faith in Jesus Christ* stresses the believer's trust in Christ. The alternative translation (textual notes *d* and *e*), *faith of Jesus Christ,* emphasizes the saving effect of Jesus' obedience, culminating in his death on the cross. **17:** Paul gives an ironic presentation of an objection to his view. If we who are seeking justification in Christ are, in the view of our opponents, sinners, i.e., living like Gentiles (see vv. 14–15), then does that mean that Christ works for sin? The implication is that for a Christian failure to observe the law is not sin. **18:** *Things,* i.e., observance of the law as the only path to righteousness. **19:** *Through the law I died to the law*, a summary statement of arguments that Paul will make in

Christ; 20 and it is no longer I who live, but it is Christ who lives in me. And the life I now live in the flesh I live by faith in the Son of God,[a] who loved me and gave himself for me. 21 I do not nullify the grace of God; for if justification[b] comes through the law, then Christ died for nothing.

3 You foolish Galatians! Who has bewitched you? It was before your eyes that Jesus Christ was publicly exhibited as crucified! 2 The only thing I want to learn from you is this: Did you receive the Spirit by doing the works of the law or by believing what you heard? 3 Are you so foolish? Having started with the Spirit, are you now ending with the flesh? 4 Did you experience so much for nothing?—if it really was for nothing. 5 Well then, does God[c] supply you with the Spirit and work miracles among you by your doing the works of the law, or by your believing what you heard?

6 Just as Abraham "believed God, and it was reckoned to him as righteousness," 7 so, you see, those who believe are the descendants of Abraham. 8 And the scripture, foreseeing that God would justify the Gentiles by faith, declared the gospel beforehand to Abraham, saying, "All the Gentiles shall be blessed in you." 9 For this reason, those who believe are blessed with Abraham who believed.

10 For all who rely on the works of the law are under a curse; for it is written, "Cursed is everyone who does not observe and obey all the things written in the book of the law." 11 Now it is evident that no one is justified before God by the law; for "The one who is righteous will live by faith."[d] 12 But the law does not rest on faith; on the contrary, "Whoever does the works of the law[e] will live by them." 13 Christ redeemed us from the curse of the law by becoming a curse for us—for it is written, "Cursed is everyone who hangs on a tree"— 14 in order that in Christ Jesus the blessing of Abraham might come to the Gentiles, so that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith.

15 Brothers and sisters,[f] I give an example from daily life: once a person's will[g] has

[a] Or *by the faith of the Son of God*
[b] Or *righteousness*
[c] Gk *he*
[d] Or *The one who is righteous through faith will live*
[e] Gk *does them*
[f] Gk *Brothers*
[g] Or *covenant* (as in verse 17)

chs 3–4. *Crucified with Christ,* see 5.24; 6.14; Rom 6.5–11; 2 Cor 4.7–12. **20:** *Christ who lives in me,* see Rom 8.9–11; 2 Cor 13.5; Col 1.27. *Gave himself for me,* see 1.4n.

3.1–5: Paul's challenge to the Galatians. Paul asks the Galatians whether they received the gift of the Spirit through fulfilling practices required by Jewish law, or through accepting the gospel preached by Paul (*believing what you heard,* vv. 2,5). **1:** *Jesus Christ was publicly exhibited as crucified*, a reference to the graphic description of the crucifixion in Paul's preaching. **3:** *Ending with the flesh,* an oblique reference to circumcision. The opposition of *Spirit* and *flesh* is an important theme in Paul (4.29; 5.16–25; 6.8; Rom 8.1–12; 3.1; 1 Cor 15.35–55; Phil 3.2–6). **5:** *Miracles* are associated with apostolic preaching and the presence of the Spirit (Rom 15.19; 1 Cor 12.10; 2 Cor 12.12).

3.6–14: Abraham the model for Christian faith. Paul contrasts the believer, whose exemplar is Abraham and who is justified by faith, with those who seek justification through performing the practices of the Jewish law. **6:** Gen 15.6; see also Rom 4.3. Paul again uses Abraham as a model of faith in Rom 4. **8:** Gen 12.3; 18.18; 22.18. **10:** Deut 27.36. In Paul's time the general Jewish view was that perfect fulfillment of the law was not a requirement of belonging to God's covenant people but observance of the law expressed faithfulness to God's covenant. **11:** Hab 2.4; Rom 1.17. **12:** Lev 18.5; see also Rom 10.5. **13:** Deut 21.23 concerns execution by hanging but the Jewish sect at Qumran had apparently already interpreted it to include crucifixion (11QTemple 64.12). Paul takes *tree* as a reference to Jesus' cross.

3.15–18: The inheritance of Abraham. Paul argues that Christ is the one heir of Abraham and that what was promised to Abraham cannot be inherited through the law. **15:** *Will,* the Gk means "covenant" as well as a person's document of bequest (see textual note *g*). **16:** *Offspring,* lit., "seed" (see textual notes *a* and *b* on this verse). Paul uses the same Greek word as the Septuagint (LXX) text of God's promises to Abraham in Genesis (Gen 12.7; 15.5; 17.8; 22.17). Paul contrasts the singular *seed* in the text with the common (and in his view mistaken) inter-

been ratified, no one adds to it or annuls it.
16 Now the promises were made to Abraham
and to his offspring;[a] it does not say, "And to
offsprings,"[b] as of many; but it says, "And to
your offspring,"[a] that is, to one person, who
is Christ. 17 My point is this: the law, which
came four hundred thirty years later, does
not annul a covenant previously ratified by
God, so as to nullify the promise. 18 For if the
inheritance comes from the law, it no longer
comes from the promise; but God granted it
to Abraham through the promise.

19 Why then the law? It was added because
of transgressions, until the offspring[a] would
come to whom the promise had been made;
and it was ordained through angels by a me-
diator. 20 Now a mediator involves more than
one party; but God is one.

21 Is the law then opposed to the promises
of God? Certainly not! For if a law had been
given that could make alive, then righteous-
ness would indeed come through the law.
22 But the scripture has imprisoned all things
under the power of sin, so that what was
promised through faith in Jesus Christ[c] might
be given to those who believe.

23 Now before faith came, we were impris-
oned and guarded under the law until faith
would be revealed. 24 Therefore the law was
our disciplinarian until Christ came, so that
we might be justified by faith. 25 But now
that faith has come, we are no longer subject
to a disciplinarian, 26 for in Christ Jesus you
are all children of God through faith. 27 As
many of you as were baptized into Christ
have clothed yourselves with Christ. 28 There
is no longer Jew or Greek, there is no longer
slave or free, there is no longer male and
female; for all of you are one in Christ Jesus.
29 And if you belong to Christ, then you are
Abraham's offspring,[a] heirs according to the
promise.

4 My point is this: heirs, as long as they are
minors, are no better than slaves, though
they are the owners of all the property; 2 but
they remain under guardians and trustees
until the date set by the father. 3 So with us;
while we were minors, we were enslaved to

[a] Gk *seed*
[b] Gk *seeds*
[c] Or *through the faith of Jesus Christ*

pretation of it as a plural, *seeds.* **17:** Paul follows the Septuagint, not the Hebrew, text of Ex 12.40 by including within the *four hundred thirty years* not only the Israelite sojourn in Egypt but also the earlier period in Canaan.

3.19–25: The purpose of the law of Moses. The law does not replace God's promise to Abraham but is a temporary means of discipline for God's people. **19:** *Added because of transgressions* allows several interpretations. It can mean to make aware of sin (Rom 3.20; 7.7). It can also carry the further sense of restraining transgressions (vv. 23–25). The phrase can also signify that the law provoked sin (Rom 5.20; 7.7–12). *Ordained through angels* reflects a later Jewish belief that the law was delivered on Sinai not directly from God but by angels; see Deut 33.2 (Septuagint); Acts 7.38,53; Heb 2.2, also *Jub.* 1.26–2.1. *A mediator,* Moses (see Lev 26.46; Num 36.13). **20:** An obscure verse that links monotheism with there being no need for a mediator of God's promise. **22:** *Faith in Jesus Christ* stresses the believer's faith as necessary for obtaining the promise, while the alternative, *faith of Jesus Christ* (see textual note *c*), emphasizes Jesus' faith as that which grants the promise; see 2.16n. **24–25:** *Disciplinarian,* the slave who accompanied a boy to school and who often harshly punished the boy for his behavior.

3.26–29: Baptism into Christ. Through baptism believers are incorporated into Christ, abolishing social distinctions, and are made with him the offspring of Abraham and heirs to the promise. **26–28:** Paul is likely here quoting from an early Christian baptismal formula. **26:** Christians are adopted children of God and therefore co-heirs with Christ (Rom 8.14–17). **27:** Baptism unites the believer with Christ (Rom 6.3–11). *Clothed . . . with Christ,* see Rom 13.14; Col 3.10. **28:** A similar erasure of social distinctions is proclaimed in 1 Cor 12.13; Col 3.11, where baptismal formulas also seem to be quoted, but without the phrase *male and female.* That phrase is taken from Gen 1.27. **29:** Christ alone is *Abraham's offspring* or *seed* (see 3.16n.) but now includes all those united in baptism with him.

4.1–7: Christ brings believers into their inheritance as adopted children of God. 1: After a father's death the guardian took over the father's virtually unlimited power over minor children in the ancient family. **3:** *Elemental spirits of the world* refers probably to cosmic powers that dominate human beings (see also 4.8; Col 2.8,20). The phrase (alternatively translated as *rudiments,* textual note *a* on this verse) can also denote the four elements (earth, air, fire, water), which in Paul's time were seen as controlling human destiny. The *rudiments* can addition-

the elemental spirits[a] of the world. [4] But when the fullness of time had come, God sent his Son, born of a woman, born under the law, [5] in order to redeem those who were under the law, so that we might receive adoption as children. [6] And because you are children, God has sent the Spirit of his Son into our[b] hearts, crying, "Abba![c] Father!" [7] So you are no longer a slave but a child, and if a child then also an heir, through God.[d]

[8] Formerly, when you did not know God, you were enslaved to beings that by nature are not gods. [9] Now, however, that you have come to know God, or rather to be known by God, how can you turn back again to the weak and beggarly elemental spirits?[e] How can you want to be enslaved to them again? [10] You are observing special days, and months, and seasons, and years. [11] I am afraid that my work for you may have been wasted.

[12] Friends,[f] I beg you, become as I am, for I also have become as you are. You have done me no wrong. [13] You know that it was because of a physical infirmity that I first announced the gospel to you; [14] though my condition put you to the test, you did not scorn or despise me, but welcomed me as an angel of God, as Christ Jesus. [15] What has become of the good-will you felt? For I testify that, had it been possible, you would have torn out your eyes and given them to me. [16] Have I now become your enemy by telling you the truth? [17] They make much of you, but for no good purpose; they want to exclude you, so that you may make much of them. [18] It is good to be made much of for a good purpose at all times, and not only when I am present with you. [19] My little children, for whom I am again in the pain of childbirth until Christ is formed in you, [20] I wish I were present with you now and could change my tone, for I am perplexed about you.

[21] Tell me, you who desire to be subject to the law, will you not listen to the law? [22] For it is written that Abraham had two sons, one by a slave woman and the other by a free woman. [23] One, the child of the slave, was born according to the flesh; the other, the child of the free woman, was born through the promise. [24] Now this is an allegory: these women are two covenants. One woman, in fact, is Hagar, from Mount Sinai, bearing children for slavery. [25] Now Hagar is Mount Sinai in Arabia[g] and corresponds to the present Jerusalem, for she is in slavery with her

[a] Or *the rudiments*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *your*
[c] Aramaic for *Father*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *an heir of God through Christ*
[e] Or *beggarly rudiments*
[f] Gk *Brothers*
[g] Other ancient authorities read *For Sinai is a mountain in Arabia*

ally be the basic principles of a philosophy or code (see Heb 5.12). **4:** *Born of a woman, born under the law* stresses Jesus' human and Jewish birth, seen by Paul as the enslaved human condition, in contrast to the freedom Christ brings to those adopted as God's children. **6:** *Abba,* see textual note *c* and Mk 14.36; Rom 8.15.

4.8–11: The Galatians slip back into bondage. Paul brands the Galatians' observance of the law as equivalent to a return to their pre-Christian enslavement. **9:** *Elemental spirits,* see 4.3n. **10:** The Galatians are observing the Jewish calendar.

4.12–20: Paul reminds the Galatians of their close relationship to him. 13: Paul may be alluding to one or both visits he made to Galatia as mentioned in Acts 16.6; 18.23. The *infirmity* is not known; efforts to identify it as eye trouble, based on v. 15, may be based on too literal a reading. The adverb *first* can also be translated as "formerly." **17:** *They,* i.e., Paul's opponents, may have threatened to exclude from the Christian community Gentiles who did not follow their example of observing the law. **19:** Paul uses as a metaphor of his apostolic activity a mother giving birth. Elsewhere Paul calls the members of the churches he founded his "children" (1 Cor 4.14; 2 Cor 6.13; 1 Thess 2.11).

4.21–5.1: The allegory of Hagar and Sarah. 4.21: *The law* in the Hebrew Bible comprises the first five books, the Pentateuch or Torah. **22–23:** Gen 16.1–4,15; 21.1–7. **24:** *Allegory,* literally, "these things are spoken allegorically." Paul takes the Genesis story and sees some of its elements as substitutes in the past for how the covenant is being fulfilled in his own day. *These women are two covenants,* i.e., Hagar represents those descendants of Abraham who observe the law and Sarah those who through Christ are the true heirs to God's promise to Abraham. **25:** *Now Hagar is Mount Sinai in Arabia,* see textual note *g.* Paul is unique in identifying Hagar directly

children. 26 But the other woman corresponds to the Jerusalem above; she is free, and she is our mother. 27 For it is written,

"Rejoice, you childless one, you who bear no children,
burst into song and shout, you who endure no birth pangs;
for the children of the desolate woman are more numerous
than the children of the one who is married."

28 Now you,[a] my friends,[b] are children of the promise, like Isaac. 29 But just as at that time the child who was born according to the flesh persecuted the child who was born according to the Spirit, so it is now also. 30 But what does the scripture say? "Drive out the slave and her child; for the child of the slave will not share the inheritance with the child of the free woman." 31 So then, friends,[b] we are children, not of

5 the slave but of the free woman. 1 For freedom Christ has set us free. Stand firm, therefore, and do not submit again to a yoke of slavery.

2 Listen! I, Paul, am telling you that if you let yourselves be circumcised, Christ will be of no benefit to you. 3 Once again I testify to every man who lets himself be circumcised that he is obliged to obey the entire law. 4 You who want to be justified by the law have cut yourselves off from Christ; you have fallen away from grace. 5 For through the Spirit, by faith, we eagerly wait for the hope of righteousness. 6 For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision nor uncircumcision counts for anything; the only thing that counts is faith working[c] through love.

7 You were running well; who prevented you from obeying the truth? 8 Such persuasion does not come from the one who calls you. 9 A little yeast leavens the whole batch of dough. 10 I am confident about you in the Lord that you will not think otherwise. But whoever it is that is confusing you will pay the penalty. 11 But my friends,[b] why am I still being persecuted if I am still preaching circumcision? In that case the offense of the cross has been removed. 12 I wish those who unsettle you would castrate themselves!

13 For you were called to freedom, brothers and sisters;[b] only do not use your freedom as an opportunity for self-indulgence,[d] but through love become slaves to one another. 14 For the whole law is summed up in a single commandment, "You shall love your neighbor as yourself." 15 If, however, you bite and devour one another, take care that you are not consumed by one another.

[a] Other ancient authorities read *we*
[b] Gk *brothers*
[c] Or *made effective*
[d] Gk *the flesh*

with Mount Sinai, where the law was given to Israel. **26:** *The Jerusalem above . . . our mother,* Paul draws on the prophets' vision of the pilgrimage of the nations to the restored Jerusalem (Isa 51.2–6; 60; 62.1–2; Zech 2.10–12). Ps 86.5 (Septuagint) (cf. Ps 87.5) has the phrase "mother Zion." **27:** Isa 54.1; see also Isa 51.2–3. **29–30:** Gen 21.9–10. Genesis does not mention Ishmael persecuting Isaac but the idea is found in some later Jewish interpretations of this text.

5.2–12: Paul's case against circumcision. Paul argues that a Gentile who accepts circumcision is seeking righteousness through the law, an act incompatible with faith in Christ. **3-4:** See 2.16; 3.10–12. **6:** *Neither circumcision nor uncircumcision,* 6.15; 1 Cor 7.19. The alternative *faith made effective through love* (textual note *c*) gives faith a passive sense. It is instigated through love, presumably God's love. **8:** *The one who calls you,* God through Christ; see 1.6–9n. **9:** Paul uses the same proverb in 1 Cor 5.6. He is concerned that his opponents will win over the whole Galatian community. **11:** Some of Paul's opponents may have alleged he was inconsistent in his position on Gentile circumcision, perhaps pointing out that he had Timothy circumcised (Acts 16.1–3). **12:** A negative and bitterly sarcastic allusion to circumcision; see Phil 3.2. Paul may also be insulting his opponents through a comparison between circumcision and a pagan religious practice of Galatia, in which the priests of the Anatolian mother goddess Cybele, the Galli, emasculated themselves.

5.13–6.10: The behavior of those called in freedom to live by the Spirit. Paul presents a Christian ethic in reply to those demanding observance of the law from the Galatians.

5.13–26: Christian liberty. 13: See vv. 1,6. *Slaves to one another,* mutual submission is an important theme for

16 Live by the Spirit, I say, and do not
gratify the desires of the flesh. 17 For what
the flesh desires is opposed to the Spirit,
and what the Spirit desires is opposed to the
flesh; for these are opposed to each other,
to prevent you from doing what you want.
18 But if you are led by the Spirit, you are
not subject to the law. 19 Now the works of
the flesh are obvious: fornication, impurity,
licentiousness, 20 idolatry, sorcery, enmities,
strife, jealousy, anger, quarrels, dissensions,
factions, 21 envy,[a] drunkenness, carousing,
and things like these. I am warning you, as I
warned you before: those who do such things
will not inherit the kingdom of God.

22 By contrast, the fruit of the Spirit is love,
joy, peace, patience, kindness, generosity,
faithfulness, 23 gentleness, and self-control.
There is no law against such things. 24 And
those who belong to Christ Jesus have cruci-
fied the flesh with its passions and desires.
25 If we live by the Spirit, let us also be guided
by the Spirit. 26 Let us not become conceited,
competing against one another, envying one
another.

6 My friends,[b] if anyone is detected in a
transgression, you who have received the
Spirit should restore such a one in a spirit of
gentleness. Take care that you yourselves are
not tempted. 2 Bear one another's burdens,
and in this way you will fulfill[c] the law of
Christ. 3 For if those who are nothing think
they are something, they deceive themselves.
4 All must test their own work; then that
work, rather than their neighbor's work, will
become a cause for pride. 5 For all must carry
their own loads.

6 Those who are taught the word must
share in all good things with their teacher.

7 Do not be deceived; God is not mocked,
for you reap whatever you sow. 8 If you sow to
your own flesh, you will reap corruption from
the flesh; but if you sow to the Spirit, you will
reap eternal life from the Spirit. 9 So let us
not grow weary in doing what is right, for we
will reap at harvest time, if we do not give up.
10 So then, whenever we have an opportunity,
let us work for the good of all, and especially
for those of the family of faith.

11 See what large letters I make when I am
writing in my own hand! 12 It is those who
want to make a good showing in the flesh that
try to compel you to be circumcised—only
that they may not be persecuted for the cross
of Christ. 13 Even the circumcised do not
themselves obey the law, but they want you to
be circumcised so that they may boast about
your flesh. 14 May I never boast of anything
except the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, by
which[d] the world has been crucified to me,
and I to the world. 15 For[e] neither circumcision
nor uncircumcision is anything; but a new
creation is everything! 16 As for those who will

[a] Other ancient authorities add *murder*
[b] Gk *Brothers*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *in this way fulfill*
[d] Or *through whom*
[e] Other ancient authorities add *in Christ Jesus*

Paul and his followers; see Eph 5.21; Phil 2.3. **14:** Lev 19.18; Mt 22.39; Rom 13.8–10. **16:** *Desires of the flesh,* the self-indulgence (lit., "flesh"; see textual note *d* on v. 13) warned against in v. 13; see Eph 2.3. **16–17:** The opposition of the Spirit to the flesh (3.3; Rom 8.1–17) leads to inner conflict (Rom 7.14–24). **18:** Rom 6.14. **19–23:** Catalogues of vices and virtues were a common form of ethical instruction in the Greco-Roman world (see Mk 7.21–22; Mt 15.19; Rom 1.29–31; 1 Cor 6.9–10; 2 Cor 6.6–7; 12.20–21; Phil 4.8; Col 3.5–14; 1 Tim 1.9–10; 6.11; 2 Tim 3.2–5; 1 Pet 2.1; 4.3; 2 Pet 1.5–7; Rev 21.8; 22.15). The idea of two opposing forces leading to either righteous or wicked behavior was prominent in the Qumran sect (1QS 3.13–4.26).

6.1–10: Paul offers the Galatians several maxims by which to judge their behavior. 2: *The law of Christ* may be a phrase Paul borrowed from his opponents; see also 1 Cor 9.21; Rom 8.2. The Spirit enables the believer to live out the principle of love, thus fulfilling the law without observing its requirements. **6:** Christian teachers are entitled to financial support from their church (1 Cor 9.14). **8:** Rom 8.5–8. **9:** *Not grow weary,* Paul uses the same Greek verb in 2 Cor 4.1,16 (translated as "not lose heart"); see also Lk 18.1. **10:** *The family of faith,* lit., "members of the household of faith"; compare the phrase "household of God" in Eph 2.19; 1 Tim 3.15; 1 Pet 4.17.

6.11–18: Postscript. 11: Paul had dictated this letter to a secretary, but writes the conclusion in his *own hand*; see 1 Cor 16; 2 Thess 3.17. **12–14:** *Boast about . . . flesh/boast . . .* about *the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ,* see also 1 Cor 1.29–31; Phil 3.2–4. *The flesh* may be a double reference to circumcision and his opponents' pride in the

follow this rule—peace be upon them, and mercy, and upon the Israel of God.

17 From now on, let no one make trouble for me; for I carry the marks of Jesus branded on my body.

18 May the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit, brothers and sisters.[a] Amen.

[a] Gk *brothers*

success of their mission. **15:** 3.28; 5.6. *New creation,* Rom 8.19–23; 2 Cor 5.17; also Rev 21.5. **16–18:** A two-part blessing. Verse 16 has the form of a traditional Jewish benediction and is conditional, bestowed on those who follow Paul's teaching. As such it is the counterpart to the curse in 1.8. The address *brothers and sisters* in v. 18 does not appear in the final blessing of Paul's other letters and expresses the hope that the former warm relationship between the apostle and the community will be restored. **16:** *This rule* has been summarized in v. 15 but is in fact the standards of Christian faith and behavior Paul has advocated throughout the letter. *Israel of God,* a phrase unique to this verse, equivalent to the "true Israel," i.e., those who follow Paul's *rule* and not the teachings of his opponents. **17:** *Marks of Jesus,* the scars from injuries inflicted on Paul during his mission (2 Cor 6.4–5; 11.23–25). Paul may also be suggesting that his scars identify him as belonging to Christ like the brand marks on a slave.

THE LETTER OF PAUL TO THE EPHESIANS

NAME

This letter is named for its recipients, the Christian community in the city of Ephesus, a major city on the Aegean coast of Asia Minor, where Paul spent a considerable amount of time (Acts 18–19). However, some early manuscripts of Ephesians, as well as some early Christian writers, lack the opening reference to Ephesus in 1.1 (see note *a*), and since the text does not seem to address problems specific to a single congregation, some scholars think that Ephesians was a circular letter sent to a number of churches, perhaps in Asia Minor. Others, noting the similarities to the letter to the Colossians, believe the original audience was the churches of Hierapolis and Laodicea (see Col 4.13,16).

AUTHORSHIP, LITERARY HISTORY, AND DATE

Significant contrasts between Ephesians and the letters certainly ascribed to Paul raise questions about the identity of its author. Many important terms in Ephesians are not used by Paul elsewhere (e.g., "heavenly places," "dividing wall," "fellow citizen"), and some of Paul's characteristic terms and emphases either are given new meaning (e.g., "mystery," "church") or are completely absent (e.g., "the Jews," "justify"). In addition, the verbose rhetorical style of Ephesians, especially the use of complex, long sentences (many of which have been divided in the NRSV), is not characteristic of Paul. Theological differences are also evident, especially Ephesians' emphasis on believers' present salvation (1.3–12; 2.4–10) and the use of household rules as ethical teaching (5.22–6.9). Because of these differences, many scholars hold that Ephesians was written in the late first century by a Jewish-Christian admirer of Paul who sought to apply Paul's thought to the situation of the church in his own day. A minority of scholars hold that Paul composed this letter at the end of his career while imprisoned, probably in Rome. This position attributes different theological emphases to developments in Paul's thinking and the situation addressed.

There are many verbal parallels between the letters to the Ephesians and the Colossians, as the following list shows:

EPHESIANS	COLOSSIANS
1.1–2	1.1–2
1.15–16	1.3–4,9
5.6	3.6
5.18–20	3.16–17
5.22	3.18
5.25	3.19
6.1	3.20
6.5–9	3.22–25; 4.1
6.18–20	4.2–4
6.21–22	4.7–8

These close connections, along with others given in the annotations, suggest a literary relationship between the two letters. If Paul was the author of both, they likely would have been written at the same time, probably in the late 50s; if Ephesians was written by a later follower of Paul, then it seems he drew upon the already established authority of the letter to the Colossians and modeled his work on it. Possible allusions to other Pauline letters such as Romans and 1 Corinthians are not as close as those to Colossians.

HISTORICAL CONTEXT

Establishing a historical context for Ephesians has proven extremely difficult. In contrast to many of Paul's letters and even to Colossians, Ephesians contains few hints of specific events or issues that might have triggered its composition. Since unity between Jews and Gentiles within the church is a major theme, some scholars believe that the text is meant to address the alienation of Jewish Christians from their Gentile counterparts, either in theory or arising from a conflict in the churches of Asia Minor. Other scholars suggest external events, such as Roman persecution, as the impetus for the letter's composition. A more fruitful approach may be to employ a rhetorical analysis, paying close attention to how the author presents himself and his readers, especially his desire for their maturity as believers. This approach reveals that the author sees his readers as deficient in a number of key areas, including knowledge of God's plan for salvation, the power of the Spirit, and the purpose of the church as the body of Christ.

STRUCTURE AND INTERPRETATION

Ephesians begins with a greeting (1.1–2) and an introductory thanksgiving prayer (1.15–23) and ends with an epilogue (6.21–24), but it lacks many features typical of the Pauline letter form (see p. 1973) and is better classified as a sermon. The text can be divided into two parts: theological teaching (chs 1–3), and ethical exhortation (chs 4–6). The first part focuses on the church as a new community in which Jews and Gentiles equally share in God's blessings. The second part is an appeal for the church to maintain that new unity and press on toward complete maturity by rejecting former lifestyles and displaying Christian values of truth, love, forgiveness, and sexual purity. However, rather than advocating a complete transformation of household relationships based on love, forgiveness, and mutual submission, the author's Christology is used to justify the structure and duties of the ideal ancient patriarchal family through an adaptation of the familiar household code.

In powerful poetic language drawn from early Christian hymns and the Jewish scriptures, Ephesians celebrates a vision of the universal church. According to God's eternal plan for humanity, Christ's death brought together Jews and Gentiles into a new, unified community: the Jewish law, which previously divided Jew from Gentile, was rendered irrelevant by the cross, and Christ thus reconciled both groups to each other and to God (2.14–16). Whether Ephesians is intended to encourage Gentiles to recognize their position as full partners in the church or whether Gentiles are being admonished to respect their Jewish fellow believers more highly is not clear. According to Ephesians, human existence is beset by the malevolent influence of demonic beings. Christ has been given power over them, and through God's grace human beings are freed from their immoral and deceitful influences. The new life of believers is one of knowledge and spiritual power, and thus there is the recurring contrast of the old life with the new (2.1–6,11–13,19; 4.22–24; 5.8). Another prominent theme is Paul's role as revealer of God's previously hidden plan for the salvation of humankind (3.1–12). The church must recognize Christ as its Lord and exemplar (4.12–16,20–24; 5.1–2), and also its own exalted status as a spirit-filled community that brings the power and presence of God to the world (1.22–23; 2.22; 3.10,19; 4.24). Conflict with demonic forces continues (6.10–20), but the church looks forward to the complete reestablishment of God's sovereignty over creation (1.10) and the perfection of the church as the body of Christ (4.12–16). Because Ephesians describes the church in such universal and glorious terms, it has been used by theologians (including Thomas Aquinas, Luther, and Calvin) throughout the centuries to establish their vision of the church and its mission.

GUIDE TO READING

The first chapter of Ephesians introduces nearly all the theological ideas and themes developed in the letter. The first section (1.3–14) gives a sweeping overview of God's plan for salvation, while the second (1.15–23) focuses upon how this plan should be realized in believers' lives. Readers may find it helpful to keep this passage in mind as they read the rest of Ephesians and to note how subsequent passages fill out the meaning of its poetic evocation.

Jennifer K. Berenson

1 Paul, an apostle of Christ Jesus by the will of God,

To the saints who are in Ephesus and are faithful[a] in Christ Jesus:

[2] Grace to you and peace from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

[3] Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who has blessed us in Christ with every spiritual blessing in the heavenly places, [4] just as he chose us in Christ[b] before the foundation of the world to be holy and blameless before him in love. [5] He destined us for adoption as his children through Jesus Christ, according to the good pleasure of his will, [6] to the praise of his glorious grace that he freely bestowed on us in the Beloved. [7] In him we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of our trespasses, according to the riches of his grace [8] that he lavished on us. With all wisdom and insight [9] he has made known to us the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure that he set forth in Christ, [10] as a plan for the fullness of time, to gather up all things in him, things in heaven and things on earth. [11] In Christ we have also obtained an inheritance,[c] having been destined according to the purpose of him who accomplishes all things according to his counsel and will, [12] so that we, who were the first to set our hope on Christ, might live for the praise of his glory. [13] In him you also, when you had heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation, and had believed in him, were marked with the seal of the promised Holy Spirit; [14] this[d] is the pledge of our inheritance toward redemption as God's own people, to the praise of his glory.

[15] I have heard of your faith in the Lord Jesus and your love[e] toward all the saints, and for this reason [16] I do not cease to give thanks for you as I remember you in my prayers. [17] I pray that the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give you a spirit of wisdom and revelation as you come to know him, [18] so that, with the eyes of your heart enlightened, you may know what is the hope to which he has called you, what are the riches

[a] Other ancient authorities lack *in Ephesus*, reading *saints who are also faithful*
[b] Gk *in him*
[c] Or *been made a heritage*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *who*
[e] Other ancient authorities lack *and your love*

1.1–2: Salutation (cf. Col 1.1–2). *Apostle*, see Rom 1.1n. *By the will of God*, see 3.2–13. *Saints . . . faithful*, emphasizing two foundational aspects of Christian existence: holiness (see Col 1.2n.) and steadfast loyalty to Jesus. *Ephesus*, an important city on the west coast of Asia Minor, where Paul had a successful ministry (see the Introduction and Acts 18.19–21; 19; 1 Cor 16.8–9). **2:** A common Pauline greeting drawing upon and transforming conventional Greek (*grace*) and Hebrew (*peace*) salutations.

1.3–14: Blessing of God for his blessings to the church (cf. Rom 8.15–34). 3: *Blessed be*, this extended praise of God is based on a traditional Jewish form of worship that enumerates God's actions on behalf of Israel (1 Kings 8.15,56; Lk 1.68–75). *In Christ*, a theme throughout this section, indicating Christ's mediation of divine blessings. *In the heavenly places*, anticipates the letter's interest in heavenly realities accessible in the present (1.20–23; 2.6–7; 3.11–12). **4:** *Chose us*, the language of Israel's election as God's people (Deut 7.6–8) is used here for Christian believers. *Before the foundation . . . to be holy and blameless*, God's election of and care for believers extends from before creation through the coming judgment. **5:** *Adoption*, a privileged status allowing intimacy and full inheritance rights (see 1.11–14; Rom 8.15–17; Gal 4.5). **6:** *Beloved*, a title for Christ; cf. "beloved son," Mk 1.11; Col 1.13. **7:** *Redemption*, the first hint of opposition to God's plan (see Col 1.14n. and Eph 1.21; 2.2; 6.10–17). *His blood*, Christ's sacrificial death brings divine *forgiveness* for moral failures. **9:** *Mystery*, the previously hidden plan of God, which here encompasses all creation (Dan 2.17–30; Rom 8:18–23; cf. Eph 3.1–6; Col 1.26–27). **10:** God's plan culminates in the unification of the cosmos under and through Christ (1.20–22; cf. Col 1.15–20). **13:** *You*, Gentiles (2.11; 3.1) have also been included in God's blessings. According to Paul the promise of the *Spirit* came through Abraham (Gal 3.14,22); the Spirit is also associated with the prophet Joel (Joel 2.28–32; Acts 2.14–21) and Jesus' promise (Lk 24.49; Jn 14.26; Acts 1.4–5). *Seal*, a mark of ownership and protection; see also 4.30. **14:** *Pledge*, the same Gk word is translated "first installment" in 2 Cor 1.22.

1.15–23: Thanksgiving prayer for wisdom and power (cf. Col 1.3–14). **15:** *Faith . . . love*, two central Christian virtues (1 Cor 13.13; 1 Thess 5.8; Col 1.3–5). **17–18:** *Hope*, the third virtue, is here not just eschatological, but also the ability to understand (*wisdom, revelation, enlightened*) God's purposes and how to live rightly in response (cf. 4.18).

of his glorious inheritance among the saints, [19] and what is the immeasurable greatness of his power for us who believe, according to the working of his great power. [20] God[a] put this power to work in Christ when he raised him from the dead and seated him at his right hand in the heavenly places, [21] far above all rule and authority and power and dominion, and above every name that is named, not only in this age but also in the age to come. [22] And he has put all things under his feet and has made him the head over all things for the church, [23] which is his body, the fullness of him who fills all in all.

2 You were dead through the trespasses and sins [2] in which you once lived, following the course of this world, following the ruler of the power of the air, the spirit that is now at work among those who are disobedient. [3] All of us once lived among them in the passions of our flesh, following the desires of flesh and senses, and we were by nature children of wrath, like everyone else. [4] But God, who is rich in mercy, out of the great love with which he loved us [5] even when we were dead through our trespasses, made us alive together with Christ[b]—by grace you have been saved— [6] and raised us up with him and seated us with him in the heavenly places in Christ Jesus, [7] so that in the ages to come he might show the immeasurable riches of his grace in kindness toward us in Christ Jesus. [8] For by grace you have been saved through faith, and this is not your own doing; it is the gift of God— [9] not the result of works, so that no one may boast. [10] For we are what he has made us, created in Christ Jesus for good works, which God prepared beforehand to be our way of life.

[11] So then, remember that at one time you Gentiles by birth,[c] called "the uncircumcision" by those who are called "the circumcision"—a physical circumcision made in the flesh by human hands— [12] remember that you were at that time without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers to the covenants of promise, having no hope and without God in the world. [13] But now in Christ Jesus you who once were far off have been brought near by the blood of Christ. [14] For he is our peace; in his flesh he has made both groups

[a] Gk *He*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *in Christ*
[c] Gk *in the flesh*

19–20: An emphatic assertion that God's *power* is available to believers to live out their calling (cf. 2.6; 3.7,16,20). *At his right hand*, a common early Christian description, dependent on Ps 110.1, of Christ's exaltation (Acts 2.34–35; Rom 8.34; Col 3.1; Heb 8.1). **21:** *Rule . . . dominion*, hostile spiritual powers subjected to Christ (Col 1.16; cf. 1 Cor 15.20–28). *Name*, see Phil 2.9. **22:** *Under his feet*, see Ps 8:6; 1 Cor 15.27; cf. Ps 110.1. **22–23:** *Head . . . body*, see Col 1.18n. Scholars disagree on the origin of the head-body metaphor developed here (see also Eph 4.12,15–16), which is found in various forms of cosmic speculation in Hellenistic, Jewish, and Gnostic thought. **23:** *Fullness*, the church expresses God's power and presence to the world or perhaps the church has been completed by Christ (3.19; Col 1.19n.; 2.9–10; see also Jer 23.24).

2.1–10: The old life contrasted with the new (cf. Col 1.21–23). **1–5:** Formerly both Gentile (*you*) and Jewish (*all of us*) Christians habitually sinned and lacked God's protection and blessings (*were dead/children of wrath*). **2:** *Course*, literally "age," a reference to the present as a limited period in which human life is pervaded and perverted by the devil (*the ruler . . . air*; 6.10–17; see also Rom 6.12–13). **3:** *Children of wrath*, those who will be punished at the future judgment (1 Thess 5.4–10). **5,8:** *By grace . . . saved*, deliverance to a new life is due solely to God's mercy and benevolence (1.7). **5–6:** *Made us alive . . . raised us . . . seated us*, believers have been exalted like Christ himself (1.20). **9:** *Works*, individual achievement (*your own doing*, v. 8), not "works of the law" as in Gal 2.16. **10:** *Good works*, the ethical *way of life* imperative in God's plan is emphasized here (1.4; 1 Tim 6.18; Titus 2.14; 3.8). *Prepared beforehand*, see 1.4.

2.11–22: The unity of Jews and Gentiles in the church. 11: *The uncircumcision*, a derogatory term for Gentiles. *The circumcision*, Jews, but often used for those who required all believers to obey the law of Moses (Acts 10.45; Gal 2.12; Col 4.11; cf. Phil 3.3). **12–13:** *You were . . . But now*, another contrast of old and new (2.1–5), focused on the Gentiles' plight as *aliens* and *strangers* from Israel and God. **12:** *Covenants of promise*, God promised Abraham (Gen 15.18; 17.2–8), Israel/Jacob (Gen 28.13–15), and David (2 Sam 7; Ps 89) his presence and protection (see Ps 105). **13:** *Far off . . . brought near*, Christ's death reconciles Gentiles with God (v. 17; cf. Isa

into one and has broken down the dividing wall, that is, the hostility between us. 15 He has abolished the law with its commandments and ordinances, that he might create in himself one new humanity in place of the two, thus making peace, 16 and might reconcile both groups to God in one body[a] through the cross, thus putting to death that hostility through it.[b] 17 So he came and proclaimed peace to you who were far off and peace to those who were near; 18 for through him both of us have access in one Spirit to the Father. 19 So then you are no longer strangers and aliens, but you are citizens with the saints and also members of the household of God, 20 built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, with Christ Jesus himself as the cornerstone.[c] 21 In him the whole structure is joined together and grows into a holy temple in the Lord; 22 in whom you also are built together spiritually[d] into a dwelling place for God.

3 This is the reason that I Paul am a prisoner for[e] Christ Jesus for the sake of you Gentiles— 2 for surely you have already heard of the commission of God's grace that was given me for you, 3 and how the mystery was made known to me by revelation, as I wrote above in a few words, 4 a reading of which will enable you to perceive my understanding of the mystery of Christ. 5 In former generations this mystery[f] was not made known to humankind, as it has now been revealed to his holy apostles and prophets by the Spirit: 6 that is, the Gentiles have become fellow heirs, members of the same body, and sharers in the promise in Christ Jesus through the gospel.

7 Of this gospel I have become a servant according to the gift of God's grace that was given me by the working of his power. 8 Although I am the very least of all the saints, this grace was given to me to bring to the Gentiles the news of the boundless riches of Christ, 9 and to make everyone see[g] what is the plan of the mystery hidden for ages in[h] God who created all things; 10 so that through the church the wisdom of God in its rich variety might now be made known to the rulers and authorities in the heavenly places. 11 This was in accordance with the eternal purpose that he has carried out in Christ Jesus our Lord, 12 in whom we have access to God in boldness and confidence through faith in him.[i] 13 I pray therefore that you[j] may not lose heart over my sufferings for you; they are your glory.

[a] Or *reconcile both of us in one body for God*
[b] Or *in him*, or *in himself*
[c] Or *keystone*
[d] Gk *in the Spirit*
[e] Or *of*
[f] Gk *it*
[g] Other ancient authorities read *to bring to light*
[h] Or *by*
[i] Or *the faith of him*
[j] Or *I*

57.19). **14:** *Made both groups into one*, a second result of Christ's death is uniting Jews and Gentiles in a new community. *Dividing wall*, the Jewish law; perhaps also the balustrade in the Jerusalem Temple, beyond which Gentiles were forbidden to go. **15:** *Abolished the law*, in the author's view the primary function of the law is to distinguish Jews from Gentiles, thus promoting *hostility* (Acts 10.28); this harsh conclusion is later softened by direct quotation from the law (6.2–3) **16:** A summary of vv. 11–15. **17:** *Proclaimed peace*, see Isa 52.7. **19:** *Citizens*, a civic metaphor for their full inclusion among God's children (1.5,11–14). **20–22:** The author uses a mixture of architectural and agricultural metaphors to describe the dependence of God's people on each other and on the Lord Jesus (4.15–16). **20:** *Prophets*, early Christian prophets (3.5; 4.11; 1 Cor 14). *Cornerstone*, either the foundation (Isa 28.16), or the capstone (*T. Sol.* 22.7) that completes a building. **21–22:** *A holy temple*, the community embodies the presence of God; the Essenes held a similar view of themselves in direct contrast with the Jerusalem Temple (1QS 8.4–10).

3.1–13: Paul reveals God's plan (cf. Col 1.24–29). **1:** A prayer is interrupted by vv. 2–13 and resumed in v. 14. **2:** *Commission*, Paul's encounter with Christ (Gal 1.15–16). **3:** *Mystery*, see 1.9n.; here, the uniting of Jews and Gentiles into a single community (3.6,9–12; Col 1.27; 2.2). *Above*, literally, "previously," either in 1.9–10 or perhaps in an earlier letter. **8:** *Least*, 1 Cor 15.8–9. **10:** *Wisdom of God . . . heavenly places*, the church embodies and thus reveals God's plan (*wisdom*) and Christ's supremacy to hostile spiritual powers. **13:** *Sufferings . . . glory*, imprisonment on behalf of the Gentiles (3.1) has secured their new life and future glorification (2 Cor 1.6; 4.12; Col 1.24).

14 For this reason I bow my knees before
the Father,[a] 15 from whom every family[b] in
heaven and on earth takes its name. 16 I pray
that, according to the riches of his glory, he
may grant that you may be strengthened in
your inner being with power through his
Spirit, 17 and that Christ may dwell in your
hearts through faith, as you are being rooted
and grounded in love. 18 I pray that you may
have the power to comprehend, with all the
saints, what is the breadth and length and
height and depth, 19 and to know the love of
Christ that surpasses knowledge, so that you
may be filled with all the fullness of God.

20 Now to him who by the power at work
within us is able to accomplish abundantly
far more than all we can ask or imagine, 21 to
him be glory in the church and in Christ Jesus
to all generations, forever and ever. Amen.

4 I therefore, the prisoner in the Lord, beg
you to lead a life worthy of the calling to
which you have been called, 2 with all humil-
ity and gentleness, with patience, bearing
with one another in love, 3 making every
effort to maintain the unity of the Spirit in
the bond of peace. 4 There is one body and
one Spirit, just as you were called to the one
hope of your calling, 5 one Lord, one faith,
one baptism, 6 one God and Father of all, who
is above all and through all and in all.

7 But each of us was given grace according
to the measure of Christ's gift. 8 Therefore it
is said,

"When he ascended on high he made
captivity itself a captive;
he gave gifts to his people."

9 (When it says, "He ascended," what does it
mean but that he had also descended[c] into the
lower parts of the earth? 10 He who descended
is the same one who ascended far above all the
heavens, so that he might fill all things.) 11 The
gifts he gave were that some would be apostles,
some prophets, some evangelists, some pastors
and teachers, 12 to equip the saints for the work
of ministry, for building up the body of Christ,
13 until all of us come to the unity of the faith
and of the knowledge of the Son of God, to
maturity, to the measure of the full stature of
Christ. 14 We must no longer be children, tossed
to and fro and blown about by every wind of
doctrine, by people's trickery, by their crafti-
ness in deceitful scheming. 15 But speaking the
truth in love, we must grow up in every way
into him who is the head, into Christ, 16 from
whom the whole body, joined and knit togeth-
er by every ligament with which it is equipped,
as each part is working properly, promotes the
body's growth in building itself up in love.

17 Now this I affirm and insist on in the
Lord: you must no longer live as the Gentiles
live, in the futility of their minds. 18 They are
darkened in their understanding, alienated
from the life of God because of their ignorance
and hardness of heart. 19 They have lost all
sensitivity and have abandoned themselves to
licentiousness, greedy to practice every kind
of impurity. 20 That is not the way you learned
Christ! 21 For surely you have heard about him

[a] Other ancient authorities add *of our Lord Jesus Christ*
[b] Gk *fatherhood*
[c] Other ancient authorities add *first*

3.14–21: Prayer for the church to live up to its destiny. 14–15: *Father . . . family*, a play on words in Greek ("pater," "patria," see note *b*); God is the Father (creator and ruler) of all nations and spiritual powers. **16–18:** The author returns to themes found in 1.15–20. **18–19:** *Breadth, length, height, depth*, the dimensions of God's wisdom or Christ's love; in either case emphasizing immensity. **19:** *Filled with all the fullness*, 1.23n. **20–21:** A doxology celebrating God's ability to accomplish his plan for the church through the Spirit's power.

4.1–6.20: Ethical exhortation. 4.1–16: Appeal for unity amid diversity. 1: This exhortation balances the divine *calling* with human responsibility. **2–3:** See a similar list of virtues in Gal 5.22–23. **3:** *Unity* and *peace*, made possible by Christ (2.11–22), must be consciously maintained. **4–6:** Seven bases of unity. **8–11:** Ps 68.18 is interpreted as revealing Christ's exaltation over the spiritual powers (1.20–22) and *gifts* of leadership for the church. **9:** *Lower parts of the earth*, either the earth itself or Hades. **12:** *To equip the saints*, literally, "for the completion of the saints." *For the work of ministry*, highlighting the purpose of Christian leadership. **14:** *Wind of doctrine*, Jas 1.6; Jude 12,13. **15:** A vision of the church as an organic, interrelated whole, whose goal is to reflect fully its head, Christ (2.20–22).

4.17–5.21: Appeal for a changed way of life (cf. Col 3.5–17). **4.17–18:** On the plight of the Gentiles, see 2.1–

and were taught in him, as truth is in Jesus.
22 You were taught to put away your former
way of life, your old self, corrupt and deluded
by its lusts, 23 and to be renewed in the spirit
of your minds, 24 and to clothe yourselves with
the new self, created according to the likeness
of God in true righteousness and holiness.

25 So then, putting away falsehood, let all
of us speak the truth to our neighbors, for we
are members of one another. 26 Be angry but
do not sin; do not let the sun go down on your
anger, 27 and do not make room for the devil.
28 Thieves must give up stealing; rather let
them labor and work honestly with their own
hands, so as to have something to share with
the needy. 29 Let no evil talk come out of your
mouths, but only what is useful for build-
ing up,[a] as there is need, so that your words
may give grace to those who hear. 30 And do
not grieve the Holy Spirit of God, with which
you were marked with a seal for the day of
redemption. 31 Put away from you all bitter-
ness and wrath and anger and wrangling and
slander, together with all malice, 32 and be
kind to one another, tenderhearted, forgiving
one another, as God in Christ has forgiven
you.[b] **5** 1 Therefore be imitators of God, as
beloved children, 2 and live in love, as
Christ loved us[c] and gave himself up for us, a
fragrant offering and sacrifice to God.

3 But fornication and impurity of any kind,
or greed, must not even be mentioned among
you, as is proper among saints. 4 Entirely out
of place is obscene, silly, and vulgar talk; but
instead, let there be thanksgiving. 5 Be sure
of this, that no fornicator or impure person,
or one who is greedy (that is, an idolater), has
any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and
of God.

6 Let no one deceive you with empty
words, for because of these things the
wrath of God comes on those who are diso-
bedient. 7 Therefore do not be associated
with them. 8 For once you were darkness,
but now in the Lord you are light. Live as
children of light— 9 for the fruit of the
light is found in all that is good and right
and true. 10 Try to find out what is pleasing
to the Lord. 11 Take no part in the unfruit-
ful works of darkness, but instead expose
them. 12 For it is shameful even to mention
what such people do secretly; 13 but every-
thing exposed by the light becomes visible,
14 for everything that becomes visible is
light. Therefore it says,

"Sleeper, awake!
Rise from the dead,
and Christ will shine on you."

15 Be careful then how you live, not as
unwise people but as wise, 16 making the most
of the time, because the days are evil. 17 So do
not be foolish, but understand what the will
of the Lord is. 18 Do not get drunk with wine,
for that is debauchery; but be filled with the
Spirit, 19 as you sing psalms and hymns and
spiritual songs among yourselves, sing-
ing and making melody to the Lord in your
hearts, 20 giving thanks to God the Father at
all times and for everything in the name of
our Lord Jesus Christ.

21 Be subject to one another out of rever-
ence for Christ.

22 Wives, be subject to your husbands as
you are to the Lord. 23 For the husband is the

[a] Other ancient authorities read *building up faith*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *us*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *you*

3,11–12. **19:** *Licentiousness . . . impurity*, excessive and inappropriate sexual behavior (5.3,5). **22–24:** The *old* lifestyle, like worn-out clothing, must be replaced by a *new* lifestyle guided by one's knowledge of Christ. **25:** *Speak the truth*, see 4.15; Zech 8.16. **26:** On *anger*, see also 1 Cor 13.5; Jas 1.19. **29:** *Building up*, see 2.20–22; 4.16. **30:** *Seal*, see 1.13n. **4:32–5.2:** *Kindness* and *love* are identified as central virtues stemming from imitation of God and Christ. **5.2:** *Fragrant offering*, see Ex 29.18; Ezek 20.41. **3–5:** Sexual sins are the primary focus in these verses (4.19). **4:** Proper speech is a recurring theme (4.15,29). **8:** *Darkness/light*, opposing images for the domains of hostile spiritual powers and unrepentant Gentiles, and of God and believers. **11–13:** See John 3.20. **14:** *Sleeper . . . you*, perhaps a fragment of a baptismal hymn. **21:** Some feminist scholars see this call to mutual subjection as a principle that moderates the subordination of wives prescribed by the conventional household code that follows; others fault the author for failing to challenge female subordination in any significant way.

5.22–6.9: Rules for household relationships (cf. Col 3.18–4.1). On the form of these rules, see Col 3.18–4.1n. **5.22–33:** Relations between *wives* and *husbands*. The subordination of *wives* to *husbands* is legitimized by an

head of the wife just as Christ is the head of the church, the body of which he is the Savior. 24 Just as the church is subject to Christ, so also wives ought to be, in everything, to their husbands.

25 Husbands, love your wives, just as Christ loved the church and gave himself up for her, 26 in order to make her holy by cleansing her with the washing of water by the word, 27 so as to present the church to himself in splendor, without a spot or wrinkle or anything of the kind—yes, so that she may be holy and without blemish. 28 In the same way, husbands should love their wives as they do their own bodies. He who loves his wife loves himself. 29 For no one ever hates his own body, but he nourishes and tenderly cares for it, just as Christ does for the church, 30 because we are members of his body.[a] 31 "For this reason a man will leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and the two will become one flesh." 32 This is a great mystery, and I am applying it to Christ and the church. 33 Each of you, however, should love his wife as himself, and a wife should respect her husband.

6 Children, obey your parents in the Lord,[b] for this is right. 2 "Honor your father and mother"—this is the first commandment with a promise: 3 "so that it may be well with you and you may live long on the earth."

4 And, fathers, do not provoke your children to anger, but bring them up in the discipline and instruction of the Lord.

5 Slaves, obey your earthly masters with fear and trembling, in singleness of heart, as you obey Christ; 6 not only while being watched, and in order to please them, but as slaves of Christ, doing the will of God from the heart. 7 Render service with enthusiasm, as to the Lord and not to men and women, 8 knowing that whatever good we do, we will receive the same again from the Lord, whether we are slaves or free.

9 And, masters, do the same to them. Stop threatening them, for you know that both of you have the same Master in heaven, and with him there is no partiality.

10 Finally, be strong in the Lord and in the strength of his power. 11 Put on the whole armor of God, so that you may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. 12 For our[c] struggle is not against enemies of blood and flesh, but against the rulers, against the authorities, against the cosmic powers of this present darkness, against the spiritual forces of evil in the heavenly places. 13 Therefore take up the whole armor of God, so that you may be

[a] Other ancient authorities add *of his flesh and of his bones*

[b] Other ancient authorities lack *in the Lord*

[c] Other ancient authorities read *your*

extended analogy: The husband's role is aligned with Christ's authority over the church (*head*; see 1.22; 4.15 and Col 1.18n.), while wives are to imitate the church as the obedient recipient of Christ's blessings (*body*). **22:** *Be subject*, accept a position of subordination to the husband's authority. **25–29:** The marriage relationship is to be modeled on that between Christ and the church, in which the church's purity was achieved through Christ's death and continual care. *Husbands* are to imitate Christ's self-sacrifice, a standard elsewhere held up for all (5.2). Feminist criticism points out that granting divine authority to the male and expecting passivity of women may legitimate abusive relationships. **26:** Baptism is compared to the Jewish custom of a bride's prenuptial bath. **28–30:** Here the author draws upon the identity of the church as Christ's body to motivate the husband's deep care for his wife. **30–32:** *Mystery*, the unity of Christ and the church as revealed through interpretation of Gen 2.24. Note the scribal addition from Gen 2.23 (see note *a*). **33:** See Lev 19.18. **6.1–4:** Relations between *children* and *fathers*. Note that children are to obey their parents, but instructions are only given to fathers concerning their upbringing. Legally, all children were property of their father. **2–3:** Ex 20.12; Deut 5.16. **5–9:** Relations between *slaves* and *masters*. Like wives, *slaves* are not to imitate Christ but obey their masters' divinely sanctioned authority; see Col 3.22–4.1; Titus 2.9–10. **6:** *Not only while being watched*, a stereotypical accusation made against slaves. **8:** An eschatological reward is used to motivate Christian slaves; cf. Gal 3.28. **9:** *Masters* must recognize their own subjection to God, who despite sanctioning these social differences shows no *partiality*.

6.10–20: Appeal for strength in spiritual battle. 12: The Christian's enemies are not human (*blood and flesh*), but spiritual (1.21; 2.2). **13–17:** The *armor* of Israel's divine protector (Isa 11.4–5; 52.7; 59.17; Wis 5.17–20). **13:**

able to withstand on that evil day, and having done everything, to stand firm. 14 Stand therefore, and fasten the belt of truth around your waist, and put on the breastplate of righteousness. 15 As shoes for your feet put on whatever will make you ready to proclaim the gospel of peace. 16 With all of these,[a] take the shield of faith, with which you will be able to quench all the flaming arrows of the evil one. 17 Take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God.

18 Pray in the Spirit at all times in every prayer and supplication. To that end keep alert and always persevere in supplication for all the saints. 19 Pray also for me, so that when I speak, a message may be given to me to make known with boldness the mystery of the gospel,[b] 20 for which I am an ambassador in chains. Pray that I may declare it boldly, as I must speak.

21 So that you also may know how I am and what I am doing, Tychicus will tell you everything. He is a dear brother and a faithful minister in the Lord. 22 I am sending him to you for this very purpose, to let you know how we are, and to encourage your hearts.

23 Peace be to the whole community,[c] and love with faith, from God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ. 24 Grace be with all who have an undying love for our Lord Jesus Christ.[d]

[a] Or *In all circumstances*
[b] Other ancient authorities lack *of the gospel*
[c] Gk *to the brothers*
[d] Other ancient authorities add *Amen*

That evil day, all Christian existence is situated within an ongoing spiritual conflict (5.16). **14:** *Truth*, 4.15,25. *Righteousness*, here appropriate Christian behavior. **15:** *Gospel of peace*, 2.14–18. **17:** *Salvation*, deliverance from evil powers. *The sword*, the only offensive weapon mentioned, is the proclamation of the gospel. **20:** *In chains*, see 3.1; 4.1.

6.21–24: Epilogue (Cf. Col 4.7–8). **21:** *Tychicus*, Paul's associate; see Acts 20.4; Col 4.7; 2 Tim 4.12. **23:** *Whole community*, the Greek "brothers" (note *c*) includes both men and women. **24:** *Undying*, the final words of the letter are "in immortality," perhaps instead pointing toward God's unending grace in the age to come.

THE LETTER OF PAUL TO THE PHILIPPIANS

NAME AND AUTHORSHIP

The letter to the Philippians is one of the richest of Paul's letters and has never been seriously questioned as genuine. Philippi was a major city of Macedonia in northern Greece and a Roman colony on the Via Egnatia, the Roman road linking Byzantium in the East to the western coast of Macedonia, from which ships could easily reach Italy. The Christian community in Philippi was the westernmost Pauline church at the time of its founding (Acts 16.11–13). The mutual affection between Paul and the Philippians is evident in the letter and contrasts with the problems Paul faced in other churches.

DATE AND PLACE OF COMPOSITION

Except that Paul was in prison and awaiting trial at the time of writing (1.2–26), it is impossible to speak confidently of the time and place of the writing of this letter. Because of references to the imperial guard or praetorium (1.13) and to the emperor's household (4.22), and also because the situation reflected in the letter bears some resemblance to that described at the end of Acts, the traditional date of the letter has been during Paul's imprisonment at Rome (about 61–63 CE). The indications are by no means conclusive, however, and more recently some scholars have thought that the place of composition is perhaps Caesarea before Paul's arrival in Rome (Acts 24–26) or Ephesus at an earlier stage in Paul's career, especially because of the several goings and comings between Paul and Philippi implied in the letter (2.19,25–26; 4.10,18) that seem to be inconsistent with the great distance from Philippi to Rome. The terms referring to the emperor's household were also used for provincial government centers and the imperial civil service outside Rome. Elsewhere Paul notes an unhappy situation in Ephesus (1 Cor 15.32) and in the Roman province of Asia, of which Ephesus was a major center (2 Cor 1.8), and in Acts 20.16 he bypasses Ephesus on his way south down the coast. These indicators suggest an Ephesian imprisonment and the occasion of the letter.

The immediate occasion of Paul's writing was the return to Philippi of Epaphroditus (2.25–30), who was sent by the Philippian church with gifts for Paul (4.18), and who then became seriously ill while staying with him. Paul took this opportunity to thank them for their gifts and to set their mutual difficulties in a wider framework by describing his and their situation in light of the reality of Christ.

STRUCTURE AND INTERPRETATION

The letter follows the usual pattern of Paul's letters, but some abrupt changes of topic (especially between 3.1 and 2, and 4.3 and 4), in addition to the fact that an early Christian writer (Polycarp, *Philippians* 2.3) speaks of "letters" of Paul to the Philippians, have led some scholars to conclude that our present Philippians is composed of as many as three letters that Paul wrote to Philippi. Many scholars, however, find that Philippians is a coherent whole as it stands. After the greeting (1.1–2) and thanksgiving (1.3–11), Paul lays out the situation (1.12–26) and exhorts the community to unity (1.27–4.3) with many arguments, including proposing Christ (2.5–11), Timothy and Epaphroditus (2.19–30), and himself (3.4–14) as models of self-giving for the good of the whole. He thanks them for their recent gift (4.10–20) and concludes the letter (4.21–23).

Paul writes from prison uncertain of the outcome for himself (1.12–26). The themes of opposition and the possibility of death are therefore prominent. Yet in the midst of suffering and uncertainty, the theme of joy emerges quite clearly and remarkably (1.4,18,25; 2.2,17–18,28; 4.4,10). The Philippians too are experiencing opposition (1.29), but Paul's major concern is to bring them together and thus to overcome the threat of internal disharmony. In keeping with that purpose, he uses a hymnic passage that celebrates the self-emptying of Christ even to death, for which God bestowed on him the name of "Lord," the "name above all names" (2.6–11). The hymn was probably composed by a prior author, perhaps originally in Aramaic, and was known to both Paul and the Philippians. Here it serves as the prime example of why they should be willing also to empty themselves of their own opinions. The example of Paul himself follows and supports the argument (3.4–16). Paul offers

both Christ and himself as examples of courage and self-surrender in the face of suffering and death. Thus he exhorts the Philippians to turn away from partisan interest to unity.

Carolyn Osiek

1 Paul and Timothy, servants[a] of Christ Jesus,

To all the saints in Christ Jesus who are in Philippi, with the bishops[b] and deacons:[c]

[2] Grace to you and peace from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

[3] I thank my God every time I remember you, [4] constantly praying with joy in every one of my prayers for all of you, [5] because of your sharing in the gospel from the first day until now. [6] I am confident of this, that the one who began a good work among you will bring it to completion by the day of Jesus Christ. [7] It is right for me to think this way about all of you, because you hold me in your heart,[d] for all of you share in God's grace[e] with me, both in my imprisonment and in the defense and confirmation of the gospel. [8] For God is my witness, how I long for all of you with the compassion of Christ Jesus. [9] And this is my prayer, that your love may overflow more and more with knowledge and full insight [10] to help you to determine what is best, so that in the day of Christ you may be pure and blameless, [11] having produced the harvest of righteousness that comes through Jesus Christ for the glory and praise of God.

[12] I want you to know, beloved,[f] that what has happened to me has actually helped to spread the gospel, [13] so that it has become known throughout the whole imperial guard[g] and to everyone else that my imprisonment is for Christ; [14] and most of the brothers and sisters,[f] having been made confident in the Lord by my imprisonment, dare to speak the word[h] with greater boldness and without fear.

[15] Some proclaim Christ from envy and rivalry, but others from goodwill. [16] These proclaim Christ out of love, knowing that I have been put here for the defense of the gospel; [17] the others proclaim Christ out of selfish ambition, not sincerely but intending to increase my suffering in my imprisonment. [18] What does it matter? Just this, that Christ is proclaimed in every way, whether out of false motives or true; and in that I rejoice.

Yes, and I will continue to rejoice, [19] for I know that through your prayers and the help of the Spirit of Jesus Christ this will turn out for my deliverance. [20] It is my eager expectation and hope that I will not be put to shame in any way, but that by my speaking with all boldness, Christ will be exalted now as always in my body, whether by life or by death. [21] For to me, living is Christ and dying is gain. [22] If I am to live in the flesh, that means fruit-

[a] Gk *slaves*
[b] Or *overseers*
[c] Or *overseers and helpers*
[d] Or *because I hold you in my heart*
[e] Gk *in grace*
[f] Gk *brothers*
[g] Gk *whole praetorium*
[h] Other ancient authorities read *word of God*

1.1–2: Salutation. 1: *Bishops and deacons,* the alternate translation *overseers and helpers* is preferable. These functions are not yet the church offices that they will later become.

1.3–11: Thanksgiving. A common feature of a Pauline letter. **5:** *Sharing,* "koinônia," an important Pauline concept (2.1; 3.10; 4.15) that was key to his understanding of Christian unity. *From the first day,* when Paul first preached at Philippi (Acts 16.12). **6:** *The day of Jesus Christ,* when he will return and the present age will end (2.16; see 1 Cor 1.8; cf. 2 Thess 2.3 and 2 Pet 3.10). **10:** Rom 2.18.

1.12–26: Paul's situation in chains. 13: Paul is confined in some Roman administrative center, where he has had the opportunity to preach the gospel. **15–18:** Not all Christian preachers agreed with Paul or liked him; this is clear in Galatians and 1 and 2 Corinthians (especially 2 Cor 10–13), and here Paul questions their motives. Accusations against opponents was a common rhetorical tactic. **19:** This will turn out for my deliverance, quoting Job 13.16. **21–24:** His life is not his own but is given over to Christ, so that he is indifferent to the outcome of life or death; nevertheless, his death would mean loss to his churches.

ful labor for me; and I do not know which I
prefer. 23 I am hard pressed between the two:
my desire is to depart and be with Christ, for
that is far better; 24 but to remain in the flesh
is more necessary for you. 25 Since I am con-
vinced of this, I know that I will remain and
continue with all of you for your progress and
joy in faith, 26 so that I may share abundantly
in your boasting in Christ Jesus when I come
to you again.

27 Only, live your life in a manner worthy of
the gospel of Christ, so that, whether I come
and see you or am absent and hear about
you, I will know that you are standing firm in
one spirit, striving side by side with one mind
for the faith of the gospel, 28 and are in no way
intimidated by your opponents. For them this
is evidence of their destruction, but of your
salvation. And this is God's doing. 29 For he
has graciously granted you the privilege not
only of believing in Christ, but of suffering
for him as well— 30 since you are having the
same struggle that you saw I had and now
hear that I still have.

2 If then there is any encouragement in
Christ, any consolation from love, any
sharing in the Spirit, any compassion and
sympathy, 2 make my joy complete: be of
the same mind, having the same love, being
in full accord and of one mind. 3 Do noth-
ing from selfish ambition or conceit, but
in humility regard others as better than
yourselves. 4 Let each of you look not to your
own interests, but to the interests of others.
5 Let the same mind be in you that was[a] in
Christ Jesus,

6 who, though he was in the form of God,
did not regard equality with God
as something to be exploited,
7 but emptied himself,
taking the form of a slave,
being born in human likeness.
And being found in human form,
8 he humbled himself
and became obedient to the point of
death—
even death on a cross.

9 Therefore God also highly exalted him
and gave him the name
that is above every name,
10 so that at the name of Jesus
every knee should bend,
in heaven and on earth and under the
earth,
11 and every tongue should confess
that Jesus Christ is Lord,
to the glory of God the Father.

12 Therefore, my beloved, just as you have
always obeyed me, not only in my presence,
but much more now in my absence, work out
your own salvation with fear and trembling;
13 for it is God who is at work in you, enabling
you both to will and to work for his good
pleasure.

14 Do all things without murmuring and
arguing, 15 so that you may be blameless and
innocent, children of God without blem-
ish in the midst of a crooked and perverse
generation, in which you shine like stars in
the world. 16 It is by your holding fast to the
word of life that I can boast on the day of
Christ that I did not run in vain or labor in
vain. 17 But even if I am being poured out as
a libation over the sacrifice and the offering
of your faith, I am glad and rejoice with all of
you— 18 and in the same way you also must
be glad and rejoice with me.

19 I hope in the Lord Jesus to send Timothy
to you soon, so that I may be cheered by news
of you. 20 I have no one like him who will be

[a] Or *that you have*

1.27–4.4: Appeal to unity, to be followed by examples. 2.1–18: First example: self-emptying of Christ. 6: *In the form of God, equality with God,* may refer to divine status, or simply preexistence as a heavenly being (Dan 7.14), or Adam's original immortality (Wis 2.23–24), which Christ renounced by becoming subject to death. **7:** *But emptied himself,* the extreme limit of self-denial. **8:** Mt 26.39; Jn 10.18; Rom 5.19; Heb 5.8; 12.2. **9:** *Exalted,* in raising him from the dead. *The name . . . above every name* is Lord. **10–11:** Cf. Isa 45.23. **12:** *With fear and trembling,* a frequent biblical expression (Ex 15.16; Deut 2.25; Ps 2.11; Isa 19.6; 4 Macc 4.10) that had become commonplace (1 Cor 2.3; 2 Cor 7.15; Eph 6.5). **15:** *Shine like stars,* Dan 12.3. **16:** *Day of Christ,* see 1.6n. **17:** Paul's possible death is compared to a temple sacrifice.

2.19–3.1a: Second example: Timothy and Epaphroditus. 2.19: *Timothy,* Acts 16.1–3; 1 Cor 16.10–11. **24:** *I trust*

genuinely concerned for your welfare. [21] All of them are seeking their own interests, not those of Jesus Christ. [22] But Timothy's[a] worth you know, how like a son with a father he has served with me in the work of the gospel. [23] I hope therefore to send him as soon as I see how things go with me; [24] and I trust in the Lord that I will also come soon.

[25] Still, I think it necessary to send to you Epaphroditus—my brother and co-worker and fellow soldier, your messenger[b] and minister to my need; [26] for he has been longing for[c] all of you, and has been distressed because you heard that he was ill. [27] He was indeed so ill that he nearly died. But God had mercy on him, and not only on him but on me also, so that I would not have one sorrow after another. [28] I am the more eager to send him, therefore, in order that you may rejoice at seeing him again, and that I may be less anxious. [29] Welcome him then in the Lord with all joy, and honor such people, [30] because he came close to death for the work of Christ,[d] risking his life to make up for those services that you could not give me.

3 Finally, my brothers and sisters,[e] rejoice[f] in the Lord.

To write the same things to you is not troublesome to me, and for you it is a safeguard.

[2] Beware of the dogs, beware of the evil workers, beware of those who mutilate the flesh![g] [3] For it is we who are the circumcision, who worship in the Spirit of God[h] and boast in Christ Jesus and have no confidence in the flesh— [4] even though I, too, have reason for confidence in the flesh.

If anyone else has reason to be confident in the flesh, I have more: [5] circumcised on the eighth day, a member of the people of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, a Hebrew born of Hebrews; as to the law, a Pharisee; [6] as to zeal, a persecutor of the church; as to righteousness under the law, blameless.

[7] Yet whatever gains I had, these I have come to regard as loss because of Christ. [8] More than that, I regard everything as loss because of the surpassing value of knowing Christ Jesus my Lord. For his sake I have suffered the loss of all things, and I regard them as rubbish, in order that I may gain Christ [9] and be found in him, not having a righteousness of my own that comes from the law, but one that comes through faith in Christ,[i] the righteousness from God based on faith. [10] I want to know Christ[j] and the power of his resurrection and the sharing of his sufferings by becoming like him in his death, [11] if somehow I may attain the resurrection from the dead.

[12] Not that I have already obtained this or have already reached the goal;[k] but I press on to make it my own, because Christ Jesus has made me his own. [13] Beloved,[l] I do not con-

[a] Gk *his*
[b] Gk *apostle*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *longing to see*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *of the Lord*
[e] Gk *my brothers*
[f] Or *farewell*
[g] Gk *the mutilation*
[h] Other ancient authorities read *worship God in spirit*
[i] Or *through the faith of Christ*
[j] Gk *him*
[k] Or *have already been made perfect*
[l] Gk *Brothers*

. . . that I will also come soon, an argument against Rome as place of writing (see Rom 15.23–25). **25:** *Epaphroditus,* apostle and co-worker of Paul who brought the gift from Philippi (4.18), now being sent home.

3.1b–3: A digression about those who preach the necessity of circumcision, requiring Christians to observe the laws of Judaism. They were Paul's bitter opponents elsewhere, especially in Galatia, and are introduced here as a negative example (cf. Gal 5.1–12). **3:** *The flesh,* emphasis on physical rituals.

3.4–4.1: Third example: Paul himself. 3.5: *Hebrew,* a more preferred self-designation than "Jew," which was used more often by and for outsiders. *Pharisee,* member of the group most concerned with interpretation of the Jewish law. **6:** *A persecutor,* Acts 9.1–2; 1 Cor 15.9; Gal 1.13. *As to righteousness under the law, blameless,* Paul did not see himself as guilty or incomplete before his encounter with Christ. **8:** *Rubbish,* or excrement. **9:** *The righteousness from God based on faith,* a free gift bestowed by God through the grace of Christ (Rom 1.16–4.25). **10–11:** Actually to know Christ as risen and living is to have power to suffer like him, and to possess the hope of rising and living with him. **12–14:** *The goal* and *the prize,* allusion to popular sports, the Greek footraces, their

sider that I have made it my own;[a] but this one thing I do: forgetting what lies behind and straining forward to what lies ahead, [14] I press on toward the goal for the prize of the heavenly[b] call of God in Christ Jesus. [15] Let those of us then who are mature be of the same mind; and if you think differently about anything, this too God will reveal to you. [16] Only let us hold fast to what we have attained.

[17] Brothers and sisters,[c] join in imitating me, and observe those who live according to the example you have in us. [18] For many live as enemies of the cross of Christ; I have often told you of them, and now I tell you even with tears. [19] Their end is destruction; their god is the belly; and their glory is in their shame; their minds are set on earthly things. [20] But our citizenship[d] is in heaven, and it is from there that we are expecting a Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ. [21] He will transform the body of our humiliation[e] that it may be conformed to the body of his glory,[f] by the power that also enables him to make all things subject to himself. **4** [1] Therefore, my brothers and sisters,[g] whom I love and long for, my joy and crown, stand firm in the Lord in this way, my beloved.

[2] I urge Euodia and I urge Syntyche to be of the same mind in the Lord. [3] Yes, and I ask you also, my loyal companion,[h] help these women, for they have struggled beside me in the work of the gospel, together with Clement and the rest of my co-workers, whose names are in the book of life.

[4] Rejoice[i] in the Lord always; again I will say, Rejoice.[i] [5] Let your gentleness be known to everyone. The Lord is near. [6] Do not worry about anything, but in everything by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving let your requests be made known to God. [7] And the peace of God, which surpasses all understanding, will guard your hearts and your minds in Christ Jesus.

[8] Finally, beloved,[j] whatever is true, whatever is honorable, whatever is just, whatever is pure, whatever is pleasing, whatever is commendable, if there is any excellence and if there is anything worthy of praise, think about[k] these things. [9] Keep on doing the things that you have learned and received and heard and seen in me, and the God of peace will be with you.

[10] I rejoice[l] in the Lord greatly that now at last you have revived your concern for me; indeed, you were concerned for me, but had no opportunity to show it.[m] [11] Not that I am referring to being in need; for I have learned to be content with whatever I have. [12] I know what it is to have little, and I know what it is to have plenty. In any and all circumstances I have learned the secret of being well-fed and of going hungry, of hav-

[a] Other ancient authorities read *my own yet*
[b] Gk *upward*
[c] Gk *Brothers*
[d] Or *commonwealth*
[e] Or *our humble bodies*
[f] Or *his glorious body*
[g] Gk *my brothers*
[h] Or *loyal Syzygus*
[i] Or *Farewell*
[j] Gk *brothers*
[k] Gk *take account of*
[l] Gk *I rejoiced*
[m] Gk lacks *to show it*

finishing post, and the award to the winner (see 2.16; 1 Cor 9.24–27). **18–19:** *Many live as enemies of the cross of Christ,* presumably professing Christians who cannot accept Paul's theology of the cross. **20:** *Our citizenship,* our ultimate political loyalty and real homeland, contrasting with the status of most of the Philippians as Roman citizens. **21:** Rom 8.23; 1 Cor 15.47–57; 2 Cor 5.1–5; Col 3.1–4. **4.1:** 1 Thess 2.19–20. A *crown* was often awarded to the winner of a race (see 3.12–14n.).

4.2–9: Heart of the problem. 2: *Euodia . . . Syntyche,* two women leaders in the Philippian church, most likely heads of house-churches and therefore among the overseers and helpers (1.1) whose disagreement has had a disastrous effect on the church; the factions into which they have broken are the major concern of the letter. **3:** *My loyal companion,* an unknown but influential figure who could serve as mediator between the two. Less likely, the Greek word for *companion* may be understood as a proper name, *Syzygus. Book of life,* a book kept by God containing names of those to be saved (Ps 69.28; Dan 12.1; Lk 10.20; Rev 3.5; etc.).

4.10–20: Acknowledgment of their gifts. 11: *Content,* Paul here expresses the Stoic ideal of indifference, but

ing plenty and of being in need. [13] I can do all things through him who strengthens me. [14] In any case, it was kind of you to share my distress.

[15] You Philippians indeed know that in the early days of the gospel, when I left Macedonia, no church shared with me in the matter of giving and receiving, except you alone. [16] For even when I was in Thessalonica, you sent me help for my needs more than once. [17] Not that I seek the gift, but I seek the profit that accumulates to your account. [18] I have been paid in full and have more than enough; I am fully satisfied, now that I have received from Epaphroditus the gifts you sent, a fragrant offering, a sacrifice acceptable and pleasing to God. [19] And my God will fully satisfy every need of yours according to his riches in glory in Christ Jesus. [20] To our God and Father be glory forever and ever. Amen.

[21] Greet every saint in Christ Jesus. The friends[a] who are with me greet you. [22] All the saints greet you, especially those of the emperor's household.

[23] The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit.[b]

[a] Gk *brothers*

[b] Other ancient authorities add *Amen*

with new motivation because of Christ. **15–16:** *Macedonia, Thessalonica,* according to Acts 17.1, Paul had gone to Thessalonica in Greece immediately after his stay in Philippi. **15,17,18:** *Giving and receiving, profit . . . account, paid in full,* a series of business terms used metaphorically here and in other contexts of friendship. **18:** *Fragrant offering,* Gen 8.21; Ex 29.18; Ezek 20.41.

4.21–23: Conclusion. 22: *The emperor's household,* members of the imperial civil service who are believers where Paul is confined. This need not be in Rome, but wherever there was a Roman administrative center.

THE LETTER OF PAUL TO THE COLOSSIANS

NAME

This letter is named for its recipients, the Christian community in the city of Colossae (1.2), a community that had been founded by a Colossian associate of Paul named Epaphras (1.7–8; 4.12–13). Colossae, once a thriving town on the Lycus River in the Roman province of Asia, fell into decay after an earthquake ca. 60 CE; the site has not yet been excavated.

AUTHORSHIP AND DATE

Despite its similarity to the undisputed letters of Paul in structure, language, and theology, the letter to the Colossians lacks some central Pauline terms, uses new theological vocabulary, and is composed in a more elevated, liturgical style. Two theological differences stand out: first, the vision of believers' present lives as almost completely transformed by Christ's death and resurrection (3.1–4), instead of Paul's usual tension between the partial experience of salvation in the present and the future resurrection that ushers in the full enjoyment of Christ's benefits (e.g., Rom 6.4); second, the use of household rules to define ethical norms (3.18–4.1), which is more characteristic of other post-Pauline literature, such as Ephesians, the Pastoral Letters, and 1 Peter, than of Paul's own ethical instructions on similar themes (e.g., 1 Cor 7). Such differences have led some scholars to conclude that Colossians was written in Paul's name by one of his disciples—either during Paul's lifetime or shortly after his death (ca. 65 CE)—in order to authorize the application of Paul's thought to a new situation. Other scholars, noting its close similarities to the letter to Philemon, think the letter was written by Paul himself while imprisoned (4.3,10,18) at Rome near the end of his life, and attribute theological contrasts to shifts in Paul's thinking and the particular situation addressed in the letter. Colossians also has significant similarities to Ephesians and was probably used as a model by the author of that letter (see p. 2053).

HISTORICAL CONTEXT

Although the letter begins with a highly complimentary description of the Colossians' lives, unnamed teachers pose a threat to their faith. The lack of an independent description of these teachings makes their precise identification difficult. It appears that these teachings advocated observance of Jewish rituals and pursuit of mystical experiences through asceticism (2.8–23) and that they are best understood as a form of Jewish apocalyptical mysticism, although some scholars have preferred to see a synthesis of Judaism with proto-Gnostic thought, local Phrygian religious practices, or Hellenistic philosophy. The attractiveness of Jewish elements in this spirituality reflects the ongoing close connections between Jewish and Christian communities; the polemical tone of this letter (for instance, "empty deceit, according to human tradition," 2.8), however, represents an emerging first-century Christian ambivalence toward Judaism among non-Jewish believers. This tension is exemplified in Colossians where a Jewish eschatological outlook and moral commitments are central to the author's Christian vision, and yet Jewish practices, including celebrating holy days and observing dietary laws, are rejected as incompatible with Christ.

STRUCTURE AND INTERPRETATION

Colossians follows the usual structure of a Pauline letter (see p. 1973), beginning with a greeting (1.1–2), an introductory thanksgiving (1.3–8) and prayer (1.9–14), and ending with greetings and instructions (4.7–18). The body of the letter includes both a theological argument (2.6–23) and ethical instructions (3.1–4.6). The basis of the theological argument is presented in 1.12–2.5. In the elevated words of an early Christian hymn, Christ is praised as the supreme power over the cosmos and the church (1.15–20). Although demonic forces enslaved humanity in the past, Christians have been freed from their influence, forgiven through Christ's death, and made full citizens of the kingdom of Christ, to whom they now owe complete allegiance (1.12–14,21–23). Christ's identity as the perfect revelation of God (1.19; 2.9–10) and as the single source of wisdom about how to live rightly (1.9–10; 2.2–3) is emphasized. The main theological argument focuses on the change in believers' existence achieved

by Christ's death on the cross (2.9–15); the recurring contrasts of death and life (2.12–13,20; 3.1–5), old and new (3.9–10), and past and present (1.12–14,21–23) emphasize the fundamental psychological and moral reorientation required of the faithful. Because Jewish rituals and mystical experiences of angelic worship do not foster allegiance to Christ and belong to the old order as well as to pagan superstitions about astrological powers, the author argues they must be rejected as implicit denials of Christ's lordship. The members of a true Christian community, rejecting their previous immoral lifestyle (3.5–11) and reorienting their entire lives around Christ as Lord (3.1–4), are to live in harmony with each other as they worship and give thanks to God and Christ (3.12–17). However, the description of the ideal household (3.18–4.1), as presented by the author, is only a mildly Christianized version of the ancient patriarchal family rather than a reconsideration of family relationships based on the equality of all in the new community and the principles of mutual love and forgiveness (3.10–15). Colossians has provided fertile ground for theological speculation from the second century CE on; perhaps most significant is the role of 1.15–20 in the christological debates of the fourth century.

GUIDE TO READING

The argument of Colossians rests upon a series of contrasts (hidden/revealed; above/below; shadow/substance; human/divine; once/now; strip off/clothe), each of which hinges upon the author's understanding of Jesus' death. This key event is understood in apocalyptic terms, and the reader will benefit by keeping in mind that this letter is rooted in a world thought to be populated by a multitude of spiritual entities enmeshed in cosmic conflict and awaiting the final judgment of God.

Jennifer K. Berenson

1 Paul, an apostle of Christ Jesus by the will of God, and Timothy our brother,

[2] To the saints and faithful brothers and sisters[a] in Christ in Colossae:

Grace to you and peace from God our Father.

[3] In our prayers for you we always thank God, the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, [4] for we have heard of your faith in Christ Jesus and of the love that you have for all the saints, [5] because of the hope laid up for you in heaven. You have heard of this hope before in the word of the truth, the gospel [6] that has come to you. Just as it is bearing fruit and growing in the whole world, so it has been bearing fruit among yourselves from the day you heard it and truly comprehended the grace of God. [7] This you learned from Epaphras, our beloved fellow servant.[b] He is a faithful minister of Christ on your[c] behalf, [8] and he has made known to us your love in the Spirit.

[9] For this reason, since the day we heard it, we have not ceased praying for you and asking that you may be filled with the knowledge of God's[d] will in all spiritual wisdom and understanding, [10] so that you may lead lives worthy of the Lord, fully pleasing to him, as you bear fruit in every good work and as you grow in the knowledge of God. [11] May you

[a] Gk *brothers*
[b] Gk *slave*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *our*
[d] Gk *his*

1.1–2: Salutation. **1:** *Apostle . . . by the will of God*, see 1.25; Rom 1.1n. *Timothy*, Paul's fellow missionary and emissary (Philem 1; 2 Cor 1.1; Phil 1.1; 2.19–24). *Brother* indicates a bond of affection and loyalty. **2:** *Saints*, literally "holy ones," refers to all believers. *Brothers and sisters*, the Greek "brothers" (see note *a*) includes both men and women. *Grace . . . peace*, a common Pauline greeting drawing upon and transforming conventional Greek (*grace*) and Hebrew (*peace*) salutations.

1.3–8: Thanksgiving for prior obedience. **3–5:** *Faith, hope,* and *love*, a summary of Christian virtues (1 Cor 13.13; 1 Thess 5.8). **4:** *Faith*, here allegiance or loyalty. 5: *Gospel*, in general, proclamation of good news, as of a military victory; here referring to Christ's victory over death and cosmic powers (see 2.15). **6:** *The whole world,* hyperbole for all the Christian communities in Roman cities. **7:** *Epaphras*, founder of the church in Colossae (4.12–13; Philem 23).

1.9–14: Prayer for future growth in knowledge (v. 9), moral maturity (v. 10), and endurance (v. 11). **9:** *Spiritual*

be made strong with all the strength that comes from his glorious power, and may you be prepared to endure everything with patience, while joyfully [12] giving thanks to the Father, who has enabled[a] you[b] to share in the inheritance of the saints in the light. [13] He has rescued us from the power of darkness and transferred us into the kingdom of his beloved Son, [14] in whom we have redemption, the forgiveness of sins.[c]

[15] He is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of all creation; [16] for in[d] him all things in heaven and on earth were created, things visible and invisible, whether thrones or dominions or rulers or powers—all things have been created through him and for him. [17] He himself is before all things, and in[d] him all things hold together. [18] He is the head of the body, the church; he is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead, so that he might come to have first place in everything. [19] For in him all the fullness of God was pleased to dwell, [20] and through him God was pleased to reconcile to himself all things, whether on earth or in heaven, by making peace through the blood of his cross.

[21] And you who were once estranged and hostile in mind, doing evil deeds, [22] he has now reconciled[e] in his fleshly body[f] through death, so as to present you holy and blameless and irreproachable before him— [23] provided that you continue securely established and steadfast in the faith, without shifting from the hope promised by the gospel that you heard, which has been proclaimed to every creature under heaven. I, Paul, became a servant of this gospel.

[24] I am now rejoicing in my sufferings for your sake, and in my flesh I am completing what is lacking in Christ's afflictions for the sake of his body, that is, the church. [25] I became its servant according to God's commission that was given to me for you, to make the word of God fully known, [26] the mystery that has been hidden throughout the ages and generations but has now been revealed to his saints. [27] To them God chose to make known how great among the Gentiles are the riches of the glory of this mystery, which is Christ in you, the hope of glory. [28] It is he whom we proclaim, warning everyone and teaching everyone in all wisdom, so that we

[a] Other ancient authorities read *called*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *us*
[c] Other ancient authorities add *through his blood*
[d] Or *by*
[e] Other ancient authorities read *you have now been reconciled*
[f] Gk *in the body of his flesh*

wisdom and understanding, a major theme of the letter (1.25–28; 2.2–4,9–15). **12–14:** Perhaps a fragment of a baptismal hymn. **12–13:** *Light . . . darkness*, apocalyptic imagery for the opposing domains of God and malevolent spiritual beings (see 1.16n.; 1 Thess 5.5). **12:** *Inheritance*, a metaphor for God's blessings based on Israel's inheritance of the land as a gift of God. **14:** *Redemption*, release from slavery to demonic powers.

1.15–20: The supremacy of Christ over the cosmos (vv. 15–17) and the church (vv. 18–20), expressed as a hymn in which Jesus' relationship to creation is based on the Jewish figure Wisdom/Sophia (Prov 8; Sir 24; Wis 6–9; see also Jn 1.1–18; Phil 2.6–11). **15:** *Image*, the perfect, visible manifestation of God. *Firstborn* expresses priority and supremacy. **16:** *Thrones . . . powers*, hostile spiritual beings (1.13; 2.15; Eph 6.12). **18:** *Head*, ruling authority or originator; see Eph 1.22; 5.23. *The body, the church*, both terms stem from ancient political discourse for a community assembly and its unity and coherence; see Rom 12.4–5; 1 Cor 12.27. See also Eph 1.22–23n. *Firstborn from the dead*, the first of those to be resurrected from the dead (1 Cor 15.20,23; Acts 26.23; Rev 1.5). **19:** *Fullness of God*, the power and presence of God in Christ (see also 1.29; 2.9–10). **20:** *Reconcile . . . making peace*, the enslavement of humanity to demonic powers is presupposed here (1.13–14; 2.15).

1.21–23: Assurance and warning. 21: *Hostile in mind, doing evil deeds*, interrelated aspects of the former life (Rom 1.18–32). **22:** *Fleshly body*, an emphatic contrast with Christ's heavenly origins (2.11; cf. 1.15–17). *To present you . . . before him,* reconciliation is completed by Christ's approval at the eschatological judgment (v. 28). **23:** Concern for continued allegiance to Christ is the motivation for the letter (see 2.6–20).

1.24–2.5: Paul's mission and pastoral commitment. 1.24: *Sufferings*, imprisonment (4.3,10,18) and hardships experienced while preaching the gospel (2 Cor 4.7–12; 11.23–28). *Completing . . . afflictions*, not a denigration of Christ's death but a reflection of the belief that God's people must suffer before the culmination of history (1 Cor 4.9; Rev 6.9–11). **26–27:** *Mystery*, the previously hidden plan of God; here, the gospel proclaimed to Gen-

may present everyone mature in Christ. [29] For this I toil and struggle with all the energy that he powerfully inspires within me.

2 For I want you to know how much I am struggling for you, and for those in Laodicea, and for all who have not seen me face to face. [2] I want their hearts to be encouraged and united in love, so that they may have all the riches of assured understanding and have the knowledge of God's mystery, that is, Christ himself,[a] [3] in whom are hidden all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge. [4] I am saying this so that no one may deceive you with plausible arguments. [5] For though I am absent in body, yet I am with you in spirit, and I rejoice to see your morale and the firmness of your faith in Christ.

[6] As you therefore have received Christ Jesus the Lord, continue to live your lives[b] in him, [7] rooted and built up in him and established in the faith, just as you were taught, abounding in thanksgiving.

[8] See to it that no one takes you captive through philosophy and empty deceit, according to human tradition, according to the elemental spirits of the universe,[c] and not according to Christ. [9] For in him the whole fullness of deity dwells bodily, [10] and you have come to fullness in him, who is the head of every ruler and authority. [11] In him also you were circumcised with a spiritual circumcision,[d] by putting off the body of the flesh in the circumcision of Christ; [12] when you were buried with him in baptism, you were also raised with him through faith in the power of God, who raised him from the dead. [13] And when you were dead in trespasses and the uncircumcision of your flesh, God[e] made you[f] alive together with him, when he forgave us all our trespasses, [14] erasing the record that stood against us with its legal demands. He set this aside, nailing it to the cross. [15] He disarmed[g] the rulers and authorities and made a public example of them, triumphing over them in it.

[16] Therefore do not let anyone condemn you in matters of food and drink or of observing festivals, new moons, or sabbaths. [17] These are only a shadow of what is to come, but the substance belongs to Christ. [18] Do not let anyone disqualify you, insisting on self-abasement and worship of angels, dwelling[h] on visions,[i] puffed up without cause by a

[a] Other ancient authorities read *of the mystery of God, both of the Father and of Christ*
[b] Gk *to walk*
[c] Or *the rudiments of the world*
[d] Gk *a circumcision made without hands*
[e] Gk *he*
[f] Other ancient authorities read *made us*; others, *made*
[g] Or *divested himself of*
[h] Other ancient authorities read *not dwelling*
[i] Meaning of Gk uncertain

tiles (2.2; 4.3; Rom 16.25–26; cf. Eph 1.10; 3.2–6). *Hope of glory*, the expectation of eschatological approval. **2.1:** *Laodicea*, see 4.13n. **2:** *Mystery* here refers to Christ as preached to Gentiles. **5:** *Morale*, *firmness*, terminology evoking military discipline.

2.6–23: Theological Argument. 2.6–15: Instruction on Christ and the cross. 6–7: Thematic statement of the letter (see Introduction; 1.21–23; 3.1–4). **6:** *Received*, a technical term for the reception of oral tradition; here, that Jesus is Lord (Rom 10.9). **8:** *Philosophy* includes ethical and religious teachings. *Human tradition*, in contrast to God's revelation through Paul. *Elemental spirits*, spiritual entities or perhaps the four primal elements; they are associated with the Jewish law in Gal 4.1–5,9–10. **9–10:** See 1.19n. **11:** *Circumcision* was a physical mark of membership in Israel. *By putting off . . . flesh*, a graphic description of Christ's death and the event of baptism (*spiritual circumcision*). **12:** *You were also raised*, Paul is usually reluctant to speak of a spiritual resurrection of believers in the present (see Introduction). **13:** *Uncircumcision of your flesh*, the Colossians were Gentiles. **14:** *Record . . . demands*, a document detailing transgressions, perhaps similar to that in Dan 7.10 and Rev 20.12. **15:** *Rulers and authorities*, see 1.16n. *Disarmed . . . public example*, as Rome's vanquished enemies were displayed in a victorious parade or "triumph."

2.16–23: Warnings against outmoded religious practices. 16: *Matters of food and drink*, observance of Jewish dietary laws. *Festivals, new moons, or sabbaths*, summary of the Jewish religious calendar (e.g., 2 Chr 8.13; Neh 10.33). *New moons* mark the beginning of each lunar month. **17:** *Shadow . . . substance*, Platonic language indicating the superiority of Christ (see Heb 8.5n.). **18:** Through rigorous asceticism (*self-abasement*) achieving a mystical ascent to heaven (*dwelling on visions*); *worship of angels* may refer to participating in angelic worship

human way of thinking,[a] 19 and not holding fast to the head, from whom the whole body, nourished and held together by its ligaments and sinews, grows with a growth that is from God.

20 If with Christ you died to the elemental spirits of the universe,[b] why do you live as if you still belonged to the world? Why do you submit to regulations, 21 "Do not handle, Do not taste, Do not touch"? 22 All these regulations refer to things that perish with use; they are simply human commands and teachings. 23 These have indeed an appearance of wisdom in promoting self-imposed piety, humility, and severe treatment of the body, but they are of no value in checking self-indulgence.[c]

3 So if you have been raised with Christ, seek the things that are above, where Christ is, seated at the right hand of God. 2 Set your minds on things that are above, not on things that are on earth, 3 for you have died, and your life is hidden with Christ in God. 4 When Christ who is your[d] life is revealed, then you also will be revealed with him in glory.

5 Put to death, therefore, whatever in you is earthly: fornication, impurity, passion, evil desire, and greed (which is idolatry). 6 On account of these the wrath of God is coming on those who are disobedient.[e] 7 These are the ways you also once followed, when you were living that life.[f] 8 But now you must get rid of all such things—anger, wrath, malice, slander, and abusive[g] language from your mouth. 9 Do not lie to one another, seeing that you have stripped off the old self with its practices 10 and have clothed yourselves with the new self, which is being renewed in knowledge according to the image of its creator. 11 In that renewal[h] there is no longer Greek and Jew, circumcised and uncircumcised, barbarian, Scythian, slave and free; but Christ is all and in all!

12 As God's chosen ones, holy and beloved, clothe yourselves with compassion, kindness, humility, meekness, and patience. 13 Bear with one another and, if anyone has a complaint against another, forgive each other; just as the Lord[i] has forgiven you, so you also must forgive. 14 Above all, clothe yourselves with love, which binds everything together in perfect harmony. 15 And let the peace of Christ rule in your hearts, to which indeed you were called in the one body. And be thankful. 16 Let

[a] Gk *by the mind of his flesh*
[b] Or *the rudiments of the world*
[c] Or *are of no value, serving only to indulge the flesh*
[d] Other authorities read *our*
[e] Other ancient authorities lack *on those who are disobedient* (Gk *the children of disobedience*)
[f] Or *living among such people*
[g] Or *filthy*
[h] Gk *its creator*, *11where*
[i] Other ancient authorities read *just as Christ*

of God or to revering angels. **19:** *Head, body*, see 1.18n. **20:** *Died to the elemental spirits*, no longer under their authority (vv. 8–15). *As if . . . world*, see 2.11; 3.1–3. **21:** Jewish purity regulations. **22:** See Mk 7.7,19. **23:** *They are of no value*, the criticism is either that such practices do not address the author's moral concerns (3.5,8) or that they inappropriately focus on the body.

3.1–4.6: Ethical implications. 3.1–4: Maintain a heavenly perspective. 1: *Raised*, 2.12. *Seated*, see Eph 1.19–20n. **1–2:** *Seek . . . above . . . set . . . above*, commands to orient one's life around the heavenly reality of Christ's exaltation and authority. **3:** *Died*, see 2.20n. *Hidden*, not disclosed to outsiders, but already revealed to believers (1.26; 2.3). **4:** *Is revealed*, to all at the eschatological judgment (1 Cor 2.6–16).

3.5–11: Reject sins of previous life. 5: *Put to death*, vehemently refuse to engage in. *Fornication . . . evil desire,* inappropriate sexual behavior. *Idolatry*, often linked with sexual sins in Jewish thought (Hos 4.12–19; Rom 1.23–27; 1 Cor 10.7–8). **6:** *Wrath*, God's eschatological judgment. **8:** *Anger . . . abusive language*, a list of vices commonly condemned in antiquity (cf. 1 Cor 6.9; Gal 5.19–21). **9–10:** *Old self . . . new self,* another contrast emphasizing the new act of creation (*image of its creator* recalls Gen 1.26–27) brought about by baptism (2.12). *Stripped off . . . clothed*, metaphor for adopting a new way of life (3.12–14; Eph 4.22–24). **11:** An eloquent rejection of privileges based on ethnicity and socioeconomic status; cf. the additional abrogation of a gender hierarchy in Gal 3.28. *Barbarian . . . Scythian*, shorthand in antiquity for uncultured peoples.

3.12–17: Adopt virtues of the new life. 12: *Compassion . . . patience*, virtues emphasizing a proper attitude toward oneself and genuine concern for others. **13:** *Forgive*, Eph 4.32; cf. Mt 6.14–15. **14–15:** For some modern

the word of Christ[a] dwell in you richly; teach and admonish one another in all wisdom; and with gratitude in your hearts sing psalms, hymns, and spiritual songs to God.[b] 17 And whatever you do, in word or deed, do everything in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God the Father through him.

18 Wives, be subject to your husbands, as is fitting in the Lord. 19 Husbands, love your wives and never treat them harshly.

20 Children, obey your parents in everything, for this is your acceptable duty in the Lord. 21 Fathers, do not provoke your children, or they may lose heart. 22 Slaves, obey your earthly masters[c] in everything, not only while being watched and in order to please them, but wholeheartedly, fearing the Lord.[c] 23 Whatever your task, put yourselves into it, as done for the Lord and not for your masters,[d] 24 since you know that from the Lord you will receive the inheritance as your reward; you serve[e] the Lord Christ. 25 For the wrongdoer will be paid back for whatever wrong has been done, and there is no partiality. **4** 1 Masters, treat your slaves justly and fairly, for you know that you also have a Master in heaven.

2 Devote yourselves to prayer, keeping alert in it with thanksgiving. 3 At the same time pray for us as well that God will open to us a door for the word, that we may declare the mystery of Christ, for which I am in prison, 4 so that I may reveal it clearly, as I should.

5 Conduct yourselves wisely toward outsiders, making the most of the time.[f] 6 Let your speech always be gracious, seasoned with salt, so that you may know how you ought to answer everyone.

7 Tychicus will tell you all the news about me; he is a beloved brother, a faithful minister, and a fellow servant[g] in the Lord. 8 I have sent him to you for this very purpose, so that you may know how we are[h] and that he may encourage your hearts; 9 he is coming with Onesimus, the faithful and beloved brother, who is one of you. They will tell you about everything here.

10 Aristarchus my fellow prisoner greets you, as does Mark the cousin of Barnabas, concerning whom you have received instructions—if he comes to you, welcome him. 11 And Jesus who is called Justus greets you. These are the only ones of the circumcision among my co-workers for the kingdom of God, and they have been a comfort to me. 12 Epaphras, who is one of you, a servant[g] of Christ Jesus, greets you. He is always wrestling in his prayers on your behalf, so that you may stand mature and

[a] Other ancient authorities read *of God*, or *of the Lord*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *to the Lord*
[c] In Greek the same word is used for *master* and *Lord*
[d] Gk *not for men*
[e] Or *you are slaves of*, or *be slaves of*
[f] Or *opportunity*
[g] Gk *slave*
[h] Other authorities read *that I may know how you are*

readers this call for unity will be at odds with the imposition of unity through authority (see 3.18–4.1). **16:** *Word of Christ*, teachings concerning Christ.

3.18–4.1: Rules for household relationships. This passage adopts a popular philosophical format of paired commands (wife/husband, etc.) for describing the ancient ideal of the patriarchal family and defends it as appropriate for a community dedicated to Christ as Lord (see the more extensive theological justification in Eph 5.22–6.9). The commands to the male figure somewhat moderate his traditional prerogatives (see 3.19,21; 4.1). **18–19:** Relations between *wives* and *husbands*. **18:** *Be subject*, accept a position of subordination to the husband's authority. The role of Nympha (4.15n) may indicate that these rules were not consistently enforced. **19:** *Never treat them harshly*, alternatively, "do not be embittered against them." **20–21:** Relations between *children* and *fathers*, see Eph 6.1–4 and notes. **3.22–4.1:** Relations between *slaves* and *masters*, see Eph 6.5–9 and notes.

4.2–6: Final admonitions. 3: *Door for the word*, an opportunity to preach. *Mystery*, see 1.26–27n. *Prison*, see 1.24n. **5:** *Making the most*, recognizing the eschatological urgency. **6:** *Salt*, graciousness or wit.

4.7–18: Final greetings and instructions. 7: *Tychicus*, Paul's associate (Acts 20.4; 2 Tim 4.12), commended like Epaphras (cf. 1.7). **9:** *Onesimus*, Philem 10–21. **10:** *Aristarchus*, Acts 20.4; 27.2; Philem 24. *Welcome him*, cf. Paul's conflict with Mark in Acts 13.13; 15.37–39. **11:** *The circumcision*, the Jews, here without negative connotations (cf.

fully assured in everything that God wills.
13 For I testify for him that he has worked
hard for you and for those in Laodicea and
in Hierapolis. 14 Luke, the beloved physician,
and Demas greet you. 15 Give my greetings
to the brothers and sisters[a] in Laodicea, and
to Nympha and the church in her house.
16 And when this letter has been read among
you, have it read also in the church of the
Laodiceans; and see that you read also the
letter from Laodicea. 17 And say to Archip-
pus, "See that you complete the task that
you have received in the Lord."

18 I, Paul, write this greeting with my own
hand. Remember my chains. Grace be with
you.[b]

[a] Gk *brothers*
[b] Other ancient authorities add *Amen*

Gal 2.12). **12:** *Epaphras*, see 1.7n. **13:** *Laodicea*, *Hierapolis*, cities located 10 and 15 miles (16 and 24 km), respectively, northwest of Colossae. **14:** *Luke*, 2 Tim 4.11; Philem 24. Traditionally identified as the author of the Gospel of Luke and Acts (see respective Introductions). *Demas*, 2 Tim 4.10; Philem 24. **15:** *Brothers and sisters*, see Eph 6.23n. *Nympha*, probably the leader of the church that met in her home (see Philem 1–2). **16:** *The letter from Laodicea*, a letter of Paul that has not survived, although some scholars identify it with Ephesians. **17:** *Archippus*, Philem 2. **18:** A final word in the author's handwriting to authenticate the letter (cf. 1 Cor 16.21; Gal 6.11); the rest of the letter would have been dictated to a secretary (see Rom 16.22).

THE FIRST LETTER OF PAUL TO THE THESSALONIANS

NAME AND CANONICAL STATUS

This letter is named for its recipients, the Christian community in Thessalonica in Macedonia in northern Greece. The title is not an original part of the text itself, but was added when the letters of Paul were copied and collected together. The title in the earliest Greek manuscripts is the simple form "To the Thessalonians 1." From the second century on this letter has been accepted as part of the collection of letters of Paul within what became the New Testament canon.

AUTHORSHIP, DATE, AND HISTORICAL CONTEXT

Like 2 Thessalonians, 1 Thessalonians identifies its senders as Paul, Silvanus, and Timothy (1.1), though Paul is clearly the leading author (see 2.18; 3.1–5; 5.27). Its authenticity as a genuine letter of Paul is seldom questioned.

First Thessalonians is widely regarded as Paul's earliest letter, written from Corinth during his founding mission there; Athens, mentioned in 1 Thess 3:1, has sometimes been seen as the letter's place of origin, especially by early Christian interpreters. Acts 17–18 records Paul's visits to Thessalonica and then, via Athens, to Corinth. The date of the letter therefore corresponds with Paul's Corinthian mission, usually dated about 49–51 CE, but sometimes earlier, between 41–44 CE. Thessalonica was the capital of the Roman province of Macedonia, while Corinth lay farther south in the province of Achaia. Both cities were located on important land and sea routes; Paul's mission focused on such urban centers.

LITERARY HISTORY, STRUCTURE, AND CONTENTS

It has sometimes been argued that the letter as we now have it is composed of earlier letters, later woven into one. Some sections of the letter (especially 2.14–16) have been proposed as later additions to the text. Most scholars, however, agree that what we have is a single letter, not a composite.

The structure and contents of 1 Thessalonians may be outlined as follows:

1.1	Opening greeting
1.2–10	Opening thanksgiving and remembrance of the Thessalonians' response to the gospel
2.1–12	Recalling the conduct of Paul and his co-workers toward the Thessalonians, despite hardships
2.13–16	The Thessalonians' response to the gospel, and their hardships
2.17–3.13	Paul's desire to see the Thessalonians, and Timothy's good report about them
4.1–12	Ethical instructions on the Christian life
4.13–5.11	Teaching about the fate of those who have died and about the coming day of the Lord
5.12–24	Practical instruction about life in the church
5.25–28	Closing greeting

INTERPRETATION

A pastoral letter of encouragement and exhortation, 1 Thessalonians reflects a warm and affectionate relationship between Paul and the Christians at Thessalonica. Unlike some other letters of Paul, it is not concerned to combat what Paul sees as false teaching or immoral conduct. The first three chapters recall the enthusiastic response of the Thessalonians to the gospel, and the mutual affection between them and the apostolic missionaries. Both groups have faced hardships but have remained faithful. Paul longs to visit them again and is heartened by the good reports of their "faith and love" (3.6) that Timothy has brought. The last two chapters are more focused on instruction, but even here Paul is concerned to commend the Thessalonians' good conduct (4.1,9). The main issue addressed in these chapters is Thessalonian worries about those who have died. Paul seeks to reassure and comfort them, while also exhorting them to readiness for the coming day of salvation. This instruction about the coming of the Lord, and the salvation of believers both living

and dead, has been influential in the development of doctrine concerning the nature of Christian hope and future expectation.

GUIDE TO READING

It is important to read this text as a letter, appreciating its origins in the relationship between the apostolic missionaries and the community they founded. Paul expresses a warm parental and pastoral concern for his converts. The theme of imitation is significant: the Thessalonians have suffered, yet have remained faithful and joyful, a pattern found in other churches (2.14), in Paul, and in the Lord himself (1.6). The teaching on the coming of the Lord and the fate of believers needs to be interpreted in the context of lively early Christian belief: the return of Christ was expected very soon. Consequently this first generation of converts had to face the question of why some of their number had died before the day of salvation had arrived. A significant issue for contemporary Christian readers is what kind of expectation is appropriate now, two thousand years later.

David G. Horrell

1 Paul, Silvanus, and Timothy,
To the church of the Thessalonians in God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ:
Grace to you and peace.

[2] We always give thanks to God for all of you and mention you in our prayers, constantly [3] remembering before our God and Father your work of faith and labor of love and steadfastness of hope in our Lord Jesus Christ. [4] For we know, brothers and sisters[a] beloved by God, that he has chosen you, [5] because our message of the gospel came to you not in word only, but also in power and in the Holy Spirit and with full conviction; just as you know what kind of persons we proved to be among you for your sake. [6] And you became imitators of us and of the Lord, for in spite of persecution you received the word with joy inspired by the Holy Spirit, [7] so that you became an example to all the believers in Macedonia and in Achaia. [8] For the word of the Lord has sounded forth from you not only in Macedonia and Achaia, but in every place your faith in God has become known, so that we have no need to speak about it. [9] For the people of those regions[b] report about us what kind of welcome we had among you, and how you turned to God from idols, to serve a living and true God, [10] and to

[a] Gk *brothers*
[b] Gk *For they*

1.1: Greeting. The opening follows the basic pattern of ancient Greek letters, listing the senders and recipients and expressing a greeting. *Silvanus* is the Latin form of Silas, one of Paul's companions (Acts 15.22,40; 17.1). *Timothy* was also a co-worker with Paul and an important emissary (3.2,6; cf. 1 Cor 16.10–11; Phil 2.19–24). *Church:* the Greek word "ekklesia" refers to an assembly, originally of citizens in the city-state. The phrase *grace and peace* reflects both Greek and Jewish forms of greeting.

1.2–10: Opening thanksgiving. Greek letters typically opened with a prayer or an expression of thanks for the health of the recipients. Paul and his coauthors express their thanks for the Thessalonians' response to the gospel. **3:** *Faith . . . love . . . hope,* cf. 5.8; 1 Cor 13.13. **4:** *Brothers and sisters,* the Greek word "adelphoi" refers to all members of the community; this is Paul's most common way of addressing recipients of his letters and suggests that they form a family of siblings. This and other descriptions—especially *chosen*—draw on biblical terms for the people of Israel (Deut 7.6–7; 14.2). **5:** The presentation of the gospel involved not only words but also deeds that demonstrated the Spirit's power (cf. Rom 15.19; 2 Cor 12.12). **6–8:** The Thessalonians have experienced *persecution* or suffering, though the precise cause or nature of this suffering is not made clear (cf. 2.14; 3.3–4,7); their faithful perseverance in this marks them as *imitators* of Paul and of the Lord. In turn they have become an *example,* or role model, for Christians elsewhere in *Macedonia* and *Achaia,* the two Roman provinces in Greece (see Introduction). **9–10:** A summary of what the Thessalonians' response to the gospel meant. *Turned . . . from idols* indicates that the converts were Gentiles. The expectation of salvation on the imminent day of judgment is also evident.

2.1–12: The conduct of Paul and his co-workers. 1–8: This description emphasizes the integrity and pastoral

wait for his Son from heaven, whom he raised from the dead—Jesus, who rescues us from the wrath that is coming.

2 You yourselves know, brothers and sisters,[a] that our coming to you was not in vain, [2] but though we had already suffered and been shamefully mistreated at Philippi, as you know, we had courage in our God to declare to you the gospel of God in spite of great opposition. [3] For our appeal does not spring from deceit or impure motives or trickery, [4] but just as we have been approved by God to be entrusted with the message of the gospel, even so we speak, not to please mortals, but to please God who tests our hearts. [5] As you know and as God is our witness, we never came with words of flattery or with a pretext for greed; [6] nor did we seek praise from mortals, whether from you or from others, [7] though we might have made demands as apostles of Christ. But we were gentle[b] among you, like a nurse tenderly caring for her own children. [8] So deeply do we care for you that we are determined to share with you not only the gospel of God but also our own selves, because you have become very dear to us.

[9] You remember our labor and toil, brothers and sisters;[a] we worked night and day, so that we might not burden any of you while we proclaimed to you the gospel of God. [10] You are witnesses, and God also, how pure, upright, and blameless our conduct was toward you believers. [11] As you know, we dealt with each one of you like a father with his children, [12] urging and encouraging you and pleading that you lead a life worthy of God, who calls you into his own kingdom and glory.

[13] We also constantly give thanks to God for this, that when you received the word of God that you heard from us, you accepted it not as a human word but as what it really is, God's word, which is also at work in you believers. [14] For you, brothers and sisters,[a] became imitators of the churches of God in Christ Jesus that are in Judea, for you suffered the same things from your own compatriots as they did from the Jews, [15] who killed both the Lord Jesus and the prophets,[c] and drove us out; they displease God and oppose everyone [16] by hindering us from speaking to the Gentiles so that they may be saved. Thus they have constantly been filling up the measure of their sins; but God's wrath has overtaken them at last.[d]

[17] As for us, brothers and sisters,[a] when, for a short time, we were made orphans by being separated from you—in person, not in heart—we longed with great eagerness to see you face to face. [18] For we wanted to come to you—certainly I, Paul, wanted to again and again—but Satan blocked our way. [19] For what is our hope or joy or crown of boasting before

[a] Gk *brothers*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *infants*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *their own prophets*
[d] Or *completely* or *forever*

concern of Paul and his fellow missionaries. **2:** Despite *opposition* (Gk "agon," meaning "contest"), they struggled on. On the mistreatment at *Philippi,* see Acts 16.19–40. **3–6:** Other traveling missionaries might do things from baser motives (cf. 2 Cor 2.17; 11.20; *Did.* 11–12). **7:** *Like a nurse*, a wet nurse or nursing mother, a striking image of the character of Paul's pastoral concern. **9:** As elsewhere, Paul insisted on working to support himself rather than depending on the congregation for support (1 Cor 9.1–18; 2 Thess 3.7–8). **11:** *Like a father,* another image of care for children (cf. v. 7; 1 Cor 4.15; 2 Cor 12.14). **12:** Paul's main aim as founding father of the community is to enable the Thessalonians to *lead a life worthy of God* (see 4.1–12).

2.13–16: The Thessalonians' response to the gospel, and their hardships. The opposition the Thessalonians have encountered from their non-Christian neighbors (primarily Gentiles) is paralleled with Jewish opposition to the Christian movement in Judea, and more generally to the *prophets* that God had sent (see Lk 11.47; 13.34; Acts 7.52). This opposition has brought *God's wrath* upon the perpetrators: Paul apparently has in mind a judgment of particular Jews at some specific time, perhaps their expulsion from Rome in 41 or 49 CE.

2.17–3.13: Paul's desire to see the Thessalonians and Timothy's good report about them. The strong and affectionate bond between Paul and the Thessalonians is again clearly displayed. **2.18:** *Satan*, the adversary, who deceives and tempts (1 Cor 7.5; 2 Cor 2.11; 11.14). **19:** A *crown* is the laurel wreath won by an athlete. The *coming*

our Lord Jesus at his coming? Is it not you?
20 Yes, you are our glory and joy!

3 Therefore when we could bear it no longer, we decided to be left alone in Athens; 2 and we sent Timothy, our brother and co-worker for God in proclaiming[a] the gospel of Christ, to strengthen and encourage you for the sake of your faith, 3 so that no one would be shaken by these persecutions. Indeed, you yourselves know that this is what we are destined for. 4 In fact, when we were with you, we told you beforehand that we were to suffer persecution; so it turned out, as you know. 5 For this reason, when I could bear it no longer, I sent to find out about your faith; I was afraid that somehow the tempter had tempted you and that our labor had been in vain.

6 But Timothy has just now come to us from you, and has brought us the good news of your faith and love. He has told us also that you always remember us kindly and long to see us—just as we long to see you. 7 For this reason, brothers and sisters,[b] during all our distress and persecution we have been encouraged about you through your faith. 8 For we now live, if you continue to stand firm in the Lord. 9 How can we thank God enough for you in return for all the joy that we feel before our God because of you? 10 Night and day we pray most earnestly that we may see you face to face and restore whatever is lacking in your faith.

11 Now may our God and Father himself and our Lord Jesus direct our way to you.
12 And may the Lord make you increase and abound in love for one another and for all, just as we abound in love for you. 13 And may he so strengthen your hearts in holiness that you may be blameless before our God and Father at the coming of our Lord Jesus with all his saints.

4 Finally, brothers and sisters,[b] we ask and urge you in the Lord Jesus that, as you learned from us how you ought to live and to please God (as, in fact, you are doing), you should do so more and more.
2 For you know what instructions we gave you through the Lord Jesus. 3 For this is the will of God, your sanctification: that you abstain from fornication; 4 that each one of you know how to control your own body[c] in holiness and honor, 5 not with lustful passion, like the Gentiles who do not know God; 6 that no one wrong or exploit a brother or sister[d] in this matter, because the Lord is an avenger in all these things, just as we have already told you beforehand and solemnly warned you. 7 For God did not call us to impurity but in holiness. 8 Therefore whoever rejects this rejects not human authority but God, who also gives his Holy Spirit to you.

9 Now concerning love of the brothers and sisters,[b] you do not need to have anyone write to you, for you yourselves have been taught by God to love one another;
10 and indeed you do love all the brothers and sisters[b] throughout Macedonia. But we urge you, beloved,[b] to do so more and more,
11 to aspire to live quietly, to mind your own affairs, and to work with your hands, as we directed you, 12 so that you may behave

[a] Gk lacks *proclaiming*
[b] Gk *brothers*
[c] Or *how to take a wife for himself*
[d] Gk *brother*

(Gk "parousia") of the Lord is a key theme for the letter (see 1.10; 3.13; 4.15; 5.2,23). **3.1** On Paul in *Athens*, see Acts 17.15–18.1. **5:** *The tempter*, another reference to Satan (2.18). **11–13:** The prayer which concludes this first main section of the letter (1.1–3.13) anticipates the themes to be developed in the instruction to follow: love (4.9–12), holiness (4.3–5), and the parousia (4.15; 5.2,23). **13:** *Saints,* Christian believers.

4.1–12: Ethical instructions. 1: *To live*, lit., "to walk" (cf. 2.12; 4.12), a Jewish metaphor for a way of life, a pattern of moral conduct. Idolatry and sexual immorality are a focus of Jewish concern (e.g., Wis 14.12), as is *sanctification* (v. 3), that is, "holiness" (v. 7; the same Gk word is used). **4:** *Body*, lit., "vessel," which could refer to the man's body, or specifically his sexual organ, or to his wife. **9–12:** *Love of the brothers and sisters* (Gk "philadelphia") is the primary responsibility toward those in the church (cf. Rom 12.10); behaving in a decent and inoffensive way will, it is hoped, lessen hostility from outsiders. **11:** Working *with your own hands* would imitate Paul's own practice (2.9).

properly toward outsiders and be dependent on no one.

13 But we do not want you to be uninformed,
brothers and sisters,[a] about those who have
died,[b] so that you may not grieve as oth-
ers do who have no hope. 14 For since we
believe that Jesus died and rose again, even
so, through Jesus, God will bring with him
those who have died.[b] 15 For this we declare
to you by the word of the Lord, that we who
are alive, who are left until the coming of
the Lord, will by no means precede those
who have died.[b] 16 For the Lord himself, with
a cry of command, with the archangel's call
and with the sound of God's trumpet, will
descend from heaven, and the dead in Christ
will rise first. 17 Then we who are alive, who
are left, will be caught up in the clouds
together with them to meet the Lord in the
air; and so we will be with the Lord forever.
18 Therefore encourage one another with
these words.

5 Now concerning the times and the
seasons, brothers and sisters,[a] you do
not need to have anything written to you.
2 For you yourselves know very well that
the day of the Lord will come like a thief in
the night. 3 When they say, "There is peace
and security," then sudden destruction
will come upon them, as labor pains come
upon a pregnant woman, and there will be
no escape! 4 But you, beloved,[a] are not in
darkness, for that day to surprise you like
a thief; 5 for you are all children of light
and children of the day; we are not of the
night or of darkness. 6 So then let us not fall
asleep as others do, but let us keep awake
and be sober; 7 for those who sleep sleep at
night, and those who are drunk get drunk
at night. 8 But since we belong to the day, let
us be sober, and put on the breastplate of
faith and love, and for a helmet the hope of
salvation. 9 For God has destined us not for
wrath but for obtaining salvation through
our Lord Jesus Christ, 10 who died for us, so
that whether we are awake or asleep we may
live with him. 11 Therefore encourage one
another and build up each other, as indeed
you are doing.

12 But we appeal to you, brothers and
sisters,[a] to respect those who labor among
you, and have charge of you in the Lord and
admonish you; 13 esteem them very highly
in love because of their work. Be at peace
among yourselves. 14 And we urge you,
beloved,[a] to admonish the idlers, encour-
age the fainthearted, help the weak, be
patient with all of them. 15 See that none of
you repays evil for evil, but always seek to
do good to one another and to all. 16 Rejoice
always, 17 pray without ceasing, 18 give thanks
in all circumstances; for this is the will of
God in Christ Jesus for you. 19 Do not quench
the Spirit. 20 Do not despise the words of

[a] Gk *brothers*
[b] Gk *fallen asleep*

4.13–5.11: Teaching about the fate of those who have died and about the coming day of the Lord. Paul seeks to comfort and encourage his readers. The dead are not lost but will rise first (cf. 1 Cor 15.12–22). The imagery here (clouds, angels, trumpets, the thief in the night) is similar to that found in Mt 23.30–43, and may reflect knowledge of this traditional material; see also Isa 27.13; Zeph 1.16. **4.15** *By the word of the Lord* may indicate that this teaching stems from Jesus. **17:** *We who are alive*, Paul expects the end to come while he and some of his Thessalonian addressees are still living. *Caught up . . . in the air*: the basis for belief among some Christians in the Rapture, the physical ascension of those still living at the parousia; Paul's main point is reassurance that both living and dead *will be with the Lord forever*. **5.3:** *Peace and security* may specifically target the achievements of the Roman empire (the "pax Romana"), with a warning of *sudden destruction*. **5:** The contrasts of light and darkness are found also in the Dead Sea scrolls (1QS 1.9–10; 3.20–21). **6–8:** For the imagery of staying armed and awake, see Rom 13.11–13; Eph 6.13–17.

5.12–24: Practical instruction about life in the church. 12–13: There are clearly some who exercise leadership in the church. **14:** *Idlers*, refusal to work may be a problem in the community (cf. 4.11; 2 Thess 3.6–12), though the word here (Gk "ataktos") means disorderly or undisciplined. **15:** This verse is similar to Rom 12.17 and 1 Pet 3.9, as

prophets,[a] 21 but test everything; hold fast to
what is good; 22 abstain from every form of
evil.

23 May the God of peace himself sanctify
you entirely; and may your spirit and soul
and body be kept sound[b] and blameless at the
coming of our Lord Jesus Christ. 24 The one
who calls you is faithful, and he will do this.

25 Beloved,[c] pray for us.

26 Greet all the brothers and sisters[d] with
a holy kiss. 27 I solemnly command you by
the Lord that this letter be read to all of
them.[e]

28 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be
with you.[f]

[a] Gk *despise prophecies*
[b] Or *complete*
[c] Gk *Brothers*
[d] Gk *brothers*
[e] Gk *to all the brothers*
[f] Other ancient authorities add *Amen*

well as to a saying from the gospel tradition (Mt 5.44; Lk 6.27–28). **19–20:** Prophecies are one of the indications of the Spirit's activity in the congregation (cf. 1 Cor 14.1–40).

5.25–28: Closing greeting. 26: The *holy kiss* became an established greeting in the Pauline churches (see Rom 16.16; 1 Cor 16.20; 2 Cor 13.12; also 1 Pet 5.14). *To all of them,* that is, to the whole community, which may have included several house churches. **28:** This closing became a standard ending in Paul's letters (e.g., Rom 16.20; 1 Cor 16.23); a fuller and now liturgical form occurs in 2 Cor 13.13.

THE SECOND LETTER OF PAUL TO THE THESSALONIANS

NAME AND CANONICAL STATUS

As with 1 Thessalonians, the name was given to the letter when Pauline letters were copied and collected together. The title in the earliest Greek manuscripts is the simple form: "To the Thessalonians 2."

From the second century on this letter has been uncontroversially accepted as part of the collection of letters of Paul within what became the New Testament canon.

AUTHORSHIP, DATE, AND HISTORICAL CONTEXT

Second Thessalonians has a close relationship to 1 Thessalonians; in terms of both structure and content it has much in common with the first letter. One such similarity is the identification of the authors as Paul, Silvanus, and Timothy (1.1). Again, a single authorial voice, that of Paul, is dominant (2.5; 3.17). However, since the nineteenth century the authenticity of this letter has been seriously challenged, and modern commentators are divided over whether this letter is genuinely from Paul himself or was composed by a later follower to correct misunderstandings of Paul's teaching. The main reasons some scholars doubt the letter's authenticity are: its close relationship to 1 Thessalonians (which it may be imitating); its more formal, impersonal style; the hints that inauthentic letters of Paul are in circulation, coupled with the attempt to stress this letter's genuineness (2.2; 3.17); and its distinctive eschatological outlook.

Dating the letter depends on decisions about its authorship. If it is by Paul, it was probably written shortly after 1 Thessalonians and addressed to the same group of churches in Thessalonica. If it is a letter written in Paul's name by someone else, then it probably dates from the late first (or perhaps early second) century CE and may not even have been intended specifically for Thessalonica. Rather, it was intended to clarify and correct a reading of 1 Thessalonians by Christians whom the author regarded as in error.

LITERARY HISTORY, STRUCTURE, AND CONTENTS

As with 1 Thessalonians, so this letter has sometimes been seen as a compilation of more than one original letter. However, it was most likely composed as a single letter in the form we have it now.

The structure and content of 2 Thessalonians may be outlined as follows:

1.1–2	Opening greeting
1.3–12	Opening thanksgiving and prayer
2.1–12	Warning and instruction about the coming of Christ
2.13–17	Further thanksgiving and prayer
3.1–5	A request for prayer
3.6–16	Warning and instruction about believers who are unruly and idle
3.17–18	Closing greeting

INTERPRETATION

Second Thessalonians has generally been interpreted as a follow-up letter to 1 Thessalonians. It repeats some of the material from 1 Thessalonians, though it casts it in a somewhat more formal way (compare, e.g., 1.3 and 1 Thess 1.2). Like 1 Thessalonians, 2 Thessalonians encourages Christians facing suffering and hardship (1.4–6; 2.13–15; 3.3–5,13). More evident in 2 Thessalonians, though, is a concern to address problems in the churches. There are two in particular, which may be linked, since one is primarily a doctrinal issue, the other a behavioral one. The doctrinal issue concerns those who say "that the day of the Lord is already here" (2.2); the behavioral issue concerns those who refuse to work and are (in the author's view, at least) causing trouble (3.6–12). It is possible that a belief that the final day had already come (cf. 2 Tim 2.18) led people to abandon their normal daily commitments. The author addresses the problem of this false eschatological belief by describing a series

of events that must take place before the day of the Lord can happen (see notes on 2.3–12). This section of the letter draws on motifs from Jewish apocalyptic literature (e.g., *Jub*. 23.14–21; Dan 8.24–25) and has some parallels with other early Christian texts (e.g., Mk 13; Jude 14–19; Rev 20.1–15). But the specific scenario outlined in 2 Thessalonians is distinctive and—to modern readers, at least—enigmatic.

GUIDE TO READING

This letter needs to be read in conjunction with 1 Thessalonians, not only to appreciate the similarities between the two but also to see how 2 Thessalonians addresses problems that have seemingly arisen, or developed, following the receipt of that letter. Whether this is a response by Paul himself, or by another author some time later, remains open to debate. But the eschatological scenario outlined in 2 Thessalonians is clearly different from that set out in 1 Thessalonians. As with other apocalyptic and eschatological writings, such as the book of Revelation, a major question for modern readers is how to interpret the imagery here and the sequence of events which the writer sees as necessary preludes to the final day of salvation.

David G. Horrell

1 Paul, Silvanus, and Timothy,
To the church of the Thessalonians in God
our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ:

[2] Grace to you and peace from God our[a]
Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

[3] We must always give thanks to God for
you, brothers and sisters,[b] as is right, because
your faith is growing abundantly, and the love
of every one of you for one another is increasing. [4] Therefore we ourselves boast of you
among the churches of God for your steadfastness and faith during all your persecutions
and the afflictions that you are enduring.

[5] This is evidence of the righteous judgment
of God, and is intended to make you worthy
of the kingdom of God, for which you are also
suffering. [6] For it is indeed just of God to repay
with affliction those who afflict you, [7] and to
give relief to the afflicted as well as to us, when
the Lord Jesus is revealed from heaven with
his mighty angels [8] in flaming fire, inflicting
vengeance on those who do not know God and
on those who do not obey the gospel of our
Lord Jesus. [9] These will suffer the punishment
of eternal destruction, separated from the
presence of the Lord and from the glory of his
might, [10] when he comes to be glorified by his
saints and to be marveled at on that day among
all who have believed, because our testimony
to you was believed. [11] To this end we always
pray for you, asking that our God will make you
worthy of his call and will fulfill by his power
every good resolve and work of faith, [12] so that
the name of our Lord Jesus may be glorified in
you, and you in him, according to the grace of
our God and the Lord Jesus Christ.

2 As to the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ
and our being gathered together to him,
we beg you, brothers and sisters,[b] [2] not to be

[a] Other ancient authorities read *the*
[b] Gk *brothers*

1.1–2: Greeting. The opening of the letter is identical to that of 1 Thessalonians, apart from the longer phrase at the end of the greeting; see 1 Thess 1.1n.

1.3–12: Opening thanksgiving and prayer. One long sentence in Greek, these verses begin with a thanksgiving for the believers' faith and then speak of their vindication and the punishment awaiting unbelievers before ending with a prayer. **3–4:** The thanksgiving echoes the content of 1 Thess 1.2–10, mentioning *persecutions and afflictions* and the *faith*, *love,* and *steadfastness* (cf. "steadfastness of hope" in 1 Thess 1.3), which the readers have shown. **5–10:** The focus here is on the *affliction* God will cause to those who currently *afflict you*, that is, the Christian readers of the letter. Imagery drawn from biblical descriptions of the coming day of judgment, referring to God, is here used to depict *the Lord Jesus* at his coming (cf. Zech 14.5; Isa 66.15–16). Compare the depictions of judgment and punishment in Jude 5–16 and 2 Pet 2.4–22, though there the focus is on false teachers; here the focus is those who do not believe. **10:** *Saints,* Christian believers.

2.1–12: Warning and instruction about the coming of Christ. The writer is concerned to refute the idea that *the day of the Lord* (cf. Isa 13.6; Joel 2.1; Am 5.18) has already come, and to set out a sequence of events that

quickly shaken in mind or alarmed, either by spirit or by word or by letter, as though from us, to the effect that the day of the Lord is already here. 3 Let no one deceive you in any way; for that day will not come unless the rebellion comes first and the lawless one[a] is revealed, the one destined for destruction.[b] 4 He opposes and exalts himself above every so-called god or object of worship, so that he takes his seat in the temple of God, declaring himself to be God. 5 Do you not remember that I told you these things when I was still with you? 6 And you know what is now restraining him, so that he may be revealed when his time comes. 7 For the mystery of lawlessness is already at work, but only until the one who now restrains it is removed. 8 And then the lawless one will be revealed, whom the Lord Jesus[c] will destroy[d] with the breath of his mouth, annihilating him by the manifestation of his coming. 9 The coming of the lawless one is apparent in the working of Satan, who uses all power, signs, lying wonders, 10 and every kind of wicked deception for those who are perishing, because they refused to love the truth and so be saved. 11 For this reason God sends them a powerful delusion, leading them to believe what is false, 12 so that all who have not believed the truth but took pleasure in unrighteousness will be condemned.

13 But we must always give thanks to God for you, brothers and sisters[e] beloved by the Lord, because God chose you as the first fruits[f] for salvation through sanctification by the Spirit and through belief in the truth. 14 For this purpose he called you through our proclamation of the good news,[g] so that you may obtain the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ. 15 So then, brothers and sisters,[e] stand firm and hold fast to the traditions that you were taught by us, either by word of mouth or by our letter.

16 Now may our Lord Jesus Christ himself and God our Father, who loved us and through grace gave us eternal comfort and good hope, 17 comfort your hearts and strengthen them in every good work and word.

3 Finally, brothers and sisters,[e] pray for us, so that the word of the Lord may spread rapidly and be glorified everywhere, just as it is among you, 2 and that we may be rescued from wicked and evil people; for not all have faith. 3 But the Lord is faithful; he will strengthen you and guard you from the evil one.[h] 4 And we have confidence in the Lord concerning you, that you are doing and will go on doing the things that we command. 5 May the Lord direct your hearts

[a] Gk *the man of lawlessness*; other ancient authorities read *the man of sin*
[b] Gk *the son of destruction*
[c] Other ancient authorities lack *Jesus*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *consume*
[e] Gk *brothers*
[f] Other ancient authorities read *from the beginning*
[g] Or *through our gospel*
[h] Or *from evil*

must happen first. This implies that the coming of Christ must be some time away (contrast 1 Thess 4.15). **2:** *As though from us* is ambiguous and difficult: it might refer to 1 Thessalonians, to correct a misreading of it, or it might imply that forgeries attributed to Paul are in circulation and that the readers should not be led astray by them. **3–4:** It is uncertain to whom *the lawless one* refers; possibilities include a false prophet or an emperor, such as had been encountered in earlier Jewish history (cf. Dan 8.24–25; 11.36; 1 Macc 1.1–64; Mk 13.14). Roman emperors were often given a form of divine status and were worshiped in imperial ritual. **6–7:** It is uncertain who or what is "the restrainer," although presumably someone or thing on the side of good, since its purpose is to restrain evil (cf. Rev 20.2–3). **8:** *Breath of his mouth*, see Ps 33.3; Job 4.9; Isa 11.4. **9–10:** *Satan*, who deceives: see 1 Thess 2.18n.

2.13–17: Further thanksgiving and prayer. **13:** The opening of the thanksgiving closely follows 1.3, which in turn echoes 1 Thess 1.2–10. On God's election (*chose you*), see 1 Thess 1.4n., and on *sanctification* see 1 Thess 4.1n. **15:** *The traditions*, that is, those that Paul taught, which might hint that this letter is written at a later period, but see 1 Cor 11.2. *Our letter* probably refers to 1 Thess, and to the need for its correct interpretation (see 2.2n.). **16–17:** This prayer echoes the phrasing of 1 Thess 3.2 and 3.11–13.

3.1–5: A request for prayer. **1:** The opening echoes 1 Thess 4.1 and 5.25. **2:** Cf. 2 Tim 4.17–18. **3:** *The evil one*,

to the love of God and to the steadfastness of Christ.

6 Now we command you, beloved,[a] in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, to keep away from believers who are[b] living in idleness and not according to the tradition that they[c] received from us. 7 For you yourselves know how you ought to imitate us; we were not idle when we were with you, 8 and we did not eat anyone's bread without paying for it; but with toil and labor we worked night and day, so that we might not burden any of you. 9 This was not because we do not have that right, but in order to give you an example to imitate. 10 For even when we were with you, we gave you this command: Anyone unwilling to work should not eat. 11 For we hear that some of you are living in idleness, mere busybodies, not doing any work. 12 Now such persons we command and exhort in the Lord Jesus Christ to do their work quietly and to earn their own living. 13 Brothers and sisters,[d] do not be weary in doing what is right.

14 Take note of those who do not obey what we say in this letter; have nothing to do with them, so that they may be ashamed. 15 Do not regard them as enemies, but warn them as believers.[e]

16 Now may the Lord of peace himself give you peace at all times in all ways. The Lord be with all of you.

17 I, Paul, write this greeting with my own hand. This is the mark in every letter of mine; it is the way I write. 18 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with all of you.[f]

[a] Gk *brothers*
[b] Gk *from every brother who is*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *you*
[d] Gk *Brothers*
[e] Gk *a brother*
[f] Other ancient authorities add *Amen*

see Mt 6.13. **5:** *Of God . . . of Christ,* in both cases the construction is ambiguous: it could mean the believers' love for God and steadfastness in following Christ, or God's love and Christ's own steadfastness. Perhaps both meanings are intended here.

3.6–16: Warning and instruction about believers who are unruly and idle. Here the writer confronts the issue of those who refuse to work and urges the readers to shun those who refuse to follow his teaching. **6:** *In idleness* (here and in v. 11) translates the Greek adverb "ataktos," which essentially means being disorderly (see 1 Thess 5.14n.). Clearly here the main way this is evident is in some people's refusal to work (see vv. 7–12). This conduct may perhaps have been motivated by the belief that the day of the Lord had already come (see 2.1–12n.). *The tradition*, cf. 2.15, though here the word is singular, and refers specifically to the pattern of conduct of Paul and his associates. **7–10:** This pattern (cf. 1 Thess 2.9) is now held up as a model to imitate. On the apostles' *right* to support, see 1 Cor 9.4–15, and on the problem of some taking advantage of such support, see *Did.* 11–12. **12:** Cf. 1 Thess 4.11. **14–15:** A strong warning to heed this teaching; nonetheless, the purpose of shunning the disobedient is that they may be won back, not excluded forever (cf. Jude 22–23).

3.17–18: Closing greeting. 17: The opening phrase is identical to that in 1 Cor 16.21 and Col 4.18; see also Gal 6.11. Here, however, the second sentence reflects a perceived need to stress the authenticity of the letter (cf. note on 2.2). **18:** See 1 Thess 5.28n.

INTRODUCTION TO THE PASTORAL EPISTLES

The term "Pastoral Epistles" has been applied, since the eighteenth century, to the three letters from Paul to his two co-workers and envoys, Timothy and Titus. The name reflects the central concern in these three epistles for the internal life, governance, and behavior of Christian communities and their members. Scholars have long debated whether these letters were written by the apostle Paul himself, or by a later disciple who sought to provide guidance for Pauline churches in new times and places. While most scholars today regard them as pseudepigraphical (that is, ascribed to the authority of a major figure but not actually written by him, a custom well attested in ancient literature), there is not complete unanimity on the question.

The conclusion that these three epistles were not written by Paul is based upon literary, historical, and theological criteria. First and Second Timothy and Titus share a common Greek vocabulary and style that diverges in many ways from the other Pauline epistles. Historically, the Pastoral Epistles presume an institutionalized leadership in local communities and internal dissent over faith and practice, which better fits a period late in the first or early in the second century CE when Paul was no longer alive. It is possible to see how some passages may have been written to explain or definitively interpret passages in the authentic letters already in circulation (such as 1 Tim 2.9–19; cf. 1 Cor 14.33–36). Theologically these letters minimize or lack characteristic Pauline themes (such as justification by faith, and the church as the body of Christ) in favor of a new emphasis on adherence to tradition and regulation as signs of the Christian piety they seek to inculcate in their readers. Although Timothy and Titus had been Paul's trusted co-workers for decades, the first letter to Timothy and the letter to Titus present the recipients as needing basic instructions for community leadership. Second Timothy is less concerned with regulating the life of the Christian communities than Titus and 1 Timothy. It has been described as a "testament," the last words of the apostle to a close associate. It looks forward to the difficulties facing Timothy and others after Paul's death with foreboding, and bears some similarity to the genuine Philippians in this regard.

Recent challenges to the pseudepigraphical nature of all three letters have come from scholars who argue that each should be judged separately, that the letters contain fragments of original Pauline material, or that the very concept of "authorship" of a Pauline letter requires nuance, given that Paul used secretaries and served as a member of a cooperative missionary team. Neither is there scholarly unanimity about which other letters are certainly authentic nor which parts of those are most tellingly "Pauline" for comparison with these epistles. Each reader should consider the evidence about the authorship of the Pastorals cumulatively, first as a question of historical fact—did Paul write them or not? Then, and separately, one should reflect on the interpretative and theological implications of such a decision, for the denial of Pauline authorship may or may not entail a loss of authoritative status for that document within a particular religious community.

Regardless of authorship, the Pastoral Epistles share a common rhetorical strategy: Each is addressed to a single individual among Paul's co-workers but also has in mind a wider circle of readers. In each the author presents himself as a Paul who speaks in the epistolary medium as an unambiguously authoritative figure of the past to church leaders and members of later generations who did not know him personally.

Margaret M. Mitchell

THE FIRST LETTER OF PAUL TO TIMOTHY

NAME, AUTHORSHIP, AND BACKGROUND

This letter is named for its recipient, Paul's "loyal child" Timothy (1.2); for further information on Timothy, see the Introduction to 2 Timothy, p. 2091. The letter presents Paul as a wise and sure teacher who hands on to his student his deposit of tradition, his "sound teaching" (1.10; 4.6), so that this fixed legacy will be passed down with fidelity to the next generation. (On the authorship and date of this letter, see p. 2084.) The text presents a vision of household ethics that brings together instructions on Christian "godliness" (or "piety"; 2.2) for the individual with a church order of regulations and qualifications for various roles (bishops, deacons, widows, elders) in the church, designated "the household of God" (3.15). This advice is set in a dual context formed, positively, by the warmly remembered relationship between Paul and Timothy, and, negatively, by the frequent allusions to purveyors of alternate teachings in or near Timothy's church in Ephesus.

STRUCTURE

After an epistolary prescript (1.1–2) the author launches (without the customary thanksgiving) into the body of the letter, which is roughly arranged with alternating sections of contrast between true and false teaching (1.3–2.15; 4.1–5.2; 6.2b–21a) and instructions for church order and governance, understood as the means for living in the church of God (3.1–16; 5.3–6.2a). The letter concludes with summary exhortations to Timothy to guard this tradition with which he has been entrusted (6.11–21). As with all Pauline letters a final benediction (6.21) seals the letter, perhaps in anticipation of liturgical use.

INTERPRETATION AND GUIDE TO READING

Although the author names two of his Christian opponents (1.20), exactly what they taught, and why, is only hazily sketched here in vituperative terms: They have "deviated" from the truth (1.6); they have "suffered shipwreck in the faith" (1.19). No definitive reconstruction is possible from these verbal assaults, but it seems that these opponents have some connection with Judaism and Torah observance, "myths and endless genealogies" (1.4), and ascetic practices, such as rejecting marriage and abstaining from certain foods (4.3). Recent research has suggested a link between the Christians whom this author opposes and those who held to traditions found in the later apocryphal *Acts of Paul and Thecla*, which validates women's ministries and claimed Paul as the champion of an ascetic and celibate lifestyle. In this view, 1 Timothy is a kind of "corrective composition" whose author is seeking to "fix" Paul's authentic legacy for an early second-century audience.

In the authorial rhetoric of this text, at times Timothy is directly addressed, but more often he recedes into the background, and the author speaks to a more universal audience. As ethical instruction (parenesis), 1 Timothy is cast in characteristic forms of Greco-Roman moral exhortation, such as Seneca's *Moral Epistles* and the pseudepigraphical Socratic and Neopythagorean letters. These include letters between friends or teachers and students about progress in the ethical life, lists of virtues and vices, and contrasts between illustrious examples and notorious counterexamples. Likewise, the content is in many ways similar to moralizing literature of the time, with emphasis on decorum and decency, on the hierarchical, orderly disposition of the patriarchal household, on reliable speech, and against accumulation of wealth. But the letter's theological universe, which is punctuated by shorthand terminology and quotations from established traditions, is distinctly Christian.

Margaret M. Mitchell

1 Paul, an apostle of Christ Jesus by the command of God our Savior and of Christ Jesus our hope,

[2] To Timothy, my loyal child in the faith:

Grace, mercy, and peace from God the Father and Christ Jesus our Lord.

[3] I urge you, as I did when I was on my way to Macedonia, to remain in Ephesus so that you may instruct certain people not to teach any different doctrine, [4] and not to occupy themselves with myths and endless genealogies that promote speculations rather than the divine training[a] that is known by faith. [5] But the aim of such instruction is love that comes from a pure heart, a good conscience, and sincere faith. [6] Some people have deviated from these and turned to meaningless talk, [7] desiring to be teachers of the law, without understanding either what they are saying or the things about which they make assertions.

[8] Now we know that the law is good, if one uses it legitimately. [9] This means understanding that the law is laid down not for the innocent but for the lawless and disobedient, for the godless and sinful, for the unholy and profane, for those who kill their father or mother, for murderers, [10] fornicators, sodomites, slave traders, liars, perjurers, and whatever else is contrary to the sound teaching [11] that conforms to the glorious gospel of the blessed God, which he entrusted to me.

[12] I am grateful to Christ Jesus our Lord, who has strengthened me, because he judged me faithful and appointed me to his service, [13] even though I was formerly a blasphemer, a persecutor, and a man of violence. But I received mercy because I had acted ignorantly in unbelief, [14] and the grace of our Lord overflowed for me with the faith and love that are in Christ Jesus. [15] The saying is sure and worthy of full acceptance, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners—of whom I am the foremost. [16] But for that very reason I received mercy, so that in me, as the foremost, Jesus Christ might display the utmost patience, making me an example to those who would come to believe in him for eternal life. [17] To the King of the ages, immortal, invisible, the only God, be honor and glory forever and ever.[b] Amen.

[18] I am giving you these instructions, Timothy, my child, in accordance with the prophecies made earlier about you, so that by following them you may fight the good fight, [19] having faith and a good conscience. By rejecting conscience, certain persons have suffered shipwreck in the faith; [20] among them are Hymenaeus and Alexander, whom

[a] Or *plan*

[b] Gk *to the ages of the ages*

1.1–2: Epistolary prescript: sender, addressees, and salutation, following the typical form of a Pauline letter (see Philem 1.1–3), with the addition of mercy in the greeting (cf. 2 Tim 1.2).

1.3–2.15: The contrast of true and false teaching (part one).

1.3–11: Opening warning against false teachers, in place of a thanksgiving formula (cf. Philem 4–9), signaling the urgency of the problem, as the author sees it. **3:** *Instruct,* the author's main purpose (1.5,18; 4.11; 5.7; 6.13,17). **4:** *Myths and endless genealogies,* uncertain, but probably speculations on biblical texts (cf. 4.7; Titus 1.14; 3.9). *Divine training,* or "plan," or "stewardship." **5:** *Love . . . conscience . . . faith,* for Paul's usual triad of faith, love, and hope (1 Thess 1.3; 5.8; 1 Cor 13.13). **6:** *Deviated,* see 6.21n. **7:** *The law,* presumably the Torah. **9–10:** Implicitly, a stereotypical depiction of the false teachers as ethically depraved; cf. other catalogues of vice in Rom 1.29–31; 1 Cor 5.11; 6.9–10; Gal 5.19–21.

1.12–20: Contrasting portraits of faithfulness and faithlessness. 12–17: A portrait of Paul, the blasphemer transformed into the faithful proclaimer (cf. the different portrayals in Paul's letters [1 Cor 15.8–10; Gal 1.13–24; Phil 3.5–11], and in Acts 9). **15:** *The saying is sure,* a favored formula in the Pastorals (see 3.1; 4.9; 2 Tim 2.11; Titus 3.8). **17:** Theology cast as doxology (cf. 6.15–16). **18:** *Prophecies,* see 4.14. **19:** *Conscience,* the seat of self-awareness of guilt or innocence (a key theme; see 1.5; 3.9; 4.2; 2 Tim 1.3; Titus 1.15). **20:** *Hymenaeus* (unknown apart from here and 2 Tim 2.17) and *Alexander* (likely to be identified with "Alexander the coppersmith" in 2 Tim 4.14; perhaps Acts 19.33), characterized as blasphemers (cf. 1.13). *Turned over to Satan,* for correction or possibly for punishment (cf. 1 Cor 5.5). Satan or the devil is mentioned frequently in the Pastorals; see 3.6,7; 5.15; 2 Tim 2.26.

2.1–8: Instruction on prayer. 1–3: Accommodation with worldly authorities urged for the sake of peace for the church (see Rom 13.1–7). The irenic tone circumvents the difficult question of the limits of Christian acqui-

I have turned over to Satan, so that they may learn not to blaspheme.

2 First of all, then, I urge that supplications, prayers, intercessions, and thanksgivings be made for everyone, [2] for kings and all who are in high positions, so that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and dignity. [3] This is right and is acceptable in the sight of God our Savior, [4] who desires everyone to be saved and to come to the knowledge of the truth. [5] For

there is one God;
there is also one mediator between God and humankind,
Christ Jesus, himself human,

[6] who gave himself a ransom for all
—this was attested at the right time. [7] For this I was appointed a herald and an apostle (I am telling the truth,[a] I am not lying), a teacher of the Gentiles in faith and truth.

[8] I desire, then, that in every place the men should pray, lifting up holy hands without anger or argument; [9] also that the women should dress themselves modestly and decently in suitable clothing, not with their hair braided, or with gold, pearls, or expensive clothes, [10] but with good works, as is proper for women who profess reverence for God. [11] Let a woman[b] learn in silence with full submission. [12] I permit no woman[b] to teach or to have authority over a man;[c] she is to keep silent. [13] For Adam was formed first, then Eve; [14] and Adam was not deceived, but the woman was deceived and became a transgressor. [15] Yet she will be saved through childbearing, provided they continue in faith and love and holiness, with modesty.

3 The saying is sure:[d] whoever aspires to the office of bishop[e] desires a noble task. [2] Now a bishop[f] must be above reproach, married only once,[g] temperate, sensible, respectable, hospitable, an apt teacher, [3] not a drunkard, not violent but gentle, not quarrelsome, and not a lover of money. [4] He must manage his own household well, keeping his children submissive and respectful in every way— [5] for if someone does not know how to manage his own household, how can he take care of God's church? [6] He must not be a recent convert, or he may be puffed up with conceit and fall into the condemnation of the devil. [7] Moreover, he must be well thought of by outsiders, so that he may not fall into disgrace and the snare of the devil.

[8] Deacons likewise must be serious, not double-tongued, not indulging in much wine, not greedy for money; [9] they must hold fast to the mystery of the faith with a clear con-

[a] Other ancient authorities add *in Christ*
[b] Or *wife*
[c] Or *her husband*
[d] Some interpreters place these words at the end of the previous paragraph. Other ancient authorities read *The saying is commonly accepted*
[e] Or *overseer*
[f] Or *an overseer*
[g] Gk *the husband of one wife*

escence to an emperor who was honored as a god by daily worship and oaths of allegiance. *Godliness*, or "piety" ("eusebeia"), a predominant concern of the Pastoral epistles (3.16, translated "religion"; 4.7,8; 6.3,5,6; 2 Tim 3.5; Titus 1.1). The rationale given for such prayer is both strategic (2.2b) and theological (2.3–7).**4:** Strong emphasis on God as universal savior (cf. 4.10). *Knowledge of the truth,* as found in the gospel proclamation (see 2 Tim 2.25; 3.7; Titus 1.1). **5:** *One God . . . one mediator,* a reformulation of the Shema (see Deut 6.4–9n.; cf. 1 Cor 8.6; Eph 4.5–6). **7:** The title *herald*, although sometimes implied (e.g., 2 Cor 4.5; 5.20), is not found in the undisputed letters of Paul (unlike *apostle*); cf. 2 Tim 1.11.

2.9–15: The proper demeanor of faithful women. The author objects to the current practice of women holding leadership and teaching positions because it threatens conventional domestic order (also 5.3–16). **9:** *Dress themselves modestly,* a standard concern of Stoic and other Hellenistic moralists. *And decently,* Gk "sophrosune" ("moderation"), one of the four cardinal virtues of Greek philosophical thought. **11–12:** Very similar to the contested passage 1 Cor 14.34–35 (see note there). **13–14:** A "strong" reading of Gen 2–3 assigning all the blame to the woman (contrast Rom 5.12–21). **15:** *She will be saved through childbearing,* a soteriology (theology of salvation) at odds with Paul's justification by faith (Gal 2.16; Rom 1.16–17). *Modesty,* Gk "sophrosune"; see 2.9n.

3.1–16: Living in the church of God (part one). Qualifications for prospective bishops (3.1–7) and deacons (3.8–13), already established ecclesial offices (contrast 1 Cor 12.28; Phil 1.1n.). **1,2:** *Bishop,* (Gk "episkopos"), "overseer," one who looks after church affairs (see note e). **5:** *God's church* (cf. v. 15, "the household of God"), the church is en-

science. [10] And let them first be tested; then, if they prove themselves blameless, let them serve as deacons. [11] Women[a] likewise must be serious, not slanderers, but temperate, faithful in all things. [12] Let deacons be married only once,[b] and let them manage their children and their households well; [13] for those who serve well as deacons gain a good standing for themselves and great boldness in the faith that is in Christ Jesus.

[14] I hope to come to you soon, but I am writing these instructions to you so that, [15] if I am delayed, you may know how one ought to behave in the household of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and bulwark of the truth. [16] Without any doubt, the mystery of our religion is great:

He[c] was revealed in flesh,
  vindicated[d] in spirit,[e]
    seen by angels,
proclaimed among Gentiles,
  believed in throughout the world,
    taken up in glory.

4 Now the Spirit expressly says that in later[f] times some will renounce the faith by paying attention to deceitful spirits and teachings of demons, [2] through the hypocrisy of liars whose consciences are seared with a hot iron. [3] They forbid marriage and demand abstinence from foods, which God created to be received with thanksgiving by those who believe and know the truth. [4] For everything created by God is good, and nothing is to be rejected, provided it is received with thanksgiving; [5] for it is sanctified by God's word and by prayer.

[6] If you put these instructions before the brothers and sisters,[g] you will be a good servant[h] of Christ Jesus, nourished on the words of the faith and of the sound teaching that you have followed. [7] Have nothing to do with profane myths and old wives' tales. Train yourself in godliness, [8] for, while physical training is of some value, godliness is valuable in every way, holding promise for both the present life and the life to come. [9] The saying is sure and worthy of full acceptance. [10] For to this end we toil and struggle,[i] because we have our hope set on the living God, who is the Savior of all people, especially of those who believe.

[11] These are the things you must insist on and teach. [12] Let no one despise your youth, but set the believers an example in speech and conduct, in love, in faith, in purity. [13] Until I arrive, give attention to the public reading of scripture,[j] to exhorting, to teaching. [14] Do not neglect the gift that is in you, which was given to you through prophecy with the laying on of hands by the council of elders.[k] [15] Put these things into practice, devote yourself to them, so that all may see your progress. [16] Pay close attention to yourself and to your teaching; continue in these things, for in doing this you will save both yourself and your hearers.

[a] Or *Their wives*, or *Women deacons*
[b] Gk *be husbands of one wife*
[c] Gk *Who*; other ancient authorities read *God*; others, *Which*
[d] Or *justified*
[e] Or *by the Spirit*
[f] Or *the last*
[g] Gk *brothers*
[h] Or *deacon*
[i] Other ancient authorities read *suffer reproach*
[j] Gk *to the reading*
[k] Gk *by the presbytery*

visioned as an orderly patriarchal Greco-Roman household. **11:** *Women* deacons (but see note a for the ambiguity), such as Phoebe (Rom 16.1). If women deacons are intended, the short treatment may be due to the author's anxiety about female leadership (see 2.9–15; 5.3–16). **14–15:** *If I am delayed,* an epistolary commonplace, here suggesting verisimilitude (cf. Rom 15.24; 1 Cor 16.7; Philem 22; Phil 2.24). Whether he is dead or alive, the letter takes Paul's place.

4.1–5.2: The contrast of true and false teaching (part two). 1: The *later times* (see note f) were often associated with false teachings (Mk 13.21–23; 2 Thess 2.1–16; cf. 2 Tim 4.3–4). **3:** *They forbid marriage and demand abstinence from foods,* clearest statement of the opponents' ascetic practices. **6:** The sound teaching, the reliable tradition the Pastoral epistles pass on (1.10; 4.1,6,13,16; 5.17; 6.1,3; 2 Tim 1.13; 3.10,16; 4.3; Titus 1.9; 2.1,7,10). **7:** *Myths,* see 1.4n. **7–10:** The life of faith compared to training for an athletic contest (cf. 1 Cor 9.24–27; 2 Tim 2.5). **13:** A glimpse into the content of an early Christian worship service. **14:** *The laying on of hands,* a gesture marking the succession of ministerial authorization (see 5.22; 2 Tim 1.6; Acts 6.6). **15:** *Your progress,* "prokope," the Stoic concept of ethical advancement, which will be expressed negatively in 2 Tim 2.16; 3.9,13.

5 Do not speak harshly to an older man,[a] but speak to him as to a father, to younger men as brothers, 2 to older women as mothers, to younger women as sisters—with absolute purity.

3 Honor widows who are really widows. 4 If a widow has children or grandchildren, they should first learn their religious duty to their own family and make some repayment to their parents; for this is pleasing in God's sight. 5 The real widow, left alone, has set her hope on God and continues in supplications and prayers night and day; 6 but the widow[b] who lives for pleasure is dead even while she lives. 7 Give these commands as well, so that they may be above reproach. 8 And whoever does not provide for relatives, and especially for family members, has denied the faith and is worse than an unbeliever.

9 Let a widow be put on the list if she is not less than sixty years old and has been married only once;[c] 10 she must be well attested for her good works, as one who has brought up children, shown hospitality, washed the saints' feet, helped the afflicted, and devoted herself to doing good in every way. 11 But refuse to put younger widows on the list; for when their sensual desires alienate them from Christ, they want to marry, 12 and so they incur condemnation for having violated their first pledge. 13 Besides that, they learn to be idle, gadding about from house to house; and they are not merely idle, but also gossips and busybodies, saying what they should not say. 14 So I would have younger widows marry, bear children, and manage their households, so as to give the adversary no occasion to revile us. 15 For some have already turned away to follow Satan. 16 If any believing woman[d] has relatives who are really widows, let her assist them; let the church not be burdened, so that it can assist those who are real widows.

17 Let the elders who rule well be considered worthy of double honor,[e] especially those who labor in preaching and teaching; 18 for the scripture says, "You shall not muzzle an ox while it is treading out the grain," and, "The laborer deserves to be paid." 19 Never accept any accusation against an elder except on the evidence of two or three witnesses. 20 As for those who persist in sin, rebuke them in the presence of all, so that the rest also may stand in fear. 21 In the presence of God and of Christ Jesus and of the elect angels, I warn you to keep these instructions without prejudice, doing nothing on the basis of partiality. 22 Do not ordain[f] anyone hastily, and do not participate in the sins of others; keep yourself pure.

23 No longer drink only water, but take a little wine for the sake of your stomach and your frequent ailments.

24 The sins of some people are conspicuous and precede them to judgment, while the sins of others follow them there. 25 So also good works are conspicuous; and even when they are not, they cannot remain hidden.

6 Let all who are under the yoke of slavery regard their masters as worthy of all honor, so that the name of God and the teaching may not be blasphemed. 2 Those who have believing masters must not be disrespectful to them on the ground that they are members of the church;[g] rather they must serve them

[a] Or *an elder*, or *a presbyter*
[b] Gk *she*
[c] Gk *the wife of one husband*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *believing man or woman*; others, *believing man*
[e] Or *compensation*
[f] Gk *Do not lay hands on*
[g] Gk *are brothers*

5.3–6.2a: Living in the church of God (part two). Three groups of persons are singled out for instructions: widows (vv. 3–16), elders (vv. 17–20), and slaves (6.1–2). **3–16:** *Real widows* (vv. 3,5,16), an attempt to legislate the practice of widowhood—women living on the support of the church while dedicating their time to a ministry of continual prayer—by insisting on the maintenance of the conventional patriarchal household. **9:** *Put on the list,* designated for communal support. **13:** Stereotypical caricature of idle women as busybodies. **14:** *The adversary,* see 1.20n.; 3.7. Also can be a reference to human opponents (cf. 1 Cor 16.9; Phil 1.28).

18b: A saying of Jesus, according to Lk 10.7. **19:** *Two or three witnesses,* Deut 19.15; 2 Cor 13.1. **23:** A little wine, in contrast to the asceticism of the opponents; see 4.3n. **6.1–2:** Reminiscent of the exhortations in Eph 6.5–9; Col 3.22–4.1, but lacking a reciprocal exhortation to the owners.

all the more, since those who benefit by their service are believers and beloved.[a]

Teach and urge these duties. 3 Whoever teaches otherwise and does not agree with the sound words of our Lord Jesus Christ and the teaching that is in accordance with godliness, 4 is conceited, understanding nothing, and has a morbid craving for controversy and for disputes about words. From these come envy, dissension, slander, base suspicions, 5 and wrangling among those who are depraved in mind and bereft of the truth, imagining that godliness is a means of gain.[b] 6 Of course, there is great gain in godliness combined with contentment; 7 for we brought nothing into the world, so that[c] we can take nothing out of it; 8 but if we have food and clothing, we will be content with these. 9 But those who want to be rich fall into temptation and are trapped by many senseless and harmful desires that plunge people into ruin and destruction. 10 For the love of money is a root of all kinds of evil, and in their eagerness to be rich some have wandered away from the faith and pierced themselves with many pains.

11 But as for you, man of God, shun all this; pursue righteousness, godliness, faith, love, endurance, gentleness. 12 Fight the good fight of the faith; take hold of the eternal life, to which you were called and for which you made[d] the good confession in the presence of many witnesses. 13 In the presence of God, who gives life to all things, and of Christ Jesus, who in his testimony before Pontius Pilate made the good confession, I charge you 14 to keep the commandment without spot or blame until the manifestation of our Lord Jesus Christ, 15 which he will bring about at the right time—he who is the blessed and only Sovereign, the King of kings and Lord of lords. 16 It is he alone who has immortality and dwells in unapproachable light, whom no one has ever seen or can see; to him be honor and eternal dominion. Amen.

17 As for those who in the present age are rich, command them not to be haughty, or to set their hopes on the uncertainty of riches, but rather on God who richly provides us with everything for our enjoyment. 18 They are to do good, to be rich in good works, generous, and ready to share, 19 thus storing up for themselves the treasure of a good foundation for the future, so that they may take hold of the life that really is life.

20 Timothy, guard what has been entrusted to you. Avoid the profane chatter and contradictions of what is falsely called knowledge; 21 by professing it some have missed the mark as regards the faith.

Grace be with you.[e]

[a] Or *since they are believers and beloved, who devote themselves to good deeds*

[b] Other ancient authorities add *Withdraw yourself from such people*

[c] Other ancient authorities read *world—it is certain that*

[d] Gk *confessed*

[e] The Greek word for *you* here is plural; in other ancient authorities it is singular. Other ancient authorities add *Amen*

6.2b–21: The contrast of true and false teaching (part three). 3–5: A portrait of the unsound teacher, with many resonances to 1.3–11. **6–10:** The catchword *gain* leads to a favorite philosophical and biblical (Job 1.21; Eccl 5.15) commonplace about the false security of riches (taken up again in 6.17–19). **6:** *Contentment* (also v. 8), "autarkeia," a Stoic term meaning "self-sufficiency." **11–12:** *Fight the good fight,* compare 1.18 and 2 Tim 4.7. **13:** *Pontius Pilate,* the only New Testament reference to the Roman governor of Judea (see Mt 27.2; Lk 3.1) outside the Gospels and Acts. *The good confession,* see Jn 18.33–38, but cf. Mt 27.11–13. **14:** *Commandment,* a reference to the testimony in this letter, or perhaps the same as the "good confession" in v. 12, the vow Timothy made at his ordination. Manifestation (lit., "epiphany"), a reference to the Second Coming (a favored term in the Pastorals: 2 Tim 1.10; 4.1,8; Titus 2.13). **15–16:** A hymn to the sovereignty of God as all-powerful, immortal, and invisible (Ex 33.20; Rom 1.23; Col 1.15; Jn 1.18). **19:** *The treasure,* for the theme, see Mt 6.19–20; Lk 12.21; 2 Esd 7.77.

6.20–21: Timothy the guardian of the true teaching. 20: *What has been entrusted to you* (lit., "the deposit"), the teachings in this letter, seen as a vaccination against false teaching. *What is falsely called knowledge,* perhaps a reference to Gnostics, religious persons who claimed sole possession of divine insight based on a complex dualistic cosmology, mythology, and anthropology. **21:** *Missed the mark,* a characterization of all opponents, which frames the letter (see also 1.6, "have deviated from," more literally, "being off the mark," and 2 Tim 2.18).

6.21b: Concluding benediction.

THE SECOND LETTER OF PAUL TO TIMOTHY

NAME, AUTHORSHIP, AND BACKGROUND

The second letter addressed to Paul's "beloved child" Timothy, despite its similarities in address and diction, has a more personal tone than the first. (On the authorship and date of this letter, see p. 2084.) Less concerned with church order and roles, here Paul is portrayed as near death. In testamentary fashion the apostle hands on to his spiritual heir, Timothy, the wisdom accumulated through a life of mission, ministry, and, above all, suffering for the gospel. The letter is set within a carefully scripted historical scenario marked by Paul's imminent death and Timothy's bereavement, at a time of distortions to the apostle's "sound teaching" (1.13; see 4.3).

Timothy is named as co-sender of six Pauline letters (2 Cor 1.1; Phil 1.1; Col 1.1; 1 Thess 1.1; 2 Thess 1.1; Philem 1). They present Timothy as one of his most loyal disciples (Phil 2.19–22), who acted as a trusted delegate to churches (1 Thess 3.2–6; 1 Cor 4.17, "beloved and faithful child"; 16.10). According to Acts 16, Timothy's mother was Jewish and his father Greek. That later account imagines that Paul had him circumcised in the face of anticipated Jewish hostility (an event not corroborated in Paul's epistles). This letter sketches Timothy's life in broad strokes, from his early immersion in the scriptures (2 Tim 3.15) and matrilineal Christian pedigree (1.5), to his authorization for ministry by the laying on of Paul's hands (1.6), and his present ecclesiastical challenges. Most prominent in the letter, however, is the detailed and moving portrait of Paul, imprisoned for the gospel in Rome (1.8,16–17; 2.9), and forsaken by even his close friends (1.15; 4.10,16), yet empowered by his Lord not only to endure suffering and death but to celebrate it as the fitting culmination to a life of ministry and service (4.6–8,17–18).

STRUCTURE AND INTERPRETATION

The theme of 2 Timothy is announced in 1.8: Timothy and all who follow him should not be ashamed of the gospel or its representative, Paul, but should stand in fidelity to them, even to the point of suffering. Second Timothy follows a regular epistolary structure with an opening prescript (1.1–2), thanksgiving (1.3–7), body (1.8–4.18), greetings and closing (4.19-22). Timothy is urged to contemplate the positive example of Paul (1.8–14) and the negative one afforded by those who deserted Paul in time of need (1.15–18). The essential principle of the argument is appeal to example (Paul as one who suffered for the gospel: 1.12; 2.9–10; 3.11; 4.6-7, 16-18), and call for imitation, by Timothy (2.3; 4.5), and by all readers through him (see especially 2.11-12). Further, the exhortation to Timothy to be strong and teach others correctly (2.1–13) is contrasted with false teachers who must be contended with (2.14–26), for, as expected at the end time, signs of their appearance are already here (3.1–9). But Timothy is to follow in Paul's footsteps (3.10–4.5). These exhortations culminate in the depiction of the dying apostle's reflections on his life and its imminent conclusion (4.6–8; cf. Phil 1.12–26). The letter ends on a hopeful note as the imprisoned Paul exults in divine deliverance (both past and future) and issues spirited directives for the ministry, including a future visit from Timothy (4.8–18).

Margaret M. Mitchell

1 Paul, an apostle of Christ Jesus by the will
of God, for the sake of the promise of life
that is in Christ Jesus,

[2] To Timothy, my beloved child:

Grace, mercy, and peace from God the
Father and Christ Jesus our Lord.

[3] I am grateful to God—whom I worship
with a clear conscience, as my ancestors
did—when I remember you constantly in my
prayers night and day. [4] Recalling your tears,
I long to see you so that I may be filled with
joy. [5] I am reminded of your sincere faith,
a faith that lived first in your grandmother
Lois and your mother Eunice and now, I am
sure, lives in you. [6] For this reason I remind
you to rekindle the gift of God that is within
you through the laying on of my hands; [7] for
God did not give us a spirit of cowardice, but
rather a spirit of power and of love and of
self-discipline.

[8] Do not be ashamed, then, of the testimony about our Lord or of me his prisoner, but
join with me in suffering for the gospel, relying on the power of God, [9] who saved us and
called us with a holy calling, not according to
our works but according to his own purpose
and grace. This grace was given to us in Christ
Jesus before the ages began, [10] but it has now
been revealed through the appearing of our
Savior Christ Jesus, who abolished death and
brought life and immortality to light through
the gospel. [11] For this gospel I was appointed
a herald and an apostle and a teacher,[a] [12] and
for this reason I suffer as I do. But I am not
ashamed, for I know the one in whom I have
put my trust, and I am sure that he is able to
guard until that day what I have entrusted to
him.[b] [13] Hold to the standard of sound teaching that you have heard from me, in the faith
and love that are in Christ Jesus. [14] Guard the
good treasure entrusted to you, with the help
of the Holy Spirit living in us.

[15] You are aware that all who are in Asia
have turned away from me, including Phygelus and Hermogenes. [16] May the Lord grant
mercy to the household of Onesiphorus,
because he often refreshed me and was not
ashamed of my chain; [17] when he arrived in
Rome, he eagerly[c] searched for me and found
me [18]—may the Lord grant that he will find
mercy from the Lord on that day! And you
know very well how much service he rendered in Ephesus.

2 You then, my child, be strong in the grace
that is in Christ Jesus; [2] and what you
have heard from me through many witnesses
entrust to faithful people who will be able to
teach others as well. [3] Share in suffering like a
good soldier of Christ Jesus. [4] No one serving
in the army gets entangled in everyday affairs; the soldier's aim is to please the enlisting officer. [5] And in the case of an athlete, no
one is crowned without competing according
to the rules. [6] It is the farmer who does the

[a] Other ancient authorities add *of the Gentiles*
[b] Or *what has been entrusted to me*
[c] Or *promptly*

1.1–2: Epistolary prescript (see 1 Tim 1.1n.) *The promise of life,* see 1 Tim 4.8.

1.3–7: Thanksgiving for Timothy's faith. 3: *I remember you constantly in my prayers,* cf. 1 Thess 1.2-3; Philem 4; Rom 1.9; Phil 1.3-4. **5:** Faith *lives* in Timothy (as does the Holy Spirit in 1.14). **6:** *I remind you,* memory plays a key role in the exhortation (also 2.8,14). *Laying on of my hands,* cf. 1 Tim 4.14n.

1.8–14: Theme: co-suffering, rather than shame, for the gospel and its apostle. 8: *Ashamed,* see also 1.12,16; 2.15; cf. Rom 1.16. **9–10:** Gospel proclamation in shorthand form, with characteristic themes. **9:** *Before the ages began,* see Titus 1.2; cf. Jn 1.2–3. **10:** *Appearing,* see 1 Tim 6.14n. *Abolished death,* cf. 1 Cor 15.26,54–57. **11.** *Herald and an apostle,* see 1 Tim 2.7n. **12:** *The one in whom I have put my trust,* Timothy, and each subsequent reader who stands in his place. *What I have entrusted to him* (lit., "the deposit"), as in 1.14; 1 Tim 6.20; cf. 2.2, a major theme of the Pastorals. *That day,* the Second Coming of Christ, the eschaton, see v. 18; 4.8; 2 Thess 1.10. **13:** *Sound teaching,* see 1 Tim 4.6n.

1.15–18: Examples, worthy and unworthy. 15: Asia, a Roman province in Asia Minor. *Phygelus and Hermogenes,* named only here. *Turned away from me,* Paul's abandonment is depicted again in 4.10,16. **16:** *Onesiphorus,* see 4.19; *my chain,* i.e., imprisonment; see 2.9. **18:** *That day,* see v. 12n.

2.1–13: Timothy's charge to suffer for the gospel. 2: *Entrust,* Timothy is to hand on the deposit he receives from Paul to the next generation. **4–6:** *Soldier, athlete, farmer,* commonplaces from three professions about

work who ought to have the first share of the crops. 7 Think over what I say, for the Lord will give you understanding in all things.

8 Remember Jesus Christ, raised from the dead, a descendant of David—that is my gospel, 9 for which I suffer hardship, even to the point of being chained like a criminal. But the word of God is not chained. 10 Therefore I endure everything for the sake of the elect, so that they may also obtain the salvation that is in Christ Jesus, with eternal glory. 11 The saying is sure:

If we have died with him, we will also live with him;
12 if we endure, we will also reign with him;
if we deny him, he will also deny us;
13 if we are faithless, he remains faithful—
for he cannot deny himself.

14 Remind them of this, and warn them before God[a] that they are to avoid wrangling over words, which does no good but only ruins those who are listening. 15 Do your best to present yourself to God as one approved by him, a worker who has no need to be ashamed, rightly explaining the word of truth. 16 Avoid profane chatter, for it will lead people into more and more impiety, 17 and their talk will spread like gangrene. Among them are Hymenaeus and Philetus, 18 who have swerved from the truth by claiming that the resurrection has already taken place. They are upsetting the faith of some. 19 But God's firm foundation stands, bearing this inscription: "The Lord knows those who are his," and, "Let everyone who calls on the name of the Lord turn away from wickedness."

20 In a large house there are utensils not only of gold and silver but also of wood and clay, some for special use, some for ordinary. 21 All who cleanse themselves of the things I have mentioned[b] will become special utensils, dedicated and useful to the owner of the house, ready for every good work. 22 Shun youthful passions and pursue righteousness, faith, love, and peace, along with those who call on the Lord from a pure heart. 23 Have nothing to do with stupid and senseless controversies; you know that they breed quarrels. 24 And the Lord's servant[c] must not be quarrelsome but kindly to everyone, an apt teacher, patient, 25 correcting opponents with gentleness. God may perhaps grant that they will repent and come to know the truth, 26 and that they may escape from the snare of the devil, having been held captive by him to do his will.[d]

3 You must understand this, that in the last days distressing times will come. 2 For people will be lovers of themselves, lovers of money, boasters, arrogant, abusive, disobedient to their parents, ungrateful, unholy, 3 inhuman, implacable, slanderers, profligates, brutes, haters of good, 4 treacherous, reckless, swollen with conceit, lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God, 5 holding to the outward form of godliness but denying its power. Avoid them! 6 For among them are

[a] Other ancient authorities read *the Lord*
[b] Gk *of these things*
[c] Gk *slave*
[d] Or *by him, to do his* (that is, God's) *will*

the cost of securing divine favor. **8:** Another encapsulation of the gospel (cf. Rom 1.3). **11:** *The saying is sure,* see 1 Tim 1.15n. **11–13:** A series of parallel clauses, suggesting to some scholars a quotation from a hymn. *Died with him . . . live with him,* Rom 6.5–11; 2 Cor 5.14–15. *Reign with him,* in glory at the end-time (1 Cor 4.8). *Deny him,* Mt 10.33; Mk 8.38; 1 Jn 2.22–23.

2.14–26: Strategies for proper combat with false teachers. 14: wrangling over words, Gk "logomachia," a special concern of the Pastoral epistles (see 1 Tim 6.4). **17:** *Hymenaeus,* 1 Tim 1.20. *Philetus,* otherwise unknown. *Gangrene,* the opposite of "healthy" teaching (see 1.13n.). **18:** *Swerved from the truth,* see 1 Tim 6.21n. *The resurrection has already taken place,* a glimpse at the eschatology of the opponents, though not the theology behind it. They apparently spiritualized the future apocalyptic hope of resurrection, believing it to be a present reality. **19:** *God's firm foundation* (cf. 1 Tim 6.19), as known in scripture. *This inscription,* a quotation from Num 16.5; the second sentence has resonances with Isa 26.13; Job 36.10; Sir 17.26. **20–21:** *Utensils . . . some for special use, some for ordinary* (lit., "some for honor, some for dishonor"), contrast Rom 9.19–23. **23:** *Stupid and senseless controversies*, see 1 Tim 6.4; Titus 3.9. **26:** *Held captive,* "captured and kept alive" (the same verb is used in Lk 5.10).

3.1–9: End-time now: a close-up picture of the opposition. 1: *The last days,* seen as both future and already

those who make their way into households
and captivate silly women, overwhelmed by
their sins and swayed by all kinds of desires,
7 who are always being instructed and can
never arrive at a knowledge of the truth. 8 As
Jannes and Jambres opposed Moses, so these
people, of corrupt mind and counterfeit faith,
also oppose the truth. 9 But they will not
make much progress, because, as in the case
of those two men,[a] their folly will become
plain to everyone.

10 Now you have observed my teaching, my
conduct, my aim in life, my faith, my pa-
tience, my love, my steadfastness, 11 my per-
secutions, and my suffering the things that
happened to me in Antioch, Iconium, and
Lystra. What persecutions I endured! Yet the
Lord rescued me from all of them. 12 Indeed,
all who want to live a godly life in Christ Jesus
will be persecuted. 13 But wicked people and
impostors will go from bad to worse, deceiv-
ing others and being deceived. 14 But as for
you, continue in what you have learned and
firmly believed, knowing from whom you
learned it, 15 and how from childhood you
have known the sacred writings that are able
to instruct you for salvation through faith in
Christ Jesus. 16 All scripture is inspired by God
and is[b] useful for teaching, for reproof, for
correction, and for training in righteousness,
17 so that everyone who belongs to God may
be proficient, equipped for every good work.

4 In the presence of God and of Christ
Jesus, who is to judge the living and the
dead, and in view of his appearing and his
kingdom, I solemnly urge you: 2 proclaim the
message; be persistent whether the time is
favorable or unfavorable; convince, rebuke,
and encourage, with the utmost patience
in teaching. 3 For the time is coming when
people will not put up with sound doctrine,
but having itching ears, they will accumulate
for themselves teachers to suit their own
desires, 4 and will turn away from listening
to the truth and wander away to myths. 5 As
for you, always be sober, endure suffering,
do the work of an evangelist, carry out your
ministry fully.

6 As for me, I am already being poured out
as a libation, and the time of my departure
has come. 7 I have fought the good fight, I
have finished the race, I have kept the faith.
8 From now on there is reserved for me the
crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the
righteous judge, will give me on that day,
and not only to me but also to all who have
longed for his appearing.

9 Do your best to come to me soon, 10 for
Demas, in love with this present world,
has deserted me and gone to Thessalonica;
Crescens has gone to Galatia,[c] Titus to
Dalmatia. 11 Only Luke is with me. Get Mark
and bring him with you, for he is useful in my
ministry. 12 I have sent Tychicus to Ephesus.
13 When you come, bring the cloak that I left

[a] Gk lacks *two men*
[b] Or *Every scripture inspired by God is also*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *Gaul*

present. **2–4:** Vice catalogue (see 1 Tim 1.9–10n.). **5:** *Godliness,* see 1 Tim 2.1–3n. **6:** *Captivate silly women,* common negative ancient caricature of women, employed as part of the invective against the opponents (cf. 1 Tim 2.11–12; 4.7). **7:** *Knowledge of the truth,* see 1 Tim 2.4n. **8:** *Jannes and Jambres,* the names of the Egyptian magicians who opposed Moses (Ex 7.11), according to postbiblical Jewish tradition.

3.10–4.5: Timothy's charge to steadfastness in his ministry. 11: *Antioch, Iconium, and Lystra,* Acts 13.14–14.23 recounts persecutions of Paul in these three cities in Asia Minor, in the same order (which may suggest knowledge of Acts by this author). **15–16:** *Sacred writings, scripture,* the Jewish scriptures (the Hebrew Bible in the ancient Greek version, the Septuagint, abbreviated LXX), which Christians will later call the Old Testament. **4.1:** *Appearing,* see 1 Tim 6.14n. *Kingdom,* also 4.18. **2:** A succinct list of the tasks of bishops. **3–4:** The false teachers as purveyors of myths (cf. 1 Tim 1.4; 4.7; Titus 1.14). **5:** *Evangelist,* Eph 4.11; Acts 21.8.

4.6–8: Paul's reflections on his impending death. 6–7: Sacrificial (Phil 2.17) and athletic (1 Cor 9.24–27; Phil 2.16; 1 Tim 6.12; Acts 20.24) metaphors applied to Paul's ministerial life. **8:** *Crown of righteousness,* the winner's prize, a symbol of positive judgment from the Lord at his Second Coming (1 Thess 2.19; 1 Cor 9.25; Phil 4.1).

4.8–18: An update from prison. 9: An abrupt shift from the previous indication of Paul's imminent death (also 4.21). **10–11:** Paul's abandonment at the end (also 1.15; 4.16). **10–12:** *Demas, Luke, Mark,* mentioned together also in Philem 24 and Col 4.10–14. *Crescens,* mentioned only here. On *Titus,* see Introduction to Titus. **12:**

with Carpus at Troas, also the books, and above all the parchments. [14] Alexander the coppersmith did me great harm; the Lord will pay him back for his deeds. [15] You also must beware of him, for he strongly opposed our message.

[16] At my first defense no one came to my support, but all deserted me. May it not be counted against them! [17] But the Lord stood by me and gave me strength, so that through me the message might be fully proclaimed and all the Gentiles might hear it. So I was rescued from the lion's mouth. [18] The Lord will rescue me from every evil attack and save me for his heavenly kingdom. To him be the glory forever and ever. Amen.

[19] Greet Prisca and Aquila, and the household of Onesiphorus. [20] Erastus remained in Corinth; Trophimus I left ill in Miletus. [21] Do your best to come before winter. Eubulus sends greetings to you, as do Pudens and Linus and Claudia and all the brothers and sisters.[a]

[22] The Lord be with your spirit. Grace be with you.[b]

[a] Gk *all the brothers*

[b] The Greek word for *you* here is plural. Other ancient authorities add *Amen*

Tychicus, see Col 4.7; cf. Eph 6.21–22; Acts 20.4; Titus 3.12. **13:** *Troas,* ancient Troy, the departure point from Asia to Europe (2 Cor 2.12–13; Acts 16.8–12). *Carpus* is mentioned only here. *The books, and above all the parchments,* a suggestive reference, but what is being referred to is unknown. **14:** *Alexander,* see 1 Tim 1.20n. **16:** *My first defense,* formal "apology" against judicial charges. **17:** *The Lord . . . gave me strength,* as he will Timothy (2.1; also 1 Tim 1.12). *Rescued from the lion's mouth,* Ps 21.22 (LXX); Dan 6.21; 1 Macc 2.60.

4.19–21: Epistolary Greetings. 19: *Prisca and Aquila,* prominent missionary team, who were close to Paul (Rom 16.3; 1 Cor 16.19; Acts 18.2,18). *Onesiphorus,* 1.16–17. **20:** *Erastus,* the city-treasurer of Corinth (Rom 16.23; cf. Acts 19.22). *Trophimus,* Acts 20.4; 21.29. **21:** All of these people who are with Paul (despite 4.11!) are found only here. *Come before winter,* while a sea voyage is possible.

4.22: Concluding benediction.

THE LETTER OF PAUL TO TITUS

NAME, AUTHORSHIP, AND BACKGROUND

This letter, which has many similarities to 1 Timothy, is named for its recipient, Paul's envoy and co-worker Titus. It is cast as a reminder and incitement to Titus to complete his mission on Crete (1.5). Acts and the other Pauline letters do not mention any apostolic mission on this, the largest of the Aegean islands and home to a large Jewish community. Those who argue that the letter is genuine contend that such a mission could have taken place after Paul's imprisonment at Rome recounted in Acts 28, while those who regard it as pseudepigraphical (see further Introduction to the Pastoral Epistles, p. 2084) think the author has chosen Crete as a locale representing quintessential disobedience (1.12), or because of a later tradition associating Titus with the island.

Although Titus is not mentioned in Acts, Paul's letters provide information about a co-worker named Titus. According to Gal 2.3 Titus was a Gentile who accompanied Paul to the conference with the Jerusalem apostles, where Titus served as a litmus test for the acceptability of uncircumcised Gentile converts. Titus played a crucial role in the pastoral ministry to Corinth, first as a key administrator of the collection for the church in Jerusalem (2 Cor 8.6,16–17,23; 12.18), and later as Paul's diplomatic envoy who successfully brokered a reconciliation between the apostle and the Corinthian church, which had harbored doubts about Paul's legitimacy and financial reliability (2 Cor 2.13; 7.6–7,13–16).

STRUCTURE AND INTERPRETATION

The letter to Titus is framed as a commissioning letter. After the usual epistolary prescript (1.1–4, which is expanded with a theological creed), the body of the letter focuses on Titus's dual commission to correct things on Crete and to appoint elders (1.5–16). The basis for his ministry follows in sections devoted to the submission expected of various groups in the church (2.1–10), the theological basis for pious living (2.11–15), and a final section bringing the two themes—submission and good works—together (3.1–11). The letter concludes with a discussion of travel plans (3.12–13), a final exhortation to good works (3.14), epistolary greetings (3.15a), and a benediction (3.15b).

Paul delegates two tasks to Titus, under the heading of "putting things in order" (1.5): exhorting the faithful in sound teaching (1.9,13; 2.1–2,8), and refuting the opposition (2.2,15; cf. 1.9). The mainstay of sound teaching, as the author defines it, is strict maintenance of a patriarchal church order and the proper submission it demands (2.5,9; 3.1; contrast the characterization of the opponents as "insubordinate" or "rebellious" in 1.6,10). This ethic of the "household code" as applied to the Christian house church reflects the wider cultural context of the Greco-Roman world and is characteristic of the Pastoral epistles. The second task, the refutation of opponents (fellow Christians of Jewish background who adhere to the requirements of the law of Moses, the Torah, such as dietary laws), is addressed by the author in a negative fashion, through sharp invective and ridicule (1.10–16; 2.8; 3.9–11) rather than theological debate, which the author appears to eye largely with suspicion (1.13–14; 3.9–11).

GUIDE TO READING

Though short, this letter is theologically packed, requiring readers to pause and reconstruct the underlying gospel narrative and theological concepts, which the author often invokes by terse shorthand. Passages such as 1.1–3; 2.11–14; and 3.4–7 allow for instructive comparison with other tight Pauline formulations (see Gal 4.1–11; Rom 3.21–26; 2 Tim 1.9–10), so the theology constructed here can be appreciated both for its distinctiveness and for its continuity with earlier traditions.

Margaret M. Mitchell

1 Paul, a servant[a] of God and an apostle of Jesus Christ, for the sake of the faith of God's elect and the knowledge of the truth that is in accordance with godliness, [2] in the hope of eternal life that God, who never lies, promised before the ages began— [3] in due time he revealed his word through the proclamation with which I have been entrusted by the command of God our Savior,

[4] To Titus, my loyal child in the faith we share:

Grace[b] and peace from God the Father and Christ Jesus our Savior.

[5] I left you behind in Crete for this reason, so that you should put in order what remained to be done, and should appoint elders in every town, as I directed you: [6] someone who is blameless, married only once,[c] whose children are believers, not accused of debauchery and not rebellious. [7] For a bishop,[d] as God's steward, must be blameless; he must not be arrogant or quick-tempered or addicted to wine or violent or greedy for gain; [8] but he must be hospitable, a lover of goodness, prudent, upright, devout, and self-controlled. [9] He must have a firm grasp of the word that is trustworthy in accordance with the teaching, so that he may be able both to preach with sound doctrine and to refute those who contradict it.

[10] There are also many rebellious people, idle talkers and deceivers, especially those of the circumcision; [11] they must be silenced, since they are upsetting whole families by teaching for sordid gain what it is not right to teach. [12] It was one of them, their very own prophet, who said,

"Cretans are always liars, vicious brutes,
lazy gluttons."

[13] That testimony is true. For this reason rebuke them sharply, so that they may become sound in the faith, [14] not paying attention to Jewish myths or to commandments of those who reject the truth. [15] To the pure all things are pure, but to the corrupt and unbelieving nothing is pure. Their very minds and consciences are corrupted. [16] They profess to know God, but they deny him by their actions. They are detestable, disobedient, unfit for any good work.

2 But as for you, teach what is consistent with sound doctrine. [2] Tell the older men to be temperate, serious, prudent, and sound in faith, in love, and in endurance.

[3] Likewise, tell the older women to be reverent in behavior, not to be slanderers or slaves to drink; they are to teach what is good, [4] so that they may encourage the young women to love their husbands, to love their children, [5] to be self-controlled, chaste, good managers of the household, kind, being submissive to their husbands, so that the word of God may not be discredited.

[a] Gk *slave*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *Grace, mercy,*
[c] Gk *husband of one wife*
[d] Or *an overseer*

1.1–4: Epistolary prescript, sender, addressee, and salutation with theological expansion reminiscent of Rom 1.2–6 (cf. 1 Cor 2.7; Col 1.26; 2 Tim 1.10). **2:** *God, who never lies,* cf. v. 12. *Before the ages began,* see 2 Tim 1.9; cf. Jn 1.2–3. **3:** *God our Savior* (also 2.10; 3.4; 1 Tim 1.1; 2.3; 4.10). **4:** *Christ Jesus our Savior* (also 2.13; 3.6; 2 Tim 1.10).

1.5–16: Titus's commission in Crete. 5–7: *Elders . . . bishop,* here apparently regarded as synonymous or at least overlapping categories (cf. 1 Tim 3.1–7; 5.17–20). **6:** *Rebellious,* lit., "insubordinate" (also 1.10). **7:** *Steward,* manager of the household (cf. 1 Cor 4.1–2). **9:** *Sound doctrine,* the reliable tradition the Pastoral epistles pass on; see 1 Tim 4.6n. **10:** *Those of the circumcision,* Jewish Christians who teach adherence to Torah, the law of Moses (see Gal 2.12), including dietary laws (see v. 15). **11:** *Upsetting whole families,* lit., "households," the basic unit of civic and church life. **12:** Invective against opponents supported by a hexameter from the Cretan poet Epimenides (ca. 600 BCE). **13:** *Sound in the faith,* having a "healthy" faith (also 2.2; see 1 Tim 4.6n.). **14:** *Jewish myths,* probably speculations on biblical texts; see 3.9; 1 Tim 1.4; 4.7. **15:** Cf. Rom 14.14. **16:** *Good work,* see 2.7,14; 3.1,8,14 (also 3.8n.).

2.1–10: The proclamation of sound teaching in submission. A catalogue of virtues reflecting and inscribing the hierarchical order of the Greco-Roman household (v. 2, older men; vv. 3–5 women, older and younger; vv. 6–8 younger men; vv. 9–10, slaves). **2:** *Faith . . . love . . . endurance,* a variation on Paul's usual triad of faith, love, and hope (1 Cor 13.13; 1 Thess 1.3; 5.8; cf. 1 Tim 1.5). **5:** *Being submissive,* the author seeks to rein in the insubor-

[6] Likewise, urge the younger men to be
self-controlled. [7] Show yourself in all respects
a model of good works, and in your teaching
show integrity, gravity, [8] and sound speech
that cannot be censured; then any opponent
will be put to shame, having nothing evil to
say of us.

[9] Tell slaves to be submissive to their mas-
ters and to give satisfaction in every respect;
they are not to talk back, [10] not to pilfer, but
to show complete and perfect fidelity, so that
in everything they may be an ornament to
the doctrine of God our Savior.

[11] For the grace of God has appeared,
bringing salvation to all,[a] [12] training us to
renounce impiety and worldly passions,
and in the present age to live lives that are
self-controlled, upright, and godly, [13] while we
wait for the blessed hope and the manifesta-
tion of the glory of our great God and Savior,[b]
Jesus Christ. [14] He it is who gave himself for us
that he might redeem us from all iniquity and
purify for himself a people of his own who
are zealous for good deeds.

[15] Declare these things; exhort and reprove
with all authority.[c] Let no one look down on
you.

3 Remind them to be subject to rulers and
authorities, to be obedient, to be ready
for every good work, [2] to speak evil of no
one, to avoid quarreling, to be gentle, and to
show every courtesy to everyone. [3] For we
ourselves were once foolish, disobedient, led
astray, slaves to various passions and plea-
sures, passing our days in malice and envy,
despicable, hating one another. [4] But when
the goodness and loving kindness of God our
Savior appeared, [5] he saved us, not because
of any works of righteousness that we had
done, but according to his mercy, through
the water[d] of rebirth and renewal by the Holy
Spirit. [6] This Spirit he poured out on us richly
through Jesus Christ our Savior, [7] so that,
having been justified by his grace, we might
become heirs according to the hope of eternal
life. [8] The saying is sure.

I desire that you insist on these things,
so that those who have come to believe in
God may be careful to devote themselves to
good works; these things are excellent and
profitable to everyone. [9] But avoid stupid
controversies, genealogies, dissensions, and
quarrels about the law, for they are unprofit-
able and worthless. [10] After a first and second
admonition, have nothing more to do with
anyone who causes divisions, [11] since you
know that such a person is perverted and sin-
ful, being self-condemned.

[12] When I send Artemas to you, or Tychi-
cus, do your best to come to me at Nicopolis,
for I have decided to spend the winter there.

[a] Or *has appeared to all, bringing salvation*
[b] Or *of the great God and our Savior*
[c] Gk *commandment*
[d] Gk *washing*

dinate (1.6,10) by calling for obedience to each one's superiors (also 2.9; 3.1) and for adherence to the model of Titus (v. 7).

2.11–15: The theological basis for present pious living. 11: *The grace of God has appeared* (lit., "been manifested"), in the life, death, and resurrection of Christ (cf. 3.4). **13:** *The manifestation* (lit., "epiphany"), a reference to the Second Coming, as elsewhere in the Pastoral epistles (1 Tim 6.14; 2 Tim 1.10; 4.1,8). *Our great God and Savior, Jesus Christ,* if translated this way (see note *b*), is one of the rare places in the New Testament where Christ may be referred to as God (Jn 1.18; 20.28; Rom 9.5). **14:** *Who gave himself,* Gal 1.4; 2.20; Eph 5.2; 1 Tim 2.6. *Redeem us,* buy back from slavery (Rom 3.24; 1 Cor 1.30; 6.20; 7.23; Eph 1.7; Col 1.14; cf. Mk 10.45). *A people of his own,* appropriation of the biblical promise to Israel (Deut 7.6–8; Ex 9.5–16); cf. 1 Pet 2.9.

3.1–11: Submission and good works are the marks of the saved. 1: *Subject to rulers and authorities,* advice for Christians to accommodate to the larger social order (similar to Rom 13.1–7; 1 Tim 2.1–3). **4–7:** A tight credal formulation, perhaps from an early hymn. **5:** *The water of rebirth and renewal,* baptism, as both promise of resurrection (Rom 6.3–5) and power for present transformation (Rom 12.2). **8:** *The saying is sure,* a frequent formula in the Pastoral epistles (1 Tim 1.15; 3.1; 4.9; 2 Tim 2.11). *Good works,* as distinguished from "works of righteousness" in v. 5 (the works of the law); see 1.16n. **9–11:** Condemnatory attitude toward the opponents (cf. 1 Tim 6.3–5; 2 Tim 2.14–18), as contrasted with the gentler disposition of 1 Tim 2.4; 2 Tim 2.24–26. **9:** *Genealogies,* linked with "myths" (see 1.4n.) in 1 Tim 1.4.

3.12–13: Travel plans. 12: *Artemas,* otherwise unknown. *Tychicus,* one of Paul's companions (Acts 20.4; Eph

[13] Make every effort to send Zenas the lawyer and Apollos on their way, and see that they lack nothing. [14] And let people learn to devote themselves to good works in order to meet urgent needs, so that they may not be unproductive.

[15] All who are with me send greetings to you. Greet those who love us in the faith.

Grace be with all of you.[a]

[a] Other ancient authorities add *Amen*

6.21–22; Col 4.7; 2 Tim 4.12). *Nicopolis*, probably in western Greece.. **13:** *Zenas the lawyer,* named only here. *Apollos,* an early Christian leader; see Acts 18.24; 1 Cor 1.12; 16.12. *See that they lack nothing,* providing hospitality for itinerant missionaries, as in Rom 16.2; 3 Jn 6.

3.14: Concluding exhortation to good works.

3.15a: Epistolary greetings.

3.15b: Concluding benediction.

THE LETTER OF PAUL TO PHILEMON

NAME AND AUTHORSHIP

This enigmatic letter is named for its first-named recipient, Philemon. It is a piece of the apostle Paul's business correspondence, a curious but intentional blend of personal and public appeal, addressed to three individuals (Philemon, Apphia, and Archippus) and to the church that meets in one of their houses (v. 2).

STRUCTURE AND CONTENTS

The structure of Philemon is straightforward. After the epistolary prescript (vv. 1–3) and thanksgiving (vv. 4–7), which praise Philemon for his past benefactions, in the epistolary body (vv. 8–22) Paul makes a fresh request for the present situation involving Philemon's slave Onesimus through various forms of subtle and not-so-subtle appeal, ending with the suggestion that he will soon visit Philemon (v. 22). He closes the letter with epistolary greetings from missionary co-workers that accent the public arena of Philemon's decision (vv. 23–24), and a final benediction (v. 25).

INTERPRETATION AND GUIDE TO READING

The letter shows Paul's epistolary style at its best and employs a subtle rhetoric to make a request of one of the recipients—probably Philemon. The exact nature of the request is the basis for the enigma that the letter to Philemon represents.

In order to interpret this letter, one must reconstruct the situation it presupposes, but to do so the reader must depend upon the letter itself. Paul writes this letter from prison (vv. 1,9–10; a location is not specified), where he has been joined by someone named Onesimus, whom Paul has converted to the gospel there (v. 10). This Onesimus, who is the slave of Philemon (v. 16), is the object of Paul's appeal (v. 10). While the circumstances that led to Onesimus's encounter with Paul are not described in the letter, two quite different possibilities suggest themselves: Either Onesimus ran away from his master, perhaps after causing him some financial loss (vv. 15,18), or Onesimus was sent by his owner to serve Paul in prison (v. 13), much as Epaphroditus was sent to Paul in prison by the Philippians (Phil 2.25–30). The advantage of the latter possibility is that it explains how Onesimus came to be in prison with Paul, whereas the former option must explain why a slave would run away to a prison. Perhaps Onesimus, according to legal precedent, sought out a friend of his master's to act as an intermediary in a dispute between himself and his owner. The precise occasion of the letter is the moment of Paul's sending Onesimus back to his master (v. 12). The letter will accompany Onesimus and register a plea on his behalf (v. 10).

What is Paul asking Philemon to do? Because Paul formulates his request in intentionally vague and rhetorical terms, a definitive judgment is hard to make. Readers should explore at least three possible interpretations: (1) Paul is asking Philemon to receive Onesimus back as a slave and forgive whatever transgressions he had committed (vv. 17–18); (2) Paul is asking Philemon to send Onesimus back to continue serving the apostle's physical needs while in prison (vv. 13–14); (3) Paul is strongly hinting that Philemon should not only receive Onesimus back but grant this new Christian brother his freedom (vv. 16,21). Each of these options has some grounding in the text, and which one the reader adopts depends upon which verses are thought to be the focal point of the argument and upon how one assesses Paul's tone at various points. One thing, however, is certain about this letter: Paul engages in full-strength arm-twisting of Philemon to do his "good deed" (v. 14). But the final decision of what to do is left up to Philemon himself—in the context of a host of on-lookers among his fellow Christians! One of the most remarkable things about this letter is that it was preserved and ultimately incorporated into the canonical collection of Paul's letters. This may be a hint that Philemon's ultimate decision answered Paul's request.

This letter has played a role in the history of Christian social ethics disproportionate to its size. The adequacy of Paul's attitude and actions toward the institution of slavery, both in his context and as a legacy for Christian social thought, continues to be debated.

Margaret M. Mitchell

[1] Paul, a prisoner of Christ Jesus, and Timothy our brother,[a]

To Philemon our dear friend and co-worker, [2] to Apphia our sister,[b] to Archippus our fellow soldier, and to the church in your house:

[3] Grace to you and peace from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

[4] When I remember you[c] in my prayers, I always thank my God [5] because I hear of your love for all the saints and your faith toward the Lord Jesus. [6] I pray that the sharing of your faith may become effective when you perceive all the good that we[d] may do for Christ. [7] I have indeed received much joy and encouragement from your love, because the hearts of the saints have been refreshed through you, my brother.

[8] For this reason, though I am bold enough in Christ to command you to do your duty, [9] yet I would rather appeal to you on the basis of love—and I, Paul, do this as an old man, and now also as a prisoner of Christ Jesus.[e] [10] I am appealing to you for my child, Onesimus, whose father I have become during my imprisonment. [11] Formerly he was useless to you, but now he is indeed useful[f] both to you and to me. [12] I am sending him, that is, my own heart, back to you. [13] I wanted to keep him with me, so that he might be of service to me in your place during my imprisonment for the gospel; [14] but I preferred to do nothing without your consent, in order that your good deed might be voluntary and not something forced. [15] Perhaps this is the reason he was separated from you for a while, so that you might have him back forever, [16] no longer as a slave but more than a slave, a beloved brother—especially to me but how much more to you, both in the flesh and in the Lord.

[17] So if you consider me your partner, welcome him as you would welcome me. [18] If he has wronged you in any way, or owes you anything, charge that to my account. [19] I, Paul, am writing this with my own hand: I will repay it. I say nothing about your owing me even your own self. [20] Yes, brother, let me have this benefit from you in the Lord! Re-

[a] Gk *the brother*
[b] Gk *the sister*
[c] From verse 4 through verse 21, *you* is singular
[d] Other ancient authorities read *you* (plural)
[e] Or *as an ambassador of Christ Jesus, and now also his prisoner*
[f] The name Onesimus means *useful* or (compare verse 20) *beneficial*

1–3: Epistolary prescript (senders, addressees, and salutation), with each sender and recipient carefully designated. **1:** *Timothy,* see Introduction to 2 Timothy. **2:** *Our sister,* fellow Christian. *Apphia,* named only here. *Archippus,* see Col 4.17. *And to the church in your house,* Paul puts Philemon's decision in a more public context.

4–7: Thanksgiving for Philemon's past good deeds. In vv. 4–22a Paul uses the singular address (*you*). Because he calls him "brother" in v. 20, it must refer either to Philemon or Archippus; tradition and current scholarship almost unanimously choose Philemon, on the grounds that he is the first named. **4:** *Remember you in my prayers,* cf 2 Tim 1.3. **7:** *Hearts,* "splanchna," lit., "inner organs," refers to the emotional center of a person (see vv. 12,20).

8–22: Paul's appeal for another good deed from Philemon. 10: *Whose father I have become,* lit., "whom I begot" to new life in the gospel (cf. 1 Cor 4.15). **11:** *Useful* ("eu-chrestos") is a double pun, referring both to Onesimus's name (see textual note *f*) and his identity in Christ ("eu-Christos" = "good in Christ"). **14:** *Voluntary,* Paul does not command (cf. v. 8), but prefers to persuade. **15:** *Was separated,* a perhaps deliberately vague reference to Onesimus's absence. **16:** *No longer as a slave,* finally the problem is stated: status dissonance (i.e., when a person occupies two or more social positions simultaneously). What happens when a slave of a Christian master becomes a Christian? Some scholars take Paul to mean the slave stops being a slave by becoming a brother, but others think Paul considers the new status of *brother* as relativizing, but not changing, the slave's station in the world. *In the flesh and in the Lord,* in the world and in the church. **17–19:** *Partner, charge . . . to my account, repay,* business terminology signaling Paul's financial obligations to Philemon. *Writing this with my own hand,* cf. 1 Cor 16.21; Gal 6.11. *Owing me even your own self,* Philemon's spiritual obligation to the one who converted him. **21:** *More than I say,* a mere commonplace or a diplomatically framed hint to release him from slavery? **22b:** *Your* prayers, in the plural. Paul here joins the co-recipients (v. 2) with him in registering his plea to Philemon.

fresh my heart in Christ. [21] Confident of your obedience, I am writing to you, knowing that you will do even more than I say.

[22] One thing more—prepare a guest room for me, for I am hoping through your prayers to be restored to you.

[23] Epaphras, my fellow prisoner in Christ Jesus, sends greetings to you,[a] [24] and so do Mark, Aristarchus, Demas, and Luke, my fellow workers.

[25] The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit.[b]

[a] Here *you* is singular

[b] Other ancient authorities add *Amen*

23–24: Greetings, the same five people are named in Col 4.10–14. *Epaphras,* Col 1.7; 4.12.

25: Concluding benediction.

THE LETTER TO THE HEBREWS

NAME AND AUTHORSHIP

During the collection of the New Testament books into a canon, the Letter to the Hebrews got its name from its implied addressees, the "Hebrews." Although the text itself does not name its addressees, its emphasis on Jewish scripture and ritual in making its argument may have suggested the title. By the end of the second century CE Hebrews began to be attributed to Paul. In the earliest collection of Paul's letters (P46) this one followed Paul's letter to the Romans. In the canon lists of the fourth century it was included with the Pauline letters. Consequently, the name "Paul" came to be used for the author of the work, appearing first in the Vulgate. The title "The Epistle of Paul to the Hebrews" reflects the authority attained by both the figure of Paul the apostle as author and the literary genre of the letter.

Despite the traditional attribution to Paul, early church writers questioned its authorship. Clement, Tertullian, and Origen acknowledged differences in style and theology between Hebrews and Paul's own letters. Clement argued that Luke had translated Paul's Hebrew original into Greek, while Origen suggested that a disciple of Paul wrote the letter based on Paul's notes. Modern interpreters have suggested other authors, including Apollos and Priscilla (see Acts 18.24–26). There is not sufficient evidence to identify any person named in the New Testament as the author; thus it is held to be anonymous.

DATE

Like the name of the author, the precise date of Hebrews cannot be determined. Because the argument depends on Jewish liturgical practice, some scholars argue that it must have been written before the destruction of the Temple in Jerusalem in 70 CE. The work alludes to the rites as described in scripture, however, and does not presume knowledge of current practice in the Temple. Composed after the first generation of Christian leaders, but not later than the mid-90s when Hebrews is quoted in 1 Clement, the work is to be dated somewhere between 60 and 90 CE.

CONTENT, GENRE, AND STRUCTURE

Hebrews addresses an audience of both Jewish and Gentile background that has suffered hardship and persecution (10.32). Some may have renounced their faith (2.3; 6.4–6; 12.25). The work is written to encourage and exhort them to ongoing confidence and faith. The author grounds the argument in scripture and argues that Jesus is superior to earlier Jewish traditions. Because of its highly structured exegetical and exhortatory style, and the author's claim to present a "word of exhortation" (13.32), the literary genre of Hebrews is best described as an early Christian sermon, rather than a letter. Typical features of letters, such as opening and closing greetings, make the work resemble a letter. Images, themes, and motifs anticipate and reinforce each other as the argument unfolds. The structure falls into four main sections. Chapters 1.1–4.13 explore the word of God spoken through the Son; chs 4.14–10.31 interpret Jesus as the eternal high priest against the background of the Israelite priesthood. The third part, 10.32–12.29, describes faith as insight into a heavenly world of reality. Chapter 13 gives practical advice and greetings.

GUIDE TO READING

Because so many of the standard historical introductory questions about Hebrews are uncertain, Hebrews is best read by leaving those questions open and exploring the work as a distinctive Christian writing. In a manner unique among New Testament books, the sermon develops the image of Christ as the great high priest who fulfills and completes the Jewish system of sacrifice. It interprets the significance of Jesus Christ and his death in categories of ritual and sacrifice familiar to both its author and its audience. Ancient readers could appreciate the sophisticated rhetorical style, follow the repetition and development of images and vocabulary, and understand the logic of the author's argument in the context of Platonic and allegorical interpretation and of other early Christian language. Reading with particular attention to repetition and patterns of imagery and to the allusions to scripture and liturgy will help the contemporary reader to appreciate the sermon's rhetorical effectiveness to strengthen flagging faith and encourage hope in God's promised salvation.

Cynthia Briggs Kittredge

1 Long ago God spoke to our ancestors in
many and various ways by the prophets,
[2] but in these last days he has spoken to us by
a Son,[a] whom he appointed heir of all things,
through whom he also created the worlds.
[3] He is the reflection of God's glory and the
exact imprint of God's very being, and he
sustains[b] all things by his powerful word.
When he had made purification for sins, he
sat down at the right hand of the Majesty on
high, [4] having become as much superior to
angels as the name he has inherited is more
excellent than theirs.

[5] For to which of the angels did God ever
say,

"You are my Son;
today I have begotten you"?

Or again,

"I will be his Father,
and he will be my Son"?

[6] And again, when he brings the firstborn into
the world, he says,

"Let all God's angels worship him."

[7] Of the angels he says,

"He makes his angels winds,
and his servants flames of fire."

[8] But of the Son he says,

"Your throne, O God, is[c] forever and
ever,
and the righteous scepter is the scepter
of your[d] kingdom.
[9] You have loved righteousness and hated
wickedness;
therefore God, your God, has anointed you
with the oil of gladness beyond your
companions."

[10] And,

"In the beginning, Lord, you founded the
earth,
and the heavens are the work of your
hands;
[11] they will perish, but you remain;
they will all wear out like clothing;
[12] like a cloak you will roll them up,
and like clothing[e] they will be changed.
But you are the same,
and your years will never end."

[13] But to which of the angels has he ever said,

"Sit at my right hand
until I make your enemies a footstool
for your feet"?

[14] Are not all angels[f] spirits in the divine ser-
vice, sent to serve for the sake of those who
are to inherit salvation?

2 Therefore we must pay greater attention
to what we have heard, so that we do
not drift away from it. [2] For if the message
declared through angels was valid, and every
transgression or disobedience received a just

[a] Or *the Son*
[b] Or *bears along*
[c] Or *God is your throne*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *his*
[e] Other ancient authorities lack *like clothing*
[f] Gk *all of them*

1.1–4.13: Word of God spoken through the Son.

1.1–4: The prologue: God has spoken through a Son. The formal, rhythmic prologue contrasts God's mode of speaking in the past with God's mode of speaking *in these last days.* The contrast assumes that the one *Son* of the present is better than the many *prophets* of *long ago.* The relationship of the Son to God is elaborated in a hymn, similar to other Christological hymns in the New Testament (Phil 2.6–11; Col 1.15–20). **3:** The Son is described as participating in the creation and as one who *sustains all things. The reflection of God's glory and the exact imprint of God's very being,* language derived from Jewish wisdom speculation about the female figure of Wisdom, who was present at the time of creation (Prov 8.22–31; Wis 9.9), came to earth to dwell (Sir 24.8; Bar 3.37), and returned to her place in the heavens (*1 Enoch* 42.1–2). In Wis 7.26 wisdom is described as "a reflection . . . of God." See also Jn 1.1–3. When the Son had accomplished the priestly work of *purification* (9.14,26–28), he sat down at God's right hand (Ps 110.1). **4:** *The name* may be "Son" or possibly "Lord" (Phil 2.9–11).

1.5–2.18: The superiority of the Son to the angels. *Angels,* thought to be mediators of God's word in giving the law to Israel and imagined to be in attendance at the enthronement of the Son, are inferior to the Son because their role is to serve (v. 14). Seven quotations from Jewish scripture are cited as speaking about or to Jesus. **1.5:** Ps 2.7; 2 Sam 7.14. **6:** Deut 32.43. **7:** Ps 104.4. **8:** Ps 45.6–7. **10–12:** Ps 102.25–27. **13:** Ps 110.1. The author alludes to Ps 110.1 in 8.1; 10.12; 12.2. Ps 110.1 is interpreted messianically elsewhere in the New Testament (Acts 2.24; 1 Cor 15.25).

2.1–4: Exhortation not to fall away. The superiority of the Son to the angels makes it more necessary to obey

penalty, [3] how can we escape if we neglect so great a salvation? It was declared at first through the Lord, and it was attested to us by those who heard him, [4] while God added his testimony by signs and wonders and various miracles, and by gifts of the Holy Spirit, distributed according to his will.

[5] Now God[a] did not subject the coming world, about which we are speaking, to angels. [6] But someone has testified somewhere,

"What are human beings that you are
mindful of them,[b]
or mortals, that you care for them?[c]
[7] You have made them for a little while
lower[d] than the angels;
you have crowned them with glory and
honor,[e]
[8] subjecting all things under their feet."

Now in subjecting all things to them, God[a] left nothing outside their control. As it is, we do not yet see everything in subjection to them, [9] but we do see Jesus, who for a little while was made lower[f] than the angels, now crowned with glory and honor because of the suffering of death, so that by the grace of God[g] he might taste death for everyone.

[10] It was fitting that God,[a] for whom and through whom all things exist, in bringing many children to glory, should make the pioneer of their salvation perfect through sufferings. [11] For the one who sanctifies and those who are sanctified all have one Father.[h] For this reason Jesus[a] is not ashamed to call them brothers and sisters,[i] [12] saying,

"I will proclaim your name to my brothers
and sisters,[i]
in the midst of the congregation I will
praise you."

[13] And again,

"I will put my trust in him."

And again,

"Here am I and the children whom God
has given me."

[14] Since, therefore, the children share flesh and blood, he himself likewise shared the same things, so that through death he might destroy the one who has the power of death, that is, the devil, [15] and free those who all their lives were held in slavery by the fear of death. [16] For it is clear that he did not come to help angels, but the descendants of Abraham. [17] Therefore he had to become like his brothers and sisters[i] in every respect, so that he might be a merciful and faithful high priest in the service of God, to make a sacrifice of atonement for the sins of the people. [18] Because he himself was tested by what he suffered, he is able to help those who are being tested.

[a] Gk *he*
[b] Gk *What is man that you are mindful of him?*
[c] Gk *or the son of man that you care for him?* In the Hebrew of Psalm 8.4-6 both *man* and *son of man* refer to all humankind
[d] Or *them only a little lower*
[e] Other ancient authorities add *and set them over the works of your hands*
[f] Or *who was made a little lower*
[g] Other ancient authorities read *apart from God*
[h] Gk *are all of one*
[i] Gk *brothers*

the message of salvation he brought than the law of Moses, which came through the angels. **2:** *The message declared through angels,* see Acts 7.53; Gal 3.19; Josephus, *Ant.* 15.5.3. **3:** *Attested to us by those who heard,* the message has come to this community through an earlier generation. **4:** *Signs and wonders,* see Acts 2.43; 15.12; cf. Deut 6.22. *Miracles,* see Acts 8.13; 19.11; cf. Ps 105.27. *Gifts of the Holy Spirit,* see 1 Cor 12.4–11.

2.5–18: Jesus' exaltation through abasement. 5: *The coming world*, the age to come. **6–9:** Quoting Ps 8.4–6, the author interprets the verses as referring to Jesus, the human being. Unlike the original psalm which said that God created human beings "a little lower than the angels," the author understands that Jesus the human being is superior to angels but was made *for a little while lower* than them in his death (cf. Phil 2.6–11). **10–18:** Jesus shares humanity with all human beings (*children*, lit., "sons"). In order to liberate his *brothers and sisters* from *slavery* to the power of death, Jesus had to share their human experience *in every respect.* **10:** The expression, *make . . . perfect,* is characteristic of this letter (5.9; 7.19,28; 9.9; 10.1,14; 11.40; 12.23) and means "to make complete, to bring to maturity." Christ as *pioneer* goes before and points out the way to his followers (12.2); the same Gk word is translated "author" (Acts 3.15) and "leader" (Acts 5.31). **12:** Ps 22.22. **13:** Isa 8.17–18. **14:** See Wis 2.24; Rom 6.23. **17:** As *high priest* the Son is both *merciful* (cf. 5.2–3) and *faithful* (cf. 3.2,6), *to make a sacrifice of*

3 Therefore, brothers and sisters,[a] holy partners in a heavenly calling, consider that Jesus, the apostle and high priest of our confession, [2] was faithful to the one who appointed him, just as Moses also "was faithful in all[b] God's[c] house." [3] Yet Jesus[d] is worthy of more glory than Moses, just as the builder of a house has more honor than the house itself. [4] (For every house is built by someone, but the builder of all things is God.) [5] Now Moses was faithful in all God's[c] house as a servant, to testify to the things that would be spoken later. [6] Christ, however, was faithful over God's[c] house as a son, and we are his house if we hold firm[e] the confidence and the pride that belong to hope.

[7] Therefore, as the Holy Spirit says,
"Today, if you hear his voice,
[8] do not harden your hearts as in the rebellion,
as on the day of testing in the wilderness,
[9] where your ancestors put me to the test,
though they had seen my works [10] for forty years.
Therefore I was angry with that generation,
and I said, 'They always go astray in their hearts,
and they have not known my ways.'
[11] As in my anger I swore,
'They will not enter my rest.'"

[12] Take care, brothers and sisters,[a] that none of you may have an evil, unbelieving heart that turns away from the living God. [13] But exhort one another every day, as long as it is called "today," so that none of you may be hardened by the deceitfulness of sin. [14] For we have become partners of Christ, if only we hold our first confidence firm to the end. [15] As it is said,

"Today, if you hear his voice,
do not harden your hearts as in the rebellion."

[16] Now who were they who heard and yet were rebellious? Was it not all those who left Egypt under the leadership of Moses? [17] But with whom was he angry forty years? Was it not those who sinned, whose bodies fell in the wilderness? [18] And to whom did he swear that they would not enter his rest, if not to those who were disobedient? [19] So we see that they were unable to enter because of unbelief.

4 Therefore, while the promise of entering his rest is still open, let us take care that none of you should seem to have failed to reach it. [2] For indeed the good news came to us just as to them; but the message they heard did not benefit them, because they

[a] Gk *brothers*
[b] Other ancient authorities lack *all*
[c] Gk *his*
[d] Gk *this one*
[e] Other ancient authorities add *to the end*

atonement continually for *sins* that bring death and the fear of it to God's *people* (vv. 14–15). **18:** Jesus was *tested* by suffering (5.7–8); therefore he can help the community this sermon addresses, which is also being tested.

3.1–6: Comparison of Jesus and Moses. The author argues for Jesus' superiority to Moses, who, like the angels, is another intermediary of God's word or law. **1:** *Holy partners,* the readers or hearers are addressed in terms that remind them of their position and responsibility in sharing *in a heavenly calling,* as Jesus is in the heavens. As *apostle,* Jesus is the one sent by God to humankind; as *high priest,* he is their representative before God. **2:** The author first refers to what Jesus and Moses have in common: faithfulness to their respective tasks. *Was faithful in all God's house* alludes to the Septuagint (LXX) version of Num 12.7–8. **3–5:** As to position, Christ (a "son," v. 6) is superior to Moses (a *servant* in God's house; Num 12.7). **6:** *We are his house,* the community of faithful believers. *That belong to hope,* hope is a key theme in the sermon (see 6.11,18; 7.19; 10.23).

3.7–4.13: Entering God's rest. The author makes an extended commentary on Ps 95.7–11 and applies it to the lives of the audience. **3.8:** *Rebellion* and *testing* are translations of the Hebrew names Meribah and Massah in Ps 95.8 (Ex 17.1–7; Num 20.1–13; Deut 33.8). **11:** *My rest,* the possession of the promised land of Canaan. **13:** *The deceitfulness of sin,* disobedience (Num 14.1–4,34,41), leading to apostasy or renunciation of faith. **15:** Ps 95.7. **16–19:** A series of questions refers to Israel, *those who left Egypt under the leadership of Moses* and who did not *enter* the *rest.* The *unbelief* of the Israelites will be compared with the necessary faithfulness of the Christian community.

4.1–13: The faithfulness required of Christians. 1: God's promise, which must be fulfilled, remains for faith-

were not united by faith with those who listened.[a] [3] For we who have believed enter that rest, just as God[b] has said,

"As in my anger I swore,
'They shall not enter my rest,'"

though his works were finished at the foundation of the world. [4] For in one place it speaks about the seventh day as follows, "And God rested on the seventh day from all his works." [5] And again in this place it says, "They shall not enter my rest." [6] Since therefore it remains open for some to enter it, and those who formerly received the good news failed to enter because of disobedience, [7] again he sets a certain day—"today"—saying through David much later, in the words already quoted,

"Today, if you hear his voice,
do not harden your hearts."

[8] For if Joshua had given them rest, God[b] would not speak later about another day. [9] So then, a sabbath rest still remains for the people of God; [10] for those who enter God's rest also cease from their labors as God did from his. [11] Let us therefore make every effort to enter that rest, so that no one may fall through such disobedience as theirs.

[12] Indeed, the word of God is living and active, sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing until it divides soul from spirit, joints from marrow; it is able to judge the thoughts and intentions of the heart. [13] And before him no creature is hidden, but all are naked and laid bare to the eyes of the one to whom we must render an account.

[14] Since, then, we have a great high priest who has passed through the heavens, Jesus, the Son of God, let us hold fast to our confession. [15] For we do not have a high priest who is unable to sympathize with our weaknesses, but we have one who in every respect has been tested[c] as we are, yet without sin. [16] Let us therefore approach the throne of grace with boldness, so that we may receive mercy and find grace to help in time of need.

5 Every high priest chosen from among mortals is put in charge of things pertaining to God on their behalf, to offer gifts and sacrifices for sins. [2] He is able to deal gently with the ignorant and wayward, since he himself is subject to weakness; [3] and because of this he must offer sacrifice for his own sins as well as for those of the people. [4] And one does not presume to take this honor, but takes it only when called by God, just as Aaron was.

[5] So also Christ did not glorify himself in becoming a high priest, but was appointed by the one who said to him,

[a] Other ancient authorities read *it did not meet with faith in those who listened*
[b] Gk *he*
[c] Or *tempted*

ful Christians to inherit. **2:** *Those who listened,* Num 13.30–14.10. **3:** Ps 95.11. **4:** Gen 2.2. The meaning of "rest" is enlarged to include God's sabbath rest. **5:** Ps 95.11. **7–8:** *Today,* see 3.13–15. The possession of Canaan under Joshua was not the promised *rest,* otherwise *David,* understood to be the author of the psalm, would not have spoken centuries later of a rest still remaining (Ps 95.7–8). **9–10:** *Sabbath rest,* points back to God's rest after the work of creation (Gen 2.2), and forward to rest as the ultimate destiny of followers in heaven. **11–13:** The author exhorts the community to enter into the rest and concludes the opening section, which has explored the theme of God's speaking, with a statement about *the word of God* which is living. **13:** The Gk word translated *account* is "logos," the same word translated as "word" in v. 12.

4.14–10.31: Jesus as the eternal high priest. 4.14–5.10: Christ as great high priest. The author understands Jesus' life, death, and present heavenly role through the category of "high priest" who perfects the ancient sacrificial system of Judaism. Having discussed Jesus' "faithfulness"(2.17; 3.1–6), the author turns to reflect on his "mercy." **4.14:** *Through the heavens,* Jesus has passed through the series of heavens above the earth (cf. 2 Cor 12.2) and entered into the highest where God dwells. His entry is the basis for the confidence and hope of Christians. **16:** *Approach the throne of grace,* the sermon's imagery shifts from holding fast (3.6,14; 4.14) to moving forward, an image that will be explored as the sermon proceeds. **5.1:** The author defines what a *high priest* is and shows how the definition fits Jesus. A priest is *chosen from among* human beings and represents them before God in sacrifices he offers. **2:** He can effectively represent them because he shares human *weakness.* **3:** See Lev 9.7. **4:** He is called by God to this office. *Aaron,* Ex 28.1. **5:** Citing Ps 2.7, the author demonstrates that Christ is *ap-*

"You are my Son,
today I have begotten you";
6 as he says also in another place,
"You are a priest forever,
according to the order of Melchizedek."
7 In the days of his flesh, Jesus[a] offered up prayers and supplications, with loud cries and tears, to the one who was able to save him from death, and he was heard because of his reverent submission. 8 Although he was a Son, he learned obedience through what he suffered; 9 and having been made perfect, he became the source of eternal salvation for all who obey him, 10 having been designated by God a high priest according to the order of Melchizedek.

11 About this[b] we have much to say that is hard to explain, since you have become dull in understanding. 12 For though by this time you ought to be teachers, you need someone to teach you again the basic elements of the oracles of God. You need milk, not solid food; 13 for everyone who lives on milk, being still an infant, is unskilled in the word of righteousness. 14 But solid food is for the mature, for those whose faculties have been trained by practice to distinguish good from evil.

6 Therefore let us go on toward perfection,[c] leaving behind the basic teaching about Christ, and not laying again the foundation: repentance from dead works and faith toward God, 2 instruction about baptisms, laying on of hands, resurrection of the dead, and eternal judgment. 3 And we will do[d] this, if God permits. 4 For it is impossible to restore again to repentance those who have once been enlightened, and have tasted the heavenly gift, and have shared in the Holy Spirit, 5 and have tasted the goodness of the word of God and the powers of the age to come, 6 and then have fallen away, since on their own they are crucifying again the Son of God and are holding him up to contempt. 7 Ground that drinks up the rain falling on it repeatedly, and that produces a crop useful to those for whom it is cultivated, receives a blessing from God. 8 But if it produces thorns and thistles, it is worthless and on the verge of being cursed; its end is to be burned over.

9 Even though we speak in this way, beloved, we are confident of better things in your case, things that belong to salvation. 10 For God is not unjust; he will not overlook your work and the love that you showed for his sake[e] in serving the saints, as you still do. 11 And we want each one of you to show the

[a] Gk *he*
[b] Or *him*
[c] Or *toward maturity*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *let us do*
[e] Gk *for his name*

pointed by God (cf. Lk 3.22). **6:** The author quotes Ps 110.4. *According to the order of Melchizedek* is interpreted to mean "like" Melchizedek. The sermon will return to this element in 7.1–22. **7–9:** The author refers to an example of Jesus' sharing human weakness and suffering in order to show how that makes him a source of salvation for human beings. **7:** Traditionally, this verse has been understood to refer to Gethsemane (Mk.14.32–42 and parallels). However, the description resembles the portrayal of the typical Jewish hero, such as Abraham or Moses, who prays loudly to God for deliverance (2 Macc 11.6; Philo, *Rer. div. her.* 19). **10:** *Melchizedek,* see 7.1–10n. Although simply called a "priest according to the order of Melchizedek" in the psalm citation, the author elaborates that Jesus is a "high priest according to the order of Melchizedek."

5.11–6.20: Exhortation to hope. The author's tone shifts from critical to complimentary in this hortatory passage. The community is encouraged to move forward, first *toward perfection* (6.1), then *to seize the hope set before us* (6.18). **5.12–14:** Common in Hellenistic rhetoric, the comparison between *milk* as rudimentary teaching and *solid food* as more advanced teaching is used to encourage the community to move beyond basic teachings (cf. 1 Cor 3.1–2). **6.1:** *Dead works,* "works that lead to death" or "sin." **2:** *Baptisms,* ritual washings used in both Jewish and Christian practice (see 9.10). *Laying on of hands* was a ritual of commissioning (see Acts 6.6; 8.17–19; 9.17; 13.3; 1 Tim 4.14; 2 Tim 1.6). Teaching about *resurrection of the dead* would have been accepted by both Jews and Christians. The author understands all these as "basic teaching," while the priesthood of Christ is the more advanced teaching explored by the sermon. **4–6:** Those who have *fallen away* cannot be restored to repentance; they therefore share in *crucifying . . . the Son of God.* These verses describe the dire consequence for one who loses hope and falls away. **7–8:** *Thorns and thistles* could refer to the curse of Gen 3.18; the blessings of the Promised Land require fidelity to God's covenant (Deut 11.11; 28.1–5). **9–12:** The author reassures the audience

same diligence so as to realize the full assurance of hope to the very end, 12 so that you may not become sluggish, but imitators of those who through faith and patience inherit the promises.

13 When God made a promise to Abraham, because he had no one greater by whom to swear, he swore by himself, 14 saying, "I will surely bless you and multiply you." 15 And thus Abraham,[a] having patiently endured, obtained the promise. 16 Human beings, of course, swear by someone greater than themselves, and an oath given as confirmation puts an end to all dispute. 17 In the same way, when God desired to show even more clearly to the heirs of the promise the unchangeable character of his purpose, he guaranteed it by an oath, 18 so that through two unchangeable things, in which it is impossible that God would prove false, we who have taken refuge might be strongly encouraged to seize the hope set before us. 19 We have this hope, a sure and steadfast anchor of the soul, a hope that enters the inner shrine behind the curtain, 20 where Jesus, a forerunner on our behalf, has entered, having become a high priest forever according to the order of Melchizedek.

7 This "King Melchizedek of Salem, priest of the Most High God, met Abraham as he was returning from defeating the kings and blessed him"; 2 and to him Abraham apportioned "one-tenth of everything." His name, in the first place, means "king of righteousness"; next he is also king of Salem, that is, "king of peace." 3 Without father, without mother, without genealogy, having neither beginning of days nor end of life, but resembling the Son of God, he remains a priest forever.

4 See how great he is! Even[b] Abraham the patriarch gave him a tenth of the spoils. 5 And those descendants of Levi who receive the priestly office have a commandment in the law to collect tithes[c] from the people, that is, from their kindred,[d] though these also are descended from Abraham. 6 But this man, who does not belong to their ancestry, collected tithes[c] from Abraham and blessed him who had received the promises. 7 It is beyond dispute that the inferior is blessed by the superior. 8 In the one case, tithes are received by those who are mortal; in the other, by one of whom it is testified that he lives. 9 One might even say that Levi himself, who receives tithes, paid tithes through Abraham, 10 for he was still in the loins of his ancestor when Melchizedek met him.

11 Now if perfection had been attainable through the levitical priesthood—for the people received the law under this priest-

[a] Gk *he*
[b] Other ancient authorities lack *Even*
[c] Or *a tenth*
[d] Gk *brothers*

that they are not among those who are lost. **10:** *Saints,* fellow Christians. **13–18:** As a basis for hope, the author refers to God's promise to Abraham that he would bless Abraham's descendants (Gen 22.16–18). The promise made to Abraham applies to all Christians. **18:** *Two unchangeable things,* God's promise and God's oath. **19–20:** The author summarizes the theme of *hope* and introduces the next topic: a *priest* like *Melchizedek* and the entry of the priest into the holy of holies. **19:** *The inner shrine,* the holy of holies (9.3) of the tabernacle, behind the *curtain* or veil (Ex 26.31–35), restricted to the high priest alone (Lev 16.2). **20:** As *forerunner,* however, Jesus goes ahead on behalf of human beings. *Melchizedek,* here the author picks up the argument of 5.10.

7.1–28: The priesthood of Melchizedek and the levitical priesthood compared. Having referred to Ps 110.4 (see 5.6,10; 6.20), the author proceeds to show how Christ is a priest *according to the order of* ("like") *Melchizedek.* The Dead Sea Scrolls give evidence of Jewish speculation on Melchizedek as an angelic, heavenly figure who rescues the righteous (11QMelch). **1–10:** From Gen 14.17–20 the author deduces that the mysterious priest-king Melchizedek was greater than either Abraham or his descendent, Levi. **3:** *Without father, without mother, without genealogy,* the Bible makes no mention of Melchizedek's ancestors, birth, and death. **5:** See Num 18.21–24; Deut 26.12. **8:** *Those who are mortal,* the levitical priests (Num 18). One who *lives,* Melchizedek, whose death is not recorded.

7.11–25: The levitical priesthood is inadequate because it is provisional and temporary (vv. 11–14). On the other hand, a priest resembling Melchizedek is eternal (Ps 110.4), and the office is neither inherited nor trans-

hood—what further need would there have been to speak of another priest arising according to the order of Melchizedek, rather than one according to the order of Aaron? [12] For when there is a change in the priesthood, there is necessarily a change in the law as well. [13] Now the one of whom these things are spoken belonged to another tribe, from which no one has ever served at the altar. [14] For it is evident that our Lord was descended from Judah, and in connection with that tribe Moses said nothing about priests.

[15] It is even more obvious when another priest arises, resembling Melchizedek, [16] one who has become a priest, not through a legal requirement concerning physical descent, but through the power of an indestructible life. [17] For it is attested of him,

"You are a priest forever,
according to the order of Melchizedek."

[18] There is, on the one hand, the abrogation of an earlier commandment because it was weak and ineffectual [19] (for the law made nothing perfect); there is, on the other hand, the introduction of a better hope, through which we approach God.

[20] This was confirmed with an oath; for others who became priests took their office without an oath, [21] but this one became a priest with an oath, because of the one who said to him,

"The Lord has sworn
and will not change his mind,
'You are a priest forever'"—

[22] accordingly Jesus has also become the guarantee of a better covenant.

[23] Furthermore, the former priests were many in number, because they were prevented by death from continuing in office; [24] but he holds his priesthood permanently, because he continues forever. [25] Consequently he is able for all time to save[a] those who approach God through him, since he always lives to make intercession for them.

[26] For it was fitting that we should have such a high priest, holy, blameless, undefiled, separated from sinners, and exalted above the heavens. [27] Unlike the other[b] high priests, he has no need to offer sacrifices day after day, first for his own sins, and then for those of the people; this he did once for all when he offered himself. [28] For the law appoints as high priests those who are subject to weakness, but the word of the oath, which came later than the law, appoints a Son who has been made perfect forever.

8 Now the main point in what we are saying is this: we have such a high priest, one who is seated at the right hand of the throne of the Majesty in the heavens, [2] a minister in the sanctuary and the true tent[c] that the Lord, and not any mortal, has set up. [3] For every high priest is appointed to offer gifts and sacrifices; hence it is necessary for this priest also to have something to offer. [4] Now if he were on earth, he would not be a priest at all, since there are priests who offer gifts according to the law. [5] They offer worship in

[a] Or *able to save completely*
[b] Gk lacks *other*
[c] Or *tabernacle*

mitted (vv. 15–19). Unlike the levitical priests, Jesus was appointed with a divine oath (v. 17; Ps 110.4); furthermore, being immortal, Jesus holds his priesthood permanently (vv. 20–25). **14:** *From Judah,* Jesus, as a descendant of David, belonged to the tribe of Judah (1 Chr 2.3–15; Sir 45.25). **17:** Ps 110.2. **20:** Oath, see 6.17. **21:** Ps 110.4. **25:** Christ's *intercession*, see 9.24.

7.26–28: Summary of the merits of the high priest, Jesus the Son of God. The theme of perfection and completeness concludes this section (see also vv. 11,19). The law has been incapable of bringing the priesthood to perfection because the Israelite priests were mortal (vv. 23–24). The author has established the eternal character of Christ's priesthood.

8.1–6: Old and new ministry. The author asserts that Christians have an eternal high priest who has been exalted into heaven (1.3). Christ exercises his priestly ministry only in heaven, since on earth he is not a Levite, and therefore not a priest. **4–5:** The author refers to the scripture that describes these rituals rather than to the Jewish practice of his day. **5:** Ex 25.40. Popular Platonic ideas of the time held that true realities existed in the heavenly world, while earthly ones were copies or shadows of the real. The author argues that Christ's ministry is superior because it takes place in that true heavenly world.

a sanctuary that is a sketch and shadow of the heavenly one; for Moses, when he was about to erect the tent,[a] was warned, "See that you make everything according to the pattern that was shown you on the mountain." [6] But Jesus[b] has now obtained a more excellent ministry, and to that degree he is the mediator of a better covenant, which has been enacted through better promises. [7] For if that first covenant had been faultless, there would have been no need to look for a second one.

[8] God[c] finds fault with them when he says:
"The days are surely coming, says the Lord,
when I will establish a new covenant
with the house of Israel
and with the house of Judah;
[9] not like the covenant that I made with their ancestors,
on the day when I took them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt;
for they did not continue in my covenant,
and so I had no concern for them, says the Lord.
[10] This is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel
after those days, says the Lord:
I will put my laws in their minds,
and write them on their hearts,
and I will be their God,
and they shall be my people.
[11] And they shall not teach one another
or say to each other, 'Know the Lord,'
for they shall all know me,
from the least of them to the greatest.
[12] For I will be merciful toward their iniquities,
and I will remember their sins no more."

[13] In speaking of "a new covenant," he has made the first one obsolete. And what is obsolete and growing old will soon disappear.

9 Now even the first covenant had regulations for worship and an earthly sanctuary. [2] For a tent[a] was constructed, the first one, in which were the lampstand, the table, and the bread of the Presence;[d] this is called the Holy Place. [3] Behind the second curtain was a tent[a] called the Holy of Holies. [4] In it stood the golden altar of incense and the ark of the covenant overlaid on all sides with gold, in which there were a golden urn holding the manna, and Aaron's rod that budded, and the tablets of the covenant; [5] above it were the cherubim of glory overshadowing the mercy seat.[e] Of these things we cannot speak now in detail.

[6] Such preparations having been made, the priests go continually into the first tent[a] to carry out their ritual duties; [7] but only the high priest goes into the second, and he but once a year, and not without taking the blood that he offers for himself and for the sins committed unintentionally by the people. [8] By this the Holy Spirit indicates that the way into the sanctuary has not yet been disclosed as long as the first tent[a] is still standing. [9] This is a symbol[f] of the present time, during which gifts and sacrifices are offered that cannot perfect the conscience of the worshiper, [10] but deal only with food and drink and various baptisms, regulations for the body imposed until the time comes to set things right.

[a] Or *tabernacle*
[b] Gk *he*
[c] Gk *He*
[d] Gk *the presentation of the loaves*
[e] Or *the place of atonement*
[f] Gk *parable*

8.7–13: Old and new covenant. The announcement of a "new covenant" in Jer 31.31–34 causes a comparison with the old covenant, with Moses on Mount Sinai. Jer 31.31–34 is quoted and commented upon here and in 9.15–20 and 10.9–18. **13:** The old covenant will be replaced by the new.

9.1–10: The earthly sanctuary. The author describes the wilderness tabernacle of Ex 25–26 and its ritual. **2:** *The bread of the Presence,* Lev 24.5. **3:** Ex 26.31–33. **4:** *The golden altar of incense* stood in the Holy Place (Ex 30.6). *Ark of the covenant,* the chest containing the tablets of the law (Ex 25.10–22). *Urn . . . manna,* Ex 16.32–34. *Aaron's rod,* Num 17.1–10. **5:** *Mercy seat,* see Ex 25.17–22; 37.6–9. **7:** The ritual for the day of atonement (Yom Kippur), in which the high priest enters the holy of holies, is described; see Lev 16. **10:** *The time . . . to set things right,* the period of the new covenant, inaugurated by the death of Christ.

[11] But when Christ came as a high priest of the good things that have come,[a] then through the greater and perfect[b] tent[c] (not made with hands, that is, not of this creation), [12] he entered once for all into the Holy Place, not with the blood of goats and calves, but with his own blood, thus obtaining eternal redemption. [13] For if the blood of goats and bulls, with the sprinkling of the ashes of a heifer, sanctifies those who have been defiled so that their flesh is purified, [14] how much more will the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit[d] offered himself without blemish to God, purify our[e] conscience from dead works to worship the living God!

[15] For this reason he is the mediator of a new covenant, so that those who are called may receive the promised eternal inheritance, because a death has occurred that redeems them from the transgressions under the first covenant.[f] [16] Where a will[f] is involved, the death of the one who made it must be established. [17] For a will[f] takes effect only at death, since it is not in force as long as the one who made it is alive. [18] Hence not even the first covenant was inaugurated without blood. [19] For when every commandment had been told to all the people by Moses in accordance with the law, he took the blood of calves and goats,[g] with water and scarlet wool and hyssop, and sprinkled both the scroll itself and all the people, [20] saying, "This is the blood of the covenant that God has ordained for you." [21] And in the same way he sprinkled with the blood both the tent[c] and all the vessels used in worship. [22] Indeed, under the law almost everything is purified with blood, and without the shedding of blood there is no forgiveness of sins.

[23] Thus it was necessary for the sketches of the heavenly things to be purified with these rites, but the heavenly things themselves need better sacrifices than these. [24] For Christ did not enter a sanctuary made by human hands, a mere copy of the true one, but he entered into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God on our behalf. [25] Nor was it to offer himself again and again, as the high priest enters the Holy Place year after year with blood that is not his own; [26] for then he would have had to suffer again and again since the foundation of the world. But as it is, he has appeared once for all at the end of the age to remove sin by the sacrifice of himself. [27] And just as it is appointed for mortals to die once, and after that the judgment, [28] so Christ, having been offered once to bear the sins of many, will appear a second time, not to deal with sin, but to save those who are eagerly waiting for him.

10 Since the law has only a shadow of the good things to come and not the true form of these realities, it[h] can never, by the same sacrifices that are continually

[a] Other ancient authorities read *good things to come*
[b] Gk *more perfect*
[c] Or *tabernacle*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *Holy Spirit*
[e] Other ancient authorities read *your*
[f] The Greek word used here means both *covenant* and *will*
[g] Other ancient authorities lack *and goats*
[h] Other ancient authorities read *they*

9.11–28: The sacrifice of Christ. The author applies the categories of priestly ministry, covenant, and sanctuary ritual to the saving death of Christ. Christ's death is interpreted as the one effective sacrifice that atones for the sins of humanity (vv. 14,26,28). **12–13:** The day of atonement ritual (Lev 16.1–19), the sacrifice of the red *heifer* (Num 19.1–10), and the sacrificial ratification of the Sinai covenant (Ex 24.3–8) all have to do with the shedding of blood and contribute to the imagery of this argument. **14:** *The eternal Spirit,* the spiritual aspects of Christ's sacrifice. **15–17:** Shifts between meanings of Gk "diatheke" from "covenant" to "will"; see note *f.* Cf. Gal 3.15–18. **18:** Ex 24.3–8. The blood with which Moses seals the covenant will be assotiated with Jesus' death. **19:** *Scarlet wool and hyssop*, cf. Lev 14.4; Num 19.6. **20:** Ex 24.8. **28:** *The sins of many,* Isa 53.12; Mk 10.45. *A second time,* a reference to the Second Coming of Christ is not wholly consistent with the understanding that Christ has entered into heaven and made salvation available in the present (v. 11).

10.1–18: Old and new sacrifice. The author summarizes the comparison between Christ's sacrifice and Israelite ritual. Evidence is found in scripture both for the limitations of the ritual and for the meaning of the word spoken in the Son. **1:** The *shadow* of the *law* is understood to be inferior to *the true form* that is in the future.

offered year after year, make perfect those who approach. 2 Otherwise, would they not have ceased being offered, since the worshipers, cleansed once for all, would no longer have any consciousness of sin? 3 But in these sacrifices there is a reminder of sin year after year. 4 For it is impossible for the blood of bulls and goats to take away sins. 5 Consequently, when Christ[a] came into the world, he said,

"Sacrifices and offerings you have not
desired,
but a body you have prepared for me;
6 in burnt offerings and sin offerings
you have taken no pleasure.
7 Then I said, 'See, God, I have come to do
your will, O God'
(in the scroll of the book[b] it is written
of me)."

8 When he said above, "You have neither desired nor taken pleasure in sacrifices and offerings and burnt offerings and sin offerings" (these are offered according to the law), 9 then he added, "See, I have come to do your will." He abolishes the first in order to establish the second. 10 And it is by God's will[c] that we have been sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.

11 And every priest stands day after day at his service, offering again and again the same sacrifices that can never take away sins. 12 But when Christ[d] had offered for all time a single sacrifice for sins, "he sat down at the right hand of God," 13 and since then has been waiting "until his enemies would be made a footstool for his feet." 14 For by a single offering he has perfected for all time those who are sanctified. 15 And the Holy Spirit also testifies to us, for after saying,

16 "This is the covenant that I will make
with them
after those days, says the Lord:
I will put my laws in their hearts,
and I will write them on their minds,"

17 he also adds,

"I will remember[e] their sins and their
lawless deeds no more."

18 Where there is forgiveness of these, there is no longer any offering for sin.

19 Therefore, my friends,[f] since we have confidence to enter the sanctuary by the blood of Jesus, 20 by the new and living way that he opened for us through the curtain (that is, through his flesh), 21 and since we have a great priest over the house of God, 22 let us approach with a true heart in full assurance of faith, with our hearts sprinkled clean from an evil conscience and our bodies washed with pure water. 23 Let us hold fast to the confession of our hope without wavering, for he who has promised is faithful. 24 And let us consider how to provoke one another to love and good deeds, 25 not neglecting to meet together, as is the habit of some, but encouraging one another, and all the more as you see the Day approaching.

26 For if we willfully persist in sin after having received the knowledge of the truth, there no longer remains a sacrifice for sins, 27 but a fearful prospect of judgment, and a fury of

[a] Gk *he*
[b] Meaning of Gk uncertain
[c] Gk *by that will*
[d] Gk *this one*
[e] Gk *on their minds and I will remember*
[f] Gk *Therefore, brothers*

4–9: The proof for the idea that it is *impossible* for animal sacrifices to *take away sins* is found in interpretation of Ps 40.6–8 (Septuagint) in which the speaker is understood to be Christ. **8:** 1 Sam 15.22; Ps 50.8–15; Isa 1.10–17; Jer 7.21–26; Hos 6.6. **10:** *Sanctified,* ceremonially cleansed and perfected through Christ's blood (10.29). **12–13:** Ps 110.1. **15–18:** The Holy Spirit is understood to be speaking a paraphrase of Jer 31.33–34. The new covenant assures full and final forgiveness of sins.

10.19–31: Exhortations and warnings. Compare the exhortation in 4.14–16. **20:** *That he opened for us through the curtain (that is, through his flesh),* perhaps the curtain symbolizes Jesus' physical existence, which separates the holy of holies from the outer sanctuary; or the physical existence of Jesus symbolizes the path of access to God. The *flesh* of Jesus is the means for approaching God. **22–25:** Three privileges and duties of Christians: *Let us approach* God in faith and worship (vv. 22,25); *let us hold fast* the public *confession of our hope* (v. 23); *let us consider* how we can help others in love (v. 24). **23:** *Confession of our hope,* the basic attitude of Christians. In Hebrews, faith undergirds hope (see 3.6; 6.11,18; 7.19). **25:** *The Day* of Christ's Second Coming, see 9.28n. **26:**

fire that will consume the adversaries. [28] Anyone who has violated the law of Moses dies without mercy "on the testimony of two or three witnesses." [29] How much worse punishment do you think will be deserved by those who have spurned the Son of God, profaned the blood of the covenant by which they were sanctified, and outraged the Spirit of grace? [30] For we know the one who said, "Vengeance is mine, I will repay." And again, "The Lord will judge his people." [31] It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God.

[32] But recall those earlier days when, after you had been enlightened, you endured a hard struggle with sufferings, [33] sometimes being publicly exposed to abuse and persecution, and sometimes being partners with those so treated. [34] For you had compassion for those who were in prison, and you cheerfully accepted the plundering of your possessions, knowing that you yourselves possessed something better and more lasting. [35] Do not, therefore, abandon that confidence of yours; it brings a great reward. [36] For you need endurance, so that when you have done the will of God, you may receive what was promised. [37] For yet

"in a very little while,
the one who is coming will come and will not delay;
[38] but my righteous one will live by faith.
My soul takes no pleasure in anyone who shrinks back."

[39] But we are not among those who shrink back and so are lost, but among those who have faith and so are saved.

11 Now faith is the assurance of things hoped for, the conviction of things not seen. [2] Indeed, by faith[a] our ancestors received approval. [3] By faith we understand that the worlds were prepared by the word of God, so that what is seen was made from things that are not visible.[b]

[4] By faith Abel offered to God a more acceptable[c] sacrifice than Cain's. Through this he received approval as righteous, God himself giving approval to his gifts; he died, but through his faith[d] he still speaks. [5] By faith Enoch was taken so that he did not experience death; and "he was not found, because God had taken him." For it was attested before he was taken away that "he had pleased God." [6] And without faith it is impossible to please God, for whoever would approach him must believe that he exists and that he rewards those who seek him. [7] By faith Noah, warned by God about events as yet unseen, respected the warning and built an ark to save his household; by this he condemned the world and became an heir to the righteousness that is in accordance with faith.

[8] By faith Abraham obeyed when he was called to set out for a place that he was to receive as an inheritance; and he set out, not knowing where he was going. [9] By faith he stayed for a time in the land he had been promised, as in a foreign land, living in tents, as did Isaac and Jacob, who were heirs with him of the same promise. [10] For he looked forward to the city that has foundations, whose architect and builder is God. [11] By faith he received power of procreation, even

[a] Gk *by this*
[b] Or *was not made out of visible things*
[c] Gk *greater*
[d] Gk *through it*

Solemn warning about deliberate sin (see 5.2; 6.4–6). **28:** Paul uses this citation to make a different point in Rom 12.19. Deut 17.2–6. **30:** Deut 32.35–36; Ps 135.14.

10.32–12.29: The power of faith.

10.32–39: Living by faith. This transitional passage shifts from a focus on hope and confidence (vv. 35–36) to faith (vv. 38–39). **37:** Isa 26.20 (Septuagint). **37–38:** Hab 2.3–4 (cf. Rom 1.17; Gal 3.11).

11.1–12.2: A cloud of witnesses to faith. A series of examples of models of faith from the Hebrew Bible, culminating in the example of Jesus in 12.1–2. **11.1:** The Gk word translated *assurance* has an objective quality and might be translated "reality." Likewise, *conviction* has the connotation of "evidence." The people of faith who follow all possess insight into the reality of the invisible divine world. **3:** Ps 33.6; Wis 9.1. **4:** Gen 4.3–10. **5:** Gen 5.21–24. **6:** A general axiom referring to the existence and moral government of God. **7:** *Noah,* Gen 6.13–22. *Righteousness,* Gen 15.6. **8–9:** Gen 12.1–8. **10:** *The city,* the heavenly Jerusalem. *Foundations,* contrasted with tents (v. 9). **11:** In some manuscripts, Sarah is the subject of the sentence: "By faith, Sarah received the power of procreation . . ." Sarah's faith in the unseen is parallel to Abraham's, and she is one of the heroic people of

though he was too old—and Sarah herself was barren—because he considered him faithful who had promised.[a] 12 Therefore from one person, and this one as good as dead, descendants were born, "as many as the stars of heaven and as the innumerable grains of sand by the seashore."

13 All of these died in faith without having received the promises, but from a distance they saw and greeted them. They confessed that they were strangers and foreigners on the earth, 14 for people who speak in this way make it clear that they are seeking a homeland. 15 If they had been thinking of the land that they had left behind, they would have had opportunity to return. 16 But as it is, they desire a better country, that is, a heavenly one. Therefore God is not ashamed to be called their God; indeed, he has prepared a city for them.

17 By faith Abraham, when put to the test, offered up Isaac. He who had received the promises was ready to offer up his only son, 18 of whom he had been told, "It is through Isaac that descendants shall be named for you." 19 He considered the fact that God is able even to raise someone from the dead—and figuratively speaking, he did receive him back. 20 By faith Isaac invoked blessings for the future on Jacob and Esau. 21 By faith Jacob, when dying, blessed each of the sons of Joseph, "bowing in worship over the top of his staff." 22 By faith Joseph, at the end of his life, made mention of the exodus of the Israelites and gave instructions about his burial.[b]

23 By faith Moses was hidden by his parents for three months after his birth, because they saw that the child was beautiful; and they were not afraid of the king's edict.[c] 24 By faith Moses, when he was grown up, refused to be called a son of Pharaoh's daughter, 25 choosing rather to share ill-treatment with the people of God than to enjoy the fleeting pleasures of sin. 26 He considered abuse suffered for the Christ[d] to be greater wealth than the treasures of Egypt, for he was looking ahead to the reward. 27 By faith he left Egypt, unafraid of the king's anger; for he persevered as though[e] he saw him who is invisible. 28 By faith he kept the Passover and the sprinkling of blood, so that the destroyer of the firstborn would not touch the firstborn of Israel.[f]

29 By faith the people passed through the Red Sea as if it were dry land, but when the Egyptians attempted to do so they were drowned. 30 By faith the walls of Jericho fell after they had been encircled for seven days. 31 By faith Rahab the prostitute did not perish with those who were disobedient,[g] because she had received the spies in peace.

32 And what more should I say? For time would fail me to tell of Gideon, Barak, Samson, Jephthah, of David and Samuel and the prophets— 33 who through faith conquered kingdoms, administered justice, obtained promises, shut the mouths of lions, 34 quenched raging fire, escaped the edge of the sword, won strength out of weakness, became mighty in war, put foreign armies to flight. 35 Women received their dead by resurrection. Others were tortured, refusing to accept release, in order to obtain a better resurrection. 36 Others suffered mocking and flogging, and even chains and imprisonment. 37 They were stoned to death,

[a] Or *By faith Sarah herself, though barren, received power to conceive, even when she was too old, because she considered him faithful who had promised.*
[b] Gk *his bones*
[c] Other ancient authorities add *By faith Moses, when he was grown up, killed the Egyptian, because he observed the humiliation of his people* (Gk *brothers*)
[d] Or *the Messiah*
[e] Or *because*
[f] Gk *would not touch them*
[g] Or *unbelieving*

faith. Gen 17.19; 18.11–14; 21.2. **12:** Gen 15.5–6; 22.17; 32.12; Rom 4.19. **16:** *A city,* see v. 10n. **17:** Gen 22.1–10. **18:** Gen 21.12. **19:** Abraham received Isaac back when he was told to offer a ram instead of his son (Gen 22.13). **20:** Gen 27.27–29,39–40. **21:** Gen 48; 47.31 (Septuagint). **22:** Gen 50.24–25; Ex 13.19. **23:** Ex 2.2; 1.22. **24–27:** Ex 2.10–15. **26:** *Abuse suffered for the Christ* (cf. 13.13); see also Ps 89.52 where "the anointed one" refers to the people of God. **27:** *Him who is invisible,* Jn 1.18; Col 1.15; 1 Tim 1.17; 6.16. **28:** *Sprinkling of blood,* on the lintels and doorposts; see Ex 12.21–30. **29:** Ex 14.21–31. **30:** Josh 6.12–21. **31:** *Rahab,* Josh 2.1–21; 6.22–25. Rahab is referred to as a hero in Mt 1.5; Jas 2.25; *1 Clem* 12. **32:** *Gideon,* Judg 6–8; *Barak,* Judg 4–5; *Samson,* Judg 13–16; *Jephthah,* Judg 11–12; *David,* 1 Sam 16–30; 2 Sam 1–24; 1 Kings 1.1–2.11; *Samuel,* 1 Sam 1–12; 15.1–16.13. **33:** *Lions,* Dan 6. **34:** *Fire,* Dan 3. **35:** *Resurrection,*

they were sawn in two,[a] they were killed by the sword; they went about in skins of sheep and goats, destitute, persecuted, tormented— 38 of whom the world was not worthy. They wandered in deserts and mountains, and in caves and holes in the ground.

39 Yet all these, though they were commended for their faith, did not receive what was promised, 40 since God had provided something better so that they would not, apart from us, be made perfect.

12 Therefore, since we are surrounded by so great a cloud of witnesses, let us also lay aside every weight and the sin that clings so closely,[b] and let us run with perseverance the race that is set before us, 2 looking to Jesus the pioneer and perfecter of our faith, who for the sake of[c] the joy that was set before him endured the cross, disregarding its shame, and has taken his seat at the right hand of the throne of God.

3 Consider him who endured such hostility against himself from sinners,[d] so that you may not grow weary or lose heart. 4 In your struggle against sin you have not yet resisted to the point of shedding your blood. 5 And you have forgotten the exhortation that addresses you as children—

"My child, do not regard lightly the
discipline of the Lord,
or lose heart when you are punished by
him;
6 for the Lord disciplines those whom he
loves,
and chastises every child whom he
accepts."

7 Endure trials for the sake of discipline. God is treating you as children; for what child is there whom a parent does not discipline? 8 If you do not have that discipline in which all children share, then you are illegitimate and not his children. 9 Moreover, we had human parents to discipline us, and we respected them. Should we not be even more willing to be subject to the Father of spirits and live? 10 For they disciplined us for a short time as seemed best to them, but he disciplines us for our good, in order that we may share his holiness. 11 Now, discipline always seems painful rather than pleasant at the time, but later it yields the peaceful fruit of righteousness to those who have been trained by it.

12 Therefore lift your drooping hands and strengthen your weak knees, 13 and make straight paths for your feet, so that what is lame may not be put out of joint, but rather be healed.

14 Pursue peace with everyone, and the holiness without which no one will see the Lord. 15 See to it that no one fails to obtain the grace of God; that no root of bitterness springs up and causes trouble, and through it many become defiled. 16 See to it that no one becomes like Esau, an immoral and godless person, who sold his birthright for a single meal. 17 You know that later, when he wanted to inherit the blessing, he was rejected, for he found no chance to repent,[e] even though he sought the blessing[f] with tears.

[a] Other ancient authorities add *they were tempted*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *sin that easily distracts*
[c] Or *who instead of*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *such hostility from sinners against themselves*
[e] Or *no chance to change his father's mind*
[f] Gk *it*

1 Kings 17.17–24; 2 Kings 4.25–37; *tortured,* 2 Macc 7.9,14. **37:** 2 Chr 24.20–22; Jer 26.23; 2 Macc 5.27; 6.12–7.42. **38:** *Caves,* 2 Macc 6.11; 10.6.

12.1–2: Jesus, the ultimate example of faith. Jesus is the supreme model of faith in God and an example for those who follow him. **1:** *Witnesses,* those mentioned in ch 11. **2:** *Pioneer and perfecter,* see 2.10n.

12.3–17: The discipline of God. The author develops the metaphors of the athletic contest or race (vv. 1,12–13), the father disciplining his children (vv. 5–11), and the "bitter root" (v. 15). **5–8:** Prov 3.11–12. In the family structure of the ancient world, the father's (*parent*'s) obligation to punish sons (*children*) and so recognize their legitimacy is the background of the comparison between suffering and discipline from God. *Illegitimate* children were not disciplined. The author understands the scripture to be speaking to Christians as "sons" or "children" of the Father (cf. 5.8). *All . . . share,* namely, all children of God (v. 6). **9:** *Father of spirits,* God is traditionally understood to have power over the world of spirits (see Num 16.22; Rev 22.6). **12:** Isa 35.3. **14–17:** The necessity of *peace* and purity. **15:** *Root of bitterness,* Deut 29.18 (Septuagint). **16:** Gen 25.29–34. **17:** Gen 27.30–40.

12.18–29: Mount Sinai and Mount Zion contrasted. 18–19: *Something that can be touched,* Mount Sinai (Ex

18 You have not come to something[a] that
can be touched, a blazing fire, and darkness,
and gloom, and a tempest, 19 and the sound
of a trumpet, and a voice whose words made
the hearers beg that not another word be
spoken to them. 20 (For they could not endure
the order that was given, "If even an animal
touches the mountain, it shall be stoned to
death." 21 Indeed, so terrifying was the sight
that Moses said, "I tremble with fear.") 22 But
you have come to Mount Zion and to the city
of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem,
and to innumerable angels in festal gathering,
23 and to the assembly[b] of the firstborn who
are enrolled in heaven, and to God the judge
of all, and to the spirits of the righteous made
perfect, 24 and to Jesus, the mediator of a new
covenant, and to the sprinkled blood that
speaks a better word than the blood of Abel.
25 See that you do not refuse the one who
is speaking; for if they did not escape when
they refused the one who warned them on
earth, how much less will we escape if we
reject the one who warns from heaven! 26 At
that time his voice shook the earth; but now
he has promised, "Yet once more I will shake
not only the earth but also the heaven."
27 This phrase, "Yet once more," indicates the
removal of what is shaken—that is, created
things—so that what cannot be shaken may
remain. 28 Therefore, since we are receiving
a kingdom that cannot be shaken, let us give
thanks, by which we offer to God an accept-
able worship with reverence and awe; 29 for
indeed our God is a consuming fire.

13 Let mutual love continue. 2 Do not
neglect to show hospitality to strang-
ers, for by doing that some have entertained
angels without knowing it. 3 Remember
those who are in prison, as though you were
in prison with them; those who are being
tortured, as though you yourselves were
being tortured.[c] 4 Let marriage be held in
honor by all, and let the marriage bed be kept
undefiled; for God will judge fornicators and
adulterers. 5 Keep your lives free from the
love of money, and be content with what you
have; for he has said, "I will never leave you or
forsake you." 6 So we can say with confidence,

"The Lord is my helper;
I will not be afraid.
What can anyone do to me?"

7 Remember your leaders, those who
spoke the word of God to you; consider the
outcome of their way of life, and imitate their
faith. 8 Jesus Christ is the same yesterday and
today and forever. 9 Do not be carried away
by all kinds of strange teachings; for it is well
for the heart to be strengthened by grace,
not by regulations about food,[d] which have
not benefited those who observe them. 10 We
have an altar from which those who offici-
ate in the tent[e] have no right to eat. 11 For
the bodies of those animals whose blood
is brought into the sanctuary by the high
priest as a sacrifice for sin are burned outside
the camp. 12 Therefore Jesus also suffered
outside the city gate in order to sanctify the
people by his own blood. 13 Let us then go to
him outside the camp and bear the abuse he
endured. 14 For here we have no lasting city,
but we are looking for the city that is to come.
15 Through him, then, let us continually offer
a sacrifice of praise to God, that is, the fruit of

[a] Other ancient authorities read *a mountain*
[b] Or *angels, and to the festal gathering* [23]*and assembly*
[c] Gk *were in the body*
[d] Gk *not by foods*
[e] Or *tabernacle*

19.12–22; 20.18–21; Deut 4.11–12; 5.22–27). **20:** Ex 19.12–13. **21:** Deut 9.19. **24:** Abel's *blood* cried for vengeance (11.4; Gen 4.10); the *sprinkled blood* of Jesus, which established the new covenant (9.14; 13.20), *speaks . . . better* for forgiveness. **25:** Cf. 19.26–31. The theme of responding to the one who speaks recalls the beginning of the sermon. **26:** Hag 2.6. **29:** Deut 4.24; 9.3.

13.1–25: Practical instructions to the community and greetings.

13.1–17: The sermon concludes with specific ethical exhortation to show *mutual love.* **2:** *Entertained angels,* Gen 18.1–8; 19.1. **3:** Mt 25.35–46. **5:** Josh 1.5. **6:** Ps 118.6. **7:** *Your leaders,* former leaders who proclaimed God's word to the community in the past. **9:** Whether *regulations about food* refers to Jewish food laws or ritual dining practices is not clear. The author contrasts these to *grace,* which is effective. **11:** Lev 16.27. Cf. Col 2.16,20–23. **12:** As the sacrificed animals are burned outside the camp, so Jesus died outside the gate of Jerusalem (Jn 19.20). **14:**

lips that confess his name. [16] Do not neglect to do good and to share what you have, for such sacrifices are pleasing to God.

[17] Obey your leaders and submit to them, for they are keeping watch over your souls and will give an account. Let them do this with joy and not with sighing—for that would be harmful to you.

[18] Pray for us; we are sure that we have a clear conscience, desiring to act honorably in all things. [19] I urge you all the more to do this, so that I may be restored to you very soon.

[20] Now may the God of peace, who brought back from the dead our Lord Jesus, the great shepherd of the sheep, by the blood of the eternal covenant, [21] make you complete in everything good so that you may do his will, working among us[a] that which is pleasing in his sight, through Jesus Christ, to whom be the glory forever and ever. Amen.

[22] I appeal to you, brothers and sisters,[b] bear with my word of exhortation, for I have written to you briefly. [23] I want you to know that our brother Timothy has been set free; and if he comes in time, he will be with me when I see you. [24] Greet all your leaders and all the saints. Those from Italy send you greetings. [25] Grace be with all of you.[c]

[a] Other ancient authorities read *you*
[b] Gk *brothers*
[c] Other ancient authorities add *Amen*

The city . . . to come, see 11.10. **15:** A sacrifice of thanksgiving (Lev 7.12; Ps 50.14,23; Hos 14.2). **17:** *Leaders,* those at the head of the community who protect people from harm.

13.18–25: Greetings, blessing, and postscript. 20–21: Blessing (see Isa 63.11). *Brought back,* lit., "led up." The verb refers to the exaltation of Jesus to the right hand of God. **22:** *Word of exhortation,* a sermon, rather than a letter (see Acts 13.22); *for I have written to you briefly,* mention of the "briefness" of a letter is conventional in ancient letters. **23:** *Timothy* is referred to in Paul's letters and Acts of the Apostles as a companion to Paul (1 Cor 4.17; Acts 16.1–3).

THE LETTER OF JAMES

NAME

The letter of James gets its name from the epistolary opening (1.1) that identifies the author by the Greek "Iakobos" (from the common Jewish name "Jacob") translated into English as "James."

CANONICAL STATUS

The early fourth-century CE church historian Eusebius noted that the letter found slow acceptance into the Christian canon despite the fact that it was "regularly used in very many churches" as one of the "'general' epistles" (*Hist. eccl.* 2.23; 3.25). The *Muratorian Canon* (late second century) does not mention James, but the letter was included in Bishop Athanasius's influential canon list ca. 367 CE. Its canonicity was then largely secure until the Protestant Reformation in the sixteenth century when Martin Luther moved it (along with Hebrews, Jude, and Revelation) to the end of the New Testament; in Luther's view it lacked essential elements of the gospel. But John Calvin and Philip Melanchthon, like the Council of Trent (1546), defended both the canonical status and theological value of the letter.

AUTHORSHIP

From among the several individuals named "James" who figure prominently in the early church, Christian tradition has held that the opening salutation refers to the brother of Jesus (Mt 13.55; Mk 6.3; Gal 1.19) and who was a leader in the Jerusalem church (Gal 2.9; Acts 15.13). Yet scholars have challenged this identification since antiquity. Those who defend the tradition argue that only such a well-known figure could refer to himself as James without an additional epithet, and that the absence of any biographical details differs significantly from other works considered pseudepigraphical (cf. 2 Tim 4.9–18). Modern critics of authenticity often cite doubts voiced in the early church: indications the letter dates to after James's martyrdom (ca. 62 CE), and a Greek literary style well beyond the likely capabilities of a Galilean villager. Recent commentators have suggested that material originating from James was reworked by a disciple after his martyrdom to create the letter as we know it. However, it remains possible that the author was an otherwise unknown James only later identified with Jesus' brother.

DATE AND HISTORICAL CONTEXT

The letter offers no decisive clues as to the time of its composition. If the specific language that a person is "not [justified] by faith alone" (2.24) is a direct response to Paul's assertion in Romans 3.28, it must be dated sometime later than ca. 57 CE. *First Clement* (ca. 95 CE), which shows some evidence of dependence on the text of James (compare *1 Clem.* 30.3; 31.2 with Jas 2.14–26; *1 Clem.* 29.1; 30.1–5 with Jas. 4.1–10), sets a latest possible date.

There are likewise no solid indications of the historical context that prompted the letter. The symbolic nature of addressing the recipients as the "twelve tribes" (see 1.1n.) raises the possibility that the language of "Dispersion" (1.1) is likewise symbolic (note the conclusion regarding the need to bring back anyone who "wanders from the truth," 5.19–20; but cf. 1 Pet 1.1). Certainly the choice of these particular images together with the esteem for the "law" (Gk "nomos," corresponding to Heb "torah"; 1.25; 2.8–12; 4.11), the reference to their "assembly" by Gk "synagoges" (lit., "synagogue"; 2.2), and the use of many examples from, as well as the style of, the Septuagint (LXX) convince most interpreters the letter was directed to ethnic Jews who believed Jesus was the Messiah/Christ (1.1; 2.1). Yet even these indicators are ambiguous. The Septuagint was scripture for both ethnically Gentile and Jewish Christian communities. Such writers as Ignatius, Hermas, Justin, Origen, and Eusebius used the terms "synagoges" and "ekklesia" ("church") both in parallel and interchangeably for exclusively Gentile communities well after the first century. Though each factor may be inconclusive taken by itself, their cumulative presence in a letter by an author named Jacob/James makes it very likely the letter is the product of Jewish Christianity.

STRUCTURE AND CONTENTS

Although the letter was once thought to be a loosely organized collection of teachings similar to the book of Proverbs, recent literary analyses using both ancient and modern approaches have converged on an un-

derstanding of the letter's structure. Following its epistolary salutation (1.1), there is a two-fold introduction (1.2–11; 1.12–21) that sets out in parallel fashion some major themes of the book (testing, wisdom, and consistency). The introduction is followed by several longer units that develop specific themes: consistency of word and action (1.22–2.13); faith and works (2.14–26); proper speech (3.1–18); relations with others and God (4.1–12); and coming judgment (4.13–5.9). The letter concludes (5.10–20) with brief exhortations regarding the recipients' responsibilities toward other members of the community.

INTERPRETATION AND GUIDE TO READING

Too often the Letter of James has not been heard on its own terms because it was read either contra Paul's theology of justification in particular or as representing Jewish Christianity contra the Gentile church more generally. While there are grounds for concluding that 2.14–26 may be a reaction against libertine readings of Paul's teaching that justification was "by faith apart from works" (see Rom 3.28; note not only the similar phrasing but also the use of Abraham as an example in Rom 4.1–25 and Jas 2.20–24), it is less clear that James and Paul are in fundamental disagreement with each other. Both see faith primarily as trust in God (Rom 4.5; Jas 1.5–6), and both agree that it should produce a response in one's manner of life (Rom 2.13; Phil 2.12–13; Jas 2.18). Yet however one understands the relationship between James and Paul, neither the issues of justification nor relations between Jews and Gentiles within the church dominate the content of this letter as a whole. Reading James on its own terms requires seeing how the understanding of consistently living out "the implanted word" (1.21) developed in the first two chapters leads to the specific ethical teachings at both personal (1.19–21,26; 3.13–18) and communal (2.2–4; 4.11–12) levels and a strong stand in favor of social justice (1.27; 2.5; 5.4) in the second half of the book.

Timothy B. Cargal

1 James, a servant[a] of God and of the Lord Jesus Christ,
To the twelve tribes in the Dispersion:
Greetings.

[2] My brothers and sisters,[b] whenever you face trials of any kind, consider it nothing but joy, [3] because you know that the testing of your faith produces endurance; [4] and let endurance have its full effect, so that you may be mature and complete, lacking in nothing.

[5] If any of you is lacking in wisdom, ask God, who gives to all generously and ungrudgingly, and it will be given you. [6] But ask in faith, never doubting, for the one who doubts is like a wave of the sea, driven and tossed by the wind; [7, 8] for the doubter, being double-minded and unstable in every way, must not expect to receive anything from the Lord.

[9] Let the believer[c] who is lowly boast in being raised up, [10] and the rich in being brought low, because the rich will disappear like a flower in the field. [11] For the sun rises with its scorching heat and withers the field; its flower falls, and its beauty perishes. It is the same way with the rich; in the midst of a busy life, they will wither away.

[a] Gk *slave*
[b] Gk *brothers*
[c] Gk *brother*

1.1: Salutation. *Servant of God and . . . Christ,* a unique dual designation in the New Testament, where identifications of people as either "servant of God" (Titus 1.1; 1 Pet 2.16; Rev 7.3), "of Christ" (Rom 1.1; Eph 6.6; Jude 1), or "of the Lord" (2 Tim 2.24) are common. *Twelve tribes,* symbolic reference to the church as a new Israel (cf. Rev 7.4–8). *Dispersion,* scattered either geographically (cf. 1 Pet 1.1) or symbolically (5.19–20n.).

1.2–11: Trials and wisdom. 2: *Trials,* or "temptations" as in 1.12 (Gk "peirasmos"). *Consider,* in Greek, either a command or statement of usual practice ("you considered"). **3:** *You know . . . testing . . . produces endurance,* common teaching of Jewish wisdom tradition (cf. Rom 5.3–4). **4–5:** *Lacking in nothing . . . lacking in wisdom,* suggests against their view that wisdom is a gift from God rather than learned through "trials" (cf. 1 Kings 3). **6:** *Ask in faith,* trusting God to give the "gift" (1.17) rather than "temptation" (1.13–14). **7–8:** *Double-minded,* not knowing what God will do. **9–11:** Reversal of fortunes between poor and rich (2.5; 5.1–3; cf. 1 Sam 2.7; Lk 6.20–26).

12 Blessed is anyone who endures temptation. Such a one has stood the test and will receive the crown of life that the Lord[a] has promised to those who love him. 13 No one, when tempted, should say, "I am being tempted by God"; for God cannot be tempted by evil and he himself tempts no one. 14 But one is tempted by one's own desire, being lured and enticed by it; 15 then, when that desire has conceived, it gives birth to sin, and that sin, when it is fully grown, gives birth to death. 16 Do not be deceived, my beloved.[b]

17 Every generous act of giving, with every perfect gift, is from above, coming down from the Father of lights, with whom there is no variation or shadow due to change.[c] 18 In fulfillment of his own purpose he gave us birth by the word of truth, so that we would become a kind of first fruits of his creatures.

19 You must understand this, my beloved:[b] let everyone be quick to listen, slow to speak, slow to anger; 20 for your anger does not produce God's righteousness. 21 Therefore rid yourselves of all sordidness and rank growth of wickedness, and welcome with meekness the implanted word that has the power to save your souls.

22 But be doers of the word, and not merely hearers who deceive themselves. 23 For if any are hearers of the word and not doers, they are like those who look at themselves[d] in a mirror; 24 for they look at themselves and, on going away, immediately forget what they were like. 25 But those who look into the perfect law, the law of liberty, and persevere, being not hearers who forget but doers who act—they will be blessed in their doing.

26 If any think they are religious, and do not bridle their tongues but deceive their hearts, their religion is worthless. 27 Religion that is pure and undefiled before God, the Father, is this: to care for orphans and widows in their distress, and to keep oneself unstained by the world.

2 My brothers and sisters,[e] do you with your acts of favoritism really believe in our glorious Lord Jesus Christ?[f] 2 For if a person with gold rings and in fine clothes comes into your assembly, and if a poor person in dirty clothes also comes in, 3 and if you take notice of the one wearing the fine clothes and say, "Have a seat here, please," while to the one who is poor you say, "Stand there," or, "Sit at my feet,"[g] 4 have you not made distinctions among yourselves, and become judges with evil thoughts? 5 Listen, my beloved brothers and sisters.[h] Has not God chosen the poor in the world to be rich in faith and to be heirs of the kingdom that he has promised to those who love him? 6 But you have dishonored the poor. Is it not the rich who oppress you? Is it not they who drag you into

[a] Gk *he*; other ancient authorities read *God*
[b] Gk *my beloved brothers*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *variation due to a shadow of turning*
[d] Gk *at the face of his birth*
[e] Gk *My brothers*
[f] Or *hold the faith of our glorious Lord Jesus Christ without acts of favoritism*
[g] Gk *Sit under my footstool*
[h] Gk *brothers*

1.12–21: Life through the word. 12: *Crown,* victor's laurel wreath rather than royal diadem (cf. Rev 2.10). **14–15:** *Desire . . . sin . . . death,* certain progression of acting consistent with one's corrupted will. **18:** God's opposite desire (*purpose*) to use *the word of truth* to give *birth* to a new will within us (cf. 1.21). **19:** Need for self-control; cf. Sir 5.10–14. **20:** Greek explicitly contrasts *anger* that originates in people ("orge andros") with *righteousness* that is from God ("dikaiosunen theou"). **21:** Consistency with God's *implanted word* both checks improper action and *saves* one's *soul*/life.

1.22–2.13: Consistency of word and action. Section framed by references to speech, actions, and God's law. **1.22–25:** Here *the word* that must be done is the "implanted word" (1.21) from God (Mt 7.24; Rom 2.13), not their own words. **24:** *Immediately forget* in the sense that behavior will not change unless there is a unity of word and deed. **25:** *Perfect . . . law of liberty,* God's revealed will makes one "mature and complete" (1.4) and free from the lure of improper desire (1.14). **26:** *Bridle their tongues,* now the focus shifts to consistency between their own speech and actions (2.16n.; 3.2). **27:** *Religion* should assist others and thereby one's self as well (cf. Mic 6.8). **2.1–4:** Discriminatory actions rooted in socio-economic *distinctions*. **5:** They claim to "believe" (see 2.1) *God chose the poor* (see 1.9–10), but their actions reveal they have chosen the rich. **6:** *Oppress you,* see 5.1–6. **7:** *The excellent name,* the "glorious Lord Jesus Christ" (2.1), *invoked* in their baptism. **8:** Lev 19.18 as hallmark of God's

court? [7] Is it not they who blaspheme the excellent name that was invoked over you?

[8] You do well if you really fulfill the royal law according to the scripture, "You shall love your neighbor as yourself." [9] But if you show partiality, you commit sin and are convicted by the law as transgressors. [10] For whoever keeps the whole law but fails in one point has become accountable for all of it. [11] For the one who said, "You shall not commit adultery," also said, "You shall not murder." Now if you do not commit adultery but if you murder, you have become a transgressor of the law. [12] So speak and so act as those who are to be judged by the law of liberty. [13] For judgment will be without mercy to anyone who has shown no mercy; mercy triumphs over judgment.

[14] What good is it, my brothers and sisters,[a] if you say you have faith but do not have works? Can faith save you? [15] If a brother or sister is naked and lacks daily food, [16] and one of you says to them, "Go in peace; keep warm and eat your fill," and yet you do not supply their bodily needs, what is the good of that? [17] So faith by itself, if it has no works, is dead.

[18] But someone will say, "You have faith and I have works." Show me your faith apart from your works, and I by my works will show you my faith. [19] You believe that God is one; you do well. Even the demons believe—and shudder. [20] Do you want to be shown, you senseless person, that faith apart from works is barren? [21] Was not our ancestor Abraham justified by works when he offered his son Isaac on the altar? [22] You see that faith was active along with his works, and faith was brought to completion by the works. [23] Thus the scripture was fulfilled that says, "Abraham believed God, and it was reckoned to him as righteousness," and he was called the friend of God. [24] You see that a person is justified by works and not by faith alone. [25] Likewise, was not Rahab the prostitute also justified by works when she welcomed the messengers and sent them out by another road? [26] For just as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is also dead.

3 Not many of you should become teachers, my brothers and sisters,[a] for you know that we who teach will be judged with greater strictness. [2] For all of us make many mistakes. Anyone who makes no mistakes in speaking is perfect, able to keep the whole body in check with a bridle. [3] If we put bits into the mouths of horses to make them obey us, we guide their whole bodies. [4] Or look at ships: though they are so large that it takes strong winds to drive them, yet they are guided by a very small rudder wherever the will of the pilot directs. [5] So also the tongue is a small member, yet it boasts of great exploits.

How great a forest is set ablaze by a small fire! [6] And the tongue is a fire. The tongue is placed among our members as a world of iniquity; it stains the whole body, sets on fire the cycle of nature,[b] and is itself set on fire

[a] Gk *brothers*

[b] Or *wheel of birth*

reign revealed in Jesus (Mk 12.28–31; Jn 13.34; Gal 5.14). **10:** Unity of the law in the command to love (Rom 13.8–9; cf. Deut 27.26; 4 Macc 5.19–21). **11:** *You murder,* charge possibly based on actions in 5.6; cf. 4.2. **12:** Summary conclusion of section. **13:** Cf. Mt 6.14–15.

2.14–26: Faith and works. 14: *Works,* or "deeds," which may avoid overstating differences between James and Paul (see Introduction). *Can faith save,* i.e., faith only spoken about but not acted on cannot make one spiritually alive (see 2.17,26). **16:** *Keep warm* and *eat* in Greek are passive verbs ("be warm and well fed"), expressing what one wants and expects God to do. Stating God's desire for the needy, they fail to act on it (cf. 1.22). **18:** James rejects separating *faith* and *works,* insisting on a both/and relationship between them. **21–22:** Abraham's *works* in offering Isaac (see Gen 22.1–19) may bring his *faith . . . to completion* by showing absolute trust in God's promise that Isaac was the heir (cf. Heb 11.17–19). **23:** Quoting Gen 15.6. *Friend of God,* contrast 4.4. **25:** *Rahab* also acted on faith in God's promise (Josh 2.8–13; cf. Heb 11.31).

3.1–18: Proper use of speech is teaching God's wisdom. 1: *Judged with greater strictness,* both for consistency between words and actions, and for mercy toward others (2.12–13). **2:** *Perfect,* or "mature" as in 1.4 (Greek "teleios"). **3–4:** *Bits* and *rudder* exercise control far beyond what might be expected from their size because they express *the will of the pilot* or rider. **5:** *The tongue* likewise expresses the person's will and directs one's actions (Lk 6.45). **6:** *Tongue is . . . set on fire by hell,* destructive impact of will and actions opposed to God's will (cf.

by hell.[a] 7 For every species of beast and bird,
of reptile and sea creature, can be tamed and
has been tamed by the human species, 8 but
no one can tame the tongue—a restless evil,
full of deadly poison. 9 With it we bless the
Lord and Father, and with it we curse those
who are made in the likeness of God. 10 From
the same mouth come blessing and cursing.
My brothers and sisters,[b] this ought not to
be so. 11 Does a spring pour forth from the
same opening both fresh and brackish water?
12 Can a fig tree, my brothers and sisters,[c]
yield olives, or a grapevine figs? No more can
salt water yield fresh.

13 Who is wise and understanding among
you? Show by your good life that your works
are done with gentleness born of wisdom.
14 But if you have bitter envy and selfish
ambition in your hearts, do not be boastful
and false to the truth. 15 Such wisdom does
not come down from above, but is earthly,
unspiritual, devilish. 16 For where there is
envy and selfish ambition, there will also
be disorder and wickedness of every kind.
17 But the wisdom from above is first pure,
then peaceable, gentle, willing to yield, full
of mercy and good fruits, without a trace of
partiality or hypocrisy. 18 And a harvest of
righteousness is sown in peace for[d] those
who make peace.

4 Those conflicts and disputes among
you, where do they come from? Do they
not come from your cravings that are at war
within you? 2 You want something and do
not have it; so you commit murder. And you
covet[e] something and cannot obtain it; so
you engage in disputes and conflicts. You
do not have, because you do not ask. 3 You
ask and do not receive, because you ask
wrongly, in order to spend what you get on
your pleasures. 4 Adulterers! Do you not know
that friendship with the world is enmity
with God? Therefore whoever wishes to be
a friend of the world becomes an enemy of
God. 5 Or do you suppose that it is for nothing
that the scripture says, "God[f] yearns jealously
for the spirit that he has made to dwell in
us"? 6 But he gives all the more grace; there-
fore it says,

"God opposes the proud,
but gives grace to the humble."

7 Submit yourselves therefore to God. Resist
the devil, and he will flee from you. 8 Draw
near to God, and he will draw near to you.
Cleanse your hands, you sinners, and purify
your hearts, you double-minded. 9 Lament
and mourn and weep. Let your laughter be
turned into mourning and your joy into de-
jection. 10 Humble yourselves before the Lord,
and he will exalt you.

11 Do not speak evil against one another,
brothers and sisters.[g] Whoever speaks evil

[a] Gk *Gehenna*
[b] Gk *My brothers*
[c] Gk *my brothers*
[d] Or *by*
[e] Or *you murder and you covet*
[f] Gk *He*
[g] Gk *brothers*

1.14–15,26–27). **8:** *No one can tame,* an implicit call to do the very thing said to be impossible. **9:** *Lord and Father,* both titles referring to God. *Likeness of God,* human beings who should act as God's agents (see Gen 1.26). **10:** *Blessing and cursing,* another indication of "double-mindedness" (1.7–8; 4.8). **11–12:** Cf. Mt 7.16–18. **13:** *Who is wise,* teachers should be those whose *good life* shows both *works* of the word (1.22) and the *gentleness* of mercy (2.13) arising from God's will *born of wisdom* (cf. 1.18). **15–16:** *Earthly, unspiritual, devilish,* what some might call *wisdom* is proven by its effects (*envy, selfish ambition, disorder,* and *wickedness*) not to be wisdom at all. **17–18:** Genuine *wisdom* is likewise proven by its origins (*from above,* see 1.5,17) and effects (cf. these virtues and preceding vices with Gal 5.19–24).

4.1–12: Relations with God and others. 1: *Your cravings,* improper desire brings destruction to the community as well as the self (cf. 1.14–15). **2:** *Murder,* probably hyperbole, although the charge is leveled three times in the letter (see 2.11; 5.6n.). **3:** *Ask and do not receive,* here the problem is the purpose of the request (*pleasures*) rather than "doubt" (see 1.6–8). **4:** *Adulterers,* Greek is feminine ("Adulteresses!"), recalling prophetic tradition of casting Israel as God's unfaithful wife (Jer 3.6–10; Ezek 16.8–52; Hos 1–3; cf. Mk 8.38). *Friend of the world . . . enemy of God,* contrast 2.23. **5:** *Scripture says,* quotation either from an unknown source or a general statement setting up citation in next verse. **6:** Quotation from Prov 3.34. **8:** *Purify your hearts,* the seat of will and intellect (Mt 13.15; Jn 13.2), and so a correction to *double-mindedness* that results from nearness with God (cf. 1.7–8). **9–10:**

against another or judges another, speaks evil against the law and judges the law; but if you judge the law, you are not a doer of the law but a judge. 12 There is one lawgiver and judge who is able to save and to destroy. So who, then, are you to judge your neighbor?

13 Come now, you who say, "Today or tomorrow we will go to such and such a town and spend a year there, doing business and making money." 14 Yet you do not even know what tomorrow will bring. What is your life? For you are a mist that appears for a little while and then vanishes. 15 Instead you ought to say, "If the Lord wishes, we will live and do this or that." 16 As it is, you boast in your arrogance; all such boasting is evil. 17 Anyone, then, who knows the right thing to do and fails to do it, commits sin.

5 Come now, you rich people, weep and wail for the miseries that are coming to you. 2 Your riches have rotted, and your clothes are moth-eaten. 3 Your gold and silver have rusted, and their rust will be evidence against you, and it will eat your flesh like fire. You have laid up treasure[a] for the last days. 4 Listen! The wages of the laborers who mowed your fields, which you kept back by fraud, cry out, and the cries of the harvesters have reached the ears of the Lord of hosts. 5 You have lived on the earth in luxury and in pleasure; you have fattened your hearts in a day of slaughter. 6 You have condemned and murdered the righteous one, who does not resist you.

7 Be patient, therefore, beloved,[b] until the coming of the Lord. The farmer waits for the precious crop from the earth, being patient with it until it receives the early and the late rains. 8 You also must be patient. Strengthen your hearts, for the coming of the Lord is near.[c] 9 Beloved,[d] do not grumble against one another, so that you may not be judged. See, the Judge is standing at the doors! 10 As an example of suffering and patience, beloved,[b] take the prophets who spoke in the name of the Lord. 11 Indeed we call blessed those who showed endurance. You have heard of the endurance of Job, and you have seen the purpose of the Lord, how the Lord is compassionate and merciful.

12 Above all, my beloved,[b] do not swear, either by heaven or by earth or by any other oath, but let your "Yes" be yes and your "No" be no, so that you may not fall under condemnation.

13 Are any among you suffering? They should pray. Are any cheerful? They should sing songs of praise. 14 Are any among you sick? They should call for the elders of the church and have them pray over them,

[a] Or *will eat your flesh, since you have stored up fire*
[b] Gk *brothers*
[c] Or *is at hand*
[d] Gk *Brothers*

Repentance in anticipation of the great reversal at the last day (see 1.9–10). **11:** *Not a doer of the law but a judge,* the law properly rules over the readers (2.8; cf. 1.25). **12:** God is *able to save* by changing one's will (1.18,21) or to *destroy* by being left to one's "desire . . . sin . . . [and] death" (1.14–15).

4.13–5.9: Coming judgment. 4.14: *You do not . . . know,* Christ's return "is near" (5.8–9), but the precise time is unknown (Mk 13.32). *Mist that . . . vanishes,* the impermanence of this age and its ways of life (1.11). **15:** *If the Lord wishes,* actions are properly determined by God's will and word (1.22). **17:** Theologically termed "sins of omission" arising from failing to do what one knows God desires (2.16n.). **5.2–4:** *Gold and silver have rusted,* while these metals do not rust or corrode, the imagery suggests deterioration (*rotted, moth-eaten;* cf. Mt 6.19–21) from lack of use by both the rich and those from whom they have been *kept back by fraud* (cf. 2.15–16). *Wages* were to be paid daily according to Jewish law (Deut 24.14–15). **6:** *Condemned and murdered the righteous one,* possibly a reference to Jesus' crucifixion but more likely to the general mistreatment of the poor by the rich as elsewhere in the letter (2.6b–7; 5.4; cf. Sir 34.26–27). **7:** *Precious crop,* possibly a sign of hope that repentance by the rich may yet lead to their inclusion in the spiritual harvest (5.19–20; cf. Mt 9.37–38).

5.10–20: Closing exhortations. The letter ends with brief exhortations to fulfill responsibilities to other members of the community. **10–11:** As in 1.2–5 and 1.12–18, God's *purpose* during times of *endurance* is not to put people through "trials" or "temptations" but to be *compassionate and merciful.* **12:** If one's actions are consistent with one's words there will be no need for an *oath* (cf. Mt 5.33–37). **13–16:** Both prayer and praise are here placed

anointing them with oil in the name of the Lord. 15 The prayer of faith will save the sick, and the Lord will raise them up; and anyone who has committed sins will be forgiven. 16 Therefore confess your sins to one another, and pray for one another, so that you may be healed. The prayer of the righteous is powerful and effective. 17 Elijah was a human being like us, and he prayed fervently that it might not rain, and for three years and six months it did not rain on the earth. 18 Then he prayed again, and the heaven gave rain and the earth yielded its harvest.

19 My brothers and sisters,[a] if anyone among you wanders from the truth and is brought back by another, 20 you should know that whoever brings back a sinner from wandering will save the sinner's[b] soul from death and will cover a multitude of sins.

[a] Gk *My brothers*
[b] Gk *his*

in communal context. **15:** *Will save . . . will raise,* these verbs can refer both to temporal physical healing and to spiritual salvation and resurrection at the end of the age; given other uses of *save* in the letter (1.21; 2.14; 4.12; 5.20), James probably intends both senses in this context. **17–18:** Since Elijah (1 Kings 17.1; 18.41–45) was *like us,* he is a typical rather than extraordinary example (but see Jesus' remarks at Lk 4.25–27). **19–20:** *From wandering,* lit., "from the error of his way," recalling Rahab's actions in saving herself and the messengers (2.25). *Sinner's,* lit., "his," referring either to one who *wanders from the truth* or *whoever brings back* the wanderer. If Rahab provides the pattern, the ambiguity may be deliberate and express James's understanding of what the letter has accomplished.

THE FIRST LETTER OF PETER

NAME, AUTHORSHIP, AND DATE

The First Letter of Peter presents itself as a pastoral letter written by the apostle Peter from "Babylon," where he is accompanied by Silvanus (= Silas) and Mark (5.12–13), to churches in five provinces of Asia Minor (1.1). Since it is addressed to churches in a large area, it was placed among the Catholic (or general) Letters, and its canonical status was never disputed, in contrast to 2 Peter.

Some scholars still treat Simon Peter as the letter's author, with Silvanus as secretary (5.12); others consider Silvanus as the actual author, who wrote at Peter's instruction. However, the situation that the letter indirectly describes points to a time after Peter's death. Its language, style, content, and thought-world seem inappropriate to Peter, a Galilean fisherman and missionary to the Jews (Gal 2.9). The sophisticated Greek prose, the lack of references to the life and teaching of the earthly Jesus, the Christological emphasis on the cosmic Christ, and the address to Gentile Christians who had previously lived a sinful, idolatrous life (1.14,18,21; 2.1,9–11,25; 4.3) all point to a later disciple of Peter writing in the name of the revered apostle. Thus most scholars interpret the document as a letter from the last decade of the first century CE, written in Peter's name to support the claim that its teaching represented the apostolic faith.

HISTORICAL CONTEXT

The letter itself claims to be written by a presbyter (elder; 5.1) of the Roman church—the "Babylon" of 5.13 was a common cryptogram for Rome at the end of the first century (cf., e.g., Rev 17.5,9; 18.2,10,21). The references to Silvanus and Mark, both known companions of Paul (1 Thess 1.1; Philem 24), are part of a literary picture that combines elements of Pauline tradition with the figure of Peter. First Peter contains numerous points of contact with Paul's letters (compare, e.g. 2.1–5 and Rom 12.1; 2.7–10 and Rom 9–11; 2.13–14 and Rom 13.1–7). The Pauline letter form itself, including its distinctive structure and expressions, is adopted by 1 Peter (see 1.1–2n.; 4.10n.). The letter thus represents the combination of Pauline and Petrine traditions in the church of Rome at the end of the first century, set forth in a pastoral letter to churches struggling in difficult social situations.

STRUCTURE

The structure of First Peter represents an adaptation of the Pauline letter form: epistolary greeting (1.1–2); thanksgiving (1.3–12); the body of the letter (1.13–5.11) portraying the new identity of the people of God (1.13–2.10), Christian conduct in the given structures of society (2.11–3.12), and responsible suffering in the face of society (3.13–5.11); epistolary conclusion (5.12–14).

CONTENTS AND INTERPRETATION

First Peter is a real letter, a cohesive composition, and not, as some scholars have thought, a baptismal homily to which epistolary elements were added secondarily. The letter addresses a critical situation in the lives of the recipients, who once participated in the social and cultural life of their communities, but since their conversion to Christ are marginalized and abused. The society to which they once belonged now considers them an unwelcome, even dangerous sectarian movement (cf. Acts 28.22—"the sect everywhere spoken against"). While Christians are called to suffer "for the name" (4.15–16), the abuse is mostly verbal (2.22–23; 3.9–12,16). The positive attitude toward the state (2.13–17) suggests that there is as yet no overt government persecution, except perhaps for occasional arbitrary acts by subordinate officials. First Peter offers realistic encouragement and instruction to Christians attempting to live faithfully in such a situation.

The author does not present a programmatic theological essay, but the instructions he gives are based on theological reflection, expressed indirectly by the narrative world the letter projects: God created the world (4.19), God chose an elect people (2.9–10), God sent the Christ who was rejected by humans but exalted by God (2.4), God sent the Spirit and Christian evangelists who established a new people of God and converted the addressees (1.12), and God will send Christ in the near future to conduct the final judgment (1.7,13; 4.7). Christians live their lives in the time between Christ's resurrection and return. The Christological pattern of suffering and rejection is foundational for the ethic 1 Peter commends: just as Christ was misunderstood and suffered

unjustly for the sake of others, so Christians are now called to follow "in his steps" (2.21). Just as all Christians are instructed to respect the government authorities (2.13–17), so the most vulnerable Christians, slaves of unbelieving masters and wives of unbelieving husbands, are instructed to fit uncomplainingly into the given structures of society as a testimony to the faith (2.18–3.6). Such behavior may convert the oppressor (3.1–2), but if not it is still following the example set by Christ and will be vindicated soon at the last judgment (4.5–7).

M. Eugene Boring

1 Peter, an apostle of Jesus Christ,
To the exiles of the Dispersion in Pontus,
Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia,
[2] who have been chosen and destined by God
the Father and sanctified by the Spirit to be
obedient to Jesus Christ and to be sprinkled
with his blood:

May grace and peace be yours in abundance.

[3] Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord
Jesus Christ! By his great mercy he has given
us a new birth into a living hope through the
resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead,
[4] and into an inheritance that is imperishable,
undefiled, and unfading, kept in heaven for
you, [5] who are being protected by the power
of God through faith for a salvation ready
to be revealed in the last time. [6] In this you
rejoice,[a] even if now for a little while you
have had to suffer various trials, [7] so that
the genuineness of your faith—being more
precious than gold that, though perishable,
is tested by fire—may be found to result in
praise and glory and honor when Jesus Christ
is revealed. [8] Although you have not seen[b]
him, you love him; and even though you
do not see him now, you believe in him and
rejoice with an indescribable and glorious joy,
[9] for you are receiving the outcome of your
faith, the salvation of your souls.

[10] Concerning this salvation, the proph-
ets who prophesied of the grace that was to
be yours made careful search and inquiry,
[11] inquiring about the person or time that the
Spirit of Christ within them indicated when it
testified in advance to the sufferings destined
for Christ and the subsequent glory. [12] It
was revealed to them that they were serv-
ing not themselves but you, in regard to the
things that have now been announced to you
through those who brought you good news
by the Holy Spirit sent from heaven—things
into which angels long to look!

[13] Therefore prepare your minds for
action;[c] discipline yourselves; set all your
hope on the grace that Jesus Christ will bring
you when he is revealed. [14] Like obedient chil-
dren, do not be conformed to the desires that
you formerly had in ignorance. [15] Instead, as

[a] Or *Rejoice in this*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *known*
[c] Gk *gird up the loins of your mind*

1.1–2: Salutation. The author adapts the form used by Paul (see Rom 1.1–7n.). **1:** An *apostle* is an authorized representative. *Exiles of the Dispersion,* applying images of Israel to Christians (see Jas 1.1n.). *Pontus . . . Bithynia,* Roman provinces in Asia Minor. **2:** A proto-Trinitarian formula. *Obedience* and being *sprinkled with his blood* are covenant language (see Ex 24.3–8).

1.3–12: Thanksgiving. As in 2 Cor 1.3 and Eph 1.3, the customary thanksgiving (see Rom 1.8–15n.) becomes a doxological expression of praise that constitutes the theological basis for the imperatives to follow. **3:** *Hope* expresses the present confidence in the reality of future redemption founded on the *resurrection of Jesus Christ*. *New birth* is related to baptism (see 1.23; 2.2; 3.20–22; John 3.3–5). **5:** *Salvation ready to be revealed* at the end time. The present experience has a future consummation. The believer does not go "up" to heaven, but "forward" to the future reward to be revealed at the last time. **12:** The readers' Christian lives, though beset with difficulties (1.6; 2.19–24; 3.14–15; 4.12–19; 5.10) represent the climax of God's plan for the ages, which even the prophets and the angels could only long to share.

1.13–5.11: Body of the letter, a unified whole, although incorporating elements of earlier biblical and Christian tradition.

1.13–2.10: The new identity as the elect and holy people of God. The preceding indicative statements of God's mighty acts lead to imperatives for the Christian life. **1.13:** In the Greek text, the first imperative in the

he who called you is holy, be holy yourselves
in all your conduct; [16] for it is written, "You
shall be holy, for I am holy."

[17] If you invoke as Father the one who
judges all people impartially according to
their deeds, live in reverent fear during the
time of your exile. [18] You know that you were
ransomed from the futile ways inherited
from your ancestors, not with perishable
things like silver or gold, [19] but with the
precious blood of Christ, like that of a lamb
without defect or blemish. [20] He was destined
before the foundation of the world, but was
revealed at the end of the ages for your sake.
[21] Through him you have come to trust in
God, who raised him from the dead and gave
him glory, so that your faith and hope are set
on God.

[22] Now that you have purified your souls
by your obedience to the truth[a] so that you
have genuine mutual love, love one another
deeply[b] from the heart.[c] [23] You have been
born anew, not of perishable but of imperish-
able seed, through the living and enduring
word of God.[d] [24] For

"All flesh is like grass
and all its glory like the flower of grass.
The grass withers,
and the flower falls,
[25] but the word of the Lord endures
forever."

That word is the good news that was an-
nounced to you.

2 Rid yourselves, therefore, of all malice,
and all guile, insincerity, envy, and all
slander. [2] Like newborn infants, long for the
pure, spiritual milk, so that by it you may
grow into salvation— [3] if indeed you have
tasted that the Lord is good.

[4] Come to him, a living stone, though re-
jected by mortals yet chosen and precious in
God's sight, and [5] like living stones, let your-
selves be built[e] into a spiritual house, to be a
holy priesthood, to offer spiritual sacrifices
acceptable to God through Jesus Christ. [6] For
it stands in scripture:

"See, I am laying in Zion a stone,
a cornerstone chosen and precious;
and whoever believes in him[f] will not be
put to shame."

[7] To you then who believe, he is precious; but
for those who do not believe,

"The stone that the builders rejected
has become the very head of the corner,"

[8] and

"A stone that makes them stumble,
and a rock that makes them fall."

They stumble because they disobey the word,
as they were destined to do.

[9] But you are a chosen race, a royal priest-
hood, a holy nation, God's own people,[g] in
order that you may proclaim the mighty acts
of him who called you out of darkness into
his marvelous light.

[10] Once you were not a people,
but now you are God's people;
once you had not received mercy,
but now you have received mercy.

[11] Beloved, I urge you as aliens and exiles
to abstain from the desires of the flesh that

[a] Other ancient authorities add *through the Spirit*
[b] Or *constantly*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *a pure heart*
[d] Or *through the word of the living and enduring God*
[e] Or *you yourselves are being built*
[f] Or *it*
[g] Gk *a people for his possession*

letter is the command to *hope* for Christ's triumphal appearance. **15:** The second imperative to *be holy* means to live a life set apart for God's service, though in the midst of the world. **16:** Quoting Lev 11.44–45; 19.2; 20.7. **17:** The third imperative is to *live* in reverent fear of God rather than of the oppressive culture (cf. 2.17; 3.14). **19:** *Lamb without . . . blemish,* see Ex 12.5; Lev 23.12; Num 6.14; etc. **21:** Christian faith is theocentric, in God who has acted definitively in Christ. **22:** The fourth imperative is the command of *love*, unselfish caring for others (see Mt 22.34–40; Rom 13.8–10; 1 Cor 13). **24–25:** Isa 40.6–8. **2.1–10:** The fifth imperative is to *long for* the means of spiritual nourishment so that they may *grow* (2.2). After the new birth comes nurture that leads to maturity. **3:** Ps 34.8 **4:** Ps 118.22; Isa 28.16; Mt 21.42. **5–8:** The imagery shifts from birth and growth to the construction of a *spiritual house* (temple) and then to a *holy priesthood.* The images of the Christian life are communal rather than individualistic. **6:** Isa 28.16 **7:** Ps 118.22 **8:** Isa 8.14–15. **9–10:** Hos 2.23; Ex 19.6. *Chosen race . . . royal priesthood . . . holy nation . . . God's own people*, biblical language for Israel is applied to the readers, who were formerly Gentiles (1.18).

wage war against the soul. 12 Conduct yourselves honorably among the Gentiles, so that, though they malign you as evildoers, they may see your honorable deeds and glorify God when he comes to judge.[a]

13 For the Lord's sake accept the authority of every human institution,[b] whether of the emperor as supreme, 14 or of governors, as sent by him to punish those who do wrong and to praise those who do right. 15 For it is God's will that by doing right you should silence the ignorance of the foolish. 16 As servants[c] of God, live as free people, yet do not use your freedom as a pretext for evil. 17 Honor everyone. Love the family of believers.[d] Fear God. Honor the emperor.

18 Slaves, accept the authority of your masters with all deference, not only those who are kind and gentle but also those who are harsh. 19 For it is a credit to you if, being aware of God, you endure pain while suffering unjustly. 20 If you endure when you are beaten for doing wrong, what credit is that? But if you endure when you do right and suffer for it, you have God's approval. 21 For to this you have been called, because Christ also suffered for you, leaving you an example, so that you should follow in his steps.

22 "He committed no sin,
and no deceit was found in his mouth."
23 When he was abused, he did not return abuse; when he suffered, he did not threaten; but he entrusted himself to the one who judges justly. 24 He himself bore our sins in his body on the cross,[e] so that, free from sins, we might live for righteousness; by his wounds[f] you have been healed. 25 For you were going astray like sheep, but now you have returned to the shepherd and guardian of your souls.

3 Wives, in the same way, accept the authority of your husbands, so that, even if some of them do not obey the word, they may be won over without a word by their wives' conduct, 2 when they see the purity and reverence of your lives. 3 Do not adorn yourselves outwardly by braiding your hair, and by wearing gold ornaments or fine clothing; 4 rather, let your adornment be the inner self with the lasting beauty of a gentle and quiet spirit, which is very precious in God's sight. 5 It was in this way long ago that the holy women who hoped in God used to adorn themselves by accepting the authority of their husbands. 6 Thus Sarah obeyed Abraham and called him lord. You have become her daughters as long as you do what is good and never let fears alarm you.

7 Husbands, in the same way, show consideration for your wives in your life together, paying honor to the woman as the weaker sex,[g] since they too are also heirs of the gracious gift of life—so that nothing may hinder your prayers.

8 Finally, all of you, have unity of spirit, sympathy, love for one another, a tender heart, and a humble mind. 9 Do not repay evil for evil or abuse for abuse; but, on the contrary, repay with a blessing. It is for this that you were called—that you might inherit a blessing. 10 For

"Those who desire life
and desire to see good days,

[a] Gk *God on the day of visitation*
[b] Or *every institution ordained for human beings*
[c] Gk *slaves*
[d] Gk *Love the brotherhood*
[e] Or *carried up our sins in his body to the tree*
[f] Gk *bruise*
[g] Gk *vessel*

2.11–3.12: Christian existence and conduct in society. Cf. Col 3.18–4.1; Eph 5.22–6.9; Titus 2.1–10; 1 Tim 2–3; 5.1–3. The Roman empire, the institution of slavery, and the patriarchal family are accepted as the present order of things that is soon to pass away (see 1.17; 2.11; 4.7). **2.11–12:** Christian conduct within social structures is to be a testimony to others. **13–17:** Instructions to all on the proper attitude to God, the state, and each other. *Governors,* of provinces of the Roman empire. **17:** Cf. Rom 13.7. **18–25:** Instructions to slaves, leading to more general comments addressed to a wider audience (cf. 3.8–12n.). Though resembling the typical household codes of Hellenistic moralists, the author's instruction is based on the example of Christ who suffered unjustly, in words that reflect the suffering servant of Isa 53.5–12. **22:** Isa 53.9. **3.1–7:** Instructions to wives and husbands. **1:** Unbelieving husbands may be converted without preaching or argument by the Christian example of their wives; cf. 1 Cor 7.12–16. **6:** See Gen 18.12 (where NRSV translates the word for "lord" as "husband"). **8–12:** Concluding instructions to all. The more vulnerable members of the church, slaves and wives, are examples of the conduct

let them keep their tongues from evil
and their lips from speaking deceit;
11 let them turn away from evil and do good;
let them seek peace and pursue it.
12 For the eyes of the Lord are on the
righteous,
and his ears are open to their prayer.
But the face of the Lord is against those
who do evil."

13 Now who will harm you if you are eager to do what is good? 14 But even if you do suffer for doing what is right, you are blessed. Do not fear what they fear,[a] and do not be intimidated, 15 but in your hearts sanctify Christ as Lord. Always be ready to make your defense to anyone who demands from you an accounting for the hope that is in you; 16 yet do it with gentleness and reverence.[b] Keep your conscience clear, so that, when you are maligned, those who abuse you for your good conduct in Christ may be put to shame. 17 For it is better to suffer for doing good, if suffering should be God's will, than to suffer for doing evil.

18 For Christ also suffered[c] for sins once for all, the righteous for the unrighteous, in order to bring you[d] to God. He was put to death in the flesh, but made alive in the spirit, 19 in which also he went and made a proclamation to the spirits in prison, 20 who in former times did not obey, when God waited patiently in the days of Noah, during the building of the ark, in which a few, that is, eight persons, were saved through water. 21 And baptism, which this prefigured, now saves you—not as a removal of dirt from the body, but as an appeal to God for[e] a good conscience, through the resurrection of Jesus Christ, 22 who has gone into heaven and is at the right hand of God, with angels, authorities, and powers made subject to him.

4 Since therefore Christ suffered in the flesh,[f] arm yourselves also with the same intention (for whoever has suffered in the flesh has finished with sin), 2 so as to live for the rest of your earthly life[g] no longer by human desires but by the will of God. 3 You have already spent enough time in doing what the Gentiles like to do, living in licentiousness, passions, drunkenness, revels, carousing, and lawless idolatry. 4 They are surprised that you no longer join them in the same excesses of dissipation, and so they blaspheme.[h] 5 But they will have to give an accounting to him who stands ready to judge the living and the dead. 6 For this is the reason the gospel was proclaimed even to the dead, so that, though they had been judged in the flesh as everyone is judged, they might live in the spirit as God does.

7 The end of all things is near;[i] therefore be serious and discipline yourselves for the sake of your prayers. 8 Above all, maintain constant love for one another, for love covers a mul-

[a] Gk *their fear*
[b] Or *respect*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *died*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *us*
[e] Or *a pledge to God from*
[f] Other ancient authorities add *for us*; others, *for you*
[g] Gk *rest of the time in the flesh*
[h] Or *they malign you*
[i] Or *is at hand*

required of the whole church, which is in a vulnerable position in a hostile society. **10–12:** Ps 34.12–16.

3.13–5.11: Responsible suffering in the face of hostility.

3.13–17: Suffering for doing good (= doing right). Following the example of Christ's unjust suffering does not mean passivity but actively doing good. **15:** In word as well as action, Christians are to be able to give a *defense* (Gk "apologia") for the Christian faith, here summarized as "hope" (1.2,13,21).

3.18–22: Christological grounding. 18: *Put to death in the flesh* means that Jesus really died in the human sphere; *made alive in the spirit* does not refer to a "part" of Christ that survived death, but that God raised Christ to a new life in the divine realm (cf. 1.3; 2.4; 3.21–22). **19–20:** The precise meaning of this fragment of an ancient Christological picture is unclear, but probably refers to Christ's preaching to the imprisoned evil spirits after his resurrection to announce his own victory (cf. Gen 6.1–4 as interpreted in *1 Enoch* 10.4–6). The picture is unrelated to 4.6 and the "descent to the world of the dead" of the Apostles' Creed. **20:** *Noah,* see Gen 6–8. *Eight persons*, Noah and his wife, and his three sons and their wives. **22:** See Eph 1.20; Heb 1:3.

4.1–6: Application to the Christian life. 3: As in 2.9–10, the church is the continuing people of God, and outsiders are *Gentiles*. **6:** The *dead* are probably Christians who heard the gospel while they were alive.

4.7–11: Eschatological exhortation. 9: Cf. Heb 13.2; 3 Jn 5–8. **10:** *Gift* is the distinctive Pauline word "cha-

titude of sins. [9] Be hospitable to one another without complaining. [10] Like good stewards of the manifold grace of God, serve one another with whatever gift each of you has received. [11] Whoever speaks must do so as one speaking the very words of God; whoever serves must do so with the strength that God supplies, so that God may be glorified in all things through Jesus Christ. To him belong the glory and the power forever and ever. Amen.

[12] Beloved, do not be surprised at the fiery ordeal that is taking place among you to test you, as though something strange were happening to you. [13] But rejoice insofar as you are sharing Christ's sufferings, so that you may also be glad and shout for joy when his glory is revealed. [14] If you are reviled for the name of Christ, you are blessed, because the spirit of glory,[a] which is the Spirit of God, is resting on you.[b] [15] But let none of you suffer as a murderer, a thief, a criminal, or even as a mischief maker. [16] Yet if any of you suffers as a Christian, do not consider it a disgrace, but glorify God because you bear this name. [17] For the time has come for judgment to begin with the household of God; if it begins with us, what will be the end for those who do not obey the gospel of God? [18] And

"If it is hard for the righteous to be saved,
what will become of the ungodly and
the sinners?"

[19] Therefore, let those suffering in accordance with God's will entrust themselves to a faithful Creator, while continuing to do good.

5 Now as an elder myself and a witness of the sufferings of Christ, as well as one who shares in the glory to be revealed, I exhort the elders among you [2] to tend the flock of God that is in your charge, exercising the oversight,[c] not under compulsion but willingly, as God would have you do it[d]—not for sordid gain but eagerly. [3] Do not lord it over those in your charge, but be examples to the flock. [4] And when the chief shepherd appears, you will win the crown of glory that never fades away. [5] In the same way, you who are younger must accept the authority of the elders.[e] And all of you must clothe yourselves with humility in your dealings with one another, for

"God opposes the proud,
but gives grace to the humble."

[6] Humble yourselves therefore under the mighty hand of God, so that he may exalt you in due time. [7] Cast all your anxiety on him, because he cares for you. [8] Discipline yourselves, keep alert.[f] Like a roaring lion your adversary the devil prowls around, looking for someone to devour. [9] Resist him, steadfast in your faith, for you know that your brothers and sisters[g] in all the world are undergoing the same kinds of suffering. [10] And after you have suffered for a little while, the God of all grace, who has called you to his eternal glory in Christ, will himself restore, support, strengthen, and establish you. [11] To him be the power forever and ever. Amen.

[12] Through Silvanus, whom I consider a faithful brother, I have written this short letter to encourage you and to testify that this is the true grace of God. Stand fast in it. [13] Your sister church[h] in Babylon, chosen together with you, sends you greetings; and so does my son Mark. [14] Greet one another with a kiss of love.

Peace to all of you who are in Christ.[i]

[a] Other ancient authorities add *and of power*
[b] Other ancient authorities add *On their part he is blasphemed, but on your part he is glorified*
[c] Other ancient authorities lack *exercising the oversight*
[d] Other ancient authorities lack *as God would have you do it*
[e] Or *of those who are older*
[f] Or *be vigilant*
[g] Gk *your brotherhood*
[h] Gk *She who is*
[i] Other ancient authorities add *Amen*

risma," found outside the Pauline tradition only here in the New Testament.

4.12–19: Suffering in joy and hope. Suffering is to be a witness to the truth of the faith, not the result of one's own antisocial behavior. *Fiery ordeal* refers to persecutions (1.6–7). On the name *Christian,* cf. Acts 11.26; 26.28. **18:** Prov 11.31.

5.1–11: Concluding exhortation. 1: *Elders*, church officials (Acts 14.23; 20.17–38; Jas 5.14; 2 Jn 1; 3 Jn 1). **5:** Prov 3.34.

5.12–14: Conclusion of the Letter. *Silvanus* and *Mark* were companions of Paul (Acts 15.22; 2 Cor 1.19; Philem 24). *Babylon* was a cryptic name for Rome (Rev 17.1).

THE SECOND LETTER OF PETER

NAME, AUTHORSHIP, AND DATE

Like 1 Peter, 2 Peter is named for its supposed author, Simon Peter, the most prominent figure among the twelve apostles of Jesus. But there is little historical or literary evidence to connect the author of this letter either to Simon Peter or to the author of 1 Peter. The author wrote in the name of Peter, not to transmit a particular form of tradition associated with him, but to defend the common apostolic tradition of the church against a challenge to that tradition. Such pseudepigraphical attribution is frequent in the Bible and in other ancient literatures. The writer takes pains to appeal to the teaching of the apostles (3.2), explicitly including Paul's letters as apostolic (3.15–16). Second Peter was likely written from Rome at the end of the first century CE or the beginning of the second, and is probably the latest book of the New Testament.

CANONICAL STATUS

The place of this letter among the Catholic Epistles (those addressed to all Christians rather than to specific churches or individuals) was contested in the early church, and it was excluded from Syriac translations until the fourth century CE, when it became widely accepted. Its canonicity was again challenged during the Reformation.

LITERARY FORM AND BACKGROUND

Second Peter has the typical form of a letter (see p. 1973), except that it lacks the customary final greeting. It also has characteristics of a testament, the last words of advice and warning given by a patriarch to his children before his death; see especially 1.12–14, and compare Paul's final address to the elders of the church in Ephesus (Acts 20.17–35). Testaments are usually a third-person narrative, and conclude with an account of the patriarch's death; 2 Peter, however, is presented as a first-person, written delivery of the final words of Peter to all who share his faith (1.1). The writer uses a rhetorical style, characterized by grandiose language, and draws on a rich cultural heritage, including the Hebrew Bible, Jewish exegetical traditions, Hellenistic philosophical speculation, traditions about Jesus, a collection of Paul's letters, and the letter of Jude.

Second Peter has a direct literary relationship to the letter of Jude. Its author freely borrowed the language and content of the letter to Jude, as these parallels show:

2 Peter	Jude
2.1	4
2.4	6
2.6	7
2.10a	7–8
2.10b–11	8–9
2.12	10
2.13	12
2.15	11
2.17	12–13, 16
3.2	17
3.3	18

CONTENTS AND INTERPRETATION

Second Peter is characterized by an apocalyptic vision of this world as corrupt—because of lust (1.4)—and bound for destruction. It urges the reader to escape by means of the knowledge of Christ and of God and to pursue virtues based on the all-sufficient promises and gifts of God and achieved through knowledge and remembering (1.1–11). The goal is to participate in the divine nature (1.4) and to enter the eternal kingdom (1.11).

These exhortations are based on the authority of Peter's final testament (1.12–15); the heavenly voice (1.16–18); and scripture (1.19–21). Chapter 2 is a warning against false teachers whose condemnation is contrasted with the salvation of the righteous. The writer's opponents are characterized using language drawn from the letter of Jude and from polemical arguments against Epicurean philosophy. One cannot infer details about the identity of the "false teachers" (2.1) beyond noting that the writer found appropriate ammunition in these two sources.

Chapter 3 warns against denying the future coming of the Lord and twisting the meaning of Paul's letters. As in earlier Jewish traditions, the flood in the time of Noah is seen as an earlier, lesser destruction of the earth which anticipated the ultimate final destruction. As the flood was followed by a restoration of life on earth, so there will be "new heavens and a new earth, where righteousness is at home" (3.13). Those who await these events should abstain from the defilement of the world, avoid being led astray by the error of the lawless, and grow in grace and knowledge.

Patrick A. Tiller

1 Simeon[a] Peter, a servant[b] and apostle of Jesus Christ,

To those who have received a faith as precious as ours through the righteousness of our God and Savior Jesus Christ:[c]

[2] May grace and peace be yours in abundance in the knowledge of God and of Jesus our Lord.

[3] His divine power has given us everything needed for life and godliness, through the knowledge of him who called us by[d] his own glory and goodness. [4] Thus he has given us, through these things, his precious and very great promises, so that through them you may escape from the corruption that is in the world because of lust, and may become participants of the divine nature. [5] For this very reason, you must make every effort to support your faith with goodness, and goodness with knowledge, [6] and knowledge with self-control, and self-control with endurance, and endurance with godliness, [7] and godliness with mutual[e] affection, and mutual[e] affection with love. [8] For if these things are yours and are increasing among you, they keep you from being ineffective and unfruitful in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ. [9] For anyone who lacks these things is short-sighted and blind, and is forgetful of the cleansing of past sins. [10] Therefore, brothers and sisters,[f] be all the more eager to confirm your call and election, for if you do this, you will never stumble. [11] For in this way, entry into the eternal kingdom of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ will be richly provided for you.

[12] Therefore I intend to keep on reminding you of these things, though you know them already and are established in the truth that has come to you. [13] I think it right, as long as I am in this body,[g] to refresh your memory,

[a] Other ancient authorities read *Simon*
[b] Gk *slave*
[c] Or *of our God and the Savior Jesus Christ*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *through*
[e] Gk *brotherly*
[f] Gk *brothers*
[g] Gk *tent*

1.1–2: Salutation, see Rom 1.1–7n. **1:** *Simeon* is Peter's Hebrew name, which more frequently occurs as Simon (e.g., Mt 4.18).

1.3–11: Opening exhortation. The major themes of the letter are introduced: *knowledge* of God and of Jesus, *effort* (variously translated as "be eager," "make every effort," or "strive"), stability (*confirm*), *godliness, corruption, lust,* and remembering. The readers should exchange this corrupt world (1.4; cf. 2.20) for *the eternal kingdom* (1.11) by means of the *knowledge* of God (1.3), the *promises* of God (1.4), and earnest moral striving (1.5–7). **4:** *The divine nature* refers primarily to immortality, which is the opposite of *corruption.*

1.12–21: Three solemn appeals. The writer uses Peter's final words before his death, the Transfiguration of Jesus, and prophetic scripture to reinforce the reliability of the message. **12–15:** The reference to Peter's death transforms the letter into a kind of testament in which a dying person gives ethical advice and warnings to his

14 since I know that my death[a] will come soon,
as indeed our Lord Jesus Christ has made
clear to me. 15 And I will make every effort so
that after my departure you may be able at
any time to recall these things.

16 For we did not follow cleverly devised
myths when we made known to you the power
and coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, but we
had been eyewitnesses of his majesty. 17 For he
received honor and glory from God the Father
when that voice was conveyed to him by the
Majestic Glory, saying, "This is my Son, my
Beloved,[b] with whom I am well pleased." 18 We
ourselves heard this voice come from heaven,
while we were with him on the holy mountain.

19 So we have the prophetic message more
fully confirmed. You will do well to be at-
tentive to this as to a lamp shining in a dark
place, until the day dawns and the morning
star rises in your hearts. 20 First of all you
must understand this, that no prophecy of
scripture is a matter of one's own interpreta-
tion, 21 because no prophecy ever came by
human will, but men and women moved by
the Holy Spirit spoke from God.[c]

2 But false prophets also arose among the
people, just as there will be false teachers
among you, who will secretly bring in destruc-
tive opinions. They will even deny the Master
who bought them—bringing swift destruction
on themselves. 2 Even so, many will follow
their licentious ways, and because of these
teachers[d] the way of truth will be maligned.
3 And in their greed they will exploit you with
deceptive words. Their condemnation, pro-
nounced against them long ago, has not been
idle, and their destruction is not asleep.

4 For if God did not spare the angels when
they sinned, but cast them into hell[e] and
committed them to chains[f] of deepest dark-
ness to be kept until the judgment; 5 and if he
did not spare the ancient world, even though
he saved Noah, a herald of righteousness,
with seven others, when he brought a flood
on a world of the ungodly; 6 and if by turning
the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah to ashes
he condemned them to extinction[g] and made
them an example of what is coming to the
ungodly;[h] 7 and if he rescued Lot, a righteous
man greatly distressed by the licentiousness
of the lawless 8 (for that righteous man, living
among them day after day, was tormented
in his righteous soul by their lawless deeds
that he saw and heard), 9 then the Lord knows
how to rescue the godly from trial, and to
keep the unrighteous under punishment un-
til the day of judgment 10 —especially those

[a] Gk *the putting off of my tent*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *my beloved Son*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *but moved by the Holy Spirit saints of God spoke*
[d] Gk *because of them*
[e] Gk *Tartaros*
[f] Other ancient authorities read *pits*
[g] Other ancient authorities lack *to extinction*
[h] Other ancient authorities read *an example to those who were to be ungodly*

survivors or followers. **16–18:** Peter's presence at the Transfiguration of Jesus (Mt 17.1–8; Mk 9.2–8; Lk 9.28–36) makes him an *eyewitness* of the voice from heaven, which confirms the apostles' statements about Christ's *power and coming*. The wording of the heavenly voice differs slightly from that in the Gospels; the writer may be relying on oral tradition rather than a written gospel. **19:** *Morning star,* see Rev 2.28; 22.16 for similar language.

2.1–22: Warnings against false teachers. Beginning in 2.1 the author borrows language from the letter of Jude with extensive modifications (see p. 2132). The ethical condemnations are standard polemical attacks all adapted from Jude: greed, lack of moral restraint, deception (2.2–3), and disregard for authority (2.10). **1:** They *deny the Master* most likely by their immoral conduct (2.2,10,14,18). Jesus' death is understood as the purchase price for which he *bought* his followers as one buys a slave (either for freedom or for service). **4–10a:** Jude's examples of judgment (cf. Sir 16.6–17) are rearranged, abbreviated, and supplemented to remove Jude's concern with falling from grace, to follow the order of the biblical events, and to introduce a balanced emphasis on judgment and salvation. **4:** The *angels* who *sinned* are probably the "sons of God" of Gen 6.2 as popularized by the books of Enoch (see Jude 14–16n.). The allusive use of the noncanonical Enoch traditions contrasts with Jude's explicit quotation from them. *Tartaros* (*hell*) is the prison of the Titans of Greek myth. **5:** Gen 6.6–8; 8.18. **6:** Gen 19.24; cf. 3 Macc 2.5. **7:** Gen 19.16,29. **10b–11:** The *authority* that they despise may be either God's authority or angelic authorities. The *glorious ones* are probably angelic dignitaries. Jude's example of Michael's dispute with the devil (see Jude 9n.) is transformed into an example of angels, who refrain from bringing *a slanderous*

who indulge their flesh in depraved lust, and who despise authority.

Bold and willful, they are not afraid to slander the glorious ones,[a] 11 whereas angels, though greater in might and power, do not bring against them a slanderous judgment from the Lord.[b] 12 These people, however, are like irrational animals, mere creatures of instinct, born to be caught and killed. They slander what they do not understand, and when those creatures are destroyed,[c] they also will be destroyed, 13 suffering[d] the penalty for doing wrong. They count it a pleasure to revel in the daytime. They are blots and blemishes, reveling in their dissipation[e] while they feast with you. 14 They have eyes full of adultery, insatiable for sin. They entice unsteady souls. They have hearts trained in greed. Accursed children! 15 They have left the straight road and have gone astray, following the road of Balaam son of Bosor,[f] who loved the wages of doing wrong, 16 but was rebuked for his own transgression; a speechless donkey spoke with a human voice and restrained the prophet's madness.

17 These are waterless springs and mists driven by a storm; for them the deepest darkness has been reserved. 18 For they speak bombastic nonsense, and with licentious desires of the flesh they entice people who have just[g] escaped from those who live in error. 19 They promise them freedom, but they themselves are slaves of corruption; for people are slaves to whatever masters them. 20 For if, after they have escaped the defilements of the world through the knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ, they are again entangled in them and overpowered, the last state has become worse for them than the first. 21 For it would have been better for them never to have known the way of righteousness than, after knowing it, to turn back from the holy commandment that was passed on to them. 22 It has happened to them according to the true proverb,

"The dog turns back to its own vomit,"
and,
"The sow is washed only to wallow in the mud."

3 This is now, beloved, the second letter I am writing to you; in them I am trying to arouse your sincere intention by reminding you 2 that you should remember the words spoken in the past by the holy prophets, and the commandment of the Lord and Savior spoken through your apostles. 3 First of all you must understand this, that in the last days scoffers will come, scoffing and indulging their own lusts 4 and saying, "Where is the promise of his coming? For ever since our ancestors died,[h] all things continue as they were from the beginning of creation!" 5 They deliberately ignore this fact, that by the word of God heavens existed long ago and an earth

[a] Or *angels*; Gk *glories*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *before the Lord*; others lack the phrase
[c] Gk *in their destruction*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *receiving*
[e] Other ancient authorities read *love-feasts*
[f] Other ancient authorities read *Beor*
[g] Other ancient authorities read *actually*
[h] Gk *our fathers fell asleep*

judgment from (or *before*) *the Lord.* **15–16:** The account of Balaam's sin (see Num 22.7,21–35), as in Jude, is taken directly from postbiblical Jewish traditions, which uniformly make Balaam a greedy villain. **17–18:** The seemingly excessive piling up of accusations functions as the necessary and proportionate response to the dangers inherent in their false teachings. **19:** *Slaves of corruption,* compare Rom 6.6,16; 8.21; John 8.34. **21:** Mt 12.45; Lk 11.26. **22:** The first quotation is from Prov 26.11; the second is from an unknown source..

3.1–13: A defense of the expectation of the coming of Christ. The most troublesome of the false teachings is that the present world will continue eternally. These scoffers were predicted long ago by the prophets and by the Lord. Furthermore, from God's point of view, the delay is not long at all, and it is motivated by God's patience and desire for repentance. **3:** *Indulging their own lusts,* if there is no judgment, then one may do as one pleases. **5–13:** The flood (Gen 6–8) destroyed the first world and made way for the present one. In the same way, fire will destroy the present world, and a third world will replace it. The destruction of the earth by fire, a concept well known in Jewish tradition, is here described in the language of Stoic philosophical speculation. **4:** *Our ancestors* are probably the biblical patriarchs since Adam. **5:** *They deliberately ignore* in contrast to the repeated exhortation to *remember* (1.9,12–15; 3.1–2,8). On creation by God's *word,* and an original watery state, see Gen

was formed out of water and by means of water, 6 through which the world of that time was deluged with water and perished. 7 But by the same word the present heavens and earth have been reserved for fire, being kept until the day of judgment and destruction of the godless.

8 But do not ignore this one fact, beloved, that with the Lord one day is like a thousand years, and a thousand years are like one day. 9 The Lord is not slow about his promise, as some think of slowness, but is patient with you,[a] not wanting any to perish, but all to come to repentance. 10 But the day of the Lord will come like a thief, and then the heavens will pass away with a loud noise, and the elements will be dissolved with fire, and the earth and everything that is done on it will be disclosed.[b]

11 Since all these things are to be dissolved in this way, what sort of persons ought you to be in leading lives of holiness and godliness, 12 waiting for and hastening[c] the coming of the day of God, because of which the heavens will be set ablaze and dissolved, and the elements will melt with fire? 13 But, in accordance with his promise, we wait for new heavens and a new earth, where righteousness is at home.

14 Therefore, beloved, while you are waiting for these things, strive to be found by him at peace, without spot or blemish; 15 and regard the patience of our Lord as salvation. So also our beloved brother Paul wrote to you according to the wisdom given him, 16 speaking of this as he does in all his letters. There are some things in them hard to understand, which the ignorant and unstable twist to their own destruction, as they do the other scriptures. 17 You therefore, beloved, since you are forewarned, beware that you are not carried away with the error of the lawless and lose your own stability. 18 But grow in the grace and knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ. To him be the glory both now and to the day of eternity. Amen.[d]

[a] Other ancient authorities read *on your account*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *will be burned up*
[c] Or *earnestly desiring*
[d] Other ancient authorities lack *Amen*

1.2,6–10; Ps 33.6–7. **6:** Gen 7.11. **8:** Ps 90.4. **10:** *Day of the Lord,* Am 5.18–20; Joel 2.2–32. *Like a thief* in the night, 1 Thess 5.2; Mt 24.43–44; Lk 12.39–40. The *elements* (see also v. 12) are probably the heavenly bodies (possibly including the earth as well). **13:** Isa 65.17; 66.22; Rev 21.1.

3.14–17: Final exhortation. One ought to live blamelessly and take advantage of the opportunity to repent. **14–16:** Paul also taught that the delay of judgment is an opportunity to strive for moral purity and to repent (Rom 2.4; 9.22). Any other understanding of Paul is a destructive misinterpretation. The use of the term "scriptures" does not necessarily imply a concept of canonicity. **18: Doxology.** Cf. Rom 16.25; Eph 3.20–21; Phil 4.20; 1 Tim 1.17; 2 Tim 4.18; Heb 13.21; 1 Pet 5.11; Jude 24–25; Rev 5.13.

THE FIRST LETTER OF JOHN

NAME

Ancient manuscripts title this work "the first letter of John" even though its literary form is not that of an ancient letter (see pp. 1973-74). Its author provides no greeting or conclusion in which he identifies himself or its recipients. Yet repeated references to writing (1.4; 2.1,7–8,12–14,21,26) and the two letters attributed to the same author (2–3 John) provided early scribes with the title.

CANONICAL STATUS AND AUTHORSHIP

First John opens with echoes of the prologue to the Gospel of John (compare 1.1–4 and Jn 1.1–18) and focuses its ethical teaching on the love command, which Jesus gives his disciples at the Last Supper in the Gospel (Jn 13.31–35; 1 Jn 3.11–17,23; 4.7–21). It came into the Christian canon as an authoritative interpretation of the Gospel.

The anonymous voice of 1 John was identified with the author of the Fourth Gospel by the end of the second century CE (Eusebius, *Hist. eccl.* iii.39.17; *Muratorian Canon*, lines 26–31; Irenaeus, *Adv. Haer.* 3.16.5). Since the Gospel was attributed to the apostle John, the son of Zebedee, early Christians concluded that he had composed 1 John near the end of his long life (Jn 21.22–23). Modern scholars have a more complex view of the development of the Johannine community and its writings. The opening verses of 1 John employ a first person plural "we" as witnesses to the truth revealed in Jesus (1.1–4). That "we" probably refers to a circle of teachers faithful to the apostolic testimony of the Beloved Disciple and evangelist. A prominent member of that group composed this introduction.

DATE AND HISTORICAL CONTEXT

The earliest allusions to 1 John occur in the mid-second century CE (Polycarp, *To the Philippians* 6.3; 7.1; compare 1 Jn 4.2–3; also used by Papias according to Eusebius, *Hist. eccl.* iii. 36,1–2). Irenaeus (ca. 180 CE) cites 1 John explicitly. The date of 1 John depends upon its relationship to the Gospel of John. Its author employs language, images, and themes evocative of the Gospel but does not cite it as a text. Therefore it is possible to imagine that the Gospel as we know it had not yet taken its final form when 1 John was written. A date around 100 CE is plausible. Other scholars focus on the fact that 1 John appears less theologically developed than the Gospel in some respects. Attributes such as "light" and "life" are associated with God rather than the Son. Concern for forgiveness of sin and salvation in the final judgment has not been transformed by the Gospel's picture of the presence of eternal life in the believer. They conclude that 1 John should be dated earlier than the Gospel.

Although theological differences make 1 John appear to be earlier, the author's concerns suggest a historical context later than that of the Gospel. Jews and their hostility to faith in Jesus as Son of God, a major element in the Gospel (see Jn 9.13–41; 10.31–39), have disappeared from the discussion. So have references to the Hebrew Bible. Instead, the community has been shaken by schism (1 Jn 2.18–19). Those who have departed from the fellowship are said to be denying the reality of Jesus' coming in the flesh (1.1–4; 4.1–3) and the saving significance of the death ("blood") of Jesus (5.6). In addition, 1 John describes a communal discipline of prayer for members who sin (5.16–17). Therefore 1 John speaks to a historical setting later than the Gospel. A community that had been unified through a period of persecution by Jewish authorities has split over interpretation of Jesus and salvation. Its author seeks to reassure readers that they possess the truth revealed through Jesus.

LITERARY HISTORY

The rhetorical power of 1 John stems from its appeals to received tradition shared by the author and his readers. The phrase "what was from the beginning" (1.1) not only imitates the Gospel opening (Jn 1.1) but the teaching that follows (2.7,21,24; 3.11). Since 1 John does not speak to specific details of the readers' situation as letters usually do, or develop a sustained theological argument as Paul does in his letters, some scholars suggest that it was assembled from earlier written traditions. Often a core that concludes at 2.29 is thought to have been

supplemented with the homiletic reflections on love and polemic against dissidents in the remaining chapters. First John 5.13 concludes the work in a fashion similar to the Gospel. Therefore 1 John 5.14–21 appear to be an epilogue added to the completed work.

STRUCTURE AND CONTENTS

First John lacks a clearly defined structure that carries its argument from the opening witness to the shared tradition (1.1–4) to the concluding statement of purpose (5.13) and appended remarks (5.14–21). Fellowship with the author and other Johannine witnesses requires belief in the teachings presented, which alternate between truths about the coming of Jesus and ethical exhortation focused on holiness and love within the community. Both aspects of the tradition are threatened by dissidents, who are characterized as "antichrists" emblematic of the evils predicted for the last days (4.1–6). The author often concludes one reflection and begins the next in the same sentence, so it is not entirely clear how to divide the units that comprise the work even when looking at verbal clues such as "I am writing" or "this is the message" or direct address to the readers such as "little children" or "beloved." The outline in the annotations is based on thematic shifts. Another proposal finds a repetition of the macrostructure of the Gospel in 1 John: prologue (1.1–4; Jn 1.1–18); God's light, truth, and life present in darkness (1.5–2.29; Jn 1.19–12.50); the Father's beloved children, the love command, and Spirit abiding with the community (3.1–5.12; Jn 13.1–17.26); blood and water at the cross (5.6–8; Jn 19.34–35); conclusion (5.13; Jn 20.31) and epilogue (5.14–21; Jn 21).

INTERPRETATION

First John speaks only indirectly about the views of dissidents as denying truths about Jesus as messiah (2.22–23), as coming in the flesh (4.2), and as bringing salvation through his death (5.6). The author treats their departure from the communion of Johannine believers as a violation of the love command equivalent to Cain murdering his brother (3.11–12). In addition, 1 John corrects false understandings of sin, holiness, and forgiveness (1.5–2.6). Christians are reminded that their obligation to love one another is grounded not only in God's command (2.7–17) but in God's nature as love (4.7–12). At least some readers need to be reassured about their salvation on the day of judgment (3.18–24). The community is encouraged to rely on the Spirit it has received from God (2.26–27). Interpreters face the problem of how to fit these varied concerns into a framework. Should they all be considered as responses to the false teaching of dissidents? Or is the author speaking to diverse concerns? In the latter perspective, the schism may be viewed as a crisis that had undermined confidence in other areas that had not been challenged by the false teachers.

Even if the false teachers had claimed the Spirit as basis for an interpretation of Jesus that in some way denied his humanity and his saving death, it remains difficult to decide how to situate such claims theologically. Irenaeus employed 1 John to refute the sharp divide between the Jesus of the Gospels and the Savior/Christ of various Gnostic teachers. Some scholars see the opponents of 1 John in the figure of Cerinthus (ca. 100 CE). He argued that the divine Christ descended upon the righteous man, Jesus, at his baptism and bestowed the Spirit, enabling Jesus to work miracles. Jesus also revealed a previously unknown Father, the true God superior to the creator of Genesis 1. Since the divine cannot suffer, Christ departed from Jesus prior to his death on the cross (see Irenaeus, *Adv. Haer.* 1.26.1). Such a theological position suits the hints that false teachers deny that Jesus is a messiah in the flesh as well as the comment that they accept a coming in water (= baptism) as salvific but not "water and blood" (= cross). But if 1 John had a Gnostic such as Cerinthus in view, one would expect some opposition to the depiction of God as "unknown Father" distinct from the creator. If the opponents cannot be identified with a known group or teaching, then the best one can say is that their views about Jesus and salvation were presented as teaching based on the Fourth Gospel.

Even without quoting the Gospel, the thick texture of Johannine allusions in 1 John provides its readers with an authentic understanding of the evangelist's message. But since the most important part of the Gospel for readers of 1 John is the Farewell Discourses (Jn 13–17), their emphasis on unity (15.1–10; 17.6–19) must have heightened the crisis of faith posed by a schism. Did the breakup among believers undermine the promise of eternal life through union with the Father and Son at the heart of their faith? First John replies by denying that those who left ever really belonged to the community. Their departure broke the mutual bond of love that lies at the heart of its union with God. The author also retrieved an apocalyptic tradition depicting the rise of false prophets, schism, and even false messiahs in a satanic attempt to delude the righteous in the last days (2.22;

4.1; cf. Mk 13.22). A number of the other concerns found in 1 John, such as authenticating one's faith so as to be confident in God's judgment, may reflect the consequences of the schism rather than the theological views that provoked it.

GUIDE TO READING

The interpretative setting of 1 John as a reflection on Johannine traditions for a church whose faith has been jarred by schism provides one approach to reading the text. Echoes of the Gospel are identified in the annotations. The pain and uncertainty of the audience come through in the sections of exhortation to mutual love and reassurance. However, the apocalyptic scenario that enables the author to demonize the dissident teachers, even branding them with a newly minted term "antichrists" (4.1–6) appears to encourage a hostility incompatible with the teaching on love.

Use of 1 John in the cycle of Christian liturgical readings during the Christmas season focuses on the positive notes: Jesus as messiah come in the flesh, and the love command grounded in the love God has shown in the Son. This emphasis reflects a tradition of reading that goes back to Augustine's comment, "in it John speaks at length and almost the whole time about love" (*In Epistolam Ioannis*, prologue). First John 3.1–3 is a popular selection at funerals, particularly when the Gospel reading is taken from John. It highlights another motif in the work, the confidence that believers should have in eternal life.

Pheme Perkins

1 We declare to you what was from the beginning, what we have heard, what we have seen with our eyes, what we have looked at and touched with our hands, concerning the word of life— [2] this life was revealed, and we have seen it and testify to it, and declare to you the eternal life that was with the Father and was revealed to us— [3] we declare to you what we have seen and heard so that you also may have fellowship with us; and truly our fellowship is with the Father and with his Son Jesus Christ. [4] We are writing these things so that our[a] joy may be complete.

[5] This is the message we have heard from him and proclaim to you, that God is light and in him there is no darkness at all. [6] If we say that we have fellowship with him while we are walking in darkness, we lie and do not do what is true; [7] but if we walk in the light as he himself is in the light, we have fellowship with one another, and the blood of Jesus his Son cleanses us from all sin. [8] If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. [9] If we confess our sins, he who is faithful and just will forgive us our sins and cleanse us from all unrighteousness. [10] If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us.

2 My little children, I am writing these things to you so that you may not sin. But if anyone does sin, we have an advocate with

[a] Other ancient authorities read *your*

1.1–4: Introduction. 1–2: *From the beginning* echoes the opening of John's Gospel (Jn 1.1–18) in which Jesus is the Word made flesh, life, and light. Here *beginning* refers to the beginning of Christian faith. *We*, teachers in the community, charged with handing on the tradition. *Heard, seen, looked at, touched* insist on the human reality of the Son against false teachers (see Introduction). **3–4:** Fellowship with the Father and Son and abiding joy are signs of genuine Christian community in the Johannine tradition (Jn 15.11; 17.13).

1.5–10: Holiness in the community. 5: Light is a common symbol for the holiness and perfection of God (Ps 4.6; Isa 60.1–2). God's light guides the righteous (Ps 27.1). **6–7:** No one can claim fellowship with God who does not follow God's commands (Jn 3.19; 1 Jn 2.11). Christians do not claim to be perfect. Jesus' death has brought forgiveness of sins (cf. Rev 1.5; 5.9). **8–10:** False teachers, who reject the saving death of Jesus (see Introduction), may have claimed that true believers were sinless. Such teaching makes God a liar (v. 10). The wicked have false views about God and sin (Ps 53).

2.1–6: Christ our advocate. 1–2: A similar image of the risen Christ interceding for believers describes Christ as high priest in Heb 4.15–5.4. Here Christ is the *advocate*, who defends the faithful in the divine court (for the

the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous; [2] and
he is the atoning sacrifice for our sins, and
not for ours only but also for the sins of the
whole world.

[3] Now by this we may be sure that we know
him, if we obey his commandments. [4] Who-
ever says, "I have come to know him," but
does not obey his commandments, is a liar,
and in such a person the truth does not exist;
[5] but whoever obeys his word, truly in this
person the love of God has reached perfec-
tion. By this we may be sure that we are in
him: [6] whoever says, "I abide in him," ought
to walk just as he walked.

[7] Beloved, I am writing you no new com-
mandment, but an old commandment that
you have had from the beginning; the old
commandment is the word that you have
heard. [8] Yet I am writing you a new com-
mandment that is true in him and in you,
because[a] the darkness is passing away and
the true light is already shining. [9] Who-
ever says, "I am in the light," while hating
a brother or sister,[b] is still in the darkness.
[10] Whoever loves a brother or sister[c] lives in
the light, and in such a person[d] there is no
cause for stumbling. [11] But whoever hates
another believer[e] is in the darkness, walks
in the darkness, and does not know the way
to go, because the darkness has brought on
blindness.

[12] I am writing to you, little children,
because your sins are forgiven on
account of his name.

[13] I am writing to you, fathers,
because you know him who is from the
beginning.
I am writing to you, young people,
because you have conquered the evil one.
[14] I write to you, children,
because you know the Father.
I write to you, fathers,
because you know him who is from the
beginning.
I write to you, young people,
because you are strong
and the word of God abides in you,
and you have overcome the evil one.

[15] Do not love the world or the things in
the world. The love of the Father is not in
those who love the world; [16] for all that is in
the world—the desire of the flesh, the desire
of the eyes, the pride in riches—comes
not from the Father but from the world.
[17] And the world and its desire[f] are passing
away, but those who do the will of God live
forever.

[18] Children, it is the last hour! As you
have heard that antichrist is coming, so now
many antichrists have come. From this we
know that it is the last hour. [19] They went

[a] Or *that*
[b] Gk *hating a brother*
[c] Gk *loves a brother*
[d] Or *in it*
[e] Gk *hates a brother*
[f] Or *the desire for it*

Holy Spirit as *advocate* see Jn 14.15–16). **3–5:** Knowledge of God requires obedience to God's commandments (cf. Ezek 36.26–27). **6:** Jesus exemplifies the love which is God's commandment (Jn 13.1; 15.11–13).

2.7–11: The love commandment. 7: *I am writing you* repeats 2.1. Fidelity to Christ's *new commandment* to love one another (Jn 13.34) is freedom from sin. **8:** *The true light is already shining* echoes the portrayal of Jesus as light of the world in the Gospel (Jn 8.12; 9.5; 12.35–36).

2.12–17: Victory over evil. 12–14: A rhythmic series of phrases reminds all from the youngest (or newest) members to the most senior (*little children . . . fathers . . . young people*) that they share Christ's victory over the world and its ruling power, *the evil one* (see Jn 12.31; 16.11,33b). **15–17:** Jesus came to save the world (2.2; Jn 3.16), but the world also represents false values, love of wealth or honor, and passions that separate people from God and one another (3.17).

2.18–29: Victory over false teaching. 18–23: *Many antichrists have come* refers to the secessionists as agents of the evil one, trying to deceive God's people (v. 18; 4.1–3). The appearance of such false prophets signals the *last hour* in apocalyptic texts (Mt 24.4–5,24; CD 5.20; *T. Moses* 7.4; Rev 20.10). The term "antichrist" occurs in the New Testament only in 1–2 John. It may be a variant of the "false messiah" (Gk "pseudochristos") in the Synoptic apocalypse (Mk 13.22; Mt 24.24). The figure of an opponent of God who arises in the last days combines the image of the mythical chaos monster defeated by God (Isa 27.1; 51.9; Ps 74.13; Job 26.12), the figure of Satan as an angelic adversary (Zech 3.1; Dan 12.1; *Jub.* 1.20; 1QS 1.18; 3.20–21), a human ruler who embodies evil

out from us, but they did not belong to us; for if they had belonged to us, they would have remained with us. But by going out they made it plain that none of them belongs to us. 20 But you have been anointed by the Holy One, and all of you have knowledge.[a] 21 I write to you, not because you do not know the truth, but because you know it, and you know that no lie comes from the truth. 22 Who is the liar but the one who denies that Jesus is the Christ?[b] This is the antichrist, the one who denies the Father and the Son. 23 No one who denies the Son has the Father; everyone who confesses the Son has the Father also. 24 Let what you heard from the beginning abide in you. If what you heard from the beginning abides in you, then you will abide in the Son and in the Father. 25 And this is what he has promised us,[c] eternal life.

26 I write these things to you concerning those who would deceive you. 27 As for you, the anointing that you received from him abides in you, and so you do not need anyone to teach you. But as his anointing teaches you about all things, and is true and is not a lie, and just as it has taught you, abide in him.[d]

28 And now, little children, abide in him, so that when he is revealed we may have confidence and not be put to shame before him at his coming.

29 If you know that he is righteous, you may be sure that everyone who does right has been born of him. **3** 1 See what love the Father has given us, that we should be called children of God; and that is what we are. The reason the world does not know us is that it did not know him. 2 Beloved, we are God's children now; what we will be has not yet been revealed. What we do know is this: when he[d] is revealed, we will be like him, for we will see him as he is. 3 And all who have this hope in him purify themselves, just as he is pure.

4 Everyone who commits sin is guilty of lawlessness; sin is lawlessness. 5 You know that he was revealed to take away sins, and in him there is no sin. 6 No one who abides in him sins; no one who sins has either seen him or known him. 7 Little children, let no one deceive you. Everyone who does what is right is righteous, just as he is righteous. 8 Everyone who commits sin is a child of the devil; for the devil has been sinning from the beginning. The Son of God was revealed for this purpose, to destroy the works of the devil. 9 Those who have been born of God do not sin, because God's seed abides in them;[e] they cannot sin, because they have been born of God. 10 The children of God and the children of the devil are revealed in this way: all who do not do what is right are not from God, nor are those who do not love their brothers and sisters.[f]

11 For this is the message you have heard from the beginning, that we should love one another. 12 We must not be like Cain who was from the evil one and murdered his brother. And why did he murder him? Because his own deeds were evil and his brother's righteous. 13 Do not be astonished, brothers and sisters,[g] that the world hates you. 14 We know that we have passed from death to life because we love one another. Whoever does not love abides in death. 15 All who hate

[a] Other ancient authorities read *you know all things*
[b] Or *the Messiah*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *you*
[d] Or *it*
[e] Or *because the children of God abide in him*
[f] Gk *his brother*
[g] Gk *brothers*

(Dan 8.25; Ezek 38.1; 39.6; 2 Macc 9.12; 2 Esd 5.6–13), and the false prophet (Deut 13.2–6; 18.30). **24–27:** The Holy Spirit ("the Holy One," v. 20) present within the community ("anointing that you received") enables believers to distinguish true faith from lies about Jesus (Jn 14.26; 16.13). **28–29:** *At his coming* refers to Christ coming in judgment. Those who remain true to the Johannine teaching have nothing to fear (cf. Jn 3.36).

3.1–10: God's children are holy. 1–3: As God's children, believers become like Christ (Jn 1.12–13; 13.15–16; 17.16–19). **4–6:** Jesus' coming has taken away the sin of those who remain faithful (1.5–2.2). **7–8:** Those who are deceived about sin (2.1) become children of the devil (cf. Jn 8.44). **9–10:** *God's seed*, the Holy Spirit (2.26–27), and mutual love (Jn 13.35) distinguish God's children.

3.11–18: Moral examples. 11: See 2.7. **12:** Cain shows that hating a brother leads to murder (Gen 4.8). **13–14:** Though righteous like Abel, believers should expect to be hated by outsiders (Jn 15.18–19). **15:** The phrase, *do*

a brother or sister[a] are murderers, and you know that murderers do not have eternal life abiding in them. 16 We know love by this, that he laid down his life for us—and we ought to lay down our lives for one another. 17 How does God's love abide in anyone who has the world's goods and sees a brother or sister[b] in need and yet refuses help?

18 Little children, let us love, not in word or speech, but in truth and action. 19 And by this we will know that we are from the truth and will reassure our hearts before him 20 whenever our hearts condemn us; for God is greater than our hearts, and he knows everything. 21 Beloved, if our hearts do not condemn us, we have boldness before God; 22 and we receive from him whatever we ask, because we obey his commandments and do what pleases him.

23 And this is his commandment, that we should believe in the name of his Son Jesus Christ and love one another, just as he has commanded us. 24 All who obey his commandments abide in him, and he abides in them. And by this we know that he abides in us, by the Spirit that he has given us.

4 Beloved, do not believe every spirit, but test the spirits to see whether they are from God; for many false prophets have gone out into the world. 2 By this you know the Spirit of God: every spirit that confesses that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh is from God, 3 and every spirit that does not confess Jesus[c] is not from God. And this is the spirit of the antichrist, of which you have heard that it is coming; and now it is already in the world. 4 Little children, you are from God, and have conquered them; for the one who is in you is greater than the one who is in the world. 5 They are from the world; therefore what they say is from the world, and the world listens to them. 6 We are from God. Whoever knows God listens to us, and whoever is not from God does not listen to us. From this we know the spirit of truth and the spirit of error.

7 Beloved, let us love one another, because love is from God; everyone who loves is born of God and knows God. 8 Whoever does not love does not know God, for God is love. 9 God's love was revealed among us in this way: God sent his only Son into the world so that we might live through him. 10 In this is love, not that we loved God but that he loved us and sent his Son to be the atoning sacrifice for our sins. 11 Beloved, since God loved us so much, we also ought to love one another. 12 No one has ever seen God; if we love one another, God lives in us, and his love is perfected in us.

13 By this we know that we abide in him and he in us, because he has given us of his Spirit. 14 And we have seen and do testify that the Father has sent his Son as the Savior of the world. 15 God abides in those who confess that Jesus is the Son of God, and they abide in God. 16 So we have known and believe the love that God has for us.

[a] Gk *his brother*
[b] Gk *brother*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *does away with Jesus* (Gk *dissolves Jesus*)

not have eternal life abiding in them, invites readers to apply this lesson to the secessionists. Their break with the community is equivalent to murder (4.5; cf. Mt 5.21–22). **16–18:** Jesus' death is the supreme example of love (Jn 13.1; 15.9,13).

3.19–24: Love as confidence before God. 19–20: Love is the basis for God's judgment despite the doubts caused by the schism (2.28). **21–22:** Jesus promised that God would answer believers' prayer (Jn 16.23–24). **23–24:** Belief in the Son and love establish a permanent relationship between believers and God (Jn 16.26–27).

4.1–6: Testing spirits. 1–3: Since false teachers can appear genuine (cf. Mt 7.15–23), Christians must *test* such persons by their faith in Jesus (cf. 1 Cor 12.1–3). The dissidents changed the Johannine tradition by denying that Christ *has come in the flesh.* **4–6:** The Holy Spirit verifies 1 John as testimony to the true Johannine tradition (cf. Jn 16.13–14). **5:** *The world listens* could imply that the dissident teachers enjoy more success than the Johannine circle (cf. Jn 15.19).

4.7–21: God's love as the basis of salvation. 7–9: Believers are to imitate the love God has shown in sending the Son to give life (3.16–22; Jn 3.16). **10–12:** God's love has been shown in the death of Jesus (Jn 13.1). It is the basis of the love command (Jn 15.12–13). **12:** See Jn 1.18; 6.46. **13–16a:** See 3.23–24. **14:** See Jn 4.42. **16b–18:** *God is love* (4.8; cf. Rom 8.32,39; 1 Cor 13.11). When Christian life corresponds to the nature of God (1.5–7), there is no

God is love, and those who abide in love abide in God, and God abides in them. 17 Love has been perfected among us in this: that we may have boldness on the day of judgment, because as he is, so are we in this world. 18 There is no fear in love, but perfect love casts out fear; for fear has to do with punishment, and whoever fears has not reached perfection in love. 19 We love[a] because he first loved us. 20 Those who say, "I love God," and hate their brothers or sisters,[b] are liars; for those who do not love a brother or sister[c] whom they have seen, cannot love God whom they have not seen. 21 The commandment we have from him is this: those who love God must love their brothers and sisters[b] also.

5 Everyone who believes that Jesus is the Christ[d] has been born of God, and everyone who loves the parent loves the child. 2 By this we know that we love the children of God, when we love God and obey his commandments. 3 For the love of God is this, that we obey his commandments. And his commandments are not burdensome, 4 for whatever is born of God conquers the world. And this is the victory that conquers the world, our faith. 5 Who is it that conquers the world but the one who believes that Jesus is the Son of God?

6 This is the one who came by water and blood, Jesus Christ, not with the water only but with the water and the blood. And the Spirit is the one that testifies, for the Spirit is the truth. 7 There are three that testify:[e] 8 the Spirit and the water and the blood, and these three agree. 9 If we receive human testimony, the testimony of God is greater; for this is the testimony of God that he has testified to his Son. 10 Those who believe in the Son of God have the testimony in their hearts. Those who do not believe in God[f] have made him a liar by not believing in the testimony that God has given concerning his Son. 11 And this is the testimony: God gave us eternal life, and this life is in his Son. 12 Whoever has the Son has life; whoever does not have the Son of God does not have life.

13 I write these things to you who believe in the name of the Son of God, so that you may know that you have eternal life.

14 And this is the boldness we have in him, that if we ask anything according to his will, he hears us. 15 And if we know that he hears us in whatever we ask, we know that we have obtained the requests made of him. 16 If you see your brother or sister[g] committing what is not a mortal sin, you will ask, and God[h] will give life to such a one—to those whose sin is not mortal. There is sin that is mortal; I do

[a] Other ancient authorities add *him*; others add *God*
[b] Gk *brothers*
[c] Gk *brother*
[d] Or *the Messiah*
[e] A few other authorities read (with variations) *7 There are three that testify in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Spirit, and these three are one. 8 And there are three that testify on earth:*
[f] Other ancient authorities read *in the Son*
[g] Gk *your brother*
[h] Gk *he*

reason to fear God's judgment (2.1–6,28; 3.18–20). **19:** 4.7,11. **20:** Love shown to others demonstrates true knowledge and love for God (2.3–11; 3.23–24). **21:** *Those who love God must love their brothers and sisters* is a Johannine formulation of the command to love God and neighbor (Mt 22.34–40, quoting Deut 6.5 and Lev 19.18).

5.1–13: Concluding appeal to keep the true faith. 1–3: Belief in Jesus as the messiah (*the Christ*) (4.2–3; Jn 1.12–13; 20.31) and mutual love (4.20–21; Jn 13.35) are the hallmarks of the true Johannine community. **2:** *We know that we love the children of God, when we love God* reverses 4.12. It serves as polemic against the secessionists, since schism implies hating God's children (3.11–16). **4–5:** See 2.12–14; 4.4. **6–8:** *One who came by water and blood* refers to the death of Jesus as atonement for sin (1.7; 2.2; 4.10; Jn 1.29). The witnesses, *water, blood,* and *Spirit*, appear in John's account of Jesus' death (Jn 19.34–35; for water as Spirit, see Jn 7.38–39). **9–12:** The true faith is not based on human testimony alone (1.1–4; Jn 1.7–8) but on God's as well (cf. Jn 5.31–38; 16.6–11). **13:** *I write . . . that you have eternal life* echoes the ending of Jn 20.31.

5.14–21: Epilogue. Sin and forgiveness in the community. 14–15: God's children can be certain that God will hear their prayers (3.21–22; Jn 14.14–16; 15.16; 16.23–24; Mt 18.19–20). **16–17:** Communal prayer can elicit God's forgiveness and restore sinners (2.1–2; Mt 18.15–20; Jas 5.15b,19–20). *To those whose sin is not mortal* distinguishes a category of sin that cannot be forgiven. Elsewhere such sin is denying that God's Spirit is working through Jesus (Mk 3.28–30) or apostasy (Heb 6.4–6). Here the expression probably refers to those who have separated

not say that you should pray about that. [17] All wrongdoing is sin, but there is sin that is not mortal.

[18] We know that those who are born of God do not sin, but the one who was born of God protects them, and the evil one does not touch them. [19] We know that we are God's children, and that the whole world lies under the power of the evil one. [20] And we know that the Son of God has come and has given us understanding so that we may know him who is true;[a] and we are in him who is true, in his Son Jesus Christ. He is the true God and eternal life.

[21] Little children, keep yourselves from idols.[b]

[a] Other ancient authorities read *know the true God*
[b] Other ancient authorities add *Amen*

themselves from the Johannine community. They no longer dwell with God or have the Spirit (2.19–25). **18:** See 3.8–10. **19:** See 2.12–15; 5.4–5. **20:** *Him who is true* probably refers to the knowledge of the true God as some manuscripts suggest (see textual note *a* and cf. Jn 1.18; 14.7,9–10). Knowledge of the *true God* (Father and Son) confers *eternal life* (Jn 17.3). **21:** In a general sense, *keep yourselves from idols* probably refers to the false gods of non-Christian neighbors (Jn 10.14). Traveling missionaries were to reject non-Christian hospitality (3 Jn 7). In this context, the phrase may refer to association with the secessionists and their teaching (2 Jn 7–9).

THE SECOND LETTER OF JOHN

NAME

Titled "the second (letter) of John" in ancient codices, this short letter belonged to a collection led by 1 John.

CANONICAL STATUS AND AUTHORSHIP

By the fourth century CE (Eusebius, *Hist. eccl.* ii.23.25) three Johannine "letters" along with four others said to be written by apostles were included in the canon as "catholic" or universal. Some second-century Christians identified the "elder" (v. 1) with the apostle John, the son of Zebedee, considered the author of the Gospel and 1 John (cf. Peter as "fellow elder" in 1 Pet 5.1). However, Papias distinguished between John, the disciple, and another, the "elder." Most contemporary scholars identify the elder as the Johannine teacher who composed 1 John.

DATE AND HISTORICAL CONTEXT

Since 2 John refers to dissident teaching like that opposed in 1 John, it must have been written during the crisis provoked by the schism in the Johannine churches (ca. 100 CE). Because the elder warns the recipients against receiving dissident teachers, some scholars date 2 John earlier than the definitive break in 1 John. Others hold that the schism that had occurred in the city from which the elder writes (Ephesus) had not yet occurred in outlying regions.

STRUCTURE AND CONTENTS

Second John follows the conventions of a private letter: opening greeting identifies sender, addressees (vv. 1–3); letter body, beginning with an expression of joy at how recipients are faring, and concluding with future plans (vv. 4–12); final greeting from sender and associates to recipients (v. 13).

INTERPRETATION AND GUIDE TO READING

The letter opens with a summary of the mutual love that was the hallmark of Johannine Christians (Jn 13.34–35). It serves the ancient rhetorical standard of enlisting the goodwill of an audience at the beginning of a speech. The business of the letter follows, a warning against false teachers and the demand that no one associate with them in any way (vv. 7–11).

The elder's harsh treatment of false teachers strikes modern readers as contradicting the earlier teaching on mutual love. If 2 John was written when the full impact of the schism described in 1 John was being felt, this requirement could be viewed differently. To the elder it appeared necessary to quarantine other churches against this disease. Some scholars think that a copy of 1 John was sent along with this letter.

Pheme Perkins

[1] The elder to the elect lady and her children, whom I love in the truth, and not only I but also all who know the truth, [2] because of the truth that abides in us and will be with us forever:

[3] Grace, mercy, and peace will be with us from God the Father and from[a] Jesus Christ, the Father's Son, in truth and love.

[4] I was overjoyed to find some of your children walking in the truth, just as we have been commanded by the Father. [5] But now, dear lady, I ask you, not as though I were writing you a new commandment, but one we have had from the beginning, let us love one another. [6] And this is love, that we walk according to his commandments; this is the commandment just as you have heard it from the beginning—you must walk in it.

[7] Many deceivers have gone out into the world, those who do not confess that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh; any such person is the deceiver and the antichrist! [8] Be on your guard, so that you do not lose what we[b] have worked for, but may receive a full reward. [9] Everyone who does not abide in the teaching of Christ, but goes beyond it, does not have God; whoever abides in the teaching has both the Father and the Son. [10] Do not receive into the house or welcome anyone who comes to you and does not bring this teaching; [11] for to welcome is to participate in the evil deeds of such a person.

[12] Although I have much to write to you, I would rather not use paper and ink; instead I hope to come to you and talk with you face to face, so that our joy may be complete.

[13] The children of your elect sister send you their greetings.[c]

[a] Other ancient authorities add *the Lord*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *you*
[c] Other ancient authorities add *Amen*

1–3: Letter opening. *Elect lady* refers to a local church. *Love in the truth* sets out the Johannine vision of the church as a community whose members are united by Jesus' command to love one another (vv. 4–6; 1 Jn 2.22–23; 3.23) and reject false teaching about the Son (vv. 7–9).

4–11: Letter body. 4–6: The *new commandment* to love one another was central to Johannine Christianity (Jn 13.34–35; 1 Jn 2.7–10). **7–9:** False teachers do not *abide in the teaching of Christ* because they reject the humanity of Jesus (v. 7; see 1 Jn 4.2) and have destroyed Christian fellowship (1 Jn 2.19). False teaching is a sign that the *antichrist* is at work in the world (1 Jn 2.18–23; 4.1–3). **10–11:** The severity of this demand, *do not receive into the house* (i.e., church) anyone connected with the secessionists, follows from the view that their activities are Satan's final effort against God's people.

12–13: Letter closing. Ancient letters frequently end with a notice of the sender's future travel plans (cf. Rom 15.22,33).

THE THIRD LETTER OF JOHN

NAME

The title given in ancient manuscripts identifies this private letter with 1–2 John, which circulated more widely.

CANONICAL STATUS AND AUTHORSHIP

Though included in canon lists of the fourth century CE, 3 John was not widely used, perhaps because it is addressed to an individual, not a church. Identification of the "elder" (v. 1) with the author of 2 John is supported by the nearly identical concluding verses of the two letters. In antiquity 1–3 John were attributed to the apostle John, the son of Zebedee, as was the Gospel. Modern scholars distinguish the author of 1–3 John from the evangelist.

DATE AND HISTORICAL CONTEXT

The social setting of Johannine churches presumed in 2 and 3 John is similar, although there is no hint of the secessionist controversy in the latter. The "elder" lives in a church (possibly at Ephesus) with ties to other house churches in the surrounding region. Christian missionaries depended upon the hospitality of house churches when they traveled (cf. Rom 16.1–2). Diotrephes, apparently the head of such a church, had refused to receive emissaries associated with the elder. This letter seeks such support from another Christian in the same region, Gaius.

STRUCTURE AND CONTENTS

Third John follows the model of the ancient letter: an opening greeting from sender to recipient followed by the health wish (vv. 1–4); letter body (vv. 3–12); conclusion with travel plans and additional greetings (vv. 13–15). Rhetorically the body opens with praise for the recipient's well-known hospitality to traveling Christians (vv. 5–8) before addressing the business at hand (vv. 9–12).

INTERPRETATION AND GUIDE TO READING

In ancient diplomacy, refusing hospitality to an envoy was an insult to the sender. Third John does not indicate what led Diotrephes to prohibit members of his house church from having anything to do with persons sent by the elder (vv. 9–10). Some interpreters have seen a dispute between the elder, a teacher in the Johannine school, and an emerging monarchic episcopacy. Others propose that the elder is on the receiving end of the policy he had proposed to exclude false teachers in 2 John 10–11. From the letter itself, one can only infer that Gaius has no personal relationship with Diotrephes and that when Diotrephes rejected envoys from the elder, he was refusing to participate in their mission.

Whatever the basis for Diotrephes' lack of hospitality, 3 John provides a glimpse into the early Christian mission ca. 100 CE. Personal networks of hospitality maintained by traveling envoys linked small house church communities together. Travelers preferred the hospitality of believers to that of outsiders (v. 7).

Pheme Perkins

[1] The elder to the beloved Gaius, whom I
love in truth.

[2] Beloved, I pray that all may go well with
you and that you may be in good health, just
as it is well with your soul. [3] I was overjoyed
when some of the friends[a] arrived and testi-
fied to your faithfulness to the truth, namely
how you walk in the truth. [4] I have no greater
joy than this, to hear that my children are
walking in the truth.

[5] Beloved, you do faithfully whatever you
do for the friends,[a] even though they are
strangers to you; [6] they have testified to your
love before the church. You will do well to
send them on in a manner worthy of God;
[7] for they began their journey for the sake of
Christ,[b] accepting no support from non-
believers.[c] [8] Therefore we ought to support
such people, so that we may become co-
workers with the truth.

[9] I have written something to the church;
but Diotrephes, who likes to put himself first,
does not acknowledge our authority. [10] So if I
come, I will call attention to what he is doing
in spreading false charges against us. And not
content with those charges, he refuses to wel-
come the friends,[a] and even prevents those
who want to do so and expels them from the
church.

[11] Beloved, do not imitate what is evil but
imitate what is good. Whoever does good is
from God; whoever does evil has not seen
God. [12] Everyone has testified favorably about
Demetrius, and so has the truth itself. We
also testify for him,[d] and you know that our
testimony is true.

[13] I have much to write to you, but I would
rather not write with pen and ink; [14] instead
I hope to see you soon, and we will talk to-
gether face to face.

[15] Peace to you. The friends send you their
greetings. Greet the friends there, each by
name.

[a] Gk *brothers*
[b] Gk *for the sake of the name*
[c] Gk *the Gentiles*
[d] Gk lacks *for him*

1–4: Letter opening and health wish. This secular opening (contrast 2 Jn 1–3) indicates that this is a private letter, not a communication read to an assembled church (contrast Philem 1–3). **4:** *My children* is the elder's designation for Christians in fellowship with his teaching (1 Jn 2.1).

5–12: Letter body. 5–8: Rhetorically the elder enlists the good will of Gaius, whom he does not know personally, by praising the reputation he has gained among traveling missionaries for hospitality. The axiom that such hospitality gains a share in the good work of evangelization was common in early Christianity (see Phil 4.10–20; Mt 10.40–42). **9–11:** The elder asks Gaius to supply his associates with the hospitality that Diotrephes has recently refused. **9:** *Does not acknowledge our authority* is diplomatic language for not receiving the envoy sent by an authority. It does not mean that the elder once had direct authority over Diotrephes or that house church. **12:** A note of recommendation for Demetrius, who may have carried the letter (cf. Rom 16.1–2).

13–15: Letter closing. See 2 Jn 12–13.

THE LETTER OF JUDE

NAME, AUTHORSHIP, AND DATE

This letter is named for its author Jude, identified in v. 1 as the brother of James, who was Jesus' brother and leader of the Jerusalem church (Gal 1.19). The author himself is not identified either as Jesus' brother (see Mt 13.55; Mk 6.3) or as Judas Thomas (Jesus' twin in the Syrian *Acts of Thomas*), as might be expected if the attribution to Jude were a later claim to Jude's authority. This may indicate that the letter was written by Jude. On the other hand, attribution of authorship to a major figure is well attested in the Bible and in other ancient literature. The date of composition is uncertain. It must be earlier than 2 Peter, which uses Jude (see p. 2132). The reference to "the predictions of the apostles" (v. 17) suggests a period when the apostles were a well-known group from the past. If so, a date late in the first century CE is likely, although some scholars have dated the letter as early as the 50s.

CANONICAL STATUS

The place of this letter among the Catholic Epistles (those addressed to all Christians rather than to specific churches or individuals) was contested in the early church, and it was excluded from Syriac translations until the fourth century CE, when it became widely accepted. Its canonicity was again challenged during the Reformation.

LITERARY FORM AND BACKGROUND

Jude has the typical form of a letter (see p. 1973), except that it lacks the customary final greeting. It uses a variety of biblical and nonbiblical sources; prominent among the latter is *1 Enoch*, a collection of apocalyptic writings attributed to Enoch (Gen 5.21–24) but written from the third century BCE to the first century CE. The author of the letter considered these writings to be authoritative, but it would be anachronistic to suppose that he considered them canonical.

Nothing can be known about the specific occasion for which the letter was written, or about the identity of the author's opponents since they are described in standard language taken from polemical rhetoric.

CONTENTS AND INTERPRETATION

The purpose of the letter is to encourage those to whom it is addressed "to contend for the faith" by maintaining moral purity against those who "pervert the grace of our God into licentiousness" (vv. 3–4). The rhetorical strategy is to warn people of God's judgment on the lustful, blasphemous, arrogant, greedy, rebellious opponents and to contrast it with the mercy of God for those who remain loyal to the faith as delivered by the apostles.

The letter is organized in concentric circles. It begins with a standard letter greeting and ends with an elaborate and beautiful prayer (vv. 24–25). Within these two formal elements are two exhortations: one to "contend for the faith" (v. 3), and one to keep oneself "in the love of God" (v. 21) and have "mercy" on others who are erring (vv. 22–23). Between these two exhortations, a series of biblical and nonbiblical stories and prophecies are presented as evidence of the error and eventual doom of the opponents. This material incorporates an interpretation of selected judgment scenes from Genesis and Exodus (vv. 5–8) with a note on Michael the archangel (vv. 9–10), an interpretation of selected errors from Genesis and Numbers (vv. 11–13), an application of the prophecy of *1 Enoch* 1.9 to the opponents (vv. 14–16), and an application of apostolic prophecy (vv. 17–19). In each case the transition from citation to interpretation is marked by the word "these" as subject of the sentence: "these dreamers" (v. 8); "these people" (v. 10); "these" (vv. 12,16).

Patrick A. Tiller

1 Jude,[a] a servant[b] of Jesus Christ and
brother of James,

To those who are called, who are beloved[c]
in[d] God the Father and kept safe for[d] Jesus
Christ:

2 May mercy, peace, and love be yours in
abundance.

3 Beloved, while eagerly preparing to write
to you about the salvation we share, I find
it necessary to write and appeal to you to
contend for the faith that was once for all
entrusted to the saints. 4 For certain intruders
have stolen in among you, people who long
ago were designated for this condemnation
as ungodly, who pervert the grace of our God
into licentiousness and deny our only Master
and Lord, Jesus Christ.[e]

5 Now I desire to remind you, though you
are fully informed, that the Lord, who once
for all saved[f] a people out of the land of
Egypt, afterward destroyed those who did not
believe. 6 And the angels who did not keep
their own position, but left their proper dwelling, he has kept in eternal chains in deepest
darkness for the judgment of the great day.
7 Likewise, Sodom and Gomorrah and the surrounding cities, which, in the same manner
as they, indulged in sexual immorality and
pursued unnatural lust,[g] serve as an example
by undergoing a punishment of eternal fire.

8 Yet in the same way these dreamers also
defile the flesh, reject authority, and slander
the glorious ones.[h] 9 But when the archangel Michael contended with the devil and
disputed about the body of Moses, he did
not dare to bring a condemnation of slander[i]
against him, but said, "The Lord rebuke you!"
10 But these people slander whatever they do
not understand, and they are destroyed by
those things that, like irrational animals, they
know by instinct. 11 Woe to them! For they go
the way of Cain, and abandon themselves to
Balaam's error for the sake of gain, and perish
in Korah's rebellion. 12 These are blemishes[j]
on your love-feasts, while they feast with you
without fear, feeding themselves.[k] They are
waterless clouds carried along by the winds;
autumn trees without fruit, twice dead, uprooted; 13 wild waves of the sea, casting up the
foam of their own shame; wandering stars,

[a] Gk *Judas*
[b] Gk *slave*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *sanctified*
[d] Or *by*
[e] Or *the only Master and our Lord Jesus Christ*
[f] Other ancient authorities read *though you were once for all fully informed, that Jesus* (or *Joshua*) *who saved*
[g] Gk *went after other flesh*
[h] Or *angels*; Gk *glories*
[i] Or *condemnation for blasphemy*
[j] Or *reefs*
[k] Or *without fear. They are shepherds who care only for themselves*

1–2: Salutation. See Rom 1.1–7n.

3–4: Occasion. The writer writes in response to what he considers to be a dangerous level of moral failure on the part of some leaders in the church. *Saints,* "holy ones," consecrated to God. The immoral behavior of the *intruders* is presumably the basis of the charge that they *deny* Jesus.

5–8: Three examples of judgment. God judged the Israelites who went out of Egypt with Moses (v. 5; see Num 14.20–23) but did not believe, angels (v. 6; see Gen 6.1–4; *1 Enoch* 6–16) who left *their own position*, and Sodom and Gomorrah (Gen 19) for their *sexual immorality.* **8:** *These dreamers* will suffer a similar fate for their similar misdeeds. The intruders apparently claim to experience revelatory dreams. The *authority* that they despise may be either God's authority or angelic authorities. The *glorious ones* are probably angelic dignitaries.

9–10: A further example of the impropriety of slander. According to nonbiblical Jewish tradition, when the archangel Michael was about to bury the body of Moses, Satan accused Moses of being a murderer, not worthy of an honorable burial. Michael sent Satan off with the words, "May the Lord rebuke you" (Zech 3.2).

11–13: Three examples of error. *Cain* the murderer: Gen 4.8; Heb 11.4; 1 Jn 3.12. *Balaam* who prophesied for gain: Num 22; Rev 2.14 (see 2 Pet 2.15n.). *Korah* who rebelled: Num 16. Similarly, the opponents lead their followers astray for gain and rebel against the (apostolic) leadership of the church. **12:** That they participate in their *love-feasts* (see 1 Cor 11.20–21n.) shows that they are members of the group. The author calls them *intruders* (v. 4) because their membership is illegitimate. Metaphors of *blemishes, shepherds* (see note *k* and Ezek 34.2,10), *clouds* (see Prov 25.14), *trees, waves,* and *stars* illustrate their uselessness, destructiveness, and selfishness. **13:** In the

for whom the deepest darkness has been reserved forever.

14 It was also about these that Enoch, in the seventh generation from Adam, prophesied, saying, "See, the Lord is coming[a] with ten thousands of his holy ones, 15 to execute judgment on all, and to convict everyone of all the deeds of ungodliness that they have committed in such an ungodly way, and of all the harsh things that ungodly sinners have spoken against him." 16 These are grumblers and malcontents; they indulge their own lusts; they are bombastic in speech, flattering people to their own advantage.

17 But you, beloved, must remember the predictions of the apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ; 18 for they said to you, "In the last time there will be scoffers, indulging their own ungodly lusts." 19 It is these worldly people, devoid of the Spirit, who are causing divisions. 20 But you, beloved, build yourselves up on your most holy faith; pray in the Holy Spirit; 21 keep yourselves in the love of God; look forward to the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ that leads to[b] eternal life. 22 And have mercy on some who are wavering; 23 save others by snatching them out of the fire; and have mercy on still others with fear, hating even the tunic defiled by their bodies.[c]

24 Now to him who is able to keep you from falling, and to make you stand without blemish in the presence of his glory with rejoicing, 25 to the only God our Savior, through Jesus Christ our Lord, be glory, majesty, power, and authority, before all time and now and forever. Amen.

[a] Gk *came*
[b] Gk *Christ to*
[c] Gk *by the flesh*. The Greek text of verses 22-23 is uncertain at several points

books of Enoch, *wandering stars* (planets) were understood to be disobedient angels. For Jude the phrase serves as a metaphor for the activity of the opponents.

14–16: A prophecy of judgment. *1 Enoch* 1.9.

17–19: An apostolic prophecy. See 2 Thess 2.3; 1 Tim 4.1; 2 Tim 3.1; 4.3 for similar prophetic announcements.

20–23: Exhortations. 20–21: The promised encouragement "to contend for the faith" (v. 3) consists of traditional Christian ethical teaching. Jude incorporates a Trinitarian formula. **22–23:** The difficulties in interpreting these verses have given rise to several scribal simplifications that reduce the three clauses to two: to *have mercy on some* by rescuing them from *fire* (by getting them to repent; cf. Zech 3.24) and to *have mercy on* others *with fear* (of being corrupted oneself).

24–25: Doxology. Cf. Rom 16.25; Eph 3.20–21; Phil 4.20; 1 Tim 1.17; 2 Tim 4.18; Heb 13.21; 1 Pet 5.11; 2 Pet 3.18; Rev 5.13.

This page intentionally left blank

THE REVELATION TO JOHN

NAME

The Revelation to John is also known as the Apocalypse or the Apocalypse of John, from the Greek word meaning "disclosure" or "unveiling." While the book presents itself as a work of prophecy (1.3; 22.10), it has lent its name to a literary genre, the "apocalypse," that characterizes a range of Jewish and Christian writings that first appeared about 250 BCE.

CANONICAL STATUS

With its vivid visions of the consummation of God's divine plan of judgment and salvation, the book of Revelation brings the canon of the New Testament to a close. While the book of Revelation is not the only early Christian apocalypse, it is the only one that was included in the canon of the New Testament. The question of whether it should be considered canonical was a matter of some controversy in the early centuries of Christianity. Eusebius of Caesarea (ca. 263–339 CE), for example, writes that some reject Revelation but that others accept it as genuine (*Hist. eccl.* 3.25.4–5). The third-century writer Dionysius of Alexandria maintained that the book of Revelation could be considered orthodox only if it is read allegorically. Dionysius also recognized that the book of Revelation could not have been written by the same John to whom the Gospel according to John was attributed.

AUTHORSHIP

Unlike other Jewish and Christian apocalypses, which are pseudonymous, with their authors writing in the name of some revered figure from antiquity, the author of the book of Revelation identifies himself by name as John (1.1,4,9; 22.8). While some ancient authorities (e.g., Justin, *Dialogue with Trypho* 81.4) suggested that this is the apostle John, the son of Zebedee (see Mk 3.17), internal evidence from the book itself is inconclusive. The author's familiarity with the Jerusalem Temple and its rituals, the depth of his knowledge of the Hebrew Bible (of the 405 verses in Revelation, some 275 include allusions to passages in the Hebrew Bible, or to its Greek translation, the Septuagint), as well as his adoption of a literary genre that was familiar in Palestinian Judaism, combine to suggest that the John of Revelation may have been a Palestinian Jewish Christian who fled to the Diaspora as a consequence of the First Jewish Revolt against the Romans (66–73 CE). His self-identification to the "seven churches that are in Asia" (1.4) as "your brother who share with you in Jesus the persecution and the kingdom and the patient endurance" (1.9) suggests that he was well known to his audience, probably because he exercised a prophetic ministry among them (see 22.9). He mentions the twelve apostles as figures from the past (21.14), and does not refer to himself as one of them. The traditional identification of the John of the book of Revelation with the apostle of the same name is thus highly questionable, as is the connection of the John of the book of Revelation with the Gospel According to John or with the Letters of John.

DATE OF COMPOSITION AND HISTORICAL CONTEXT

There have been two main positions regarding the date of the book of Revelation. The first is that the book was composed between 64 and 70 CE, prior to the destruction of the Temple in 70 CE and prompted by the persecution of Christians toward the end of the reign of the Roman emperor Nero (54–68 CE). The second view is that while the book of Revelation draws on traditional material and on sources written prior to the fall of Jerusalem in 70 CE (e.g., chs. 11 and 12), it probably reached its final form toward the end of the reign of the Roman emperor Domitian (81–96 CE). The book is addressed to "the seven churches that are in Asia" (1.4), Christian communities in the Roman proconsular province of Asia, located in the western portion of present-day Turkey (see map on p. 2157). The book demonstrates its author's familiarity with the specific situation of each of the seven churches, beginning with Ephesus, the city that was the administrative capital of the province. The seven cities were complex and diverse in economic, social, political, and religious terms. Whether or not Christians faced organized and widespread persecutions sanctioned by Roman imperial authorities at the time the book was written, Christians in the province of Asia were living under the threat of serious oppression, facing the danger of being "slaughtered for the word of God and the testimony they had given" (6.9). One such victim is Antipas, identified by name in the message to the church at Pergamum (2.13). John himself establishes his solidarity with his audience, sharing with them "the per-

secution and the kingdom and the patient endurance" (1.9), finding himself on the island of Patmos "because of the word of God and the testimony of Jesus" (1.9). According to many commentators, including a number of early Christian writers (e.g., Eusebius, *Hist. eccl.* 3.18), John had been exiled to Patmos by Roman imperial authorities as a penalty for his testimony to Jesus. However, others suggest that John went to Patmos to spread the word of God.

A variety of voices and viewpoints competed for the attention of the late first-century Christians to whom the book of Revelation was originally addressed. John exhorts them to stand firm in their convictions, to resist "with patient endurance" (2.2,19; 3.10) and at any cost the overwhelming pressures to accommodation and compromise with the dominant culture. The destruction of Jerusalem by the Romans in 70 CE gave John ample cause to identify Rome as Babylon, recalling the Babylonian destruction of Jerusalem in 586 BCE. The breadth and depth of Rome's political and economic power found religious expression in the widespread worship of the emperor in the provinces of Asia, with temples built in honor of the emperor and of Rome personified as the goddess Roma. The book of Revelation takes sides in a battle over sovereignty, where the Roman emperor competes with God and Christ in a contest for the allegiance of the faithful. Warning that those who worship the emperor, symbolized by "the beast" (13.1–10), will suffer ultimate defeat, the book urges its audience to "hold fast to the faith of Jesus" (14.12) and thereby to share in the paradoxical victory of his death and resurrection.

LITERARY HISTORY

Interpreters of the book of Revelation through the centuries have puzzled over how to explain the many parallel passages and apparent repetitions throughout the book. The number seven, for example figures prominently throughout the book as a way of ordering the sequence of the book's visionary narratives: seven seals, seven bowls, seven trumpets. Some authors understand this as a matter of recapitulation, that is, the repeated description of the same events from several different vantage points. Thus, the series of seven trumpets (8.16–9.21; 11.14–19) and seven bowls (16:1–21), for example, furnish two parallel perspectives on God's cataclysmic judgment against the world and its inhabitants. Others have sought to unravel the complex literary structure of the Apocalypse by appealing to source theories, arguing that the book is a composite that reflects significant editorial work by its final author, who drew on earlier material, including some written sources.

STRUCTURE AND CONTENTS

The structure of the book of Revelation is widely debated among scholars, yet there is general agreement that it involves a series of parallel, interconnected, and yet ever progressing sections. It begins with a prologue (1.1–3), an epistolary salutation (1.4–8), and an inaugural vision (1.9–20), which are followed by messages to each of the seven churches (2.1–3.22). There follows (4.1–5.14) a vision of God enthroned and of Jesus depicted as a Lamb, who receives the seven-sealed scroll from the hand of God. A series of sevenfold visions commences at 6.1, beginning with the opening of each of the seven seals (6.1–8.5), followed by the sounding of each of seven trumpets (8.6–11.19). The sounding of the seventh trumpet is followed by the vision of the woman, the child, and the dragon (12.1–17), the vision of the two beasts (13.1–18), a threefold vision of the victory, and vindication of the faithful (14.1–20). These are followed by a final sevenfold series, the outpouring of the bowls of divine wrath (16.1–21). 17.1–18.24 presents the vision of the fall of Babylon, followed by the great doxology of 19.1–10 that also looks forward to the eschatological victory (19.11–21), the defeat of Satan (20.1–10), the last judgment (20:11–15), and the vision of the new Jerusalem (21.1–22.5). The book concludes with an epilogue (22.6–21).

INTERPRETATION

Over the centuries, the book of Revelation has been interpreted from a wide variety of approaches, ranging from literal readings of the book as predictive prophecy to readings that recognize in its utopian language the promise of hope in the midst of contemporary situations of suffering and oppression. There have been three main tendencies in the interpretation of Revelation: historical, prophetic-predictive, and symbolic. According to those who interpret the book historically, Revelation refers to events that took place during the first century CE. The prophetic-predictive tendency in the interpretation of the book reads Revelation for clues about the future, especially with regard to God's impending judgment on the world. Those who focus on symbolic interpretations of the book understand the Apocalypse neither as a window to the past nor as a visionary presentation of what is yet to come in the future, but as a work that speaks to readers of every time and place to offer them the vision of a universe symbolically transformed.

GUIDE TO READING

The book of Revelation is a work of extremes, ranging from soaring heights of hymnody inspired by Hebrew psalms and canticles to the gruesome language of plagues, warfare, and bloodshed. It uses the dualistic language characteristic of the apocalyptic genre to paint vivid portraits of the opposing sides in the eschatological conflict that will culminate in the definitive victory of God and the final defeat of all evil. With its symbolic numbers and colors, animals, and angelic and demonic beings, replete with echoes and images drawn from the literature of the ancient Near East, the Hebrew Bible, Greece, and Rome, the book of Revelation is so notoriously complex that the church father Jerome (345–420 CE) was led to remark that it contains as many mysteries as it contains words. Origen (185–254 CE) exclaimed, "Who can read the revelations granted to John without being amazed at the hidden depth of the ineffable mysteries, a depth apparent even to the person who does not understand what the text says?" (*On First Principles* 4.2.4). Many centuries later, the English author D. H. Lawrence (1885–1930) wrote, "When we read Revelation, we feel at once there are meanings behind meanings."

The symbolic visions of the book are by no means self-explanatory, and even John reports the need for the intervention of an angelic mediator to explain the meaning of mystery disclosed to him (17.7). This characteristic, common in other works of the same literary genre, serves to emphasize that there are transcendent levels of meaning that must be discerned. The significance of events on earth is to be sought above and beyond what is immediately apparent, and it is ultimately to God that believers must turn to receive the meaning and guidance that strengthen their resolve to persevere in the face of adversity.

Jean-Pierre Ruiz

1 The revelation of Jesus Christ, which
God gave him to show his servants[a]
what must soon take place; he made[b] it
known by sending his angel to his servant[c]
John, [2] who testified to the word of God and
to the testimony of Jesus Christ, even to all
that he saw.

[3] Blessed is the one who reads aloud the
words of the prophecy, and blessed are
those who hear and who keep what is written in it; for the time is near.

[4] John to the seven churches that are in
Asia:

Grace to you and peace from him who is
and who was and who is to come, and from
the seven spirits who are before his throne,
[5] and from Jesus Christ, the faithful witness,
the firstborn of the dead, and the ruler of the
kings of the earth.

[a] Gk *slaves*
[b] Gk *and he made*
[c] Gk *slave*

1.1–3: The prologue. This revelation came from God through Jesus Christ and was communicated to John by an angel (referred to again in 22.16). **1:** *Revelation* (Gk "apokalypsis"; see Dan 2.28–30,45), a literary form in which a vision from God, often under the guidance of an angel or other heavenly messenger, communicates in symbolic language God's hidden plan for history. Apocalypses also include visions of the heavenly world. **3:** *Blessed is . . .* , the first of seven beatitudes in the book of Revelation (cf. 14.13; 16.15; 19.9; 20.6; 22.7,14) is pronounced on the reader of this prophetic book and on those who hear it read and who heed its message. In antiquity, texts were commonly read aloud even among those who were literate. *The time is near* (repeated in 22.10) motivates obedience by announcing the imminence of the end-time.

1.4–8: Epistolary salutation to seven representative churches in the Roman province of Asia (in western Asia Minor). *Seven*, a number associated with heavenly realities, suggests the divine authority of the message delivered by John. **4:** *Grace . . . and peace* (see 2 Thess 1.2), combining the conventional Greek and Hebrew salutations, though John offers not his own greetings but those of God; *is . . . was . . . to come*, lit., "the being . . . the was . . . the coming." The seven spirits are either a symbolic reference to the manifold energies of the spirit of God (Isa 11.2), or a reference to the seven principal angels of God (Tob 12.15; *1 Enoch* 20.1–8). Seven, the number of completion (of a ritual in Lev 4.6; of divine punishment in Lev 26.27–28) or wholeness, is the most important symbolic number in the book of Revelation. **5:** *Faithful witness*, Jesus testifies to the truth (Jn 18.37) and is the

To him who loves us and freed[a] us from
our sins by his blood, [6] and made[b] us to be a
kingdom, priests serving[c] his God and Father,
to him be glory and dominion forever and
ever. Amen.

[7] Look! He is coming with the clouds;
every eye will see him,
even those who pierced him;
and on his account all the tribes of the
earth will wail.
So it is to be. Amen.

[8] "I am the Alpha and the Omega," says the
Lord God, who is and who was and who is to
come, the Almighty.

[9] I, John, your brother who share with you
in Jesus the persecution and the kingdom
and the patient endurance, was on the island
called Patmos because of the word of God
and the testimony of Jesus.[d] [10] I was in the
spirit[e] on the Lord's day, and I heard behind
me a loud voice like a trumpet [11] saying,
"Write in a book what you see and send it to
the seven churches, to Ephesus, to Smyrna, to
Pergamum, to Thyatira, to Sardis, to Philadel-
phia, and to Laodicea."

[12] Then I turned to see whose voice it was
that spoke to me, and on turning I saw seven
golden lampstands, [13] and in the midst of the
lampstands I saw one like the Son of Man,
clothed with a long robe and with a golden
sash across his chest. [14] His head and his hair
were white as white wool, white as snow; his
eyes were like a flame of fire, [15] his feet were
like burnished bronze, refined as in a furnace,
and his voice was like the sound of many wa-
ters. [16] In his right hand he held seven stars,
and from his mouth came a sharp, two-edged
sword, and his face was like the sun shining
with full force.

[17] When I saw him, I fell at his feet as
though dead. But he placed his right hand
on me, saying, "Do not be afraid; I am the
first and the last, [18] and the living one. I was
dead, and see, I am alive forever and ever;
and I have the keys of Death and of Hades.
[19] Now write what you have seen, what is, and
what is to take place after this. [20] As for the
mystery of the seven stars that you saw in my
right hand, and the seven golden lampstands:

[a] Other ancient authorities read *washed*
[b] Gk *and he made*
[c] Gk *priests to*
[d] Or *testimony to Jesus*
[e] Or *in the Spirit*

model for Christians who died as "witnesses" (2.13; 11.7; 17.6). *Firstborn . . . ruler of the kings*, Ps 119.27. He *loves* continually; he *freed* us once for all by his death (Rom 6.10). **6:** *Kingdom, priests*, the vocation promised to Israel (Ex 19.6; Isa 61.6) is extended to the followers of Jesus (1 Pet 2.9). *Glory and dominion*, Dan 7.14. **7:** Dan 7.13; Zech 12.10–12. *So it is to be. Amen*, a formal affirmation of this prophetic oracle announcing the coming of Christ. **8:** *Alpha and Omega*, the first and last letters of the Greek alphabet (like "A" and "Z" in English); hence, the beginning and end of all things (see v. 17; 22.13; Isa 44.6; 48.12).

1.9–20: Inaugural vision and commission on Patmos, a small island in the Aegean Sea where John found himself (see Introduction), ca. 55 mi (90 km) southwest of Ephesus (see map on p. 2157). **10:** *In the spirit,* in a state of prophetic ecstasy, a state of altered consciousness (also 4.2; Ezek 2.2). *The Lord's day*, the weekly day of Christian worship, Sunday. **11:** *The seven churches*, see 2.1–3.22. **12–16:** In the midst of the churches (see v. 20) stands the exalted Christ, whose royalty, eternity, wisdom, and immutability are suggested by means of symbols; the effect is that of terrifying majesty (compare v. 17 with Isa 6.5). *Seven golden lampstands*, reminiscent of those that stood in the wilderness tabernacle and in the Jerusalem Temple (cf. Zech 4.1–14). *Son of Man* (cf. 14.14; Mk 2.10), a title Jesus used of himself, had two meanings: (1) a typical human being in accordance with a common extended meaning of "son of" (see Mt 5.45); (2) a reference to the heavenly figure of Dan 7.13–14 who was to embody God's rule over the nations. **13–15:** *Golden sash*, Dan 10.5; *white . . . snow*, Dan 7.10; *eyes . . . fire*, Dan 10.6; *feet . . . bronze*, Dan 10.6; *sound of many waters*, a frequent accompaniment of divine appearance; see Ps 29.3; 93.4; Ezek 1.24; 43.2; cf. Dan 10.6. The figure is a combination of attributes of the heavenly messenger from Dan 10 and the Ancient One from Dan 7. *From his mouth came a sharp, two-edged sword* (cf. 19.15,21), the word of God (Isa 49.2; cf. Heb 4.12). **18:** *Hades*, used here with its synonym *Death*, is the abode of the dead; Jesus has the keys to release those confined within its gates (Mt 16.18; Jn 5.25–29). **20:** *Mystery*, hidden meanings that human beings cannot grasp without the assistance of divine revelation (Rev 1.20; 10.7; 17.5,7; Dan 2.29,45). Angel guardians are assigned to the seven churches, as also to nations (Dan 10.20–21; 12.1) and individuals (Dan 11.1).



Chs 2–3: The seven churches.

the seven stars are the angels of the seven churches, and the seven lampstands are the seven churches.

2 "To the angel of the church in Ephesus write: These are the words of him who holds the seven stars in his right hand, who walks among the seven golden lampstands:

[2] "I know your works, your toil and your patient endurance. I know that you cannot tolerate evildoers; you have tested those who claim to be apostles but are not, and have found them to be false. [3] I also know that you are enduring patiently and bearing up for the sake of my name, and that you have not grown weary. [4] But I have this against you, that you have abandoned the love you had at first. [5] Remember then from what you have fallen; repent, and do the works you did at first. If not, I will come to you and remove your lampstand from its place, unless you repent. [6] Yet this is to your credit: you hate the works of the Nicolaitans, which I also hate. [7] Let anyone who has an ear listen to what the Spirit is saying to the churches. To everyone who conquers, I will give permission to eat

2.1–3.22: The messages to the seven churches, each containing an address, a descriptive phrase referring to the risen Christ, a commendation or condemnation of the church addressed, an admonition, and a concluding promise and exhortation to the faithful. For the location of the seven churches, see map above.

2.1–7: The first message is appropriately sent to *Ephesus*, the seaport city that was the administrative and commercial hub of the Roman province of Asia; Paul had labored here (Acts 19.8–10; 1 Cor 15.32; 16.8; cf. Eph 1.1). **1:** Jesus *walks among* the churches (1.20). **2:** *Evildoers*, compare the warning to the Ephesian elders in Acts 20.29–30; cf. 2 Cor 11.13. **6:** *To hate evil* is the counterpart of the love of what God approves (Isa 61.8; Zech 8.17; 1QS 1.4). The *Nicolaitans* (probably not connected with the Nicolaus of Acts 6.5, contrary to Irenaeus, *Adv. Haer*. 1.26.3) are also mentioned in the message to the church in Pergamum (v. 15). It is not known what their *works* were, or what they may have taught, though it is possible that they permitted some accommodation to the local religious practices that the book of Revelation opposes. **7:** *What the Spirit is saying*, speaking through Jesus to John, and through John to the churches (cf. Rev 2.11,17,29; 3.6,13,22). *Conquers*, a military term, suggesting

from the tree of life that is in the paradise of God.

8 "And to the angel of the church in Smyrna write: These are the words of the first and the last, who was dead and came to life:
9 "I know your affliction and your poverty, even though you are rich. I know the slander on the part of those who say that they are Jews and are not, but are a synagogue of Satan. 10 Do not fear what you are about to suffer. Beware, the devil is about to throw some of you into prison so that you may be tested, and for ten days you will have affliction. Be faithful until death, and I will give you the crown of life. 11 Let anyone who has an ear listen to what the Spirit is saying to the churches. Whoever conquers will not be harmed by the second death.

12 "And to the angel of the church in Pergamum write: These are the words of him who has the sharp two-edged sword:
13 "I know where you are living, where Satan's throne is. Yet you are holding fast to my name, and you did not deny your faith in me[a] even in the days of Antipas my witness, my faithful one, who was killed among you, where Satan lives. 14 But I have a few things against you: you have some there who hold to the teaching of Balaam, who taught Balak to put a stumbling block before the people of Israel, so that they would eat food sacrificed to idols and practice fornication. 15 So you also have some who hold to the teaching of the Nicolaitans. 16 Repent then. If not, I will come to you soon and make war against them with the sword of my mouth. 17 Let anyone who has an ear listen to what the Spirit is saying to the churches. To everyone who conquers I will give some of the hidden manna, and I will give a white stone, and on the white stone is written a new name that no one knows except the one who receives it.

18 "And to the angel of the church in Thyatira write: These are the words of the Son of God, who has eyes like a flame of fire, and whose feet are like burnished bronze:
19 "I know your works—your love, faith, service, and patient endurance. I know that your last works are greater than the first. 20 But I have this against you: you tolerate that woman Jezebel, who calls herself a prophet

[a] Or *deny my faith*

continuous vigilance. *Tree of life*, Gen 2.9; 3.24; cf. Rev 22.2,14.

2.8–11: The second message, sent to Smyrna, commends the church for its perseverance amid affliction and poverty. Smyrna (modern Izmir) was a port city 30 mi (50 km) north of Ephesus. **8:** Isa 44.6; 48.12. **9:** *Rich*, in spiritual things. *Those who say that they are Jews and are not*, this accusation reflects struggles over identity, with some groups rejecting the claims to Jewish identity made by other groups. The word translated "Jew" (Gk "Ioudaios") could refer both to someone from Judea, and to an adherent of Judaism whether from birth or by conversion. *Synagogue of Satan* (cf. 3.9) likewise reflects significant tensions (cf. Jn 8.44; 1QH 2.22 refers to apostate Jews as "a congregation of Belial"). *Synagogue* can refer to a congregation or to a meeting place for a congregation. **10:** *Ten days*, a limited period of trial (Dan 1.12). *Crown of life,* the reward of eternal life (Jas 1.12; 1 Pet 5.4). **11:** *The second death*, the final condemnation of the unfaithful (20.14).

2.12–17: The third message is sent to *Pergamum*, a noted center of Roman emperor worship ca. 60 mi (80 km) north of Smyrna. **12:** *Sharp two-edged sword*, 1.16n. **13:** *Where Satan's throne is*, in contrast to the throne of God in ch 4, this may be a reference either to the temple of the Roman emperor or to the monumental altar of Zeus, both at Pergamum. *Antipas* is otherwise unknown; he is the only martyr named in the book. **14–15:** *The teaching of Balaam*, here the author vilifies an opponent by comparing him to the diviner Balaam of Num 22.5–24.25. After Balaam's oracles, the Israelites engaged in both sexual relations with outsiders and the worship of foreign gods (see Num 25). To *eat food sacrificed to idols* meant either to participate in ritual banquets or to purchase and then consume meat that had been sacrificed in the temples of Pergamum (1 Cor 8; 10). *Practice fornication* here is meant metaphorically, with sexual misconduct symbolizing religious infidelity (Wis 14.12). **15:** *Nicolaitans*, see v. 6n. **17:** *Hidden manna*, eschatological nourishment from heaven (Ex 16.33–34; Ps 78.24). *White*, the color symbolizing victory and joy. *A new name*, Isa 62.2.

2.18–29: The fourth message is sent to Thyatira, a commercial center renowned for its many trade guilds, ca. 70 mi (110 km) north-northeast of Ephesus. Lydia, one of Paul's converts, was a dealer in purple cloth from

and is teaching and beguiling my servants[a] to practice fornication and to eat food sacrificed to idols. [21] I gave her time to repent, but she refuses to repent of her fornication. [22] Beware, I am throwing her on a bed, and those who commit adultery with her I am throwing into great distress, unless they repent of her doings; [23] and I will strike her children dead. And all the churches will know that I am the one who searches minds and hearts, and I will give to each of you as your works deserve. [24] But to the rest of you in Thyatira, who do not hold this teaching, who have not learned what some call 'the deep things of Satan,' to you I say, I do not lay on you any other burden; [25] only hold fast to what you have until I come. [26] To everyone who conquers and continues to do my works to the end,

I will give authority over the nations;
[27] to rule[b] them with an iron rod,
as when clay pots are shattered—

[28] even as I also received authority from my Father. To the one who conquers I will also give the morning star. [29] Let anyone who has an ear listen to what the Spirit is saying to the churches.

3 "And to the angel of the church in Sardis write: These are the words of him who has the seven spirits of God and the seven stars:

"I know your works; you have a name of being alive, but you are dead. [2] Wake up, and strengthen what remains and is on the point of death, for I have not found your works perfect in the sight of my God. [3] Remember then what you received and heard; obey it, and repent. If you do not wake up, I will come like a thief, and you will not know at what hour I will come to you. [4] Yet you have still a few persons in Sardis who have not soiled their clothes; they will walk with me, dressed in white, for they are worthy. [5] If you conquer, you will be clothed like them in white robes, and I will not blot your name out of the book of life; I will confess your name before my Father and before his angels. [6] Let anyone who has an ear listen to what the Spirit is saying to the churches.

[7] "And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia write:

These are the words of the holy one, the true one,
who has the key of David,
who opens and no one will shut,
who shuts and no one opens:

[8] "I know your works. Look, I have set before you an open door, which no one is able to shut. I know that you have but little power, and yet you have kept my word and have not denied my name. [9] I will make those of the synagogue of Satan who say that they

[a] Gk *slaves*
[b] Or *to shepherd*

Thyatira (Acts 16.14–15). **18:** Dan 10.6. **20:** *That woman Jezebel, who calls herself a prophet*, John's characterization of a female opponent at Thyatira, here identified contemptuously with the Phoenician wife of King Ahab, the queen who worshiped Baal and who opposed the prophet Elijah (1 Kings 16.31; 19.1–2). **22:** *I am throwing her on a bed*, punishment with serious sickness is threatened for the Thyatiran Jezebel. *Those who commit adultery with her* are those who are complicit in her worship of other gods. In the Hebrew Bible marital infidelity is a frequent metaphor for worship of gods other than the LORD (Deut 31.16; Judg 2.17; 1 Chr 5.25; Jer 3.6–11); see also vv. 14–15n. **23:** *Her children*, those who follow her teachings. **24:** *Deep things of Satan*, a sarcastic reference to her teachings (contrast 1 Cor 2.10). **26–27:** The conquerors will share in Jesus' rule (Ps 2.8–9). **28:** *The morning star* is Jesus himself (22.16; cf. Num 24.17).

3.1–6: The fifth message is sent to Sardis, a prosperous city ca. 55 mi (85 km) northeast of Ephesus that had been the capital of the kingdom of Lydia. **1:** *Seven spirits*, see 1.4n. *Seven stars*, 1.20. *You have a name*, its commitment in faith was only nominal. **3:** *Received and heard*, the gospel. Like a thief, just when unexpected (16.15; Mt 24.42–44; 1 Thess 5.2). **4–5:** *Soiled . . . white*, not impurity/purity, but surrender/conquest (see 2.17n.). *White robes* are a frequent image; see 3.18; 4.4; 6.11; 7.9; 19.14; cf. Zech 3.3–5. **5:** *Book of life*, the register of God containing the names of the redeemed (13.8; 17.8; 20.12,15; Ex 32.32; Ps 69.28; Dan 12.1; Mal 3.16; Lk 10.20).

3.7–13: The sixth message is sent to *Philadelphia*, a small town 80 mi (50 km) southeast of Sardis. **7:** *Key of David*, a symbol of authority (Isa 22.22). **8:** *An open door*, of opportunity (1 Cor 16.9; 2 Cor 2.12). **9:** *Synagogue of Satan*, see 2.9n. On tension between Christians and Jews in Philadelphia see Ignatius, *Philad.* 6.1. *Bow down*

are Jews and are not, but are lying—I will make them come and bow down before your feet, and they will learn that I have loved you. 10 Because you have kept my word of patient endurance, I will keep you from the hour of trial that is coming on the whole world to test the inhabitants of the earth. 11 I am coming soon; hold fast to what you have, so that no one may seize your crown. 12 If you conquer, I will make you a pillar in the temple of my God; you will never go out of it. I will write on you the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, the new Jerusalem that comes down from my God out of heaven, and my own new name. 13 Let anyone who has an ear listen to what the Spirit is saying to the churches.

14 "And to the angel of the church in Laodicea write: The words of the Amen, the faithful and true witness, the origin[a] of God's creation:

15 "I know your works; you are neither cold nor hot. I wish that you were either cold or hot. 16 So, because you are lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I am about to spit you out of my mouth. 17 For you say, 'I am rich, I have prospered, and I need nothing.' You do not realize that you are wretched, pitiable, poor, blind, and naked. 18 Therefore I counsel you to buy from me gold refined by fire so that you may be rich; and white robes to clothe you and to keep the shame of your nakedness from being seen; and salve to anoint your eyes so that you may see. 19 I reprove and discipline those whom I love. Be earnest, therefore, and repent. 20 Listen! I am standing at the door, knocking; if you hear my voice and open the door, I will come in to you and eat with you, and you with me. 21 To the one who conquers I will give a place with me on my throne, just as I myself conquered and sat down with my Father on his throne. 22 Let anyone who has an ear listen to what the Spirit is saying to the churches."

4 After this I looked, and there in heaven a door stood open! And the first voice, which I had heard speaking to me like a trumpet, said, "Come up here, and I will show you what must take place after this." 2 At once I was in the spirit,[b] and there in heaven stood a throne, with one seated on the throne! 3 And the one seated there looks like jasper and carnelian, and around the throne is a rainbow that looks like an emerald. 4 Around the throne are twenty-four thrones, and seated on the thrones are twenty-four elders, dressed in white robes, with golden crowns on their heads. 5 Coming from the throne are flashes of lightning, and rumblings and peals

[a] Or *beginning*
[b] Or *in the Spirit*

before your feet, Isa 43.4; 60.14. **10:** Despite its weakness (v. 8), the Philadelphian church will be safeguarded during the eschatological tribulation. **11:** *I am coming soon*, 22.7,12,20. **12:** *A pillar*, steadfast and permanent (Gal 2.9). *New Jerusalem,* 21.2. *The name of my God*, marking the one inscribed as God's possession and as specially dedicated to God. *The name of the city of my God*, signifying citizenship in the new Jerusalem; see 21.2,10.

3.14–22: The seventh message is sent to Laodicea, a wealthy city near Colossae (Col 2.1; 4.13–16), 95 mi (155 km) east of Ephesus. **14:** *The Amen* is Jesus Christ (2 Cor 1.20). *The faithful and true witness*, 1.5. The list of titles may derive from a Greek translation of Isa 65.16. The origin of God's creation, Jesus Christ is the principle and source of all creation (Jn 1.3; Col 1.15,18). **15–16:** Their lukewarm commitment is nauseating: *spit you out of my mouth*. **17:** Complacent and self-satisfied, they are spiritually poverty-stricken (Hos 12.8). **18:** *Buy from me gold refined by fire*, an idiom for removing sin from one's life (Job 23.10; Prov 27.21). A commercial transaction is used here as a metaphor for accepting salvation. *Eyes*, Laodicea was noted for its manufacture of a medication for ophthalmic disorders. **19:** God's chastening has beneficent motives (Prov 3.12; Heb 12.5–11). **20:** An invitation to participate in the messianic banquet in the coming age (cf. Mt 26.29). **21:** *A place with me*, a promise of reigning with Jesus in glory (22.5; Lk 22.30).

4.1–5.14: Vision of God enthroned and of the Lamb. 4.1: *The first voice,* the voice of the exalted Jesus mentioned in 1.10. *Come up,* John is invited to ascend to heaven, to behold visions of God (Ezek 3.12; 8.3; 11.1). *What must take place*, Dan 2.29. **2:** *A throne,* Ezek 1.26–28; Dan 7.9. **3:** The glory of the divine presence is described in terms of precious gemstones; cf. Ex 24.10. **4:** *Twenty-four elders,* attendants around God's heavenly throne, probably symbolizing the twelve tribes of Israel and the twelve apostles. **5:** *Flashes of lightning,* expressive of the

of thunder, and in front of the throne burn seven flaming torches, which are the seven spirits of God; 6 and in front of the throne there is something like a sea of glass, like crystal.

Around the throne, and on each side of the throne, are four living creatures, full of eyes in front and behind: 7 the first living creature like a lion, the second living creature like an ox, the third living creature with a face like a human face, and the fourth living creature like a flying eagle. 8 And the four living creatures, each of them with six wings, are full of eyes all around and inside. Day and night without ceasing they sing,

"Holy, holy, holy,
the Lord God the Almighty,
who was and is and is to come."

9 And whenever the living creatures give glory and honor and thanks to the one who is seated on the throne, who lives forever and ever, 10 the twenty-four elders fall before the one who is seated on the throne and worship the one who lives forever and ever; they cast their crowns before the throne, singing,

11 "You are worthy, our Lord and God,
to receive glory and honor and power,
for you created all things,
and by your will they existed and were created."

5 Then I saw in the right hand of the one seated on the throne a scroll written on the inside and on the back, sealed[a] with seven seals; 2 and I saw a mighty angel proclaiming with a loud voice, "Who is worthy to open the scroll and break its seals?" 3 And no one in heaven or on earth or under the earth was able to open the scroll or to look into it. 4 And I began to weep bitterly because no one was found worthy to open the scroll or to look into it. 5 Then one of the elders said to me, "Do not weep. See, the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the Root of David, has conquered, so that he can open the scroll and its seven seals."

6 Then I saw between the throne and the four living creatures and among the elders a Lamb standing as if it had been slaughtered, having seven horns and seven eyes, which are the seven spirits of God sent out into all the earth. 7 He went and took the scroll from the right hand of the one who was seated on the throne. 8 When he had taken the scroll, the four living creatures and the twenty-four elders fell before the Lamb, each holding a harp and golden bowls full of incense, which are the prayers of the saints. 9 They sing a new song:

"You are worthy to take the scroll
and to open its seals,
for you were slaughtered and by your blood you ransomed for God
saints from[b] every tribe and language
and people and nation;
10 you have made them to be a kingdom
and priests serving[c] our God,
and they will reign on earth."

[a] Or *written on the inside, and sealed on the back*
[b] Gk *ransomed for God from*
[c] Gk *priests to*

majesty of God (Ex 19.16; Ezek 1.13; Rev 11.19). *Seven flaming torches,* Zech 4.2–3. *Seven spirits,* 1.4. **6:** *A sea of glass,* Ex 24.10; Ezek 1.22. *Four living creatures,* heavenly beings representing humankind and all animals (Ezek 1.5,10). *Full of eyes,* symbolizing unceasing watchfulness (Ezek 1.18). **8:** *Six wings . . . "Holy, holy, holy,"* Isa 6.2–3. **10:** *Cast their crowns,* an act of homage and submission, acknowledging that all power comes from God. **11:** *Our Lord and God,* titles that were also attributed to the Roman emperor (Suetonius, *Domitian* 13). **5.1:** *A scroll,* containing the divine plan of judgment and salvation (Ezek 2.9–10). *Sealed,* therefore both unalterable and unknown to others (Dan 12.4). **3–5:** No created being is worthy to carry out God's plan; only the messiah can do so. *Lion of . . . Judah,* Gen 49.9–10. *Root of David,* Isa 11.1,10. *Has conquered,* the paradoxical victory of the cross and resurrection (Jn 16.33). **6–9:** The *Lamb . . . slaughtered,* the crucified messiah, a reference to Jesus' death, by which God's purposes contained in the scroll are accomplished (Isa 53.7; Jn 1.29,36; 1 Pet 1.19). *Seven horns,* fullness of power (Deut 33.17; Ps 89.17; Dan 7.7–8.24; *1 Enoch* 80.6–12,37). *Seven eyes,* Zech 3.9; 4.10; 2 Chr 16.9. *Seven spirits,* 1.4. **8:** *Harp and golden bowls,* objects used in worship. *The prayers of the saints* on earth are joined with the worship rendered to the *Lamb* by the heavenly creatures. **9–10:** A *new song* is sung because Jesus by his death has inaugurated a new era (14.3). New hymns of praise mark and celebrate special occasions (Ps 33.3; 40.3; 96.1; 98.1; 144.9; 149.1; Isa 42.10). The Lamb is adored in terms similar to the adoration rendered to God (4.11). *A kingdom and priests,* see

[11] Then I looked, and I heard the voice
of many angels surrounding the throne
and the living creatures and the elders;
they numbered myriads of myriads and
thousands of thousands, [12] singing with full
voice,
"Worthy is the Lamb that was slaughtered
to receive power and wealth and wisdom
and might
and honor and glory and blessing!"
[13] Then I heard every creature in heaven and
on earth and under the earth and in the sea,
and all that is in them, singing,
"To the one seated on the throne and to
the Lamb
be blessing and honor and glory and
might
forever and ever!"
[14] And the four living creatures said, "Amen!"
And the elders fell down and worshiped.

6 Then I saw the Lamb open one of the
seven seals, and I heard one of the four
living creatures call out, as with a voice of
thunder, "Come!"[a] [2] I looked, and there was a
white horse! Its rider had a bow; a crown was
given to him, and he came out conquering
and to conquer.

[3] When he opened the second seal, I
heard the second living creature call out,
"Come!"[a] [4] And out came[b] another horse,
bright red; its rider was permitted to take
peace from the earth, so that people would
slaughter one another; and he was given a
great sword.

[5] When he opened the third seal, I heard
the third living creature call out, "Come!"[a] I
looked, and there was a black horse! Its rider
held a pair of scales in his hand, [6] and I heard
what seemed to be a voice in the midst of the
four living creatures saying, "A quart of wheat
for a day's pay,[c] and three quarts of barley for
a day's pay,[c] but do not damage the olive oil
and the wine!"

[7] When he opened the fourth seal, I heard
the voice of the fourth living creature call out,
"Come!"[a] [8] I looked and there was a pale green
horse! Its rider's name was Death, and Hades
followed with him; they were given authority
over a fourth of the earth, to kill with sword,
famine, and pestilence, and by the wild ani-
mals of the earth.

[9] When he opened the fifth seal, I saw
under the altar the souls of those who had
been slaughtered for the word of God and for
the testimony they had given; [10] they cried
out with a loud voice, "Sovereign Lord, holy
and true, how long will it be before you judge
and avenge our blood on the inhabitants of
the earth?" [11] They were each given a white

[a] Or *"Go!"*
[b] Or *went*
[c] Gk *a denarius*

1.6n. **11–12:** The sevenfold praise of *myriads* (tens of thousands; Dan 7.10) in heaven honoring the sacrificial *Lamb.* **13:** Universal praise to God and to the *Lamb* as equal in majesty.

6.1–17: The opening of the first six seals of the scroll, and the enactment of what is written in it.

6.1–8: Four seals of destruction. 1: *Come!* Addressed successively to each of the four riders (Zech 6.1–8) who accomplish God's purposes. **2:** The *white horse* symbolizes a conquering power that none can resist; in 19.11–13 the reference is to Jesus. The *crown* given to the rider as he is sent forth suggests a guarantee of victory. **4:** The *red horse* symbolizes war and bloodshed. *Permitted to take peace from the earth,* effectively annulling the "pax Romana," the self-congratulatory designation of Roman imperial rule as "the Roman peace." **5:** The *black horse* symbolizes famine, which follows upon war. **6:** *A quart of wheat . . . three quarts of barley,* sold at exorbitantly inflated prices because of war and famine (cf. 2 Kings 6.24–25). The prohibition against harming the *olive oil* and the *wine* (neither olive trees nor grape vines are newly planted each year) suggests that the famine is limited. **8:** The *pale green horse* symbolizes pestilence and death. *Hades,* the Greek god of the underworld; cf. 1.18. A *fourth* part indicates wide but not total devastation. *Pestilence,* Ex 9.3; 2 Sam 24.13; Ezek 5.12. *Wild animals,* Ezek 6.17; 29.5; 33.27.

6.9–8.1: Three seals of judgment.

6.9–11: The fifth seal describes the appeal for divine justice and retribution by the martyrs (v. 10), and the heavenly response to their plea (v. 11). **9:** The *souls* of the martyrs are said to be *under the altar* because they had been martyred for the sake of Jesus (2.10; Mt 24.9; Phil 2.17; 2 Tim 4.6). **10:** *How long?* is a cry for divine vindication uttered by those who have suffered unbearable oppression (e.g., Ps 6.3; 13.2; 90.13; Zech 1.12–16). *Avenge*

robe and told to rest a little longer, until the number would be complete both of their fellow servants[a] and of their brothers and sisters,[b] who were soon to be killed as they themselves had been killed.

12 When he opened the sixth seal, I looked,
and there came a great earthquake; the sun
became black as sackcloth, the full moon
became like blood, 13 and the stars of the
sky fell to the earth as the fig tree drops its
winter fruit when shaken by a gale. 14 The
sky vanished like a scroll rolling itself up,
and every mountain and island was removed
from its place. 15 Then the kings of the earth
and the magnates and the generals and
the rich and the powerful, and everyone,
slave and free, hid in the caves and among
the rocks of the mountains, 16 calling to the
mountains and rocks, "Fall on us and hide us
from the face of the one seated on the throne
and from the wrath of the Lamb; 17 for the
great day of their wrath has come, and who is
able to stand?"

7 After this I saw four angels standing at
the four corners of the earth, holding
back the four winds of the earth so that no
wind could blow on earth or sea or against
any tree. 2 I saw another angel ascending from
the rising of the sun, having the seal of the
living God, and he called with a loud voice to
the four angels who had been given power to
damage earth and sea, 3 saying, "Do not dam-
age the earth or the sea or the trees, until we
have marked the servants[a] of our God with a
seal on their foreheads."

4 And I heard the number of those who
were sealed, one hundred forty-four thou-
sand, sealed out of every tribe of the people
of Israel:

5 From the tribe of Judah twelve thousand
sealed,
from the tribe of Reuben twelve thousand,
from the tribe of Gad twelve thousand,
6 from the tribe of Asher twelve thousand,
from the tribe of Naphtali twelve thousand,
from the tribe of Manasseh twelve thousand,
7 from the tribe of Simeon twelve thousand,
from the tribe of Levi twelve thousand,
from the tribe of Issachar twelve thousand,
8 from the tribe of Zebulun twelve thousand,
from the tribe of Joseph twelve thousand,
from the tribe of Benjamin twelve thou-
sand sealed.

9 After this I looked, and there was a great
multitude that no one could count, from
every nation, from all tribes and peoples and
languages, standing before the throne and
before the Lamb, robed in white, with palm
branches in their hands. 10 They cried out in a
loud voice, saying,

"Salvation belongs to our God who is
seated on the throne, and to the
Lamb!"

11 And all the angels stood around the throne
and around the elders and the four living
creatures, and they fell on their faces before
the throne and worshiped God, 12 singing,

[a] Gk *slaves*
[b] Gk *brothers*

our blood, God is the one who takes up the cause of those killed for the sake of justice (Ps 78.1–10 [LXX]). **11:** *White robe,* see 2.17n.; 3.4–5n.; 7.9n.

6.12–17: The opening of the sixth seal unleashes *a great earthquake,* and its catastrophic effects on the cosmos and on human society are described. **12:** *Black as sackcloth . . .* , Joel 2.30–31. **13–14:** Isa 34.4; Mk 13.25. **15–17:** All classes of society seek to escape from the wrath of God (Isa 2.10,19). **16:** *Fall on us,* Hos 10.8; Lk 23.30. **17:** *The great day of their wrath,* the time of judgment (Joel 2.11).

7.1–17: An interlude between the sixth and seventh seals: two visions that provide the promise of divine protection for the faithful during the time of tribulation (vv. 1–8) and assurance of ultimate salvation (vv. 9–17). **1:** *The four winds* are destructive forces to be unleashed by God (Jer 49.36). They correspond to the four horsemen in 6.1–8 (see Zech 6.5). **3:** A *seal* (Ezek 9.4–6) marks those under God's protection. Seals were used to signify ownership or authorship. **4:** The symbolic number 144,000, which is the square of 12 multiplied by 1,000, has been interpreted variously as a reference to: the faithful remnant of Israel; the church; the martyrs; the remnant of Christians who survive the eschatological turmoil; all the redeemed (14.1,3). *Every tribe,* but the tribes of Dan and Ephraim are not mentioned. **9:** *A great multitude* (see Dan 7.14), in contrast with the 144,000 in v. 4 (5.9).

"Amen! Blessing and glory and wisdom
and thanksgiving and honor
and power and might
be to our God forever and ever! Amen."

13 Then one of the elders addressed me,
saying, "Who are these, robed in white, and
where have they come from?" 14 I said to him,
"Sir, you are the one that knows." Then he
said to me, "These are they who have come
out of the great ordeal; they have washed
their robes and made them white in the blood
of the Lamb.

15 For this reason they are before the
throne of God,
and worship him day and night within
his temple,
and the one who is seated on the throne
will shelter them.
16 They will hunger no more, and thirst no
more;
the sun will not strike them,
nor any scorching heat;
17 for the Lamb at the center of the throne
will be their shepherd,
and he will guide them to springs of the
water of life,
and God will wipe away every tear from
their eyes."

8 When the Lamb opened the seventh seal,
there was silence in heaven for about half
an hour. 2 And I saw the seven angels who
stand before God, and seven trumpets were
given to them.

3 Another angel with a golden censer
came and stood at the altar; he was given a
great quantity of incense to offer with the
prayers of all the saints on the golden altar
that is before the throne. 4 And the smoke of
the incense, with the prayers of the saints,
rose before God from the hand of the angel.
5 Then the angel took the censer and filled
it with fire from the altar and threw it on
the earth; and there were peals of thunder,
rumblings, flashes of lightning, and an
earthquake.

6 Now the seven angels who had the seven
trumpets made ready to blow them.

7 The first angel blew his trumpet, and
there came hail and fire, mixed with blood,
and they were hurled to the earth; and a third
of the earth was burned up, and a third of the
trees were burned up, and all green grass was
burned up.

8 The second angel blew his trumpet, and
something like a great mountain, burning
with fire, was thrown into the sea. 9 A third
of the sea became blood, a third of the living
creatures in the sea died, and a third of the
ships were destroyed.

10 The third angel blew his trumpet, and
a great star fell from heaven, blazing like a
torch, and it fell on a third of the rivers and
on the springs of water. 11 The name of the
star is Wormwood. A third of the waters
became wormwood, and many died from the
water, because it was made bitter.

12 The fourth angel blew his trumpet, and
a third of the sun was struck, and a third of
the moon, and a third of the stars, so that a
third of their light was darkened; a third of

White robes and *palm branches* symbolize righteousness and victory (see 3.4–5n.; Dan 11.35). **12:** A sevenfold ascription of praise to God. **14:** *The blood of the Lamb* cleanses from sin (Jn 1.29; 1 Jn 1.7); in the symbolism of the book, *blood* (violent death) can make *robes . . . white* (lead to victory); cf. Isa 1.18. **15:** *Before the throne of God,* in God's presence because of their faithfulness. Their ceaseless *worship* takes place in God's temple in heaven. *Shelter them,* lit., "spread his tabernacle over them." **16:** Isa 49.10; Ps 121.6. **17:** A paradox: The *Lamb* is a *shepherd* (Ps 23.1–2; Ezek 34.23–24; Jn 10.11). *Springs of . . . life,* 21.6; 22.1,17; Jn 4.10; 7.37. *Wipe away every tear,* 21.4; Isa 25.8.

8.1–5: The seventh seal is opened. The opening of the last of the seven seals (5.1; 6.1) leads to an awesome and reverent *silence,* as response to divine judgment (Hab 3.3–6; Zech 2.13–3.2). A return to "primeval silence" prior to the judgment appears in 2 Esd 7.30. **2:** The seven angels *stand before God* ready to do God's will (Tob 12.15). **3:** *Incense . . . prayers,* Ps 141.2. **5:** Ezek 10.2. The *earthquake* announces the divine judgment about to be executed.

8.6–9.21: The first six trumpets unleash new convulsions of nature, patterned after the plagues inflicted on Egypt in the book of Exodus (Ex 7.14–10.23).

8.6–13: Four trumpets of destruction. 7: *Hail and fire,* Ex 9.23–25; both destroyers of crops. *A third,* the devastation wrought by the trumpet plagues is not total. **9:** Ex 7.20. **11:** *Wormwood,* a bitter herb, poisons the waters into which it falls (Jer 9.15; 23.15). It is associated with the constellation Scorpio. **12:** Ex 10.21–22; cf. Joel 3.15;

the day was kept from shining, and likewise the night.

13 Then I looked, and I heard an eagle crying with a loud voice as it flew in midheaven, "Woe, woe, woe to the inhabitants of the earth, at the blasts of the other trumpets that the three angels are about to blow!"

9 And the fifth angel blew his trumpet, and I saw a star that had fallen from heaven to earth, and he was given the key to the shaft of the bottomless pit; 2 he opened the shaft of the bottomless pit, and from the shaft rose smoke like the smoke of a great furnace, and the sun and the air were darkened with the smoke from the shaft. 3 Then from the smoke came locusts on the earth, and they were given authority like the authority of scorpions of the earth. 4 They were told not to damage the grass of the earth or any green growth or any tree, but only those people who do not have the seal of God on their foreheads. 5 They were allowed to torture them for five months, but not to kill them, and their torture was like the torture of a scorpion when it stings someone. 6 And in those days people will seek death but will not find it; they will long to die, but death will flee from them.

7 In appearance the locusts were like horses equipped for battle. On their heads were what looked like crowns of gold; their faces were like human faces, 8 their hair like women's hair, and their teeth like lions' teeth; 9 they had scales like iron breastplates, and the noise of their wings was like the noise of many chariots with horses rushing into battle. 10 They have tails like scorpions, with stingers, and in their tails is their power to harm people for five months. 11 They have as king over them the angel of the bottomless pit; his name in Hebrew is Abaddon,[a] and in Greek he is called Apollyon.[b]

12 The first woe has passed. There are still two woes to come.

13 Then the sixth angel blew his trumpet, and I heard a voice from the four[c] horns of the golden altar before God, 14 saying to the sixth angel who had the trumpet, "Release the four angels who are bound at the great river Euphrates." 15 So the four angels were released, who had been held ready for the hour, the day, the month, and the year, to kill a third of humankind. 16 The number of the troops of cavalry was two hundred million; I heard their number. 17 And this was how I saw the horses in my vision: the riders wore breastplates the color of fire and of sapphire[d] and of sulfur; the heads of the horses were like lions' heads, and fire and smoke

[a] That is, *Destruction*
[b] That is, *Destroyer*
[c] Other ancient authorities lack *four*
[d] Gk *hyacinth*

Am 8.9. **13:** *An eagle* announces impending judgment. The threefold *woe* refers to the plagues unleashed at the sounding of the next three trumpets.

9.1–11.19: Three trumpets of woe.

9.1–12: The plague of monstrous locusts, which combine the terrors of evil spirits and of invading cavalry (perhaps a reference to the Parthians, an Iranian dynasty that ruled from Mesopotamia to India, at war with the Romans from the first century BCE to the second century CE). **1:** *A star . . . fallen from heaven,* a heavenly being, possibly an angel, identified by name in v. 11 (cf. Isa 14.12; Lk 10.18). The *bottomless pit* is the underworld, the abyss from which the beast arises (11.7; 17.8). **3:** *Locusts,* Ex 10.12–15; cf. Joel 1.4. **4:** God's servants are not to be harmed (7.3). **5:** *Five months*, while this might be a reference to the life cycle of locusts, which are hatched in spring and live until the end of summer, the more likely significance of this time period is symbolic, indicating the limited time span of this plague. **6:** *Will seek death,* in utter despair because of the torments (cf. Job 3.21). **7–10:** These are monstrous locusts, described in anthropomorphic terms (as in Joel 1 and 2), combining human features with the features of other creatures into a terrifying composite. *Teeth like lions'*, Joel 1.6; *iron breastplates*, of a soldier or war horse (Job 39.19–20; *Tg. Nah.* 3.17, compares armor of Assyrian soldiers to locusts).

11: The name *Abaddon,* which means "Destruction," is a name for Sheol, the abode of the dead (see Job 26.6; Prov 15.11); here, as in Job 28,22, it is personified.

9.13–21: The plague of monstrous cavalry. 14: The *Euphrates* marked the eastern border of the Roman Empire, where invasion by its Parthian enemies threatened. **16–19:** These fire-breathing, lion-headed, serpent-tailed monsters are composite creatures, like the fire-breathing Chimera of Greek and Roman mythology. Also

and sulfur came out of their mouths. 18 By these three plagues a third of humankind was killed, by the fire and smoke and sulfur coming out of their mouths. 19 For the power of the horses is in their mouths and in their tails; their tails are like serpents, having heads; and with them they inflict harm.

20 The rest of humankind, who were not killed by these plagues, did not repent of the works of their hands or give up worshiping demons and idols of gold and silver and bronze and stone and wood, which cannot see or hear or walk. 21 And they did not repent of their murders or their sorceries or their fornication or their thefts.

10 And I saw another mighty angel coming down from heaven, wrapped in a cloud, with a rainbow over his head; his face was like the sun, and his legs like pillars of fire. 2 He held a little scroll open in his hand. Setting his right foot on the sea and his left foot on the land, 3 he gave a great shout, like a lion roaring. And when he shouted, the seven thunders sounded. 4 And when the seven thunders had sounded, I was about to write, but I heard a voice from heaven saying, "Seal up what the seven thunders have said, and do not write it down." 5 Then the angel whom I saw standing on the sea and the land

raised his right hand to heaven

6 and swore by him who lives forever and ever,

who created heaven and what is in it, the earth and what is in it, and the sea and what is in it: "There will be no more delay, 7 but in the days when the seventh angel is to blow his trumpet, the mystery of God will be fulfilled, as he announced to his servants[a] the prophets."

8 Then the voice that I had heard from heaven spoke to me again, saying, "Go, take the scroll that is open in the hand of the angel who is standing on the sea and on the land." 9 So I went to the angel and told him to give me the little scroll; and he said to me, "Take it, and eat; it will be bitter to your stomach, but sweet as honey in your mouth." 10 So I took the little scroll from the hand of the angel and ate it; it was sweet as honey in my mouth, but when I had eaten it, my stomach was made bitter.

11 Then they said to me, "You must prophesy again about many peoples and nations and languages and kings."

11 Then I was given a measuring rod like a staff, and I was told, "Come and measure the temple of God and the altar and those who worship there, 2 but do not measure the court outside the temple; leave that out, for it is given over to the nations, and they will trample over the holy city for forty-two months. 3 And I will grant my two witnesses authority to prophesy for one thousand two hundred sixty days, wearing sackcloth."

[a] Gk *slaves*

see the description of conquering soldiers in Jer 46.2–23. **20–21:** The trumpet plagues fail to provoke the repentance that is their purpose. Compare the hardness of Pharaoh's heart despite the plagues (Ex 8.15,19). **20:** *Idols,* Dan 5.23. **21:** *Murders . . . thefts,* sins associated with the idolatrous worship of other gods, Wis 12.3–6.

10.1–11.13: An interlude between the sixth and seventh trumpets; two visions (10.1–11 and 11.1–13) present a renewal of John's prophetic commission (10.1–11) and describe what becomes of the two prophetic witnesses in the holy city (11.1–13).

10.1–11: The commission renewed. 1: *Another mighty angel,* in addition to the mighty angel in 5.2. **2:** The *little scroll* is distinct from the seven-sealed scroll in the right hand of God in 5.1. This scroll is in the angel's left hand, since in 10.5 he raises his right hand to heaven to swear an oath (Dan 12.7). *Sea* and *land* indicate the scope of the angel's authority. **4:** John is prohibited from disclosing what the *seven thunders have said,* but he "must prophesy again" (v. 11) after eating the little scroll. **6:** There will be *no more delay* in the accomplishment of God's will—the sounding of the seventh trumpet is imminent. **7:** *The mystery of God,* Rom 16.25–26; Eph 1.9; 3.3–9; Col 1.26–27. *His servants the prophets,* Am 3.7. **8–10:** Ezek 2.9–3.3. **10:** *Sweet,* because it contains God's words; *bitter* because it involves God's terrible judgments (Ezek 2.10). **11:** *You must,* an inescapable obligation, in accord with the divine will, *prophesy again*; the second part of the book (chs 12–22) contains these prophecies. *Peoples and nations and languages and kings* (Dan 3.4,7 [LXX]; 7:14; Rev 5.9; 7.9) suggests the broad range of John's prophetic activity.

11.1–13: The measuring of the temple and the two witnesses. 1: The symbolic act of the measurement of the sanctuary *and those who worship there* emphasizes the protection and preservation of the faithful who are within

4 These are the two olive trees and the two
lampstands that stand before the Lord of the
earth. 5 And if anyone wants to harm them,
fire pours from their mouth and consumes
their foes; anyone who wants to harm them
must be killed in this manner. 6 They have
authority to shut the sky, so that no rain may
fall during the days of their prophesying, and
they have authority over the waters to turn
them into blood, and to strike the earth with
every kind of plague, as often as they desire.
7 When they have finished their testimony,
the beast that comes up from the bottomless
pit will make war on them and conquer them
and kill them, 8 and their dead bodies will lie
in the street of the great city that is prophetically[a] called Sodom and Egypt, where also
their Lord was crucified. 9 For three and a half
days members of the peoples and tribes and
languages and nations will gaze at their dead
bodies and refuse to let them be placed in a
tomb; 10 and the inhabitants of the earth will
gloat over them and celebrate and exchange
presents, because these two prophets had
been a torment to the inhabitants of the
earth.
11 But after the three and a half days, the
breath[b] of life from God entered them, and
they stood on their feet, and those who saw
them were terrified. 12 Then they[c] heard
a loud voice from heaven saying to them,
"Come up here!" And they went up to heaven
in a cloud while their enemies watched them.
13 At that moment there was a great earthquake, and a tenth of the city fell; seven thousand people were killed in the earthquake,
and the rest were terrified and gave glory to
the God of heaven.
14 The second woe has passed. The third
woe is coming very soon.
15 Then the seventh angel blew his trumpet, and there were loud voices in heaven,
saying,
"The kingdom of the world has become
the kingdom of our Lord
and of his Messiah,[d]
and he will reign forever and ever."
16 Then the twenty-four elders who sit on
their thrones before God fell on their faces
and worshiped God, 17 singing,
"We give you thanks, Lord God Almighty,
who are and who were,
for you have taken your great power
and begun to reign.
18 The nations raged,
but your wrath has come,
and the time for judging the dead,
for rewarding your servants,[e] the prophets
and saints and all who fear your name,
both small and great,
and for destroying those who destroy the
earth."

[a] Or *allegorically*; Gk *spiritually*
[b] Or *the spirit*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *I*
[d] Gk *Christ*
[e] Gk *slaves*

(as in Zech 2.1–5; cf. Ezek 40.3–42.20). **2:** *The court outside,* the court of the Gentiles. *The holy city,* Jerusalem (Neh 11.1; Isa 52.1; Mt 4.5; 27.53). *Forty-two months* = 1,260 days (v. 3) = 3 1/2 years, a number that symbolizes the period of eschatological tribulation (Dan 7.25; 9.27; 12.7,11–12). As half of seven, the number of completeness, it also symbolizes radical incompleteness. **3:** Although the *two witnesses* are unnamed here, they may be prophetic figures who were expected to return in the end–time, possibly Enoch (Gen 5.24) and Elijah (2 Kings 2.1–11; Mal 4.5), or Moses (Deut 18.15,18) and Elijah. They are clothed in *sackcloth,* a sign that their prophetic message was a call to repentance. **4:** *Two olive trees,* supplying oil for the lamps in the temple (Zech 4.3–14). **6:** *Shut the sky,* cause a drought, as did Elijah (1 Kings 17.1). *Authority over the waters . . .* , as did Moses and Aaron (Ex 7.17–21). **7:** *The beast,* 13.1; 17.8. *The bottomless pit,* see 9.1n. *Will make war on them,* Dan 7.21. **8:** *The great city* is identified here *prophetically,* i.e., allegorically or spiritually rather than literally by its proper name. While the majority of scholars identify this city as Jerusalem, others suggest that the city is Rome, as is Babylon in 17.1–6. The name *Sodom,* applied to Jerusalem in Isa 1.10; Jer 23.14; Ezek 16.46–56, alludes to that city's legendary wickedness (Gen 18.16–19.29). *Egypt* is associated with idolatry and is the land from which God delivered the enslaved people of Israel. *Where also their Lord was crucified,* Jerusalem. **10:** The *prophets had been a torment,* preaching an unpopular message of repentance. **11–12:** The witnesses are resuscitated (cf. Ezek 37.5,10) and taken to heaven (2 Kings 2.11). **12:** *Come up here,* 4.1. **13:** *Gave glory to the God of heaven,* a positive outcome of the *great earthquake.*

11.14–19: The seventh trumpet announces (v. 15) the consummation of God's reign (10.7). **16:** *Elders,* 4.4n.

19 Then God's temple in heaven was
opened, and the ark of his covenant was seen
within his temple; and there were flashes of
lightning, rumblings, peals of thunder, an
earthquake, and heavy hail.

12 A great portent appeared in heaven:
a woman clothed with the sun, with
the moon under her feet, and on her head a
crown of twelve stars. 2 She was pregnant and
was crying out in birth pangs, in the agony of
giving birth. 3 Then another portent appeared
in heaven: a great red dragon, with seven
heads and ten horns, and seven diadems
on his heads. 4 His tail swept down a third
of the stars of heaven and threw them to
the earth. Then the dragon stood before the
woman who was about to bear a child, so that
he might devour her child as soon as it was
born. 5 And she gave birth to a son, a male
child, who is to rule[a] all the nations with a
rod of iron. But her child was snatched away
and taken to God and to his throne; 6 and the
woman fled into the wilderness, where she
has a place prepared by God, so that there
she can be nourished for one thousand two
hundred sixty days.

7 And war broke out in heaven; Michael
and his angels fought against the dragon. The
dragon and his angels fought back, 8 but they
were defeated, and there was no longer any
place for them in heaven. 9 The great dragon
was thrown down, that ancient serpent, who
is called the Devil and Satan, the deceiver of
the whole world—he was thrown down to
the earth, and his angels were thrown down
with him.

10 Then I heard a loud voice in heaven,
proclaiming,

[a] Or *to shepherd*

17–18: A song of triumph. **19:** Divine self-revelation concludes the vision of the seven trumpets and introduces the vision of ch 12. *The ark of [the] covenant* was constructed according to divine instruction at Mount Sinai (Ex 25.10–16) and eventually installed in the innermost room of the Temple by Solomon (1 Kings 8.1–12). It was presumably destroyed when the Babylonians captured Jerusalem in 586 BCE (but see 2 Macc 2.4–8).

12.1–17: The vision of the woman, the child, and the dragon is rich in symbolism drawn from mythological traditions found in ancient Babylonia, Egypt, Greece, and Rome, as well as in the Hebrew Bible. One well-known version of the story tells of the goddess Leto, pregnant with Apollo, who is menaced by the dragon Python, who pursues her because he knows that Apollo is destined to kill him (Hyginus, *Fabulae* 140). Here this material is reinterpreted in terms of Jewish traditions and expectations as the story of the birth of the messiah. **1:** *A great portent,* a sign or omen *in heaven* that points to a momentous event on earth; see v. 3; 15.1; cf. Lk 21.11; *Didache* 16.6. The *woman* is unnamed, and her precise identity is uncertain. Many scholars understand her as the symbolic representation of Israel, from whom the messiah is born (v. 5); the *twelve stars* thus refer to the twelve tribes. Patristic and medieval Christian interpreters most often took her to be Mary, or sometimes the church. Elements of her description are characteristic of several ancient goddesses. **3:** The *dragon,* identified in v. 9 as "the Devil" and "Satan," is Leviathan, the great sea monster of Canaanite tradition and of the Hebrew Bible (Job 40.25; Isa 27.1), one specification of the primeval watery chaos. *Seven heads and ten horns,* 13.1; 17.3; cf. Ps 74.13–14. These details are probably drawn from Dan 7.1–8, where they represent various empires and rulers; it is unclear what they symbolize here; cf. 17.9–10. **4:** *A third of the stars,* a proportion analogous to the destruction caused by the trumpet plagues (8.7–9.19; Dan 8.10). *Threw them to the earth,* Dan 8.20. **5:** *Rule . . . with a rod of iron,* an allusion to Ps 2.9, originally concerning the king of Israel, and interpreted as referring to a future anointed ruler or messiah (*Psalms of Solomon* 17.23–24). The messianic child is *snatched away and taken to God*: The resurrection and exaltation of Jesus denies the demonic dragon victory over its prey. **6:** *The wilderness* is a place where God provides refuge and sustenance amidst adversity (e.g., Gen 21.14–21; Deut 8.15–16; 29.5; 32.10; 1 Kings 17.1–2). *One thousand, two hundred sixty days,* the equivalent of "a time, and times, and half a time" (v. 14), "forty-two months" (11.2; 13.5), amounts to three and a half years. This symbolic number suggests a period of time limited by divine design. **7–12:** The *war* in *heaven* and its outcome offers, in symbolic language, the reason for the persecution and oppression of believers (v. 17). **7:** *Michael,* an archangel and the champion of Israel (Dan 10.13,21; 12.1; Jude 9) engages in combat against *the dragon and his angels* (Dan 10.20). **8:** *Defeated . . . in heaven,* see 9.1–2. Both passages may allude to Isa 14.12–20. **9:** Lk 10.18. *That ancient serpent,* see Gen 3.1–7; Isa 27.1. *Satan* means adversary, accuser (see Job 1.6–12; 2.1–7; Zech 3.1–2). *The deceiver,* 20.10. **10:** *The accuser,*

"Now have come the salvation and the
power
and the kingdom of our God
and the authority of his Messiah,[a]
for the accuser of our comrades[b] has been
thrown down,
who accuses them day and night before
our God.
11 But they have conquered him by the
blood of the Lamb
and by the word of their testimony,
for they did not cling to life even in the
face of death.
12 Rejoice then, you heavens
and those who dwell in them!
But woe to the earth and the sea,
for the devil has come down to you
with great wrath,
because he knows that his time is short!"
13 So when the dragon saw that he had
been thrown down to the earth, he pursued[c]
the woman who had given birth to the male
child. 14 But the woman was given the two
wings of the great eagle, so that she could
fly from the serpent into the wilderness, to
her place where she is nourished for a time,
and times, and half a time. 15 Then from his
mouth the serpent poured water like a river
after the woman, to sweep her away with the
flood. 16 But the earth came to the help of the
woman; it opened its mouth and swallowed
the river that the dragon had poured from his
mouth. 17 Then the dragon was angry with the
woman, and went off to make war on the rest
of her children, those who keep the com-
mandments of God and hold the testimony
of Jesus.

18 Then the dragon[d] took his stand on
13 the sand of the seashore. 1 And I
saw a beast rising out of the sea,
having ten horns and seven heads; and
on its horns were ten diadems, and on its
heads were blasphemous names. 2 And the
beast that I saw was like a leopard, its feet
were like a bear's, and its mouth was like
a lion's mouth. And the dragon gave it his
power and his throne and great authority.
3 One of its heads seemed to have received
a death-blow, but its mortal wound[e] had
been healed. In amazement the whole earth
followed the beast. 4 They worshiped the
dragon, for he had given his authority to the
beast, and they worshiped the beast, saying,
"Who is like the beast, and who can fight
against it?"
5 The beast was given a mouth uttering
haughty and blasphemous words, and it was
allowed to exercise authority for forty-two
months. 6 It opened its mouth to utter blas-
phemies against God, blaspheming his name
and his dwelling, that is, those who dwell in
heaven. 7 Also it was allowed to make war on
the saints and to conquer them.[f] It was given
authority over every tribe and people and
language and nation, 8 and all the inhabitants
of the earth will worship it, everyone whose

[a] Gk *Christ*
[b] Gk *brothers*
[c] Or *persecuted*
[d] Gk *Then he*; other ancient authorities read *Then I stood*
[e] Gk *the plague of its death*
[f] Other ancient authorities lack this sentence

as in Job 1.9–11. **11:** *They have conquered,* the paradoxical victory of the crucified Jesus (see 5.6–9n.) and of the martyrs, who were faithful unto death. **12:** *Rejoice,* Ps 96.11; Isa 49.13. **14:** *Eagle,* Ex 19.4; Deut 32.11. *A time . . . half a time,* see v. 6n. **15:** *Water . . . flood,* the chaos of the primeval sea monster (Isa 27.1; Ps 74.13; see 12.3n.). **16:** *Earth* helps the woman, as in Ex 15.12 the earth swallows up the pursuing Egyptian armies. **17:** The frustrated *dragon* redirects its anger toward *the rest of* the woman's *children,* namely, those who *keep the commandments . . . and hold the testimony of Jesus* (14.12).

12.18–13.18: The two beasts. 13.1–10: The *beast* from *the sea* combines the powers of the four beasts of Dan 7 and represents the Roman Empire, incited by the *dragon* (v. 2) to oppress *the saints* (v. 7). **1–2:** Based on Dan 7.1–7; see also 12.3n. *The sea,* primeval chaos. *Blasphemous names,* Roman emperors were deified, and worshiped as gods. **3:** *Death-blow,* perhaps an allusion to the assassination of Julius Caesar in 44 BCE, or a reference to the belief that the emperor Nero, who committed suicide in 68 CE, would be restored to life and rule (see 17.8n.). The *mortal wound* (to the beast as a whole) did not destroy the empire. *Amazement,* as of one astonished by a remarkable victory or portent (Jdt 11.16; 2 Esd 12.3). **5:** The sovereignty of God, even amid the oppression of the faithful, is implied by the use of passive verbs here and in vv. 7,10,14,15 (cf. 6.4; see 17.17n.). *Forty-two months,* see

name has not been written from the foundation of the world in the book of life of the Lamb that was slaughtered.[a]

[9] Let anyone who has an ear listen:
[10] If you are to be taken captive,
into captivity you go;
if you kill with the sword,
with the sword you must be killed.
Here is a call for the endurance and faith of the saints.

[11] Then I saw another beast that rose out of the earth; it had two horns like a lamb and it spoke like a dragon. [12] It exercises all the authority of the first beast on its behalf, and it makes the earth and its inhabitants worship the first beast, whose mortal wound[b] had been healed. [13] It performs great signs, even making fire come down from heaven to earth in the sight of all; [14] and by the signs that it is allowed to perform on behalf of the beast, it deceives the inhabitants of earth, telling them to make an image for the beast that had been wounded by the sword[c] and yet lived; [15] and it was allowed to give breath[d] to the image of the beast so that the image of the beast could even speak and cause those who would not worship the image of the beast to be killed. [16] Also it causes all, both small and great, both rich and poor, both free and slave, to be marked on the right hand or the forehead, [17] so that no one can buy or sell who does not have the mark, that is, the name of the beast or the number of its name. [18] This calls for wisdom: let anyone with understanding calculate the number of the beast, for it is the number of a person. Its number is six hundred sixty-six.[e]

14 Then I looked, and there was the Lamb, standing on Mount Zion! And with him were one hundred forty-four thousand who had his name and his Father's name written on their foreheads. [2] And I heard a voice from heaven like the sound of many waters and like the sound of loud thunder; the voice I heard was like the sound of harpists playing on their harps, [3] and they sing a new song before the throne and before the four living creatures and before the elders. No one could learn that song except the one hundred forty-four thousand who have been redeemed from the earth. [4] It is these who have not defiled themselves with women, for they are virgins; these follow

[a] Or *written in the book of life of the Lamb that was slaughtered from the foundation of the world*
[b] Gk *whose plague of its death*
[c] Or *that had received the plague of the sword*
[d] Or *spirit*
[e] Other ancient authorities read *six hundred sixteen*

11.2n. **8:** *From the foundation of the world,* this phrase would most naturally qualify *slaughtered* (see textual note *a*). A *name* can be removed from *the book of life* (3.5n.); later, judgment seems to depend on one's conduct of life (20.12). The translation here is a harmonization with 17.8. **10:** Jer 15.2; 43.11; Mt 26.52. **11–18:** The *beast* from *the earth,* associated with the false prophet (16.13; 19.20), enforces emperor worship (v. 12) and produces *great signs* (v. 13) or portents to deceive the people (v. 14); cf. Mt 24.24; 2 Thess 2.9–10. **14:** The *image,* a statue of the deified emperor. **16–17:** *Marked* in imitation of the sealing of God's servants (7.2–4). The *mark* of the beast (also 14.9,11; 16.2; 19.20; 20.4) is different from the seal of God with which the faithful are identified (7.3; 9.4). Those who do not bear the mark of the beast suffer economic oppression. *Right hand . . . forehead,* phylacteries or "tephillin" were worn on the left arm and forehead (*Ep. Arist.* 159; Josephus, *Ant.* 4.213). Egyptian Jews were branded by Ptolemy IV (3 Macc 2.28–29). **18:** *This calls for wisdom,* Dan 12.10. *The number of a person* can be understood either as a number that stands for a specific person, or as a number that can be calculated by human beings, not a hidden number known only to God (cf. 21.17). In the ancient practice of gematria, the numerical equivalents of the letters of the Hebrew or Greek alphabets were added together, and the resulting sum was seen as giving a clue to the nature of the name. Thus *the number of the beast* (666) is the sum of the separate letters of its name. Of countless explanations, the most probable is "Neron Caesar" (in Hebrew letters), i.e., Emperor Nero, which, if spelled without the final "n", also accounts for the variant reading, 616 (see textual note *e*). The number six represents what falls short of the number of completeness, seven.

14.1–20: A series of three visions intended to reassure the faithful of ultimate victory and vindication. **1–5:** *The Lamb* and those redeemed from the earth; as in 7.4, the *one hundred forty-four thousand* is a symbolic expression. **1:** *Mount Zion,* Jerusalem, the center of God's eschatological reign (Heb 12.22). *Written on their foreheads,* 7.3n.; 22.4. **2:** *Many waters,* see 1.15n. **3:** *They,* the one hundred forty-four thousand. *New song,* 5.8–10.

the Lamb wherever he goes. They have been redeemed from humankind as first fruits for God and the Lamb, [5] and in their mouth no lie was found; they are blameless.

[6] Then I saw another angel flying in midheaven, with an eternal gospel to proclaim to those who live[a] on the earth—to every nation and tribe and language and people. [7] He said in a loud voice, "Fear God and give him glory, for the hour of his judgment has come; and worship him who made heaven and earth, the sea and the springs of water."

[8] Then another angel, a second, followed, saying, "Fallen, fallen is Babylon the great! She has made all nations drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication."

[9] Then another angel, a third, followed them, crying with a loud voice, "Those who worship the beast and its image, and receive a mark on their foreheads or on their hands, [10] they will also drink the wine of God's wrath, poured unmixed into the cup of his anger, and they will be tormented with fire and sulfur in the presence of the holy angels and in the presence of the Lamb. [11] And the smoke of their torment goes up forever and ever. There is no rest day or night for those who worship the beast and its image and for anyone who receives the mark of its name."

[12] Here is a call for the endurance of the saints, those who keep the commandments of God and hold fast to the faith of[b] Jesus.

[13] And I heard a voice from heaven saying, "Write this: Blessed are the dead who from now on die in the Lord." "Yes," says the Spirit, "they will rest from their labors, for their deeds follow them."

[14] Then I looked, and there was a white cloud, and seated on the cloud was one like the Son of Man, with a golden crown on his head, and a sharp sickle in his hand! [15] Another angel came out of the temple, calling with a loud voice to the one who sat on the cloud, "Use your sickle and reap, for the hour to reap has come, because the harvest of the earth is fully ripe." [16] So the one who sat on the cloud swung his sickle over the earth, and the earth was reaped.

[17] Then another angel came out of the temple in heaven, and he too had a sharp sickle. [18] Then another angel came out from the altar, the angel who has authority over fire, and he called with a loud voice to him who had the sharp sickle, "Use your sharp sickle and gather the clusters of the vine of the earth, for its grapes are ripe." [19] So the angel swung his sickle over the earth and gathered the vintage of the earth, and he threw it into the great wine press of the wrath of God. [20] And the wine press was trodden outside the city, and blood flowed from the wine press, as

[a] Gk *sit*
[b] Or *to their faith in*

Throne, 4.2n. *Four living creatures,* 4.6n. **4:** *They are virgins,* a characterization of the 144,000 that perhaps should be understood metaphorically in terms of the sexual abstinence required before contact with the divine (Ex 19.15; Deut 23.10–14) and of warriors before battle (1 Sam 21.5; 2 Sam 11.9–13). *These follow the Lamb,* who is their shepherd (7.17). *First fruits,* Ex 23.19. *No lie,* cf. Zeph 3.13. **6–13:** Three angels announce the coming judgment. **6:** *Flying in midheaven,* 8.13. *Eternal gospel,* the message or proclamation that follows in v. 7, an announcement that God's judgment is imminent. **7:** *Fear God,* 15.4; Deut 10.12–15. *Judgment,* 16.7; 18.10; 19.2. *Worship* acknowledges God's cosmic sovereignty as Creator. **8:** *Fallen, fallen is Babylon* (Isa 21.9) *the great* (Dan 4.30), an anticipation of 18.2. *Babylon* is a symbolic name for Rome (2 Esd 3.1–2). The association of the two is based on the destruction of Jerusalem by Babylon in 586 BCE and by Rome in 70 CE. *The wine of the wrath,* 18.3; Jer 51.7. **9–11:** The sentence pronounced against those who *worship the beast* will be worse than what is suffered by those who do not worship it or bear its *mark* (13.15–17). **10:** *Wine of God's wrath,* Jer 25.15–16; 51.7. *Unmixed,* not diluted and therefore more potent (see 3 Macc 5.2). Wine was often mixed with water before being drunk. *Fire and sulfur* (19.20; 20.10; 21.8) are instruments of divine punishment (Gen 19.24; Ps 11.6; Ezek 38.22). *Holy angels,* Mk 8.38. **11:** *Smoke,* 18.9,18; 19.3. **12:** An exhortation to perseverance addressed to those against whom the dragon goes to make war in 12.17. **13:** *Blessed,* see 1.3n. A promise assured by *the Spirit. Their deeds,* 2.2,19; 3.1–2.15. **14–20:** The eschatological harvest, the final judgment of God (Joel 3.13), involves the ingathering of the saints by *one like the Son of Man* (vv. 14–16) and the assembling of the wicked for destruction (vv. 17–20). **14:** *White cloud . . . Son of Man,* Dan 7.13; Mt 24.30; Mk 14.62. **15–16:** A grain harvest. **18–20:** A scene of the grape harvest and winemaking. **20:** Metaphorically, *wine* is frequently associated with *blood* (Gen 49.11; Deut 32.14; Sir 39.26; 1 Macc 6.34). Here

high as a horse's bridle, for a distance of about two hundred miles.[a]

15 Then I saw another portent in heaven, great and amazing: seven angels with seven plagues, which are the last, for with them the wrath of God is ended.

2 And I saw what appeared to be a sea of glass mixed with fire, and those who had conquered the beast and its image and the number of its name, standing beside the sea of glass with harps of God in their hands. 3 And they sing the song of Moses, the servant[b] of God, and the song of the Lamb:

"Great and amazing are your deeds,
Lord God the Almighty!
Just and true are your ways,
King of the nations![c]
4 Lord, who will not fear
and glorify your name?
For you alone are holy.
All nations will come
and worship before you,
for your judgments have been revealed."

5 After this I looked, and the temple of the tent[d] of witness in heaven was opened, 6 and out of the temple came the seven angels with the seven plagues, robed in pure bright linen,[e] with golden sashes across their chests. 7 Then one of the four living creatures gave the seven angels seven golden bowls full of the wrath of God, who lives forever and ever; 8 and the temple was filled with smoke from the glory of God and from his power, and no one could enter the temple until the seven plagues of the seven angels were ended.

16 Then I heard a loud voice from the temple telling the seven angels, "Go and pour out on the earth the seven bowls of the wrath of God."

2 So the first angel went and poured his bowl on the earth, and a foul and painful sore came on those who had the mark of the beast and who worshiped its image.

3 The second angel poured his bowl into the sea, and it became like the blood of a corpse, and every living thing in the sea died.

4 The third angel poured his bowl into the rivers and the springs of water, and they became blood. 5 And I heard the angel of the waters say,

"You are just, O Holy One, who are and were,
for you have judged these things;
6 because they shed the blood of saints and prophets,
you have given them blood to drink.
It is what they deserve!"
7 And I heard the altar respond,
"Yes, O Lord God, the Almighty,
your judgments are true and just!"

8 The fourth angel poured his bowl on the sun, and it was allowed to scorch people with fire; 9 they were scorched by the fierce heat, but they cursed the name of God, who had authority over these plagues, and they did not repent and give him glory.

[a] Gk *one thousand six hundred stadia*
[b] Gk *slave*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *the ages*
[d] Or *tabernacle*
[e] Other ancient authorities read *stone*

the enormous quantity of blood suggests the vast extent of the divine judgment (cf. Isa 63.3–6). Mention of the *horse's bridle* here foreshadows the combat in 19.11–21.

15.1–16.21: The seven bowls of the wrath of God.

15.1–8: The preparation for judgment. 1: *Portent,* a third heavenly sign (see 12.1n.,3). *The wrath of God,* 14.10,19; 15.1,7; 16.1; 19.15. *Is ended,* accomplished or come to its fulfillment. **15.2–4:** Vision of the victorious martyrs in heaven (8.3–5). **2:** *Sea of glass,* see 4.6n. **3:** *Song of Moses,* Ex 15.1–18; Deut 32. **5:** *The temple of the tent of witness,* the heavenly counterpart of the tent of witness that accompanied Israel's journey through the desert (Num 9.15). *Was opened,* cf. 11.19. On opening the heavenly gates as a prelude to judgment, see 3 Macc 6.18–19. In Rome, the Temple of Janus was opened as a prelude to war (Virgil, *Aeneid* 1.294). **7:** *Golden bowls,* libation vessels used in religious rituals. **8:** *Smoke,* Ex 19.18; 40.34–35; Isa 6.1–4; cf. 1 Kings 8.10–11.

16.1–21: The pouring of the bowls (cf. chs 8–9, and the plagues inflicted on Egypt, Ex 7–12). **2:** *A foul and painful sore,* Ex 9.8–12. **3–4:** 8.8–9; Ex 7.14–24. **5–6:** A judgment doxology. **5:** *The angel* that has control *of the waters,* implying a worldview in which different angels preside over different elements of the cosmos (*1 En.* 60.10–22; Rev 7.1–2, winds; Rev 14.18, fire). **6:** Divine retribution (Isa 49.26). *Blood to drink,* cf. 17.6. **7:** *The al-*

10 The fifth angel poured his bowl on the
throne of the beast, and its kingdom was
plunged into darkness; people gnawed their
tongues in agony, 11 and cursed the God of
heaven because of their pains and sores, and
they did not repent of their deeds.
12 The sixth angel poured his bowl on
the great river Euphrates, and its water was
dried up in order to prepare the way for the
kings from the east. 13 And I saw three foul
spirits like frogs coming from the mouth of
the dragon, from the mouth of the beast, and
from the mouth of the false prophet. 14 These
are demonic spirits, performing signs, who
go abroad to the kings of the whole world, to
assemble them for battle on the great day of
God the Almighty. 15 ("See, I am coming like
a thief! Blessed is the one who stays awake
and is clothed,[a] not going about naked and
exposed to shame.") 16 And they assembled
them at the place that in Hebrew is called
Harmagedon.
17 The seventh angel poured his bowl into
the air, and a loud voice came out of the
temple, from the throne, saying, "It is done!"
18 And there came flashes of lightning, rum-
blings, peals of thunder, and a violent earth-
quake, such as had not occurred since people
were upon the earth, so violent was that
earthquake. 19 The great city was split into
three parts, and the cities of the nations fell.
God remembered great Babylon and gave her
the wine-cup of the fury of his wrath. 20 And
every island fled away, and no mountains
were to be found; 21 and huge hailstones, each
weighing about a hundred pounds,[b] dropped
from heaven on people, until they cursed God
for the plague of the hail, so fearful was that
plague.

17 Then one of the seven angels who had
the seven bowls came and said to me,
"Come, I will show you the judgment of the
great whore who is seated on many waters,
2 with whom the kings of the earth have
committed fornication, and with the wine
of whose fornication the inhabitants of the
earth have become drunk." 3 So he carried
me away in the spirit[c] into a wilderness, and
I saw a woman sitting on a scarlet beast that
was full of blasphemous names, and it had
seven heads and ten horns. 4 The woman was
clothed in purple and scarlet, and adorned
with gold and jewels and pearls, holding in
her hand a golden cup full of abominations
and the impurities of her fornication; 5 and
on her forehead was written a name, a mys-
tery: "Babylon the great, mother of whores
and of earth's abominations." 6 And I saw that
the woman was drunk with the blood of the

[a] Gk *and keeps his robes*
[b] Gk *weighing about a talent*
[c] Or *in the Spirit*

tar, 6.9–11. **10:** 8.12; Ex 10.21. *Throne of the beast,* 13.2. **12:** *Euphrates,* see 9.14n. *Kings from the east,* perhaps a reference to the Parthians, who would be led by the Roman emperor Nero, restored to life; see 13.3n.; *Sib. Or.* 4.120,139. **13–14:** *Foul spirits like frogs,* Ex 8.1–15. **14:** *Performing signs,* 13.13. **15:** *Like a thief,* see 3.3n. *Blessed,* see 1.3n. **16:** *They,* the frog-like spirits, emissaries of the demonic trio, that is, the dragon, the beast, and the false prophet. *Harmagedon,* spelled variously in the manuscripts with "gg" and/or "dd"; also "Armagedon." This is likely an allusion to Megiddo, the site of several decisive battles in Israel's history (Judg 5.19; 2 Kings 9.27; 2 Chr 35.22); in Hebrew "har Megiddo" means "the mountain of Megiddo." Here it is the symbolic assembly point of the forces hostile to God as they prepare for the eschatological battle. **19:** *The great city,* Rome. *Great Babylon,* 14.8. *Wine-cup,* 14.10. **21:** *Hail,* 8.7; Ex 9.13–35; Wis 5.22.

17.1–18.24: The fall of Babylon, which is Rome, the city on seven hills (17.9,18) and the leading persecutor of the saints (17.6).

17.1–18: The vision of the woman. 1: *The great whore,* a symbol that builds both on the fact that cities were grammatically gendered as feminine and on the Hebrew prophets' metaphorical references to cities and nations as brides, wives, or harlots (e.g., Tyre in Isa 23.17–18). **2:** Jer 51.7. *Fornication,* sexual misconduct applied metaphorically to the city's international commercial and political dealings, which are judged illicit and unjust. **3:** *In the spirit,* 1.10; 4.2; 21.10 (Ezek 2.2; 3.12,14,24). *Into a wilderness,* Isa 21.1–20. *Scarlet beast,* the Roman empire (see 13.1n.). *Blasphemous names,* divine titles given to Roman emperors (see 13.1). **4:** *Gold and jewels and pearls,* 18.16. **5:** *On her forehead,* 13.16; 14.1; 20.4; 22.4. *A mystery,* indicating that the name is symbolic and that it requires interpretation, which the angel offers in vv. 7–18. *Mother of whores,* Hos 2.2–5. **6:** *Drunk with . . . blood,*

saints and the blood of the witnesses to Jesus.

When I saw her, I was greatly amazed.
7 But the angel said to me, "Why are you so amazed? I will tell you the mystery of the woman, and of the beast with seven heads and ten horns that carries her. 8 The beast that you saw was, and is not, and is about to ascend from the bottomless pit and go to destruction. And the inhabitants of the earth, whose names have not been written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, will be amazed when they see the beast, because it was and is not and is to come.

9 "This calls for a mind that has wisdom: the seven heads are seven mountains on which the woman is seated; also, they are seven kings, 10 of whom five have fallen, one is living, and the other has not yet come; and when he comes, he must remain only a little while. 11 As for the beast that was and is not, it is an eighth but it belongs to the seven, and it goes to destruction. 12 And the ten horns that you saw are ten kings who have not yet received a kingdom, but they are to receive authority as kings for one hour, together with the beast. 13 These are united in yielding their power and authority to the beast; 14 they will make war on the Lamb, and the Lamb will conquer them, for he is Lord of lords and King of kings, and those with him are called and chosen and faithful."

15 And he said to me, "The waters that you saw, where the whore is seated, are peoples and multitudes and nations and languages. 16 And the ten horns that you saw, they and the beast will hate the whore; they will make her desolate and naked; they will devour her flesh and burn her up with fire. 17 For God has put it into their hearts to carry out his purpose by agreeing to give their kingdom to the beast, until the words of God will be fulfilled. 18 The woman you saw is the great city that rules over the kings of the earth."

18 After this I saw another angel coming down from heaven, having great authority; and the earth was made bright with his splendor. 2 He called out with a mighty voice,

"Fallen, fallen is Babylon the great!
It has become a dwelling place of demons,
a haunt of every foul spirit,
a haunt of every foul bird,
a haunt of every foul and hateful beast.[a]
3 For all the nations have drunk[b]
of the wine of the wrath of her fornication,
and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her,
and the merchants of the earth have grown rich from the power[c] of her luxury."

4 Then I heard another voice from heaven saying,

"Come out of her, my people,
so that you do not take part in her sins,
and so that you do not share in her plagues;
5 for her sins are heaped high as heaven,
and God has remembered her iniquities.
6 Render to her as she herself has rendered,

[a] Other ancient authorities lack the words *a haunt of every foul beast* and attach the words *and hateful* to the previous line so as to read *a haunt of every foul and hateful bird*

[b] Other ancient authorities read *She has made all nations drink*

[c] Or *resources*

Ezek 39.19. Persecution took the form of exile (1.9), imprisonment (2.10), or death (2.10,13; 11.3). **8:** *The beast* now represents the Roman emperor Nero, who was expected to return to life and power (v. 11). *Was and is not and is to come,* a parody of the designation of God in 1.4,8. *Book of life,* see 3.5n. **9:** *This calls for a mind that has wisdom,* like the formula in 13.18, this expression introduces the interpretation of the symbolism of the preceding verses. The *seven mountains* are the seven hills of Rome. The *seven kings* are Roman emperors (cf. Dan 11.2; 2 Esd 12.22–26), which interpreters have identified with various emperors from Julius Caesar to Domitian. **12:** *Ten horns* represent subordinate or client rulers (Dan 7.7–8). **14:** The eschatological victory of Jesus Christ. *Lord of lords and king of kings,* 19.16. **16:** Ezek 23.26–29. **17:** The ten kings are unwitting instruments of God's will, fulfilling the divine plan (compare the passive verbs in 6.4; see 13.5n.). **18:** An explicit identification of the woman of v. 1 as *the great city,* i.e., Rome.

18.1–24: Dirge over the fallen city (Rome), with echoes from the taunt songs in Isa 23–24; 47; Jer 50–51; Ezek 26–27. **1–3:** Angelic announcement of judgment (14.8; Isa 21.9; Jer 50.39; 51.8). **1:** *The earth was made bright,* Ezek 43.2. **2:** *A dwelling place . . . a haunt,* Isa 13.21–22. **4–8:** Summons to God's people to leave the doomed city; cf.

and repay her double for her deeds;
mix a double draught for her in the cup she mixed.
7 As she glorified herself and lived luxuriously,
so give her a like measure of torment and grief.
Since in her heart she says,
'I rule as a queen;
I am no widow,
and I will never see grief,'
8 therefore her plagues will come in a single day—
pestilence and mourning and famine—
and she will be burned with fire;
for mighty is the Lord God who judges her."

9 And the kings of the earth, who committed fornication and lived in luxury with her, will weep and wail over her when they see the smoke of her burning; 10 they will stand far off, in fear of her torment, and say,

"Alas, alas, the great city,
Babylon, the mighty city!
For in one hour your judgment has come."

11 And the merchants of the earth weep and mourn for her, since no one buys their cargo anymore, 12 cargo of gold, silver, jewels and pearls, fine linen, purple, silk and scarlet, all kinds of scented wood, all articles of ivory, all articles of costly wood, bronze, iron, and marble, 13 cinnamon, spice, incense, myrrh, frankincense, wine, olive oil, choice flour and wheat, cattle and sheep, horses and chariots, slaves—and human lives.[a]

14 "The fruit for which your soul longed has gone from you,
and all your dainties and your splendor are lost to you,
never to be found again!"
15 The merchants of these wares, who gained wealth from her, will stand far off, in fear of her torment, weeping and mourning aloud,
16 "Alas, alas, the great city,
clothed in fine linen,
in purple and scarlet,
adorned with gold,
with jewels, and with pearls!
17 For in one hour all this wealth has been laid waste!"

And all shipmasters and seafarers, sailors and all whose trade is on the sea, stood far off 18 and cried out as they saw the smoke of her burning,

"What city was like the great city?"
19 And they threw dust on their heads, as they wept and mourned, crying out,

"Alas, alas, the great city,
where all who had ships at sea grew rich by her wealth!
For in one hour she has been laid waste."

20 Rejoice over her, O heaven, you saints and apostles and prophets! For God has given judgment for you against her.

21 Then a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone and threw it into the sea, saying,

"With such violence Babylon the great city will be thrown down,
and will be found no more;
22 and the sound of harpists and minstrels and of flutists and trumpeters
will be heard in you no more;
and an artisan of any trade
will be found in you no more;
and the sound of the millstone
will be heard in you no more;
23 and the light of a lamp
will shine in you no more;
and the voice of bridegroom and bride
will be heard in you no more;
for your merchants were the magnates of the earth,
and all nations were deceived by your sorcery.
24 And in you[b] was found the blood of prophets and of saints,

[a] Or *chariots, and human bodies and souls*
[b] Gk *her*

Jer 51.45; Mt 24.16. **5:** *High as heaven,* Jer 51.9. **6:** Jer 50.29; cf. Isa 40.2. **9–20:** Lamentation of those who have been enriched through their dealings with the corrupt city: kings (vv. 9–10), merchants (vv. 11–16), and mariners (vv. 17–20; cf. Ezek 27.29–36). **13:** *Slaves—and human lives,* through the practice of slavery, the Roman imperial economy reduced human beings to mere commodities that could be bought and sold like any other merchandise **20:** *Rejoice over her,* Jer 51.48. **21–24:** Symbolic action representing the total destruction of the city (Jer 51.63–64). **22:** *Sound of harpists,* Jer 25.10; Ezek 26.13. **24:** *Blood of prophets,* Mt 23.34–35; Lk 11.49–51; 13.33–34.

and of all who have been slaughtered
on earth."

19 After this I heard what seemed to be
the loud voice of a great multitude in
heaven, saying,
"Hallelujah!
Salvation and glory and power to our God,
2 for his judgments are true and just;
he has judged the great whore
who corrupted the earth with her
fornication,
and he has avenged on her the blood of his
servants."[a]
3 Once more they said,
"Hallelujah!
The smoke goes up from her forever and
ever."
4 And the twenty-four elders and the four
living creatures fell down and worshiped God
who is seated on the throne, saying,
"Amen. Hallelujah!"
5 And from the throne came a voice saying,
"Praise our God,
all you his servants,[a]
and all who fear him,
small and great."
6 Then I heard what seemed to be the voice
of a great multitude, like the sound of many
waters and like the sound of mighty thunder-
peals, crying out,
"Hallelujah!
For the Lord our God
the Almighty reigns.
7 Let us rejoice and exult
and give him the glory,
for the marriage of the Lamb has come,
and his bride has made herself ready;
8 to her it has been granted to be clothed
with fine linen, bright and pure"—
for the fine linen is the righteous deeds of the
saints.

9 And the angel said[b] to me, "Write this:
Blessed are those who are invited to the mar-
riage supper of the Lamb." And he said to me,
"These are true words of God." 10 Then I fell
down at his feet to worship him, but he said
to me, "You must not do that! I am a fellow
servant[c] with you and your comrades[d] who
hold the testimony of Jesus.[e] Worship God!
For the testimony of Jesus[e] is the spirit of
prophecy."

11 Then I saw heaven opened, and there
was a white horse! Its rider is called Faithful
and True, and in righteousness he judges
and makes war. 12 His eyes are like a flame
of fire, and on his head are many diadems;
and he has a name inscribed that no one
knows but himself. 13 He is clothed in a robe
dipped in[f] blood, and his name is called The
Word of God. 14 And the armies of heaven,
wearing fine linen, white and pure, were
following him on white horses. 15 From his
mouth comes a sharp sword with which to
strike down the nations, and he will rule[g]
them with a rod of iron; he will tread the
wine press of the fury of the wrath of God
the Almighty. 16 On his robe and on his thigh
he has a name inscribed, "King of kings and
Lord of lords."

17 Then I saw an angel standing in the
sun, and with a loud voice he called to all
the birds that fly in midheaven, "Come,
gather for the great supper of God, 18 to eat

[a] Gk *slaves*
[b] Gk *he said*
[c] Gk *slave*
[d] Gk *brothers*
[e] Or *to Jesus*
[f] Other ancient authorities read *sprinkled with*
[g] Or *will shepherd*

19.1–10: Doxology giving praise to God for the destruction of Rome (vv. 1–5) and for the marriage of the Lamb (vv. 6–9). **1:** *Hallelujah,* Heb for "Praise the LORD," as in Pss 104.25; 106.1; 111.1; etc. **3:** *Smoke . . . forever,* i.e., destruction never to be rebuilt. **4:** See 4.4,6. **5:** Ps 115.13. **7:** *His bride,* the new Jerusalem (21.2,9). **8:** *Fine linen,* in contrast to the attire of Babylon (17.4). **9:** *Blessed,* see 1.3n. **10:** God alone is the appropriate object of worship (cf. 22.8–9).

19.11–21: The victory of Jesus Christ and the heavenly armies over the beast and its cohorts. **11:** *Heaven opened,* Ezek 1.1. *In righteousness he judges,* Isa 11.4. **12:** *Many diadems,* in contrast to the diadems of the dragon (12.3). *A name . . . that no one knows,* because the name stands for a person, knowledge of a name confers power over the person. That his name is known only to himself implies that Jesus' power is sovereign and unlimited (cf. 2.17). **13:** As revealer of God he is called *The Word of God* (Jn 1.1,14). **14:** *Armies,* the angelic host (see Lk 2.13 note *c*).

the flesh of kings, the flesh of captains,
the flesh of the mighty, the flesh of horses
and their riders—flesh of all, both free and
slave, both small and great." [19] Then I saw
the beast and the kings of the earth with
their armies gathered to make war against
the rider on the horse and against his army.
[20] And the beast was captured, and with it
the false prophet who had performed in its
presence the signs by which he deceived
those who had received the mark of the
beast and those who worshiped its image.
These two were thrown alive into the lake
of fire that burns with sulfur. [21] And the rest
were killed by the sword of the rider on the
horse, the sword that came from his mouth;
and all the birds were gorged with their
flesh.

20 Then I saw an angel coming down
from heaven, holding in his hand the
key to the bottomless pit and a great chain.
[2] He seized the dragon, that ancient serpent,
who is the Devil and Satan, and bound him
for a thousand years, [3] and threw him into the
pit, and locked and sealed it over him, so that
he would deceive the nations no more, until
the thousand years were ended. After that he
must be let out for a little while.

[4] Then I saw thrones, and those seated on
them were given authority to judge. I also saw
the souls of those who had been beheaded
for their testimony to Jesus[a] and for the word
of God. They had not worshiped the beast or
its image and had not received its mark on
their foreheads or their hands. They came to
life and reigned with Christ a thousand years.
[5] (The rest of the dead did not come to life
until the thousand years were ended.) This is
the first resurrection. [6] Blessed and holy are
those who share in the first resurrection. Over
these the second death has no power, but they
will be priests of God and of Christ, and they
will reign with him a thousand years.

[7] When the thousand years are ended,
Satan will be released from his prison [8] and
will come out to deceive the nations at the
four corners of the earth, Gog and Magog,
in order to gather them for battle; they are
as numerous as the sands of the sea. [9] They
marched up over the breadth of the earth
and surrounded the camp of the saints and
the beloved city. And fire came down from
heaven[b] and consumed them. [10] And the

[a] Or *for the testimony of Jesus*
[b] Other ancient authorities read *from God, out of heaven,* or *out of heaven from God*

Fine linen, 19.8. **15:** 1.16; 2.12,16; 19.21; Ps 2.9. **16:** 17.14; Deut 10.17. **17–18:** *An angel* summons the birds of prey (Ezek 39.4,17–20). **17:** *The great supper of God,* in gruesome contrast to the "marriage feast of the Lamb" (v. 9). **19–21:** The final battle between Jesus and the beast (anticipated in 16.13–16). **20:** *The beast,* the first beast, introduced in 13.1–8. *The false prophet* is the second beast of 13.11–15. *The lake of fire,* see 14.10n.; 20.10,14–15; 21.8; Dan 7.11. *Sulfur* was well known in the ancient world as a noxious substance; it was used to render land infertile (Deut 29.23; Job 18.15), and burning sulfur symbolized God's judgment (Gen 19.24; Ps 11.6; Ezek 38.22). See 9.17; 14.10; 20.10; 21.8. **21:** *The sword of the rider . . . the sword that came from his mouth,* suggesting that the victory is won not by violence but by "The Word of God" (19.13).

20.1–10: The defeat of Satan.

20.1–6: The temporary imprisonment of Satan and the reign of Christ and the martyrs. 1: *Chain,* 2 Pet 2.4; Jude 6. **2–3:** The period of a *thousand years* is symbolic both here and in vv. 4–7, suggesting a temporary time of righteousness and tranquility before the final eschatological consummation. Cf. Ps 90.4; as the eternal time of blessing in *Jub.* 4:29–30; 23.27–30; a time far greater than the ten days during which the saints endured trials (2.10). **2:** *The dragon . . . serpent . . . Devil . . . Satan,* 12.9n. **3:** Satan is locked into the pit to prevent him from carrying out his demonic work as "the deceiver of the whole world" (12.9). After the *thousand years,* though, *he must be let out for a little while,* but even this limited period is under God's control (Dan 7.25). **4:** *Thrones* of judgment (Dan 7.9,22,27; Mt 19.28; Lk 22.30). *Those . . . beheaded for their testimony,* martyrs (in 6.9–10 the souls of the martyrs, under the altar, cry for vengeance). *Its mark,* 13.16–17; 14.9. *Reigned with Christ a thousand years,* this passage, which gave rise to Christian millennialism, suggests an interim messianic kingdom. **6:** *Blessed,* see 1.3n. *Priests,* 1.6; 5.10; Ex 19.6. *Second death,* see 2.11n.; 20.14; 21.8.

20.7–10: The release of Satan and the final conflict. *Gog and Magog,* gathering with the nations for war against Israel in Ezek 38–39 (a prophecy mentioned in 16.14–16 and 19.17–21). **9:** *The beloved city,* Jerusalem (Sir

devil who had deceived them was thrown into the lake of fire and sulfur, where the beast and the false prophet were, and they will be tormented day and night forever and ever.

11 Then I saw a great white throne and the one who sat on it; the earth and the heaven fled from his presence, and no place was found for them. 12 And I saw the dead, great and small, standing before the throne, and books were opened. Also another book was opened, the book of life. And the dead were judged according to their works, as recorded in the books. 13 And the sea gave up the dead that were in it, Death and Hades gave up the dead that were in them, and all were judged according to what they had done. 14 Then Death and Hades were thrown into the lake of fire. This is the second death, the lake of fire; 15 and anyone whose name was not found written in the book of life was thrown into the lake of fire.

21 Then I saw a new heaven and a new earth; for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away, and the sea was no more. 2 And I saw the holy city, the new Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. 3 And I heard a loud voice from the throne saying,

"See, the home[a] of God is among mortals.
He will dwell[b] with them;
they will be his peoples,[c]
and God himself will be with them;[d]
4 he will wipe every tear from their eyes.
Death will be no more;
mourning and crying and pain will be no more,
for the first things have passed away."

5 And the one who was seated on the throne said, "See, I am making all things new." Also he said, "Write this, for these words are trustworthy and true." 6 Then he said to me, "It is done! I am the Alpha and the Omega, the beginning and the end. To the thirsty I will give water as a gift from the spring of the water of life. 7 Those who conquer will inherit these things, and I will be their God and they will be my children. 8 But as for the cowardly, the faithless,[e] the polluted, the murderers, the fornicators, the sorcerers, the idolaters, and all liars, their place will be in the lake that burns with fire and sulfur, which is the second death."

9 Then one of the seven angels who had the seven bowls full of the seven last plagues came and said to me, "Come, I will show you the bride, the wife of the Lamb." 10 And in

[a] Gk *the tabernacle*
[b] Gk *will tabernacle*
[c] Other ancient authorities read *people*
[d] Other ancient authorities add *and be their God*
[e] Or *the unbelieving*

24.11) or the city representing the whole land (Ezek 38.11 [LXX]). *Fire,* Ezek 38.22; 39.6; 2 Kings 1.9–12. **10:** *Was thrown into the lake of fire,* the final overthrow of Satan (*Test. Jud.* 25.3).

20.11–15: The last judgment. 11: The *great white throne,* 4.2; 20.4. **12:** *Books* of deeds, ledgers that record what everyone has done (Dan 7.10). The *book of life* is distinguished from the books of deeds just opened (see 3.5n). *Judged according to their works,* Mt 16.27; Rom 2.6; 2 Cor 5.10. **13–14:** Personified *Death and Hades* (see 1.18n.; 6.8n.) are the last enemies to be defeated. **14:** *The second death,* see 2.11n.; Mt 25.41.

21.1–22.5: Vision of the new Jerusalem.

21.1–8: The renewal of creation: 1: *A new heaven and a new earth,* Isa 65.17; 66.22. All creation will be renewed, freed from imperfections, and transformed by God (Rom 8.19–21). *The sea,* the primeval force of turbulence and unrest (Gen 1.2; Ps 29.3,10). **2:** *New Jerusalem,* 21.9–10; Heb 11.10. *Coming down out of heaven,* 3.12; Gal 4.26; 2 Esd 13.35–36. *Prepared as a bride,* 19.7–9; Isa 61.10. The image of the eschatological Jerusalem as a *bride* contrasts with the image of Rome as the whore Babylon in chs 17–18. **3:** Ezek 37.27. **4:** 7.16; Isa 25.8; 35.10. **5:** The speaker here is God (1.8). **6:** *Alpha* and *Omega,* see 1.8n. *Water of life,* Isa 55.1; Jn 4.13; 7.37. **7:** *Those who conquer,* compare the concluding words of each of the seven letters in chs 2 and 3. **8:** *Polluted, . . . murderers . . . idolaters*, a list of vices, commonly associated with idolatry (Ps 106.36–38), which also threaten the churches (2.14,20–21). *The second death,* contrasted to the water of life in v. 6 (see 2.11n.).

21.9–27: The measuring of the city. Cf. Ezek 40–42. Both the city and its measurements (which are multiples of 12) are symbolic. **9:** *The seven bowls,* see ch 16. *The bride, the wife of the Lamb,* 19.7; 21.2. Israel is por-

the spirit[a] he carried me away to a great, high mountain and showed me the holy city Jerusalem coming down out of heaven from God. [11] It has the glory of God and a radiance like a very rare jewel, like jasper, clear as crystal. [12] It has a great, high wall with twelve gates, and at the gates twelve angels, and on the gates are inscribed the names of the twelve tribes of the Israelites; [13] on the east three gates, on the north three gates, on the south three gates, and on the west three gates. [14] And the wall of the city has twelve foundations, and on them are the twelve names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb.

[15] The angel[b] who talked to me had a measuring rod of gold to measure the city and its gates and walls. [16] The city lies foursquare, its length the same as its width; and he measured the city with his rod, fifteen hundred miles;[c] its length and width and height are equal. [17] He also measured its wall, one hundred forty-four cubits[d] by human measurement, which the angel was using. [18] The wall is built of jasper, while the city is pure gold, clear as glass. [19] The foundations of the wall of the city are adorned with every jewel; the first was jasper, the second sapphire, the third agate, the fourth emerald, [20] the fifth onyx, the sixth carnelian, the seventh chrysolite, the eighth beryl, the ninth topaz, the tenth chrysoprase, the eleventh jacinth, the twelfth amethyst. [21] And the twelve gates are twelve pearls, each of the gates is a single pearl, and the street of the city is pure gold, transparent as glass.

[22] I saw no temple in the city, for its temple is the Lord God the Almighty and the Lamb. [23] And the city has no need of sun or moon to shine on it, for the glory of God is its light, and its lamp is the Lamb. [24] The nations will walk by its light, and the kings of the earth will bring their glory into it. [25] Its gates will never be shut by day—and there will be no night there. [26] People will bring into the it the glory and the honor of the nations. [27] But nothing unclean will enter it, nor anyone who practices abomination or falsehood, but only those who are written in the Lamb's book of life.

22 Then the angel[e] showed me the river of the water of life, bright as crystal, flowing from the throne of God and of the Lamb [2] through the middle of the street of the city. On either side of the river is the tree of life[f] with its twelve kinds of fruit, producing its fruit each month; and the leaves of the tree are for the healing of the nations. [3] Nothing accursed will be found there any more. But the throne of God and of the Lamb will be in it, and his servants[g] will worship him; [4] they will see his face, and his name

[a] Or *in the Spirit*
[b] Gk *He*
[c] Gk *twelve thousand stadia*
[d] That is, almost seventy-five yards
[e] Gk *he*
[f] Or *the Lamb.* [2]*In the middle of the street of the city, and on either side of the river, is the tree of life*
[g] Gk *slaves*

trayed as the bride of God in Isa 54.5; Hos 2.19–20; the antithesis of Babylon in 17.1–3. **10:** *In the spirit,* see 1.10n. *High mountain,* Ezek 40.2. *Jerusalem . . . out of heaven,* v. 2n. **11:** *Jasper,* 4.3; *glory of God* (Ezek 43.2–5). **12:** Ezek 48.30–34. **14:** See Eph 2.20. *Twelve apostles* added to the twelve tribes of Israel creates the symbolic number twenty-four (4.3–4). **15–18:** *The city* that *lies foursquare,* i.e., with streets that intersect at right angles, unlike the irregular walls of Palestinian cities (Ezek 42.20). The cube is a perfect, symmetrical shape (for the ideal Temple as a square, see Ezek 40.5; 45.1–5). This description of a city with a river running through it resembles ancient accounts of Babylon (Herodotus, *Hist*. 1.178–79). The precious stones, with the names of the twelve tribes, adorned the high priest's breastplate (Ex 28.17–20). **19:** Isa 54.11–12. **21:** *The street of the city is pure gold,* even more impressive than stone-paved Roman roads **22–23:** Unlike the cities of the Roman province of Asia, where monumental temples to the deified emperor reminded the population of the pervasive power of the distant imperial capital, in the new Jerusalem *no temple . . . no . . . sun* are needed because the presence and glory of God pervade the entire community (Isa 24.23; 60.1,19; 2 Esd 7.39–42). *Its lamp is the Lamb,* Ps 132.17. **25:** City gates would be closed at night and at the approach of enemies; perpetually open gates symbolize complete safety and security; see Isa 60.11; Zech 14.7; 1QM 12.13–15. **27:** *Book of life,* see 3.5n.

22.1–5: The river and the tree of life. 1: *The river,* cf. Gen 2.10; Ps 46.4; Ezek 47.1; Zech 14.8. **2:** *The tree,* a collective reference to many trees *on either side of the river* (Ezek 47.12; see 2.7n.). **3:** *The throne of God and of the Lamb*

will be on their foreheads. 5 And there will be
no more night; they need no light of lamp or
sun, for the Lord God will be their light, and
they will reign forever and ever.

6 And he said to me, "These words are
trustworthy and true, for the Lord, the God of
the spirits of the prophets, has sent his angel
to show his servants[a] what must soon take
place."

7 "See, I am coming soon! Blessed is the
one who keeps the words of the prophecy of
this book."

8 I, John, am the one who heard and saw
these things. And when I heard and saw
them, I fell down to worship at the feet of the
angel who showed them to me; 9 but he said
to me, "You must not do that! I am a fellow
servant[b] with you and your comrades[c] the
prophets, and with those who keep the words
of this book. Worship God!"

10 And he said to me, "Do not seal up the
words of the prophecy of this book, for the
time is near. 11 Let the evildoer still do evil,
and the filthy still be filthy, and the righteous
still do right, and the holy still be holy."

12 "See, I am coming soon; my reward is
with me, to repay according to everyone's
work. 13 I am the Alpha and the Omega, the
first and the last, the beginning and the end."

14 Blessed are those who wash their robes,[d]
so that they will have the right to the tree
of life and may enter the city by the gates.
15 Outside are the dogs and sorcerers and
fornicators and murderers and idolaters, and
everyone who loves and practices falsehood.

16 "It is I, Jesus, who sent my angel to you
with this testimony for the churches. I am the
root and the descendant of David, the bright
morning star."

17 The Spirit and the bride say, "Come."
And let everyone who hears say, "Come."
And let everyone who is thirsty come.
Let anyone who wishes take the water of
life as a gift.

18 I warn everyone who hears the words of
the prophecy of this book: if anyone adds to
them, God will add to that person the plagues
described in this book; 19 if anyone takes away
from the words of the book of this prophecy,
God will take away that person's share in the
tree of life and in the holy city, which are
described in this book.

20 The one who testifies to these things
says, "Surely I am coming soon."

Amen. Come, Lord Jesus!

21 The grace of the Lord Jesus be with all
the saints. Amen.[e]

[a] Gk *slaves*
[b] Gk *slave*
[c] Gk *brothers*
[d] Other ancient authorities read *do his commandments*
[e] Other ancient authorities lack *all*; others lack *the saints*; others lack *Amen*

is one throne, 3.21. **4:** To *see* God's *face,* full awareness of God's immediate presence (Job 33.26; Ps 10.11; 42.2), an eschatological blessing (Ps 84.7; Mt 5.8; 1 Jn 3.2). *On their foreheads,* see 7.3n.; 14.1; contrast 13.16; 17.5. **5:** Those who *worship* God (v. 3) *will reign* with God in eternal triumph (Dan 7.18,27).

22.6–21: Epilogue, consisting of warnings and exhortations. **6:** *He said,* an angel (v. 8), perhaps the one referred to in 1.1. *These words,* the contents of this book. *The God of the spirits of the prophets,* the one who inspired the spirits of the prophets (*1 QH* 20.11–13). **7:** A parenthesis, reporting the words of Jesus (cf. 16.15). *Blessed,* see 1.3n. **8–9:** 19.10. **10:** *Do not seal,* cf. Isa 8.16; Dan 12.4. This book is to remain unsealed because the end is imminent. **12:** *My reward is with me,* Isa 40.10; Jer 17.10. **13:** Jesus applies God's title to himself (see 1.8n.). **14:** *Blessed,* the seventh beatitude of the book; see 1.3n. *Wash,* 7.14. *The city,* the heavenly Jerusalem. **15:** A list of those who are not permitted to enter the city, characterized generally as *everyone who loves and practices falsehood.* **16:** *Root . . . of David,* Isa 11.1,10; Mt 1.1. *Morning star,* see 2.28n. **17:** *The bride,* 21.2,9. *Come,* singular in Greek, is addressed to Jesus, as in v. 20. **18–19:** A solemn warning against altering the teachings of *this book* (cf. Deut 4.2; 12.21). **20:** *The one who testifies,* Jesus Christ; see 1.2. *Amen. Come, Lord Jesus,* a response, with liturgical echoes (1 Cor 16.22), to *surely I am coming soon.* **21:** An epistolary postscript.

This page intentionally left blank

This page intentionally left blank

Essays

Tables

Bibliography

Glossary

Index

This page intentionally left blank

THE CANONS OF THE BIBLE

The contents of the Bible differ depending on the particular community using it. The major difference is between Christian Bibles, which include the New Testament, and the Jewish Bible, which does not. But there are also differences between the Hebrew Bible in Judaism and the Old Testament in Christianity, and there are differences among Christians about the contents of the Old Testament (see chart p. 2187). The discussion below will explain, within the limits of what scholars now know, how these differences came about.

DEFINITIONS

"Canon," a Greek word meaning "reed," came to refer to any straight stick that could be used for measuring. This basic meaning was extended to refer to any rule or standard by which things could be compared or judged. The Alexandrian grammarians, classical Greek writers who were not simply grammarians but also what we would call literary critics, used "canon" as their term for the list of standard or classic authors who were worthy of attention and imitation. This was not a closed category, and there were disputes about adding or removing works from the list. Furthermore, inclusion on the list merely recognized a work's quality; it did not confer any new status. Nevertheless, a canon of writings came to denote those texts that were of central importance to a given group. When used in reference to the Bible, canon has an even stronger significance: Not only is a given set of texts included, but all other texts—no matter how worthy otherwise—are excluded. This sense is expressed in a rabbinic comment on Eccl 12.12. The biblical text reads:

> Of anything beyond these [Heb *mehemah*], my child, beware. Of making many books there is no end.

The rabbinic comment states:

> Those who bring more than twenty-four books [the standard number in the Hebrew Bible; see below] into their house introduce confusion [Heb *mehumah*] into their house (Qoh. Rab. 12.12).

This suggests not only that the works in the canon are important, but that they, along with their authoritative interpretation, are sufficient in and of themselves.

THE HEBREW BIBLE

It is extremely difficult to trace how this conception of canon developed, and how it is connected to related notions, such as the eventual stabilization of the biblical text. Until the mid-twentieth century, many scholars thought that the canon of the Hebrew Bible was established at Jabneh (Jamnia), a city near the Mediterranean coast, west of Jerusalem, which was a center of Jewish learning after the destruction of the Second Temple (70 CE). According to this theory, a group of rabbis met there in about 90 CE and voted on whether certain books were canonical; at the end of this meeting, the official contents of the Hebrew Bible were supposedly established. It is now acknowledged that this overly neat reconstruction is incorrect and was based on a misunderstanding of rabbinic texts. Unfortunately, evidence is not available to offer a clear picture of how the canon of the Hebrew Bible was formed. Much of the material from early Jewish sources (for instance, the Dead Sea Scrolls, rabbinic texts, and the first-century CE historian Josephus) and Christian sources is ambiguous. Furthermore, many of the sources were written several centuries after the canon was definitively established, and are more interested in fostering a particular viewpoint than in presenting the facts objectively; they must, therefore, be used with great caution.

This much is clear: The canon of the Hebrew Bible did not develop at a single moment in time but rather in stages. There is general agreement that the Torah or Pentateuch was the first section of the Hebrew Bible to be canonized, that is, to be recognized as central by the community. Exactly when this happened is uncertain. Many scholars had associated this development with Ezra, and they saw the "law of your God" (Ezra 7.14), with which Ezra was entrusted in the fifth century BCE, as the Pentateuch. We now recognize, however, that this assertion goes beyond the evidence of the text. Though the Jewish community had recognized the Torah as central to its identity by the Persian period (sixth to fourth centuries), a conclusion suggested by citations of Torah material as authoritative in biblical books from this period (e.g., Chronicles, Ezra-Nehemiah), it is unclear exactly how this happened, or whether this development should be associated primarily with a single individual such as Ezra, or should be seen as part of a larger, more complicated process.

According to rabbinic tradition, the Torah is the first part of a tripartite (three-part) canon, followed by Nevi'im (prophets) and Ketuvim (writings), forming a work that much later was known by the acronym Tanak(h), *T*orah, *N*evi'im, *K*etuvim. Nevi'im is composed

of Joshua, Judges, Samuel (seen as one book), Kings (seen as one book)—historical works known as "the former prophets"—and "the latter prophets," consisting of Isaiah, Jeremiah, Ezekiel, and the twelve minor prophets (Hosea through Malachi, seen as one book). The order of these eight books has been relatively stable. Ketuvim is comprised of the following eleven books, which, by contrast, appear in a wide variety of orders in various book lists and biblical manuscripts: Psalms, Proverbs, Job; the "five scrolls," whose order has been especially variable, Ruth, Song of Solomon, Ecclesiastes, Lamentations, and Esther; Daniel, Ezra-Nehemiah (seen as one book), and Chronicles (seen as one book). The number of canonical books according to traditional Jewish sources is thus twenty-four (five in the Torah, eight in Nevi'im, eleven in Ketuvim).

The origin of the tripartite canon has been a topic of recent dispute, with several scholars suggesting that a two-part canon, the Torah and other works, was the original form, and that only later was it divided into three parts. It is more likely, however, that the tripartite canon is primary, and evidence for it appears in such sources as Lk 24.44, which refers to "the law of Moses, the prophets, and the psalms," and in parallel expressions in the Dead Sea Scrolls. The tripartite canon likely reflects the gradual nature of the canonization process, with Nevi'im canonized before Ketuvim. This would explain why the Ketuvim contain the book of Daniel (dating from the second century BCE), and several late historical books, such as Ezra-Nehemiah and Chronicles, which would seem more appropriately to belong with similar works such as Joshua and Kings. The tripartite canon most likely suggests, therefore, that Torah was canonized in the Persian period, followed by the canonization of Nevi'im in the late Persian or early Greek period, while the Ketuvim were canonized last, around the time of the destruction of the Second Temple (70 CE).

The tripartite order is not the only order known in antiquity, nor is the number of twenty-four books the only number mentioned in ancient Jewish sources. Josephus, the Jewish historian of the first century CE, refers to twenty-two biblical books (*Ag. Ap.* 1.42). It is not clear if he simply had a smaller canon or if, instead, his canon had the texts in a different order, combined in different ways. Some traditions put Ruth after Judges and Lamentations after Jeremiah, treating these smaller books as appendixes to the ones they follow, rather than as independent works. Such an arrangement would yield twenty-two books, a number that conveniently corresponds to the number of letters in the Hebrew alphabet; some early Christian sources also cite this as the number of books in the Bible. The arrangement of Ruth and Lamentations mentioned above is that of the Septuagint (LXX), the Greek translation of the Bible begun in Alexandria, Egypt, in the second century BCE (see "The Greek Bible" below). According to this tradition, mentioned by some early church fathers and reflected in the arrangement of the earliest comprehensive Septuagint manuscripts (fourth century CE), the Hebrew Bible is divided into four parts: Torah, Histories, Poetical and Wisdom books, and Prophets (see the Introduction to the Poetical and Wisdom Books, p. 721). This order continues to be used by Christians in their organization of the Hebrew Bible (Old Testament) materials. Older scholarship spoke of this four-part, twenty-two-book arrangement as the Alexandrian canon, in contrast to the tripartite, twenty-four-book Palestinian canon, but scholars now recognize that such a clear dichotomy never existed and therefore avoid the use of those terms.

Scholars also now recognize that even when canonization took place, the contents of the Bible did not absolutely freeze. This is true, first of all, about books whose status as scripture continued to be debated. The Bible had begun to stabilize significantly by the fourth century CE, with the development of explicit lists in the Christian community of books considered canonical (see the chart CANONS OF THE HEBREW BIBLE). Other groups, too, had their ideas about the canon; it is unlikely, for instance, that the Qumran community, most of whose texts date from the century or so immediately before and immediately after the Common Era, viewed Esther as canonical, since no clear biblical manuscript of that book has survived among the thousands of fragments discovered. In contrast, many manuscripts of *Jubilees*, a set of comments on Genesis and Exodus, have survived, and given this work's affinities with the practices of the Dead Sea community, it was probably a canonical text for them. Within rabbinic literature, the Wisdom of Jesus ben Sirach (Sirach or Ecclesiasticus) is sometimes cited with the same formula used for biblical texts and was thus, in some sense, canonical for some rabbis. Therefore, although we may speak of the canon as forming in the first century CE, there was flexibility and variation around the fringes.

This flexibility may also be seen in the extensive divergence with respect to the wording of the biblical text as shown in manuscripts from Qumran, in translations of the Hebrew Bible in the Septuagint and elsewhere, and to a lesser extent in early rabbinic citations. These differences are not just small, such as a variant spelling here or there, but are often major and affect the meaning of the text. There are cases where the text is found in two or more different recensions—identifiably different versions, revisions, or critical texts, not merely two different

CANONS OF THE HEBREW BIBLE		
JEWISH CANON	PROTESTANT CANON	ROMAN CATHOLIC/ORTHODOX CANON
Torah (LAW)	PENTATEUCH	PENTATEUCH
Genesis	Genesis	Genesis
Exodus	Exodus	Exodus
Leviticus	Leviticus	Leviticus
Numbers	Numbers	Numbers
Deuteronomy	Deuteronomy	Deuteronomy
Nevi'im (PROPHETS)	HISTORIES	HISTORIES
FORMER PROPHETS	Joshua	Joshua
Joshua	Judges	Judges
Judges	Ruth	Ruth
Samuel (1 & 2)	1 & 2 Samuel	1 & 2 Samuel
Kings (1 & 2)	1 & 2 Kings	1 & 2 Kings
	1 & 2 Chronicles	1 & 2 Chronicles
LATTER PROPHETS	Ezra	Ezra
Isaiah	Nehemiah	Nehemiah
Jeremiah	Esther	Tobit
Ezekiel		Judith
The Twelve	POETICAL/WISDOM BOOKS	Esther
Hosea	Job	1 & 2 Maccabees
Joel	Psalms	
Amos	Proverbs	POETICAL/WISDOM BOOKS
Obadiah	Ecclesiastes	Job
Jonah	Song of Solomon	Psalms
Micah		Proverbs
Nahum	PROPHETS	Ecclesiastes
Habakkuk	Isaiah	Song of Solomon
Zephaniah	Jeremiah	Wisdom of Solomon
Haggai	Lamentations	Sirach
Zechariah	Ezekiel	
Malachi	Daniel	PROPHETS
	Hosea	Isaiah
Ketubim (WRITINGS)	Joel	Jeremiah
Psalms	Amos	Lamentations
Proverbs	Obadiah	Baruch
Job	Jonah	Ezekiel
(Five Scrolls):	Micah	Daniel
Song of Solomon	Nahum	Hosea
Ruth	Habakkuk	Joel
Lamentations	Zephaniah	Amos
Ecclesiastes	Haggai	Obadiah
Esther	Zechariah	Jonah
Daniel	Malachi	Micah
Ezra-Nehemiah		Nahum
Chronicles (1 & 2)	THE APOCRYPHA	Habakkuk
	1 & 2 Esdras	Zephaniah
There is no Apocrypha	Tobit	Haggai
in the Hebrew Bible	Judith	Zechariah
	Esther (with additions)	Malachi
	Wisdom of Solomon	
	Ecclesiasticus (Sirach)	Orthodox Canons generally include
	Baruch	1 & 2 Esdras
	Letter of Jeremiah (Baruch ch 6)	Prayer of Manasseh
	Prayer of Azariah and Song of Three	Psalm 151
	Daniel and Susanna	3 Maccabees
	Daniel, Bel, & Snake	4 Maccabees (as an Appendix)
	Prayer of Manasseh	
	1 & 2 Maccabees	

copies of the same original with minor variants—which may simply vary the order of materials or may exhibit fundamentally different text-types (for example, short types versus expansive types, as with the text of Jeremiah; see the Introduction to Jeremiah, p. 1057). Early in the first millennium, however, these variations subsided as canonization and types of rabbinic exposition that paid a great deal of attention to the exact spelling of the individual word developed. This eventually brought about textual stability, though here too this was a gradual process, and the means by which it was accomplished are largely unknown.

The most basic question is why particular texts were canonized while others were not. Canonized texts within Jewish tradition were considered part of "the holy scriptures" or "that which is read" (to use rabbinic designations). Excluded texts in some cases had been translated in the Septuagint and were therefore canonized in the Christian community (see "The Greek Bible," below); others were lost, or survived as pseudepigrapha (writings falsely attributed to major biblical figures), or were preserved only in fragmentary form in the Dead Sea Scrolls. Some of these excluded texts date from after the Persian period (later than 333 BCE) and thus were seen as too recent to be eligible.

In various ways, canonical status for a book or group of books has to do with the community's views on their centrality, authority, sacredness, and inspiration. Over time these characteristics have become connected, inseparably so in some traditions; yet they are not identical, and though they overlap, they must still be viewed distinctly. The Song of Solomon, for instance, was originally an erotic love poem; by the early rabbinic period, it came to be interpreted allegorically as a love poem between God and Israel. It was also seen as the inspired composition of Solomon himself. Was it canonized before it was seen as a holy, allegorical text? In that case, its canonization might reflect a central role that it held in culture or ritual. Or was it canonized only after it was viewed as allegorical and as a composition of Solomon? In that case its significance, whether of authorship or of ideas, could have played a more important part. There is no way to judge between these two paths to canonization, and the resulting difficulty is characteristic of the problems in dealing with issues of canonization in general.

Despite such major uncertainties in our understanding of the process of canonization, however, several points seem fairly certain. First, it is likely that the final stages of canonization were a reaction to the destruction of the Second Temple in 70 CE. This crisis intensified a development, which had begun over half a millennium earlier with the destruction of the First Temple (586 BCE). Through this development Israel gradually became the people of the Book. Second, it is unlikely that canonization represents a purely top-down process, through which a small group of leaders (rabbis) determined the canon; instead, the designation of works as canonical was more like the official recognition of the works that a large segment of the community had already held to be central, holy, or authoritative. Finally, the act of canonization was remarkably inclusive, creating a body of works richly textured by a wide variety of genres, ideologies, and theologies. This is, fundamentally, a typical ancient Near Eastern process: Instead of creating a small, highly consistent text, as we perhaps would now do, those responsible for the process made efforts to include many of the viewpoints in ancient Israel, incorporating differing and even contradictory traditions into this single, and singular, book.

THE GREEK BIBLE

When Christian writings began to circulate, during the second half of the first century CE, the Bible that the early Christians used for reading and quotation was the Septuagint, the Greek translation and expansion of the Hebrew Bible that had been produced in Alexandria and other Diaspora communities for the use of Greek-speaking Jews. Probably as a result of the as yet unsettled matter of which works were canonical for the Jewish community, the Septuagint included further works: historical books (1 and 2 Maccabees, 1 Esdras); wisdom writings (The Wisdom of Solomon, The Wisdom of Jesus Ben Sirach); short works of fiction, or novellas (Tobit, Judith); an apocalypse (2 Esdras); historical legend (3 Maccabees); philosophical diatribe (4 Maccabees); an addendum to Jeremiah (Baruch and the Letter of Jeremiah); and expansions to Esther, Daniel (the Prayer of Azariah and the Song of the Three Jews, Susanna, Bel and the Dragon), and Psalms (Prayer of Manasseh and Psalm 151). (For further details see the Introduction to the Apocryphal/ Deuterocanonical Books, p. 1361, and the introductions to the individual books.)

Greek-speaking Jews in the Diaspora granted this Greek Bible an authority equivalent to that of the Hebrew texts. The legend that God had directly inspired its seventy translators was familiar to Alexandrian Jews (Philo, *Life of Moses,* 2.40). Manuscripts discovered at Qumran include Greek texts as well as a Hebrew text closer to the Septuagint than to the Masoretic text (4QSam[a]; 4Q121 Num 3.30-4.14; see "Hebrew Bible: Texts and Versions," p. 2194, for information about the Masoretic Text). Toward the end of the first century BCE, some books of the Septuagint were revised in Palestine to bring them closer to the known Hebrew text. Some

New Testament citations whose wordings are between the Greek and Hebrew texts that we have today may also reflect local revisions.

Evidently the various Jewish communities in the Greek-speaking Diaspora knew their Greek Bible in versions that differed from each other. Jewish revisions in the second century CE sought to bring the Greek text closer to the Hebrew and in some cases to replace terms that Christians had seized upon in disputes with Jews, such as "virgin" in Isa 7.14. The Theodotion version of the second century CE forms the text of most surviving manuscripts. Citations in Christian writers of the fourth century CE, as well as the Old Latin versions, suggest that there were Christian recensions of the Greek Bible during this period as well. The Septuagint, therefore, is really an anthology of translations and revisions.

Although some early Christians were aware that the Greek Bible they used was more extensive than the Hebrew Bible, its authority remained intact. Origen (185–254) recommended Judith, Tobit, and Wisdom to beginning Bible readers before the Gospels and Epistles. Athanasius (296–374) may also have shared this view: He includes Wisdom, as well as the Didache and the *Shepherd of Hermas* (two noncanonical early Christian writings) in his list of works to be used in the instruction of catechumens. Jerome (ca. 345–420) continued to cite the Greek Bible, though arguing for the superiority of the Hebrew text and canon. It was Jerome who first separated these additional works in the Greek Bible from those for which he had Hebrew originals, placing them at the end of the Old Testament.

The result of this history was that the Christian church ended up with a set of writings for its Old Testament that differed from those that for Jews formed the Hebrew Bible. Without definitive specification, Christians in the Western (Latin, later Roman) and Eastern (Greek, later Orthodox) churches used not only the works regarded as canonical by the Jewish community but also those additional works, or a selection of them, included in the Septuagint. Most Christians naturally were unaware of the differences among the biblical books; most were illiterate, and of the literate, very few could read Hebrew, the language of the original texts. The Christian churches therefore entered the second millennium with an expanded Old Testament, in an order different from the Hebrew Bible.

The Protestant Reformation coincided with a greatly increased interest in the study of ancient languages other than Latin. Among the leaders of the Reformation churches there was, along with a desire to make the Bible itself the standard of theological inquiry, a heightened effort to go behind the Latin text to the original languages in which the Bible had been written, since the Bible alone, and not the Bible plus its traditional interpretation, was being given much more importance in Reformation thought. This effort reopened the issue of the status of those Old Testament books that were not accepted by the Jews and did not have original Hebrew texts. The result was a sharp demarcation between those texts in the Hebrew Bible and all the others, with the reformers granting clear privilege to the Hebrew texts—though retaining the order of the Septuagint for them. In Martin Luther's translation, the additional works were kept in their separate section, as Jerome had originally intended, between the Hebrew Bible (Old Testament) and the New Testament. Luther wanted these texts to be available for reading and meditation, but he did not regard them as scripture. Among the Calvinist reformers the position was even more definitive: None of these additional works were acceptable, and therefore they were excluded from the Bible entirely. The Anglican church, while retaining most of them (and using some in lectionary readings and services of prayer and worship), also held that though these additional books were valuable for reading and study, they could not be used to establish doctrine.

In response to this critique of their canonical status, the Roman Catholic Counter-Reformation position was to declare these works definitively a part of the Bible. The Catholic church to this day maintains the canonical status of Tobit, Judith, the longer version of Esther, 1 and 2 Maccabees, the Wisdom of Solomon, Sirach, Baruch (including the Letter of Jeremiah), and the Additions to Daniel. The Orthodox churches also maintained the canonical status of these works, and in addition regarded some or all of the following books as canonical: 1 Esdras, the Prayer of Manasseh, Psalm 151, 3 Maccabees, 2 Esdras, and (in an appendix) 4 Maccabees. The NRSV includes headings within the Apocryphal/Deuterocanonical Books calling attention to the varying canonical status of these works.

THE NEW TESTAMENT

As noted above, the early Christian community soon began to produce writings dealing with its own history, beliefs, and traditions. By the end of the first century CE and the beginning of the second, various gospels, narratives, letters, didactic discourses, and apocalyptic writings circulated among regional Christian communities. The practice of reading from these works, along with selections from the Greek version of the Jewish Scriptures, soon arose in Christian worship. Use in this public setting implicitly began the process of attributing to these Christian writings an authority analogous to that of the

Jewish Scriptures. When disputes broke out, as they inevitably would, about beliefs or traditions, the canonical or noncanonical status of the various Christian writings became important.

The authority of smaller collections, the four Gospels and a ten-letter compilation of Pauline letters, was accepted by the second century CE. Other writings, Acts, Hebrews, Revelation, and the catholic epistles (2 and 3 John; Jude; 2 Peter) were not as widely attested in the early period. Still other Christian writings also appear as authorities in the second and third centuries, since official lists only appear in the fourth century CE as a consequence of theological polemics (see Athanasius, *Festal Letter* 39; Eusebius, *Hist. eccl.* 3.3.5; 3.25.3–4). Christian canon lists remained fluid through the sixth century with such inclusions as the *Shepherd of Hermas* or the spurious *Epistle to the Laodiceans* among the Pauline letters. The Muratorian canon, whose date and provenance are disputed (second-century Rome to fourth-century East), includes Wisdom of Solomon in the New Testament. Other collections omit Hebrews. (See the chart for a comparison of three New Testament canon lists.)

Arguments over apostolic authorship emerge as a consequence of second-century CE challenges to general Christian practice. Valentinus and other Gnostics—who taught an esoteric form of Christianity—asserted that the Jewish God was ignorant of the highest divine realms, and that therefore both the Jewish scriptures and Christian writings, which accept them, would mislead naïve believers. They claimed to possess the esoteric teaching that Jesus had given to a few favored followers including Peter, Thomas, James the brother of Jesus, and Mary Magdalene. In the second and third centuries, Gnostics produced a number of revelations said to contain that secret apostolic teaching. Marcion established a church that excluded the Old Testament because its God was not the father of Jesus. He proposed a "New Testament" comprised of a version of the Gospel of Luke and ten Pauline epistles that opened with Galatians, evidence for the difference between the Law and the gospel. Marcion's texts of the gospel and epistles were edited to erase passages contrary to his theological perspective. Some scholars credit him with the idea of a canon as a fixed, closed group of texts. Against both Gnostics and Marcionites, Irenaeus argued that the Spirit poured out on the Church enabled her to write scripture (*Adv. Haer.* 3.21.3–4) and affirmed the unity of the Old Testament and New Testament (*Adv. Haer.* 4.28.1–2). Tertullian refers to reading the "books of God" in Christian worship with no differentiation between Jewish and Christian writings (*Apology* 39.3).

Besides these disputes, in which different contents of authoritative writings clearly reflected underlying theological differences, the physical character of Christian texts contributed to the emergence of canon. From the beginning Christians used the codex (pl. codices) format—a bound volume of pages, similar to a present-day book—rather than the more traditional scroll for their writings. While a codex permits easier access than a scroll, codices were the medium of early drafts, assembled notes, and the like. Finished literary works and sacred texts like the Torah were copied onto scrolls. Scholars disagree over whether early Christian use of codices resulted from the moderate socioeconomic status of most Christians, or whether the choice of this format made a conscious statement about their contents. Perhaps the first- and second-century Christians thought that their writings differed from the ancient authority of the Torah and the prophets. Use of the codex made possible the smaller collections that would be combined in the larger canon of twenty-seven writings at the end of the fourth century CE. Early collections of Paul's letters would have been seen as relatively informal writings directed to different local churches. Gospel collections were seen as representative of the oral teaching of the apostles, not formal literary works. The codex would have been an appropriate form for such writings. Use of readings from the Gospels along with prophets in Christian worship indicates that the Gospels had come to enjoy equal authority with the Torah and the prophets by the mid-second century (see Justin Martyr, *1 Apology* 67.3–5).

Scrolls were made of papyrus or leather pieces glued or sewn together, and lengthy ones became inconvenient to handle: The average length is about 20–26 feet (6 to 8 m), though longer scrolls are known. The codex can accommodate a much longer text, so that collections of books could be bound into one volume. Codices containing the Old Testament and later the entire Christian scripture were produced from the fourth century CE on. There was not a uniform collection of books or a uniform order of presentation in the earliest codices, however. Individual Christian congregations may not have possessed copies of all writings included in canon lists. It would have been difficult to distinguish these texts from other early Christian writings also found in codices. Some Christians turned over apocryphal writings to imperial officials during the Diocletian persecution (303 CE). Confusion over unofficial and authorized writings in Christian worship persisted into the mid-fourth century CE. Canon 59 of the Synod of Laodicea (360 CE) decreed, "Private psalms should not be read in church, neither uncanon-

CANONS OF THE NEW TESTAMENT		
THE MURATORIAN CANON (SECOND TO FOURTH CENTURY)	THE LIST OF EUSEBIUS (EARLY FOURTH CENTURY)	THE CANONS OF ATHANASIUS (367 CE)
[Matthew][1]	Matthew	Matthew
[Mark]	Mark	Mark
Luke	Luke	Luke
John	John	John
Acts	Acts	Acts
1 & 2 Corinthians	Romans	James
Ephesians	1 & 2 Corinthians	1 & 2 Peter
Philippians	Ephesians	1, 2, & 3 John
Colossians	Philippians	Jude
Galatians	Colossians	Romans
1 & 2 Thessalonians	Galatians	1 & 2 Corinthians
Romans	1 & 2 Thessalonians	Galatians
Philemon	Philemon	Ephesians
Titus	Titus	Philippians
1 & 2 Timothy	1 & 2 Timothy	Colossians
Jude	[Hebrews][3]	1 & 2 Thessalonians
1 & 2 John[2]	1 Peter	Hebrews[5]
Wisdom of Solomon	1 John	1 & 2 Timothy
Revelation to John	[Revelation to John][4]	Titus
		Philemon
	Disputed books:	Revelation to John
	James	
	Jude	
	2 Peter	
	2 & 3 John	

1. The MS begins in the middle of a line, but the inclusion of Matthew and Mark is virtually certain. 2. Some scholars argue for a conjectural reading that would support inclusion of all three letters of John. 3. Elsewhere, Eusebius regards Hebrews as by Paul. 4. Also listed as "disputed." 5. Athanasius regards this as by Paul.

ized books, but only the canonical ones of the new and old covenant."

Origen's advice to those reading scripture privately presumes that the educated, Christian elite had copies of deuterocanonical writings, Gospels, epistles, psalms, and the Torah. He proposes an order of reading designed to overcome the difficulties in approaching biblical literature. First, he suggests, Esther, Judith, Tobit, or Wisdom. Then, the Gospels, epistles, and Psalms. Finally, the reader can tackle books that are difficult or seemingly without reward, such as Leviticus or Numbers (*Homilies on Numbers* 27.1). The biblical codices of the fourth and fifth centuries CE include different selections of Jewish apocrypha. In Codex Sinaiticus one finds Tobit, Judith, Wisdom, Sirach, 1 and 4 Maccabees; in Codex Vaticanus, Baruch, Letter of Jeremiah, Wisdom, Sirach, Judith, Tobit; in Codex Alexandrinus, Psalms of Solomon, 3 and 4 Maccabees. Athanasius's *Festal Letter* 39 omits the deuterocanonical writings from the Old Testament but accepts them for private reading. Though Athanasius includes all twenty-seven New Testament writings, the issue was not settled everywhere. Gregory of Nazianzus (d. 389) omits Revelation from his catalogue as do the lectionaries of the Eastern church. Didymus of Alexandria omits 2 and 3 John but cites the apostolic fathers as authoritative. Such evidence indicates that despite consensus on the four Gospels and Pauline epistles, regional variations over the rest persisted.

By the end of the fourth century, however, there was widespread agreement about which books had scriptural status. Among the large number of early Christian writings in a diversity of genres, including gospels, letters, acts, apocalypses, and didactic treatises, a smaller number had come to be widely accepted. The criteria that were implicitly, and sometimes explicitly, operative were apostolic authority—that a work was written by or attributed to one of the first generation of Christian leaders, especially Paul and the twelve apostles—and consistency with their teaching, especially as determined by ecclesiastical authorities in major centers like Rome, Alexandria, Ephesus, and Byzantium. As a result, some of the writings that had come to be considered noncanonical were lost and only rediscovered in the late nineteenth and twentieth centuries.

TEXTUAL CRITICISM

THE NEED FOR TEXTUAL CRITICISM

No original manuscript of any biblical book has survived. This situation, which may seem unusual to us, is actually quite normal for ancient writings, and even for those from only a few centuries ago. For instance, none of Shakespeare's plays is available in the original manuscript from Shakespeare's hand, and for most of them there are two or more early printed versions with many differences between them. For the biblical books, numerous copies or partial copies, varying greatly in age and quality, have been preserved in various parts of the world. Occasionally, as with the discovery of the Dead Sea Scrolls (the Qumran documents) in the mid-twentieth century, new copies turn up. Nevertheless, for the entire text of the Bible, scholars are faced with a situation in which they have multiple manuscripts that have been copied by hand so that each is a unique product, unlike a modern printed book, and therefore the copies differ among themselves in many places, some differences being trivial and some important. Given this situation, scholars have had to develop a methodology for deciding which wording should be followed in cases where the copies disagree. This methodology is called *textual criticism* because it is a way of assessing a text through critical comparison of its different copies.

Textual criticism is not used only on religious writings. Any important text where there is not a definitive, printed edition backed up with an author's manuscript or corrected by the author may need to undergo textual criticism. Typographical errors, omitted words, even graphic elements like incorrect indentions of poetic lines, can all mean that a text does not reflect the original author's intentions completely. The methods may have to be adapted to differing circumstances, but the principles have been developed over centuries and have been checked when manuscripts have been found that can confirm or refute reconstructions of a text. Most important, there is widespread agreement among textual scholars on the methods and procedures that should be used, even when the results remain in dispute.

DEFINITIONS

Establishing a critical edition of the biblical text involves the collection of all the differences between manuscript copies of any text, and the publication of all significant ones. The manuscripts are in the form of collections of biblical books, usually bound leaves, called *codices* (the plural of *codex*); *scrolls*, or long strips of papyrus or parchment rolled up, of individual books, such as those found at Qumran near the Dead Sea; *lectionaries*, or passages excerpted from texts in order to be read in worship services; and *citations*, or quotations in ancient writers, such as the Dead Sea Scrolls, the rabbis, and early church theologians. These sources, taken all together, are called *witnesses* or *authorities*, and the differences among them are called *variant readings* or simply *variants*. Also important are ancient translations, or *versions*, of the Bible, which provide indirect evidence for the original text. More details on these different forms of the texts are given under the specific discussion of the texts for the Hebrew Bible, the Apocryphal/Deuterocanonical Books, and the New Testament.

REASONS FOR VARIANTS

Variants can be of several kinds. The copyist may have misseen or misheard a word, producing a simple spelling error, or perhaps a different word. For example, in Eph 4.32 (cf. 5.2), the variants alternate between the pronouns "us" and "you." In Greek these two words are quite close (*hemin* and *humin*), differing by only one letter, and when pronounced aloud they are almost indistinguishable. In other places, the copyist's eye may inadvertently have skipped a phrase or sentence, thereby leaving out a sequence of words. In Sir 30.11–12, for example, some manuscripts omit two lines ending " . . . in his youth," possibly because the immediately preceding line also ends " . . . in his youth" and the copyist picked up after the second occurrence, omitting what came in between. Conversely, the copyist may inadvertently have gone over a phrase twice, producing a repetition. Although it may be difficult to determine when these errors took place in particular instances, there is nothing complex about them, and many variants are of this kind.

Sometimes, however, copyists seem to have tried to improve the text they were reproducing. They might have done this in several ways. They may have tried to "correct" a word or phrase that was unacceptable for one reason or another by substituting a more acceptable word or phrase. At 1 Tim 5.16, for example, the text reads "believing woman," and the translators' note says that some manuscripts have "believing man or woman," others "believing man." Here the translators have chosen the variant that is the most unusual, assuming that a copyist would more likely expand the phrase, or substitute "man" for "woman," rather than the reverse, in a cultural context that tended to treat women as less im-

portant than men. Copyists might also have been aware of a similar passage in another biblical book, and tried to make the passage they were copying conform to that. For example, Lk 11.2, the beginning of the Lord's Prayer, has variant readings that are probably an effort to make it conform to Mt 6.9. Copyists might also have tried to make the text support a particular theological view or belief. For instance, at Deut 32.8, some manuscripts read "according to the number of the sons of God" (NRSV "the gods," a paraphrase), while others read "according to the number of the sons of Israel" (NRSV "Israelites"). There is general agreement that the second variant was introduced by a scribe trying to avoid a polytheistic wording. Copying a manuscript was not necessarily just a mechanical process, but could involve deliberate changes for a number of reasons.

ANCIENT TRANSLATIONS

These methods of trying to determine the correct reading do not always provide enough evidence, or it may be that none of the existing manuscripts seems to have preserved the exact wording of the original author. Another source of information that scholars turn to is very early translations of the Bible. These early translations are often called *versions*, and they were in use among Jews or Christians whose primary languages were other than the ones used in the original writings. They include translations of the Hebrew Bible into Greek (for instance, the Septuagint), Aramaic (translations and paraphrases called Targums), Syriac (the Peshitta), and Latin (the Vulgate), and translations of part or all of the Christian scriptures into Syriac, Coptic, and Latin.

These versions are useful to translators because the early stage at which they were made provides insight into forms of the biblical text that may be closer to the original writings. They can therefore be consulted for help in determining what is more likely to be an original reading, or when the best manuscripts of the original language texts have gaps or obvious errors. In many translations, including the NRSV, these ancient versions are cited in the footnotes of the Hebrew Bible to explain where and why the translators have chosen an alternative reading or translated something other than the Hebrew text that has come down to us. For readers unfamiliar with the nomenclature of these ancient documents, however, such notes may not convey very much information. The versions are discussed in more detail in the section on "The Hebrew Bible: Texts and Versions."

THE PROCESS OF TEXTUAL CRITICISM

In order to establish the best possible text, scholars must first collect all of the significant variants and information about the manuscripts in which they occur. As a practical matter, a *critical text*—one with a version of the Greek or Hebrew on the page and an *apparatus*, usually footnotes giving variants and their source manuscripts—is published. Scholars must then determine whether they will accept the readings in the text or adopt instead one of the alternatives.

They may first rely on external evidence. This would include matters such as the age of the manuscript in which the variant occurs, since older manuscripts are generally closer to the original than later ones; or whether the variant occurs in manuscripts from one region only or in those from widely different regions. They will also use internal evidence: In general, shorter readings are preferable to longer ones, since scribes are more likely to add to a text than to delete materials (though, in the case of offensive or theologically challenging texts, deletion must be considered); difficult readings, including awkward phrases, coarse words, and poor grammar, are preferable to smoother ones, since scribes might try to "correct" such difficulties; and stylistic considerations can help judgments about how a particular author would have written.

The task would be difficult enough if scholars could be sure that the original wording in any place with a variant reading was preserved in at least one manuscript; but even that is not necessarily the case. There are instances where no existing manuscript is likely to preserve the original wording: where none of the variants seem to be right, or where the original text does not make sense as far as current scholarship can determine. In such cases scholars must assume that the original wording of the text has been lost or distorted in the course of the copying process. They then have several options open to them. One (called *conjectural emendation*) is to conjecture, based on the text as it now stands, what the original wording might have been. This can often be based on a scholar's general knowledge of the ancient languages, just as an English speaker can notice, and mentally correct, a typographical error in a modern book without having access to the author's manuscript. Another possibility is to consult the ancient versions. Finally, scholars may have to admit defeat and acknowledge that, given the current state of our knowledge, it is impossible to determine what the original wording might have been. For instance, at 1 Sam 13.1, the translation shows, by the use of ellipsis, that a word (the age of Saul when he began to reign) is missing. The translators' note points out that this number is not in the Hebrew text, and that the obvious second place to look for it, the ancient Greek translation known as the Septuagint, does not include any part of the verse. It is therefore impossible to recover the

original wording unless some other ancient manuscript source is discovered.

The translators' notes in the NRSV call attention to all of these matters and many others as well. These notes, printed in italic type and keyed to the text by superscript letters, can be found at the bottom of the right-hand column of the translation on each page. The abbreviations used in these notes are given in the discussion below, and are listed on p. xxii.

THE HEBREW BIBLE: TEXTS AND VERSIONS

The Masoretic Text

The basic text for the Hebrew Bible today is called the *Masoretic Text* (MT), an edition of the Hebrew that was standardized in the fifth to tenth centuries CE by rabbinic scholars (called *masoretes*, from *massorah*, probably "what is handed down," that is, "tradition"). The Masoretic Text accomplished two things: It settled upon a *consonantal* text, that is, it established specific choices for the letters of the Hebrew words in the text; and it *pointed* those letters with a system of markings that indicated which vowels should be read with the Hebrew letters. This two-part decision was necessary because classical Hebrew writing was in effect a system of consonants, with only a few ways of indicating vowel sounds. Words with the same consonants but different vowels would look the same, as would the English words "untrained" and "interned" if they were both spelled "ntrnd." In the notes to the Hebrew Bible of the NRSV, "Heb" may refer to the consonantal (unpointed) Hebrew text, and MT to the same text with the vowel pointings included. The distinction is an important one, because the consonants are more likely to represent the original text than are the vowel sounds, which were added later, though based on older traditions. If the same consonants will make more sense with different vowels, the NRSV (and most other modern translations) will assume that those different vowels yield a word that is closer to the original text.

When ancient scholars had gotten the Masoretic Text into its final form, it became the standard text-form and alternative text-traditions were lost. It was therefore the case that all copies of the Hebrew Bible that were known were based upon this Masoretic Text, and although there were variants among the different copies, there was no way to check independently on the textual basis of most of the Hebrew Bible. With a few exceptions, this remained the case until the discovery of the Dead Sea Scrolls (the documents of the Qumran community) in 1947. Among the scrolls were manuscripts of most books of the Hebrew Bible that were more than a thousand years older than the oldest manuscripts available up to that point. These more ancient copies of the Hebrew text have shed light on some passages in the traditional form of the biblical text. For example, at 1 Sam 10.27–11.1 in the traditional text there is no indication of the background to the conflict between King Nahash of Ammon and the men of Jabesh-gilead. But in a Qumran manuscript of 2 Samuel there is a continuation of 10.27 and an opening phrase for 11.1 that explains the context, and the NRSV includes them.

Ancient Versions of the Hebrew Bible

In cases where no form of the Hebrew text gives a reading that is satisfactory, scholars can turn to the ancient versions. The assistance these ancient versions give to textual critics and translators is partly due to the situation with regard to the text of the Hebrew Bible explained above. These early translations were made from Greek or Hebrew texts that, for the most part, are earlier than those copies of the Masoretic Text that have survived to the present. They therefore can give guidance to scholars about the state of the text, and even choices of wording, that are not represented in existing manuscripts. They can also confirm readings as being more likely. Of course, these ancient translations are themselves preserved only in copies, so that all of the considerations that apply to the original language texts of the Bible also apply to them: It is necessary to establish a critical text for them by comparing variant readings. They must therefore be used with caution, and they cannot be relied upon absolutely. This is, of course, a standard of comparison at one remove from the text itself: Scholars must look at the Greek, for instance, in the Septuagint, and conjecture or assume what the Hebrew would have been in order to result in a particular rendition into Greek. Nevertheless, it is a valuable source of clues.

For example, at 1 Sam 10.1, the text of the Septuagint is longer than that of the Hebrew Bible. In examining the difference, scholars have theorized that a copyist of the Hebrew text inadvertently omitted part of the verse because the same phrase occurs twice in it, and the copyist went directly from one to the other, omitting what was in between.

Names and Character of the Ancient Versions

The ancient versions of the Bible are referred to in a variety of ways by scholars. Following is a list, by language, of the chief versions.

Greek: The most prominent Greek version, and the oldest surviving translation of the Hebrew Bible, is the Septuagint, which was translated beginning in the third century BCE for use of Jews who were living in the Diaspora in Alexandria, Egypt, and other places around the Mediterranean after the conquests of Alexander the Great, and who therefore spoke Greek. The Septuagint, from a word

meaning "seventy" because of a legend that seventy or seventy-two scholars worked on it, is abbreviated LXX (the Roman numerals for seventy) and, in the notes to the NRSV of the Hebrew text, is referred to as "Gk." Three later Greek versions—by Aquila, Symmachus, and Theodotion—were produced for the use of Jews after Christians had taken over the Septuagint and the increasing conflict between Jews and Christians about the interpretation of the Jewish scriptures had led Jews to stop using the Septuagint. These versions are also sometimes used by translators, but none of them has survived in its entirety.

Aramaic: Aramaic was the official language of the Persian Empire, and the Jewish people who lived under Persian domination spoke Aramaic, which eventually supplanted Hebrew as the ordinary language of Jews. Aramaic is a Semitic language, like Hebrew, and shares some vocabulary with it, but Aramaic speakers cannot easily understand Hebrew. It was therefore necessary to provide translations of the Hebrew Bible for Aramaic speakers. Read aloud in liturgical contexts, after the Hebrew had been read (see Neh 8.7 for an early example), these translations, called Targums, are often more paraphrases than literal translations. Most date to the early centuries of the Common Era. They nevertheless provide useful information about earlier forms of the Hebrew text. In the NRSV notes they are abbreviated "Tg."

Syriac: The Syriac language is a form of Aramaic and was spoken by Jews in northern Syria who translated their Bible into it. The *Peshitta* (which means "simple," that is, a plain translation without textual comments) was prepared for the use of Jews and later taken over by Syriac-speaking Christians, who added a Syriac version of the New Testament to it. In the NRSV notes it is abbreviated "Syr." There is also a Syriac translation of the Septuagint that was part of a *hexapla* or "sixfold" Bible; in the NRSV notes this is abbreviated "Syr H."

Latin: Two Latin translations are used by scholars. The first, the "Old Latin" version, was actually a Latin translation of the Septuagint and of the New Testament dating from before the fourth century CE. More useful is the Vulgate, the translation prepared in the fourth century by the great Christian biblical scholar Jerome. Jerome, in translating his Old Testament, worked directly from the Hebrew text of the time, and his version therefore can be helpful in determining original readings in that text. In the NRSV notes the Old Latin version is abbreviated "OL," and the Vulgate is abbreviated "Vg."

THE APOCRYPHAL/DEUTEROCANONICAL BOOKS: TEXTS AND VERSIONS

For most of the Apocryphal/Deuterocanonical Books, the translational basis is the Septuagint text. Various manuscripts of the Septuagint have survived, and the complete text is available in a critical edition prepared by Alfred Rahlfs and published in 1935. A newer critical text is in process of publication—the Gottingen Septuagint project—but it is not yet complete. The NRSV has used the newer text when it is available, for example in Esther and Sirach. The translators used Theodotion's version for the Additions to Daniel. For the Wisdom of Jesus ben Sira (Sirach or Ecclesiasticus), Hebrew manuscripts of large parts of the text have been discovered, and the NRSV has therefore used the Hebrew text instead of the Greek when it seems to offer a better alternative; in addition, there are Syriac and Latin versions of this book that also shed light on the text. For 2 Esdras, scholars agree that the best text is the Latin; they also consult versions in Syriac, Ethiopic, Arabic, Armenian, and Georgian.

THE NEW TESTAMENT: TEXTS AND VERSIONS

New Testament Manuscripts

Text critics must evaluate the evidence of thousands of manuscripts in order to establish the wording of the Greek New Testament. (See "The Process of Textual Criticism," p. 2193) This is a very large number of surviving copies for a collection of ancient documents; many classical texts survive in only a few copies. The overwhelming majority of these New Testament manuscripts (ca. 2,400) contain full or partial Gospel texts, followed by texts containing all or portions of the Pauline epistles (ca. 800). Revelation survives in only 287 copies. The manuscripts consist of papyrus fragments (some of only a few pages, some even shorter, preserving only a few verses); *uncials*, very early manuscripts written in letters unconnected to each other and similar to upper-case letters; and *minuscules*, later manuscripts written in a script that connects the letters and in which lower-case letters predominate. In addition to manuscript evidence, citations in Christian writers, lectionaries (excerpted passages for liturgical reading), and translations into other languages may shed light on the earliest wording of the text. With such a wealth of evidence, there is no phrase in the New Testament for which there is not some variant. Most involve issues of grammar, style, or copyists' corrections. Textual variants that affect the theological meaning of the text are fewer.

With such a wealth of information about the New Testament text, scholars have had to develop ways of classifying not only individual manuscripts but groups of copies so that they can more readily deal with all of the variants. If they can determine, for example, that a group of copies all descended from a common ancestor, they can assess the variants for that group together and compare them with other groups that descend from dif-

ferent early copies. Variants that occur in two or more of these "families" have a much higher probability of being original than variants that may have arisen within only one group, for instance.

Most of the known variants to the text of the New Testament originated in the first two centuries of its existence. As Christianity spread throughout the Mediterranean, different groups had their own copies of the various New Testament documents, in some cases excluding books that are now included, or including books that are now excluded. (See the essay on "The Canons of the Bible.") In addition, the Greek copies began to diverge, and they also began to translate the texts into other languages: Latin, Syriac, and Coptic. The Latin text, because of the dominance of the Latin language in the western Roman Empire, became the most prevalent, and the Greek text was used consistently only in the east, in the area around Constantinople (modern Istanbul). This Greek text, preserved and copied in the Orthodox churches of the east, became known as the *Byzantine* text, and for many centuries it was the only or main version of the Greek text available. Beginning in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries, however, scholars began to discover other early texts. Early in the twentieth century, text-critics proposed families or text-types linked to the major regions of Christianity: Alexandria in Egypt, to the south; the east represented by Caesarea, on the eastern coast of the Mediterranean; and the west represented by Italy/Gaul and Africa. At first scholars assumed that the Byzantine text resulted from combinations of these types, but such a genealogy of the various text-types could not explain the mixture of readings found in the papyri and the oldest surviving codices. The so-called *Alexandrian* tradition, texts from the area of Egypt that included many of the most ancient papyrus copies (preserved in the very dry climate of that area), became in the nineteenth century a favored basis for establishing original readings. But the complexity of variants has increasingly made this approach, too, untenable.

Since the papyri evidence from the earliest centuries represents copies of particular books of the New Testament, it is likely that the scribes who set out to produce codices containing the entire Bible in the fourth century would have had a variety of different text-types for the individual books. No codex, therefore, is of uniform reliability. Codex Alexandrinus (early fifth century CE) is, as it turns out, a poor witness for the Gospels, but many critics consider it the best text of Revelation, even superior to a third-century papyrus copy. The age of a manuscript, therefore, does not necessarily determine the value of its readings, although it is one factor among many that scholars need to take into account. Writings such as Revelation and the shorter catholic epistles (2 and 3 John; Jude; 2 Peter), which were not widely used as scripture until the fourth century, have a different textual tradition than the Gospels and the Pauline epistles.

Consequently, most text critics do not begin with a particular manuscript tradition and correct it to establish the text. Instead, the wealth and diversity of manuscript evidence have enabled critics to produce a Greek text based on *eclectic* principles: choosing the best readings from a variety of manuscript sources. This range of choice has also meant that New Testament scholars do not need to make conjectural emendations of the text, a practice common in the editing of other ancient texts, including the Hebrew Bible, where few early manuscripts are available. The best text for a particular passage requires detailed study of all preserved variants. Internal principles of textual criticism include consideration of readings that are more likely to be scribal corrections or errors, that fit the theological biases of an author or later editors, or that could have given rise to the other known variants.

The NRSV translation is based on a modern eclectic edition of the Greek text, *Nestle-Aland* 26th edition (or the equivalent *United Bible Societies Greek New Testament* 3rd edition, but incorporating information from the 4th edition as well). Textual variants in wording, both stylistic and theologically significant, are indicated in the translators' notes as "other ancient authorities." In order to understand the basis for these alternative translations, readers should consult the text-critical notes in the Greek text or a commentary on the Greek text.

Versions of the New Testament

The early Christian orientation toward the written word led to translation of the Bible into other languages for converts who did not speak Greek. Evidence from Old Latin, Syriac, and Coptic translations from the late second and third centuries CE figures in text-criticism. Ethiopic (mid-fourth century), Armenian (early fifth century), and Old Slavonic (late ninth century) translations form key moments in the cultural life of the people. Many of the apocryphal writings are preserved in Syriac, Coptic, and Armenian, thus providing a wider literature associated with the Bible.

Often manuscript evidence for the earliest translations is scanty or only derived from quotations. Tertullian's quotations appear to be his own translation into Latin, so the first evidence for the text appears in Cyprian (250 CE). Augustine and Jerome both complain about the large number of poor translations in circulation. Jerome was commissioned by Pope Damascus to produce a Latin Bible (ca. 383). His revised Gospels and translation of the

Hebrew Bible were combined with other translations for the remaining books of the Old and New Testaments to produce a Latin version known as the Vulgate. The Vulgate enjoyed wide circulation from the seventh century CE and was officially promulgated as the text of the Roman Catholic Church by Pope Sixtus V (1590). A neo-Vulgate with alterations in the text, style, and corrections to bring the translation closer to the Greek text was promulgated by John Paul II (1979).

The earliest evidence for the Syriac New Testament comes from a harmony of the Gospels, *The Diatessaron*, composed by Tatian in the second century CE. It is the source of citations in the commentary by Ephraem (310–373 CE). Texts from Antioch contributed to revisions of the Syriac New Testament, the Peshitta or common version (earliest manuscripts from the mid-fifth century CE), and a translation by Philoxenus (507/508 CE). The oldest versions of the New Testament translated into the Sahidic dialect of Coptic emerge in the third century CE. In the fourth century the whole Bible was translated into the Bohairic dialect, which became the official language of Coptic Christianity. A number of manuscripts found in the twentieth century remain to be assembled, catalogued, and incorporated into editions of the Coptic text.

TRANSLATION OF THE BIBLE INTO ENGLISH

PRINCIPLES OF TRANSLATION

Bible translation, though in principle the same as any other translation, is distinguished from it by two considerations: First, the reverence in which adherents of Judaism and Christianity hold the text, leading to concerns whenever a new translation is published that the text be treated with the respect it deserves; and second, the great popularity of the Bible, which has led to the proliferation of translations to meet every conceivable need and audience. In order to find one's way among the great variety of Bible translations available today, it is important to understand the principles underlying all efforts at translation.

In any translation from one language to another—the "source" language, or the original, and the "target" language, or the translation—two basic approaches define the limits at either end of a continuum of methods. The technical names for these "pure" translation approaches are *formal equivalence* and *dynamic equivalence*. Formal equivalence is usually explained as "word-for-word" translation, and dynamic equivalence as "sense-for-sense" or "meaning-for-meaning." In general, formal equivalence places more importance on the qualities of the source language, and dynamic equivalence is more concerned with the resulting readability in the target language.

Except where the source and the target languages are closely related, however, a purely word-for-word approach would be almost unreadable. Such is the case with translations of the Bible: ancient Greek, Hebrew, Aramaic, and Latin (the languages of the original texts) are very different from modern English. Here, for example, is Mt 6.9–10 in a word-for-word rendering of the original Greek:

> Father of us who in the heavens, be holy the name of you;
> come the kingdom of you;
> become the will of you as in heaven and upon earth.

While it would be possible to puzzle out some meaning from this, it is clear that it is not English, and that an entire Bible translated along these lines would never be read. Most translations, therefore, move in the direction of dynamic equivalence, at least far enough to make sure that their representation of the original text makes sense in English. Some are more strict, for example always trying to use the same English word to translate a given Greek or Hebrew word (a characteristic known as "consistency"); some are freer, trying to achieve a more colloquial English style and using what seems to be the best English word for a Greek or Hebrew word in each separate context, regardless of how the same Greek or Hebrew word might be translated elsewhere. The result is a great range of translation choices for the Bible in English, from those suited to close study to those designed for readability, and readers can usually find a translation that will make sense to them and fit their needs.

In the case of ancient documents, and especially those of religious significance like the Bible, there are further complicating factors. Translations must find ways to deal with cultural differences between the worlds of the ancient writers and modern readers; they often try to

accommodate traditional phrasing or translations, especially in key passages; and they must take into account the actual uses to which the translation will be put, including uses on formal and significant occasions.

Cultural differences come into consideration when a passage to be translated presents, not a puzzle about the dictionary definition of a word, but one about the way the word was used in its original cultural environment. An example occurs in the following passages: "the two kidneys with the fat that is on them" (Lev 3.4); "He slashes open my kidneys" (Job 16.13); and "In the night also my heart instructs me" (Ps 16.7). The word translated "heart" in the Psalm and "kidneys" in Leviticus and Job is the same Hebrew word, *kelayot* (or *kilyotay*, "my kidneys"). Literally it means the bodily organs, and in the passage from Leviticus that is clearly its meaning: The passage is discussing which parts of an animal will be burnt as a sacrifice. As a metaphor, however, it means the inner life of the human person, and that meaning is represented in the Psalm. The verse from Job falls somewhere in between. In its context, it is part of a catalogue of images of physical torture, intended to express spiritual or psychological suffering, many of which cannot be taken literally. There is a question whether it should be translated literally here. An ancient Israelite listening to these passages would have differentiated among this range of meanings, just as we would differentiate among "stomach trouble" and "I have no stomach for that job," or "heart surgery," "My heart stood still," and "Have a heart." In the case of the Hebrew word, the translation has to make that distinction for us, since the literal rendering "kidneys" in the passage from Psalms would make no sense, or the wrong sense, to a modern reader.

A related problem sometimes arises when translators have to consider whether to add a word to the text to make something clear to a modern reader that the ancient audience would have understood without explanation. For example, in 2 Pet 2.14, the literal translation "children of a curse" is rendered in the NRSV as "Accursed children!" This conveys the correct meaning in idiomatic English, but it does not convey to the modern reader what ancient hearers would assume, that the curse is from God. The New English Bible translation does this effectively by adding a word to make this implicit meaning explicit: "God's curse is on them."

An example of a translation trying to accommodate traditional understanding occurs in Jn 1.18, where the NRSV translates a Greek phrase as "God the only Son," and a footnote calls attention to two other possibilities. The Greek in actuality has three variants: *monogenes theos*, "only God"; *ho monogenes theos*, "the only God"; and *ho monogenes huios*, "the only Son." The translators first must decide how to render the Greek adjective *monogenes*. Older versions translate it as "only-begotten," but it really means something like "only one of its kind," i.e., "unique." Then they must determine which noun—"God" or "Son"—this adjective is supposed to modify. The manuscript evidence tends to support "God," since that variant appears in two papyri from the early third century CE, and also in manuscripts and citations from the fourth century. The variant "Son" only appears in the fifth century, in Codex Alexandrinus, and in later manuscripts. Since "only God" is present earlier, closer to the original time of writing, and since it is awkward, whereas "only Son" could be an effort to smooth out the text, it would seem that "only God" is the original reading. The NRSV effort to combine the two phrases is probably not correct.

Variety of use affects Bible translation particularly because many translations are intended for audiences that are far beyond the classroom or the scholar's study. In particular, Bible translations are intended to be read aloud in worship services, and bearing this in mind, many translators will try to use an English style that is more formal or elevated than that in the underlying text. Passages from the Bible are used in ceremonies marking significant life events, like marriage; on important national occasions, like the inauguration of a president; and to help express and channel great communal emotions, as in the funeral of a national leader. A translation that is too colloquial could seem jarring in such contexts.

Translations, thus, rather than being static, fixed creations that plug in one word in English for one word in the original language, are dynamic mediations between different and sometimes opposing tendencies. Insofar as they take the original language seriously as a controlling factor, they will tend to be word-for-word renderings; insofar as they take English seriously, they will tend more toward a meaning-for-meaning approach. They will try to represent not just the language, but the thought and cultural background, of the original writers and audiences; but they must also be sensitive to, and aware of, the great variety of needs among contemporary readers.

ENGLISH VERSIONS OF THE BIBLE

Prior to the sixteenth century, translations of the Bible into English were made from the Latin Vulgate instead of from Hebrew or Greek, and existed only in manuscript copies. The first English versions of the entire Bible were the two associated with John Wycliffe, translated from the Vulgate between 1380 and 1397. Part of the work on the first version was done by Wycliffe himself, and the rest, including all of the second, by scholars who were his immediate associates. Nicholas Hereford was largely responsible for the first version, which was completed before Wycliffe's death. John Purvey, Wycliffe's secretary,

was responsible for the second version, which was completed by 1397. In the "General Prologue" to the second version Purvey states that it is best "to translate after the sentence and not only after the words, so that the sentence be as open, or opener, in English as Latin"—that is, so that the meaning be as clear, or clearer.

The sixteenth century brought the Bible in English to the common people as a printed book. The first English version directly translated from the Hebrew and Greek was the work of William Tyndale: The New Testament was published in 1526, the Pentateuch in 1530, and Jonah in 1531. In 1534 and 1535 he published revised versions of the New Testament, which were the basis of all later revisions and the main source of the authorized versions of the New Testament in English. Tyndale was finally betrayed into the hands of his enemies and in October 1536 was strangled and burned at the stake.

Miles Coverdale's translation appeared in 1535, the first complete Bible in English. It was not a direct translation from the original languages, but was based on two Latin versions and the translations by Tyndale into English, and by the European reformers Luther and Zwingli into German. In 1537 Matthew's Bible was published. "Thomas Matthew" was a pseudonym of John Rogers, a friend of Tyndale, who took Tyndale's manuscript translations of the books of the Old Testament from Joshua to 2 Chronicles, together with Tyndale's printed translations of the Pentateuch and the New Testament, and published them in this one volume, which he completed by adding Coverdale's version of the rest of the Old Testament and the Apocrypha. In 1539 Richard Taverner, a layman and a lawyer, published a revision of Matthew's Bible, one edition of which was issued in parts so that people who could not afford to purchase the whole Bible might buy one or more parts. Taverner was a good Greek scholar and made some changes in the translation of the New Testament that have been kept in later versions. Meanwhile at Paris, in early 1538, Miles Coverdale had begun a new revision of Matthew's Bible, which had been commissioned by Sir Thomas Cromwell, Secretary to King Henry VIII and Vicar General. The Great Bible, as this was called, was published at London in 1539. It was the first authorized English version, and a copy was ordered to be placed in every church. Until very recently, the Psalms in the *Book of Common Prayer* were from this translation. A revision of the Great Bible under the auspices of the Anglican bishops, the Bishops' Bible, was published in 1568 and revised in 1572. This revised edition was to become the basis of the King James Version.

Under the Roman Catholic Queen Mary the printing of the English Bible ceased, and its use in the churches was forbidden. Many English Protestants sought refuge on the Continent, and a group of these at Geneva undertook the revision of the English Bible. The Geneva version appeared in 1560. It was a convenient size instead of an unwieldy folio and was the first English version to use numbered verses, each set off as a separate paragraph. The Geneva Bible was never authorized, but it became the household Bible of the English-speaking nations for three-quarters of a century. It was the Bible of Shakespeare, John Bunyan, and the Puritans.

In 1582 an English translation of the New Testament was published at Rheims in France, made from the Latin by Roman Catholic scholars who had been forced to leave England led by Gregory Martin, who had been trained at Oxford University. A similar translation of the Old Testament was published at Douay in France in 1609.

On February 10, 1604, after a conference "for hearing and for the determining things pretended to be amiss in the church," King James I ordained: "That a translation be made of the whole Bible, as consonant as can be to the original Hebrew and Greek; and this to be set out and printed without any marginal notes, and only to be used in all churches of England in time of divine service." He appointed fifty-four translators, forty-eight of whom are named in the records that have come down. They worked in six companies, to each of which was assigned a section of the Bible. Two companies met at Oxford, two at Cambridge, and two at Westminster. Each company would consider the work of the other companies, and differences would be resolved by correspondence if possible, and if not, be referred to the general meeting at the end. This was a meeting at London of a committee of six, made up of two representatives from the companies at each of the three centers, which devoted nine months to final editing. Dr. Myles Smith, of Oxford University, wrote an informative preface, "The Translators to the Reader." This Bible, with a dedication to King James, was published in 1611.

An outstanding merit of the King James Version is the music of its cadences, the result of a sure instinct for what would sound well when read aloud. For example, here are the successive translations of Prov 3.17, in praise of wisdom, where Coverdale, the Great Bible, and the Bishops' Bible agree in reading: "Her wayes are pleasant wayes and all her paths are peaceable." The Geneva Bible has: "Her wayes are wayes of pleasure and all her pathes prosperitie." The King James Version gives to the verse a perfect melody: "Her wayes are wayes of pleasantnesse, and all her pathes are peace."

The English Bible owes more to William Tyndale than to anyone else because the basic structure of his translation has endured. It has been estimated that about 60 percent of the text of the English Bible achieved its final literary form before the King James Version appeared,

and that in the King James Version at least one-third of the New Testament is worded exactly as in Tyndale's New Testament, while the sentences of the remaining two-thirds follow Tyndale's general pattern.

For two and a half centuries the King James Version maintained its place as the Authorized Version of the English-speaking peoples, without any serious consideration of its revision, but in 1870 the Convocation of the Province of Canterbury appointed a committee to undertake a revision. The Revised Version of the New Testament was published in 1881, the Old Testament in 1885, and the Apocrypha in 1895. The American Standard Version, containing the renderings preferred by the American scholars who had cooperated in the work of revision, was published in 1901. In 1928 the copyright of the American Standard Version was acquired by the International Council of Religious Education, and thus passed into the ownership of the churches of the United States and Canada that were associated in this Council through their boards of education and publication. The Council appointed a committee of Protestant scholars to have charge of the text of the American Standard Version and to undertake inquiry as to whether further revision was necessary. After more than two years of study and experimental work, this committee decided that there was need for a thorough revision of the version of 1901, which would stay as close to the King James tradition as it could in the light of present knowledge of the Hebrew and Greek texts and their meaning on the one hand, and present usage of English on the other. In 1937 the revision was authorized by the Council. The Revised Standard Version of the New Testament was published in 1946, the Old Testament in 1952, and the Apocrypha in 1957. The Revised Standard Version took full account of the new knowledge of the history, geography, religions, and cultures of Bible lands, and of rich new resources for understanding the vocabulary, grammar, and idioms of the ancient languages. It also returned to the basic structure and more natural cadence of the Tyndale-King James tradition.

The second half of the twentieth century saw the publication of many translations and revisions of the English Bible. In fact, between 1952 and 1990, when the New Revised Standard Version was published, no fewer than twenty-six different renderings of the complete English Bible were issued, with twenty-five additional translations and revisions of the New Testament. Among these the following Jewish, Protestant, and Catholic translations are of special note.

In 1955 the Jewish Publication Society, whose first translation of the Hebrew Scriptures had appeared in 1917, initiated a new translation. *The Torah, The Five Books of Moses*, was published in 1962, *The Prophets* (*Nevi'im*) in 1978, and *The Writings* (*Kethuvim*) in 1982. These three volumes, with revisions, were brought together in 1985 under the title *Tanakh, A New Translation of the Holy Scriptures According to the Traditional Hebrew Text*. The *Tanakh* has useful footnotes of three kinds—textual, translational, and explanatory—and is notable for its perceptive handling of Hebrew vocabulary and syntax in contemporary English.

A newer rendering of the Hebrew Bible, still in process, is that of Everett Fox, which tries to preserve as much as possible of Hebrew idiom in its English style. Portions that have so far appeared are Genesis (In the Beginning), 1983; Exodus (Now These are the Names), 1986; Torah (The Five Books of Moses), 1995; 1–2 Samuel (Give Us a King! Samuel, Saul, and David), 1999.

In the year that the RSV New Testament was published (1946), British Protestant churches embarked on a totally new translation of the scriptures, The New English Bible; the New Testament appeared in 1961, and a revised New Testament, along with the Old Testament and Apocrypha, in 1970. At that time, C. H. Dodd, director of the enterprise and chairman of the New Testament translation panel, stated that this was "not another revision of an old version, but a genuinely new translation of the original, which should be frankly contemporary in vocabulary, idiom, style and rhythm-not to supersede the Authorized Version, but as a second version alongside it." The rendering is free and vigorous, tending at places to be periphrastic. Here and there the translators have rearranged the sequence of verses and sections of the text. A revision, under the chairmanship of W. D. McHardy, was published as the Revised English Bible in 1989.

The first English Bible made from the original Hebrew and Greek languages that received Roman Catholic approval was The Revised Standard Version Catholic Edition, of which the New Testament was published in 1965 and the complete Bible in 1966. In it the Deuterocanonical Books were placed among the Old Testament books in accord with the Catholic canon. It was prepared by the Catholic Biblical Association of Great Britain with the consent of the Revised Standard Version Bible Committee and the Division of Christian Education of the National Council of Churches of Christ in the U.S.A. There are no changes in the Old Testament text; the sixty-seven changes in the New Testament, made for liturgical and theological reasons, are carefully noted in an appendix. A significant further advance toward a Common Bible was achieved with the publication of the RSV without any changes whatever in the Oxford Annotated Bible with the Apocrypha (1966), to which Richard Cardinal Cushing of Boston granted the imprimatur.

The first English translation of the Bible made from the original languages by Catholic scholars was The Je-

rusalem Bible, published in 1966. With close comparison with the Hebrew and Greek, it is based on the French translation made under the direction of l'École Biblique of Jerusalem by a committee of scholars headed by Père Roland de Vaux, O.P., and popularly known as La Bible de Jérusalem. The English translation was made by a British Committee headed by Alexander Jones, L.S.S., of Christ's College, Liverpool. The translation is well done and has been warmly received. At the same time it must be acknowledged that occasionally French idiom intrudes. "Yahweh" is used instead of the substitute, the LORD. The volume is provided with useful introductions and notes, and "thee," "thou," and "thine" disappear from the text. A full revision was published in 1985 as The New Jerusalem Bible under the supervision of Henry Wansbrough of Ampleforth Abbey, York.

The New American Bible, a translation by members of the Catholic Biblical Association of America sponsored by the U.S. Bishops' Conference, was published in 1970. The completed work renders the text into modern American language. A revision, now in process, completed the New Testament in 1987.

For readers new to English, the American Bible Society issued "Good News for Modern Man," a translation of the New Testament by Robert G. Bratcher, in 1966. Also called Today's English Version, it uses simplified syntax and a limited vocabulary. The Old Testament, prepared by a committee, came out in 1976, and the Deuterocanonical/Apocryphal books in 1979. The popularity of the Good News Bible spurred the preparation of another modern-speech Bible. This is the New International Version, sponsored by the New York Bible Society (subsequently the New York International Bible Society). The New Testament was published in 1973 and the complete Bible in 1978. Less colloquial than Today's English Version, and more literal than the New English Bible, the version was prepared by twenty teams of translators from evangelical Protestant traditions in the United States, Canada, Australia, New Zealand, and Great Britain.

The ecumenicity of our times is in various degrees represented in these newer translations, but perhaps most of all in the New Revised Standard Version. The committee that produced the Revised Standard Version is a continuing committee, holding meetings at regular intervals and having charge of the RSV text, and it has become both international and ecumenical, with the appointment of Catholic and Protestant members from Great Britain, Canada, and the United States. Since 1946 an American Jewish scholar had been a member of the Old Testament section. More recently a Greek Orthodox scholar joined. In 1974 the Division of Christian Education of the National Council of Churches directed that the Committee undertake a revision of the RSV Bible with the Apocrypha, mandating that necessary changes be made (1) in paragraph structure and punctuation; (2) in the elimination of archaisms while retaining the flavor of the Tyndale-King James Bible tradition; (3) in attaining a greater degree of accuracy, clarity, and euphony; and (4) in eliminating masculine-oriented language relating to people, so far as this could be done without distorting passages that reflect the historical situation of ancient patriarchal culture. Within the constraints set by the original text and the mandates given by the Division, the committee followed the maxim, "As literal as possible, as free as necessary." As a consequence, the New Revised Standard Version (1990) remains essentially a literal translation. Paraphrastic renderings were adopted only sparingly, and then chiefly to compensate for the lack of a common-gender third-person singular pronoun. The NRSV contains all of the books that are regarded as authoritative by Protestant, Roman Catholic, and Eastern Orthodox churches.

THE INTERPRETATION OF THE BIBLE
THE HEBREW BIBLE'S INTERPRETATION OF ITSELF

Since the different books that make up the Bible were written and became authoritative at various times, later books refer in various ways to earlier ones. From the beginning of this process, whenever the Bible or any section that eventually became part of the Bible was read or recited, it was interpreted. This is a natural process; no text can be read purely in the abstract, since we all bring our lives and experiences to the text and often attempt to bring the text closer to our lives. It is thus not surprising that according to Neh 8.8, when sections of the biblical text were read to the postexilic community in the fifth century, "They read from the book, from the law

of God, with interpretation. They gave the sense, so that the people understood the reading." Like any book, the Bible required interpretation. Since it was to them an authoritative book, the people needed to hear not only the text itself but also its correct interpretation because, like any literary work, the Bible is at some points ambiguous.

Since the covenant-making ceremony mentioned above occurred in the fall, it was likely that one reading from the Torah would have been Lev 23.33–43, which outlines the commemoration of the fall harvest festival of booths (Sukkot), beginning on the fifteenth day of the seventh month (counting from Nisan, in the spring, not Tishri, in the fall). According to v. 40, proper commemoration of the festival includes the following: "On the first day you shall take the fruit of majestic trees, branches of palm trees, boughs of leafy trees, and willows of the brook; and you shall rejoice before the LORD your God for seven days." This passage is ambiguous on at least two points: What should the worshipers do after they "take" these various greens? What is meant by "the fruit of majestic trees" and "boughs of leafy trees," which are interspersed with very specific tree names ("palm," "willow")?

The treatment of Lev 23.33–43 in the later passage in Neh. 8.14–15 shows how this postexilic community interpreted the text of Leviticus, resolving these ambiguities: "And they found it written in the law [Heb *torah*], which the LORD had commanded by Moses, that the people of Israel should live in booths during the festival of the seventh month, and that they should publish and proclaim in all their towns and in Jerusalem as follows, 'Go out to the hills and bring branches of olive, wild olive, myrtle, palm, and other leafy trees to make booths, as it is written.'" Thus, the term "take" from Lev 23.40 is interpreted in the context of the immediately following legislation (v. 42)—"You shall live in booths for seven days"—to mean "take" for the construction of "booths." Furthermore, the ambiguous trees are specified as olive trees and myrtles. The way in which this later text clarifies how the earlier text should be understood is not at all remarkable: The types of branches to be used are clarified and, naturally enough, the broader context of the fall festival laws of Lev 23 is used to explicate the purpose for which these branches are taken.

The process of inner-biblical interpretation, where we can see a later biblical text interpreting an earlier one, began early in the history of the development of the Bible. But it was certainly accelerated by the canonization of the Torah (see the essay "The Canons of the Bible" on p. 2185 and the Introduction to the Pentateuch, p. 3). It is especially obvious in Deuteronomy, which in both its legal and its narrative sections reuses and interprets earlier biblical traditions. One example from each genre will illustrate the pervasive interpretive nature of Deuteronomy.

The law of a Hebrew slave is found in Ex 21.2–11, the Covenant Collection, and in Deut 15.12–18 as part of the Deuteronomic Law Collection. A quick glance indicates that these two texts are closely related and interdependent. Moreover, biblical scholars agree that the Deuteronomic Law Collection (D) is later than the Covenant Code (C). It is thus significant that the words "without debt" from Ex 21.2 are missing in D's retelling of this law. Instead we find the following, which, based on its placement and context, is most likely D's interpretation of C's "without debt": "And when you send a male slave out from you a free person, you shall not send him out empty-handed. Provide liberally out of your flock, your threshing floor, and your wine press, thus giving to him some of the bounty with which the LORD your God has blessed you" (Deut 15.13–14). The Deuteronomist has naturally subsumed the text of C into his own intellectual-theological framework, which includes the idea that the underprivileged must be looked after carefully. For the Deuteronomist, "without debt" could not be interpreted literally and narrowly; instead it suggested that the slave must be released with resources to enable him to be self-sufficient so that he will not immediately find himself in debt again; thus the slave must be provided for. While this is not an obvious interpretation of Exodus and is certainly not what the author of Exodus intended by the phrase, it offers a good example of how a word may be reinterpreted by a later writer to fit a later ideology.

In fact, this particular reinterpretation is mild when compared with other, more radical reworkings of the earlier law in Deuteronomy. Take, for example, the insistence that the same law applies to both male and female slaves, in contrast to Ex 21.2–6,7–11. Note that the ear-piercing ceremony, which transpires if the slave opts to stay with the master, must take place at the owner's house (Deut 15.17), while Exodus suggests that it happens "before God," namely at the local shrine (Ex 21.6). According to Deuteronomy, the local shrines were illegitimate, and worship was permitted only at the Jerusalem Temple. This suggests that later writers, facing differing circumstances, did not always feel bound by the letter of earlier laws and could "interpret" them into new laws which the earlier legislators would hardly have recognized.

These same tendencies can be seen in Deuteronomy's reinterpretation of earlier narratives. Both Ex 18 and Deut 1.9–18 narrate the establishment of a judicial system in ancient Israel so that Moses would not be responsible for all legal cases. The theme and vocabulary of the two stories are so similar that it is clear that Deuteronomy has created its story by "interpreting" Exodus. Some of

this interpretation is quite reasonable; for example, Deut 1.17, "Any case that is too hard for you," clarifies the somewhat ambiguous "every important [lit. "great"] case" of Ex 18.22. However, the change of Ex 18.21, "able men . . . who fear God, are trustworthy, and hate dishonest gain" to Deut 1.13, "individuals who are wise, discerning, and reputable," is not based on a straightforward interpretation of the earlier text. It is as if the author of this passage thought: Is it reasonable that righteousness in religious observance is the most important quality of judges? Surely not. Surely he meant "wise" when he said "men who fear God"! There are other cases of radical revision in this interpretive passage in Deut 1. The Deuteronomist, for example, "ignores" the fact that this judicial system was set up at the instigation of Moses' father-in-law, and transfers the initiative to Moses. Like any reader, the Deuteronomist interprets the story within his own mental framework, even if this means that a "new" story quite distinct from the original is created.

The previous illustrations show how ambiguities in texts are resolved, and how a text can be (consciously or unconsciously) removed from its original context and reinterpreted within the framework of the later reader's context. They reflect cases where the later biblical interpreters are simply acting as readers of texts, and these readings, though at points radical, have parallels to the way contemporary readers might engage secular works. As a composite canonical text, however, the Bible presents challenges of interpretation which are quite different from contemporary literary works. In particular, the Bible contains diverse legal traditions that are ultimately incorporated into a single work and thus somehow need to be read together or reconciled. Additionally, particular parts of the Bible, especially prophetic texts, present themselves as divine truths; when these seem not to have come true, they must be interpreted differently.

A simple case where laws are contradictory occurs in the legislation concerning the cooking of the Passover lamb. Exodus 12.8–9 notes, "They shall eat the lamb that same night; they shall eat it roasted over the fire with unleavened bread and bitter herbs. Do not eat any of it raw or boiled in water, but roasted over the fire, with its head, legs, and inner organs." Deuteronomy 16.7, however, insists, "You shall boil it [NRSV "cook it" reflects an incorrect attempt at harmonizing the various laws] and eat it at the place that the LORD your God will choose." These differences are not at all surprising within a source-critical model, which suggests that they reflect different practices of different groups of people at different times. But what are we to do when both texts enter the canonical Bible?

We are not the first to appreciate this problem; it was already felt, for example, in the postexilic book of Chronicles, for which the Torah (more or less in the form that we know it) was authoritative. The Chronicler depicts the Passover celebration under King Josiah (2 Chr 35.13): "They boiled the passover lamb with fire according to the ordinance" [a literal translation; NRSV is harmonistic and incorrect]. The Chronicler has thus reconciled the two traditions by choosing elements from both: The offering is "boiled," following Deut 16.7, but "with fire" reflects the "roasted over the fire" of Ex 12.8–9. Through the brilliant (but problematic) expression "boiled . . . with fire," the two variant authoritative traditions are retained, and in some sense reconciled.

The manner in which various problematic prophecies are already interpreted within the Bible, so that they become true, is quite remarkable. The clearest example of this is from one of the latest texts of the Hebrew Bible, Dan 9. The background of this text is the prophecy in Jer 25.11, which suggests that Babylon will be given dominion over the world for seventy years; Jer 29.10 builds upon that prophecy, suggesting that after these seventy years are completed, Israel will be restored. This presented a serious problem for the author of Dan 9, living during the reign of the (Seleucid) Greek king, Antiochus IV Epiphanes, who persecuted the Jews and forbade them to follow the most fundamental laws (see Introduction to Daniel, p. 1233). In this period, between 167 and 164 BCE, it seemed that Jeremiah's word, which claimed that a complete restoration would transpire, was false. But also by that time it is likely that Jeremiah was already considered a true prophet, whose book was canonical. How could this true prophet utter an oracle that was so patently and painfully false?

This explains why Daniel "intensively consulted [NRSV "perceived in" is incorrect] the books concerning the number of years that, according to the word of the LORD to the prophet Jeremiah, must be fulfilled for the devastation of Jerusalem, namely, seventy years" (9.2). Because Jeremiah's prophecy seemed not to be true, intensive consultation was needed, so that the real meaning, the proper interpretation of the seemingly unambiguous "seventy years" [Heb *shib'im shanah*] could be deciphered. The angel Gabriel (v. 21) finally offers Daniel the correct interpretation (v. 24): "Seventy weeks [Heb *shabu'im shib'im*] are decreed for your people and your holy city: to finish the transgression, to put an end to sin, and to atone for iniquity, to bring in everlasting righteousness, to seal both vision and prophet, and to anoint a most holy place." The consonants of Jeremiah's *shib'im* ("seventy"), are read twice, first as *shabu'im*, ("weeks"), then, as expected, as *shib'im* ("seventy"). (In the period

when Daniel was written, Hebrew used consonants only, so the same word could be pronounced, and understood as, two different words with different vowels.) The result of this intensive consultation is that Jeremiah's "seventy" means "seventy weeks of years": seventy times seven or four hundred and ninety years. Thus, Daniel updated the prophecy and gave Jeremiah a four-hundred-twenty-year extension so that his prophecy could still be true.

The author has here engaged in what one scholar has called (in reference to similar rabbinic texts) "creative philology," reading and interpreting words in a highly creative fashion. Here, as in later rabbinic texts, this is not frivolous but is done out of necessity, in order to maintain the status of Jeremiah and his prophecies. Closely related to "creative philology" is "creative historiography," where an interpreter rearranges or adds to earlier texts, thereby creating a fundamentally new historical tradition. This may be seen very often in Chronicles, which frequently and ingeniously rearranges or adds to its sources, typically the books of Samuel and Kings. A classic example of this type of interpretation through "creative historiography" may be seen in 2 Chr 8.2, which claims that "Solomon rebuilt the cities that Huram [a variant spelling of Hiram] had given to him, and settled the people of Israel in them." This is an imaginative revision of 1 Kings 9.11–12, which tells of cities that Solomon gave to Hiram! The Chronicler read his source within his own interpretive framework and theology, which included the notion that the righteous Solomon could not possibly give away cities from the holy land of Israel; 2 Chr 8.2 is an interpretive attempt to deal with this theological problem.

These examples illustrate how later biblical passages interpret earlier passages. Many other examples from almost every biblical book could be offered, including more subtle cases where the interpretation is accomplished through textual juxtaposition, or the interpretive tradition is not found in a separate text (like Chronicles), but has entered as a type of gloss in the original text that it is interpreting. The examples cited above are meant to illustrate the range of inner-biblical interpretations; some are rather straightforward, clarifying ambiguities, while others are remarkably radical, transforming legal or narrative traditions in a quite extreme fashion. Finally, when seen in combination with the following essay on the premodern Jewish interpretation of the Bible (p. 2208), these illustrations highlight the continuity between inner-biblical interpretation and early rabbinic interpretation. This continuity should not be surprising; not only are the two historically contiguous, but both work within a canonical framework. As a result, both are beset by all the problems, as well as the opportunities, that the canonization of the Hebrew Bible presented.

THE INTERPRETATION OF THE BIBLE
THE NEW TESTAMENT INTERPRETS THE JEWISH SCRIPTURES

SCRIPTURE IN THE NEW TESTAMENT

The second-century CE satirist Lucian of Samosata, in Asia Minor, attacked the early Christian movement in the person of a charlatan prophet, Peregrinus. Peregrinus feigned conversion, rose to the position of local bishop, and gained considerable prestige among his naïve coreligionists when he was imprisoned for the faith, before assuming another career. How did Peregrinus achieve his exalted position? According to Lucian, "He interpreted and explained some of their books and even composed many and they revered him as a god, made use of him as a lawgiver" (*On the Death of Peregrinus* 11). By the mid-second century CE, then, Christians could be mocked for their preoccupation with interpreting sacred texts as well as for composing their own writings. At least in part, such interpretation was understood to involve the promulgation of laws. Whether "a lawgiver" pronounced legal rulings on community discipline or codified ethical norms is not clear. From the point of view of the educated elite, Christians who followed such unlearned bishops could be duped because they, as well as their leaders, lacked the advanced rhetorical training required for the interpretation of texts.

Similar objections are given voice within the New Testament. In the Gospel of John, local Pharisees scorn the blind man's confession that Jesus is from God, not a sinner, on the grounds that he has no standing to interpret the Torah (Jn 9.24–34). Matthew has the scribe trained

for the kingdom of heaven able to bring from his storehouse both new things and old ones (Mt 13.52). He defends Jesus' understanding of the Torah and the prophets as attending to the substantive matters—justice, mercy, and faithfulness—rather than making burdens of details about tithing as the Pharisees do (Mt 23.23–24). Paul insists that the true meaning of the law remains veiled, like Moses' face, from his fellow Israelites. They can only understand its meaning by turning to Christ (2 Cor 3.7–18).

Thus, most biblical interpretation in the New Testament serves a polemical or apologetic purpose: to defend Christian claims about Jesus. Neither the assertions themselves nor the presuppositions employed to derive them from scripture would be acceptable to those who did not share Christian beliefs. Nevertheless, the interpretative methods used, especially by Matthew and Paul, have much in common with those used by other Jews in the same period.

Though mid-second century Christians had begun to consider their own writings as sacred texts, that was not yet true when the New Testament was being written. Only the latest of the New Testament texts, 2 Peter, suggests that a collection of Paul's letters was regarded as authoritative (2 Pet 3.15–16). Thus, whenever a New Testament writer refers to or quotes scripture, he is interpreting texts so regarded by the Jewish community. The scriptures were not known to these writers in their original Hebrew, but in Greek translation, the Septuagint (see "Hebrew Bible: Texts and Versions," p. 2194 and "The Greek Bible," p. 2188). Since various text forms of the Septuagint were known in Judea itself, it was clearly used by Jews and not only by Gentile converts to Christianity. In many cases, the text that a New Testament author quotes or interprets differs from that found in a modern translation of the Hebrew Bible. We cannot tell if the author is quoting from memory, misquoting, or altering the text unless we have compared it with the Septuagint and not only with the Hebrew.

The writings that counted as scripture for the New Testament writers are those they held in common with Diaspora Jews: the Torah, prophets, Psalms, and assorted texts from the Writings. In frequency of quotation and allusion in the New Testament, Psalms and Isaiah predominate, followed by Deuteronomy and other passages from the Torah. Some are introduced with a formula such as "it is written" (Mt 2.5; Lk 20.17; Acts 15.15–18) or "it was said" (Mt 5.21). In other cases, the expression "that is" combined with application of the text to reading the community's experience as part of God's eschatological plan resembles the interpretation of prophetic passages in the interpretive commentaries ("pesharim") among the Dead Sea Scrolls from Qumran (Mt 3.3; 11.10; Jn 6.31,50; Acts 2.16; 4.11; Rom 9.7–9; 10.6–8; Heb 7.5; 1 Pet 1.24–25; see 1 QpHab 12.6; CD 7.14–15; 4Q174 1.11–14). Use of an adversative expression to correct a prior tradition of interpretation, as in Matthew's "you have heard . . . but I say" (Mt 5.21–22,27–28,31–32,33–34,38–39 43–44) resembles a rabbinic formula (*Midr. Pss.* 119.26). Matthew does not continue in the rabbinic mode, however, which would require that Jesus establish his interpretation by appealing to other texts from scripture.

CHRISTOLOGICAL READING OF SCRIPTURE

The primary focus of New Testament biblical interpretation is the belief that Jesus is God's messiah, the agent of God's eschatological salvation. Some texts are repeatedly interpreted with a strong messianic meaning: Ps 2; 8; 110; Deut 18.15,18–19; and 2 Sam 7.14. Prophecies from Joel 2–3 (Acts 2.16–21), Zech 9–14 (Mark 11.1–2; Heb 10.19), Dan 7 (Mk 13.26), and Dan 12 (Jn 5.29) play a major role in understanding the risen and exalted Jesus as the one who has inaugurated the end-time. Daniel 7.13–14 lies behind the Christological confession of Jesus as the Son of Man who will come in judgment (see Mk 14.62). In many cases, the reference to Daniel is not explicitly marked. Readers who do not recognize the allusion—or are not aided by the notes found in a modern edition—may miss the use of allusions or partial quotations to support a claim about Jesus.

Even when the text being employed is evident, one cannot always determine whether the author is using the passage as an isolated prooftext or intends readers to incorporate elements from its larger biblical context into the interpretation. Among the Qumran texts, testimony collections gather biblical passages on a particular topic. Some combine references to a future prophet (4Q175: Deut 5.28–29; 18.18–19; 33.8–11; Num 24.15–17; 4Q174: 2 Sam 7.10–14; Ps 1.1; 2.1–2). If early Christians used similar collections of texts on a theme, the larger context of any quotation (which would not have been given in the collection) is irrelevant. When the same texts are quoted in the same combination by different authors, such a source may well be behind all of them. Christ as the stumbling stone based on Isa 8.14; 28.16; and Ps 118.22 appears in several places (Mt 21.42; Acts 4.11; Eph 2.20; 1 Pet 2.6). Matthew's set of fulfillment quotations, which assert that events in the life of Jesus were foretold by the prophets (1.23 [Isa 7.14; 8.8]; 2.6 [Mic 5.2], 18 [Jer 31.15], 23 [source uncertain; see Judg 13.5,7; Isa 11.1; 53.2]; 4.14 [Isa 9.1–2]; 8.17 [Isa 53.4]; 12.17–21 [Isa 42.1–4]; 21.4–5 [Zech 9.9]) may have been taken from a collection of prooftexts. They exhibit the particular significance of Isaiah in early Christian understanding of the suffering and death of Jesus.

Christians, using the Septuagint translation, were able to read Isaiah's original reference to a young woman

who will soon bear a child as a reference to the miraculous birth of God's messiah from a virgin (Isa 7.14). When Matthew embedded this text into the story of Jesus' birth, he fixed its Christian interpretation in the imagination. Similar reinterpretations arose in dealing with the end of Jesus' life: The necessity of explaining how Jesus' death fit into God's plan drew Christian attention to passages describing God's suffering righteous one. Early interpretation matched details in the story of Jesus' passion to passages in Isaiah (for example, abuse of the prisoner from Isa 50.6 and 53.5; see Mt 27.67–68). Some scholars think that Jesus himself may have begun this process by applying texts concerning the suffering righteous one and the coming "son of man" (Dan 7.13–14) to his ministry.

Isaiah's prophecies about the salvation that is coming to Zion also play an important role in the Gospel narratives. The announcement of salvation to the suffering ones in Isa 61.1–3 has been embedded in an inaugural speech of Jesus (Lk 4.17–19). The same passage is reflected in Matthew's Beatitudes (Mt 5.3–12). Images of the day of salvation from Isaiah dominate the Christian liturgical celebrations of Advent, Christmas, Lent, and Easter. So firmly are these passages fixed within a Christological interpretive tradition that many Christians find it impossible to imagine that they could refer to anything other than the coming of salvation in Jesus.

As Christians came to articulate claims about Jesus' identity as the unique Son of God, they used biblical texts to support this view in a more polemical way. Jesus is shown to prove his own superiority to the human descendants of David with a clever twist on Ps 110.1 (Mk 12.35–37): David himself (the presumed author of the Psalm) uses the title "Lord" of the messiah. Hebrews 1.5-14 attaches a number of other Psalm texts to Ps 2.7 as evidence that Jesus is God's Son and as such exalted above the angels. John 10.31-39 has Jesus cite Ps 82.6 in self-defense when he is accused of blasphemy for claiming to be the unique representative of God. In all of these examples, interpreting the Bible is not pursued for its own sake. Rather, Christian beliefs about Jesus are prior to the biblical passages produced to support them. The result, however, is that many passages from the prophets and Psalms have become so embedded in the gospel narrative that for the Christian imagination they are the story of Jesus.

SCRIPTURE AND CHRISTIAN PRACTICE

Matthew 5.17–20 defends the teaching of Jesus against the charge of dissolving the Torah and the prophets. The Torah is identified with the exact words of the written Hebrew, and Matthew affirms its divine authority in every particular. The Christian understanding represents the fulfillment of the Torah and prophets by establishing a righteousness superior to that taught by scribes and Pharisees. What principle underlies the adversative readings that follow in Mt 5.21–28? A common explanation attributes to Jesus the authority of a messianic interpreter of the law. He can determine its intent with an authority greater than that of those Jewish interpreters who appeal to the oral tradition that was presumed to have been given by Moses. Disputed points are to be resolved once and for all based on the "prophet like Moses" of Deut 18.15–18 (see Jn 4.19,25). In what follows, Jesus and his followers are to do more, not less, than the Torah requires. The debate over divorce in Mt 19.3–13 employs a related argument. Though the Torah contains provisions for granting a divorce (Deut 21.1), Jesus claims that Moses introduced such stipulations as a concession. They do not reflect the will of God as revealed in Gen 1.27. The Genesis text also figures in a critique of social laxity about divorce in the Dead Sea Scrolls (see CD 4.19–21). Thus it was used to indicate God's intention concerning marriage prior to the time of the Qumran community (second century BCE through first century CE). The Qumran tradition, however, does not use it, as the New Testament does, to negate the legal standing of another text of the Torah. This passage from Matthew implies that the point of "messianic" interpretation is to restore the intention of the original lawgiver, namely God. Matthew 5.48 concludes on a similar note: Righteousness implies assimilation to God's own perfection.

New Testament authors do not interpret the details of legal traditions found in the Jewish scriptures. Rather a series of "summary principles" serves to demonstrate that the intention of the Torah has been realized in the Christian community. Matthew 7.12 uses the "golden rule" as such a summary, for instance. The most common Christian summary focuses on the injunction to love God and the neighbor, the love command (see Mk 12.28–34; Jn 13.34–35; Rom 13.8–10; Gal 5.14; Eph 5.1–2; 1 Thess 4.9–10; Heb 13.1; Jas 2.8). Matthew 23.23–24 employs the distinction between attention to observance of detailed precepts concerning tithing and the "weightier matters"—justice, mercy, and faithfulness. This passage has, apparently, been reformulated from Matthew's Jewish Christian perspective, since it presupposes the development of the law on tithing (Deut 14.22–29, later taken to include dill and cumin). The parallel in Lk 11.42 fits the more common New Testament pattern. Those condemned fail in justice and love of God, that is, the obligation to love God and neighbor. Though the text is not quoted exactly, Matthew's formula probably reflects Mic 6.8.

Christians presume that the stories concerning Israel provide instructional examples for their community. Tales of unfaithfulness or grumbling in the wilderness were particularly popular (see 1 Cor 10.1–13; Heb 3.7–4.13). Abraham serves as an example of the works (such as hospitality) appropriate to faith (Jas 2.21–26 includes Rahab as an example). The heading "faith" introduces a catalogue of biblical models in Heb 11.1–40, which serves as a summary of the biblical story from Abel through the prophets. Though "by faith" has been inserted into each example, the particular story that follows does not always represent faith, at least not in the same way. The Christological exegesis by which Hebrews argued that Jesus as exalted Son of God was foreseen by the Psalms and prophets and that the sacrificial death of Jesus ended the need for Jewish sacrificial rituals (Heb 7.1–10.18) shapes this catalogue as well. Each of the heroes in the catalogue merits a promised reward for fidelity to God, which has been deferred until the establishment of a heavenly people of God through Jesus (11.13–16).

SCRIPTURE IN CHRISTIAN POLEMIC

The Christian conviction that scripture spoke to and about their community even when it was made up largely of Gentiles (as in 1 Pet 1.10–23) resulted in polemical use of the biblical text against its literal meaning. The strategies employed in several of the more striking re-readings became fixed principles in early Christian exegesis: typology, allegory, and the distinction between the "spirit" and the "letter" of the text. Typology is a method of reading a text that sees characters, incidents, or themes within it as representing "types," or impressions, of a central form, the "antitype." When a coin or medallion was struck, the copies produced were called types, and the name therefore came to signify all of the related images based on one master design. Typological readings already occurred in the Hebrew Bible; the prophet known as Second Isaiah, for instance, interpreted the return from exile typologically as a second Exodus (Isa 48.20–21, alluding to Ex 17.1–7). In the New Testament, interpreting a biblical text typologically presumes that persons or events in the narrative provide a pattern of Christian experience; for instance, Israel's passage through the Red Sea and eating manna foreshadow Christian baptism and eucharist (1 Cor 10.1–4). In other cases, the relationship of the Christian person, idea, or event may be antithetical to the person, idea, or event found in scripture; for instance, Paul contrasts Adam and Christ (Rom 5.12–21), part of Paul's argument for faith rather than observance of the law as the principle of salvation.

Paul's use of the Abraham story to defend the thesis moves into terrain foreign to the obvious meaning of the story. Genesis 15.6 is taken to mean that Abraham's righteousness depends only on faith (Rom 4.1–25). Some scholars call this type of argument "midrash," a traditional Jewish form of interpretation, in which one text is supplemented by others to extract a further meaning. Psalm 32.1–2 plays this role in Rom 4.7–8. John 6.30–51 contains a lengthy dispute in which the incarnate Christ is said to be the meaning of Exodus. Biblical references in the Fourth Gospel are notoriously indefinite. John 6.31 reflects some combination of Ex 16.4,15; Ps 78.24; and Wis 16.28. Such typologies do not deny that scripture refers to persons and events that belong to Israel's past. Their significance in God's plan of salvation, however, requires that they be recognized as prefiguring the Christian reality.

Paul's treatment of the Abraham story in Gal 4.21–31 moves beyond simple typology to a method of interpretation that becomes more prevalent in later Christian writers: allegory. Allegory in its pure sense is an extended comparison between two different levels, usually a narrative level and a psychological or spiritual level, in which the writer, speaking directly about the narrative incidents and characters, intends and is understood to mean to speak about the symbolic level. This kind of reading had already been adapted from Greek interpretive practice by the Jewish writer Philo of Alexandria (ca. 15 BCE–50 CE). In Galatians, the son born of a slave woman is rather shockingly associated with the Sinai covenant and all those who seek to be bound by it. Descendants of Isaac are not physical descendants of Abraham but children of a promise. Paul concludes that since Gen 21.10 permits the slave woman and her son to be cast out, his audience should do the same to any Christians who insist upon belonging to Israel "according to the flesh." Even in what appears a blatant misreading of the Abraham story, Paul presumes that the text has a literal sense as well. Abraham, Isaac, Sarah, and Hagar are not merely symbolic figures representative of the two parties to the conflict in Galatia.

Later theories of allegorical meaning found support in Paul's distinction between "the letter that kills" and the life-giving "Spirit" in 2 Cor 3.6. The polemical context of this passage sets Paul and his preaching over against what appear to have been Jewish Christian missionaries. Again Paul's version of Ex 34.28–35 in the argument which follows inverts the Jewish traditions of the Targums. The standard Jewish explanations of this passage assume that the splendor on Moses' face either remained permanently or increased. For Paul's Jewish contemporaries the glory on Moses' face and the eternity of the Sinai covenant are closely associated (see Pseudo-Philo, *Biblical Antiquities* 11.5; 19.10–16; 32.7; 1Q34 2.5–8). Israel's sin makes it impossible for the peo-

ple to look upon the glory reflected in the face of Moses. Paul instead assumes that the veiling of Moses' face was a means of hiding the evidence of a fading glory, that is, an impermanent covenant. He asserts that he is the servant of a new, eternal covenant established through the Spirit (Jer 31.18,33; Ezek 36.26), not the letters carved on the tablets of stone.

With the Latin rendering of Greek *gramma* ("letter") as *littera*, its identification with the carved tablets of Torah gave way to "letter" as meaning the entire written text. Paul's antithesis of Spirit and letter was taken to be a hermeneutical principle rather than a polemical attack on the eternity of the law (also see Rom 2.27–29; 7.6). From this perspective, a literal reading of the text fails to convey its deepest truth. Only the spiritual interpretation that associates scripture with the revelation of God in Christ conveys life. Israel may then stand for any persons who are trapped by the literal sense of the text and who therefore fail to interpret all of the scriptures in light of Christ.

THE INTERPRETATION OF THE BIBLE
JEWISH INTERPRETATION IN THE PREMODERN ERA

There is a strong continuity of approaches between the inner-biblical interpretation of the Hebrew Bible (see above, p. 2201) and its interpretation in later Jewish tradition. The later interpreters faced the same issues as those from the end of the biblical period: the ambiguity of many words, the desire to bring the text closer to Jewish life, and the fact that they now had to deal with these texts as canonical, that is, both authoritative and closed to further additions. Not surprisingly, they adopted and adapted many of the same solutions, especially the use of creative philology and creative historiography, in order to give the static text greater elasticity. Some interpretive innovations appeared at particular periods, either as creative breakthroughs within the Jewish tradition or as a response to outside influences; among the latter were the use of the Old Testament in the Christian community for Christological purposes and the study of Muslim interpreters of the Koran. By and large, however, continuity rather than discontinuity characterized the premodern interpretation of the Bible. The connection between early postbiblical interpretation and the preceding late inner-biblical interpretation was also uniform.

There is, however, major discontinuity in the genres through which the interpretations are expressed. Postbiblical interpretation recognizes the Bible as a canonical text, and it thus introduces the genre of commentary, in which a biblical passage is quoted with an introductory phrase separating the canonical text from its gloss or interpretation. This separation of text from commentary highlights the significance of the biblical text. It is fundamentally different from inner-biblical interpretation, in which the interpretive addition is often inserted into the text itself without differentiating text and commentary, or in which scripture is rewritten; for example, Deuteronomy rewrites sections of Exodus, or Chronicles rewrites Samuel-Kings (see above, pp. 2202–2203). Although the practice of interpreting the text by rewriting it continued for a short period after the canonization of the Hebrew Bible, it was largely replaced by commentaries of various sorts. For clear theological reasons, these commentaries were interested in differentiating between the canonical biblical text and its interpretation.

TRANSLATION AS INTERPRETATION

The earliest postbiblical interpretive traditions, however, are found in another new genre, Bible translation. In the postexilic period, after the return from the Babylonian exile where the common language was Aramaic, many Jews were no longer fluent in Hebrew, and the Bible was for the first time translated into Aramaic. Though these earliest translations are no longer extant, we do have later translations of sections of the Bible that predate the destruction of the Second Temple (70 CE) from the Dead Sea community of Qumran, as well as a set of Aramaic translations, called Targums, that crystallized at a later date in both Babylon and Israel. In addition, the Bible was translated into Greek in Alexandria, Egypt, beginning in the third century BCE. This translation, called the Septuagint (the translation of the seventy), is of great value and is supplemented by a variety of other Greek translations, some of which were found at Qumran. (See "Hebrew Bible: Texts and Versions," p. 2194.)

These translations illustrate the truism that all translations are interpretations. More particularly, they

demonstrate the range of translation approaches, from literal interpretation to free paraphrase. (See the essay on "Translation of the Bible into English," p. 2194, for a discussion of translation approaches.) For example, the Septuagint and the Aramaic translation called Targum Onqelos are typically word-for-word, literal versions, as far as that is possible. Yet even these "literal" translations show nonliteral tendencies at points. For example, Onqelos was aware of the fact that the biblical verse, "You shall not boil a kid in its mother's milk" (Ex 23.19; 34.26; Deut 14.21), was generalized in early Jewish tradition and served as the basis for the prohibition of eating dairy products and meat together. For this reason, Onqelos translates the biblical text according to the rabbinic tradition, rendering it, "Do not eat meat with milk." The interpretive nature of the Septuagint is especially obvious in Psalms. Following an interpretive tendency that already existed in the Hebrew Bible, whereby several psalms were given historical superscriptions that contextualized them in the life of David (e.g., Ps 51, "To the leader. A Psalm of David, when the prophet Nathan came to him, after he had gone in to Bathsheba"), superscriptions were added to several additional psalms (e.g., Ps 27, introduced in the Septuagint with "A Psalm of David, before he was anointed"). Thus, a biblical model was followed, and new introductions, which provided new interpretive "Davidic" frameworks for these psalms, were composed.

In other cases, nonliteral translations were offered because the theology of the author and his community disagreed with what the text explicitly said; this is the philosophical equivalent of the translation by Onqelos of "You shall not boil a kid in its mother's milk" as "Do not eat meat with milk." For example, Num 12.8 says of Moses, "he beholds the form of the LORD," a notion that was very disturbing to the translator of the Septuagint, for whom the predominant image of Deuteronomy, that God has no form (see esp. Deut 4.12,15), was normative. The translator thus assimilated what the text explicitly says into his theology (and into the Priestly theology, which emphasizes the manifestation of God through his "glory"), and rendered this section of the verse as "and he saw the glory of the LORD." This was the same sort of change discussed above (p. 2202) when both Deuteronomy and Chronicles rewrote (rather than translated) earlier texts, changing them so that they conform to the later theology.

These cases of nonliteral, exegetical translations are rather tame when compared to some of the highly expansionistic translations seen in the Targums, especially those originating in Palestine. Most remarkable is the case where the Targums "translate" the *Akedah* or the binding of Isaac (Gen 22). In the biblical account, Isaac has a relatively minor role and is a character who is acted upon rather than one who acts. The Targums, however, interpret the story in such a way that Isaac now plays a major role. For example, Targum Pseudo-Jonathan glosses v. 10 as follows: "Abraham put forth his hand and took the knife to slaughter his son. Isaac spoke up and said to his father: 'Tie me well lest I struggle because of the anguish of my soul, with the result that a blemish will be found in your offering, and I will be thrust into the pit of destruction.' The eyes of Abraham were looking at the eyes of Isaac, and the eyes of Isaac were looking at the angels on high. Isaac saw them but Abraham did not see them. The angels on high exclaimed: 'Come, see two unique ones who are in the world; one is slaughtering, and one is being slaughtered; the one who slaughters does not hesitate, and the one who is being slaughtered stretches forth his neck'" (*Targum Pseudo-Jonathan: Genesis*, trans. Michael Maher. Collegeville, Minn: Liturgical, 1992, p. 79). (The translation in Targum Neofiti is similar.)

The Targum to Song of Solomon is even more remarkable in the way in which it assimilates the text to its general understanding that the book should be interpreted as a historical allegory. Thus, its "translation" of 1.2, "Let him kiss me with the kisses of his mouth! For your love is better than wine," reads as follows: "Solomon the prophet said: 'Blessed be the name of God who gave us the law via Moses the scribe, a law inscribed on two tablets of stone, and six orders of the Mishnah and the Talmud by oral tradition, and spoke to us face to face as a man kisses his companion, from the abundance of the love with which he loved us, more than the seventy nations'" (Marvin Pope, *Song of Songs* [*Anchor Bible*], New York: Doubleday, 1977, p. 299). A similar, very expansionistic translation of Genesis may also be seen in the much earlier Aramaic Genesis Apocryphon, found among the Dead Sea Scrolls.

PESHARIM

Though rabbinic interpretation is seen as the normative or mainstream type of premodern Jewish interpretation, that mode of interpretation is really not new, but shows much continuity with the postbiblical interpretation seen in the Dead Sea Scrolls and in Greek Jewish writing as well. The genre of Qumran literature called Pesher literature, in which a biblical text is first quoted, and then its interpretation is adduced, is structurally similar to rabbinic Midrash (see below) and medieval commentary. Pesher literature is distinct, however, from rabbinic literature (though not from the type of Jewish interpretation evidenced in much of the New Testament) in that it typically applies (mostly prophetic) texts to the author's

current situation with the assumption that the biblical text, though written long ago, refers to the later author's time period. For example, Pesher Habakkuk quotes (in a slightly different form) the words of the seventh-century prophet Habakkuk (2.15), "Alas for you who make your neighbors drink, pouring out your wrath until they are drunk, in order to gaze on their nakedness," and then continues: "Its interpretation concerns the Wicked Priest who pursued the Teacher of Righteousness [the leader of the Qumran community] to consume him with the ferocity of his anger in the place of his banishment, in festival time, during the day of Atonement. He paraded in front of them, to consume them and make them fall on the day of fasting, the sabbath of their rest (trans. Florentino García Martínez and Elbert J. C. Tigchelaar, The Dead Sea Scrolls Study Edition, Leiden: Brill, 1977, vol. 1, pp. 19,21).

An example of (proto)rabbinic interpretation of legal material already found in this prerabbinic community is illustrated by the following interpretation from the Damascus Covenant, another key text of the Qumran community: "No one should do work on the sixth day, from the moment when the sun's disc is at a distance of its diameter from the gate [= the horizon], for this is what it says [Deut 5.12], 'Observe the sabbath day and keep it holy'" (CD X.15) (Dead Sea Scrolls Study Edition, ibid., pp. 567,569). This legal text is quoting the Decalogue from Deuteronomy, and is interpreting the first word, *shamor*, in a more literal sense as "guard"; it continues by suggesting that the way in which one guards the sabbath day is by ceasing from work a bit before the sabbath actually begins, the time when the sun is one diameter away from setting. This would, of course, help to prevent violation of the sabbath, which, according to the Bible, is a capital offense. Yet such stringent observance is never actually required by the biblical text; rather, it is "found" in the text through a slightly unusual reading, using (only mildly) creative philology on the Hebrew word *shamor*, "observe," which is understood as "guard."

CREATIVE HISTORIOGRAPHY

Prerabbinic texts are also useful in terms of tracing the notion of "creative historiography" from the late biblical through the early rabbinic periods. *Jubilees*, a pseudepigraphic book written in the second century BCE, at about the same time as Daniel, is filled with examples of creative historiography. For example, in retelling the creation story, *Jubilees* adds to the biblical text, noting among other additions that angels are fashioned on the first day of creation. Law is of paramount importance for this author, and he therefore retrojects many legal obligations from Exodus-Deuteronomy into his retelling of the book of Genesis, so that Genesis would not be "merely" a narrative work. (This shows, incidentally, that the emphasis on "law" was not a rabbinic or Pharisaic innovation.) In addition, because the Torah was canonical for the author of *Jubilees*, the two different creation stories, which critical scholars see as separate (Gen 1.1–2.4a; 2.4b–3.24), are read canonically as a single story by one divine author. As a result, the second (Yahwistic) story is used to fill in the details of the more laconic first (Priestly) story. There is nothing remarkable about this development: Once the Bible is read canonically and the existence of sources forgotten, it becomes natural to interpret the stories in this fashion.

Josephus, the Jewish historian of the first century CE, also offers many examples of creative historiography in his *Jewish Antiquities*. He often remolds biblical characters so that they better fit the ideals of his Greco-Roman audience. He also restructures biblical texts, so that problems inherent in the text as it is currently ordered are resolved. For example, Gen 10 contains a genealogical description of the nations of the world that recounts their dispersion. Yet this is followed by the Tower of Babel story, which begins with the geographical unity of humanity. Josephus brilliantly solves this problem by reversing the order of these chapters, putting the genealogies after the story of the Tower of Babel. This is an early example of what would later become a fundamental principle of Jewish interpretation, that the narrative order of the biblical text does not necessarily represent the chronological order of the events it is depicting.

Jubilees and Josephus are also important because they offer explicit justifications for their radical rewriting of earlier traditions. *Jubilees* presents itself as revealed to Moses on Sinai with the help of a mediating angel. Josephus notes in the introduction to *Antiquities*: "The precise details of our scripture will, then, be set forth, each in its place, as my narrative proceeds, that being the procedure that I have promised to follow throughout this work, neither adding nor omitting anything" (Josephus, *Jewish Antiquities*, Books I–IV, trans. Henry St. John Thackeray [Loeb Classical Library], Cambridge, Mass: Harvard University Press, 1967, p. 9). If these two ideas may be combined, we have much of the basis for the rabbinic interpretation of the Bible, which understood itself as (1) the legitimate (oral) law revealed to Moses on Sinai, which was passed down from generation to generation; and (2) the authoritative law, which might differ in word from the phraseology of the biblical text, but is, in reality, "neither adding nor omitting anything."

RABBINIC INTERPRETATION

There is a final, crucial assumption of the classical rabbinic world, which is best represented by the Mishnah (codified ca. 200 CE), the Babylonian Talmud (ca. 500), and

the slightly earlier Talmud of the Land of Israel, as well as the various *Midrashim* (commentary or homily collections) from these periods: The Bible is divine speech, and as such should not be limited to the normal rules of human speech. The interpretation of Jer 25.11 in Dan 9 (see p. 2203) indicates that this idea, which would encourage extensively creative philology, did not first develop with the rabbis. Indeed, it was greatly fostered already by the creation from various sources of a "unified" Torah. How else but through the assumption that God-talk is fundamentally different from human-talk can we explain, for example, why the two versions of the Decalogue (Ex 20, Deut 5) are different? God, and only God, can speak two things simultaneously! How else can we explain the fact that there "seems" to be a contradiction between various texts concerning slavery, about whether a Hebrew slave may remain a slave forever, or must be released at the jubilee (see below)? Obviously, this apparent contradiction must be reconciled by creative reinterpretation, based on the assumption that God does not use words in the same way we do.

The rabbis, in expressing this assumption, typically insisted that there is a superconcentration of meaning in the Bible as divine word. This meant for them that it cannot be interpreted as a "normal" text, which might have a stable meaning; rather, it has seventy (an indeterminate, but large, number of) faces or meanings. Interpretation for the rabbis is like striking a rock with a hammer: Many different types of pieces, each of which is a legitimate part of the whole, are broken off. Also, as divine speech superendowed with meaning, there are no extra words in the text; nor, for some, are there even extra letters—all is significant as the word of God.

Not all rabbis subscribed to these views to the same degree, and it might even be possible to isolate a group that saw the Bible as composed in more normal language. As a result, a tension developed between the desire to take the text at its face value and the desire to see it as overendowed with meaning. This tension continued throughout later Jewish interpretation. Yet all agreed that as a divine text, the Bible may not be interpreted just like any other text. This is true whether the rabbinic comments are found in a Midrash (plural: Midrashim), where they are organized around a particular text, or whether they are found in the Talmud and thus are organized (more or less) according to legal topics.

A particular interest of classical rabbinic interpretation was reconciling divergent legal traditions found in the Torah, and "expanding" the Torah through creative interpretation. This "expansion" allowed ambiguities to be clarified and the text to be contemporized despite its antiquated nature. For example, a Midrash to Ex 21.6, which states that the Hebrew slave under some circumstances shall stay with his master "for life," is glossed "until the jubilee year." "Life" ordinarily means "forever," or at least until death; the Midrash, however, is "forced" into this reading, using creative philology, because Lev 25.40 says: "They shall serve with you until the year of the jubilee." The Torah, as the unified word of God, cannot contain different ideas of when a slave is released, so it is "obvious" that the "forever" of Ex 21.6 must "really mean" until the jubilee. Again, though this interpretation might seem forced to us, it is almost natural within the framework of a society that reads the Torah as a unified, divine work.

As noted earlier, the rabbis also often extend and clarify biblical laws. Thus, the biblical text states that "work" is prohibited on the sabbath day, and anyone who works has committed a capital offense (e.g., Ex 31.14–15). But what is work? The problem is the same as that discussed above in reference to the festival of booths, where Lev 23.40 says that you must "take" branches of various trees but does not explicitly say what is to be done with them (see p. 2202). In the case of the branches, the context was used to provide the answer, and thus Neh 8.15 suggested that the branches should be taken to build booths, most likely based on the fact that the booth legislation (Lev 23.42) immediately follows the branch legislation. Similarly, Ex 31.12–17, which concerns the general sabbath prohibition, is found immediately after the instruction to construct the tabernacle; the classical rabbis adduced from this juxtaposition that "work" is any type of labor involved with the construction of the tabernacle. This is a reasonable, though not fully compelling, interpretation, which takes the text in its final form very seriously. Not only is every letter significant, but even the juxtaposition of adjacent units yields meaning.

The vast literature of the classical rabbinic period is replete with examples of creative historiography, many of which are based on overly careful readings, what we might consider overreading the biblical text; but of course a divine text cannot be read too carefully. For example, the binding of Isaac opens with the phrase, "After these things God tested Abraham" (Gen 22.1). Modern, critical commentators might see the phrase "After these things" as a type of filler, or paragraph marker, but this was an unlikely choice within the rabbinic mindset. This created a problem, since Gen 22 is not obviously, causally related to the previous chapter. Thus, "these things" must be discovered through creative historiography. As is typical, there is no single rabbinic answer to what "these things" were. Various Midrashim, preserved both in Midrashic texts like Genesis Rabbah and in the Babylonian Talmud, create a dialogue between Isaac and Ish-

mael in which Ishmael boasts that he endured the pain of circumcision at the age of thirteen (Gen 17.25), while Isaac was circumcised at eight days; Isaac counters by saying that Ishmael just gave an organ to God, whereas he, Isaac, is willing to give all of his organs to God. It is, according to this view, "after these things," namely after Isaac expressed his willingness to be sacrificed, that God tested Abraham. Another view creates a dialogue between God and Satan, in which God says that Abraham would even be willing to sacrifice his son. This brings Genesis closer to the dialogue between God and the Satan (adversary) in Job 1–2; indeed, it is common for the rabbis to use one canonical story to fully explore the meaning of another. Finally, it is noteworthy that these two expansions are not merely silly, nor do they simply "fill in" the details lacking in the original story. They both help to explain the major problem of the text: How could a good God make such a request of Abraham?

Although the Midrashic inclination was deeply attuned to the text, its meaning as the Bible, and its connection to the life of community, it accomplished these goals with some violence to the context of the text. Thus, many rabbinic interpretations concentrate on the meaning of the individual word and the significance of the single letter (for example, the comments in the Midrash Genesis Rabbah, which explain why the Bible opened with a *bet*, the second letter of the Hebrew alphabet), so that the broader contextual story is often lost. The eleventh century saw a reaction against this type of interpretation in the development of the *peshat* school of interpretation.

MEDIEVAL COMMENTATORS

Peshat is a notoriously difficult term to define, and it seems to change meaning depending on the commentator involved. For Rabbi Solomon (Heb *Shelomoh*) son of Isaac, or Rashi, who lived in France from 1040 to 1105, *peshat* meant "contextual meaning." Rashi's commentary, covering almost the entire Hebrew Bible, is a type of medieval *Reader's Digest* of classical rabbinic interpretation. Very little in Rashi is original; his brilliance, and extreme popularity (Rashi on the Torah was the first Hebrew book printed, before the Torah itself!) lay in his ability to select and rework rabbinic traditions, largely ignoring the many rabbinic traditions that overly strained the context of the text and those which used the text as a type of peg on which to hang various ideas that are not at all connected to the context. More than that, the traditional Midrashim were so atomistic and filled with diverse opinions that it is almost always impossible to answer a simple question of how the Midrash understood the text. Rashi, through his judicious selection process, chose Midrashim that were relatively close to the text and were mutually reinforcing. Thus, we have *peshat* where the broader text, as well as each letter or word, has a clear meaning. This accomplishment was so significant that the commentary of Rashi, especially on the Torah, is one of the most significant Jewish postbiblical texts; it profoundly influenced Jewish understanding of the Bible, especially in European communities, as well as that of medieval Christians, for whom Rashi epitomized Jewish exegesis.

The method of *peshat* was taken one step further by Rashi's son-in-law, Rabbi Samuel (Heb *Shmuel*) son of Meir, or Rashbam (1080–1174), who understood *peshat* in a more radical sense as the simple meaning of the text. Rashbam, though a leading scholar of Jewish law, felt free to offer interpretations of the text in his commentary on the Torah that disagreed with rabbinic law. For example, in contrast to his father-in-law Rashi who, following the rabbinic tradition, interprets the words "for life" concerning the Hebrew slave in Ex 21.6 as until the jubilee year, Rashbam glosses "according to the *peshat*, all the days of his life." It remains unclear how Rashbam would have reconciled this *peshat* with what he understood to be the requirements of rabbinic law. In any case, the type of very literal, non-Midrashic way of reading the text, which characterized Rashbam, found new followers.

Rashbam is also noteworthy for the way in which some of his comments are clearly the product of a reaction against the Christians, especially the persecution of Jews during the Crusades. Though anti-Christian polemic existed in Rashi as well, it was relatively mild; the Crusades, which marked a significant change in the status of the Jews in medieval Europe, would leave a deep impact on many commentators. Nevertheless, Jewish commentary should not be seen as predominantly reactive.

Much of the rest of medieval Jewish interpretation may be understood within the context provided above, as a continuum on which the classical atomistic Midrashim and the search for *peshat* existed as opposite poles. Several additional influences are noteworthy. Especially in countries where Arabic was spoken, a new serious study of the Hebrew language was begun, likely in an effort to counter the Muslim claim that the Arabic of the Koran is the most beautiful language. Arabic paradigms were applied to Hebrew by scholars in the Arab orbit (e.g., Sa'adya [882–942] in Babylon, Abraham ibn Ezra [1089–1164] in Spain and elsewhere), and commentaries that were more philological in nature, exploring the meaning of grammatical forms and lexical terms, developed. Spinoza offers a picture of ibn Ezra as a medieval radical, doubting the Mosaic authorship of several verses from the Torah. In reality, despite some atypical positions that include the suggestion that Isa 40–66, what schol-

ars now call Second and Third Isaiah, are not by the same author as chs 1–39, ibn Ezra was quite traditional in his outlook, and deeply philological in his perspective. Rabbi David Kimchi (Radak), who lived in Provence from 1160 to 1235, systematized many of these interpretations, and his understanding of biblical grammar continues to have a major influence on the scientific study of Hebrew. More than any other medieval exegete, Radak also showed a deep interest in what would later be called textual criticism, namely deciding what the correct text of the Bible was, and many of his views in this area are remarkably modern.

The world of premodern interpretation is, of course, much richer than indicated here. There was a very significant strain of mystical interpretation of the text, exemplified in the Zohar (late thirteenth century), and in the commentary of Nachmanides, Rabbi Moses son of Nachman (active in the thirteenth century). Philosophical interpretations also developed; most notable are those found in *The Guide to the Perplexed* by Maimonides (1135–1204). With the Renaissance, Jewish scholars were influenced by the new science; this is especially seen in the extremely lengthy commentary by Don Isaac Abravanel (1437–1508), who also synthesizes and to an extent harmonizes the many commentators of all types and from various geographical locations who preceded him.

Postbiblical Jewish exegesis does not neatly divide into the schools through which medieval Christian interpretation is often defined. It is essentially different from much of the work of its Christian counterparts. Part of this is because they were studying different works: the Hebrew Bible studied alone, or in relation to rabbinic traditions, is fundamentally different from the Old Testament as part of the Bible, followed by the New Testament. The allegorical and especially the typological methods, which had a very significant role in Christian interpretation, played a much less weighty role in Jewish interpretation. Finally, direct access to the text in its original Hebrew typically distinguished Jewish biblical interpretation from that of the Christians. Despite these differences, which are very significant, most Jewish and Christian premodern interpretation shares a set of basic assumptions that make them fundamentally premodern. These include the idea that the Bible is an authoritative canonical work, which is revealed divine speech, and, as such, must be interpreted in a special way. Though set in history, it is in a sense timeless, speaking to every generation and to every individual. Although several medieval rabbis cast some small doubts on one aspect or another of these premises of interpretation, only in the seventeenth century would these shared assumptions begin to erode, and only then would we slowly move from premodern to modern biblical interpretation.

THE INTERPRETATION OF THE BIBLE
CHRISTIAN INTERPRETATION IN THE PREMODERN ERA

As the article on New Testament interpretation of the Jewish Scriptures (p. 2204) indicates, Christian interpretation of scripture begins in the New Testament. The New Testament writers developed two of the interpretive approaches that remained central to Christian biblical interpretation until the rise of modern historical criticism: (1) a christocentric focus, that is, a tendency to interpret Hebrew Bible texts, especially prophetic texts, as referring to Christ; and (2) typology, the recognition of a person or event in the Hebrew Bible as a type or figure of Christ or Christian salvation. A third approach, allegory, is also present in rudimentary form.

In order to understand the development of early Christian interpretation, it is important to consider the contexts within which and the purposes for which Christians interpreted the scriptures. First, teaching and pastoral care of Christian communities was one important focus, and much early interpretation occurs in the context of sermons and pastoral letters (e.g., the letters of Ignatius [ca. 35–ca.107 CE] and the homilies of Melito [d. ca. 190]). Second, missionary activity and Christian apologetics (the defense of Christianity before pagan detractors) provided a quite different context. In this situation the biblical writings had to be interpreted to an audience, which often found these texts crude and out of keeping with the intellectual tastes of Greek-speaking culture. Thus there was a strong impetus to interpret the scriptures in a way that would enhance their intellectual respectability. For this purpose Christian apologists used the tradition of allegorical interpretation that had

been developed within Greek philosophical circles as a means of interpreting Homer and the other early Greek poets. Even before the rise of Christianity, the Jewish philosopher Philo of Alexandria (ca. 20 BCE–42 CE) had undertaken a detailed allegorical interpretation of Jewish scriptures, and Philo's influence upon the Alexandrian school of Christian interpreters was profound.

A third context for interpretation emerged from Christianity's attempts to define itself in comparison to Judaism. Since both religions laid claim to the same body of scripture (the Hebrew Bible for Jews, the Old Testament for Christians), Christian interpretation addressed itself to the competing interpretations made by Judaism and Christianity. The harshly polemical *Epistle of Barnabas* (early second century) rejects the claims of Judaism to the covenant and so does not even begin to struggle with the interpretive problem that engages other Christian writers of the early centuries, the problem of the nature of the relationship between the old and new covenants, and the scriptures that witness to them. Much richer and more reflective is Justin Martyr's (ca. 100–165) *Dialogue with Trypho the Jew*. The work takes the form of a long conversation between Justin and Trypho, a learned rabbi, each of whom tries to persuade the other of the superiority of his claims and the interpretation of the scriptures upon which they are based. Justin attempts to establish a unity for the Old and New Testaments by arguing that the eternal Logos, fully revealed as Christ in the New Testament, was already the revealer of God's will to the prophets. Though the old covenant was valid, Justin claims that the Jewish scriptures themselves foresee its being superseded by a new covenant. Justin's approach, which anticipates the classic Christian understanding of the Old Testament, exhibits a historical perspective absent from Barnabas, but it is equally christocentric.

The fourth context of early Christian interpretation was provided by disputes among Christians. For early Christian communities, two questions above all others exercised exegetical and theological thought: namely, (a) how does Jesus relate to God, and subsequently, (b) how does Jesus' relationship to God affect his status as a human being? Since many biblical texts seem to present quite different answers to these questions, interpreters pored over any hint at a theological solution. The debate surrounding the former question, termed the "Trinitarian controversy," centered on analyzing and systematizing texts that mention God, Jesus, and the Holy Spirit at the same time, such as Jesus' baptism in Mark 1:10–11 and triadic formulations such as in 2 Corinthians 13:13 and Matthew 28:19. Justin Martyr argued that, according to biblical texts, Jesus was "another God and Lord," thus sacrificing clear monotheism to preserve Jesus' divinity. By contrast, monarchianists such as Sabellius (ca. 220) and Adoptionists such as Theodotus of Byzantium (ca. 190) emphasized biblical texts that supposedly revealed Jesus' humanity in order to protect monotheism.

For the most part, early Christian theologians worked with a clear assumption of a unified and coherent witness of the entire canon of scripture as well as an expectation that exegesis results in necessarily logical and systematic doctrine. These hermeneutical guidelines, inherited from in part from Jewish sources, directed early Christian exegetes to resolve in some manner the various discrepancies found in the disparate texts within and between both Old and New Testaments. For example, early Christians recognized that a coherent doctrine of God and a definitively unambiguous statement of Jesus' relationship to God are not found in the Bible. Thus, the Bible's various ways of presenting God, Jesus and the Holy Spirit, were reconciled by formulations hammered out by the imperially backed councils of Nicea (325 CE) and Chalcedon (381 CE). From its very beginnings, Christian biblical interpretation thus became the driving force of theological reflection throughout the history of Christianity.

Although Christian theological disputes often focused upon biblical interpretation, other arguments focused on the nature of scripture itself. One challenge was posed by Marcion of Pontus (mid-second century), who rejected the Hebrew Bible entirely, claiming it was the revelation of an alien God and accepted only the Gospel of Luke and ten Pauline epistles as the authentic "Gospel and apostle." Even these texts, he insisted, were corrupted by interpolations. To argue his case, Marcion invoked the principles of text criticism developed for the study of Greek poets. He also argued for a literal rather than an allegorical interpretation of the Old Testament (especially Genesis) in his attempts to discredit it as a crude and offensive book. Even more than the debate with Judaism, Marcion's claims required the church to articulate clearly its understanding of the revelatory significance of the Old Testament and its relationship to the New. A further challenge was posed by various Gnostic Christians. Like Marcion they also tended to reject the Old Testament, but in contrast to him, they engaged in a highly developed form of allegorical interpretation, which appealed strongly to one type of Hellenistic intellectualism.

Some of the liveliest of early Christian writings are those composed to refute Marcion and the Gnostics. The most notable is Irenaeus's (ca. 130–ca. 200) *Against All Heresies* (*Adv. Haer.*). Irenaeus argued for the validity of the revelation of God in the Old Testament and its law but also claimed that in the New Testament God is revealed in a new way. He demonstrated the unity of the

scriptures by means of typology, so that the Old Testament serves as a witness to the New. Irenaeus also attacked the interpretive methods of his Gnostic opponents, such as Valentinus (ca. 100–ca. 160), objecting that they ignored the context of passages, overlooking the clear and obvious in favor of the obscure, and reading into the text their fanciful theories. Significantly, Irenaeus not only argued on the basis of interpretive principles but also invoked what comes to be known as "the rule of faith." As a defense against an anarchy of interpretation, there is a standard of correct interpretation, which Irenaeus claimed is that which had been preserved in those churches that stand in the apostolic succession. Interpretation, which differs from that of the apostolic churches, cannot be deemed true.

The argument for the authoritative interpretation of the church was definitively established by Tertullian (ca. 160–ca. 225) in the early third century in *The Prescription against Heretics* (*De praescriptione haereticorum*). In making orthodoxy the norm for the interpretation of scripture, Tertullian, the lawyer with no taste for philosophy, may have thought that he was establishing a narrow and simple standard. But even as the threat from heretical interpretation receded, more philosophically oriented Christian interpreters, such as Origen (ca. 185–ca. 254) and Augustine (354–430), developed more profound and supple understandings of the nature of interpretation and the relation of scripture to orthodox theology.

Questions also arose concerning the definitive and authoritative version of the biblical texts. In the second century, some theologians apparently worried about the conflicting accounts of the four canonical gospels; one popular solution was the creation of Gospel harmonies. For example, Tatian's *Diatesseron* (ca. 150) was a second-century synthesis of the four canonical gospels so as to present one unified story. While Tatian's harmony was very popular in the East until the fifth century, other early Christian exegetes such as Irenaeus urged Christians to hold all four canonical gospels in tension. Retaining the separate works requires exegetical energy, since the conflicts must be explained in some way, but the tradition of four separate gospels continues to this day.

Another conflict developed concerning the textual source from which one should translate the Bible. Until the last decades of the fourth century, most early Christian interpreters assumed the priority of the Greek Septuagint and its derivative translations. When Jerome moved to Palestine about 390 CE, he decided to retranslate his Latin version of the Old Testament from the Hebrew text instead of the Greek; he reasoned that the Hebrew text was closer to the original version, and thus was more authoritative. In response, Augustine confronted him with a series of letters imploring him to retain the Greek text as his source, since switching texts could cause great theological confusion, disrupt the seeming prophetic continuity of Old and New Testaments, and perhaps cause a schism between Greeks and Latins within the Church. Jerome retained his view that his translation gained access to the "Hebrew Truth," and eventually his new version, known as the "Vulgate," rose to prominence in the Latin West. Though Jerome often relied upon the Greek version of traditionally Christological texts in his new, and ostensibly Hebrew-based, translation (cf. Isa 7 and Job 19:25–27), the Vulgate required that at least nominal deference be paid to the Hebrew text as the "true" text of the Hebrew Bible.

In addition to looking at early Christian biblical interpretation in the light of various contexts for interpretation, one should also take account of the two rival schools of interpretation that flourished in Alexandria and Antioch during the early Common Era. As noted above, the sophisticated intellectual environment of Alexandria was already home to a lively tradition of allegorical exegesis before the emergence of Christianity. Thus it was inevitable that Christians would adapt this method of interpretation to their scriptures. Among the most eminent of the Alexandrian school were Clement (ca. 150–ca. 215) and Origen. Allegorical interpretation reads a text as if the narrative incidents, characters, and other elements of its literal meaning are all intended to convey to the reader, by means of an extended comparison, another level of meaning entirely, usually a moral or spiritual one. Although many rather different types of interpretation may be called allegorical, all share a conviction that the authoritative text being interpreted has a deeper meaning than what appears on the surface, the literal reading. Thus *allegory* assumes that a text has multiple meanings, though interpreters may differ as to their worth. (Origen, for example, distinguished among literal, moral, and spiritual meanings.) Typically, allegorical interpretation shows little interest in meanings that are historically specific, preferring those that disclose timeless truths. Allegory is often invoked as an interpretive method when an ancient text that is undeniably authoritative has come to seem alien to the cultural sensitivities and intellectual values of a later age. Since the revered text must contain truth (which is often unconsciously equated with the highest and best values of the interpreter's own time), a method must be employed that will allow those truths to be found in the text. In this manner the Christian allegorists of the Alexandrian school interpreted those aspects of the scriptures that seemed morally offensive, obscure, or simply of little literal interest. Thus Origen could interpret the narrative of the Exodus

as an allegory of the journey of the soul as it leaves the sensual world (Egypt) and journeys toward the promised land of blessedness (Canaan). Origen was the most sophisticated of the allegorists, and the one who first gave allegory its theoretical foundations. Moreover, he was the first Christian to compose what can properly be called a *commentary* on a biblical book, a mode of interpretation that flourished in the fourth and fifth centuries.

Despite the prestige that allegorical exegesis enjoyed in some circles, it was also the subject of strong criticism. In part it attracted suspicion because it was the method of interpretation favored by Gnostics. But allegory was also vulnerable to the charge that it was arbitrary and obscure. The strongest critique of the allegorical method favored by the Alexandrian school came from the rival tradition of biblical interpretation associated with the Syrian city of Antioch. Like Alexandria, Antioch was also heir to a long tradition of Hellenistic scholarship. But Antioch was influenced more by Aristotelian traditions and by Jewish rabbinic exegesis. Thus, even though the *Antiochene* interpreters sought a spiritual meaning in the text, understanding also required, in their view, a grasp of the historical context within which the texts were written, as well as an appreciation of the literal sense of the text. Diodore of Tarsus (d. ca. 390), for example, sought to arrange the Psalms in historical sequence, using information found internally and in the titles. He understood the Song of Songs as love poetry written by Solomon for the Queen of Sheba.

The most radical and most creative interpreter of the school of Antioch was Bishop Theodore of Mopsuestia (ca. 350–428). Theodore challenged the inspired character of several books of the canon, including Job, Song of Songs, Chronicles, and Ezra-Nehemiah, claiming that they reflected only human wisdom and learning. In reaction, the Second Council of Constantinople, in 553, ordered his exegetical works to be burned. In general, the Antiochene school aroused suspicion because several church leaders judged heretical, most notably Nestorius (d. ca. 451), were associated with it. Despite opposition to the more radical interpreters, however, many of the insights and understandings of the Antiochene approach were popularized by the influential sermon collections of the moderate John Chrysostom (ca. 347–407) and by the manuals of biblical interpretation written by Adrian (425) and Junilius Africanus (550).

The stance of the allegorists and that of the more literal-historical interpreters were not necessarily mutually exclusive. Many interpreters employed both methods. Jerome (ca. 345–420), the translator of the Vulgate, began as an allegorist in the style of Origen but increasingly came under the influence of the Antiochene approach. Even so, he never entirely abandoned allegory in his writings. Similarly, Augustine was troubled by the Manichean use of a literal-historical approach to discredit the Jewish scriptures on the grounds that they contained immoralities. He was unable to embrace Christianity until he saw how the allegorical method could provide a spiritual interpretation for such troubling passages. Like Jerome, however, Augustine moved beyond allegory to a more nuanced position that recognized the place of allegory but required the interpreter to distinguish between passages that can be understood in a literal interpretation and those requiring a figurative one. Moreover, all interpretation must be guided by the rule of faith and the law of love: "If it seems to anyone that he has understood the divine scriptures, or any part of them, in such a way that by that understanding he does not build up that double love of God and neighbor, he has not yet understood" (*On Christian Teaching*, 1.35.39–36.40).

Examples of early Christian biblical interpretation are also evident well beyond the writings of professional theological exegetes. From the production of visual art, liturgy, and music to the realms of ethics, politics, and legal theory, biblical interpretation in some sense undergirded, was filtered through, and occurred within almost every cultural practice of the Christian movement from its inception until the early modern period. For example, early Christian production of visual art generally depicts biblical narratives, characters, and themes, and as such the artifacts reflect the basic typological and Christological patterns explored by biblical exegetes. While Christian images often reveal common interpretive motifs, at times fresh exegetical thought emerges from creative iconographic juxtapositions. It is clear that Christians employed images exegetically as early as the second century, when Clement of Alexandria (ca. 150–215) exhorted Christians to choose pagan iconographies carefully, presumably in order to attribute biblical themes to the generic motifs. In one classic example, the pagan iconography of the "Good Shepherd" provided an easily recognizable but also inconspicuous mode of presenting the Johannine theme of Christ as the Good Shepherd. Around the year 200 CE, Roman Christians developed the earliest known identifiably Christian art as they began to paint the walls of their newly acquired catacombs. Generally, they juxtaposed elements from a limited catalogue of pagan images, scenes from the Hebrew Bible, and imagery derived from the New Testament. A third-century mosaic in the necropolis underneath St. Peter's Basilica in Rome depicts a beardless Christ with a cross-nimbus imaged as Helios, the sun god, driving a chariot surrounded by grape vines. Surrounding this figure are an image of a shepherd with a sheep around

his neck, an image of Jonah emerging from the belly of the fish, an image of fish and fishing lures, and another image of Christ telling Peter to "fish for people" (Matt 4:19). Together, these images offer a complex network of biblical exegesis, systematic theology, and pastoral care. The pagan theme of the sun-chariot's daily ascent from the realm of darkness at daybreak recalls Christ's resurrection and ascension, as does Jonah's deliverance from the fish's belly. The good shepherd, as noted above, invokes Christ's mission to find and care for the lost, while the vines of Dionysius are implicitly reinterpreted as the vine of Christ (John 15). In the funerary context of the catacomb, this program of images offers hope for the deceased in the final Resurrection by depicting biblical themes, characters, and narrative scenes. While extant images from the first few centuries of the Christian era are rare, Christian art quickly became widespread after the imperial sponsorship of Christianity by Constantine the Great in the fourth century.

Similarly, early Christian liturgy relied upon biblical exegesis for the production and justification of its practices while offering interpretations of the Bible within its rites. By the second century, there are well-established manuals for church leadership and liturgy, such as the Syrian Didache; its baptismal liturgy, for example, is a pastiche of biblical texts designed to interpret, legitimate, and actualize the baptismal act. Like the ubiquitous Christian act of writing hymns, liturgy has also proven a fruitful space for reenacting and recontextualizing biblical text, thus offering new meanings for various communities.

THE MIDDLE AGES

During the early Middle Ages scholars of the Bible mainly preserved and transmitted the understandings developed in earlier centuries. In the west most interpreters were no longer able to read Greek, the Irish scholar John Scotus Erigena (ca. 810–ca. 877) being a noteworthy exception. Moreover, there was no significant interchange with Jewish interpreters, such as had been possible at Antioch. The works of Jerome, Augustine, and other patristic writers, however, were widely studied. As in earlier centuries, both literal and allegorical exegesis was practiced. Most commonly, four senses of scripture were recognized: the literal or historical, the allegorical, the anagogical (a mystical sense signifying heaven, the afterlife, or communion with God), and the moral or tropological. Thus "Jerusalem" could signify, literally, the historical city; allegorically, the church; anagogically, the heavenly city; and morally, the human soul. Though no author is consistent and rigorous in their application of all senses to all texts, Pope Gregory I's *Morals in Job* (ca. 595) is the most thorough and famous example of the four senses in medieval exegesis. The influence of this four-level interpretive method extended beyond scriptural interpretation; most notably, Dante deliberately constructed his *Divine Comedy* in order to allow, as far as possible, all four levels of interpretation to be applied to it.

The primary institutional context for the study of the Bible in the early medieval period was the monastery. Among the early monastic scholars the most prominent was the Venerable Bede (ca. 673–725), who composed commentaries and biblical aids as well as his influential *Ecclesiastical History*. An important impetus to the study of the Bible came from the religious and educational reforms sponsored by the Carolingian monarchs. Charlemagne (ca. 742–814) and his grandson Charles the Bald (d. 877) attracted the best scholars of the day, including Alcuin (ca. 735–804) and John Scotus Erigena (ca. 810–ca. 877), to supervise education at the palace and cathedral schools. The growth of such schools created a demand for resources, and the scholars of the Carolingian renaissance produced an impressive number of biblical manuscripts, annotations and aids to study, commentaries, and historical work. These works were largely digests and compilations of glosses on the biblical text drawn from writings produced in late antiquity by the Latin fathers. The culmination of this type of scholarship was the production of the *Glossa ordinaria*, compiled by Anselm of Laon (d. 1117) in collaboration with other scholars.

The twelfth and thirteenth centuries saw the beginning of a more creative phase of medieval biblical scholarship, located first in the cathedral schools and subsequently in the universities. One important innovation was the division of the biblical books into chapters, first developed in England by Stephen Langton (d. 1228). (The numbering of the verses, or smaller units within the chapters, was developed in the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries by both Jewish and Christian scholars.) This system was used in another innovation, the production of concordances to the Bible, the most influential of which was that prepared by the Dominicans of St. Jacques in Paris, under the supervision of Hugo of St. Cher (ca. 1195–1263). Perhaps the most important of the cathedral schools was that of the Abbey of St. Victor, also in Paris, where a series of influential scholars taught during the twelfth century. The school, which was known for the rigor of study under the direction of its founder, Hugh of St. Victor (d. 1142), fostered both literal and allegorical (or mystical) exegesis. Later teachers tended to emphasize one or the other, Richard of St. Victor (d. 1173) developing allegorical interpretation, and Andrew of St. Victor (d. 1175) emphasizing the careful investigation of the literal and historical sense. Significantly, Andrew knew

Hebrew and was influenced by Jewish scholars and traditions of Jewish exegesis. During the following centuries an appreciation of the importance of such knowledge became more common among Christian exegetes of the Bible. Although the presence of significant Jewish communities in the major medieval cities made the study of Hebrew and Jewish exegesis somewhat more accessible, such knowledge did not flourish among Christian biblical scholars until the Renaissance. Greek was still relatively little known at this time, although Robert Grosseteste (ca. 1175–1253) translated several works, including the *Testaments of the Twelve Patriarchs*, from Greek into Latin.

Along with the development of important schools in the twelfth century, there was also a shift in the form in which biblical study was presented. In contrast to the earlier compendia of glosses, which were organized as a running comment on the text of the Bible itself, in the twelfth century a different form of commentary developed, one that was organized according to theological topics and issues. This change in literary form both signaled and facilitated a closer relationship between the study of scripture and the development of theological doctrine. The most significant of these works, the *Sentences* of Peter Lombard (ca. 1100–1160), eventually became the standard theological textbook during the Middle Ages.

The establishment of universities in the thirteenth century marks an important shift in the social location of biblical study. In this context biblical interpretation became more specialized and was drawn even more closely into dialogue with theology and philosophy. Although some scholars continued to engage in allegorical exegesis, both the prominence of Aristotelian thought in the universities and the emphasis on doctrinal theology pushed biblical interpretation more strongly in the direction of literal exegesis. Albertus Magnus (1193–1280) and especially Thomas Aquinas (ca. 1225–1274) were the most eminent of these Aristotelian-influenced scholastic theologians and biblical interpreters. The harvest of this form of literal biblical exegesis can best be appreciated in the *Postilla literalis* of Nicholas of Lyra (ca. 1270–1349), which covers the entire Bible. Lyra's knowledge not only of biblical Hebrew, but also of the commentaries of Rashi (1040–1105) and other Jewish scholars (see "Jewish Interpretation in the Premodern Era"), gives his work a linguistic and exegetical precision lacking in many other medieval commentaries.

THE RENAISSANCE AND REFORMATION

The emphasis on original languages and a respect for the role of reason in interpretation, which had already become influential in late medieval scholarship, became the hallmarks of the new humanistic learning of the Renaissance. These values, however, which had previously been invoked in the service of scholastic theology in the Middle Ages, led in some rather different directions in the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries. The scholar Erasmus (ca. 1466–1536) is something of a transitional figure. Though he used his incomparable humanistic knowledge to produce a new critical edition of the Greek New Testament and drew on classical Roman rhetorical traditions in his interpretation of Ecclesiastes, he also defended allegorical interpretation of scripture and had a high regard for scholastic theology, that of Thomas Aquinas in particular. For the most part, the Christian humanist scholars did not set out to challenge the authority of the church. Yet sometimes the claims of reason brought them into conflict with church authority and traditions. In 1440 Lorenzo Valla (1407–1457) published his *Declamation on the Donation of Constantine*, in which he used reason to argue that the so-called donation of Constantine, which had underwritten papal authority in Rome, was in fact a forgery. Similarly, he demonstrated that a letter supposedly written by Jesus to Abgar, king of Edessa, which had been considered genuine at least since the fourth century, was in fact spurious. His approach to such ancient documents, and to the New Testament itself in his other writings, anticipated the critical study of the Bible that was to develop in later centuries. The audience for such critical works on the text of the New Testament text was facilitated by the publication of several Greek grammars between 1495 and 1520.

Fueling the explosive growth in Renaissance scholarship was the new availability of texts and critical works made possible by the development of the printing press. Following the publication of Johannes Gutenberg's Latin Bible in 1454, a wide range of books became available, not only in Latin and vernacular languages but in Greek and Hebrew as well. During the early sixteenth century several polyglot Bibles were published, that is, Bibles in which Greek, Latin, Hebrew, and Aramaic texts of the Bible were printed side by side to facilitate critical comparison.

The characteristic Renaissance interest in ancient languages and texts led some scholars, such as Giovanni Pico della Mirandola (1463–1494), Johannes Reuchlin (1455–1522), and Guillaume Postel (ca. 1510–1581), to explore the esoteric traditions of Jewish kabbalistic mysticism. Postel even translated the *Bahir* and the *Zohar* into Latin. These Christian kabbalists drew together elements of Jewish mysticism, Neoplatonic philosophy, Christian theology, and the Renaissance interest in the occult into a spiritual synthesis, which, as one might expect, was condemned by church authorities. Reuchlin, however,

can be called the father of Christian Renaissance study of Hebrew. He published an influential Hebrew grammar, based on the work of the medieval Jewish Rabbi David Kimchi (Radak) (see "Jewish Interpretation in the Premodern Era," p. 2208), and other aids that facilitated the increasing interest in the study of Hebrew by Christians. Reuchlin also played an important role in resisting some attempts by the church to suppress Jewish writings, including the Talmud.

With the Reformation, biblical interpretation increasingly took place within an intense debate about the role of scripture in relation to Christian faith. To a large extent, however, both the early Protestant reformers and the scholars who remained within the Catholic tradition incorporated the new linguistic and philological training in their interpretation of the Bible. Though Martin Luther (1483–1546) was not the first to argue that the Bible is the ultimate authority in matters of doctrine, the Protestant movement is distinctive in insisting that the Bible is the sole foundation for faith, doctrine, and church practices. In their refutation of the Protestants, Catholic scholars also appealed to biblical exegesis in support of the authority of the church and the papacy. Thus in the sixteenth century biblical interpretation reflects both the rich legacy of Renaissance humanism's linguistic and philological knowledge and a context of highly charged theological argument.

Although Protestant biblical interpreters in general rejected allegory in favor of the literal-historical sense, their interpretation of the Hebrew Bible was usually Christological and typological. Luther, for example, attended both to the literal-historical sense and to the literal-prophetic sense of scripture (i.e., the typological meaning foreshadowed in the text). Thus, since David was considered to be a prophet, the Psalms referred not only to David's life and circumstances but also to Christ who was to come. Luther's writings also reflect both continuity and discontinuity with the medieval tradition in his treatment of the tropological or moral meaning of scripture. Traditionally, this concern had been with the way in which the text addressed the nature and practice of the virtue of love. For Luther, the moral meaning is that aspect of the text that has to do with the nurture of faith, that is, trust in God's promises. Other Protestants, however, such as Zwingli and Bucer, follow Erasmus in understanding the moral meaning of scripture as providing paradigms for human behavior.

The issue of the relation of the two testaments also provoked a variety of responses among Protestant interpreters. Given Luther's theological distinction between law and gospel, his interpretation tends to posit a significant degree of tension between the testaments. In contrast, many other Protestant theologians saw an essential continuity between the testaments. Henrich Bullinger (1504–1575), for example, treated covenant as a hermeneutical principle, which unifies the scriptures. Before the advent of Christ the sign of the covenant is circumcision; after the advent, baptism. But the covenant is one and the same, the New Testament only presenting it with greater clarity. The nature and extent of the canon of the Old Testament also became an issue of controversy between Protestants and the Roman Catholic Church. Like Jerome before them, the Protestant reformers argued that the church's Old Testament canon should be that of the Hebrew scriptures, that is, without the Apocrypha. At the Council of Trent (1546) the Roman Catholic church reaffirmed the inspired nature of some of these books, which were termed "deuterocanonical." The term does not denote a difference in status from the "protocanonical" books but signifies that their canonical status was clarified at a second stage. (See the essay "The Canons of the Bible," p. 2185, and the introductions to individual books among the Apocryphal/Deuterocanonical Books for more details on the canonical status of particular books and the development of the differing canons of the Old Testament among the various Christian communities.)

Concern for historical context and for an understanding of biblical rhetoric was also prominent in early Protestant interpretation. The biblical interpretation of John Calvin (1509–1564), who had legal training, was influenced by Renaissance humanism's approach to clarifying ancient law by means of an appeal to the original historical contexts and the intentions of the authors. As Calvin observes in the dedicatory preface to his commentary on Romans, "almost [the commentator's] only task [is] to unfold the mind of the writer whom he has undertaken to expound." Calvin's interpretation thus tends to be contextual rather than atomistic and attends not only to history but also to the cultural institutions and background of biblical texts and to the rhetorical forms in which biblical language expresses itself. Indeed, disagreement over a proper understanding of biblical rhetoric lies at the heart of one of the most important doctrinal disputes within early Protestantism. Luther contended that the word "is" in the biblical phrase "this *is* my body" (Mt 26.26) is to be interpreted literally, whereas Zwingli (1484–1531) argued that its natural sense must be understood rhetorically as nonliteral, "this *signifies* my body." Out of that interpretive dispute emerged two different theological understandings of the Eucharist.

Although Protestant theology's emphasis on scripture as the sole foundation of belief provided the impetus for intense interpretive activity, Roman Catholic scholars

also produced a large amount of biblical scholarship, some provoked by controversies with Protestants and some not. Cardinal Cajetan (Thomas de Vio, 1469–1534) shared several views with Protestants, such as the preference for the Hebrew text over the Vulgate, the advocacy of a shorter canon (excluding the Apocrypha), and a literal form of interpretation. But much of his exegetical work was devoted to demonstrating biblical support for papal authority and traditional church doctrine.

The spread of literacy, the increased availability of translations of the Bible into European languages, and the Protestant emphasis on the sufficiency of scripture alone contributed to the spread of biblical interpretation not only among those trained in theological institutions and having linguistic skills but also among laity with modest training or only a bare literacy. Thus in the sixteenth century and beyond one begins to see an increase in popular interpretations, often of a millenarian slant. Although Luther and the other reformers had believed that the Bible was so clear that all reasonable readers would agree as to its meaning, as matters actually developed the democratization of interpretation led to a bewildering array of readings of scripture, nowhere more so than in England in the late sixteenth century. From the plowmaker Matthew Hamond to the clerk John Hilton, those who claimed that the New Testament was "a mere fable" were seen as a threat to decency and social order. Later, during the English revolution and the period of the Commonwealth (1640–1660), biblical interpretation became a primary mode of political argument among partisans of all factions.

THE SEVENTEENTH AND EIGHTEENTH CENTURIES

At the same time that Protestant orthodoxy was developing a complex and minute exegesis of the Bible in support of various church doctrines, rationalists of diverse theological allegiances were developing ideas, which many saw as challenging traditional understandings of the Bible. Both the new scientific discoveries and those resulting from the exploration of previously unknown lands raised questions about how this new knowledge was to be understood in relation to the Bible. The conflict between the astronomer Galileo Galilei (1564–1642) and the Catholic Church over the heliocentric view of the universe is only the most famous example. The perplexing problem of how to account for the existence of nations and peoples not mentioned by the Bible prompted the French reformer Isaac de la Peyrère (ca. 1596–1676) to suggest that Adam was not in fact the first human but was only the ancestor of the Israelites (*The Pre-Adamites . . . By which are prov'd that the first men were created before Adam*). At about the same time, along with others the philosopher Thomas Hobbes in *Leviathan* (1651) questioned Moses' authorship of the entire Pentateuch and in general emphasized the human mediation between God's word and the scriptures as they are available to be read in the Bible. The French Catholic scholar Richard Simon (1638–1712), often called the father of modern biblical scholarship, wrote a *Critical History of the Old Testament* (1678), in which he discussed the various versions of the Bible with respect to their relationship and authority. Empirical in his approach, Simon also denied Moses' authorship of the Pentateuch and suggested that national archives preserved by prophets and scribes provided the sources from which the biblical books were composed long after the date of the events described in them. A similar rationalist criticism of the Bible was developed by the Jewish philosopher Baruch (Benedict) Spinoza (1632–1677).

Moral criticism of the Bible, which had in part given rise to the allegorical method of interpretation in antiquity, was also practiced. Pierre Bayle (1647–1706), a French Protestant, published a highly influential historical and critical dictionary that contained an article on David widely perceived as scandalous, since it drew attention to the themes of adultery, murder, treachery, and injustice in the story of the "man after God's own heart" (see 1 Sam 13.14). Both moral and rational criticism of the Bible, including a critique of the claims to miraculous events, is found to varying degrees in the Deists of the eighteenth century, some of the more radical of whom challenged even the resurrection of Christ. In France, Voltaire (1694–1778) popularized some of the more extreme notions concerning the Bible and its claims, and a similar radical stance was taken by the American Thomas Paine (1736–1809).

Although discussion and interpretation of the Bible was conducted by intellectuals of every stripe, as well as at a more popular level, the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries saw an enormous development of technical biblical scholarship, which was almost always related to theological and cultural debates. For instance, the controversy as to the date and origin of the vowel points in the traditional Hebrew text of the Bible was fueled largely by disputes concerning the inspiration of the Bible and the relative reliability of the Hebrew text versus the Septuagint and the Vulgate. The study of text criticism was significantly advanced by the publication of the London Polyglot (1655–1657), which included Hebrew, Greek, Vulgate, Syriac, Ethiopic, Arabic, and Persian versions, the Samaritan Pentateuch, and several Targums, along with a wealth of critical notes and aids. A large number of critical and historically oriented commentaries were published during the seventeenth century.

With the eighteenth century there developed what can be called modern criticism of the Bible. The theory of the composition of the Pentateuch from a number of still identifiable sources, an idea that has been central to modern criticism, was first advanced by French scholar Jean Astruc (1684–1766). Bishop and Oxford professor Robert Lowth (1710–1787) in England developed an analysis of the nature of Hebrew poetry, which is still widely accepted. But it was German scholarship that systematized and gave a distinctively modern character to historical-critical study of the Bible. Two landmarks of this emergent discipline were J. D. Michaelis's (1717–1791) introduction to the New Testament and J. G. Eichhorn's (1752–1827) introduction to the Old Testament.

THE INTERPRETATION OF THE BIBLE
FROM THE NINETEENTH TO THE MID-TWENTIETH CENTURIES

THE HISTORICAL-CRITICAL METHOD

The philosophical developments of the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries had prompted an approach to the Bible that is often characterized as critical. It was critical not in a negative sense, although that would often seem to be the case, but in the sense that it was free of presuppositions, especially those derived from either theology or tradition. To fully understand the Bible, scholars increasingly adopted an inductive approach, interpreting the Bible in an almost secular way, setting aside received views of its authority and authorship. This critical approach, an outgrowth of attitudes fostered during the Enlightenment, was very much in the spirit of the times and, like other legacies of the Enlightenment, was influenced by larger intellectual currents, such as Romanticism and the theory of evolution.

The overriding goal was historical: to determine what had actually taken place, and to recover the actual persons and events of the Bible as they had been preserved in the various stages of biblical tradition. The nature and development of these stages were to be understood through critical scholarship. This was the aim of "higher criticism," as distinguished from "lower," or textual criticism, and this higher criticism was essentially the historical-critical method.

With its many subdisciplines, the historical-critical method dominated biblical interpretation through the mid-twentieth century, and it continues to be influential. The scholars whose work is surveyed in the following pages were immensely learned, often experts in a variety of fields, including philology, textual criticism, comparative literature, and the study of ancient cultures contemporaneous with the biblical traditions. Moreover, also in keeping with the intellectual mood of the nineteenth and early twentieth centuries, they were optimistic, in retrospect even overconfident, operating on the assured conviction that with sufficient data and careful analysis of the data an objective, accurate, and complete understanding of the Bible was possible.

SOURCE CRITICISM

The critical study of the Bible had been begun in the seventeenth century by Hobbes, Spinoza, and Richard Simon, and it continued to gain momentum during the Enlightenment. In many respects the conclusions of scholars working on the Hebrew Bible were paralleled by those who worked on the New Testament, and the methods and preoccupations of both were similar to those of classical scholarship. In all three disciplines there was a growing concentration upon history. And scholars in all three disciplines recognized that historical reconstruction needed to begin with a careful analysis of sources.

This was true first of all of the analysis of the Pentateuch into several literary strands. Jean Astruc had proposed in 1753 that the different names used for God in different parts of the book of Genesis were due to different sources that antedated the final composition of the book. Astruc's insight was elaborated and refined mainly by German scholars, especially W. M. L. de Wette and K. H. Graf, who extended the analysis of sources to the rest of the Pentateuch (and in some cases to the book of Joshua, leading to the term "Hexateuch"; see below).

The results of more than a century of this source criticism were brilliantly synthesized in 1878 by the German Old Testament scholar Julius Wellhausen in his book (*Prolegomena to*) *The History of Israel*. Wellhausen's goal

was to write a history of ancient Israel, especially its religion, and he followed an evolutionary model. The religion of Israel, Wellhausen argued, had developed in three stages: a primitive, spontaneous phase in the era before the monarchy; an ethical monotheism expressed especially by the preexilic prophets; and a sterile legalism characteristic of the Second Temple period. To support this reconstruction, he engaged in a careful analysis of the biblical traditions and, drawing especially on the earlier work of de Wette and Graf, gave the classic formulation to what is called the Documentary Hypothesis. According to the Documentary Hypothesis as elaborated by Wellhausen, the Pentateuch was an unreliable source for reconstructing the history of the time periods it narrated, but the traditions that comprised it, identified as J, E, D, and P, were datable and important evidence for the periods in which they were compiled. (See further "Introduction to the Pentateuch," pp. 3–6.) These "documents" are hypothetical, that is, they do not actually exist, but they are the best explanation of the evidence—the parallels, repetitions, and inconsistencies in the final form of the Pentateuch.

Wellhausen's historical reconstruction is clearly a product of its time, and it reflects the biases of the late nineteenth century. His view of early Israel as a fresh, undefiled religious spirit has a Romantic flavor, and his characterization of postexilic Judaism as a decline into dead legalism has an anti-Semitic cast. But his formulation of the Documentary Hypothesis became a classic statement, the theory that subsequent scholars up to the present have built upon, accepted, modified, or rejected. Despite initial and continuing conservative opposition, and, in the case of Roman Catholics especially, institutional interdict, it was widely adopted by liberal Protestant scholars and eventually by Roman Catholic and Jewish scholars as well, resulting in a large consensus that is still dominant.

Source criticism was not an end in itself but a method to be used in historical reconstruction. It recognized the inherent complexity of biblical traditions, and attempted to disentangle the prior stages of their development. Among the many significant results of source criticism was the recognition that the book of Isaiah is a composite work. The isolated insights of earlier scholars, including Rabbi Ibn Ezra in the twelfth century, and J. G. Eichhorn and others in the eighteenth, were expanded and elaborated in the commentary on Isaiah by Bernhard Duhm in 1892. The book of Isaiah, Duhm argued, was in effect an anthology spanning several centuries. First Isaiah (chs 1–39) was a product of the preexilic period and was itself a composite, including authentic oracles of the eighth-century BCE prophet Isaiah of Jerusalem, additions to those oracles and biographical materials added by his disciples, and historical narratives largely spliced in from 2 Kings. Chapters 40–55, Deutero-Isaiah or Second Isaiah, were a product of the mid-sixth century BCE, as the historical references in those chapters indicated. And the remainder of the book, chs 56–66, was to be dated a century or more later, despite similarities of language and themes to chs 40–55. In the Romantic spirit, Duhm was motivated to distinguish the genuine words of Isaiah himself, as well as those of the anonymous prophets responsible for the latter two divisions of the book, especially the author of the "Servant Songs" (Isa 42.1–4; 49.1–6; 50.4–9; 52.13–53.12).

Similar preoccupations and approaches characterized the study of the New Testament. Drawing on the work of earlier scholars, especially Simon (again!) and H. S. Reimarus, in 1835 David F. Strauss published his "life of Jesus critically examined," soon to be translated from German to English by George Eliot, in which he attempted to strip the Gospels of the miraculous and mythical in order to recover the real Jesus. This inaugurated a "quest" for the historical Jesus that continued in the work of Ernst Renan in the mid-nineteenth century and Albert Schweitzer at the beginning of the twentieth, and that remains unfulfilled, as the lack of consensus at the beginning of the twenty-first century demonstrates.

This quest was accompanied by a source-critical analysis of the Synoptic Gospels. While debate about which Gospel was written first was never fully resolved, the literary priority of Mark was argued by a succession of scholars in the nineteenth century. According to this view, held by a majority of New Testament scholars but by no means all, Mark was used as a source by both Matthew and Luke (or, more properly, the authors of the Gospels to whom those names are traditionally given). Many passages in Matthew and Luke other than those based on Mark also share a verbatim correspondence, and another source was hypothesized for them. Known as Q, from the German word *Quelle* ("source"), it consists almost entirely of sayings of Jesus and, though hypothetical, is the earliest source for the life of Jesus. This "Two-Source Hypothesis" was given classic formulation in English by B. H. Streeter in 1924. (See further "Introduction to the Gospels," p. **1743**.)

Source criticism in the New Testament was also applied to the Gospel of John and the Acts of the Apostles. Careful analysis of the letters attributed to Paul led to the conclusion that some of them, especially the "Pastoral Epistles" (1 and 2 Timothy and Titus), and probably Ephesians and 2 Thessalonians as well, had not been written by Paul himself, and that others (such as 2 Corinthians)

may be combinations of two or more originally distinct writings.

THE RECOVERY OF THE ANCIENT WORLD

The recovery of extensive written remains from the ancient Near East, and also to a lesser extent from the classical world, the latter especially in the form of papyri that document ordinary life, coincided with the development of the disciplines of anthropology, sociology, linguistics, and folklore. Both new data and new methods were applied to the biblical communities, resulting in works of extraordinary insight and, in retrospect, often of considerable naïveté. Biblical studies, however labeled, became a subject not just in denominational, seminary curriculums but a discipline recognized in larger university contexts as well, often as part of religious studies or *Religionswissenschaft*.

The process of recovery began with the decipherment of ancient Egyptian hieroglyphic writing in the early nineteenth century, which was made possible when a member of Napoleon's army discovered the Rosetta Stone in Egypt in 1799. This opened up the vast literature of Egypt, including valuable historical texts that provided synchronisms with biblical data relating especially to the first millennium BCE, and provided the basis for what would eventually be a comprehensive absolute chronology of the ancient Near East. Egyptian literature also provided parallels to such biblical genres as love poetry and wisdom literature.

In the mid-nineteenth century, British and French explorers began to unearth hundreds of thousands of cuneiform texts in Mesopotamia, and these too were rapidly deciphered, giving access to the literature and written remains of ancient Babylon, Assyria, and Persia. Like the Egyptian texts, they could often be correlated with biblical history, but their impact on biblical studies was more profound. In 1872 George Smith, working in the British Museum, discovered on one of the tablets that had been sent to London a flood narrative remarkably similar to the account in Genesis. While some took this as a simple historical confirmation of the Flood, it soon became clear that the biblical account was a literary descendant of earlier Mesopotamian accounts. Further discoveries provided many other parallels between Babylonian and Israelite literature, law, institutions, and beliefs, and in most cases Babylon again appeared to be the source. Sparked by a series of lectures by the German Assyriologist Friedrich Delitzsch in 1902–1904, a heated controversy developed, pitting "Babel" against the Bible. Ultimately many of the simplistic conclusions concerning the priority, and the superiority, of the traditions of "Babel" were rejected, and in retrospect they seem clearly anti-Semitic. But the controversy not only marks the emergence of Assyriology (the study of the cultures of ancient Mesopotamia) as an independent discipline but also established the importance of nonbiblical materials for the understanding of the Bible.

For the study of the New Testament, the most important discovery was that of the Oxyrhynchus Papyri, a large collection of documents dating to the early centuries of the Common Era. Among the thousands of mostly Greek texts excavated between 1897 and 1934 were fragments of very early manuscripts of parts of the New Testament, along with three collections of sayings of Jesus, some of which, though not found in the canonical Gospels, are apparently authentic. The latter were of considerable importance in the debate about the prehistory of the Gospels, that is, the reconstruction of the stages between Jesus himself and the earliest written traditions. The papyri also included hundreds of documents from ordinary life in Roman times, illuminating both the form of Greek used in the New Testament and the social world of its writers and audiences.

FORM CRITICISM

While source criticism became a dominant interpretive method, the influx of nonbiblical data prompted a more nuanced investigation of the prehistory of the written biblical traditions. The pioneer in this work was the German scholar Hermann Gunkel (1862–1932), perhaps the most influential biblical interpreter of the twentieth century. While accepting Wellhausen's analysis as valid, Gunkel incorporated evidence both from Babylonian literature and from comparative folklore to propose a shift in emphasis from history to the history of literature. Prior to the formation of the Pentateuchal "documents," there was discernible a long process of development and transmission of "forms," or genres, which had parallels in nonbiblical sources. They were also vehicles for preserving very ancient traditions. These forms have their own history and chronological and cross-cultural continuity.

Central to the study of these forms, known as "form criticism," was the identification of the *Sitz im Leben* ("setting in life"), the original and subsequent contexts in which the forms were developed and used. Gunkel first applied form criticism to the book of Genesis in his commentary published in 1901, in which he isolated such forms as saga, legend, taunt, curse, hymn, etiology, and proverb. His studies on the Psalms (1928–1933) were also groundbreaking, setting the terms of the discussion for the rest of the century by his classification of the various genres (hymn, individual and communal laments, indi-

vidual and communal thanksgivings, royal psalms, wisdom psalms, etc.). Although there is a kind of idealism about the definition of the forms, parallels from outside the Bible confirmed their applicability and enhanced the understanding of the particulars of biblical traditions.

Gunkel had not hesitated to apply his insights to the New Testament, as in his important monograph on creation and chaos as central themes in prophetic and especially apocalyptic literature, including the book of Revelation. Two of his students, Martin Dibelius and Rudolf Bultmann, applied the principles of form criticism more systematically to the Gospels. They refined the definitions of forms such as parables and miracle stories, and Bultmann especially identified similar forms in other ancient sources. Although the question of the historical Jesus was still an issue, New Testament form criticism moved beyond what could be hypothesized about the original setting in the life of Jesus himself and focused more on the role that the forms played in various settings in earliest Christianity.

ARCHAEOLOGY

Serious exploration of the Levant began in the early nineteenth century, and notable advances were made in mapping the region and in identifying ancient sites. In the decades before World War I, extensive and, by the standards of the time, scientific excavations were undertaken by British, German, French, and American archaeologists. In Palestine attention was focused on the major cities of ancient Israel, as Jerusalem, Samaria, Megiddo, Shechem, Jericho, Taanach, and Gezer were all partially excavated. An overriding preoccupation of the excavators was historical, even apologetic: to verify, by independent data, the historicity of biblical traditions.

In the 1920s and 1930s many more projects were initiated, and excavation techniques were improved. Greater accuracy in dating excavated remains was made possible through the refinement of ceramic typology, especially as elaborated by the American scholar W. F. Albright in his excavations at Tell Beit Mirsim. But very little of the vast amount of material that was excavated and published could be related directly to the Bible, and debates often ensued about how to synthesize archaeological and biblical data.

When work resumed after World War II in the 1950s and 1960s, new projects were undertaken and many sites that had been earlier—and fortunately only partially—excavated were redug, especially by British, American, and Israeli archaeologists. In part because of the flood of material from periods long before and after biblical times or having little direct relevance to the Bible, archaeology began to develop as an independent discipline, as had already happened in the classical world. More attention was given to what archaeology actually produced, the material culture of the region in various periods, and in some circles there developed a theoretical tension between archaeology and biblical studies, as many earlier archaeologists were also biblical scholars. Now, more and more archaeologists were acquiring interest and expertise in periods and regions not directly relevant to biblical history. The result, by the late twentieth century, was that some archaeologists lacked sufficient expertise to connect what they excavated with the written sources, and many biblical scholars simply ignored the potential contributions of archaeology to the interpretation of the Bible. This was especially true in the case of the New Testament. Apart from continuing efforts since the late nineteenth century to identify sites associated with the life of Jesus, until the 1970s the study of the New Testament was largely restricted to texts, with little attention to the growing body of information about Palestine and the entire eastern Mediterranean world derived from archaeology.

ETHNOGRAPHY, SOCIOLOGY, AND ANTHROPOLOGY

As explorers and archaeologists began to make the ancient Near East known, they also observed those living there in the present. While many of the descriptions published were little more than naïve catalogues of perceived parallels between Arab customs and details of life in biblical times, there were serious works of scholarship, including W. Robertson Smith's *Lectures on the Religion of the Semites* (1889) and Gustaf Dalman's extensive survey of Palestinian social life and customs (*Arbeit* [work] *und Sitte* [customs] *in Palästina*, 1928–39). At the same time, the disciplines of sociology and anthropology were becoming more sophisticated. An early sociological interpretation of the Hebrew Bible was Max Weber's *Ancient Judaism* (1917–19), and there were sporadic applications of sociological method to early Christianity as well. Not until the later twentieth century, however, would it become important in biblical interpretation.

Anthropological research had a more immediate impact. Typical of early efforts was the encyclopedic work of James G. Frazer. In *The Golden Bough: A Study in Comparative Religion* (1890; revised and abridged by Theodor Gaster in 1959) and subsequent works such as *Folk-lore in the Old Testament* (1919), Frazer organized a staggering amount of data in support of his understanding of the evolution of society from primitive beginnings to civilization. His principal focus was on myth and rituals, especially the essential role of the king in the welfare of the larger society, and he includ-

ed both the Hebrew Bible and the New Testament in his analysis.

While Frazer's work was subsequently criticized for its failure to pay sufficient attention to specific cultural contexts and for his cavalier treatment of the data to fit his theories, his influence was considerable. In particular, British and Scandinavian scholars developed and refined his approach, developing what has been characterized as a "myth and ritual" school. The work of Sigmund Mowinckel of Norway is representative. Using form criticism as a method (he had been Gunkel's student) and the function of the king as an organizing principle, and drawing heavily on Babylonian sources, his study of the Psalms (1921–24) focused on their use in what he suggested was an annual enthronement festival of Yahweh, like the Babylonian New Year festival. He also identified the individual speaker in many of the psalms as the king himself, and found evidence for prophets giving oracular messages to the king or to the community as part of the New Year ceremony. In *He That Cometh* (1951), Mowinckel examined the reuse of these royal ritual traditions in postexilic Judaism and in the New Testament.

REDACTION CRITICISM

The impression left by source criticism was that the final forms of the Pentateuch and other biblical books or collections for which multiple sources were hypothesized were pedestrian compilations with little literary merit. Beginning in the 1930s, again mainly in Germany, attention began to be paid to the larger units as creative works in their own right. In several influential essays, and in his commentaries on Genesis and Deuteronomy, Gerhard von Rad argued that the Hexateuch (the Pentateuch plus Joshua) was itself a literary form. Its *Sitz im Leben* was the feast of weeks (see Deut 16.9; 26.1–2), where the key events of the nation's "salvation history"—the Exodus, the conquest of the land, and the covenant—were recited and reenacted. The Hexateuch for von Rad is the final, literary product of a long development of such narrative creeds, earlier forms of which are found in such texts as Deut 26.5–9; Ps 136; Ex 15.

One reason that von Rad included the book of Joshua in his analysis was that the promise of the land, a central theme especially in J and P, was unfulfilled in the Pentateuch. Martin Noth took another approach. The original conclusion to the Pentateuch, he proposed, had been replaced by a "Deuteronomistic History." With the book of Deuteronomy as a kind of theological preface, the books of Joshua through 2 Kings comprised a carefully written history of Israel in the promised land. Since 2 Kings ended with the destruction of Jerusalem and the end of Israel's autonomy in the land, Noth argued that this history was an exilic composition, which explained the catastrophe as the inevitable result of Israel's failure to live up to the obligations of its covenant with God as detailed in Deuteronomy. Subsequent scholars revised Noth's views, suggesting that while the final form of the Deuteronomistic History was, as he had suggested, a product of the mid-sixth century BCE, it had its own literary history and had existed in one or more editions during the monarchy before the exile. But his essential insight concerning the underlying unity of the books of Deuteronomy through 2 Kings remained the foundation for subsequent interpretation of the historical books.

Attention to larger units developed in the study of the New Testament as well, beginning in the 1950s. In important commentaries on Matthew and Mark, Günther Bornkamm and Willi Marxsen understood those Gospels as creative literary works, with distinctive theologies and themes. In his study of the theology of Luke, Hans Conzelmann showed how the Gospel of Luke and the book of Acts together formed a carefully composed narrative, with thematic unity provided by an understanding of the life of Jesus as the center of history and Jerusalem as the geographical center of the story. Similar approaches were undertaken for the Gospel of John and the letters of Paul, and for both the Hebrew Bible and the New Testament, redaction criticism's focus on larger units anticipates the methods of literary criticism and canonical criticism later in the twentieth century.

DISCOVERIES OF TEXTS BETWEEN THE WORLD WARS

The discovery and decipherment of cuneiform texts of ancient Assyria and Babylon during the second half of the nineteenth century had profoundly changed the understanding of the Hebrew Bible. On the historical level, the repeated references especially in Assyrian annals to kings of Israel and Judah and to events mentioned in the Bible enabled the construction of a detailed chronology. But for the most part, connections between the cuneiform texts and biblical traditions were indirect. This is not surprising, given the distance and often the time that separated those Mesopotamian cultures from ancient Israel. And apart from a scattering of inscriptions in Hebrew, Phoenician, Aramaic, and Moabite, there were no significant written remains from Israel itself or its most immediate neighbors. That changed in the 1920s and 1930s, as excavations uncovered more collections of ancient texts, and further decipherment shed light on such groups as the Sumerians, the Hittites, and the Hurrians. While there were seldom direct correlations with the Bible, the tablets from Nuzi in northern Iraq and Mari and Ugarit in northern Syria were especially important in

expanding the knowledge of the larger world to which ancient Israel belonged.

In many respects the mythological texts from Ugarit are the most important because of their geographical proximity to ancient Israel and the direct light they shed on the Hebrew Bible. Written in a previously unknown Semitic language belonging to the same subfamily as Hebrew, they are composed in poetry that is often remarkably close in diction and in form to biblical poetry. The myths feature gods and goddesses such as El, Baal, and Asherah, all frequently mentioned in the Bible but hitherto incompletely known, largely because of the biblical writers' antagonism toward gods other than Yahweh. Moreover, similar motifs—for example, the childless patriarch, the theophany of the storm god, the council of the gods, the sacred mountain—and innumerable smaller details illustrate the shared commonalties between the culture of Israel and those of its neighbors. Despite undeniable chronological and geographical discontinuities, the literary, religious, and institutional traditions of the Levant, including ancient Israel, are best understood as part of a cultural continuum that, allowing for local particularities, is remarkably consistent and pervasive.

THE DEAD SEA SCROLLS

Another discovery that sent scholarship in new directions was that of a cache of manuscripts in caves near Qumran at the northwest corner of the Dead Sea. Over the course of several years, beginning in 1947, the remains of hundreds of manuscripts were discovered, first by local Bedouin and subsequently by archaeologists. Some of the manuscripts were largely intact, including an almost complete scroll of the Hebrew text of the book of Isaiah, and others were preserved only in fragments. Written mostly in Hebrew and Aramaic, with a few in Greek, they are generally agreed to have been a library deposited in the caves for safekeeping during the First Jewish Revolt (66–73 CE) by the inhabitants of the nearby settlement. Most scholars identify these inhabitants as Essenes, one of the major groups within Judaism in the Roman period, according to the first-century CE Jewish historian Josephus. Among many important aspects of the scrolls, three may be highlighted here. First are the manuscripts of the Hebrew Bible, more than a thousand years older than any previously known, giving new impetus to text criticism (see p. 2192). Second is their contribution to the understanding of both Hebrew and Aramaic in the Roman period. And third is the glimpse they provide—especially in what have been termed "sectarian documents," that is, various community regulations, hymns, eschatological texts, and biblical commentaries (*pesharim*; see p. 2209)—of one group within Judaism around the turn of the era. What had earlier been oversimplified as a kind of monolithic Judaism is now, on the basis of these texts and other sources reexamined in their light, understood rather as a complex spectrum of various "Judaisms," one of which was earliest Christianity. And while there are no direct links between the Dead Sea Scrolls and the New Testament, they do reveal a rich and complicated background for the emergence of Christianity as well as for the development of rabbinic Judaism after 70 CE.

THE NAG HAMMADI TEXTS

In 1945 at Nag Hammadi, some 300 mi (500 km) south of Cairo, Egyptian peasants unearthed a large jar containing thirteen codices. Most of the texts contained within these volumes were Christian Gnostic texts, and although written in Coptic many had been translated from Greek. One of the most important was *The Gospel of Thomas*, a collection of the sayings of Jesus perhaps originally compiled before the end of the first century CE. Fragments of *The Gospel of Thomas* had earlier been found among the Oxyrhynchus Papyri (see above). Less than half of the sayings attributed to Jesus in this text are paralleled in the New Testament, and the *Gospel of Thomas* thus provides both an important independent source and an example of how earliest Christian tradition was collected and expanded by a particular writer within a specific community, a process more and more recognized in the study of the canonical Gospels.

CONCLUSION

With few exceptions, until after World War II historical-critical scholarship was engaged in by Protestant scholars. With the promulgation of the papal encyclical *Divino Afflante Spiritu* in 1943, Roman Catholic scholars began to become practitioners as well. Likewise, both in the United States and in Israel, with the development there of the Hebrew University and later other institutions of higher education, Jewish scholars also made significant contributions. Facilities at major denominational graduate centers increasingly recruited scholars without regard to their religious affiliations. By the mid-twentieth century it was possible to speak of a consensus of interpretation: a general agreement on methods and results that largely transcended national and confessional differences. That consensus was evidenced in important ecumenical endeavors, especially in the United States, including several ongoing translation and commentary projects. In the next several decades that consensus would begin to unravel.

CONTEMPORARY METHODS IN BIBLICAL STUDY

In its development during the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries, biblical criticism was often in conversation with other disciplines, including linguistics, anthropology, the history of religion, sociology, philosophical hermeneutics, and literary aesthetics, as well as with theology. Yet as biblical studies became a discipline in its own right, it developed a set of classical methods and questions that set the parameters for research. These methods were largely concerned with the history of the text and of the cultures that produced the texts. The consensus that these were the relevant questions and the methods by which they should be pursued lasted until well after the middle of the twentieth century. Since the 1970s, however, many biblical scholars have questioned the adequacy of an almost exclusive orientation to questions with a historical focus. Also, in keeping with a trend characteristic of most of the humanities and social sciences, there has been a strong movement toward interdisciplinary conversation. Although it is difficult to give a simple overview of the proliferating approaches to biblical studies since the 1970s, they can be roughly grouped under the categories of literary, social-scientific, and cultural hermeneutical approaches.

LITERARY APPROACHES

A popular appreciation of the narrative art of the Bible has always existed. Its stories were represented in the sculpture and stained-glass windows of medieval churches, and Western literature has been profoundly influenced by its characters, themes, and symbols. In both Judaism and Christianity the reading and retelling of the stories in devotional and liturgical contexts made them deeply familiar. Yet even though biblical Hebrew poetry had been the subject of academic study since the eighteenth century (most notably in Bishop Robert Lowth's *Lectures on the Sacred Poetry of the Hebrews*), little attention had been paid to the poetics of biblical narrative. One impetus to the interest in biblical narrative that developed in the 1970s can be traced to a development in American higher education: the creation of departments of religious studies in nondenominational colleges and public universities in the 1960s and 1970s. In such contexts the study of the Bible "as literature" was deemed especially appropriate to a secular curriculum. Such interest was not restricted to scholars in secular contexts, however. In 1968 James Muilenberg, who for much of his career had been a professor at Union Theological Seminary in New York, delivered a presidential address to the Society of Biblical Literature titled "Form Criticism and Beyond." Here he called for a type of literary-theological approach to the poetry and prose of the Bible, which he referred to as "rhetorical criticism." Giving further impetus to literary study of the Bible was the work of several scholars of English and comparative literature, who extended their expertise in the analysis of literature to biblical texts. Most prominent were Northrop Frye (*The Great Code: The Bible and Literature*), Robert Alter (*The Art of Biblical Narrative* and *The Art of Biblical Poetry*), and Frank Kermode (*The Genesis of Secrecy,* a study of the Gospel of Mark). Alter and Kermode later collaborated to edit *The Literary Guide to the Bible*.

This literary approach differed from historical study in significant ways. Whereas historical study tended to be concerned with the prehistory of the text (oral traditions and written source materials) and with its development through successive redactions, literary study focused on the final form of the text. Whereas historical study was interested in the world referred to by the text, literary study directed its attention to the world constructed in the text. Nevertheless, there were historical dimensions to this early work in biblical literature. Both Alter and Meir Sternberg attempted to isolate distinctive features of ancient Israelite narrative art (e.g., modes of characterization, the use of type-scenes, techniques of repetition, forms of plot development), which were not necessarily the same as the techniques used in modern Western narrative. Similarly, New Testament literary study has included a strong interest in the comparative analysis of Greco-Roman literary genres and techniques and those used in the Gospels, Acts, and early noncanonical Christian literature.

Much of the early literary study of the Bible was influenced by the "New Criticism," an approach that had dominated Anglo-American literary scholarship from the 1930s through the 1950s. In New Criticism the literary text was considered an autonomous work of art, to be studied independently of its author's intentions and of the sociopolitical currents of the time in which it was produced. New Criticism was a reaction both to a methodology arising out of the history of literature, in which new literary movements are seen as developing from those of previous eras, and to biographical criticism, which reads literary texts as expressions of the life experiences of the writers. The focus in New Criticism

is rather on the way in which the text itself is structured so as to produce the observed or expected effects and understandings. Thus, the plot, characters, setting, point of view, and other aspects of the story's rhetoric are analyzed. As the literary study of the Bible was gaining ground, however, rapid changes were taking place in the larger field of literary study, changes that were quickly reflected in biblical studies.

Structuralism was the first of these new movements to make an impact. The origins of structuralism are in the work of the early twentieth-century linguist Ferdinand de Saussure, who attempted to analyze the system of relationships within a language that make acts of speech possible. In particular, he stressed that meanings are produced not so much by simple definition as by a network of contrasts (e.g., a tree is a woody plant that is not a bush or a shrub). The anthropologist Claude Lévi-Strauss argued that symbolic structures within human societies, including their kinship systems and their mythologies, could be analyzed in the same way, as systems of differences structured according to binary oppositions (e.g., life/death; male/female; hunting/farming; outside/inside). In a parallel development A. J. Greimas attempted to use Saussure's insights to develop a "grammar" of narrative in much the same way as Saussure attempted to develop a grammar of sentences. Biblical scholars, anthropologists, and literary theorists were quick to apply these approaches to the Bible. The mythic narratives and genealogical accounts of Genesis, the symbolic geography of the Gospel narratives, and even the theological vocabulary of Paul offered opportunities for analyzing the patterns of binary opposition that structuralists argued were the key to the meaning of the texts.

Even as structuralism was being adapted for the study of biblical literature, its assumptions and claims were being challenged in the wider world of philosophical and literary studies. Structuralism claimed that the binary oppositions that structure human thought are essentially universal and unaffected by culture or history. Though the surface features of texts might vary with different societies and over time, the underlying structures did not. Such claims proved difficult to sustain. Just as structuralism dispensed with history, so it also had no place for the reader in the production of meaning. Structuralism understood itself as a kind of scientific method. Yet different readers regularly reached different understandings of the same text. Finally, although structuralism seemed to lend itself well to myths, folktales, and highly formulaic narratives, it seemed unable to deal with more complex narratives.

Against the focus on a supposedly objective and stable text in narrative criticism and against structuralism's focus on impersonal and universal codes, reader-response criticism argued for the essential role of the reader in the process of making meaning. Structuralism tended to display its results in terms of charts, an implicitly spatial understanding of the text. But reader-response theory insisted that reading is essentially a temporal affair. In reading, one only gradually gathers information that is progressively organized and reorganized by the reader to produce meaning. Moreover, the text often contains "gaps" that the reader, consciously or unconsciously, fills in (e.g., details concerning characters, aspects of motivation or causality, connections between events). As the reader becomes actively involved in the process of reading, what the reader engages is not simply the issues of plot and character but also matters of norms and values, which the reader may embrace or resist. Reader-response criticism thus accounts for the different understandings of and reactions to the "same" text by different readers by claiming a necessary place for the subjective element in reading. Subjectivity is limited, however, by what the reader's community considers to be a plausible or implausible inference. Thus it is not so much individual readers as "interpretive communities" who set the parameters according to which interpretation takes place.

Although important reader-response studies of Hebrew Bible texts have been produced, the method found its most enthusiastic reception in the study of the New Testament Gospels. Yet it has been one of the most controversial of methods, challenged by historical critics for neglect of the intentions of the author and the horizon of the original audience, and by postmodern critics for its failure to break decisively with such historical assumptions as the understanding of the text as a stable "object" opposed to the readerly "subject." One of the consequences of reader-response criticism's focus on the role of interpretive communities, however, has been a renewed appreciation for the forms of interpretation practiced by Jewish and Christian communities before the rise of modern biblical studies during the Enlightenment. Instead of seeing such traditional readings as naive or simply wrong, interpreters now ask about the assumptions and values that govern the reading practices of Christian typological and allegorical exegesis and of Rabbinic midrash. Midrash in particular has engaged contemporary literary scholars, because some of its interpretive practices bear an intriguing resemblance to forms of postmodern interpretation (for example, the acceptance of multiple, even contradictory, interpretations of the same text, and the interpretation of one text by another without regard to historical influence).

If reader-response criticism represented one reaction to the limitations of traditional narratology and to

structuralism, a more pervasive criticism emerged under the rubric of poststructuralism, or deconstruction. This movement, associated with the French philosopher Jacques Derrida, is above all a critique of the metaphysical assumptions of Western philosophy, and only secondarily an analysis of the nature of texts and the interpretive process. Derrida noted the attempt of philosophy to posit a central term (God, reason, the human being) in relation to which all of reality can be organized. This organization characteristically takes place by means of binary oppositions (e.g., rational/irrational, oral/written, presence/absence), in which the first term is accepted as superior to the second. Deconstruction attempts to dismantle such structures in order to show their artificiality and the inevitable ways in which any such structure of thought implicitly "decenters" its central term and undermines itself through internal inconsistency and contradiction. When applied to texts, deconstruction begins with the perception that language is inevitably incomplete and surprisingly fluid. It then analyzes how even a text's ostensible argument is rendered problematic, if not outright self-contradictory, by extraneous details or slippages in meaning that at first appear peripheral and unimportant. For deconstruction the point of reading is not to restate the meaning intended by the author but to engage the text in creative thought, often by means of punning play with the text. Deconstruction's very style serves to undermine the binary opposition serious/frivolous, for its aim is in part to uncover the ways in which various forms of thought attempt to inscribe power and privilege.

The perspectives of deconstruction have been combined with other intellectual currents (most notably Freudianism and Marxism) to produce a variety of related approaches that are often referred to comprehensively by the term "postmodernism." Along with Derrida's deconstruction, Michel Foucault's study of the complex nature of power and truth and Fredric Jameson's neo-Marxist analysis of ideology have been deeply influential on postmodernism in biblical studies. For an overview of these trends as well as other forms of postmodernism, see *The Postmodern Bible* by The Bible and Culture Collective.

Since one of the features of postmodernism is its tendency to dissolve boundaries, it is scarcely surprising that its characteristic approaches have combined with a wide variety of other impulses within biblical studies, most notably feminist criticism, but also various forms of ideological criticism (see below under CULTURAL HERMENEUTICS). Similarly, postmodern analysis is not restricted to narrative but employed in relation to all sorts of texts. Indeed, the self-conscious study of the literary artistry of the Bible, such a controversial novelty in 1970, has been all but put aside in the rapidly shifting mix of methods and approaches that have been developed alongside the classical forms of biblical interpretation.

SOCIAL-SCIENTIFIC CRITICISM

Social-scientific criticism, another form of biblical criticism that has arisen in more recent years, applies insights and methods from the fields of sociology, anthropology, and ethnography to describe aspects of ancient social life manifested in the biblical texts and to reconstruct the social worlds behind the text. To some extent historical criticism has always had a social dimension, since the objects of its interest included nations, states, social groupings, and religious movements. Yet self-conscious social-scientific investigation, though not unknown in earlier stages of biblical studies, has come into its own since the 1960s.

As early as the Renaissance, students of the Bible sought to make cross-cultural comparisons between ancient Israel and the nations of the ancient Near East. With the development of critical biblical study in the nineteenth century, this interest in cross-cultural study focused particularly on the comparison between Israel and the pre-Islamic Bedouin Arabs, as well as with contemporary Bedouin society, especially in the work of Julius Wellhausen and William Robertson Smith. Similarly, Martin Noth compared Israel's premonarchical tribal confederacy with ancient Greek tribal leagues. In retrospect, these early attempts at social-scientific analysis were hampered by a lack of rigorous method, by erroneous assumptions about the economic and social organization of ancient Israel, and by an overly static model of ancient culture. More sophisticated was the work of the sociologist Max Weber, whose *Ancient Judaism* (compiled from lectures given in 1917–19) attempted to incorporate the dimensions of historical and institutional change in his account of the social organization of ancient Israel. Sociological investigation was not as prominent in New Testament studies, although the Chicago school of social analysis (leaders of which were Shailer Mathews and Shirley Jackson Case) did investigate the social location of early Christians and attempted to account for the success of Christianity among Gentiles but not among Jews.

These early attempts at social-scientific criticism were largely displaced by interest in other questions and methods, and for almost forty years little was published in this field. By the 1960s and 1970s, however, interest in it revived. Since the issues posed by Hebrew Bible and New Testament materials are significantly different, each literature will be discussed separately. In studies concentrating on the Hebrew Bible, several areas have proven fruitful

for analysis. The first issue to be examined, and one still sharply debated, is that of the socioeconomic and political nature of the formation of the Israelite tribal confederacy. Social historians rejected the conquest model of Israel's entry into Canaan as it is described in the biblical narrative. Both George Mendenhall and Norman Gottwald argued that Israel's origins were to be sought instead in a peasant revolt against urban Canaanite overlords. The peasant movement was a revolt against the hierarchical socioeconomic structure and developed as a retribalization along egalitarian lines in the central highlands. What differentiated Mendenhall and Gottwald, however, was Gottwald's explicit use of Marxist social theory. Although both of their proposals have been sharply criticized for reliance more on presupposed models than on textual or material evidence, they served to open the question of Israel's origins for fresh investigation. Since the 1970s archaeology has also generated increasing information about social organization, population patterns, domestic architecture, agricultural practices, and trade patterns for the period preceding the monarchy. This information, together with a wider array of possible comparative models for the development of noncentralized peasant societies, has begun to generate new ways of understanding early Israel, though none has yet achieved consensus.

Similarly, attempts to understand the movement from a loose tribal confederation to the eventual formation of royal states has been aided by comparative social analysis. Social anthropologists have documented the development of chieftainships as an intermediate stage between these two forms of social organization. A chiefdom is a hierarchically organized society that lacks the strong central governmental apparatus characteristic of a true state. Though some aspects of the process are still debated, it is now widely thought that Saul's "kingship" and at least the early stages of David's rule should be thought of as chieftainships.

Prophecy is another area of Israel's religious and social life that has proven fruitful for social-scientific analysis. Apart from texts of prophetic oracles recovered from neighboring nations, archaeology does not contribute to this question. Rather, the biblical texts are analyzed in light of sociological models and comparative ethnographic evidence. Though the limited evidence makes many conclusions elusive, it has been possible to clarify the social location of the prophets and their relationship or nonrelationship to established religious institutions and to the monarchy. How a prophet secures legitimation, the role of ecstasy and other phenomena of abnormally heightened consciousness, and the relation of oral and written communication have all been examined in social-scientific perspective. The later development of apocalypticism and the question of its social location—whether it was, for example, an outgrowth of prophecy, a scribal phenomenon, or a movement of the social margins or of the priestly elite—has been debated as the biblical texts are reread in light of apocalyptic and millenarian movements in the medieval and modern periods.

The biblical text also contains significant information about purity laws and kinship and family patterns, topics that lend themselves to comparative social analysis. In the 1960s the anthropologist Mary Douglas pioneered such studies with her analysis of the food laws in Leviticus, interpreting them as a symbolic system for organizing the world and correlating purity laws in general with the social concern for boundaries. More recently the genealogies and ancestral narratives in Genesis, the family laws in Deuteronomy, and the reports on the postexilic community in Ezra-Nehemiah have been investigated in an attempt to discern the basic structures of family organization, as well as changes over time in the patterns of family life. As modern interest in gender constructs and roles has grown, so has the investigation of such issues in ancient Israel. Although the resources are mainly the texts of the Hebrew Bible, attempts have been made to use the findings of archaeology to determine the patterns of life and activity characteristic of males and females in biblical times (see C. Meyers, *Discovering Eve: Ancient Israelite Women in Context*).

In the field of New Testament, insights from sociology were first used in the 1970s to analyze the nature of the early Christian movement. The anthropological study of millenarian movements and sociological typologies of sects were employed to clarify the dynamics of the Christian communities that emerged in the first two centuries of the era. One of the watersheds in the use of sociological and anthropological perspectives in New Testament studies was the publication of *The First Urban Christians* by Wayne Meeks, which was a comprehensive attempt to describe the social context and organization of the early Pauline communities. Also significant was the application to biblical texts of cultural anthropological studies of the roles of honor and shame in Mediterranean societies, and the functioning of patron-client forms of social relations. These studies not only illumined structural aspects of early Christian society and its context but also showed how aspects of discourse and categories of thought were organized in characteristic patterns that reflected these social values and assumptions. In such cases social-scientific and traditional theological investigation of the New Testament may converge, as the latter recognizes the need to understand the meaning and context of key terms by means of social-scientific analysis.

The rich comparative material available from the classical world has facilitated many types of sociologi-

cal investigation. Slavery, as social phenomenon and as metaphor, has been an important topic, as has the role of prophets and prophecy, the practice of magic, and the class status of early converts to Christianity. As in the field of Hebrew Bible, the social study of family structures and gender roles has yielded important insights.

Although disputes concerning appropriate methodology for social analysis have not been absent in Hebrew Bible studies, they have been particularly prominent in New Testament studies. Even the terminology has been contested. Some scholars prefer to describe their work as social history, that is, as an extension of traditional historical criticism that is informed by categories and questions from sociology and cultural anthropology. Others have insisted that their work is social-scientific in the strong sense of the term, that is, as work guided by the correlation of models and data, as are more purely sociological and social-psychological studies. More significant than the disagreement over terminology, however, has been the issue of which sociological or anthropological methods and approaches are most suitable. Social conflict is a topic that has long been of interest to sociologists, though it has been studied from two quite different perspectives. Social functionalism examines the ways in which society, considered as an organism, attempts to contain and manage conflict, integrating disparate members and subgroups into the whole. This approach was used by Gerd Theissen to explore the primary stages of the early Christian movement and its subsequent evolution. By contrast, conflict models in sociological theory emphasize the ways in which different groups in a society pursue their own interests and the ways in which different ideologies struggle with one another. More recent work in the sociology of early Christianity has favored conflict models over social functionalism. The nature of the textual sources has also influenced the choice of methods. Since much early Christian literature is self-consciously theological or ideological, cultural anthropology and the sociology of knowledge have proven particularly fruitful. Both of these approaches pay attention to the way in which societies create "symbolic universes" by which to negotiate issues of identity, legitimacy, and the creation or resolution of conflict. This focus on the social functions of language has drawn together literary and social criticism toward something of a convergence on what might be termed ideological criticism, an issue also central to the third methodological movement to be discussed, cultural hermeneutics.

CULTURAL HERMENEUTICS

Classical biblical studies, as it emerged from its Enlightenment roots, understood itself as a form of critical analysis that was objective, disinterested, and even "scientific." Though biblical theology might make normative claims, even those claims were based on a preliminary act of interpretation that was grounded in objective scholarship. In recent years the claim of classic biblical scholarship to be a quasi-scientific enterprise has been questioned by those who insist that the enterprise of historical criticism of the Bible is unconsciously shaped and informed by cultural assumptions specific to the time and place in which that method was developed. Pure objectivity is an illusion. In the interpretation of texts and cultures there is no "view from nowhere." All interpreters, whether or not they are aware of it, frame their questions and perceive the data from some perspective, which helps to shape their understanding of the text or culture in question. Rather than seeing the influence of the interpreter's social and cultural location as a problem, some have claimed it as a positive value. Thus the term "cultural hermeneutics" serves as an umbrella term for a variety of approaches to biblical interpretation (e.g., liberationist, feminist, postcolonial) in which the social location of the interpreter is not only made explicit but serves as a normative principle in interpretation. The primary categories that have figured in such interpretation are those of class, ethnicity, and gender.

The earliest and most methodologically self-conscious of these approaches is that of Latin American liberation theology, which emerged in the 1960s and 1970s. This approach did not begin as an academic perspective but rather emerged out of the concrete experience of the poor and of those pastors and other religious professionals who lived and worked with them. They insisted that the starting point for reading and interpreting the Bible must not be a stance of "objectivity" but rather the experience of the crushing poverty and oppression of the lowest social classes. Interpreted from the perspective of material poverty, the Bible discloses itself as a text of liberation and serves to further a revolutionary process of emancipation.

Much of the work of liberation hermeneutics took place in the Bible studies of Christian base communities, in which groups of the poor were encouraged to read and interpret the Bible for themselves, with the assistance of a priest or teacher. Although this oral interpretation was seldom recorded, Ernesto Cardenal's *The Gospel in Solentiname* provides an example. The interpretation developed in the base communities was paralleled by the work of theologians and biblical scholars, who articulated the principles of liberation hermeneutics in a series of important studies (see, especially, L. Boff and C. Boff, *Introducing Liberation Theology*; and J. Severino Croatto, *Biblical Hermeneutics: Toward a Theory of Reading in the*

Production of Meaning). Liberation theology has tended to place special emphasis on such specific portions of the Bible as the story of the Exodus, the social criticism of the prophets, the figure of Mary (as singer of the Magnificat, with its imagery of social transformation; Lk 1), Jesus' preaching of the kingdom of God in the Gospels, the depiction of the liberating Christian community in Acts, and the struggle against evil in its imperialist and cosmic guise in the book of Revelation.

In the wake of Latin American liberation hermeneutics, religious communities and academics in the various countries of Africa and Asia have developed analogous forms of biblical interpretation that work from the particular experiences of those nations. A related movement, which is indebted to liberation hermeneutics but which also draws on other sources, is postcolonial hermeneutics (see R. S. Sugirtharajah, ed., *Voices from the Margin: Interpreting the Bible in the Third World*). As European countries colonized various parts of the globe from the sixteenth to the nineteenth centuries, the Bible was an important aspect of the sometimes forced assimilation of indigenous peoples to European cultural values. The desire of European churches to spread Christianity meant that the Bible, as interpreted by Europeans, accompanied the colonizers. Where conversion took place, the Bible displaced indigenous traditions, even as it buttressed European dominance. In recent years biblical scholars in the Third World (and increasingly in Europe and North America) have examined this complex history and heritage. They have attempted to analyze the roles that the Bible and its interpretation have played in these colonized countries. Not only have the colonizers' interpretations been examined and critiqued (e.g., the use of the Exodus/Conquest story in North America and South Africa to justify the displacement of the indigenous peoples), but increasingly, attempts have been made to recover the forms of interpretation developed by the newly Christianized indigenous peoples themselves. Elements of "hybrid interpretation," that is, the mixing of indigenous traditions with Christian biblical narratives, are not only identified but often encouraged as a continuing creative practice. Thus, part of the resistance to the effects of the colonization experience is to read the Bible along with rather than above other religious and cultural traditions.

Within North America several ethnic communities, including Hispanics, Asian Americans, and Native Americans, have also developed self-conscious traditions of biblical interpretation. The earliest and most developed of these is African American biblical hermeneutics. The Bible has played a particularly significant role in the African American community, and popular forms of African American biblical interpretation have been embedded in the songs and sermons of the community for centuries. In the 1960s and 1970s, as the Black Theology movement developed, African American biblical scholars began to turn their attention both to the recovery and analysis of this traditional interpretation and to the development of a critical, academic form of African American biblical interpretation (see C. H. Felder, ed., *Stony the Road We Trod: African-American Biblical Interpretation*). Afrocentric interpretation has drawn attention to the historical role played by African countries (especially Egypt and Ethiopia) and by Africans in the biblical text. But African American biblical hermeneutics has also attended to texts and issues that have been important to the lives of the African American community: for instance, the Exodus narratives, the place of slavery in Israelite and early Christian reflection, and the preaching of Jesus. African American biblical studies has also been marked by a deep reflection on the nature of interpretation itself, especially the ways in which an oppressed community appropriates for its own liberation a text that also serves as the authorizing document of the society within which its members have been oppressed.

Whereas the various perspectives discussed so far under the rubric of cultural hermeneutics are distinctively Christian, the same cannot be said for feminist biblical hermeneutics. Here, although Christian feminist biblical interpretation emerged slightly earlier, Jewish and Christian feminist interpretation has largely developed in tandem, and the critical conversation between Jewish and Christian feminists has been one of the distinctive features of this movement. In the 1950s and 1960s Protestant seminaries began to admit women in significantly larger numbers than before, followed soon after by an increase in the number of Catholic and Jewish women pursuing theological education. The emergence of the women's movement in the 1960s and its criticism of the role of the Bible in the oppression of women posed a challenge to those who identified themselves as both Christian or Jewish and feminist. One early position, which still continues to be important in the Christian evangelical community, is to affirm that the Bible, when correctly interpreted, affirms women's full humanity. Other feminists, more critical of the Bible itself, have attempted to expose and analyze the patriarchal elements in the biblical text itself in order to show how the patriarchal values can be separated from the essentially liberating values that form its primary message. More radical feminists, however, have attempted to show that the biblical traditions are thoroughly and irredeemably antifeminist.

Feminist interpretation of the Bible has embraced a variety of methodologies, The include the approaches of historical-critical and sociological biblical scholarship,

since it attempts to recover and reconstruct the historical reality of women's lives in ancient Israel and in the Greco-Roman world of early Christianity and early Judaism. Some Christian feminists, in an attempt to make a case for the liberating nature of early Christianity, did so in ways that played off the egalitarian message of Jesus against his Jewish background. Jewish feminists challenged the accuracy of the representation of Judaism, and as a result considerably more nuanced pictures of gender relations in both early Christianity and Judaism have been developed.

Not all feminist interpretation has been concerned with historical reconstruction, however. A significant strand of feminism has used literary methods, exploring the ways in which biblical texts construct and represent an image of women that may function in the service of particular ideologies. In many instances this literary approach has involved reading against the grain of the text. For instance, a character whom the text treats as a subsidiary character may become for feminist analysis the central character of the text (e.g., Jephthah's daughter in Judg 11 or the Levite's concubine in Judg 19). Of particular concern to feminists has been the issue of women and violence, for many of the biblical texts do represent violence against women, and a smaller but significant number represent women engaged in violence. While much of this literary work has also had a historical focus, in that it has been concerned with how the ancient texts have represented women, increasingly attention has been drawn to what is called cultural studies, i.e., how Western traditions in art and, more recently, film have themselves depicted the biblical representations of women.

Since feminism made women aware of their own particular perspective as women in the process of interpretation, it is not surprising that feminism has also become aware that particular women occupy very different positions in society, depending on their social and economic class and their ethnicity. Consequently, it has become more problematic to refer to a single "feminist" movement, for women of color and Third World women have insisted that gender, class, and ethnicity must all be considered in their complex interrelationships. African American women, for instance, have complicated the Anglo-European interpretation of the Abraham/Sarah narratives by focusing on the character of Hagar—the ethnic outsider, the slave, the surrogate mother—and her role in creating the narrative's moral complexity. Similarly, Latina, African, and Asian women have taken up the challenge of understanding the ways in which the practices of reading and interpreting the Bible serve to constrain or to emancipate women in their particular social and cultural contexts.

Finally, two different types of theological interpretation of the Bible can also be classified as forms of cultural hermeneutics, since they foreground the community context of the formation and interpretation of the Bible. The first of these is canonical criticism. Though the forms of canonical criticism developed by its two major proponents, Brevard Childs and James Sanders, differ, one can identify common elements. Specifically, canonical criticism is concerned with how scripture's final form was created within a believing community and how the meanings created by that final form continue to guide the reading practices of the community. The canonical shaping of the Jewish Bible, for instance—which places the Writings in the final position and concludes with the call of 2 Chronicles for the exiles to go up to Jerusalem to rebuild the Temple—tells a different story from that produced by the shaping of the Christian Old Testament, which places the prophets last and concludes with Malachi's reference to the return of the prophet Elijah to announce the coming Day of the Lord.

In one sense canonical criticism is an extension of historical criticism's interest in the development of traditions. But in contrast to historical criticism's tendency to investigate the earliest stages of development, canonical criticism explicitly privileges the latest stage, the canon in its final form. This concern with reading the text of scripture in its final form gives canonical criticism some similarity to the literary approaches of the "New Criticism." Thus, where historical criticism, reading the book of Isaiah, tries to distinguish which materials come from the eight-century prophet, the sixth-century prophet, and the fifth-century prophet, literary and canonical critics focus on how the final form of the book has created the context within which all of its materials are now to be read, as a movement from judgment to salvation. While canonical criticism's self-conscious attention to what it means to read scripture as a member of a religious tradition links it with cultural hermeneutics, it also differs from some of the other forms of cultural hermeneutics discussed earlier. Just as those forms of interpretation make repeated reference to the specific experience of the reader as a guide to interpretation, canonical hermeneutics finds the clues to a proper reading in the ways in which the text of scripture was shaped by the believing community at the time its canon was fixed.

Perhaps closer to other forms of cultural hermeneutics is the type of theological interpretation often called "postcritical." Like canonical criticism, it is a reaction against historical criticism's inability to articulate the meaning of scripture for a believing community. In contrast to canonical criticism, which focuses on the final stages of the composition of the biblical text and the

meaning of the biblical books in that context, postcritical interpretation orients itself to the early interpretive practices of Rabbinic Judaism and patristic Christianity. Thus Rabbinic midrash and Christian allegorical and typological exegesis are reclaimed as valid ways of understanding the biblical texts as scripture. These traditional interpretive practices are also used as patterns for the development of new postcritical ways of reading and interpreting scripture, as one can see in Peter Ochs's *The Return to Scripture in Judaism and Christianity.*

In the Christian tradition postcritical interpretation is also deeply influenced by Hans Frei's *The Eclipse of Biblical Narrative* and George Lindbeck's *The Nature of Doctrine.* Both authors claim that before the rise of historical criticism the normative way of reading scripture in Christianity was as a grand narrative from Genesis to Revelation, with the Old Testament related to the New not only by plot but also by forms of typological interpretation that linked figures and events. Thus scripture does not simply tell a story but is rather a master narrative, that is, a narrative within which persons can live and by means of which they understand reality. The forms of postcritical interpretation that attempt to recover this way of reading scripture are not only self-consciously literary in orientation but also draw on ethnographic models. Lindbeck characterizes his approach as "cultural-linguistic." That is to say, one learns to enter the world of scripture as one learns to speak a language or to live in another culture. What makes this approach to scripture *post*critical and *post*modern is that the symbolic worlds of classical Judaism and Christianity are no longer the native worlds even for most believers. Modernity, with its different forms of critical understanding, has displaced them. The retrieval and reappropriation that is the goal of postcritical interpretation occur self-consciously in the shadow of modernity. Moreover, as Lindbeck's cultural-linguistic analogy suggests, postcritical interpretation is not simply about interpretation but also about participation in the practices of a living religious community shaped by the symbolic world of scripture.

If anything ties together the various strands of newly developing approaches to biblical interpretation, it is a concern for the relationship of language, meaning, and power. More historically oriented literary and social methods increasingly examine the ways in which issues of conflict and access to power can be traced in the texts of the Hebrew Bible and the New Testament. Cultural hermeneutics, though not uninterested in historical reconstruction, also focuses on the ways in which access to the power to interpret the text and construe its meaning serves to empower those who have traditionally been marginalized. And postmodernism has attempted to underscore the ironies of all such interpretive strategies, since in its view a stable and definitive meaning always eludes the interpreter. Yet its very skepticism about any final and objective understanding is what opens up space for a reappropriation of traditional forms of interpretation that attempt to challenge the interpretive power of modernity itself.

THE GEOGRAPHY OF THE BIBLE

The geographical territory encompassed by the Bible (if one includes all identifiable places that are mentioned in it) includes most countries that border the Mediterranean Sea as well as those to its east. The majority of the narratives of the Hebrew Bible and the Apocrypha, as well as the Gospels in the New Testament, are set in that subregion of the Middle East known as the Levant and now governed by Lebanon, Syria, Jordan, Israel, and the Palestinian Authority. Egypt to the southwest, Asia Minor (modern Turkey) to the north, and Mesopotamia (largely modern Iraq) and Persia (Iran) to the northeast are also part of the biblical landscape.

In Mesopotamia—the Greek term for the region between the Euphrates and Tigris Rivers (see color Maps 6 and 14 at the end of this volume)—as in Egypt, urban civilization developed by the fourth millennium BCE in the river valleys that provided the essential water for a region where rainfall was at best seasonal and at worst, especially in the case of Egypt, insufficient for agriculture. But the regular summer flooding of the Nile Valley enabled the early and continuous existence of a remarkably long-lasting culture in Egypt, which because of its proximity to the Middle East was an important player in that region's history and the locale for several episodes in biblical narrative, most notably the Exodus. In Mesopotamia the inhabitants had harnessed the two rivers to provide, by means of an elaborate irrigation system, sufficient water for agriculture as well as for consumption. The successive imperial powers that originated in Mesopotamia were able to use this productive region as a base for expansion, especially to the west, over which they exercised control throughout most of the first millennium BCE, until the Hellenistic period.

Although surrounded by vast deserts, there is a narrow stretch of land where agriculture can flourish, which extends from the Nile Valley around to the Persian Gulf. The western part of this "fertile crescent," the Levant, has the same environment as much of the rest of the region adjacent to the Mediterranean, which today as for the last several millennia is characterized by almost ideal growing conditions for grapes and olives and for raising sheep and goats; grains and legumes and other fruits can also be grown in much of the region. Its climate is moderate, without excessively high or low temperatures for the most part, and with abundant rainfall that occurs mainly during the winter months. Jerusalem, for example, receives on average about 22 in (550 mm) of rain annually, most of it falling between November and February, with January being the rainiest month. Higher elevations to the north receive still more rainfall, and the southern and easternmost regions considerably less.

Within the Levant itself, the primary focus of biblical narratives, there is a wide variety of environments, the result of the geological substructure of the region, which presents dramatic changes in a relatively small area. Moving from west to east, the Mediterranean coast is occupied by a coastal plain that is about 15 mi (25 km) wide in the south but narrows as one moves north. It is interrupted by Mount Carmel, which juts into it, and virtually disappears in northern Israel and Lebanon. The coast itself has several excellent harbors in the north, from which the Canaanites and their successors the Phoenicians conducted a flourishing maritime trade. Farther south the coast is relatively even, and there are few natural harbors. Phoenician influence eventually extended to such port cities as Acco, Dor, Joppa, and Ashkelon, and in the late first century Herod the Great constructed an impressive artificial harbor at Caesarea. Along the coastal plain was a major route used by traders and by armies of conquest between Egypt and Damascus. This route ran to the point where the coast narrows below Mount Carmel, from which passes led from the coastal plain to the Jezreel (Esdraelon) Valley; from there, several routes could be taken to the northeast.

Adjacent to the coastal plain in the south is an uplift of smaller, gentler hills called "the Shephelah" ("lowland"). As the natural western boundary of the kingdom of Judah in the Iron Age, and of other entities in the same region before and after, it was protected by such important cities as Lachish and Gezer. The Shephelah forms the foothills of the mountainous region immediately to its east. This is the "hill country" of the biblical writers, with higher elevations to the north. For example, Jerusalem, about 35 mi (55 km) east of the Mediterranean, is 2,500 ft (760 m) above sea level, and many mountains in northern Galilee have elevations of over 3,300 ft (1,000 m). The highest peak in the region is Mount Hermon, which at 9,200 ft (2,800 m) is snow-covered year-round. The hill country is the setting for many of the key locales in biblical narrative, including the relatively inaccessible sites of Jerusalem, the capital of the kingdom of Judah (later Judea), and Samaria, the capital of the Northern Kingdom of Israel and later of the province with the same name. This central mountainous ridge is bisected by the broad, fertile Jezreel Valley, the major route to the interior and hence the location of important ancient cities, including Jokneam, Megiddo, Taanach, Ibleam, and Jezreel. Mount Tabor rises from the floor of the Jezreel Valley in splendid isolation to an elevation of 1,929 ft (588 m) above sea level. The village of Nazareth, home of Jesus, is in the hills on the northern side of the valley.

To the north of the Jezreel Valley lies Galilee. Because of its abundant springs, Galilee was dotted by settlements from prehistoric times, but it plays little role in biblical narratives until the end of the first millennium BCE, when it is the setting both for some of the campaigns of the Maccabees and, in the early first century CE, of the ministry of Jesus in the Gospels.

Just east of this central mountainous region is the Rift Valley. This major depression in the earth's crust extends from southern Turkey into East Africa; in Israel and Jordan it is almost entirely below sea level. Included in it are the Huleh Basin in northern Galilee, 230 ft (70 m) above sea level, where the site of Hazor was a major fortified city from early in the second millennium BCE until its destruction by the Assyrians in 732 BCE. Some 12 mi (20 km) south of Lake Huleh is the Sea of Chinnereth, or the Sea of Galilee (also called the Sea of Tiberias), a large freshwater lake about 12 mi (20 km) long that fills the valley. It lies 210 m (700 ft) below sea level, and is fed by the Jordan River, which flows into it from the north. It is habitat to nearly two dozen species of fish, and the fishing industry has been an important part of the local economy since prehistoric times. Many of the events narrated in the Gospels are set in the many towns and cities near the lake; the region was a center of resistance against the Romans during the First Jewish Revolt of 66–73 CE.

The Jordan River continues its flow south from the Sea of Galilee 65 mi (105 km) to the Dead Sea. The valley itself is about 12 mi (20 km) wide and is entirely below sea level, with a semitropical climate that produces lush vegetation, even though because of its low elevation it receives relatively little rain. Important cities in the valley include Beth-shan (later Scythopolis) in the north and Jericho in the south. The valley was another important north-south route, especially during the Roman period, when Jews often avoided the district controlled by the Samaritans between Galilee and Judea.

The Dead Sea, lying 1,300 ft (400 m) below sea level, is the lowest point on the land mass of the earth. Because of evaporation due to high temperatures (a record 124°F [51°C] was measured here), the composition of the water is about 25 percent salt and other minerals, making organic life impossible and giving this lake its ancient name, "the salt sea" (Num 34.3,12; NRSV "Dead Sea"). The desolate region that surrounds it is the narrative setting for the legendary cities of Sodom and Gomorrah. On its western shore are Qumran, where the Dead Sea Scrolls were found, and Masada, a palace constructed by Herod that was the last Jewish outpost to be captured in the First Jewish Revolt.

East of the Rift Valley there is a rapid rise to the relatively level Transjordanian plateau to the east, with the elevation of modern Amman (ancient Rabbah, later Philadelphia) at ca. 2,700 ft (820 m) about average. This region also receives sufficient rainfall to sustain agriculture and, moreover, is watered by two tributaries of the Jordan, the Yarmuk and the Jabbok, and by the Arnon, which flows into the Dead Sea. The northern part of the plateau, biblical Bashan, was famous for its cattle and for its oak forests, and in the Hellenistic and Roman periods was the location of several of the cities of the Decapolis. Traversing the Transjordanian plateau from south to north is another major route, called in the Bible the "King's Highway" (Num 20.17), used throughout antiquity as a conduit for the incense and spice trade from Arabia to Damascus. East of the plateau is a vast desert region, a continuation of the Arabian desert that extends northward to the Euphrates Valley, and thus limits the Fertile Crescent on both east and west. Apart from a few oases, especially Tadmor (later Palmyra) northeast of Damascus, this desert was mostly uninhabited in historic times.

South of the hill country of Judah lies the Negeb, a region of limited rainfall and hence marginal agriculture. The city of Beer-sheba is located in the extreme northern Negeb, just south of the Judean hill country. The Negeb merges into the Sinai peninsula, which is formed by the two northern arms of the Red Sea, separating the Sinai from the North African desert to its west and the Arabian desert to its east.

The small size of this region is out of proportion to its importance in ancient times and to the importance of the biblical texts which are set in it. West of the Jordan, the traditional limits of ancient Israel were Dan in the north and Beer-sheba in the south, separated by a distance of about 150 mi (240 km). Between these two cities, and between the Mediterranean and the Rift Valley, is a region with an area approximately the same as that of the state of Vermont. From another perspective, Jerusalem is about 35 mi (55 km) east of the Mediterranean and 16 mi (25 km) west of the Dead Sea. In the right conditions, both bodies of water are visible from Jerusalem's hills.

CULTURAL CONTEXTS

THE ANCIENT NEAR EAST AND ANCIENT ISRAEL TO THE MID-FIRST MILLENNIUM BCE

BEGINNINGS

By the time Israel appeared on the stage of the ancient Near East, civilization and the patterns of empires and of the larger shared culture of the Levant were already well established. Before the end of the fourth millennium BCE, full urbanization had developed in the great river valleys of Egypt and Mesopotamia. The development of sophisticated technology to exploit the flooding of the Nile and to channel the waters of the Euphrates and Tigris enabled the production of regular food supplies and led to regional hegemonies. In Egypt, centered in the Nile Valley and oriented according to the south-to-north direction of the Nile's flow, this culminated in the unification of Upper (southern) and Lower (northern) Egypt at the beginning of the Early Dynastic Period toward the end of the fourth millennium. In southern Mesopotamia the kings of Sumer ruled that region from a succession of dominant city-states beginning at about the same time.

The stages that preceded urbanization are prehistoric in the sense that they antedate the development of writing. Archaeologists have been able to trace the slow, and often independent, progress from hunter-gatherer economies throughout the Near East to stable cultures that relied on domesticated crops and animals for their sus-

tenance. Dependable supplies of food led to increases of population and eventually to competition for resources. These factors combined to necessitate specialization of tasks, centralized control, and record-keeping. For these purposes, writing was invented, again toward the end of the fourth millennium and, once introduced, was widely adopted (although using different systems) in Egypt and Mesopotamia. By 3000 BCE, then, written history may be said to have begun.

One result of more than two centuries of discovery, excavation, and decipherment of ancient texts is that a detailed chronology of the ancient Near East has been established. While there are occasional gaps in the sequence of rulers for Egypt and for the various Mesopotamian city-states, those sequences are relatively complete. For regions peripheral to the centers of power the historical record is more spotty, but still substantial. Allowing for minor scholarly disagreements, the chronology is secure and provides a framework for the history of the entire ancient Near East, including Israel. Although there remain some small groups of undeciphered texts, including a few in what is apparently the Philistine language, and although much of cuneiform literature is still underground, it is unlikely that new discoveries will require substantial revision of our current understanding of the essential chronology of the ancient Near East.

Nor is the knowledge of the historical record restricted to kings and princes. Hundreds of thousands of nonelite texts have been found. These are not great myths and royal inscriptions but mundane business and commercial records, which shed valuable light on the lives of ordinary men and women and have begun to make possible a reconstruction of the social world of the ancient Near East.

Ancient cultures were as intrigued as we are by beginnings, and they constructed elaborate myths to explain their own prehistory. The establishment of the natural and social orders is typically presented in these myths as the work of a deity, usually the principal god or goddess of the political entity in which they were written. Both Egyptian and Mesopotamian literatures have many such creation myths, features of which have parallels in biblical traditions. Like their more powerful neighbors to the southwest and northeast, the ancient Israelites had their own accounts of origins, some of which were ultimately collected and edited in the book of Genesis. The early chapters of Genesis deal with prehistory and are largely mythical. In these Israelite expressions of the origins of the world, of society, and of civilization, the principal agent is the god of Israel. And although intended as the prologue to a larger historical narrative, they are not historical in any modern sense; that is, they do not accurately represent what the archaeological record shows to have taken place, whether in terms of chronology, or the origin of species, or a universal flood.

Egypt and Mesopotamia have their own complex histories during the third millennium, now relatively well known thanks to textual and archaeological data. In the Levant this is the period known as the Early Bronze Age, when northern Syria was largely in the orbit of Mesopotamia, and Egypt exercised direct control over southern Canaan. For complex reasons not fully understood, toward the end of the third millennium Egypt experienced some internal disruption, reflected in the decline of city-states in southern Canaan but not in Syria farther to the north. By 2000 BCE, however, centralized control had been reestablished, and the textual and artifactual evidence is abundant. Trade flourished, as is indicated by both the archaeological record and commercial and diplomatic correspondence among larger urban centers, and between them and Mesopotamia and Egypt. The Levant was spanned by a cultural continuum, with Syria and northern Canaan being more closely linked with Mesopotamia, and southern Canaan with Egypt. Canaan itself had a relatively homogeneous culture, and its inhabitants, especially in rural and village settings, went about their lives with relatively few changes despite the struggles of the urban centers with each other. From as far back as the end of the fourth millennium, and into the first, there appears to have been continuity of population, whose patterns of material culture develop rather than being replaced by successive waves of invaders, as earlier historical reconstructions suggested.

It is in this larger context that Israel placed its own beginnings, centered on the lives of four generations of ancestors, the families of Abraham and Sarah, of Isaac and Rebekah, and of Jacob and Leah, Rachel, Bilhah, and Zilpah, and their offspring.

THE HISTORICITY OF THE ANCESTRAL NARRATIVES IN GENESIS

In the biblical account of the origins of Israel, narratives concerning Israel's ancestors in Gen 12–50 follow the mythic material in chs 1–11. The chronology of the narratives themselves is set by the biblical writers in the early second millennium BCE, but there are no direct connections between the biblical traditions and nonbiblical sources. No person or event known from Egyptian, Mesopotamian, or other sources is even mentioned in the biblical narrative. At the relatively few points where the Bible does name rulers (as in Gen 14; 20.2; 26.8), none of them are found in any nonbiblical sources. Moreover,

at many points in the narrative the Bible is tantalizingly vague. If the biblical writers had just named, for example, the pharaoh who took Sarah into his house (Gen 12.15), or the pharaoh in whose court Joseph rose to power (Gen 41), we would know when the biblical writers thought those events took place, and could correlate them with Egyptian chronology.

The biblical narratives themselves are the result of a lengthy and complicated process of formation, transmission, and editing (see "Introduction to the Pentateuch," p. 3). Although the reconstruction of that process is hypothetical, there is no doubt that the process itself has caused the inclusion of many anachronisms. These reflect the times when the transmission and editing took place rather than the times in which the narratives are presumably set.

As a result of these factors, not surprisingly, scholars are divided on the question of historicity, with proposed dates for the ancestors of Israel, if in fact they even existed, spanning the entire second millennium BCE. A cautious positive assessment would be at best a convergence of possibilities. Allowing for anachronisms, the data are not inconsistent with the Middle to Late Bronze Ages (ca. 2000–1200), with some clues pointing to earlier rather than later in that time span. These clues are admittedly indirect, and include the forms of personal names used and the identification of the god of the ancestors as El (see Ex 6.3), also known in texts from Ugarit in northwest Syria as the head of the Canaanite pantheon from Ugarit. The account of Joseph's elevation to a position of prominence in the Egyptian court is not incompatible with the rise to power of the Hyksos, the Fifteenth Dynasty rulers of Semitic origin who controlled much of Lower Egypt at the end of the Middle Bronze Age (ca. 1650–1550).

Yet most of the details of the lives of the ancestors of Israel, both as pastoral seminomads and as periodically migrating to Egypt, fit not only the mid-second millennium but other times as well. Biblical writings probably do preserve some authentic historical memories, but these have been so refracted by the processes of transmission and the idealization of the ancestors that it is impossible to designate any of the individuals mentioned in Genesis as historical or to establish anything resembling a precise chronology.

THE HISTORICITY OF THE EXODUS FROM EGYPT

As with the ancestral narratives in Genesis, there is no direct connection between biblical traditions and other ancient sources. Egyptian records contain no mention of the major individuals and events of the narrative in Ex 1–15: Moses, Aaron, the plagues, and the defeat of the Egyptian army at the sea are completely absent from the extensive documentation we have for ancient Egypt. Again, the biblical sources are frustratingly unspecific. Neither the pharaoh "who did not know Joseph" (Ex 1.8) nor the pharaoh of the Exodus itself (Ex 5–15) is named. The only precise detail in the narrative is the store cities named in Ex 1.11, but their precise location and the dates when they were founded and occupied are uncertain, and their inclusion could also be anachronistic. In addition, biblical chronology is both vague and inconsistent. Moreover, as with the ancestral narratives in Gen 12–50, the narrative has been shaped by centuries of transmission and redaction. Finally, although the importance of the Exodus is evident from the amount of space devoted to the generation of the Exodus (the books of Exodus through Deuteronomy), the narrative framework was supplemented by the attachment of large chunks of legal and ritual material from subsequent periods. Once again, then, it is hardly surprising that scholars have divergent views about the date and even the historicity of the Exodus and of its principal characters. And, again, we do best to speak of a convergence of probabilities based on indirect evidence.

The first fixed datum, one of great importance, is a victory stele of Pharaoh Merneptah (1213–1203). In it he claims to have defeated various enemies in Canaan, including the identifiable cities of Gezer, Yanoam, and Ashkelon, and in the same geographical region, a group identified as Israel. Whether the victory celebrated on the stele is as complete as claimed, it is clear that by the end of the thirteenth century BCE the Egyptians knew of the existence of a geopolitical entity called Israel in the land of Canaan. Thus, the Exodus, or some movement of Hebrews out of Egypt, and their entry into Canaan, where they formed at least part of the group that called itself Israel, must have occurred before that date.

The biblical narrative is composite, and when critically analyzed suggests that what the Bible presents as a single episode may in fact have been several, and that more than one group of "Hebrews" eventually moved from Egypt to Canaan, probably entering it at several different places. Most of the details of the account of the forced labor of the Hebrews and of the glimpses of the Egyptian court that we get in the narratives would fit almost any period in ancient Egyptian history.

A majority of modern scholars, but by no means all, date the central episode, associated with Moses, to the thirteenth century, during the reign of Rameses II (1279–1213). An earlier date, toward the beginning of the Late Bronze Age, would link the Exodus with the expulsion of the Hyksos Dynasties from Egypt in the mid-sixteenth century and better fits the chronology in the biblical text, which dates the Exodus to 480 years prior to the construction of the Solomonic Temple in the mid-tenth

century (1 Kings 6.1). This correlation was first proposed by the first-century CE Jewish historian Josephus, and has many modern adherents. Among the arguments against it is the absence of any mention of Israel in the land of Canaan before the Merneptah inscription. This is especially true in the case of the Amarna Letters, which are diplomatic correspondence from the fourteenth century between the Egyptian court and the rulers of city-states in Canaan. Furthermore, the biblical accounts of the period after the entry into the land found in the books of Joshua and Judges (see further below) contain no hint of Egyptian presence in the land, although both archaeological and written sources indicate that it was significant throughout the Late Bronze Age. It thus seems more probable to most current scholars that the Exodus took place during the thirteenth century.

That some Exodus took place is a responsible inference, given the persistence of the Exodus tradition in the Bible and its presence in the earliest biblical poetry (notably Ex 15), and some smaller details, such as the Egyptian names of Moses, Aaron, and Phinehas. The event must have involved fewer people than the exaggerated biblical numbers (see Ex 12.37) indicate, and may have constituted little more than the escape of a relatively small group of Hebrews from forced labor in the eastern Nile delta, most likely in the thirteenth century BCE. Given the lack of historical data it is impossible to say more.

That group, whatever its size, interpreted its escape as the direct intervention of the deity Yahweh on its behalf, to be celebrated in hymns and magnified in importance as it was told and retold. When the group eventually entered Canaan, at a time when there was no centralized power to oppose it, it joined with others and eventually became the twelve-tribe confederation of Israel.

THE EARLY HISTORY OF ISRAEL IN THE LAND OF CANAAN

Perhaps no period in the history of Israel is more controversial than the first two centuries of the Iron Age. The beginning and end of this era are framed by two synchronisms: the mention of Israel in the Merneptah Stele in the late thirteenth century (see above), and the campaign of Pharaoh Shishak in the southern Levant in 925 (see below), an event documented both in Egyptian sources and in the Bible. During the intervening three centuries, according to the chronology accepted by the majority of scholars, Israel developed from a loose confederation of tribes into a relatively stable dynastic monarchy. But of the principal events and individuals that figure in biblical narratives, none occur in other sources. Once more, a historical reconstruction must be inferential.

One reconstruction of the beginning of this period that was dominant from the early to the mid-twentieth century is that of conquest. The book of Joshua describes how the large group of Israelites crossed the Jordan under the leadership of Joshua and, in a series of swift and relentless campaigns, defeated the kings of the major Canaanite cities and annihilated most of the indigenous population. This view seemed to be confirmed by the presence of destruction layers at key sites, all dated to the very end of the Late Bronze Age.

Reexcavation of many of those sites and more refined ceramic chronology, however, made it clear that some of the sites had not in fact been occupied at that time, and that the destructions were not all contemporaneous. Moreover, the opening chapters of the book of Judges presents a very different picture. While some Israelite tribes were apparently successful in defeating their Canaanite neighbors, many others coexisted alongside them. This is apparently confirmed even in the book of Joshua, where such Canaanite groups as the family of Rahab (Josh 6.25) and the Gibeonites (Josh 9) were incorporated into Israel. Thus the conquest model has largely been abandoned by scholars, but no other reconstruction has gained general acceptance.

One plausible scenario is to combine elements of various models to suggest that Israel as we know it emerged in the land of Canaan and was made up of diverse groups. One of these was the Exodus group, whose allegiance to the god who had brought them out of Egypt, Yahweh, would become the central religious tenet of the confederation. They were joined by others, some who were apparently their kin who had never gone down to Egypt, and some who may have been Canaanites disaffected from the centers of power. These disparate elements united in a confederation or league, whose primary principles of sole worship of Yahweh and mutual support were expressed in a social compact or covenant. The elements are called tribes, and they are associated with specific subregions in the land. While the number of twelve tribes is constant, both the names of the tribes and the territories with which they were associated shifted in response to historical vicissitudes. The religious symbol of the confederation was a movable shrine, the ark of the covenant, which seems to have been based at different tribal centers at different times. The confederation was decentralized, with no overarching authority, and the tribes were relatively independent. In time of crisis, however, tribes were expected to come to the assistance of a beleaguered member, as in the very ancient poem in Judg 5, or to punish one of their own for breach of the compact, as in the account of the Benjaminite war in Judg 19–21. In situations like these a volunteer militia was mustered.

This reconstruction takes into account a variety of biblical data that are embedded in a later historical work,

the Deuteronomistic History (see "Introduction to the Historical Books," p. 313). It also incorporates recent archaeological evidence, including both significant elements of cultural continuity between the Late Bronze Age and the Iron Age, and the proliferation of small rural settlements in the hill country both west and east of the Jordan. Not all of these settlements would have been Israelite, nor would tribal territory necessarily entail complete control. Several important urban centers remained outside the confederation, and Israel did not achieve total control of the promised land until the end of the eleventh century at the earliest.

At the beginning of the Iron Age (ca. 1200 BCE), shortly after the likely date for the Exodus, another group had arrived in Canaan. These were the Philistines, one component of the "Sea Peoples" well documented in Egyptian sources and in the archaeological record. Of Aegean origin, they had repeatedly failed in their attempts to invade Egypt, and one or more of these Sea Peoples, including the Philistines, settled in Canaan. According to the biblical account, they formed a pentapolis in the five cities of Gaza, Ashkelon, Ashdod, Gath, and Ekron, and the four of these cities that have been securely identified (Gath is the exception) show a remarkably homogenous material culture at this time.

The broad outline of the biblical account, in Judg 13–16 (the Samson stories) and in 1 and 2 Samuel (the stories of Samuel, Saul, and David), and the archaeological record are in considerable agreement. The Philistines had a superior technology, especially in metallurgy (see 1 Sam 13.20) and military hardware, and a professional standing army. By the mid-eleventh century they had considerably expanded their territory to the north and east, and their presence is evident at important centers beyond it, including Beth-shan in the Jordan Valley, and at military outposts in the heart of Judah, the dominant southern tribe, and in the north as well. The Philistines and the Israelites were thus on a collision course, both vying for control of the same region, and Israel's survival was at stake.

THE UNITED MONARCHY (CA. 1020—928 BCE)

The emergence of Israel as a nation-state is part of a larger pattern of the development of regional geopolitical and ethnic entities throughout the region, such as those of the Edomites, Moabites, and Ammonites in Transjordan, the Arameans in Damascus and other centers in central and northern Syria, and the Phoenicians in Tyre. For this development there is both archaeological and scattered written evidence. In the case of Israel, the major source is the Bible itself, especially the narrative of the Deuteronomistic Historians in 1 and 2 Samuel and 1 Kings 1–11. Judging from these sources, at least in part because of the Philistine threat, toward the end of the eleventh century Israel profoundly changed its form of government from a loose confederation of tribes to a monarchy, according to the terminology of the biblical writers. The first ruler, Saul, seems to have been more a military chief than a full-fledged king. And despite initial successes, he was unable to check the Philistine advance and died in a battle with them deep in Israel's territory in the Jezreel Valley. He was succeeded by a former commander in his army, David, who moved swiftly to contain the Philistines within their original territory and to unite Israel around himself and a newly chosen capital, Jerusalem.

Biblical historians describe additional military successes, which enabled David, and his son and successor Solomon, to subject kingdoms adjacent to Israel to vassal status, including the Edomites, the Moabites, and the Ammonites in Transjordan and the Arameans in Damascus. Whether the extent of the territory controlled by David and Solomon is as large as biblical sources suggest is questionable. Clearly the biblical historians have magnified the period of the United Monarchy, the reigns of David and Solomon, viewing them in many respects as an ideal age, made possible by divine grant. Underlying the sometimes hyperbolic biblical accounts, however, is authentic historical memory of increasing centralized control and concomitant administrative complexity, a picture indirectly confirmed by the archaeological record. When textual and archaeological data are added to the synchronisms between the Israelite monarchy and those of its neighbors, beginning in the tenth century, there is little doubt that the outlines of the biblical narrative are essentially correct.

The most important of these synchronisms comes just after the death of Solomon. The Egyptian pharaoh Shishak (Sheshonq I) undertook a campaign in Western Asia in 925, a date based on established Egyptian chronology. Mentioned in 1 Kings 14.25–26 (cf. 2 Chr 12.2–9), this campaign is further documented in Egyptian sources and is confirmed by destruction layers at key cities in Israel. This synchronism is the basis for the chronology of the first three kings of Israel, Saul (ca. 1025–1005), David (1005–965), and Solomon (968–928, allowing for a coregency with David at the beginning of his reign).

To be sure, the biblical account of the reigns of these three kings, found in 1 and 2 Samuel and 1 Kings 1–11, is shaped by theological concerns and also displays a pervading interest in the characters of the narrative—the tragically inadequate Saul, the heroic David, the ambitious but flawed Solomon—and in the intrigues of the royal court. But it is also significantly different from narratives about earlier periods in Israel's history. Divine

intervention is minimal, with most events taking place largely on the human plane. Moreover, a careful reading of the biblical text discloses archival and other details that can be correlated with the archaeological record and are consistent with the framework of events presupposed by the narrative. Thus, the skepticism of some modern historians, who argue that the biblical accounts of the United Monarchy are fictional retroversions from a later time, seems unwarranted.

David also seems to have initiated the transformation of the monarchy into a dynastic kingship, which, consistent with other Near Eastern models, was promulgated as the result of divine choice. With the establishment of the monarchy came social and religious innovation. The older structures of the decentralized premonarchic confederation were now coopted by royal institutions. The ark of the covenant was enshrined in the Temple in Jerusalem built by Solomon, providing in effect divine sanction for the monarchy. Priests became royal appointees, and there was a growing movement toward centralization of worship in the capital. Yet this centralized administration formed a kind of overlay, a veneer, on the social systems of the nation as a whole. Individuals still identified themselves as members of a family, clan, and tribe, and disputes between them were usually settled at the local level. Apart from the requirement of paying taxes and providing personnel for royal projects and for the army, life in the villages probably proceeded much as it had for centuries.

The establishment of the monarchy, however, had entailed the formation of an elite, wealthy class. Life in the capital of Jerusalem and, after the split of the kingdom into two, in the northern capital of Samaria as well, was characterized by conspicuous consumption. This is evident in the accounts of Solomon's court (1 Kings 4.22–28; 10.14–22), and in the description of the Temple and royal palace complex he constructed (1 Kings 6–7). That the extravagances documented in these accounts are not entirely an exaggeration is evident from archaeological data at Samaria and at royal cities such as Megiddo, Hazor, Gezer, and Dan. With the concentration of political power in the hands of a ruling aristocracy came abuse. One of the constants of the biblical traditions is opposition to the exploitation of the poorer classes. This opposition was frequently expressed in prophetic rebukes of the aristocracy, as in the legendary traditions concerning Elijah (2 Kings 20), and in the books of the prophets themselves. While their own relationship to the centers of power was not always antagonistic, prophets such as Amos, Isaiah, and Micah in the eighth century and Jeremiah in the late seventh to early sixth centuries were harsh in their denunciation of social injustice. In a sense they were conservatives, even reactionaries, insisting that the older premonarchic tradition of covenant was still binding, a tradition that commanded not only exclusive worship of Yahweh but also fair treatment of every Israelite.

THE DIVIDED MONARCHIES (CA. 928 TO THE LATE SEVENTH CENTURY BCE)

The union of north and south had been fragile, even during the United Monarchy, and it disintegrated at Solomon's death. The reason implied in 1 Kings 12 is the northerners' anger at the cost of the extravagances of the capital, and this must have been part of the motivation. Solomon's son and successor Rehoboam was unable to gain the allegiance of the ten northern tribes, who seceded and formed a separate kingdom. This inaugurates the period of the Divided Monarchy, the two kingdoms of Israel in the north and Judah in the south. The dynasty that David had established remained in power in Judah for nearly four centuries, while Israel was ruled by a succession of royal families, many of whose rulers came to power in military coups. The parts were less than their sum had been, and the two kingdoms had mixed relations, sometimes friendly, sometimes hostile. Neither was able to control effectively the regions that bordered them, and the Davidic empire, such as it was, ceased to exist.

Changes on the larger international scene would increasingly affect these two kingdoms. Pressure from a revived Egypt is already evident in the above-mentioned campaign of Shishak to the north in 925. Meanwhile, in northern Mesopotamia, the kingdom of Assyria had consolidated its control over Babylon in the south and adjacent regions to the north and east, and by the ninth century was poised to expand into the Levant. At this point the fairly complete Assyrian annals enable the construction of a relatively exact chronology and provide numerous synchronisms with biblical texts. Beginning with Ahab, king of Israel in the mid-ninth century, many of the rulers of both Israel and Judah are mentioned in Assyrian sources, an indication of the growing Assyrian interest in the region and a coincidence of ominous significance.

The Assyrians were establishing an empire, a process that reached its zenith with the Assyrian king Esarhaddon's subjugation of Egypt in 671. They accomplished this by virtue of a technologically sophisticated army, which in relatively rapid advance overwhelmed the smaller kingdoms to their west, usually incorporating their territories into the empire as provinces and deporting the elite of their populations to other regions. By the late eighth century this subjugation was virtually complete. The Syrian kingdoms had been taken, including that of the Arameans in Damascus in 732. In 722 Samaria fell,

its ruling class was exiled to Assyria, and the Northern Kingdom of Israel became an Assyrian province. Judah's territory was curtailed and, in part because of the remote location of Jerusalem, was allowed to exist in vassal status. Toward the end of the eighth century King Hezekiah attempted to reassert Judean independence, but this was ruthlessly quashed by the Assyrian king Sennacherib in a campaign (701) which is well documented in both biblical and Assyrian sources. Jerusalem avoided destruction only by payment of a heavy tribute, and the Davidic dynasty survived.

Beginning with Amos and Hosea in the mid-eighth century, the prophets, and the later authors of the Deuteronomistic History (Joshua–2 Kings) interpreted these events as a deserved punishment inflicted by God on his rebellious people. For them, the repeated experiences of attack, siege, and exile were ultimately caused not by the inexorable progress of the Assyrian armies but by divine agency, imposing the fulfillment of the curses attached to the covenant made by God with Israel on Mount Sinai.

THE END OF THE KINGDOM OF JUDAH (LATE SEVENTH TO EARLY SIXTH CENTURIES BCE)

By the late seventh century the Assyrian Empire was overextended and thus unable to prevent first independence and eventually overthrow by a resurgent Babylonia to its south. The Babylonians captured the Assyrian capital of Nineveh in 612, and in effect took over the Assyrian Empire. In the initial years, Egypt and Judah attempted to take advantage of the transfer of power by reasserting their independence. This was the time of the reign of the Judean king Josiah (640–609), whom biblical sources compare to David and whose accomplishments are magnified like those of his illustrious predecessor. While it seems likely that Judah was able to reestablish control over some of the territory to the north and west that had been under direct Assyrian rule, its autonomy, such as it was, was short-lived. After Josiah's death in battle at Megiddo in 609, in a failed attempt to prevent the Egyptians from moving north to reinforce the tottering Assyrians, Judah was again reduced to the status of a vassal, first to Egypt, and then, by the end of the seventh century, to Babylon. Caught between two greater powers, the Judean kings Jehoiakim and Zedekiah successively allied themselves with Egypt, which proved to be the weaker partner. Under Nebuchadrezzar (also called Nebuchadnezzar) II, the Babylonians laid siege to Jerusalem in 597 and 586, in the second instance destroying the city, burning down the Temple, and ending the Davidic dynasty.

Despite the extravagant propaganda of the royal establishment, neither the Davidic dynasty nor its capital city were impregnable. Jerusalem was destroyed, its dynastic Temple burned, and its population decimated by death and exile. Autonomous control of the promised land became only a memory. And despite partial restoration later in the sixth century, exile in Babylon forever transformed the religion of Judah-Judaism. From this point on, a significant proportion of Jews would be living outside the promised land, without king, Temple, or priesthood.

CULTURAL CONTEXTS
THE PERSIAN AND HELLENISTIC PERIODS

THE PERSIAN PERIOD (539–333 BCE)

The Babylonian exile and the period of Persian domination that followed was a time of great transformation for Judean institutions, religious practices, and culture, but it was equally a time in which the fundamental continuity with preexilic traditions was reaffirmed and secured. When Nebuchadrezzar put down the rebellion of Judah in 586 BCE, he exiled to Babylonia a portion of the population, including the ruling class and the skilled artisans. Some, however, remained in Judah, where a subsistence economy was soon reestablished. Although the system of regular sacrifices at the Temple was disrupted, the ruined Temple remained a focus for religious observances. The book of Lamentations may preserve liturgical poems used on days commemorating the destruction of Jerusalem and its Temple. Little is known about the circumstances of those who went into exile, although it appears that the exiles were settled in many local communities in Babylonia, where they were able to oversee their own internal and cultural affairs under the leadership of Jewish elders and prophets (see Ezek; Isa 40–55).

The conquest of Babylon by the Persian king Cyrus the Great in 539 BCE brought significant changes. In keeping with his policy of respecting the various deities worshiped throughout the empire, a decree by Cyrus in 538 (see Ezra 1.1–4; 6.1–5) authorized the rebuilding of the Temple in Jerusalem and the return of the Temple vessels captured by Nebuchadrezzar. In addition, Cyrus allowed any of the exiles who wished to return to Judah to do so. Within the exilic community in Babylon the anonymous prophet known as "Second Isaiah" (Isa 40–55) strongly supported Cyrus and urged the exiles to return to Judah. Although the historical sources are few and not always easy to interpret, it appears that only a small minority of the exiles and their descendants returned to Judah, most choosing to remain in Babylonia. This latter group became the nucleus of a large and highly significant Jewish Diaspora community (Jews of "the dispersion," that is, living outside the promised land), which strongly influenced the development of Judaism and Jewish culture during the following centuries.

Despite the decree of Cyrus, the Temple in Jerusalem was not rebuilt until 520–515 BCE. The reasons for the delay were various. Persian control over the western territories may actually have been tentative until after the Persians conquered Egypt in 525. The economy of Yehud (the name by which the Persian province of Judah was known) was weak, and there appears to have been friction between the population that had remained in the land and the small but powerful group who returned from exile with the authorization and financial backing of the Persian king. Conflicts with the neighboring territories of Samaria and Geshur and Ammon in Transjordan also complicated the situation. Within the Bible the prophetic books of Haggai and Zechariah and portions of Ezra 1–6 refer to this period, but these sources have to be read and interpreted critically, for they are neither consistent with one another nor easy to understand on their own terms. At least during the early part of Persian rule the governors of Judah appear to have been prominent Jews from the Diaspora community, one of whom, Zerubbabel, was actually a member of the Davidic royal family. The province of Yehud itself was very small, consisting of Jerusalem and the territory surrounding it within a radius of about 15–20 mi (24–32 km).

Once the Temple was rebuilt, it became the nucleus of the restored community, and consequently a focus of conflict (Isa 56–66; Mal). The high priestly family, which had also returned from the Diaspora, became very powerful, and at least on occasion was in conflict with the governor appointed by the Persian king. Although the details are often not clear, there appears to have been continuing conflict during the fifth century between those Jews whose ancestors had been in exile and those whose ancestors had remained in the land. Those who returned from the Diaspora styled themselves the "children of the exile" and referred rather contemptuously to the rest as "people of the land," as though their very status as Jews was in question. In fact, the question of the limits of the community was one of the most contentious issues of the period, reflected both in the controversy over mixed marriages between Jewish men and ethnically foreign women (Ezra 10; Neh 13) and also in conflicts within the Jewish community over who had the right to claim the traditional identity as descendants of "Abraham" and "Israel" (see Isa 63.16 and more generally "Third Isaiah," Isa 56–66). Although the conflicts between various contending groups in early Persian period Yehud are largely cast in religious terms, there is no question that they were also in part socioeconomic (see Neh 5). All of these conflicts and efforts toward redefinition of the community, however, took place within the reality of Persian imperial control. Thus it is not by accident that the two most prominent figures involved in various reforms of mid-fifth century Yehud, Ezra and Nehemiah, were Diaspora Jews of high standing, carrying out tasks that had been specifically authorized by the Persian kings.

Because this was a period of self-conscious reconstruction, it was also a time of immense literary activity, as traditional materials were collected, revised, and edited, and new works composed. Although much of the Pentateuch may have existed in various forms during the time of the monarchy, it was probably reworked during the Persian period into something close to its final form. Indeed, some scholars have suggested that this revision may have been undertaken under the sponsorship of the Persian government, reflecting Persia's interest in achieving stability throughout its empire by means of religious and legal reforms in the provinces. Although a history of Israel and Judah known as the Deuteronomistic History (Deut through 2 Kings) had been composed during the latter years of the monarchy and updated during the exile, a new version of that history, 1–2 Chronicles, was prepared during the Persian period (ca. 350 BCE). It clearly reflects the concerns of the postexilic community, focusing almost exclusively on the history of Judah and giving particular emphasis to the institution of the Temple. The books of Ezra and Nehemiah interpret events from the decree of Cyrus in 538 until the late fifth century.

In addition to the prophetic books composed at this time (Isa 56–66, Hag, Zech, Mal, and perhaps Joel), there is evidence that the texts of older prophets were also edited and reinterpreted. Psalmody had been an important element of worship at the First Temple but appears to have taken on an even more significant role in the Second Temple. Although the expansion and revision of the book

of Psalms may have continued until well into the Hellenistic or even Roman period, an important shaping of the psalter, perhaps including its division into five "books," was part of Persian period activity. Wisdom writing, too, flourished during this time. The book of Job, parts of the book of Proverbs, and perhaps Ecclesiastes were likely composed then.

THE HELLENISTIC PERIOD (333–363 BCE)

The westward expansion of the Persian Empire into the area of Asia Minor had brought it into conflict with Greece, since many of the cities of Asia Minor that came under Persian control had been founded and populated by Greeks. Twice the Persians had even invaded the Greek mainland but were defeated on both occasions. Eventually, Philip of Macedon developed a plan to free the Greek cities of Asia Minor from Persian domination. Although he died before he could undertake the campaign, it was taken up by his son Alexander the Great in 334 BCE. Alexander, however, did not stop with the accomplishment of that initial goal. In 333 he continued down the Phoenician coast, subduing any city that resisted, conquered Egypt, then turned to the Persian heartland, defeating Darius III, the last Persian emperor, in 331. Alexander continued his conquest into the eastern reaches of the Persian Empire before returning in 324 to Babylon, which he apparently intended to establish as the capital of the empire he now controlled. He died in 323 before he could successfully organize his enormous territory. After Alexander's death, his generals fought for control of portions of the empire. By 301 an agreement gave Egypt to Ptolemy and Mesopotamia and Syria-Palestine to Seleucus. Ptolemy, however, occupied Palestine and southern Syria. Through a series of five wars extending over more than a hundred years, the Ptolemaic kings managed to hold onto their Palestinian territory, finally losing it to the Seleucids in 198 BCE.

Jerusalem had surrendered to Alexander in 333 and was relatively undisturbed by the events of his conquest. Samaria, too, surrendered but rebelled in 332 and was severely punished, its inhabitants killed or sold into slavery, and the city refounded as a Macedonian military colony. Documents belonging to a group of Samaritans who fled and were later tracked down and killed by Alexander's troops have been excavated from the Wadi Daliyeh in the Jordan Valley. In contrast to the relatively settled conditions following Alexander's conquest, however, the dispute between the Ptolemies and the Seleucids over control of Palestine had serious consequences for Jerusalem and Judea. Not only did the wars sometimes affect Judean territory, but the nation's leaders had to make difficult choices concerning which power to support. The conflict between pro-Ptolemaic and pro-Seleucid factions within the Judean community was a significant factor in internal politics during the third century BCE.

Although the high priest was the primary representative of the Judeans, the Ptolemaic system of government and taxation had significant effects on the power structure of the country. The Ptolemies considered their territories primarily as a source of revenue. Rather than collecting funds directly, they employed "tax farmers," often local persons who bought the right to collect taxes for a specified area. Their profit was the difference between the amount they raised and the amount they had pledged to the government. Some of these positions were quite lucrative. Moreover, the Ptolemies also engaged prominent landowners to keep the peace as the heads of locally organized military villages. The Jewish historian Josephus preserves a long account of the Tobiad family, which served the Ptolemaic government in both capacities. From his lively narrative one has a sense not only of the power and wealth such positions could afford but also of the dangers and conflict they often entailed.

Culturally, the most significant effect of Ptolemaic rule was the establishment of a large Jewish Diaspora community in Egypt, centered in the new city of Alexandria, founded by Alexander the Great. Jews had often migrated to Egypt during times of economic or political trouble (see Jer 42–44). In the fifth century a Jewish military colony in the service of the Persian army was established at Elephantine (near modern Aswan). They had their own temple, though they remained in correspondence with Jerusalem concerning various religious matters, including the proper celebration of Passover and assistance in securing Persian permission for the rebuilding of the Elephantine temple after it was destroyed by local Egyptians. The various Aramaic documents found there (letters, contracts, marriage documents, records of legal disputes, etc.) provide an important glimpse into the daily life of this Jewish community in Egypt. Among the papyri was a copy of the book of Ahikar, a legendary story about an official in the Assyrian court at the time of Sennacherib and Esarhaddon (late eighth to early seventh century). Although the story was not Jewish in origin, it became popular among the Jews. The book of Tobit in the Apocrypha makes reference to Ahikar, even calling him Tobit's nephew (Tob 1.21–22).

The Hellenistic-era Egyptian Diaspora, however, was much larger and more influential than the previous small communities of Jews living in Egypt. Its origins are not clear, but during the initial Ptolemaic conquest of Palestine, Ptolemy I apparently captured Jerusalem and took many prisoners back to Egypt, where they settled. Later many other Jews migrated there, presumably for economic reasons. The community continued to grow,

both in numbers and in prosperity, until in the Roman period the Jewish population numbered in the hundreds of thousands, including many wealthy and prominent families.

By the middle of the third century BCE the largely Greek-speaking Jewish community in Egypt had translated the books of the Torah (Genesis–Deuteronomy) into Greek, and over the next century or so, the other books of the Hebrew Bible were also translated. A legendary account of this project is contained in the Letter of Aristeas. According to that narrative, the impetus for the project came from the king himself, Ptolemy II Philadelphus (285–246 BCE), who wished to have a copy for the library of Alexandria. Seventy-two Jewish translators were brought to Egypt from Jerusalem for the task; hence the translation came to be known as the Septuagint, from the Greek word for "seventy." Scholars largely reject this account as unhistorical and maintain that the translation was undertaken for the religious needs of a Jewish community that no longer understood Hebrew. (See the essays "The Canons of the Bible" and "Hebrew Bible: Texts and Versions" for more information about the Septuagint.)

In addition to the translation of the scriptures, the Jewish Diaspora in Egypt produced a rich and varied literature in Greek. One should not assume, however, that every Jewish writing in Greek originated in Alexandria, for during the Hellenistic period Greek became the most important international language. Educated Jews in Palestine and in the eastern Diaspora were nearly as likely to speak Greek as their counterparts in Egypt. Nevertheless, Alexandria remained unparalleled in the richness of its intellectual culture.

Throughout the Hellenistic world the increasing contact between different ethnic groups led to a new self-consciousness within communities about their own historical traditions and how these traditions related to those of other peoples. Thus historiographical writing, from the scholarly to the popular, became an important type of literary activity. In the late third century BCE an Alexandrian Jew named Demetrius investigated the chronologies of the biblical tradition, attempting to explain apparent contradictions and logical inconsistencies. A more entertaining work is Eupolemus's *Concerning the Kings in Judea*. A friend of Judas Maccabeus (see below), Eupolemus retold the biblical narrative with many embellishments and legendary details in an attempt to glorify Israel's traditions and accomplishments. In Eupolemus's history Moses appears as a culture-bringer, the inventor of the alphabet, which the Phoenicians and the Greeks later borrowed. Eupolemus particularly emphasizes the power and influence of the Israelite kingdom under David and Solomon, as well as the splendor of the Solomonic Temple. Not only was the Temple decorated with gifts from the kings of Tyre and Egypt, but Solomon reciprocated, sending a golden pillar to the temple of Zeus in Tyre.

The tendency to make connections between one's own traditions and those of other ethnic groups and to claim priority in the arts of civilization is reflected in the highly legendary history written in the second century BCE by an anonymous Samaritan. He identifies Enoch with Greek Atlas and claims that Abraham was the inventor of astrology, which he taught to the Egyptians when he sojourned there. A similar tendency is evident in the work of Artapanus. In his history Moses becomes the inventor of the technologies basic to civilization. Moreover, this Moses serves as a general in the Egyptian army, organizes Egyptian religion, and comes to be treated virtually as a god by the Egyptians, who identify him with Hermes (the Greek equivalent of the Egyptian god Thoth). The interest of Egyptian Jews in the biblical figure of Joseph is reflected in the romance, *Joseph and Asenath*, which tells the story of Joseph's marriage to the Egyptian noblewoman Asenath. She is depicted as a model convert to Judaism, and the story depicts some of the complications that attended Jewish-Gentile relations in Hellenistic Egypt.

Jewish poetic works composed in Greek also reflect a blending of cultural traditions. The Hellenistic genre of poetry praising cities and countries is represented in the work of Theodotus and Philo the Epic Poet, who wrote poems about Shechem and Jerusalem, respectively. Even more ambitious was the work of Ezekiel the Tragedian, whose play *The Exodus* retold the account of Ex 1–15 in a style influenced by the Greek dramatists Aeschylus and Euripides.

Greek philosophy, too, left its imprint on Hellenistic Jewish culture. Already in the second century BCE an Alexandrian Jew named Aristobulus produced a philosophical commentary on the Torah in which he claimed that the law of Moses anticipated many of the fundamental tenets of Greek philosophy and that the Greek philosophers Pythagoras, Socrates, and Plato derived their ideas from the Jewish law. Written toward the end of the Hellenistic period, the Wisdom of Solomon continues the biblical tradition of wisdom books like Proverbs but incorporates many elements of Greek rhetoric, philosophy, and literary style.

Less is known about the Jews of the eastern Diaspora who remained under Seleucid control than about the Jews of Egypt and Palestine, but it appears that peoples of various ethnic groups had access to economic and political advancement within the Seleucid Empire.

Several writings from this time—Tobit, Dan 1–6, and Esther—suggest something of the outlook of Jews in the eastern Diaspora. Written originally in Hebrew or Aramaic and later enlarged when they were translated into Greek, these books are works of fiction, edifying entertainments that tell the stories of Jews who achieved high status in foreign courts, were threatened by jealous rivals, and yet succeeded in securing personal power and the good will of the king. Though the stories are all set in the pre-Hellenistic period (Tobit in the Assyrian Empire, Daniel in the Babylonian exile, and Esther in the Persian court), they were probably written during the Seleucid period. While they acknowledge that faithful Jews may be vulnerable because of their religion, on the whole these are optimistic stories with a positive view of the Gentile kings.

The eastern Diaspora was also the conduit for important religious developments that arose from the contact between Judaism and the religions of Babylon and Persia. This influence is most clearly seen in the development of apocalyptic literature. Parts of the book of *1 Enoch* composed in the third century BCE reflect astronomical lore and traditions about antediluvian sages that derive from Babylonian sources. Although it is more difficult to trace the path of influence in its earliest stages, the dualistic religious beliefs of Persian Zoroastrianism almost certainly contributed to the development of Jewish apocalyptic thought and to some of the ideas of the sectarians at Qumran.

The eventual triumph of the Seleucid kingdom over the Ptolemies in the fifth Syrian war (198 BCE) obviously had a greater significance for the Jews of Judea than for those of Egypt. The Seleucid ruler Antiochus III treated the Judeans generously in appreciation for the support he received from the pro-Seleucid faction, granting an allowance for the Temple and various tax concessions, as well as confirming the Judeans' right to live "according to the laws of their country." Although relations began well, the way the Seleucid Empire governed its territories set the stage for a terrible conflict. Unlike the Ptolemaic system of centralized government administered with the cooperation of local leaders, the Seleucid regime was more decentralized. It derived some unity, however, from a network of Greek cities established throughout the empire. These were not necessarily ethnically Greek but were cities that had received a charter to organize as a *polis*, the Greek form of city government. Cultural prestige and economic advantages often led the leadership of Near Eastern cities to request such a charter.

The events leading up to the conflict between Judea and the Seleucid king Antiochus IV Epiphanes (175–164 BCE) are complex and not fully understood. In part they involved a struggle for succession to the high priesthood and the attempts of various contenders to secure the support of the king by paying him large sums of money. The first of the contenders, Jason, also paid to have Jerusalem established as a Greek *polis*, Antioch at Jerusalem. Neither of these acts in itself seems to have aroused much opposition in Jerusalem. The conflict was not a cultural conflict between Judaism and Hellenism, for Palestinian Jews had already incorporated significant elements of Hellenistic culture, which they considered quite compatible with their religious identity.

The crisis was sparked by the attempt by another contender, Menelaus, to buy the office of high priest. When he promised the king more than he could pay, he attempted to raise the money by taking golden vessels from the Temple. At this, a riot broke out in Jerusalem. Subsequent fighting between the forces of Jason and Menelaus convinced Antiochus that Judea was in revolt, and he retook the city and plundered the Temple, either in 169 or 168. Sometime later there were further disturbances, and Antiochus sent Syrian troops, which remained garrisoned in Jerusalem. Whether the status of Jerusalem at this point was a *polis* or a military colony is uncertain, but in either case in 167 the Temple was reorganized to accommodate the religious needs of the Syrian troops. The Temple was dedicated to Zeus Olympius, the Greek name for the Syrian god Baal Shamem, and an altar established for sacrifice to him. Though Menelaus continued to preside as high priest, most Jews considered these actions to have profaned the Temple. In addition, the traditional practice of Judaism was suppressed by Antiochus, perhaps with the cooperation of Menelaus. Since religious persecution was virtually unknown in antiquity, it is difficult to know how Antiochus understood this repression and what he hoped to accomplish by it. Its actual result was to ignite the resistance known as the Maccabean revolt.

The Hasmoneans, Mattathias and his sons Judas Maccabeus, Jonathan, Simon, John, and Eleazar, were the leaders of the revolt. Although Judas managed to retake control of the Temple in 164 (its rededication being the occasion for the institution of the festival of Hanukkah), it was not until 142 that the last of the Seleucid army was expelled and actual independence was secured by Simon. From then until the Roman conquest of Judea in 63 BCE the small kingdom was ruled by the Hasmonean family, which in addition to being kings also assumed the office of high priest.

Religious and cultural life in Judea during the Seleucid and Hasmonean periods was rich and varied, with a remarkable quantity of literature produced in Hebrew, Aramaic, and to some extent in Greek. Sirach (Ecclesiasticus), Jesus Ben Sira's book of wisdom teachings, was

probably composed in Hebrew about 180 BCE. Though largely traditional, it embodies several innovations: Ben Sira's identification of wisdom with the law of Moses, his praise of the contemporary high priest Simon II, and his own explicit claim to authorship. Ben Sira disapproved of apocalyptic speculation, but the crisis under Antiochus IV produced an upsurge in apocalyptic writings, not only Dan 7–12, but also *1 Enoch* 83–90 and *The Testament of Moses*. After the establishment of the Hasmonean monarchy, a supporter of the dynasty composed an account of the war in Hebrew (1 Maccabees), modeling it after the earlier books of Kings and Chronicles. An Egyptian Jewish writer, Jason of Cyrene, also wrote a history of the war in Greek (2 Maccabees), which was strongly influenced by forms of Hellenistic history writing.

Our knowledge of the literature of this time has been greatly increased by the discovery of the Dead Sea Scrolls at Qumran. Although this library was the property of a sectarian religious group related to the Essenes, it contained many Hebrew and Aramaic texts that were not sectarian compositions. Several of these scrolls contain noncanonical psalms, blessings, and other liturgical material. There are also many examples of what is called "the rewritten Bible," fairly free retellings of parts of the biblical story, embellished with new narrative episodes, prayers, and other elements (e.g., *Jubilees*, *The Genesis Apocryphon*, *The Apocryphon of Joshua*). Some texts elaborate on the apocalyptic elements of the books of Ezekiel and Daniel or place apocalyptic pronouncements in the mouths of other biblical figures, such as Levi, Qahat, and Amram. Several texts, often having to do with matters of religious law, purport to be discourses of Moses. Perhaps the most remarkable document is the Temple Scroll, which apparently takes the form of an address by God to Moses. Although it incorporates material from the books of Exodus through Deuteronomy, it also contains much new material, including detailed instructions for building the Temple.

These documents and others pertaining to the Qumran sect itself help to clarify issues of religious controversy that shaped the period of Hasmonean rule. The Temple and the Torah were central institutions for Judaism, which made them focal points for conflict. The Qumran scrolls show that conflict over the proper calendar (i.e., a solar or lunar calendar) for the conduct of Temple sacrifices was a major issue dividing the Qumran Essenes from their rivals, the Pharisees. Though the Hasmoneans were not always on good terms with the Pharisees, they adopted the lunar calendar favored by them. Many other writings from Qumran also elaborate their understanding of disputed issues such as purity, marriage, and sabbath observance, concerning which they were at odds with the Pharisees. Although the Qumran community did not compose apocalypses (i.e., reports of revelatory visions), they were strongly influenced by apocalyptic ideas and considered themselves to be living in the last times, just before God would intervene to restore proper order to the world. They supported their ideas in part by writing commentaries (*pesharim*) on biblical texts, which they read as referring to themselves and their opponents.

In general, the Hellenistic period presents a picture of Judaism that is much more diverse than is often imagined. Not only did Jews live in a vast range of lands from Egypt to Parthia, they also creatively adapted many elements from the varied Hellenistic cultures of these lands. Nevertheless, important symbols and institutions, including the Temple in Jerusalem, the scriptures, and common religious practices based in the Torah, provided a sense of unity and common identity.

CULTURAL CONTEXTS
THE ROMAN PERIOD

The Roman conquest of Judea in 63 BCE was part of a centuries-long expansion of the power of Rome. The destruction of Carthage in North Africa in 146 BCE concluded the Punic Wars and secured the western Mediterranean, and the destruction of Corinth in the same year demonstrated Rome's control of Greece. In the next century, a series of conflicts with the successors of Alexander the Great in Asia and Egypt brought Roman rule to the entire eastern Mediterranean. The events that led to the replacement of the Roman republic by autocratic rule culminated with the installation of Julius Caesar's nephew Octavian (later Augustus) as the first emperor in 27 BCE, and included the conquest of Egypt. The Mediterranean was now, as it has aptly been called, "a Roman lake."

Within the Roman Empire, especially in the east, client states were allowed considerable autonomy as long as their rulers maintained order and paid tribute to Rome. In Judea, Herod the Great, king of Judea from 37 to 4 BCE, succeeded on both counts, and with Roman sanction his control eventually extended to all of the region west of

the Jordan and over much of Transjordan. His successors were not so adept, and direct Roman rule of Judea itself began in 6 CE. Thus began an uneasy détente between a series of Roman governors and the leaders of the Jewish community, based in the Temple in Jerusalem. This broke down during the First Jewish Revolt (66–73 CE), prompting the Roman destruction of Jerusalem in 70 CE. A brief resurgence of Jewish nationalism in the Second Jewish Revolt (132–135 CE) was easily crushed, and Jerusalem became Aelia Capitolina, a fully Hellenized city from which Jews were banned.

This is the historical setting for the life of Jesus and the development of earliest Christianity, one of several "Judaisms" that coexisted in Palestine before 70. For most of them the Temple was the primary place of worship and the locus of authority in religious and intracommunity issues. The priesthood in the Temple was hereditary, but from the time of Herod on the high priest was appointed by a ruler or governor. The high priest was head of a council, called the Sanhedrin, which had jurisdiction in religious and, to a limited extent, in civic matters. Other groups that comprised Judaism, with boundaries not always sharply drawn, included the Sadducees, members of the priesthood whose social status was aristocratic and whose views were conservative. The Pharisees were a lay movement concerned with observance of the Torah and hence with its interpretation, often through local houses of assembly; these "synagogues," however, did not supplant the Temple as the place of sacrifice and pilgrimage. The Pharisees were forerunners of the Rabbinic Judaism that developed after the Temple's destruction in 70. Outside of these groups, but still part of the broad spectrum of Judaism, were the Essenes, who had seceded from the Temple-based priesthood during the early Hasmonean period (mid-first century BCE), and the Samaritans, whose rejection of the Jerusalem Temple as the proper place for sacrificial worship had crystallized by the same time.

WITHIN THE ROMAN EMPIRE

Readers encounter two different cultural spaces within the New Testament: the village economy of agriculture and fishing in the Galilee, and the mobile economy of merchants and tradesmen in the urban centers of the empire. The first, the village economy, forms the context of Jesus' ministry and of the itinerant disciples who formulated the collections of sayings, stories, and miracles that underlie the Gospels. The second, the merchant economy, constitutes the world of Paul's missions as well as that of countless unknown disciples like those responsible for bringing the gospel message to Rome around 41 CE. This larger, urban world is that of the epistles and the book of Acts. It is also evident in the expansions and reformulations of Mark and "Q" that are found in Matthew and Luke. Both the village agriculturists and the traveling merchants view from below a third cultural space: that of the wealthy, educated elite who are responsible for most of the architectural, artistic, literary, legal, philosophical, and religious remains that represent the Roman world and its influence within Western history and culture.

The predominance of this third, elite world in its cultural influence creates a problem for historians. We must be cautious in using the productions of an elite minority to describe the religious or social world of ordinary people in ancient societies. Anthropologists, for instance, make a distinction between the high tradition of sacred texts, temple rites, and the learned commentary upon them that centers upon the great urban cultural milieu, and the humbler, smaller traditions of religious belief, story, and practice that villagers hand on to one another. The story of the young Jesus remaining in the Temple to debate the teachers (Lk 2.41–52) exemplifies this distinction. For the Galilean peasants, religious devotion is focused on, and expressed in, the act of pilgrimage to Jerusalem for Passover. For the religious elite, it rather consists of learned interpretation of the sacred texts.

The thousands of papyri that have been found in the dry climate of Egypt have yielded new insights into the lives of ordinary people in ancient times. Scholars also study texts for nonelite forms of storytelling, popular belief, and everyday life; these aspects of experience are reflected in novels, in expansions of the biblical text in the Targums (Aramaic paraphrases of the Hebrew Bible), in Jewish and Christian apocryphal writings, and within the New Testament itself, as well as in the remains of material culture recovered by archaeologists.

Roman rule constituted the overarching political reality for both the village agricultural society in the Gospels and the urban context of Acts and the epistles. Its most immediate impact within Palestine was the accession of the Idumean Herod as king. Rome, not the Jewish populace, established the terms of Herodian rule. Herod's massive building projects—including the city of Caesarea, his own mausoleum at Herodion, and the Temple complex in Jerusalem—followed Greek and Roman models. Further consequences of Herod's rule included the severing of ties between tenant farmers and landholders who were no longer local patrons (see Mk 12.1–9). The pressure on the tax system to meet Roman demands and to finance Herod's building projects must have been considerable; this, and the possibilities for corruption and extortion inherent in the system itself, resulted in the cultural disdain reflected in the phrase "tax collector and sinner" (Lk 15.1–2; Mt 18.17 uses the alternative, equally

dismissive, "tax collector and Gentile"). The presence of Roman soldiers might mean that goods and services were extorted at random from the local populace (Mt 5.41), but retired centurions might also be valuable local patrons (Lk 7.1–10). Physicians who were attached to the army units could also serve the populace on the side (Mk 5.26).

Most of Galilee seems to have been a prosperous region of small landholders and grazing herds of sheep and goats. Families in the villages where Jesus preached were largely self-sufficient. Craftsmen, such as Jesus himself, may have worked in the cities that were being built in the region, like Tiberias and Sepphoris. Even the rebellion against Rome, which zealots in Judea ignited in 66 CE, had a short life in Galilee. Within a year its populace had given up and returned to everyday life. Further evidence for the general prosperity of the region emerges when one turns to the occupation of Jesus' core disciples, Peter, James, and John (Mk 1.16–20). The fishing industry around the Sea of Galilee was a flourishing one, as the archaeological remains of extensive harbor installations indicate. Fishing involved families or partners who owned the boats working with hired hands. Fish was salted, dried, smoked, or pickled, and packed in jars for export. Thus Jesus and his disciples were neither naïve isolated pastoralists nor poor peasants, but were engaged in economic enterprises crucial to Galilee's place in the larger world.

For Jerusalem, a city whose chief economic asset was its Temple, the crowds of pilgrims at major feasts and the massive new complex of buildings were both an economic boon and a source of civic pride. The major cities in the eastern Mediterranean, such as Antioch, Ephesus, Philippi, Corinth, and Thessalonica, also enjoyed increased prosperity as a consequence of Roman rule and the growing numbers of travelers on land and sea. Without the possibility of such routine travel, the Christian mission could not have taken place. It was also furthered by the existence of Jewish communities in those cities, which provided an initial network (e.g., see Acts 13.5; 14.1). Many of the peoples incorporated into the Roman Empire, Jew and non-Jew alike, would have shared positive sentiments toward its authority (see Rom 13.1–7; 1 Pet 2.13–17).

On the other hand, civic discord, rioting, and full-scale rebellion against Roman rule remained real possibilities. Alexandria in Egypt had a large Jewish population that included highly educated, cultured, and wealthy individuals like the philosopher and exegete Philo of Alexandria (d. ca. 50 CE). Yet non-Jewish residents rioted in 41 CE when the Jewish elite sought the same citizenship rights as the citizen descendants of the Greek founders. Despite the appeals of a delegation of prominent Jewish Alexandrians, the emperor Claudius refused to grant their request, and threatened severe punishment if further civil discord occurred. Claudius also expelled members of Rome's Jewish community for "rioting at the name of Chrestus," presumably local discord occasioned by Christian missionaries (see Acts 18.1–2). Nero, in 65, executed some members of the new sect of undesirables, the Christians—including, according to tradition, Peter and Paul—as scapegoats for a fire that destroyed blocks of wooden tenements in Rome. He became the focus of anti-Roman sentiment, the demonic persecutor of faithful Christians in later generations (see Rev 13.1–18).

Despite the counsel of moderate voices and the opposition of Herod Agrippa, the Roman-appointed ruler of Galilee and northern Transjordan, and zealous leaders led Palestinian Jews to revolt against Rome in 66; by August of 70, Titus led Roman troops in burning and destroying the Temple. Christians living in Jerusalem appear to have fled the city prior to its fall. Jews living in the Diaspora did not support the rebellion; this did not keep the Romans from penalizing all Jews after the defeat. The Romans forced Jews who once paid a tax to support the Temple (see Mt 17.24–27) to pay instead an increased tax to the temple of Jupiter Capitolinus in Rome.

THE TYPICAL ROMAN CITY

A brief tour of Caesarea Maritima, the residence of the Roman governor of Judea (Acts 8.40; 9.30; 10.1,24; 11.11; 12.19–23; 18.22; 21.8; 23.23; 25.1–13), reveals the outline of an ancient city from the perspective of the rich. It was originally a small military settlement dating from the mid-third century BCE; Augustus gave it to Herod, who built a magnificent city of some 8,000 acres and a harbor to rival that of Alexandria. Two breakwaters created a sheltered harbor of 40 acres. An area with a temple, on a raised mound, dedicated to Rome and Augustus, faced the harbor at the south end of the forum that runs along the harborside. To the south of the city, a theater faced the sea, although the structure that has been unearthed is a later, rebuilt one. Among the discoveries there is a stone with an inscription referring to Pontius Pilate as prefect. There was also a large amphitheater similar to the Colosseum and a large racecourse (hippodrome).

An aqueduct supplied the city with water from springs on Mount Carmel, and an elaborate sewer system under the city drained away waste. Walkways were decorated with mosaics, and promenades were lined with columns. Herod spared no expense on his showcase; builders used imported marbles from Italy and Egypt, and pink granite from Aswan. There were warehouses facing the harbor to store the goods that passed through the city from extensive maritime trade, which reached as far as south Asia.

The residents of Palestine did not have to journey to Alexandria, Corinth, or Rome to see the world's riches on display for a wealthy elite.

Capernaum on the northern shore of the Sea of Galilee was the base for Jesus' preaching activities around Galilee. It lay on the road that connected Caesarea and Ptolemais (Acco) on the coast with Damascus in Syria. Even if they never visited the new city of Caesarea, the traffic along the highway between the coast and Damascus would have alerted Jesus and his contemporaries to the cultural realities of Greco-Roman cities. Two other city foundations within Galilee itself, Sepphoris and Tiberias, contributed to the growth of urbanization. Herod Antipas, tetrarch of Galilee and Perea from 4 BCE to 39 CE, resided at Sepphoris, a mere 4 mi (4 mi7 km) from Nazareth, until he moved to the newly built Tiberias on the lake in 19–20 CE. The term "tekton" used for Joseph and his sons (Mk 6.3; Mt 13.55) is usually translated "carpenter," but there is no reason to assume that Jesus and his family were restricted to the carpenter's shop of a village. They are just as likely to have been employed in the building that occurred in Sepphoris and Tiberias. Jesus' view of the rich could have been shaped by such experiences, and his followers probably included some connected to the Herodian court (see Lk 8.3).

STATUS AND SOCIAL CLASS IN THE CITY

The artisans, manual laborers, and merchants who lived in a typical Roman city had little time for the pleasures of the city's main streets. Long days in cramped and often dark shops would have been more typical of Paul's life as a tentmaker, for instance (Acts 18.3; 2 Cor 6.5; 11.27). This trade involved creating the awnings, made of a rough, thick fabric like sailcloth, which provided cover from the sun in theaters and the forum, and in front of the booths from which goods were sold. When crowds thronged the city for a festival, such as the biennial Isthmian games outside Corinth in honor of Poseidon (see Dio Chrysostom, *Discourses* 8.9), there would be no shortage of work for tentmakers.

The members of the wealthy elite and the educated scribes, Pharisees, or philosophers who were attached to them despised such lowly occupations, as well as those who collected the taxes. The tensions between rich and poor that were evident in Corinth (1 Cor 11.17–34) show how difficult it could be to cross social divisions of class and status. Those in whose homes the community assembled would have thought it their right to provide a feast for the others who were from their own group; as for the rest—artisans who had to work from dawn to dusk, as well as slave members of the community—they should be glad for the meager rations provided for them. Similarly, the letter of James (2.1–13) excoriates Christians for showing deference to a rich man, giving him a comfortable seat and asking the poor to squat on the floor in the assembly. Although Paul's letters lack the sharp attacks on wealth found in the teaching of Jesus or in the letter of James, Paul does attack the privileges of social superiority to one's fellows when they surface in the Christian community.

Although most Christians did not belong to the local civic elite (1 Cor 1.26–30), a few individuals associated with the Corinthian church could claim such status. Acts 18.8 refers to Crispus (1 Cor 1.14) as *archisynagogos*, "head of the synagogue," a title that he may have been accorded as a benefactor, perhaps by contributing funds for a synagogue building. Women can appear as patronesses and *archisynagogoi* as well. Paul recommends Phoebe, a deaconess from the Corinthian port city Cenchrea (Rom 16.1–2). Such recommendations were a common letter form in the ancient world, in which patronage relationships were essential to success. Gaius (1 Cor 1.14) was wealthy enough to host all the Christians in Corinth at once (Rom 16.23).

Paul also conveys greetings from a certain Erastus, who is *oikonomos* ("city treasurer") of Corinth (Rom 16.23), the only convert who is known to have held a civic office. A pavement in Corinth from the area between the north market and the theater bears an inscription stating that Erastus paved the area at his own expense in return for the office of *aedile* (one of the four magistrates who governed the city, and particularly the public officers in charge of the streets). Since the name is an unusual one (no other instances are known), scholars think it possible that it was the same person mentioned by Paul. The term that Paul uses is not the Greek equivalent for *aedile*, so it may represent a lesser position in the municipal government that was an intermediate step on the way to becoming a magistrate.

Since Corinth had been refounded as a Roman colony under Julius Caesar less than a century before, and therefore would have had no long-entrenched ruling class, the opportunities offered for civic advancement may have encouraged competition. In other cities, the ranks of citizens—those enrolled who could hold various public offices—were strictly limited to a particular group of aristocratic families. Other residents, no matter how wealthy or influential, were excluded. Jews who sought to be included on the citizen rolls of Alexandria were rebuffed. Since Roman citizens and the Greek citizens of Alexandria were exempt from poll taxes levied by the Roman state, this status carried some economic advantage. Most Jews, who were laborers and artisans, would not have been eligible for enrollment in any case.

Whether Jewish families succeeded in joining the citizen elite elsewhere in the Diaspora is less clear. Luke has Paul claim to be a citizen of Tarsus (Acts 21.39), but this may be mistaken or imprecise.

LITERACY AND EDUCATION

Scholars remain divided over how to assess the extent of literacy in the Greco-Roman period. Portraits showing girls holding the stylus and wax tablet of the student suggest that among the elite some level of education extended to women, but on the evidence of documentary papyri, far fewer women than men were able to sign their names, and women who were able to write often pointed out that fact explicitly. The cities and larger villages of Egypt had teachers who drilled children in the rudiments of reading and writing Greek as well as the study of classic texts. Further education would require sending each young person, accompanied by a family slave, off to Alexandria in search of a suitable tutor.

Even among those who could read, the difficulty of deciphering texts in which all the letters were run together (the standard way in which ancient texts are written) often made it preferable to listen to a slave who was trained to read such texts aloud. We can deduce which texts were most in demand by studying the literary papyri. Texts of Homer are by far the most frequently found, with considerable numbers of texts by Demosthenes, Euripides, and Hesiod as well. Technical manuals on such subjects as medicine and astrology also show up in papyri fragments. Among the papyri that have been discovered are some that were orders to and from a book dealer in Oxyrhynchus: Outgoing orders seek dialogues of Plato and works of Homer, Menander, Euripides, and Aristophanes. The dealer acknowledges receipt of treatises on such edifying subjects as "On Training," "On Marriage," "On Freedom from Pain," "On the Uses of Parents," "On the Uses of Domestic Slaves," and Book 3 of a work by Poseidonius, "On Persuasion" (see *P. Oxy.* 1153; 2192). Apparently this dealer's clientele read for self-improvement and practical purposes as much as for entertainment and philosophical enlightenment.

The requirements of reading Torah may have made basic schooling even more necessary for Jewish boys, for whom the Bible would replace Homer as the primary text. Assimilated Jews in cities like Tarsus and Alexandria, however, saw to it that their sons received instruction in the classics as well. Philo defends the practice of sending Jewish students on to the more advanced instruction in arithmetic, geometry, music, and philosophy at the equivalent of a secondary school, the gymnasium (*Special Laws* 2.229–30). Educational centers like Alexandria and Tarsus had numerous schools of rhetoric to further a young man's ability to take his place in public affairs by training him to speak fluently and write persuasively. Although Paul insists that eloquence ("wisdom") is not needed to communicate the truth of the gospel (1 Cor 1.17) and disclaims any use of such methods (1 Cor 2.4; 2 Cor 11.6), both his opponents (2 Cor 10.10) and contemporary scholars notice a high degree of rhetorical art in his letters. Even his refusal to engage in the sort of rhetorical discourse that would please his audience exhibits familiarity with such arts (see the "fool's speech," 2 Cor 11.1–12.13).

It is more difficult to assess the kind of education received by boys growing up in the Galilean towns and villages. In an oral society, persons can be highly skilled and even have extensive cultural knowledge, such as Jesus' knowledge of scripture, without being able to read or write. Luke 4.16 presumes that Jesus was literate, though Luke may be speaking from the perspective of an urban class that assumes literate habits as a normal part of education. The Jewish historian Josephus writing in the 90s CE makes no such assumption. Weekly Torah study can be accomplished orally: "He [Moses] appointed the Law to be most excellent and a necessary form of instructions, ordaining that it be heard not once or twice or several times, but that every week men should quit their other occupations and assemble to listen to the Law and obtain a thorough and accurate knowledge of it" (*Ag. Ap.* 2.175).

The first-century CE synagogue building at Gamla in the Golan lacks the elaborate religious features of later synagogues like that at Capernaum. It consists of a central nave created by two rows of columns and four levels of stone benches set in steps along the walls. Without the ritual bath attached to the complex, there would be nothing to distinguish it from an ordinary assembly hall. There is no evidence of a Torah shrine built into the walls, of a fixed elevated podium from which Torah was read, or of a seat of honor near the center; presumably Torah reading and instruction took place in the central area. The architectural space of the synagogue could serve a variety of community functions, from teaching and worship to legal proceedings and social gathering.

Another form of education required by Jesus and his disciples involves skills specific to their individual trades. Measuring, counting, and recording skills necessary to building or running a fishing business could have been taught on an apprentice basis. Tax collectors had to keep records of persons and amounts. Officials in the local Jewish community also had to collect the annual half-shekel paid to the Temple by all Jewish males (Ex 30.11–16; Mt 17.24–27). Such practical skills must have been taught, but little evidence of the process survives. Though not considered "education" by the literate, rhe-

torically trained elite of the Greco-Roman cities or by the literate scribes learned in Jewish Torah, such skills would have distinguished Jesus and his disciples from others in their villages.

RELIGION, ASTROLOGY, AND MAGIC

When Herod the Great built Caesarea Maritima, he placed the temple to Rome and Augustus in a prominent place. The city was dedicated to the emperor; its civic life would include festive sacrifices in the ruler's honor. Herod's renovations to the Jerusalem Temple and his expansions of its surroundings were planned to enhance the prestige of the city. Other cities also had famous shrines and festivals that drew visitors from abroad. Acts 19.21–40 tells a story of a riot at Ephesus that occurred when those who sold silver models of its famous temple to the goddess Artemis (Diana) claimed that the effectiveness of Paul's preaching had cut into their business.

Christianity did not deliver the death blow to the established civic worship that Luke seems to suggest. Most of his readers lived in cities, and they could easily witness the ongoing enthusiasm for sacrifices and festivals. What individual residents actually believed about the gods was not an issue; their participation, not their internal assent, was the key, and that participation (or lack of it) was observed by the authorities. To join in sacrifices honoring the Roman emperor, for example, demonstrated that the city and its populace were loyal subjects of the empire. Jews refused to participate in these events, and this refusal often brought on them accusations of "hatred of humanity." At Alexandria some argued that Jews could never be admitted to the citizen rolls because they did not worship the city's gods. Nevertheless, through long-tolerated practice, Jews were not often persecuted for this failure to participate in civic rituals. When Christians who were not of Jewish origin began to withdraw from such public activities, however, it caused comment, suspicion, and even persecution. A story like that of Paul's deeds in Ephesus, leading some to abandon the worship of Artemis, would have highlighted the superiority of Christ to one of Asia Minor's most famous religious shrines and might increase Christian resolve to remain separate. Not all Christians would choose persecution, however. Some clearly followed the lead of educated pagans, who often did not believe in the real existence of the gods, or in their myths. They would join public religious activities as required by their social status or civic office, as a social bond rather than as a religious profession. When faced with Christians who obstinately refused to participate, magistrates had no qualms about sentencing them to exile or death.

Astrologers, diviners, and magicians could be visited in the marketplace. Though such activities were frowned upon by those higher in the social scale, the large number of horoscopes, amulets, and magic spells recovered shows that these methods of making decisions, predicting the future, and bringing good luck (or guarding against bad) continued to be popular. Astrologers to the upper classes justified their practices with a philosophical veneer based on Stoic physical doctrines explaining the relations between earthly and heavenly bodies by means of an all-pervading "rational spirit." Christian insistence that the glorified and exalted Christ is above all the demonic powers and planetary forces (see Col 2.8–23; Eph 1.15–2.2; 6.12) did little to curb popular enthusiasm for these beliefs and practices. Biblical texts show up in Christian magical amulets. Jesus' exorcisms led to accusations that his powers were a consequence of an alliance with the leader of the demonic world (Mk 3.22–30), and Acts describes conflicts between Christian missionaries and local magicians (8.4–25; 13.4–12).

PHILOSOPHY AS HEALING THE SOUL

Unlike the monotheistic faith of Jews and Christians, which placed a high premium on hearing, interpreting, and acting on divine revelation preserved in sacred texts, Greco-Roman religions did not produce texts, legal and ethical codes, or theological doctrines. Those who sought teaching about the divine and its relationship to the observable cosmos, or moral guidance and advice about how to live a good life, turned to philosophy. Formal study of the philosophical systems that emerged from the schools of classical and Hellenistic Athens—especially Platonism, Stoicism, and Epicureanism—could only be pursued by the elite, who had the leisure time to devote to them. Luke's tale of Paul's visit to Athens (Acts 17.16–31) shows its first-century reputation as a destination for intellectuals, not the powerful center of commerce and art that it had been.

More ordinary citizens learned what they knew of philosophy from anthologies of moralistic tales, treatises on how to cope with various problems in life, public discourses offered by itinerant philosophical preachers, and the like. The philosopher-teacher saw himself as a physician for the soul. Under his guidance, people might be converted from the mindless, destructive pursuit of the passions, from fears about a future they could not control, even from superstitious belief in the gods. Some treatises, like Plutarch's "Advice on Marriage" (*Mor.* 12.138–46) even recommend that the young husband share his knowledge with his wife. Such knowledge will protect her against the passion for luxuries, foolish behavior, and talk common among women. If she knows something of Plato, Xenophon, and astronomy, she

will not be taken in by the common practices of magic or witchcraft. Such treatises also presume that in the properly ordered household the husband governs the life of his wife, his children, and his slaves in accordance with a reason that has been schooled by philosophical instruction. Similar kinds of assumptions appear in sections of the New Testament often referred to as "household codes" (Col 3.18–4.1; Eph 5.21–6.9; 1 Pet 2.18–3.7). They also inform the descriptions of requirements for leadership (1 Tim 3.1-11), including those that exclude women from teaching or supervising men (1 Tim 2.9–15; 1 Cor 14.34–36).

Scholars have become particularly interested in a movement of rough-spoken, anti-establishment street preachers called Cynics, from the Greek word for dog, originally a derogatory name that referred to their unrefined public behavior. Claiming as their inspiration Socrates, the impoverished stone mason who went about Athens challenging all its citizens, representatives of this movement could be found in the public marketplaces. They rejected the comforts that could be offered by wealthy patrons and lived on as little as possible. They were known for sharp sayings intended to wound an opponent, not persuasive speeches to soothe one into agreement. If the harsh medicine worked, the hearer might convert to a philosophical way of life. If not, he might become angry, even murderously so, as had Socrates's opponents. Some scholars think that this movement provides the best ancient analogy for the itinerant mission of Jesus and his disciples, as depicted in the Gospels. Others have proposed that Paul's description of himself as the solicitous nurse or the father to his fledgling converts (1 Thess 2.1–12) is analogous to the Cynics' relationship to their own followers. Although these cultural models may not have dictated the content of early Christian preaching, they provide a context for understanding what missionaries like Paul were doing in the cities that they visited, and how they would have appeared to their first hearers.

TIMELINE

DATE	PERIOD	EGYPT
Ca. 3300–2000 BCE	EARLY BRONZE AGE	
3300–3100	Early Bronze I	Earliest forms of writing
3100–2700	Early Bronze II	Political unification; Early Dynastic period
2700–2300	Early Bronze III	Old Kingdom; Dynasties 3–5
2300–2000	Early Bronze IV	First Intermediate Period
Ca. 2000–1550 BCE	MIDDLE BRONZE AGE	
2000–1650	Middle Bronze I–II	Middle Kingdom; Dynasties 11–12
1650–1550	Middle Bronze III	Second Intermediate/ Hyksos Period
Ca. 1550–1200 BCE	LATE BRONZE AGE	New Kingdom; Dynasties 18–19: Thutmose III (1479–1425), Akenhaten (1352–1336), Seti I (1294–1279), Rameses II (1279–1213), Merneptah (1213–1203); Sea Peoples (groups including Philistines) invasions begin
Ca. 1200–586 BCE	IRON AGE	
Ca. 1200–1025	Iron I	Rameses III (1184–1153)[1]
Ca. 1025–586	Iron II	
Ca. 1025–928	Iron IIA	
Ca. 928–722	Iron IIB	Shishak I invades Palestine (925)

1. For a more complete list of rulers, see "Chronological Table of Rulers," pp. 2258–61.

SYRIA-PALESTINE		MESOPOTAMIA, ASIA MINOR
		Earliest forms of writing; Full urbanization; Sumerian culture develops
In Egyptian sphere Flourishing city-states		High point of Sumerian culture Sargon of Akkad; Naram-Sin of Akkad; Gudea of Lagash
Decline/abandonment of city-states		Third Dynasty of Ur
Revival of urbanism; Invention of alphabet		Amorite kingdoms: Shamshi-Adad of Assyria (ca. 1813–1781); Hammurapi of Babylon (ca. 1792–1750); Rise of Hittites
In Egyptian sphere; Rise of Mitanni in north; Ugarit flourishes;		
Exodus of the Hebrews from Egypt;		Hittites challenge Egypt for control of Syria;
Collapse of city-states		Hittite empire collapses; Trojan War
Israel emerges in Canaan; Philistines settle on SW coast; Small city-states develop in Phoenicia, Syria, Transjordan		Resurgence of Assyria: Tiglath-pileser I (1114–1076)
United Monarchy in Israel: Saul (1025–1005); David (1005–965); Solomon (968–928)		
Divided Monarchy:		
JUDAH:	ISRAEL:	
Rehoboam (928–911)	Jeroboam I (928–907)	Rise of Neo-Assyrian Empire
	Omri (882–871); Capital at Samaria	Shalmaneser III (858–824); Battle of Qarqar (853)
	Ahab (873–852)	
Jehoshaphat (867–846)	Prophet Elijah (mid-ninth century)	
	Prophet Elisha (mid- to late ninth century)	
Athaliah (842–836)	Jehu (842–814)	
Jehoash (836–798)	Jehoash (800–788)	Adad-nirari III (811–783)
	Jeroboam II (788–747)	
	Prophet Amos (mid-eighth century)	
	Prophet Hosea (mid-eighth century)	Tiglath-pileser III (745–727); Assyrian conquest of the Levant
Ahaz (743/735–727/715)	Hoshea (732–722)	Shalmaneser V (727–722) Samaria captured (722)

DATE	PERIOD	EGYPT
Ca. 722–586	Iron IIC	
		Egypt conquered by Assyria (671) Psammetichus I (664–610)
		Neco II (610–595)
Ca. 586–539	NEO-BABYLONIAN	
		GREECE AND ROME
539–333	PERSIAN	
		Greeks repel Persian invasions
		Peloponnesian War (431–404)
333–63	HELLENISTIC	Alexander the Great (336–323); Defeats Persians at Issus (332); Occupies the Levant and Egypt
		Rome gains control over Greece (ca. 188–146);
		Sack of Carthage and Corinth (146)
63 BCE–330 CE	ROMAN	
		Julius Caesar named dictator (49); assassinated (44) Octavian (Augustus) defeats Antony at Actium (31); (Emperor 27 BCE–14 CE) Tiberius (14–37 CE) Gaius (Caligula) (37–41) Claudius (41–54) Nero (54–68) Vespasian (69–79) Titus (79–81) Domitian (81–96) Nerva (96–98) Trajan (98–117) Hadrian (117–138)

SYRIA-PALESTINE	MESOPOTAMIA
JUDAH:	
Prophet Isaiah (late eighth to early seventh centuries)	Sargon II (722–705)
Prophet Micah (late eighth century)	Sennacherib (705–681); Attack on Judah and seige of Jerusalem (701)
Hezekiah (727/715–698/687)	
Manasseh (698/687–642)	Esar-haddon (681–669)
Josiah (639–609)	Ashurbanipal (669–627)
Prophet Zephaniah (late seventh century)	
Prophet Jeremiah (late seventh to early sixth centuries)	Rise of Babylon
Jehoahaz (609)	Assyrian capital of Nineveh captured (612)
Jehoiakim (608–598)	
Jehoiachin (597)	Nebuchadrezzar II (604–562) of Babylon
Prophet Ezekiel (early sixth century)	
Zedekiah (597–586); Capture of Jerusalem (586)	
	Nabonidus (556–539)
EASTERN AND MEDITERRANEAN	
	Cyrus II (the Great) (559–530); Capture of Babylon
Some exiles return from Babylon (538)	Cambyses (530–522); Capture of Egypt (525)
Second Temple built (520–515)	Darius I (522–486)
Prophet Haggai (520); Prophet Zechariah (520–518)	Xerxes I (486–465)
Nehemiah governor of Judah (ca. 445–430)	Artaxerxes I (465–424)
Mission of Ezra the scribe (mid-fifth [or early fourth] century)	Artaxerxes II (405–359)
Seleucus I (312/311–281) controls Syria and Mesopotamia	
Ptolemy I (323–282) controls Egypt, Palestine, Phoenicia	
Antiochus III (223–187) gains control of southern Syria, Phoenicia, and Judea from Ptolemy IV (202–198)	
Ben Sira (Sirach) (early second century)	
Antiochus IV Epiphanes (175–164)	
Revolt of the Maccabees (167–164)	
HASMONEAN RULE OF JUDEA (165–37):	
John Hyrcanus (135–104); Alexander Janneus (103–76); Salome Alexandra (76–67)	
Pompey conquers the Levant (66–62); Enters Jerusalem (63)	
Herod the Great king of Judea (37–4); Rebuilds Second Temple	
(Herod) Antipas (4 BCE–39 CE)	
Life of Jesus of Nazareth (ca. 4 BCE–30 CE)	
Pontius Pilate governor of Judea (26–36)	
(Herod) Agrippa I (39–44)	
Missionary activity of Paul (mid-first century)	
(Herod) Agrippa II (53–93)	
First Jewish Revolt in Judea against Rome (66–73); Jerusalem is captured (70)	
Jewish revolts in Egypt, Libya, Cyprus (115–118)	
Second Jewish Revolt in Judea against Rome (132–135)	

CHRONOLOGICAL TABLE OF RULERS

DATE	EGYPT	ASSYRIA	BABYLONIA
1300 BCE	DYNASTY 19 (1295–1186): Seti I (1294–1279) Rameses II (1279–1213) Merneptah (1213–1203)		
1200	DYNASTY 20 (1186–1069)	Tiglath-pileser I (1114–1076)	
	DYNASTY 21 (1069–945)		
1000	DYNASTIES 22–24 (945–715): Shoshenq I (**Shishak**) (945–924)		
		Shalmaneser III (858–824)	
		Shamshi-Adad V (824–811)	
	DYNASTY 25 (780–656):		
800		Adad-nirari III (811–783)	
		Shalmaneser IV (783–773)	
		Ashur-dan III (773–755) Ashur-nirari V (755–745)	
		Tiglath-pileser III (**Pul**) (745– 727)	Marduk-apal-iddina II (**Merodach-baladan**) (721–710, 703)
		Shalmaneser V (727–722)	
		Sargon II (722–705)	
700		**Sennacherib** (705–681)	
	Taharqa (**Tirhakah**) (690–664)	**Esar-haddon** (681–669)	
		Ashurbanipal (669–627)	
	DYNASTY 26 (664–525):	Ashur-etil-ilani, Sin-shum-lishir, Sin-shar-ishkun (627–612)	Nabo-polassar (625–605)
	Psammetichus I (664–610)	Ashur-uballit II (612–609)	**Nebuchadrezzar** II (**Nebuchadnezzar**) (605–562)
	Neco II (610–595)		Amel-Marduk (**Evil-merodach**) (562–560)
	Psammetichus II (595–589)		Neriglissar (560–556)
	Apries (**Hophra**) (589–570)		Labashi-Marduk (556)
	Amasis II (570–526)		**Nabonidus** (556–539)
	Psammetichus III (526–525)		**Belshazzar** (coregent 553–543)
400			
325 BCE			

Note: Names in boldface occur in the Bible. Overlapping dates indicate coregencies. Date ranges are reigns, not life spans.
1. The data are inconsistent for the dates of the reigns of Ahaz, Hezekiah, and Manasseh.

PERSIA	ISRAEL	
	UNITED MONARCHY:	
	Saul (1025–1005); **David** (1005–965);	
	Solomon (Yedidiah) (968–928)	
	DIVIDED MONARCHY:	
	JUDAH:	ISRAEL:
	Rehoboam (928–911)	**Jeroboam** I (928–907)
	Abijam (Abijah) (911–908)	**Nadab** (907–906)
	Asa (908–867)	**Baasha** (906–883)
	Jehoshaphat (870–846)	**Elah** (883–882); **Zimri** (882)
		Omri (882–871)
		Ahab (873–852)
	Jehoram (Joram) (851–843)	**Ahaziah** (852–851)
	Ahaziah (Jehoahaz) (843–842)	**Jehoram (Joram)** (851–842)
	Athaliah (842–836)	**Jehu** (842–814)
	Jehoash (Joash) (836–798)	**Jehoahaz** (817–800)
	Amaziah (798–769)	**Jehoash (Joash)** (800–784)
	Azariah (Uzziah) (785–733)	**Jeroboam** II (788–747)
		Zechariah (747); **Shallum** (747)
		Menahem (747–737)
	Jotham (759–743)	**Pekahiah** (737–735)
	Ahaz (743/735–727/715)[1]	**Pekah** (735–732)
		Hoshea (732–722)
	Hezekiah (727/715–698/687)[1]	
	Manasseh (698/687–642)1	
	Amon (641–640)	
	Josiah (640–609)	
	Jehoahaz (Shallum) (609)	
	Jehoiakim (Eliakim) (608–598)	
	Jehoiachin (Jeconiah, etc.) (597)	
	Zedekiah (Mattaniah) (597–586)	
Cyrus II (559–530)		
Cambyses (530–522)		
Darius I (522–486)		
Xerxes I (**Ahasuerus**) (486–465)		
Artaxerxes I (465–424)		
Darius II (423–405)		
Artaxerxes II (405–359)		
Artaxerxes III (359–338)		
Artaxerxes IV (338–336)		
Darius III (336–330)		

CHRONOLOGICAL TABLE OF RULERS

DATE	EGYPT	SYRIA
	HELLENISTIC PERIOD	**Alexander** (the Great) (336–323)
300 BCE	Ptolemy I Soter (305–282)	**Seleucus** I **Nicator** (305–281)
	Ptolemy II Philadelphus (285–246)	Antiochus I Soter (281–261)
		Antiochus II Theos (261–246)
	Ptolemy III Euergetes (246–221)	Seleucus II Callinicus (246–225)
	Ptolemy IV **Philopator** (221–204)	Seleucus III Soter Ceraunos (225–223)
	Ptolemy V Epiphanes (204–180);	**Antiochus III** (the Great) (223–187)
	Cleopatra I (180–176)	**Seleucus** IV Philopator (187–175)
		Antiochus IV **Epiphanes** (175–164)
	Ptolemy VI **Philometor** (180–145);	**Antiochus** V **Eupator** (164–162)
	Cleopatra II (175–116)	**Demetrius** I Soter (162–150)
	Ptolemy VII Neos Philopator (145)	**Alexander Epiphanes** (Balas) (150–145)
	Ptolemy VIII Euergetes II Physcon (170–116)	**Demetrius** II Nicator (145–141 and 129–125)
		Antiochus VI Epiphanes (145–142)
		Trypho (142–138)
		Antiochus VII Sidetes (138–129)
		Cleopatra Thea (126–121)
		Antiochus VIII Grypus (125–121 and 121–96)
	Cleopatra III (116–101)	Seleucus V (125)
	Ptolemy IX Soter II (116–107 and 88–80)	Antiochus IX Cyzicenus (115–95)
100 BCE	Ptolemy X Alexander I (107–88)	Seleucus VI (95)
		Antiochus X Eusebes (95–83)
		Antiochus XI Philadelphus (95)
	Cleopatra Berenice (101–88)	Demetrius III Eukairos (95–88)
		Philip I Epiphanes Philadelphus (95–84)
	Ptolemy XI Alexander II (80)	Antiochus XII Dionysus Epiphanes (87–84)
		Philip II (67–66)
	Ptolemy XII Auletes (80–59 and 55–51)	Antiochus XIII Asiaticus (69–68 and 65–64)
50 BCE	Cleopatra VII (51–30)	
	Ptolemy XIII (51–47)	
	Ptolemy XIV (47–44)	
		ROMAN EMPIRE
		ROMAN EMPERORS:
		Octavian (**Augustus**) (27 BCE–14 CE)
25 CE		**Tiberius** (14–37)
		Gaius Caligula (37–41)
50 CE		**Claudius** (41–54)
		Nero (54–68)
		Galba (68–69); Otho (69); Vitellius (69)
		Vespasian (69–79)
		Titus (79–81)
100 CE		Domitian (81–96)
		Nerva (96–98)
		Trajan (98–117)
		Hadrian (117–138)

PALESTINE

HASMONEAN RULERS

[Mattathias d. 166]
Judas Maccabeus, son of Mattathias (165–160)
Jonathan, son of Mattathias (160–142)
Simon, son of Mattathias (142–135)
John Hyrcanus I, son of Simon (135–104)

Judah Aristobulus I , son of John Hyrcanus (104–103)

Alexander Janneus, son of John Hyrcanus (103–76)

Salome Alexandra, wife of Alexander Jannaeus (76–67)
Aristobulus II, son of Alexander Jannaeus and Salome Alexandra (67–63)

Hyrcanus II, son of Alexander Jannaeus and Salome Alexandra (63–40)
Mattathias Antigonus, son of Aristobulus II (40–37)

HERODIAN DYNASTY

Herod the Great, king of the Jews (37–4)
Herod Archelaus, son of Herod the Great, ethnarch of Judea, Samaria, Idumea (4 BCE–6 CE)
Herod Antipas, son of Herod the Great, tetrarch of Galilee and Perea (4 BCE–39 CE)
Herod **Philip**, son of Herod the Great, tetrarch of Batanea, Trachonitis, Auranitis (4 BCE–34 CE)

Herod Agrippa I, grandson of Herod the Great, king of Batanea, Trachonitis, Aurantis (37–44) and of Judea, Galilee, and Perea (41–44)

Herod Agrippa II, son of Herod Agrippa I, king of Chalcis (50–53), king of Batanea, Trachonitis, Auranitis, Galilee, Perea (53–ca. 93)

ROMAN GOVERNORS OF JUDEA

Coponius (6–8 CE)
M. Ambivius (9–12)
Annius Rufus (12–15)
Valerius Gratus (15–26)
Pontius Pilate (26–36)
Marcellus (36–37)
Marullus (37–41)[2]
Cuspius Fadus (44–46)
Tiberius Julius Alexander (46–48)
Ventidius Cumanus (48–52)
M. Antonius **Felix** (52–60?)
Porcius Festus (60?–62)
Clodius Albinus (62–64)
Gessius Florus (64–66)

2. In 41 Judea was made part of the kingdom of Herod Agrippa I, grandson of Herod the Great (see Herodian Dynasty, above). At his death in 44 it became a province again.

WEIGHTS AND MEASURES

The modern equivalents for biblical measures and weights are presented in the following tables.

HEBREW WEIGHTS

HEBREW	NRSV	EQUIVALENCE	U.S. AVOIRDUPOIS	METRIC UNITS
kikkar	talent	60 minas	75.558 pounds	34.3 kilograms
maneh	mina	50 shekels	20.148 ounces	571.2 grams
sheqel	shekel	2 bekas	176.29 grains	11.42 grams
pim (or payim)	pim	.667 shekel	117.52 grains	7.61 grams
beqa'	beka, half a shekel	10 gerahs	88.14 grains	5.71 grams
gerah	gerah		8.81 grains	.57 gram

The practice of weighing unmarked ingots of metal used in commercial transactions prior to the invention of money explains that the names of the units of weight were used later as indications of value, and as names for monetary standards. There is, however, no direct relation between the shekel-weight and the weight of a shekel piece.

WEIGHTS IN THE NEW TESTAMENT

GREEK	NRSV	EQUIVALENCE	U.S. AVOIRDUPOIS	METRIC UNITS
talenton	talent	(Hebrew) talent	75.558 pounds	34.3 kilograms
mna	pound	(Hebrew) mina	20.148 ounces	571.2 grams
litra	pound	(Latin) libra	0.719 pound	326.4 grams

HEBREW MEASURES OF LENGTH

HEBREW	NRSV	EQUIVALENCE	U.S. MEASURES	METRIC UNITS
'ammaḥ	cubit	2 spans	17.49 inches	.443 meter
zeret	span	3 handbreadths	8.745 inches	.221 meter
topaḥ, tepaḥ	handbreadth	4 fingers	2.915 inches	.074 meter
'etsba'	finger		0.728 inch	.019 meter

The cubit described in Ezekiel 40.5; 43.13 is equal to seven (not six) handbreadths, namely 20.405 inches.

MEASURES OF LENGTH IN THE NEW TESTAMENT

GREEK	NRSV	U.S. MEASURES	METRIC UNITS
pechus	cubit	about 1.5 feet	.456 meter
orguia	fathom	about 72.44 inches	1.839 meters
stadion	stadia, or the equivalent in miles	about 606 feet	184.7 meters
milion	mile	about 4,854 feet	1.482 kilometers

HEBREW MEASURES OF CAPACITY: LIQUID MEASURES

HEBREW	NRSV	EQUIVALENCE	U.S. MEASURES	METRIC UNITS
kor	measure, cor	10 baths	60.738 gallons	230 liters
bat	bath	6 hins	6.073 gallons	23 liters
hin	hin	3 kabs	1.012 gallons	3.829 liters
qab	kab	4 logs	1.4349 quarts	1.276 liters
log	log		0.674 pint	.32 liter

HEBREW MEASURES OF CAPACITY: DRY MEASURES

HEBREW	NRSV	EQUIVALENCE	U.S. MEASURES	METRIC UNITS
ḥomer	homer	2 lethechs	6.524 bushels	229.7 liters
kor	measure, cor	2 lethechs	6.524 bushels	229.7 liters
letek	lethech, measure	5 ephahs	3.262 bushels	114.8 liters
'epah	ephah, measure	3 seahs	20.878 quarts	22.9 liters
se'ah	measure	3.33 omers	6.959 quarts	7.7 liters
'omer	omer	1.8 kabs	2.087 quarts	2.3 liters
'issaron	tenth part (of ephah)			
qab	kab		1.159 quarts	1.3 liters

MEASURES OF CAPACITY IN THE NEW TESTAMENT

GREEK	NRSV	EQUIVALENCE	U.S. MEASURES	METRIC UNITS
batos	measure	(Hebrew) bat	6.073 gallons	23 liters
koros	measure	(Hebrew) kor	60.738 gallons or 6.524 bushels	230 liters
saton	measure	(Hebrew) se'ah	6.959 dry quarts	7.71 liters
metretes	measure		10.3 gallons	39 liters
choinix	quart		0.98 dry quart	1.079 liters
modios	bushel	(Latin) modius	7.68 dry quarts	8.458 liters
xestes	pot	(Latin) sextarius	0.96 dry pint, or 1.12 fluid pints	.53 liter

CALENDAR

The year was composed of twelve lunar months (beginning on the day of the new moon), with an intercalary month added periodically (see perhaps 1 Kings 12.33). In some traditions, and perhaps originally, the year began in the fall, at the autumnal equinox (see Ex 23.16; 34.22). In others, following Babylonian practice, the new year was celebrated in the spring. The fall new year became standard in postbiblical Judaism.

Months in the Bible are usually identified by ordinal numbers, beginning with the spring new year. Some months (in boldface in the following list) are also designated with names derived either from a Canaanite calendar or, in postexilic texts, from a Babylonian one; the names of months not found in the Bible are known from other ancient sources.

	CANAANITE NAME	BABYLONIAN NAME	MODERN EQUIVALENT
First	**Abib**	**Nisan**	March–April
Second	**Ziv**	Iyyar	April–May
Third		**Sivan**	May–June
Fourth		Tammuz	June–July
Fifth		Ab	July–August
Sixth		**Elul**	August–September
Seventh	**Ethanim**	Tishri	September–October
Eighth	**Bul**	Marheshvan	October–November
Ninth		Chislev	November–December
Tenth		**Tebeth**	December–January
Eleventh		**Shebat**	January–February
Twelfth		**Adar**	February–March

PARALLEL TEXTS

Alongside the widespread evidence of alternative traditions in the Bible, in which two or more authors or traditions deal with the same general subjects (e.g., the two accounts of creation in Gen 1–3; the Gospel of John as compared with the first three Gospels), throughout the Bible there are also literary relationships between one book or part of a book and another. Sometimes the authors or editors of one book simply reproduced their sources verbatim; sometimes they were retouched. Often called "synoptic passages," because when viewed together their common elements can be seen, these texts are important in understanding the specific purposes and themes of a writer by analyzing what was included, added, omitted, revised, and rearranged. There follows a listing of the larger synoptic passages throughout the Bible. These texts have a demonstrable literary relationship with each other, either direct, where a source can be identified, or indirect, where a source that no longer survives but must be presumed is quoted at length and verbatim, or with only minor modifications in one or more places.

HEBREW BIBLE

	SYNOPTIC PASSAGES		SUBJECT MATTER
EXODUS	Ex 20.2–17	Deut 5.6–21	Ten Commandments
JOSHUA	Josh 21.1–39	1 Chr 6.54–81	Levitical cities
2 SAMUEL	2 Sam 22	Ps 18	Thanksgiving hymn
1 CHRONICLES	1 Chr 1.1–4	Gen 5	Descendants of Adam
	1 Chr 1.5–23	Gen 10.1–32	Descendants of Noah
	1 Chr 1.24–27	Gen 11.10–32	Descendants of Shem
	1 Chr 1.28–33	Gen 25.1–6,12–18	Descendants of Ishmael and Keturah
	1 Chr 1.34–54	Gen 36.1–43	Descendants of Esau
	1 Chr 3.1–9	2 Sam 3.2–5; 5.5,13–16	Sons of David
	1 Chr 6.54–81	Josh 21.1–39	Levitical cities
	1 Chr 10	1 Sam 31	Death of Saul
	1 Chr 11.1–9	2 Sam 5.1–10	David's early reign
	1 Chr 11.10–47	2 Sam 23.8–39	David's heroes
	1 Chr 13.5–14	2 Sam 6.1–11	David retrieves the ark
	1 Chr 14.1–17	2 Sam 5.11–25	David's reign in Jerusalem
	1 Chr 15.25–16.3	2 Sam 6.12–19	David brings the ark to Jerusalem
	1 Chr 16.8–36	Ps 105.1–15; 96.1–13;	Thanksgiving hymn
	1 Chr 17–21	2 Sam 7; 8; 10; 11.1; 12.26,30–31; 21.18–22; 24	David's reign in Jerusalem
2 CHRONICLES	2 Chr 1.3–13	1 Kings 3.4–15	Solomon's prayer for wisdom
	2 Chr 1.14–17	1 Kings 10.26–29	Solomon's wealth
	2 Chr 2.1–18	1 Kings 5.1–18	Preparations for building Temple
	2 Chr 3.1–4	1 Kings 6.1–3	Temple dimensions
	2 Chr 4.1–5.1	1 Kings 7.23–26,39–51	Temple metalwork
	2 Chr 5.2–7.10	1 Kings 8	Dedication of the Temple
	2 Chr 7.11–9.29	1 Kings 9–10	Solomon's reign
	2 Chr 9.29–31	1 Kings 11.41–42	Solomon's death
	2 Chr 10.1–11.4	1 Kings 12.1–24	Rehoboam's accession
	2 Chr 12.2–16	1 Kings 14.25–31	Shishak's invasion
	2 Chr 15.16–17.1	1 Kings 15.17–24	Asa's reign
	2 Chr 18.2–34; 20.31–21.1	1 Kings 22	Jehoshaphat's reign
2 CHRONICLES	2 Chr 21.2–10	2 Kings 8.16–22	Jehoram's reign
	2 Chr 22.2–6	2 Kings 8.25–29	Ahaziah's reign
	2 Chr 22.10–23.21	2 Kings 11	Athaliah's reign

	SYNOPTIC PASSAGES		SUBJECT MATTER
	2 Chr 24.1–14	2 Kings 12.1–14	Jehoash's reign
	2 Chr 25.1–4,17–28; 26.1–2	2 Kings 14.1–22	Amaziah's reign
	2 Chr 26.3–4,21–23	2 Kings 15.1–7	Uzziah's reign
	2 Chr 27.1–9	2 Kings 15.32–38	Jotham's reign
	2 Chr 28.1–4,26–27	2 Kings 16.1–4,19–20	Ahaz's reign
	2 Chr 29.1–2; 32.1, 9–12,15	2 Kings 18.1–3,13,17–22, 29–30	Hezekiah's reign
	2 Chr 33.1–9,18–20	2 Kings 21.1–9,17–18	Manasseh's reign
	2 Chr 33.21–25	2 Kings 21.19–26	Amon's reign
	2 Chr 34.1–2,8–31; 35.20	2Kings 22.1–23.3,29	Josiah's reign
	2 Chr 36.1–4	2 Kings 23.30–34	Jehoahaz's reign
	2 Chr 36.5,6,8	2 Kings 23.36–37; 24.1,5	Jehoiakim's reign
	2 Chr 36.9	2 Kings 24.8	Jehoiakin's reign
	2 Chr 36.11–12	2 Kings 24.18–19	Zedekiah's reign
	2 Chr 36.22–23	Ezra 1.1–2	Decree of Cyrus
EZRA	Ezra 1.1–2	2 Chr 36.22–23	Decree of Cyrus
	Ezra 2.1–70	Neh 7.7–69	List of returning exiles
PSALMS	Ps 14	Ps 53	Lament
	Ps 18	2 Sam 22	Thanksgiving hymn
ISAIAH	Isa 2.2–4	Mic 4.1–3	Oracle of future age
	Isa 15–16	Jer 48.29–38	Oracle against Moab
	Isa 36–39	2 Kings 18.13–20.19	Events in Hezekiah's reign
JEREMIAH	Jer 39.1–10	2 Kings 25.1–12	The fall of Jerusalem
	Jer 48.29–38	Isa 16.6–10; 15.2–7; 16.11–12	Oracle against Moab
	Jer 49.9–10,14–16	Ob 5–6,1–4	Oracle against Edom
	Jer 52	2 Kings 24.18–25.30	The fall of Jerusalem
OBADIAH	Ob 1–6	Jer 49.14–16,9–10	Oracle against Edom
MICAH	Mic 4.1–3	Isa 2.2–4	Oracle of future age

APOCRYPHA

	SYNOPTIC PASSAGES		SUBJECT MATTER
1 ESDRAS	1 Esd 1.1–55	2 Chr 35.1–36.21	Last days of Judah
	1 Esd 2.1–15	Ezra 1.1–11	Cyrus's decree
	1 Esd 2.16–30	Ezra 4.7–24	Opposition to rebuilding Temple
	1 Esd 5.7–46	Ezra 2.1–70; Neh 7.7–69	List of returning exiles
	1 Esd 5.47–73	Ezra 3.1–4.5	Rebuilding Temple
	1 Esd 6.1–7.15	Ezra 4.24–6.22	Completion of Temple
	1 Esd 8.1–9.55	Ezra 7.1–10.44; Neh 7.73–8.12	Ezra's mission

NEW TESTAMENT

A majority of scholars think that the Gospel of Mark was independently used as a source by Matthew and Luke.

	SYNOPTIC PASSAGES		SUBJECT MATTER
Mk 1.2–8	Mt 3.1–6,11–12	Lk 3.1–6,16	John the Baptist
Mk 1.9–11	Mt 3.13–17	Lk 3.21–22	Baptism of Jesus
Mk 1.12–13	Mt 4.1–2,11	Lk 4.1–2,13	Temptation of Jesus
Mk 1.16–20	Mt 4.18–22	(Lk 5.1–11)	Call of disciples
Mk 1.21–38	(Mt 7.28–29; 8.14–17)	Lk 4.31–43	Teaching and healing by Jesus
Mk 1.40–45	Mt 8.1–4	Lk 5.12–16	Healing of a leper
Mk 2.1–22	Mt 9.1–17	Lk 5.17–39	Events in Jesus' ministry
Mk 2.23–3.30	Mt 12.1–37; 10.1–4	Lk 6.1–19; 11.14–23; 12.10; 6.43–45	Events in Jesus' ministry
Mk 3.31–4.25	Mt 12.46–50; 13.1–13, 18–23	Lk 8.4–21	Sayings of Jesus
Mk 4.30–34	Mt 13.31–32,34–35	Lk 13.18–19	Sayings of Jesus
Mk 4.35–41	Mt 8.23–27	Lk 8.22–35	Stilling the storm
Mk 5.1–43	Mt 8.28–34; 9.18–26	Lk 8.26–56	Healings by Jesus
Mk 6.1–6	Mt 13.51–52		Rejection in Nazareth
Mk 6.7–14	Mt 10.1,9–11; 14.1–2	Lk 9.1–9	Events in Jesus' ministry
Mk 6.17–29	Mt 14.3–12		Death of John the Baptist
Mk 6.30–44	Mt 14.13–21	Lk 9.10–17	Feeding of five thousand
Mk 6.45–8.10	Mt 14.22–15.39		Events in Jesus' ministry
Mk 8.11–21	Mt 16.1–12	(Lk 11.29; 12.1)	Sayings of Jesus
Mk 8.27–9.48	Mt 16.13–17.23; 18.1–9	Lk 9.18–50; 17.1–2	Events in Jesus' ministry
Mk 12.28–31	Mt 22.34–40	Lk 10.25–38	Sayings of Jesus
Mk 10.1–12	Mt 19.1–12		On marriage
Mk 10.13–52	Mt 19.13–30; 20.17–34	Lk 18.15–43; 22.24–27	Sayings of Jesus
Mk 11.1–12.37	Mt 21.1–27,33–46; 22.15-46	Lk 19.28–38,45–48; 20.1–44; (10.25–28)	Jesus in Jerusalem
Mk 12.41–44		Lk 21.1–4	The poor widow
Mk 13.1–32	Mt 24.1–36	Lk 21.5–33	Sayings of Jesus about the end
Mk 14.1–15.47	Mt 26.1–27.2; 27.11–61	Lk 22.1–34,39–71; 23.1–5,18–55	Passion of Jesus
Mk 16.1–8	Mt 28.1–10	Lk 24.1–11	The empty tomb

A majority of scholars think that Matthew and Luke used a source that has not survived (known as "Q").

	SYNOPTIC PASSAGES	SUBJECT MATTER
Mt 3.7–10,12	Lk 3.7–9,17	John the Baptist's preaching
Mt 4.3–10	Lk 3.3–12	Temptation of Jesus
Mt 5.3–12	Lk 6.20–23	Beatitudes
Mt 5.13–16	Lk 14.34–35; 11.33	Sayings of Jesus
Mt 5.21–26	Lk 12.57–59	Sayings of Jesus
Mt 5.38–48	Lk 6.27–36	Sayings of Jesus
Mt 6.9–15	Lk 11.2–4	Lord's Prayer
Mt 6.19–7.27	Lk 12.33–36; 16.13; 12.22–31; 6.37–38, 41–42; 11.9–13; 6.31; 13.23–24; 6.43–49	Sayings of Jesus
Mt 8.5–15	Lk 7.1–10	Healing of a centurion's servant
Mt 8.18–22	Lk 9.57–60	Sayings of Jesus
Mt 10.26–39	Lk 12.2–9,51–53; 14.26–27	Sayings of Jesus
Mt 11.2–19	Lk 7.18–35	On John the Baptist

	SYNOPTIC PASSAGES	SUBJECT MATTER
Mt 11.20–27	Lk 10.13–15,21–22	Sayings of Jesus
Mt 12.38–45	Lk 11.29–32; 11.24–26	Sayings of Jesus
Mt 13.16–17	Lk 10.23–24	Sayings of Jesus
Mt 13.33	Lk 13.20–21	Sayings of Jesus
Mt 18.10–14	Lk 15.3–7	Sayings of Jesus
Mt 22.1–4	Lk 14.16–22	Parable of the marriage feast
Mt 23.37–39	Lk 13.34–35	Lament over Jerusalem
Mt 24.37–51	Lk 17.26–35; 12.39–46	Sayings of Jesus about the end
Mt 25.14–30	Lk 19.12–27	Parable of the talents

TRANSLATIONS OF ANCIENT TEXTS

INTRODUCTORY

Evans, Craig A. *Ancient Texts for New Testament Studies: A Guide to the Background Literature.* Peabody, Mass. Hendrickson, 2005.

Sparks, Kenton L. *Ancient Texts for the Study of the Hebrew Bible: A Guide to the Background Literature.* Peabody, Mass. Hendrickson, 2005.

ANCIENT NEAR EASTERN

Chavalas, Mark W., ed. *The Ancient Near East: Historical Sources in Translation.* Oxford: Blackwell, 2006.

Hallo, William W., and K. Lawson Younger, eds. *The Context of Scripture.* Vol. 1, *Canonical Compositions from the Biblical World*. Vol. 2, *Monumental Inscriptions from the Biblical World.* Vol. 3, *Archival Documents from the Biblical World.* Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1997; 1999; 2003.

Lewis, Theodore I., ed. *Writings from the Ancient World.* A series produced by the Society of Biblical Literature (Atlanta, Ga.), with each volume devoted to a particular genre and language.

Pritchard, James B., ed. *Ancient Near Eastern Texts Relating to the Old Testament*. Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press, 3d ed., 1969.

EARLY JEWISH

General

Bartlett, John R. *Jews in the Hellenistic World: Josephus, Aristeas, the Sibylline Oracles, Eupolemus.* Cambridge, Eng.: Cambridge University Press, 1985.

Maccoby, Hyam. *Early Rabbinic Writings*. Cambridge, Eng.: Cambridge University Press, 1988.

Septuagint

Pietersma, Albert, and Benjamin G. Wright, eds. *A New English Translation of the Septuagint and the Other Greek Translations Traditionally included under That Title.* New York: Oxford University Press, 2007.

Dead Sea Scrolls

Abegg, Martin, Jr.; Peter Flint; and Eugene Ulrich, eds. *The Dead Sea Scrolls Bible: The Oldest Known Bible.* San Francisco: HarperSanFrancisco, 1999.

García Martínez, Florentino, ed. *The Dead Sea Scrolls Study Edition.* 2 vols. Grand Rapids, Mich.: Eerdmans, 2000.

Vermes, Geza. *The Complete Dead Sea Scrolls in English*. Rev. ed. New York: Penguin, 2004.

Apocrypha and Pseudepigrapha

Charles, R. H., ed. *The Apocrypha and Pseudepigrapha of the Old Testament*. 2 vols. Oxford: Clarendon, 1913.

Charlesworth, James H., ed. *The Old Testament Pseudepigrapha*. 2 vols. New York: Doubleday, 1983; 1985.

Josephus

Mason, Steve, ed. *Flavius Josephus: Translation and Commentary.* Leiden: E. J. Brill, 2000– .

Whiston, William, trans. *The Works of Josephus Complete and Unabridged.* 1736. New updated edition, Peabody, Mass.: Hendrickson, 1987.

Williamson, G. A., trans. *Josephus: The Jewish War*. New York: Penguin, 1984.

Loeb Classical Library

Philo of Alexandria

Williamson, Ronald. *Jews in the Hellenistic World: Philo.* Cambridge, Eng.: Cambridge University Press, 1989.

Yonge, C. D., trans. *The Works of Philo*. 1854. New updated edition, Peabody, Mass.: Hendrickson, 1993.

Loeb Classical Library

TRANSLATIONS OF ANCIENT TEXTS

Mishnah

Danby, Herbert. *The Mishnah.* Oxford: Clarendon, 1933.
Neusner, Jacob. *The Mishnah: A New Translation*. New Haven: Yale University Press, 1988.

Talmud

Epstein, I. *The Babylonian Talmud.* 30 vols. London: Soncino, 1935–48.
Steinsaltz, Adin. *The Talmud.* New York: Random House, 1989–99.

EARLY CHRISTIAN

General

Barrett, C. K. *The New Testament Background: Writings from Ancient Greece and the Roman Empire That Illuminate Christian Origins.* Rev. ed. San Francisco: HarperCollins, 1987.
Cartlidge, David R., and David L. Dungan, eds. *Documents for the Study of the Gospels.* Rev. ed. Minneapolis: Fortress, 1994.
Elliott, J. K. *The Apocryphal New Testament: A Collection of Apocryphal Christian Literature in an English Translation.* Rev ed. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1999.
Richardson, Cyril D., ed. *Early Christian Fathers.* New York: Macmillan, 1970.
Staniforth, Maxwell, trans. *Early Christian Writings*. New York: Penguin, 1987.

Nag Hammadi

Barnstone, Willis, and Marvin Meyer, eds. *The Gnostic Bible.* Boston: Shambhala, 2003.
Layton, Bentley. *The Gnostic Scriptures: A New Translation.* Garden City, N.Y.: Doubleday, 1987.
Robinson, J. M., ed. *The Nag Hammadi Library in English.* 4th rev. ed. Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1996.

ANCIENT TRANSLATIONS OF THE BIBLE

Greek

Brenton, Lancelot C. L. *The Septuagint with Apocrypha: Greek and English*. 1851. Reprint, Peabody, Mass.: Hendrickson, 1986.

Aramaic

McNamara, Martin, et al. *The Aramaic Bible: The Targums*. Collegeville, Minn.: Liturgical, 1987– .

CLASSICAL SOURCES

Beard, Mary; John North; and Simon Price. *Religions of Rome.* Vol. 2: *A Sourcebook.* Cambridge, Eng.: Cambridge University Press, 1998.
Translations of the writings of most Greek and Roman authors are available in the Loeb Classical Library.

GLOSSARY

A

Aaron the first high priest, brother of Moses and Levite (Ex 4.14); he is inaugurated in Ex chs 28–29. Although it is unclear how, or whether, Aaron was supposed to be the progenitor of later priests, he is regarded as the prototype. See **Levite**, **Zadokite**

Abaddon (Heb "place of destruction"), the realm of the dead (Job 26.6; Prov 15.11; Ps 88.10–12; Rev 9.11)

Abba (Aram. "father"), the word Jesus (Mk 14.36) and the early church (Rom 8.15) used to address God

accession the act of taking one's place as a ruler

acropolis (Gk "height of the city") the fortified upper area of a Greek city; "the Acropolis" refers to this area in Athens

acrostic a literary device in which the first letter of each line of poetry occurs according to a predetermined pattern. In the poetry of the Hebrew Bible all acrostics are alphabetical: the individual lines of a poem (or occasionally small groups of lines) begin with the twenty–two letters of the Hebrew alphabet in order. (This would be equivalent to the first line of an English poem beginning with *A*, the second with *B*, etc.) The acrostic form, besides giving the esthetic pleasure of a pattern, may have been intended to make memorization easier. It may also have been intended as a way of expressing completeness: in Lamentations, for instance, the acrostic format of the individual chs might have been used to express the completeness of the outpouring of grief. The following poems in the Bible are acrostics: Pss. 9–10, 25, 34, 37, 111, 112, 119, 145; Prov. 31.10–31; Lam 1, 2, 3, 4 (ch 5 is not an acrostic, but preserves part of the form by having 22 lines, the number of letters in the Hebrew alphabet); Nah 1.2–8 (or 9) (incomplete). In the Hebrew text of Sirach, 51.13–30 is acrostic.

Adar the twelfth month (February-March) in the Jewish year. In order to bring the lunar calendar into alignment with the solar year, a leap year, in which there are two months of Adar, occurs seven times during each nineteen-year cycle of years (see Calendar)

Adonai (Heb "my Lord") a divine title and the word generally substituted for **YHWH** when the Bible is read aloud

Ahikar an ancient Near Eastern story of a prime minister to the king of Assyria, who is betrayed by an ungrateful nephew but ultimately vindicated. It is alluded to in Tob 1.21–22.

Akedah (Heb "binding") the story of the binding of Isaac (Gen 22)

Akkadian the language of Assyria and Babylonia. Akkadian is a Semitic language related to Hebrew, and is written in cuneiform, wedge-shaped writing.

alien see **resident alien**

allegory an extended comparison, which directly describes one reality while indirectly describing something entirely different. An allegory as a narrative uses action, setting, and characters to point symbolically to something else.

alleluia a Greek and Latin form of a Hebrew phrase that means "Praise the LORD." See **hallelujah**.

Amarna Letters diplomatic correspondence from the reigns of the Egyptian pharaohs Amenophis III and Akhenaten, written in **Akkadian** cuneiform, that provide information about **Canaan** in the fourteenth century BCE

Ammon, Ammonites, the territory and its inhabitants east of the Jordan River

Amorites according to the Bible, one of the native nations of Canaan. Amorites are attested in other ancient Near Eastern documents from the third millennium BCE and onward as residents of Syria who migrated to Mesopotamia and other areas. Their language was related to Hebrew.

amphictyony a social organization in ancient Greece in which groups were united around a central sanctuary and serviced this sanctuary on a rotating basis. Some scholars think that a similar system existed in Israel in premonarchic times.

anachronism an element in a story that is out of place because it did not exist at the time in which the story is set. Anachronisms can be valuable clues to when a narrative was written.

Anat a Canaanite goddess often depicted as a warrior

anathema (Gk "devoted [to evil]," "accursed") a solemn pronouncement by a recognized religious authority banning or condemning a person, thing, or idea as false or evil

aniconic (Gk "not representational") worship without the use of statues or images; also a symbolic or suggestive presentation of a divine being, rather than a literal or realistic rendition

anoint touch or rub with oil. Anointing was a sign that a person or thing was dedicated to God. See also **messiah**.

anthropomorphic (Gk "in human form") the description or representation of a divine being in the form of a human person

antichrist the apocalyptic figure presented as opposing God, battling the heavenly angels serving God, or fighting against God's anointed ruler

antithesis the contrast of ideas through closely contrasted words

antithetic parallelism two parallel lines related to one another by opposition or contrast

aphorism a short, memorable saying

apocalypse (Gr. *apokalypsis*, "removal of the veil, revelation") a literary genre in which an angel or other heavenly being communicates to a human being the divine plan for history, especially the end of time

apocalyptic having the character of an apocalypse

Apocrypha (Gk "hidden things") a group of about twenty mostly Jewish works, many of which were included in the **Septuagint**, but which are not included in the Jewish or Protestant canons of the Bible. Most of these works are canonical for Roman Catholics; a few more are canonical for Orthodox Christians. See **deuterocanon**.

apodictic law law stated absolutely, as in the Decalogue's "you shall not," rather than casuistically, "if a person . . . ." See **casuistic law**.

apologia (Gk "explanation") a defense of one's actions or beliefs, usually in a formal speech or written document

apostasy abandoning a set of beliefs, or the position of having abandoned them

apostle (Gk "one who is sent"), a delegate or representative. In the New Testament, an apostle was one who had known Jesus and could witness to the resurrection (Acts 1.21–2), or a preacher of the gospel who had been called by God (1 Cor 12.28; Rom 16.7).

apostrophe (Gk "turn from") a direct address to someone or something not present

apotropaic (Gk "turn away from") an action intended to ward off evil

Aramaic a Semitic language used widely in the Near East during the Persian period, though it developed earlier. It became the ordinary language of Jews, and was used by Jesus. An Aramaic translation of the Hebrew Bible is called a **Targum**.

Aramaism the use in another language of a word or grammatical form derived from Aramaic.

Arameans a Semitic people living in Syria from the second millennium BCE onward. Damascus was a principal city of the Arameans.

aretalogy (Gk "words about virtue") praise of virtues, either of a hero or of oneself

ark of the covenant the chest in the tabernacle or Temple that contained the text or tablets of the covenant, and that served as part of the throne of the LORD

Armageddon the traditional site of the final battle between good and evil (Rev 16.6), possibly derived from Megiddo, a strategically located site where many battles occurred

ascension going up, particularly to a divine realm but also literally climbing a hill (as to Jerusalem)

asceticism (Gk "training") deliberate self-denial or self-punishment for religious purpose

Asherah (pl. Asherim) Canaanite goddess, wife or consort of **El**; her sacred symbol, a pole or tree, was the object of prophetic condemnation.

Assyria a Mesopotamian world power in the second and first millennia BCE. Its capital cities included Ashur and Nineveh. The Assyrian empire conquered the Northern Kingdom of Israel in 722 BCE and exiled its people. The Assyrians were well-known for their massive building projects, and for their cruelty in war.

Astarte the Canaanite goddess of love and fertility

atbash a form of code in Hebrew in which the last letter of the alphabet is substituted for the first, the next-to-last for the second, and so on: *alep* becomes *taw*, *bet* becomes *shin*, *gimel* becomes *resh*, etc. (In English, *A* would become *Z*, *B* would become *Y*, etc.) In Jer 25.26; 51.41, Babylon (b-b-l) is written Sheshach (sh-sh-k).

atonement expiation for sin, or reparation for an injury committed against another

Atrahasis hero of the Mesopotamian epic named for him, who survives the god Enlil's efforts to destroy humankind by a flood. See also **Gilgamesh.**

B

Baal ("master," "lord," "husband") the chief god of Canaanite religion, a storm god

Babylonia a Mesopotamian world power. It often competed against Assyria, which it conquered in 612 BCE. Its major city was Babylon (Akkadian "gate of the gods"). Its main god became Marduk. Babylonia destroyed Jerusalem in 586, and was conquered by the Persian king **Cyrus** the Great in 539.

Babylonian exile the forced relocation of some of the population of Judah, especially the elite, after the conquest by Babylonia in the early sixth century BCE. The exile ended with the permitted return to the land under **Cyrus** in 538 BCE.

Babylonian Talmud see **Talmud**

ban (Heb h*erem*) the dedication or sacrifice of war booty (including people) to the deity

baptism ritual purification by immersion in water, used by Christians as an initiation into the community

BCE Before the Common Era, equivalent to BC

Beelzebul (also Baalzebul, Baalzebub, Beelzebub) the ruler of the demons (Mt 12.24–27). It is based on the Hebrew *Baalzebul*, "Baal the exalted," a title of the Phoenician god at Ekron (2 Kings 1.2–18), changed probably as a derogatory name into Baalzebub, "lord of flies."

Behemoth a mythical beast in Job 40.15–24 who represents violent forces in the world

Bel (Akkadian "master," cognate to **Baal**) title of **Marduk**

belomancy a method of divination by choosing or tossing down arrows on which names of potential victims are inscribed

berît (Heb "treaty, contract, covenant") a term that may be used of a legal agreement between two individuals, groups, or nations, or between God and Israel (see **covenant**)

bicolon unit of Hebrew poetry composed of two *cola*, or lines (sometimes called a *dístich)*

Binding (of Isaac) see **Akedah**

Book of the Covenant see **Covenant Collection**

booths, festival of (Heb *Sukkot*) the autumn harvest festival, also called the festival of ingathering), so named because the harvesters lived in the fields in makeshift tents or booths, also called tabernacles

bulla a clay seal with the impression of a signet ring or other symbol of authority

C

Cairo Geniza the storeroom (see **geniza**) of a synagogue in Old Cairo in which were discovered many thousands of fragments of texts, including a portion of the book of Sirach (Ecclesiasticus) in Hebrew

Cambyses son of **Cyrus** and king of Persia 529–522 BCE. He conquered Egypt in 525

Canaan in Mesopotamian and Egyptian documents and in some biblical texts, a name for the region in the southern Levant part of which became biblical Israel, whose inhabitants are called Canaanites. Also a grandson of Noah.

canon (Gk "measuring rod") the rule by which something is determined to belong or not to a category. Christian tradition uses the word for the official list of the books that make up the Bible.

canonical criticism the interpretation of a biblical text based upon its final form, rather than viewing it as an assemblage of preexisting units

casuistic law (also called "case law") the form of law dealing with the treatment of specific cases. It is frequently in the form of "if/when . . . then" formulae. Most ancient Near Eastern law collections are formulated this way.

catchword, catchphrase a representative or repeated word or group of words that stands for an argument or point of view; that word or phrase picked up and used in a subsequent or related text

Catholic Epistles (also "Epistles General") the New Testament letters, from James to 3 John, identified not by their recipients but by their authors and therefore presumed to be addressed to the universal ("catholic" means "entire") church

CE Common Era, equivalent to AD

centurion in the Roman army, an officer commanding a century, a maximum of a hundred soldiers; there were sixty centuries in a legion

ceramic typology dating different levels of an archaeological site by classifying the pieces of pottery found in them according to the approximate eras in which they were made

Chaldean(s) a collective name for the tribes that were dominant in Babylon from the late sixth century BCE; Chaldea is frequently associated with the area of southern Mesopotamia

chaos complete lack of order. In ancient Near Eastern mythology, chaos was sometimes personified as divine beings who had to be conquered by other gods in order to establish an orderly, habitable universe.

charismatic (Gr. "gifted, graced") characterized by the ability to influence or lead others; personally magnetic; talented

chattel possessions or persons owned by someone else and therefore at that person's complete disposal

Chemosh the chief god of Moab

cherubim (sing. "cherub") mythical, composite creatures with body parts from various animals; they often had wings and human heads. They were commonly guardians of temples and palaces in the ancient Near East.

chiasm, chiasmus (from Gr. *chi*, the letter that resembles an *X*) inverting the second pair of terms in a parallel structure, so that the corresponding terms, if laid out in a square, would form an *X*. The resultant pattern is *abba, abcba, abccba*, etc.

Christ (Gk "anointed"), the translation of Heb *mashiah*, "messiah." In the New Testament and in general usage, Christ always refers to Jesus of Nazareth.

christology the theological doctrines concerning the nature of Christ

chronicle an account of events in the order in which they occurred

Chronicler the name for the unknown author of the books of Chronicles; sometimes also applied to the author of Ezra and Nehemiah

church (see also house church) the community of believers in a particular area; the later use of "church" to mean a building where people worship does not occur in the New Testament

church fathers see **patristic writers**

circumcision the removal of the foreskin of the penis

Cisjordan Latin for "this side of Jordan," that is, the region west of the Jordan river

citadel a stronghold or fortress, whether standing alone or serving as the inner fortification of a city

clan a social unit, composed of several families considered to be descended from a common ancestor; several clans constituted a tribe

climax (Gk "ladder"), a series of clauses in which each succeeding clause repeats the important term from the previous clause, each clause in turn making a more important point

codex a manuscript of separate pages, bound along one edge. Modern books are a development of the codex.

colon (pl. *cola*) a single line of poetry (also known as a *stich*)

colophon (Gk "summit," by extension "finishing touch") a notice, usually found at the end of an ancient text, giving information about details such as authorship

concordance a word index to a given text, listing each occurrence of a given word along with its context

concubine a woman who is the sexual partner of a man, and is legally recognized as such, but who does not have the full status of a wife

corvée forced labor for the state

cosmology an account of the origins of the cosmos

cosmopolis (Gk "world city") a major metropolis, usually the main city of an empire, to which peoples from different countries or ethnic groups came or in which they resided

cosmos (Gk "order, regularity") the created world of order, stability, relative permanence; the opposite of chaos

Council of Trent the twenty-ninth ecumenical council of the Roman Catholic Church (1545–1563), held after the Protestant Reformation had begun. Among other decisions, it defined the books that are included in the Catholic canon of Scripture.

covenant (Heb *berit*) a contract or treaty. Some covenants have specific conditions or treaty stipulations, while others are covenants of grant; often used of the relationship between God and Israel

Covenant Code another term for **Covenant Collection**

Covenant Collection an ancient set of laws (Ex 20.19–23.33), which details the terms of the covenant between God and Israel

cult prostitute one available for sexual intercourse with worshipers at the temple of a god

cult rituals and religious practices at a place of worship. The cult of the Jerusalem Temple means the religious practices carried out there, with no judgment about their value.

Cynics (Gk "dogs, doglike ones") a nickname for a Greek philosophical movement of the fourth century BCE aimed at achieving happiness by lessening desires, and therefore needing less; it also taught contempt (or at least disregard) for social conventions and consequent lack of shame about meeting one's physical needs (hence the nickname, since dogs were popularly supposed to have no shame)

Cyrus Cylinder an Akkadian inscription describing the conquest of Babylon by **Cyrus**

Cyrus king of Persia (559–530 BCE). He defeated Media in 550 and conquered most of the ancient Near East, including **Babylonia**, allowing the Jewish exiles in Babylonia to return to Judah in 538

D

D according to the **Documentary Hypothesis**, the Deuteronomic source, which covers almost the entire book of Deuteronomy

Davidic dynasty the direct descendents of King David, who ruled in Jerusalem from the tenth to the early sixth centuries BCE

Davidic having to do with the monarchic dynasty founded by David that ruled over Israel and, after the division of the kingdom, the southern part (Judah) until the Babylonian conquest and exile of the sixth century BCE; also the movement to restore that monarchy or to reproduce the self-rule that it represented

Day of Atonement, Heb **Yom Kippur**, the tenth day of the seventh month in the fall, a day of fasting and repentance

Day of the Lord the time mentioned in many prophetic books when God will appear as a warrior, sometimes fighting against Israel, sometimes against Israel's enemies

Dead Sea Scrolls a group of manuscripts found beginning in 1947 in caves near the Dead Sea, at Wadi Qumran. The scrolls were probably the library of an Essene settlement that flourished at the site from the second century BCE until it was destroyed by the Romans in 68 CE. The library included Hebrew manuscripts of biblical books older than those previously known, and other scrolls regulating the life of the community that shed light on the variety of Jewish belief and practice in the Roman period.

Decalogue (Gk "ten words") a traditional name for the list of ten commandments in Ex 20.1–17, Deut 5.6–21

defective spelling the form of a word in the Hebrew text that is missing one or more optional vowel letters

defilement a state of ritual impurity caused by contact with a corpse or other impure object. Priestly literature in the Torah is especially concerned with defilement and removing defilement.

demon, demonic (Gk "spirit") a being of the spiritual realm, or a quality of that realm, particularly one opposed or hostile to human beings

deuterocanon, deuterocanonical (Gk "second canon"), those books or portions of books not included in the Jewish or Protestant canons but accepted as canonical by some Christian churches (Roman Catholic and Orthodox) because they were included in the **Septuagint**. The NRSV places notices within the Apocryphal/ Deuterocanonical Books explaining which ones are accepted by which groups.

Deutero-Isaiah see **Second Isaiah**

Deuteronomistic History the account in the books of Deuteronomy, Joshua, Judges, Samuel, and Kings that presents the history of Israel in the promised land, interpreting it a partial failure to keep the covenant faithfully, and the consequences of that failure. These books show significant theological and linguistic similarities, suggesting that they have a common editor or editors.

Deuteronomistic pertaining to the editor(s) of the history comprised in the books of Joshua, Judges, Samuel, and Kings, as prefaced by the book of Deuteronomy. The term is also applied to the style of these books, reflecting concern for such matters as obedience to the laws given in Deuteronomy, centralized worship in Jerusalem, and support for the **Davidic dynasty**.

Deutero-Pauline (Gk "secondary [letters] of Paul") the writings (Ephesians, Colossians, 1 and 2 Timothy, Titus, and sometimes Hebrews) traditionally attributed to Paul but which many modern scholars now classify as written by others, perhaps some of them disciples of Paul

devil a spiritual being opposed to God or to the angels of God

diaspora (Gk "dispersal") the scattering of Jews from the promised land Israel, and hence any Jews living outside Israel. Also dispersion.

diatribe an argument against a position, or one critical of a person or group. Diatribe often includes an imagined dialogue between opposing viewpoints.

Didache (Gk "teaching") an early Christian writing, dating from around 150 CE but including earlier materials. It consists of moral exhortation, a manual of church order, and guidance for community life. It is valuable for providing insight into the concerns of early Christian communities, and contains material similar to that in the **Pastoral Epistles**.

dietary laws see **kosher**

disciple a follower, an adherent of a particular teaching

dispersion see **diaspora**

divination the effort to learn about the present or the future, by consulting mediums, interpreting omens, and the like

divine warrior God in the role of leader of the heavenly armies, usually seen as fighting for Israel. See also **holy war**.

Documentary Hypothesis a theory about the formation of the first five books of the Bible, Genesis through Deuteronomy. The hypothesis holds that there are four traditions underlying these books, naming them after a chief characteristic of each: "*J* or the "Yahwist" ("*J* from the German spelling "Jahveh") uses the divine name "YHWH" (the LORD) consistently and contains much of the oldest material; "*E* or the "Elohist" uses the divine name "Elohim" (God) fairly consistently and contains traditions from the Northern Kingdom of Israel; "*P* or the "Priestly" writer is concerned largely with legal codes and matters of religious practice; and "*D* or the "Deuteronomist" represents the traditions gathered mostly in Deuteronomy.

doxology (Gk "word of glory") a prayer of praise to God, or one glorifying God

dualism the religious or philosophical view that reality consists of two basic elements, often seen as "good" and "evil"

dynasty a ruling family; when a leader dies, the next leader is always chosen from among the family members

E

E according to the **Documentary Hypothesis**, the Elohist source, which in Genesis refers to God as *elohim*. It is general though to have originated in the Northern Kingdom of Israel.

Edom, Edomites the territory and people to the southeast and south of Judah, first attested in late second-millennium BCE texts. Edom is identified in Genesis 36 with Esau, Jacob's brother. The enmity between these brothers and between Judah and Edom mirror each other. Edom was later called **Idumea**.

El a Canaanite deity popular in the second millennium BCE. In the texts from Ugarit, he is a significant deity, but is often depicted as old and is largely supplanted by **Baal**.

elect, election those whom God has chosen (Matt 24.22,24; Rom 8.33) or the process of God's having chosen a group (Rom 9.11); these terms do not imply the later (Calvinist) teaching of predestination

Elephantine Papyri Aramaic documents, mostly from the fifth century BCE, found on the island of Elephantine, near Syene (modern Aswan) in Egypt. The papyri show that among those who inhabited the colony on Elephantine were Jews who kept up religious observances, such as Passover, and had their own temple.

elohim the Hebrew word usually translated "God," though its plural form is sometimes also translated "gods." It is originally a common noun (a god), though it is often used as a proper noun for the God of Israel, even though it is a plural form.

Elohist the presumed author of the **E** source according to the **Documentary Hypothesis**

encomium a formal speech praising someone, as in a funeral oration

Enuma Elish a Babylonian text in which the god Marduk becomes king of the gods after creating the cosmos from the body of the goddess of the deep, Tiamat, whom Marduk defeated

ephod (1) the linen apron worn by priests in the Temple; (2) a device used to divine the will of God. The second kind of ephod was carried in priestly garments, which may explain why the same word can be used for both.

Ephraim son of Joseph, for whom the most important tribe of the **Northern Kingdom** is named

Epicureans a Greek philosophical school, founded by Epicurus (341–270 BCE), who taught that human beings naturally seek pleasure, and that the best way to achieve this pursuit was in moderation, since moderation permits the longest possible life of pleasure-seeking

Epiphanes a title, "[God] made manifest," adopted by Antiochus IV, the ruler of the part of the Greek empire that included Judea during the second century BCE. He was the king who forced pagan worship to occur in the Jerusalem Temple, thus provoking the revolt of the Maccabees.

epiphany (Gk "appearing") the manifestation or visual presence of a divine being

epiphany (Gk "manifestation, appearance") usually the appearance of a god or divine being in a form that can be seen by human beings

episcopacy, episcopate (Gk "overseer") a form of church governance in which one authority is responsible for the Christians in a particular geographical area

epistle a letter, sometimes intended for public reading and therefore written according to a particular literary form

Epistles General see **Catholic Epistles**

epistolary prescript a standard salutation or opening phrase at the beginning of a letter

epithet a word or phrase that characterizes a person or thing, and that can often be used by itself to refer to the person

eponymous (Gk "regarding the name") person for whom something is named; Judas Maccabeus is the eponymous main character of the books of 1 and 2 Maccabees

eschatological, eschatology (Gr. *eschata*, "last things") a concern with the end time, or the end of the world as we know it, whether that involves a new historical era radically discontinuous from this one, or an entirely new cosmos after the destruction of the current one

eschaton (Gk "final thing") the end of a period or era; the final stage of history

Essenes a communal society in Judaism from the second century BCE to the first century CE whose members lived apart in communities that were similar in some respects to later monastic groups. It is generally agreed that the **Dead Sea Scrolls** were collected and preserved by an Essene community.

ethics, ethical (Gk "custom") rules of behavior or moral standards expected in a particular place or among a particular group; behavior conforming to those rules or standards

etiology (Gr. *aition*, "cause") an explanation for a name, an event, a custom or ritual, or a natural phenomenon. An etiological story is one that posits a particular cause (not necessarily correctly) for something.

etymology (Gk "study of origins") the study of the derivation of words from their root meanings

Eucharist a ritual or service of thanksgiving, centering on the sharing of bread and wine, based on the final meal Jesus shared with his followers before his trial and crucifixion; also called Communion, the Lord's Supper, and the Mass.

eunuch a castrated male, sometimes a guard for a ruler's concubines and sometimes an official in a court or government

euphemism the substitution of an inoffensive word for one that is too explicit or impolite

evangelist (from Gk *euangelion*, "good news") the author of a gospel

exegesis (Gk "lead into") the explanation or interpretation of the meaning of a written text

exhortation urging a particular course of action or behavior by argument or advice

exile the forced removal of a people from its land, and the community in which they lived in the foreign land. The Israelites of the Northern Kingdom were exiled by the Assyrians in the late eighth century BCE, and the Judeans were exiled by the Babylonians in

the early sixth century. Specifically, "the Exile" is the period from 586 to 538 BCE, when much of the population of Judah was deported from Judah to Babylon. See **Babylonian Exile**.

F

fable an illustrative story in which animals or plants have speaking parts.

Fertile Crescent the agriculturally fertile areas of the Near East and Mesopotamia, forming an arc through the modern countries of Israel, Palestine, Jordan, Lebanon, Syria, and Iraq

festival scrolls the five short books that are read on five holy days in the Jewish calendar: Song of Songs on Passover, Ruth on the festival of weeks, Lamentations on 9 Ab (the date of the Temple's destruction), Ecclesiastes on the festival of booths, and Esther on Purim

First Temple the Temple in Jerusalem built by King Solomon in the tenth century BCE and destroyed by the Babylonians in 586 BCE

form criticism the interpretation of a text with particular attention to its genre and structure and to the original setting (**Sitz im Leben**) out of which it arose

Former Prophets the name in the Hebrew Bible for the first part of the longer section called "the Prophets." The Former Prophets are the books of Joshua, Judges, Samuel, and Kings.

forty in biblical usage, a conventional number for a lengthy or completed time period: forty years of wandering in the wilderness (Num 14.33–34), forty years of kingship for David (1Kings 2.11), and Solomon (1 Kings 11.42), forty days of fasting for Moses (Ex 34.28) or Jesus (Mt 4.2 and parallels)

G

Galilee the northernmost geographical area of Israel

Gehenna originally the valley of (the son of) Hinnom, a place outside of Jerusalem where children were burnt as sacrificial offerings. Its associations with burning and evil developed into the image of a place of fiery punishment.

gematria (Heb *gimatriya*, likely from Gk *geometria*) a procedure for interpreting a word or phrase by its numerical value. Hebrew letters may represent numbers (*alef* = 1; *bet* = 2, etc.), and the letters of a word or phrase are added up and equated with other words having the same total.

genealogy a list or history of the ancestors of an individual or group

geniza a storeroom in a synagogue used for keeping old books and objects, especially those too sacred to be discarded. See also **Cairo Geniza**.

genre a form of literature with particular characteristics

gentile a non-Jew

Gilgamesh the Mesopotamian epic, whose hero, Gilgamesh, travels the world in search of immortality. Among the characters he encounters is Utnapishtim, whose tale of the flood has parallels with the biblical account of Noah.

glean to gather or collect, usually by hand, grain that is left behind by reapers

glossolalia the phenomenon of ecstatic speech, or "speaking in tongues" that characterized some early Christian worship (1 Cor 12.10,28,30); it occurs in some Pentecostal Christian worship in the present day. The report of the speeches on the Feast of Weeks (Pentecost) in Acts 2.4–11 maintains that the languages spoken were human languages that could be understood by those in attendance; the reports in the letters reflect not a known, spoken language but a transitory occurrence during worship when one or more worshipers would break into speech (perhaps regarded as the speech of heavenly beings) that neither they nor their hearers could understand.

Gnosticism (from Gk *gnosis*, "knowledge") a philosophy that regards spirit and matter as opposites. According to Gnostic teaching, human beings are spirits trapped or imprisoned in matter; the material world is an illusion or the work of an inferior, even demonic, divine being; and the purpose of life is to learn how to free oneself from material things (including the body) and attain eternal life in the spiritual realm. This is accomplished by learning specialized or secret knowledge about the nature of reality; it is from this emphasis on knowledge that gnosticism gets its name.

Greek Bible a general term for the variety of ancient translations of the Hebrew Bible into Greek in antiquity, including the **Septuagint** and the translations of Aquila, **Symmachus**, and **Theodotion**

H

H see **Holiness Collection**

Hades the Greek name for the underworld, to which the disembodied souls of the dead went; it was similar to **Sheol** (see)

hallelujah a Hebrew acclamation, "Praise Yah!" It is frequent in the Psalms.

Hammurabi (or **Hammurapi**) king of Babylon in the eighteenth century BCE, responsible for the formulation of a legal collection (the Code [or Laws] of Hammurabi) that is one of the earliest collections of case law

Hanukkah see **Hasmonean revolt**

haruspex a practicer of divination who examines inner organs of chickens for guidance

Hasmonean Revolt the uprising led by the family of Mattathias Heshmon against the **Seleucid** ruler Antiochus IV Epiphanes beginning in 166 BCE, particularly by Mattathias's son Judah (or Judas) Maccabeus ("the hammer"), which succeeded in liberating Jerusalem and the surrounding territory from Seleucid rule in 164. When the Temple, which had been desecrated by Antiochus, was retaken by the Jews it was rededicated, an event commemorated in the festival of Hanukkah ("dedication").

Hasmonean the dynasty descended from the Maccabee brothers. It ruled Judea from 135 to 36 BCE; the last Hasmonean was overthrown by Herod the Great

Hebrew Bible a term used to refer to what Christians call the (Protestant) Old Testament. Though the two terms refer to the same body of writings, the order of books in the Hebrew Bible (that is, the Jewish Bible) differs from that found in the Old Testament.

Hellenism the spread of Greek culture, politics, and language around the Mediterranean in the period after the conquests of Alexander the Great (d. 323 BCE)

Hellenistic Greek-speaking or influenced by Greek culture after the time of Alexander

Hellenize bring under the influence of Greek language and culture

hepatoscopy the practice of divination by examining animal livers for guidance

herem see **ban**

hermeneutics (Gk "interpretation") the theory and practice of interpretation

Herodian followers and members of the court of Herod the Great and his sons (late first century BCE to late first century CE)

Hexapla the compendium of six Bible versions (in columns: 1. Hebrew, 2. Hebrew transliterated into Greek, 3. Greek [Aquila], 4. Greek [**Symmachus**], 5. **Septuagint**, 6. Greek [**Theodotion**]) compiled by the early Christian scholar Origen (d. 254). The original was lost, but quotations from and translations of it have survived.

Hexateuch (Gr. "six scrolls") a scholarly grouping of the first six books in the Bible, Genesis through Joshua. See **Pentateuch**, **Tetrateuch**

high places shrines, usually on a hill or a raised platform, where worship, especially sacrifices, took place

higher criticism the effort to distinguish among the sources of biblical documents, and to trace them back to their origins; distinguished from "lower criticism" or textual criticism, which is concerned with establishing the most accurate text in its final form. See **Documentary Hypothesis; synoptic problem**.

historical-critical method interpreting a text by trying to understand its original setting and audience, and what it would have meant when it was originally written or spoken. This method uses the tools of historical research to understand the conditions of the past, and critical tools to understand the traditions and developments that lie behind the surface of the text. It is also a general term that includes such methods as form criticism and redaction criticism.

Holiness Code, Collection, School, Source the ritual and ethical laws in Lev 17–26, named from the repeated exhortation to the Israelites to be holy, or the purported authors or collectors of the material in those chapters. "Collection" is preferred in the annotations herein. "Code" implies a definitive, legal corpus, whereas "Collection" acknowledges the coherence of the chapters without implying a particular purpose in bringing the materials together. "Source" posits a particular document that is reproduced in the chapters, a document produced by a "School" that aimed at inculcating holiness among the people. The authors of this group of laws (sometimes called the Holiness School) were affiliated with the Priestly school and also wrote small sections dispersed throughout the first four books of the Bible; the entire work is often abbreviated *H*.

holocaust a sacrifice entirely consumed by fire, a whole burnt offering

holy war battles conducted under divine guidance in which the LORD fought for Israel in the role of **divine warrior**

homily a sermon

Horeb possibly another name for **Sinai** (see), primarily though not exclusively in Deuteronomy (e.g., Deut 1.2; Ex 3.1)

hortatory characteristic of writing or speech that aims at changing the behavior of the hearers or inspiring them to a particular course of action

hosanna a Hebrew word, meaning "Save!" that was used as a cry of acclamation

house church a descriptive term (not used in the NT itself) for a worship gathering of early Christians in a home rather than a separate building such as a synagogue

household rules the codes of behavior and hierarchy that governed domestic relations in the Roman world, particularly a patriarchal authority system, the subordination of women, children, and slaves, and the rights and responsibilities of various parties in a familial relationship; see Eph 6.1–9; Titus 2.1–10

Hyksos rulers in Egypt of Semitic origin in the mid-second millennium BCE

hyperbole exaggeration for effect

hypostatization speaking of an abstract quality as if it were an object or a living being. See also **personification**.

hyssop a shrub related to mint. It was used as a medicine and, because of its leafy branches, for ritual sprinkling of water or blood.

I

idolatry the worship of anything other than what the worshiper defines as the true God

Idumea later name for **Edom,** a kingdom located south of Judah, between the Dead Sea and the Mediterranean

Ignatius, Letters of early Christian writings of instruction. The author, Ignatius, bishop of Antioch in the late first century CE, wrote them (seven are known to have survived) on his way to martyrdom in Rome. They are largely concerned with overcoming divisions in local churches, combating false teaching, and conducting one's life properly.

imprecation a curse or other prayer for harm to another; the opposite of blessing

impurity a ritual state which prevented an individual from participating in religious rituals (see **defilement**)

incarnation (Latin, "enfleshment") the belief that a divine being has become human in some form

inclusio the use of the same word or phrase at the end of a passage as appeared at the beginning, thus rounding off or completing it. Also called inclusion, frame, and envelope structure.

incubation the practice of sleeping in a particular place, or in contact with particular things (animal skins, the ground) in order to induce dreams that might provide divine guidance

inspiration the belief that the words uttered by a human being are really the words of a divine being. In the ancient world, prophets and oracles were thought to be inspired. In Christian tradition, the notion of inspiration was eventually applied to the whole Bible.

intercalation adding a day or month to a calendar to compensate for the inexact fit between the solar year and the daily or lunar cycle. In the Jewish calendar, an extra month (a repetition of **Adar**) is intercalated in seven years of the nineteen-year cycle.

interpolation an insertion of material into a previously existent text

irony (adj., ironic) a characteristic of literature in which the reader or listener knows more than the characters about the situation in the story. By extension, an ironic aspect of a story, situation, or fact is one that from the outside looks very different than it does from the inside. Irony thus becomes a rhetorical technique in which the author's literal meaning differs from the author's intended meaning.

Ishtar Mesopotamian goddess of fertility and war

Isis Egyptian goddess, wife of Osiris, the god of vegetation and hence of regeneration

Israel the name for both the union of twelve tribal groups, of which David and Solomon were kings, and for the northern section of this kingdom, which split off after the death of Solomon and began a separate political existence under Jeroboam (1 Kings 12). See **Northern Kingdom, Southern Kingdom.**

J

J (from Jahvist, German for Yahwist) according to the **Documentary Hypothesis,** the document or source that uses the divine name (see **YHWH).** J is usually understood to be the earliest source, and to have been written in Judah. It frequently depicts God in very anthropomorphic terms.

Jerome (ca. 345–420) Christian theologian and translator. He translated the Bible into Latin, in the case of the Old Testament directly from the Hebrew. His version became known as the Vulgate ("common") because it was commonly used in Western Christianity. With the Protestant Reformation, its authority was questioned, but was reaffirmed by the Roman Catholic Church at the **Council of Trent**.

Johannine characteristic of, or having to do with, the NT literature associated with the Gospel of John and 1, 2, 3 John; sometimes (though not in more recent scholarship) also applied to the book of Revelation

Joseph and Aseneth (also spelled Asenath) a Jewish novel written in Greek in the first century BCE or the first century CE about Joseph's life in Egypt; his marriage to Asenath, the daughter of an Egyptian priest (see Gen 41.45); her conversion to faith in Joseph's God; and their triumph over a plot to kill them.

Josephus a Jewish historian who lived from ca. 37 CE to ca. 100 CE. Four of his works, all written in Greek, have survived: *The Jewish War*, an account of the rebellion against Rome in 66–70 CE, with background information starting at ca. 200 BCE; *The Antiquities of the Jews*, a complete history from the creation up to the point where *The Jewish War* begins; *Against Apion*, a defense of Judaism; and an autobiography, the *Life*.

jubilee (Heb *yovel*, perhaps "ram" from the sounding of the ram's horn to mark the beginning of the obser-

vance) the year of release for slaves and return of ancestral lands to their original owners (or descendants of the owners), to occur every fifty years (after seven sabbaths of years). It is a cornerstone of Priestly ideology, but it is uncertain if it was ever practiced.

Jubilees, book of a retelling, attributed to Moses, of much of Genesis and Exodus and representing itself as a hidden revelation from the Angel of the Presence. It was most likely written in the second century BCE in Judea. The book gets its name from its concern with cycles of time. Jubilees was apparently considered authoritative by the Qumran community.

Judah, Yehud, Judea, Judean when the kingdom of Israel was divided, after the death of Solomon (1 Kings 12.1–20), the southern portion (Southern Kingdom) took the name of its major tribe, Judah (Heb *Yehudah*). That proper noun became "Yehud" during the Persian period (536–333 BCE), "Ioudaia" during Greek rule (333–67), and "Judaea" or Judea under the Romans. The geographical territory had also been diminished, until by the time of the Romans it consisted of the area around Jerusalem, south of Samaria, west of Perea and the Dead Sea, and north of Idumea (though administratively "Judea and Samaria" could also be referred to as "Judea" simply). The inhabitants of the territory were Judeans (just as the inhabitants of the northern area west of the Sea of Galilee were Galileans). The terms "Judaism" and "Jew" are derived from this name.

jussive a verb form in the third person expressing a command

justification translation of the underlying Gk term "making righteous," expressing the restoration of one's proper relationship to the moral realm or to God (see Rom 5.1–21)

K

kere see **qere**.

ketib ("what is written"; also *ketiv*) the biblical text in its written form, in contrast, in certain cases, to the way it is to be read aloud (**qere)**

Ketubim (also Kethubim, Ketuvim) The Writings, the third division of the Hebrew Bible

kosher (Heb "fit" or "proper") a general term used in postbiblical texts for dietary laws; usually applied to food, but also to other ritual objects and practices.

L

lament a poem of grief or mourning (see also **qinah**)

Last Supper the name for the meal that Jesus shared with his closest followers on the night before his crucifixion (Mt 26.20–29 and parallels)

Latter Prophets the canonical division of **Nevi'im** that includes the books of Isaiah, Jeremiah, Ezekiel, and the Twelve **Minor Prophets**

law the usual English translation of Hebrew *torah*, which more generally means "teaching, instruction." *Torah* is also the name for the first five books of the Hebrew Bible, Genesis through Deuteronomy.

laying on hands a gesture of healing, blessing, or setting something or someone apart for religious purposes

lectionary a list of readings of scripture passages for sabbaths and holy days (in Judaism) or Sundays and holy days (in Christianity). Christian lectionaries also sometimes include readings for weekdays. Lectionaries are partly designed to read certain portions of the Bible—for instance, the Torah, in Jewish lectionaries, or the first three Gospels, in many Christian lectionaries—completely through, in order, over a lectionary cycle of a year or several years. In addition, in Christian lectionaries important seasons (for instance, Christmas or Easter) have their own specific readings outside the continuous readings. In the synagogue, the Torah reading is followed by what is called a Haftarah reading (*haphtarah* is Hebrew for "conclusion, completion") from one of the prophets; in addition, the **festival scrolls** are read on five holy days.

legate an official representative

legend a popular story, sometimes exaggerated or romanticized, about a holy or important person or place.

Levant (Lat "rising") the east as the direction of the rising sun; more usually, the lands at the eastern end of the Mediterranean

Leviathan a monster of the sea in Canaanite mythology, who is defeated by Baal. It is sometimes identified with the crocodile (Job 41.1) and represents the forces of watery chaos which must be overcome at creation (Ps 74.1–17) and that will be finally defeated at the end of time (Isa 27.1). In the book of Revelation, the dragon, the enemy of God, is identified with the sea (17.1,3), and in the new creation there is no more sea (21.1).

levirate marriage (from Latin *levir*, "husband's brother") the provision that if a man died without an heir to carry on his name, his brother would marry the widow and the first son she bore would be regarded as the dead brother's heir

Levites the priests of Israel were deemed to be descendants of Levi, therefore members of the tribe of Levi, or Levites (sometimes levites). There is little evidence for this tribe, but the religious authorities in early Israel claimed descent from **Aaron** (see),

the first high priest. Perhaps during the reform of Josiah, however, the levites were demoted to Temple assistants, probably when their local shrines were suppressed, and the Jerusalem priesthood, claiming descent from Zadok (see **Zadokites**) gained greater power and wealth.

lex talionis (Latin "law [of retribution] in kind") punishment fitting the crime; see **talion**

lingua franca a common tongue or shared language that enables people with different native languages to converse, carry on commercial relationships, etc. In the Persian period **Aramaic** replaced Akkadian as a lingua franca around the Near East; during the Hellenistic period Greek did the same for the lands surrounding the eastern Mediterranean.

litany (Gk "entreaty") a prayer form consisting of a series of petitions or supplications, often following each with a repeated congregational response

littoral a region along the shore of a large body of water

liturgical characteristic of an order for worship, either directions for action (rituals) or texts for speaking (rites)

liturgy the form or ritual for communal, public worship

Lord's Supper a term (used in the NT only at 1 Cor 11.20) for the commemoration or re-enactment of Jesus' last meal with his followers (see **Last Supper**)

lot(s) any method of choosing something by random chance, as by tossing a marked stone (similar to flipping a coin) or choosing an arrow or a stick from a group of similar objects. "Casting lots" was used to select candidates for a position (Acts 1.15–26), to determine who had transgressed a vow or law (1 Sam 14.41–42), or in other ways to determine the divine will, since it was assumed that an event that was random from the human perspective could be determined by divine direction.

lower criticism or **textual criticism**, as distinguished from **higher criticism**

LXX the roman numeral 70, the standard abbreviation for the **Septuagint**

M

Maat Egyptian goddess of reason and order; her name literally means "truth"

Major Prophets a convenient title for the three longest prophetic books, Isaiah, Jeremiah, and Ezekiel (in Christian Bibles, also Daniel); in contrast to **Minor Prophets** (see)

makarism (Gk "happy, blessed") a statement of blessing or an attribution of happiness to one who follows the exhortation of the speaker; the Beatitudes (Mt 5.3–11) are makarisms, perhaps following the form of many Psalms such as Ps 1.1, "Happy are those who do not follow the advice of the wicked. . . ."

malediction curse; opposite of benediction, "blessing"

manumission release from servitude

Marduk chief god of Babylon; according to **Enuma Elish**, he formed the cosmos from the corpse of **Tiamat**, goddess of the deep

martyr (Gk "witness") a person who demonstrates loyalty by remaining faithful to his or her religion even when being threatened with death or being killed

martyrology (Gk "list of witnesses [to their faith]") an account of the martyrdoms of various individuals, or an official list of those accounted as martyrs, that is, who were killed because of their religious beliefs

Masorah (Heb "tradition") the system of markings (vowel signs, marginal notes, cantillation and accent marks, etc.) that were added to the consonantal Hebrew text by scribal scholars (**Masoretes**) in the early Middle Ages

Masorete a scholar of the scribal schools that in the early Middle Ages established the basic Hebrew text for the Bible, fixed its accepted pronunciation, and ensured its accurate copying and transmission by a system of markings (**Masorah**)

Masoretic Text the text of the Hebrew Bible, established by Jewish scholars (**Masoretes**). The text consists of the Hebrew consonants, vowel signs, accent markings, and other notes. Texts derived from this effort date from circa 900 to 1000 CE. The Masoretic Text is the only complete form of the Hebrew Bible that has survived, though individual manuscripts of books are among the **Dead Sea Scrolls**.

matrilineal tracing descent through female ancestors; see **patrilineal**

matzah unleavened bread, associated with **Passover**, but also used with certain sacrifices.

Megillot Heb "scrolls," in Jewish tradition the five festival scrolls, the books of Song of Solomon (read at Passover), Ruth (on Shavuot [Weeks/Pentecost]), Lamentations (on Tisha B'Ab, commemorating the destruction of Jerusalem in 586 BCE and 70 CE), Ecclesiastes (on Sukkot [Tabernacles]), and Esther (on Purim)

merism a figure of speech in which opposing terms, e.g., "good and bad," are combined to convey the idea of including both terms and everything in between

Merneptah Stele an Egyptian inscribed stone that includes the first mention of Israel outside the Bible. It celebrates victories of Pharaoh Merneptah (ca. 1200 BCE) in Canaan.

Merodach a Hebrew version of **Marduk**, chief god of Babylon

Mesha Stele (also called the Moabite Stone) a monument dating from about 830 BCE with engraved text celebrating the reign of King Mesha of **Moab** (2 Kings 3.4–5). Besides an account of the dealings of Mesha with the descendants of Omri, king of the Northern Kingdom of Israel, the text mentions the god of Moab, Chemosh, and the favor that Chemosh has shown to Mesha in contrast to his predecessors in allowing Mesha to reclaim territory from Israel. It also contains a reference to the **herem** or ban.

Mesopotamia (Gk "between the rivers") the area between the Tigris and Euphrates rivers

messiah (Heb *mashiah*, "anointed [one]") a title for a king or other servant or agent of God (priest, prophet, or even the non-Israelite Cyrus in Isa. 45.1). In the Hebrew Bible, *mashiah* never refers to the future ideal king. Later the term came to be used of the expected savior of the Jewish people, and was taken over by Christians to refer to Jesus, whom they believed to be the messiah (Gk *christos*, "anointed"). See also **Christ.**

messianic having to do with the **messiah** or with the era that the messiah was inaugurating

Messianic Secret conventional term for Jesus' commands, primarily in Mark (1.44; 3.12; 8.30 and elsewhere), not to proclaim his status or deeds publicly

metaphor a direct comparison between two things

metonymy a figure of speech in which a word is used in place of another word to which it is closely related: "The coastlands have seen and are afraid" (Isa 41.5) means "the inhabitants of the coasts, foreigners."

mezuzah (Heb "doorpost") a parchment on which are written the paragraphs of the **Shema**

midrash, midrashic (Heb *derash* "inquire") interpretation that finds meanings in a text that are other than, or go beyond, the "plain sense" (see **peshat**)

Milcom the principal god of the **Ammonites;** also called **Molech**

Minor Prophets the twelve shorter prophetic books from Hosea to Malachi, seen as a collection; also known as the Book of the Twelve

Mishnah (Heb "oral instruction," from *shanah* "repeat") the compilation of oral law and rabbinic commentary, edited ca. 200 CE, that is the basis of the **Talmud**

Moab, Moabites the territory and its inhabitants east of the Dead Sea

Moabite Stone see **Mesha Stele**

Molech a Canaanite god whose worship according to the biblical writers included child sacrifice

Mosaic having to do with Moses or with the teaching that Moses is purported to have proclaimed in the Torah (Pentateuch)

Mot the **Canaan**ite god of death

motif an image or character type that recurs throughout a literary work

mystery in the New Testament, a divine truth that is kept hidden or secret by God until the right moment for it to be revealed

mystery religion any one of various religious groups in the Greek and Roman empires which practiced secret rites of initiation. Mystery religions taught that the real meaning of life could not be learned without divine guidance and that such guidance was available in their secret teachings and practices. These secret rites were themselves known as "mysteries," and had the sense of a revelation from the divine realm that is similar to some of the New Testament uses of "mystery."

mysticism the effort to be in direct contact with a divine realm, as opposed to the view that the divine must always be mediated—by subordinate beings such as angels or by a human being, a sacred text, or some other bridge

N

narrative a connected, orderly account of an incident, or a longer account including many incidents. Narratives can be historical, fictional, legendary, mythical, or a combination of types.

Nebi'im see **Nevi'im**

necromancy (Gk "divination [by means of] the dead") the effort to determine the unknown or the future by consulting those who are dead, as in Saul's questioning of the dead Samuel through the medium of Endor (1 Sam 28.3–25). If **teraphim** (see) are images of ancestors, then divination by their means would be a form of necromancy.

Negeb, Negev the region south of the central hill country of Israel

Nevi'im (also Nebi'im) the Prophets, the second division of the Hebrew Bible, subdivided into the **Former Prophets** and the **Latter Prophets**

new moon the beginning of any month in the Jewish calendar

Northern Kingdom the political assembly of tribal groups that split off from the kingdom of Israel after Solomon's death. This newly formed kingdom was itself called Israel, and in some texts also **Ephraim**, after its largest tribe.

novel a fictional work in prose. Ancient novels were often **romances**.

O

obelisk a four-sided stone shaft, usually tapered and topped with a pyramid, characteristic of ancient Egypt

Old Latin the Latin translation of the Bible based on the Greek text, the Septuagint. The Old Latin version was replaced by the Vulgate, the Latin translation by **Jerome**.

oracle (usually translates Heb *masa'*, literally "burden") a statement uttered by a prophet or other sacred person, purporting to be the words of a deity

oracular having the qualities of an oracle or sacred speech

Oral Torah a synonym for the **Mishnah** and **Talmud**. According to traditional rabbinic belief, the Oral Law was given to Moses on Mount Sinai along with the written law, the Torah. It was committed to writing by the rabbis in the first millennium CE.

ordination a formal ceremony and process by which certain members of the community are set apart for religious service, for instance as priests

oxymoron (Gk "clever-foolish") combining two terms that appear contradictory.

P

P according to the **Documentary Hypothesis,** the Priestly source in the Pentateuch, comprised of both narratives and laws. It is concerned, among other things, with laws and regulations, ritual practices, the proper conduct of the Temple worship, holiness and purity, and genealogies.

Palestine a name first used by the fifth-century BCE historian Herodotus and adopted by the Romans in the designation *Provincia Syria Palaestina* ("Syro-Palestinian Province"), which replaced *Provincia Judaea* ("Judean Province") after 135 CE. The word is derived from the term translated "**Philistine,**" and the Latin spelling of "Philistine," and the Roman designation was probably intended as a derogation of Jewish claims to the territory.

pantheon (Gk "all gods") the complete community of divine beings worshiped or honored in a particular culture

papyrus (pl. **papyri**) the paper made from reeds that grow along the Nile and other rivers in the Near East; the reeds were split, soaked, laid side-by-side in one layer with another layer, also side-by-side, at right angles, and then pounded together until the matted fibers had meshed into a flat, somewhat flexible sheet. Papyri were one of the writing surfaces (others being clay and animal skins) in use in antiquity. Early Gk manuscripts of the NT are on papyri, and many significant texts—such as P46, an important textual source of Paul's letters that also includes the Letter to the Hebrews—are in this form.

parable a statement or story that uses figurative or imaginative language to evoke a reality that lies beyond the literal level of the story of statement. A parable makes its point by analogy, or the comparison of a known fact, situation, or experience with one that is less familiar.

parallelism a characteristic feature of biblical Hebrew poetry in which the second line of a unit in some way echoes the meaning or grammatical structure of the first line. This can take the form of a repetition of the meaning, or of a statement of opposites, or of a further statement that serves to extend or modify the first line in some way.

parenesis moral exhortation

parousia (Gk "coming") the second coming of Christ; the expected return of the **messiah** at the end of the age or the end of the world

Paschal pertaining to the **Passover** (ultimately from Gk *pascha*, derived from Heb *pesah*)

Passover (Heb *pesah*) the festival that commemorates the Exodus of the Israelites from Egypt

Pastoral Epistles or **Pastoral Letters** a term used for three letters attributed to Paul, 1 and 2 Timothy and Titus

patriarchs the ancestors of Israel: Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob

patriarchy the social and cultural arrangements and conventions in which the father of a family, older males, or males generally, exercise authority over females, children, slaves, and those younger; characteristic of Israelite and Roman social practice

patrilineal tracing one's descent through male ancestors; see also **matrilineal**

patristic writers theologians of the early Christian centuries, including Clement, Irenaeus, Origen, and Jerome

patronym, patronymic (Gk "father's name") the designation of a person or group by the name of their father or ancestor

Pauline characteristic of the thought or writings of Paul; those letters generally accepted to be by Paul: Romans, 1 and 2 Corinthians, Galatians, Philippians, 1 and 2 Thessalonians, and Philemon

penitential psalms Psalms 6, 32, 38, 51, 102, 130, and 143, used in Christian services of repentance from the earliest times

Pentapolis the five cities of the **Philistines:** Ashdod, Ashkelon, Ekron, Gath, Gaza

Pentateuch (Gk "five scrolls") the first five books of the Bible, Genesis through Deuteronomy; the Torah

Pentecost see **weeks, festival of**

periphrasis, periphrastic the use of more words than necessary to express a thought

Persian period the era from 539 to 333 BCE, from Cyrus until Alexander

personification representing an idea, a value, or other abstract thought as a person.

Pesah see **passover**

peshat (Heb "simple") the "plain sense" or "contextual sense" of a text, often contrasted with *derash*, the homiletical meaning

pesher (pl. *pesharim*; "interpretation") a type of commentary on the Bible in the **Dead Sea Scrolls** in which the biblical text is understood to be fulfilled in the interpreter's time

Peshitta (Syriac, "simple") the name of the **Syriac** translation of the Bible (called "simple" because it was a plain translation from Hebrew, not a translation with textual apparatus like the **Syrohexapla**). The Peshitta contains books of the Bible translated by Jews for Jewish worshipers who spoke Syriac, but it was taken over and completed (including a New Testament) by Syriac-speaking Christians.

Pharisees a Jewish sect in the first century CE, according to Josephus and the New Testament. The Pharisees were concerned to extend Jewish practice into all areas of life, and followed the tradition of interpretation (**Oral Torah**) associated with the schools of Hillel and Shammai. They were opponents of the more conservative **Sadducees**, who did not accept their traditions of oral law.

Philistines a group of the **Sea Peoples,** who invaded and settled in on the southeastern coast of the Mediterranean in the late second millennium BCE, having been repulsed in an invasion of Egypt (ca. 1190 BCE). The five major Philistine cities (the **Pentapolis**) were Ashkelon, Ashdod, Ekron, Gath, and Gaza.

Philo a Hellenistic Jewish philosopher and interpreter of scripture, who lived in Alexandria, Egypt, from about 20 BCE to 50 CE. He wrote works in philosophy, scriptural interpretation, and history. In Philo's view, the best insights of Greek philosophy could be found in the Bible by means of allegorical interpretation. He influenced Jewish writers like the author of the Wisdom of Solomon and Christian theologians such as Clement, Origen, and Ambrose.

Phoenicia(n) (Gk "red-purple") the territory occupied by a Semitic group along the eastern Mediterranean coast, in an area roughly where modern Lebanon now is. The Phoenicians were seagoing and engaged in trade across a wide area; their main cities in biblical times, Tyre and Sidon, are prominent on the coast. They manufactured cloth dyed purple using a mollusk that grew along the shore (these "Tyrian purple" robes were worn by kings). The Phoenicians were also responsible for the spread westward across the Mediterranean of a form of alphabetical writing, from which all later alphabets, including Hebrew and Greek, were derived.

phylacteries (Gk *phulakterion*, "amulet," from *phulax*, "guard") small black leather boxes containing biblical passages (Ex 13.1–10, 13.11–16; Deut 6.4–9, 11.13–21), worn during prayer on the head and on the left arm. Also called "tefillin."

Platonism a philosophy derived from the teaching of Plato, saying that there is a profound difference, even an opposition, between the realm of matter and the realm of spirit, and that the world of sense experience is essentially an illusion, deriving what reality it has from a correspondence with a true, ultimately real world of Forms

pogrom an officially encouraged, organized massacre of a minority group

polemic, polemical (Gk *polemos*, "war") an argument or debate in the form of an attack on one's opponent or on the opposing position. Polemical speech is characterized by verbal attacks, exaggerated language, and sometimes violent imagery

Polycarp, Letter of an early second-century CE Christian letter of instruction, written by Polycarp, bishop of Smyrna, and addressed to the church of Philippi

potsherd a broken piece of pottery. Examination of such pieces allows archaeologists to date the different levels of a site according to the type of pottery represented at a given level.

prescript (epistolary) see **epistolary prescript**

priest, high priest in the Hebrew Bible, the priest (Heb *kohen*) was the official set apart to preside at the worship in the Temple, particularly to offer sacrifices of various kinds. In the NT the term "priest" (primarily *hiereus*) is applied only to the Jewish priesthood of the Temple (*archiereus*, "high priest," "chief priest," e.g. Mt 2.4); a pagan priest (Acts 14.13); Melchizedek (e.g., Heb 7.1); Jesus Christ (Heb 10.21); or the whole of the Christian people ("priesthood," 1 Pet 2.5; "priests," Rev 1.6). The *Gk* term *presbyteros*, from which the English word "priest" is derived, means "elder" and is so translated in the NRSV (e.g., Jas 5.14; 2 John 1.1).

primogeniture the social tradition by which the eldest son inherits a father's title or the bulk of the father's property

proem a short introduction or preface to a literary text

Promised Land a conventional term for the Land of Israel, as it was promised to Abraham and to the descendants of Abraham ("this land that I have promised," Ex 32.13)

prophecy, prophesy the name for a prophetic utterance is "prophecy" (pronounced prah-feh-see, rhyming with "fee"); the activity of a prophet is to "prophesy" (pronounced prah-feh-sye, rhyming with "high")

prophet (Gk *prophetes*, "speak out" or "speak forth") the **Septuagint** translation of *nabi'* ("one who is called"), the standard Heb term for prophet. Synonyms include "seer," "man of God," and "visionary."

prophetic lawsuit (Heb *rib*) a literary form in the prophets and elsewhere in which the people are accused of breaking their covenant with God

Prophets, The, Heb **Nevi'im,** the second division of the **Hebrew Bible**

proselyte (Gk "come toward") one who has adopted a religion or belief system, often after leaving a previous religion; a convert

protreptic (Gk "turn toward, turn forward to") speech promoting a particular view; exhortation, persuasion

pseudepigrapha (Gk "writings with false attributions of authorship") a diverse group of Jewish or Christian religious writings attributed to notable biblical persons that are not included in the books of the Hebrew Bible, the New Testament, or the Apocrypha. These writings date from about 250 BCE to 200 CE, and some of them are quoted from or alluded to in the Bible.

pseudonymous written or published under a false name. Pseudonymous writing in antiquity is often attributed to someone much better known than the actual writer, in order to give the text the benefit of the presumed authority of the famous person.

Ptolemies the rulers of Egypt and its surrounding areas after the breakup of the Greek empire of Alexander the Great, following his death in 323

Purim the festival that commemorates the delivery of the Jews in Persia from destruction, as recounted in the book of Esther

Q

Q see **synoptic problem**

qeri ("what is read") in the **Masoretic text**, a word as it should be pronounced, in contrast to what is written (ketib) in the main text

qinah meter a metrical pattern consisting of a line with three stresses followed by a line with two stresses; it is primarily used in psalms of lament or complaint, and in the book of Lamentations.

Qumran community the settlement near Wadi Qumran at the Dead Sea, most likely composed of Essenes. The Qumran group was a sectarian Jewish community that kept its own practices in opposition to the established community in Jerusalem and Judea; the library of this group was discovered beginning in 1947 and is known as the **Dead Sea Scrolls**.

R

rabbi (Aram. "teacher") a Jewish religious leader who studies the **Torah** and its associated commentaries, particularly the **Talmud**, and offers his own teaching based on that study

rapture the doctrine, based on an interpretation of 1 Thess 4.13–18, that when Jesus Christ returns in the **parousia** (see) those Christians who have not yet died will be "caught up" along with Christ and those who, having died, are raised from the dead. In its context, the passage is intended not as a literal description of events at the return of Christ, but as a reassurance that both those still living and those already dead would be reunited with Christ.

reader-response criticism analyzing a text by looking at the relationship between the text and its reader, including the clues within the text that guide the reader in drawing meaning from it

redaction criticism the study of how already existing textual units—narratives of incidents, laws, proverbs, or other isolatable pieces that can be disentangled by **source criticism**—were combined into larger texts by the activities of editors, called "redactors"

redactor an editor who works with already existing units to combine them into larger wholes

resident alien a foreigner with legal rights living in Israel or an Israelite residing in the territory of another tribe

revelation (Latin "remove the veil," translating Greek *apokalypsis*) belief or insight granted to a human being by a deity or heavenly being

rhetoric (Gk *rhetor*, "speaker, orator") the art or study of persuasive speech or writing

Rift Valley a major cleft or depression that extends from southeastern Turkey to East Africa, and at the point of the Dead Sea is the lowest place on the land mass of Earth

Ritual Decalogue a term for the commandments in Ex 34.10–28, in some cases paralleling those of the Decalogue (Ex 20.1–17) but mostly dealing with matters of worship or other religious observance, such as the offering of firstborn livestock or the observance of festivals

Roman Period the period of Roman ruke in Judea, beginning in 63 BCE

romance a popular storytelling technique in the ancient Mediterranean world that recounted the situation of young lovers and how they overcome obstacles to their marriage. In early Christianity the form was

modified to tell the stories of early converts and martyrs and the obstacles to their faith.

Rule of the Community one of the Dead Sea scrolls (1QS) that sets out the arrangements under which the community functioned and those that they held up as an ideal: holding property in common; eating, blessing, and advising one another in unity; preparing for the end time; and training new members of the community in their responsibilities.

S

sackcloth rough cloth, often made from animal hair. A garment made of sackcloth is uncomfortable and is worn to indicate penitence or grief.

Sadducees a Jewish sect in the first century CE, according to Josephus and the New Testament. They held to a strict application of Torah and to maintaining Temple worship according to its mandate. They were opposed to the **Pharisees** in not accepting the traditions of oral law, and they were also opposed to the political activists who wished to rebel against Roman rule, fearing that any rebellion would bring an end to the limited autonomy under which they could maintain Temple worship.

saga popular narrative account of prehistory or events of the distant past. Sagas often involve stories of the ancestors of a group or the founders of a country.

saint(s) (Lat "holy one[s]") in the NT, the term for all Christians (2 Cor 1.1), or for what all Christians are "called" to be (Rom 1.7, 1 Cor 1.2)

Samaritan Pentateuch a Hebrew text of the first five books of the Bible used by the **Samaritans.** This text differs from the **Masoretic Text** at many points. Some of these disagreements reflect Samaritan beliefs, but others are supported by the **Dead Sea Scrolls** and reflect an alternate textual tradition.

Samaritans the descendants of the population of Samaria (the capital of the **Northern Kingdom** of Israel) after the Assyrían invasion of that kingdom and the deportation of its inhabitants in 722 BCE. The Samaritans regard themselves as descended from the Jewish remnant after the deportation, but the returning exiles from the Southern Kingdom of Judah (after the **Babylonian exile** in the early sixth century) did not regard them as Jews, seeing them rather as descendants of foreigners who had been settled there after the Jewish population had been removed. Therefore, beginning with Ezra and Nehemiah, the leadership forbade intermarriage between Samaritans and Jews. The Samaritans maintained worship (with a temple on Mount Gerizim) and the Pentateuch (but not the rest of the Bible), although their calendar is not the same as the Jewish calendar.

Sanhedrin (ultimately from Gk *synedria* from *syn-* and *hedra*, "with seat," i.e., "council") the religious court, whose membership was drawn from the Jewish ruling classes, that held ruling authority over the territory of Palestine under the Roman empire. The Sanhedrin was responsible for census-taking and taxation as well as for acting as a court that would decide cases on its own and also, after preliminary determination, send cases on to the Roman governors. "Sanhedrin" is also the title of a tractate of the **Mishnah** dealing with law courts in general.

Satan (Heb "adversary, accuser") the Satan (a title, not a name) in Job 1.6–12, 2.1–7 is a member of the divine council who serves as a prosecutor or tester of God's faithful (see also Zech 3.1). In the Gospels Satan serves as the chief tempter and head of the demonic realm (Mt 4.1–11; 12.26); in the book of Revelation Satan is identified with the serpent, the dragon, and the devil (12.9; 20.2).

school of prophets term for the followers of a prophet, who preserved the prophet's words and, it is presumed, applied them to new situations as they arose

scribe in general, one who could write, especially official documents, and take down dictation for letters, legal proceedings, etc. In the New Testament, a scribe was a lawyer, one who was expert in the requirements and meaning of Jewish law, especially the **Torah**.

scroll a long strip of parchment (treated leather) or papyrus (reeds split, moistened, and pressed together), on which a text was written in columns. The scroll was read by unrolling one side while rolling up the other, to expose successive columns of text. Besides the literal meaning, scrolls stand for the message or teaching of God that a prophet has internalized and will then deliver to the intended hearers. Jeremiah (15.16) eats the words of God, and following him Ezekiel (3.3) eats a scroll. The message of God in the book of Revelation (5.1ff.) is expressed in stages as the seals on a scroll are broken open.

Sea Peoples remnants of the Mycenean or Aegean civilizations, which collapsed toward the end of the second millennium BCE. Some of these people sailed eastward on the Mediterranean and attacked those living along the coast; they were repulsed from Egypt and settled in southwest Canaan. The biblical **Philistines** are among the Sea Peoples.

Second Coming the return of a glorified Christ to Earth in judgment and redemption. See **parousia**.

Second Isaiah, also **Deutero-Isaiah,** the general term for chs 40–55 of the book of Isaiah. These chs are primarily concerned with the events leading up to the decree of the Persian king Cyrus in 538 BCE

permitting the exiles to return to Judah from Babylon and rebuild Jerusalem and the Temple. See also **Third Isaiah**.

Second Temple the Temple constructed beginning ca. 515 BCE by the returning exiles, and continued and expanded over the course of time, until its destruction by the Romans in 70 CE

sect a religious grouping that emphasizes strict adherence to particular teachings and excludes those who do not conform

seder (Heb "order") the ritual meal and recitation of Passover. Also, the major divisions of the **Mishnah** (pl. *sedarim*).

Seleucids the rulers of Syria and its surrounding areas after the breakup of the Greek empire of Alexander the Great, following his death, The Seleucid ruler Antiochus IV "Epiphanes" desecrated the Temple in 167 BCE, leading to the Maccabean revolt and the rededication of the Temple in 164 BCE, an event commemorated in the festival of Hanukkah.

Septuagint the ancient Greek translation of the Hebrew Scriptures. The Septuagint was translated over a lengthy period beginning probably in the third century BCE. Traditionally there were 72 translators, a number that was rounded off to 70 and, in Roman numerals, used as the abbreviation for this translation (LXX). The Septuagint was prepared for the use of Jews who lived in the **Diaspora** whose main language was Greek. It is important for several reasons: it translated a version of the Hebrew text that is older than the **Masoretic text**; it contains additional works, grouped in NRSV as the Apocryphal/Deuterocanonical Books, most of which were originally written in Greek; and it was the Old Testament of early Christians.

Shavuot see **festival of weeks**

Shema the first word, used as a title, of the exhortation "Hear, O Israel, the LORD is our God, the LORD alone" (Deut. 6.4), also the name of perhaps the most important and best-known prayer in Judaism, comprised of Deut. 6.4–9; 11.13–21; and Num. 15.37–41.

Sheol the underworld or abode of the dead

Shephelah the foothills leading to the central hill country of the land of Israel

shofar, also **shophar** the ram's horn for ceremonial use. In ancient Israel it was sounded to announce the anointing of a king or as a summons to war or to sound an alarm; today, in the synagogue, it is sounded on the High Holy Days.

signet ring a ring bearing a personal seal, used to make an indentation in clay as a sign of authenticity of authorship

simile a comparison, using "like" or "as" rather than, as in metaphor, linking two things directly

Sinai properly, the name of a peninsula bounded on the north by the Mediterranean Sea, on the east by the Gulf of Aqaba, and on the west by the Gulf of Suez. Traditionally the mountain of Sinai, purportedly the location where Moses received the Decalogue, is on this peninsula, but no mountain has been definitively identified as the biblical Sinai. See also **Horeb**.

Sitz im Leben (German, "setting in life") in **form criticism,** the original context in which a specific genre or form was used

sorites a philosophical argument in the form of linked propositions. The second part of each proposition forms the first part of the next, and the series therefore becomes an extended chain of reasoning

source criticism the effort to discover the sources or documents behind a text and to explore how the sources were combined into larger units. See **Documentary Hypothesis**.

Southern Kingdom see **Judah, Yehud,** etc.

step parallelism a form of poetic **parallelism** (see) in which successive lines do not repeat or reverse the structure of the preceding line, but build on it like a set of steps: "O send out your light and your truth; / let them lead me; / let them bring me to your holy hill/and to your dwelling. / Then I will go to the altar of God, / to God my exceeding joy; / and I will praise you with the harp, / O God, my God." (Ps 43.3–4)

Stoics Greek philosophers in the Hellenistic and Roman periods, who taught that emotions should be strictly controlled by reason

Sukkot see **booths, festival of**

Sumer a civilization that ruled southern Mesopotamia from the late fourth millennium to the early second millennium BCE. The Sumerians developed cuneiform writing, which involved using a wedge-shaped reed to press marks into wet clay; the clay was then baked.

superscription a heading or descriptive title before the actual beginning of a text; many of the Psalms have a superscription giving a purported setting for the Psalm (e.g. Ps 3) or instructions on how it is to be performed (Ps 4).

suzerain the lord or ruler to whom loyalty is due in a covenant relationship

Symmachus a second-century CE translator of the Bible into Greek, whose translation was included in Origen's **Hexapla** (a compendium of six Bible versions)

synagogue (Gk "coming together with") an assembly; a congregation. For Jews who were too distant from the Temple to worship at it, and for all Jews after the

final destruction of the Temple by the Romans in 70 CE, the synagogue became the only form of worship. Services consisted of prayer, song, and study of the sacred text.

syncretism the incorporation into one religion of practices and teachings derived from another, or the effort to combine two different religious traditions into a third, composite religion

synecdoche (Gk "understand with") a figure of speech using a part of something to stand for the whole: in "Do not keep needy eyes waiting" (Sir 4.1) "needy eyes" stands for the whole needy person

synonymous parallelism a type of **parallelism** where the second line or **colon** of a **bicolon** echoes the meaning of the first in different terms.

Synoptic Gospels Matthew, Mark, and Luke. "Synoptic" means "view together," and is applied to these writings because they, unlike John, can be readily compared.

synoptic problem the observation that in many passages Matthew and Luke repeat with only minor changes what Mark says, yet in other passages they do not follow Mark, or include stories or sayings that Mark does not have, yet match each other very closely. According to the most widely held theory, Matthew and Luke relied on Mark and on another document (now lost) that contained mostly sayings of Jesus; this second document is referred to as "Q" (from the German word "Quelle," meaning "source"). In addition, Matthew and Luke each had their own sources.

Syriac an eastern form of **Aramaic** that was the language of some Jews and of some eastern Christian communities in the early centuries of the Common Era. It is the language of the **Peshitta**.

Syrohexapla (or Syriac hexapla) a Syriac translation of the Septuagint text that provides textual evidence about the nature of the Septuagint. Although the Hexapla was translated in the seventh century CE, it is based upon a **Septuagint** text dating from as early as the third century CE.

T

tabernacle the portable sanctuary used by the Israelites during their wanderings in the wilderness

tabernacles, feast of see **booths, festival of**

tablet a slab, typically of clay, with a smoothed surface that can be inscribed with a text

talion (Latin *talio*, "in kind" from *talis*, "like," "such like") a punishment that is of the same kind as the crime: exacting an equivalent penalty, such as an equal economic loss for theft, or death for murder, or "an eye for an eye." Talion is well attested in Mesopotamian law, and in some biblical legal collections.

Talmud (Heb "teaching") the title of the two great collections of rabbinic teaching, the Jerusalem Talmud (also called the Palestinian Talmud or the Talmud of the Land of Israel) and the Babylonian Talmud. The Talmuds were compiled beginning after 200 CE. They consist of comments on, and extensions of, the Mishnah in order to apply Jewish teaching to everyday life, but they also include information on a wide range of topics. The two centers of rabbinic study (the land of Israel and Babylonia) were in contact with each other and the commentary therefore reflected a common effort; later, especially with the completion of the Talmud in Israel (ca. 400 CE), the Babylonian effort continued to refine and extend the applications, and it was the Talmud developed in Babylonia (completion after 500 CE) that was distributed worldwide, under the auspices of the academies that continued to work in Babylon until the beginning of the second millennium CE.

Tanakh an acronym formed from the beginning letters of the three divisions of the **Hebrew Bible**: Torah, Nevi'im, Ketubim

Targum translation of the Hebrew Bible into **Aramaic**. The Targums are important for textual criticism of the Hebrew text, since they provide evidence about it at a stage earlier than that of the **Masoretic text**.

tel (Heb), **tell** (Arabic) a mound formed by repeated construction, occupation, and destruction of buildings on a particular site

Temple the central place of worship for Israelite religion in Jerusalem, referring either to the **First Temple** or the **Second Temple**

teraphim a term (generally translated "household gods") for certain cultic objects in early Israel; their nature and function is unclear, and their size seems to be varied (in Gen 31.34 Rachel can conceal Laban's household gods by sitting on them; in 1 Sam 19.13, the "idol" is large enough to look like someone is in a bed). They may have been images of one's ancestors. One use to which they were put may have been divination (Ezek 21.21), but how this was done is not explained.

testament (Lat "*testamentum*," for Gk *diatheke*) a final disposition of one's personal property, but used in LXX to translate Heb *berith*, "covenant," and therefore applied to the "new covenant" or "new testament" as inaugurated by Jesus (recalling Jeremiah's promise of a "new covenant" in 31.31–34); testament therefore came to mean the collection of writings (the Hebrew Scriptures or the Christian Scriptures)

that presented the covenant of God with the people of God

Tetragrammaton (Gk "four letters") the divine name, **YHWH**

Tetrateuch the first four books of the Bible, Genesis through Numbers, regarded by some scholars as an edited collection to which Deuteronomy was then attached. See **Pentateuch**

textual criticism the effort to establish, by scholarly assessment of manuscript copies and other sources, an accurate version of a text; also called "lower criticism"

theodicy the theological effort to justify the goodness of God in the face of suffering

Theodotion (ca. second century CE) a translator of the Hebrew Bible into Greek and reviser of the Septuagint

theophany (Gk "appearance of god") the temporary appearance or manifestation of a divine being in a form that can be apprehended by the human senses

Third Isaiah, also **Trito-Isaiah,** the scholarly term for chs 56–66 of the book of Isaiah, which are primarily concerned with the life of the returned exiles in the province of Yehud (the Persian name for Judah) after 538 BCE. Some scholars doubt the separate existence of Third Isaiah; others maintain that it is not the product of one author, but a collection of diverse oracles by different members of a "school of Isaiah" collected during the **Persian period**. See also **Second Isaiah**.

Thomas, Gospel of an early collection of sayings attributed to Jesus. It contains no miracle stories and no account of Jesus' deeds, his birth, his death, or the resurrection. Some of the sayings resemble those in the canonical Gospels, but others reflect **Gnosticism.**

thresh to beat gathered stalks of grain in order to separate the grain from the stems and husks. A threshing floor, a flat area used for threshing grain, was often built on a hilltop to catch the breeze necessary for **winnow**ing.

threshing floor see **thresh**

Tiamat goddess of the deep and mother of the Babylonian pantheon; she is sometimes portrayed as a dragon.

tithe the conventional religious due (traditionally 10 percent) of certain material goods, such as herbs (Deut 14.22; Mt 23.23); other produce, like fruit or livestock, required the donation of "first fruits" or the young that opened the womb (the firstborn kid or calf) to God (Ex 13.12)

Torah (Heb "teaching, instruction") the first division of the Hebrew Bible, consisting of Genesis through Deuteronomy. The word (and hence the title) is sometimes translated "law," but this translation is misleading since the five books contain much more than law codes and regulations.

tradition criticism the investigation of the development of a text from its earliest stages (oral or original source documents) to the latest (canonical) stage

Transfiguration, the conventional title for narrative (Mk 9.2–8; Mt 17.1–8; Lk 9.28–36) in which Jesus, accompanied by Peter, James, and John, ascends a mountain and appears to the disciples in dazzling white, like a vindicated martyr, in the company of Moses and Elijah (founder and renewer of Israel)

Transjordan ("across Jordan") the region east of the Jordan River

transmission history an account, usually inferred, of how a text came down to the present from its originator. Steps in transmission history can include oral transmission, redaction, manuscript copying, and scribal emendation.

Trito-Isaiah see **Third Isaiah**

trope (Gk "turn [away]") use of a word or phrase in a sense differing from its usual or literal meaning, as in a figure of speech; "a stitch in time" is not about sewing, but about the advantages of timely or early action

Twelve, Book of the the **Minor Prophets**

Twelve, the conventional designation for Jesus' closest followers (Mk 3.14–16 and parallels; Mk 10.32)

typology (Gk *tupos*, the raised design on a seal for imprinting in wax, then by extension a pattern or model) understanding persons or events, especially in the New Testament, by referring them to earlier biblical precursors

U

Ugarit city on the Mediterranean coast (Ras-Shamra in present-day Syria), source of an important collection of Canaanite myths and other texts from the second half of the second millennium BCE in a language called Ugaritic, which was related to Hebrew

Ugaritic an ancient Semitic language closely related to Hebrew, which was used at the city of Ugarit on the coast of the Mediterranean in Syria in the second millennium BCE. Many Ugaritic texts have connections in style and content with the Bible.

unleavened bread (Heb *matzah*, pl. *matzot*) bread made without yeast; also the festival of unleavened bread associated with **passover**.

Urim and Thummim a method of **divination** used to discover God's response to "yes" or "no" questions

V

vassal the underlord in a covenant relationship, who is granted power and control over people in a particular area in return for loyalty to the **suzerain**

Vassal Treaty of Esarhaddon an Assyrian treaty document from the reign of the Assyrian king Esarhaddon (681–669 BCE), with parallels to parts of Deuteronomy

Vulgate see **Jerome**

W

wadi (Arabic) a stream bed or valley that is dry for part of the year; an arroyo or gulch

weeks, festival of (Heb *Shavuot*; "Pentecost," Gk for "fiftieth" [day]) the spring harvest, occurring according to Priestly texts fifty days (seven full weeks) after Passover

winnow to separate grain from its husks (called chaff) after it has been threshed. The threshed grain is placed in a wide, flat basket and tossed repeatedly into the air, allowing a breeze to blow away the lighter chaff while the grain drops back down into the basket.

wisdom literature Job, Proverbs, and Ecclesiastes in the Hebrew Bible, Sirach and Wisdom in the Apocrypha, and some Psalms. Wisdom literature is concerned with insight, instruction, meditation of the meaning of life, and moral exhortation. It does not generally concern itself with key events in Israel's history, such as the Exodus; central teachings, such as the covenant; or focal institutions, such as the Davidic monarchy, prophecy, or the Temple.

Writings the third division of the **Hebrew Bible**

Y

Yahweh see **YHWH**

Yahwistic characteristic of the religion of the worship of YHWH or of the teachings, Temple practices, etc., in the Pentateuch

Yehud designation of the province of Judah during Persian times; see **Judah**

YHWH (sometimes also YHVH) the name of God, which in Jewish tradition is conventionally unpronounced; moden scholars use the conventional pronunciation "Yahweh." The name is represented in the **Masoretic text** by the Hebrew letters *yod-he-vav-he* and the vowels for the title *Adonai*, "my Lord." In most English translations, following an ancient substitution, YHWH is represented by the word LORD written in capital and small capital letters. The original vocalization and meaning of the name YHWH is uncertain, though it is connected to the verb *h-y-h*, "be" or "become," most likely in a causative sense, "he who causes to be."

Yom Kippur see **Day of Atonement**

Z

Zadokites priests purportedly descended from Zadok, one of David's chief priests and the only chief priest under Solomon, who anointed Solomon king (1 Kings 1). Zadok was descended from Aaron (1 Chr 6). Ezekiel's vision of the restored Temple explicitly maintains that Zadokites will be the priests, differentiated from **Levites** (Ezek 48.11). The Qumran community wanted to restore the Zadokite priesthood; Zadok may also be the source of the name Sadducees, those who supported the religio-political elite centered on the Jerusalem Temple under the Roman occupation. See also **Aaron**.

Zealot a member of a Jewish revolutionary movement during the Roman occupation of Palestine in the first century CE

ziggurat a temple-tower in ancient Mesopotamia. Ziggurats are presumed to represent a mount, on the top of which the earthly and divine realms merged.

Zion the name of the fortified hill within Jerusalem and thus, by extension, an alternative name for Jerusalem itself, especially in biblical poetry

Zion theology a name for the view that God's ultimate plan for Israel is restoration of the monarchy under a Davidic king who rules from Jerusalem

INDEX TO THE STUDY MATERIALS

The index is to the introductions, annotations, and essays, not to the biblical text. It therefore refers not to biblical citations but to page numbers.

A

Aaron; *see also* priesthood
  appointment of, HB:91
  complaint of, HB:206–8
  genealogy of, HB:91
  and golden calf, HB:129–30
  priesthood of, HB:215
  Simon the High Priest and, AP:1518
  sprouting rod of, HB:215
Abraham
  as ancestor of Jesus, NT:1748
  and ancestral history in Genesis, HB:9; HB:26
  blessing of, HB:46; HB:66
  burial plot of, HB:42
  call of, HB:27
  circumcision and, AP:1517; HB:10; NT:1982
  covenant with, HB:31; HB:91
  death of, HB:45
  faith of, NT:1981–82
  and Lot, HB:29–30
  meaning of name, HB:34
  as model for Christian faith, NT:2046
  as model for returnees, HB:1006
  obedience of, HB:41
  promise to, HB:9; HB:27; HB:31; HB:32; HB:81; HB:91; NT:2055; NT:2109
  as prophet, HB:38
  testing of, HB:40–41
Absalom
  defeat of, HB:471–73
  return of, HB:464–66
  revolt of, HB:466–67
acrostics
  in Ecclesiasticus, AP:1527
  in Lamentations, HB:1147
  in Proverbs, HB:933–34
  in Psalms, HB:780; HB:800; HB:802; HB:867; HB:871; HB:890
Acts of the Apostles, NT:1919–71
  authorship of, NT:1919
  date of, NT:1919–20
  and Gospel of Luke, NT:1919; NT:1921
  title of, NT:1919
  "we" passages in, NT:1919; NT:1950; NT:1951; NT:1958; NT:1959; NT:1960; NT:1967; NT:1970
'adam (human being), HB:13; HB:14; HB:17
Adam and Christ, NT:1983–84
Additions to Daniel, AP:1542
Additions to the Book of Esther, AP:1411–12; HB:707
adultery, AP:1549; HB:193; HB:260–61; HB:286–87; *see also* sexual offenses
  as capital offense, HB:286
  divorce and, NT:1810
  as metaphor for idolatry, NT:2159
  ordeal and, HB:193
  penalty for, HB:286
  perils of, HB:903–4
  stoning and, HB:65
  woman caught in, NT:1895–96
age, of human beings, HB:17; HB:18
agriculture, HB:22
  Hosea and, HB:1260–62
  seasons of, HB:21
Alcimus (high priest), AP:1574; AP:1579; AP:1628–30
Alexander the Great, AP:1364; AP:1555; HB:1249–50
aliens
  attitude toward, HB:170
  and Levites, HB:292
  resident, HB:244; HB:268; HB:277; HB:447
  and widows, HB:292
allegory
  in biblical interpretation, HB:950
  fable of eagles, HB:1182–83
  of Hagar and Sarah, NT:2048–49
  of the pot, HB:1193–94
  of the sisters, HB:1191–93
  of unfaithful wife, HB:1178–81
almsgiving, AP:1386–87; AP:1463–64; AP:1496
altar(s), HB:121; HB:190
  of burnt offerings, HB:1223; HB:1243
  of incense, HB:126; HB:137
  rebuilding of, HB:671–72
  sacrificial, HB:137
Amos
  meaning of name, HB:1284
  visions of, HB:1293–94
Amos, Book of, HB:1282–97
  and classical prophecy, HB:1284
  date of, HB:1284
anachronisms, AP:1564; HB:243; HB:416; HB:427
ancestors, HB:259
  of Israel, AP:1516
ancestral deities, HB:54
Ancient One, HB:1248
angel of God, divine presence and, HB:103; *see also* angel of the Lord; divine presence
angel of the Lord, HB:33; HB:39; HB:376; HB:564; HB:801; *see also* angel of God; divine presence
angels, HB:35; HB:36; HB:130
  in Matthean infancy narrative, NT:1748–49
  and stairway of Jacob, HB:50
  superiority of Son to, NT:2104–5
anger, divine, HB:1037–38; HB:1342; *see also* wrath
animals, unclean, HB:101
Anointed, the, HB:963; HB:1341; *see also* Messiah
  the Lord's, HB:1028
anointing
  of David, HB:423–24
  of Jesus, NT:1818; NT:1843–44; NT:1902–3
  of kings in ancient Israel, HB:489
antichrist, NT:2140–41
  and false teaching, NT:2146
Antiochus IV Epiphanes, AP:1364; AP:1457; AP:1543; AP:1544; AP:1556; AP:1557–62; AP:1563;

AP:1564–65; AP:1568; AP:1606; AP:1717; AP:1723; HB:1255–57; NT:1782
in 2 Maccabees, AP:1599–1600
and abomination, HB:1256
coins of, HB:1249
death of, AP:1571–72; AP:1599; AP:1620
decree of, AP:1559–61; AP:1599
and invasion of Egypt and Palestine, AP:1557–58
and religious law, AP:1556
in vision of Daniel, HB:1247
Antiochus V Eupator, AP:1565; AP:1620–21
accession of, AP:1571–72
Apamea, Treaty of, AP:1576
Apocalypse. *See* Revelation to John
apocalyptic imagery, NT:2078
in 2 Peter, NT:2132–33
in 2 Thessalonians, NT:2078
darkness vs. light as, NT:2058; NT:2069
in Ephesians, NT:2058
in eschatological discourse of Jesus, NT:1781–82; NT:1816–17
Gog of Magog as, HB:1214–17; HB:1235
in Zechariah, HB:1337
apocalypticism, and postexilic prophecy, HB:964
Apocrypha
in Christianity, AP:1362–63
historical background of, AP:1364–66
influence of, AP:1366–67
in Judaism, AP:1452
kinds of literature in, AP:1365–66
meaning of word, AP:1361
in New Testament, AP:1366–67
order of, AP:1361
apostle(s)
arrest of, NT:1927–28; NT:1929–30
false, NT:2037
last mention of, NT:1950
meaning of term, NT:1840
Paul as, NT:1946; NT:2011–12
the twelve as, NT:1840
apostolic council, NT:1920; NT:1921
apostolic decree, NT:1921; NT:1948
Aramaic language, HB:1015
Book of Ezra and, HB:673; HB:677–78
archaeology
and design of Temple, HB:620
and historical books, HB:316–17
ark, of Noah, HB:19
ark narrative, in 1 Samuel, HB:399; HB:405
ark of the covenant, HB:107; HB:118–19; HB:137; HB:190; HB:324; NT:2111
brought to Temple, HB:502; HB:622–23
capture of, HB:405–7
in Chronicles, HB:596–98
dimensions of, HB:119
Jeremiah and, HB:1064
as made by Moses, HB:267
in most holy place, HB:498–99
and the Philistines, HB:405–7
purpose of, HB:119
as throne of the Lord, HB:454
use of, in military activities, HB:201; HB:210
Ascent, Songs of, HB:773
Asherah, HB:132; HB:263; HB:359; HB:1264
Asherim (sacred poles), HB:132; HB:263; HB:278; HB:367; HB:654
assembly of the Lord, HB:287
Assyrians, AP:1393
Isaiah and, HB:965–66; HB:975
judgment on, HB:989
Nahum and, HB:1316
Aten, Egyptian sun-disk, HB:858
atonement
as appeasement of deity, HB:228
golden calf and, HB:130
for unsolved murder, HB:283–84
Atrahasis epic, HB:9
avenger, HB:244
Azariah, Prayer of, AP:1366; AP:1543–47; HB:1240

B

Baal, HB:448; HB:518–22; HB:1076
shrines of, HB:132
Baal-zebub, HB:533; *see also* Beelzebul
Babel
name, HB:26
tower of, HB:7; HB:9; HB:25–26
Babylon, HB:116
end of, HB:1031–32
Jeremiah's letters to, HB:1105–6
judgment on, HB:995
oracle concerning, HB:986–89; HB:1138–44
Rome as, NT:2154; NT:2173–75
yoke of, HB:1103–5
Babylonian exile, HB:531–32; HB:573–74; HB:664–65; HB:884–85; HB:961–62; *see also* restoration of Jerusalem and Temple
Book of Baruch and, AP:1529–30
Daniel and, HB:1234
Deuteronomy and, HB:248; HB:256; HB:310–11; HB:314–15
Ezekiel and, HB:1159–60
Isaiah and, HB:966–67
Jeremiah and, HB:1057
and Letter of Jeremiah, AP:1537
and redaction of Pentateuch, HB:6
return from, AP:1637; AP:1638; AP:1642–44; AP:1648–49; HB:667–68; HB:1033–39
Zechariah and, HB:1339
Babylonian influence
on creation story, HB:11
on flood story, HB:19
Balaam, story of, HB:222–24
ban, HB:263; *see also* dedication(s); ḥerem; holy war
banquet, eschatological, Isaiah and, HB:1000–1001
baptism, NT:2108
into Christ, NT:2047
as dying with Christ, NT:1984
of Jesus, NT:1751; NT:1793; NT:1835
of John the Baptist, NT:1923
of repentance, NT:1792; NT:1834
barrenness, AP:1431–32; HB:26; HB:400
of Sarah, HB:26; HB:27
Baruch
God's word to, HB:1129
and Jeremiah, AP:1529; AP:1530; AP:1531–32
Baruch, Book of, AP:1529–36
date of, AP:1529
Bathsheba, HB:64; HB:604
and David, HB:459–60
beasts, in Revelation, NT:2169
beatitudes, NT:1753; NT:1840
Beelzebul, NT:1764; *see also* Baal-zebub
controversy about, NT:1852

Beer-sheba
Jacob and, HB:74
meaning of name, HB:40; HB:46
Behemoth ("animal"), HB:768–69
Bel and the Dragon, AP:1365; AP:1552–54
as court tale, AP:1365
date of, AP:1552
as midrash on Jeremiah, HB:51
Ben Sira, as scribe, AP:1457; *see also* Ecclesiasticus, book of
Benedictus, NT:1831–32
Benjamin
birth of, HB:60
meaning of name, HB:60
Benjamin, tribe of
civil war with, HB:387–89
oaths concerning, HB:390
Bible, threefold division of, AP:1459; *see also* Apocrypha; entries at law; interpretation, biblical
bishops, qualifications for, NT:2087–88
black, as color, NT:2162
blessing(s), HB:180–82
as consequence of obedience, HB:294–95
deathbed, HB:48
priestly, HB:195
blindness
as metaphor for religious insensitivity, HB:1006
of Tobit, AP:1371–72
blood, HB:170
crying out, HB:63
as first plague in Egypt, HB:93
menstruation, HB:54; HB:1149
and ordination of priests, HB:125
Passover and, HB:98
ritual impurity of, HB:973; HB:1149
sacredness of, HB:16
significance of, HB:116; HB:271
and vengeance, HB:477
bloodguilt, HB:281; HB:285; HB:438
boasting, NT:1979; NT:1981; NT:1983; NT:2025; NT:2026–27; NT:2030–31; NT:2032; NT:2034; NT:2035–36; NT:2037; NT:2050
boils, as sixth plague in Egypt, HB:95
book of consolation, HB:1107–11
Book of Jashar, HB:334; HB:447
Book of the Acts of Solomon, HB:486; HB:509
Book of the Annals of the Kings of Israel, HB:486
Book of the Consolation of Israel. *See* Second Isaiah
Book of the Covenant. *See* Covenant Collection
book of the law, HB:566; HB:660
book of the Twelve, HB:962; HB:1259; HB:1351; NT:1933
Book of the Wars of the Lord, HB:221
booths, festival of, AP:1369; AP:1600; AP:1601; AP:1620; HB:83; HB:177; HB:672; HB:696–97; HB:1350; NT:1893–94; *see also* ingathering, festival of; Succoth
Bow, Song of the, HB:447
branch (Davidic heir), HB:973; HB:1340; HB:1342
bread
breaking of, NT:1926; NT:1958; NT:1969
of life (Jesus), NT:1892–93
of the presence, AP:1558; HB:119; HB:502; HB:622; NT:1763; NT:2111
burnt offerings, HB:21; HB:124–25; HB:126; HB:143–49; HB:201; HB:211; HB:270; HB:410; HB:608; HB:625; HB:1073; HB:1219; HB:1240; *see also* offerings

C

calendar
festival, HB:276–77
Passover and, HB:98
ritual, HB:115–16; HB:132; HB:175–77; HB:231–33
Canaan
boundaries of, HB:237–39
cultic objects of, prohibition against, HB:278
curse of, HB:23; HB:25
destruction of occupants of, HB:263
kings of, HB:30
peoples of, HB:23; HB:25; HB:87; HB:263
scouting of, HB:204–5; HB:244
cannibalism, HB:542; HB:1167
canon(s)
and Council of Trent, AP:1361; AP:1363–64
Jewish, HB:707; HB:961
of the Old Testament, AP:1361–62
capital offenses, adultery as, HB:286
capital punishment, HB:172; HB:212; HB:273
captives, female, legal obligations toward, HB:284
census, HB:126; HB:137; HB:183
of aliens, HB:619
first Israelite, HB:185–88
first Levitical, HB:188–90
of repopulated Jerusalem, HB:701–2
second Levitical, HB:193
centurion, NT:1757–58; NT:1842; NT:1938
chaos
cosmic, HB:729; HB:735
creation and, HB:11
flood and, HB:20
cherubim, HB:16; HB:20; HB:119–20; HB:406; HB:454; HB:499; HB:620–21; HB:786; HB:1162–63; HB:1172
children, AP:1431; AP:1485–86
of Abraham, NT:1989
adopted, of God, NT:2047–48; NT:2054
Jesus and, NT:1865
in the kingdom of God, NT:1810
of the promise, NT:1989
raising of, AP:1497
Christ; *see also* Jesus
and Adam, NT:1983–84
as advocate, NT:2139
and heavenly armies, NT:2176–77
as high priest, NT:2103; NT:2106; NT:2107–8
sacrifice of, NT:2112
self-emptying of, NT:2063
supremacy of, NT:2069
Christian community, life in, NT:1926; *see also* church
Chronicler, retribution theology of, HB:311; HB:315
Chronicler's History, HB:575
assemblies in, HB:612
importance of Judah in, HB:578
Chronicles, Books of, HB:577–665
similarities of, to Ezra-Nehemiah, HB:311; HB:315; HB:575
title of, HB:575

church
in Acts, NT:1919–21
life in, NT:2087–88; NT:2089
as mother, AP:1679–80
as new Israel, NT:2120
prayer for, in Ephesians, NT:2057
relationships in, NT:1772–74
circumcision, HB:320; HB:326
as covenant, AP:1517; HB:10
and early Christian community, NT:1940; NT:1947; NT:2096
of heart, HB:182; HB:268; HB:301; HB:1065
of Jesus, NT:1833
Jews as the, NT:2055; NT:2097
law of, HB:3; NT:2008–9; NT:2070; NT:2072
Paul's view of, NT:2049; NT:2064
rejection of, AP:1678
rule of, HB:34
spiritual, NT:2070
and Timothy, NT:1950; NT:2091
cities, Levitical, HB:242–44; HB:338; HB:348; HB:586
cities of refuge, HB:242–44; HB:258; HB:281; HB:338; HB:344; HB:586
cleansing, ritual, HB:127
cloud, HB:140; HB:165; HB:206–7; HB:215; HB:502; HB:973; HB:1172–73; *see also* pillar of cloud
collection for Jerusalem, NT:1964; NT:2022–23; NT:2033–34; NT:2038; NT:2096
colors
black, NT:2162
pale green, NT:2162
red, NT:2162
white, NT:2158,NT:2162; NT:2164
Colossians, Letter of Paul to, NT:2067–73
authorship of, NT:2067
hymn in, NT:2067
problems addressed in, NT:2067
commandments, HB:111
social and religious, HB:114
Ten; *See* Ten Commandments
communal confession, HB:697; HB:1251
companions
choice of, AP:1473
warnings about, AP:1470; AP:1474–75
conquest
central campaign of, HB:327–32
commission of, HB:321
of land of Canaan, in Joshua, HB:3
northern campaign of, HB:336–37
preparation for, HB:321
southern campaign of, HB:332–33
war of, in Deuteronomy, HB:263–64
Corban, NT:1805
Corinth
conflicts in, NT:2001–2
Paul's mission to, NT:1999
as urban center, NT:1999
Corinthians, First Letter of Paul to, NT:1999–2023
Corinthians, Second Letter of Paul to, NT:2025–39
themes of, NT:2025; NT:2026; NT:2039
Cornelius, conversion of, NT:1938–40
corpse
contamination of, HB:194; HB:195; HB:217; HB:236
exposure of, HB:285
touching of, AP:1503
cosmology, in creation story, HB:11; *see also* creation
Court History, HB:445
Court Narrative. *See* Succession Narrative
covenant, HB:549; *see also* promise(s)
with Abraham, HB:31; HB:34
breaking of, HB:128
circumcision as, HB:10; HB:33
of David and Jonathan, HB:430–31
everlasting, HB:34
Exodus and, HB:83
with Israel, HB:109–18; NT:1980
loyalty to, HB:268–70
in Malachi, HB:1353–54
meaning of, HB:22
new, NT:2016; NT:2028–29; NT:2111
of Noah, HB:10; HB:22; HB:33
of peace, HB:228; HB:1041
in Pentateuch, HB:3
ratification ceremonies of, HB:116–17; HB:298–300
renewal, HB:132; HB:266–68; HB:841–42
of salt, HB:633
with Sheol, HB:1004
tabernacle of, HB:137
Covenant Collection, HB:112; HB:117; HB:132; HB:261; HB:277; HB:294
covenant community, moral responsibilities of, HB:288
creation, HB:948
account of, in 2 Esdras, AP:1689–90
accounts of, in Genesis, HB:5; HB:9
cosmology of, HB:11
culminating in sabbath, HB:11
out of nothing, HB:11
P account of, HB:10
participation of the Son in, NT:2104
praise of, AP:1509–10; AP:1514–16
seven-day scheme of, HB:11
Wisdom and, AP:1479; NT:2104
cross; *see also* crucifixion; Jesus
in 1 Corinthians, NT:2000
significance of, NT:2068; NT:2070
crucifixion, as Roman punishment, NT:1807–8; *see also* cross; Jesus
cup of wrath, HB:1100; *see also* wrath
curse(s), HB:180–82; HB:269; HB:294
of Canaan, HB:23; HB:25
as consequence of disobedience, HB:294–95
deathbed, HB:48
garden of Eden and, HB:15
of Noah, HB:30
Cyrus, AP:1387; AP:1530; AP:1552; AP:1637; HB:664–65; HB:963; HB:965–67; HB:1019; HB:1021; HB:1023; HB:1025; HB:1245; HB:1247
decree of, HB:575; HB:667–68; HB:669; HB:1247; HB:1252; HB:1333
oracle concerning, HB:1028–29

D

D (source of Pentateuch), HB:4–5
and Deuteronomic law collection, HB:6
Dan, tribe of
meaning of name, HB:79
migration of, HB:384–85
Daniel
doxology of, HB:1237

in lions' pit, AP:1552; AP:1553–54
prayer of, HB:1251–52
visions of, HB:1247–51; HB:1253
Daniel, Book of, HB:1233–57
additions to, AP:1542; HB:1233
as apocalypse, HB:964; HB:1233; HB:1234
date of, HB:1233
Dead Sea Scrolls and, HB:1234
folktales and, HB:1234
language of, HB:1233
darkness, AP:1451; *see also* apocalyptic imagery; light
children of, NT:2078
at death of Jesus, NT:1822
as ninth plague in Egypt, HB:97
Daughter Zion, HB:969; HB:1017; HB:1148–49
David, AP:1520
ancestors of, HB:398
anointing of, HB:423–24
and Bathsheba, HB:459–60
called son of Jesse, HB:431
census of, HB:482–83
as central character of Deuteronomistic History, HB:399
covenant of, with Jonathan, HB:430–31
death of, HB:614–15
and Goliath, HB:312–13; HB:316; HB:425–27; HB:604
links with story of Judah, HB:64–65
and Philistines, HB:439–40; HB:441–42
prayer of, HB:601–2; HB:614
promise to, HB:600–601
and Saul, HB:424–25; HB:427–30; HB:435–36; HB:438–39
Davidic dynasty, HB:1017; HB:1095; HB:1210
in Amos, HB:1296
Day of Atonement, HB:165–67; HB:175; HB:232; HB:586; NT:2112
day of judgment, AP:1692; *see also* judgment
Day of the Lord, NT:2136
in Amos, HB:1283; HB:1291
in Ezekiel, HB:1169; HB:1203; HB:1205
in Gospel of Luke, NT:1771; NT:1829
in Isaiah, HB:971; HB:987
in Joel, HB:1277–78
in Lamentations, HB:1149; HB:1152
in Obadiah, HB:1299
suddenness of, NT:2078
in 2 Thessalonians, NT:2078
in Zechariah, HB:1337; HB:1348
Zephaniah and, HB:1327–29
day of wrath, NT:1979; *see also* wrath
deacons
qualifications for, NT:2087–88
seven, NT:1930–31
dead, praying for, AP:1626
Dead Sea Scrolls, AP:1366; AP:1543; HB:415
children of light and, NT:2078
community of goods and, NT:1926
Daniel and, HB:1238
dominion of sin and, NT:1986
Isaiah and, HB:967
Jeremiah and, HB:1058
lots and, AP:1426
and Melchizedek, NT:2109
Psalm 151 and, AP:1658
and the Way, NT:1936
death
dominion of, NT:1983
insatiability of, HB:942
Mot as god of, HB:1273
universality of, HB:938–39; HB:944–45
Deborah, Song of, HB:363–65
debt; *see also* ethics, financial; interest on loans; loans; poor; wealth
Amos and, HB:1282
Micah and, HB:1308
remission of, HB:274–75
Decalogue, AP:1517; HB:106; HB:132; HB:170; HB:256–57; HB:259–61; HB:267; HB:278; *see also* Ten Commandments
Decapolis, NT:1752; NT:1801
dedication(s), HB:182–83
deep, the (Heb. tehom), HB:11
ḥerem, HB:183
of the Levites, HB:201
Demetrius I Soter, AP:1574; AP:1580–82; AP:1628
Demetrius II, AP:1581; AP:1583–86; AP:1592; AP:1594; AP:1595
demonic beings, forces, powers, NT:2053; NT:2067; NT:2069
demons, NT:1799; NT:1837; NT:1897; *see also* devil; Satan
dependancy on others, AP:1496
Deuterocanonical, meaning of term, AP:1361
Deuteronomistic Historian, HB:279
Deuteronomistic History, HB:310; HB:314
Books of Samuel and, HB:399
boundaries of land and, HB:32
Canaanite peoples in, HB:32
composition of, HB:399
Deuteronomy and, HB:248
Jeremiah and, HB:1058
Joshua and, HB:318
Judges and, HB:355
Kings and, HB:485–86
Deuteronomy, Book of
date of, HB:247
layers of tradition in, HB:248–49
legal corpus of, HB:248; HB:257; HB:270–94
name of, HB:247
and reform of Josiah, HB:247; HB:311; HB:315
setting of, HB:247
devil, Jesus and, NT:1751–52; NT:1836; *see also* Satan
Diaspora, Jewish, AP:1370; HB:707–8; NT:1822; NT:1950; NT:2033; NT:2153
Luke and, NT:1921
Paul and, NT:1937–38
Stephen and, NT:1931
diet
obligations concerning, HB:273–74
in postexilic period, HB:1235
Tobit and, AP:1370
disciple(s), NT:1753
call of, NT:1793; NT:1839
Jesus' blessing of, NT:1850
misunderstanding of, NT:1806; NT:1809; NT:1811
persecution of, NT:1870
discipleship
cost of, NT:1807–8; NT:1858–59
nature of, NT:1828
requirements for, NT:1847–48
true, NT:1872

discipline
community, NT:2005–6
of God, NT:2116
disease
of animals, as fifth plague in Egypt, HB:95
in wilderness wandering, HB:105
disobedience
consequences of, HB:294–96
Lot's wife and, HB:37
divination, HB:172; HB:280; HB:423; *see also* dreams; lots; Urim and Thummim
casting lots as, HB:224
Teraphim and, HB:383
divine intervention, HB:334
divine judge, AP:1480; HB:842
divine presence
altar and, HB:117
as angel of God, HB:103
pillar of cloud and, HB:102; HB:103; HB:202
pillar of fire and, HB:102
smoke and, HB:975
divine shepherd, HB:791; HB:840; *see also* shepherd
divine Sophia, in Wisdom of Solomon, AP:1428
divine warrior, HB:103; HB:255; HB:323
conquering promised land, HB:116
divorce, HB:289; *see also* marriage
Jesus' teaching on, NT:1774; NT:1810
remarriage after, HB:289
Documentary Hypothesis, HB:4
doxology, NT:2136; NT:2151; NT:2176
in Amos, HB:1290
in Psalms, HB:773; HB:848; HB:862; HB:891
in Wisdom of Solomon, AP:1455
dreams, HB:272; HB:941; *see also* divination
critique of, AP:1502
Daniel and, HB:964; HB:1235–36; HB:1242
divination and, HB:440
in Matthean infancy narrative, NT:1748–49
drunkenness, HB:18
story of Lot and, HB:38
dry bones, vision of, HB:1213–14; HB:1233–34
dualism, AP:1501

E

E (source of Pentateuch), HB:4–5
Covenant Collection and, HB:6
dating of, HB:6
origin of, HB:10
Ecclesiastes, Book of, HB:721–22; HB:935–49
Solomonic authorship of, HB:725
Ecclesiasticus, Book of, AP:1457–1527
as didactic literature, AP:1365
language of, AP:1457
name of, AP:1457
wisdom teaching in, AP:1458
economic hardship
under Nehemiah, HB:691–92
Eden, garden of
in Genesis, HB:10
meaning of, HB:13
Egypt
Jeremiah in, HB:1126–29
oracle against, HB:1129–32
prophecies against, HB:1201–7
in the underworld, HB:1205
Egyptians, God's dealings with, contrasted with Israelites, AP:1441–42; AP:1449–55
ekklesia (assembly), NT:2001
Eleazar, AP:1718; AP:1724–27
martyrdom of, AP:1612; AP:1724–26
meaning of name, AP:1725
election, NT:1989
Elijah; *see also* Elisha
and Elisha cycles, HB:533–35
and Jezebel, HB:522
and the Lord, HB:522–23
and Naboth's vineyard, HB:525–27
and prophets of Baal, HB:518–22
Elisha, AP:1522; HB:523; HB:534–44; *see also* Elijah
miracles of, HB:537–39; HB:541–42
and Naaman, HB:539–41
and the Shunammite, HB:543–44
Emmaus incident, NT:1876–77
end, the, prophecies of, in Ezekiel, HB:1169–70; *see also* end-time; eschaton
end-time, NT:2093–94; *see also* end; eschaton
in Daniel, HB:1257
endogamy, as theme of Tobit, AP:1370; *see also* marriage
Enuma Elish, HB:11
Ephesians, Letter of Paul to, NT:2052–60
authorship of, NT:2052
as circular letter, NT:2052
relation to Colossians, NT:2052
style of, NT:2052
vision of church in, NT:2052–53
ephod, HB:383; HB:403
as box, HB:419
for divination, HB:442; HB:447
as idol, HB:432
as priestly garment, HB:118; HB:122; HB:433–34; HB:454–55
Ephraim, HB:76–77
Northern Kingdom as, HB:1259; HB:1263
Esarhaddon, Vassal Treaty of, HB:248; HB:272; HB:294
Esau
caricature of, HB:46
descendants of, HB:9; HB:60–61
Jacob and, HB:46
eschatology, prophetic, HB:948; *see also* apocalypticism
eschaton, NT:2092
Esdras, First, AP:1365; AP:1367; AP:1633–55
and 3 Esdras, AP:1633
as history, AP:1365
language of, AP:1633
Esdras, Second, AP:1366; AP:1675–1716
and 5, 4, and 6 Ezra, AP:1675–76
as apocalypse, AP:1366
Essenes, AP:1366; NT:1926; NT:2056; *see also* Dead Sea Scrolls; John the Baptist
Esther, Book of, AP:1411–26; HB:709–19
additions to, AP:1411–12
authorship of, HB:707
Greek version of, AP:1411
as short story, HB:312; HB:315
Esther, meaning of name, HB:710–11
ethics, financial, HB:288–89; *see also* debt; interest; loans; poor; wealth
euangelion. *See* gospel
eunuchs, HB:547; HB:1043
evildoing, avoiding, AP:1467–68
exclusivism, religious, HB:132
exhortation to holy living, NT:1993–96

exile. *See* Babylonian exile
Exodus, Book of, HB:82–141
  authorship of, HB:82
  climax of, HB:140
  date of, HB:82
  geographic movement of, HB:83
  sources of, HB:82
  themes of, HB:82
Exodus, the, HB:33
  historicity of, HB:82
  journey of, HB:100–108
exorcism, Jesus and, NT:1793–94; NT:1837; NT:1849
Ezekiel, AP:1523; HB:963
  call of, HB:1162
  commissioning of, HB:1164–65
  speechlessness of, HB:1165; HB:1208
  throne-chariot vision of, HB:1162–64
  as Zadokite, HB:1160
Ezekiel, Book of, HB:1159–1231; HB:1180–1253
Ezra
  in 1 Esdras, AP:1633–34; AP:1648–55
  disputes with angel in 2 Esdras, AP:1682–83; AP:1686–87; AP:1690–91; AP:1694–96; AP:1698–99
  memoirs of, AP:1653; HB:668; HB:678
  prayer of, AP:1697; HB:681
  and Torah, HB:667
Ezra, Book of, HB:669–84
  and Nehemiah, HB:667–68
  and Persian documents, HB:312; HB:316
Ezra-Nehemiah
  date of, HB:667
  mixed marriages and, HB:668
  sources of, HB:668
  structure of, HB:667–68
Ezra, Fourth, AP:1675–76; AP:1681
  authorship and date of, AP:1675
Ezra, Fifth, AP:1675–76; AP:1676–80
  authorship and date of, AP:1675
Ezra, Sixth, AP:1675
  authorship and date of, AP:1675
  as Christian composition, AP:1675

F

faith, NT:1771–72; NT:1977
  and acts of discrimination, NT:2121
  contending for, NT:2149
  of Jesus Christ, NT:1981; NT:1983; NT:2045; NT:2047
  justification and, NT:1981–82
  living by, NT:2114
  power of, NT:2114–17
  and works, NT:2122
faithfulness
  in contrast to faithlessness, NT:2086
  of God, NT:1977; NT:1981
  required of Christians, NT:2106–7
faithlessness, faithfulness in contrast to, NT:2086
false teaching; *see also* antichrist; teachers; teaching
  antichrist and, NT:2146
  victory over, NT:2140–41
famine, HB:394
fasting, HB:409; HB:679; HB:718; NT:1755; NT:1796; NT:1839
  genuine, HB:1045
  to influence deity, HB:713
  in mourning, HB:444
  national, HB:640
  as spiritual preparation, HB:697
fate of humanity, HB:940
fear
  of God, HB:740; HB:949
  Isaac and, HB:55
  of the Lord, AP:1460–62; AP:1471; AP:1482–83; AP:1502–3; HB:262; HB:899–900; HB:941
feeding
  of five thousand, NT:1803–4; NT:1847; NT:1891
  of four thousand, NT:1806
  miraculous, NT:1768; NT:1769–70
fertility
  blessing of, HB:22; HB:264
  consecration of firstborn and, HB:101
festival scrolls (Megillot), HB:392; HB:707; HB:1147
festivals
  condemned, HB:1268; HB:1291
  regulations for, HB:1226–27; HB:1247
Fifth Ezra. *See* Ezra, Fifth
fire
  associated with God, HB:521; HB:973
  cloud of, in the wilderness, HB:202; HB:244
  as judgment, HB:975
  meaning of, HB:87
  theophany and, HB:1056
First Esdras. *See* Esdras, First
First Jewish Revolt, NT:2153
First Letter of Paul to the Corinthians. *See* Corinthians, First Letter of Paul to
First Letter of Paul to the Thessalonians. *See* Thessalonians, First Letter of Paul to
First Maccabees. *See* Maccabees, First (Book of)
firstborn, HB:89; HB:701
  consecration of, HB:101
  death of, as tenth plague in Egypt, AP:1452–53; HB:97–100
  Exodus and, HB:83
  Jesus as, NT:1832; NT:1988; NT:2069
  redemption of, HB:132; HB:189
  right of, HB:284
  as temple servants, HB:189
flogging, HB:290
flood story, AP:1511; HB:5; HB:7; HB:9; HB:10; HB:19–21
folly; *see also* fools
  destruction and, HB:940
  sayings about, HB:927–28
foolishness, in 2 Corinthians, NT:2036–38
fools, AP:1485–86; *see also* folly
footwashing, in John, NT:1904–5
forced labor, HB:283; HB:495
foreign nations
  Amos against, HB:1284
  oracles against, HB:1129–45
  Zephaniah against, HB:1329–30
foreign women, HB:899; HB:902; *see also* marriage; strange woman
foreigners, HB:180; HB:503; HB:1043
  Book of Ruth and, HB:392
  distinct from resident aliens, HB:288
  dread of, in postexilic period, HB:671–72
former prophets, HB:961
Fourth Ezra. *See* Ezra, Fourth
Fourth Gospel. *See* John, Gospel According to

Fourth Maccabees. *See* Maccabees, Fourth (Book of)
frankincense, HB:127; HB:144; HB:149; HB:954
freedom, Christian, NT:2049–50
friendship
  preserving, AP:1486
  true and false, AP:1466; AP:1505–6
frogs
  as fourth plague in Egypt, HB:94
funeral dirges, HB:1185
future
  prediction of, AP:1683–85; AP:1687–89; AP:1691–92; AP:1693–94; AP:1699

G

Gabriel, NT:1830
Galatians, Letter of Paul to, NT:2041–51
  date of, NT:2041
  opponents in, NT:2041; NT:2042–43
garden of Eden, HB:14–16
Gehenna, NT:1809; NT:1854; *see also* Hades; Hell
gender boundaries, HB:285; *see also* women
genealogy
  Babylonian lists and, HB:17
  in Chronicles, HB:575–76; HB:577–83
  from creation to flood, HB:17
  in Genesis, HB:9; HB:10
  of Jesus, NT:1748; NT:1835
  in Nehemiah, HB:702–3
  Priestly, HB:17–18
  in Ruth, HB:392
  of Shem, HB:26
Genesis, Book of, HB:9–81
  composition of, HB:9–10
  content of, HB:9
  feminist rereadings of, HB:10
  matriarch in, HB:10
  meaning of word, HB:9
Gentiles
  inclusion of, in Christian community, NT:1938–40; NT:1947
  Peter's defense of, NT:1940–41
giants (Nephilim), HB:18
Gilgamesh, epic of, HB:19; HB:20; HB:21
glory, divine, HB:106; HB:118; HB:130–31; HB:140; HB:206; HB:214; HB:423; HB:796; *see also* divine presence; glory of the Lord; theophany
glory of the Lord, HB:1165; HB:1171; *see also* divine presence; glory; theophany
  departure of, from Temple, HB:1172–73
  return of, HB:1222–23; HB:1243
gnats, as third plague in Egypt, HB:94
God
  as Ancient One, HB:1248
  angry, HB:36; HB:246
  as divine ruler, HB:11
  faithfulness of, HB:1352
  as good shepherd, HB:1209–10
  images of, HB:478
  jealous, HB:111; HB:132; HB:228; HB:262
  loyalty to, HB:262; HB:272–73
  names and epithets for, HB:33; HB:40; HB:70; HB:87; HB:90; HB:91; HB:132; HB:177–78; HB:304; HB:400; HB:423; HB:478; HB:480; HB:988
god, storm. *See* storm god
Gog of Magog, oracles, HB:1214–17; HB:1235–37
golden calf, HB:83; HB:117; HB:128–29; HB:861
golden rule, AP:1375
Goliath, HB:312–13; HB:316; HB:425–27
Gomorrah. *See* Sodom and Gomorrah
good or ideal wife, HB:896; HB:910; *see also* wife
goods, sharing of, NT:1928–29; *see also* Dead Sea Scrolls
gospel (euangelion)
  and Jewish law, NT:2041
  Paul's defense of, NT:2042–43
  in Romans, NT:1977
  spread of, in Acts, NT:1935–36; NT:1941–46
  suffering for, NT:2091; NT:2092
  Thessalonian's response to, NT:2075–76
Gospel of Thomas, NT:1744
Gospels
  language of, NT:1744
  literary genre of, NT:1743–44
  meaning of term, NT:1743
  Q and, NT:1744; NT:1746
  sources of, NT:1744–45
  Synoptic, NT:1744–45
grace of God, NT:2053
great commission, NT:1790
greed, warning against, NT:1854; *see also* wealth
green, pale, as color, NT:2162
grief, AP:1508

H

Habakkuk, Book of, HB:1321–26
  date of, HB:1321
  literary forms in, HB:1321
Habakkuk, hymn of, HB:1324
Hades, AP:1429–30; AP:1451; AP:1476; AP:1480; AP:1533; AP:1547; AP:1612; NT:2057; NT:2156
Haggai, HB:963
  in 1 Esdras, AP:1644; AP:1646
  rebuilding of Temple and, HB:674
Haggai, Book of, HB:1333–36
  date of, HB:1333
hail, as seventh plague in Egypt, HB:95
Hammurabi, Laws of, HB:193; *see also* Laws of Hammurabi
handwriting on the wall, in Daniel, HB:1243–45
Hannah, Song of, HB:402–3
Hanukkah festival, AP:1555; AP:1599; AP:1600; AP:1601; AP:1602; AP:1603; AP:1620; NT:1900; *see also* Temple, Second
happiness, AP:1497–98
hardness of heart, HB:89; HB:95; HB:337; NT:1989
  Pharaoh and, HB:92–98; HB:102–3
harvest festival, HB:115–16; *see also* Pentecost, Shavuot, Weeks
  as pilgrimage festival, HB:276–77
Hasideans (the pious), AP:1562; AP:1574; AP:1628–29
Hasmoneans, AP:1556; AP:1560; *see also* Maccabees
  dynasty of, AP:1599; AP:1600
healing, NT:1769–70; NT:1794–95; NT:1801–2; NT:1805–6; NT:1807; NT:1808; NT:1812; NT:1837; NT:1838; NT:1846; NT:1848; NT:1857–58; NT:1865–

66; NT:1888–89; NT:1898; *see also* Jesus; sabbath
health, AP:1497
heaven, kingdom of. *see* kingdom of heaven
heavenly beings, HB:765; HB:796
heavenly court, HB:12; HB:16; HB:18; HB:639; HB:1312–13; *see also* holy ones; sons of God
as divine council, HB:885; HB:1019–20; HB:1098
holy ones in, AP:1662–63; HB:1248
throneroom of, HB:976
Hebrew
meaning of word, HB:85
wordplays, HB:49
Hebrews, in Acts, NT:1930–31
Hebrews, Letter to the, NT:2103–18
audience of, NT:2103
authorship and date of, NT:2103
exhortations in, NT:2113–14
Hell, NT:1809; NT:1854; *see also* Gehenna; Hades
Hellenism, AP:1555
Hellenistic culture, AP:1364
Hellenists, in Acts, NT:1930; NT:1941
Hellenization, AP:1599–1600
conflicts over, AP:1557
ḥerem, HB:183; HB:323; HB:422; *see also* ban; dedication(s); holy war
and Achan, HB:325–26
at Ai, HB:329–31
of the cities, HB:335–36
at Jericho, HB:327–29
in Joshua, HB:320
Herod Antipas, NT:1750; NT:1767; NT:1779; NT:1861
and Jesus, NT:1847; NT:1873–74
Herod the Great, NT:1802–3
death of, NT:1750
in Gospel of Matthew, NT:1749
Herodians, NT:1779; NT:1796; NT:1834
Hexateuch, HB:3; HB:318
high places, HB:180–81; HB:493; HB:560; HB:599; HB:654; *see also* shrine
high priesthood; *see also* priesthood
of Jason, AP:1607
of Menelaus, AP:1607–8
under Seleucids, AP:1574
historical books, HB:309–13; HB:313–17
historicity and, HB:312–13; HB:316–17
historical revisionism, HB:311–12; HB:315–16
historicity
historical books and, HB:312–13; HB:316–17
historiographical literature
biblical, HB:309; HB:313
and Kings, HB:486–87
and Nehemiah, HB:698
history, biblical notion of, HB:309–10; HB:313–14
History of David's Rise, in 1 Samuel, HB:399
holiness
in the community, NT:2139
of God's children, NT:2141
obligations of, HB:273–74
Holiness Code. *See* Holiness Collection
Holiness Collection, HB:6; HB:141–42; HB:170; HB:173; HB:275; HB:277; HB:290; HB:294; HB:1160; HB:1167–68; HB:1172; HB:1181; HB:1186; HB:1209; HB:1210; HB:1212; HB:1213; HB:1215–16; HB:1217; HB:1224; HB:1229; HB:1233; HB:1236; HB:1238; HB:1244; HB:1250
Holiness School, HB:141; HB:170; HB:184
holy gifts, HB:182–83
holy of holies (most holy place; inner sanctuary), HB:120; HB:121; HB:497; HB:498–99; HB:586; HB:620; HB:621; HB:1252
holy ones (saints), NT:1977; NT:2150; *see also* heavenly council
holy place. *See* sanctuary
Holy Spirit, NT:1915; NT:1920; NT:1921; NT:1943; NT:1983; NT:2141; NT:2142
as Advocate, NT:1907
aid from, NT:1854
blasphemy of, NT:1854
and Pentecost, NT:1923
holy war, HB:108; HB:246; HB:254–55; HB:263; HB:459; *see also* ban; dedication(s); ḥerem
rules for waging, HB:282–83
victory in, HB:266
honor
sexual, violation of, HB:58; HB:59
true, AP:1471
hope, NT:1983; NT:2127
exhortation to, NT:2108–9
in God's promise, NT:1987–88
Horeb, Mount. *See* Mount Sinai/Horeb
Hosea, HB:963
Hosea, Book of, HB:1259–74
hospitality
of Abraham, HB:35–36
of Lot, HB:35
sanctity of, HB:58
households
authority in, AP:1468
Christian, NT:2067; NT:2068
codes, NT:2053; NT:2058; NT:2096
ethics, NT:2085
gods, HB:54
relationships in, NT:2058–59; NT:2072; NT:2129–30
human condition, AP:1510–11
human race
after flood, HB:9
first, HB:9
humility, AP:1463
hymns
Christological, NT:1831–33; NT:2104
psalms as; *see* Psalms

I

ideal age, in Micah, HB:1310–11
idolatry, HB:272; HB:971; NT:1978; NT:2071; *see also* idols
as cause of exile, HB:256
condemnation of, AP:1445; AP:1537; HB:1027–28
as fornication, AP:1447
repercussions of, AP:1447
vision of, in Ezekiel, HB:1170–71
idols, AP:1538–41; HB:1177; *see also* idolatry
fabrication of, AP:1448
food offered to, NT:2010–11; NT:2013–14; NT:2158
uselessness of, AP:1538
worship of, AP:1537
immortality, AP:1458
garden of Eden and, HB:16
and knowledge of God, AP:1430

of the soul, NT:2020; NT:2022
and true worship, AP:1448
wisdom and righteousness and, AP:1428–29
impurity rules, HB:156–64; HB:195–96
and childbirth, HB:158
and diet, HB:156–57
priests and, HB:173–74
incense, AP:1489; HB:137; HB:194
recipe for, HB:127
incest, HB:22; HB:38
ingathering, festival of, HB:116; *see also* booths; Sukkoth
as pilgrimage festival, HB:276–77
inheritance of land by women, HB:3
inner sanctuary (holy of holies; most holy place), HB:120; HB:121; HB:497; HB:498–99; HB:586; HB:620; HB:621; HB:1252
"Instructions of Amen-em-ope," HB:895; HB:922–23
interest on loans, AP:1495; HB:179; HB:289; *see also* debt; loans
intermarriage. *See* marriage
interpretation, biblical
allegorical, HB:950
of Jewish scriptures, NT:2103
Isaac, AP:1517
and Abraham, HB:46
blessing of, HB:48–49
descendants of, HB:45–46
as heir to promise, HB:9
and Ishmael, HB:39–40
meaning of name, HB:35; HB:39
as prefiguration of Christ, HB:41
sacrifice of, HB:40
Isaiah, AP:1523; HB:963
and Hezekiah, HB:562–64
oracles of, HB:961
Isaiah, Book of, HB:965–1056; *see also* Second Isaiah; Third Isaiah
Ishmael, HB:9
descendants of, HB:45
and Isaac, HB:39–40
meaning of name, HB:40
Israel; *see also* Northern Kingdom
apostasy of, HB:1060–63; HB:1191
borders of, HB:554; HB:604; HB:654
hardening of, NT:1992–93
idolatry of, HB:1168–69
judgment against, AP:1677–78
and the land, HB:576
liberation of, HB:83
meaning of name, HB:56
pattern of rebellion of, HB:1186–88
as people of the book, HB:667; HB:695–96
primeval history of, HB:9
prophetic indictment of, AP:1676–77
shepherds of, HB:1209–10
unfaithfulness of, HB:1263
united, HB:1214; HB:1234
as vine, HB:1270
as wayward child, HB:1271
as wife, HB:1259

J

J (source of Pentateuch), HB:4–5; HB:10; HB:11
anthropomorphic God in, HB:5
Covenant Collection and, HB:5
creation story of, HB:12
dating of, HB:6; HB:10
origin of, HB:10
primeval history, HB:11
Jachin and Boaz (pillars), HB:500; HB:549; HB:621; *see also* pillar(s)
Jacob, AP:1517
blessing of, HB:47; HB:78
burial of, HB:76; HB:79; HB:80
descendants of, HB:74
and Esau, HB:46
as Israel, HB:56; HB:60; HB:62
meaning of name, HB:46
strength of, HB:51
twelve sons of, HB:9
James, as leader of Jerusalem church, NT:1947; NT:2041–42; NT:2043; NT:2045; NT:2119; NT:2149
James, Letter of, NT:2119–25
authorship of, NT:2119
date of, NT:2119
themes of, NT:2120
Jason of Cyrene, history of, and 2 Maccabees, AP:1599; AP:1603
Jeremiah, AP:1523; HB:963
and Baruch, HB:961
call of, HB:1059
complaints of, HB:1080–82; HB:1086–87; HB:1089; HB:1091; HB:1093
and fall of Jerusalem, HB:1122–23
and Lamentations, HB:1147
Letters of, to Babylon, HB:1105–6
life of, HB:1057
scroll of, HB:1117–18
Temple sermon of, HB:1102–3
at Topheth, HB:1091–93
Jeremiah, Book of, HB:961; HB:964; HB:1057–1146
Jeremiah, Letter of, AP:1537–41
authorship of, AP:1537
location of, AP:1537
Jericho
archaeology and, HB:327
conquest of, HB:320; HB:327–29
Jerusalem, HB:270; *see also* restoration of Jerusalem and Temple
assault on, HB:1005–6
as city of David, HB:453
destruction of, in 70 ce, NT:1791; NT:1816; NT:1870; NT:2154
eschatological description of, HB:1349–50
fall of, HB:966; HB:1083; HB:1122–23; HB:1163; HB:1344
God's lament over, HB:1081
Isaiah and, HB:969–70
Jesus' entry into, NT:1776
Jesus' lament over, NT:1857; NT:1867
Lamentations and, HB:1147
as mother, HB:1040
name of, HB:31
new, HB:1041; HB:1231; HB:1252; NT:2154; NT:2160; NT:2178–80
prophecies of doom against, HB:1166–67
rebuilding of, under Nehemiah, HB:685
restoration of, HB:1038; HB:1047–48; HB:1252; HB:1339
rulers and institutions in, NT:1812–16
as Salem, HB:31
vision of, AP:1702
Zephaniah and, HB:1331–32
Jerusalem church, James as leader of, NT:1947; NT:2041–42; NT:2043; NT:2045; NT:2119; NT:2149
Jerusalem council, NT:1942
Jeshua, leader of the returnees, HB:667; HB:670

Jesus
as Amen, NT:2160
annunciation of birth of, NT:1830
anointing of, NT:1818; NT:1843–44; NT:1902–3
as apostle, NT:2106
authority of, NT:1814; NT:1867
baptism of, NT:1751; NT:1793; NT:1835
betrayal of, NT:1785–86; NT:1819–20; NT:1871; NT:1905
as bread of life, NT:1892–93
burial of, NT:1789; NT:1823; NT:1875; NT:1914
charges against, NT:1787
childhood of, NT:1829–34
circumcision of, NT:1833
conception and birth of, NT:1748–49; NT:1832
and criticism of religious practice [scribes and Pharisees], NT:1780–81
crucifixion of, NT:1788–89; NT:1822–23; NT:1874–75; NT:1913; NT:2002
death and resurrection of, NT:1775; NT:1818; NT:1875–76; NT:2019–22
and the devil, NT:1751–52; NT:1836
dominion of, over nature, NT:1768
empty tomb of, NT:1790; NT:1823–24; NT:1876
entry of, into Jerusalem, NT:1776
eschatological discourse of, NT:1781–83
family of, NT:1765; NT:1845
farewell discourse of, NT:1905–10
and healing, NT:1758; NT:1794–95; NT:1795; NT:1796; NT:1801–2; NT:1805–6; NT:1807; NT:1808; NT:1812; NT:1837; NT:1838; NT:1846; NT:1848; NT:1856–57; NT:1857–58; NT:1865–66; NT:1888–89; NT:1898
as high priest, NT:2105–11
as incarnate Word, NT:1880
and John the Baptist, NT:1762; NT:1842–43
journey of, to Jerusalem, NT:1849
and the law, NT:1753–54
as light of life, NT:1896
Lukan genealogy of, NT:1835
as martyr-messiah, NT:1807; NT:1818
Matthean genealogy of, NT:1748
meaning of name, NT:1748–49; NT:1830
ministry of, NT:1752; NT:1836–37
as Moses, NT:1792; NT:2106
and the Pharisees, NT:1770
and prayer, NT:1835; NT:1872; NT:1909–10
as prophet, NT:1791–92; NT:1807
rejection of, NT:1767; NT:1802; NT:1849
relation of, to God, NT:1890; NT:2104
and religious authorities, NT:1893–95
resurrection appearances of, NT:1790; NT:1824; NT:1877
and Sadducees, NT:1770
and Samaritans, NT:1887–89
as shepherd, NT:1899
teaching of, NT:1793–94
and Temple, NT:1776–78; NT:1833–34; NT:1867; NT:1879; NT:1885–86
temptation of, NT:1751–52; NT:1836
transfiguration of, NT:1771; NT:1808
trial of, NT:1788; NT:1820–21; NT:1873; NT:1911–13
Job, Book of, HB:727–71
authorship of, HB:725
structure of, HB:726
Joel, HB:964
Joel, Book of, HB:1275–81
John, Gospel According to, NT:1745; NT:1879–1917
authorship of, NT:1879
prologue of, NT:1881–82
and "the Jews," NT:1880; NT:1882; NT:1894
John, First Letter of, NT:2137–44
authorship and date of, NT:2137
and fourth Gospel, NT:2137
John, Second Letter of, NT:2145–46
author of, as "the Elder," NT:2145
John, Third Letter of, NT:2147–48
author of, as "the Elder," NT:2147
hospitality in, NT:2147
John the Baptist, NT:1792; NT:1834–35; NT:1922
annunciation of birth of, NT:1829–30
baptism of, NT:1923
birth and naming of, NT:1831–32
death of, NT:1767; NT:1802–3
importance of, NT:1771
and Jesus, NT:1762
as precursor of Jesus, NT:1750
John Hyrcanus I, AP:1597–98
Jonah, HB:554
call of, HB:1303
prayer of, HB:1303–4
resurrection of Jesus and, HB:1302
Jonah, Book of, HB:1301–5
date of, HB:1301
humor in, HB:1302
as a story, HB:1301; HB:1302
Jonathan
and covenant with David, HB:430–31
son of Saul, HB:418
Jonathan (Maccabee), AP:1578–91
death of, AP:1590–91
as high priest, AP:1581
Jordan River
crossing of, in Joshua, HB:324–26
as symbol, HB:324
Joseph
dreams and, HB:62; HB:66–67
story of, HB:62–79
Joshua, AP:1519–20; HB:108; HB:117; HB:129; HB:131
death and burial of, HB:354
as parallel to Moses, HB:319
transfer of leadership to, HB:231; HB:310
Joshua, Book of, HB:321–54
authorship of, HB:318
and Deuteronomistic History, HB:318
geographical plan of, HB:319
historicity of, HB:318
and Micah, HB:1307; HB:1310
and Pentateuch, HB:318
repetition in, HB:324; HB:334
and story of conquest, HB:317
structure of, HB:318
Josiah, AP:1633; AP:1634–35; HB:6; HB:566–67; HB:659–63
death of, AP:1635
Habakkuk and, HB:1322
reform of, HB:247; HB:311; HB:314

as second Moses, HB:566
jubilee year, HB:179–80; HB:183; HB:244; *see also* sabbatical year
Judah; *see also* Southern Kingdom
blessing of, HB:78
as name of Southern King, HB:1313
as name of Southern Kingdom, HB:341; HB:675; HB:1282; HB:1286; HB:1307; HB:1317–18; HB:1346
prophecy of doom against, HB:1166–67
Judaism; *see also* Diaspora, Jewish
normative groups of, HB:670
outside of Israel, AP:1364
post-biblical, HB:83
rabbinic, HB:109
Judas Maccabeus, AP:1556; AP:1563–78; AP:1599; AP:1611
death of, AP:1577–78
Jude, Letter of, NT:2149–51
date of, NT:2149
exhortations in, NT:2151
judges, AP:1520
inadequacy of, HB:391
Judges, Book of, HB:356–91
and Deuteronomistic History, HB:355
judgment
final, AP:1433–34; HB:1056; NT:2178
by fire, HB:1293
of God, AP:1442–43; HB:19; HB:36; HB:1177–78; HB:1263
in Haggai, HB:1334
imminence of, HB:1354
inevitability of, AP:1713–14; HB:1177–78
Jesus and, NT:1890
prophecy of, NT:2151
three seals of, NT:2162–64
universality of, NT:1980–81
judicial system, HB:282
Judith, AP:1365
character of, AP:1390
meaning of name, AP:1399
prayer of, AP:1401
thanksgiving psalm of, AP:1408–9
Judith, Book of, AP:1389–1409
date of, AP:1389
as historical fiction, AP:1365; AP:1389
structure of, AP:1389–90
themes of, AP:1390
justice; *see also* righteousness
at central sanctuary, HB:278
of God, NT:1981
local, HB:278
organization of, HB:277–78
justification
in Christ, NT:1983; NT:2045–46
by faith, NT:1982–83; NT:2120

K

kerygma, NT:1998
King of the Jews, NT:1912
kingdom of Christ, NT:2067
kingdom of God, NT:1791–92; NT:1793; NT:1794; NT:1798–99; NT:1808; NT:1828–29; NT:1865; NT:1922; NT:1956; *see also* kingdom of heaven
coming of, NT:1863
economic relations in, NT:1810–11
marriage and children in, NT:1810
as salvation, NT:1866
kingdom of heaven, NT:1750; *see also* kingdom of God
in parables, NT:1765–67
treasure in, NT:1855; NT:1865
king(s), AP:1522; AP:1640
authority of, HB:279
law of, HB:279
requested by people, HB:410–12
Kings, Books of, HB:488–574
kingship, beginnings of, in Israel, HB:410–18; *see also* king(s)
knowledge of God, AP:1430
koinônia (sharing), NT:2062
kyrios (Lord), Jesus as, NT:1832

L

Lamb
blood of, NT:2164
Jesus as, NT:1882; NT:1884; NT:2006; NT:2128; NT:2170–71; NT:2179–80
as shepherd, NT:2164
vision of, NT:2160–62
Lamentations, HB:1147–58
laments
in Amos, HB:1290
in Habakkuk, HB:1322
Jerusalem's, HB:1149–50
in psalms, HB:774
lampstand, HB:190; HB:201
in tabernacle, HB:119–20; HB:137
land
Abraham's journey to, HB:27; HB:30
boundaries of, HB:32; HB:321
conquest of, in Joshua, HB:3
division of, in Joshua, HB:321; HB:338–41
idealized distribution of, HB:1225–26; HB:1246
inheritance of, HB:3
promise of, in Pentateuch, HB:3; HB:30; HB:32; HB:81; HB:91
land ideology in Book of Joshua, HB:320
language, tower of Babel and, HB:25
Last Supper, NT:1785–86; NT:1818–19; NT:1871
laughter
of Abraham, HB:34
of Sarah, HB:34; HB:35; HB:37
law and the prophets, AP:1631; NT:1771
law codes, ancient Near Eastern, HB:112
law courts, rhetoric of, HB:1021
law(s)
case, HB:112–14; HB:117
of Christ, NT:2050
of circumcision, HB:3
civil and family, HB:284
collections of, in Pentateuch, HB:3
concerning marriage, HB:58
defense of, NT:1985
as divine revelation, HB:871
faith in Christ and, NT:2045–49
freedom from, NT:2045
as genre, HB:3
of impurity, HB:141
of inheritance, HB:3
Jesus and, NT:1753–54; NT:1838–39
in Joshua, HB:320
justification and, NT:1979
meditation on, HB:871
Noachide, HB:22
obedience to, AP:1717
oral, HB:4
Paul and, NT:1979–80
public reading of, by Ezra, AP:1654–55
purpose of, NT:2047

reason and, AP:1719–20
relationship of Gentiles to, NT:2041–42; NT:2043
of sacrifice, HB:3
and sin, NT:1985
Ten Commandments as, HB:3
as Torah, HB:3; HB:929
works of, NT:2045
written, HB:4
Laws of Hammurabi, HB:256; HB:260; HB:268; HB:284; HB:291
lawsuit
divine, HB:1312–13
against Israel, HB:1272
laying on of hands, HB:178; HB:231
Lazarus, raising of, NT:1900–1901
Lebanon, cedars of, HB:955; HB:988
Lemuel, words of, HB:933
leper(s), HB:542–43; NT:1757; NT:1794–95; NT:1838; NT:1863
leprosy, HB:554
Letter of Jeremiah. *See* Jeremiah
letters
in antiquity, NT:1973–74
of Ptolemy, AP:1672
scribes and, NT:1974
types of, NT:1973–74
Letters/Epistles of the New Testament, NT:1973–2151
classification and authorship of, NT:1973
dates of, NT:1973
Levi
in Chronicles, HB:584–86
priestly lineage of, HB:91
Leviathan, HB:729; HB:769–70; HB:834; HB:859; HB:1002
Levites, HB:130; HB:137
and aliens, HB:292
as assistants to priests, HB:188; HB:279–80
as bearers of the ark, HB:267; HB:598
in Chronicles, HB:653
courses of, HB:607–8; HB:654
duties and dues of, HB:188; HB:191–94; HB:214; HB:216–17; HB:611
as gatekeepers, HB:609–10
in postexilic period, HB:669–70; HB:704–5
levitical clans, HB:586; HB:607
Leviticus, Book of, HB:141–83
contents of, HB:141–42
date of, HB:141
meaning of name, HB:141
lex talionis (law of retaliation), HB:113; HB:282
liberation
firstborn and, HB:101
of Israel, HB:83; HB:84
life
enjoyment of, AP:1497–98
eternal, NT:1774–75; NT:1865; NT:1893
light of (Jesus), NT:1896
in the Spirit, NT:1986–87
life eternal, NT:1900
light
children of, NT:2078
and creation, HB:858
as God, NT:2137; NT:2139
of life (Jesus), NT:1896
of the world (Jesus), NT:1896
lion, mixed metaphor of, HB:1065
lion's den, in Daniel, HB:1246
liturgy, in Deuteronomy, HB:291–92
loans, AP:1495–96; *see also* debt; interest on loans
locusts
in Amos, HB:1293
day of, HB:1278
as eighth plague in Egypt, HB:96
in Joel, HB:1275
plague of, NT:2165
logos. *See* Word
Lord (kyrios), Jesus as, NT:1832
Lord's Prayer, NT:1755; NT:1813; NT:1851–52
Lord's Supper, NT:1926
divisions at, NT:2015–16
lots, HB:440; HB:916; *see also* divination; Purim, feast of; Urim and Thummim
casting of, HB:224; NT:1923
to choose Saul, HB:415
and courses of Levites, HB:610
Jonah and, HB:1303
"pur," AP:1417
Purim and, AP:1426
love
as basis of salvation, NT:2142–43
commandment, NT:2139–40; NT:2146
as confidence before God, NT:2142
of enemies, NT:1841
and the law, NT:1994
of neighbor, NT:1754; NT:1815–16
Lucifer, fall of, HB:988
Luke, as physician, NT:1827
Luke, Gospel According to, NT:1827–77
and Acts, NT:1827–28
authorship of, NT:1827
date of, NT:1827
language of, NT:1827–28

M

Maccabean revolt, AP:1457; AP:1556; AP:1616–20
in 2 Maccabees, AP:1599–1632
Maccabees, AP:1365; AP:1555
Maccabees, First (Book of), AP:1555–98
as compared to 2 Maccabees, AP:1599–1600
date of, AP:1555
as history, AP:1365; AP:1555
Maccabees, Second (Book of), AP:1599–1632
authorship and date of, AP:1599
as history, AP:1365
letters in, AP:1599–1600; AP:1600–1602; AP:1623–24
and Temple, AP:1599–1600
Maccabees, Third (Book of), AP:1365; AP:1659–73
as fictional story, AP:1659
language of, AP:1659
Maccabees, Fourth (Book of), AP:1717–38
Jewish martyrs in, AP:1717–18
as philosophical treatise, AP:1365
magicians in Egypt, HB:92–93
Magnificat, NT:1831
Malachi, HB:964
meaning of name, HB:1351
Malachi, Book of, HB:1351–56
date of, HB:1351
Manasseh, HB:76–77; HB:311; HB:315; HB:658–59
sins of, HB:664
as worst of Judean kings, HB:565
Manasseh, Prayer of. *See* Prayer of Manasseh

manna, AP:1450; HB:105–6; HB:202
postbiblical tradition about, HB:203
Mark, Gospel According to, NT:1791–1825
authorship of, NT:1791
ending of, NT:1791; NT:1824–25
messianic secret, NT:1823
story of, NT:1791–92
marriage; *see also* wife
after divorce, HB:289
in ancient Near East, HB:286
with Canaanites, HB:42
choices in, AP:1505
exogamous, AP:1364; AP:1370; AP:1652–54; HB:49; HB:60; HB:392; HB:492; HB:507–8; HB:679; HB:683–84; HB:705–6
Ezra-Nehemiah and exogamous, HB:668
Hosea and, HB:1260
in kingdom of God, NT:1810
law, violations of, HB:286
levirate, HB:64; HB:169–70
Paul's teaching on, NT:2007–10
prohibitions against exogamous, HB:263
symbolism of, HB:1050
as treaty, HB:453
martyrdom, AP:1599–1600
of Eleazar, AP:1612
of Jews under Antiochus IV Epiphanes, AP:1612–16
in Maccabees, Fourth (Book of), AP:1717–18
of mother and seven sons, AP:1613–16; AP:1727–38
Mary Magdalene, NT:1844
resurrection appearances to, NT:1790
Mattathias, revolt of, AP:1560–62
Matthew, Gospel According to, NT:1746–90
date of, NT:1746
fulfillment citations in, NT:1749
meal, sacred, and covenant ratification, HB:117
Megillot (festival scrolls), HB:392; HB:707; HB:1147
Melchizedek
Dead Sea Scrolls and, HB:31
order of, NT:2108–9
priesthood of, NT:2109
typology of, HB:31
menstruation, HB:54; HB:1149; *see also* blood
mercy seat, HB:119
Mesopotamian literature, HB:9
Messiah (Anointed), AP:1706; HB:403; HB:480; HB:776; HB:1028; NT:1770
Jesus as, NT:1748; NT:1762; NT:1807; NT:1812; NT:1820; NT:1832; NT:1847; NT:1884
as Son of David, NT:1816; NT:1925
messianic poem, in Micah, HB:1311
Micah, HB:963
Micah, Book of, HB:1306–15
date of, HB:1306
position of, HB:1306
Middle Assyrian laws, HB:286; HB:290; HB:291
Midian, priest of, HB:108
midrash (story), AP:1695–96; HB:634
military camp, rules for, HB:288
military, organization of, under David, HB:611
milk and honey, HB:173; HB:205
minor prophets, AP:1523; HB:1259
Miriam
complaint of, HB:206–8
as prophet, HB:105
as sister of Moses, HB:85
song of, HB:103–5
misogyny, in Ecclesiasticus, AP:1458
mission
in Gospel of Matthew, NT:1760
of Jesus, NT:1855–56
of the seventy, NT:1849–50
Moabite Mesha Stele, HB:316
Moabite Stone, HB:282; HB:536
moderation, HB:943
Molech/Moloch (Canaanite deity), HB:376
associated with child sacrifice, HB:170; HB:172; HB:272; NT:1933
monarchy, HB:399
divided, HB:485–86
Judahite, HB:575–76
negative portrayal of, HB:446
united, HB:575–76
Moses, AP:1517
blessing of, HB:307–10
call of, HB:86–87; HB:91
as central character of Pentateuch, HB:3
as covenant mediator, HB:111; HB:117; HB:131; HB:132
death of, HB:4; HB:302–12; HB:321
as Deuteronomy's speaker, HB:243; HB:247; HB:259
early life of, HB:85–86
genealogy of, HB:91
as intercessor, HB:1085
on Mount Sinai, HB:4
obedience of, HB:83
and Pharaoh, HB:90
priesthood descended from, HB:385
as prophet, HB:261; HB:267; HB:280
return of, to Egypt, HB:89
Song of, HB:304–7
theophanies to, HB:83–84; HB:86
most holy place (holy of holies; inner sanctuary), HB:120; HB:121; HB:497; HB:498–99; HB:586; HB:620; HB:621; HB:1252
Mount Sinai/Horeb, HB:118; HB:243
appearance of God at, HB:109
as God's abode, HB:105
location of, HB:82
Moses on, HB:4
revelation at, HB:259
mourning, AP:1508
signs of, HB:406–7
murder
atonement for, HB:283–84
bloodguilt of, HB:244
commandment against, HB:111; HB:112–13; HB:260
as a religious crime, HB:244
music, Elisha and, HB:537
musical instruments, HB:598
myrrh, HB:905; HB:952; HB:954; HB:955
mystery, NT:2054; NT:2056; NT:2059; NT:2069–70; NT:2072
in Revelation, NT:2156

N

Nabonidus, Prayer of (4QprNab), HB:1234; HB:1243
Naboth's vineyard, HB:525–27
Nahum, HB:963
Nahum, Book of, HB:1316–20
date of, HB:1316

nakedness, HB:22; HB:1149
euphemism for genitals, HB:431
in garden of Eden, HB:14–15
seeing, HB:22
and sexual prohibitions, HB:169–70
story of Lot and, HB:38
uncovering, HB:169
Name, the, as circumlocution for Yahweh, HB:178
name(s)
significance of, HB:34
theophoric, HB:1235
naming
of animals, HB:14
of place, HB:41
nations
conversion of, HB:1088
table of, HB:23
tower of Babel and, HB:25
nazirite vow, HB:194–95; HB:401; HB:1287; NT:1955
nazirites, AP:1565–66
Nebuchadnezzar, AP:1389–90; AP:1391–92; HB:571
in Daniel, HB:1235
doxology of, HB:1241
dream of, HB:1237
vision of, HB:1241–42
necromancy, HB:280; HB:980
Nehemiah
commission of, HB:687
journey of, HB:687
memoirs of, AP:1603; HB:671; HB:685
prayer of, HB:685–87
as rebuilder of Jerusalem's walls, HB:667–68; HB:688–93
Nehemiah, Book of, HB:312; HB:316; HB:685–706
neighbor, moral duties toward, HB:285; *see also* love
Nephilim (giants), HB:18
new moon, HB:430
Nicodemus and Jesus, NT:1886–87
Nineveh
Jonah and, HB:1302–3; HB:1304
Nahum and, HB:1316; HB:1317–19
Noah, HB:9
covenant of, HB:10
curse of, HB:30
Northern Kingdom, HB:10; HB:248; HB:342; HB:513–15; HB:669; HB:983; HB:1063–64; HB:1191; *see also* Israel; Samaria
Amos and, HB:1282; HB:1284
in Chronicles, HB:631; HB:654
exile of, HB:531; HB:558–60; HB:584; HB:836; HB:839
fall of, HB:486; HB:840; HB:966; HB:982
Hosea and, HB:1259; HB:1263
Micah and, HB:1307
oracles against, HB:1003
Penuel/Peniel as capital, HB:57
and prophetic books, HB:961
prophetic condemnation of, HB:981–82
Tirzah capital of, HB:956
Zechariah and, HB:1346
novella, historical, Esther and, HB:708
Numbers, Book of, HB:185–245
contents of, HB:185
name of, HB:185
numbers, significance of
forty, NT:1751
four, NT:2163
fourteen, NT:1748
large, HB:633
sayings with, AP:1490–91
seven, HB:263; HB:327–28; NT:1806; NT:2154; NT:2155; NT:2160; NT:2161–62; NT:2164; NT:2167–68
six, NT:2162
ten, HB:92
twelve, HB:961; NT:1760; NT:1806; NT:1923; NT:2160; NT:2168
Nunc Dimittis, NT:1833

O

oath taking, HB:42
oath(s), AP:1487
violations of, AP:1631
Obadiah, Book of, HB:1298–1300
date of, HB:1298
Obadiah, meaning of name, HB:1298
obedience, NT:1984–85
as better than sacrifice, HB:806
to book of law, HB:321
consequences of, HB:294–95
and Israel's possession of land, HB:625–27
prosperity and, HB:267–68
offerings, AP:1395
elevation, HB:125; HB:151–52; HB:176; HB:195; HB:216
freewill, HB:133; HB:142; HB:150; HB:1227; HB:1248; HB:1289
grain, HB:144–45; HB:150; HB:194; HB:211
guilt, HB:148–49; HB:151; HB:192; HB:408; HB:1219; HB:1240
sin (purification), HB:124–25; HB:146–48; HB:151; HB:202; HB:217; HB:232; HB:700; HB:1219; HB:1240
thanksgiving, HB:151
types of, HB:112–17
voluntary, HB:119
vow, HB:151
well-being, HB:145–46; HB:151–52; HB:195; HB:211
oil, HB:144
for anointing, HB:194; HB:244
for light, HB:194
omens, as legitimation of prophets, HB:272
oppression of Israel, HB:83; HB:84
oracles
on Babylon, HB:986–89; HB:1138–44
Book of Numbers and, HB:224–27
on Cyrus, HB:1028–29
against Egypt, HB:1129–32
against false prophecy, HB:1176
against foreign nations, HB:1129–45
Gog of Magog, HB:1214–17; HB:1235–37
of Isaiah, HB:961
against the nations, HB:1195–1207
against Northern Kingdom, HB:1003
against Philistines, HB:1132; HB:1196
prophets, concerning, HB:1097–99
on restoration of Jerusalem and Temple, HB:1296; HB:1336; HB:1338
of salvation, HB:1331–32; HB:1336
Sibylline Oracles, HB:1238
against sorceresses, HB:1176
oral folklore and ancestral history of Israel, HB:9

oral tradition
and Gospels, NT:1791
in prophetic books, HB:961
ordeals, adultery and, HB:193
original sin, HB:14

P

P (source of Pentateuch), HB:4–5; HB:9–10
account of creation in, HB:11
dating of, HB:6
flood story and, HB:19–20
Holiness Collection and, HB:6
and Leviticus, HB:141
in primeval history, HB:11
use of divine name in, HB:17
parables, NT:1775; NT:1778–79; NT:1783–84; NT:1814; NT:1839; NT:1844; NT:1851; NT:1852; NT:1854; NT:1856; NT:1857; NT:1858; NT:1859–60; NT:1861; NT:1864–65; NT:1866
teaching in, NT:1765–67; NT:1798–99
parenesis (ethical instruction), NT:2085
parents, honoring, AP:1462; HB:284–85
parousia, NT:2077; *see also* Second Coming of Christ
passion of Jesus; *see also* crucifixion; Jesus
first prediction of, NT:1807; NT:1847
second prediction of, NT:1772; NT:1809; NT:1848–49
third prediction of, NT:1811; NT:1865
Passover, festival of, HB:232; HB:277; HB:320; HB:326; HB:1226; HB:1247; NT:1882
first, HB:202
Hezekiah and, HB:653–54
Josiah and, AP:1633; AP:1634–35; HB:570; HB:662–63
linked to death of Jesus, NT:1785; NT:1819; NT:1912; NT:1913; NT:1914
meaning of word, HB:98
as night of vigil, HB:100
origins of, HB:98
in postexilic period, AP:1648; HB:677
preparations for, NT:1871
Pastoral Epistles, NT:1973; NT:2084
authorship of, NT:2084
patrilineal society, HB:85
Paul
before Agrippa II, NT:1965–67
as apostle, NT:2026; NT:2042–43
as apostle to the Gentiles, NT:2041; NT:2042–43
apostolic authority of, NT:2035–39
arrest of, NT:1960–61
in Athens, NT:1952–53
conformity of, to Judaism, NT:1960
confrontation of, with Peter, NT:2045
conversion of, NT:1921; NT:1936–37; NT:2043
in Corinth, NT:1953–55
defense of, NT:2029; NT:2031
in Ephesus, NT:1956–57
before Felix, NT:1964–65
as independent missionary, NT:1948; NT:1949
journey of, to Jerusalem, NT:1959–60
journey of, to Rome, NT:1970
meeting of, with Jerusalem leaders, NT:2043–45; NT:2096
ministry of, NT:2028–31
mission of, NT:2069–70
preaching of, in Damascus, NT:1937–38
in prison, NT:2061; NT:2062; NT:2067; NT:2069; NT:2072; NT:2091; NT:2092; NT:2094; NT:2100
recapitulation of life of, NT:2042–45
reflections of, on impending death, NT:2094
before Sanhedrin, NT:1962–63
as Saul, NT:1935
in second half of Acts, NT:1943–71
third missionary journey of, NT:1955–59
Pentateuch
anachronisms in, HB:243
authorship of, HB:4
coherence of, HB:3
compilation and redaction of, HB:6–7; HB:248–49
composite nature of, HB:3
contradictions in, HB:4–5
covenant in, HB:3
dating of, HB:6
as divine word, HB:4
Documentary Hypothesis and, HB:4–5
genre of, HB:3
legal collections in, HB:3
meaning of term, HB:3
modern source theories of, HB:4–6
Moses as central character of, HB:3
promise of the land in, HB:3
in rabbinic sources, HB:4
strands of tradition of, HB:6
as torah, HB:3
unifying theme of, HB:3
Pentecost, HB:115; NT:1923; *see also* harvest festival; Shavuot; Weeks, festival of
people of the land, HB:549–50; HB:554; HB:673; HB:1335
people of the Lord, HB:215; HB:644
unfaithfulness of, HB:1353–54
persecution
in 1 Thessalonians, NT:2075
of Christians by Herod Agrippa I, NT:1941–42
Persian Empire, HB:664–65
Ecclesiastes and, HB:935
Joel and, HB:1275
prophetic books and, HB:963
Persian period
Chronicles and, HB:575
Zechariah and, HB:1345
Peter
arrest of, NT:1927; NT:1941–42
confession of, NT:1847
denial of Jesus, NT:1820–21; NT:1872
as fisherman, NT:1916
healing miracle of, NT:1926
misunderstanding of, NT:1807
as shepherd, NT:1916
status with Jesus, NT:1917
Peter, First Letter of, NT:2126–31
authorship and date of, NT:2126
eschatological exhortation in, NT:2130–31
Peter, Second Letter of, NT:2132–36
apocalyptic vision of, NT:2132–33
themes of, NT:2133

Pharaoh
dirge over, HB:1205–6
prophecies against, HB:1201–2
Pharisees, NT:1886–87; NT:1898; NT:1962; *see also* scribe(s)
in Acts, NT:1947
in Gospel of John, NT:1880
in Gospel of Luke, NT:1838
in Gospel of Matthew, NT:1747
and Jesus, NT:1814–15
and sabbath restrictions, NT:1796
and Sadducees, NT:1750–51
sayings against, NT:1853–54
yeast of, NT:1854
Philemon, Letter of Paul to, NT:2100–2102
written from prison, NT:2100
Philippians, Letter of Paul to, NT:2061–66
date of, NT:2061
hymn in, NT:2061
themes of, NT:2061
written from prison, NT:2061
Philistines, HB:102; HB:406; HB:577; *see also* Sea Peoples
Amos against, HB:1285
and the ark of the covenant, HB:406–9
in Chronicles, HB:597
cities of, HB:357
and David, HB:439–40; HB:441–42
defeat of, HB:456–57
oracles against, HB:1132; HB:1196
Samson and, HB:379–83
and war with Saul, HB:418
physicians, AP:1507
pilgrimage festivals, AP:1369; HB:276–77; HB:1264
pillar of cloud, AP:1489; HB:102; HB:131; HB:303
pillar of fire, AP:1451; HB:102
pillar(s), HB:132; HB:263; HB:654; HB:1270
Jachin and Boaz as, HB:500; HB:549; HB:621
twelve, HB:117
Pit, the, AP:1692; HB:743; HB:760; HB:785; HB:795; HB:796; HB:846; HB:897; HB:988; HB:1019; HB:1205; *see also* Sheol
plagues, HB:130
as divine warning, HB:1289
against Egypt, AP:1441–42; AP:1449–55; HB:91–101
in Egypt, AP:1517
in Psalms, HB:860
ten, in Exodus, HB:92–98
plan of God, in Ephesians, NT:2056
poetical and wisdom books, HB:721–22
poetry
acrostics, HB:780; HB:800; HB:802; HB:871; HB:890; HB:933–34; HB:1147
characteristics of, HB:722–24
Lamentations and, HB:1147
last words of David as, HB:480
meter in, HB:723
parallelism in, HB:723–24
song of Hannah as, HB:402–3
song of Moses as, HB:103–5
Song of Solomon as, HB:950–51
song of the Bow, HB:447
poles, sacred (Asherim), HB:132; HB:263; HB:278; HB:367; HB:654
Pontius Pilate, AP:1661; NT:1787–88; NT:1821; NT:1834; NT:1873; NT:1912–13; NT:2090
poor, AP:1475
care for, AP:1463–64
and divine justice, AP:1504
exploitation of, HB:972; HB:1286–87
obligations to, AP:1468
possessions, NT:1755–56; *see also* property
postexilic community, Torah and, HB:667–68
postexilic period, Tobit and, AP:1368
potter, metaphor of, HB:1029; HB:1090–91
power
of God, HB:1316
limits of, HB:944–45
prayer, NT:1755
of Christian community, NT:1928
communal, HB:698
for the dead, AP:1626
instruction on, NT:2086–87
in Jeremiah, HB:1079
Jesus and, NT:1835
of Susanna, AP:1550
Prayer of Azariah, AP:1366; AP:1543–47; HB:1240
Prayer of Manasseh, AP:1656–57
as hymnic lament, AP:1366; AP:1656
language of, AP:1656
Prayer of Nabonidus (4QprNab), HB:1234; HB:1243
preference, divine, HB:16
pride, AP:1471
as cause of Egypt's fall, HB:1204
temptation to, HB:265
priesthood; *see also* high priesthood
Aaronic, HB:576; HB:586; HB:669–71; HB:869
duties and dues of, HB:216–17
Levitical, HB:279–80; NT:2109–10
in Malachi, HB:1352
and Solomonic Temple, HB:607–8
priestly consecration ceremony in Leviticus, HB:141
priestly restrictions, HB:173–74
Priestly Torah, HB:141; HB:169; HB:185
priests, AP:1546–47
consecration of, HB:152–55
courses of, HB:607–8; HB:654
Levitical, HB:279–80; HB:1114
obligations to, AP:1468
office of, HB:122
ordination of, HB:124–25
organization of, by David, HB:61
in postexilic period, HB:669–71
unfaithfulness of, HB:1352
vestments of, HB:122–24; HB:137; HB:153
primeval history, HB:11
layers of, HB:30
sources of, HB:11
primogeniture, HB:284
promised land, HB:132
conquest of, HB:263–64
risks of entering, HB:263
promise(s), AP:1544; *see also* covenant
to Abraham, HB:27; HB:50; HB:74; HB:81
to ancestors, HB:244; HB:247
to David, of dynasty, HB:455–56; HB:480; HB:600–601; HB:606; HB:866
of God, after flood, HB:21
of land, HB:3
of offspring, HB:32; HB:34
to patriarchs, HB:318
to Solomon, HB:618

to sons of Jacob/Israel, HB:9
property, Book of Ruth and, HB:397–98
prophecy, HB:931
and apocalypticism, HB:964
apostolic, NT:2151
in Deuteronomy, HB:272
disputations about, HB:1175–76
end of, AP:1366; AP:1578
epochs of, HB:962
false, HB:1176
fulfillment of, HB:665
history of, HB:962–64
of judgment, HB:1190
music and song of, HB:609
phenomenon, HB:962–64
as spiritual gift, NT:2018–19
true and false, HB:280–81
prophetic books
autobiography and biography in, HB:961
canonical placement of, HB:961
dates of, HB:962–63
introduction to, HB:961–64
Northern Kingdom and, HB:961
oral tradition and, HB:961
prophet(s), AP:1522–23; NT:1753; NT:1757
Abraham as, HB:38
in Assyrian period, HB:963
in Babylonian period, HB:963
Christian, NT:2056
in early church, NT:1941
end of, AP:1366; AP:1578
female, HB:693
local, HB:962
man of God as, HB:307
Miriam as, HB:105
under monarchy, HB:962–63
Mosaic, HB:280
oracles concerning, HB:1097–99
second division of Hebrew Bible, NT:1753
proselytes, NT:1924
prosperity; *see also* wealth
obedience and, HB:267–68
peril of, HB:265
prostitutes, HB:904; NT:1778
temple, HB:514–15; HB:1264
prostitution, AP:1538; HB:171; HB:172
as idolatry, HB:172
restrictions on, HB:288
sacred, HB:64; HB:288
Proverbs, Book of, HB:721; HB:897–934
authorship of, HB:895
male-centered perspective of, HB:896
purpose of, HB:895
sayings in, HB:907–22
Solomonic authorship of, HB:725
proverbs, Solomon and, HB:496
providence, divine, AP:1443–44; HB:70–71
Psalm 151, AP:1658
psalms
of ascent, HB:876–82
communal, HB:788; HB:809–10; HB:822; HB:833–34; HB:839–40; HB:842–43; HB:844; HB:851–52; HB:877; HB:878–79; HB:880
communal laments, HB:848–49; HB:1051–53
enthronement, HB:851; HB:854
entrance liturgy, HB:784
genres of, HB:774
hymns, HB:779; HB:786; HB:788; HB:792; HB:796; HB:799; HB:805; HB:845; HB:852; HB:853–54; HB:855; HB:857; HB:859–60; HB:867–68; HB:882–83; HB:883–84; HB:890–91; HB:891–94
individual laments, HB:836; HB:1154–55
penitential, HB:778; HB:798; HB:804; HB:815–16; HB:855–57
pilgrimage hymns, HB:876
postexilic, HB:884–85; HB:891–92
prayer for deliverance, HB:818; HB:828–30; HB:876
prayer for national unity, HB:882
royal, HB:774; HB:789; HB:810–11; HB:831–32; HB:855; HB:866; HB:881–82; HB:889–90
Temple liturgy and, HB:721; HB:774
thanksgiving, AP:1526–27; HB:796; HB:798; HB:806–7; HB:825–26; HB:850–51; HB:863–64; HB:870–71
of trust, HB:784; HB:794; HB:823; HB:849–50; HB:876–77; HB:881
wisdom, HB:813; HB:832
Zion hymns, HB:811; HB:835; HB:877; HB:878
Psalms, Book of, HB:775–894
and Chronicles, HB:599–600
Davidic authority of, HB:724–25
Davidic monarchy and, HB:776
history of, HB:773
Korahite collection, HB:808; HB:812; HB:814; HB:844; HB:845
meaning of, HB:773
pseudepigraphy, HB:248; NT:2084
Ptolemies, AP:1555; AP:1557; HB:1255
Ptolemy IV Philopator and 3 Maccabees, AP:1659; AP:1660–65; AP:1667–68; AP:1672
public officials, laws of, HB:277
punishment of the guilty, HB:1171–72
purification, HB:217
after recovery, HB:161–62
for covenant ceremony, HB:110
Purim, feast of
Esther and, HB:707; HB:712
inauguration of, AP:1425–26
origins of, HB:717–19

Q

Q (Quelle), NT:1744; NT:1746; NT:1827
Qohelet. *See* Ecclesiastes, Book of
quails, manna and, HB:105–6

R

Rachel
death of, HB:60
descendants of, HB:187
tomb of, HB:60
rape, HB:286–87
attempted, of Susanna, AP:1549–50
of concubine, HB:385–87
of Dinah, HB:57–58
of guests, HB:36
of Tamar, HB:462–64
Raphael and Tobit, AP:1374; AP:1376–78; AP:1384–85
rationalism, HB:4
rebellion in wilderness, HB:203–4; HB:213
red, as color, NT:2162
red cow, HB:217–19
Red Sea, HB:104; *see also* Sea of Reeds
as Gulf of Eilat/Aqabah, HB:116
location of, HB:102
wilderness wandering and, HB:219–20

Redeemer, God as, HB:745
reform of Josiah
Deuteronomy and, HB:247
historical background of, HB:248
relations, with God and community, NT:2123
relationships, damaged, AP:1493–94
religion and social justice, AP:1503
religious practices, warning against, NT:2070–71
remnant, HB:978; HB:983; NT:1989–90; NT:1991
repentance
call to, AP:1480; HB:1042; HB:1338; HB:1354–55; NT:1751; NT:1834
Chronicles and, HB:576
plea for, in Amos, HB:1290
possibility of, HB:1063–65
as theme of Jonah, HB:1302
responsibility
communal, HB:268
human, AP:1477–78
individual, HB:268
restoration of Jerusalem and Temple; *see also* Babylonian exile; Jerusalem; Temple, Second
God's honor as cause of, HB:1212–13; HB:1232–33
oracle of, HB:1296; HB:1336; HB:1338
poem of, AP:1534–36
prayer for, AP:1504–5
prophecies of, HB:1207–17
visions of, HB:1339
resurrection; *see also* Jesus
appearances, NT:1790; NT:1824; NT:1877
belief in, NT:1964
of the dead, NT:2019–22
final, NT:1890
of Jesus, NT:1914–15
Psalm 110 and, HB:866
questions about, NT:1868–69
Sadducees and, NT:1751; NT:1779–80
retribution, HB:943
return from exile, HB:667–68
three stages of, HB:669–95
returnees, list of, HB:669–71; HB:694–95
Revelation to John, NT:2153–80
as apocalyptic writing, NT:2155
authorship and date of, NT:2153
interpretation of, NT:2154
revisionism, historical, HB:311–12; HB:315–16
reward and punishment, Proverbs and, HB:895–96
righteous, the; *see also* righteousness
contrasted with the wicked, AP:1428
death of, HB:1044
reward of, AP:1431
righteousness, HB:970; NT:2032; NT:2060; NT:2114; NT:2121
of Abraham, HB:35
elusiveness of, HB:943–44
faith and, NT:2064
of God, AP:1443–44; NT:1977–78; NT:1981; NT:1990; NT:1991
in Matthew, NT:1751
meaning of, HB:31
as theme of Romans, NT:1976
and true worship, AP:1448
works of, NT:2098
Romans, Letter of Paul to, NT:1975–98
anti-Judaism and, NT:1975
date of, NT:1975
themes of, NT:1976
Rome, treaty with, AP:1576
Ruth, Book of
authorship of, HB:392
position of, in Bible, HB:392
as short story, HB:311; HB:315
as story, HB:392–93

S

sabbath, HB:175; HB:180; HB:260–61; HB:850
bread of the presence and, HB:119
commandment of, HB:111; HB:115; HB:128; HB:133
of complete rest, HB:176; HB:179
and creation, HB:11; HB:12
creation of, HB:3
healing on, NT:1763; NT:1796; NT:1839–40; NT:1856–57; NT:1857–58; NT:1889
laws, NT:1763; NT:1898
manna and, HB:106–7
observance of, AP:1636; HB:1043; HB:1089–90; HB:1186
violation of, HB:213; HB:705
work on, HB:213; NT:1796
sabbatical year, HB:179–80; HB:303; *see also* jubilee year
sacred meal, and covenant ratification, HB:117
sacred poles (Asherim), HB:132; HB:263; HB:278; HB:367; HB:654
sacrifice, AP:1503; HB:247; HB:413; HB:625
animals for, HB:271; HB:276; HB:1352
of children, HB:169; HB:172; HB:272; HB:280; HB:557; HB:862; HB:1044; HB:1073; HB:1187
of firstborn, HB:40
human, HB:183
of Isaac, HB:40
in Leviticus, HB:141
meat from, NT:1756
moral action and, HB:969
Noah's ark and, HB:19–20
and obedience, HB:806
old and new, NT:2112–13
in postexilic period, HB:671
prescriptions for, HB:143–49
Priestly tradition of flood and, HB:21
resumption of, AP:1644–45
Sadducees, NT:1779
dispute of Jesus with, NT:1815
and resurrection, NT:1751; NT:1779–80; NT:1815; NT:1868–69; NT:1927; NT:1962
Salem, Jerusalem as, HB:31
salt, covenant of, HB:633
salvation, NT:2137; NT:2138
forgiveness and, NT:1983
oracles of, HB:1331–32; HB:1336
Samaria; *see also* Northern Kingdom
capital of Northern Kingdom, HB:513
capture of, HB:558
siege of, HB:523; HB:542–43
and worship of Baal, HB:548
Samaritans, NT:1760; NT:1851; NT:1887–89
and rejection of Jesus, NT:1849
Samuel
birth and consecration of, HB:400–401

call of, HB:405
death of, HB:436
as judge, HB:399; HB:409–10
as prophet, HB:399
Samuel, Books of, HB:310; HB:314; HB:400–483
division of, HB:310
sanctuary (holy place), HB:121
and camp, HB:192
consecration of, HB:152–53
dedication offerings in, HB:197–98
furnishings of, HB:201
most holy place (holy of holies; inner sanctuary), HB:120; HB:121; HB:497; HB:498–99; HB:586; HB:620; HB:621; HB:1252
slaughter at, HB:167–68
transporting of, HB:193–94
Sarai (Sarah), HB:26
as Abraham's sister, HB:38
meaning of name, HB:34
Satan, HB:604; NT:2082; NT:2150; *see also* Baal-zebub; Beelzebul; devil; Lucifer; snake
as accuser, NT:2028
as Adversary, HB:727; HB:1340; NT:1793; NT:1797; NT:1798; NT:2140–41; NT:2168
as Beelzebul, NT:1761; NT:1797
as deceiver, NT:2076
defeat of, NT:2177–78
Judas and, NT:1871
Saul
anointing of, HB:412–15
and David, HB:427–30; HB:435–36; HB:438–39
death of, HB:443–44; HB:591–93
kingship of, HB:415–16
meaning of name, HB:401; HB:410; HB:412
sin of, HB:418–19
and war with Philistines, HB:418–22
Savior, Jesus as, NT:1832–33; *see also* Jesus
scribe(s), AP:1508–9; HB:677; HB:1074–75; NT:1755; NT:1793; NT:1839; *see also* Pharisees
and apocalyptic writing, HB:964
controversies of Jesus with, NT:1795; NT:1797
and letter writing, NT:1974
and prayer, AP:1509
warning against, NT:1816; NT:1869
scripture. *see* Bible
scrolls, festival (Megillot), HB:392; HB:707; HB:1147
Sea of Reeds (yam suf), HB:102; HB:535; *see also* Red Sea
Sea Peoples, HB:102; *see also* Philistines
Second Coming of Christ, NT:2092; NT:2094; *see also* parousia
Second Esdras. *See* Esdras, Second
Second Isaiah, HB:963; HB:1019–42; *see also* Isaiah
Second Maccabees. *See* Maccabees, Second (Book of)
Second Temple. *See* Temple, Second
Selah (in Psalms), HB:776; HB:789; HB:792; HB:805–6; HB:811; HB:816; HB:818; HB:821; HB:825; HB:827; HB:835; HB:841; HB:846; HB:886
Seleucids, AP:1555; AP:1557; HB:1255
self-control, prayer for, AP:1487
Sennacherib, HB:313; HB:560–64; HB:656–57; HB:968
Septuagint, AP:1361; HB:27; HB:485; HB:1058; *see also* Bible; Greek Bible
seraphs, HB:976
Sermon on the Mount, NT:1746
Sermon on the Plain, NT:1840–41
servant
Israel as, HB:1023
the Lord's, HB:1033–34
Servant Songs, HB:1023; HB:1033–34; HB:1036; HB:1039–40
servanthood, in Isaiah, HB:1022
sexual abstinence, NT:2007–8
sexual intercourse
euphemisms for, HB:22–23
marital, HB:14
Paul on sexual relations, NT:2007–8
in Song of Solomon, HB:951
sexual metaphors, HB:132; HB:172; HB:182
sexual offenses, AP:1488; NT:2150; *see also* idolatry
in Corinth, NT:2007
in Ephesus, NT:2057–58
as metaphor for illicit dealings, NT:2173
as metaphor for religious infidelity, NT:2158
sexual prohibitions, HB:169–72
shame, true and false, AP:1513
Shavuot, HB:115; HB:392; *see also* harvest festival; Pentecost; Weeks, festival of
Shechem, HB:77
ceremonies at, in Deuteronomy, HB:293–94
covenant renewal at, HB:331–32
national assembly at, HB:630
as personal name, HB:57
Sheol, AP:1476; AP:1480; AP:1484–85; HB:63; HB:69; HB:214–15; HB:478; HB:733; HB:740; HB:743; HB:747; HB:778; HB:781; HB:786; HB:813; HB:818; HB:819; HB:845–46; HB:848; HB:870; HB:886; HB:888; HB:897; HB:902; HB:914; HB:923; HB:928–29; HB:932; HB:940; HB:975; HB:978; HB:988; HB:1004; HB:1018–19; HB:1044; HB:1155; HB:1205; HB:1273; HB:1295; HB:1304; *see also* Pit
shepherd; *see also* divine shepherd
Jesus as, NT:1899
as metaphor for ruler, HB:1028
stricken, HB:1349
worthless, HB:1347–48
Sheshbazzar, as leader of returnees, HB:667
shibboleth, meaning of word, HB:377
Shiloh, assembly of, HB:344
shrine, HB:117; HB:413; *see also* high places
Sibylline Oracles, HB:1238
sign
circumcision as, HB:33
of the end-time, NT:1869; NT:2078
God's promise and, HB:87
of Jonah, NT:1852–53
Moses and, HB:87; HB:88
seeking, NT:1764; NT:1806
signs and wonders, NT:1996
in early Christian community, NT:1929
silence, AP:1483
Simon Maccabee, AP:1580; AP:1590–97

death of, AP:1597–98
as high priest, AP:1593–95
sin
as cause of death, AP:1626
confession of, AP:1531–33; AP:1544
deceitfulness of, NT:2106
first mention of, HB:16
and forgiveness in community, NT:2143–44
forgiveness of, AP:1494; NT:1795; NT:1838–39; NT:1945
punishment for, AP:1478
responsibility for, AP:1477–78
warnings against, AP:1484–85
in wilderness, HB:202
Sinai, Mount. *See* Mount Sinai/Horeb
Sirach, Wisdom of Jesus Son of. *See* Ben Sira; Ecclesiasticus
Sixth Ezra. *See* Ezra, Sixth
slander, NT:2150
slavery; *see also* slaves
laws concerning, in Pentateuch, HB:5
in postexilic period, HB:691
slaves, AP:1501–2; HB:179–80; HB:260–61; *see also* slavery
escaped, HB:288
manumission of, HB:275
rights of, HB:112
snake
characterization of, HB:14
punishment of, HB:15
society, conduct in, NT:2129–30
Sodom and Gomorrah, HB:29; HB:1012; HB:1093; HB:1098; HB:1140; NT:1761
Abraham's intercession for, HB:35
destruction of, HB:36; HB:38
in prophets, HB:969
Solomon, AP:1521; NT:1756
becoming king, HB:489; HB:614–15
blessing of, HB:623–25
in Chronicles, HB:606
idealized presentation of, HB:614–15; HB:627–30
as maker of proverbs, HB:496
and the nations, HB:496
palace of, HB:499–500
prayer of, for wisdom, AP:1439–40
Proverbs and, HB:895
in Song of Solomon, HB:953–54; *see also* Song of Solomon
Temple of; *see* Temple of Solomon
wealth of, HB:493; HB:505–6; HB:507; HB:618; HB:629–30
wisdom and, AP:1436; HB:492–95; HB:618; *see also* Wisdom of Solomon
Son of David
Jesus as, NT:1812
as Messiah, NT:1816
Son of God, NT:1937; NT:2108; NT:2110
son of man (a mortal)
in Daniel, HB:1248
Ezekiel and, HB:1161; HB:1164
Son of Man (Jesus), NT:1770; NT:1787; NT:1795; NT:1796; NT:1807; NT:1809; NT:1817; NT:1820–21; NT:1863–64; NT:1884; NT:1891; NT:1892; NT:1899
coming of, NT:1870
meaning of, NT:1758
as self-identification of Jesus, NT:1758; NT:1761; NT:1762; NT:1839; NT:2156
Song of Deborah, HB:363–65
Song of Hannah, HB:402–3
Song of Moses, HB:304–7
Song of Solomon, HB:950–59
as love poetry, HB:721
Solomonic authorship of, HB:725
song of thanksgiving, AP:1545
Song of the Bow, HB:447
Song of the Three Jews, AP:1366; AP:1542; AP:1543–47; AP:1548
location of, AP:1543
Songs of Ascent, HB:773
sons of God, HB:18; *see also* heavenly beings; heavenly court
Sophia, divine, in Wisdom of Solomon, AP:1428
sorites, AP:1435
soul; *see also* immortality
Platonic view of, AP:1439
transmigration of, AP:1439
Southern Kingdom; *see also* Judah
end of, HB:570–74
Hezekiah and, HB:560–65
Isaiah and, HB:965–66
Josiah and, HB:566–67
rulers of, HB:512–18; HB:527–29; HB:544–53; HB:556–57
Spartans, AP:1587–88
speech, AP:1483–84
and character, AP:1493–94
destructive, AP:1494–95
sinful, AP:1487–88
Spirit
freedom in, NT:2049
of Trinity, HB:11
of truth, NT:1906
spirit of God/the Lord, HB:416; HB:424
spirits, elemental, NT:2048; NT:2071
spiritual gifts, NT:2016–17
steadfastness, in ministry, NT:2094
Stoic philosophers, NT:1952
stoning, as punishment for adultery, HB:65
storm god, battles of, against Sea, HB:104
strange woman, HB:896; HB:899
dangers of, HB:902; HB:904–5
Succession Narrative, HB:445
Succoth, meaning of term, HB:57; *see also* booths, festival of
suffering, NT:1987–88
Book of Job and, HB:726
in joy and hope, NT:2131
responsible, NT:2130
suicide, HB:591
Susanna, AP:1365; AP:1542; AP:1548–51
sword
of Nebuchadrezzar, HB:1189–90
prophecies of, HB:1188–90
song of, HB:1188–89
syncretism, religious, HB:248
Syro-Ephraimite War, Isaiah and, HB:965; HB:976–77; HB:991–92

T

tabernacle, HB:83; HB:120–21; HB:135–36; HB:138; HB:190; *see also* sanctuary
construction of, HB:3
court of, HB:121–22
furnishings of, HB:118; HB:121–22; HB:139
tent over, HB:120
"Tale of Two Brothers," HB:65
Tamar, Judah and, HB:64
taunts, in Habakkuk, HB:1323–24
tax
on agricultural yield and personl property, NT:1779
imperial Roman, NT:1772; NT:1814–15; NT:1868

in Persian period, HB:691
poll, of Romans, AP:1663; AP:1666
for sanctuary, HB:126
Temple, NT:1772
tax collectors, NT:1754; NT:1760; NT:1778; NT:1864–65
teachers, false, NT:2093
warnings against, NT:2134–35
teaching, true and false, NT:2085; NT:2086–87; NT:2088; NT:2090
temperance, AP:1499; AP:1507
temple imagery, HB:16
Temple of Solomon
building of, HB:496–99; HB:618–23
dedication of, HB:623–26
description of, HB:621–22
destruction of, HB:839
new, in Ezekiel, HB:1217–22; HB:1238–43
ordinances concerning, HB:1224–25; HB:1244–46
as a place of refuge, HB:794
plan of, HB:613
rebuilding of, under Cyrus, AP:1637–38; AP:1644–48; HB:667–68; HB:671–77; HB:963
rededication of, by Hezekiah, HB:653–54
restoration plan of, HB:1238–52
system of worship at, HB:607–8
Temple, Second, NT:1900
construction of, HB:671–77
dedication of, HB:676
desecration of, by Antiochus IV Epiphanes, AP:1559; AP:1609–10
destruction of, HB:1147; NT:1816; NT:1869
and Jesus, NT:1813; NT:1823; NT:1833–34; NT:1867; NT:1879
and 3 Maccabees, AP:1660–61
new, in Ezekiel, HB:1217–22; HB:1238–43
rebuilt by Herod the Great, NT:1813; NT:1885–86
rededication of, AP:1567–68; AP:1620
Temple sermon, HB:1102–3
Temple visions, in Ezekiel, HB:1170–74
Ten Commandments, HB:3; HB:110–11; HB:117; HB:132; HB:137; *see also* Decalogue
form of, HB:110
tent of meeting, HB:127; HB:131; HB:138; HB:143; HB:303; HB:622
Teraphim, HB:383; HB:429; HB:1263
testing of Israel in the wilderness, HB:105–7
tetragrammaton, NT:1832
Tetrateuch, HB:32
thanksgiving, song of, AP:1545
Theodotion, AP:1542; AP:1548
theophany
and conversion of Saul/Paul, NT:1936
and covenant ratification, HB:116
with Moses, HB:117; HB:131
to Samson's mother, HB:378
as storm and earthquake, HB:110
Thessalonians, First Letter of Paul to, NT:2074–79
Thessalonians, Second Letter of Paul to, NT:2080–83
Third Isaiah, HB:1042–56; *see also* Isaiah
Third Maccabees. *See* Maccabees, Third (Book of)
Three Jews, Song of the. *See* Song of the Three Jews
throne-chariot vision, HB:1162–64
Thummim. *See* Urim and Thummim
Tiglath-pileser III, HB:651; HB:965; HB:977–78
Hosea and, HB:1259
and invasion of Israel, HB:555; HB:583–84
Timothy, NT:1998; NT:2005; NT:2026; NT:2027–28; NT:2063–64; NT:2068; NT:2074; NT:2075; NT:2076–77; NT:2091
and Paul, NT:1949–50
Timothy, First Letter of Paul to, NT:2085–90
opponents in, NT:2085
Timothy, Second Letter of Paul to, NT:2091–95
as testament, NT:2091
theme of, NT:2091
tithe, AP:1369–70; HB:274; HB:1289; HB:1354–55; NT:1853
rules of, HB:274–75
Titus, Letter of Paul to, NT:2096–99
Tobit, Book of, AP:1365; AP:1368–88
daily life and, AP:1368–69
endogamy in, AP:1370
fictional nature of, AP:1369
genealogy in, AP:1369
humor in, AP:1368
hymn of, AP:1385–86
language of, AP:1368
and popular wisdom, AP:1375
as postexilic, AP:1368
prayer of, AP:1372–73
testament of, AP:1386–87
toledot (descendants), HB:9; *see also* genealogy
tongues, as spiritual gift, NT:2016–17
torah (Torah), HB:3; *see also* Bible; law; law and the prophets; Pentateuch
applied to Pentateuch, HB:3–4
implementing of, in postexilic period, HB:696–97
as law, HB:3
of Moses, HB:3–4
reading of, in postexilic period, HB:696
as teaching, HB:3
Tower of Babel. *See* Babel
tradition
and authority, NT:1768
of elders, NT:1804–5
and Proverbs, HB:895
transfiguration, NT:1771; NT:1808; NT:1835; NT:1848; NT:1973; *see also* Jesus; theophany
Transjordan
distribution of land in, HB:237–39; HB:253–56
tribal allotment of, HB:339
treaties
of Apamea, AP:1576
Esarhaddon, Vassal Treaty of, HB:248; HB:272; HB:294
marriage as, HB:453
with Rome, AP:1576
of suzerainty, HB:272
tree(s)
sacred, HB:27
symbolism of, HB:13
tribes
in Book of Joshua, HB:320; HB:340–48
list of, in Deuteronomy, HB:294
tricksters
in folklore, HB:9; HB:47–48
Jacob as, HB:51

Jacob's sons as, HB:58
Rachel as, HB:54
Tamar as, HB:64
trumpet(s), HB:110; HB:233
signal, HB:203
truth, praise of, AP:1641
twelve, HB:962; *see also* numbers, significance of
twelve, the, NT:1760; NT:1797; NT:1931
commissioning of, NT:1802; NT:1846–47
restoration of, NT:1923
selection of, NT:1840
twelve tribes; *see also* tribes
census and, HB:185–88

U

uncircumcised, the, as derogatory term, HB:420; HB:429; HB:444; HB:447; HB:591
uncircumcision, NT:2008–9; NT:2055; NT:2070
unity
appeal for, in Ephesians, NT:2057
appeal for, in Philippians, NT:2063
of Jews and Gentiles in church, NT:2055–56
Paul's argument for, NT:2000
unleavened bread, festival of, HB:99; HB:101; HB:115; HB:202; HB:232; HB:654; NT:1785; NT:1818; NT:1942
as pilgrimage festival, HB:276–77
in postexilic period, HB:677
Urim and Thummim, AP:1518; AP:1644; HB:123; HB:308–9; HB:421; HB:424; HB:440; HB:447; HB:671

V

Valley of Hinnom, HB:1073; HB:1091–92; *see also* sacrifice, of children
worship of Molech and, HB:172
vanity
Abel and, HB:16
of dreams and omens, AP:1502
in Ecclesiastes, HB:937; HB:942; HB:947; HB:948
vegetarianism, HB:22
vices, catalogues of, NT:2050; NT:2085
vineyard
Israel as, HB:1002–3
parables about, NT:1775; NT:1778; NT:1814; NT:1868
song about, HB:974
viniculture, HB:18
violence, HB:17
flood and, HB:19; HB:22
virgin daughter, HB:1084–85
virtues, catalogues of, NT:2050; NT:2085
visitors, divine, HB:35–36; HB:55
vows, HB:288; HB:941
burnt offerings and, HB:143
nazirite, HB:194–95,HB:401; HB:1287; NT:1955
of women, HB:234

W

water, HB:1026
Elisha and, HB:536–37
libations, HB:593
and purification ritual, HB:409
turned to blood in Egypt, HB:93
Way, the, NT:1936; NT:1956; *see also* Dead Sea Scrolls
wealth, AP:1498; HB:941–42; NT:1810–11; NT:1860
and Christians, NT:2120
condemned by prophets, HB:972; HB:1288
and conscience, AP:1475
false reliance on, AP:1465
lure of, NT:1798
and the miser, AP:1476
salvation and, NT:1865
transience of, HB:813–14; HB:908
true, AP:1472
Weeks, festival of, AP:1369; AP:1371; HB:83; HB:232; NT:1923
in rabbinic Judaism, HB:109
weights and measures, HB:1226; HB:1247
well, as meeting place, HB:50–51
whirlwind, theophany and, HB:765
white, significance of, NT:2158,NT:2162; NT:2164; *see also* colors
wickedness, indictment of, NT:1978
widows, NT:2089
wife; *see also* marriage
allegory of unfaithful, HB:1178–81
bad, AP:1491–92
good, AP:1491–92
Israel as, HB:1259
legal protection of, HB:284
legal status of, HB:260–61
wilderness camp
plan of, HB:187
sanctuary of, HB:187
wilderness wandering, HB:83; HB:105; HB:234; HB:1060
Book of Numbers and, HB:185
complaining during, HB:105
Israel's rebellion and, HB:836
pride in, HB:265
wind, HB:11
wine, AP:1639
associated with lovemaking, HB:951
wisdom, AP:1529–30; AP:1533–34; HB:905–6; NT:2002–3; NT:2122–23
and action, AP:1506–7
Babylonian scribes and, HB:964
benefits of, AP:1464
contrasted with cleverness, AP:1482–83
discipline of, AP:1466–67
divine, AP:1460
Ecclesiastes and, AP:1458; HB:935–36
elusiveness of, HB:943–44
and fear of the Lord, AP:1461–62
as fear of the Lord, AP:1482–83
Hosea and, HB:1274
and humility, AP:1463
in Isaiah, HB:972
in Lamentations, HB:1154
personification of, AP:1435; AP:1459; AP:1488–89; HB:753–54; HB:895–96; HB:898; HB:912; NT:2104
popular, AP:1375
power of, AP:1440
praise of, AP:1488–89; HB:900
in Psalms, HB:775
pursuit of, HB:895–96; HB:898–99
as a royal prerogative, HB:256
search for, AP:1476–77; AP:1527
and social relations, AP:1468–69; AP:1473–75
and Solomon, AP:1436; HB:492–95; HB:618
and success, HB:895–96

and Torah, AP:1461
and trials, NT:2120
wisdom literature, HB:721–22
Wisdom of Jesus Son of Sirach. *See* Ben Sira; Ecclesiasticus
Wisdom of Solomon, AP:1427–55
as didactic literature, AP:1365–66
and Hellenistic culture, AP:1427
wise men (magoi), NT:1749
wise, the, contrasted with fools, AP:1485
witchcraft, HB:171
witnesses, HB:244
laws concerning, HB:282
number of, HB:282
woes
in Amos, HB:1291
against Assyria, HB:1291
in Isaiah, HB:974–75
in Luke, NT:1841; NT:1850
woman of worth, HB:933–34
women; *see also* foreign women; marriage; strange woman; wife
at the burial of Jesus, NT:1875–76
caricature of, NT:2089; NT:2094
conflict between, HB:52
at the cross, NT:1913
as deacons, NT:2088
desirable and undesirable, AP:1491–92
in genealogy of Jesus, NT:1748
inheritance of land by, HB:3
as legally responsible individual, HB:278
Midianite, HB:227–28
ministering to Jesus, NT:1844
Moabite, HB:227–28
pilgrimage and, HB:116
praise of, AP:1640
proper demeanor of, NT:2087
resisting Pharaoh, HB:105
Ten Commandments and, HB:111
vows of, HB:234
warnings about, AP:1470
Word, the (logos), NT:2139
Jesus as, NT:1880
spoken through Son, NT:2104
work, prohibition of, HB:176
world
in fourth Gospel, NT:1881; NT:1886
light of the (Jesus), NT:1896
worship
centralization of, HB:270–72; HB:276–77
false, AP:1444
of nature, AP:1444–45
regulations for, HB:112; HB:117
true, AP:1448
wrath, HB:1100; NT:1983
of God, NT:1978; NT:2071; NT:2076; NT:2172–73
writing prophets, HB:1259

Y

Yahweh (Yhwh), HB:4; HB:17; HB:87; HB:91; HB:131; HB:132; *see also* tetragrammaton
yam suf (Sea of Reeds), HB:102; HB:535; *see also* Red Sea
Yavneh Yam inscription, HB:289
Yehud. *See* Judah

Z

Zealots, NT:1840
Zechariah, HB:963
in 1 Esdras, AP:1644; AP:1646
meaning of name, HB:1338
and rebuilding of Temple, HB:674
visions of, HB:1338–42
Zechariah, Book of, HB:1337–50
apocalyptic and, HB:1337
structure of, HB:1337
Zephaniah, Book of, HB:1327–32
date of, HB:1327
Zerubbabel
as leader of returnees, AP:1638–42; HB:667; HB:670
prayer of, AP:1642
reward of, AP:1641
ziggurat, Babylonian, HB:1223; HB:1243
Zion
Ezekiel and, HB:1160; HB:1162
lamentation over, HB:1077–78; HB:1148–49
personified as woman, HB:1035; HB:1078–79
restoration of, HB:1047–51

This page intentionally left blank

This page intentionally left blank

CONCORDANCE

THE FOLLOWING ABBREVIATIONS ARE USED FOR THE CANONICAL BOOKS:

1Ch	1 Chronicles	Ecc	Ecclesiastes	La	Lamentations
1Co	1 Corinthians	Eph	Ephesians	Lev	Leviticus
1Jn	1 John	Est	Esther	Lk	Luke
1Ki	1 Kings	Ex	Exodus	Mal	Malachi
1Pe	1 Peter	Eze	Ezekiel	Mic	Micah
1Sa	1 Samuel	Ezr	Ezra	Mk	Mark
1Th	1 Thessalonians	Gal	Galatians	Mt	Matthew
1Ti	1 Timothy	Ge	Genesis	Na	Nahum
2Ch	2 Chronicles	Hab	Habakkuk	Ne	Nehemiah
2Co	2 Corinthians	Hag	Haggai	Nu	Numbers
2Jn	2 John	Heb	Hebrews	Ob	Obadiah
2Ki	2 Kings	Hos	Hosea	Phm	Philemon
2Pe	2 Peter	Isa	Isaiah	Php	Philippians
2Sa	2 Samuel	Jas	James	Pr	Proverbs
2Th	2 Thessalonians	Jdg	Judges	Ps	Psalms
2Ti	2 Timothy	Jer	Jeremiah	Rev	Revelation
3Jn	3 John	Jn	John	Ro	Romans
Ac	Acts	Jnh	Jonah	Ru	Ruth
Am	Amos	Job	Job	SS	Song of Songs
Col	Colossians	Joel	Joel	Tit	Titus
Da	Daniel	Jos	Joshua	Zec	Zechariah
Dt	Deuteronomy	Jude	Jude	Zep	Zephaniah

THE FOLLOWING ABBREVIATIONS ARE USED FOR THE DEUTEROCANONICAL BOOKS:

AdE	Additions to Esther	Jdt	Judith	4Mc	4 Maccabees
Aza	Prayer of Azariah	LtJ	Letter of Jeremiah	Pm	Psalm 151
Bar	Baruch	Man	Prayer of Manasseh	Sir	Sirach
Bel	Bel and the Dragon	1Mc	1 Maccabees	Sus	Susanna
1Es	1 Esdras	2Mc	2 Maccabees	Tob	Tobit
2Es	2 Esdras	3Mc	3 Maccabees	Wis	Wisdom

OTHER ABBREVIATIONS AND SPECIAL SYMBOLS USED:

S Shorter ending of Mark
T Psalm titles
Pr: Sirach Prologue
* Entries followed by an asterisk (e.g., ABBA*) contain every reference in the NRSV
† A dagger distinguishes LORD and GOD from Lord and God in Hebrew Bible references
→ An arrow following an entry heading points to related words for additional study
= An equals sign marks an alternate proper name for additional study (e.g., ISRAEL =JACOB)
[[ ]] Contexts in double brackets are from passages that are similarly bracketed in the NRSV (e.g., John 7:53ô8:11)

For further study consult *The Concise Concordance to the New Revised Standard Version* (Oxford University Press, 1993) and *The NRSV Concordance Unabridged* (Zondervan, 1991).—John R. Kohlenberger III

AARON

Genealogy (Ex 6:16-20; Jos 21:4, 10; 1Ch 6:3-15). Priesthood of (Ex 28:1; Nu 17; Heb 5:1-4; 7), vestments of (Ex 28; 39), consecration of (Ex 29), ordination of (Lev 8).

Spokesman for Moses (Ex 4:14-16, 27-31; 7:1-2). Supported Moses' hands in battle (Ex 17:8-13). Built golden calf (Ex 32; Dt 9:20). Spoke against Moses (Nu 12). Priesthood opposed (Nu 16); staff budded (Nu 17). Forbidden to enter the promised land (Nu 20:1-12). Death of (Nu 20:22-29; 33:38-39). Praise of (Sir 45:6-22).

ABANDON → ABANDONED

Nu 32:15 will again **a** them in the wilderness;
Dt 4:31 will neither **a** you nor destroy you;
2Ch 15:2 but if you **a** him, he will **a** you.
Mk 7:8 You **a** the commandment of God
Ac 2:27 For you will not **a** my soul to Hades
Heb 10:35 Do not, therefore, **a** that confidence

ABANDONED → ABANDON

Dt 29:25 they **a** the covenant of the LORD,
Jdg 2:13 **a** the LORD, and worshiped Baal
2Ch 12:5 You **a** me, so I have **a** you
Isa 54:7 For a brief moment I **a** you,
Sir 49:4 for they **a** the law of the Most High;

ABBA*

Mk 14:36 **"A,** Father, for you all things are possible;
Ro 8:15 When we cry, **"A!** Father!"
Gal 4:6 into our hearts, crying, **"A!** Father!"

ABEDNEGO* → =AZARIAH

Deported to Babylon with Daniel (Da 1:1-6). Name changed from Azariah (Da 1:7). Refused defilement by food (Da 1:8-20). Refused idol worship (Da 3:1-12); saved from furnace (Da 3:13-30).

ABEL

Second son of Adam (Ge 4:2). Offered acceptable sacrifice (Ge 4:4; Heb 11:4; 12:24). Murdered by Cain (Ge 4:8; Mt 23:35; Lk 11:51; 1Jn 3:12).

ABHOR → ABHORRENT

Lev 26:11 and I shall not **a** you.

ABHORRENT → ABHOR

Dt 14:3 You shall not eat any **a** thing.
18:9 not learn to imitate the **a** practices

ABIATHAR

High priest in days of Saul and David (1Sa 22; 2Sa 15; 1Ki 1-2; Mk 2:26). Escaped Saul's slaughter of priests (1Sa 22:18-23). Supported David in Absalom's revolt (2Sa 15:24-29). Supported Adonijah (1Ki 1:7-42); deposed by Solomon (1Ki 2:22-35; cf. 1Sa 2:31-35).

ABIDE → ABIDES, ABODE

Ge 6:3 My spirit shall not **a** in mortals forever,
Ps 15:1 O LORD, who may **a** in your tent?
91:1 **a** in the shadow of the Almighty,
Jn 15:4 **A** in me as I **a** in you.
1Co 13:13 faith, hope, and love **a,** these three;
1Jn 2:28 And now, little children, **a** in him,
Wis 3:9 the faithful will **a** with him in love,

ABIDES → ABIDE

Hag 2:5 My spirit **a** among you; do not fear.
1Jn 3:14 Whoever does not love **a** in death.

ABIGAIL

1. Sister of David (1Ch 2:16-17).

2. Wife of Nabal (1Sa 25:30); pled for his life with David (1Sa 25:14-35). Became David's wife after Nabal's death (1Sa 25:36-42).

ABIHU

Son of Aaron (Ex 6:23; 24:1, 9); killed for offering illicit fire (Lev 10; Nu 3:2-4; 1Ch 24:1-2).

ABIJAH

1. Second son of Samuel (1Ch 6:28); a corrupt judge (1Sa 8:1-5).

2. An Aaronic priest (1Ch 24:10; Lk 1:5).

3. Son of Jeroboam I; died as prophesied by Ahijah (1Ki 14:1-18).

4. Son of Rehoboam, also called Abijam; king of Judah who fought Jeroboam I attempting to reunite Israel (1Ki 14:31-15:8; 2Ch 12:16-14:1).

ABILITY → ABLE

Ex 31:3 filled him with divine spirit, with **a,**
Mt 25:15 to each according to his **a.**
Ac 2:4 as the Spirit gave them **a.**

ABIMELECH

1. King of Gerar who took Abraham's wife Sarah, believing her to be his sister (Ge 20). Covenanted with Abraham (Ge 21:22-33).

2. King of Gerar who took Isaac's wife Rebekah, believing her to be his sister (Ge 26:1-11). Covenanted with Isaac (Ge 26:12-31).

3. Son of Gideon (Jdg 8:31). Attempted to become king (Jdg 9).

ABIRAM

Sided with Dathan in rebellion against Moses and Aaron (Nu 16; 26:9; Dt 11:6; Sir 45:18).

ABISHAI

Son of Zeruiah, David's sister (1Sa 26:6; 1Ch 2:16). One of David's chief warriors (1Ch 11:15-21): against Edom (1Ch 18:12-13), Ammon (2Sa 10), Absalom (2Sa 18), Sheba (2Sa 20). Wanted to kill Saul (1Sa 26), killed Abner (2Sa 2:18-27; 3:22-39).

ABLE → ABILITY

Ex 18:25 Moses chose **a** men from all Israel
Jos 1:5 No one shall be **a** to stand against
23:9 no one has been **a** to withstand you
Da 3:17 God whom we serve is **a** to deliver
Mt 9:28 "Do you believe that I am **a** to do
Mk 10:38 you **a** to drink the cup that I drink,
Ro 14:4 the Lord is **a** to make them stand.
2Co 9:8 God is **a** to provide you with every
Eph 6:11 **a** to stand against the wiles of the devil.
2Ti 1:12 he is **a** to guard until that day
Heb 2:18 **a** to help those who are being tested.
5:2 is **a** to deal gently with the ignorant
7:25 he is **a** for all time to save
Rev 5:3 **a** to open the scroll or to look into it.
Jdt 11:18 of them will be **a** to withstand you.

ABNER

Cousin of Saul and commander of his army (1Sa 14:50; 17:55-57; 26). Made Ish-Bosheth king after Saul (2Sa 2:8-10), but later defected to David (2Sa 3:6-21). Killed Asahel (2Sa 2:18-32), for which he was killed by Joab and Abishai (2Sa 3:22-39).

ABODE → ABIDE

Ps 68:16 mount that God desired for his **a**,
Pr 3:33 but he blesses the **a** of the righteous.

ABOLISH → ABOLISHED

Da 11:31 shall **a** the regular burnt offering
Mt 5:17 I have come not to **a** but to fulfill.

ABOLISHED → ABOLISH

Eph 2:15 **a** the law with its commandments
2Ti 1:10 who **a** death and brought life

ABOMINABLE → ABOMINATION

2Ch 28:3 the **a** practices of the nations
Eze 7:20 they made their **a** images,
1Mc 1:48 to make themselves **a** by everything

ABOMINATION → ABOMINABLE, ABOMINATIONS

Pr 6:16 seven that are an **a** to him:
Da 9:27 shall be an **a** that desolates,
Rev 21:27 anyone who practices **a** or falsehood
Sir 1:25 but godliness is an **a** to a sinner.
1Mc 6:7 that they had torn down the **a** that

ABOMINATIONS → ABOMINATION

Lev 18:27 committed all of these **a**,
1Ki 14:24 all the **a** of the nations that the LORD
Eze 44:7 broken my covenant with all your **a**.
Rev 17:5 mother of whores and of earth's **a**."

ABOUND → ABOUNDED, ABOUNDING

Dt 28:11 LORD will make you **a** in prosperity,
Ro 6:1 in sin in order that grace may **a**?

ABOUNDED → ABOUND

Ro 5:20 sin increased, grace **a** all the more,

ABOUNDING → ABOUND

Ex 34:6 **a** in steadfast love and faithfulness,
Ps 86:5 **a** in steadfast love to all who call on
Joel 2:13 to anger, and **a** in steadfast love,
Jnh 4:2 to anger, and **a** in steadfast love,

ABOVE

Dt 4:39 the LORD is God in heaven **a**
Jn 3:7 'You must be born from **a**.'
Php 2:9 the name that is **a** every name,
Col 3:2 Set your minds on things that are **a**,

ABRAHAM

Abram, son of Terah (Ge 11:26-27), husband of Sarah (Ge 11:29).

Covenant relation with the LORD (Ge 12:1-3; 13:14-17; 15; 17; 22:15-18; Ex 2:24; Ne 9:8; Ps 105; Mic 7:20; Lk 1:68-75; Ro 4; Heb 6:13-15).

Called from Ur, via Haran, to Canaan (Ge 12:1; Ac 7:2-4; Heb 11:8-10). Moved to Egypt, nearly lost Sarah to Pharoah (Ge 12:10-20). Divided the land with Lot; settled in Hebron (Ge 13). Saved Lot from four kings (Ge 14:1-16); blessed by Melchizedek (Ge 14:17-20; Heb 7:1-20). Declared righteous by faith (Ge 15:6; Ro 4:3; Gal 3:6-9; 1Mc 2:52). Fathered Ishmael by Hagar (Ge 16).

Name changed from Abram (Ge 17:5; Ne 9:7). Circumcised (Ge 17; Ro 4:9-12). Entertained three visitors (Ge 18); promised a son by Sarah (Ge 18:9-15; 17:16). Questioned destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah (Ge 18:16-33). Moved to Gerar; nearly lost Sarah to Abimelech (Ge 20). Fathered Isaac by Sarah (Ge 21:1-7; Ac 7:8; Heb 11:11-12); sent away Hagar and Ishmael (Ge 21:8-21; Gal 4:22-30). Covenant with Abimelech (Ge 21:22-32). Tested by offering Isaac (Ge 22; Heb 11:17-19; Jas 2:21-24). Sarah died; bought field of Ephron for burial (Ge 23). Secured wife for Isaac (Ge 24). Fathered children by Keturah (Ge 25:1-6; 1Ch 1:32-33). Death (Ge 25:7-11).

Called servant of God (Ge 26:24), friend of God (2Ch 20:7; Isa 41:8; Jas 2:23), prophet (Ge 20:7), father of Israel (Ex 3:15; Isa 51:2; Mt 3:9; Jn 8:39-58). Praised (Sir 44:19-45:1).

ABSALOM

Son of David by Maacah (2Sa 3:3; 1Ch 3:2). Killed Amnon for rape of his sister Tamar; banished by David (2Sa 13). Returned to Jerusalem; received by David (2Sa 14). Rebelled against David (2Sa 15-17). Killed (2Sa 18).

ABSENT

1Co 5:3 **a** in body, I am present in spirit;
Col 2:5 For though I am **a** in body,

ABUNDANCE → ABUNDANTLY

Lk 6:45 **a** of the heart that the mouth speaks.
12:15 one's life does not consist in the **a**
2Co 9:8 provide you with every blessing in **a**

ABUNDANTLY → ABUNDANCE

Jn 10:10 that they may have life, and have it **a**.
Eph 3:20 to accomplish **a** far more than all

ABYSS

Lk 8:31 to order them to go back into the **a**.
Ro 10:7 'Who will descend into the **a**?'"

ACCEPT → ACCEPTABLE, ACCEPTED

Pr 19:20 Listen to advice and **a** instruction,
Jer 32:33 would not listen and **a** correction.
Mt 19:11 "Not everyone can **a** this teaching,
Jn 1:11 his own people did not **a** him.

ACCEPTABLE → ACCEPT

Ps 19:14 meditation of my heart be **a** to you,
51:17 sacrifice **a** to God is a broken spirit;
Ro 12:1 a living sacrifice, holy and **a** to God,

ACCEPTED → ACCEPT

Ge 4:7 If you do well, will you not be **a**?
Lk 4:24 no prophet is **a** in the prophet's hometown.

ACCESS

Ro 5:2 we have obtained **a** to this grace
Eph 2:18 have **a** in one Spirit to the Father.

ACCOMPLISH → ACCOMPLISHED

Isa 55:11 but it shall **a** that which I purpose,
Eze 17:24 I the LORD have spoken; I will **a** it.

ACCOMPLISHED → ACCOMPLISH

Mt 5:18 will pass from the law until all is **a**.

ACCORDING

Ps 28:4 Repay them **a** to their work,
119:9 By guarding it **a** to your word.
Mt 9:29 "**A** to your faith let it be done to you
Ro 8:4 not **a** to the flesh but **a** to the Spirit.
Heb 2:4 Holy Spirit, distributed **a** to his will.
1Jn 5:14 that if we ask anything **a** to his will,
Rev 20:12 dead were judged **a** to their works,
Sir 16:12 he judges a person **a** to one's deeds.

ACCOUNT → ACCOUNTABLE

Mt 12:36 judgment you will have to give an **a**
Heb 4:13 to whom we must render an **a**.

ACCOUNTABLE → ACCOUNT

Ro 14:12 each of us will be **a** to God.

ACCURSED → CURSE

Ro 9:3 I could wish that I myself were **a**
Rev 22:3 Nothing **a** will be found there any

ACCUSATION → ACCUSE

Lk 23:4 no basis for an **a** against this man."

ACCUSE → ACCUSATION, ACCUSER

Ps 103:9 He will not always **a**,
Zec 3:1 Satan standing at his right hand to **a**
Mt 12:10 so that they might **a** him.

ACCUSER → ACCUSE

Jn 5:45 your **a** is Moses,
Rev 12:10 the **a** of our comrades has been thrown

ACHAN

Sinned at Jericho; stoned (Jos 7; 22:20; 1Ch 2:7).

ACHISH

King of Gath before whom David feigned insanity (1Sa 21:10-15). Later "ally" of David (2Sa 27-29).

ACKNOWLEDGE

Dt 4:35 you would **a** that the LORD is God;
Pr 3:6 In all your ways **a** him,
Mt 10:32 I also will **a** before my Father in
Ro 1:28 since they did not see fit to **a** God,

ACT → ACTED, ACTIVE, ACTS

Ps 37:5 trust in him, and he will **a**.
Ro 14:23 because they do not **a** from faith;
Jas 1:25 hearers who forget but doers who **a**

ACTED → ACT

Eze 20:9 But I **a** for the sake of my name,
Ac 3:17 I know that you **a** in ignorance,
1Ti 1:13 mercy because I had **a** ignorantly

ACTIVE → ACT

Heb 4:12 the word of God is living and **a**,
Jas 2:22 faith was **a** along with his works,

ACTS → ACT

Ex 6:6 outstretched arm and with mighty **a**
Ps 71:15 mouth will tell of your righteous **a**,
Mt 7:24 hears these words of mine and **a**

ADAM

First man (Ge 1:26-2:25; Ro 5:14; 1Ti 2:13; Tob 8:6). Sin of (Ge 3; Hos 6:7 [note]; Ro 5:12-21; 2Es 3:21; 7:70-140). Children of (Ge 4:1-5:5). Death of (Ge 5:5; Ro 5:12-21; 1Co 15:22).

ADD → ADDED

Dt 4:2 You must neither **a** anything
Pr 30:6 Do not **a** to his words, or else
Lk 12:25 by worrying **a** a single hour to your

ADDED → ADD

Ecc 3:14 nothing can be **a** to it, nor anything
Sir 42:21 Nothing can be **a** or taken away,

ADDICTED*

Tit 1:7 or quick-tempered or **a** to wine

ADMONISH → ADMONITION

Col 3:16 and **a** one another in all wisdom;

ADMONITION → ADMONISH

Pr 15:5 one who heeds **a** is prudent.

ADONIJAH

1. Son of David by Haggith (2Sa 3:4; 1Ch 3:2). Attempted to be king after David; killed at Solomon's order (1Ki 1-2).
2. Levite; teacher of the Law (2Ch 17:8).

ADOPTION

Ro 8:23 groan inwardly while we wait for **a,**
Gal 4:5 that we might receive **a** as children.

ADORNED → ADORNMENT

Lk 21:5 how it was **a** with beautiful stones
Rev 17:4 **a** with gold and jewels and pearls,
21:2 as a bride **a** for her husband.

ADORNMENT → ADORNED, ADORNS

Pr 3:22 for your soul and **a** for your neck.
1Pe 3:4 let your **a** be the inner self with the

ADORNS → ADORNMENT

Isa 61:10 as a bride **a** herself with her jewels.

ADULT* → ADULTS

1Co 13:11 an **a,** I put an end to childish ways.

ADULTERERS → ADULTERY

Jer 23:10 For the land is full of **a;**
1Co 6:9 idolaters, **a,** male prostitutes,

ADULTERESS → ADULTERY

Lev 20:10 the **a** shall be put to death.
Pr 2:16 from the **a** with her smooth words,

ADULTERY → ADULTERERS, ADULTERESS

Ex 20:14 You shall not commit **a.**
Jer 3:9 committing **a** with stone and tree.
Mt 5:28 committed **a** with her in his heart.
Lk 16:18 and marries another commits **a,**
Jn 8:3 [[a woman who had been caught in **a;**]]

ADULTS* → ADULT

1Co 14:20 infants in evil, but in thinking be **a.**

ADVANTAGE

Ecc 7:12 **a** of knowledge is that wisdom gives
Ro 3:1 Then what **a** has the Jew?
1Co 10:24 Do not seek your own **a,** but that of

ADVERSARIES → ADVERSARY

Dt 32:41 I will take vengeance on my **a,**
2Sa 22:49 you exalted me above my **a,**

ADVERSARY → ADVERSARIES

1Ti 5:14 give the **a** no occasion to revile us.
1Pe 5:8 roaring lion your **a** the devil prowls

ADVERSITY → ADVERSARY

Dt 30:15 life and prosperity, death and **a.**
Isa 48:10 I have tested you in the furnace of **a.**

ADVICE → ADVISERS

2Ch 10:13 rejected the **a** of the older men;
Ps 1:1 do not follow the **a** of the wicked,
Pr 8:14 I have good **a** and sound wisdom;
Tob 4:18 Seek **a** from every wise person
Sir 37:11 pay no attention to any **a** they give.

ADVISERS → ADVICE

Pr 15:22 but with many **a** they succeed.

ADVOCATE

Jn 14:26 But the **A,** the Holy Spirit,
15:26 the **A** comes, whom I will send
1Jn 2:1 we have an **a** with the Father,

AFFLICT → AFFLICTED, AFFLICTION, AFFLICTIONS, AFFLICTS

2Sa 7:10 evildoers shall **a** them no more,
La 3:33 for he does not willingly **a**
2Th 1:6 repay with affliction those who **a**

AFFLICTED → AFFLICT

Dt 26:6 Egyptians treated us harshly and **a**
Na 1:12 Though I have **a** you, I will afflict
2Co 4:8 are **a** in every way, but not crushed;

AFFLICTION → AFFLICT

Dt 16:3 bread with it—the bread of **a**—
Ps 25:18 Consider my **a** and my trouble,
Isa 30:20 of adversity and the water of **a,**
La 1:9 "O LORD, look at my **a,**
2Co 4:17 this slight momentary **a** is preparing

AFFLICTIONS → AFFLICT

Ps 34:19 Many are the **a** of the righteous,

AFFLICTS* → AFFLICT

Tob 13:2 For he **a,** and he shows mercy;

AFRAID → FEAR

Ge 3:10 and I was **a,** because I was naked;
15:1 not be **a,** Abram, I am your shield;
Ex 3:6 his face, for he was **a** to look at God.
Lev 26:6 and no one shall make you **a;**
Dt 20:3 Do not lose heart, or be **a,**
Ps 3:6 I am not **a** of ten thousands
27:1 of whom shall I be **a?**
56:11 in God I trust; I am not **a.**
Isa 12:2 I will trust, and will not be **a,**
Eze 2:6 do not be **a** of their words,
Mt 10:31 So do not be **a;** you are of more
28:10 Jesus said to them, "Do not be **a;**
Lk 12:32 "Do not be **a,** little flock,
Heb 13:6 Lord is my helper; I will not be **a.**

AGABUS*

A Christian prophet (Ac 11:28; 21:10).

AGAG

King of Amalekites; not killed by Saul (1Sa 15).

AGAIN

Job 14:14 If mortals die, will they live **a?**
Ecc 3:20 and all turn to dust **a.**
Mk 8:31 and after three days rise **a.**
Jn 14:3 I will come **a** and will take you to
Heb 6:6 they are crucifying **a** the Son of God
9:25 Nor was it to offer himself **a** and **a,**

AGE → AGES

Ge 21:2 bore Abraham a son in his old **a,**
Mt 28:20 with you always, to the end of the **a."**
Gal 1:4 to set us free from the present evil **a,**

AGES → AGE

Dt 4:32 For ask now about former **a,**
1Co 2:7 decreed before the **a** for our glory.
Col 1:26 has been hidden throughout the **a**
1Ti 1:17 To the King of the **a,** immortal,

AGREE

Mt 18:19 if two of you **a** on earth about
Mk 14:56 and their testimony did not **a.**
1Jn 5:8 and the blood, and these three **a.**

AGRIPPA

Descendant of Herod; king before whom Paul argued his case in Caesarea (Ac 25:13-26:32).

AHAB

1. Son of Omri; king of Israel (1Ki 16:28-22:40), husband of Jezebel (1Ki 16:31). Promoted Baal worship (1Ki 16:31-33); opposed by Elijah (1Ki 17:1; 18; 21), a prophet (1Ki 20:35-43), Micaiah (1Ki 22:1-28). Defeated Ben-Hadad (1Ki 20). Killed for failing to kill Ben-Hadad and for murder of Naboth (1Ki 20:35-21:40).
2. A false prophet (Jer 29:21-22).

AHASUERUS → =ARTAXERXES

King of Persia (Ezr 4:6), husband of Esther. Deposed Vashti; replaced her with Esther (Est 1-2). Sealed Haman's edict to annihilate the Jews (Est 3). Received Esther without having called her (Est 5:1-8). Honored Mordecai (Est 6). Hanged Haman (Est 7). Issued edict allowing Jews to defend themselves (Est 8). Promoted Mordecai (Est 8:1-2, 15; 9:4; 10). Called Artaxerxes in the Additions to Esther.

AHAZ

Son of Jotham; king of Judah, (2Ki 16; 2Ch 28; Mt 1:9). Idolatry of (2Ki 16:3-4, 10-18; 2Ch 28:1-4, 22-25). Defeated by Aram and Israel (2Ki 16:5-6; 2Ch 28:5-15). Sought help from Assyria rather than the LORD (2Ki 16:7-9; 2Ch 28:16-21; Isa 7).

AHAZIAH → =JEHOAHAZ

1. Son of Ahab; king of Israel (1Ki 22:51-2Ki 1:18; 2Ch 20:35-37). Made an unsuccessful alliance with Jehoshaphat (2Ch 20:35-37). Died for seeking Baal rather than the LORD (2Ki 1).
2. Son of Jehoram; king of Judah (2Ki 8:25-29; 9:14-29), also called Jehoahaz (2Ch 21:17-22:9; 25:23). Killed by Jehu while visiting Joram (2Ki 9:14-29; 2Ch 22:1-9).

AHEAD

Mt 11:10 sending my messenger **a** of you,
Php 3:13 straining forward to what lies **a,**
Heb 11:26 for he was looking **a** to the reward.

AHIJAH

1. Priest during Saul's reign (1Sa 14:3,18).
2. Prophet of Shiloh (1Ki 11:29-39; 14:1-18).

AHIKAM

Father of Gedaliah (2Ki 25:22), protector of Jeremiah (Jer 26:24).

AHIMAAZ

1. Father-in-law of Saul (1Sa 14:50).
2. Son of Zadok, the high priest, loyal to David (2Sa 15:27,36; 17:17-20; 18:19-33).

AHIMELECH

1. Priest who helped David in his flight from Saul (1Sa 21-22).
2. One of David's warriors (1Sa 26:6).

AHITHOPHEL

One of David's counselors who sided with Absalom (2Sa 15:12, 31-37; 1Ch 27:33-34); committed suicide when his advice was ignored (2Sa 16:15-17:23).

AI

Jos 7:4 and they fled before the men of **A.**

AIR

Eph 2:2 the ruler of the power of the **a,**
1Th 4:17 to meet the Lord in the **a;**
Rev 16:17 angel poured his bowl into the **a,**

ALARMED

Mk 13:7 and rumors of wars, do not be **a;**
2Th 2:2 to be quickly shaken in mind or **a,**

ALERT

Lk 12:37 slaves whom the master finds **a**
1Co 16:13 Keep **a,** stand firm in your faith,
Eph 6:18 keep **a** and always persevere
1Pe 5:8 Discipline yourselves, keep **a.**

ALEXANDER

1Mc 1:1 **A** son of Philip, the Macedonian,

ALIEN → ALIENS

Ex 2:22 an **a** residing in a foreign land."
Lev 19:34 you shall love the **a** as yourself,
Dt 24:17 You shall not deprive a resident **a**

ALIENS → ALIEN

Ge 15:13 your offspring shall be **a** in a land
Eph 2:19 you are no longer strangers and **a,**
1Pe 2:11 I urge you as **a** and exiles to abstain
1Mc 2:7 the sanctuary given over to **a?**

ALIVE → LIVE

Ge 6:19 to keep them **a** with you;
Dt 32:39 I kill and I make **a;** I wound and I heal;
Ac 1:3 suffering he presented himself **a**
Ro 6:11 dead to sin and **a** to God
Eph 2:5 made us **a** together with Christ—
1Th 4:17 Then we who are **a,** who are left,
Rev 1:18 I am **a** forever and ever;
19:20 were thrown **a** into the lake of fire

ALL

Ge 6:13 to make an end of **a** flesh,
Dt 6:5 You shall love the LORD your God with **a** your heart, and with **a** your soul, and with **a** your might.
Ps 1:3 In **a** that they do, they prosper.
Jer 29:13 if you seek me with **a** your heart,
Lk 10:27 love the Lord your God with **a** your
Ro 3:23 **a** have sinned and fall short of the
6:10 he died to sin, once for **a;**
1Co 6:12 **"A** things are lawful for me,"
15:51 not **a** die, but we will **a** be changed,
Eph 1:23 the fullness of him who fills **a** in **a.**
Php 4:13 I can do **a** things through him
2Ti 3:16 **A** scripture is inspired by God
2Pe 3:9 but **a** to come to repentance.
Rev 21:5 "See, I am making **a** things new."
Sir 7:29 With **a** your soul fear the Lord,

ALMIGHTY → MIGHT

Ge 17:1 "I am God **A;** walk before me,
Ex 6:3 Isaac, and Jacob as God **A,**
Ps 91:1 who abide in the shadow of the **A,**
Rev 1:8 who was and who is to come, the **A.**
21:22 its temple is the Lord God the **A**
Bar 3:1 O Lord **A,** God of Israel,
Man 1:1 O Lord **A,** God of our ancestors,

ALMS

Mt 6:2 "So whenever you give **a,**
Tob 12:8 better to give **a** than to lay up gold.
Sir 7:10 do not neglect to give **a.**

ALONE → LONELY

Ge 2:18 not good that the man should be **a;**
Dt 6:4 The LORD is our God, the LORD **a.**
Isa 2:11 LORD **a** will be exalted in that day.
Mk 2:7 Who can forgive sins but God **a?"**
10:18 No one is good but God **a.**
Jas 2:24 justified by works and not by faith **a**

ALPHA

Rev 1:8 "I am the **A** and the Omega,"
22:13 I am the **A** and the Omega,

ALTAR → ALTARS

Ge 22:9 Isaac, and laid him on the **a,**
Ex 27:1 shall make the **a** of acacia wood,
30:1 an **a** on which to offer incense;
Ezr 3:2 to build the **a** of the God of Israel,
Mt 5:24 leave your gift there before the **a**
Heb 13:10 We have an **a** from which those
Jas 2:21 he offered his son Isaac on the **a?**
Rev 6:9 I saw under the **a** the souls of those
Jdt 4:12 even draped the **a** with sackcloth
1Mc 1:54 a desolating sacrilege on the **a** of
4:47 built a new **a** like the former one.

ALTARS → ALTAR

Ex 34:13 You shall tear down their **a,**
Nu 3:31 the table, the lampstand, the **a,**
1Mc 2:45 went around and tore down the **a;**

ALWAYS

Mt 28:20 And remember, I am with you **a,**
Lk 18:1 to pray **a** and not to lose heart.
Php 4:4 Rejoice in the Lord **a;** again I will

AMALEK

Ex 17:8 Then **A** came and fought with Israel
1Sa 15:3 attack **A,** and utterly destroy all

AMASA

Nephew of David (1Ch 2:17). Commander of Absalom's forces (2Sa 17:24–27). Returned to David (2Sa 19:13). Killed by Joab (2Sa 20:4–13).

AMAZED → AMAZING

Mt 8:27 **a,** saying, "What sort of man is this,
Mk 6:6 And he was **a** at their unbelief.
Ac 2:7 **A** and astonished, they asked,

AMAZIAH

1. Son of Joash; king of Judah (2Ki 14; 2Ch 25). Defeated Edom (2Ki 14:7; 2Ch 25:5-13); defeated by Israel for worshiping Edom's gods (2Ki 14:8-14; 2Ch 25:14-24).
2. Idolatrous priest; opposed Amos (Am 7:10–17).

AMAZING → AMAZED

Mk 12:11 and it is **a** in our eyes'?"
Rev 15:3 "Great and **a** are your deeds,

AMBASSADOR* → AMBASSADORS

Eph 6:20 for which I am an **a** in chains.

AMBASSADORS → AMBASSADOR

2Co 5:20 So we are **a** for Christ,

AMBITION

Php 2:3 Do nothing from selfish **a** or conceit
Jas 3:14 envy and selfish **a** in your hearts,

AMEN

Dt 27:15 people shall respond, saying, **"A!"**
2Co 1:20 through him that we say the **"A,"**
Rev 3:14 The words of the **A,** the faithful and

AMMONITE → AMMONITES

Dt 23:3 No **A** or Moabite shall be admitted

AMMONITES → AMMONITE

Ge 19:38 the ancestor of the **A** to this day.
Jer 49:6 I will restore the fortunes of the **A,**

AMNON

Firstborn of David (2Sa 3:2; 1Ch 3:1). Killed by Absalom for raping his sister Tamar (2Sa 13).

AMON

1. Son of Manasseh; king of Judah (2Ki 21:18-26; 1Ch 3:14; 2Ch 33:21-25).
2. Ruler of Samaria (1Ki 22:26; 2Ch 18:25).

AMORITES

Ge 15:16 iniquity of the **A** is not yet complete
Nu 21:31 Israel settled in the land of the **A.**

AMOS

Prophet from Tekoa (Am 1:1; 7:10–17; Tob 2:6).

ANANIAS

1. Early disciple; died for lying to God (Ac 5:1–11).
2. Disciple who baptized Saul (Ac 9:10–19).
3. High priest at Paul's arrest (Ac 22:30–24:1).

ANCESTOR → ANCESTORS

Dt 26:5 "A wandering Aramean was my **a;**
Mt 3:9 'We have Abraham as our **a';**

ANCESTORS → ANCESTOR

Ex 3:13 'The God of your **a** has sent me to
Dt 4:31 not forget the covenant with your **a**
La 5:7 Our **a** sinned; they are no more,
Ac 5:30 The God of our **a** raised up Jesus,
Heb 1:1 Long ago God spoke to our **a** in

ANCHOR

Heb 6:19 a sure and steadfast **a** of the soul,

ANCIENT

Ps 24:7 and be lifted up, O **a** doors!
Jer 6:16 ask for the **a** paths, where the good
Da 7:9 and an **A** One took his throne,
Mic 5:2 origin is from of old, from **a** days.
Rev 20:2 He seized the dragon, that **a** serpent,

ANDREW*

Apostle; brother of Simon Peter (Mt 4:18; 10:2; Mk 1:16–18, 29; 3:18; 13:3; Lk 6:14; Jn 1:35–44; 6:8–9; 12:22; Ac 1:13).

ANGEL → ANGELS, ARCHANGEL, ARCHANGEL'S

Ge 22:11 the **a** of the LORD called to him
Ex 3:2 the **a** of the LORD appeared to him
23:20 going to send an **a** in front of you,
Nu 22:22 the **a** of the LORD took his stand in
1Ch 21:15 sent an **a** to Jerusalem to destroy it;
Ps 34:7 The **a** of the LORD encamps
Isa 37:36 the **a** of the LORD set out and struck
Da 3:28 who has sent his **a** and delivered
6:22 God sent his **a** and shut the lions'
Mt 1:20 an **a** of the Lord appeared to him in
Lk 1:26 In the sixth month the **a** Gabriel
Ac 5:19 during the night an **a** of the Lord
23:8 say that there is no resurrection, or **a,**
2Co 11:14 Satan disguises himself as an **a** of light.
Gal 1:8 if we or an **a** from heaven should
Tob 5:4 the **a** Raphael standing in front of
Sir 48:21 and his **a** wiped them out.
LtJ 6:7 For my **a** is with you,
Aza 1:26 But the **a** of the Lord came down
Sus 1:59 **a** of God is waiting with his sword
Bel 1:34 the **a** of the Lord said to Habakkuk,
1Mc 7:41 your **a** went out and struck
2Es 2:44 Then I asked an **a,** "Who are these,

ANGELS → ANGEL

Ge 19:1 The two **a** came to Sodom in the
28:12 **a** of God were ascending and
Ps 103:20 Bless the LORD, O you his **a,**
Mk 12:25 but are like **a** in heaven.
Lk 4:10 command his **a** concerning you,
Jn 1:51 and the **a** of God ascending and
Ro 8:38 that neither death, nor life, nor **a,**
1Co 6:3 not know that we are to judge **a**—
Col 2:18 on self-abasement and worship of **a,**
Heb 2:7 for a little while lower than the **a;**
1Pe 1:12 things into which **a** long to look!
2Pe 2:4 not spare the **a** when they sinned,
Rev 1:20 stars are the **a** of the seven churches,
7:1 After this I saw four **a** standing at
21:12 and at the gates twelve **a,**
Tob 11:14 and blessed be all his holy **a.**

ANGER → ANGRY

Ex 32:19 the dancing, Moses' **a** burned hot,
34:6 merciful and gracious, slow to **a,**
Dt 32:22 For a fire is kindled by my **a,**
Jdg 2:12 and they provoked the LORD to **a.**
1Ki 16:13 God of Israel to **a** with their idols.
Ps 30:5 For his **a** is but for a moment;
Pr 12:16 Fools show their **a** at once,
Ecc 7:9 Do not be quick to **a,**
Isa 48:9 For my name's sake I defer my **a,**
Joel 2:13 slow to **a,** and abounding in
Jnh 4:2 slow to **a,** and abounding in
Mk 3:5 He looked around at them with **a;**
Eph 4:26 not let the sun go down on your **a,**
Jas 1:19 slow to speak, slow to **a;**
Rev 14:10 unmixed into the cup of his **a,**
Sir 5:4 for the Lord is slow to **a.**

ANGRY → ANGER

Ge 4:5 So Cain was very **a,** and his
Jer 3:12 I will not be **a** forever.
Mt 5:22 that if you are **a** with a brother or

ANGUISH

Isa 53:11 Out of his **a** he shall see light;
Da 12:1 There shall be a time of **a,**

Zep 1:15 a day of distress and **a**,
Lk 22:44 [[In his **a** he prayed more earnestly,]]

ANIMAL → ANIMALS

Ge 2:19 God formed every **a** of the field
9:2 dread of you shall rest on every **a** of
Ps 50:10 every wild **a** of the forest is mine,

ANIMALS → ANIMAL

Ge 3:14 cursed are you among all **a**
Lev 26:6 remove dangerous **a** from the land,
Ps 36:6 save humans and **a** alike, O LORD.

ANNA

1. Prophetess; spoke of the child Jesus (Lk 2:36–38).
2. Wife of Tobit (Tob 1:20; 2:1, 11).

ANNAS*

High priest c.e. 6–15 (Lk 3:2; Jn 18:13, 24; Ac 4:6).

ANNOUNCED → ANNOUNCING

Isa 48:5 before they came to pass I **a** them
1Pe 1:25 the good news that was **a** to you.

ANNOUNCES → ANNOUNCING

Isa 52:7 feet of the messenger who **a** peace,

ANNOUNCING* → ANNOUNCED, ANNOUNCES

Isa 63:1 I, **a** vindication, mighty to save."
Ro 1:9 serve with my spirit by **a** the gospel

ANNULLED

Jn 10:35 and the scripture cannot be **a**—

ANOINT → ANOINTED, ANOINTING

Ex 30:30 You shall **a** Aaron and his sons,
1Sa 15:1 "The LORD sent me to **a** you king
Ps 23:5 you **a** my head with oil; my cup
Da 9:24 and to **a** a most holy place.

ANOINTED → ANOINT

1Sa 2:10 and exalt the power of his **a**."
26:9 raise his hand against the LORD's **a**,
1Ch 16:22 "Do not touch my **a** ones;
Ps 2:2 against the LORD and his **a**, saying,
Isa 61:1 because the LORD has **a** me;
Eze 28:14 With an **a** cherub as guardian
Da 9:26 an **a** one shall be cut off and
Zec 4:14 These are the two **a** ones who stand
Lk 4:18 he has **a** me to bring good news to
Jn 1:41 Messiah" (which is translated **A**).

ANOINTING → ANOINT

Ex 30:25 it shall be a holy **a** oil.
Jas 5:14 **a** them with oil in the name of the Lord
1Jn 2:27 as his **a** teaches you about all things,

ANOTHER

Pr 27:2 Let **a** praise you, and not your own
Isa 48:11 My glory I will not give to **a**.
Jn 14:16 and he will give you **a** Advocate,
Gal 1:7 not that there is **a** gospel,

ANSWER → ANSWERED

1Ki 18:37 **A** me, O LORD, **a** me,
Job 30:20 I cry to you and you do not **a** me;
Ps 65:2 O you who **a** prayer!
Pr 15:1 A soft **a** turns away wrath,
Isa 65:24 Before they call I will **a**,
Lk 23:9 but Jesus gave him no **a**.

ANSWERED → ANSWER

1Ch 21:26 and he **a** him with fire from heaven
Ps 118:21 I thank you that you have **a** me

ANT*

Pr 6:6 Go to the **a**, you lazybones;

ANTICHRIST*

1Jn 2:18 As you have heard that **a** is coming,
2:22 the **a**, the one who denies the Father
4:3 And this is the spirit of the **a**,
2Jn 1:7 person is the deceiver and the **a**!

ANTIOCH

Ac 11:26 in **A** that the disciples were first called "Christians."
13:1 the church at **A** there were prophets
Gal 2:11 But when Cephas came to **A**,

ANTIOCHUS

Antiochus IV Epiphanes, king of the Syrian Greeks b.c.e. 175–164 (1Mc 1:10–19). Plundered the temple in Jerusalem (1Mc 1:20–28). Attempted to force the Hellenization of the Jewish people (1Mc 1:41–53), including defiling the altar and holy place (1Mc 1:54–64). His policies sparked the Maccabean revolt.

ANXIETIES → ANXIETY

1Co 7:32 I want you to be free from **a**.

ANXIETY → ANXIETIES

Ecc 11:10 Banish **a** from your mind,
1Pe 5:7 Cast all your **a** on him, because he

ANYTHING

Ge 18:14 Is **a** too wonderful for the LORD?
Jer 32:27 is **a** too hard for me?
Mt 18:19 if two of you agree on earth about **a**
Jn 16:23 if you ask **a** of the Father in my name,

APART → PART

Jn 15:5 **a** from me you can do nothing.
Ro 3:21 **a** from law, the righteousness of
Jas 2:20 that faith **a** from works is barren?

APOLLOS

Christian from Alexandria, learned in the Scriptures; instructed by Aquila and Priscilla (Ac 18:24–28). At Corinth (Ac 19:1; 1Co 1:12; 3; Tit 3:13).

APOSTASIES → APOSTASY

Jer 2:19 and your **a** will convict you.
Eze 37:23 I will save them from all the **a**

APOSTASY* → APOSTASIES

1Mc 2:15 officers who were enforcing the **a**

APOSTLE → APOSTLES

Ro 11:13 as I am an **a** to the Gentiles,
1Co 9:1 Am I not an **a**?
2Co 12:12 signs of a true **a** were performed
Heb 3:1 **a** and high priest of our confession,

APOSTLES → APOSTLE

See also Andrew, Bartholomew, Barnabas, James, John, Judas, Matthew, Matthias, Nathanael, Paul, Peter, Philip, Simon, Thaddaeus, Thomas.
Mt 10:2 the names of the twelve **a**:
Ac 2:43 and signs were being done by the **a**.
1Co 12:28 has appointed in the church first **a**,
Eph 2:20 foundation of the **a** and prophets,
4:11 he gave were that some would be **a**,
Rev 21:14 are the twelve names of the twelve **a**

APPEAL

Mt 26:53 think that I cannot **a** to my Father,
Ac 25:11 I **a** to the emperor."
2Co 5:20 God is making his **a** through us;
Phm 1:9 rather **a** to you on the basis of love
1Pe 3:21 an **a** to God for a good conscience,

APPEAR → APPEARANCE, APPEARANCES, APPEARED, APPEARING

Mt 24:30 the sign of the Son of Man will **a** in
Mk 13:22 messiahs and false prophets will **a**
2Co 5:10 **a** before the judgment seat of Christ,
Heb 9:28 **a** a second time, not to deal with sin,

APPEARANCE → APPEAR

Ex 24:17 Now the **a** of the glory of the LORD
1Sa 16:7 not look on his **a** or on the height
2Co 5:12 those who boast in outward **a**
Jdt 11:23 You are not only beautiful in **a**,
AdE 2:7 The girl was beautiful in **a**.
Sir 19:29 A person is known by his **a**,

APPEARANCES → APPEAR

Jn 7:24 not judge by **a**, but judge with right

APPEARED → APPEAR

Jn 21:14 that Jesus **a** to the disciples after he
1Co 15:5 he **a** to Cephas, then to the twelve.
Heb 9:26 **a** once for all at the end of the age

APPEARING → APPEAR

Ac 1:3 **a** to them during forty days and
2Ti 4:8 to all who have longed for his **a**.

APPETITES

Ro 16:18 our Lord Christ, but their own **a**,
Sir 18:30 base desires, but restrain your **a**.

APPLE

Dt 32:10 guarded him as the **a** of his eye.
Zec 2:8 touches you touches the **a** of my eye

APPOINT → APPOINTED

1Sa 8:5 **a** for us, then, a king to govern us,
Isa 60:17 I will **a** Peace as your overseer

APPOINTED → APPOINT

Lev 23:2 the **a** festivals of the LORD
Ecc 3:17 for he has **a** a time for every matter,
Hab 2:3 there is still a vision for the **a** time;
Mk 3:16 So he **a** the twelve: Simon (to whom
Ac 3:20 that he may send the Messiah **a** for
Heb 1:2 whom he **a** heir of all things,
9:27 just as it is **a** for mortals to die once,

APPORTIONED → PORTION

Dt 32:8 When the Most High **a** the nations,
Jos 18:10 Joshua **a** the land to the Israelites,

APPROACH

Heb 4:16 **a** the throne of grace with boldness,
11:6 whoever would **a** him must believe
Sir 1:28 do not **a** him with a divided mind.

APPROVAL → APPROVED

Gal 1:10 I now seeking human **a**, or God's **a**?
Heb 11:2 by faith our ancestors received **a**.
1Pe 2:20 and suffer for it, you have God's **a**.

APPROVED → APPROVAL

1Th 2:4 but just as we have been **a** by God
2Ti 2:15 to present yourself to God as one **a**

AQUILA*

Husband of Priscilla; co-worker with Paul, instructor of Apollos (Ac 18; Ro 16:3; 1Co 16:19; 2Ti 4:19).

ARABS

Ne 4:7 and the **A** and the Ammonites
1Mc 5:39 also have hired **A** to help them,

ARAM → ARAMAIC, ARAMEAN

Jdg 10:6 the gods of **A**, the gods of Sidon,
2Ch 16:7 you relied on the king of **A**,

ARAMAIC → ARAM

2Ki 18:26 to your servants in the **A** language,
Ezr 4:7 the letter was written in **A** and
Da 2:4 Chaldeans said to the king (in **A**),

ARAMEAN → ARAM

Dt 26:5 "A wandering **A** was my ancestor;

ARARAT

Ge 8:4 ark came to rest on the mountains of **A**.

ARAUNAH → =ORNAN

2Sa 24:16 the threshing floor of **A** the Jebusite.

ARCHANGEL* → ANGEL

Jude 1:9 **a** Michael contended with the devil
2Es 4:36 the **a** Jeremiel answered and said,

ARCHANGEL'S* → ANGEL

1Th 4:16 **a** call and with the sound of God's

ARCHITECT*

Heb 11:10 whose **a** and builder is God.

AREOPAGUS

Ac 17:22 Then Paul stood in front of the **A**

ARGUE → ARGUES, ARGUMENT, ARGUMENTS

Job 13:3 and I desire to **a** my case with God.
Isa 1:18 now, let us **a** it out, says the LORD:
Ac 18:4 Every sabbath he would **a** in the
Ro 9:20 a human being, to **a** with God?

ARGUES* → ARGUE

Job 40:2 who **a** with God must respond."

ARGUMENT → ARGUE

Lk 9:46 An **a** arose among them as to which
1Ti 2:8 up holy hands without anger or **a**;

ARGUMENTS → ARGUE

2Co 10:4 destroy strongholds. We destroy **a**
Col 2:4 may deceive you with plausible **a**.

ARIMATHEA

Jn 19:38 After these things, Joseph of **A**,

ARISE → RISE

SS 2:10 "**A**, my love, my fair one, and
Isa 60:1 **A**, shine; for your light has come,
Mt 24:11 false prophets will **a** and lead many
1Mc 14:41 until a trustworthy prophet should **a**,

ARK

Ge 6:14 Make yourself an **a** of cypress wood
Ex 25:10 shall make an **a** of acacia wood;
1Sa 4:11 The **a** of God was captured;
1Ki 8:9 There was nothing in the **a** except
1Pe 3:20 during the building of the **a**,
Rev 11:19 the **a** of his covenant was seen
2Mc 2:4 that the tent and the **a** should follow
2Es 10:22 the **a** of our covenant has been

ARM → ARMIES, ARMOR, ARMS, ARMY

Ex 6:6 redeem you with an outstretched **a**
Dt 7:19 mighty hand and the outstretched **a**
2Ch 32:8 With him is an **a** of flesh;
Job 40:9 Have you an **a** like God,
Ps 98:1 his holy **a** have gotten him victory.
Isa 53:1 the **a** of the LORD been revealed?
Jn 12:38 the **a** of the Lord been revealed?"

ARMIES → ARM

1Sa 17:36 defied the **a** of the living God."
Lk 21:20 you see Jerusalem surrounded by **a**,
Rev 19:14 the **a** of heaven, wearing fine linen,

ARMOR → ARM

1Sa 17:38 Saul clothed David with his **a**;
Ro 13:12 and put on the **a** of light;
Eph 6:11 Put on the whole **a** of God,
Wis 5:17 will take his zeal as his whole **a**,

ARMS → ARM

Pr 31:17 and makes her **a** strong.
Hos 11:3 I took them up in my **a**;
Mk 10:16 And he took them up in his **a**,

ARMY → ARM

Ex 15:4 and his **a** he cast into the sea;
Jos 5:14 as commander of the **a** of the LORD
Ps 27:3 Though an **a** encamp against me,
Ps 33:16 A king is not saved by his great **a**;
Rev 19:19 rider on the horse and against his **a**.

AROMA

2Co 2:15 For we are the **a** of Christ to God

ARRESTED

Jer 37:14 and **a** Jeremiah and brought him to
Mt 14:3 For Herod had **a** John, bound him,
26:50 and laid hands on Jesus and **a** him.
Ac 5:18 **a** the apostles and put them in the
28:17 yet I was **a** in Jerusalem and handed

ARROGANCE → ARROGANT

Pr 8:13 Pride and **a** and the way of evil
Eze 7:24 put an end to the **a** of the strong,
Jdt 9:10 their **a** by the hand of a woman.
Sir 10:7 **A** is hateful to the Lord and to
1Mc 1:24 much blood, and spoke with great **a**.

ARROGANT → ARROGANCE

Ps 73:3 For I was envious of the **a**;
Da 7:11 a words that the horn was speaking.
1Co 13:4 love is not envious or boastful or **a**

ARROW → ARROWS

Ps 64:7 But God will shoot his **a** at them;
Isa 49:2 he made me a polished **a**,

ARROWS → ARROW

1Sa 20:20 I will shoot three **a** to the side of it,
Eph 6:16 quench all the flaming **a** of the evil

ARTAXERXES → =AHASUERUS

1. King of Persia; allowed rebuilding of temple under Ezra (Ezr 4; 7), and of walls of Jerusalem under his cupbearer Nehemiah (Ne 2; 5:14; 13:6).
2. See Ahasuerus.

ARTEMIS

Ac 19:27 the temple of the great goddess **A**

ASA

King of Judah (1Ki 15:8-24; 1Ch 3:10; 2Ch 14-16). Godly reformer (2Ch 15); in later years defeated Israel with help of Aram, not the LORD (1Ki 15:16-22; 2Ch 16).

ASAHEL

Nephew of David, one of his warriors (2Sa 23:24; 1Ch 2:16; 11:26; 27:7). Killed by Abner (2Sa 2); avenged by Joab (2Sa 3:22-39).

ASAPH

1. Recorder to Hezekiah (2Ki 18:18, 37; Isa 36:3, 22).
2. Levitical musician (1Ch 6:39; 15:17-19; 16:4-7, 37), seer (2Ch 29:30). Sons of (1Ch 25; 2Ch 5:12; 20:14; 29:13; 35:15; Ezr 2:41; 3:10; Ne 7:44; 11:17; 12:27-47). Psalms of (2Ch 29:30; Ps 50; 73-83).

ASCEND → ASCENDED, ASCENDING, ASCENTS

Ps 139:8 If I **a** to heaven, you are there;
Isa 14:13 in your heart, "I will **a** to heaven;
Ac 2:34 David did not **a** into the heavens,
Ro 10:6 'Who will **a** into heaven?'"
2Es 4:8 neither did I ever **a** into heaven.'

ASCENDED → ASCEND

2Ki 2:11 Elijah **a** in a whirlwind into heaven.
Jn 3:13 No one has **a** into heaven except

ASCENDING → ASCEND

Ge 28:12 the angels of God were **a** and
Jn 1:51 the angels of God **a** and descending

ASCENTS → ASCEND

Songs of ascents (Ps 120-134).

ASCRIBE

Dt 32:3 **a** greatness to our God!
1Ch 16:29 **A** to the LORD the glory due his
Ps 68:34 **A** power to God,
Sir 39:15 **A** majesty to his name
Bar 2:17 not **a** glory or justice to the Lord;

ASHAMED → SHAME

Ge 2:25 were both naked, and were not **a**.
Ps 6:10 All my enemies shall be **a** and
Isa 29:22 No longer shall Jacob be **a**,
Mk 8:38 who are **a** of me and of my words
Ro 1:16 For I am not **a** of the gospel;
2Ti 2:15 a worker who has no need to be **a**,
Heb 2:11 Jesus is not **a** to call them brothers
11:16 God is not **a** to be called their God;

ASHER

Son of Jacob by Zilpah (Ge 30:13; 35:26; 46:17; Ex 1:4; 1Ch 2:2). Tribe of blessed (Ge 49:20; Dt 33:24-25), numbered (Nu 1:40-41; 26:44-47), allotted land (Jos 10:24-31; Eze 48:2), failed to fully possess (Jdg 1:31-32), failed to support Deborah (Jdg 5:17), supported Gideon (Jdg 6:35; 7:23) and David (1Ch 12:36), 12,000 from (Rev 7:6).

ASHERAH → ASHERAHS, ASTARTE

1Ki 18:19 and the four hundred prophets of **A**,
2Ch 15:16 made an abominable image for **A**.

ASHERAHS* → ASHERAH

Jdg 3:7 and worshiping the Baals and the **A**.

ASHES

Ge 18:27 I who am but dust and **a**.
Est 4:1 and put on sackcloth and **a**,
Job 42:6 and repent in dust and **a**."
Jnh 3:6 himself with sackcloth, and sat in **a**.
Mt 11:21 long ago in sackcloth and **a**.
Jdt 4:11 the temple and put **a** on their heads
Sir 17:32 but all human beings are dust and **a**.

ASIA

Ac 16:6 Holy Spirit to speak the word in **A**.
Rev 1:4 to the seven churches that are in **A**:

ASIDE → SIDE

Ex 32:8 quick to turn **a** from the way that I
Dt 28:14 if you do not turn **a** from any of the
Jer 5:23 they have turned **a** and gone away.
Da 9:5 turning **a** from your commandments
Ro 3:12 All have turned **a**, together they
Heb 12:1 also lay **a** every weight and the sin

ASK

Ps 2:8 **A** of me, and I will make the nations
Isa 65:1 sought out by those who did not **a**,
Mt 6:8 knows what you need before you **a**
7:7 "**A**, and it will be given you;
Jn 16:24 **A** and you will receive,
Jas 4:3 You **a** and do not receive, because you **a** wrongly,
1Jn 5:14 we **a** anything according to his will,

ASLEEP → SLEEP

Jnh 1:5 had lain down, and was fast **a**.
Mt 8:24 by the waves; but he was **a**.
1Th 5:6 So then let us not fall **a** as others do,

ASSEMBLE → ASSEMBLY

1Ki 18:19 all Israel **a** for me at Mount Carmel,
Zep 3:8 to gather nations, to **a** kingdoms,
Rev 16:14 to **a** them for battle on the great day

ASSEMBLY → ASSEMBLE

Ne 8:2 Ezra brought the law before the **a**,
Ps 149:1 his praise in the **a** of the faithful.
Heb 12:23 the **a** of the firstborn who are

ASSIGNED

Ro 12:3 the measure of faith that God has **a**.
1Co 3:5 as the Lord **a** to each.
7:17 lead the life that the Lord has **a**,

ASSURANCE

Dt 28:66 in dread, with no **a** of your life.
Heb 6:11 so as to realize the full **a** of hope
11:1 faith is the **a** of things hoped for,

ASSYRIA

Ge 10:11 From that land he went into **A**,
2Ki 18:11 of **A** carried the Israelites away to **A**,
Jer 50:18 as I punished the king of **A**.

ASTARTE → ASHERAH, ASTARTES

1Ki 11:5 Solomon followed **A** the goddess

ASTARTES → ASTARTE

Jdg 2:13 and worshiped Baal and the **A**.

ASTONISHED

Isa 52:14 there were many who were **a** at him
Lk 2:48 his parents saw him they were **a**;
Gal 1:6 **a** that you are so quickly deserting

ASTRAY → STRAY

Dt 30:17 are led **a** to bow down to other gods
Isa 53:6 All we like sheep have gone **a;**
Jer 50:6 their shepherds have led them **a,**
Mt 18:12 go in search of the one that went **a?**
1Pe 2:25 For you were going **a** like sheep,

ATE → EAT

Ge 3:6 she took of its fruit and **a;**
Ex 16:35 The Israelites **a** manna forty years,
Ps 78:25 Mortals **a** of the bread of angels;
Eze 3:3 I **a** it; and in my mouth it was as
Mt 14:20 And all **a** and were filled;
15:37 And all of them **a** and were filled;
Rev 10:10 from the hand of the angel and **a** it;

ATHALIAH

Granddaughter of Omri; wife of Jehoram and mother of Ahaziah; encouraged their evil ways (2Ki 8:18, 27; 2Ch 22:2). At death of Ahaziah she made herself queen, killing all his sons but Joash (2Ki 11:1-3; 2Ch 22:10-12); killed six years later when Joash revealed (2Ki 11:4-16; 2Ch 23:1-15).

ATHLETE → ATHLETES

2Ti 2:5 And in the case of an **a,**

ATHLETES → ATHLETE

1Co 9:25 **A** exercise self-control in all things;

ATONE → ATONEMENT

Da 9:24 an end to sin, and to **a** for iniquity,
Sir 3:3 who honor their father **a** for sins,

ATONED* → ATONEMENT

Pr 16:6 and faithfulness iniquity is **a** for,

ATONEMENT → ATONE, ATONED, ATONING

Ex 29:36 a bull as a sin offering for **a.**
30:10 Aaron shall perform the rite of **a**
32:30 perhaps I can make **a** for your sin."
Lev 23:28 for it is a day of **a,**
Ro 3:25 God put forward as a sacrifice of **a**
Heb 2:17 to make a sacrifice of **a** for the sins

ATONING → ATONEMENT

1Jn 2:2 and he is the **a** sacrifice for our sins,
4:10 sent his Son to be the **a** sacrifice for
Sir 28:5 will make an **a** sacrifice for his sins?

ATTAIN → ATTAINED

Ps 139:6 it is so high that I cannot **a** it.
Pr 8:12 and I a knowledge and discretion.
Da 12:12 those who persevere and **a**
Php 3:11 **a** the resurrection from the dead.

ATTAINED → ATTAIN

Ro 9:30 not strive for righteousness, have **a**
Php 3:16 let us hold fast to what we have **a.**

ATTENTION

Nu 16:15 "Pay no **a** to their offering.
Job 24:12 yet God pays no **a** to their prayer.
Heb 2:1 greater **a** to what we have heard,

ATTESTED

Ac 2:22 a man **a** to you by God with deeds
Ro 3:21 and is **a** by the law and the prophets,

AUTHOR*

Ac 3:15 and you killed the **A** of life,
Wis 13:3 for the **a** of beauty created them.

AUTHORITIES → AUTHORITY

Ro 13:1 be subject to the governing **a;**
Col 2:15 He disarmed the rulers and **a** and

AUTHORITY → AUTHORITIES

Ge 41:45 Thus Joseph gained **a** over the land
Pr 29:2 When the righteous are in **a,**
Mk 1:27 A new teaching—with **a!**
Lk 5:24 Son of Man has **a** on earth to forgive
Ac 5:29 obey God rather than any human **a.**
Ro 13:1 for there is no **a** except from God,
1Co 11:10 woman ought to have a symbol of **a**
Col 2:10 who is the head of every ruler and **a.**
1Ti 2:12 no woman to teach or to have **a** over
Rev 12:10 and the **a** of his Messiah,
20:4 on them were given **a** to judge.

AVENGE → VENGEANCE

Dt 32:43 he will **a** the blood of his children,
Joel 3:21 I will **a** their blood, and I will not
Ro 12:19 Beloved, never **a** yourselves,
Rev 6:10 and **a** our blood on the inhabitants
1Mc 2:67 **a** the wrong done to your people.

AVENGER → VENGEANCE

Nu 35:12 shall be for you a refuge from the **a,**
Ps 8:2 to silence the enemy and the **a.**
1Th 4:6 the Lord is an **a** in all these things,

AVENGING → VENGEANCE

Na 1:2 A jealous and **a** God is the Lord,

AVOID → AVOIDS

2Ti 2:16 **A** profane chatter, for it will lead
Tit 3:9 But **a** stupid controversies,

AVOIDS → AVOID

Pr 16:6 by the fear of the Lord one **a** evil.

AWAKE

Ps 44:23 **A,** do not cast us off forever!
57:8 **A,** my soul! **A,** O harp and lyre!
Isa 51:9 **A, a,** put on strength, O arm of the Lord!
Da 12:2 in the dust of the earth shall **a,**
Mk 14:37 Could you not keep **a** one hour?
Eph 5:14 "Sleeper, **a!** Rise from the dead,
1Th 5:6 but let us keep **a** and be sober;
Rev 16:15 Blessed is the one who stays **a** and

AWE → AWESOME

Ps 119:161 my heart stands in **a** of your words.
Isa 29:23 will stand in **a** of the God of Israel.
Mt 9:8 saw it, they were filled with **a,**
Ac 2:43 **A** came upon everyone, because
Ro 11:20 do not become proud, but stand in **a.**

AWESOME → AWE

Ex 15:11 majestic in holiness, **a** in splendor,
Dt 6:22 before our eyes great and **a** signs
10:17 the great God, mighty and **a,**
Ne 1:5 and a God who keeps covenant
Ps 47:2 For the Lord, the Most High, is **a,**
65:5 By **a** deeds you answer us with
68:35 **A** is God in his sanctuary,
Da 9:4 saying, "Ah, Lord, great and **a** God,
Sir 43:29 **A** is the Lord and very great,

AX

2Ki 6:5 his **a** head fell into the water;
Mt 3:10 Even now the **a** is lying at the root

AZARIAH → =ABEDNEGO, =UZZIAH

1. King of Judah; see Uzziah (2Ki 15:1-7).
2. Prophet (2Ch 15:1-8).
3. Opponent of Jeremiah (Jer 43:2).
4. Jewish exile; see Abednego (Da 1:6-19).

AZAZEL

Lev 16:8 for the Lord and the other lot for **A.**

B

BAAL → BAALS

Nu 25:3 Israel yoked itself to the **B** of Peor,
Jdg 2:13 and worshiped **B** and the Astartes.
1Ki 18:25 Elijah said to the prophets of **B,**
19:18 the knees that have not bowed to **B,**
Jer 2:8 the prophets prophesied by **B,**
Hos 2:16 no longer will you call me, "My **B."**
Ro 11:4 not bowed the knee to **B."**

BAALS → BAAL

Jdg 3:7 worshiping the **B** and the Asherahs.
1Sa 7:4 So Israel put away the **B** and the

BAASHA

King of Israel (1Ki 15:16-16:7; 2Ch 16:1-6).

BABEL → BABYLON

Ge 11:9 Therefore it was called **B,**

BABES → BABIES

Ps 8:2 Out of the mouths of **b** and infants
Isa 3:4 and **b** shall rule over them.

BABIES → BABES

Mt 21:16 the mouths of infants and nursing **b**

BABYLON → BABEL

2Ki 24:15 into captivity from Jerusalem to **B.**
Ps 137:1 By the rivers of **B**—there we sat
Isa 14:4 this taunt against the king of **B:**
21:9 he responded, "Fallen, fallen is **B;**
Jer 25:11 serve the king of **B** seventy years.
1Pe 5:13 Your sister church in **B,** chosen
Rev 14:8 "Fallen, fallen is **B** the great!
Bel 1:36 he set him down in **B,**

BACK → BACKSLIDING

Ge 19:26 Lot's wife, behind him, looked **b,**
2Ki 20:11 he brought the shadow **b** the ten
Lk 9:62 puts a hand to the plow and looks **b**

BACKSLIDING* → BACK

Jer 8:5 people turned away in perpetual **b?**

BAD

Pr 20:14 **"B, b,"** says the buyer, then goes
Mt 7:17 but the **b** tree bears **b** fruit.
1Co 15:33 **"B** company ruins good morals."

BALAAM

Prophet who attempted to curse Israel (Nu 22-24; Dt 23:4-5; 2Pe 2:15; Jude 11; Rev 2:14). Killed in Israel's vengeance on Midianites (Nu 31:8; Jos 13:22).

BALAK

Moabite king who hired Balaam to curse Israel (Nu 22-24; Jos 24:9; Mic 6:5).

BALANCE → BALANCES

Job 31:6 let me be weighed in a just **b,**
Isa 40:12 in scales and the hills in a **b?**

BALANCES → BALANCE

Lev 19:36 shall have honest **b,** honest weights,
Pr 16:11 Honest **b** and scales are the Lord's;
Sir 28:25 make **b** and scales for your words.

BALM

Jer 8:22 Is there no **b** in Gilead?

BANDIT

Mt 26:55 to arrest me as though I were a **b?**
Jn 10:1 in by another way is a thief and a **b.**

BANISH

Ecc 11:10 **B** anxiety from your mind,
Ro 11:26 he will **b** ungodliness from Jacob."

BANNER

Ex 17:15 and called it, The Lord is my **b.**

BAPTISM → BAPTIZE

Mk 1:4 proclaiming a **b** of repentance for
10:38 be baptized with the **b** that I am
Lk 20:4 the **b** of John come from heaven,
Ac 18:25 though he knew only the **b** of John.
19:3 They answered, "Into John's **b."**
Ro 6:4 buried with him by **b** into death,
1Co 15:29 receive **b** on behalf of the dead?
Eph 4:5 one Lord, one faith, one **b,**
Col 2:12 when you were buried with him in **b,**
1Pe 3:21 **b,** which this prefigured, now saves

BAPTISMS* → BAPTIZE

Heb 6:2 about **b,** laying on of hands,
9:10 with food and drink and various **b,**

BAPTIST → BAPTIZE

Mt 3:1 In those days John the **B** appeared
11:11 has arisen greater than John the **B;**
14:8 the head of John the **B** here on a
16:14 they said, "Some say John the **B,**

BAPTIZE → BAPTISM, BAPTISMS, BAPTIST, BAPTIZED, BAPTIZING

Mt 3:11 "I **b** you with water for repentance,
Lk 3:16 He will **b** you with the Holy Spirit
1Co 1:17 For Christ did not send me to **b** but

BAPTIZED → BAPTIZE

Mt 3:13 to John at the Jordan, to be **b**
Ac 1:5 John **b** with water, but you will be **b** with the Holy
2:38 "Repent, and be **b** every one of you
Ro 6:3 **b** into Christ Jesus were **b** into his
1Co 10:2 all were **b** into Moses in the cloud
12:13 one Spirit we were all **b** into one

BAPTIZING* → BAPTIZE

Mt 28:19 **b** them in the name of the Father
Jn 4:1 "Jesus is making and **b** more

BARABBAS*

Prisoner released by Pilate instead of Jesus (Mt 27:16-26; Mk 15:7-15; Lk 23:18-19; Jn 18:40).

BARAK*

Judge who fought with Deborah against Canaanites (Jdg 4-5; 1Sa 12:11; Heb 11:32).

BARBARIAN → BARBARIANS

Col 3:11 circumcised and uncircumcised, **b,**

BARBARIANS* → BARBARIAN

Ro 1:14 am a debtor both to Greeks and to **b,**

BARBS*

Nu 33:55 let remain shall be as **b** in your eyes

BARE → BARED

Ps 18:15 were laid **b** at your rebuke,
Heb 4:13 all are naked and laid **b** to the eyes

BARED* → BARE

Isa 52:10 The Lord has **b** his holy arm

BARN → BARNS

Lk 12:24 they have neither storehouse nor **b,**

BARNABAS* → =JOSEPH

Disciple, originally Joseph (Ac 4:36), prophet (Ac 13:1), apostle (Ac 14:14). Brought Paul to apostles (Ac 9:27), Antioch (Ac 11:22-29; Gal 2:1-13), on the first missionary journey (Ac 13-14). Together at Jerusalem Council, they separated over John Mark (Ac 15). Later co-workers (1Co 9:6; Col 4:10).

BARNS* → BARN

Dt 28:8 the blessing upon you in your **b,**
Ps 144:13 May our **b** be filled, with produce
Lk 12:18 pull down my **b** and build larger

BARREN → BARRENNESS

Ge 11:30 Now Sarai was **b;** she had no child.
Ex 23:26 No one shall miscarry or be **b** in
1Sa 2:5 The **b** has borne seven, but she who
Ps 113:9 He gives the **b** woman a home,
Isa 54:1 Sing, O **b** one who did not bear;
Lk 1:7 because Elizabeth was **b,**
Heb 11:11 too old—and Sarah herself was **b**—

BARRENNESS* → BARREN

Dt 7:14 neither sterility nor **b** among you
Ro 4:19 considered the **b** of Sarah's womb.

BARTHOLOMEW* → =NATHANAEL?

Apostle (Mt 10:3; Mk 3:18; Lk 6:14; Ac 1:13). Possibly also called Nathanael (Jn 1:45-49; 21:2).

BARUCH*

Jeremiah's secretary (Jer 32:12-16; 36; 43:1-6; 45:1-2). Deuterocanonical book ascribed to (Bar 1:1, 3, 8).

BARZILLAI

1. Gileadite who aided David during Absalom's revolt (2Sa 17:27; 19:31-39).
2. Son-in-law of 1. (Ezr 2:61; Ne 7:63).

BASED*

Ro 9:31 righteousness that is **b** on the law,
9:32 but as if it were **b** on works.
Php 3:9 righteousness from God **b** on faith.

BASHAN

Nu 21:33 King Og of **B** came out against
Ps 22:12 strong bulls of **B** surround me;
Mic 7:14 let them feed in **B** and Gilead as in

BASIN

Ex 30:18 You shall make a bronze **b** with a
1Ki 7:30 four corners were supports for a **b.**
Jn 13:5 **b** and began to wash the disciples'

BASIS

Lk 23:4 "I find no **b** for an accusation
Phm 1:9 rather appeal to you on the **b** of love

BASKET

Ex 2:3 she got a papyrus **b** for him,
Mt 5:15 a lamp puts it under the bushel **b,**
Ac 9:25 in the wall, lowering him in a **b.**

BATHING

2Sa 11:2 he saw from the roof a woman **b;**

BATHSHEBA*

Wife of Uriah; committed adultery with and married David (2Sa 11; Ps 51), mother of Solomon (2Sa 12:24; 1Ki 1-2; 1Ch 3:5).

BATTLE

1Sa 17:47 the **b** is the Lord's and he will give
2Ch 20:15 for the **b** is not yours but God's.
Ps 24:8 and mighty, the Lord, mighty in **b.**
Ecc 9:11 nor the **b** to the strong, nor bread to
Rev 16:14 them for **b** on the great day of God
20:8 Magog, in order to gather them for **b;**
1Mc 3:19 the army that victory in **b** depends,

BEAR → BEARS, BIRTH, BIRTHRIGHT, BORE, BORN, CHILDBEARING, FIRSTBORN

Ge 4:13 punishment is greater than I can **b!**
17:19 your wife Sarah shall **b** you a son,
Isa 7:14 is with child and shall **b** a son,
Mt 1:23 virgin shall conceive and **b** a son,
7:18 A good tree cannot **b** bad fruit,
Lk 11:46 load people with burdens hard to **b,**
Jn 15:2 he prunes to make it **b** more fruit.
Gal 6:2 **B** one another's burdens,
Col 3:13 **B** with one another and,
Heb 9:28 offered once to **b** the sins of many,
Rev 12:4 woman who was about to **b** a child,

BEARS → BEAR

Ps 68:19 Blessed be the Lord, who daily **b** us
1Co 13:7 It **b** all things, believes all things,

BEAST → BEASTS

Rev 11:7 **b** that comes up from the bottomless pit
13:18 calculate the number of the **b,**
16:2 who had the mark of the **b**
19:20 who had received the mark of the **b**

BEASTS → BEAST

Da 7:3 four great **b** came up out of the sea,
Mk 1:13 and he was with the wild **b;**

BEAT → BEATEN, BEATING

Isa 2:4 shall **b** their swords into plowshares,
Joel 3:10 **B** your plowshares into swords,
Lk 22:63 began to mock him and **b** him;

BEATEN → BEAT

2Co 11:25 Three times I was **b** with rods.
1Pe 2:20 If you endure when you are **b** for

BEATING → BEAT

Ex 2:11 He saw an Egyptian **b** a Hebrew,
1Co 9:26 nor do I box as though **b** the air;

BEAUTIFUL → BEAUTY

Ge 12:11 you are a woman **b** in appearance;
1Sa 25:3 The woman was clever and **b,**
Est 2:7 the girl was fair and **b,**
Job 42:15 no women so **b** as Job's daughters;
Ps 48:2 **b** in elevation, is the joy of all
SS 1:5 I am black and **b,** O daughters of
Isa 4:2 the branch of the Lord shall be **b**
52:7 How **b** upon the mountains are the
Ac 3:2 the temple called the **B** Gate so that
Ro 10:15 **b** are the feet of those who bring
Tob 6:12 girl is sensible, brave, and very **b,**
Jdt 8:7 She was **b** in appearance,
Wis 7:29 She is more **b** than the sun,
Sir 25:1 and they are **b** in the sight of God
Sus 1:2 very **b** woman and one who feared

BEAUTY → BEAUTIFUL

2Sa 14:25 so much for his **b** as Absalom;
Ps 27:4 to behold the **b** of the Lord,
Pr 6:25 Do not desire her **b** in your heart,
31:30 Charm is deceitful, and **b** is vain,
1Pe 3:4 with the lasting **b** of a gentle
Jdt 16:9 her **b** captivated his mind,
Wis 13:3 for the author of **b** created them.
Sir 9:8 not gaze at **b** belonging to another;
Sus 1:56 **b** has beguiled you and lust has
1Mc 2:12 And see, our holy place, our **b,**

BED → BEDS

Ge 47:31 bowed himself on the head of his **b.**
Ps 139:8 if I make my **b** in Sheol, you are
Lk 5:19 let him down with his **b** through the
Heb 13:4 let the marriage **b** be kept undefiled;

BEDS → BED

Ps 36:4 They plot mischief while on their **b;**
Mic 2:1 and evil deeds on their **b!**

BEE* → BEES

Isa 7:18 the **b** that is in the land of Assyria.
Sir 11:3 The **b** is small among flying

BEER-SHEBA

Ge 21:31 Therefore that place was called **B;**
1Sa 3:20 And all Israel from Dan to **B** knew

BEES → BEE

Jdg 14:8 a swarm of **b** in the body of the lion,

BEFORE

Ex 20:3 you shall have no other gods **b** me.
33:2 I will send an angel **b** you,
Isa 43:10 **B** me no god was formed,
65:24 **B** they call I will answer,
Mal 3:1 my messenger to prepare the way **b**
Mt 6:8 Father knows what you need **b** you
Lk 22:61 **"B** the cock crows today,
Heb 12:2 sake of the joy that was set **b** him

BEGGAR → BEGS

Mk 10:46 son of Timaeus, a blind **b,**
Jn 9:8 who had seen him before as a **b**

BEGINNING

Ge 1:1 In the **b** when God created the
Ps 111:10 fear of the Lord is the **b** of wisdom;
Pr 1:7 The fear of the Lord is the **b** of
8:22 The Lord created me at the **b** of his
Ecc 7:8 Better is the end of a thing than its **b**
Isa 40:21 Has it not been told you from the **b?**
Mt 24:8 this is but the **b** of the birth pangs.
Jn 1:1 In the **b** was the Word,
1Jn 1:1 declare to you what was from the **b,**
2Jn 1:6 as you have heard it from the **b**—
Rev 21:6 and the Omega, the **b** and the end.

Wis 6:17 The **b** of wisdom is the most sincere
Sir 1:14 To fear the Lord is the **b** of wisdom;

BEGOTTEN

Ps 2:7 You are my son; today I have **b** you.
Ac 13:33 are my Son; today I have **b** you.'
Heb 1:5 are my Son; today I have **b** you"?
2Es 6:58 have called your firstborn, only **b,**

BEGS → BEG

Lk 6:30 Give to everyone who **b** from you;

BEHEADED → HEAD

Lk 9:9 Herod said, "John I **b;**
Rev 20:4 the souls of those who had been **b**

BEHEMOTH

Job 40:15 "Look at **B,** which I made just as I
2Es 6:49 the one you called **B** and the name

BEHIND

Isa 38:17 have cast all my sins **b** your back.
Mt 16:23 said to Peter, "Get **b** me, Satan!
Php 3:13 forgetting what lies **b** and straining

BEING

Ge 2:7 and the man became a living **b.**
Nu 23:19 God is not a human **b,**
Da 7:13 one like a human **b** coming with the
Jn 1:3 All things came into **b** through him,
1Co 15:45 Adam, became a living **b";**
Heb 1:3 the exact imprint of God's very **b,**

BEL*

Babylonian deity (Isa 46:1; Jer 50:2; 51:44; LtJ 6:40; Bel 1:3-28).

BELIEF → BELIEVE

2Th 2:13 the Spirit and through **b** in the truth.

BELIEVE → BELIEF, BELIEVED, BELIEVER, BELIEVERS, BELIEVES, BELIEVING

Ex 4:5 that they may **b** that the Lord,
Nu 14:11 long will they refuse to **b** in me,
2Ki 17:14 did not **b** in the Lord their God.
Ps 119:66 for I **b** in your commandments.
Pr 14:15 The simple **b** everything,
Jer 12:6 do not **b** them, though they speak
Hab 1:5 you would not **b** if you were told.
Mt 18:6 one of these little ones who **b** in me,
24:23 or 'There he is!'—do not **b** it.
Mk 1:15 repent, and **b** in the good news."
9:24 "I **b;** help my unbelief!"
Lk 24:25 how slow of heart to **b** all that the
Jn 1:7 so that all might **b** through him.
3:18 who **b** in him are not condemned;
5:46 believed Moses, you would **b** me,
6:29 you **b** in him whom he has sent."
10:38 you do not **b** me, **b** the works,
14:1 **B** in God, **b** also in me.
17:20 will **b** in me through their word,
20:29 not seen and yet have come to **b."**
Ac 16:31 answered, **"B** on the Lord Jesus,
28:24 while others refused to **b.**
Ro 3:22 faith in Jesus Christ for all who **b.**
10:9 **b** in your heart that God raised him
1Co 15:2 unless you have come to **b** in vain.
Gal 3:9 this reason, those who **b** are blessed
1Th 4:14 For since we **b** that Jesus died and
Heb 11:6 would approach him must **b**
Jas 2:19 Even the demons **b**—and shudder.
1Pe 1:8 you do not see him now, you **b**
1Jn 4:1 Beloved, do not **b** every spirit,
Jude 1:5 destroyed those who did not **b.**
Sir 19:15 so do not **b** everything you hear.

BELIEVED → BELIEVE

Ge 15:6 And he **b** the Lord;
Ex 14:31 **b** in the Lord and in his servant
Isa 53:1 Who has **b** what we have heard?
Jn 1:12 received him, who **b** in his name,
12:38 "Lord, who has **b** our message,
20:8 also went in, and he saw and **b;**
Ac 2:44 All who **b** were together and had all
Ro 4:3 "Abraham **b** God, and it was
10:16 "Lord, who has **b** our message?"
2Co 4:13 "I **b,** and so I spoke"—
Gal 3:6 Just as Abraham **"b** God,
1Ti 3:16 **b** in throughout the world, taken up
Heb 4:3 For we who have **b** enter that rest,
Jas 2:23 that says, "Abraham **b** God,
Jdt 14:10 had done, he **b** firmly in God.
1Mc 2:59 **b** and were saved from the flame.

BELIEVER → BELIEVE

1Co 6:6 but a **b** goes to court against a **b**—
7:12 **b** has a wife who is an unbeliever,
2Co 6:15 Or what does a **b** share with an

BELIEVERS → BELIEVE

1Co 14:22 a sign not for **b** but for unbelievers,
Gal 2:4 because of false **b** secretly brought
2Th 3:6 keep away from **b** who are living in
1Pe 2:17 Love the family of **b.**

BELIEVES → BELIEVE

Jn 3:15 whoever **b** in him may have eternal
11:26 everyone who lives and **b** in me
Ro 9:33 whoever **b** in him will not be put to
10:10 **b** with the heart and so is justified,
1Co 13:7 It bears all things, **b** all things,

BELIEVING → BELIEVE

Jn 20:31 through **b** you may have life in his
Gal 3:5 or by your **b** what you heard?

BELLY

Ge 3:14 upon your **b** you shall go,
Lev 11:42 Whatever moves on its **b,**
Jnh 1:17 and Jonah was in the **b** of the fish
Mt 12:40 three days and three nights in the **b**
Php 3:19 is destruction; their god is the **b;**

BELONG → BELONGS

Dt 29:29 The secret things **b** to the Lord our God, but the revealed things **b** to us
Ps 82:8 for all the nations **b** to you!
Da 9:9 To the Lord our God **b** mercy and
Jn 10:16 sheep that do not **b** to this fold.
15:19 Because you do not **b** to the world,
Ro 9:6 not all Israelites truly **b** to Israel,
1Co 3:23 you **b** to Christ, and Christ belongs
12:15 I do not **b** to the body,"
1Jn 2:19 out from us, but they did not **b** to us;

BELONGS → BELONG

Ps 22:28 For dominion **b** to the Lord,
62:11 I heard this: that power **b** to God,
Jnh 2:9 Deliverance **b** to the Lord!"
Rev 7:10 "Salvation **b** to our God who is

BELOVED → LOVE

SS 2:16 My **b** is mine and I am his;
Mt 3:17 heaven said, "This is my Son, the **B,**
12:18 my **b,** with whom my soul is well
17:5 "This is my Son, the **B;**
Col 3:12 As God's chosen ones, holy and **b,**
Rev 20:9 camp of the saints and the **b** city.

BELSHAZZAR*

King of Babylon (Da 5; Bar 1:11-12).

BELT

1Sa 18:4 his sword and his bow and his **b.**
Isa 11:5 Righteousness shall be the **b** around
Mk 1:6 with a leather **b** around his waist,
Eph 6:14 the **b** of truth around your waist,

BELTESHAZZAR → SEE DANIEL

BEN-HADAD*

1. King of Syria in time of Asa (1Ki 15:18-20; 2Ch 16:2-4).

2. King of Syria in time of Ahab (1Ki 20; 2Ki 6:24; 8:7-15).

3. King of Syria in time of Jehoahaz (2Ki 13:3, 24-25; Jer 49:27; Am 1:4).

BENAIAH

A commander of David's army (2Sa 8:18; 20:23; 23:20-30); loyal to Solomon (1Ki 1:8-2:46; 4:4).

BEND → BENT

Php 2:10 name of Jesus every knee should **b,**
Man 1:11 And now I **b** the knee of my heart,

BENEFICIAL → BENEFIT

1Co 6:12 but not all things are **b.**
10:23 lawful," but not all things are **b.**

BENEFIT → BENEFICIAL, BENEFITS

Gal 5:2 Christ will be of no **b** to you.
Phm 1:20 have this **b** from you in the Lord!
Heb 4:2 message they heard did not **b** them,

BENEFITS → BENEFIT

Ps 103:2 and do not forget all his **b**—
1Co 9:11 if we reap your material **b?**

BENJAMIN → BENJAMINITE

Twelfth son of Jacob by Rachel (Ge 35:16-24; 46:19-21; 1Ch 2:2). Jacob refused to send him to Egypt, but relented (Ge 42-45). Tribe of blessed (Ge 49:27; Dt 33:12), numbered (Nu 1:37; 26:41), allotted land (Jos 18:11-28; Eze 48:23), failed to fully possess (Jdg 1:21), nearly obliterated (Jdg 20-21), sided with Ish-Bosheth (2Sa 2), but turned to David (1Ch 12:2, 29). 12,000 from (Rev 7:8).

BENJAMINITE → BENJAMIN

Jdg 3:15 the **B,** a left-handed man.
1Sa 9:21 Saul answered, "I am only a **B,**

BENT → BEND

Hos 11:4 I **b** down to them and fed them.
Jn 8:6 [[Jesus **b** down and wrote with his]]
20:5 He **b** down to look in and saw

BEREAVE → BEREAVES

Lev 26:22 they shall **b** you of your children
Eze 36:12 No longer shall you **b** them of

BEREAVES* → BEREAVE

La 1:20 In the street the sword **b;**

BESIDES

Dt 32:39 there is no god **b** me.
Ps 18:31 And who is a rock **b** our God?—
Isa 45:21 There is no other god **b** me,
Wis 12:13 For neither is there any god **b** you,
Bel 1:41 there is no other **b** you!"

BEST → GOOD

Dt 33:21 He chose the **b** for himself,
Mk 12:39 the **b** seats in the synagogues and
2Ti 2:15 your **b** to present yourself to God

BETHANY

Mt 26:6 Jesus was at **B** in the house of
Jn 11:1 a certain man was ill, Lazarus of **B,**

BETHEL

Ge 12:8 the east of **B,** and pitched his tent,
28:19 He called that place **B;**
1Sa 7:16 a circuit year by year to **B,** Gilgal,

BETHLEHEM

Ru 4:11 and bestow a name in **B;**
1Sa 17:12 David was the son of an Ephrathite of **B**
Mic 5:2 But you, O **B** of Ephrathah,
Mt 2:1 after Jesus was born in **B** of Judea,
Lk 2:15 "Let us go now to **B** and see this

BETRAY → BETRAYED

Mt 10:21 Brother will **b** brother to death,
Mk 14:11 to look for an opportunity to **b** him.
Jn 13:11 For he knew who was to **b** him;

BETRAYED → BETRAY

Lk 21:16 You will be **b** even by parents and
1Co 11:23 Jesus on the night when he was **b**

BETTER → GOOD

1Sa 15:22 Surely, to obey is **b** than sacrifice,
Ps 63:3 your steadfast love is **b** than life,
Pr 15:16 **B** is a little with the fear of
27:5 **B** is open rebuke than hidden love.
Ecc 2:24 There is nothing **b** for mortals than
9:4 a living dog is **b** than a dead lion.
SS 1:2 For your love is **b** than wine,
Da 1:20 he found them ten times **b** than all
Mt 5:29 it is **b** for you to lose one of your
Mk 14:21 It would have been **b** for that one
Jn 11:50 **b** for you to have one man die for
Ro 14:5 Some judge one day to be **b** than
Php 1:23 and be with Christ, for that is far **b**;
2:3 in humility regard others as **b** than
Heb 7:22 the guarantee of a **b** covenant.
9:23 need **b** sacrifices than these.
1Pe 3:17 For it is **b** to suffer for doing good,
Tob 12:8 A little with righteousness is **b** than
Sir 40:26 the fear of the Lord is **b** than either.

BETWEEN

Ge 3:15 put enmity **b** you and the woman,
9:13 a sign of the covenant **b** me and
16:5 the Lord judge **b** you and me!"
Isa 2:4 He shall judge **b** the nations,
Eze 34:17 I shall judge **b** sheep and sheep, **b** rams and goats:
Jn 19:18 on either side, with Jesus **b** them.
Ro 10:12 no distinction **b** Jew and Greek;
Eph 2:14 dividing wall, that is, the hostility **b**
1Ti 2:5 one mediator **b** God and humankind

BEWARE

Ecc 12:12 anything beyond these, my child, **b**.
Mt 6:1 **"B** of practicing your piety before
Php 3:2 **B** of the dogs, **b** of the evil workers,

BEYOND

Ps 147:5 his understanding is **b** measure.
2Co 4:17 an eternal weight of glory **b** all
2Jn 1:9 but goes **b** it, does not have God;
Sir 3:23 not meddle in matters that are **b** you

BEZALEL

Judahite craftsman in charge of building the tabernacle (Ex 31:1–11; 35:30–39:31).

BILDAD*

One of Job's friends (Job 2:11; 8; 18; 25; 42:9).

BILHAH

Servant of Rachel, mother of Jacob's sons Dan and Naphtali (Ge 30:1–7; 35:25; 46:23–25).

BIND → BINDS

Dt 6:8 **B** them as a sign on your hand,
Pr 6:21 **B** them upon your heart always;
Isa 61:1 to **b** up the brokenhearted,
Mt 16:19 whatever you **b** on earth will be

BINDS → BIND

Job 5:18 For he wounds, but he **b** up;
Col 3:14 **b** everything together in perfect

BIRD → BIRDS

Ge 1:21 and every winged **b** of every kind.
Lev 20:25 the unclean **b** and the clean;

BIRDS → BIRD

Ge 1:22 and let **b** multiply on the earth."
7:3 and seven pairs of the **b** of the air
Ps 50:11 I know all the **b** of the air,
Jer 7:33 be food for the **b** of the air, and for
Mt 6:26 Look at the **b** of the air;
Rev 19:21 the **b** were gorged with their flesh.

BIRTH → BEAR

Dt 32:18 you forgot the God who gave you **b**.
Ps 22:10 On you I was cast from my **b**,
Mt 24:8 is but the beginning of the **b** pangs.
Jas 1:18 he gave us **b** by the word of truth,
1Pe 1:3 given us a new **b** into a living hope

BIRTHRIGHT → BEAR, RIGHT

Ge 25:34 Thus Esau despised his **b**.
Heb 12:16 who sold his **b** for a single meal.

BISHOP

1Ti 3:1 whoever aspires to the office of **b**
Tit 1:7 For a **b**, as God's steward, must be

BIT → BITE, BITS

Nu 21:9 and whenever a serpent **b** someone,
Ps 32:9 temper must be curbed with **b** and

BITE* → BIT

Gal 5:15 If, however, you **b** and devour one
Sir 21:2 if you approach sin, it will **b** you.

BITS → BIT

Jas 3:3 we put **b** into the mouths of horses

BITTER → BITTERNESS

Ex 1:14 made their lives **b** with hard service
12:8 with unleavened bread and **b** herbs.
15:23 water of Marah because it was **b**.
Ru 1:13 it has been far more **b** for me than
Rev 8:11 the water, because it was made **b**.

BITTERNESS → BITTER

Nu 5:18 the water of **b** that brings the curse.
Pr 14:10 The heart knows its own **b**,
Ro 3:14 mouths are full of cursing and **b**."
Eph 4:31 Put away from you all **b** and wrath

BLACK

SS 1:5 I am **b** and beautiful, O daughters
Zec 6:2 the second chariot **b** horses,
Mt 5:36 cannot make one hair white or **b**.
Rev 6:5 I looked, and there was a **b** horse!

BLAMELESS

Ge 17:1 walk before me, and be **b**.
2Sa 22:26 with the **b** you show yourself **b**;
Job 1:1 That man was **b** and upright,
Ps 37:18 The Lord knows the days of the **b**,
Pr 11:20 but those of **b** ways are his delight.
Eph 1:4 holy and **b** before him in love.
Php 2:15 so that you may be **b** and innocent,
1Th 5:23 and **b** at the coming of our Lord
Tit 1:7 bishop, as God's steward, must be **b**
Heb 7:26 **b**, undefiled, separated from sinners,
Rev 14:5 mouth no lie was found; they are **b**.
1Mc 4:42 chose **b** priests devoted to the law,

BLASPHEME → BLASPHEMED, BLASPHEMER, BLASPHEMES, BLASPHEMIES, BLASPHEMOUS

Ac 26:11 I tried to force them to **b**;
1Ti 1:20 so that they may learn not to **b**.

BLASPHEMED → BLASPHEME

Eze 20:27 In this again your ancestors **b** me,
Mt 26:65 tore his clothes and said, "He has **b**!

BLASPHEMER → BLASPHEME

1Ti 1:13 even though I was formerly a **b**,
Sir 3:16 forsakes a father is like a **b**,

BLASPHEMES → BLASPHEME

Lev 24:16 One who **b** the name of the Lord
Lk 12:10 whoever **b** against the Holy Spirit

BLASPHEMIES → BLASPHEME

Mk 3:28 their sins and whatever **b** they utter;
Rev 13:6 its mouth to utter **b** against God,
1Mc 2:6 He saw the **b** being committed in

BLASPHEMOUS → BLASPHEME

Ac 6:11 "We have heard him speak **b** words
Rev 13:1 and on its heads were **b** names.

BLAZING

Ex 3:2 he looked, and the bush was **b**,
Dt 4:11 the mountain was **b** up to the very
Heb 12:18 a **b** fire, and darkness, and gloom,

BLEMISH → BLEMISHED

Ex 12:5 Your lamb shall be without **b**,
Lev 22:20 not offer anything that has a **b**,
Eph 5:27 that she may be holy and without **b**.
Heb 9:14 offered himself without **b** to God,
1Pe 1:19 that of a lamb without defect or **b**.
Jude 1:24 to make you stand without **b** in the

BLEMISHED* → BLEMISH

Mal 1:14 yet sacrifices to the Lord what is **b**;
Sir 34:21 ill-gotten goods, the offering is **b**;

BLESS → BLESSED, BLESSING, BLESSINGS

Ge 12:2 I will **b** you, and make your name
17:16 I will **b** her, and moreover I will
22:17 I will indeed **b** you, and I will make
26:3 I will be with you, and will **b** you;
32:26 not let you go, unless you **b** me."
Ex 20:24 I will come to you and **b** you.
Nu 6:24 The Lord **b** you and keep you;
23:20 See, I received a command to **b**;
Dt 7:13 he will love you, **b** you,
30:16 the Lord your God will **b** you in
1Ch 29:20 **"B** the Lord your God."
Ps 5:12 For you **b** the righteous, O Lord;
29:11 the Lord **b** his people with peace!
34:1 I will **b** the Lord at all times;
103:1 **B** the Lord, O my soul,
Ps 109:28 Let them curse, but you will **b**.
Hag 2:19 From this day on I will **b** you.
Lk 6:28 **b** those who curse you, pray
Ro 12:14 **B** those who persecute you;
1Co 4:12 When reviled, we **b**;
Jas 3:9 With it we **b** the Lord and Father,
Tob 4:19 At all times **b** the Lord God,
Sir 32:13 But above all **b** your Maker,

BLESSED → BLESS

Ge 1:22 God **b** them, saying, "Be fruitful
2:3 So God **b** the seventh day and
14:19 He **b** him and said, **"B** be Abram
Nu 24:9 **B** is everyone who blesses you,
Job 1:21 **b** be the name of the Lord."
42:12 The Lord **b** the latter days
Ps 118:26 **B** is the one who comes in the name
Isa 30:18 **b** are all those who wait for him.
Jer 17:7 **B** are those who trust in the Lord,
Mt 5:3 **"B** are the poor in spirit,
Mk 10:16 laid his hands on them, and **b** them.
Lk 1:42 **"B** are you among women,
6:20 **"B** are you who are poor,
Jn 12:13 **B** is the one who comes in the name
20:29 **B** are those who have not seen and
Ac 20:35 It is more **b** to give than to receive.
Gal 3:8 "All the Gentiles shall be **b** in you."
Eph 1:3 who has **b** us in Christ
1Pe 3:14 for doing what is right, you are **b**.
Rev 1:3 **B** is the one who reads aloud the
22:7 **B** is the one who keeps the words of
Tob 3:11 she prayed and said, **"B** are you,
Jdt 13:17 one accord, **"B** are you our God,
Aza 1:3 **"B** are you, O Lord, God of our
Sus 1:60 raised a great shout and **b** God,

BLESSING → BLESS

Ge 12:2 so that you will be a **b**.
22:18 the nations of the earth gain **b** for
27:36 now he has taken away my **b**."
Dt 11:26 before you today a **b** and a curse:
23:5 your God turned the curse into a **b**
Ne 13:2 our God turned the curse into a **b**.
Eze 34:26 they shall be showers of **b**.
Mal 3:10 for you an overflowing **b**.
Mk 14:22 of bread, and after **b** it he broke it,
Lk 24:51 While he was **b** them, he withdrew
1Co 10:16 The cup of **b** that we bless,
Gal 3:14 in Christ Jesus the **b** of Abraham
Eph 1:3 every spiritual **b** in the heavenly
Rev 5:12 might and honor and glory and **b!"**
7:12 **B** and glory and wisdom and
Tob 8:15 you, O God, with every pure **b**;
Sir 34:20 he gives health and life and **b**.

BLESSINGS → BLESS

Dt 28:2 all these **b** shall come upon you
Jos 8:34 the words of the law, **b** and curses,
Ps 21:6 You bestow on him **b** forever;
144:15 Happy are the people to whom such **b**
Pr 10:6 **B** are on the head of the righteous,
Mal 2:2 and I will curse your **b;**
Ro 15:27 come to share in their spiritual **b,**

BLIND → BLINDED, BLINDNESS

Ex 4:11 mute or deaf, seeing or **b?**
Dt 27:18 misleads a **b** person on the road."
Ps 146:8 the LORD opens the eyes of the **b.**
Isa 35:5 the eyes of the **b** shall be opened,
42:19 Who is **b** but my servant,
Mt 11:5 **b** receive their sight, the lame walk,
Lk 6:39 "Can a **b** person guide a **b** person?
Jn 9:25 though I was **b,** now I see."
Ro 2:19 sure that you are a guide to the **b,**
2Pe 1:9 **b,** and is forgetful of the cleansing
Tob 2:10 until I became completely **b.**
LtJ 6:37 They cannot restore sight to the **b;**

BLINDED → BLIND

Zec 11:17 withered, his right eye utterly **b!**
Jn 12:40 "He has **b** their eyes and hardened
2Co 4:4 has **b** the minds of the unbelievers,

BLINDNESS → BLIND

Ge 19:11 And they struck with **b** the men
Dt 28:28 will afflict you with madness, **b,**
1Jn 2:11 the darkness has brought on **b.**

BLOCK → BLOCKS

Isa 44:19 I fall down before a **b** of wood?"
Eze 14:7 their iniquity as a stumbling **b**
Mt 16:23 You are a stumbling **b** to me;
Ro 11:9 a stumbling **b** and a retribution for
1Co 1:23 stumbling **b** to Jews and foolishness
Sir 31:7 It is a stumbling **b** to those who are

BLOCKS → BLOCK

Jer 6:21 before this people stumbling **b**
Mt 18:7 the world because of stumbling **b!**

BLOOD → BLOODSHED

Ge 4:10 your brother's **b** is crying out to me
9:6 sheds the **b** of a human, by a human
shall that person's **b** be shed;
Ex 7:17 and it shall be turned to **b.**
12:13 when I see the **b,** I will pass over
24:8 the **b** of the covenant that the LORD
Lev 1:5 the priests shall offer the **b,**
3:17 you must not eat any fat or any **b.**
17:11 it is the **b** that makes atonement.
Nu 35:33 for **b** pollutes the land,
Ps 72:14 and precious is their **b** in his sight.
Isa 1:11 I do not delight in the **b** of bulls,
Eze 33:4 **b** shall be upon their own heads.
Joel 2:30 **b** and fire and columns of smoke.
Mt 27:8 field has been called the Field of **B**
Mk 14:24 "This is my **b** of the covenant,
Lk 22:44 [[sweat became like great drops of **b**]]
Jn 1:13 who were born, not of **b**
6:53 of the Son of Man and drink his **b,**
19:34 and at once **b** and water came out.
Ac 2:20 to darkness and the moon to **b,**
Ro 5:9 that we have been justified by his **b,**
1Co 11:25 cup is the new covenant in my **b.**
Eph 1:7 we have redemption through his **b,**
6:12 not against enemies of **b** and flesh,
Heb 9:12 the **b** of goats and calves, but with his
own **b,**
9:22 without the shedding of **b** there is no
1Jn 5:6 the one who came by water and **b,**
Rev 1:5 and freed us from our sins by his **b,**
5:9 by your **b** you ransomed for God
6:12 the full moon became like **b,**
8:9 A third of the sea became **b,**
12:11 conquered him by the **b** of the Lamb

BLOODSHED → BLOOD, SHED

Isa 5:7 he expected justice, but saw **b;**
Eze 35:6 you did not hate **b, b** shall pursue
Hab 2:8 because of human **b,** and violence

BLOSSOMS

Ex 25:33 three cups shaped like almond **b,**
Nu 17:8 It put forth buds, produced **b,**

BLOT

Ge 6:7 "I will **b** out from the earth
Ex 32:32 **b** me out of the book that you have
Ps 51:1 mercy **b** out my transgressions.
Rev 3:5 not **b** your name out of the book of

BLOW → BLOWING

Joel 2:1 **B** the trumpet in Zion; sound the
Rev 8:6 the seven trumpets made ready to **b**

BOAST → BOASTERS, BOASTFUL, BOASTING

Ps 34:2 My soul makes its **b** in the LORD;
Pr 27:1 Do not **b** about tomorrow,
Jer 9:24 but let those who **b b** in this,
Ro 2:23 You that **b** in the law,
1Co 1:31 the one who boasts, **b** in the Lord."
2Co 11:30 If I must **b,** I will **b** of the things that
Gal 6:14 never **b** of anything except the cross
Eph 2:9 of works, so that no one may **b.**
Sir 25:6 and their **b** is the fear of the Lord.

BOASTERS* → BOAST

2Co 11:13 For such **b** are false apostles,
2Ti 3:2 **b,** arrogant, abusive, disobedient to

BOASTFUL → BOAST

Ps 5:5 The **b** will not stand before your
1Co 13:4 love is not envious or **b** or arrogant

BOASTING → BOAST

1Co 5:6 Your **b** is not a good thing.
1Th 2:19 or crown of **b** before our Lord Jesus

BOAZ

Bethlehemite who showed favor to Ruth (Ru 2), married her (Ru 4). Ancestor of David (Ru 4:18–22; 1Ch 2:12–15), Jesus (Mt 1:5–16; Lk 3:23–32).

BODIES → BODY

Ro 12:1 present your **b** as a living sacrifice,
1Co 6:15 that your **b** are members of Christ?
Heb 10:22 and our **b** washed with pure water.

BODILY → BODY

Lk 3:22 upon him in **b** form like a dove.
Col 2:9 the whole fullness of deity dwells **b,**

BODY → BODIES, BODILY

2Sa 7:12 who shall come forth from your **b,**
Mic 6:7 fruit of my **b** for the sin of my soul?
Mt 6:22 "The eye is the lamp of the **b.**
Mk 14:22 and said, "Take; this is my **b."**
Lk 12:4 do not fear those who kill the **b,**
Jn 2:21 speaking of the temple of his **b.**
Ro 7:24 will rescue me from this **b** of death?
1Co 6:13 **b** is meant not for fornication but
15:44 It is sown a physical **b,** it is raised a
spiritual **b.**
2Co 5:8 from the **b** and at home with the Lord.
Eph 4:4 There is one **b** and one Spirit,

BOLD → BOLDNESS

Dt 31:6 Be strong and **b;** have no fear
Pr 28:1 but the righteous are as **b** as a lion.

BOLDNESS → BOLD

Eph 3:12 whom we have access to God in **b**
Heb 4:16 approach the throne of grace with **b,**
1Jn 4:17 may have **b** on the day of judgment,

BONE → BONES

Ge 2:23 "This at last is **b** of my bones and
Eze 37:7 the bones came together, **b** to its **b.**

BONES → BONE

Ex 12:46 and you shall not break any of its **b.**
Ps 34:20 He keeps all their **b;** not one of
Jn 19:36 "None of his **b** shall be broken."

BOOK → BOOKS

Ex 17:14 "Write this as a reminder in a **b** and
Dt 31:24 writing down in a **b** the words of
Jos 1:8 This **b** of the law shall not depart
Ps 69:28 be blotted out of the **b** of the living;
Rev 1:11 "Write in a **b** what you see and
21:27 who are written in the Lamb's **b**
1Mc 1:57 possessing the **b** of the covenant,

BOOKS → BOOK

Ecc 12:12 Of making many **b** there is no end,
Da 7:10 in judgment, and the **b** were opened.
Jn 21:25 world itself could not contain the **b**
Rev 20:12 the throne, and **b** were opened.
1Mc 1:56 The **b** of the law that they found
2Es 14:44 ninety-four **b** were written.

BOOTHS

Lev 23:34 the festival of **b** to the LORD.
Ezr 3:4 kept the festival of **b,** as prescribed,
Zec 14:16 and to keep the festival of **b.**

BORE → BEAR

Isa 53:12 yet he **b** the sin of many,
Mt 8:17 our infirmities and **b** our diseases."
1Pe 2:24 He himself **b** our sins in his body

BORN → BEAR

Ecc 3:2 a time to be **b,** and a time to die;
Isa 9:6 For a child has been **b** for us,
66:8 Shall a land be **b** in one day?
Lk 2:11 is **b** this day in the city of David
Jn 3:7 'You must be **b** from above.'
1Co 15:8 Last of all, as to one untimely **b,**
1Pe 1:23 You have been **b** anew,
1Jn 4:7 everyone who loves is **b** of God

BORROW → BORROWER

Dt 28:12 to many nations, but you will not **b.**
Ps 37:21 The wicked **b,** and do not pay back,
Mt 5:42 anyone who wants to **b** from you.

BORROWER → BORROW

Pr 22:7 and the **b** is the slave of the lender.

BOUGHT → BUY

1Co 6:20 For you were **b** with a price;
2Pe 2:1 even deny the Master who **b** them—

BOW → BOWED, RAINBOW

Ge 9:13 I have set my **b** in the clouds,
Ex 20:5 You shall not **b** down to them or
Ps 95:6 O come, let us worship and **b** down,
Isa 45:23 "To me every knee shall **b,**
Ro 14:11 every knee shall **b** to me,

BOWED → BOW

Ps 146:8 The LORD lifts up those who are **b**
Jn 19:30 he **b** his head and gave up his spirit.

BOWLS

Rev 16:1 the seven **b** of the wrath of God."

BOY → BOYS

Jer 1:7 to me, "Do not say, 'I am only a **b';**
Lk 2:43 **b** Jesus stayed behind in Jerusalem,

BOYS → BOY

Ex 1:18 and allowed the **b** to live?"
2Ki 2:24 and mauled forty-two of the **b.**

BRANCH → BRANCHES

Isa 4:2 On that day the **b** of the LORD shall
11:1 and a **b** shall grow out of his roots.
Jer 23:5 raise up for David a righteous **B,**
Zec 3:8 going to bring my servant the **B.**
Jn 15:2 every **b** in me that bears no fruit.

BRANCHES → BRANCH

Ro 11:21 if God did not spare the natural **b,**

BREAD

Ge 3:19 sweat of your face you shall eat **b**
Ex 12:8 with unleavened **b** and bitter herbs.

25:30 set the **b** of the Presence on the table
Dt 8:3 that one does not live by **b** alone,
Ecc 11:1 Send out your **b** upon the waters,
Mt 6:11 Give us this day our daily **b.**
Lk 4:4 'One does not live by **b** alone.'"
Jn 6:35 Jesus said to them, "I am the **b** of life.
Ac 2:42 to the breaking of **b** and the prayers.
1Co 11:26 For as often as you eat this **b** and
Wis 16:20 from heaven with **b** ready to eat,
Sir 15:3 will feed him with the **b** of learning,

BREAK → BREAKING, BROKEN, BROKENHEARTED

Ps 2:9 You shall **b** them with a rod of iron,
Mt 6:19 where thieves **b** in and steal;
Jn 19:33 they did not **b** his legs.

BREASTPIECE → BREASTPLATE

Ex 28:15 You shall make a **b** of judgment,

BREASTPLATE → BREASTPIECE

Isa 59:17 He put on righteousness like a **b,**
Eph 6:14 and put on the **b** of righteousness.
Wis 5:18 he will put on righteousness as a **b,**

BREATH

Ge 2:7 into his nostrils the **b** of life;
6:17 all flesh in which is the **b** of life;
Job 7:7 "Remember that my life is a **b;**
Ecc 12:7 the **b** returns to God who gave it.
2Th 2:8 will destroy with the **b** of his mouth,

BRIBE

Dt 16:19 for a **b** blinds the eyes of the wise
Pr 6:35 and refuses a **b** no matter how great.

BRIDE → BRIDEGROOM

Isa 62:5 the bridegroom rejoices over the **b,**
Rev 21:9 the **b,** the wife of the Lamb."

BRIDEGROOM → BRIDE

Mt 9:15 as long as the **b** is with them,
Jn 3:29 He who has the bride is the **b.**

BRIDLE

Ps 32:9 must be curbed with bit and **b,**
Jas 3:2 the whole body in check with a **b.**

BRIGHT → BRIGHTNESS

Mt 17:5 suddenly a **b** cloud overshadowed
Rev 15:6 robed in pure **b** linen,
22:16 of David, the **b** morning star."

BRIGHTNESS → BRIGHT

Da 12:3 wise shall shine like the **b** of the sky
Am 5:20 not light, and gloom with no **b** in it?

BRING → BRINGS, BROUGHT

Ge 6:19 **b** two of every kind into the ark,
Ecc 12:14 will **b** every deed into judgment,
Jer 24:6 and I will **b** them back to this land.
Mt 10:34 not come to **b** peace, but a sword.
Ro 10:15 the feet of those who **b** good news!"

BRINGS → BRING

1Sa 2:6 The LORD kills and **b** to life;
Jas 5:20 that whoever **b** back a sinner

BROKE → BREAK

Ex 32:19 tablets from his hands and **b** them
2Ch 36:19 **b** down the wall of Jerusalem,
Jer 31:32 a covenant that they **b,**
Mt 14:19 and blessed and **b** the loaves,
1Co 11:24 he **b** it and said, "This is my body
1Mc 3:5 and pursued those who **b** the law;

BROKEN → BREAK

Ne 1:3 the wall of Jerusalem is **b** down,
Ps 51:17 acceptable to God is a **b** spirit;
Mt 15:37 they took up the **b** pieces left over,
Lk 20:18 who falls on that stone will be **b**
Ro 11:20 were **b** off because of their unbelief,

BROKENHEARTED → BREAK, HEART

Ps 147:3 He heals the **b,** and binds up their
Isa 61:1 the oppressed, to bind up the **b,**

BRONZE

Nu 21:9 look at the serpent of **b** and live.
Dt 28:23 The sky over your head shall be **b,**
Da 10:6 legs like the gleam of burnished **b,**
Rev 1:15 his feet were like burnished **b,**

BROOD

Mt 3:7 he said to them, "You **b** of vipers!
Lk 13:34 a hen gathers her **b** under her wings,

BROTHER → BROTHER'S, BROTHER-IN-LAW, BROTHERS

Ge 4:8 Cain rose up against his **b** Abel,
Mt 5:24 first be reconciled to your **b** or
10:21 **B** will betray **b** to death,

BROTHER'S → BROTHER

Dt 25:7 has no desire to marry his **b** widow,
Mk 6:18 lawful for you to have your **b** wife."

BROTHER-IN-LAW* → BROTHER

Ge 38:8 and perform the duty of a **b** to her;

BROTHERS → BROTHER

Ge 9:25 lowest of slaves shall he be to his **b.**
37:11 So his **b** were jealous of him,
Mk 3:33 "Who are my mother and my **b?"**
Lk 22:32 turned back, strengthen your **b."**
Heb 2:11 not ashamed to call them **b** and

BROUGHT → BRING

Ge 15:7 **b** you from Ur of the Chaldeans,
Jdg 2:1 "I **b** you up from Egypt, and **b** you into
2Ch 36:18 all these he **b** to Babylon.
Ezr 6:5 **b** back to the temple in Jerusalem,
Ro 6:13 who have been **b** from death to life,
1Ti 6:7 for we **b** nothing into the world,

BUILD → BUILDER, BUILDERS, BUILDING, BUILDS, BUILT, REBUILD

Ge 11:4 "Come, let us **b** ourselves a city,
Dt 6:10 fine, large cities that you did not **b,**
Ps 127:1 those who **b** it labor in vain.
Isa 57:14 said, **"B** up, **b** up, prepare the way,
Mt 16:18 and on this rock I will **b** my church,
27:40 destroy the temple and **b** it in three
1Co 3:10 must choose with care how to **b**
10:23 are lawful," but not all things **b** up.

BUILDER → BUILD

Heb 3:4 but the **b** of all things is God.)
11:10 whose architect and **b** is God.

BUILDERS → BUILD

Ps 118:22 The stone that the **b** rejected has
Mk 12:10 'The stone that the **b** rejected has
1Pe 2:7 "The stone that the **b** rejected has

BUILDING → BUILD

1Co 3:9 you are God's field, God's **b.**
2Co 5:1 we have a **b** from God,
Eph 4:12 for **b** up the body of Christ,

BUILDS → BUILD

Ps 127:1 Unless the LORD **b** the house,
Pr 14:1 The wise woman **b** her house,
1Co 8:1 Knowledge puffs up, but love **b** up.

BUILT → BUILD

1Ki 6:14 Solomon **b** the house, and finished
Ne 7:1 the wall had been **b** and I had set up
Pr 9:1 Wisdom has **b** her house,
Da 9:25 sixty-two weeks it shall be **b** again
Eph 2:20 **b** upon the foundation of the
Tob 13:16 Jerusalem will be **b** as his house for
1Mc 4:47 **b** a new altar like the former one.

BULL → BULLS

Ps 50:9 will not accept a **b** from your house,

BULLS → BULL

1Ch 29:21 a thousand **b,** a thousand rams,
Ps 22:12 **b** encircle me, strong **b** of Bashan
Isa 1:11 I do not delight in the blood of **b,**
Heb 10:4 it is impossible for the blood of **b**

BURDEN → BURDENS, BURDENSOME

Ps 55:22 Cast your **b** on the LORD,
Mt 11:30 my yoke is easy, and my **b** is light."
2Co 5:4 in this tent, we groan under our **b,**

BURDENS → BURDEN

Ex 6:6 free you from the **b** of the Egyptians
Lk 11:46 you load people with **b** hard to bear,
Gal 6:2 Bear one another's **b,** and

BURDENSOME → BURDEN

1Jn 5:3 And his commandments are not **b,**

BURIED → BURY

Ro 6:4 have been **b** with him by baptism
1Co 15:4 he was **b,** and that he was raised on

BURN → BURNED, BURNING, BURNT

Ex 21:25 **b** for **b,** wound for wound,
Ps 79:5 Will your jealous wrath **b** like fire?
Jer 7:31 to **b** their sons and their daughters
Mal 4:1 the day that comes shall **b** them up,
Lk 3:17 but the chaff he will **b** with

BURNED → BURN

Ex 3:3 and see why the bush is not **b** up."
Jn 15:6 thrown into the fire, and **b.**
1Co 3:15 If the work is **b** up, the builder will

BURNING → BURN

Lk 24:32 "Were not our hearts **b** within us

BURNT → BURN

Ex 40:6 You shall set the altar of **b** offering
Lev 1:3 If the offering is a **b** offering from
1Sa 15:22 LORD as great delight in **b** offerings
Ps 51:16 if I were to give a **b** offering,
Da 8:11 it took the regular **b** offering away
Hos 6:6 the knowledge of God rather than **b**
Mic 6:6 Shall I come before him with **b**
Mk 12:33 more important than all whole **b**
1Mc 1:45 to forbid **b** offerings and sacrifices
4:56 and joyfully offered **b** offerings;

BURY → BURIED

Lk 9:60 "Let the dead **b** their own dead;

BUSH

Ex 3:2 he looked, and the **b** was blazing,
Jnh 4:6 The LORD God appointed a **b,**

BUY → BOUGHT, BUYS

Pr 23:23 **B** truth, and do not sell it;
Isa 55:1 **b** wine and milk without money
Rev 3:18 to **b** from me gold refined by fire so

BUYS → BUY

Pr 31:16 She considers a field and **b** it;
Mt 13:44 sells all that he has and **b** that field.

BYWORD → WORD

Dt 28:37 and a **b** among all the peoples where
Job 17:6 He has made me a **b** of the peoples,
Ps 44:14 made us a **b** among the nations,

C

CAESAREA

Mt 16:13 came into the district of **C** Philippi,
Ac 10:1 **C** there was a man named Cornelius
25:4 that Paul was being kept at **C,**

CAIAPHAS*

High priest at trial of Jesus (Mt 26:3, 57; Lk 3:2; Jn 11:49; 18:13-28); at trial of disciples (Ac 4:6).

CAIN*

Firstborn of Adam (Ge 4:1), murdered brother Abel (Ge 4:1-25; Heb 11:4; 1Jn 3:12; Jude 11; 4Mc 18:11).

CALAMITIES → CALAMITY

1Sa 10:19 who saves you from all your **c** and
2Co 6:4 in afflictions, hardships, **c,**
12:10 and **c** for the sake of Christ;

CALAMITY → CALAMITIES

Pr 1:26 I also will laugh at your **c;**
Da 9:13 all this **c** has come upon us.
Hab 3:16 wait quietly for the day of **c** to come

CALEB

Judahite who spied out Canaan (Nu 13:6); allowed to enter land (Nu 13:30-14:38; Dt 1:36; Sir 46:7-9; 1Mc 2:56). Given Hebron (Jos 14:6-15:19).

CALF → CALVES

Ex 32:4 and cast an image of a **c;**
Lk 15:23 And get the fatted **c** and kill it,

CALL → CALLED, CALLING

Dt 4:26 I **c** heaven and earth to witness
1Sa 3:5 But he said, "I did not **c;** lie down
1Ki 18:24 you **c** on the name of your god and I will **c** on the name of the LORD;
1Ch 16:8 thanks to the LORD, **c** on his name,
Ps 61:2 From the end of the earth I **c** to you,
Pr 8:1 Does not wisdom **c,** and does
Isa 65:24 Before they **c** I will answer,
Mt 9:13 to **c** not the righteous but sinners."
Lk 6:46 "Why do you **c** me 'Lord, Lord,'
Jn 15:15 I do not **c** you servants any longer,
Ro 10:12 and is generous to all who **c** on him.
Php 3:14 goal for the prize of the heavenly **c**

CALLED → CALL

2Sa 22:7 In my distress I **c** upon the LORD;
Isa 43:1 I have **c** you by name, you are mine.
Mt 23:8 But you are not to be **c** rabbi,
1Co 7:15 It is to peace that God has **c** you.
Eph 1:18 the hope to which he has **c** you,
1Jn 3:1 that we should be **c** children of God;

CALLING → CALL

Ro 11:29 and the **c** of God are irrevocable.
Eph 4:1 lead a life worthy of the **c** to which

CALVES → CALF

1Ki 12:28 and made two **c** of gold.
Mal 4:2 go out leaping like **c** from the stall.

CAMEL

Mt 23:24 strain out a gnat but swallow a **c!**
Mk 10:25 **c** to go through the eye of a needle

CANA

Jn 2:1 there was a wedding in **C**

CANAAN → CANAANITE, CANAANITES

Ge 9:25 "Cursed be **C;** lowest of slaves
Nu 13:2 "Send men to spy out the land of **C,**
1Ch 16:18 "To you I will give the land of **C**

CANAANITE → CANAAN

Ge 28:1 not marry one of the **C** women.
Mt 15:22 a **C** woman from that region came

CANAANITES → CANAAN

Ex 33:2 I will drive out the **C,** the Amorites,
Jdg 3:5 So the Israelites lived among the **C,**

CAPERNAUM

Mt 4:13 and made his home in **C** by the sea,
Jn 6:59 was teaching in the synagogue at **C.**

CAPTIVE → CAPTIVITY

2Ki 15:29 he carried the people **c** to Assyria.
24:16 king of Babylon brought **c** to
Ro 7:23 making me **c** to the law of sin
Eph 4:8 he made captivity itself a **c;**

CAPTIVITY → CAPTIVE

Dt 28:41 for they shall go into **c.**
Ezr 8:35 those who had come from **c,**

CARE → CAREFUL, CARELESS, CARES, CARING

Ps 8:4 mortals that you **c** for them?
Heb 2:6 or mortals, that you **c** for them?
Jas 1:27 to **c** for orphans and widows in

CAREFUL → CARE

Dt 4:23 So be **c** not to forget the covenant
Jos 1:8 you may be **c** to act in accordance
Eph 5:15 Be **c** then how you live,

CARELESS* → CARE

Pr 14:16 the fool throws off restraint and is **c.**
Mt 12:36 to give an account for every **c** word

CARES → CARE

Lk 8:14 they are choked by the **c** and riches
1Pe 5:7 on him, because he **c** for you.

CARMEL

1Ki 18:20 assembled the prophets at Mount **C.**

CARPENTER'S*

Mt 13:55 Is not this the **c** son?

CARRY

Ps 28:9 their shepherd, and **c** them forever.
Isa 40:11 and **c** them in his bosom,
Lk 14:27 does not **c** the cross and follow me

CASE

Job 13:3 and I desire to argue my **c** with God.
Isa 41:21 Set forth your **c,** says the LORD;
Lk 12:58 make an effort to settle the **c,**
Jn 18:38 "I find no **c** against him.

CAST

Ex 34:17 You shall not make **c** idols.
Est 9:24 Jews to destroy them, and had **c** Pur
Ps 22:18 and for my clothing they **c** lots.
55:22 **C** your burden on the LORD,
Pr 16:33 The lot is **c** into the lap,
Mk 3:23 "How can Satan **c** out Satan?
Jn 19:24 and for my clothing they **c** lots."
1Pe 5:7 **C** all your anxiety on him,

CATTLE

Ge 1:25 and the **c** of every kind,
Ps 50:10 the **c** on a thousand hills.

CAUGHT

2Co 12:2 was **c** up to the third heaven—
1Th 4:17 be **c** up in the clouds together with

CAUSE

Job 5:8 and to God I would commit my **c.**
Ps 9:4 For you have maintained my just **c;**
140:12 LORD maintains the **c** of the needy,
Jn 15:25 'They hated me without a **c.**'

CAVE

Ge 23:9 he may give me the **c** of Machpelah,
1Sa 22:1 and escaped to the **c** of Adullam;
24:3 in the innermost parts of the **c.**
1Ki 18:4 hid them fifty to a **c,**

CEASE

Ge 8:22 winter, day and night, shall not **c."**
Jer 31:36 If this fixed order were ever to **c**
1Co 13:8 as for tongues, they will **c;**

CEDAR

2Sa 7:2 See now, I am living in a house of **c,**
Ps 92:12 and grow like a **c** in Lebanon.

CELEBRATE

Lev 23:37 shall **c** as times of holy convocation,
1Co 5:8 Therefore, let us **c** the festival,

CENSER

Lev 10:1 Nadab and Abihu, each took his **c,**
Eze 8:11 Each had his **c** in his hand,
Rev 8:3 Another angel with a golden **c** came

CENSUS

Nu 1:2 Take a **c** of the whole congregation
2Sa 24:2 and take a **c** of the people,

CENTURION

Mt 8:5 he entered Capernaum, a **c** came to
Lk 23:47 the **c** saw what had taken place,
Ac 10:1 a man named Cornelius, a **c**

CEPHAS* → =PETER

Name given to the apostle Peter (Jn 1:42; 1Co 1:12; 3:22; 9:5; 15:5; Gal 1:18; 2:9, 11, 14).

CERTIFICATE

Dt 24:1 and so he writes her a **c** of divorce,
Mt 5:31 let him give her a **c** of divorce.'
Mk 10:4 a man to write a **c** of dismissal

CHAFF

Ps 1:4 are like **c** that the wind drives away.
Lk 3:17 **c** he will burn with unquenchable

CHAINED* → CHAINS

2Ti 2:9 the point of being **c** like a criminal. But the word of God is not **c.**

CHAINS → CHAINED

Eph 6:20 for which I am an ambassador in **c.**
Heb 11:36 and even **c** and imprisonment.
2Pe 2:4 them to **c** of deepest darkness

CHALDEANS

Ge 15:7 who brought you from Ur of the **C,**
Da 1:4 the literature and language of the **C.**

CHANGE → CHANGED, CHANGERS

Ex 32:12 **c** your mind and do not bring
Nu 23:19 a mortal, that he should **c** his mind.
1Sa 15:29 will not recant or **c** his mind;
Ps 46:2 not fear, though the earth should **c,**
Jer 18:8 I will **c** my mind about the disaster
Jas 1:17 is no variation or shadow due to **c.**

CHANGED → CHANGE

1Co 15:51 will not all die, but we will all be **c,**
Heb 1:12 and like clothing they will be **c.**

CHANGERS → CHANGE

Mk 11:15 overturned the tables of the money **c**
Jn 2:15 poured out the coins of the money **c**

CHARACTER

Ro 5:4 endurance produces **c,** and **c** produces

CHARGE

Mt 25:21 I will put you in **c** of many things;
Mk 15:26 The inscription of the **c** against him
Ro 8:33 will bring any **c** against God's elect?
1Co 9:18 I may make the gospel free of **c,**

CHARIOT → CHARIOTS

2Ki 2:11 a **c** of fire and horses of fire
Ps 104:3 you make the clouds your **c,**

CHARIOTS → CHARIOT

Ex 14:28 waters returned and covered the **c**
Zec 6:1 and saw four **c** coming out from

CHARM

Pr 31:30 **C** is deceitful, and beauty is vain,
Sir 7:19 for her **c** is worth more than gold.
26:15 A modest wife adds **c** to **c,**

CHASTISEMENT → CHASTISES

La 4:6 the **c** of my people has been greater
Sir 16:12 Great as his mercy, so also is his **c;**

CHASTISES* → CHASTISEMENT

Heb 12:6 and **c** every child whom he accepts.

CHEEK

Ps 3:7 you strike all my enemies on the **c;**
Mt 5:39 if anyone strikes you on the right **c,**

CHEERFUL

Pr 15:13 A glad heart makes a **c** countenance,
17:22 A **c** heart is a good medicine,
2Co 9:7 for God loves a **c** giver.
Jas 5:13 Are any **c**? They should sing songs

CHEMOSH

1Ki 11:7 Solomon built a high place for **C**
Jer 48:7 **C** shall go out into exile,

CHERUB → CHERUBIM

2Ch 3:11 touched the wing of the other **c;**
Ps 18:10 He rode on a **c,** and flew;
Eze 10:14 the first face was that of the **c,**
28:14 an anointed **c** as guardian I placed

CHERUBIM → CHERUB

Ge 3:24 the garden of Eden he placed the **c,**
Ex 25:18 You shall make two **c** of gold;
Ps 80:1 You who are enthroned upon the **c,**
Heb 9:5 the **c** of glory overshadowing the

CHIEF

Ps 118:22 has become the **c** cornerstone.
Mk 15:3 the **c** priests accused him of many
1Pe 5:4 And when the **c** shepherd appears,

CHILD → CHILDBEARING, CHILDISH, CHILDREN

Ge 17:17 **c** be born to a man who is a hundred
1Ki 3:7 although I am only a little **c;**
Isa 11:6 and a little **c** shall lead them.
49:15 Can a woman forget her nursing **c,**
Hos 11:1 When Israel was a **c,** I loved him,
Mt 1:18 with **c** from the Holy Spirit.
Mk 10:15 the kingdom of God as a little **c**
Lk 2:12 you will find a **c** wrapped in bands
1Co 13:11 When I was a **c,** I spoke like a **c,**
Gal 4:7 So you are no longer a slave but a **c,**
Rev 12:4 that he might devour her **c** as soon

CHILDBEARING* → CHILD, BEAR

Ge 3:16 greatly increase your pangs in **c;**
1Ti 2:15 Yet she will be saved through **c,**

CHILDISH* → CHILD

1Co 13:11 an adult, I put an end to **c** ways.

CHILDREN → CHILD

Ex 12:26 And when your **c** ask you,
Dt 6:7 Recite them to your **c** and talk about
11:19 Teach them to your **c,** talking about
Pr 22:6 Train **c** in the right way, and when
Mt 3:9 stones to raise up **c** to Abraham.
Lk 18:16 "Let the little **c** come to me,
Jn 1:12 he gave power to become **c** of God,
Ro 8:14 by the Spirit of God are **c** of God.
1Co 14:20 do not be **c** in your thinking;
Eph 6:4 do not provoke your **c** to anger,
Heb 12:7 God is treating you as **c;**
1Jn 3:10 The **c** of God and the **c** of the devil
Sir 30:1 concerning **c** He who loves his son

CHOOSE → CHOOSES, CHOSE, CHOSEN

Dt 12:14 at the place that the LORD will **c**
30:19 **C** life so that you and your
Jos 24:15 **c** this day whom you will serve,
Jn 15:16 You did not **c** me but I chose you.

CHOOSES → CHOOSE

Ro 9:18 he has mercy on whomever he **c,**

CHOSE → CHOOSE

Dt 4:37 he **c** their descendants after them.
Ne 9:7 God who **c** Abram and brought him
Mk 13:20 for the sake of the elect, whom he **c,**
1Co 1:27 God **c** what is foolish in the world

CHOSEN → CHOOSE

Isa 42:1 my servant, whom I uphold, my **c,**
Mt 22:14 For many are called, but few are **c."**
Ro 11:5 there is a remnant, **c** by grace.
1Pe 2:6 a cornerstone **c** and precious;
2:9 you are a **c** race, a royal priesthood,

CHRIST → CHRIST'S, CHRISTIAN, CHRISTIANS, MESSIAH

Jn 4:25 Messiah is coming" (who is called **C**).
Ro 5:6 right time **C** died for the ungodly.
8:35 will separate us from the love of **C?**
10:4 For **C** is the end of the law so that
1Co 1:23 but we proclaim **C** crucified,
3:11 that foundation is Jesus **C.**
11:1 Be imitators of me, as I am of **C.**
15:3 **C** died for our sins in accordance
Gal 5:1 For freedom **C** has set us free.
Eph 4:15 into him who is the head, into **C,**
Php 1:21 to me, living is **C** and dying is gain.
2:11 should confess that Jesus **C** is Lord,
Col 1:27 **C** in you, the hope of glory.
Rev 20:4 reigned with **C** a thousand years.

CHRIST'S → CHRIST

Col 1:24 what is lacking in **C** afflictions
1Pe 4:13 as you are sharing **C** sufferings,

CHRISTIAN* → CHRIST

Ac 26:28 persuading me to become a **C?"**
1Pe 4:16 Yet if any of you suffers as a **C,**

CHRISTIANS* → CHRIST

Ac 11:26 the disciples were first called **"C."**

CHURCH

Mt 16:18 and on this rock I will build my **c,**
Ac 8:1 persecution began against the **c**
1Co 12:28 has appointed in the **c** first apostles,
14:4 those who prophesy build up the **c.**
Col 1:18 He is the head of the body, the **c;**

CIRCUMCISE → CIRCUMCISED, CIRCUMCISION

Ge 17:11 shall **c** the flesh of your foreskins,
Dt 10:16 **C,** then, the foreskin of your heart,
Lk 1:59 the eighth day they came to **c** the
Jn 7:22 and you **c** a man on the sabbath.

CIRCUMCISED → CIRCUMCISE

Ge 17:10 Every male among you shall be **c.**
Ac 15:1 **c** according to the custom of Moses,
Gal 6:13 **c** do not themselves obey the law,
Col 2:11 also you were **c** with a spiritual
1Mc 1:60 the women who had their children **c,**

CIRCUMCISION → CIRCUMCISE

Ro 2:29 and real **c** is a matter of the heart—
Gal 5:6 For in Christ Jesus neither **c**

CISTERN

Pr 5:15 Drink water from your own **c,**
Jer 38:6 Jeremiah and threw him into the **c**

CITIES → CITY

Ge 19:25 and he overthrew those **c,**
Jos 20:2 'Appoint the **c** of refuge,
Rev 16:19 and the **c** of the nations fell.

CITIZENSHIP

Php 3:20 But our **c** is in heaven,

CITY → CITIES

1Ch 11:7 it was called the **c** of David.
Ps 127:1 Unless the LORD guards the **c,**
Pr 31:31 her works praise her in the **c** gates.
La 1:1 lonely sits the **c** that once was full
Da 9:24 for your people and your holy **c:**
Mt 5:14 A **c** built on a hill cannot be hid.
Heb 12:22 Zion and to the **c** of the living God,
Rev 21:2 I saw the holy **c,** the new Jerusalem,

CLAP

Ps 47:1 **C** your hands, all you peoples;
Isa 55:12 all the trees of the field shall **c** their

CLAY

Isa 45:9 Does the **c** say to the one who
Jer 18:6 Just like the **c** in the potter's hand,
Da 2:33 its feet partly of iron and partly of **c.**
Ro 9:21 Has the potter no right over the **c,**
2Co 4:7 But we have this treasure in **c** jars,
2Ti 2:20 and silver but also of wood and **c,**

CLEAN → CLEANSE, CLEANSING

Ge 7:2 seven pairs of all **c** animals,
Lev 10:10 and between the unclean and the **c;**
Ps 51:7 with hyssop, and I shall be **c;**
Mk 7:19 (Thus he declared all foods **c.**)
Jn 13:10 you are **c,** though not all of you."
Ac 10:15 "What God has made **c,**
Heb 10:22 with our hearts sprinkled **c** from

CLEANSE → CLEAN

Ps 51:2 and **c** me from my sin.
1Jn 1:9 **c** us from all unrighteousness.
Sir 38:10 and **c** your heart from all sin.

CLEANSING → CLEAN

Eph 5:26 by **c** her with the washing of water
2Pe 1:9 and is forgetful of the **c** of past sins.

CLEAR → CLEARING

Ps 19:8 the commandment of the LORD is **c,**
Na 1:3 LORD will by no means **c** the guilty.
1Ti 3:9 of the faith with a **c** conscience.
Rev 21:18 the city is pure gold, **c** as glass.

CLEARING* → CLEAR

Ex 34:7 yet by no means **c** the guilty,

CLEFT

Ex 33:22 I will put you in a **c** of the rock,
Dt 14:6 the hoof and has the hoof **c** in two,

CLINGS

Ge 2:24 and his mother and **c** to his wife,
Ps 119:25 My soul **c** to the dust;
Heb 12:1 weight and the sin that **c** so closely,

CLOAK

Ex 4:6 "Put your hand inside your **c."**
22:26 you take your neighbor's **c** in pawn,
1Sa 24:4 cut off a corner of Saul's **c.**
Mk 15:17 And they clothed him in a purple **c;**
Heb 1:12 like a **c** you will roll them up,

CLOTH → SACKCLOTH

Isa 64:6 righteous deeds are like a filthy **c.**
Lk 2:7 and wrapped him in bands of **c,**

CLOTHE → CLOTHED, CLOTHES, CLOTHING

Col 3:14 Above all, **c** yourselves with love,
1Pe 5:5 you must **c** yourselves with humility

CLOTHED → CLOTHE

2Co 5:2 longing to be **c** with our heavenly
Gal 3:27 have **c** yourselves with Christ.
Rev 12:1 a woman **c** with the sun,

CLOTHES → CLOTHE

Zec 3:3 Joshua was dressed with filthy **c** as
Lk 8:44 and touched the fringe of his **c,**

CLOTHING → CLOTHE

Ps 22:18 and for my **c** they cast lots.
Mt 25:36 I was naked and you gave me **c,**
Jn 19:24 and for my **c** they cast lots."

CLOUD → CLOUDS

Ex 13:21 went in front of them in a pillar of **c**
1Ki 8:10 a **c** filled the house of the LORD,
18:44 a little **c** no bigger than a person's
Eze 10:4 the house was filled with the **c,**
Mk 9:7 Then a **c** overshadowed them,
Lk 21:27 'the Son of Man coming in a **c'**
Heb 12:1 by so great a **c** of witnesses,
Rev 14:14 on the **c** was one like the Son of Man,

CLOUDS → CLOUD

Ge 9:13 I have set my bow in the **c,**
Da 7:13 being coming with the **c** of heaven.
Mt 24:30 'the Son of Man coming on the **c** of
1Th 4:17 be caught up in the **c** together with
Rev 1:7 He is coming with the **c;**
2Es 13:3 this man flew with the **c** of heaven;

CLUSTER

Nu 13:23 from there a branch with a single **c**

COALS

Ps 11:6 On the wicked he will rain **c** of fire
Pr 25:22 will heap **c** of fire on their heads,
Ro 12:20 will heap burning **c** on their heads."

CODE*

Ro 2:27 condemn you that have the written **c**
7:6 slaves not under the old written **c**

COIN*

Mt 17:27 open its mouth, you will find a **c;**
22:19 Show me the **c** used for the tax."
Lk 15:9 I have found the **c** that I had lost.'

COLD

Zec 14:6 that day there shall not be either **c**
Mt 24:12 the love of many will grow **c.**
Rev 3:16 lukewarm, and neither **c** nor hot,

COLLECTOR → COLLECTORS

Mt 10:3 Thomas and Matthew the tax **c;**
Lk 18:10 one a Pharisee and the other a tax **c.**
19:2 he was a chief tax **c** and was rich.

COLLECTORS → COLLECTOR

Mt 5:46 Do not even the tax **c** do the same?
11:19 a friend of tax **c** and sinners!'

COLT

Ge 49:11 his donkey's **c** to the choice vine,
Zec 9:9 and riding on a donkey, on a **c,**
Jn 12:15 coming, sitting on a donkey's **c!"**

COME → COMES, COMING

Ps 144:5 your heavens, O LORD, and **c** down;
Isa 59:20 And he will **c** to Zion as Redeemer,
Zec 14:5 Then the LORD my God will **c,**
Mt 6:10 Your kingdom **c.** Your will be done,
Lk 7:20 'Are you the one who is to **c,**
Jn 6:37 the Father gives me will **c** to me,
1Co 16:22 Our Lord, **c!**
Rev 1:4 who is and who was and who is to **c,**
22:20 Amen. **C,** Lord Jesus!

COMES → COME

Ps 118:26 one who **c** in the name of the LORD.
Lk 19:38 "Blessed is the king who **c** in the
Jn 14:6 No one **c** to the Father except through

COMFORT → COMFORTED, COMFORTER, COMFORTERS, COMFORTS

Ps 23:4 your rod and your staff—they **c** me.
Isa 40:1 **C,** O **c** my people, says your God.

COMFORTED → COMFORT

Ps 86:17 LORD, have helped me and **c** me.
Isa 49:13 For the LORD has **c** his people,
Jer 31:15 she refuses to be **c** for her children,
Mt 5:4 those who mourn, for they will be **c.**

COMFORTER* → COMFORT

La 1:16 for a **c** is far from me,

COMFORTERS → COMFORT

Job 16:2 miserable **c** are you all.
Ps 69:20 and for **c,** but I found none.

COMFORTS → COMFORT

Isa 66:13 As a mother **c** her child, so I will

COMING → COME

Mal 3:2 But who can endure the day of his **c,**
Heb 10:37 is **c** will come and will not delay;
2Pe 3:4 "Where is the promise of his **c?**
Rev 22:20 "Surely I am **c** soon."

COMMAND → COMMANDED, COMMANDING, COMMANDMENT, COMMANDMENTS

Ex 34:11 Observe what I **c** you today.
Dt 1:26 rebelled against the **c** of the LORD
Jdg 2:2 But you have not obeyed my **c.**

COMMANDED → COMMAND

Ge 7:5 Noah did all that the LORD had **c**
Ex 40:32 as the LORD had **c** Moses.
Jos 1:16 "All that you have **c** us we will do,
Mt 28:20 to obey everything that I have **c** you.
Jn 14:31 but I do as the Father has **c** me,

COMMANDING → COMMAND

Dt 4:40 **c** you today for your own well-being
30:11 **c** you today is not too hard for you,

COMMANDMENT → COMMAND

Dt 6:1 Now this is the **c**—the statutes
Ps 19:8 **c** of the LORD is clear,
Mt 22:38 This is the greatest and first **c.**
Ro 7:12 and the **c** is holy and just and good.
Gal 5:14 law is summed up in a single **c,**
1Jn 3:23 this is his **c,** that we should believe

COMMANDMENTS → COMMAND

Ex 20:6 those who love me and keep my **c.**
Dt 4:13 to observe, that is, the ten **c;**
Ps 119:66 for I believe in your **c.**
Pr 10:8 The wise of heart will heed **c,**
Ecc 12:13 Fear God, and keep his **c;**
Mt 22:40 On these two **c** hang all the law and
Jn 14:15 If you love me, you will keep my **c.**
1Co 7:19 obeying the **c** of God is everything.
1Jn 5:3 And his **c** are not burdensome,
Rev 14:12 those who keep the **c** of God and
Sir 1:26 If you desire wisdom, keep the **c,**
1Mc 2:19 and have chosen to obey his **c,**

COMMENDABLE* → COMMENDATION

Php 4:8 whatever is pleasing, whatever is **c,**

COMMENDATION* → COMMENDABLE, COMMENDED

1Co 4:5 each one will receive **c** from God.

COMMENDED → COMMENDATION

2Co 6:4 but as servants of God we have **c**
Heb 11:39 though they were **c** for their faith,

COMMIT → COMMITS

Dt 5:18 Neither shall you **c** adultery.
2Ki 17:21 and made them **c** great sin.
Ps 31:5 Into your hand I **c** my spirit;
Pr 16:3 **C** your work to the LORD,
Mt 5:27 'You shall not **c** adultery.'

COMMITS → COMMIT

Jn 8:34 who **c** sin is a slave to sin.
Jas 4:17 to do and fails to do it, **c** sin.

COMMON

Lev 10:10 between the holy and the **c,**
Eze 22:26 between the holy and the **c,**
Ac 2:44 and had all things in **c;**
1Co 10:13 has overtaken you that is not **c**
12:7 of the Spirit for the **c** good.

COMMUNION*

2Co 13:13 the **c** of the Holy Spirit be with all

COMPANY

1Co 15:33 "Bad **c** ruins good morals."

COMPARE → COMPARING

Pr 8:11 all that you may desire cannot **c**
Isa 40:18 or what likeness **c** with him?
Lk 7:31 I **c** the people of this generation,

COMPARING* → COMPARE

Ro 8:18 of this present time are not worth **c**

COMPASSION → COMPASSIONATE

Dt 32:36 will vindicate his people, have **c**
Ps 103:13 As a father has **c** for his children,
Isa 54:8 with everlasting love I will have **c**
Jer 12:15 I will again have **c** on them,
Hos 11:8 my **c** grows warm and tender.
Mt 14:14 had **c** for them and cured their sick.
Ro 9:15 I will have **c** on whom I have **c."**
Col 3:12 clothe yourselves with **c,** kindness,
Sir 18:13 the **c** of the Lord is for every living

COMPASSIONATE → COMPASSION

Ex 22:27 I will listen, for I am **c.**
Jas 5:11 how the Lord is **c** and merciful.
Sir 2:11 For the Lord is **c** and merciful;

COMPETE → COMPETING, COMPETITION

Jer 12:5 how will you **c** with horses?
1Co 9:24 that in a race the runners all **c,**

COMPETING* → COMPETE

Gal 5:26 **c** against one another, envying one
2Ti 2:5 is crowned without **c** according to

COMPLAIN → COMPLAINING, COMPLAINT

Nu 14:27 shall this wicked congregation **c**
Jer 2:29 Why do you **c** against me?
1Co 10:10 And do not **c** as some of them did,

COMPLAINING → COMPLAIN

Ex 16:7 has heard your **c** against the LORD.
1Pe 4:9 hospitable to one another without **c.**

COMPLAINT → COMPLAIN

Job 10:1 I will give free utterance to my **c;**
Ps 142:2 I pour out my **c** before him;
Hab 2:1 he will answer concerning my **c.**
Col 3:13 if anyone has a **c** against another,

COMPLETE → COMPLETED, COMPLETION

Ge 15:16 iniquity of the Amorites is not yet **c.**
Lev 23:3 seventh day is a sabbath of **c** rest,
Jn 4:34 him who sent me and to **c** his work.
Rev 6:11 until the number would be **c**

COMPLETED → COMPLETE

Jer 25:12 Then after seventy years are **c,**
Da 11:36 until the period of wrath is **c,**

COMPLETION → COMPLETE

Php 1:6 work among you will bring it to **c**
Jas 2:22 faith was brought to **c** by the works.

CONCEALED

Lk 9:45 its meaning was **c** from them,
Sir 11:4 his works are **c** from humankind.

CONCEIT → CONCEITED

Php 2:3 nothing from selfish ambition or **c,**
1Ti 3:6 he may be puffed up with **c** and fall
Sir 3:24 For their **c** has led many astray,

CONCEITED* → CONCEIT

Gal 5:26 Let us not become **c,** competing
1Ti 6:4 is **c,** understanding nothing,

CONCEIVE → CONCEIVED

Mt 1:23 the virgin shall **c** and bear a son,
Lk 1:31 you will **c** in your womb and bear

CONCEIVED → CONCEIVE

1Co 2:9 ear heard, nor the human heart **c,**
Jas 1:15 desire has **c,** it gives birth to sin,

CONDEMN → CONDEMNATION, CONDEMNED

Job 10:2 I will say to God, Do not **c** me;
Ps 109:31 save them from those who would **c**
Lk 11:31 of this generation and **c** them,
Jn 3:17 not send the Son into the world to **c**
Ro 8:34 Who is to **c?**
1Jn 3:21 Beloved, if our hearts do not **c** us,

CONDEMNATION → CONDEMN

Mk 12:40 They will receive the greater **c."**
Ro 5:18 one man's trespass led to **c** for all,
1Ti 3:6 fall into the **c** of the devil.
Jas 5:12 so that you may not fall under **c.**

CONDEMNED → CONDEMN

Mt 12:37 and by your words you will be **c."**
Lk 24:20 handed him over to be **c** to death
Jn 3:18 Those who believe in him are not **c;**

16:11 the ruler of this world has been **c.**
1Co 11:32 disciplined so that we may not be **c**

CONDUCT

Eze 22:31 returned their **c** upon their heads,
Ro 13:3 For rulers are not a terror to good **c,**
1Pe 1:15 be holy yourselves in all your **c;**
Tob 4:14 and discipline yourself in all your **c.**
Sir 37:17 The mind is the root of all **c;**

CONFESS → CONFESSES, CONFESSION

Lev 5:5 you shall **c** the sin that you have
16:21 **c** over it all the iniquities of the
Ps 38:18 **c** my iniquity; I am sorry for my sin.
Php 2:11 should **c** that Jesus Christ is Lord,
1Jn 1:9 If we **c** our sins, he who is faithful
Rev 3:5 will **c** your name before my Father
Sir 4:26 Do not be ashamed to **c** your sins,

CONFESSES → CONFESS

Ro 10:10 **c** with the mouth and so is saved.
1Jn 2:23 who **c** the Son has the Father also.

CONFESSION → CONFESS

Da 9:4 to the LORD my God and made **c,**
1Ti 6:12 for which you made the good **c** in
Heb 4:14 let us hold fast to our **c.**

CONFIDENCE

Ps 118:8 in the LORD than to put **c** in mortals.
Php 3:3 and have no **c** in the flesh—
Heb 10:19 we have **c** to enter the sanctuary

CONFIRM → CONFIRMED

2Sa 7:25 **c** it forever; do as you have
Ps 119:38 **C** to your servant your promise,
Ro 15:8 that he might **c** the promises given

CONFIRMED → CONFIRM

Ps 105:10 which he **c** to Jacob as a statute,
2Pe 1:19 the prophetic message more fully **c.**

CONFORMED*

Ro 8:29 predestined to be **c** to the image of
12:2 Do not be **c** to this world,
Php 3:21 may be **c** to the body of his glory,
1Pe 1:14 do not be **c** to the desires that you

CONFUSE → CONFUSION

Ge 11:7 go down, and **c** their language there,

CONFUSION → CONFUSE

Ex 23:27 and will throw into **c** all the people
Dt 28:28 blindness, and **c** of mind;
Ps 44:7 and have put to **c** those who hate us.

CONGREGATION

Lev 4:13 **c** of Israel errs unintentionally
Nu 1:2 a census of the whole **c** of Israelites,
Ps 1:5 nor sinners in the **c** of the righteous;
Heb 2:12 the midst of the **c** I will praise you."

CONQUER → CONQUERED, CONQUERORS, CONQUERS

Rev 17:14 and the Lamb will **c** them,
21:7 who **c** will inherit these things,

CONQUERED → CONQUER

Jn 16:33 take courage; I have **c** the world!"
Heb 11:33 who through faith **c** kingdoms,
1Jn 2:13 because you have **c** the evil one.
Rev 15:2 who had **c** the beast and its image

CONQUERORS → CONQUER

Ro 8:37 all these things we are more than **c**

CONQUERS → CONQUER

1Jn 5:4 victory that **c** the world, our faith.
Rev 2:7 To everyone who **c,** I will give

CONSCIENCE

Ro 2:15 their own **c** also bears witness;
1Co 8:7 and their **c,** being weak, is defiled.
1Ti 1:5 a good **c,** and sincere faith.
Heb 9:14 purify our **c** from dead works to
1Pe 3:21 as an appeal to God for a good **c,**

CONSECRATE → CONSECRATED

Ex 13:2 **C** to me all the firstborn;
40:9 and **c** it and all its furniture,

CONSECRATED → CONSECRATE

Lev 8:30 Thus he **c** Aaron and his vestments,
2Ch 7:16 now I have chosen and **c** this house
Ne 3:1 They **c** it and set up its doors;
1Mc 4:48 of the temple, and **c** the courts.

CONSIDER → CONSIDERED

Ex 33:13 **C** too that this nation is your people.
1Sa 12:24 for **c** what great things he has done
Ps 107:43 and **c** the steadfast love of the LORD.
Lk 12:27 **C** the lilies, how they grow:
Ro 6:11 must **c** yourselves dead to sin
Jas 1:2 of any kind, **c** it nothing but joy,

CONSIDERED → CONSIDER

Pr 17:28 fools who keep silent are **c** wise;
Heb 11:11 he **c** him faithful who had promised.

CONSOLATION

Lk 2:25 looking forward to the **c** of Israel,
2Co 1:3 of mercies and the God of all **c,**

CONSPIRACY → CONSPIRE

Isa 8:12 not call **c** all that this people calls **c,**

CONSPIRE → CONSPIRACY, CONSPIRED

Ps 2:1 Why do the nations **c,**
83:5 They **c** with one accord;

CONSPIRED → CONSPIRE

Da 6:6 So the presidents and satraps **c**
Mt 26:4 and they **c** to arrest Jesus by stealth

CONSULT → CONSULTED

1Sa 28:8 And he said, "**C** a spirit for me,
Isa 31:1 Holy One of Israel or **c** the LORD!
40:14 did he **c** for his enlightenment,
Sir 8:17 Do not **c** with fools, for they cannot

CONSULTED → CONSULT

1Ch 10:13 had **c** a medium, seeking guidance,
Eze 20:3 Lord God, I will not be **c** by you.

CONSUME → CONSUMED, CONSUMING

Ex 32:12 **c** them from the face of the earth'?
Nu 16:21 so that I may **c** them in a moment.
Mt 6:19 where moth and rust **c** and where
Jn 2:17 "Zeal for your house will **c** me."

CONSUMED → CONSUME

Ex 3:2 bush was blazing, yet it was not **c.**
Ps 69:9 zeal for your house that has **c** me;
90:7 For we are **c** by your anger;
Zep 3:8 all the earth shall be **c.**
Gal 5:15 that you are not **c** by one another.

CONSUMING → CONSUME

Heb 12:29 for indeed our God is a **c** fire.

CONTAIN

2Ch 2:6 even highest heaven, cannot **c** him?
Jn 21:25 world itself could not **c** the books

CONTEMPT

Da 12:2 some to shame and everlasting **c.**
Mk 9:12 sufferings and be treated with **c?**
Heb 6:6 and are holding him up to **c.**

CONTEND

Isa 49:25 I will **c** with those who **c** with you,
Jude 1:3 to **c** for the faith that was once for

CONTENT → CONTENTMENT

2Co 12:10 Therefore I am **c** with weaknesses,
Php 4:11 learned to be **c** with whatever I have
Heb 13:5 and be **c** with what you have;
Sir 29:23 Be **c** with little or much,

CONTENTMENT* → CONTENT

1Ti 6:6 gain in godliness combined with **c;**

CONTINUE

1Ch 17:27 that it may **c** forever before you.
Jn 8:31 "If you **c** in my word,
Ac 13:43 urged them to **c** in the grace of God.
1Th 3:8 if you **c** to stand firm in the Lord.
Heb 8:9 for they did not **c** in my covenant,

CONTRARY

Gal 1:8 a gospel **c** to what we proclaimed to
1Ti 1:10 else is **c** to the sound teaching

CONTRIBUTE* → CONTRIBUTING

Ro 12:13 **C** to the needs of the saints;

CONTRIBUTING* → CONTRIBUTE

Dt 16:10 **c** a freewill offering in proportion to
Mk 12:43 all those who are **c** to the treasury.

CONTRITE

Ps 51:17 broken and **c** heart, O God, you will
Isa 57:15 who are **c** and humble in spirit,

CONVERT

Mt 23:15 sea and land to make a single **c,**
1Ti 3:6 He must not be a recent **c,**

CONVICT → CONVICTION

Dt 19:15 to **c** a person of any crime
Jude 1:15 to **c** everyone of all the deeds of

CONVICTION → CONVICT

Heb 11:1 the **c** of things not seen.

CONVINCE → CONVINCED, CONVINCING

Ac 28:23 and trying to **c** them about Jesus
2Ti 4:2 **c,** rebuke, and encourage,

CONVINCED → CONVINCE

Lk 16:31 neither will they be **c** even if
Ro 8:38 For I am **c** that neither death, nor
2Co 5:14 we are **c** that one has died for all;

CONVINCING* → CONVINCE

Ac 1:3 to them by many **c** proofs,

CONVOCATIONS

Lev 23:2 that you shall proclaim as holy **c,**

COPPER

Lev 26:19 like iron and your earth like **c.**
Mk 12:42 and put in two small **c** coins,

COPY

Dt 17:18 he shall have a **c** of this law written
Heb 9:24 a mere **c** of the true one,

CORDS

2Sa 22:6 the **c** of Sheol entangled me,
Hos 11:4 led them with **c** of human kindness,

CORNELIUS*

First Gentile Christian (Ac 10).

CORNER → CORNERSTONE

Pr 1:21 At the busiest **c** she cries out;
1Pe 2:7 has become the very head of the **c,"**

CORNERSTONE → CORNER, STONE

Ps 118:22 rejected has become the chief **c.**
Isa 28:16 a tested stone, a precious **c,** a sure
Zec 10:4 Out of them shall come the **c,**
Lk 20:17 builders rejected has become the **c'?**
Eph 2:20 with Christ Jesus himself as the **c.**
1Pe 2:6 laying in Zion a stone, a **c** chosen

CORRECT → CORRECTING, CORRECTION

Ps 141:5 let the faithful **c** me.
Jer 10:24 **C** me, O LORD, but in just measure;
Sir 42:8 Do not be ashamed to **c** the stupid

CORRECTING* → CORRECT

2Ti 2:25 **c** opponents with gentleness.

CORRECTION → CORRECT

Jer 5:3 but they refused to take **c.**
2Ti 3:16 **c,** and for training in righteousness,

CORRUPT → CORRUPTION

Ge 6:11 Now the earth was **c** in God's sight,
Ac 2:40 yourselves from this **c** generation."
Eph 4:22 your old self, **c** and deluded

CORRUPTION → CORRUPT

Ac 2:31 nor did his flesh experience **c.'**
2Pe 1:4 you may escape from the **c**

COST

1Ch 21:24 burnt offerings that **c** me nothing."
Lk 14:28 not first sit down and estimate the **c,**

COUNCIL → COUNCILS

Jer 23:18 who has stood in the **c** of the LORD
Mt 26:59 the whole **c** were looking for false

COUNCILS* → COUNCIL

Mk 13:9 for they will hand you over to **c;**

COUNSEL → COUNSELOR, COUNSELORS

Job 38:2 that darkens **c** by words without
Ps 2:2 and the rulers take **c** together,
33:11 The **c** of the LORD stands forever,
Isa 28:29 he is wonderful in **c,** and excellent

COUNSELOR → COUNSEL

Isa 9:6 and he is named Wonderful **C,**
Ro 11:34 Or who has been his **c?"**
Sir 42:21 and he needs no one to be his **c.**

COUNSELORS → COUNSEL

Pr 11:14 in an abundance of **c** there is safety.
24:6 in abundance of **c** there is victory.

COUNT → COUNTED, COUNTS

Ge 13:16 if one can **c** the dust of the earth,
1Ch 21:1 incited David to **c** the people of
Ps 90:12 So teach us to **c** our days

COUNTED → COUNT

Ecc 1:15 and what is lacking cannot be **c.**
Mt 10:30 even the hairs of your head are all **c.**

COUNTENANCE

Nu 6:26 the LORD lift up his **c** upon you,
Ps 89:15 O LORD, in the light of your **c;**
Pr 15:13 A glad heart makes a cheerful **c,**

COUNTRY

Ge 12:1 "Go from your **c** and your kindred
Jer 31:17 shall come back to their own **c.**
Jn 4:44 has no honor in the prophet's own **c).**
Heb 11:16 they desire a better **c,** that is,

COURAGE → COURAGEOUS

1Ch 22:13 Be strong and of good **c.**
Jn 16:33 But take **c;** I have conquered

COURAGEOUS → COURAGE

Jos 1:6 Be strong and **c;** for you shall put
Da 10:19 Be strong and **c!"**
1Co 16:13 stand firm in your faith, be **c,**
1Mc 2:64 be **c** and grow strong in the law,

COURT → COURTS

Ex 27:9 shall make the **c** of the tabernacle.
Pr 25:8 do not hastily bring into **c;**
Da 7:10 **c** sat in judgment, and the books
Mt 5:25 while you are on the way to **c**
1Co 6:6 believer goes to **c** against a believer

COURTS → COURT

Ps 84:10 in your **c** is better than a thousand
96:8 an offering, and come into his **c.**

COVENANT → COVENANTS

Ge 6:18 But I will establish my **c** with you;
9:9 I am establishing my **c** with you
15:18 the LORD made a **c** with Abram,
Ex 2:24 remembered his **c** with Abraham,
19:5 you obey my voice and keep my **c,**
24:7 Then he took the book of the **c,**
40:3 put in it the ark of the **c,**
Lev 26:42 will I remember my **c** with Jacob;
Jdg 2:1 'I will never break my **c** with you.
1Ki 8:23 keeping **c** and steadfast love
Ezr 10:3 now let us make a **c** with our God
Job 31:1 "I have made a **c** with my eyes;
Ps 105:8 He is mindful of his **c** forever,
Isa 61:8 I will make an everlasting **c** with
Jer 31:31 when I will make a new **c** with
Eze 16:60 establish with you an everlasting **c.**
Da 9:27 a strong **c** with many for one week,
Mal 3:1 "The messenger of the **c** in whom
Lk 22:20 is the new **c** in my blood.
1Co 11:25 "This cup is the new **c** in my blood.
2Co 3:6 be ministers of a new **c,** not of letter
Heb 7:22 become the guarantee of a better **c.**
12:24 the mediator of a new **c,**
Rev 11:19 the ark of his **c** was seen within his
Jdt 9:13 planned cruel things against your **c,**
Sir 28:7 remember the **c** of the Most High,
1Mc 1:15 and abandoned the holy **c.**
2Es 3:15 You made an everlasting **c** with

COVENANTS → COVENANT

Ro 9:4 the adoption, the glory, the **c,**
Gal 4:24 an allegory: these women are two **c.**

COVER

Ex 33:22 I will **c** you with my hand
Ps 139:11 "Surely the darkness shall **c** me,
Isa 11:9 as the waters **c** the sea.
Jas 5:20 and will **c** a multitude of sins.

COVET

Ex 20:17 shall not **c** your neighbor's house;
Ro 7:7 had not said, "You shall not **c."**
Jas 4:2 you **c** something and cannot obtain

CRAFTINESS → CRAFTY

Ro 1:29 of envy, murder, strife, deceit, **c,**
1Co 3:19 "He catches the wise in their **c,"**

CRAFTY → CRAFTINESS

Ge 3:1 serpent was more **c** than any other
2Co 12:16 (you say) since I was **c,** I took you

CRAVING*

Nu 11:4 rabble among them had a strong **c;**
Ps 78:30 But before they had satisfied their **c,**

CREATE → CREATED, CREATION, CREATOR

Ps 51:10 **C** in me a clean heart, O God,
Isa 65:17 to **c** new heavens and a new earth;
Eph 2:15 **c** in himself one new humanity

CREATED → CREATE

Ge 1:1 In the beginning when God **c** the
1:27 So God **c** humankind in his image,
Dt 32:6 Is not he your father, who **c** you,
Pr 8:22 The LORD **c** me at the beginning of
Mal 2:10 Has not one God **c** us?
1Co 11:9 Neither was man **c** for the sake of
Eph 2:10 **c** in Christ Jesus for good works,
Col 1:16 all things have been **c** through him
1Ti 4:4 For everything **c** by God is good,
Rev 4:11 for you **c** all things, and by your will
Jdt 13:18 who **c** the heavens and the earth,
Wis 2:23 for God **c** us for incorruption,
Sir 1:4 Wisdom was **c** before all other

CREATION → CREATE

Ge 2:3 all the work that he had done in **c.**
Mk 10:6 But from the beginning of **c,**
Ro 8:19 the **c** waits with eager longing for
2Co 5:17 anyone is in Christ, there is a new **c:**
Col 1:15 invisible God, the firstborn of all **c;**
2Pe 3:4 they were from the beginning of **c!"**

CREATOR → CREATE

Ecc 12:1 Remember your **C** in the days of
Ro 1:25 served the creature rather than the **C**
Col 3:10 according to the image of its **c.**
1Pe 4:19 to a faithful **C,**

CREATURE → CREATURES

Ge 2:19 the man called every living **c,**
Ro 1:25 worshiped and served the **c** rather

CREATURES → CREATURE

Lev 11:2 these are the **c** that you may eat.
Ps 104:24 the earth is full of your **c.**
Eze 1:5 was something like four living **c.**
Rev 4:6 are four living **c,** full of eyes
19:4 elders and the four living **c** fell

CREDIT → CREDITED

Lk 6:33 what **c** is that to you?
1Pe 2:20 for doing wrong, what **c** is that?

CREDITED → CREDIT

Lev 7:18 nor shall it be **c** to the one who

CREEPING

Ge 1:24 cattle and **c** things and wild animals
Ps 148:10 **c** things and flying birds!

CRIED → CRY

Ex 2:23 under their slavery, and **c** out.
Nu 20:16 when we **c** to the LORD, he heard
Jdg 3:9 the Israelites **c** out to the LORD,
Ps 22:5 To you they **c,** and were saved;
Mt 27:46 Jesus **c** with a loud voice,

CRIMINAL → CRIMINALS

Jn 18:30 "If this man were not a **c,**
2Ti 2:9 the point of being chained like a **c.**
1Pe 4:15 suffer as a murderer, a thief, a **c,**

CRIMINALS → CRIMINAL

Lk 23:32 Two others also, who were **c,**

CRIMSON

Ex 25:4 purple, and **c** yarns and fine linen,
Lev 14:4 cedarwood and **c** yarn and hyssop
Jos 2:21 she tied the **c** cord in the window.

CROOKED

Dt 32:5 a perverse and **c** generation.
Ps 18:26 the **c** you show yourself perverse.
Ecc 1:15 What is **c** cannot be made straight,
Lk 3:5 and the **c** shall be made straight,
Php 2:15 in the midst of a **c** and perverse

CROSS → CROSSROADS

Dt 31:3 your God himself will **c** over before
Mk 15:30 and come down from the **c!"**
Lk 14:27 the **c** and follow me cannot be my
1Co 1:18 the **c** is foolishness to those who are
Gal 6:14 never boast of anything except the **c**
Php 2:8 of death—even death on a **c.**
Col 1:20 peace through the blood of his **c.**
Heb 12:2 was set before him endured the **c,**

CROSSROADS* → CROSS, ROAD

Pr 8:2 at the **c** she takes her stand;
Jer 6:16 Stand at the **c,** and look, and ask for

CROW*

Lk 22:34 the cock will not **c** this day,

CROWD → CROWDS

Mk 8:2 "I have compassion for the **c,**
14:43 a **c** with swords and clubs,

CROWDS → CROWD

Mt 7:28 **c** were astounded at his teaching,

CROWN → CROWNED, CROWNS

Lev 8:9 the golden ornament, the holy **c,**
Pr 4:9 will bestow on you a beautiful **c."**
La 5:16 The **c** has fallen from our head;
Jn 19:2 soldiers wove a **c** of thorns and put

Php 4:1 my joy and **c,** stand firm in the Lord
2Ti 4:8 there is reserved for me the **c**
1Pe 5:4 the **c** of glory that never fades away.
Rev 6:2 Its rider had a bow; a **c** was given
14:14 with a golden **c** on his head,
Sir 1:18 fear of the Lord is the **c** of wisdom,

CROWNED → CROWN

Ps 8:5 and **c** them with glory and honor.
2Ti 2:5 no one is **c** without competing
Heb 2:9 now **c** with glory and honor

CROWNS → CROWN

Rev 4:10 they cast their **c** before the throne,

CRUCIFIED → CRUCIFY

Mt 27:22 All of them said, "Let him be **c!"**
Lk 24:7 **c,** and on the third day rise again."
Ac 4:10 whom you **c,** whom God raised
Ro 6:6 We know that our old self was **c**
1Co 1:23 but we proclaim Christ **c,**
Gal 2:19 I have been **c** with Christ;

CRUCIFY → CRUCIFIED, CRUCIFYING

Lk 23:21 they kept shouting, **"C, c** him!"
Jn 19:15 asked them, "Shall I **c** your King?"

CRUCIFYING* → CRUCIFY

Heb 6:6 they are **c** again the Son of God

CRUSH → CRUSHED

Job 6:9 that it would please God to **c** me,
Isa 53:10 it was the will of the LORD to **c** him
Da 2:40 it shall **c** and shatter all these.
Mt 21:44 it will **c** anyone on whom it falls."
Ro 16:20 will shortly **c** Satan under your feet.

CRUSHED → CRUSH

Ps 34:18 and saves the **c** in spirit.
2Co 4:8 afflicted in every way, but not **c;**

CRY → CRIED, CRYING

Ex 2:23 Out of the slavery their **c** for help
Ps 5:2 Listen to the sound of my **c,**
130:1 Out of the depths I **c** to you,
Hab 1:2 how long shall I **c** for help,
Mk 15:37 Then Jesus gave a loud **c**

CRYING → CRY

Ge 4:10 your brother's blood is **c** out to me
Mk 1:3 the voice of one **c** out in the
Rev 21:4 **c** and pain will be no more,

CRYSTAL

Eze 1:22 shining like **c,** spread out above
Rev 22:1 river of the water of life, bright as **c,**

CUP

Ps 23:5 my head with oil; my **c** overflows.
Jer 25:15 my hand this **c** of the wine of wrath,
Mt 10:42 gives even a **c** of cold water to one
26:39 if it is possible, let this **c** pass from
Mk 10:38 you able to drink the **c** that I drink,
Lk 22:17 he took a **c,** and after giving thanks
1Co 11:25 **c** is the new covenant in my blood.
Rev 14:10 unmixed into the **c** of his anger,

CURE → CURED

Hos 5:13 But he is not able to **c** you or heal

CURED → CURE

Mt 8:16 and **c** all who were sick.
Ac 5:16 and they were all **c.**

CURSE → ACCURSED, CURSED, CURSES

Ge 8:21 "I will never again **c** the ground
12:3 and the one who curses you I will **c;**
Nu 22:12 not **c** the people, for they are blessed
Dt 21:23 hung on a tree is under God's **c.**
23:5 God turned the **c** into a blessing
Job 2:9 **C** God, and die."
Ps 109:28 Let them **c,** but you will bless.
Mal 4:6 come and strike the land with a **c.**
Mk 14:71 he began to **c,** and he swore an oath,
Lk 6:28 bless those who **c** you, pray
Ro 12:14 bless and do not **c** them.
Gal 3:13 Christ redeemed us from the **c** of the law by becoming a **c** for us—
Sir 4:5 and give no one reason to **c** you;

CURSED → CURSE

Ge 3:17 **c** is the ground because of you;
9:25 **"C** be Canaan; lowest of slaves
27:29 **C** be everyone who curses you,
Nu 23:8 can I curse whom God has not **c?**
Job 3:1 Job opened his mouth and **c** the day
Mk 11:21 fig tree that you **c** has withered."
Gal 3:10 **"C** is everyone who does not
Heb 6:8 and on the verge of being **c;**
Rev 16:9 but they **c** the name of God,

CURSES → CURSE

Lev 24:15 who **c** God shall bear the sin.
2Ch 34:24 all the **c** that are written in the book

CURTAIN

Ex 26:31 You shall make a **c** of blue, purple,
2Ch 3:14 And Solomon made the **c** of blue
Lk 23:45 the **c** of the temple was torn in two.
Heb 10:20 that he opened for us through the **c**

CUSTOM → CUSTOMS

Est 9:23 Jews adopted as a **c**
Jn 18:39 But you have a **c** that I release

CUSTOMS → CUSTOM

2Ki 17:8 the **c** of the nations whom the LORD
Ac 16:21 advocating **c** that are not lawful for
1Mc 1:42 all should give up their particular **c.**

CUT

Ge 9:11 never again shall all flesh be **c** off
Ps 37:9 For the wicked shall be **c** off,
Isa 53:8 **c** off from the land of the living,
Da 2:45 a stone was **c** from the mountain
Mt 3:10 does not bear good fruit is **c** down
Mk 9:43 hand causes you to stumble, **c** it off;
Ro 11:22 otherwise you also will be **c** off.

CYMBAL* → CYMBALS

1Co 13:1 I am a noisy gong or a clanging **c.**

CYMBALS → CYMBAL

2Sa 6:5 tambourines and castanets and **c.**
Ne 12:27 and with singing, with **c,**
Ps 150:5 Praise him with clanging **c;**

CYRUS

Persian king who allowed exiles to return (2Ch 36:22–Ezr 1:8), to rebuild temple (Ezr 5:13–6:14), as appointed by the LORD (Isa 44:28–45:13).

D

DAGON

Jdg 16:23 a great sacrifice to their god **D,**
1Sa 5:2 and brought it into the house of **D**

DAILY → DAY

Mt 6:11 Give us this day our **d** bread.
Lk 9:23 take up their cross **d** and follow me.

DAMASCUS

Ac 9:3 was going along and approaching **D,**

DAN

1. Son of Jacob by Bilhah (Ge 30:4–6; 35:25; 46:23). Tribe of blessed (Ge 49:16–17; Dt 33:22), numbered (Nu 1:39; 26:43), allotted land (Jos 19:40–48; Eze 48:1), failed to fully possess (Jdg 1:34–35), failed to support Deborah (Jdg 5:17), possessed Dan (Jdg 18).
2. Northernmost city in Israel (Ge 14:14; Jdg 18; 20:1).

DANCE → DANCED

Ps 150:4 Praise him with tambourine and **d;**
Ecc 3:4 a time to mourn, and a time to **d;**
Lk 7:32 the flute for you, and you did not **d;**

DANCED → DANCE

2Sa 6:14 David **d** before the LORD with all
Mt 14:6 the daughter of Herodias **d** before

DANIEL → =BELTESHAZZAR

1. Hebrew exile to Babylon, name changed to Belteshazzar (Da 1:6-7). Refused to eat unclean food (Da 1:8-21). Interpreted Nebuchadnezzar's dreams (Da 2; 4), writing on the wall (Da 5). Thrown into lion's den (Da 6). Visions of (Da 7–12). In deuterocanonical books of Bel and the Dragon, Susanna.
2. Son of David (1Ch 3:1).

DARE

Mt 22:46 **d** to ask him any more questions.
Ro 5:7 someone might actually **d** to die.

DARIUS

1. King of Persia (Ezr 4:5), allowed rebuilding of temple (Ezr 5–6).
2. Mede who conquered Babylon (Da 5:31).

DARK → DARKEST, DARKNESS

Ps 139:12 even the darkness is not **d** to you;
Lk 12:3 whatever you have said in the **d** will
2Pe 1:19 as to a lamp shining in a **d** place,

DARKEST* → DARK

Ps 23:4 though I walk through the **d** valley,

DARKNESS → DARK

Ge 1:2 the earth was a formless void and **d**
Ex 10:22 was dense **d** in all the land of Egypt
Dt 5:23 you heard the voice out of the **d,**
Isa 9:2 walked in **d** have seen a great light;
Joel 2:31 The sun shall be turned to **d,**
Zep 1:15 a day of **d** and gloom,
Mt 4:16 who sat in **d** have seen a great light,
6:23 light in you is **d,** how great is the **d!**
Jn 1:5 light shines in the **d,** and the **d** did not
Eph 5:8 For once you were **d,** but now in
Col 1:13 from the power of **d** and transferred
1Jn 1:5 God is light and in him there is no **d**

DATHAN*

Involved in Korah's rebellion against Moses and Aaron (Nu 16:1–27; 26:9; Dt 11:6; Ps 106:17; Sir 45:18; 4Mc 2:17).

DAUGHTER → DAUGHTERS

Ex 2:5 **d** of Pharaoh came down to bathe at
Est 2:7 Mordecai adopted her as his own **d.**
Ps 9:14 and, in the gates of **d** Zion,
La 2:1 in his anger has humiliated **d** Zion!
Mic 7:6 the **d** rises up against her mother,
Zec 9:9 Rejoice greatly, O **d** Zion!
Mt 14:6 the **d** of Herodias danced before the
Lk 12:53 against **d** and **d** against mother,
Jdt 10:12 replied, "I am a **d** of the Hebrews,

DAUGHTERS → DAUGHTER

Ge 6:4 of God went in to the **d** of humans,
19:36 the **d** of Lot became pregnant by their
Nu 27:1 the **d** of Zelophehad came forward.
Dt 12:31 even burn their sons and their **d** in
Job 42:15 no women so beautiful as Job's **d;**
Joel 2:28 sons and your **d** shall prophesy,
Ac 2:17 sons and your **d** shall prophesy,
2Co 6:18 and you shall be my sons and **d,**
1Pe 3:6 You have become her **d** as long

DAVID

Son of Jesse (Ru 4:17–22; 1Ch 2:13–15), ancestor of Jesus (Mt 1:1–17; Lk 3:31). Wives and children (1Sa 18; 25:39–44; 2Sa 3:2–5; 5:13–16; 11:27; 1Ch 3:1–9).

Anointed king by Samuel (1Sa 16:1–13). Musician to Saul (1Sa 16:14–23; 18:10). Killed Goliath (1Sa 17). Relation with Jonathan (1Sa 18:1–4; 19–20; 23:16–18; 2Sa 1). Disfavor of Saul (1Sa 18:6–23:29). Spared Saul's life (1Sa 24; 26). Among Philistines (1Sa 21:10–14; 27–30). Lament for Saul and Jonathan (2Sa 1).

Anointed king of Judah (2Sa 2:1–11). Conflict with house of Saul (2Sa 2–4). Anointed king of Israel (2Sa 5:1–4; 1Ch 11:1–3). Conquered Jerusalem (2Sa 5:6–10;

1Ch 11;4-9). Brought ark to Jerusalem (2Sa 6; 1Ch 13; 15-16). The LORD promised eternal dynasty (2Sa 7; 1Ch 17; Ps 132). Showed kindness to Mephibosheth (2Sa 9). Adultery with Bathsheba, murder of Uriah (2Sa 11-12). Son Amnon raped daughter Tamar; killed by Absalom (2Sa 13). Absalom's revolt (2Sa 14-17); death (2Sa 18). Sheba's revolt (2Sa 20). Victories: Philistines (2Sa 5:17-25; 21:15-22; 1Ch 14:8-17; 20:4-8), Ammonites (2Sa 10; 1Ch 19), various (2Sa 8; 1Ch 18). Mighty men (2Sa 23:8-39; 1Ch 11-12). Punished for numbering army (2Sa 24; 1Ch 21). Appointed Solomon king (1Ki 1:28-2:9). Prepared for building of temple (1Ch 22-29). Last words (2Sa 23:1-7). Death (1Ki 2:10-12; 1Ch 29:28).

Psalmist (Mt 22:43-45), musician (Am 6:5), prophet (2Sa 23:2-7; Ac 1:16; 2:30).

Psalms of: 2 (Ac 4:25), 3-32, 34-41, 51-65, 68-70, 86, 95 (Heb 4:7), 101, 103, 108-110, 122, 124, 131, 133, 138-145. Deuterocanonical Ps 151 ascribed to.

DAWN → DAWNS

Isa 14:12 from heaven, O Day Star, son of **D!**
Hos 6:3 his appearing is as sure as the **d;**

DAWNS → DAWN

Ps 97:11 Light **d** for the righteous,
2Pe 1:19 until the day **d** and the morning star

DAY → DAILY, DAYS

Ge 1:5 God called the light **D,** and
8:22 **d** and night, shall not cease."
Ex 13:21 of them in a pillar of cloud by **d,**
20:8 Remember the sabbath **d,** and keep
Jos 1:8 you shall meditate on it **d** and night,
Ps 1:2 his law they meditate **d** and night.
118:24 is the **d** that the LORD has made;
Isa 66:8 Shall a land be born in one **d?**
Joel 1:15 For the **d** of the LORD is near,
Zec 14:1 See, a **d** is coming for the LORD,
Mal 3:2 who can endure the **d** of his coming,
Mt 25:13 you know neither the **d** nor the hour.
Lk 11:3 Give us each **d** our daily bread.
24:46 to rise from the dead on the third **d,**
Jn 6:40 I will raise them up on the last **d."**
Ro 14:5 Some judge one **d** to be better than
2Co 6:2 see, now is the **d** of salvation!
1Th 5:2 very well that the **d** of the Lord
2Pe 3:8 the Lord one **d** is like a thousand years,
3:10 **d** of the Lord will come like a thief,
1Jn 4:17 have boldness on the **d** of judgment,
Rev 1:10 I was in the spirit on the Lord's **d,**
16:14 for battle on the great **d** of God

DAYS → DAY

Ge 1:14 and for seasons and for **d** and years,
7:4 rain on the earth for forty **d** and forty
Ex 24:18 on the mountain for forty **d** and
1Ki 19:8 that food forty **d** and forty nights
Ps 90:10 The **d** of our life are seventy years,
Mk 1:13 He was in the wilderness forty **d,**
Eph 5:16 of the time, because the **d** are evil.
2Ti 3:1 in the last **d** distressing times will
Heb 1:2 last **d** he has spoken to us by a Son,
1Mc 4:56 dedication of the altar for eight **d,**
2Es 14:42 They sat forty **d;** they wrote

DEACON* → DEACONS

Ro 16:1 a **d** of the church at Cenchreae,

DEACONS → DEACON

1Ti 3:8 **D** likewise must be serious, not

DEAD → DEATH, DIE, DIED, DYING

Nu 16:48 stood between the **d** and the living;
Dt 18:11 or who seeks oracles from the **d.**
Ps 115:17 The **d** do not praise the LORD,
Ecc 9:4 a living dog is better than a **d** lion.
Mt 8:22 and let the **d** bury their own **d."**
Mk 12:27 God not of the **d,** but of the living;
Lk 24:5 look for the living among the **d?**
Ro 6:11 must consider yourselves **d** to sin
Eph 2:1 You were **d** through the trespasses
Col 1:18 the firstborn from the **d,**
1Pe 4:5 ready to judge the living and the **d.**
Rev 1:5 witness, the firstborn of the **d,**
20:12 And the **d** were judged according to

DEAF

Ex 4:11 Who makes them mute or **d,**
Isa 29:18 On that day the **d** shall hear the
Lk 7:22 the lepers are cleansed, the **d** hear,

DEATH → DEAD

Dt 30:19 that I have set before you life and **d,**
Ru 1:17 if even **d** parts me from you!"
Ps 22:15 you lay me in the dust of **d.**
Pr 18:21 **D** and life are in the power of the
SS 8:6 for love is strong as **d,**
Isa 25:7 he will swallow up **d** forever.
Hos 13:14 O **D,** where are your plagues?
Mt 16:28 standing here who will not taste **d**
Lk 1:79 in darkness and in the shadow of **d,**
Jn 5:24 but has passed from **d** to life.
Ro 4:25 handed over to **d** for our trespasses
6:23 For the wages of sin is **d,**
1Co 15:55 "Where, O **d,** is your victory?
2Co 2:16 to the one a fragrance from **d** to **d,**
Heb 2:14 through **d** he might destroy the one
who has the power of **d,**
1Jn 3:14 that we have passed from **d** to life
Rev 1:18 I have the keys of **D** and of Hades.
20:14 **D** and Hades were thrown into the lake
21:4 **D** will be no more;
Sir 15:17 Before each person are life and **d,**

DEBAUCHERY

Ro 13:13 not in **d** and licentiousness,
Eph 5:18 drunk with wine, for that is **d;**

DEBORAH

Prophetess; led victory over Canaanites (Jdg 4-5).

DEBT → DEBTS, INDEBTED

Mt 18:27 released him and forgave him the **d.**

DEBTS → DEBT

Dt 15:1 you shall grant a remission of **d.**
Mt 6:12 And forgive us our **d,** as we

DECEIT → DECEITFUL, DECEIVE, DECEIVED, DECEIVERS

Dt 32:4 A faithful God, without **d,**
Isa 53:9 and there was no **d** in his mouth.
Ro 1:29 Full of envy, murder, strife, **d,**
1Pe 2:22 and no **d** was found in his mouth."

DECEITFUL → DECEIT

Ps 35:20 but they conceive **d** words
Zep 3:13 nor shall a **d** tongue be found
1Ti 4:1 by paying attention to **d** spirits

DECEIVE → DECEIT

Eph 5:6 Let no one **d** you with empty words,
1Jn 1:8 that we have no sin, we **d** ourselves,
Rev 20:8 to **d** the nations at the four corners

DECEIVED → DECEIT

Gal 6:7 Do not be **d;** God is not mocked,
1Ti 2:14 was not **d,** but the woman was **d**

DECEIVERS* → DECEIT

Tit 1:10 rebellious people, idle talkers and **d,**
2Jn 1:7 Many **d** have gone out into the

DECISION

Pr 16:33 but the **d** is the LORD's alone.
Joel 3:14 multitudes, in the valley of **d!**

DECLARE → DECLARED

Ps 50:6 The heavens **d** his righteousness,
Col 4:3 that we may **d** the mystery of Christ,

DECLARED → DECLARE

Isa 41:26 Who **d** it from the beginning,
Mk 7:19 (Thus he **d** all foods clean.)
Ro 1:4 and was **d** to be Son of God

DECREASE

Jn 3:30 He must increase, but I must **d."**

DECREE → DECREED, DECREES

Ps 2:7 I will tell of the **d** of the LORD:
Lk 2:1 **d** went out from Emperor Augustus

DECREED → DECREE

Da 9:24 "Seventy weeks are **d** for your

DECREES → DECREE

Dt 6:2 and keep all his **d** and his
Ps 19:7 the **d** of the LORD are sure,
119:2 Happy are those who keep his **d,**

DEDICATED → DEDICATION

1Ki 8:63 all the people of Israel **d** the house
Lk 21:5 beautiful stones and gifts **d** to God,

DEDICATION → DEDICATED

2Ch 7:9 the **d** of the altar seven days and
Ezr 6:16 the **d** of this house of God with joy.
1Mc 4:56 the **d** of the altar for eight days,

DEED → DEEDS

Ecc 12:14 will bring every **d** into judgment,
Jer 32:10 I signed the **d,** sealed it,
Mt 19:16 good **d** must I do to have eternal life
Col 3:17 And whatever you do, in word or **d,**

DEEDS → DEED

Dt 3:24 in heaven or on earth can perform **d**
Ps 9:1 I will tell of all your wonderful **d.**
Jer 50:29 Repay her according to her **d;**
Ob 1:15 your **d** shall return on your own
Lk 23:41 getting what we deserve for our **d,**
Ro 2:6 repay according to each one's **d:**
Rev 15:3 "Great and amazing are your **d,**
19:8 the righteous **d** of the saints.

DEEP → DEPTH, DEPTHS

Ge 1:2 darkness covered the face of the **d,**
7:11 the fountains of the great **d** burst
Ro 8:26 with sighs too **d** for words.

DEFECT

1Pe 1:19 like that of a lamb without **d** or

DEFEND

Ps 72:4 May he **d** the cause of the poor of
Pr 31:9 **d** the rights of the poor and needy.
Jdt 5:21 for their Lord and God will **d** them,

DEFILE → DEFILED

Lev 11:43 you shall not **d** yourselves
Nu 35:34 You shall not **d** the land
Mk 7:15 things that come out are what **d."**

DEFILED → DEFILE

Ps 79:1 they have **d** your holy temple;
1Mc 1:37 they even **d** the sanctuary.

DEFRAUD*

Lev 19:13 You shall not **d** your neighbor;
Mk 10:19 You shall not **d;**
1Co 6:8 you yourselves wrong and **d**—

DEITY

Col 2:9 whole fullness of **d** dwells bodily,

DELAY

Dt 7:10 He does not **d** but repays
Ps 70:5 my deliverer; O LORD, do not **d!**
Heb 10:37 will come and will not **d;**

DELIGHT → DELIGHTS

1Sa 15:22 "Has the LORD as great **d** in burnt
Ps 1:2 but their **d** is in the law of the LORD,
40:8 I **d** to do your will, O my God;
Pr 8:30 I was daily his **d,** rejoicing before
Ro 7:22 For I **d** in the law of God in my
Sir 1:27 fidelity and humility are his **d.**

DELIGHTS → DELIGHT

Ps 5:4 not a God who **d** in wickedness;
Isa 42:1 chosen, in whom my soul **d;**

DELILAH*

Philistine who betrayed Samson (Jdg 16:4–22).

DELIVER → DELIVERANCE, DELIVERED, DELIVERER, DELIVERS

Ex 3:8 to **d** them from the Egyptians,
Dt 32:39 and no one can **d** from my hand.
Da 3:17 able to **d** us from the furnace
6:20 able to **d** you from the lions?"
Mt 27:43 let God **d** him now,

DELIVERANCE → DELIVER

Ex 14:13 and see the **d** that the LORD will
Est 4:14 **d** will rise for the Jews from another
Ps 3:8 **D** belongs to the LORD;
Php 1:19 this will turn out for my **d.**
Jdt 8:17 while we wait for his **d,**

DELIVERED → DELIVER

Isa 66:8 Shall a nation be **d** in one moment?
Da 12:1 at that time your people shall be **d,**

DELIVERER → DELIVER

Ps 140:7 O LORD, my Lord, my strong **d,**
Ro 11:26 "Out of Zion will come the **D;**

DEMON → DEMONIACS, DEMONIC, DEMONS

Mt 11:18 and they say, 'He has a **d';**
17:18 Jesus rebuked the **d,** and it came out
Jn 8:48 you are a Samaritan and have a **d?"**
10:21 not the words of one who has a **d.**
Tob 3:8 the wicked **d** Asmodeus had killed
6:8 of a man or woman afflicted by a **d**

DEMONIACS → DEMON

Mt 4:24 **d,** epileptics, and paralytics, and he
8:28 two **d** coming out of the tombs met

DEMONIC* → DEMON

Rev 16:14 These are **d** spirits, performing signs

DEMONS → DEMON

Dt 32:17 They sacrificed to **d,** not God,
Ps 106:37 and their daughters to the **d;**
Lk 11:18 that I cast out the **d** by Beelzebul.
1Co 10:20 not want you to be partners with **d.**
1Ti 4:1 deceitful spirits and teachings of **d,**
Jas 2:19 Even the **d** believe—and shudder.
Rev 9:20 their hands or give up worshiping **d**
Bar 4:7 by sacrificing to **d** and not

DEN

Jer 7:11 a **d** of robbers in your sight?
Da 6:7 shall be thrown into a **d** of lions.
Mk 11:17 you have made it a **d** of robbers."

DENARIUS

Mk 12:15 Bring me a **d** and let me see it."

DENIED → DENY

Mt 26:70 But he **d** it before all of them,
1Ti 5:8 has **d** the faith and is worse than an
Rev 3:8 my word and have not **d** my name.

DENIES → DENY

Lk 12:9 but whoever **d** me before others
1Jn 2:22 the liar but the one who **d** that Jesus

DENY → DENIED, DENIES

Lev 16:29 you shall **d** yourselves,
23:27 you shall **d** yourselves
Mt 16:24 let them **d** themselves and take up
2Ti 2:12 if we **d** him, he will also **d** us;
2Pe 2:1 **d** the Master who bought them—

DEPART → DEPARTED

Ge 49:10 The scepter shall not **d** from Judah,
Jos 1:8 law shall not **d** out of your mouth;
Ps 34:14 **D** from evil, and do good;
Php 1:23 my desire is to **d** and be with Christ,

DEPARTED → DEPART

1Sa 4:21 "The glory has **d** from Israel,"

DEPRAVED → DEPRAVITY

1Ti 6:5 among those who are **d** in mind
2Pe 2:10 who indulge their flesh in **d** lust,

DEPRAVITY → DEPRAVED

Lev 20:14 that there may be no **d** among you.

DEPRIVE

Dt 24:17 not **d** a resident alien or an orphan
1Co 7:5 not **d** one another except perhaps

DEPTH → DEEP

Mt 13:5 since they had no **d** of soil.
Ro 11:33 O the **d** of the riches and wisdom
Eph 3:18 and length and height and **d,**

DEPTHS → DEEP

Ps 130:1 Out of the **d** I cry to you, O LORD.
1Co 2:10 even the **d** of God.

DESCENDANTS

Ge 15:18 saying, "To your **d** I give this land,
Dt 4:37 he chose their **d** after them.
Isa 44:3 I will pour my spirit upon your **d,**
Ro 9:7 Abraham's children are his true **d;**
Gal 3:7 who believe are the **d** of Abraham.

DESCENDED → DESCENDING

Ex 34:5 LORD **d** in the cloud and stood
Jn 3:13 except the one who **d** from heaven,
Eph 4:9 does it mean but that he had also **d**

DESCENDING → DESCENDED

Ge 28:12 angels of God were ascending and **d**
Mk 1:10 and the Spirit **d** like a dove
Jn 1:51 the angels of God ascending and **d**

DESERT → DESERTED

Ps 106:14 and put God to the test in the **d;**
Isa 40:3 make straight in the **d** a highway
Mk 8:4 with bread here in the **d?"**

DESERTED → DESERT

Mt 26:56 all the disciples **d** him and fled.

DESERVE

Pr 14:14 and the good, what their deeds **d.**
Lk 23:15 he has done nothing to **d** death.
Ac 26:31 man is doing nothing to **d** death
Rev 2:23 give to each of you as your works **d.**

DESIRE → DESIRED, DESIRES

Ge 3:16 your **d** shall be for your husband,
Ps 20:4 May he grant you your heart's **d,**
Pr 3:15 nothing you **d** can compare with her
Hos 6:6 I **d** steadfast love and not sacrifice,
Mt 9:13 learn what this means, 'I **d** mercy,
Jas 1:14 But one is tempted by one's own **d,**
1Jn 2:16 the **d** of the flesh, the **d** of the eyes,

DESIRED → DESIRE

Ps 19:10 More to be **d** are they than gold,
Lk 22:15 I have eagerly **d** to eat this Passover

DESIRES → DESIRE

Ps 37:4 he will give you the **d** of your heart.
Gal 5:16 do not gratify the **d** of the flesh.
1Ti 2:4 who **d** everyone to be saved
2Ti 4:3 teachers to suit their own **d,**
Sir 18:30 Do not follow your base **d,**

DESOLATE → DESOLATES, DESOLATING

Ex 23:29 or the land would become **d** and
Da 11:31 the abomination that makes **d.**
Mt 23:38 See, your house is left to you, **d.**
1Mc 1:39 sanctuary became **d** like a desert;

DESOLATES → DESOLATE

Da 9:27 shall be an abomination that **d,**

DESOLATING → DESOLATE

Mk 13:14 the **d** sacrilege set up where it ought
1Mc 1:54 erected a **d** sacrilege on the altar

DESPAIR → DESPAIRED

2Co 4:8 perplexed, but not driven to **d;**

DESPAIRED* → DESPAIR

2Co 1:8 crushed that we **d** of life itself.

DESPISE → DESPISED

Job 5:17 not **d** the discipline of the Almighty.
Ps 51:17 contrite heart, O God, you will not **d**
Pr 1:7 fools **d** wisdom and instruction.
Lk 16:13 devoted to the one and **d** the other.

DESPISED → DESPISE

Isa 53:3 He was **d** and rejected by others;
1Co 1:28 God chose what is low and **d** in the

DESTINED

Eph 1:5 He **d** us for adoption as his children
1Th 5:9 For God has **d** us not for wrath but
1Pe 1:11 to the sufferings **d** for Christ

DESTROY → DESTROYED, DESTROYER, DESTRUCTION

Ge 6:13 to **d** them along with the earth.
Est 3:6 Haman plotted to **d** all the Jews,
Mt 10:28 rather fear him who can **d** both soul
Jn 10:10 comes only to steal and kill and **d.**
Jas 4:12 who is able to save and to **d.**
1Jn 3:8 to **d** the works of the devil.

DESTROYED → DESTROY

Da 6:26 His kingdom shall never be **d,**
1Co 15:26 The last enemy to be **d** is death.
2Co 5:1 if the earthly tent we live in is **d,**

DESTROYER → DESTROY

Ex 12:23 not allow the **d** to enter your houses
1Co 10:10 and were destroyed by the **d.**

DESTRUCTION → DESTROY

Pr 16:18 Pride goes before **d,** and a haughty
Mt 7:13 and the road is easy that leads to **d,**
Ro 9:22 objects of wrath that are made for **d;**
2Pe 3:16 and unstable twist to their own **d,**

DEVIL

Mt 4:1 wilderness to be tempted by the **d.**
Lk 8:12 **d** comes and takes away the word
Jn 8:44 You are from your father the **d,**
Eph 4:27 and do not make room for the **d.**
6:11 to stand against the wiles of the **d.**
1Ti 3:6 fall into the condemnation of the **d.**
Heb 2:14 the power of death, that is, the **d,**
Jas 4:7 Resist the **d,** and he will flee from
1Pe 5:8 lion your adversary the **d** prowls
1Jn 3:8 to destroy the works of the **d.**
Jude 1:9 Michael contended with the **d**
Rev 12:9 who is called the **D** and Satan,
20:2 that ancient serpent, who is the **D**

DEVOTED

Ps 86:2 Preserve my life, for I am **d** to you;
Mt 6:24 **d** to the one and despise the other.

DEVOUR → DEVOURING

Gal 5:15 you bite and **d** one another,
1Pe 5:8 looking for someone to **d.**
Rev 12:4 that he might **d** her child

DEVOURING → DEVOUR

Ex 24:17 glory of the LORD was like a **d** fire
Dt 9:3 crosses over before you as a **d** fire;

DEW

Jdg 6:37 if there is **d** on the fleece alone,

DICTATED*

Jer 36:18 "He **d** all these words to me,
2Es 14:42 and by turns they wrote what was **d,**

DIE → DEAD

Ge 2:17 eat of it you shall **d.**"
3:4 to the woman, "You will not **d;**
Ex 11:5 firstborn in the land of Egypt shall **d**
Ru 1:17 Where you **d,** I will **d**—
Job 2:9 Curse God, and **d.**"
Pr 10:21 but fools **d** for lack of sense.
Ecc 3:2 a time to be born, and a time to **d;**
Isa 22:13 eat and drink, for tomorrow we **d.**"
Jer 31:30 But all shall **d** for their own sins;
Mt 26:35 "Even though I must **d** with you,
Jn 11:26 and believes in me will never **d.**
Ro 14:8 if we **d,** we **d** to the Lord;
1Co 15:32 eat and drink, for tomorrow we **d.**"
Heb 9:27 it is appointed for mortals to **d** once,

DIED → DEAD

Ro 5:6 right time Christ **d** for the ungodly.
1Co 15:3 Christ **d** for our sins in accordance
Gal 2:19 the law I **d** to the law,

DIFFERENT

2Co 11:4 or a **d** gospel from the one you
Gal 1:6 and are turning to a **d** gospel—

DIFFICULT

Da 4:9 and that no mystery is too **d**
Jn 6:60 teaching is **d;** who can accept it?"

DILIGENCE → DILIGENTLY

Ro 12:8 the leader, in **d;**
Heb 6:11 each one of you to show the same **d**

DILIGENTLY → DILIGENCE

Dt 4:6 You must observe them **d,**
Pr 8:17 and those who seek me **d** find me.

DINAH*

Only daughter of Jacob, by Leah (Ge 30:21; 46:15). Raped by Shechem; avenged by Simeon and Levi (Ge 34).

DIRECT → DIRECTS

Ps 119:128 I **d** my steps by all your precepts;
2Th 3:5 the Lord **d** your hearts to the love

DIRECTS → DIRECT

Pr 16:9 but the Lord **d** the steps.
Jas 3:4 wherever the will of the pilot **d.**

DISAPPOINT*

Ro 5:5 and hope does not **d** us,

DISASTER

Ex 32:12 your mind and do not bring **d**
Dt 28:20 The Lord will send upon you **d,**
Jer 18:8 I will change my mind about the **d**
Eze 7:5 Thus says the Lord God: **D** after **d!**

DISCERNED → DISCERNMENT

1Co 2:14 because they are spiritually **d.**

DISCERNING → DISCERNMENT

Dt 4:6 nation is a wise and **d** people!"
Pr 1:5 in learning, and the **d** acquire skill,
1Co 1:19 discernment of the **d** I will thwart."
Sir 1:19 knowledge and **d** comprehension,

DISCERNMENT → DISCERNED, DISCERNING

1Ki 4:29 Solomon very great wisdom, **d,**
1Co 12:10 prophecy, to another the **d** of spirits,

DISCIPLE → DISCIPLES

Mt 10:24 "A **d** is not above the teacher,
Lk 14:26 even life itself, cannot be my **d.**

DISCIPLES → DISCIPLE

Isa 8:16 seal the teaching among my **d.**
Mt 26:56 all the **d** deserted him and fled.
28:19 therefore and make **d** of all nations,
Lk 6:13 he called his **d** and chose twelve of
Jn 8:31 in my word, you are truly my **d;**
Ac 11:26 the **d** were first called "Christians."

DISCIPLINE → DISCIPLINED

Job 5:17 not despise the **d** of the Almighty.
Ps 94:12 Happy are those whom you **d,**
Pr 5:23 They die for lack of **d,**
Jer 7:28 their God, and did not accept **d;**
Eph 6:4 in the **d** and instruction of the Lord.
Heb 12:5 not regard lightly the **d** of the Lord,
1Pe 5:8 **D** yourselves, keep alert.
Sir 1:27 fear of the Lord is wisdom and **d,**

DISCIPLINED → DISCIPLINE

1Co 11:32 **d** so that we may not be condemned
Wis 3:5 Having been **d** a little, they will

DISEASE → DISEASES

Mt 4:23 of the kingdom and curing every **d**
9:35 curing every **d** and every sickness.

DISEASES → DISEASE

Ex 15:26 **d** that I brought upon the Egyptians;
Ps 103:3 your iniquity, who heals all your **d,**
Isa 53:4 our infirmities and carried our **d;**
Mt 8:17 took our infirmities and bore our **d.**"

DISGRACE

Jos 5:9 I have rolled away from you the **d**
Pr 11:2 When pride comes, then comes **d;**
Mt 1:19 unwilling to expose her to public **d,**
1Pe 4:16 do not consider it a **d,**
1Mc 4:58 the **d** brought by the Gentiles was

DISGUISES

2Co 11:14 Satan **d** himself as an angel of light.

DISHONEST

Jer 22:17 and heart are only on your **d** gain,
Lk 16:10 is **d** in a very little is **d** also in much.
Sir 5:8 Do not depend on **d** wealth,

DISHONOR

Jn 8:49 I honor my Father, and you **d** me.
Ac 5:41 considered worthy to suffer **d** for
1Co 15:43 It is sown in **d,** it is raised in glory.

DISMAYED

Dt 1:21 do not fear or be **d.**"
Jos 1:9 do not be frightened or **d,**
Jer 17:18 them be **d,** but do not let me be **d;**

DISOBEDIENT → DISOBEY

Ne 9:26 they were **d** and rebelled
Ro 10:21 I have held out my hands to a **d**
11:30 as you were once **d** to God but have
Tit 3:3 ourselves were once foolish, **d,** led

DISOBEY → DISOBEDIENT

Lev 26:27 But if, despite this, you **d** me,
1Pe 2:8 stumble because they **d** the word,
Sir 1:28 Do not **d** the fear of the Lord;

DISPERSION

Jn 7:35 Does he intend to go to the **D**

DISQUALIFIED* → DISQUALIFY

1Co 9:27 to others I myself should not be **d.**

DISQUALIFY* → DISQUALIFIED

Col 2:18 Do not let anyone **d** you,

DISSENSION → DISSENSIONS

1Co 12:25 there may be no **d** within the body,
1Ti 6:4 From these come envy, **d,** slander,

DISSENSIONS → DISSENSION

Gal 5:20 strife, jealousy, anger, quarrels, **d,**
Tit 3:9 stupid controversies, genealogies, **d,**

DISTINCTION → DISTINCTIONS

Ex 8:23 I will make a **d** between my people
Lev 11:47 make a **d** between the unclean and
Eze 22:26 have made no **d** between the holy
Ro 3:22 For there is no **d,**

DISTINCTIONS* → DISTINCTION

Jas 2:4 you not made **d** among yourselves,

DISTRESS → DISTRESSED

Dt 4:30 In your **d,** when all these things
Jdg 2:15 and they were in great **d.**
2Sa 22:7 In my **d** I called upon the Lord;
Ps 81:7 In **d** you called, and I rescued you;
Jer 30:7 it is a time of **d** for Jacob;
Lk 21:23 For there will be great **d** on the earth
Ro 8:35 Will hardship, or **d,** or persecution,
Sir 2:11 and saves in time of **d.**

DISTRESSED → DISTRESS

La 1:20 See, O Lord, how **d** I am;

DISTRIBUTED

Jos 13:32 the inheritances that Moses **d**
Ps 112:9 They have **d** freely,
Ac 4:35 it was **d** to each as any had need.
Heb 2:4 gifts of the Holy Spirit, **d** according

DIVIDE → DIVIDED

Ex 14:16 your hand over the sea and **d** it,
Ps 22:18 **d** my clothes among themselves,
Lk 23:34 And they cast lots to **d** his clothing.

DIVIDED → DIVIDE

Lev 11:3 Any animal that has **d** hoofs
Ps 136:13 who **d** the Red Sea in two,
Lk 11:18 If Satan also is **d** against himself,

DIVINATION → DIVINE

Dt 18:10 who practices **d,** or is a soothsayer,
1Sa 15:23 For rebellion is no less a sin than **d,**
2Ki 17:17 they used **d** and augury;

DIVINE → DIVINATION

Ro 1:20 his eternal power and **d** nature,
2Pe 1:4 become participants of the **d** nature.

DIVORCE → DIVORCED

Dt 24:1 so he writes her a certificate of **d,**
Isa 50:1 Where is your mother's bill of **d**
Jer 3:8 sent her away with a decree of **d;**
Mal 2:16 For I hate **d,** says the Lord,
Mt 5:31 let him give her a certificate of **d.**'
19:3 a man to **d** his wife for any cause?"
1Co 7:11 the husband should not **d** his wife.
Sir 7:26 Do not **d** her;

DIVORCED → DIVORCE

Lev 21:7 neither shall they marry a woman **d**
Mt 5:32 whoever marries a **d** woman

DOCTOR*

Lk 4:23 this proverb, '**D,** cure yourself!'

DOCTRINE → DOCTRINES

Eph 4:14 blown about by every wind of **d,**
1Ti 1:3 not to teach any different **d,**
2Ti 4:3 people will not put up with sound **d,**
Tit 1:9 able both to preach with sound **d**

DOCTRINES → DOCTRINE

Mk 7:7 teaching human precepts as **d.**'

DOEG*

Edomite; Saul's chief shepherd; murdered 85 priests at Nob (1Sa 21:7; 22:6-23; Ps 52).

DOERS → DOES, DONE

Jas 1:22 But be **d** of the word,

DOES → DOERS

Ps 135:6 Whatever the Lord pleases he **d,**
Ecc 3:14 whatever God **d** endures forever;
Mk 3:35 **d** the will of God is my brother

DOG → DOGS

Jdg 7:5 as a **d** laps, you shall put to one side
Pr 26:11 Like a **d** that returns to its vomit
2Pe 2:22 "The **d** turns back to its own vomit,"

DOGS → DOG

Mt 7:6 "Do not give what is holy to **d;**
15:26 children's food and throw it to the **d**
Php 3:2 Beware of the **d,** beware of the evil
Rev 22:15 Outside are the **d** and sorcerers

DOMINION

Ge 1:26 and let them have **d** over
Ps 22:28 For **d** belongs to the LORD,
Da 7:14 His **d** is an everlasting **d**
Ro 6:14 For sin will have no **d** over you,
Rev 1:6 to him be glory and **d** forever

DONE → DOERS

Mt 6:10 Your will be **d,** on earth as it is in
26:42 unless I drink it, your will be **d."**
Rev 16:17 from the throne, saying, "It is **d!"**
21:6 Then he said to me, "It is **d!**

DONKEY

Nu 22:30 But the **d** said to Balaam,
Jdg 15:15 he found a fresh jawbone of a **d,**
Zec 9:9 humble and riding on a **d,**
Mt 21:5 humble, and mounted on a **d,**

DOOM → DOOMED

Dt 32:35 their **d** comes swiftly.
Ps 81:15 and their **d** would last forever.

DOOMED → DOOM

Ps 102:20 to set free those who were **d** to die;
1Co 2:6 of this age, who are **d** to perish.

DOOR → DOORPOSTS

Mt 7:7 knock, and the **d** will be opened for
Lk 13:24 Strive to enter through the narrow **d**
Rev 3:20 I am standing at the **d,** knocking;

DOORPOSTS → DOOR

Ex 12:7 the blood and put it on the two **d**

DORCAS*

Disciple; raised from the dead (Ac 9:36-43).

DOUBLE → DOUBLE-TONGUED

Ex 22:7 then the thief, if caught, shall pay **d.**
Dt 21:17 giving him a **d** portion of all that he
1Sa 1:5 but to Hannah he gave a **d** portion,
2Ki 2:9 me inherit a **d** share of your spirit."
Rev 18:6 and repay her **d** for her deeds;

DOUBLE-TONGUED → DOUBLE, TONGUE

1Ti 3:8 likewise must be serious, not **d,**
Sir 5:14 Do not be called **d** and do not

DOUBT → DOUBTED, DOUBTING

Mt 14:31 of little faith, why did you **d?"**
Jn 20:27 Do not **d** but believe."

DOUBTED* → DOUBT

Mt 28:17 they worshiped him; but some **d.**

DOUBTING* → DOUBT

Jas 1:6 But ask in faith, never **d,**

DOUGH

Ex 12:39 **d** that they had brought out of Egypt
Gal 5:9 yeast leavens the whole batch of **d.**

DOVE

Ge 8:8 Then he sent out the **d** from him,
Mk 1:10 Spirit descending like a **d** on him.

DRAGON

Isa 27:1 and he will kill the **d** that
Rev 12:3 a great red **d,** with seven heads and
20:2 seized the **d,** that ancient serpent,
Bel 1:23 in that place there was a great **d,**

DRANK → DRINK

Ex 24:11 beheld God, and they ate and **d.**
Mk 14:23 and all of them **d** from it.
1Co 10:4 and all **d** the same spiritual drink.

DRAW

Jn 12:32 will **d** all people to myself."
Jas 4:8 **D** near to God, and he will **d** near

DREAM → DREAMED, DREAMER, DREAMS

1Ki 3:5 LORD appeared to Solomon in a **d**
Da 7:1 Daniel had a **d** and visions of his
Joel 2:28 your old men shall **d** dreams,
Mt 1:20 of the Lord appeared to him in a **d**
Ac 2:17 and your old men shall **d** dreams.

DREAMED → DREAM

Ge 28:12 he **d** that there was a ladder set up
41:1 Pharaoh **d** that he was standing by
Da 2:1 Nebuchadnezzar **d** such dreams
2Es 13:1 After seven days I **d** a dream in the

DREAMER* → DREAM

Ge 37:19 to one another, "Here comes this **d.**

DREAMS → DREAM

Nu 12:6 I speak to them in **d.**
1Sa 28:6 LORD did not answer him, not by **d,**
Sir 34:7 For **d** have deceived many,

DRIED → DRY

Ge 8:13 the waters were **d** up from the earth;
Jos 5:1 had **d** up the waters of the Jordan
Isa 51:10 Was it not you who **d** up the sea,

DRINK → DRANK, DRUNK, DRUNKARD, DRUNKENNESS

Ge 19:33 So they made their father **d** wine
Ex 32:6 the people sat down to eat and **d,**
Ecc 9:7 and **d** your wine with a merry heart;
Isa 22:13 eat and **d,** for tomorrow we die."
Mt 20:22 to **d** the cup that I am about to **d?"**
Jn 18:11 not to **d** the cup that the Father has
Ro 14:17 kingdom of God is not food and **d**
1Co 12:13 we were all made to **d** of one Spirit.
Rev 14:10 also **d** the wine of God's wrath,

DRIVE → DROVE

Ex 23:30 Little by little I will **d** them out
Nu 33:52 you shall **d** out all the inhabitants of
Jos 13:13 Yet the Israelites did not **d** out the
Mk 11:15 to **d** out those who were selling
Jn 6:37 comes to me I will never **d** away;

DROSS

Ps 119:119 wicked of the earth you count as **d;**
Isa 1:25 I will smelt away your **d** as with lye
Eze 22:18 house of Israel has become **d** to me;

DROVE → DRIVE

Jos 24:18 the LORD **d** out before us all the
Mk 1:12 Spirit immediately **d** him out into

DRUNK → DRINK

Ge 9:21 some of the wine and became **d,**
1Sa 1:13 therefore Eli thought she was **d.**
SS 5:1 drink, and be **d** with love.
Jn 2:10 after the guests have become **d.**
Ac 2:15 these are not **d,** as you suppose,
Eph 5:18 Do not get **d** with wine,
Jdt 13:2 on his bed, for he was dead **d.**

DRUNKARD → DRINK

Pr 23:21 for the **d** and the glutton will come
Mt 11:19 they say, 'Look, a glutton and a **d,**
1Co 5:11 is an idolater, reviler, **d,** or robber.
1Ti 3:3 not a **d,** not violent but gentle,

DRUNKENNESS → DRINK

Ecc 10:17 for strength, and not for **d!**
Gal 5:21 **d,** carousing, and things like these.
Tob 4:15 to excess or let **d** go with you

DRY → DRIED

Ge 1:9 and let the **d** land appear."
Ex 14:16 may go into the sea on **d** ground.
Jos 3:17 were crossing over on **d** ground,
Jdg 6:37 and it is **d** on all the ground,
Eze 37:4 **d** bones, hear the word of the LORD.

DUE

1Ch 16:29 Ascribe to the LORD the glory **d** his
Ps 28:4 render them their **d** reward.
Mal 1:6 a father, where is the honor **d** me?
Ro 13:7 Pay to all what is **d** them—

DULL

Isa 6:10 Make the mind of this people **d,**
59:1 nor his ear too **d** to hear.
Mt 13:15 For this people's heart has grown **d,**

DUST

Ge 2:7 LORD God formed man from the **d**
3:14 and **d** you shall eat all the days of
13:16 offspring like the **d** of the earth;
1Sa 2:8 He raises up the poor from the **d;**
Ps 103:14 he remembers that we are **d.**
Ecc 3:20 from the **d,** and all turn to **d** again.
Na 1:3 and the clouds are the **d** of his feet.
Mt 10:14 shake off the **d** from your feet
1Co 15:47 man was from the earth, a man of **d;**

DWELL → DWELLING, DWELLS

Ex 25:8 so that I may **d** among them.
1Ki 8:27 But will God indeed **d** on the earth?
Ps 23:6 and I shall **d** in the house of
Eph 3:17 that Christ may **d** in your hearts
Col 1:19 fullness of God was pleased to **d,**
Rev 21:3 He will **d** with them as their God;

DWELLING → DWELL

Lev 26:11 I will place my **d** in your midst,
Dt 12:11 will choose as a **d** for his name:
Ps 90:1 our **d** place in all generations.
Jn 14:2 my Father's house there are many **d**
2Co 5:2 to be clothed with our heavenly **d**—
Eph 2:22 spiritually into a **d** place for God.

DWELLS → DWELL

Jn 14:10 but the Father who **d** in me
Ro 7:17 but sin that **d** within me.
1Co 3:16 and that God's Spirit **d** in you?
Col 2:9 the whole fullness of deity **d** bodily,

DYING → DEAD

2Co 6:9 as **d,** and see—we are alive;
Php 1:21 living is Christ and **d** is gain.

E

EAGLE → EAGLES, EAGLES'

Eze 1:10 the left side, and the face of an **e;**
17:3 A great **e,** with great wings and long
Rev 4:7 fourth living creature like a flying **e.**
2Es 11:1 an **e** that had twelve feathered wings

EAGLES → EAGLE

Isa 40:31 shall mount up with wings like **e,**

EAGLES' → EAGLE

Ex 19:4 and how I bore you on **e** wings
Da 7:4 like a lion and had **e** wings.

EAR → EARS

Isa 64:4 has heard, no **e** has perceived,
Lk 22:51 he touched his **e** and healed him.
1Co 2:9 "What no eye has seen, nor **e** heard,
Rev 2:7 Let anyone who has an **e** listen

EARLY

Dt 11:14 the **e** rain and the later rain,
Lk 24:22 were at the tomb **e** this morning,
Jas 5:7 receives the **e** and the late rains.

EARS → EAR

Dt 29:4 or eyes to see, or **e** to hear.
Isa 35:5 and the **e** of the deaf unstopped;
Mt 11:15 Let anyone with **e** listen!
2Ti 4:3 sound doctrine, but having itching **e,**

EARTH → EARTHLY, EARTHQUAKE, EARTHQUAKES

Ge 1:1 God created the heavens and the **e,**
6:11 the **e** was corrupt in God's sight,

Ex 19:5 Indeed, the whole **e** is mine,
Ps 47:2 a great king over all the **e.**
Isa 6:3 the whole **e** is full of his glory."
65:17 to create new heavens and a new **e;**
Jer 23:24 Do I not fill heaven and **e?**
Mt 5:5 the meek, for they will inherit the **e.**
24:35 Heaven and **e** will pass away,
Lk 5:24 has authority on **e** to forgive sins"—
2Pe 3:13 wait for new heavens and a new **e,**
Rev 21:1 I saw a new heaven and a new **e;**
Sir 40:11 All that is of **e** returns to **e,**

EARTHLY → EARTH

Jn 3:12 If I have told you about **e** things
2Co 5:1 if the **e** tent we live in is destroyed,

EARTHQUAKE → EARTH, QUAKE

1Ki 19:11 but the LORD was not in the **e;**
Mt 28:2 And suddenly there was a great **e;**
Ac 16:26 Suddenly there was an **e,**
Rev 6:12 I looked, and there came a great **e;**
2Es 3:19 four gates of fire and **e** and wind

EARTHQUAKES → EARTH, QUAKE

Mt 24:7 be famines and **e** in various places:
2Es 9:3 there shall appear in the world **e,**

EASIER → EASY

Mt 9:5 is **e,** to say, 'Your sins are forgiven,'
Lk 16:17 it is **e** for heaven and earth to pass
18:25 **e** for a camel to go through the eye

EAST

Ge 2:8 planted a garden in Eden, in the **e;**
Ps 103:12 as far as the **e** is from the west,
Mt 2:1 wise men from the **E** came to

EASY → EASIER

Mt 7:13 road is **e** that leads to destruction,
11:30 For my yoke is **e,** and my burden is

EAT → ATE, EATING, EATS

Ge 2:16 freely **e** of every tree of the garden;
Ex 12:11 This is how you shall **e** it:
Lev 3:17 not **e** any fat or any blood.
11:4 you shall not **e** the following:
Ecc 2:24 nothing better for mortals than to **e**
Mt 26:26 to the disciples, and said, "Take, **e;**
Ac 10:13 "Get up, Peter; kill and **e."**
1Co 10:31 whether you **e** or drink, or whatever
Rev 3:20 I will come in to you and **e** with you

EATING → EAT

Lk 7:34 the Son of Man has come **e** and
Ro 14:2 Some believe in **e** anything,
1Co 8:4 as to the **e** of food offered to idols,

EATS → EAT

Jn 6:51 **e** of this bread will live forever;
1Co 11:27 **e** the bread or drinks the cup of the

EDEN

Ge 2:8 a garden in **E,** in the east;
Isa 51:3 and will make her wilderness like **E,**
Eze 28:13 You were in **E,** the garden of God;

EDOM → =ESAU

Ge 25:30 (Therefore he was called **E.)**
Nu 20:18 But **E** said to him, "You shall not
Ob 1:1 says the Lord God concerning **E:**
Mal 1:4 If **E** says, "We are shattered but we

EFFORT

Gal 2:17 in our **e** to be justified in Christ,
Eph 4:3 every **e** to maintain the unity of the
Heb 4:11 make every **e** to enter that rest,
2Pe 1:5 make every **e** to support your faith

EGYPT

Ge 12:10 So Abram went down to **E** to reside
37:28 And they took Joseph to **E.**
47:27 Thus Israel settled in the land of **E,**
Ex 1:8 Now a new king arose over **E,**
12:40 in **E** was four hundred thirty years.
Jos 15:47 to the Wadi of **E,** and the Great Sea
Ne 9:18 God who brought you up out of **E,'**
Ps 78:51 He struck all the firstborn in **E,**
Hos 11:1 and out of **E** I called my son.
Mt 2:15 "Out of **E** I have called my son."
Rev 11:8 prophetically called Sodom and **E,**

EHUD

Judge of Israel (Jdg 3:12–30).

ELAH

1. Son of Baasha; king of Israel (1Ki 16:6-14).
2. Valley in which David fought Goliath (1Sa 17:2, 19; 21:9).

ELDER → ELDERS

Ge 25:23 the **e** shall serve the younger."
Ro 9:12 "The **e** shall serve the younger."
1Ti 5:19 any accusation against an **e** except
1Pe 5:1 as an **e** myself and a witness of the

ELDERS → ELDER

Ex 24:1 and seventy of the **e** of Israel,
Jdg 2:7 days of the **e** who outlived Joshua,
Isa 3:14 enters into judgment with the **e**
Mt 27:12 accused by the chief priests and **e,**
Mk 7:3 thus observing the tradition of the **e;**
1Ti 5:17 the **e** who rule well be considered
Jas 5:14 **e** of the church and have them pray
1Pe 5:5 must accept the authority of the **e.**
Rev 4:4 on the thrones are twenty-four **e,**
Sus 1:61 they took action against the two **e,**

ELEAZAR

1. Third son of Aaron (Ex 6:23-25). Succeeded Aaron as high priest (Nu 20:26; Dt 10:6). Allotted land to tribes (Jos 14:1). Death (Jos 24:33).
2. Brother of Judas Maccabeus (1Mc 2:5; 6:43-46).

ELECT → ELECTION

Mt 24:22 sake of the **e** those days will be cut
Mk 13:22 to lead astray, if possible, the **e.**
Wis 4:15 grace and mercy are with his **e,**
2Es 16:73 Then the tested quality of my **e**

ELECTION* → ELECT

Ro 9:11 God's purpose of **e** might continue,
11:28 but as regards **e** they are beloved,
2Pe 1:10 eager to confirm your call and **e,**

ELEMENTS

Heb 5:12 the basic **e** of the oracles of God.
2Pe 3:10 and the **e** will be dissolved with fire,

ELEVEN

Mt 28:16 Now the **e** disciples went to Galilee,
Ac 1:26 and he was added to the **e** apostles.

ELI

1. High priest in youth of Samuel (1Sa 1-4). Blessed Hannah (1Sa 1:12-18); raised Samuel (1Sa 2:11-26). Prophesied against because of wicked sons (1Sa 2:27-36). Death of Eli and sons (1Sa 4:11-22).
2. "Eli, Eli, lema sabachthani?" (Mt 27:46).

ELIAKIM → =JEHOIAKIM

1. Original name of Jehoiakim (2Ki 23:34; 2Ch 36:4).
2. Hezekiah's palace administrator (2Ki 18:17-37; 19:2; Isa 36:1-22; 37:2).

ELIEZER

1. Servant of Abraham (Ge 15:2).
2. Son of Moses (Ex 18:4; 1Ch 23:15-17).

ELIHU

A friend of Job (Job 32-37).

ELIJAH

Prophet; predicted famine in Israel (1Ki 17:1; Jas 5:17). Fed by ravens (1Ki 17:2-6). Raised Sidonian widow's son (1Ki 17:7-24). Defeated prophets of Baal at Carmel (1Ki 18:16-46). Ran from Jezebel (1Ki 19:1-9). Prophesied death of Azariah (2Ki 1). Succeeded by Elishah (1Ki 19:19–21; 2Ki 2:1–18). Taken to heaven in whirlwind (2Ki 2:11–12; Sir 48:1–12; 1Mc 2:58).

Return prophesied (Mal 4:5-6); equated with John the Baptist (Mt 17:9-13; Mk 9:9-13; Lk 1:17). Appeared with Moses in transfiguration of Jesus (Mt 17:1–8; Mk 9:1–8).

ELIMELECH

Ru 1:3 But **E,** the husband of Naomi, died,

ELIPHAZ

A friend of Job (Job 4–5; 15; 22; 42:7, 9).

ELISHA

Prophet; successor of Elijah (1Ki 19:16–21; Sir 48:12–14); inherited his mantle (2Ki 2:1–18). Purified bad water (2Ki 2:19–22). Cursed young men (2Ki 2:23–25). Aided Israel's defeat of Moab (2Ki 3). Provided widow with oil (2Ki 4:1-7). Raised Shunammite woman's son (2Ki 4:8-37). Purified food (2Ki 4:38-41). Fed 100 men (2Ki 4:42-44). Healed Naaman's leprosy (2Ki 5). Made axhead float (2Ki 6:1-7). Captured Arameans (2Ki 6:8-23). Political adviser to Israel (2Ki 6:24-8:6; 9:1-3; 13:14-19), Aram (2Ki 8:7-15). Death (2Ki 13:20).

ELIZABETH*

Mother of John the Baptist (Lk 1:5–58).

ELKANAH

Husband of Hannah, father of Samuel (1Sa 1-2).

EMMANUEL* → =IMMANUEL

Mt 1:23 and they shall name him **E,"**

EMMAUS

Lk 24:13 were going to a village called **E,**

EMPEROR

Mt 22:17 Is it lawful to pay taxes to the **e,** or
Jn 19:12 you are no friend of the **e.**

EMPTIED → EMPTY

1Co 1:17 cross of Christ might not be **e** of its
Php 2:7 but **e** himself, taking the form of

EMPTY → EMPTIED, EMPTY-HANDED

Ru 1:21 the LORD has brought me back **e;**
Isa 55:11 it shall not return to me **e,**
Mt 6:7 do not heap up **e** phrases
Eph 5:6 no one deceive you with **e** words,

EMPTY-HANDED → EMPTY, HAND

Ex 23:15 No one shall appear before me **e.**
Ru 3:17 not go back to your mother-in-law **e**

EN-GEDI

1Sa 23:29 and lived in the strongholds of **E.**

ENCOURAGE → ENCOURAGEMENT

1Th 4:18 **e** one another with these words.
1Pe 5:12 written this short letter to **e** you

ENCOURAGEMENT → ENCOURAGE

Ac 4:36 Barnabas (which means "son of **e").**
Ro 15:5 God of steadfastness and **e** grant
Php 2:1 If then there is any **e** in Christ,

END → ENDS

Ge 6:13 determined to make an **e** of all flesh,
Pr 14:12 but its **e** is the way to death.
Ecc 12:12 making many books there is no **e,**
Mt 24:13 But the one who endures to the **e**
28:20 always, to the **e** of the age."
Jn 13:1 he loved them to the **e.**
Ro 10:4 For Christ is the **e** of the law so that
Rev 22:13 the beginning and the **e."**

ENDOR*

1Sa 28:7 "There is a medium at **E."**

ENDS → END

Ps 2:8 the **e** of the earth your possession.
Isa 40:28 the Creator of the **e** of the earth.

Ro 10:18 their words to the **e** of the world."
1Co 13:8 Love never **e.** But as for prophecies,

ENDURANCE → ENDURE

Lk 8:15 and bear fruit with patient **e.**
Ro 5:3 knowing that suffering produces **e,**
1Ti 6:11 godliness, faith, love, **e,**
Heb 10:36 For you need **e,** so that when you
Jas 1:3 the testing of your faith produces **e;**
2Pe 1:6 and self-control with **e,** and **e** with
Rev 1:9 and the kingdom and the patient **e,**

ENDURE → ENDURANCE, ENDURED, ENDURES

Ps 89:29 his throne as long as the heavens **e.**
Mal 3:2 who can **e** the day of his coming,
1Co 10:13 out so that you may be able to **e** it.
2Ti 2:12 if we **e,** we will also reign with him;

ENDURED → ENDURE

Heb 12:2 that was set before him **e** the cross,

ENDURES → ENDURE

1Ch 16:41 for his steadfast love **e** forever.
Mt 13:21 but **e** only for a while,
Jn 6:27 for the food that **e** for eternal life,
1Co 13:7 hopes all things, **e** all things.
1Pe 1:25 but the word of the Lord **e** forever."
Sir 40:17 and almsgiving **e** forever.
Bar 4:1 the law that **e** forever.

ENEMIES → ENEMY

Ex 23:22 be an enemy to your **e** and a foe to
Est 9:5 the Jews struck down all their **e**
Ps 110:1 until I make your **e** your footstool."
Mt 5:44 But I say to you, Love your **e** and
Lk 20:43 until I make your **e** your footstool."
Ro 5:10 For if while we were **e,**
12:20 "if your **e** are hungry, feed them;
Jdt 8:35 to take vengeance on our **e."**
1Mc 4:36 said, "See, our **e** are crushed;

ENEMY → ENEMIES, ENMITY

Mt 13:39 the **e** who sowed them is the devil;
1Co 15:26 The last **e** to be destroyed is death.
Jas 4:4 of the world becomes an **e** of God.

ENGAGED

Mt 1:18 mother Mary had been **e** to Joseph,

ENJOY → ENJOYMENT

Ecc 3:22 that all should **e** their work,
9:9 **E** life with the wife whom you love,

ENJOYMENT → ENJOY

Ecc 8:15 So I commend **e,** for there is nothing
1Ti 6:17 with everything for our **e.**

ENLIGHTENED → LIGHT

Ro 10:2 have a zeal for God, but it is not **e.**
Eph 1:18 with the eyes of your heart **e,**
Heb 6:4 those who have once been **e,**

ENLIGHTENS* → LIGHT

Jn 1:9 The true light, which **e** everyone,

ENMITY → ENEMY

Ge 3:15 put **e** between you and the woman,
Jas 4:4 with the world is **e** with God?

ENOCH

Walked with God and taken by him (Ge 5:18-24; Heb 11:5; Sir 44:16). Prophet (Jude 14).

ENSLAVE → SLAVE

1Co 9:27 but I punish my body and **e** it,
Gal 2:4 so that they might **e** us—

ENSLAVED → SLAVE

Ro 6:6 and we might no longer be **e** to sin.
Gal 4:9 want to be **e** to them again?

ENTER → ENTRY

Ex 40:35 Moses was not able to **e** the tent
Nu 20:24 not **e** the land that I have given to
Ps 95:11 I swore, "They shall not **e** my rest."
Mt 5:20 will never **e** the kingdom of heaven.
7:13 **"E** through the narrow gate;
Mk 10:15 as a little child will never **e** it."
Jn 3:5 no one can **e** the kingdom of God
Heb 3:11 'They will not **e** my rest.'"
10:19 have confidence to **e** the sanctuary
Rev 21:27 But nothing unclean will **e** it,

ENTHRONED → THRONE

1Ch 13:6 the Lord, who is **e** on the cherubim,
Ps 9:7 But the Lord sits **e** forever,

ENTRUST → TRUST

Jn 2:24 Jesus on his part would not **e**
1Pe 4:19 **e** themselves to a faithful Creator,

ENTRUSTED → TRUST

Lk 12:48 the one to whom much has been **e,**
2Ti 1:12 guard until that day what I have **e** to
Jude 1:3 the faith that was once for all **e** to

ENVY

Pr 23:17 Do not let your heart **e** sinners,
Mk 7:22 deceit, licentiousness, **e,** slander,
Ro 1:29 Full of **e,** murder, strife, deceit,
Jas 3:16 For where there is **e** and selfish

EPHOD

Ex 28:6 They shall make the **e** of gold,
Jdg 8:27 Gideon made an **e** of it and put it in

EPHRAIM

1. Second son of Joseph (Ge 41:52; 46:20). Blessed as firstborn by Jacob (Ge 48). Tribe of numbered (Nu 1:33; 26:37), blessed (Dt 33:17), allotted land (Jos 16:4-9; Eze 48:5), failed to fully possess (Jos 16:10; Jdg 1:29).

2. Term for the Northern Kingdom (Isa 7:17; Hos 5).

EQUAL → EQUALITY

Isa 40:25 you compare me, or who is my **e?**
46:5 will you liken me and make me **e,**
Jn 5:18 thereby making himself **e** to God.

EQUALITY* → EQUAL

Php 2:6 not regard **e** with God as something

ERROR

Lev 5:18 for the **e** that you committed
Ro 1:27 the due penalty for their **e.**
1Jn 4:6 the spirit of truth and the spirit of **e.**
Wis 1:12 Do not invite death by the **e** of your

ESAU → =EDOM

Firstborn of Isaac, twin of Jacob (Ge 25:21-26). Also called Edom (Ge 25:30). Sold Jacob his birthright (Ge 25:29-34); lost blessing (Gen 27). Married Hittites (Ge 26:34), Ishmaelites (Ge 28:6-9). Reconciled to Jacob (Gen 33). Genealogy (Ge 36). The Lord chose Jacob over Esau (Mal 1:2-3), but gave Esau land (Dt 2:2-12). Descendants eventually obliterated (Ob 1-21; Jer 49:7-22).

ESCAPE

Ge 7:7 went into the ark to **e** the waters of
Ps 68:20 the Lord, belongs **e** from death.
Ro 2:3 you will **e** the judgment of God?
1Th 5:3 and there will be no **e!**
Heb 12:25 how much less will we **e** if we reject
2Pe 1:4 you may **e** from the corruption

ESTABLISH → ESTABLISHED

Ge 6:18 But I will **e** my covenant with you;
Dt 28:9 Lord will **e** you as his holy people,
Ps 89:4 'I will **e** your descendants forever,
Eze 16:60 **e** with you an everlasting covenant.
Ro 10:3 and seeking to **e** their own,
Heb 8:8 when I will **e** a new covenant with

ESTABLISHED → ESTABLISH

2Sa 7:16 your throne shall be **e** forever.
Ps 89:2 your steadfast love is **e** forever;
103:19 The Lord has **e** his throne in the
Jer 10:12 who **e** the world by his wisdom,
2Pe 1:12 you know them already and are **e** in

ESTHER

Jewess, originally named Hadassah, who lived in Persia; cousin of Mordecai (Est 2:7). Chosen queen of Xerxes (Est 2:8-18). Persuaded by Mordecai to foil Haman's plan to exterminate the Jews (Est 3-4). Revealed Haman's plans to Xerxes, resulting in Haman's death (Est 7), the Jews' preservation (Est 8-9), Mordecai's exaltation (Est 8:15; 9:4; 10). Decreed celebration of Purim (Est 9:18-32). See Additions to Esther.

ETERNAL → ETERNITY

Mt 25:46 but the righteous into **e** life."
Mk 10:17 what must I do to inherit **e** life?"
Jn 3:16 may not perish but may have **e** life.
10:28 I give them **e** life, and they will
Ro 5:21 **e** life through Jesus Christ our Lord.
2Co 4:17 an **e** weight of glory beyond all
Heb 5:9 the source of **e** salvation for all who
1Jn 5:13 may know that you have **e** life.

ETERNITY → ETERNAL

Isa 57:15 high and lofty one who inhabits **e,**
2Pe 3:18 glory both now and to the day of **e.**
Wis 2:23 made us in the image of his own **e,**
Sir 42:21 he is from all **e** one and the same.

ETHIOPIANS

Jer 13:23 Can **E** change their skin

EUNUCH → EUNUCHS

Jer 38:7 Ebed-melech the Ethiopian, a **e**
Ac 8:27 Now there was an Ethiopian **e,**

EUNUCHS → EUNUCH

Isa 56:4 To the **e** who keep my sabbaths,
Mt 19:12 made themselves **e** for the sake of the

EUPHRATES

Ge 2:14 And the fourth river is the **E.**
15:18 Egypt to the great river, the river **E,**
Rev 16:12 poured his bowl on the great river **E**

EUTYCHUS*

Ac 20:9 A young man named **E,**

EVANGELIST* → EVANGELISTS

Ac 21:8 went into the house of Philip the **e,**
2Ti 4:5 do the work of an **e,** carry out your

EVANGELISTS* → EVANGELIST

Eph 4:11 some **e,** some pastors and teachers,

EVE*

Ge 3:20 The man named his wife **E,**
4:1 Now the man knew his wife **E,**
2Co 11:3 afraid that as the serpent deceived **E**
1Ti 2:13 For Adam was formed first, then **E;**
Tob 8:6 his wife **E** as a helper and support.

EVENING

Ge 1:5 there was **e** and there was morning,
Ecc 11:6 at **e** do not let your hands be idle;
Zec 14:7 for at **e** time there shall be light.

EVERLASTING → LAST

Ge 9:16 remember the **e** covenant between
Ps 90:2 from **e** to **e** you are God.
Isa 9:6 God, **E** Father, Prince of Peace.
40:28 The Lord is the **e** God,
Jer 31:3 I have loved you with an **e** love;
Da 4:3 His kingdom is an **e** kingdom,

EVERY → EVERYTHING

Ge 7:23 He blotted out **e** living thing that
Ex 11:5 **E** firstborn in the land of Egypt
Dt 8:3 **e** word that comes from the mouth
Ecc 12:14 God will bring **e** deed into judgment
Isa 45:23 "To me **e** knee shall bow,
Mt 12:25 **"E** kingdom divided against itself

Ro 14:11 **e** knee shall bow to me, and **e** tongue
Php 2:10 at the name of Jesus **e** knee should
2Ti 3:17 equipped for **e** good work.
1Jn 4:1 Beloved, do not believe **e** spirit,
Rev 21:4 he will wipe **e** tear from their eyes.

EVERYTHING → EVERY

Ge 1:31 God saw **e** that he had made,
Ex 19:8 "**E** that the LORD has spoken we will
Ecc 3:1 For **e** there is a season,
1Co 10:31 do **e** for the glory of God.
1Ti 4:4 For **e** created by God is good,
2Pe 1:3 divine power has given us **e** needed

EVIDENCE

Dt 17:6 On the **e** of two or three witnesses
Mt 18:16 by the **e** of two or three witnesses.
Sus 1:43 men have given false **e** against me.

EVIL → EVILDOER, EVILDOERS

Ge 2:9 tree of the knowledge of good and **e.**
3:5 be like God, knowing good and **e."**
6:5 their hearts was only **e** continually.
Ex 32:22 the people, that they are bent on **e.**
Dt 13:5 So you shall purge the **e** from your
Jdg 2:11 Then the Israelites did what was **e**
Ps 23:4 the darkest valley, I fear no **e;**
Pr 8:13 The fear of the LORD is hatred of **e.**
Ecc 12:14 secret thing, whether good or **e.**
Isa 5:20 you who call **e** good and good **e,**
Mt 6:13 but rescue us from the **e** one.
12:35 **e** person brings **e** things out of an **e**
Lk 11:13 who are **e,** know how to give good
Jn 17:15 to protect them from the **e** one.
Ro 12:17 Do not repay anyone **e** for **e,**
Eph 5:16 of the time, because the days are **e.**
1Ti 6:10 of money is a root of all kinds of **e,**
1Pe 2:16 use your freedom as a pretext for **e.**
1Jn 5:18 and the **e** one does not touch them.
2Jn 1:11 to welcome is to participate in the **e**
3Jn 1:11 do not imitate what is **e** but imitate
Tob 12:7 Do good and **e** will not overtake
Sir 7:1 Do no **e,** and **e** will never overtake

EVILDOER → EVIL

Ps 52:6 and will laugh at the **e,** saying,
Mt 5:39 But I say to you, Do not resist an **e.**

EVILDOERS → EVIL

2Sa 7:10 and **e** shall afflict them no more,
Ps 34:16 The face of the LORD is against **e,**
Lk 13:27 go away from me, all you **e!'**
1Pe 2:12 though they malign you as **e,**

EXALT → EXALTED, EXALTS

Ex 15:2 my father's God, and I will **e** him.
Pr 4:8 Prize her highly, and she will **e** you;
Isa 25:1 I will **e** you, I will praise your name;
Lk 14:11 who **e** themselves will be humbled,
Jas 4:10 before the Lord, and he will **e** you.

EXALTED → EXALT

Ps 57:5 Be **e,** O God, above the heavens.
97:9 you are **e** far above all gods.
Isa 2:11 the LORD alone will be **e** in that day.
Php 2:9 highly **e** him and gave him the name

EXALTS → EXALT

Pr 14:34 Righteousness **e** a nation,
Sir 7:11 for there is One who humbles and **e.**

EXAMINE

1Co 11:28 **E** yourselves, and only then eat of
2Co 13:5 **E** yourselves to see whether you
Sir 18:20 Before judgment comes, **e** yourself;

EXAMPLE → EXAMPLES

Jn 13:15 For I have set you an **e,**
Php 3:17 according to the **e** you have in us.

EXAMPLES → EXAMPLE

1Co 10:6 these things occurred as **e** for us,
1Pe 5:3 but be **e** to the flock.

EXCEL → EXCELLENCE, EXCELLENT

1Co 14:12 strive to **e** in them for building up
Sir 33:23 **E** in all that you do;

EXCELLENCE → EXCEL

Php 4:8 if there is any **e** and if there is

EXCELLENT → EXCEL

Isa 28:29 in counsel, and **e** in wisdom.
1Co 12:31 I will show you a still more **e** way.
Heb 1:4 the name he has inherited is more **e**

EXCEPT

2Sa 22:32 And who is a rock, **e** our God?
Mt 11:27 no one knows the Son **e** the Father,
Lk 11:29 be given to it **e** the sign of Jonah.
Jn 14:6 No one comes to the Father **e**

EXCHANGED

Ps 106:20 They **e** the glory of God for the
Ro 1:23 **e** the glory of the immortal God

EXCUSE

Jn 15:22 but now they have no **e** for their sin.
Ro 1:20 So they are without **e;**

EXHORT

Tit 2:15 **e** and reprove with all authority.
Heb 3:13 But **e** one another every day,

EXILE → EXILES

2Ki 25:11 carried into **e** the rest of the people
Ezr 6:21 of Israel who had returned from **e,**

EXILES → EXILE

1Pe 2:11 I urge you as aliens and **e**

EXIST → EXISTED, EXISTS

1Co 8:6 are all things and for whom we **e,**
Heb 2:10 and through whom all things **e,**

EXISTED → EXIST

2Pe 3:5 the word of God heavens **e** long ago
Rev 4:11 by your will they **e** and were created

EXISTS → EXIST

Ps 119:89 The LORD **e** forever;
Heb 11:6 that he **e** and that he rewards those

EXPECTING

Lk 6:35 and lend, **e** nothing in return.
Php 3:20 that we are **e** a Savior,

EXPLAIN → EXPLAINED, EXPLAINING

2Ch 9:2 Solomon that he could not **e** to her.
Da 5:12 to interpret dreams, **e** riddles,

EXPLAINED → EXPLAIN

Mk 4:34 but he **e** everything in private to his

EXPLAINING → EXPLAIN

2Ti 2:15 rightly **e** the word of truth.

EXPOSE → EXPOSED

Mt 1:19 unwilling to **e** her to public disgrace
Eph 5:11 of darkness, but instead **e** them.

EXPOSED → EXPOSE

Jn 3:20 so that their deeds may not be **e.**
Eph 5:13 everything **e** by the light becomes
Heb 10:33 sometimes being publicly **e** to abuse

EYE → EYES, EYEWITNESSES

Ex 21:24 **e** for **e,** tooth for tooth,
Ps 17:8 Guard me as the apple of the **e;**
Mt 5:29 If your right **e** causes you to sin,
5:38 An **e** for an **e** and a tooth for a tooth.
7:3 see the speck in your neighbor's **e,**
Mk 10:25 to go through the **e** of a needle
1Co 15:52 in the twinkling of an **e,** at the last
Rev 1:7 the clouds; every **e** will see him,

EYES → EYE

Ge 3:7 Then the **e** of both were opened,
Dt 29:4 or **e** to see, or ears to hear.
2Ch 16:9 **e** of the LORD range throughout the
Ps 121:1 I lift up my **e** to the hills—
Pr 3:7 Do not be wise in your own **e;**
22:12 The **e** of the LORD keep watch over
Isa 11:3 He shall not judge by what his **e** see,
Jer 9:1 and my **e** a fountain of tears,
Eze 1:18 rims of all four were full of **e** all
Da 10:6 lightning, his **e** like flaming torches,
Zec 4:10 "These seven are the **e** of the LORD,
Mt 9:30 And their **e** were opened.
13:15 that they might not look with their **e,**
Lk 24:31 their **e** were opened, and they
Eph 1:18 with the **e** of your heart enlightened,
1Pe 3:12 **e** of the Lord are on the righteous,
1Jn 2:16 of the flesh, the desire of the **e,**
Rev 1:14 his **e** were like a flame of fire,
4:6 full of **e** in front and behind:
21:4 he will wipe every tear from their **e.**

EYEWITNESSES* → EYE, WITNESS

Lk 1:2 who from the beginning were **e**
2Pe 1:16 but we had been **e** of his majesty.

EZEKIEL

Priest called to be prophet to the exiles (Eze 1–3; Sir 49:8). Symbolically acted out destruction of Jerusalem (Eze 4–5; 12; 24).

EZRA

Priest and teacher of the Law who led a return of exiles to Israel to reestablish temple and worship (Ezr 7–8). Corrected intermarriage of priests (Ezr 9–10; 1Es 8–9). Read Law at celebration of Feast of Tabernacles (Ne 8; 1Es 9:37–55). Participated in dedication of Jerusalem's walls (Ne 12).

F

FACE → FACES

Ge 1:2 darkness covered the **f** of the deep,
32:30 saying, "For I have seen God **f** to **f,**
Ex 3:6 Moses hid his **f,** for he was afraid to
34:30 the skin of his **f** was shining,
Nu 6:25 LORD make his **f** to shine upon you,
12:8 With him I speak **f** to **f**—
Ps 4:6 Let the light of your **f** shine on us,
Isa 54:8 wrath for a moment I hid my **f**
Eze 39:29 I will never again hide my **f** from
Lk 9:29 the appearance of his **f** changed,
2Co 3:7 not gaze at Moses' **f** because of the glory
Rev 1:16 his **f** was like the sun shining with

FACES → FACE

Eze 1:6 Each had four **f,** and each
2Co 3:18 And all of us, with unveiled **f,**
Rev 9:7 their **f** were like human **f,**

FACTIONS*

1Co 11:19 there have to be **f** among you,
Gal 5:20 anger, quarrels, dissensions, **f,**

FADE → FADES

Ps 37:2 for they will soon **f** like the grass,
Isa 64:6 We all **f** like a leaf,

FADES → FADE

Isa 40:7 The grass withers, the flower **f,**
1Pe 5:4 crown of glory that never **f** away.

FAIL → FAILED

Dt 31:6 he will not **f** you or forsake you."
Jos 1:5 I will not **f** you or forsake you.
Eze 47:12 will not wither nor their fruit **f,**
Mk 8:18 Do you have eyes, and **f** to see?

FAILED → FAIL

Jos 23:14 pass for you, not one of them has **f.**
1Ki 8:56 not one word has **f** of all his good
Ro 9:6 not as though the word of God had **f**

FAINT

Ps 142:3 When my spirit is **f**, you know my
Isa 40:31 they shall walk and not **f**.

FAITH → FAITHFUL, FAITHFULNESS, FAITHLESS

Ps 146:6 in them; who keeps **f** forever;
Isa 7:9 If you do not stand firm in **f**,
Hab 2:4 but the righteous live by their **f**.
Mt 17:20 have **f** the size of a mustard seed,
Mk 2:5 When Jesus saw their **f**, he said to
Lk 7:50 the woman, "Your **f** has saved you;
18:8 comes, will he find **f** on earth?"
Ac 3:16 and the **f** that is through Jesus
Ro 1:17 one who is righteous will live by **f**."
3:28 that a person is justified by **f** apart
1Co 13:13 And now **f**, hope, and love abide,
Gal 3:11 one who is righteous will live by **f**."
Eph 4:5 one Lord, one **f**, one baptism,
Php 3:9 righteousness from God based on **f**.
1Ti 6:11 pursue righteousness, godliness, **f**,
2Ti 4:7 finished the race, I have kept the **f**.
Heb 11:1 **f** is the assurance of things hoped
12:2 the pioneer and perfecter of our **f**,
Jas 2:17 **f** by itself, if it has no works, is dead
2Pe 1:1 a **f** as precious as ours through the
1Jn 5:4 that conquers the world, our **f**.
Jude 1:3 the **f** that was once for all entrusted
Rev 2:13 and you did not deny your **f** in me
Sir 40:12 but good **f** will last forever.

FAITHFUL → FAITH

Dt 32:4 A **f** God, without deceit, just and
Ps 4:3 LORD has set apart the **f** for himself;
116:15 is the death of his **f** ones.
Mic 7:2 The **f** have disappeared from the
Zec 8:3 Jerusalem shall be called the **f** city,
Mt 24:45 "Who then is the **f** and wise slave,
1Co 10:13 God is **f**, and he will not let you be
1Th 5:24 The one who calls you is **f**,
Heb 10:23 for he who has promised is **f**.
1Pe 4:19 to a **f** Creator,
1Jn 1:9 is **f** and just will forgive us our sins
Rev 1:5 **f** witness, the firstborn of the dead,
19:11 Its rider is called **F** and True,
Wis 3:9 the **f** will abide with him in love,
Sir 4:16 If they remain **f**, they will inherit

FAITHFULNESS → FAITH

Ex 34:6 abounding in steadfast love and **f**,
Jos 24:14 and serve him in sincerity and in **f**;
Ps 26:3 and I walk in **f** to you.
36:5 to the heavens, your **f** to the clouds.
Pr 16:6 By loyalty and **f** iniquity is atoned
Isa 11:5 and **f** the belt around his loins.
Jer 31:3 I have continued my **f** to you.
La 3:23 new every morning; great is your **f**.
Hos 4:1 There is no **f** or loyalty, and no
Ro 3:3 faithlessness nullify the **f** of God?
Gal 5:22 patience, kindness, generosity, **f**,

FAITHLESS → FAITH

Jer 3:14 Return, O **f** children, says the LORD,
Mt 17:17 "You **f** and perverse generation,
2Ti 2:13 if we are **f**, he remains faithful—
Rev 21:8 But as for the cowardly, the **f**,

FALL → FALLEN, FALLING, FELL

Ps 91:7 A thousand may **f** at your side,
Pr 16:18 and a haughty spirit before a **f**.
Lk 10:18 "I watched Satan **f** from heaven like
Ro 9:33 a rock that will make them **f**,
1Co 10:12 watch out that you do not **f**.
Heb 10:31 a fearful thing to **f** into the hands of
Sir 28:23 Those who forsake the Lord will **f**

FALLEN → FALL

2Sa 1:19 How the mighty have **f**!
Isa 14:12 **f** from heaven, O Day Star,
21:9 he responded, **"F, f** is Babylon;
Rev 9:1 I saw a star that had **f** from heaven
18:2 **"F, f** is Babylon the great!

FALLING → FALL

Lk 22:44 [[like great drops of blood **f** down]]
Jude 1:24 him who is able to keep you from **f**,

FALSE

Dt 5:20 Neither shall you bear **f** witness
2Ki 17:15 went after **f** idols and became **f**;
Mt 7:15 "Beware of **f** prophets, who come to
Mk 13:22 **F** messiahs and **f** prophets will
Heb 6:18 impossible that God would prove **f**,
2Pe 2:1 there will be **f** teachers among you,
Rev 16:13 and from the mouth of the **f** prophet.
20:10 where the beast and the **f** prophet
LtJ 6:8 but they are **f** and cannot speak.
Sus 1:61 convicted them of bearing **f** witness;

FAMILIES → FAMILY

Ac 3:25 all the **f** of the earth shall be blessed.
Tit 1:11 are upsetting whole **f** by teaching

FAMILY → FAMILIES

Pr 6:19 and one who sows discord in a **f**.
Gal 6:10 especially for those of the **f** of faith.
Eph 3:15 from whom every **f** in heaven and
1Pe 2:17 Love the **f** of believers.

FAMINE

Ge 12:10 Now there was a **f** in the land.
41:27 They are seven years of **f**.
Ru 1:1 there was a **f** in the land,
Ps 37:19 in the days of **f** they have abundance
Am 8:11 not a **f** of bread, or a thirst for water,
Ac 11:28 there would be a severe **f** over all
Ro 8:35 or distress, or persecution, or **f**,

FAR

Nu 16:3 "You have gone too **f**!
1Sa 7:12 "Thus **f** the LORD has helped us."
Isa 57:19 Peace, peace, to the **f** and the near,
Jer 23:23 and not a God **f** off?
Mk 7:6 but their hearts are **f** from me;
12:34 are not **f** from the kingdom of God."

FAST → FASTED, FASTING

Isa 58:5 Is such the **f** that I choose,
Mt 6:16 "And whenever you **f**,
Lk 18:12 I **f** twice a week; I give

FASTED → FAST

Mt 4:2 He **f** forty days and forty nights,

FASTING → FAST

Mt 6:16 so as to show others that they are **f**.

FATHER → FATHER'S

Ge 2:24 a man leaves his **f** and his mother
Ex 20:12 Honor your **f** and your mother,
21:15 Whoever strikes **f** or mother shall
2Sa 7:14 I will be a **f** to him, and he shall be
Ps 89:26 cry to me, 'You are my **F**, my God,
Pr 28:24 Anyone who robs **f** or mother and
Isa 8:4 child knows how to call "My **f**" or
9:6 Mighty God, Everlasting **F**, Prince
Jer 3:19 I thought you would call me, My **F**,
Mal 1:6 If then I am a **f**, where is the honor
Mt 6:9 Our **F** in heaven, hallowed be your
28:19 the name of the **F** and of the Son and
Lk 18:20 Honor your **f** and mother.'"
Jn 5:18 but was also calling God his own **F**,
8:44 You are from your **f** the devil,
14:6 comes to the **F** except through me.
Ro 8:15 When we cry, "Abba! **F**!"
Gal 4:6 into our hearts, crying, "Abba! **F**!"
Eph 6:2 "Honor your **f** and mother"—
Heb 1:5 be his **F**, and he will be my Son"?
12:9 to be subject to the **F** of spirits
Jas 1:17 coming down from the **F** of lights,
Rev 3:5 confess your name before my **F**
Wis 2:16 and boasts that God is his **f**.
Sir 3:3 who honor their **f** atone for sins,

FATHER'S → FATHER

Lk 2:49 that I must be in my **F** house?"
Jn 1:14 the glory as of a **f** only son,
2:16 making my **F** house a marketplace!"
10:29 can snatch it out of the **F** hand.
14:2 **F** house there are many dwelling

FAULT

Ro 9:19 "Why then does he still find **f**?
Sir 11:7 Do not find **f** before you investigate;

FAVOR → FAVORITISM

Ge 6:8 Noah found **f** in the sight of the
Ex 33:12 you have also found **f** in my sight.'
Ps 30:5 his **f** is for a lifetime.
Isa 49:8 In a time of **f** I have answered you,
Zec 11:7 I named **F**, the other I named Unity,
Lk 4:19 proclaim the year of the Lord's **f**."

FAVORITISM* → FAVOR

Jas 2:1 with your acts of **f** really believe

FEAR → AFRAID, FEARED, FEARFULLY, FEARS

Ge 22:12 for now I know that you **f** God,
Dt 6:13 The LORD your God you shall **f**;
Ps 19:9 the **f** of the LORD is pure, enduring
23:4 the darkest valley, I **f** no evil;
27:1 and my salvation; whom shall I **f**?
Pr 1:7 **f** of the LORD is the beginning of
Ecc 12:13 **F** God, and keep his commandments
Mt 10:28 rather **f** him who can destroy both
Mk 5:36 "Do not **f**, only believe."
Php 2:12 work out your own salvation with **f**
1Pe 3:14 Do not **f** what they **f**,
1Jn 4:18 but perfect love casts out **f**;
Rev 14:7 **"F** God and give him glory,
Sir 1:11 The **f** of the Lord is glory

FEARED → FEAR

Ex 14:31 the people **f** the LORD and believed
Job 1:1 **f** God and turned away from evil.
Hag 1:12 and the people **f** the LORD.

FEARFULLY* → FEAR

Ps 139:14 I am **f** and wonderfully made.

FEARS → FEAR

Ps 34:4 and delivered me from all my **f**.
Pr 31:30 a woman who **f** the LORD is to be
Jdt 16:16 whoever **f** the Lord is great forever.
Sir 15:1 Whoever **f** the Lord will do this,

FED → FEED

Dt 8:16 **f** you in the wilderness with manna
Ps 80:5 have **f** them with the bread of tears,
Eze 34:8 but the shepherds have **f** themselves,

FEED → FED

Isa 40:11 He will **f** his flock like a shepherd;
65:25 wolf and the lamb shall **f** together,
Jn 21:15 Jesus said to him, **"F** my lambs."
Ro 12:20 "if your enemies are hungry, **f** them;

FEET → FOOT

Ps 8:6 you have put all things under their **f**,
119:105 Your word is a lamp to my **f**
Da 2:33 its **f** partly of iron and partly of clay.
Mt 22:44 I put your enemies under your **f**"?
Lk 24:39 Look at my hands and my **f**;
Jn 13:5 and began to wash the disciples' **f**
Ro 16:20 shortly crush Satan under your **f**.
1Co 15:25 put all his enemies under his **f**.
Heb 1:13 enemies a footstool for your **f**"?
Rev 1:15 his **f** were like burnished bronze,

FELLOWSHIP

Ac 2:42 to the apostles' teaching and **f**,
2Co 6:14 Or what **f** is there between light and
1Jn 1:3 and truly our **f** is with the Father and

FEMALE

Ge 1:27 male and **f** he created them.
Mk 10:6 'God made them male and **f**.'
Gal 3:28 there is no longer male and **f**;

FESTIVAL → FESTIVALS

Ex 23:14 in the year you shall hold a **f** for me.
1Co 5:8 Therefore, let us celebrate the **f**,

FESTIVALS → FESTIVAL

Lev 23:2 are the appointed **f** of the LORD
Ne 10:33 the new moons, the appointed **f,**
Col 2:16 of food and drink or of observing **f,**

FEVER

Dt 28:22 will afflict you with consumption, **f,**
Mk 1:30 mother-in-law was in bed with a **f,**

FEW

Ps 105:12 When they were **f** in number,
Ecc 5:2 therefore let your words be **f.**
Mt 22:14 many are called, but **f** are chosen."
Lk 13:23 "Lord, will only a **f** be saved?"

FIELD → FIELDS

Pr 31:16 She considers a **f** and buys it;
Mt 6:28 Consider the lilies of the **f,** how
13:44 is like treasure hidden in a **f,**
24:40 Then two will be in the **f;**
1Co 3:9 you are God's **f,** God's building.

FIELDS → FIELD

Lk 2:8 there were shepherds living in the **f,**
Jn 4:35 see how the **f** are ripe for harvesting.

FIG → FIGS

Ge 3:7 and they sewed **f** leaves together
Hab 3:17 Though the **f** tree does not blossom,
Mt 24:32 "From the **f** tree learn its lesson:
Lk 13:6 "A man had a **f** tree planted in his

FIGHT → FOUGHT

Ex 14:14 The LORD will **f** for you,
Ps 35:1 **f** against those who **f** against me!
1Ti 1:18 you may **f** the good **f,**
2Ti 4:7 I have fought the good **f,**

FIGS → FIG

Jer 24:1 LORD showed me two baskets of **f**
Lk 6:44 **F** are not gathered from thorns,

FILL → FILLED, FULL, FULLNESS

Ge 1:28 and **f** the earth and subdue it;
9:1 fruitful and multiply, and **f** the earth.
Ps 72:19 may his glory **f** the whole earth.
Jer 23:24 Do I not **f** heaven and earth?
Eph 4:10 so that he might **f** all things.)

FILLED → FILL

Ex 1:7 so that the land was **f** with them.
40:34 glory of the LORD **f** the tabernacle.
1Ki 8:11 glory of the LORD **f** the house of the
Eze 43:5 the glory of the LORD **f** the temple.
Lk 1:15 he will be **f** with the Holy Spirit.
Ac 2:4 were **f** with the Holy Spirit and
Eph 5:18 but be **f** with the Spirit,

FILTHY

Isa 64:6 righteous deeds are like a **f** cloth.
Zec 3:3 Joshua was dressed with **f** clothes
Rev 22:11 and the **f** still be **f,**

FIND → FINDS, FOUND

Nu 32:23 and be sure your sin will **f** you out.
Dt 4:29 you will **f** him if you search after
Jer 29:13 you search for me, you will **f** me;
Mt 11:29 and you will **f** rest for your souls.
16:25 lose their life for my sake will **f** it.
Lk 11:9 search, and you will **f;**

FINDS → FIND

Pr 8:35 For whoever **f** me **f** life and obtains
18:22 He who **f** a wife **f** a good thing,

FINGER

Ex 8:19 "This is the **f** of God!"
Dt 9:10 tablets written with the **f** of God;
Mt 23:4 themselves are unwilling to lift a **f**
Lk 11:20 if it is by the **f** of God that I cast out

FINISHED

Ge 2:2 on the seventh day God **f** the work
Ex 40:33 So Moses **f** the work.
Jn 19:30 received the wine, he said, "It is **f.**"
Sir 38:8 God's works will never be **f;**

FIRE → FIERY

Ex 3:2 appeared to him in a flame of **f** out
13:21 and in a pillar of **f** by night, to give
Lev 9:24 **F** came out from the LORD and
Nu 11:1 the **f** of the LORD burned against
Dt 4:24 the LORD your God is a devouring **f,**
1Ki 19:12 but the LORD was not in the **f;**
2Ki 2:11 a chariot of **f** and horses of **f** separated
2Ch 7:1 **f** came down from heaven and
Isa 66:24 their **f** shall not be quenched,
Da 3:25 walking in the middle of the **f,**
Zec 2:5 For I will be a wall of **f** all around it,
Mal 3:2 For he is like a refiner's **f** and like
Mt 3:11 baptize you with the Holy Spirit and **f.**
Mk 9:43 to go to hell, to the unquenchable **f.**
Ac 2:3 Divided tongues, as of **f,** appeared
1Co 3:13 the **f** will test what sort of work each
Heb 12:29 indeed our God is a consuming **f.**
Jas 3:6 And the tongue is a **f.**
2Pe 3:10 elements will be dissolved with **f,**
Rev 20:14 the second death, the lake of **f;**
Sir 7:17 punishment of the ungodly is **f** and

FIRM → FIRMLY

Ex 14:13 "Do not be afraid, stand **f,**
Isa 7:9 If you do not stand **f** in faith,
2Co 1:24 because you stand **f** in the faith.
Eph 6:13 having done everything, to stand **f.**
Heb 3:6 if we hold **f** the confidence

FIRMAMENT

Ps 19:1 and the **f** proclaims his handiwork.
150:1 praise him in his mighty **f!**

FIRMLY → FIRM

Ps 119:89 your word is **f** fixed in heaven.
Ecc 12:11 like nails **f** fixed are the collected

FIRST → FIRSTBORN

Ge 1:5 and there was morning, the **f** day.
Nu 18:15 The **f** issue of the womb of all
Pr 8:22 the **f** of his acts of long ago.
Isa 41:4 I, the LORD, am **f,**
Mt 6:33 But strive **f** for the kingdom of God
Mk 10:31 But many who are **f** will be last, and the last will be **f."**
16:2 very early on the **f** day of the week,
Jn 2:11 Jesus did this, the **f** of his signs,
Ac 11:26 disciples were **f** called "Christians."
Ro 1:16 to the Jew **f** and also to the Greek.
1Co 15:45 it is written, "The **f** man, Adam,
1Th 4:16 and the dead in Christ will rise **f.**
1Jn 4:19 We love because he **f** loved us.
Rev 1:17 I am the **f** and the last,
20:5 This is the **f** resurrection.
21:1 the **f** heaven and the **f** earth

FIRSTBORN → BEAR, FIRST

Ex 4:22 'Thus says the LORD: Israel is my **f**
12:29 the LORD struck down all the **f**
13:2 Consecrate to me all the **f;**
Ps 78:51 He struck all the **f** in Egypt,
Zec 12:10 as one weeps over a **f.**
Lk 2:7 And she gave birth to her **f** son and
Col 1:15 invisible God, the **f** of all creation;
Heb 1:6 when he brings the **f** into the world,
Rev 1:5 faithful witness, the **f** of the dead,
Sir 36:17 whom you have named your **f,**
2Es 6:58 whom you have called your **f,**

FISH

Ge 1:26 have dominion over the **f** of the sea,
Jnh 2:1 his God from the belly of the **f,**
Mt 7:10 Or if the child asks for a **f,** will give
Jn 6:9 has five barley loaves and two **f.**

FIVE

1Sa 17:40 chose **f** smooth stones from the wadi
Mt 14:19 Taking the **f** loaves and the two fish,
1Co 14:19 church I would rather speak **f** words

FLAME

Ex 3:2 in a **f** of fire out of a bush;
Isa 10:17 and his Holy One a **f;**
Rev 19:12 His eyes are like a **f** of fire,
Aza 1:26 drove the fiery **f** out of the furnace,

FLED → FLEE

Ex 2:15 But Moses **f** from Pharaoh.
1Sa 19:18 Now David **f** and escaped;
Mk 14:50 All of them deserted him and **f.**
Rev 12:6 the woman **f** into the wilderness,
20:11 and the heaven **f** from his presence,

FLEE → FLED

Ps 11:1 **"F** like a bird to the mountains;
139:7 where can I **f** from your presence?
Isa 30:17 A thousand shall **f** at the threat of
1Co 10:14 **f** from the worship of idols.
Jas 4:7 Resist the devil, and he will **f** from

FLESH

Ge 2:23 is bone of my bones and **f** of my **f;**
2:24 and they become one **f.**
Job 19:26 then in my **f** I shall see God,
Eze 36:26 of stone and give you a heart of **f.**
Mt 16:17 For **f** and blood has not revealed this
26:41 but the **f** is weak."
Jn 1:14 the Word became **f** and lived among
3:6 What is born of the **f** is **f,**
Ro 8:4 to the **f** but according to the Spirit.
2Co 12:7 a thorn was given me in the **f,**
Gal 5:19 Now the works of the **f** are obvious:
Eph 6:12 not against enemies of blood and **f,**
1Pe 1:24 "All **f** is like grass and all its glory
1Jn 4:2 that Jesus Christ has come in the **f**

FLOCK

Isa 40:11 He will feed his **f** like a shepherd;
Eze 34:22 I will save my **f,** and they shall no
Mt 26:31 the sheep of the **f** will be scattered.'
Lk 12:32 "Do not be afraid, little **f,**
Jn 10:16 So there will be one **f,** one shepherd.
1Pe 5:3 but be examples to the **f.**

FLOGGED

Jn 19:1 Pilate took Jesus and had him **f.**
Ac 5:40 the apostles, they had them **f.**

FLOOD

Ge 7:7 the ark to escape the waters of the **f.**
9:15 waters shall never again become a **f**
Ps 29:10 The LORD sits enthroned over the **f;**
2Pe 2:5 a **f** on a world of the ungodly;
Sir 40:10 and on their account the **f** came.

FLOW → FLOWING, FLOWS

Zec 14:8 waters shall **f** out from Jerusalem,
Jn 7:38 'Out of the believer's heart shall **f**

FLOWER

Isa 40:7 The grass withers, the **f** fades,
1Pe 1:24 The grass withers, and the **f** falls,

FLOWING → FLOW

Ex 3:8 a land **f** with milk and honey,
Jos 5:6 a land **f** with milk and honey.
Eze 47:1 water was **f** from below the
Rev 22:1 **f** from the throne of God and

FOE

Ex 23:22 and a **f** to your foes.
Ps 60:11 O grant us help against the **f,**

FOLLOW → FOLLOWED

Ex 16:4 whether they will **f** my instruction
Dt 6:14 Do not **f** other gods, any of the gods
1Ki 18:21 If the LORD is God, **f** him;
Ps 23:6 mercy shall **f** me all the days of my
Lk 9:23 take up their cross daily and **f** me.
Jn 10:27 I know them, and they **f** me.
Rev 14:4 these **f** the Lamb wherever he goes.

FOLLOWED → FOLLOW

Jdg 2:12 they **f** other gods, from among the

Jer 9:14 have stubbornly **f** their own hearts
Mk 1:18 they left their nets and **f** him.
Rev 13:3 the whole earth **f** the beast.

FOLLY → FOOL

Pr 13:16 but the fool displays **f**.
26:4 not answer fools according to their **f**
Ecc 2:13 that wisdom excels **f** as light excels
Mk 7:22 envy, slander, pride, **f**.

FOOD → FOODS

Ge 1:30 I have given every green plant for **f**.
9:3 thing that lives shall be **f** for you;
Ps 136:25 who gives **f** to all flesh,
Mt 6:25 Is not life more than **f**,
Jn 6:55 for my flesh is true **f** and my blood
1Co 8:8 "**F** will not bring us close to God."
1Mc 1:63 to die rather than to be defiled by **f**

FOODS → FOOD

Mk 7:19 (Thus he declared all **f** clean.)
1Ti 4:3 and demand abstinence from **f**,

FOOL → FOLLY, FOOLISH, FOOLISHNESS, FOOLS

Pr 15:5 A **f** despises a parent's instruction,
20:3 but every **f** is quick to quarrel.
Mt 5:22 'You **f**,' you will be liable to the
2Co 11:21 I am speaking as a **f**—I also dare to

FOOLISH → FOOL

Pr 17:25 **F** children are a grief to their father
Jer 5:21 O **f** and senseless people,
Mt 7:26 like a **f** man who built his house
25:2 Five of them were **f**, and five were
1Co 1:20 Has not God made **f** the wisdom of
Gal 3:1 **f** Galatians! Who has bewitched
Tit 3:3 For we ourselves were once **f**,

FOOLISHNESS → FOOL

1Co 1:18 cross is **f** to those who are perishing,
3:19 wisdom of this world is **f** with God.

FOOLS → FOOL

Ps 14:1 **F** say in their hearts, "There is no God."
Pr 1:7 **f** despise wisdom and instruction.
10:21 but **f** die for lack of sense.
Ecc 5:4 for he has no pleasure in **f**.
Ro 1:22 Claiming to be wise, they became **f**;
1Co 4:10 We are **f** for the sake of Christ,

FOOT → FEET, FOOTSTOOL

Ps 91:12 will not dash your **f** against a stone.
Mt 18:8 or your **f** causes you to stumble,
Lk 4:11 not dash your **f** against a stone.'"

FOOTSTOOL → FOOT

Ps 110:1 until I make your enemies your **f**."
Isa 66:1 is my throne and the earth is my **f**;
Heb 10:13 until his enemies would be made a **f**

FORCES

Mt 5:41 and if anyone **f** you to go one mile,
Eph 6:12 spiritual **f** of evil in the heavenly

FOREHEAD → FOREHEADS

Ex 13:9 and as a reminder on your **f**,
1Sa 17:49 and struck the Philistine on his **f**;
Rev 13:16 marked on the right hand or the **f**,

FOREHEADS → FOREHEAD

Eze 9:4 and put a mark on the **f** of those
Rev 7:3 of our God with a seal on their **f**."
20:4 not received its mark on their **f**

FOREIGN → FOREIGNER, FOREIGNERS

Jos 24:23 "Then put away the **f** gods that are
Ps 81:9 you shall not bow down to a **f** god.

FOREIGNER → FOREIGN

Ex 12:43 no **f** shall eat of it,
1Co 14:11 and the speaker a **f** to me.

FOREIGNERS → FOREIGN

1Co 14:21 by the lips of **f** I will speak to this
Heb 11:13 were strangers and **f** on the earth,

FOREKNEW* → KNOW

Ro 8:29 whom he **f** he also predestined to
11:2 not rejected his people whom he **f**.

FORERUNNER* → RUN

Heb 6:20 a **f** on our behalf, has entered,

FORESEEING* → SEE

Ac 2:31 **F** this, David spoke of the
Gal 3:8 **f** that God would justify the Gentiles

FORESKIN

Ge 17:14 circumcised in the flesh of his **f**
Dt 10:16 Circumcise, then, the **f** of your heart

FORETOLD → TELL

Isa 43:9 and **f** to us the former things?
Ac 3:18 this way God fulfilled what he had **f**

FOREVER

Ge 3:22 the tree of life, and eat, and live **f**"
6:3 spirit shall not abide in mortals **f**,
Ex 3:15 This is my name **f**, and this my title
2Sa 7:13 the throne of his kingdom **f**.
1Ch 16:15 Remember his covenant **f**,
Ps 19:9 fear of the LORD is pure, enduring **f**;
110:4 "You are a priest **f** according to the
117:2 faithfulness of the LORD endures **f**.
Ecc 3:14 that whatever God does endures **f**;
Isa 40:8 the word of our God will stand **f**.
51:6 but my salvation will be **f**,
Jn 6:51 eats of this bread will live **f**;
14:16 another Advocate, to be with you **f**.
Heb 5:6 "You are a priest **f**, according to the
13:8 the same yesterday and today and **f**.
1Pe 1:25 but the word of the Lord endures **f**."
Rev 1:18 I am alive **f** and ever;
11:15 and he will reign **f** and ever."
22:5 and they will reign **f** and ever.
Wis 5:15 But the righteous live **f**,

FORFEIT

Mk 8:36 the whole world and **f** their life?

FORGAVE → FORGIVE

Ps 32:5 and you **f** the guilt of my sin.
85:2 You **f** the iniquity of your people;
Col 2:13 when he **f** us all our trespasses,

FORGET → FORGOT, FORGOTTEN

Dt 4:23 So be careful not to **f** the covenant
6:12 take care that you do not **f** the LORD,
Ps 137:5 If I **f** you, O Jerusalem, let my right
Pr 4:5 Get wisdom; get insight: do not **f**,
Isa 49:15 these may **f**, yet I will not **f** you.

FORGIVE → FORGAVE, FORGIVEN, FORGIVENESS, FORGIVING

Ge 18:26 **f** the whole place for their sake."
Ex 32:32 But now, if you will only **f** their sin
Nu 14:20 the LORD said, "I do **f**,
1Ki 8:30 your dwelling place; heed and **f**.
Ne 9:17 But you are a God ready to **f**,
Ps 79:9 and **f** our sins, for your name's sake.
Eze 16:63 when I **f** you all that you have done,
Da 9:19 O Lord, hear; O Lord, **f**;
Mt 6:12 And **f** us our debts, as we
Lk 5:24 has authority on earth to **f** sins"—
1Jn 1:9 is faithful and just will **f** us our sins
Sir 5:6 he will **f** the multitude of my sins,"
Man 1:13 **f** me, O Lord, **f** me!

FORGIVEN → FORGIVE

Lev 4:20 for them, and they shall be **f**.
Ps 32:1 are those whose transgression is **f**,
Mt 6:12 as we also have **f** our debtors.
12:31 against the Spirit will not be **f**.
Mk 2:9 to the paralytic, 'Your sins are **f**,'
Ac 2:38 so that your sins may be **f**;
Ro 4:7 are those whose iniquities are **f**,
Eph 4:32 as God in Christ has **f** you.

FORGIVENESS → FORGIVE

Mk 1:4 a baptism of repentance for the **f**
3:29 against the Holy Spirit can never have **f**,
Col 1:14 we have redemption, the **f** of sins.
Heb 9:22 the shedding of blood there is no **f**

FORGIVING → FORGIVE

Ex 34:7 **f** iniquity and transgression and sin,
Ps 86:5 For you, O Lord, are good and **f**,
Eph 4:32 **f** one another, as God in Christ has

FORGOT → FORGET

Dt 32:18 you **f** the God who gave you birth.
Jer 23:27 just as their ancestors **f** my name
Hos 2:13 and went after her lovers, and **f** me,
Bar 4:8 You **f** the everlasting God,

FORGOTTEN → FORGET

Ps 77:9 Has God **f** to be gracious?
Isa 49:14 forsaken me, my Lord has **f** me."
Heb 12:5 And you have **f** the exhortation

FORM → FORMED, FORMLESS

Ex 20:4 in the **f** of anything that is in heaven
Lk 3:22 descended upon him in bodily **f**

FORMED → FORM

Ge 2:7 the LORD God **f** man from the dust
Ps 139:13 you who **f** my inward parts;
Gal 4:19 until Christ is **f** in you,

FORMLESS* → FORM

Ge 1:2 the earth was a **f** void and darkness
Wis 11:17 created the world out of **f** matter,

FORNICATION → FORNICATOR, FORNICATORS

Mk 7:21 that evil intentions come: **f**,
1Co 6:13 meant not for **f** but for the Lord,
Gal 5:19 works of the flesh are obvious: **f**,
Rev 19:2 who corrupted the earth with her **f**,

FORNICATOR* → FORNICATION

1Co 6:18 but the **f** sins against the body itself.
Eph 5:5 that no **f** or impure person,
Sir 23:17 To a **f** all bread is sweet;

FORNICATORS → FORNICATION

1Ti 1:10 **f**, sodomites, slave traders, liars,
Rev 22:15 and sorcerers and **f** and murderers

FORSAKE → FORSAKEN

Dt 31:6 he will not fail you or **f** you."
Jos 1:5 I will not fail you or **f** you.
Jer 17:13 All who **f** you shall be put to shame;
Heb 13:5 "I will never leave you or **f** you."

FORSAKEN → FORSAKE

Ps 9:10 O LORD, have not **f** those who seek
22:1 my God, why have you **f** me?
Mt 27:46 my God, why have you **f** me?"
2Co 4:9 persecuted, but not **f**;

FORTRESS

2Sa 22:2 The LORD is my rock, my **f**, and my
Ps 71:3 for you are my rock and my **f**.

FORTUNES

Dt 30:3 LORD your God will restore your **f**
Jer 32:44 I will restore their **f**, says the LORD.

FORTY

Ge 7:4 rain on the earth for **f** days and **f**
Nu 14:34 **f** days, for every day a year,
1Ki 19:8 **f** days and **f** nights to Horeb
Jnh 3:4 And he cried out, "**F** days more,
Mt 4:2 He fasted **f** days and **f** nights,
Heb 3:17 with whom was he angry **f** years?
2Es 14:42 They sat **f** days; they wrote

FOUGHT → FIGHT

Jos 10:42 the LORD God of Israel **f** for Israel.
2Ti 4:7 I have **f** the good fight,
Rev 12:7 and his angels **f** against the dragon.

FOUND → FIND

Isa 55:6 Seek the Lord while he may be **f,**
65:1 be **f** by those who did not seek me.
Lk 15:24 he was lost and is **f!'**
Ro 10:20 **f** by those who did not seek me;
Rev 20:15 not **f** written in the book of life was

FOUNDATION → FOUNDATIONS

1Ki 6:37 **f** of the house of the Lord was laid,
Ezr 3:6 **f** of the temple of the Lord was not
Isa 28:16 See, I am laying in Zion a **f** stone,
1Co 3:11 that **f** is Jesus Christ.
Eph 2:20 built upon the **f** of the apostles and
2Ti 2:19 But God's firm **f** stands,

FOUNDATIONS → FOUNDATION

Heb 11:10 looked forward to the city that has **f,**
Rev 21:14 the wall of the city has twelve **f,**

FOUNTAIN

Ps 36:9 For with you is the **f** of life;
Pr 16:22 Wisdom is a **f** of life to one who
Jer 9:1 and my eyes a **f** of tears,
Joel 3:18 a **f** shall come forth from the house
Zec 13:1 a **f** shall be opened for the house of

FOUR

Eze 1:5 something like **f** living creatures.
10:14 Each one had **f** faces:
Rev 4:6 are **f** living creatures,

FOXES

Jdg 15:4 went and caught three hundred **f,**
Lk 9:58 Jesus said to him, "**F** have holes,

FRAGRANCE → FRAGRANT

2Co 2:14 spreads in every place the **f**

FRAGRANT → FRAGRANCE

Ex 25:6 anointing oil and for the **f** incense,
Eph 5:2 a **f** offering and sacrifice to God.

FRANKINCENSE → INCENSE

Isa 60:6 They shall bring gold and **f,**
Mt 2:11 gifts of gold, **f,** and myrrh.

FREE → FREED, FREEDOM, FREEWILL

Ex 21:2 in the seventh he shall go out a **f**
Ps 146:7 The Lord sets the prisoners **f;**
Jn 8:32 and the truth will make you **f."**
Ro 6:23 but the **f** gift of God is eternal life
1Co 9:21 not **f** from God's law but am under
Gal 3:28 there is no longer slave or **f,**
Eph 6:8 whether we are slaves or **f.**

FREED → FREE

Ac 2:24 having **f** him from death,
Rev 1:5 **f** us from our sins by his blood,

FREEDOM → FREE

2Co 3:17 the Spirit of the Lord is, there is **f.**
Gal 5:1 For **f** Christ has set us free.
1Pe 2:16 not use your **f** as a pretext for evil.

FREEWILL → FREE, WILL

Ex 35:29 as a **f** offering to the Lord.
Ps 54:6 With a **f** offering I will sacrifice to

FRIEND → FRIENDS, FRIENDSHIP

Ex 33:11 as one speaks to a **f.**
Pr 17:17 A **f** loves at all times,
18:24 but a true **f** sticks closer than one's
Mt 11:19 a **f** of tax collectors and sinners!'
Jas 2:23 and he was called the **f** of God.
4:4 a **f** of the world becomes an enemy
Sir 7:18 Do not exchange a **f** for money,

FRIENDS → FRIEND

Job 2:11 when Job's three **f** heard of all
Jn 15:13 to lay down one's life for one's **f.**
Sir 6:15 Faithful **f** are beyond price;

FRIENDSHIP → FRIEND

Ps 25:14 The **f** of the Lord is for those who
Jas 4:4 know that **f** with the world is enmity

FRINGES*

Nu 15:38 to make **f** on the corners of their
Mt 23:5 phylacteries broad and their **f** long.

FRUIT → FRUITFUL, FRUITLESS, FRUITS

Ge 3:6 she took of its **f** and ate;
Dt 28:4 Blessed shall be the **f** of your womb,
Ps 1:3 which yield their **f** in its season,
Pr 8:19 My **f** is better than gold,
Eze 47:12 will not wither nor their **f** fail,
Hos 14:2 and we will offer the **f** of our lips.
Mt 3:8 Bear **f** worthy of repentance.
Lk 6:44 for each tree is known by its own **f.**
Jn 15:2 branch that bears **f** he prunes to make it
bear more **f.**
Col 1:10 as you bear **f** in every good work
Heb 13:15 the **f** of lips that confess his name.
Rev 22:2 tree of life with its twelve kinds of **f,**

FRUITFUL → FRUIT

Ge 1:22 Be **f** and multiply and fill the waters
9:1 said to them, "Be **f** and multiply,
Ex 1:7 the Israelites were **f** and prolific;

FRUITS → FRUIT

Ex 23:16 of the first **f** of your labor,
Pr 3:9 with the first **f** of all your produce;
Mt 7:16 You will know them by their **f.**
Ro 8:23 who have the first **f** of the Spirit,
1Co 15:23 in his own order: Christ the first **f,**
Rev 14:4 as first **f** for God and the Lamb,

FULFILL → FULFILLED, FULFILLING

Ps 20:5 May the Lord **f** all your petitions.
Ecc 5:4 **F** what you vow.
Mt 5:17 I have come not to abolish but to **f.**
Gal 6:2 way you will **f** the law of Christ.
Jas 2:8 really **f** the royal law according to

FULFILLED → FULFILL

Mk 1:15 "The time is **f,** and the kingdom
Lk 24:44 prophets, and the psalms must be **f."**
Ro 8:4 requirement of the law might be **f**

FULFILLING → FULFILL

Ro 9:31 did not succeed in **f** that law.
13:10 love is the **f** of the law.

FULL → FILL

Isa 6:3 the whole earth is **f** of his glory."
Eze 10:12 were **f** of eyes all around.
37:1 it was **f** of bones.
Mt 6:22 your whole body will be **f** of light;
Jn 1:14 **f** of grace and truth.
Rev 4:6 **f** of eyes in front and behind:
Sir 42:16 work of the Lord is **f** of his glory.

FULLNESS → FILL

Jn 1:16 From his **f** we have all received,
1Co 10:26 "the earth and its **f** are the Lord's."
Gal 4:4 But when the **f** of time had come,
Eph 3:19 may be filled with all the **f** of God.
Col 1:19 in him all the **f** of God was pleased

FURNACE

Isa 48:10 have tested you in the **f** of adversity.
Da 3:6 be thrown into a **f** of blazing fire."
Mt 13:42 will throw them into the **f** of fire,
Aza 1:26 of the Lord came down into the **f**

FURNITURE

Ex 25:9 the tabernacle and of all its **f,**

FURY

Ps 2:5 and terrify them in his **f,**
La 2:4 he has poured out his **f** like fire.
Ro 2:8 there will be wrath and **f.**
Rev 16:19 the wine-cup of the **f** of his wrath.

FUTILE

Ro 1:21 but they became **f** in their thinking,
1Co 3:20 thoughts of the wise, that they are **f.**

FUTURE

Pr 24:20 for the evil have no **f;**
Jer 31:17 hope for your **f,** says the Lord:
1Co 3:22 life or death or the present or the **f**—
1Ti 6:19 of a good foundation for the **f,**

G

GABRIEL*

Angel who interpreted Daniel's visions (Da 8:16-26; 9:20-27); announced births of John (Lk 1:11-20), Jesus (Lk 1:26-38).

GAD

1. Son of Jacob by Zilpah (Ge 30:9-11; 35:26; 1Ch 2:2). Tribe of blessed (Ge 49:19; Dt 33:20-21), numbered (Nu 1:25; 26:18), allotted land east of the Jordan (Nu 32; 34:14; Jos 18:7; 22), west (Eze 48:27-28), 12,000 from (Rev 7:5).

2. Prophet; seer of David (1Sa 22:5; 2Sa 24:11-19; 1Ch 29:29).

GAIN

Ecc 1:3 What do people **g** from all the toil
Lk 9:25 if they **g** the whole world,
Php 1:21 living is Christ and dying is **g.**
3:8 in order that I may **g** Christ
1Ti 6:5 that godliness is a means of **g.**

GALILEAN → GALILEE

Mt 26:69 "You also were with Jesus the **G."**

GALILEANS → GALILEE

Ac 2:7 not all these who are speaking **G?**

GALILEE → GALILEAN, GALILEANS

Isa 9:1 beyond the Jordan, **G** of the nations.
Mt 4:15 across the Jordan, **G** of the Gentiles
Jn 7:41 the Messiah does not come from **G,**

GAMALIEL

Pharisee (Ac 5:34-39), teacher of Paul (Ac 22:5).

GARDEN

Ge 2:8 the Lord God planted a **g** in Eden,
Eze 28:13 You were in Eden, the **g** of God;
Jn 19:41 and in the **g** there was a new tomb

GARMENT → GARMENTS

Ge 39:12 she caught hold of his **g,**
Dt 22:5 nor shall a man put on a woman's **g;**
Ps 102:26 they will all wear out like a **g.**
Lk 5:36 a new **g** and sews it on an old **g;**

GARMENTS → GARMENT

Ge 3:21 the Lord God made **g** of skins for
Isa 61:10 clothed me with the **g** of salvation,

GATE → GATES

Mt 7:13 "Enter through the narrow **g;**
Jn 10:7 I am the **g** for the sheep.
Heb 13:12 Jesus also suffered outside the city **g**

GATES → GATE

Ge 24:60 offspring gain possession of the **g**
Dt 6:9 of your house and on your **g.**
Ps 100:4 Enter his **g** with thanksgiving,
Mt 16:18 and the **g** of Hades will not prevail
Rev 21:21 And the twelve **g** are twelve pearls,

GATH

1Sa 17:4 Goliath, of **G,** whose height was six
2Sa 1:20 Tell it not in **G,** proclaim it not in

GATHER → GATHERED, INGATHERING

Ex 16:4 and **g** enough for that day.
Ru 2:7 and **g** among the sheaves behind
Isa 11:12 and **g** the dispersed of Judah from
Mt 12:30 does not **g** with me scatters.
Lk 13:34 to **g** your children together as

GATHERED → GATHER

Mt 18:20 two or three are **g** in my name,

2Th 2:1 Christ and our being **g** together
Rev 14:19 and **g** the vintage of the earth,

GAVE → GIVE

Ge 28:4 land that God **g** to Abraham."
Ex 31:18 he **g** him the two tablets of the
1Ki 4:29 God **g** Solomon very great wisdom,
Ne 9:15 you **g** them bread from heaven,
Ecc 12:7 the breath returns to God who **g** it.
Mt 25:35 for I was hungry and you **g** me food,
Jn 1:12 **g** power to become children of God,
3:16 loved the world that he **g** his only Son,
Ro 8:32 but **g** him up for all of us,
Eph 4:11 The gifts he **g** were that some would
1Ti 2:6 who **g** himself a ransom

GEDALIAH

Governor of Judah (2Ki 25:22-26; Jer 39-41).

GEHAZI*

Servant of Elisha (2Ki 4:12-5:27; 8:4-5).

GENEALOGIES → GENEALOGY

1Ch 9:1 So all Israel was enrolled by **g;**
Ne 7:64 among those enrolled in the **g,**

GENEALOGY → GENEALOGIES

Mt 1:1 of the **g** of Jesus the Messiah,

GENERATION → GENERATIONS

Ge 15:16 come back here in the fourth **g;**
Ex 20:6 steadfast love to the thousandth **g**
34:7 to the third and the fourth **g."**
Da 4:34 his kingdom endures from **g** to **g.**
Mt 12:39 evil and adulterous **g** asks for a sign,
Lk 21:32 this **g** will not pass away

GENERATIONS → GENERATION

Isa 51:8 and my salvation to all **g.**
Lk 1:48 now on all **g** will call me blessed;

GENEROSITY → GENEROUS

Ro 12:8 the giver, in **g;**
Gal 5:22 joy, peace, patience, kindness, **g,**

GENEROUS → GENEROSITY

Ro 10:12 and is **g** to all who call on him.
Jas 1:17 Every **g** act of giving,

GENTILE → GENTILES

Mt 18:17 as a **G** and a tax collector.
Gal 2:14 live like a **G** and not like a Jew,
1Mc 1:14 according to **G** custom,

GENTILES → GENTILE

Lk 21:24 until the times of the **G** are fulfilled.
Ac 15:19 those **G** who are turning to God,
Ro 3:29 Is he not the God of **G** also?
Gal 3:8 God would justify the **G** by faith,
Eph 4:17 must no longer live as the **G** live,
Tob 1:11 from eating the food of the **G.**
1Mc 1:11 and make a covenant with the **G**
2Es 4:23 Israel has been given over to the **G**

GENTLE → GENTLENESS

Pr 15:4 A **g** tongue is a tree of life,
Mt 11:29 for I am **g** and humble in heart,
1Pe 3:4 with the lasting beauty of a **g**

GENTLENESS → GENTLE

Gal 5:23 **g,** and self-control. There is no law
Php 4:5 Let your **g** be known to everyone.
1Ti 6:11 godliness, faith, love, endurance, **g.**

GETHSEMANE

Mk 14:32 They went to a place called **G;**

GHOST

Mt 14:26 were terrified, saying, "It is a **g!"**
Lk 24:39 for a **g** does not have flesh and

GIANT → GIANTS

Sir 47:4 In his youth did he not kill a **g,**

GIANTS → GIANT

1Ch 20:4 was one of the descendants of the **g;**
Sir 16:7 He did not forgive the ancient **g**

GIBEON

Jos 10:12 "Sun, stand still at **G,** and Moon, in
1Ki 3:5 **G** the Lord appeared to Solomon

GIDEON → =JERUBBAAL

Judge, also called Jerubbaal; freed Israel from Midianites (Jdg 6-8; Heb 11:32). The fleece (Jdg 8:36-40).

GIFT → GIFTS

Nu 18:7 I give your priesthood as a **g;**
Ecc 5:19 this is the **g** of God.
Mt 5:23 So when you are offering your **g** at
Jn 4:10 "If you knew the **g** of God,
Ac 2:38 will receive the **g** of the Holy Spirit.
Ro 6:23 but the free **g** of God is eternal life
1Co 7:7 each has a particular **g** from God,
Jas 1:17 with every perfect **g,** is from above,
Rev 21:6 the thirsty I will give water as a **g**

GIFTS → GIFT

Dt 12:6 and your donations, your votive **g,**
Mt 2:11 offered him **g** of gold, frankincense,
Lk 11:13 how to give good **g** to your children,
Ro 11:29 for the **g** and the calling of God are
1Co 12:1 Now concerning spiritual **g,**
Eph 4:8 he gave **g** to his people."
Sir 32:13 who fills you with his good **g.**

GILGAL

Jos 5:9 so that place is called **G** to this day.
1Sa 7:16 a circuit year by year to Bethel, **G,**

GIRL

Ex 1:16 but if it is a **g,** she shall live."
Mk 5:41 which means, "Little **g,** get up!"

GIVE → GAVE, GIVEN, GIVER, GIVES

Ge 9:3 the green plants, I **g** you everything.
12:7 your offspring I will **g** this land."
1Ki 3:5 said, "Ask what I should **g** you."
Pr 25:21 If your enemies are hungry, **g** them
30:15 leech has two daughters; **"G, g,"**
Eze 36:26 A new heart I will **g** you,
Mt 6:11 **G** us this day our daily bread.
7:6 "Do not **g** what is holy to dogs;
Mk 10:45 to **g** his life a ransom for many."
Jn 10:28 I **g** them eternal life, and they will
Ac 20:35 more blessed to **g** than to receive.'"
Tob 12:9 who **g** alms will enjoy a full life,
Sir 7:10 do not neglect to **g** alms.

GIVEN → GIVE

Mt 7:7 "Ask, and it will be **g** you;
Mk 4:25 to those who have, more will be **g;**
Lk 22:19 "This is my body, which is **g** for
Ro 5:5 the Holy Spirit that has been **g** to us.
Sir 35:12 Give to the Most High as he has **g**

GIVER → GIVE

Ro 12:8 the **g,** in generosity;
2Co 9:7 for God loves a cheerful **g.**

GIVES → GIVE

2Co 3:6 the letter kills, but the Spirit **g** life.
Jas 4:6 But he **g** all the more grace;

GLAD → GLADNESS

Ps 16:9 Therefore my heart is **g,** and my
90:15 Make us **g** as many days as you
Pr 10:1 A wise child makes a **g** father,
Mt 5:12 and be **g,** for your reward is great in
Ac 2:26 heart was **g,** and my tongue rejoiced

GLADNESS → GLAD

Ps 100:2 Worship the Lord with **g;**
Pr 10:28 The hope of the righteous ends in **g,**
Isa 16:10 Joy and **g** are taken away from the
Jer 31:13 and give them **g** for sorrow.
Zep 3:17 he will rejoice over you with **g,**
Heb 1:9 has anointed you with the oil of **g**

GLASS

Rev 4:6 there is something like a sea of **g,**
21:18 the city is pure gold, clear as **g.**

GLEAN

Dt 24:21 do not **g** what is left;
Ru 2:2 Let me go to the field and **g** among

GLOOM

Isa 9:1 there will be no **g** for those who
Joel 2:2 a day of darkness and **g,**
Heb 12:18 and darkness, and **g,** and a tempest,

GLORIFIED → GLORY

Lev 10:3 before all the people I will be **g.'"**
Jn 13:31 "Now the Son of Man has been **g,**
17:4 **g** you on earth by finishing the work
Ac 3:13 has **g** his servant Jesus,
Ro 8:30 those whom he justified he also **g.**

GLORIFY → GLORY

Ps 86:12 and I will **g** your name forever.
Jn 17:1 **g** your Son so that the Son may **g** you,
1Co 6:20 therefore **g** God in your body.
2Co 9:13 you **g** God by your obedience to
Rev 15:4 who will not fear and **g** your name?
Sir 43:30 **G** the Lord and exalt him as much

GLORIOUS → GLORY

Jas 2:1 in our **g** Lord Jesus Christ?
Jdt 16:13 O Lord, you are great and **g,**
Aza 1:3 and **g** is your name forever!

GLORY → GLORIFIED, GLORIFY, GLORIOUS

Ex 24:16 The **g** of the Lord settled on Mount
33:18 Moses said, "Show me your **g,**
40:34 **g** of the Lord filled the tabernacle.
1Sa 4:21 "The **g** has departed from Israel,"
1Ki 8:11 **g** of the Lord filled the house of the
Ps 8:5 crowned them with **g** and honor.
19:1 heavens are telling the **g** of God;
24:7 that the King of **g** may come in.
Isa 6:3 the whole earth is full of his **g."**
40:5 the **g** of the Lord shall be revealed,
Eze 11:23 **g** of the Lord ascended from the
44:4 **g** of the Lord filled the temple of
Hos 4:7 they changed their **g** into shame.
Mt 25:31 the Son of Man comes in his **g,**
Lk 2:14 **"G** to God in the highest heaven,
Jn 1:14 and we have seen his **g,**
12:41 Isaiah said this because he saw his **g**
Ro 3:23 sinned and fall short of the **g** of God;
8:18 not worth comparing with the **g**
9:4 the **g,** the covenants, the giving of
1Co 10:31 do everything for the **g** of God.
2Co 4:17 for an eternal weight of **g** beyond
Heb 1:3 reflection of God's **g** and the exact
2Pe 1:17 conveyed to him by the Majestic **G,**
Rev 4:11 to receive **g** and honor and power,
21:23 for the **g** of God is its light,
Sir 1:11 The fear of the Lord is **g** and
Bar 5:4 "Righteous Peace, Godly **G."**
1Mc 1:40 dishonor now grew as great as her **g**

GLUTTON

Pr 23:21 and the **g** will come to poverty,
Mt 11:19 they say, 'Look, a **g** and a drunkard,

GNASHING

Mt 8:12 will be weeping and **g** of teeth."
25:30 will be weeping and **g** of teeth.'

GNAT*

Mt 23:24 strain out a **g** but swallow a camel!

GO

Ex 5:1 the God of Israel, 'Let my people **g,**
Jos 1:9 God is with you wherever you **g."**
Ru 1:16 Where you **g,** I will **g;**
Mt 28:19 **G** therefore and make disciples of
Jn 14:3 if I **g** and prepare a place for you,

GOAT → GOATS

Lev 16:9 Aaron shall present the **g** on which

Da 8:21 The male **g** is the king of Greece,

GOATS → GOAT

Ps 50:13 or drink the blood of **g**?
Mt 25:32 separates the sheep from the **g**,
Heb 10:4 for the blood of bulls and **g**

***GOD → GOD'S, GODDESS, GODLESS, GODLINESS, GODLY, GODS**

Ge 1:1 In the beginning when **G** created
1:27 So **G** created humankind in his image,
3:5 be like **G**, knowing good and evil."
6:2 sons of **G** saw that they were fair;
17:1 and said to him, "I am **G** Almighty;
Ex 3:4 **G** called to him out of the bush,
15:2 this is my **G**, and I will praise him,
20:5 I the LORD your **G** am a jealous **G**,
34:6 a **G** merciful and gracious, slow to
Nu 23:19 **G** is not a human being,
Dt 4:7 a **g** so near to it as the LORD our **G**
6:5 love the LORD your **G** with all your
Jos 22:34 between us that the LORD is **G**."
1Sa 2:2 there is no Rock like our **G**.
1Ki 8:27 will **G** indeed dwell on the earth?
18:24 the **g** who answers by fire is indeed **G**.
2Ki 17:7 sinned against the LORD their **G**,
2Ch 2:5 for our **G** is greater than other gods.
Ezr 6:16 the dedication of this house of **G**
Ne 8:18 read from the book of the law of **G**.
Ps 19:1 heavens are telling the glory of **G**;
Ps 22:1 My **G**, my **G**, why have you forsaken
46:1 **G** is our refuge and strength,
46:10 "Be still, and know that I am **G**!
47:7 For **G** is the king of all the earth;
53:1 Fools say in their hearts, "There is no **G**."
68:20 Our **G** is a **G** of salvation,
90:2 everlasting to everlasting you are **G**.
136:2 O give thanks to the **G** of gods,
145:1 I will extol you, my **G** and King,
Ecc 12:13 Fear **G**, and keep his
Isa 9:6 Wonderful Counselor, Mighty **G**,
12:2 Surely **G** is my salvation;
40:28 The LORD is the everlasting **G**,
44:6 besides me there is no **g**.
Jer 10:10 But the LORD is the true **G**;
Eze 28:2 proud and you have said, "I am a **g**;
Hos 12:6 But as for you, return to your **G**,
Am 4:12 prepare to meet your **G**,
Mic 6:8 and to walk humbly with your **G**?
Hab 3:18 I will exult in the **G** of my salvation.
Mal 2:10 Has not one **G** created us?
Mt 1:23 which means, "**G** is with us."
4:4 that comes from the mouth of **G**.'"
4:7 not put the Lord your **G** to the test.'
4:10 written, 'Worship the Lord your **G**,
6:24 You cannot serve **G** and wealth.
27:40 If you are the Son of **G**,
Mk 1:1 news of Jesus Christ, the Son of **G**.
2:7 Who can forgive sins but **G** alone?"
10:9 what **G** has joined together, let no
12:30 the Lord your **G** with all your heart,
Lk 2:14 "Glory to **G** in the highest heaven,
18:19 No one is good but **G** alone.
22:70 "Are you, then, the Son of **G**?"
Jn 1:1 was with **G**, and the Word was **G**.
1:18 It is **G** the only Son,
3:16 **G** so loved the world that he gave his only Son,
5:18 calling **G** his own Father, thereby making himself equal to **G**.
20:28 "My Lord and my **G**!"
Ac 5:29 "We must obey **G** rather than any
Ro 4:3 "Abraham believed **G**, and it was
6:23 gift of **G** is eternal life in Christ
8:31 If **G** is for us, who is against us?
1Co 10:31 do everything for the glory of **G**.
2Co 4:4 Christ, who is the image of **G**.
6:16 we are the temple of the living **G**;
Eph 4:6 one **G** and Father of all,
Php 2:6 though he was in the form of **G**,
Col 1:19 fullness of **G** was pleased to dwell,
Tit 2:13 of our great **G** and Savior, Jesus
Heb 4:12 the word of **G** is living and active,
10:31 to fall into the hands of the living **G**.
12:29 indeed our **G** is a consuming fire.
Jas 2:23 "Abraham believed **G**,
4:8 Draw near to **G**, and he will draw
1Jn 1:5 **G** is light and in him there is no
4:16 **G** is love, and those who abide
5:2 love **G** and obey his commandments
Jude 1:21 keep yourselves in the love of **G**;
Rev 4:8 "Holy, holy, holy, the Lord **G**
19:13 his name is called The Word of **G**.
22:5 for the Lord **G** will be their light,
Tob 4:19 At all times bless the Lord **G**,
Sir 32:14 seeks **G** will accept his discipline,
Bar 4:8 You forgot the everlasting **G**,
Bel 1:4 But Daniel worshiped his own **G**.
Man 1:1 Lord Almighty, **G** of our ancestors,
2Es 16:67 Indeed, **G** is the judge; fear him!

†GOD → †LORD

Ge 15:2 But Abram said, "O Lord **G**,
2Sa 7:18 "Who am I, O Lord **G**,
Isa 25:8 Lord **G** will wipe away the tears
61:1 The spirit of the Lord **G** is upon me,

GOD'S → *GOD

Mt 27:43 for he said, 'I am **G** Son.'"
27:54 "Truly this man was **G** Son!"
Ro 2:4 that **G** kindness is meant to lead you
1Co 3:9 you are **G** field, **G** building.
3:16 you are **G** temple and that **G** Spirit
Heb 1:3 reflection of **G** glory and the exact imprint of **G**
1Jn 3:2 Beloved, we are **G** children now;

GODDESS → *GOD

1Ki 11:5 Astarte the **g** of the Sidonians,
Ac 19:27 the temple of the great **g** Artemis

GODLESS → *GOD

Job 8:13 the hope of the **g** shall perish.
Ps 119:122 do not let the **g** oppress me.
1Ti 1:9 for the **g** and sinful,
2Pe 3:7 judgment and destruction of the **g**.

GODLINESS → *GOD

1Ti 4:7 Train yourself in **g**,
6:5 imagining that **g** is a means of gain.
2Ti 3:5 outward form of **g** but denying its
Tit 1:1 truth that is in accordance with **g**,
2Pe 1:3 everything needed for life and **g**,
Wis 10:12 **g** is more powerful than anything

GODLY → *GOD

Mal 2:15 the one God desire? **G** offspring.
2Co 7:10 For **g** grief produces a repentance
2Ti 3:12 to live a **g** life in Christ Jesus will
Tit 2:12 are self-controlled, upright, and **g**,
2Pe 2:9 how to rescue the **g** from trial,
Sir 37:12 But associate with a **g** person
Bar 5:4 "Righteous Peace, **G** Glory."

GODS → *GOD

Ge 31:19 stole her father's household **g**.
Ex 12:12 **g** of Egypt I will execute judgments:
20:3 you shall have no other **g** before me.
Jdg 2:17 they lusted after other **g** and bowed
2Ki 17:7 They had worshiped other **g**
Jn 10:34 in your law, 'I said, you are **g**'?
1Co 8:5 so-called **g** in heaven or on earth—

GOG

Eze 38:18 **G** comes against the land of Israel,
Rev 20:8 **G** and Magog, in order to gather

GOLD

Ex 20:23 make for yourselves gods of **g**.
25:17 shall make a mercy seat of pure **g**;
25:31 shall make a lampstand of pure **g**.
28:6 They shall make the ephod of **g**, of
32:31 have made for themselves gods of **g**.
1Ki 6:21 the inside of the house with pure **g**,
Job 28:15 It cannot be gotten for **g**,
Ps 119:127 love your commandments more than **g**,
Isa 60:17 Instead of bronze I will bring **g**,
Ac 3:6 Peter said, "I have no silver or **g**,
1Pe 1:7 being more precious than **g** that,
Rev 21:21 and the street of the city is pure **g**,
Tob 12:8 better to give alms than to lay up **g**.
Sir 31:5 who loves **g** will not be justified;

GOLGOTHA

Mt 27:33 **G** (which means Place of a Skull),

GOLIATH

Giant killed by David (1Sa 17; 21:9; Sir 47:4).

GOMORRAH

Ge 19:24 LORD rained on Sodom and **G** sulfur
Isa 1:9 like Sodom, and become like **G**.
Jude 1:7 Sodom and **G** and the surrounding

GOOD → BEST, BETTER, GOODNESS

Ge 1:31 and indeed, it was very **g**.
2:9 tree of the knowledge of **g** and evil.
3:22 become like one of us, knowing **g**
50:20 to me, God intended it for **g**,
Dt 6:18 Do what is right and **g** in the sight
2Ch 7:3 "For he is **g**, for his steadfast love
Ps 14:1 there is no one who does **g**.
34:8 O taste and see that the LORD is **g**;
84:11 No **g** thing does the LORD withhold
Pr 18:22 He who finds a wife finds a **g** thing,
Ecc 12:14 every secret thing, whether **g** or evil.
Isa 52:7 who brings **g** news, who announces
Mt 5:45 his sun rise on the evil and on the **g**,
13:8 Other seeds fell on **g** soil and
25:21 'Well done, **g** and trustworthy slave;
Mk 10:18 No one is **g** but God alone.
Lk 2:10 I am bringing you **g** news of great
6:43 "No **g** tree bears bad fruit,
Jn 10:11 "I am the **g** shepherd.
Ro 7:16 I agree that the law is **g**.
12:2 is **g** and acceptable and perfect.
12:21 but overcome evil with **g**.
Eph 2:10 created in Christ Jesus for **g** works,
1Ti 4:4 For everything created by God is **g**,
Heb 10:1 the law has only a shadow of the **g**
1Pe 3:17 For it is better to suffer for doing **g**,
Tob 4:9 laying up a **g** treasure for yourself
Aza 1:67 to the Lord, for he is **g**,

GOODNESS → GOOD

Ex 33:19 will make all my **g** pass before you,
Ps 23:6 Surely **g** and mercy shall follow me
Heb 6:5 tasted the **g** of the word of God and
2Pe 1:5 support your faith with **g**, and **g**

GOSHEN

Ge 45:10 You shall settle in the land of **G**,
Ex 8:22 day I will set apart the land of **G**,

GOSPEL

Mk 8:35 and for the sake of the **g**,
Ro 1:16 For I am not ashamed of the **g**;
1Co 9:16 woe to me if I do not proclaim the **g**
2Co 4:3 And even if our **g** is veiled,
Gal 1:6 and are turning to a different **g**—
Php 1:27 life in a manner worthy of the **g**
Rev 14:6 an eternal **g** to proclaim to those

GOSSIP

Pr 11:13 A **g** goes about telling secrets,
2Co 12:20 selfishness, slander, **g**, conceit,

GRACE → GRACIOUS

Jn 1:14 father's only son, full of **g** and truth.
1:16 we have all received, **g** upon **g**.
Ac 15:11 that we will be saved through the **g**
Ro 3:24 are now justified by his **g** as a gift,
6:1 in sin in order that **g** may abound?
6:14 you are not under law but under **g**.
11:6 otherwise **g** would no longer be **g**.
2Co 12:9 "My **g** is sufficient for you,
Gal 5:4 you have fallen away from **g**.
Eph 2:5 by **g** you have been saved—
2Th 2:16 through **g** gave us eternal comfort
Tit 2:11 For the **g** of God has appeared,
Heb 4:16 approach the throne of **g** with

Jas 4:6 But he gives all the more **g;**
1Pe 5:10 the God of all **g,**
Jude 1:4 who pervert the **g** of our God into
Rev 22:21 The **g** of the Lord Jesus be with all
Wis 3:9 **g** and mercy are upon his holy ones,
2Es 2:32 and my **g** will not fail."

GRACIOUS → GRACE

Ex 34:6 the LORD, a God merciful and **g,**
Nu 6:25 to shine upon you, and be **g** to you;
Ezr 8:22 of our God is **g** to all who seek him,
Ne 9:31 for you are a **g** and merciful God.
Ps 77:9 Has God forgotten to be **g?**
116:5 **G** is the LORD, and righteous;
Col 4:6 Let your speech always be **g,**

GRAFTED

Ro 11:17 were **g** in their place to share the

GRAIN

Lev 2:1 presents a **g** offering to the LORD,
Dt 25:4 an ox while it is treading out the **g.**
Mk 2:23 disciples began to pluck heads of **g.**
1Ti 5:18 an ox while it is treading out the **g,"**

GRAPES

Nu 13:23 a branch with a single cluster of **g,**
Isa 5:2 to yield **g,** but it yielded wild **g.**
Jer 31:29 "The parents have eaten sour **g,**
Mt 7:16 Are **g** gathered from thorns, or figs
Rev 14:18 vine of the earth, for its **g** are ripe."

GRASS

Isa 40:6 All people are **g,** their constancy is
Mt 6:30 if God so clothes the **g** of the field,
1Pe 1:24 "All flesh is like **g** and all its glory

GRATIFY*

Ro 13:14 for the flesh, to **g** its desires.
Gal 5:16 do not **g** the desires of the flesh.

GRAVE → GRAVES

Ps 49:14 straight to the **g** they descend,
Isa 53:9 They made his **g** with the wicked

GRAVES → GRAVE

Eze 37:12 and bring you up from your **g,**
Lk 11:44 For you are like unmarked **g,**

GRAY

Pr 16:31 **G** hair is a crown of glory;
Sir 6:18 **g** hair you will still find wisdom.

GREAT → GREATER, GREATEST

Ge 1:16 God made the two **g** lights—
12:2 I will make of you a **g** nation,
Ex 32:11 **g** power and with a mighty hand?
Dt 10:17 the **g** God, mighty and awesome,
Ne 8:6 Ezra blessed the LORD, the **g** God,
Ps 95:3 the LORD is a **g** God, and a **g** King
Jer 10:6 you are **g,** and your name is **g**
La 3:23 **g** is your faithfulness.
Da 9:4 "Ah, Lord, **g** and awesome God,
Joel 2:11 Truly the day of the LORD is **g;**
Mt 4:16 sat in darkness have seen a **g** light,
13:46 on finding one pearl of **g** value,
20:26 whoever wishes to be **g** among you
Eph 2:4 the **g** love with which he loved us
Tit 2:13 of the glory of our **g** God and Savior
Heb 2:3 if we neglect so **g** a salvation?
12:1 by so **g** a cloud of witnesses,
13:20 the **g** shepherd of the sheep,
Rev 12:9 The **g** dragon was thrown down,
14:8 "Fallen, fallen is Babylon the **g!**
20:11 I saw a **g** white throne and the one
Jdt 16:13 O Lord, you are **g** and glorious,
Sir 17:29 How **g** is the mercy of the Lord,

GREATER → GREAT

Ex 18:11 that the LORD is **g** than all gods,
Mt 12:6 something **g** than the temple is here.
Mk 12:31 no other commandment **g** than these
Jn 14:12 in fact, will do **g** works than these,
15:13 No one has **g** love than this,
1Jn 4:4 for the one who is in you is **g** than

GREATEST → GREAT

Mt 22:38 the **g** and first commandment.
Lk 9:48 the least among all of you is the **g."**
1Co 13:13 and the **g** of these is love.

GREECE → GREEK, GREEKS

Da 8:21 The male goat is the king of **G,**
1Mc 1:1 had previously become king of **G.)**

GREED → GREEDY

Mt 23:25 but inside they are full of **g**
Lk 12:15 on your guard against all kinds of **g;**
Col 3:5 evil desire, and **g** (which is idolatry)

GREEDY → GREED

Pr 28:25 The **g** person stirs up strife,
1Co 6:10 the **g,** drunkards, revilers, robbers—
Tit 1:7 to wine or violent or **g** for gain;

GREEK → GREECE

Jn 19:20 in Hebrew, in Latin, and in **G.**
Ro 1:16 to the Jew first and also to the **G.**
Gal 3:28 There is no longer Jew or **G,**

GREEKS → GREECE

1Co 1:22 demand signs and **G** desire wisdom,

GREEN

Ge 1:30 I have given every **g** plant for food."
Ps 23:2 makes me lie down in **g** pastures;

GREW → GROW

1Sa 2:21 boy Samuel **g** up in the presence of
Isa 53:2 he **g** up before him like a young
Lk 1:80 child **g** and became strong in spirit,
2:40 child **g** and became strong, filled

GRIEF → GRIEVE, GRIEVED

La 3:32 causes **g,** he will have compassion
2Co 7:9 your **g** led to repentance;

GRIEVE → GRIEF

Eph 4:30 do not **g** the Holy Spirit of God,
1Th 4:13 not **g** as others do who have no hope

GRIEVED → GRIEF

Isa 63:10 they rebelled and **g** his holy spirit;
Mt 26:38 "I am deeply **g,** even to death;

GRINDING

Lk 17:35 will be two women **g** meal together;

GROAN → GROANING

Ro 8:23 **g** inwardly while we wait for
2Co 5:2 For in this tent we **g,** longing to be
2Es 16:39 and the world will **g,**

GROANING → GROAN

Ex 2:24 heard their **g,** and God remembered
Jdg 2:18 would be moved to pity by their **g**
Ps 22:1 from the words of my **g?**

GROUND

Ge 2:7 formed man from the dust of the **g,**
3:17 cursed is the **g** because of you;
Ex 3:5 which you are standing is holy **g."**
Isa 53:2 and like a root out of dry **g;**
Mt 13:5 Other seeds fell on rocky **g,**
Sir 33:10 All human beings come from the **g,**

GROW → GREW, GROWTH

Isa 11:1 and a branch shall **g** out of his roots.
Eze 47:12 will **g** all kinds of trees for food.
Col 1:10 as you **g** in the knowledge of God.
2Pe 3:18 But **g** in the grace and knowledge of

GROWTH → GROW

1Co 3:7 but only God who gives the **g.**
Col 2:19 grows with a **g** that is from God.

GUARANTEE → GUARANTEED

2Co 5:5 who has given us the Spirit as a **g.**
Heb 7:22 Jesus has also become the **g** of a

GUARANTEED* → GUARANTEE

Ro 4:16 promise may rest on grace and be **g**
Heb 6:17 he **g** it by an oath,

GUARD → GUARDIAN, GUARDS

Pr 2:11 and understanding will **g** you.
2Th 3:3 and **g** you from the evil one.
2Ti 1:12 to **g** until that day what I have

GUARDIAN → GUARD

1Pe 2:25 to the shepherd and **g** of your souls.
Sir 51:12 *Give thanks to the g of Israel,*

GUARDS → GUARD

Ps 127:1 Unless the LORD **g** the city,
Mt 28:4 the **g** shook and became like dead

GUIDANCE → GUIDE

Pr 11:14 Where there is no **g,** a nation falls,

GUIDE → GUIDANCE

Ps 48:14 He will be our **g** forever.
Isa 58:11 The LORD will **g** you continually,
Lk 6:39 Can a blind person **g** a blind person?
Jn 16:13 he will **g** you into all the truth;

GUILT → GUILTY

Lev 5:15 as your **g** offering to the LORD,
Ps 32:5 and you forgave the **g** of my sin.
Hos 14:2 say to him, "Take away all **g;**
Zec 3:9 I will remove the **g** of this land

GUILTY → GUILT

Ex 23:7 for I will not acquit the **g.**
Nu 14:18 but by no means clearing the **g,**
Mk 3:29 but is **g** of an eternal sin"—
Sus 1:53 the innocent and acquitting the **g,**

H

HABAKKUK

Prophet to Judah (Hab 1:1; 3:1; Bel 1:33-39).

HADASSAH → SEE ESTHER

HADES

Mt 16:18 and the gates of **H** will not prevail
Ac 2:27 not abandon my soul to **H,**
Rev 1:18 I have the keys of Death and of **H.**
20:14 **H** were thrown into the lake of fire.
Sir 21:10 but at its end is the pit of **H.**

HAGAR

Servant of Sarah, wife of Abraham, mother of Ishmael (Ge 16:1-6; 25:12). Driven away by Sarah while pregnant (Ge 16:5-16); after birth of Isaac (Ge 21:9-21; Gal 4:21-31).

HAGGAI*

Post-exilic prophet who encouraged rebuilding of the temple (Ezr 5:1; 6:14; Hag 1-2; 1Es 6:1; 7:3; 2Es 1:40).

HAIL → HAILSTONES

Ex 9:19 will die when the **h** comes down
Rev 8:7 came **h** and fire, mixed with blood,

HAILSTONES → HAIL

Jos 10:11 of the **h** than the Israelites killed
Rev 16:21 and huge **h,** each weighing about

HAIR → HAIRS

Jdg 16:22 **h** of his head began to grow again
Lk 7:44 her tears and dried them with her **h.**
1Co 11:6 for a woman to have her **h** cut off
1Ti 2:9 not with their **h** braided, or with

HAIRS → HAIR

Ps 40:12 more than the **h** of my head,
Mt 10:30 the **h** of your head are all counted.

HALF

Est 5:3 even to the **h** of my kingdom."
Mk 6:23 give you, even **h** of my kingdom."
Lk 19:8 **h** of my possessions, Lord, I will

HALLELUJAH

Rev 19:1 multitude in heaven, saying, **"H!**
Tob 13:17 and all her houses will cry, **'H!**

HALLOWED

Ge 2:3 blessed the seventh day and **h** it,
Mt 6:9 Father in heaven, **h** be your name.

HAM

Son of Noah (Ge 5:32; 1Ch 1:4), father of Canaan (Ge 9:18; 10:6-20; 1Ch 1:8-16). Saw Noah's nakedness (Ge 9:20-27).

HAMAN

Agagite nobleman honored by Xerxes (Est 3:1-2). Plotted to exterminate the Jews because of Mordecai (Est 3:3-15). Forced to honor Mordecai (Est 5-6). Plot exposed by Esther (Est 5:1-8; 7:1-8). Hanged (Est 7:9-10). See also Additions to Esther.

HANANIAH → =SHADRACH

1. False prophet; adversary of Jeremiah (Jer 28).
2. Original name of Shadrach (Da 1:6-19; 2:17).

HAND → EMPTY-HANDED, HANDED, HANDS

Ex 3:19 unless compelled by a mighty **h.**
15:6 Your right **h,** O Lord, glorious in
Dt 19:21 tooth for tooth, **h** for **h,** foot for foot
1Ki 18:44 cloud no bigger than a person's **h** is
Ps 16:8 he is at my right **h,** I shall not be
98:1 right **h** and his holy arm have gotten
110:1 says to my lord, "Sit at my right **h**
Pr 3:16 Long life is in her right **h;**
Isa 5:25 and his **h** is stretched out still.
Da 5:5 the fingers of a human **h** appeared
Hab 2:16 The cup in the Lord's right **h** will
Mt 3:12 His winnowing fork is in his **h,**
Mk 9:43 If your **h** causes you to stumble, cut
Lk 20:42 said to my Lord, "Sit at my right **h,**
Jn 10:28 will snatch them out of my **h.**
Ro 8:34 raised, who is at the right **h** of God,
1Co 12:15 would say, "Because I am not a **h,**
Heb 10:12 "he sat down at the right **h** of God,"
Rev 1:16 In his right **h** he held seven stars,
5:1 saw in the right **h** of the one seated
Jdt 9:10 by the **h** of a woman.

HANDED → HAND

Mt 27:26 he **h** him over to be crucified.
Ro 4:25 **h** over to death for our trespasses

HANDS → HAND

Ps 24:4 who have clean **h** and pure hearts,
115:7 They have **h,** but do not feel;
Ecc 11:6 at evening do not let your **h** be idle;
Isa 49:16 inscribed you on the palms of my **h;**
Da 2:45 was cut from the mountain not by **h,**
Lk 23:46 into your **h** I commend my spirit."
24:40 he showed them his **h** and his feet.
Jn 3:35 has placed all things in his **h.**
Ac 8:18 the laying on of the apostles' **h,**
Ro 10:21 "All day long I have held out my **h**
Heb 6:2 laying on of **h,** resurrection of the
10:31 to fall into the **h** of the living God.

HANNAH*

Wife of Elkanah, mother of Samuel (1Sa 1). Prayer at dedication of Samuel (1Sa 2:1-10). Blessed (1Sa 2:18-21).

HAPPY

Ps 1:1 **H** are those who do not follow the
33:12 **H** is the nation whose God is the Lord,
84:12 **h** is everyone who trusts in you.
Pr 3:13 **H** are those who find wisdom,
Ecc 3:12 nothing better for them than to be **h**
Tob 13:14 **H** are those who love you,
Sir 1:13 who fear the Lord will have a **h** end;

HARD → HARD-HEARTED, HARDEN, HARDENED, HARDENING, HARDSHIP, HARDSHIPS

Ex 1:14 made their lives bitter with **h** service
Jer 32:17 Nothing is too **h** for you.
Mt 7:14 the road is **h** that leads to life,
19:23 **h** for a rich person to enter the

HARD-HEARTED* → HARD, HEART

Dt 15:7 do not be **h** or tight-fisted toward
Pr 28:14 one who is **h** will fall into calamity.
Mt 19:8 you were so **h** that Moses allowed

HARDEN → HARD

Ex 4:21 but I will **h** his heart,
Ps 95:8 Do not **h** your hearts, as at Meribah,
Heb 3:8 not **h** your hearts as in the rebellion,

HARDENED → HARD

Ex 10:20 But the Lord **h** Pharaoh's heart,
Mk 8:17 Are your hearts **h?**
Ro 11:7 elect obtained it, but the rest were **h,**
2Co 3:14 But their minds were **h.**

HARDENING* → HARD

Ro 11:25 a **h** has come upon part of Israel,

HARDSHIP → HARD

Ro 8:35 Will **h,** or distress, or persecution,

HARDSHIPS → HARD

2Co 12:10 content with weaknesses, insults, **h,**

HARM

Ge 50:20 though you intended to do **h** to me,
Ne 6:2 But they intended to do me **h.**
Pr 12:21 No **h** happens to the righteous,
Jer 29:11 plans for your welfare and not for **h,**
1Pe 3:13 who will **h** you if you are eager

HARP → HARPS

Ps 150:3 praise him with lute and **h!**
Rev 5:8 each holding a **h** and golden bowls

HARPS → HARP

1Ch 15:16 on **h** and lyres and cymbals,
Ne 12:27 with cymbals, **h,** and lyres.
Ps 137:2 the willows there we hung up our **h.**

HARSHLY

Dt 26:6 When the Egyptians treated us **h**
Col 3:19 your wives and never treat them **h.**
1Ti 5:1 Do not speak **h** to an older man,

HARVEST → HARVESTING

Ge 8:22 the earth endures, seedtime and **h,**
Ex 23:16 You shall observe the festival of **h,**
Mt 13:39 **h** is the end of the age, and the
Lk 10:2 He said to them, "The **h** is plentiful,
Rev 14:15 the **h** of the earth is fully ripe."

HARVESTING* → HARVEST

Jn 4:35 and see how the fields are ripe for **h.**

HASTENING*

Zep 1:14 day of the Lord is near, near and **h**
2Pe 3:12 and **h** the coming of the day of God,

HATE → HATED, HATING

Ps 45:7 righteousness and **h** wickedness.
97:10 The Lord loves those who **h** evil;
Pr 13:5 The righteous **h** falsehood,
Ecc 3:8 a time to love, and a time to **h;**
Am 5:15 **H** evil and love good, and establish
Mal 2:16 For I **h** divorce, says the Lord,
Mt 5:43 your neighbor and **h** your enemy.'
Lk 6:27 do good to those who **h** you,
Jn 7:7 The world cannot **h** you, but it hates
Ro 7:15 but I do the very thing I **h.**

HATED → HATE

Jn 15:18 aware that it **h** me before it **h** you.
Ro 9:13 loved Jacob, but I have **h** Esau."

HATES → HATE

Dt 16:22 things that the Lord your God **h.**
Pr 6:16 six things that the Lord **h,**
Jn 15:23 Whoever **h** me **h** my Father also.
Sir 15:13 The Lord **h** all abominations;

HAUGHTY

Pr 6:17 **h** eyes, a lying tongue, and hands
16:18 and a **h** spirit before a fall.
1Ti 6:17 command them not to be **h,**

HAY*

1Co 3:12 precious stones, wood, **h,** straw—

HEAD → BEHEADED, HEADS

Isa 59:17 and a helmet of salvation on his **h;**
Mt 8:20 of Man has nowhere to lay his **h."**
Mk 6:28 brought his **h** on a platter,
1Co 11:3 Christ is the **h** of every man, and the husband is the **h** of his wife,
Eph 1:22 has made him the **h** over all things

HEADS → HEAD

Eze 11:21 bring their deeds upon their own **h,**
Rev 12:3 a great red dragon, with seven **h**

HEAL → HEALED, HEALING, HEALS, HEALTH, HEALTHY

Dt 32:39 and I make alive; I wound and I **h;**
Ecc 3:3 a time to kill, and a time to **h;**
Isa 57:19 says the Lord; and I will **h** them.
Jer 3:22 I will **h** your faithlessness.
Hos 14:4 I will **h** their disloyalty; I will love
Jn 12:40 and turn—and I would **h** them."

HEALED → HEAL

Isa 6:10 their minds, and turn and be **h."**
53:5 and by his bruises we are **h.**
Hos 11:3 but they did not know that I **h** them.
Jas 5:16 one another, so that you may be **h.**
1Pe 2:24 by his wounds you have been **h.**

HEALING → HEAL

Pr 12:18 but the tongue of the wise brings **h.**
Eze 47:12 for food, and their leaves for **h."**
Mal 4:2 shall rise, with **h** in its wings.
1Co 12:9 another gifts of **h** by the one Spirit,
Rev 22:2 leaves of the tree are for the **h** of
Sir 38:2 gift of **h** comes from the Most High,

HEALS → HEAL

Ex 15:26 for I am the Lord who **h** you."
Ps 103:3 iniquity, who **h** all your diseases,
Wis 16:12 your word, O Lord, that **h** all people

HEALTH → HEAL

3Jn 1:2 and that you may be in good **h,**
Sir 30:15 **H** and fitness are better than any

HEALTHY → HEAL

Lk 11:34 If your eye is **h,** your whole body

HEAR → HEARD, HEARERS, HEARING, HEARS

Dt 6:4 **H,** O Israel: The Lord is our God,
31:13 may **h** and learn to fear the Lord
1Ki 8:30 O **h** in heaven your dwelling place;
Isa 59:1 nor his ear too dull to **h.**
Jer 5:21 who have ears, but do not **h.**
Eze 37:4 dry bones, **h** the word of the Lord.
Mt 13:17 to **h** what you **h,** but did not **h** it.
Mk 12:29 answered, "The first is, **'H,** O Israel:
Lk 7:22 the lepers are cleansed, the deaf **h,**
Heb 3:7 says, "Today, if you **h** his voice,
Sir 5:11 Be quick to **h,** but deliberate in

HEARD → HEAR

Isa 40:21 not known? Have you not **h?**
1Co 2:9 "What no eye has seen, nor ear **h,**
1Jn 1:3 to you what we have seen and **h** so
Rev 22:8 I, John, am the one who **h** and saw

HEARERS → HEAR

Ro 2:13 For it is not the **h** of the law who
Jas 1:22 merely **h** who deceive themselves.

HEARING → HEAR

Pr 18:13 one gives answer before **h,**
Am 8:11 but of **h** the words of the LORD.
1Co 12:17 If the whole body were **h,**

HEARS → HEAR

Ps 69:33 For the LORD **h** the needy,
Pr 15:29 but he **h** the prayer of the righteous.
Mt 7:24 then who **h** these words of mine
Jn 5:24 I tell you, anyone who **h** my word
1Jn 5:14 according to his will, he **h** us.
Rev 22:18 I warn everyone who **h** the words

HEART → BROKENHEARTED, HARD-HEARTED, HEART'S, HEARTLESS, HEARTS, TENDERHEARTED

Ge 6:6 and it grieved him to his **h.**
Ex 4:21 but I will harden his **h,**
14:4 I will harden Pharaoh's **h,**
Dt 6:5 the LORD your God with all your **h,**
30:14 in your mouth and in your **h** for you
Jos 22:5 all your **h** and with all your soul."
1Sa 16:7 but the LORD looks on the **h."**
Ps 19:14 meditation of my **h** be acceptable to
51:10 Create in me a clean **h,** O God,
Pr 3:5 Trust in the LORD with all your **h,**
7:3 write them on the tablet of your **h.**
Jer 9:26 of Israel is uncircumcised in **h.**
Eze 36:26 A new **h** I will give you,
Mt 5:8 "Blessed are the pure in **h,** for they
5:28 adultery with her in his **h.**
Mk 12:30 the Lord your God with all your **h,**
Lk 12:34 treasure is, there your **h** will be also.
Ro 2:29 circumcision is a matter of the **h**—
10:9 believe in your **h** that God raised
Heb 10:22 let us approach with a true **h** in full
Sir 1:12 The fear of the Lord delights the **h,**
Aza 1:16 Yet with a contrite **h** and
Man 1:11 And now I bend the knee of my **h,**

HEART'S → HEART

Ps 20:4 May he grant you your **h** desire,
Ro 10:1 my **h** desire and prayer to God for

HEARTLESS* → HEART

Ro 1:31 foolish, faithless, **h,** ruthless.

HEARTS → HEART

Ps 95:8 not harden your **h,** as at Meribah,
Jer 31:33 and I will write it on their **h;**
Mk 7:6 but their **h** are far from me;
Jn 14:1 "Do not let your **h** be troubled.
Ro 2:15 law requires is written on their **h,**
Eph 3:17 Christ may dwell in your **h** through
Col 3:15 the peace of Christ rule in your **h,**
Heb 3:8 do not harden your **h** as in the
10:16 I will put my laws in their **h,**
2Pe 1:19 and the morning star rises in your **h.**
1Jn 3:20 for God is greater than our **h,**
Rev 2:23 the one who searches minds and **h,**

HEAVEN → HEAVENLY, HEAVENS

Ge 14:19 by God Most High, maker of **h** and
28:12 the top of it reaching to **h;**
Ex 16:4 "I am going to rain bread from **h**
Dt 30:12 "Who will go up to **h** for us,
31:28 and call **h** and earth to witness
1Ki 8:27 **h** and the highest **h** cannot contain
Job 16:19 now, in fact, my witness is in **h,**
Ecc 3:1 and a time for every matter under **h:**
Isa 14:12 you are fallen from **h,** O Day Star,
Jer 23:24 Do I not fill **h** and earth?
Mt 3:2 "Repent, for the kingdom of **h** has
6:9 Father in **h,** hallowed be your name.
24:35 **H** and earth will pass away,
26:64 and coming on the clouds of **h."**
Mk 10:21 and you will have treasure in **h;**
Lk 10:18 "I watched Satan fall from **h** like a
19:38 Peace in **h,** and glory in the highest **h!"**
24:51 and was carried up into **h.**
Jn 3:13 No one has ascended into **h** except the
one who descended from **h,**
Ac 1:11 same way as you saw him go into **h.**
Ro 10:6 'Who will ascend into **h?'"**
2Co 12:2 was caught up to the third **h**—
Php 3:20 But our citizenship is in **h,**
1Th 1:10 to wait for his Son from **h,**
Heb 9:24 but he entered into **h** itself,
2Pe 1:18 heard this voice come from **h,**
Rev 4:1 and there in **h** a door stood open!
21:1 I saw a new **h** and a new earth;

HEAVENLY → HEAVEN

Mt 5:48 as your **h** Father is perfect.
2Co 5:2 longing to be clothed with our **h**
Eph 1:3 spiritual blessing in the **h** places,
Heb 3:1 holy partners in a **h** calling,

HEAVENS → HEAVEN

Ge 1:1 when God created the **h** and
11:4 and a tower with its top in the **h,**
Dt 10:14 the heaven of **h** belong to the LORD
Ps 57:5 Be exalted, O God, above the **h.**
115:16 The **h** are the LORD's **h,**
Isa 65:17 to create new **h** and a new earth;
Jer 10:11 The gods who did not make the **h**
Eph 4:10 who ascended far above all the **h,**
Heb 4:14 priest who has passed through the **h,**
2Pe 3:10 the **h** will pass away with a loud

HEAVY

Mt 23:4 They tie up **h** burdens, hard to bear,
Mk 14:40 for their eyes were very **h;**

HEBREW → HEBREWS

Jnh 1:9 "I am a **H,"** he replied.
Jn 19:20 and it was written in **H,** in Latin,
Php 3:5 of Benjamin, a **H** born of Hebrews;

HEBREWS → HEBREW

Ex 3:18 The LORD, the God of the **H,** has
2Co 11:22 Are they **H?** So am I.
Jdt 10:12 "I am a daughter of the **H,**

HEBRON

Ge 13:18 the oaks of Mamre, which are at **H;**
2Sa 2:11 The time that David was king in **H**

HEEL

Ge 3:15 your head, and you will strike his **h.**
25:26 with his hand gripping Esau's **h;**
Ps 41:9 has lifted the **h** against me.
Jn 13:18 has lifted his **h** against me.'

HEIGHT → HIGH

Ro 8:39 nor **h,** nor depth, nor anything else
Eph 3:18 and length and **h** and depth,

HEIGHTS → HIGH

Ps 148:1 the heavens; praise him in the **h!**
Hab 3:19 and makes me tread upon the **h.**

HEIR → HEIRS

Ge 15:4 "This man shall not be your **h;**
Gal 4:7 then also an **h,** through God.
Heb 1:2 whom he appointed **h** of all things,

HEIRS → HEIR

Ro 8:17 **h, h** of God and joint **h** with Christ—
Eph 3:6 the Gentiles have become fellow **h,**
1Pe 3:7 also **h** of the gracious gift of life—

HELL

Mt 10:28 both soul and body in **h.**
Mk 9:43 to have two hands and to go to **h,**
2Pe 2:4 cast them into **h** and committed
2Es 2:29 so that your children may not see **h.**

HELMET

Isa 59:17 and a **h** of salvation on his head;
Eph 6:17 Take the **h** of salvation, and the

HELP → HELPED, HELPER, HELPS

Ex 18:4 "The God of my father was my **h,**
Ps 33:20 he is our **h** and shield.
46:1 a very present **h** in trouble.
Mk 9:24 "I believe; **h** my unbelief!"
Heb 2:18 able to **h** those who are being tested.
4:16 receive mercy and find grace to **h**
Jdt 6:21 called on the God of Israel for **h.**
Sir 2:6 Trust in him, and he will **h** you;

HELPED → HELP

1Sa 7:12 "Thus far the LORD has **h** us."
Ps 118:13 I was falling, but the LORD **h** me.
Isa 49:8 on a day of salvation I have **h** you;

HELPER → HELP

Ge 2:18 I will make him a **h** as his partner."
Ps 30:10 O LORD, be my **h!"**
Heb 13:6 Lord is my **h;** I will not be afraid.
Tob 8:6 Eve as a **h** and support.

HELPS → HELP

Ps 37:40 The LORD **h** them and rescues them;
Ro 8:26 the Spirit **h** us in our weakness;

HERBS

Ex 12:8 with unleavened bread and bitter **h.**

HERMON

Dt 3:8 from the Wadi Arnon to Mount **H**
Ps 133:3 It is like the dew of **H,**

HEROD → HERODIANS

1. King of Judea; tried to kill Jesus (Mt 2; Lk 1:5).
2. Son of 1. Tetrarch of Galilee who arrested and beheaded John the Baptist (Mt 14:1-12; Mk 6:14-29; Lk 3:1, 19-20; 9:7-9); tried Jesus (Lk 23:6-15).
3. Grandson of 1. King of Judea who killed James (Ac 12:2); arrested Peter (Ac 12:3-19). Death (Ac 12:19-23).

HERODIANS → HEROD

Mk 3:6 immediately conspired with the **H**
12:13 some **H** to trap him in what he said.

HERODIAS*

Wife of Herod the Tetrarch who persuaded her daughter to ask for John the Baptist's head (Mt 14:1-12; Mk 6:14-29; Lk 3:19).

HEWN

Ex 20:25 do not build it of **h** stones;
Mk 15:46 laid it in a tomb that had been **h**

HEZEKIAH

King of Judah (Sir 48:17-25). Restored the temple and worship (2Ch 29-31). Sought the LORD for help against Assyria (2Ki 18-19; 2Ch 32:1-23; Isa 36-37). Illness healed (2Ki 20:1-11; 2Ch 32:24-26; Isa 38). Judged for showing Babylonians his treasures (2Ki 20:12-21; 2Ch 32:31; Isa 39).

HID → HIDE

Ge 3:8 and his wife **h** themselves from the
Ex 2:2 a fine baby, she **h** him three months.
3:6 Moses **h** his face, for he was afraid
Jos 6:17 live because she **h** the messengers
1Ki 18:13 **h** a hundred of the LORD's prophets
Isa 49:2 in the shadow of his hand he **h** me;
54:8 wrath for a moment I **h** my face
Mt 25:25 and **h** your talent in the ground.

HIDDEN → HIDE

Ps 19:12 Clear me from **h** faults.
Pr 2:4 and search for it as for **h** treasures—
Isa 40:27 "My way is **h** from the LORD,
Mt 13:44 is like treasure **h** in a field,
Mk 4:22 nothing **h,** except to be disclosed;
Col 3:3 your life is **h** with Christ in God.
Rev 2:17 the **h** manna, and I will give a white
Sir 42:20 and nothing is **h** from him.

HIDE → HID, HIDDEN

Dt 31:17 I will forsake them and **h** my face
Ps 13:1 How long will you **h** your face
17:8 **h** me in the shadow of your wings,

HIGH → HEIGHT, HEIGHTS, HIGHER, HIGHEST, HIGHLY

Ge 14:18 he was priest of God Most **H.**
1Ki 3:2 were sacrificing at the **h** places,

Ps 91:1 live in the shelter of the Most **H,**
Mt 4:8 a very **h** mountain and showed him
17:1 and led them up a **h** mountain,
Mk 5:7 Jesus, Son of the Most **H** God?
Eph 4:8 "When he ascended on **h** he made
Heb 2:17 a merciful and faithful **h** priest
7:26 that we should have such a **h** priest,

HIGHER → HIGH

Ps 61:2 Lead me to the rock that is **h** than I;
Isa 55:9 so are my ways **h** than your ways

HIGHEST → HIGH

1Ki 8:27 the **h** heaven cannot contain you,
Mt 21:9 Hosanna in the **h** heaven!"
Lk 2:14 "Glory to God in the **h** heaven,

HIGHLY → HIGH

Ps 47:9 to God; he is **h** exalted.
Ro 12:3 not to think of yourself more **h** than

HILL → HILLS

Ps 15:1 Who may dwell on your holy **h?**
Isa 40:4 every mountain and **h** be made low;
Mt 5:14 A city built on a **h** cannot be hid.
Lk 3:5 mountain and **h** shall be made low,

HILLS → HILL

1Ki 20:23 "Their gods are gods of the **h,**
Ps 50:10 the cattle on a thousand **h.**

HINDER

1Sa 14:6 nothing can **h** the LORD from saving
Isa 43:13 I work and who can **h** it?
1Pe 3:7 so that nothing may **h** your prayers.

HIP

Ge 32:25 Jacob's **h** was put out of joint

HIRAM

King of Tyre; helped David build his palace (2Sa 5:11-12; 1Ch 14:1); helped Solomon build the temple (1Ki 5; 2Ch 2) and his navy (1Ki 9:10-27; 2Ch 8).

HITTITE → HITTITES

Ge 23:10 Ephron the **H** answered Abraham
2Sa 11:3 the wife of Uriah the **H."**

HITTITES → HITTITE

Dt 20:17 **H** and the Amorites, the Canaanites
Ezr 9:1 Canaanites, the **H,** the Perizzites,

HOLD → HOLDS

Ps 73:23 you **h** my right hand.
Isa 41:13 I, the LORD your God, **h** your right
Jn 20:17 Jesus said to her, "Do not **h** on to
Col 1:17 and in him all things **h** together.

HOLDS → HOLD

Ps 37:24 for the LORD **h** us by the hand.
Rev 2:1 who **h** the seven stars in his right
Wis 1:7 which **h** all things together

HOLES

Hag 1:6 to put them into a bag with **h.**
Mt 8:20 Jesus said to him, "Foxes have **h,**

HOLINESS → HOLY

Ex 15:11 Who is like you, majestic in **h,**
Dt 32:51 by failing to maintain my **h** among
Ps 89:35 and for all I have sworn by my **h;**
Ro 1:4 according to the spirit of **h** by
2Co 6:6 kindness, **h** of spirit, genuine love,
1Ti 2:15 continue in faith and love and **h,**
Heb 12:14 **h** without which no one will see the

HOLOFERNES

Assyrian general (Jdt 2:4). Beguiled and beheaded by Judith (Jdt 10-13).

HOLY → HOLINESS

Ex 3:5 which you are standing is **h** ground.
20:8 the sabbath day, and keep it **h.**
26:33 the **h** place from the most **h.**
29:37 the altar shall be most **h;**
Lev 11:44 and be **h,** for I am **h.**
Jos 5:15 for the place where you stand is **h."**
1Sa 2:2 "There is no **H** One like the LORD,
Ps 2:6 set my king on Zion, my **h** hill."
11:4 The LORD is in his **h** temple;
Isa 6:3 **"H, h, h** is the LORD of hosts;
40:25 who is my equal? says the **H** One.
Da 9:24 and to anoint a most **h** place.
Mt 1:18 to be with child from the **H** Spirit.
3:11 baptize you with the **H** Spirit and
24:15 sacrilege standing in the **h** place,
Mk 1:24 who you are, the **H** One of God."
3:29 against the **H** Spirit can never have
Lk 3:22 the **H** Spirit descended upon him in
11:13 heavenly Father give the **H** Spirit
Jn 14:26 But the Advocate, the **H** Spirit,
Ac 2:4 were filled with the **H** Spirit and
2:27 your **H** One experience corruption.
5:3 your heart to lie to the **H** Spirit
Ro 12:1 living sacrifice, **h** and acceptable to
Eph 1:4 to be **h** and blameless
4:30 do not grieve the **H** Spirit of God,
Heb 6:4 and have shared in the **H** Spirit,
1Pe 1:16 "You shall be **h,** for I am **h."**
1Jn 2:20 have been anointed by the **H** One,
Jude 1:14 with ten thousands of his **h** ones,
Rev 4:8 **H, h, h,** the Lord God the Almighty
21:2 I saw the **h** city, the new Jerusalem,
Wis 4:15 he watches over his **h** ones.
1Mc 1:15 and abandoned the **h** covenant.
2Es 14:22 send the **h** spirit into me,

HOME → HOMELESS, HOMETOWN

Dt 6:7 when you are at **h** and when you
Ps 68:6 God gives the desolate a **h**
Jn 14:23 to them and make our **h** with them.
2Co 5:8 the body and at **h** with the Lord.

HOMELESS* → HOME

Isa 58:7 the **h** poor into your house;
1Co 4:11 poorly clothed and beaten and **h,**

HOMETOWN → HOME, TOWN

Mk 6:4 not without honor, except in their **h,**

HONEST

Lev 19:36 have **h** balances, **h** weights,
Pr 16:11 **H** balances and scales are the

HONEY

Ex 3:8 a land flowing with milk and **h,**
Jdg 14:8 bees in the body of the lion, and **h.**
1Sa 14:26 honeycomb, the **h** was dripping out;
Ps 19:10 sweeter also than **h,** and drippings
Mt 3:4 and his food was locusts and wild **h.**

HONOR → HONORABLE, HONORED, HONORS

Dt 5:16 **H** your father and your mother,
1Ch 29:12 Riches and **h** come from you,
Ps 8:5 and crowned them with glory and **h.**
Ecc 10:1 little folly outweighs wisdom and **h.**
Isa 29:13 and **h** me with their lips,
Mal 1:6 a father, where is the **h** due me?
Mt 13:57 not without **h** except in their own
15:4 For God said, **'H** your father and
Jn 12:26 serves me, the Father will **h.**
Ro 13:7 **h** to whom **h** is due.
Eph 6:2 **"H** your father and mother"—
1Ti 5:17 considered worthy of double **h,**
Heb 2:7 crowned them with glory and **h,**
Rev 4:11 to receive glory and **h** and power,
Tob 4:3 **H** your mother and do not

HONORABLE → HONOR

Php 4:8 whatever is true, whatever is **h,**

HONORED → HONOR

Hag 1:8 I may take pleasure in it and be **h,**
1Co 12:26 if one member is **h,** all rejoice

HONORS → HONOR

Mal 1:6 A son **h** his father, and servants
Mt 15:8 'This people **h** me with their lips,

HOOFS

Lev 11:3 Any animal that has divided **h**

HOOK → HOOKS

Mt 17:27 go to the sea and cast a **h;**

HOOKS → HOOK

Isa 2:4 and their spears into pruning **h;**
Joel 3:10 and your pruning **h** into spears;

HOPE → HOPED, HOPES

Job 17:15 where then is my **h?**
Ps 62:5 for my **h** is from him.
146:5 whose **h** is in the LORD their God,
Pr 23:18 and your **h** will not be cut off.
Isa 8:17 and I will **h** in him.
Jer 14:8 O **h** of Israel, its savior in time of
La 3:21 and therefore I have **h:**
Mt 12:21 in his name the Gentiles will **h."**
Ro 5:5 and **h** does not disappoint us,
12:12 Rejoice in **h,** be patient in suffering,
1Co 13:13 And now faith, **h,** and love abide,
Col 1:27 Christ in you, the **h** of glory.
1Th 5:8 and for a helmet the **h** of salvation.
Heb 6:19 this **h,** a sure and steadfast anchor
7:19 the introduction of a better **h,**
1Pe 1:3 a living **h** through the resurrection
1Jn 3:3 all who have this **h** in him purify
Sir 34:15 their **h** is in him who saves them.
Sus 1:60 who saves those who **h** in him.

HOPED → HOPE

Heb 11:1 faith is the assurance of things **h** for,
1Pe 3:5 the holy women who **h** in God

HOPES → HOPE

1Co 13:7 believes all things, **h** all things,

HOREB → =SINAI

Ex 3:1 came to **H,** the mountain of God.
Dt 5:2 God made a covenant with us at **H.**
1Ki 19:8 forty days and forty nights to **H**

HORN → HORNS

Ps 18:2 and the **h** of my salvation,
Da 7:8 when another **h** appeared,
8:5 The goat had a **h** between its eyes.

HORNS → HORN

Ge 22:13 caught in a thicket by its **h.**
Ex 27:2 make **h** for it on its four corners;
Da 7:7 that preceded it, and it had ten **h.**
8:3 Both **h** were long, but one
Zec 1:18 And I looked up and saw four **h.**
Rev 5:6 having seven **h** and seven eyes,
9:13 from the four **h** of the golden altar
17:3 and it had seven heads and ten **h.**

HORSE → HORSES

Ex 15:1 **h** and rider he has thrown into the
Ps 33:17 The war **h** is a vain hope for victory,
Zec 1:8 I saw a man riding on a red **h!**
Rev 6:2 I looked, and there was a white **h!**
19:11 and there was a white **h!**

HORSES → HORSE

2Ki 2:11 a chariot of fire and **h** of fire
Ps 20:7 pride in chariots, and some in **h,**
Joel 2:4 They have the appearance of **h,**
Rev 9:7 appearance the locusts were like **h**
19:14 following him on white **h.**

HOSANNA

Mk 11:10 **H** in the highest heaven!"
Jn 12:13 went out to meet him, shouting, **"H!**

HOSEA

Prophet whose wife and family pictured the unfaithfulness of Israel (Hos 1-3).

HOSHEA → =JOSHUA

1. Original name of Joshua (Nu 13:8, 16).
2. Last king of Israel (2Ki 15:30; 17:1-6).

HOSPITABLE* → HOSPITALITY

1Ti 3:2 temperate, sensible, respectable, **h,**
Tit 1:8 but he must be **h,** a lover
1Pe 4:9 Be **h** to one another without

HOSPITALITY* → HOSPITABLE

Ro 12:13 of the saints; extend **h** to strangers.
1Ti 5:10 has brought up children, shown **h,**
Heb 13:2 not neglect to show **h** to strangers,

HOST → HOSTS

Dt 4:19 all the **h** of heaven,
2Ki 17:16 worshiped all the **h** of heaven
Lk 2:13 angel a multitude of the heavenly **h,**

HOSTILE → HOSTILITY

Ro 8:7 that is set on the flesh is **h** to God;
Col 1:21 once estranged and **h** in mind,

HOSTILITY → HOSTILE

Eph 2:14 the dividing wall, that is, the **h**
Heb 12:3 Consider him who endured such **h**

HOSTS → HOST

1Sa 1:3 and to sacrifice to the LORD of **h**
Ps 46:7 The LORD of **h** is with us;
Isa 48:2 the LORD of **h** is his name.

HOT

Rev 3:15 you are neither cold nor **h.**

HOUR

Mt 6:27 by worrying add a single **h** to your
24:36 about that day and **h** no one knows,
Jn 2:4 My **h** has not yet come."
17:1 "Father, the **h** has come;
Rev 3:10 I will keep you from the **h** of trial
14:7 for the **h** of his judgment has come;

HOUSE → HOUSEHOLD, HOUSES, HOUSETOP, HOUSETOPS, STOREHOUSE

Ex 20:17 shall not covet your neighbor's **h;**
2Sa 7:11 that the LORD will make you a **h.**
1Ch 22:1 "Here shall be the **h** of the LORD
Ezr 1:5 rebuild the **h** of the LORD in
Ps 69:9 zeal for your **h** that has consumed
127:1 Unless the LORD builds the **h,**
Pr 9:1 Wisdom has built her **h,** she has
Isa 56:7 my **h** shall be called a **h** of prayer
Mt 7:24 like a wise man who built his **h**
21:13 'My **h** shall be called a **h** of prayer';
Mk 3:25 And if a **h** is divided against itself,
Jn 2:17 "Zeal for your **h** will consume me."
14:2 In my Father's **h** there are many
1Pe 2:5 be built into a spiritual **h,**

HOUSEHOLD → HOUSE

Jos 24:15 and my **h,** we will serve the LORD."
Mic 7:6 enemies are members of your own **h**
Mt 10:36 will be members of one's own **h.**
1Ti 3:4 He must manage his own **h** well,
Tit 2:5 good managers of the **h,** kind,
1Pe 4:17 judgment to begin with the **h** of God

HOUSES → HOUSE

Ex 12:27 passed over the **h** of the Israelites in
Mt 19:29 everyone who has left **h** or brothers

HOUSETOP → HOUSE

Mt 24:17 the one on the **h** must not go down

HOUSETOPS → HOUSE

Mt 10:27 whispered, proclaim from the **h.**

HULDAH*

Prophetess inquired by Hilkiah for Josiah (2Ki 22; 2Ch 34:14-28).

HUMAN → HUMANKIND

Ge 6:7 blot out from the earth the **h** beings
Ps 8:4 are **h** beings that you are mindful
Da 2:34 a stone was cut out, not by **h** hands,
5:5 the fingers of a **h** hand appeared
Hos 11:4 I led them with cords of **h** kindness,
Mt 15:9 teaching **h** precepts as doctrines.'"
Ac 5:29 obey God rather than any **h**
1Co 2:13 in words not taught by **h** wisdom
Php 2:7 being born in **h** likeness.
Rev 4:7 with a face like a **h** face,
Jdt 8:16 for God is not like a **h** being,

HUMANKIND → HUMAN

Ge 1:26 "Let us make **h** in our image,
Mk 2:27 "The sabbath was made for **h,**
1Ti 2:5 one mediator between God and **h,**

HUMBLE → HUMBLED, HUMBLY, HUMILITY

Nu 12:3 Now the man Moses was very **h,**
Dt 8:16 to **h** you and to test you,
Ps 25:9 He leads the **h** in what is right,
149:4 he adorns the **h** with victory.
Isa 57:15 to revive the spirit of the **h,**
Zep 2:3 Seek the LORD, all you **h** of the land
Mt 11:29 for I am gentle and **h** in heart,
21:5 **h,** and mounted on a donkey,
Jas 4:10 **H** yourselves before the Lord,
1Pe 5:5 but gives grace to the **h."**
Sir 3:20 but by the **h** he is glorified.

HUMBLED → HUMBLE

Ps 119:71 It is good for me that I was **h,**
Lk 14:11 all who exalt themselves will be **h,**
Php 2:8 he **h** himself and became obedient

HUMBLY* → HUMBLE

Mic 6:8 and to walk **h** with your God?

HUMILITY → HUMBLE

Pr 15:33 and **h** goes before honor.
Zep 2:3 seek righteousness, seek **h;**
Php 2:3 but in **h** regard others as better than
Col 3:12 with compassion, kindness, **h,**
1Pe 5:5 must clothe yourselves with **h**
Sir 1:27 fidelity and **h** are his delight.

HUNDRED

Ge 17:17 born to a man who is a **h** years old?
Isa 65:20 one who dies at a **h** years will be
Ro 4:19 (for he was about a **h** years old),

HUNG

Dt 21:23 **h** on a tree is under God's curse.
Ps 137:2 the willows there we **h** up our harps.
Mk 9:42 if a great millstone were **h** around

HUNGER → HUNGRY

Dt 8:3 He humbled you by letting you **h,**
Mt 5:6 "Blessed are those who **h** and thirst
Rev 7:16 will **h** no more, and thirst no more;

HUNGRY → HUNGER

Ps 50:12 "If I were **h,** I would not tell you,
146:7 who gives food to the **h.**
Pr 25:21 If your enemies are **h,** give them
Mt 12:1 his disciples were **h,** and they began
Jn 6:35 comes to me will never be **h,**
Ro 12:20 "if your enemies are **h,** feed them;

HUSBAND → HUSBANDS

Ge 3:6 and she also gave some to her **h,**
3:16 yet your desire shall be for your **h,**
Pr 31:28 her **h** too, and he praises her:
Isa 54:5 For your Maker is your **h,**
Jer 31:32 they broke, though I was their **h,**
Hos 2:16 the LORD, you will call me, "My **h,"**
1Co 7:10 wife should not separate from her **h**
Eph 5:23 **h** is the head of the wife just as
Rev 21:2 as a bride adorned for her **h.**
Sir 26:1 Happy is the **h** of a good wife;

HUSBANDS → HUSBAND

Jn 4:18 for you have had five **h,**
Eph 5:25 **H,** love your wives, just as Christ
Col 3:18 Wives, be subject to your **h,**
Tit 2:4 the young women to love their **h,**
1Pe 3:7 **H,** in the same way, show

HUSHAI

Wise man of David; foiled Absalom's revolt (2Sa 15:32-37; 16:15-17:16).

HYMN → HYMNS

Mt 26:30 When they had sung the **h,**
Sir 44:1 **h** in honor of our ancestors

HYMNS → HYMN

Eph 5:19 psalms and **h** and spiritual songs
Col 3:16 in your hearts sing psalms, **h,**
Aza 1:1 singing **h** to God and blessing the

HYPOCRISY → HYPOCRITE, HYPOCRITES

Mt 23:28 but inside you are full of **h** and
Mk 12:15 knowing their **h,** he said to them,
Lk 12:1 of the Pharisees, that is, their **h.**
Jas 3:17 without a trace of partiality or **h.**

HYPOCRITE → HYPOCRISY

Lk 6:42 You **h,** first take the log out of your
Sir 1:29 Do not be a **h** before others,

HYPOCRITES → HYPOCRISY

Mt 6:5 you pray, do not be like the **h;**
23:13 to you, scribes and Pharisees, **h!**
Mk 7:6 prophesied rightly about you **h,**

HYSSOP

Ex 12:22 a bunch of **h,** dip it in the blood that
Nu 19:6 The priest shall take cedarwood, **h,**
Ps 51:7 Purge me with **h,** and I shall be
Jn 19:29 full of the wine on a branch of **h**

I

I AM

Ex 3:14 God said to Moses, **"I am** who **I am."**
Isa 44:6 **I am** the first and **I am** the last;
Mt 28:20 **I am** with you always, to the end of
Mk 8:29 "But who do you say that **I am?"**
Jn 6:35 to them, **"I am** the bread of life.
8:12 **"I am** the light of the world.
8:58 before Abraham was, **I am."**
9:5 **I am** the light of the world."
10:7 **I am** the gate for the sheep.
10:11 **"I am** the good shepherd.
11:25 **"I am** the resurrection and the life.
14:6 **"I am** the way, and the truth, and
15:1 **"I am** the true vine, and my Father
Rev 1:8 **"I am** the Alpha and the Omega,"
22:20 "Surely **I am** coming soon."

IDLE

Ecc 11:6 evening do not let your hands be **i;**
2Th 3:7 were not **i** when we were with you,

IDOL → IDOLS

Ex 20:4 shall not make for yourself an **i,**
Isa 40:19 An **i?**—A workman casts it,
1Co 10:19 or that an **i** is anything?

IDOLS → IDOL

Ex 34:17 You shall not make cast **i.**
2Ki 17:15 went after false **i** and became false;
Ps 115:4 Their **i** are silver and gold,
1Co 8:1 concerning food sacrificed to **i:**
1Mc 1:43 they sacrificed to **i** and profaned the

IGNORANCE → IGNORANT

Ac 17:30 overlooked the times of human **i,**
1Pe 2:15 silence the **i** of the foolish.

IGNORANT → IGNORANCE

Heb 5:2 He is able to deal gently with the **i**
2Pe 3:16 the **i** and unstable twist to their own

ILL → ILLNESS

1Co 11:30 many of you are weak and **i,**

ILLEGITIMATE

Jn 8:41 said to him, "We are not **i** children;
Heb 12:8 then you are **i** and not his children.

ILLNESS → ILL

Dt 7:15 will turn away from you every **i**;
Ps 41:3 their **i** you heal all their infirmities.

IMAGE → IMAGES

Ge 1:26 "Let us make humankind in our **i**,
Dt 27:15 who makes an idol or casts an **i**,
1Co 15:49 the **i** of the man of heaven.
Col 1:15 He is the **i** of the invisible God,
Rev 20:4 not worshiped the beast or its **i** and
Sir 17:3 and made them in his own **i**.

IMAGES → IMAGE

Nu 33:52 destroy all their cast **i**,
Ps 97:7 All worshipers of **i** are put to shame,

IMITATE → IMITATORS

Heb 13:7 their way of life, and **i** their faith.
3Jn 1:11 not **i** what is evil but **i** what is good.

IMITATORS → IMITATE

1Co 11:1 Be **i** of me, as I am of Christ.
Eph 5:1 be **i** of God, as beloved children,

IMMANUEL* → =EMMANUEL

Isa 7:14 bear a son, and shall name him **I**.
8:8 fill the breadth of your land, O **I**.

IMMORAL → IMMORALITY

1Co 5:9 not to associate with sexually **i**
Heb 12:16 an **i** and godless person,

IMMORALITY → IMMORAL

2Co 12:21 sexual **i**, and licentiousness
Jude 1:7 indulged in sexual **i** and pursued
Sir 41:17 Be ashamed of sexual **i**,

IMMORTAL → IMMORTALITY

Ro 1:23 the glory of the **i** God for images
1Ti 1:17 To the King of the ages, **i**, invisible,

IMMORTALITY → IMMORTAL

1Co 15:53 and this mortal body must put on **i**.
1Ti 6:16 It is he alone who has **i** and dwells

IMPERISHABLE

1Co 9:25 a perishable wreath, but we an **i** one.
15:52 and the dead will be raised **i**,
1Pe 1:4 and into an inheritance that is **i**,

IMPORTANCE* → IMPORTANT

1Co 15:3 of first **i** what I in turn had received:

IMPORTANT → IMPORTANCE

Mk 12:33 much more **i** than all whole burnt

IMPOSSIBLE

Zec 8:6 should it also seem **i** to me,
Mt 17:20 and nothing will be **i** for you."
Mk 10:27 "For mortals it is **i**, but not for God;
Heb 11:6 without faith it is **i** to please God,

IMPURE* → IMPURITY

Eph 5:5 that no fornicator or **i** person,
1Th 2:3 not spring from deceit or **i** motives

IMPURITY → IMPURE

Zec 13:1 to cleanse them from sin and **i**.
Gal 5:19 fornication, **i**, licentiousness,
1Th 4:7 did not call us to **i** but in holiness.

INCENSE → FRANKINCENSE

Ex 25:6 anointing oil and for the fragrant **i**,

INCLINATION

Ge 6:5 and that every **i** of the thoughts
Ecc 11:9 Follow the **i** of your heart and

INCREASE → INCREASED

Ge 3:16 greatly **i** your pangs in childbearing;
Lk 17:5 said to the Lord, "**I** our faith!"
Jn 3:30 He must **i**, but I must decrease."

INCREASED → INCREASE

Ro 5:20 but where sin **i**, grace abounded all

INDEBTED* → DEBT

Lk 11:4 forgive everyone **i** to us.

INDEPENDENT*

1Co 11:11 not **i** of man or man **i** of woman.

INFANTS

Ps 8:2 Out of the mouths of babes and **i**
Mt 21:16 'Out of the mouths of **i** and nursing
1Co 14:20 **i** in evil, but in thinking be adults.

INFIRMITIES

Isa 53:4 borne our **i** and carried our diseases;
Mt 8:17 took our **i** and bore our diseases."

INGATHERING → GATHER

Ex 23:16 You shall observe the festival of **i**

INHERIT → INHERITANCE

Lev 20:24 You shall **i** their land,
Ps 37:11 But the meek shall **i** the land,
Zec 2:12 The Lord will **i** Judah as his portion
Lk 10:25 "what must I do to **i** eternal life?"
1Co 6:9 wrongdoers will not **i** the kingdom
Heb 1:14 sake of those who are to **i** salvation?

INHERITANCE → INHERIT

Ex 34:9 and take us for your **i**."
Eph 1:11 In Christ we have also obtained an **i**,
Heb 9:15 the promised eternal **i**,

INIQUITIES → INIQUITY

Lev 16:22 goat shall bear on itself all their **i**
Ps 103:10 nor repay us according to our **i**.
Isa 53:11 and he shall bear their **i**.
Ro 4:7 are those whose **i** are forgiven,
Rev 18:5 and God has remembered her **i**.

INIQUITY → INIQUITIES

Ex 34:7 forgiving **i** and transgression and sin
Ps 103:3 who forgives all your **i**,
Isa 53:6 Lord has laid on him the **i** of us all.
Tit 2:14 that he might redeem us from all **i**

INJURY

Lev 24:20 the **i** inflicted is the **i** to be suffered.

INJUSTICE

Hos 10:13 wickedness, you have reaped **i**,
Ro 9:14 Is there **i** on God's part?

INN*

Lk 2:7 there was no place for them in the **i**.
10:34 brought him to an **i**, and took care

INNER → INWARDLY

Mt 24:26 He is in the **i** rooms,' do not believe
2Co 4:16 our **i** nature is being renewed day
1Pe 3:4 let your adornment be the **i** self

INNOCENCE → INNOCENT

Ps 26:6 I wash my hands in **i**,
Hos 8:5 long will they be incapable of **i**?

INNOCENT → INNOCENCE

Pr 6:17 tongue, and hands that shed **i** blood,
Mt 10:16 be wise as serpents and **i** as doves.
27:24 "I am **i** of this man's blood;

INQUIRE → INQUIRED

Dt 12:30 do not **i** concerning their gods,

INQUIRED → INQUIRE

Zep 1:6 not sought the Lord or **i** of him.

INSCRIBED → INSCRIPTION

Da 10:21 what is **i** in the book of truth.
Rev 19:12 he has a name **i** that no one

INSCRIPTION → INSCRIBED

Mk 15:26 The **i** of the charge against him read,
2Ti 2:19 foundation stands, bearing this **i**:

INSIGHT

Pr 3:5 and do not rely on your own **i**.
Eph 1:8 With all wisdom and **i**
Sir 6:37 It is he who will give **i** to your mind,

INSPIRED

Ex 35:34 And he has **i** him to teach,
2Ti 3:16 All scripture is **i** by God and is

INSTITUTED → INSTITUTION

Ro 13:1 that exist have been **i** by God.

INSTITUTION* → INSTITUTED

Nu 10:8 this shall be a perpetual **i** for you
1Pe 2:13 the authority of every human **i**,

INSTRUCT → INSTRUCTED, INSTRUCTION, INSTRUCTOR

Dt 17:10 observing everything they **i** you.
Ne 9:20 You gave your good spirit to **i** them,
Ro 15:14 and able to **i** one another.
1Co 14:19 in order to **i** others also,

INSTRUCTED → INSTRUCT

Isa 40:13 or as his counselor has **i** him?
Jn 8:28 these things as the Father **i** me.

INSTRUCTION → INSTRUCT

Pr 8:10 Take my **i** instead of silver,
Mic 4:2 For out of Zion shall go forth **i**,
Ro 15:4 in former days was written for our **i**,
1Ti 1:5 But the aim of such **i** is love
Sir 51:26 and let your souls receive **i**;

INSTRUCTOR → INSTRUCT

Mt 23:10 for you have one **i**, the Messiah.

INSULTS

Ps 69:9 the **i** of those who insult you have
Lk 22:65 heaping many other **i** on him.
2Co 12:10 I am content with weaknesses, **i**,

INTEGRITY

Job 27:5 until I die I will not put away my **i**
Pr 14:32 the righteous find a refuge in their **i**.
Tit 2:7 and in your teaching show **i**, gravity,

INTELLIGENCE → INTELLIGENT

Pr 8:5 acquire **i**, you who lack it.
Sir 22:11 fool, for he has left **i** behind.

INTELLIGENT → INTELLIGENCE

Pr 11:12 but an **i** person remains silent.
Ecc 9:11 nor riches to the **i**,

INTENDED → INTENTIONS

Ge 50:20 **i** to do harm to me, God **i** it for good,
Jer 18:10 the good that I had **i** to do to it.

INTENTIONS → INTENDED

Mk 7:21 the human heart, that evil **i** come:
Heb 4:12 judge the thoughts and **i** of the heart.

INTERCEDES → INTERCESSION

Ro 8:26 Spirit **i** with sighs too deep for

INTERCESSION* → INTERCEDES

1Sa 2:25 against the Lord, who can make **i**?"
Isa 53:12 and made **i** for the transgressors.
Heb 7:25 he always lives to make **i** for them.

INTERMARRY → MARRIAGE

Dt 7:3 Do not **i** with them, giving your

INTERPRET → INTERPRETATION, INTERPRETATIONS

Ge 41:15 no one who can **i** it.
Mt 16:3 cannot **i** the signs of the times.
1Co 12:30 Do all speak in tongues? Do all **i**?

INTERPRETATION → INTERPRET

Da 2:4 and we will reveal the **i**."

1Co 12:10 to another the **i** of tongues.
2Pe 1:20 scripture is a matter of one's own **i,**
2Es 12:10 "This is the **i** of this vision

INTERPRETATIONS → INTERPRET

Ge 40:8 to them, "Do not **i** belong to God?

INVADE → INVADED

La 1:10 the nations **i** her sanctuary,
Na 1:15 never again shall the wicked **i** you;

INVADED → INVADE

2Ki 17:5 the king of Assyria **i** all the land

INVISIBLE

Col 1:15 He is the image of the **i** God,
1Ti 1:17 To the King of the ages, immortal, **i,**

INVITE → INVITED, INVITES

Lk 14:13 when you give a banquet, **i** the poor,

INVITED → INVITE

Rev 19:9 Blessed are those who are **i** to

INVITES → INVITE

1Co 10:27 If an unbeliever **i** you to a meal
Sir 13:9 When an influential person **i** you,

INVOKE

Ex 23:13 Do not **i** the names of other gods;
1Pe 1:17 If you **i** as Father the one who

INWARDLY → INNER

Ro 2:29 a person is a Jew who is one **i,**
8:23 groan **i** while we wait for adoption,

IRON

Ps 2:9 shall break them with a rod of **i,**
Pr 27:17 **I** sharpens **i,** and one person
Da 2:33 its legs of **i,** its feet partly of **i**
Rev 19:15 he will rule them with a rod of **i;**

IRREVOCABLE

Ro 11:29 gifts and the calling of God are **i.**

ISAAC

Son of Abraham by Sarah (Ge 17:19; 21:1-7; 1Ch 1:28). Abrahamic covenant perpetuated with (Ge 17:21; 26:2-5). Offered up by Abraham (Ge 22; Heb 11:17-19). Rebekah taken as wife (Ge 24). Inherited Abraham's estate (Ge 25:5). Father of Esau and Jacob (Ge 25:19-26; 1Ch 1:34). Nearly lost Rebekah to Abimelech (Ge 26:1-11). Covenant with Abimelech (Ge 26:12-31). Tricked into blessing Jacob (Ge 27). Death (Ge 35:27-29). Father of Israel (Ex 3:6; Dt 29:13; Ro 9:10).

ISAIAH

Prophet to Judah (Isa 1:1). Called by the Lord (Isa 6). Announced judgment to Ahaz (Isa 7), deliverance from Assyria to Hezekiah (2Ki 19; Isa 36-37), deliverance from death to Hezekiah (2Ki 20:1-11; Isa 38). Chronicler of Judah's history (2Ch 26:22; 32:32).

ISCARIOT

Mt 10:4 Judas **I,** the one who betrayed him.
Lk 22:3 Satan entered into Judas called **I,**

ISHBAAL*

Son of Saul; would-be king (2Sa 2:8-4:12).

ISHMAEL

Son of Abraham by Hagar (Ge 16; 1Ch 1:28). Blessed, but not son of covenant (Ge 17:18-21; Gal 4:21-31). Sent away by Sarah (Ge 21:8-21). Children (Ge 25:12-18; 1Ch 1:29-31). Death (Ge 25:17).

ISRAEL → ISRAELITE, ISRAELITES, =JACOB

1. Name given to Jacob (Ge 32:28; 35:10).
2. Corporate name of Jacob's descendants; often specifically Northern Kingdom.

Ge 49:28 All these are the twelve tribes of **I,**
Ex 28:11 with the names of the sons of **I;**
Nu 24:17 and a scepter shall rise out of **I;**
Dt 6:4 Hear, O **I:** The Lord is our God,
Ps 125:5 Peace be upon **I!**
Jer 31:31 a new covenant with the house of **I**
Hos 11:1 When **I** was a child, I loved him,
Mt 2:6 who is to shepherd my people **I.'"**
Mk 12:29 answered, "The first is, 'Hear, O **I:**
Lk 22:30 judging the twelve tribes of **I.**
Ac 1:6 you will restore the kingdom to **I?"**
Ro 9:6 not all Israelites truly belong to **I,**
Heb 8:8 a new covenant with the house of **I**
Rev 7:4 out of every tribe of the people of **I:**
Sir 17:17 but **I** is the Lord's own portion.

ISRAELITE → ISRAEL

Jn 1:47 an **I** in whom there is no deceit!"
Ro 11:1 I myself am an **I,** a descendant of

ISRAELITES → ISRAEL

Ex 2:23 The **I** groaned under their slavery,
29:45 I will dwell among the **I,** and I will

ISSACHAR

Son of Jacob by Leah (Ge 30:18; 35:23; 1Ch 2:1). Tribe of blessed (Ge 49:14-15; Dt 33:18-19), numbered (Nu 1:29; 26:25), allotted land (Jos 19:17-23; Eze 48:25), assisted Deborah (Jdg 5:15), 12,000 from (Rev 7:7).

ITCHING

2Ti 4:3 sound doctrine, but having **i** ears,

J

JACOB → =ISRAEL

1. Son of Isaac, younger twin of Esau (Ge 26:21-26; 1Ch 1:34). Bought Esau's birthright (Ge 26:29-34); tricked Isaac into blessing him (Ge 27:1-37). Fled to Haran (Ge 28:1-5). Abrahamic covenant perpetuated through (Ge 28:13-15; Mal 1:2). Vision at Bethel (Ge 28:10-22). Served Laban for Rachel and Leah (Ge 29:1-30). Children (Ge 29:31-30:24; 35:16-26; 1Ch 2-9). Flocks increased (Ge 30:25-43). Returned to Canaan (Ge 31). Wrestled with God; name changed to Israel (Ge 32:22-32). Reconciled to Esau (Ge 33). Returned to Bethel (Ge 35:1-15). Favored Joseph (Ge 37:3). Sent sons to Egypt during famine (Ge 42-43). Settled in Egypt (Ge 46). Blessed Ephraim and Manasseh (Ge 48). Blessed sons (Ge 49:1-28; Heb 11:21). Death (Ge 49:29-33). Burial (Ge 50:1-14).
2. Corporate name of Jacob's descendants; often specifically Northern Kingdom.

Ps 135:4 the Lord has chosen **J** for himself,
Mic 7:20 You will show faithfulness to **J**
Ro 9:13 "I have loved **J,**
1Mc 1:28 house of **J** was clothed with shame.

JAEL*

Woman who killed the Canaanite general, Sisera (Jdg 4:17-22; 5:6, 24-27).

JAIRUS

Synagogue ruler whose daughter Jesus raised (Mk 5:22-43; Lk 8:41-56).

JAMES

1. Apostle; brother of John (Mt 4:21-22; 10:2; Mk 3:17; Lk 5:1-10). At transfiguration (Mt 17:1-13; Mk 9:1-13; Lk 9:28-36). Killed by Herod (Ac 12:2).
2. Apostle (Mt 10:3; Mk 3:18; Lk 6:15).
3. Brother of Jesus (Mt 13:55; Mk 6:3; Lk 24:10; Gal 1:19) and Judas (Jude 1). With believers before Pentecost (Ac 1:13). Leader of church at Jerusalem (Ac 12:17; 15; 21:18; Gal 2:9, 12). Author of epistle (Jas 1:1).

JAPHETH

Son of Noah (Ge 5:32; 1Ch 1:4-5). Blessed (Ge 9:18-28). Sons of (Ge 10:2-5).

JAR → JARS

1Ki 17:14 The **j** of meal will not be emptied
Mk 14:3 alabaster **j** of very costly ointment
Lk 22:10 man carrying a **j** of water will meet

JARS → JAR

Jn 2:6 there were six stone water **j** for
2Co 4:7 But we have this treasure in clay **j,**

JEALOUS

Ex 34:14 whose name is **J,** is a **j** God).
Dt 4:24 God is a devouring fire, a **j** God.
32:16 They made him **j** with strange gods,
Eze 39:25 and I will be **j** for my holy name.
Ro 10:19 "I will make you **j** of those

JEBUSITES

Ex 3:8 the Perizzites, the Hivites, and the **J.**
Jos 15:63 Judah could not drive out the **J,**

JECONIAH → SEE JEHOIACHIN

JEHOAHAZ

1. Son of Jehu; king of Israel (2Ki 13:1-9).
2. Son of Josiah; king of Judah (2Ki 23:31-34; 2Ch 36:1-4).

JEHOASH → =JOASH

1. Son of Ahaziah, king of Judah (2Ki 12). See Joash, 1.
2. Son of Jehoahaz; king of Israel. Defeat of Aram prophesied by Elisha (2Ki 13:10-25). Defeated Amaziah in Jerusalem (2Ki 14:1-16). See Joash, 2.

JEHOIACHIN → =CONIAH, =JECONIAH

Son of Jehoiakim; king of Judah exiled by Nebuchadnezzar (2Ki 24:8-17; 2Ch 36:8-10; Eze 1:2). Status improved (2Ki 25:27-30; Jer 52:31-34).

JEHOIADA

Priest who sheltered Joash from Athaliah (2Ki 11-12; 2Ch 22:11-24:16).

JEHOIAKIM → =ELIAKIM

Son of Josiah; made king of Judah by Nebuchadnezzar (2Ki 23:34-24:6; 2Ch 36:4-8; Jer 22:18-23). Burned scroll of Jeremiah's prophecies (Jer 36).

JEHORAM → =JORAM

1. Son of Jehoshaphat; king of Judah. Prophesied against by Elijah; killed by the Lord (2Ch 21). See Joram, 1.
2. Son of Ahab; king of Israel (2Ch 22:5). Joined Jehoshaphat against Moab (2Ki 3). See Joram, 2.

JEHOSHAPHAT

1. Son of Asa; king of Judah. Strengthened his kingdom (2Ch 17). Joined with Ahab against Aram (2Ki 22; 2Ch 18). Established judges (2Ch 19). Joined Joram against Moab (2Ki 3; 2Ch 20).
2. Valley of judgment (Joel 3:2, 12).

JEHU

1. Prophet against Baasha (2Ki 16:1-7).
2. King of Israel. Anointed by Elijah to obliterate house of Ahab (1Ki 19:16-17); anointed by servant of Elisha (2Ki 9:1-13). Killed Joram and Ahaziah (2Ki 9:14-29; 2Ch 22:7-9), Jezebel (2Ki 9:30-37), relatives of Ahab (2Ki 10:1-17; Hos 1:4), ministers of Baal (2Ki 10:18-29). Death (2Ki 10:30-36).

JEPHTHAH

Judge from Gilead who delivered Israel from Ammon (Jdg 10:6-12:7). Made rash vow concerning his daughter (Jdg 11:30-40).

JEREMIAH

Prophet to Judah (Jer 1:1-3). Called by the Lord (Jer 1). Put in stocks (Jer 20:1-3). Threatened for prophesying (Jer 11:18-23; 26). Opposed by Hananiah (Jer 28). Scroll burned (Jer 36). Imprisoned (Jer 37). Thrown into cistern (Jer 38). Forced to Egypt with those fleeing Babylonians (Jer 43).

JERICHO

Jos 6:2 "See, I have handed **J** over to you,
1Ki 16:34 In his days Hiel of Bethel built **J;**
Lk 18:35 As he approached **J,** a blind man

JEROBOAM

1. Official of Solomon; rebelled to become first king of Israel (1Ki 11:26–40; 12:1–20; 2Ch 10). Idolatry (1Ki 12:25–33; Tob 1:5; Sir 47:23); judgment for (1Ki 13–14; 2Ch 13).

2. Son of Jehoash; king of Israel (1Ki 14:23–29).

JERUSALEM

2Sa 5:5 and at **J** he reigned over all Israel
15:29 carried the ark of God back to **J,**
2Ki 25:10 broke down the walls around **J.**
Ezr 2:1 they returned to **J** and Judah,
Ne 2:17 Come, let us rebuild the wall of **J,**
Isa 40:2 Speak tenderly to **J,**
La 1:8 **J** sinned grievously, so she has
Da 9:25 went out to restore and rebuild **J**
Joel 3:1 I restore the fortunes of Judah and **J,**
Mic 4:2 and the word of the LORD from **J.**
Zec 1:14 I am very jealous for **J** and for Zion.
14:8 living waters shall flow out from **J,**
Mt 23:37 **"J, J,** the city that kills the prophets
Lk 4:9 Then the devil took him to **J,**
Gal 4:25 corresponds to the present **J,**
Heb 12:22 of the living God, the heavenly **J,**
Rev 21:2 And I saw the holy city, the new **J,**
1Mc 1:29 and he came to **J** with a large force.

JESSE

Father of David (Ru 4:17–22; 1Sa 16; 1Ch 2:12–17).

JESUS

1. Jesus the Messiah.

LIFE: Genealogy (Mt 1:1–17; Lk 3:21–37). Birth announced (Mt 1:18–25; Lk 1:26–45). Birth (Mt 2:1–12; Lk 2:1–40). Escape to Egypt (Mt 2:13–23). As a boy in the temple (Lk 2:41–52). Baptism (Mt 3:13–17; Mk 1:9–11; Lk 3:21–22; Jn 1:32–34). Temptation (Mt 4:1–11; Mk 1:12–13; Lk 4:1–13). Ministry in Galilee (Mt 4:12–18:35; Mk 1:14–9:50; Lk 4:14–13:9; Jn 1:35–2:11; 4; 6), Transfiguration (Mt 17:1–8; Mk 9:2–8; Lk 9:28–36), on the way to Jerusalem (Mt 19–20; Mk 10; Lk 13:10–19:27), in Jerusalem (Mt 21–25; Mk 11–13; Lk 19:28–21:38; Jn 2:12–3:36; 5; 7–12). Last supper (Mt 26:17–35; Mk 14:12–31; Lk 22:1–38; Jn 13–17). Arrest and trial (Mt 26:36–27:31; Mk 14:43–15:20; Lk 22:39–23:25; Jn 18:1–19:16). Crucifixion (Mt 27:32–66; Mk 15:21–47; Lk 23:26–55; Jn 19:28–42). Resurrection and appearances (Mt 28; Mk 16; Lk 24; Jn 20–21; Ac 1:1–11; 7:56; 9:3–6; 1Co 15:1–8; Rev 1:1–20).

MIRACLES. *Healings:* official's son (Jn 4:43–54), demoniac in Capernaum (Mk 1:23–26; Lk 4:33–35), Peter's mother-in-law (Mt 8:14–17; Mk 1:29–31; Lk 4:38–39), leper (Mt 8:2–4; Mk 1:40–45; Lk 5:12–16), paralytic (Mt 9:1–8; Mk 2:1–12; Lk 5:17–26), cripple (Jn 5:1–9), shriveled hand (Mt 12:10–13; Mk 3:1–5; Lk 6:6–11), centurion's servant (Mt 8:5–13; Lk 7:1–10), widow's son raised (Lk 7:11–17), demoniac (Mt 12:22–23; Lk 11:14), Gadarene demoniacs (Mt 8:28–34; Mk 5:1–20; Lk 8:26–39), woman's bleeding and Jairus' daughter (Mt 9:18–26; Mk 5:21–43; Lk 8:40–56), blind man (Mt 9:27–31), mute man (Mt 9:32–33), Canaanite woman's daughter (Mt 15:21–28; Mk 7:24–30), deaf man (Mk 7:31–37), blind man (Mk 8:22–26), demoniac boy (Mt 17:14–18; Mk 9:14–29; Lk 9:37–43), ten lepers (Lk 17:11–19), man born blind (Jn 9:1–7), Lazarus raised (Jn 11), crippled woman (Lk 13:11–17), man with dropsy (Lk 14:1–6), two blind men (Mt 20:29–34; Mk 10:46–52; Lk 18:35–43), Malchus' ear (Lk 22:50–51). *Other Miracles:* water to wine (Jn 2:1–11), catch of fish (Lk 5:1–11), storm stilled (Mt 8:23–27; Mk 4:37–41; Lk 8:22–25), 5,000 fed (Mt 14:15–21; Mk 6:35–44; Lk 9:10–17; Jn 6:1–14), walking on water (Mt 14:25–33; Mk 6:48–52; Jn 6:15–21), 4,000 fed (Mt 15:32–39; Mk 8:1–9), money from fish (Mt 17:24–27), fig tree cursed (Mt 21:18–22; Mk 11:12–14), catch of fish (Jn 21:1–14).

MAJOR TEACHING: Sermon on the Mount (Mt 5–7; Lk 6:17–49), to Nicodemus (Jn 3), to Samaritan woman (Jn 4), Bread of Life (Jn 6:22–59), at Feast of Tabernacles (Jn 7–8), woes to Pharisees (Mt 23; Lk 11:37–54), Good Shepherd (Jn 10:1–18), Olivet Discourse (Mt 24–25; Mk 13; Lk 21:5–36), Upper Room Discourse (Jn 13–16).

PARABLES: Sower (Mt 13:3–23; Mk 4:3–25; Lk 8:5–18), seed's growth (Mk 4:26–29), wheat and weeds (Mt 13:24–30, 36–43), mustard seed (Mt 13:31–32; Mk 4:30–32), yeast (Mt 13:33; Lk 13:20–21), hidden treasure (Mt 13:44), valuable pearl (Mt 13:45–46), net (Mt 13:47–51), house owner (Mt 13:52), good Samaritan (Lk 10:25–37), unmerciful servant (Mt 18:15–35), lost sheep (Mt 18:10–14; Lk 15:4–7), lost coin (Lk 15:8–10), prodigal son (Lk 15:11–32), dishonest manager (Lk 16:1–13), rich man and Lazarus (Lk 16:19–31), persistent widow (Lk 18:1–8), Pharisee and tax collector (Lk 18:9–14), payment of workers (Mt 20:1–16), tenants and the vineyard (Mt 21:28–46; Mt 12:1–12; Lk 20:9–19), wedding banquet (Mt 22:1–14), faithful servant (Mt 24:45–51), ten virgins (Mt 25:1–13), talents (Mt 25:1–30; Lk 19:12–27).

DISCIPLES see APOSTLES. Call (Jn 1:35–51; Mt 4:18–22; 9:9; Mk 1:16–20; 2:13–14; Lk 5:1–11, 27–28). Named Apostles (Mk 3:13–19; Lk 6:12–16). Twelve sent out (Mt 10; Mk 6:7–11; Lk 9:1–5). Seventy sent out (Lk 10:1–24). Defection of (Jn 6:60–71; Mt 26:56; Mk 14:50–52). Final commission (Mt 28:16–20; Jn 21:15–23; Ac 1:3–8).

Ac 9:5 "I am **J,** whom you are persecuting.
1Co 8:6 and one Lord, **J** Christ,
Php 2:10 name of **J** every knee should bend,
2Th 2:1 the coming of our Lord **J** Christ
1Ti 1:15 **J** came into the world to save
Heb 12:2 to **J** the pioneer and perfecter of our
13:8 **J** Christ is the same yesterday and
1Jn 1:7 the blood of **J** his Son cleanses us
Rev 1:1 The revelation of **J** Christ,
22:20 Amen. Come, Lord **J!**

2. Disciple, also called Justus (Col 4:11).

3. Writer of Sirach (Sir Pr:1; 50:27; 51:1).

JETHRO

Father-in-law and adviser of Moses (Ex 3:1; 4:18; 18). Also known as Reuel (Ex 2:18).

JEW → JEWS, JUDAISM

Est 10:3 Mordecai the **J** was next in rank to
Zec 8:23 shall take hold of a **J,**
Ro 1:16 to the **J** first and also to the Greek.
2:29 a person is a **J** who is one inwardly,
1Co 9:20 To the Jews I became as a **J,**
Col 3:11 there is no longer Greek and **J,**

JEWEL → JEWELS

Pr 20:15 by knowledge are a precious **j.**
Rev 21:19 of the city are adorned with every **j;**

JEWELS → JEWEL

Pr 3:15 She is more precious than **j,**
Isa 54:12 your gates of **j,** and all your wall
Rev 17:4 adorned with gold and **j** and pearls,

JEWS → JEW

Ne 4:1 enraged, and he mocked the **J.**
Est 3:13 to kill, and to annihilate all **J,**
Mt 2:2 who has been born king of the **J?**
27:11 "Are you the King of the **J?"**
Jn 4:22 for salvation is from the **J.**
Ro 3:29 Or is God the God of **J** only?

JEZEBEL*

Sidonian wife of Ahab (1Ki 16:31). Promoted Baal worship (1Ki 16:32–33). Killed prophets of the LORD (1Ki 18:4, 13). Opposed Elijah (1Ki 19:1–2). Had Naboth killed (1Ki 21). Death (1Ki 21:17–24; 2Ki 9:30–37). Metaphor of immorality (Rev 2:20).

JEZREEL

2Ki 10:7 in baskets and sent them to him at **J.**
Hos 1:4 the LORD said to him, "Name him **J;**

JOAB

Nephew of David (1Ch 2:16). Commander of his army (2Sa 8:16). Victorious over Ammon (2Sa 10; 1Ch 19), Rabbah (2Sa 11; 1Ch 20), Jerusalem (1Ch 11:6), Absalom (2Sa 18), Sheba (2Sa 20). Killed Abner (2Sa 3:22–39), Amasa (2Sa 20:1–13). Numbered David's army (2Sa 24; 1Ch 21). Sided with Adonijah (1Ki 1:17, 19). Killed by Benaiah (1Ki 2:5–6, 28–35).

JOASH → =JEHOASH

1. Son of Ahaziah; king of Judah. Sheltered from Athaliah by Jehoiada (2Ki 11; 2Ch 22:10–23:21). Repaired temple (2Ch 24). See Jehoash, 1.

2. Son of Jehoahaz, king of Israel (2Ki 13; 2Ch 25:17–25). See Jehoash, 2.

JOB

Wealthy man from Uz; feared God (Job 1:1–5). Integrity tested by disaster (Job 1:6–22), personal affliction (Job 2). Maintained innocence in debate with three friends (Job 3–31), Elihu (Job 32–37). Rebuked by the LORD (Job 38–41). Vindicated and restored to greater stature by the LORD (Job 42). Example of righteousness (Eze 14:14, 20; Sir 49:9).

JOEL

1. Son of Samuel (1Sa 8:2; 1Ch 6:28).

2. Prophet (Joel 1:1; Ac 2:16).

JOHANAN

1. First high priest in the temple (1Ch 6:9–10).

2. Jewish leader who tried to save Gedaliah from assassination (Jer 40:13–14); took Jews, including Jeremiah, to Egypt (Jer 40–43).

JOHN

1. Son of Zechariah and Elizabeth (Lk 1). Called the Baptist (Mt 3:1–12; Mk 1:2–8). Witness to Jesus (Mt 3:11–12; Mk 1:7–8; Lk 3:15–18; Jn 1:6–35; 3:27–30; 5:33–36). Doubts about Jesus (Mt 11:2–6; Lk 7:18–23). Arrest (Mt 4:12; Mk 1:14). Execution (Mt 14:1–12; Mk 6:14–29; Lk 9:7–9). Ministry compared to Elijah (Mt 11:7–19; Mk 9:11–13; Lk 7:24–35).

2. Apostle; brother of James (Mt 4:21–22; 10:2; Mk 3:17; Lk 5:1–10). At transfiguration (Mt 17:1–13; Mk 9:1–13; Lk 9:28–36). Desire to be greatest (Mk 10:35–45). Leader of church at Jerusalem (Ac 4:1–3; Gal 2:9). Elder who wrote epistles (2Jn 1; 3Jn 1). Prophet who wrote Revelation (Rev 1:1; 22:8).

3. Cousin of Barnabas, co-worker with Paul, (Ac 12:12–13:13; 15:37; see Mark).

4. Son of Simon Maccabeus (1Mc 13:53; 16).

JOIN → JOINED

Eze 37:17 and **j** them together into one stick,
2Ti 1:8 **j** with me in suffering for the gospel

JOINED → JOIN

Mt 19:6 what God has **j** together, let no one
Eph 2:21 the whole structure is **j** together and

JOINT → JOINTS

Ge 32:25 and Jacob's hip was put out of **j**
Ps 22:14 and all my bones are out of **j;**
Ro 8:17 heirs of God and **j** heirs with Christ

JOINTS → JOINT

Heb 4:12 soul from spirit, **j** from marrow;

JONAH

Prophet in days of Jeroboam II (2Ki 14:25). Called to Nineveh; fled to Tarshish (Jnh 1:1–3). Cause of storm; thrown into sea (Jnh 1:4–16). Swallowed by fish (Jnh 1:17). Prayer (Jnh 2). Preached to Nineveh (Jnh 3). Attitude reproved by the LORD (Jnh 4). Sign of (Mt 12:39–41; Lk 11:29–32).

JONATHAN

1. Son of Saul (1Sa 13:16; 1Ch 8:33). Valiant warrior (1Sa 13–14). Relation to David (1Sa 18:1–4; 19–20; 23:16–18). Killed at Gilboa (1Sa 31). Mourned by David (2Sa 1).

2. Brother and successor of Judas Maccabeus (1Mc 2:5; 9:28–31).

JOPPA

Jnh 1:3 down to **J** and found a ship going
Ac 9:43 he stayed in **J** for some time with

JORAM → =JEHORAM

1. Son of Jehoshaphat; king of Judah (2Ki 8:16–24). See Jehoram, 1.

2. Son of Ahab; king of Israel. Killed with Ahaziah

by Jehu (2Ki 8:25-29; 9:14-26; 2Ch 22:5-9). See Jehoram, 2.

JORDAN

Ge 13:10 the plain of the **J** was well watered
Nu 34:12 the boundary shall go down to the **J,**
Jos 3:17 dry ground in the middle of the **J,**
Mt 3:6 were baptized by him in the river **J,**

JOSEPH → =BARNABAS, =BARSABBAS

1. Son of Jacob by Rachel (Ge 30:24; 1Ch 2:2). Favored by Jacob, hated by brothers (Ge 37:3-4). Dreams (Ge 37:5-11). Sold by brothers (Ge 37:12-36). Served Potiphar; imprisoned by false accusation (Ge 39). Interpreted dreams of Pharaoh's servants (Ge 40), of Pharaoh (Ge 41:4-40). Made greatest in Egypt (Ge 41:41-57). Sold grain to brothers (Ge 42-45). Brought Jacob and sons to Egypt (Ge 46-47). Sons Ephraim and Manasseh blessed (Ge 48). Blessed (Ge 49:22-26; Dt 33:13-17). Death (Ge 50:22-26; Ex 13:19; Heb 11:22). 12,000 from (Rev 7:8).

2. Husband of Mary mother of Jesus (Mt 1:16-24; 2:13-19; Lk 1:27; 2; Jn 1:45).

3. Disciple from Arimathea; buried Jesus in his tomb (Mt 27:57-61; Mk 15:43-47; Lk 24:50-52).

4. Original name of Barnabas (Ac 4:36).

JOSHUA → =HOSHEA, =JESHUA

1. Son of Nun; name changed from Hoshea (Nu 13:8, 16; 1Ch 7:27). Fought Amalekites under Moses (Ex 17:9-14). Servant of Moses on Sinai (Ex 24:13; 32:17). Spied Canaan (Nu 13). With Caleb, allowed to enter land (Nu 14:6, 30). Succeeded Moses (Dt 1:38; 31:1-8; 34:9).

Charged Israel to conquer Canaan (Jos 1). Crossed Jordan (Jos 3-4). Circumcised sons of wilderness wanderings (Jos 5). Conquered Jericho (Jos 6), Ai (Jos 7-8), five kings at Gibeon (Jos 10:1-28), southern Canaan (Jos 10:29-43), northern Canaan (Jos 11-12). Defeated at Ai (Jos 7). Deceived by Gibeonites (Jos 9). Renewed covenant (Jos 8:30-35; 24:1-27). Divided land among tribes (Jos 13-22). Last words (Jos 23). Death (Jos 24:28-31).

2. High priest during rebuilding of temple (Hag 1-2; Zec 3:1-9; 6:11). See Jeshua.

JOSIAH

Son of Amon; king of Judah (2Ki 21:26; 1Ch 3:14). Prophesied (1Ki 13:2). Book of the Law discovered during his reign (2Ki 22; 2Ch 34:14-31). Reforms (2Ki 23:1-25; 2Ch 34:1-13; 35:1-19; Sir 49:1-4). Killed in battle (2Ki 23:29-30; 2Ch 35:20-27).

JOTHAM

1. Son of Gideon (Jdg 9).

2. Son of Azariah (Uzziah); king of Judah (2Ki 15:32-38; 2Ch 26:21-27:9).

JOY → JOYFUL

Ne 8:10 the **j** of the LORD is your strength."
Job 20:5 **j** of the godless is but for a moment?
Ps 51:12 Restore to me the **j** of your salvation
Pr 21:15 When justice is done, it is a **j** to the
Isa 12:3 With **j** you will draw water from
35:10 everlasting **j** shall be upon their
La 2:15 of beauty, the **j** of all the earth?"
Mt 28:8 tomb quickly with fear and great **j,**
Mk 4:16 they immediately receive it with **j.**
Lk 1:44 the child in my womb leaped for **j.**
2:10 bringing you good news of great **j**
Jn 16:22 no one will take your **j** from you.
Ro 14:17 but righteousness and peace and **j** in
Gal 5:22 the fruit of the Spirit is love, **j,**
Php 4:1 I love and long for, my **j** and crown,
Heb 12:2 **j** that was set before him endured
Jas 1:2 consider it nothing but **j,**
Tob 13:17 Jerusalem will sing hymns of **j,**
Bar 5:9 For God will lead Israel with **j,**

JOYFUL → JOY

Ps 98:4 Make a **j** noise to the LORD,
Jdt 14:9 and made a **j** noise in their town.

JUBILEE

Lev 25:10 It shall be a **j** for you:
Nu 36:4 when the **j** of the Israelites comes,

JUDAH → JUDEA

1. Son of Jacob by Leah (Ge 29:35; 35:23; 1Ch 2:1). Did not want to kill Joseph (Ge 37:26-27). Among Canaanites, fathered Perez by Tamar (Ge 38). Tribe of blessed as ruling tribe (Ge 49:8-12; Dt 33:7), numbered (Nu 1:27; 26:22), allotted land (Jos 15; Eze 48:7), failed to fully possess (Jos 15:63; Jdg 1:1-20).

2. Name used for Southern Kingdom.
2Sa 2:4 David king over the house of **J.**
La 1:3 **J** has gone into exile with suffering
Joel 3:1 when I restore the fortunes of **J** and
Mic 5:2 who are one of the little clans of **J,**
Mt 2:6 least among the rulers of **J;**
Heb 7:14 our Lord was descended from **J,**
Rev 5:5 See, the Lion of the tribe of **J,**

JUDAISM → JEW

Ac 13:43 devout converts to **J** followed Paul
Gal 1:13 no doubt, of my earlier life in **J.**

JUDAS → =BARSABBAS, =JUDE, =THADDAEUS, MACCABEUS

1. Apostle; son of James (Lk 6:16; Jn 14:22; Ac 1:13). Probably also called Thaddaeus (Mt 10:3; Mk 3:18).

2. Brother of James and Jesus (Mt 13:55; Mk 6:3), also called Jude (Jude 1).

3. Christian prophet (Ac 15:22-32).

4. Apostle, also called Iscariot, who betrayed Jesus (Mt 10:4; 26:14-56; Mk 3:19; 14:10-50; Lk 6:16; 22:3-53; Jn 6:71; 12:4; 13:2-30; 18:2-11). Suicide of (Mt 27:3-5; Ac 1:16-25).

5. Leader of the Maccabean revolt (1Mc 2:4, 66). Recaptured Jerusalem and rededicated the temple and altar (1Mc 4:36-61). Death of (1Mc 9).

JUDE → SEE JUDAS, 2

JUDEA → JUDAH

Mt 2:1 Jesus was born in Bethlehem of **J,**
Lk 3:1 Pontius Pilate was governor of **J,**
Ac 1:8 my witnesses in Jerusalem, in all **J**

JUDGE → JUDGED, JUDGES, JUDGMENT, JUDGMENTS

Ge 16:5 the LORD **j** between you and me!"
Ex 2:14 made you a ruler and **j** over us?
1Sa 2:10 LORD will **j** the ends of the earth;
Ps 96:13 for he is coming to **j** the earth.
Isa 11:3 He shall not **j** by what his eyes see,
Jer 11:20 O LORD of hosts, who **j** righteously,
Eze 34:17 I shall **j** between sheep and sheep,
Lk 6:37 not **j,** and you will not be judged;
Jn 7:24 Do not **j** by appearances,
18:31 "Take him yourselves and **j** him
Ac 4:19 rather than to God, you must **j;**
Ro 3:6 then how could God **j** the world?
1Co 6:2 that the saints will **j** the world?
2Ti 4:1 who is to **j** the living and the dead,
Heb 12:23 and to God the **j** of all,
Jas 5:9 See, the **J** is standing at the doors!
Rev 20:4 on them were given authority to **j.**
Sir 35:15 for the Lord is the **j,**

JUDGED → JUDGE

Mt 7:1 not judge, so that you may not be **j.**
1Co 11:31 if we **j** ourselves, we would not be **j.**
Jas 3:1 know that we who teach will be **j**
Rev 20:12 dead were **j** according to their works

JUDGES → JUDGE

Jdg 2:16 Then the LORD raised up **j,**
Lk 11:19 Therefore they will be your **j.**
Jas 4:11 evil against the law and **j** the law;
Rev 19:11 righteousness he **j** and makes war.
Sir 16:12 **j** a person according to one's deeds.

JUDGMENT → JUDGE

Ex 6:6 arm and with mighty acts of **j.**
Ps 1:5 wicked will not stand in the **j,**
119:66 Teach me good **j** and knowledge,
Ecc 12:14 God will bring every deed into **j,**
Jer 25:31 he is entering into **j** with all flesh,
Da 7:22 **j** was given for the holy ones of the
Mal 3:5 Then I will draw near to you for **j;**
Mt 11:24 day of **j** it will be more tolerable for
Jn 16:11 about **j,** because the ruler
Ro 14:10 we will all stand before the **j** seat of
2Co 5:10 all of us must appear before the **j**
Heb 9:27 to die once, and after that the **j,**
10:27 but a fearful prospect of **j,**
Jas 2:13 mercy triumphs over **j.**
1Pe 4:17 for **j** to begin with the household of
1Jn 4:17 may have boldness on the day of **j,**
Rev 18:10 For in one hour your **j** has come."
Wis 12:12 Or will resist your **j?**
Sir 18:20 Before **j** comes, examine yourself;
2Es 7:70 the things that pertain to the **j.**

JUDGMENTS → JUDGE

Ps 119:75 LORD, that your **j** are right,
Ro 11:33 How unsearchable are his **j** and
Rev 19:2 for his **j** are true and just;

JUDITH

Virtuous widow and heroine of the deuterocanonical book of Judith (Jdt 8-16).

JUST → JUSTICE, JUSTIFICATION, JUSTIFIED, JUSTIFY

Ge 18:25 Judge of all the earth do what is **j?"**
Dt 32:4 without deceit, **j** and upright is he;
Ps 111:7 works of his hands are faithful and **j**
Eze 33:17 "The way of the Lord is not **j,"**
Ro 7:12 the commandment is holy and **j** and
1Jn 1:9 he who is faithful and **j** will forgive
Rev 15:3 **J** and true are your ways, King of
Tob 3:2 O Lord, and all your deeds are **j;**
Sir 18:2 the Lord alone is **j.**

JUSTICE → JUST

Ex 23:6 not pervert the **j** due to your poor
1Ki 7:7 pronounce judgment, the Hall of **J,**
Job 19:7 I call aloud, but there is no **j.**
37:23 he is great in power and **j,**
Ps 33:5 He loves righteousness and **j;**
106:3 Happy are those who observe **j,**
Pr 21:15 **j** is done, it is a joy to the righteous,
Isa 30:18 For the LORD is a God of **j;**
42:4 until he has established **j** in the earth
Jer 9:24 I act with steadfast love, **j,**
Hos 12:6 to your God, hold fast to love and **j,**
Am 5:24 But let **j** roll down like waters,
Mal 2:17 by asking, "Where is the God of **j?"**
Lk 11:42 and neglect **j** and the love of God;

JUSTIFICATION → JUST

Ro 4:25 trespasses and was raised for our **j.**
2Co 3:9 more does the ministry of **j** abound
Gal 2:21 for if **j** comes through the law,

JUSTIFIED → JUST

Job 32:2 he **j** himself rather than God;
Mt 12:37 for by your words you will be **j,**
Ro 3:24 they are now **j** by his grace as a gift,
5:1 Therefore, since we are **j** by faith,
10:10 believes with the heart and so is **j,**
Gal 2:16 that we might be **j** by faith in Christ,
Jas 2:24 is **j** by works and not by faith alone.

JUSTIFY → JUST

Ro 3:30 and he will **j** the circumcised on the
Gal 3:8 that God would **j** the Gentiles

K

KADESH → KADESH-BARNEA

Nu 20:1 and the people stayed in **K.**
Dt 1:46 you had stayed at **K** as many days

KADESH-BARNEA → KADESH

Nu 32:8 sent them from **K** to see the land.

KEEP → KEEPER, KEEPS, KEPT

Ge 17:9 for you, you shall **k** my covenant,
Ex 19:5 obey my voice and **k** my covenant,
Nu 6:24 The LORD bless you and **k** you;
Dt 5:10 love me and **k** my commandments.
Ne 1:5 love him and **k** his commandments;
Pr 7:2 **k** my commandments and live,
Ecc 3:6 time to **k**, and a time to throw away;
12:13 Fear God, and **k** his commandments
Lk 17:33 those who lose their life will **k** it.
Jude 1:24 Now to him who is able to **k** you
Rev 22:9 those who **k** the words of this book.
Sir 1:26 wisdom, **k** the commandments,

KEEPER → KEEP

Ge 4:9 am I my brother's **k**?"
Ps 121:5 The LORD is your **k**;

KEEPS → KEEP

Ps 121:3 he who **k** you will not slumber.
Jas 2:10 whoever **k** the whole law but fails

KEPT → KEEP

Mt 19:20 said to him, "I have **k** all these;
Jn 17:6 and they have **k** your word.
2Ti 4:7 finished the race, I have **k** the faith.

KEY → KEYS

Isa 22:22 on his shoulder the **k** of the house
Lk 11:52 taken away the **k** of knowledge;
Rev 3:7 true one, who has the **k** of David,

KEYS* → KEY

Mt 16:19 you the **k** of the kingdom of heaven,
Rev 1:18 I have the **k** of Death and of Hades.

KIDNAPS*

Ex 21:16 Whoever **k** a person, whether

KIDRON

2Sa 15:23 the king crossed the Wadi **K**,
Jn 18:1 his disciples across the **K** valley

KILL → KILLED, KILLS

Ex 4:23 now I will **k** your firstborn son.'"
Ecc 3:3 a time to **k**, and a time to heal;
Mt 10:28 not fear those who **k** the body but cannot **k** the soul;
Mk 14:1 to arrest Jesus by stealth and **k** him;

KILLED → KILL

Mk 9:31 after being **k**, he will rise again."
Ac 3:15 and you **k** the Author of life,
Ro 7:11 deceived me and through it **k** me.
2Co 6:9 as punished, and yet not **k**;

KILLS → KILL

1Sa 2:6 The LORD **k** and brings to life;
2Co 3:6 the letter **k**, but the Spirit gives life.

KIND → KINDNESS, KINDS

Ge 6:20 two of every **k** shall come in to you,
Ps 145:17 and **k** in all his doings.
1Co 13:4 Love is patient; love is **k**;
Eph 4:32 and be **k** to one another,

KINDNESS → KIND

Pr 31:26 teaching of **k** is on her tongue.
Hos 11:4 I led them with cords of human **k**,
Ro 2:4 **k** is meant to lead you to repentance
Gal 5:22 joy, peace, patience, **k**, generosity,

KINDS → KIND

Lev 19:19 not sow your field with two **k** of
1Co 12:10 to another various **k** of tongues,
1Ti 6:10 of money is a root of all **k** of evil,

KING → KINGDOM, KINGS

Ex 1:8 Now a new **k** arose over Egypt,
Dt 17:14 and you say, "I will set a **k** over me,
1Sa 8:7 rejected me from being **k** over them.
2Sa 2:4 there they anointed David **k** over
Ps 2:6 set my **k** on Zion, my holy hill."
10:16 The LORD is **k** forever and ever;
Isa 6:5 have seen the **K**, the LORD of hosts!
Jer 10:10 living God and the everlasting **K**.
Mt 2:2 who has been born **k** of the Jews?
27:37 "This is Jesus, the **K** of the Jews."
Lk 19:38 "Blessed is the **k** who comes in the
Jn 1:49 You are the **K** of Israel!"
1Ti 1:17 To the **K** of the ages, immortal,
Rev 19:16 **"K** of kings and Lord of lords."
Tob 10:13 Lord of heaven and earth, **K** over all
Jdt 9:12 **K** of all your creation,

KINGDOM → KING

Ex 19:6 you shall be for me a priestly **k** and
2Sa 7:12 and I will establish his **k**.
1Ki 11:31 "See, I am about to tear the **k**
Ps 145:13 Your **k** is an everlasting **k**,
Da 4:3 His **k** is an everlasting **k**,
Mt 4:17 "Repent, for the **k** of heaven has
5:3 for theirs is the **k** of heaven.
6:10 Your **k** come. Your will be done,
13:24 "The **k** of heaven may be compared
Mk 6:23 I will give you, even half of my **k**."
10:24 how hard it is to enter the **k** of God!
12:34 You are not far from the **k** of God."
13:8 and **k** against **k**;
Lk 17:21 in fact, the **k** of God is among you."
22:16 not eat it until it is fulfilled in the **k**
Jn 18:36 "My **k** is not from this world.
Ac 1:6 you will restore the **k** to Israel?"
Ro 14:17 the **k** of God is not food and drink
1Co 6:9 wrongdoers will not inherit the **k**
Eph 5:5 any inheritance in the **k** of Christ
Col 1:13 transferred us into the **k** of his
1Th 2:12 calls you into his own **k** and glory.
Heb 12:28 receiving a **k** that cannot be shaken,
2Pe 1:11 entry into the eternal **k** of our Lord
Rev 11:15 world has become the **k** of our Lord
Wis 10:10 she showed him the **k** of God,

KINGS → KING

Ge 17:6 and **k** shall come from you.
Ps 2:2 The **k** of the earth set themselves,
138:4 All the **k** of the earth shall praise
Pr 8:15 By me **k** reign, and rulers decree
Isa 52:15 **k** shall shut their mouths because of
Da 7:24 of this kingdom ten **k** shall arise,
Ac 4:26 The **k** of the earth took their stand,
1Ti 6:15 the King of **k** and Lord of lords.
Rev 19:16 "King of **k** and Lord of lords."
Sir 51:12 *Give thanks to the King of the k of k*,

KISS

Ps 2:12 **k** his feet, or he will be angry,
SS 1:2 Let him **k** me with the kisses of his
Mt 26:48 "The one I will **k** is the man; arrest
2Co 13:12 Greet one another with a holy **k**.

KNEE → KNEES

Isa 45:23 "To me every **k** shall bow,
Ro 14:11 says the Lord, every **k** shall bow to
Php 2:10 at the name of Jesus every **k** should

KNEEL → KNELT

Ps 95:6 let us **k** before the LORD, our Maker

KNEES → KNEE

1Ki 19:18 the **k** that have not bowed to Baal,
Eph 3:14 I bow my **k** before the Father,

KNELT → KNEEL

2Ch 6:13 he **k** on his knees in the presence of
Lk 22:41 about a stone's throw, **k** down,

KNEW → KNOW

Dt 34:10 whom the LORD **k** face to face.
Jer 1:5 I formed you in the womb I **k** you,
Mt 7:23 will declare to them, 'I never **k** you;
Ro 1:21 they **k** God, they did not honor him

KNOCK → KNOCKING

Lk 11:9 **k**, and the door will be opened for

KNOCKING → KNOCK

Rev 3:20 I am standing at the door, **k**;

KNOW → FOREKNEW, KNEW, KNOWING, KNOWLEDGE, KNOWN, KNOWS

Ge 22:12 for now I **k** that you fear God,
Ex 6:7 **k** that I am the LORD your God,
1Ki 8:39 only you **k** what is in every human
Job 19:25 For I **k** that my Redeemer lives,
Ps 46:10 "Be still, and **k** that I am God!
Ecc 8:16 I applied my mind to **k** wisdom,
Isa 1:3 Israel does not **k**, my people do not
Jer 31:34 **"K** the LORD," for they shall all **k**
Mt 6:3 left hand **k** what your right hand is
24:42 do not **k** on what day your Lord is
Lk 11:13 **k** how to give good gifts to your
22:34 denied three times that you **k** me."
Jn 10:14 I **k** my own and my own **k** me,
13:35 will **k** that you are my disciples,
21:24 and we **k** that his testimony is true.
Ac 1:7 **k** the times or periods that the
Ro 8:28 We **k** that all things work together
1Co 8:2 Anyone who claims to **k** something
13:12 I **k** only in part; then I will **k** fully,
Eph 3:19 **k** the love of Christ that surpasses
Php 3:10 to **k** Christ and the power of his
Tit 1:16 profess to **k** God, but they deny him
Heb 8:11 **'K** the Lord,' for they shall all **k** me,
1Jn 2:4 Whoever says, "I have come to **k**
3:16 **k** love by this, that he laid down his
Rev 3:3 not **k** at what hour I will come to

KNOWING → KNOW

Ge 3:22 like one of us, **k** good and evil;
Jn 18:4 Jesus, **k** all that was to happen to
Php 3:8 surpassing value of **k** Christ Jesus
Heb 13:2 have entertained angels without **k** it.

KNOWLEDGE → KNOW

Ge 2:9 the tree of the **k** of good and evil.
Job 21:22 Will any teach God **k**,
Pr 1:7 of the LORD is the beginning of **k**;
8:10 and **k** rather than choice gold;
Ecc 1:18 who increase **k** increase sorrow.
Isa 11:2 spirit of **k** and the fear of the LORD.
Hos 4:6 people are destroyed for lack of **k**;
Lk 11:52 you have taken away the key of **k**;
Ro 11:33 riches and wisdom and **k** of God!
1Co 8:1 **K** puffs up, but love builds up.
Eph 3:19 the love of Christ that surpasses **k**,
Col 2:3 the treasures of wisdom and **k**.
1Ti 6:20 of what is falsely called **k**;
2Pe 1:5 goodness, and goodness with **k**,
1Jn 2:20 and all of you have **k**.
Sir 3:25 without **k** there is no wisdom.

KNOWN → KNOW

Ps 139:1 you have searched me and **k** me.
Lk 6:44 for each tree is **k** by its own fruit.
Jn 1:18 Father's heart, who has made him **k**.
Ro 7:7 I would not have **k** sin.
1Co 2:16 For who has **k** the mind of the Lord
Eph 1:9 made **k** to us the mystery of his will,

KNOWS → KNOW

Ps 94:11 The LORD **k** our thoughts,
103:14 For he **k** how we were made;
Mt 6:8 your Father **k** what you need before
24:36 about that day and hour no one **k**,
Ro 8:27 **k** what is the mind of the Spirit,
2Ti 2:19 "The Lord **k** those who are his,"
1Jn 4:7 loves is born of God and **k** God.
Sir 42:18 Most High **k** all that may be known;

KORAH → KORAHITES

Levite; led rebels against Moses (Nu 16; Jude 11).

KORAHITES → KORAH

Psalms of: Pss 42; 44-49; 84; 85; 87; 88.

L

LABAN

Brother of Rebekah (Ge 24:29), father of Rachel and Leah (Ge 29:16). Received Abraham's servant (Ge 24:29-51). Provided daughters as

wives for Jacob in exchange for Jacob's service (Ge 29:1-30). Provided flocks for Jacob's service (Ge 30:25-43). Pursued and covenanted with Jacob (Ge 31).

LABOR → LABORER

Ex 1:11 to oppress them with forced **l**.
20:9 Six days you shall **l** and do all your
Jn 4:38 reap that for which you did not **l**.

LABORER → LABOR

Lev 19:13 the wages of a **l** until morning.
Lk 10:7 for the **l** deserves to be paid.
1Ti 5:18 and, "The **l** deserves to be paid."

LACKED → LACKING

Dt 2:7 with you; you have **l** nothing."

LACKING → LACKED

Ecc 1:15 and what is **l** cannot be counted.
Lk 18:22 "There is still one thing **l**.
Col 1:24 completing what is **l** in Christ's

LADDER

Ge 28:12 that there was a **l** set up on the earth,

LAID → LAY

Isa 53:6 the LORD has **l** on him the iniquity
Mk 16:6 Look, there is the place they **l** him.
1Jn 3:16 that he **l** down his life for us—

LAKE

Rev 19:20 were thrown alive into the **l** of fire
20:14 This is the second death, the **l** of fire

LAMB → LAMBS

Ge 22:8 "God himself will provide the **l** for
Ex 12:21 and slaughter the passover **l**.
Isa 53:7 like a **l** that is led to the slaughter,
Mk 14:12 when the Passover **l** is sacrificed,
Jn 1:29 **L** of God who takes away the sin of
1Co 5:7 For our paschal **l**, Christ, has been
1Pe 1:19 like that of a **l** without defect or
Rev 5:12 the **L** that was slaughtered to
21:23 and its lamp is the **L**.

LAMBS → LAMB

Isa 40:11 he will gather the **l** in his arms,
Jn 21:15 Jesus said to him, "Feed my **l**."

LAME

Isa 35:6 then the **l** shall leap like a deer,
Zep 3:19 And I will save the **l** and gather the
Mt 11:5 the **l** walk, the lepers are cleansed,

LAMENTATION

La 2:5 in daughter Judah mourning and **l**.

LAMP → LAMPS, LAMPSTAND, LAMPSTANDS

1Ki 11:36 servant David may always have a **l**
Ps 18:28 It is you who light my **l**;
119:105 Your word is a **l** to my feet and a
Mt 5:15 lighting a **l** puts it under the bushel
6:22 "The eye is the **l** of the body.
Rev 22:5 they need no light of **l** or sun,

LAMPS → LAMP

Ex 25:37 You shall make the seven **l** for it;
Mt 25:1 Ten bridesmaids took their **l** and

LAMPSTAND → LAMP

Ex 25:31 You shall make a **l** of pure gold.
Zec 4:2 And I said, "I see a **l** all of gold,
1Mc 4:50 and lit the lamps on the **l**,

LAMPSTANDS → LAMP

Rev 1:20 the seven **l** are the seven churches.
11:4 the two **l** that stand before the Lord

LAND

Ge 1:10 God called the dry **l** Earth,
12:7 your offspring **l** will give this **l**."
Ex 3:8 a **l** flowing with milk and honey,
20:2 brought you out of the **l** of Egypt,
Nu 13:2 to spy out the **l** of Canaan,
Jos 11:23 So Joshua took the whole **l**,
Jdg 1:27 Canaanites continued to live in that **l**
2Ki 17:5 the king of Assyria invaded all the **l**
25:21 So Judah went into exile out of its **l**.
2Ch 7:14 will forgive their sin and heal their **l**.
Ps 37:11 But the meek shall inherit the **l**,
Jer 22:29 O **l**, **l**, **l**, hear the word of the LORD!
Da 11:41 He shall come into the beautiful **l**,
Mal 4:6 come and strike the **l** with a curse.

LANGUAGE

Ge 11:9 LORD confused the **l** of all the earth;
Ac 2:6 speaking in the native **l** of each.

LAP

Jdg 7:5 who **l** the water with their tongues,
Pr 16:33 The lot is cast into the **l**,

LASHES

Dt 25:3 Forty **l** may be given but not more;
2Co 11:24 from the Jews the forty **l** minus one.

LAST → EVERLASTING

2Sa 23:1 Now these are the **l** words of David:
Isa 44:6 I am the first and I am the **l**;
Mt 19:30 first will be **l**, and the **l** will be first.
Mk 9:35 first must be **l** of all and servant of
1Co 15:26 **l** enemy to be destroyed is death.
15:52 twinkling of an eye, at the **l** trumpet.
2Ti 3:1 that in the **l** days distressing times
Heb 1:2 **l** days he has spoken to us by a Son,
1Jn 2:18 Children, it is the **l** hour!
Rev 1:17 I am the first and the **l**,

LAUGH → LAUGHINGSTOCK, LAUGHTER

Ge 18:13 said to Abraham, "Why did Sarah **l**,
Ecc 3:4 a time to weep, and a time to **l**;
Lk 6:21 you who weep now, for you will **l**.

LAUGHINGSTOCK → LAUGH

Ps 44:14 the nations, a **l** among the peoples.
La 3:14 have become the **l** of all my people,

LAUGHTER → LAUGH

Ps 126:2 Then our mouth was filled with **l**,
Jas 4:9 Let your **l** be turned into mourning

LAW → LAWFUL, LAWLESSNESS

Dt 1:5 Moses undertook to expound this **l**
31:9 Then Moses wrote down this **l**,
Jos 1:8 book of the **l** shall not depart out of
Ps 1:2 their delight is in the **l** of the LORD,
119:97 Oh, how I love your **l**!
Jer 31:33 I will put my **l** within them,
Mt 5:17 come to abolish the **l** or the prophets
23:23 the weightier matters of the **l**:
Lk 24:44 written about me in the **l** of Moses,
Jn 1:17 **l** indeed was given through Moses;
Ro 6:14 you are not under **l** but under grace.
10:4 For Christ is the end of the **l** so that
Gal 2:19 through the **l** I died to the **l**,
Heb 10:1 Since the **l** has only a shadow of the
Jas 2:10 For whoever keeps the whole **l** but
1Mc 2:48 They rescued the **l** out of the hands

LAWFUL → LAW

Mt 12:12 So it is **l** to do good on the sabbath."
1Co 6:12 "All things are **l** for me,"
10:23 "All things are **l**," but

LAWLESSNESS → LAW

2Th 2:7 the mystery of **l** is already at work,
1Jn 3:4 commits sin is guilty of **l**; sin is **l**.
Sir 21:3 All **l** is like a two-edged sword;

LAY → LAID

Mt 8:20 of Man has nowhere to **l** his head."
28:6 Come, see the place where he **l**.
Jn 10:15 And I **l** down my life for the sheep.
1Co 3:11 no one can **l** any foundation other

LAZARUS*

1. Poor man in Jesus' parable (Lk 16:19-31).

2. Brother of Mary and Martha whom Jesus raised from the dead (Jn 11:1-12:19).

LAZY

Ex 5:17 He said, "You are **l**, **l**;
Pr 13:4 The appetite of the **l** craves,

LEAD → LEADER, LEADERS, LEADS, LED

Ex 32:34 **l** the people to the place
Ps 61:2 **L** me to the rock that is higher than
Isa 11:6 and a little child shall **l** them.
Mk 13:22 to **l** astray, if possible, the elect.
Ro 2:4 meant to **l** you to repentance?

LEADER → LEAD

1Ch 28:4 for he chose Judah as **l**,
Ro 12:8 the **l**, in diligence;

LEADERS → LEAD

Isa 3:12 O my people, your **l** mislead you,
Lk 19:47 the **l** of the people kept looking for
Heb 13:7 Remember your **l**, those who spoke

LEADS → LEAD

Ps 23:2 he **l** me beside still waters;
Mk 13:5 "Beware that no one **l** you astray.
Ro 6:16 obedience, which **l** to righteousness

LEAH

Wife of Jacob (Ge 29:16-30); bore six sons and one daughter (Ge 29:31-30:21; 34:1; 35:23; Ru 4:11).

LEAPING

1Ch 15:29 and saw King David **l** and dancing;
Ac 3:8 walking and **l** and praising God.

LEARN → LEARNED, LEARNING

Dt 4:10 that they may **l** to fear me as long as
Isa 1:17 **l** to do good; seek justice,
1Ti 2:11 Let a woman **l** in silence with full

LEARNED → LEARN

Jn 6:45 **l** from the Father comes to me.
Php 4:11 I have **l** to be content with whatever

LEARNING → LEARN

Jn 7:15 "How does this man have such **l**,
Ac 26:24 Too much **l** is driving you insane!"

LEAST → LESS

Mt 2:6 are by no means **l** among the rulers
5:19 called **l** in the kingdom of heaven;
Lk 9:48 **l** among all of you is the greatest."

LEAVE → LEFT

Nu 11:20 'Why did we ever **l** Egypt?'"
Mk 10:7 this reason a man shall **l** his father
Jn 14:18 not **l** you orphaned; I am coming to
Heb 13:5 said, "I will never **l** you or forsake

LEAVEN → LEAVENS

Ex 12:15 on the first day you shall remove **l**

LEAVENS → LEAVEN

Gal 5:9 A little yeast **l** the whole batch of

LEAVES

Ge 3:7 and they sewed fig **l** together
Eze 47:12 and their **l** for healing."
Rev 22:2 **l** of the tree are for the healing of

LEBANON

Dt 11:24 from the wilderness to the **L** and
Isa 40:16 **L** would not provide fuel enough,

LED → LEAD

Isa 53:7 like a lamb that is **l** to the slaughter,
Jer 50:6 their shepherds have **l** them astray,
Hos 11:4 **l** them with cords of human
Mt 4:1 Then Jesus was **l** up by the Spirit
27:31 they **l** him away to crucify him.
Lk 21:8 "Beware that you are not **l** astray;
Ro 8:14 For all who are **l** by the Spirit

LEFT → LEAVE

Dt 28:14 either to the right or to the **l**,
Mt 6:3 your **l** hand know what your right
25:33 his right hand and the goats at the **l**.
Lk 17:34 one will be taken and the other **l**.

LEGION

Lk 8:30 He said, **"L";** for many demons

LEGS

Da 10:6 **l** like the gleam of burnished bronze
Jn 19:33 they did not break his **l**.
Rev 10:1 and his **l** like pillars of fire.

LENDER

Pr 22:7 the borrower is the slave of the **l**.

LEPER → LEPROUS

Mt 8:2 and there was a **l** who came to him
26:6 in the house of Simon the **l**,

LEPERS → LEPROUS

Lk 7:22 the lame walk, the **l** are cleansed,

LEPROUS → LEPER, LEPERS

Ex 4:6 he took it out, his hand was **l**,
Nu 12:10 Miriam had become **l**,

LESS → LEAST

Ex 30:15 and the poor shall not give **l**,
Ezr 9:13 punished us **l** than our iniquities

LETTER

Mt 5:18 not one **l**, not one stroke of a **l**,
2Co 3:6 the **l** kills, but the Spirit gives life.

LEVI → LEVITES, LEVITICAL, =MATTHEW

1. Son of Jacob by Leah (Ge 29:34; 46:11; 1Ch 2:1). With Simeon avenged rape of Dinah (Ge 34). Tribe of blessed (Ge 49:5-7; Dt 33:8-11), chosen as priests (Nu 3-4), numbered (Nu 3:39; 26:62), given cities, but not land (Nu 18; 35; Dt 10:9; Jos 13:14; 21), land (Eze 48:8-22), 12,000 from (Rev 7:7).

2. See Matthew.

LEVIATHAN

Job 41:1 you draw out **L** with a fishhook,
Ps 74:14 You crushed the heads of **L**;
2Es 6:49 and the name of the other **L**.

LEVITES → LEVI

Nu 1:53 **L** shall camp around the tabernacle
Jos 14:4 no portion was given to the **L** in the
Ne 8:9 **L** who taught the people said to all

LEVITICAL → LEVI

Heb 7:11 attainable through the **l** priesthood

LIAR → LIE

Pr 19:22 and it is better to be poor than a **l**.
Jn 8:44 for he is a **l** and the father of lies.
Ro 3:4 Although everyone is a **l**,
1Jn 2:22 **l** but the one who denies that Jesus

LIARS → LIE

1Ti 1:10 sodomites, slave traders, **l**, perjurers,
Rev 21:8 the sorcerers, the idolaters, and all **l**,

LIBERTY

Lev 25:10 shall proclaim **l** throughout the land
Isa 61:1 to proclaim **l** to the captives,
1Co 8:9 this **l** of yours does not somehow

LICENTIOUSNESS

Mk 7:22 avarice, wickedness, deceit, **l**, envy,
Gal 5:19 fornication, impurity, **l**,
Jude 1:4 pervert the grace of our God into **l**

LIE → LIAR, LIARS, LIES, LYING

Nu 23:19 that he should **l**, or a mortal,
Ps 23:2 makes me **l** down in green pastures;
Isa 11:6 leopard shall **l** down with the kid,
Ac 5:3 your heart to **l** to the Holy Spirit
1Jn 2:21 know that no **l** comes from the truth.

LIES → LIE

Ps 5:6 You destroy those who speak **l**;
Php 3:13 forgetting what **l** behind and straining
forward to what **l** ahead,

LIFE → LIVE

Ge 2:7 into his nostrils the breath of **l**;
2:9 the tree of **l** also in the midst of the
9:5 require a reckoning for human **l**.
Ex 21:23 then you shall give **l** for **l**,
Dt 12:23 for the blood is the **l**,
30:19 Choose **l** so that you and your
Ps 34:12 Which of you desires **l**, and covets
Pr 18:21 Death and **l** are in the power of the
tongue,
Ecc 7:12 that wisdom gives **l** to the one who
Isa 53:10 you make his **l** an offering for sin,
Da 12:2 shall awake, some to everlasting **l**,
Mt 7:14 and the road is hard that leads to **l**,
10:39 Those who find their **l** will lose it,
20:28 to give his **l** a ransom for many."
Mk 10:30 and in the age to come eternal **l**.
Lk 12:25 a single hour to your span of **l**?
Jn 1:4 in him was **l**, and the **l** was the light
3:15 believes in him may have eternal **l**.
6:35 said to them, "I am the bread of **l**.
11:25 "I am the resurrection and the **l**.
14:6 "I am the way, and the truth, and the **l**.
Ac 3:15 and you killed the Author of **l**,
Ro 5:21 eternal **l** through Jesus Christ our
8:38 convinced that neither death, nor **l**,
2Co 3:6 the letter kills, but the Spirit gives **l**.
Eph 4:1 to lead a **l** worthy of the calling
Php 4:3 whose names are in the book of **l**.
1Jn 3:14 that we have passed from death to **l**
5:20 He is the true God and eternal **l**.
Rev 2:8 who was dead and came to **l**:
20:4 came to **l** and reigned with Christ
20:12 book was opened, the book of **l**.
22:2 the tree of **l** with its twelve kinds
Sir 4:12 Whoever loves her loves **l**,
2Es 8:52 the tree of **l** is planted,

LIFTED

Isa 52:13 he shall be exalted and **l** up,
Jn 3:14 so must the Son of Man be **l** up,

LIGHT → ENLIGHTENED, ENLIGHTENS, LIGHTS

Ge 1:3 "Let there be **l**"; and there was **l**.
Ex 13:21 pillar of fire by night, to give them **l**,
Ps 27:1 The Lord is my **l** and my salvation;
Pr 4:18 the path of the righteous is like the **l**
Ecc 2:13 that wisdom excels folly as **l** excels
Isa 9:2 in darkness have seen a great **l**;
42:6 as a covenant to the people, a **l**
60:1 Arise, shine; for your **l** has come,
Mt 4:16 in darkness have seen a great **l**,
5:14 "You are the **l** of the world.
11:30 my yoke is easy, and my burden is **l**.
Jn 1:9 true **l**, which enlightens everyone,
8:12 saying, "I am the **l** of the world.
Ro 13:12 and put on the armor of **l**;
2Co 11:14 Satan disguises himself as an angel of **l**.
1Pe 2:9 of darkness into his marvelous **l**.
1Jn 1:7 walk in the **l** as he himself is in the **l**
Rev 22:5 for the Lord God will be their **l**,

LIGHTNING

Ex 19:16 third day there was thunder and **l**,
Da 10:6 body was like beryl, his face like **l**,
Lk 10:18 from heaven like a flash of **l**.
Rev 4:5 from the throne are flashes of **l**,

LIGHTS → LIGHT

Ge 1:16 God made the two great **l**—
Jas 1:17 coming down from the Father of **l**,

LIKE → LIKENESS

Ge 3:5 be **l** God, knowing good and evil."
Ex 15:11 "Who is **l** you, O Lord, among the
2Sa 7:22 for there is no one **l** you,
Ps 113:5 Who is **l** the Lord our God,
Isa 46:9 I am God, and there is no one **l** me,
Jer 10:6 There is none **l** you, O Lord;
Lk 13:18 "What is the kingdom of God **l**?
1Co 13:11 When I was a child, I spoke **l** a child
Rev 1:13 I saw one **l** the Son of Man,
10:1 his face was **l** the sun,
16:15 ("See, I am coming **l** a thief!

LIKENESS → LIKE

Ge 1:26 in our image, according to our **l**;
Ro 8:3 his own Son in the **l** of sinful flesh,
Php 2:7 of a slave, being born in human **l**.

LILIES

Lk 12:27 Consider the **l**, how they grow:

LINE

Isa 28:10 **l** upon **l**, **l** upon **l**, here a little,
Am 7:7 with a plumb **l** in his hand.

LINEN

Ex 26:1 with ten curtains of fine twisted **l**,
Da 10:5 and saw a man clothed in **l**,
Rev 19:8 for the fine **l** is the righteous deeds

LION → LION'S, LIONS

1Sa 17:34 and whenever a **l** or a bear came,
Ecc 9:4 a living dog is better than a dead **l**.
Isa 11:7 and the **l** shall eat straw like the ox.
Da 7:4 first was like a **l** and had eagles'
Rev 4:7 the first living creature like a **l**,
5:5 See, the **L** of the tribe of Judah,

LION'S → LION

2Ti 4:17 So I was rescued from the **l** mouth.

LIONS → LION

Da 6:20 able to deliver you from the **l**?"

LIPS

Dt 23:23 Whatever your **l** utter you must
Job 2:10 Job did not sin with his **l**.
Isa 6:5 am lost, for I am a man of unclean **l**,
Mt 15:8 with their **l**, but their hearts are far
Heb 13:15 the fruit of **l** that confess his name.

LISTEN → LISTENS

Ex 23:22 But if you **l** attentively to his voice
2Ki 17:40 They would not **l**, however,
Ps 5:2 **L** to the sound of my cry, my King
Pr 4:1 **L**, children, to a father's instruction,
Ecc 5:1 **l** is better than the sacrifice offered
Mk 9:7 my Son, the Beloved; **l** to him!"
Lk 16:31 'If they do not **l** to Moses and the
Ac 3:22 You must **l** to whatever he tells you.
Jas 1:19 be quick to **l**, slow to speak,
Sir 11:8 Do not answer before you **l**,

LISTENS → LISTEN

Jn 18:37 Everyone who belongs to the truth **l**
1Jn 4:6 Whoever knows God **l** to us,

LITTLE

Ex 16:18 who gathered **l** had no shortage;
Ps 8:5 have made them a **l** lower than God,
Pr 15:16 Better is a **l** with the fear of
Mt 8:26 "Why are you afraid, you of **l** faith?
19:14 "Let the **l** children come to me,
2Co 8:15 one who had **l** did not have too **l**."
Gal 5:9 A **l** yeast leavens the whole batch of
Rev 10:2 He held a **l** scroll open in his hand.
Sir 29:23 Be content with **l** or much,

LIVE → ALIVE, LIFE, LIVED, LIVES, LIVING

Ge 3:22 and eat, and **l** forever"—
Ex 1:16 but if it is a girl, she shall **l**."
33:20 for no one shall see me and **l**."
Lev 18:5 by doing so one shall **l**:
Dt 8:3 one does not **l** by bread alone,
Ps 91:1 **l** in the shelter of the Most High,
Hab 2:4 but the righteous **l** by their faith.
Mt 4:4 'One does not **l** by bread alone,
Jn 11:25 even though they die, will **l**,
Ro 1:17 one who is righteous will **l** by faith."
14:8 If we **l**, we **l** to the Lord,
2Co 5:15 those who **l** might **l** no longer for

Gal 3:12 does works of the law will **I**
Wis 5:15 But the righteous **I** forever,
Sir 34:14 those who fear the Lord will **I**,

LIVED → LIVE

Ro 14:9 to this end Christ died and **I** again,

LIVES → LIVE

Job 19:25 For **I** know that my Redeemer **I**,
Ps 18:46 The Lord **I**! Blessed be my rock,
Jn 11:26 and everyone who **I** and believes
Ro 6:10 but the life he **I**, he **I** to God.
1Jn 3:16 to lay down our **I** for one another.
Rev 15:7 of God, who **I** forever and ever;
Tob 13:1 "Blessed be God who **I** forever,

LIVING → LIVE

Ge 2:7 and the man became a **l** being.
3:20 because she was the mother of all **l**.
6:19 And of every **l** thing, of all flesh,
Dt 5:26 the voice of the **l** God speaking out
Jer 2:13 forsaken me, the fountain of **l** water,
Zec 14:8 that day **l** waters shall flow out from
Mt 16:16 the Messiah, the Son of the **l** God."
Jn 4:10 he would have given you **l** water."
6:51 I am the **l** bread that came down
Ro 12:1 present your bodies as a **l** sacrifice,
2Co 6:16 For we are the temple of the **l** God;
Heb 4:12 the word of God is **l** and active,
1Pe 2:4 **l** stone, though rejected by mortals

LOAVES

Mk 6:41 Taking the five **l** and the two fish,
8:6 and he took the seven **l**,

LOCK

Mt 23:13 you **l** people out of the kingdom of

LOCUST → LOCUSTS

2Ch 6:28 if there is plague, blight, mildew, **l**,
Joel 2:25 years that the swarming **l** has eaten,

LOCUSTS → LOCUST

Ex 10:4 I will bring **l** into your country.
Mt 3:4 and his food was **l** and wild honey.
Rev 9:3 from the smoke came **l** on the earth,

LOG

Mt 7:3 do not notice the **l** in your own eye?

LONELY → ALONE

Ps 25:16 for I am **l** and afflicted.
La 1:1 How **l** sits the city that once was full

LONG → LONGING

Ex 20:12 that your days may be **l** in the land
Ps 13:1 How **l**, O Lord?
Pr 3:16 **L** life is in her right hand;
1Co 11:14 that if a man wears **l** hair,
1Pe 1:12 things into which angels **l** to look!
2:2 Like newborn infants, **l** for the pure,
Rev 6:10 how **l** will it be before you judge

LONGING → LONG

Ro 8:19 the creation waits with eager **l** for
2Co 5:2 **l** to be clothed with our heavenly

LOOK → LOOKED, LOOKS

Ex 3:6 for he was afraid to **l** at God.
Ps 8:3 When **l** l at your heavens,
80:14 **l** down from heaven, and see;
Lk 24:39 **L** at my hands and my feet;

LOOKED → LOOK

Ge 19:26 But Lot's wife, behind him, **l** back,
Ex 2:25 God **l** upon the Israelites,
Sir 16:29 Then the Lord **l** upon the earth,

LOOKS → LOOK

1Sa 16:7 but the Lord **l** on the heart."
Ps 14:2 The Lord **l** down from heaven
Mt 5:28 who **l** at a woman with lust

***LORD → *LORD'S, LORDS**

Ge 18:27 take it upon myself to speak to the **L**
Ex 4:10 Moses said to the Lord, "O my **L**,
Dt 10:17 God is God of gods and **L** of lords,
Ps 16:2 I say to the Lord, "You are my **L**;
110:1 The Lord says to my **l**,
Isa 6:1 I saw the **L** sitting on a throne, high
Da 2:47 God is God of gods and **L** of kings
Mic 1:2 the **L** from his holy temple.
Mt 7:22 many will say to me, 'L, **L**,
9:38 the **L** of the harvest to send out
12:8 the Son of Man is **l** of the sabbath."
Mk 1:3 'Prepare the way of the **L**,
12:29 the **L** our God, the **L** is one;
Lk 2:11 who is the Messiah, the **L**.
10:27 "You shall love the **L** your God
19:38 who comes in the name of the **L**!
Jn 13:13 You call me Teacher and **L**—
20:28 "My **L** and my God!"
Ac 2:34 'The **L** said to my **L**, "Sit at my
Ro 4:24 in him who raised Jesus our **L**
10:12 the same **L** is **L** of all and
1Co 2:16 who has known the mind of the **L**
8:6 and one **L**, Jesus Christ,
2Co 3:17 Now the **L** is the Spirit,
Eph 4:5 one **L**, one faith, one baptism,
Php 2:11 that Jesus Christ is **L**, to the glory
4:5 The **L** is near.
Col 3:13 just as the **L** has forgiven you,
1Th 4:15 are left until the coming of the **L**,
1Ti 6:15 the King of kings and **L** of lords.
Heb 12:14 without which no one will see the **L**.
Jas 4:10 Humble yourselves before the **L**,
1Pe 3:15 in your hearts sanctify Christ as **L**.
2Pe 3:9 The **L** is not slow about his promise,
Jude 1:4 and deny our only Master and **L**,
Rev 4:8 "Holy, holy, holy, the **L** God
19:16 "King of kings and **L** of lords."
22:20 Amen. Come, **L** Jesus!
Jdt 6:19 **L** God of heaven, see their
Wis 8:3 and the **L** of all loves her.
Sir 1:1 All wisdom is from the **L**,
Aza 1:35 Bless the **L**, all you works of the **L**;
Sus 1:2 and one who feared the **L**.

†LORD → †GOD, †LORD'S

Ge 2:7 **L** God formed man from the dust of
6:6 the **L** was sorry that he had made
13:4 Abram called on the name of the **L**.
18:14 Is anything too wonderful for the **L**?
22:14 that place "The **L** will provide";
Ex 3:15 shall say to the Israelites, 'The **L**,
5:2 But Pharaoh said, "Who is the **L**,
6:7 know that I am the **L** your God,
15:3 The **L** is a warrior; the **L** is his name.
34:6 and proclaimed, "The **L**, the **L**,
Lev 19:2 for I the **L** your God am holy.
Nu 6:24 The **L** bless you and keep you;
14:18 'The **L** is slow to anger,
Dt 6:4 The **L** is our God, the **L** alone.
Jos 24:15 my household, we will serve the **L**."
1Sa 2:2 "There is no Holy One like the **L**,
1Ki 8:11 of the **L** filled the house of the **L**.
18:21 If the **L** is God, follow him;
1Ch 16:11 Seek the **L** and his strength,
Ezr 7:10 his heart to study the law of the **L**,
Ne 8:10 the joy of the **L** is your strength."
Job 1:21 the **L** gave, and the **L** has taken
42:12 The **L** blessed the latter days
Ps 1:2 their delight is in the law of the **L**,
10:16 The **L** is king forever and ever;
18:1 I love you, O **L**, my strength.
23:1 The **L** is my shepherd, I shall not
33:12 Happy is the nation whose God is the **L**
84:11 For the **L** God is a sun and shield;
110:1 The **L** says to my lord,
113:5 Who is like the **L** our God,
125:2 so the **L** surrounds his people,
128:1 Happy is everyone who fears the **L**,
145:18 The **L** is near to all who call on him,
150:6 that breathes praise the **L**!
Pr 1:7 fear of the **L** is the beginning of
3:5 Trust in the **L** with all your heart,
19:23 The fear of the **L** is life indeed;
21:2 but the **L** weighs the heart.
Isa 2:11 **L** alone will be exalted in that day.
6:3 "Holy, holy, holy is the **L** of hosts;
33:22 the **L** is our judge, the **L** is our ruler,
53:6 the **L** has laid on him the iniquity
64:8 Yet, O **L**, you are our Father;
Jer 4:4 Circumcise yourselves to the **L**,
31:34 "Know the **L**," for they shall all
32:27 I am the **L**, the God of all flesh;
La 3:25 The **L** is good to those who wait for
Eze 3:23 and the glory of the **L** stood there,
10:18 the glory of the **L** went out from
37:4 O dry bones, hear the word of the **L**.
44:4 glory of the **L** filled the temple
48:35 time on shall be, The **L** is There.
Hos 14:1 Return, O Israel, to the **L** your God,
Joel 1:15 For the day of the **L** is near,
Am 5:6 Seek the **L** and live,
Ob 1:15 the day of the **L** is near against all
Na 1:3 The **L** is slow to anger but great in
Zep 1:14 The great day of the **L** is near,
Zec 14:9 the **L** will be one and his name one.
Mal 3:6 For I the **L** do not change;
4:5 and terrible day of the **L** comes.

***LORD'S → *LORD**

Mk 12:11 was the **L** doing, and it is amazing
Lk 4:19 to proclaim the year of the **L** favor."
Ro 14:8 or whether we die, we are the **L**.
1Co 10:26 the earth and its fullness are the **L**."
Sir 17:17 but Israel is the **L** own portion.

†LORD'S → †LORD

Nu 11:23 "Is the **L** power limited?
Dt 32:9 the **L** own portion was his people,
Ps 24:1 The earth is the **L** and all that is in it
Isa 59:1 the **L** hand is not too short to save,
Ob 1:21 and the kingdom shall be the **L**.

LORDS → *LORD

Dt 10:17 God is God of gods and Lord of **l**,
Ps 136:3 O give thanks to the Lord of **l**,
1Co 8:5 there are many gods and many **l**—
Rev 19:16 "King of kings and Lord of **l**."

LOSE → LOSS, LOST

Mk 8:35 who **l** their life for my sake,
Jn 12:25 Those who love their life **l** it,
2Co 4:1 in this ministry, we do not **l** heart.
Heb 12:3 you may not grow weary or **l** heart.
2Jn 1:8 do not **l** what we have worked for,

LOSS → LOSE

1Co 3:15 burned up, the builder will suffer **l**;
Php 3:8 I regard everything as **l** because of
Sir 32:24 who trusts the Lord will not suffer **l**.

LOST → LOSE

Ps 119:176 **l** have gone astray like a **l** sheep;
Jer 50:6 My people have been **l** sheep;
Eze 34:16 I will seek the **l**, and I will bring
Mt 10:6 to the **l** sheep of the house of Israel.
Lk 15:6 I have found my sheep that was **l**.'
19:10 came to seek out and to save the **l**."

LOT → LOT'S, LOTS

1. Nephew of Abraham (Ge 11:27; 12:5). Chose to live in Sodom (Ge 13). Rescued from four kings (Ge 14). Rescued from Sodom (Ge 19:1-29; 2Pe 2:7). Fathered Moab and Ammon (Ge 19:30-38).
2. Object cast to make decisions.

Nu 33:54 You shall apportion the land by **l**
Est 3:7 they cast Pur—which means "the **l**"
Pr 16:33 The **l** is cast into the lap,
Jnh 1:7 cast lots, and the **l** fell on Jonah.
Ac 1:26 and the **l** fell on Matthias;

LOT'S → LOT, 1

Ge 19:26 **L** wife, behind him, looked back,
Lk 17:32 Remember **L** wife.

LOTS → LOT, 2

Ps 22:18 and for my clothing they cast **l**.
Mt 27:35 among themselves by casting **l**;

LOVE → BELOVED, LOVED, LOVER, LOVERS, LOVES

Ex 20:6 but showing steadfast **l** to the
34:6 and abounding in steadfast **l** and
Lev 19:18 shall **l** your neighbor as yourself:
Nu 14:18 and abounding in steadfast **l,**
Dt 6:5 You shall **l** the LORD your God
2Sa 7:15 not take my steadfast **l** from him,
1Ki 11:2 Solomon clung to these in **l.**
2Ch 6:42 Remember your steadfast **l**
Ezr 3:11 his steadfast **l** endures forever
Ne 1:5 steadfast **l** with those who **l** him
Ps 18:1 **I** I you, O LORD, my strength.
86:5 abounding in steadfast **l** to all who
116:1 **I** I the LORD, because he has heard
119:97 Oh, how **l** I your law!
136:1 for his steadfast **l** endures forever.
Pr 5:19 you be intoxicated always by her **l.**
8:17 **I** I those who **l** me,
19:8 To get wisdom is to **l** oneself;
Ecc 3:8 a time to **l,** and a time to hate;
SS 1:2 For your **l** is better than wine,
8:6 for **l** is strong as death,
Isa 54:8 but with everlasting **l** I will have
La 3:22 steadfast **l** of the LORD never ceases,
Da 9:4 steadfast **l** with those who **l** you
Hos 6:4 Your **l** is like a morning cloud,
11:4 of human kindness, with bands of **l.**
14:4 heal their disloyalty; I will **l** them
Joel 2:13 and abounding in steadfast **l,**
Jnh 4:2 and abounding in steadfast **l,**
Mt 5:44 **L** your enemies and pray
6:24 either hate the one and **l** the other,
Mk 12:31 shall **l** your neighbor as yourself.'
Lk 6:32 For even sinners **l** those who **l** them.
10:27 "You shall **l** the Lord your God
Jn 12:25 Those who **l** their life lose it,
13:34 new commandment, that you **l** one
14:15 "If you **l** me, you will keep my
15:13 No one has greater **l** than this,
21:16 "Simon son of John, do you **l** me?"
Ro 5:8 But God proves his **l** for us in that
12:9 Let **l** be genuine; hate what is evil,
13:8 anything, except to **l** one another;
1Co 8:1 Knowledge puffs up, but **l** builds up.
13:4 **L** is patient; **l** is kind;
13:13 and the greatest of these is **l.**
Gal 5:6 is faith working through **l.**
5:22 the fruit of the Spirit is **l,** joy,
Eph 3:19 **l** of Christ that surpasses knowledge
5:25 Husbands, **l** your wives,
Col 3:14 Above all, clothe yourselves with **l,**
1Th 5:8 put on the breastplate of faith and **l,**
1Ti 6:10 For the **l** of money is a root of all
Tit 2:2 in faith, in **l,** and in endurance.
Heb 10:24 provoke one another to **l** and good
13:5 your lives free from the **l** of money,
Jas 2:8 shall **l** your neighbor as yourself."
1Pe 1:8 you have not seen him, you **l** him;
2Pe 1:7 and mutual affection with **l.**
1Jn 2:15 not **l** the world or the things in the
3:1 See what **l** the Father has given us,
3:16 We know **l** by this, that he laid
5:3 For the **l** of God is this,
2Jn 1:6 And this is **l,** that we walk according
Jude 1:21 keep yourselves in the **l** of God;
Rev 2:4 abandoned the **l** you had at first.
Sir 2:15 and those who **l** him keep his ways.
7:30 With all your might **l** your Maker,
Bel 1:38 have not forsaken those who **l** you."
1Mc 4:33 with the sword of those who **l** you,

LOVED → LOVE

Dt 4:37 And because he **l** your ancestors,
Jer 31:3 have **l** you with an everlasting love;
Hos 11:1 When Israel was a child, I **l** him,
Mal 1:2 I have **l** you, says the LORD.
Jn 3:16 God so **l** the world that he gave his
13:1 he **l** them to the end.
15:9 the Father has **l** me, so I have **l** you;
15:12 love one another as I have **l** you.
Gal 2:20 who **l** me and gave himself for me.
Eph 5:2 Christ **l** us and gave himself up for
1Jn 4:19 We love because he first **l** us.

LOVER → LOVE

Ps 99:4 Mighty King, **l** of justice,
Ecc 5:10 **l** of money will not be satisfied with
1Ti 3:3 quarrelsome, and not a **l** of money.

LOVERS → LOVE

Jer 3:1 have played the whore with many **l;**
La 1:2 all her **l** she has no one to comfort
Hos 2:5 For she said, "I will go after my **l;**
Lk 16:14 Pharisees, who were **l** of money,
2Ti 3:2 For people will be **l** of themselves,

LOVES → LOVE

Ps 33:5 He **l** righteousness and justice;
Pr 3:12 for the LORD reproves the one he **l,**
17:17 A friend **l** at all times,
Mt 10:37 Whoever **l** father or mother more
Lk 7:47 to whom little is forgiven, **l** little."
Ro 13:8 who **l** another has fulfilled the law.
Eph 5:28 He who **l** his wife **l** himself.
Heb 12:6 Lord disciplines those whom he **l,**
1Jn 4:7 who **l** is born of God and knows
Rev 1:5 who **l** us and freed us from our sins
Wis 8:3 and the Lord of all **l** her.
Sir 4:12 Whoever **l** her **l** life,

LOW → LOWER, LOWLY

Ps 136:23 who remembered us in our **l** estate,
Isa 40:4 every mountain and hill be made **l;**
Lk 3:5 mountain and hill shall be made **l,**

LOWER → LOW

Ps 8:5 have made them a little **l** than God,
Heb 2:7 made them for a little while **l** than

LOWLY → LOW

Pr 16:19 It is better to be of a **l** spirit
Lk 1:52 their thrones, and lifted up the **l;**
Ro 12:16 but associate with the **l;**
Jdt 9:11 But you are the God of the **l,**

LOYAL → LOYALTY

2Sa 22:26 With the **l** you show yourself **l;**
Da 11:32 who are **l** to their God

LOYALTY → LOYAL

Dt 7:9 God who maintains covenant **l**
Ru 3:10 this last instance of your **l**
Ps 101:1 I will sing of **l** and of justice;
Hos 4:1 There is no faithfulness or **l,**

LUKE*

Associate of Paul (Col 4:14; 2Ti 4:11; Phm 24).

LUKEWARM*

Rev 3:16 because you are **l,** and neither cold

LUST → LUSTS

Mt 5:28 looks at a woman with **l** has already
2Pe 1:4 that is in the world because of **l,**

LUSTS → LUST

Ro 1:24 gave them up in the **l** of their hearts
Eph 4:22 old self, corrupt and deluded by its **l**
2Pe 3:3 scoffing and indulging their own **l**

LYDIA

Ac 16:14 named **L,** a worshiper of God,

LYING → LIE

1Ki 22:23 a **l** spirit in the mouth of all these
Pr 6:17 a **l** tongue, and hands that shed
Hos 4:2 Swearing, **l,** and murder,
Wis 1:11 and a **l** mouth destroys the soul.

LYRE

1Sa 18:10 while David was playing the **l,**
Ps 33:2 Praise the LORD with the **l;**
Da 3:5 pipe, **l,** trigon, harp, drum,

M

MACCABEUS → JUDAS

1Mc 2:66 Judas **M** has been a mighty warrior

MACEDONIA

Ac 16:9 a man of **M** pleading with him and

MADE → MAKE

Ge 1:31 God saw everything that he had **m,**
2:22 he **m** into a woman and brought her
3:21 the LORD God **m** garments of skins
6:6 was sorry that he had **m** humankind
15:18 the LORD **m** a covenant with Abram,
Ex 20:11 For in six days the LORD **m** heaven
36:8 the workers **m** the tabernacle with
Ps 8:5 have **m** them a little lower than God
118:24 This is the day that the LORD has **m;**
139:14 I am fearfully and wonderfully **m.**
Jer 27:5 outstretched arm have **m** the earth,
Mk 2:27 "The sabbath was **m** for humankind,
Ac 2:36 that God has **m** him both Lord and
Eph 2:5 **m** us alive together with Christ—
Rev 14:7 and worship him who **m** heaven
Sir 43:33 For the Lord has **m** all things,

MADNESS

Dt 28:28 The LORD will afflict you with **m,**
Ecc 9:3 **m** is in their hearts while they live,

MAGDALENE

Mt 27:56 Among them were Mary **M,**

MAGICIANS

Ex 7:11 and they also, the **m** of Egypt,
Da 2:2 So the king commanded that the **m,**

MAGNIFIES* → MAGNIFY

Lk 1:46 Mary said, "My soul **m** the Lord,

MAGNIFY → MAGNIFIES

Ps 34:3 O **m** the LORD with me,

MAJESTIC → MAJESTY

Ex 15:11 Who is like you, **m** in holiness,
Ps 8:1 how **m** is your name in all the earth!
2Pe 1:17 conveyed to him by the **M** Glory,

MAJESTY → MAJESTIC

1Ch 29:11 the glory, the victory, and the **m;**
Ps 93:1 The LORD is king, he is robed in **m;**
Isa 53:2 or **m** that we should look at him,
Heb 1:3 sat down at the right hand of the **M**
2Pe 1:16 we had been eyewitnesses of his **m.**

MAKE → MADE, MAKER

Ge 1:26 "Let us **m** humankind in our image,
2:18 will **m** him a helper as his partner."
12:2 I will **m** of you a great nation,
Ex 20:4 You shall not **m** for yourself an idol,
32:1 "Come, **m** gods for us, who shall go
Nu 6:25 LORD **m** his face to shine upon you,
Isa 61:8 I will **m** an everlasting covenant
66:22 and the new earth, which I will **m,**
Jer 31:31 when I will **m** a new covenant with
Mt 28:19 and **m** disciples of all nations,
Mk 1:17 and I will **m** you fish for people."

MAKER → MAKE

Ge 14:19 God Most High, **m** of heaven and
Job 4:17 beings be pure before their **M?**
Ps 95:6 kneel before the LORD, our **M!**
Isa 54:5 For your **M** is your husband,
Sir 7:30 With all your might love your **M,**

MALACHI*

Post-exilic prophet (Mal 1:1; 2Es 1:40).

MALE

Ge 1:27 **m** and female he created them.
17:10 **m** among you shall be circumcised.
Lev 20:13 If a man lies with a **m** as with a
Mt 19:4 'made them **m** and female,'
Rev 12:5 she gave birth to a son, a **m** child,

MALICE

Ro 1:29 wickedness, evil, covetousness, **m.**
1Co 5:8 the old yeast, the yeast of **m** and

MAN → MEN

Ge 2:7 LORD God formed **m** from the dust
2:18 not good that the **m** should be alone;
32:24 **m** wrestled with him until daybreak.
1Sa 13:14 sought out a **m** after his own heart;
Mt 9:6 Son of **M** has authority on earth to
Lk 6:5 The Son of **M** is lord of the sabbath.
Jn 9:35 "Do you believe in the Son of **M?"**
1Co 11:3 that Christ is the head of every **m,**
Rev 1:13 I saw one like the Son of **M,**
14:14 cloud was one like the Son of **M,**

MANAGE → MANAGERS

1Ti 3:4 He must **m** his own household well,
5:14 children, and **m** their households,

MANAGERS* → MANAGE

Tit 2:5 chaste, good **m** of the household,

MANASSEH

1. Firstborn of Joseph (Ge 41:51; 46:20). Blessed by Jacob but not as firstborn (Ge 48). Tribe of blessed (Dt 33:17), numbered (Nu 1:35; 26:34), half allotted land east of Jordan (Nu 32; Jos 13:8-33), half west (Jos 16; Eze 48:4), failed to fully possess (Jos 17:12-13; Jdg 1:27), 12,000 from (Rev 7:6).

2. Son of Hezekiah; king of Judah (2Ki 21:1-18; 2Ch 33:1-20). Judah exiled for his detestable sins (2Ki 21:10-15). Repented (2Ch 33:12-19; Man 1-15).

MANGER

Lk 2:12 in bands of cloth and lying in a **m."**

MANNA

Ex 16:31 The house of Israel called it **m;**
Jos 5:12 The **m** ceased on the day they ate
Jn 6:49 ate the **m** in the wilderness,
Rev 2:17 I will give some of the hidden **m,**

MANNER

1Co 11:27 cup of the Lord in an unworthy **m**
Php 1:27 life in a **m** worthy of the gospel

MANTLE

1Ki 19:19 and threw his **m** over him.
2Ki 2:8 Elijah took his **m** and rolled it up,

MANY

Isa 53:12 yet he bore the sin of **m,**
Mt 22:14 **m** are called, but few are chosen."
Mk 10:45 and to give his life a ransom for **m."**
Jn 20:30 Now Jesus did **m** other signs in the
Ro 12:5 who are **m,** are one body in Christ,

MARAH

Ex 15:23 That is why it was called **M.**

MARK → MARKED, MARKS

1. Cousin of Barnabas (Ac 12:12; 15:37-39; Col 4:10; 2Ti 4:11; Phm 24; 1Pe 5:13), see John.

2. Brand or symbol:
Ge 4:15 And the LORD put a **m** on Cain,
Eze 9:6 but touch no one who has the **m.**
Rev 14:9 receive a **m** on their foreheads or
19:20 who had received the **m** of the beast

MARKED → MARK

Hab 1:12 you have **m** them for judgment;
Eph 1:13 **m** with the seal of the promised

MARKET → MARKETPLACE

Mk 7:4 not eat anything from the **m** unless
1Co 10:25 Eat whatever is sold in the meat **m**

MARKETPLACE → MARKET

Jn 2:16 Stop making my Father's house a **m**

MARKS → MARK

1Co 7:18 to remove the **m** of circumcision.
Gal 6:17 I carry the **m** of Jesus branded on
1Mc 1:15 and removed the **m** of circumcision,

MARRIAGE → INTERMARRY, MARRIED, MARRIES

Mt 22:30 are given in **m,** but are like angels
Heb 13:4 Let **m** be held in honor by all,
Rev 19:7 for the **m** of the Lamb has come,

MARRIED → MARRIAGE

Mal 2:11 has **m** the daughter of a foreign god.
Mk 12:23 For the seven had **m** her."
1Ti 3:2 be above reproach, **m** only once,
Tit 1:6 **m** only once, whose children are

MARRIES → MARRIAGE

Mk 10:11 and **m** another commits adultery
Ro 7:3 if she **m** another man, she is not an
1Co 7:28 and if a virgin **m,** she does not sin.

MARTHA*

Sister of Mary and Lazarus (Lk 10:38-42; Jn 11; 12:2).

MARVELOUS

Ps 98:1 for he has done **m** things.
131:1 things too great and too **m** for me.
Sir 39:20 and nothing is too **m** for him.

MARY

1. Mother of Jesus (Mt 1:16-25; Lk 1:27-56; 2:1-40). With Jesus at temple (Lk 2:41-52), at the wedding in Cana (Jn 2:1-5), questioning his sanity (Mk 3:21), at the cross (Jn 19:25-27). Among disciples (Ac 1:14).

2. Magdalene; former demoniac (Lk 8:2). Helped support Jesus' ministry (Lk 8:1-3). At the cross (Mt 27:56; Mk 15:40; Jn 19:25), burial (Mt 27:61; Mk 15:47). Saw angel after resurrection (Mt 28:1-10; Mk 16:1-9; Lk 24:1-12); also Jesus (Jn 20:1-18).

3. Sister of Martha and Lazarus (Jn 11). Washed Jesus' feet (Jn 12:1-8).

4. Mother of James and Joses; witnessed crucifixion (Mt 27:56; Mk 15:40) and empty tomb (Mk 16:1; Lk 24:10).

MASTER → MASTERS, TASKMASTERS

Ge 4:7 desire is for you, but you must **m** it.
Mal 1:6 if I am a **m,** where is the respect due
Mt 25:21 enter into the joy of your **m.'**
Jn 15:20 Servants are not greater than their **m**
2Pe 2:1 deny the **M** who bought them—

MASTERS → MASTER

Mt 6:24 "No one can serve two **m;**

MATTANIAH → SEE ZEDEKIAH

MATTATHIAS

Priest who started the Maccabean revolt (1Mc 2).

MATTER

Ecc 3:1 a time for every **m** under heaven:
12:13 end of the **m;** all has been heard.

MATTHEW* → =LEVI

Apostle; former tax collector (Mt 9:9-13; 10:3; Mk 3:18; Lk 6:15; Ac 1:13). Also called Levi (Mk 2:14-17; Lk 5:27-32).

MATTHIAS

Disciple chosen to replace Judas (Ac 1:23-26).

MATURE → MATURITY

1Co 2:6 among the **m** we do speak wisdom,
Php 3:15 who are **m** be of the same mind;
Col 4:12 you may stand **m** and fully assured
Heb 5:14 But solid food is for the **m,**

MATURITY → MATURE

Eph 4:13 to **m,** to the measure of the full

MEAN → MEANING, MEANS

Ex 12:26 What do you **m** by this observance?
Jos 4:6 'What do those stones **m** to you?'

MEANING → MEAN

Ge 40:5 and each dream with its own **m.**
Dt 6:20 "What is the **m** of the decrees

MEANS → MEAN

Mt 9:13 learn what this **m,** 'I desire mercy,
1Co 9:22 that I might by all **m** save some.

MEASURE

Dt 25:15 have only a full and honest **m,**
Mk 4:24 **m** you give will be the **m** you get,
Lk 6:38 A good **m,** pressed down, shaken
Jn 3:34 for he gives the Spirit without **m.**

MEAT

Ex 16:12 'At twilight you shall eat **m,**
Ro 14:21 not to eat **m** or drink wine or do

MEDIA

Da 8:20 these are the kings of **M** and Persia.

MEDIATOR

Gal 3:19 ordained through angels by a **m.**
1Ti 2:5 **m** between God and humankind,
Heb 8:6 he is the **m** of a better covenant,

MEDICINE

Pr 17:22 A cheerful heart is a good **m,**
Sir 6:16 Faithful friends are life-saving **m;**

MEDITATE → MEDITATION

Jos 1:8 you shall **m** on it day and night,
Ps 1:2 on his law they **m** day and night.
119:15 I will **m** on your precepts,
Wis 12:22 we may **m** upon your goodness,
Sir 6:37 and **m** at all times on his

MEDITATION → MEDITATE

Ps 19:14 of my mouth and the **m** of my heart
119:97 It is my **m** all day long.

MEDIUM

Lev 20:27 A man or a woman who is a **m**
1Ch 10:13 moreover, he had consulted a **m,**

MEEK → MEEKNESS

Ps 37:11 But the **m** shall inherit the land,
Mt 5:5 "Blessed are the **m,** for they will

MEEKNESS → MEEK

Col 3:12 kindness, humility, **m,** and patience.
Jas 1:21 with **m** the implanted word

MEET → MEETING

Ex 30:36 tent of meeting where I shall **m** with
Am 4:12 prepare to **m** your God,
1Th 4:17 together with them to **m** the Lord

MEETING → MEET

Ex 27:21 In the tent of **m,** outside the curtain
40:34 the cloud covered the tent of **m,**

MELCHIZEDEK

Ge 14:18 King **M** of Salem brought out bread
Ps 110:4 forever according to the order of **M."**
Heb 7:1 This "King **M** of Salem, priest of

MELT

Dt 1:28 made our hearts **m** by reporting,
Ps 97:5 The mountains **m** like wax before
2Pe 3:12 and the elements will **m** with fire?

MEMBERS

Ro 7:23 I see in my **m** another law at war
1Co 6:15 that your bodies are **m** of Christ?
12:18 God arranged the **m** in the body,

MEMORIAL

Lev 5:12 a handful of it as its **m** portion,
Jos 4:7 stones shall be to the Israelites a **m**

MEN → MAN

Ge 18:2 and saw three **m** standing near him.
Da 3:25 "But I see four **m** unbound,

Mt 2:1 wise **m** from the East came to
Lk 9:30 they saw two **m,** Moses and Elijah,
Sir 44:1 now sing the praises of famous **m,**

MENAHEM*

King of Israel (2Ki 15:14-23).

MENE

Da 5:25 inscribed: **m, m,** tekel, and parsin.

MEPHIBOSHETH

Son of Jonathan shown kindness by David (2Sa 4:4; 9; 21:7). Accused of siding with Absalom (2Sa 16:1-4; 19:24-30).

MERCIES → MERCY

La 3:22 his **m** never come to an end;
2Co 1:3 the Father of **m** and the God of all

MERCIFUL → MERCY

Dt 4:31 the LORD your God is a **m** God,
Ps 111:4 the LORD is gracious and **m.**
Jer 3:12 not look on you in anger, for I am **m**
Mt 5:7 "Blessed are the **m,** for they will
Lk 6:36 Be **m,** just as your Father is **m.**
Heb 2:17 be a **m** and faithful high priest
Sir 2:11 the Lord is compassionate and **m;**

MERCY → MERCIES, MERCIFUL

Ex 25:17 make a **m** seat of pure gold;
1Ch 21:13 of the LORD, for his **m** is very great;
Ps 40:11 Do not, O LORD, withhold your **m**
Da 9:9 To the Lord our God belong **m**
Hab 3:2 in wrath may you remember **m.**
Zec 1:12 will you withhold **m** from Jerusalem
Mt 9:13 learn what this means, 'I desire **m,**
23:23 of the law: justice and **m** and faith.
Ro 9:15 "I will have **m** on whom I have **m,**
Eph 2:4 But God, who is rich in **m,**
1Ti 1:13 **m** because I had acted ignorantly
Tit 3:5 had done, but according to his **m,**
Heb 4:16 so that we may receive **m** and find
Jas 2:13 **m** triumphs over judgment.
Sir 2:17 for equal to his majesty is his **m,**

MERIBAH

Ex 17:7 He called the place Massah and **M,**
Ps 95:8 Do not harden your hearts, as at **M,**

MESHACH → =MISHAEL

Hebrew exiled to Babylon; name changed from Mishael (Da 1:6-7). Refused defilement by food (Da 1:8-20). Refused to worship idol (Da 3:1-18); saved from furnace (Da 3:19-30).

MESSAGE → MESSENGER

Jn 12:38 "Lord, who has believed our **m,**
1Co 1:18 the **m** about the cross is foolishness
2Co 5:19 entrusting the **m** of reconciliation to

MESSENGER → MESSAGE

Isa 42:19 or deaf like my **m** whom I send?
Mt 11:10 I am sending my **m** ahead of you,
2Co 12:7 a **m** of Satan to torment me,

MESSIAH → CHRIST, MESSIAHS

Mt 16:16 Peter answered, "You are the **M,**
Lk 2:11 a Savior, who is the **M,** the Lord.
Ac 2:36 God has made him both Lord and **M**
Ro 9:5 according to the flesh, comes the **M,**
Rev 11:15 kingdom of our Lord and of his **M,**
2Es 7:28 For my son the **M** shall be revealed

MESSIAHS → MESSIAH

Mk 13:22 False **m** and false prophets will

MICAH

1. Idolater from Ephraim (Jdg 17-18).
2. Prophet from Moresheth (Jer 26:18-19; Mic 1:1).

MICAIAH

Prophet of the LORD who spoke against Ahab (1Ki 22:1-28; 2Ch 18:1-27).

MICHAEL

Archangel (Jude 9); warrior in angelic realm, protector of Israel (Da 10:13, 21; 12:1; Rev 12:7).

MICHAL*

Daughter of Saul, wife of David (1Sa 14:49; 18:20-28). Warned David of Saul's plot (1Sa 19). Saul gave her to Paltiel (1Sa 25:44); David retrieved her (2Sa 3:13-16). Criticized David for dancing before the ark (2Sa 6:16-23; 1Ch 15:29).

MIDDLE

Ge 3:3 tree that is in the **m** of the garden,
Rev 22:2 the **m** of the street of the city.

MIDIAN → MIDIANITES

Ex 18:1 Jethro, the priest of **M,** Moses'

MIDIANITES → MIDIAN

Ge 37:36 the **M** had sold him in Egypt to
Nu 31:2 "Avenge the Israelites on the **M;**

MIDWIVES

Ex 1:17 But the **m** feared God; they did not

MIGHT → ALMIGHTY, MIGHTY

2Ch 6:41 you and the ark of your **m.**
20:6 In your hand are power and **m,**
Ps 54:1 and vindicate me by your **m.**
Ecc 9:10 hand finds to do, do with your **m;**
Zec 4:6 **m,** nor by power, but by my spirit,
Sir 7:30 With all your **m** love your Maker,

MIGHTY → MIGHT

Ge 49:24 by the hands of the **M** One of Jacob,
Ex 6:1 by a **m** hand he will let them go;
Dt 5:15 a **m** hand and an outstretched arm;
2Sa 1:19 How the **m** have fallen!
Ps 99:4 **M** King, lover of justice, you have
Isa 9:6 Wonderful Counselor, **M** God,
Lk 1:49 the **M** One has done great things
Rev 18:8 for **m** is the Lord God who judges

MILE

Mt 5:41 one **m,** go also the second **m.**

MILK

Ex 3:8 a land flowing with **m** and honey,
Heb 5:12 You need **m,** not solid food;
1Pe 2:2 long for the pure, spiritual **m,**

MILLSTONE → STONE

Lk 17:2 better for you if a **m** were hung

MIND → MINDFUL, MINDS

Nu 23:19 mortal, that he should change his **m.**
1Ch 28:9 for the LORD searches every **m,**
Ps 110:4 sworn and will not change his **m,**
Jnh 3:9 God may relent and change his **m;**
Mt 22:37 all your soul, and with all your **m.'**
Ro 1:28 God gave them up to a debased **m**
8:6 but to set the **m** on the Spirit is life
1Co 2:16 who has known the **m** of the Lord
Php 2:5 same **m** be in you that was in Christ
Heb 7:21 sworn and will not change his **m,**
Sir 37:17 The **m** is the root of all conduct;

MINDFUL → MIND

Ps 8:4 beings that you are **m** of them,
111:5 he is ever **m** of his covenant.
Heb 2:6 beings that you are **m** of them,

MINDS → MIND

2Co 4:4 blinded the **m** of the unbelievers,
Eph 4:23 be renewed in the spirit of your **m,**
Php 4:7 guard your hearts and your **m**

MINISTER → MINISTERS, MINISTRY

Ex 28:43 to **m** in the holy place;
Ps 101:6 that is blameless shall **m** to me.

MINISTERS → MINISTER

2Co 3:6 to be **m** of a new covenant,
11:15 if his **m** also disguise themselves as **m**

MINISTRY → MINISTER

2Co 5:18 has given us the **m** of reconciliation;
Eph 4:12 equip the saints for the work of **m,**
Heb 8:6 now obtained a more excellent **m,**

MIRACLES → SEE ALSO JESUS: MIRACLES

Ps 78:11 and the **m** that he had shown them.
Ac 19:11 did extraordinary **m** through Paul,
1Co 12:29 Are all teachers? Do all work **m?**
Heb 2:4 signs and wonders and various **m,**

MIRIAM

Sister of Moses and Aaron (Nu 26:59). Led dancing at Red Sea (Ex 15:20-21). Struck with leprosy for criticizing Moses (Nu 12). Death (Nu 20:1).

MIRROR

1Co 13:12 For now we see in a **m,** dimly,
2Co 3:18 as though reflected in a **m,**
Jas 1:23 who look at themselves in a **m;**

MISHAEL → SEE MESHACH

MISUSES

Ex 20:7 not acquit anyone who **m** his name.

MOAB → MOABITE

Ge 19:37 bore a son, and named him **M;**
Ru 1:1 went to live in the country of **M,**
Isa 15:1 An oracle concerning **M.**

MOABITE → MOAB

Dt 23:3 **M** shall be admitted to the assembly

MOCK → MOCKED

Ps 22:7 All who see me **m** at me;
Mk 10:34 they will **m** him, and spit upon him,

MOCKED → MOCK

1Ki 18:27 At noon Elijah **m** them, saying,
Gal 6:7 God is not **m,** for you reap

MOLECH

Lev 18:21 to sacrifice them to **M,**

MOMENT → MOMENTARY

Ex 33:5 single **m** I should go up among you,
Ps 30:5 For his anger is but for a **m;**
Isa 54:7 For a brief **m** I abandoned you,
66:8 a nation be delivered in one **m?**
1Co 15:52 in a **m,** in the twinkling of an eye,

MOMENTARY* → MOMENT

2Co 4:17 this slight **m** affliction is preparing

MONEY

Ecc 10:19 and **m** meets every need.
Mk 11:15 the tables of the **m** changers
1Ti 3:3 quarrelsome, and not a lover of **m.**
6:10 love of **m** is a root of all kinds
Heb 13:5 your lives free from the love of **m,**

MONTH

Ex 12:2 be the first **m** of the year for you.
Eze 47:12 they will bear fresh fruit every **m,**
Rev 22:2 producing its fruit each **m;**

MOON → MOONS

Ge 37:9 the sun, the **m,** and eleven stars
Dt 17:3 the sun or the **m** or any of the host
Jos 10:13 sun stood still, and the **m** stopped,
Joel 2:31 to darkness, and the **m** to blood,
Ac 2:20 to darkness and the **m** to blood,
Rev 6:12 the full **m** became like blood,
21:23 no need of sun or **m** to shine on it,

MOONS → MOON

2Ch 8:13 the new **m,** and the three annual
Col 2:16 or of observing festivals, new **m,**

MORALS*

1Co 15:33 "Bad company ruins good **m."**

MORDECAI

Benjamite exile who raised Esther (Est 2:5-15). Exposed plot to kill Xerxes (Est 2:19-23). Refused to honor Haman (Est 3:1-6; 5:9-14). Charged Esther to foil Haman's plot against the Jews (Est 4). Xerxes forced Haman to honor Mordecai (Est 6). Mordecai exalted (Est 8-10). Established Purim (Est 9:18-32). See also Additions to Esther.

MORE → MOST

Ps 19:10 **M** to be desired are they than gold,
69:31 will please the LORD **m** than an ox
Ecc 6:11 The **m** words, the **m** vanity,
Mk 4:25 to those who have, **m** will be given;
Lk 12:23 For life is **m** than food,
Ro 8:37 things we are **m** than conquerors
1Co 12:31 a still **m** excellent way.
Jas 4:6 But he gives all the **m** grace;
Rev 7:16 will hunger no **m,** and thirst no **m;**
21:4 Death will be no **m;**

MORIAH*

Ge 22:2 you love, and go to the land of **M,**
2Ch 3:1 the LORD in Jerusalem on Mount **M,**

MORNING

Ge 1:5 and there was **m,** the first day.
Ps 30:5 but joy comes with the **m.**
La 3:23 every **m;** great is your faithfulness.
Lk 24:22 They were at the tomb early this **m,**
2Pe 1:19 the day dawns and the **m** star rises
Rev 22:16 of David, the bright **m** star."

MORTAL

Nu 23:19 **m,** that he should change his mind.
1Sa 15:29 **m,** that he should change his mind."
1Co 15:53 **m** body must put on immortality.
2Co 5:4 is **m** may be swallowed up by life.

MOSES

Levite; brother of Aaron (Ex 6:20; 1Ch 6:3). Put in basket into Nile; discovered and raised by Pharaoh's daughter (Ex 2:1-10). Fled to Midian after killing Egyptian (Ex 2:11-15). Married to Zipporah, fathered Gershom (Ex 2:16-22).

Called by the LORD to deliver Israel (Ex 3-4). Pharaoh's resistance (Ex 5). Ten plagues (Ex 7-11). Passover and Exodus (Ex 12-13). Led Israel through Red Sea (Ex 14). Song of deliverance (Ex 15:1-21). Brought water from rock (Ex 17:1-7). Raised hands to defeat Amalekites (Ex 17:8-16). Delegated judges (Ex 18; Dt 1:9-18).

Received Law at Sinai (Ex 19-23; 25-31; Jn 1:17). Announced Law to Israel (Ex 19:7-8; 24; 35). Broke tablets because of golden calf (Ex 32; Dt 9). Saw glory of the LORD (Ex 33-34). Supervised building of tabernacle (Ex 36-40). Set apart Aaron and priests (Lev 8-9). Numbered tribes (Nu 1-4; 26). Opposed by Aaron and Miriam (Nu 12). Sent spies into Canaan (Nu 13). Announced forty years of wandering for failure to enter land (Nu 14). Opposed by Korah (Nu 16). Forbidden to enter land for striking rock (Nu 20:1-13; Dt 1:37). Lifted bronze snake for healing (Nu 21:4-9; Jn 3:14). Final address to Israel (Dt 1-33). Succeeded by Joshua (Nu 27:12-23; Dt 34). Death and burial by God (Dt 34:5-12). Praise of (Sir 45).

Law of (1Ki 2:3; Ezr 3:2; Mk 12:26; Lk 24:44). Book of (2Ch 25:12; Ne 13:1). Song of (Ex 15:1-21; Rev 15:3). Prayer of (Ps 90).

MOST → MORE

Ge 14:18 he was priest of God **M** High.
Ex 26:33 the holy place from the **m** holy.
Ps 91:1 live in the shelter of the **M** High,
Mk 5:7 Jesus, Son of the **M** High God?
Col 4:5 making the **m** of the time.
Jude 1:20 yourselves up on your **m** holy faith;

MOTH

Ps 39:11 consuming like a **m** what is dear to
Mt 6:19 where **m** and rust consume and

MOTHER → MOTHER'S, MOTHERS

Ge 2:24 a man leaves his father and his **m**
3:20 because she was the **m** of all living.
Ex 20:12 Honor your father and your **m,**
Jdg 5:7 Deborah, arose as a **m** in Israel.
Pr 31:1 An oracle that his **m** taught him:
Isa 66:13 As a **m** comforts her child, so I will
Mt 10:37 loves father or **m** more than me is
Lk 14:26 and does not hate father and **m,**
Jn 19:27 to the disciple, "Here is your **m."**
Eph 5:31 a man will leave his father and **m**
Rev 17:5 **m** of whores and of earth's
Tob 4:3 Honor your **m** and do not abandon
Sir 3:6 who honor their **m** obey the Lord;

MOTHER'S → MOTHER

Job 1:21 "Naked I came from my **m** womb,
Pr 1:8 and do not reject your **m** teaching;
Jn 3:4 a second time into the **m** womb and

MOTHERS → MOTHER

Pr 15:20 but the foolish despise their **m.**
Mk 10:30 brothers and sisters, **m** and children,

MOUNT → MOUNTAIN, MOUNTAINS

Ge 22:14 "On the **m** of the LORD it shall be
Ex 19:20 the LORD descended upon **M** Sinai,
Dt 11:29 blessing on **M** Gerizim and the curse
Ps 78:68 **M** Zion, which he loves.
Mic 4:7 will reign over them in **M** Zion
Zec 14:4 the **M** of Olives shall be split in two
Mk 13:3 he was sitting on the **M** of Olives
Heb 12:22 But you have come to **M** Zion and
Rev 14:1 the Lamb, standing on **M** Zion!

MOUNTAIN → MOUNT

Ex 3:1 and came to Horeb, the **m** of God.
24:18 on the **m** for forty days and forty
Isa 2:2 the **m** of the LORD's house shall be
Da 2:45 saw that a stone was cut from the **m**
Mt 4:8 a very high **m** and showed him all
17:20 you will say to this **m,** 'Move from
2Pe 1:18 we were with him on the holy **m.**

MOUNTAINS → MOUNT

Ge 7:20 the waters swelled above the **m,**
Ps 125:2 As the **m** surround Jerusalem,
Isa 52:7 beautiful upon the **m** are the feet of
1Co 13:2 have all faith, so as to remove **m,**
Rev 16:20 and no **m** were to be found;

MOURN → MOURNFUL, MOURNING

Ecc 3:4 a time to **m,** and a time to dance;
Zec 12:10 they shall **m** for him,
Mt 5:4 "Blessed are those who **m,**
Sir 7:34 but **m** with those who **m.**

MOURNING → MOURN

Ps 30:11 You have turned my **m** into dancing
Isa 61:3 the oil of gladness instead of **m,**
Rev 21:4 **m** and crying and pain will be no

MOUTH → MOUTHS

Ex 4:12 Now go, and I will be with your **m**
Dt 8:3 that comes from the **m** of the LORD.
Ps 19:14 Let the words of my **m** and
Ecc 5:2 Never be rash with your **m,**
Isa 49:2 He made my **m** like a sharp sword,
Mt 4:4 every word that comes from the **m**
15:11 it is not what goes into the **m**
Jas 3:10 From the same **m** come blessing and
Rev 19:15 From his **m** comes a sharp sword
Sir 28:25 and a bolt for your **m.**

MOUTHS → MOUTH

Ps 115:5 They have **m,** but do not speak;
Da 6:22 sent his angel and shut the lions' **m**

MUCH

Ps 19:10 they than gold, even **m** fine gold;
Ecc 12:12 **m** study is a weariness of the flesh.
Lk 12:48 to whom **m** has been given, **m** will be required;
Jn 12:24 but if it dies, it bears **m** fruit.
1Jn 4:11 since God loved us so **m,**

MUD

Jn 9:6 and spread the **m** on the man's eyes,
2Pe 2:22 washed only to wallow in the **m."**

MULTIPLY

Ge 1:28 to them, "Be fruitful and **m,**
9:7 And you, be fruitful and **m,**
Dt 6:3 that you may **m** greatly in a land

MULTITUDE → MULTITUDES

Jas 5:20 and will cover a **m** of sins.
1Pe 4:8 for love covers a **m** of sins.

MULTITUDES → MULTITUDE

Joel 3:14 **M, m,** in the valley of decision!
Rev 17:15 are peoples and **m** and nations

MURDER → MURDERER, MURDERERS

Ex 20:13 You shall not **m.**
Hos 4:2 lying, and **m,** and stealing and
Mt 5:21 of ancient times, 'You shall not **m';**

MURDERER → MURDER

Nu 35:16 the **m** shall be put to death.
Jn 8:44 He was a **m** from the beginning

MURDERERS → MURDER

1Jn 3:15 who hate a brother or sister are **m,**
Rev 21:8 the faithless, the polluted, the **m,**

MUSIC

1Sa 19:9 while David was playing **m.**
Ps 92:3 to the **m** of the lute and the harp,

MUSTARD

Mt 17:20 have faith the size of a **m** seed,
Mk 4:31 It is like a **m** seed, which,

MUTUAL

Ro 12:10 love one another with **m** affection;
Heb 13:1 Let **m** love continue.

MYRRH

Mt 2:11 gifts of gold, frankincense, and **m.**
Mk 15:23 offered him wine mixed with **m;**

MYSTERY

Da 2:19 **m** was revealed to Daniel in a vision
Ro 11:25 I want you to understand this **m:**
1Co 15:51 Listen, I will tell you a **m!**
Eph 3:4 my understanding of the **m** of Christ
1Ti 3:9 must hold fast to the **m** of the faith
Rev 17:5 a name, a **m:** "Babylon the great,

MYTHS

2Pe 1:16 did not follow cleverly devised **m**

N

NAAMAN

Aramean general whose leprosy was cleansed by Elisha (2Ki 5; Lk 4:27).

NABAL

Wealthy Carmelite the LORD killed for refusing to help David (1Sa 25). David married Abigail, his widow (1Sa 25:39-42).

NABOTH

Jezreelite killed for his vineyard (1Ki 21). Ahab's family punished (1Ki 21:17-24; 2Ki 9:21-37).

NADAB

1. Firstborn of Aaron (Ex 6:23); killed with Abihu for offering unauthorized fire (Lev 10; Nu 3:4).
2. Son of Jeroboam I; king of Israel (1Ki 15:25-32).

NAHUM

Prophet against Nineveh (Na 1:1; Tob 14:4).

NAILING* → NAILS

Col 2:14 He set this aside, **n** it to the cross.

NAILS → NAILING

Ecc 12:11 like **n** firmly fixed are the collected
Jn 20:25 put my finger in the mark of the **n**

NAKED → NAKEDNESS

Ge 2:25 the man and his wife were both **n,**
Job 1:21 **"N** I came from my mother's womb, and **n** shall
2Co 5:3 taken it off we will not be found **n.**

NAKEDNESS → NAKED

Ro 8:35 or persecution, or famine, or **n,**

NAME → NAME'S, NAMES

Ge 2:19 every living creature, that was its **n.**
4:26 people began to invoke the **n** of
12:2 bless you, and make your **n** great,
Ex 3:15 my **n** forever, and this my title
20:7 wrongful use of the **n** of the LORD
34:5 and proclaimed the **n,** "The LORD."
Nu 17:2 Write each man's **n** on his staff,
Dt 12:11 as a dwelling for his **n:**
Ps 9:10 know your **n** put their trust in you,
Pr 18:10 The **n** of the LORD is a strong tower;
Isa 42:8 I am the LORD, that is my **n;**
Eze 20:9 But I acted for the sake of my **n,**
Joel 2:32 on the **n** of the LORD shall be saved;
Zec 14:9 the LORD will be one and his **n** one.
Mt 1:21 a son, and you are to **n** him Jesus,
6:9 Father in heaven, hallowed be your **n.**
28:19 baptizing them in the **n** of the Father
Jn 1:12 received him, who believed in his **n,**
20:31 believing you may have life in his **n.**
Ac 4:12 for there is no other **n** under heaven
Php 2:9 gave him the **n** that is above every **n**
Rev 13:17 **n** of the beast or the number of its **n.**
19:13 his **n** is called The Word of God.
22:4 and his **n** will be on their foreheads.
Sir 2:17 and equal to his **n** are his works.

NAME'S → NAME

Ps 23:3 in right paths for his **n** sake.

NAMES → NAME

Ge 2:20 The man gave **n** to all cattle,
Ex 28:9 engrave on them the **n** of the sons
Mt 10:2 are the **n** of the twelve apostles:
Rev 21:14 the twelve **n** of the twelve apostles

NAOMI*

Wife of Elimelech, mother-in-law of Ruth (Ru 1:2, 4). Left Bethlehem for Moab during famine (Ru 1:1). Returned a widow, with Ruth (Ru 1:6-22). Advised Ruth to seek marriage with Boaz (Ru 2:17-3:4). Cared for Ruth's son Obed (Ru 4:13-17).

NAPHTALI

Son of Jacob by Bilhah (Ge 30:8; 35:25; 1Ch 2:2). Tribe of blessed (Ge 49:21; Dt 33:23), numbered (Nu 1:43; 26:50), allotted land (Jos 19:32-39; Eze 48:3), failed to fully possess (Jdg 1:33), supported Deborah (Jdg 4:10; 5:18), David (1Ch 12:34), 12,000 from (Rev 7:6).

NARROW

Lk 13:24 "Strive to enter through the **n** door;

NATHAN

Prophet and chronicler of Israel's history (1Ch 29:29; 2Ch 9:29). Announced the Davidic covenant (2Sa 7; 1Ch 17). Denounced David's sin with Bathsheba (2Sa 12). Supported Solomon (1Ki 1).

NATHANAEL → =BARTHOLOMEW?

Apostle (Jn 1:45-49; 21:2). Probably also called Bartholomew (Mt 10:3).

NATION → NATIONS

Ge 12:2 I will make of you a great **n,** and
Ex 32:10 and of you I will make a great **n."**
Ps 33:12 Happy is the **n** whose God is the LORD
Pr 14:34 Righteousness exalts a **n,**
Isa 2:4 **n** shall not lift up sword against **n,**
66:8 a **n** be delivered in one moment?
Mt 24:7 For **n** will rise against **n,**
1Pe 2:9 a holy **n,** God's own people,

NATIONS → NATION

Ge 18:18 the **n** of the earth shall be blessed in
2Ki 17:15 followed the **n** that were around
Ps 47:8 God is king over the **n;**
Isa 2:2 all the **n** shall stream to it.
42:1 he will bring forth justice to the **n.**
Am 9:12 and all the **n** who are called
Mt 28:19 and make disciples of all **n,**
Mk 11:17 a house of prayer for all the **n'?**
Ro 4:18 become "the father of many **n,"**
Rev 22:2 the tree are for the healing of the **n.**

NATURAL → NATURE

Nu 16:29 If these people die a **n** death,
Ro 11:21 if God did not spare the **n** branches,

NATURE → NATURAL

Ro 1:20 his eternal power and divine **n,**
2Pe 1:4 become participants of the divine **n.**

NAZARETH

Mt 2:23 made his home in a town called **N,**
Jn 1:46 Can anything good come out of **N?**
19:19 "Jesus of **N,** the King of the Jews."

NAZIRITE

Nu 6:2 make a special vow, the vow of a **n,**
Jdg 13:5 boy shall be a **n** to God from birth.

NEAR → NEARSIGHTED

Dt 4:7 has a god so **n** to it as the LORD
30:14 No, the word is very **n** to you;
Isa 55:6 call upon him while he is **n;**
Zep 1:14 The great day of the LORD is **n,**
Lk 10:9 'The kingdom of God has come **n**
Jas 4:8 Draw **n** to God, and he will draw **n** to
Rev 22:10 of this book, for the time is **n.**

NEARSIGHTED* → NEAR, SEE

2Pe 1:9 lacks these things is **n** and blind,

NEBUCHADNEZZAR

Babylonian king, also spelled Nebuchadrezzar. Subdued and exiled Judah (2Ki 24-25; 2Ch 36; Jer 39). Dreams interpreted by Daniel (Da 2; 4). Worshiped God (Da 3:28-29; 4:34-37).

NECK → STIFF-NECKED

Pr 3:22 your soul and adornment for your **n.**
Mt 18:6 were fastened around your **n**

NECO

Pharaoh who killed Josiah (2Ki 23:29-30; 2Ch 35:20-22), deposed Jehoahaz (2Ki 23:33-35; 2Ch 36:3-4).

NEED → NEEDY

Mt 6:8 for your Father knows what you **n**
1Co 12:21 to the hand, "I have no **n** of you,"
Heb 4:16 and find grace to help in time of **n.**
1Jn 2:27 you do not **n** anyone to teach you.

NEEDLE

Lk 18:25 a camel to go through the eye of a **n**

NEEDY → NEED

1Sa 2:8 he lifts the **n** from the ash heap,
Job 29:16 I was a father to the **n,**
Ps 113:7 and lifts the **n** from the ash heap,

NEGLECT

Lk 11:42 and **n** justice and the love of God;
1Ti 4:14 Do not **n** the gift that is in you,
Heb 2:3 escape if we **n** so great a salvation?

NEHEMIAH

Cupbearer of Artaxerxes (Ne 2:1); governor of Israel (Ne 8:9). Returned to Jerusalem to rebuild walls (Ne 2-6). With Ezra, reestablished worship (Ne 8). Prayer confessing nation's sin (Ne 9). Dedicated wall (Ne 12). Story of the miraculous fire (2Mc 1).

NEIGHBOR

Lev 19:18 shall love your **n** as yourself:
Dt 5:20 bear false witness against your **n.**
Mt 19:19 You shall love your **n** as yourself."
Jas 2:8 "You shall love your **n** as yourself."

NESTS

Mt 8:20 and birds of the air have **n;**
Lk 13:19 made **n** in its branches."

NEVER

Ps 15:5 do these things shall **n** be moved.
La 3:22 steadfast love of the LORD **n** ceases,
Da 2:44 will set up a kingdom that shall **n**
Mt 7:23 will declare to them, 'I **n** knew you;
Jn 10:28 eternal life, and they will **n** perish.
1Co 13:8 Love **n** ends. But as for prophecies,
Heb 13:5 he has said, "I will **n** leave you or

NEW

Ex 1:8 Now a **n** king arose over Egypt,
Ps 33:3 Sing to him a **n** song;
Ecc 1:9 there is nothing **n** under the sun.
Isa 43:19 I am about to do a **n** thing;
65:17 create **n** heavens and a **n** earth;
Jer 31:31 I will make a **n** covenant with the
La 3:23 they are **n** every morning;
Eze 36:26 A **n** heart I will give you,
Mt 9:17 is **n** wine put into old wineskins;
Mk 1:27 A **n** teaching—with authority!
Lk 22:20 is the **n** covenant in my blood.
Jn 13:34 I give you a **n** commandment,
2Co 3:6 to be ministers of a **n** covenant,
Col 3:10 clothed yourselves with the **n** self,
Heb 8:8 when I will establish a **n** covenant
1Pe 1:3 mercy he has given us a **n** birth into
2Pe 3:13 we wait for **n** heavens and a **n** earth,
1Jn 2:7 writing you no **n** commandment,
Rev 21:1 I saw a **n** heaven and a **n** earth;
21:2 I saw the holy city, the **n** Jerusalem,
21:5 "See, I am making all things **n."**

NEWS

Isa 52:7 who brings good **n,** who announces
Mt 11:5 the poor have good **n** brought to
Mk 1:15 repent, and believe in the good **n."**

NICODEMUS

Pharisee who visted Jesus at night (Jn 3). Argued for fair treatment of Jesus (Jn 7:50-52). With Joseph, prepared Jesus for burial (Jn 19:38-42).

NIGHT → NIGHTS

Ge 1:5 and the darkness he called **N.**
Ex 13:21 a pillar of fire by **n,** to give them
Jos 1:8 you shall meditate on it day and **n,**
Mt 24:43 part of the **n** the thief was coming,
1Th 5:2 Lord will come like a thief in the **n.**
Rev 22:5 And there will be no more **n;**

NIGHTS → NIGHT

Ge 7:12 on the earth forty days and forty **n.**
Ex 24:18 mountain for forty days and forty **n.**
1Ki 19:8 of that food forty days and forty **n**
Jnh 1:17 of the fish three days and three **n.**
Mt 4:2 He fasted forty days and forty **n,**
12:40 for three days and three **n** the Son

NILE

Ex 7:17 will strike the water that is in the **N,**

NINEVEH

Jnh 1:2 "Go at once to **N,** that great city,
Na 1:1 An oracle concerning **N.**
Mt 12:41 The people of **N** will rise up at the

NOAH

Righteous man (Eze 14:14, 20) called to build ark (Ge 6-8; Heb 11:7; 1Pe 3:20; 2Pe 2:5). God's covenant with (Ge 9:1-17). Drunkenness of (Ge 9:18-23). Blessed sons, cursed Canaan (Ge 9:24-27). Praised (Sir 44:17-18).

NOISE

Ex 32:17 "There is a **n** of war in the camp."
Ps 66:1 Make a joyful **n** to God, all the earth
2Pe 3:10 will pass away with a loud **n,**

NOON

Am 8:9 I will make the sun go down at **n,**
Mk 15:33 When it was **n,** darkness came over

NORTH

Jer 4:6 I am bringing evil from the **n,**
Da 11:6 come to the king of the **n** to ratify

NOTHING

Ecc 1:9 there is **n** new under the sun.
Jer 32:17 **N** is too hard for you.
Mt 17:20 and **n** will be impossible for you."
Jn 15:5 apart from me you can do **n.**
1Co 13:2 but do not have love, I am **n.**
Sir 39:20 and **n** is too marvelous for him.

NULLIFY

Ro 3:3 **n** the faithfulness of God?
Gal 2:21 I do not **n** the grace of God;

NUMBER → NUMBERED, NUMEROUS

Nu 1:45 So the whole **n** of the Israelites,
26:51 the **n** of the Israelites enrolled:
Ro 11:25 until the full **n** of the Gentiles has
Rev 13:18 Its **n** is six hundred sixty-six.

NUMBERED → NUMBER

2Sa 24:10 because he had **n** the people.

NUMEROUS → NUMBER

Ge 17:2 and will make you exceedingly **n."**
Ex 1:9 the Israelite people are more **n**
Zec 10:8 shall be as **n** as they were before.

NURSING

Isa 49:15 Can a woman forget her **n** child,

O

OATH

Dt 7:8 and kept the **o** that he swore to your
Ne 13:25 them take an **o** in the name of God,
Ps 132:11 a sure **o** from which he will not turn
Heb 7:20 This was confirmed with an **o;**

OBADIAH

1. Believer who sheltered 100 prophets from Jezebel (1Ki 18:1–16).
2. Prophet against Edom (Ob 1; 2Es 1:39).

OBEDIENCE → OBEY

Ro 5:19 so by the one man's **o** the many will
Heb 5:8 learned **o** through what he suffered;

OBEDIENT → OBEY

Ex 24:7 spoken we will do, and we will be **o.**
Php 2:8 and became **o** to the point of death

OBEY → OBEDIENCE, OBEDIENT, OBEYED

Ex 19:5 if you **o** my voice and keep my
Dt 12:28 Be careful to **o** all these words that
Jos 24:24 we will serve, and him we will **o."**
Mt 28:20 **o** everything that I have commanded
Ac 5:29 "We must **o** God rather than any
Eph 6:1 Children, **o** your parents in the Lord,
1Jn 5:3 love of God is this, that we **o** his

OBEYED → OBEY

Jer 3:13 have not **o** my voice, says the Lord.
Heb 11:8 By faith Abraham **o** when he was

OBSERVE

Lev 20:8 Keep my statutes, and **o** them;
Ps 119:8 I will **o** your statutes;

OBSTACLE

1Co 9:12 **o** in the way of the gospel of Christ.
2Co 6:3 are putting no **o** in anyone's way,

OBTAIN → OBTAINED

Ro 11:7 Israel failed to **o** what it was seeking
2Ti 2:10 that they may also **o** the salvation

OBTAINED → OBTAIN

Php 3:12 Not that I have already **o** this
Heb 8:6 Jesus has now **o** a more excellent

ODOR

Ge 8:21 the Lord smelled the pleasing **o,**
Ex 29:18 it is a pleasing **o,** an offering

OFFENSE

Mk 6:3 And they took **o** at him.
Gal 5:11 **o** of the cross has been removed.

OFFER → OFFERING, OFFERINGS

Ps 4:5 **O** right sacrifices, and put your trust
Hos 14:2 and we will **o** the fruit of our lips.
Heb 9:25 Nor was it to **o** himself again and

OFFERING → OFFER

Ge 4:4 Lord had regard for Abel and his **o,**
22:8 will provide the lamb for a burnt **o,**
2Ch 7:1 heaven and consumed the burnt **o**
Ps 40:6 Sacrifice and **o** you do not desire,
Da 11:31 shall abolish the regular burnt **o**
Eph 5:2 a fragrant **o** and sacrifice to God.
Heb 10:14 For by a single **o** he has perfected
1Mc 4:44 what to do about the altar of burnt **o,**

OFFERINGS → OFFER

1Sa 15:22 the Lord as great delight in burnt **o**
Hos 6:6 of God rather than burnt **o.**
Mk 12:33 important than all whole burnt **o**
1Mc 1:45 to forbid burnt **o** and sacrifices

OFFSPRING

Ge 3:15 and between your **o** and hers;
12:7 "To your **o** I will give this land."
2Sa 7:12 I will raise up your **o** after you,

OHOLIAB

Craftsman who worked on the tabernacle (Ex 31:6; 35:34; 36:1–2; 38:23).

OIL

Ex 25:6 **o** for the lamps, spices for the anointing **o**
Dt 14:23 your wine, and your **o,** as well
Ps 23:5 you anoint my head with **o;**
Heb 1:9 with the **o** of gladness beyond your
Jas 5:14 anointing them with **o** in the name

OLD

Ge 21:7 I have borne him a son in his **o** age."
Ps 74:12 Yet God my King is from of **o,**
Mk 2:22 puts new wine into **o** wineskins;
Ro 4:19 he was about a hundred years **o),**
Eph 4:22 your **o** self, corrupt and deluded by

OLIVE → OLIVES

Zec 4:3 And by it there are two **o** trees,
Ro 11:17 and you, a wild **o** shoot,
Rev 11:4 two **o** trees and the two lampstands

OLIVES → OLIVE

Zec 14:4 Mount of **O** shall be split in two
Mt 24:3 he was sitting on the Mount of **O,**

OMEGA

Rev 1:8 "I am the Alpha and the **O,"**

OMRI

King of Israel (1Ki 16:21–26).

ONCE → ONE

Ex 30:10 **O** a year Aaron shall perform the
Ro 6:10 he died, he died to sin, **o** for all;
Heb 7:27 this he did **o** for all when he offered
9:27 it is appointed for mortals to die **o,**

ONE → FIRST, ONCE

Ge 2:24 and they become **o** flesh.
Zec 14:9 the Lord will be **o** and his name **o.**
Mk 12:29 the Lord our God, the Lord is **o;**
Jn 10:30 The Father and I are **o."**
1Co 12:13 For in the **o** Spirit we were all baptized
Eph 4:5 **o** Lord, **o** faith, **o** baptism,

ONLY

Ge 22:2 "Take your son, your **o** son Isaac,
1Ki 18:22 "I, even I **o,** am left a prophet
Jn 1:14 the glory as of a father's **o** son,
3:16 that he gave his **o** Son,
1Ti 1:17 the **o** God, be honor and glory
1Jn 4:9 God sent his **o** Son into the world so

OPEN → OPENED, OPENS

Isa 53:7 so he did not **o** his mouth.
Rev 5:2 "Who is worthy to **o** the scroll

OPENED → OPEN

Ge 3:7 Then the eyes of both were **o,**
Da 7:10 in judgment, and the books were **o.**
Zec 13:1 a fountain shall be **o** for the house
Lk 11:9 knock, and the door will be **o** for
Heb 10:20 new and living way that he **o** for us
Rev 20:12 book was **o,** the book of life.

OPENS → OPEN

Rev 3:7 who **o** and no one will shut,

OPPORTUNITY

Mt 26:16 began to look for an **o** to betray him.
Gal 5:13 not use your freedom as an **o** for

OPPRESSED → OPPRESSION

Ge 15:13 shall be **o** for four hundred years;
Ex 1:12 But the more they were **o,**
Ps 146:7 who executes justice for the **o;**
Isa 53:7 He was **o,** and he was afflicted,
Jdt 9:11 God of the lowly, helper of the **o,**

OPPRESSION → OPPRESSED

Jer 9:6 **O** upon **o,** deceit upon deceit!
Eze 45:9 Put away violence and **o,**

ORACLES

Ro 3:2 entrusted with the **o** of God.

ORDAIN → ORDINANCE, ORDINANCES

Ex 29:9 shall then **o** Aaron and his sons.
1Ti 5:22 Do not **o** anyone hastily,

ORDER

Ps 110:4 according to the **o** of Melchizedek."
Heb 5:10 according to the **o** of Melchizedek.

ORDINANCE → ORDAIN

Ex 12:17 your generations as a perpetual **o.**
29:9 shall be theirs by a perpetual **o.**

ORDINANCES → ORDAIN

Ps 19:9 **o** of the Lord are true and righteous

ORIGIN

Mt 21:26 But if we say, 'Of human **o,'**
Ac 5:38 or this undertaking is of human **o,**

ORNAMENTS

Ex 33:6 stripped themselves of their **o,**
1Pe 3:3 by wearing gold **o** or fine clothing;

ORPHAN → ORPHANED, ORPHANS

Ex 22:22 You shall not abuse any widow or **o.**
Hos 14:3 In you the **o** finds mercy."

ORPHANED → ORPHAN

Jn 14:18 will not leave you **o;** I am coming

ORPHANS → ORPHAN

Jas 1:27 to care for **o** and widows in their
Sir 4:10 Be a father to **o,** and be like a

OTHER → OTHERS

Ex 20:3 you shall have no **o** gods before me.
Jdg 2:19 following **o** gods,

2Ki 17:7 They had worshiped **o** gods
Isa 45:5 I am the LORD, and there is no **o;**
Mt 6:24 to the one and despise the **o.**

OTHERS → OTHER

Lk 6:31 Do to **o** as you would have them do
Php 2:3 but in humility regard **o** as better

OTHNIEL

Nephew of Caleb (Jos 15:15-19; Jdg 1:12-15). Judge who freed Israel from Aram (Jdg 3:7-11).

OUTSIDE

Lk 11:39 Pharisees clean the **o** of the cup and
Heb 13:12 Jesus also suffered **o** the city gate in
Rev 22:15 **O** are the dogs and sorcerers and

OUTSTRETCHED → STRETCH

Ex 6:6 I will redeem you with an **o** arm
Ps 136:12 an **o** arm, for his steadfast love
Jer 27:5 by my great power and my **o** arm

OUTWARD

1Sa 16:7 they look on the **o** appearance,
2Co 5:12 those who boast in **o** appearance
2Ti 3:5 the **o** form of godliness but denying

OVERCOME

Jn 1:5 and the darkness did not **o** it.
Ro 12:21 Do not be **o** by evil, but **o** evil with
1Jn 2:14 and you have **o** the evil one.

OVERSHADOW* → OVERSHADOWED

Lk 1:35 power of the Most High will **o** you;

OVERSHADOWED → OVERSHADOW

Lk 9:34 a cloud came and **o** them;

OWE → OWES

Mt 18:28 he said, 'Pay what you **o.'**
Ro 13:8 **O** no one anything, except to love

OWN

Isa 53:6 we have all turned to our **o** way,
Jer 31:30 But all shall die for their **o** sins;
Jn 1:11 He came to what was his **o,** and his **o** people did not accept him.
10:18 but I lay it down of my **o** accord.
1Co 6:19 and that you are not your **o?**

OX → OXEN

Dt 25:4 not muzzle an **o** while it is treading
Isa 65:25 the lion shall eat straw like the **o;**
Eze 1:10 the face of an **o** on the left side,
1Ti 5:18 not muzzle an **o** while it is treading
Rev 4:7 the second living creature like an **o,**

P

PAGANS

1Co 5:1 that is not found even among **p;**
12:2 You know that when you were **p,**

PAIN → PAINS

Ge 3:16 in **p** you shall bring forth children,
1Pe 2:19 endure **p** while suffering unjustly.
Rev 21:4 and crying and **p** will be no more,

PAINS → PAIN

Ro 8:22 creation has been groaning in labor **p**
1Th 5:3 as labor **p** come upon a pregnant

PALM → PALMS

Jn 12:13 So they took branches of **p** trees
Rev 7:9 robed in white, with **p** branches in

PALMS → PALM

Isa 49:16 I have inscribed you on the **p** of my

PANGS

Ge 3:16 increase your **p** in childbearing;
Mk 13:8 but the beginning of the birth **p.**
Rev 12:2 and was crying out in birth **p,**

PARABLE → PARABLES

Ps 78:2 I will open my mouth in a **p;**
Mt 13:18 "Hear then the **p** of the sower.

PARABLES → PARABLE; SEE ALSO JESUS: PARABLES

Mt 13:35 I will open my mouth to speak in **p;**
Sir 39:2 penetrates the subtleties of **p;**

PARADISE

Lk 23:43 today you will be with me in **P."**
2Co 12:4 was caught up into **P** and heard
Rev 2:7 tree of life that is in the **p** of God.
2Es 8:52 for you that **p** is opened,

PARALYTIC → PARALYZED

Mt 9:2 saw their faith, he said to the **p,**

PARALYZED → PARALYTIC

Jn 5:3 many invalids—blind, lame, and **p.**
Ac 8:7 who were **p** or lame were cured.

PARCHMENTS*

2Ti 4:13 also the books, and above all the **p.**

PARDON

Ex 34:9 **p** our iniquity and our sin,
Isa 55:7 our God, for he will abundantly **p.**

PARENT → PARENTS

Dt 8:5 that as a **p** disciplines a child
Eze 18:20 nor a **p** suffer for the iniquity of a

PARENTS → PARENT

Mal 4:6 turn the hearts of **p** to their children
Lk 1:17 turn the hearts of **p** to their children,
Eph 6:1 Children, obey your **p** in the Lord,
Sir 48:10 turn the hearts of **p** to their children,

PART → APART

1Co 13:9 For we know only in **p,** and we prophesy only in **p;**

PARTAKE

1Co 10:17 for we all **p** of the one bread.

PARTIALITY

Dt 16:19 distort justice; you must not show **p;**
Pr 24:23 **P** in judging is not good.
Ro 2:11 For God shows no **p.**
Jas 3:17 without a trace of **p** or hypocrisy.
Sir 35:15 and with him there is no **p.**

PARTICIPANTS → PARTICIPATE

2Pe 1:4 may become **p** of the divine nature.

PARTICIPATE* → PARTICIPANTS

1Ti 5:22 and do not **p** in the sins of others;
2Jn 1:11 for to welcome is to **p** in the evil

PARTNER → PARTNERS, PARTNERSHIP

Pr 2:17 who forsakes the **p** of her youth
1Co 7:15 But if the unbelieving **p** separates,

PARTNERS → PARTNER

1Co 10:20 not want you to be **p** with demons.
Heb 3:1 holy **p** in a heavenly calling,

PARTNERSHIP* → PARTNER

2Co 6:14 **p** is there between righteousness

PASHHUR

Priest; opponent of Jeremiah (Jer 20:1-6).

PASS → PASSED, PASSING

Ex 12:13 when I see the blood, I will **p** over
33:19 make all my goodness **p** before you,
Am 5:17 I will **p** through the midst of you,
Mt 24:35 Heaven and earth will **p** away, but my words will not **p**
2Pe 3:10 then the heavens will **p** away

PASSED → PASS

Ge 15:17 torch **p** between these pieces.
Ex 12:27 he **p** over the houses of the Israelites
33:22 with my hand until I have **p** by;
2Co 5:17 everything old has **p** away;
1Jn 3:14 that we have **p** from death to life
Rev 21:4 for the first things have **p** away."

PASSING → PASS

1Co 7:31 present form of this world is **p** away
1Jn 2:17 the world and its desire are **p** away,

PASSIONS

Gal 5:24 have crucified the flesh with its **p**
2Ti 2:22 Shun youthful **p** and pursue

PASSOVER

Ex 12:11 It is the **p** of the LORD.
Dt 16:1 the month of Abib by keeping the **p**
Mk 14:12 when the **P** lamb is sacrificed,

PASTORS*

Eph 4:11 evangelists, some **p** and teachers,

PASTURE → PASTURES

Ps 100:3 his people, and the sheep of his **p.**
Jer 50:7 the LORD, the true **p,** the LORD,

PASTURES → PASTURE

Ps 23:2 He makes me lie down in green **p;**

PATH → PATHS

Ps 16:11 You show me the **p** of life.
119:105 lamp to my feet and a light to my **p.**
Mt 13:4 he sowed, some seeds fell on the **p,**

PATHS → PATH

Ps 23:3 in right **p** for his name's sake.
Pr 3:6 and he will make straight your **p.**
Mt 3:3 of the Lord, make his **p** straight.'"
Heb 12:13 and make straight **p** for your feet,

PATIENCE → PATIENT

Mic 2:7 Is the LORD's **p** exhausted?
Ro 2:4 his kindness and forbearance and **p?**
Gal 5:22 fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, **p,**
2Pe 3:15 regard the **p** of our Lord as salvation

PATIENT → PATIENCE

Lk 8:15 and bear fruit with **p** endurance.
Ro 12:12 Rejoice in hope, be **p** in suffering,
1Co 13:4 Love is **p;** love is kind;
2Pe 3:9 as some think of slowness, but is **p**

PATTERN

Ex 25:40 make them according to the **p** for
Heb 8:5 make everything according to the **p**

PAUL → =SAUL

Also called Saul (Ac 13:9). Pharisee from Tarsus (Ac 9:11; Php 3:5). Apostle (Gal 1). At stoning of Stephen (Ac 8:1). Persecuted Church (Ac 9:1-2; Gal 1:13). Vision of Jesus on road to Damascus (Ac 9:4-9; 26:12-18). In Arabia (Gal 1:17). Preached in Damascus; escaped death through the wall in a basket (Ac 9:19-25). In Jerusalem; back to Tarsus (Ac 9:26-30).

Brought to Antioch by Barnabas (Ac 11:22-26). First missionary journey to Cyprus and Galatia (Ac 13-14). Stoned at Lystra (Ac 14:19-20). At Jerusalem council (Ac 15). Split with Barnabas over Mark (Ac 15:36-41).

Second missionary journey with Silas (Ac 16-20). Called to Macedonia (Ac 16:6-10). Freed from prison in Philippi (Ac 16:16-40). In Thessalonica (Ac 17:1-9). Speech in Athens (Ac 17:16-33). In Corinth (Ac 18). In Ephesus (Ac 19). Return to Jerusalem (Ac 20). Farewell to Ephesian elders (Ac 20:13-38). Arrival in Jerusalem (Ac 21:1-26). Arrested (Ac 21:27-36). Addressed crowds (Ac 22), Sanhedrin (Ac 23:1-11). Sent to Caesarea (Ac 23:12-35). Trial before Felix (Ac 24), Festus (Ac 25:1-12). Before Agrippa (Ac 25:13-26:32). Voyage to Rome; shipwreck (Ac 27). Arrival in Rome (Ac 28).

PAVEMENT

Ex 24:10 his feet there was something like a **p**
Jn 19:13 bench at a place called The Stone **P,**

PAY → REPAY

Ex 22:4 the thief shall **p** double.
Dt 24:15 You shall **p** them their wages daily
Mt 22:17 lawful to **p** taxes to the emperor, or
Ro 13:7 **P** to all what is due them—

PEACE → PEACEMAKERS

Lev 26:6 And I will grant **p** in the land,
Ps 122:6 Pray for the **p** of Jerusalem:
Isa 26:3 in **p** because they trust in you.
57:19 **P, p,** to the far and the near,
57:21 no **p,** says my God, for the wicked.
Jer 6:14 saying, **"P, p,"** when there is no **p.**
Mic 5:5 and he shall be the one of **p.**
Lk 2:14 on earth **p** among those whom he
Jn 14:27 **P** I leave with you; my **p** I give
Ro 16:20 God of **p** will shortly crush Satan
1Co 14:33 is a God not of disorder but of **p.**
Gal 5:22 the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, **p,**
Eph 4:3 unity of the Spirit in the bond of **p.**
Php 4:7 the **p** of God, which surpasses all
2Ti 2:22 righteousness, faith, love, and **p,**

PEACEMAKERS* → PEACE

Mt 5:9 "Blessed are the **p,** for they will be

PEARL* → PEARLS

Mt 13:46 on finding one **p** of great value,
Rev 21:21 each of the gates is a single **p,**

PEARLS → PEARL

Mt 7:6 do not throw your **p** before swine,

PEKAH*

King of Israel (2Ki 15:25-31; 2Ch 28:6; Isa 7:1).

PEKAHIAH*

Son of Menahem; king of Israel (2Ki 15:22-26).

PENALTY

Ro 1:27 in their own persons the due **p**
2Pe 2:13 suffering the **p** for doing wrong.

PENTECOST

Ac 2:1 When the day of **P** had come,

PEOPLE → PEOPLES

Ex 5:1 the God of Israel, 'Let my **p** go,
33:13 that this nation is your **p."**
Dt 4:20 a **p** of his very own possession,
32:9 the LORD's own portion was his **p,**
Ru 1:16 your **p** shall be my **p,**
2Sa 5:2 shall be shepherd of my **p** Israel,
Ps 29:11 the LORD bless his **p** with peace!
125:2 so the LORD surrounds his **p,**
Isa 40:1 Comfort, O comfort my **p,** says
42:6 given you as a covenant to the **p,**
53:8 for the transgression of my **p.**
Jer 50:6 My **p** have been lost sheep;
La 1:1 sits the city that once was full of **p!**
Da 9:24 "Seventy weeks are decreed for your **p**
Zec 13:9 I will say, "They are my **p";**
Mt 1:21 he will save his **p** from their sins."
Jn 11:50 the **p** than to have the whole nation
18:14 to have one person die for the **p.**
Ro 9:25 not my **p** I will call 'my **p,**'
Heb 8:10 their God, and they shall be my **p.**
1Pe 2:9 a holy nation, God's own **p,**

PEOPLES → PEOPLE

Ge 17:16 kings of **p** shall come from her."
Dt 7:7 for you were the fewest of all **p.**
Ps 117:1 Extol him, all you **p!**
Rev 21:3 they will be his **p,** and God himself

PERFECT → PERFECTED, PERFECTER, PERFECTION

Lev 22:21 to be acceptable it must be **p;**
2Sa 22:31 This God—his way is **p;**
Ps 19:7 The law of the LORD is **p,** reviving
Mt 5:48 Be **p,** therefore, as your heavenly Father is **p.**
Ro 12:2 what is good and acceptable and **p.**
2Co 12:9 for power is made **p** in weakness."
Heb 7:19 (for the law made nothing **p);**
1Jn 4:18 in love, but **p** love casts out fear;

PERFECTED → PERFECT

Heb 10:14 For by a single offering he has **p**
1Jn 4:12 God lives in us, and his love is **p** in

PERFECTER* → PERFECT

Heb 12:2 Jesus the pioneer and **p** of our faith,

PERFECTION → PERFECT

Heb 6:1 Therefore let us go on toward **p,**
1Jn 2:5 the love of God has reached **p.**

PERISH → PERISHABLE

Lev 26:38 You shall **p** among the nations,
Jos 23:13 until you **p** from this good land that
Est 4:16 and if I **p,** I **p."**
Ps 1:6 but the way of the wicked will **p.**
Lk 21:18 But not a hair of your head will **p.**
Jn 3:16 who believes in him may not **p**
2Pe 3:9 with you, not wanting any to **p,**

PERISHABLE → PERISH

1Co 9:25 they do it to receive a **p** wreath,
15:42 What is sown is **p,** what is raised is
1Pe 1:23 not of **p** but of imperishable seed,

PERMANENT → PERMANENTLY

2Co 3:11 much more has the **p** come in glory!

PERMANENTLY* → PERMANENT

Heb 7:24 but he holds his priesthood **p,**

PERSECUTE → PERSECUTED, PERSECUTION

Mt 5:44 and pray for those who **p** you,
Ac 9:4 "Saul, Saul, why do you **p** me?"
Ro 12:14 Bless those who **p** you; bless

PERSECUTED → PERSECUTE

Ps 119:86 I am **p** without cause; help me!
Jn 15:20 they **p** me, they will persecute you;
2Co 4:9 **p,** but not forsaken; struck down,
2Ti 3:12 godly life in Christ Jesus will be **p.**

PERSECUTION → PERSECUTE

Mt 13:21 or **p** arises on account of the word,
Ro 8:35 Will hardship, or distress, or **p,** or
Heb 10:33 publicly exposed to abuse and **p,**

PERSEVERANCE* → PERSEVERE

Heb 12:1 let us run with **p** the race that is set

PERSEVERE → PERSEVERANCE

Da 12:12 Happy are those who **p**
Ro 12:12 be patient in suffering, **p** in prayer.

PERSIA → PERSIANS

Ezr 1:1 the spirit of King Cyrus of **P**
Da 8:20 these are the kings of Media and **P.**

PERSIANS → PERSIA

Da 6:15 a law of the Medes and **P** that

PESTILENCE

Dt 32:24 burning consumption, bitter **p.**
Ps 91:6 or the **p** that stalks in darkness,

PETER → =CEPHAS, =SIMON

Apostle, brother of Andrew, also called Simon (Mt 10:2; Mk 3:16; Lk 6:14; Ac 1:13), and Cephas (Jn 1:42). Confession of Christ (Mt 16:13-20; Mk 8:27-30; Lk 9:18-27). At transfiguration (Mt 17:1-8; Mk 9:2-8; Lk 9:28-36; 2Pe 1:16-18). Caught fish with coin (Mt 17:24-27). Denial of Jesus predicted (Mt 26:31-35; Mk 14:27-31; Lk 22:31-34; Jn 13:31-38). Denied Jesus (Mt 26:69-75; Mk 14:66-72; Lk 22:54-62; Jn 18:15-27). Commissioned by Jesus to shepherd his flock (Jn 21:15-23).

Speech at Pentecost (Ac 2). Healed beggar (Ac 3:1-10). Speech at temple (Ac 3:11-26), before Sanhedrin (Ac 4:1-22). In Samaria (Ac 8:14-25). Sent by vision to Cornelius (Ac 10). Announced salvation of Gentiles in Jerusalem (Ac 11; 15). Freed from prison (Ac 12). Inconsistency at Antioch (Gal 2:11-21). At Jerusalem Council (Ac 15).

PHARAOH → PHARAOH'S

Ge 41:14 Then **P** sent for Joseph,
Ex 3:11 "Who am I that I should go to **P,**
14:17 I will gain glory for myself over **P**
Ro 9:17 For the scripture says to **P,**

PHARAOH'S → PHARAOH

Ex 7:3 But I will harden **P** heart,
Heb 11:24 refused to be called a son of **P**

PHARISEE → PHARISEES

Lk 11:37 a **P** invited him to dine with him;
Jn 3:1 a **P** named Nicodemus,
Ac 5:34 a **P** in the council named Gamaliel,
Php 3:5 as to the law, a **P;**

PHARISEES → PHARISEE

Mt 5:20 that of the scribes and **P,**
16:6 beware of the yeast of the **P** and
23:13 "But woe to you, scribes and **P,**

PHILEMON*

Phm 1:1 To **P** our dear friend and co-worker,

PHILIP

1. Apostle (Mt 10:3; Mk 3:18; Lk 6:14; Jn 1:43-48; 14:8; Ac 1:13).
2. Deacon (Ac 6:1-7); evangelist in Samaria (Ac 8:4-25), to Ethiopian (Ac 8:26-40).

PHILISTINE → PHILISTINES

1Sa 17:37 save me from the hand of this **P."**
Ps 151:6 I went out to meet the **P,**

PHILISTINES → PHILISTINE

Ge 26:1 Gerar, to King Abimelech of the **P.**
1Sa 5:1 the **P** captured the ark of God,
17:1 the **P** gathered their armies for battle
2Sa 8:1 David attacked the **P** and subdued
Am 1:8 the remnant of the **P** shall perish,

PHILOSOPHERS* → PHILOSOPHY

Ac 17:18 Epicurean and Stoic **p** debated with

PHILOSOPHY → PHILOSOPHERS

Col 2:8 no one takes you captive through **p**

PHINEHAS

1. Grandson of Aaron (Ex 6:25; Jos 22:30-32). Zeal for the LORD (Nu 25:7-13; Ps 106:30).
2. A wicked priest (1Sa 1:3; 2:12-17; 4:1-19).

PHOEBE*

Ro 16:1 I commend to you our sister **P,**

PHYSICAL

1Co 15:44 It is sown a **p** body, it is raised a
1Ti 4:8 while **p** training is of some value,

PHYSICIAN → PHYSICIANS

Mt 9:12 who are well have no need of a **p,**
Col 4:14 Luke, the beloved **p,** and Demas

PHYSICIANS → PHYSICIAN

Job 13:4 all of you are worthless **p.**
Mk 5:26 had endured much under many **p,**

PIECES

Ge 15:17 torch passed between these **p.**
Mt 14:20 what was left over of the broken **p,**
15:37 they took up the broken **p** left over,
Lk 20:18 on that stone will be broken to **p;**

PIERCED

Zec 12:10 look on the one whom they have **p,**
Jn 19:37 look on the one whom they have **p."**
Rev 1:7 even those who **p** him;

PIG

Dt 14:8 the **p,** because it divides the hoof

PILATE

Governor of Judea. Questioned Jesus (Mt 27:1-26; Mk 15:15; Lk 22:66-23:25; Jn 18:28-19:16); sent him

to Herod (Lk 23:6-12); consented to his crucifixion when crowds chose Barabbas (Mt 27:15-26; Mk 15:6-15; Lk 23:13-25; Jn 19:1-10).

PILLAR → PILLARS

Ge 19:26 back, and she became a **p** of salt.
Ex 13:21 and in a **p** of fire by night,

PILLARS → PILLAR

Jdg 16:29 Samson grasped the two middle **p**
1Ki 7:15 He cast two **p** of bronze.
Pr 9:1 she has hewn her seven **p.**

PIONEER*

Heb 2:10 make the **p** of their salvation perfect
12:2 Jesus the **p** and perfecter of our faith

PIT

Rev 20:3 into the **p,** and locked and sealed it
Sir 21:10 but at its end is the **p** of Hades.

PITY

Dt 7:16 showing them no **p;**
Hos 1:6 for I will no longer have **p**
2:23 And I will have **p** on Lo-ruhamah,

PLACE → PLACES

Ge 28:16 "Surely the LORD is in this **p**—
Ex 26:33 shall separate for you the holy **p**
Ps 24:3 And who shall stand in his holy **p?**
32:7 You are a hiding **p** for me;
Jn 14:3 And if I go and prepare a **p** for you,

PLACES → PLACE

Lev 26:30 I will destroy your high **p**
Ps 78:58 him to anger with their high **p;**

PLAGUE → PLAGUES

Ex 32:35 the LORD sent a **p** on the people,
Nu 25:8 So the **p** was stopped among the
Zec 14:12 the **p** with which the LORD will
Rev 11:6 strike the earth with every kind of **p,**

PLAGUES → PLAGUE

Hos 13:14 O Death, where are your **p?**
Rev 15:1 seven angels with seven **p,** which
22:18 God will add to that person the **p**

PLAIN

Ge 13:12 among the cities of the **P** and
Isa 40:4 and the rough places a **p.**

PLANNED

Ex 32:14 his mind about the disaster that he **p**
Isa 46:11 I have **p,** and I will do it.

PLANT → PLANTED

Ge 1:29 I have given you every **p** yielding
Ecc 3:2 time to **p,** and a time to pluck up

PLANTED → PLANT

Ge 2:8 the LORD God **p** a garden in Eden,
Ps 1:3 like trees **p** by streams of water,
1Co 3:6 I **p,** Apollos watered, but God gave

PLEA

1Ki 8:28 your servant's prayer and his **p,**
La 3:56 heard my **p,** "Do not close your ear

PLEASE → PLEASED, PLEASES, PLEASING, PLEASURE

Ps 69:31 will **p** the LORD more than an ox
Ro 8:8 who are in the flesh cannot **p** God.
15:3 For Christ did not **p** himself;
1Co 10:33 as I try to **p** everyone in everything
1Th 4:1 how you ought to live and to **p** God
Heb 11:6 without faith it is impossible to **p** God,
Sir 2:16 Those who fear the Lord seek to **p**

PLEASED → PLEASE

Ps 40:13 Be **p,** O LORD, to deliver me;
Mic 6:7 Will the LORD be **p** with thousands
Mt 3:17 Beloved, with whom I am well **p."**
Col 1:19 the fullness of God was **p** to dwell,
2Pe 1:17 Beloved, with whom I am well **p."**

PLEASES → PLEASE

Ps 115:3 the heavens; he does whatever he **p.**
1Jn 3:22 commandments and do what **p** him.

PLEASING → PLEASE

Ps 104:34 May my meditation be **p** to him,
Eph 5:10 to find out what is **p** to the Lord.
Php 4:18 a sacrifice acceptable and **p** to God.

PLEASURE → PLEASE

Pr 21:17 Whoever loves **p** will suffer want;
Eze 18:32 I have no **p** in the death of anyone,
Eph 1:5 according to the good **p** of his will,
2Ti 3:4 lovers of **p** rather than lovers of God

PLENTIFUL → PLENTY

Lk 10:2 He said to them, "The harvest is **p,**

PLENTY → PLENTIFUL

Php 4:12 and I know what it is to have **p.**

PLOT → PLOTTED

Ps 2:1 and the peoples **p** in vain?
Na 1:9 Why do you **p** against the LORD?

PLOTTED → PLOT

Est 9:24 **p** against the Jews to destroy them,

PLOWSHARES

Isa 2:4 they shall beat their swords into **p,**
Joel 3:10 Beat your **p** into swords, and your

PLUNDER

Ex 3:22 and so you shall **p** the Egyptians."
Est 9:10 but they did not touch the **p.**
Eze 39:10 and **p** those who plundered them,

POISON

Ps 69:21 They gave me **p** for food,
Jas 3:8 a restless evil, full of deadly **p.**

POLE → POLES

Nu 21:8 poisonous serpent, and set it on a **p;**
Dt 16:21 not plant any tree as a sacred **p**

POLES → POLE

2Ki 17:10 for themselves pillars and sacred **p**

POLLUTED → POLLUTES

Ac 15:20 from things **p** by idols and from
Rev 21:8 the cowardly, the faithless, the **p,**

POLLUTES* → POLLUTED

Nu 35:33 blood **p** the land, and no expiation

POOR → POVERTY

Ex 23:6 not pervert the justice due to your **p**
1Sa 2:8 He raises up the **p** from the dust;
Ps 113:7 He raises the **p** from the dust,
Pr 19:22 and it is better to be **p** than a liar.
Mt 5:3 "Blessed are the **p** in spirit,
Mk 10:21 own, and give the money to the **p,**
12:42 **p** widow came and put in two small
Jn 12:8 You always have the **p** with you,
2Co 6:10 as **p,** yet making many rich;
8:9 yet for your sakes he became **p,**
Jas 2:5 Has not God chosen the **p** in the

PORTION → APPORTIONED

Dt 32:9 the LORD's own **p** was his people,
Jos 18:7 The Levites have no **p** among you,
Ps 142:5 my **p** in the land of the living."
La 3:24 "The LORD is my **p,"** says my soul,
Sir 17:17 Israel is the Lord's own **p.**

POSSESS → POSSESSED, POSSESSION, POSSESSIONS

Dt 28:21 the land that you are entering to **p.**
Ezr 9:11 that you are entering to **p** is a land
Isa 60:21 they shall **p** the land forever.

POSSESSED → POSSESS

Mt 8:16 many who were **p** with demons;
Heb 10:34 you yourselves **p** something better

POSSESSION → POSSESS

Ex 19:5 treasured **p** out of all the peoples.
Jos 1:11 to go in to take **p** of the land that
Ps 2:8 and the ends of the earth your **p.**

POSSESSIONS → POSSESS

Lk 12:15 not consist in the abundance of **p."**
1Co 13:3 If I give away all my **p,**

POSSIBLE

Mt 19:26 but for God all things are **p."**
26:39 if it is **p,** let this cup pass from me;

POTIPHAR*

Egyptian who bought Joseph (Ge 37:36; 39:1-6), sent him to prison (Ge 39:7-30).

POTTER → POTTER'S

Isa 64:8 we are the clay, and you are our **p;**
Ro 9:21 Has the **p** no right over the clay,
Sir 33:13 Like clay in the hand of the **p,**

POTTER'S → POTTER

Jer 18:2 go down to the **p** house,
Mt 27:7 to buy the **p** field as a place to bury

POUR → POURED

Dt 12:16 **p** it out on the ground like water.
Isa 44:3 I will **p** my spirit upon your
Eze 39:29 I **p** out my spirit upon the house of
Joel 2:28 I will **p** out my spirit on all flesh;
Ac 2:17 I will **p** out my Spirit upon all flesh,
Rev 16:1 **p** out on the earth the seven bowls

POURED → POUR

Mt 26:28 is **p** out for many for the forgiveness
Ac 2:33 he has **p** out this that you both see
Tit 3:6 This Spirit he **p** out on us richly

POVERTY → POOR

Pr 30:8 give me neither **p** nor riches;
Mk 12:44 out of her **p** has put in everything
2Co 8:9 by his **p** you might become rich.
Sir 11:14 **p** and wealth, come from the Lord.

POWER → POWERFUL, POWERS

Ex 9:16 show you my **p,** and to make
15:6 right hand, O LORD, glorious in **p**—
1Ch 29:11 O LORD, are the greatness, the **p,**
Ps 68:34 Ascribe **p** to God, whose majesty is
Pr 18:21 and life are in the **p** of the tongue,
Isa 40:29 He gives **p** to the faint,
Zec 4:6 by might, nor by **p,** but by my spirit,
Mt 22:29 the scriptures nor the **p** of God.
Mk 13:26 coming in clouds' with great **p** and
Ro 1:20 creation of the world his eternal **p**
1Co 1:17 might not be emptied of its **p.**
15:24 and every authority and **p.**
Eph 1:19 the immeasurable greatness of his **p**
Php 3:10 Christ and the **p** of his resurrection
2Ti 3:5 form of godliness but denying its **p.**
2Pe 1:3 divine **p** has given us everything
Rev 19:1 and glory and **p** to our God,
20:6 these the second death has no **p,**
Jdt 9:14 the God of all **p** and might,
Sir 39:18 and none can limit his saving **p.**

POWERFUL → POWER

Mk 1:7 one who is more **p** than I is coming
1Co 1:26 not many were **p,**
Heb 1:3 he sustains all things by his **p** word.

POWERS → POWER

Ro 8:38 present, nor things to come, nor **p,**
Eph 6:12 against the cosmic **p** of this present

PRACTICE → PRACTICES

Mt 23:3 for they do not **p** what they teach.
Sir 50:29 For if they put them into **p,**

PRACTICES → PRACTICE

Ex 23:24 or worship them, or follow their **p,**
Col 3:9 stripped off the old self with its **p**

PRAISE → PRAISED, PRAISES

Ex 15:2 this is my God, and I will **p** him,
Dt 10:21 He is your **p;** he is your God,
Ps 56:4 whose word I **p,** in God I trust;
150:6 that breathes **p** the LORD!
Pr 27:2 Let another **p** you, and not your own
31:31 let her works **p** her in the city gates.
Mt 21:16 nursing babies you have prepared **p**
1Co 14:15 but I will sing **p** with the mind also.
Rev 19:5 "**P** our God, all you his servants,
Tob 12:6 Bless and sing **p** to his name.
Sir 24:1 the **p** of wisdom Wisdom praises

PRAISED → PRAISE

Ps 48:1 is the LORD and greatly to be **p**
Lk 23:47 what had taken place, he **p** God and

PRAISES → PRAISE

Ps 47:6 Sing **p** to God, sing **p;**

PRAY → PRAYED, PRAYER, PRAYERS

1Sa 12:23 against the LORD by ceasing to **p**
2Ch 7:14 humble themselves, **p,** seek my face
Ps 5:2 King and my God, for to you I **p.**
122:6 **P** for the peace of Jerusalem:
Jer 7:16 As for you, do not **p** for this people,
Mt 5:44 and **p** for those who persecute you,
6:5 you **p,** do not be like the hypocrites;
Lk 11:1 teach us to **p,** as John taught his
Ro 8:26 do not know how to **p** as we ought,
1Co 14:15 but I will **p** with the mind also;
1Th 5:17 **p** without ceasing,
Jas 5:16 and **p** for one another, so that you
Sir 37:15 But above all **p** to the Most High

PRAYED → PRAY

Mk 1:35 to a deserted place, and there he **p.**
14:35 threw himself on the ground and **p**

PRAYER → PRAY

Ps 6:9 the LORD accepts my **p.**
Pr 15:29 but he hears the **p** of the righteous.
Isa 56:7 house shall be called a house of **p**
Mt 21:13 house shall be called a house of **p';**
Mk 11:24 I tell you, whatever you ask for in **p,**
Ro 12:12 patient in suffering, persevere in **p.**
Jas 5:16 The **p** of the righteous is powerful

PRAYERS → PRAY

Mk 12:40 the sake of appearance say long **p.**
Heb 5:7 Jesus offered up **p** and supplications
Rev 5:8 which are the **p** of the saints.

PREACH → PREACHING

Tit 1:9 able both to **p** with sound doctrine

PREACHING → PREACH

1Ti 5:17 those who labor in **p** and teaching;

PRECEPT → PRECEPTS

Isa 28:10 For it is **p** upon **p, p** upon **p,**

PRECEPTS → PRECEPT

Ps 19:8 the **p** of the LORD are right,
119:15 I will meditate on your **p,**
Mt 15:9 teaching human **p** as doctrines.'"

PRECIOUS

Ps 72:14 and **p** is their blood in his sight.
Pr 3:15 She is more **p** than jewels,
Isa 28:16 a tested stone, a **p** cornerstone,
1Pe 1:19 but with the **p** blood of Christ,
2:6 a cornerstone chosen and **p;**
2Pe 1:1 received a faith as **p** as ours

PREDESTINED

Ro 8:30 those whom he **p** he also called;

PREDICTION* → PREDICTIONS

Isa 44:26 and fulfills the **p** of his messengers;

PREDICTIONS* → PREDICT

Jude 1:17 the **p** of the apostles of our Lord

PREPARE → PREPARED

Ps 23:5 You **p** a table before me in the
Mal 3:1 sending my messenger to **p** the way
Mt 3:3 '**P** the way of the Lord, make his
Jn 14:2 I have told you that I go to **p** a place

PREPARED → PREPARE

Lk 1:17 make ready a people **p** for the Lord.
1Co 2:9 God has **p** for those who love him"

PRESENCE → PRESENT

Ex 25:30 the bread of the **P** on the table
33:14 He said, "My **p** will go with you,
Ps 51:11 Do not cast me away from your **p,**
139:7 Or where can I flee from your **p?**
Jn 17:5 with the glory that I had in your **p**
Heb 9:24 now to appear in the **p** of God

PRESENT → PRESENCE

Ro 6:13 but **p** yourselves to God as
1Co 3:22 or death or the **p** or the future—
Eph 5:27 **p** the church to himself in splendor,
2Ti 2:15 **p** yourself to God as one approved

PRESS → PRESSED

Php 3:14 I **p** on toward the goal for the prize

PRESSED → PRESS

Lk 6:38 A good measure, **p** down, shaken
Php 1:23 I am hard **p** between the two:

PREVAIL → PREVAILED

1Sa 2:9 for not by might does one **p.**

PREVAILED → PREVAIL

Ge 32:28 God and with humans, and have **p."**
Hos 12:4 He strove with the angel and **p,**

PRICE

Mt 27:9 the one on whom a **p** had been set,
1Co 6:20 For you were bought with a **p;**

PRIDE → PROUD

Ps 20:7 our **p** is in the name of the LORD
Pr 16:18 **P** goes before destruction,
Mk 7:22 licentiousness, envy, slander, **p,**
1Jn 2:16 the desire of the eyes, the **p** in riches
Sir 10:13 For the beginning of **p** is sin,

PRIEST → PRIESTHOOD, PRIESTS

Ge 14:18 he was **p** of God Most High.
Ex 2:16 **p** of Midian had seven daughters.
Ne 8:9 and Ezra the **p** and scribe,
Ps 110:4 "You are a **p** forever according to
Mk 14:63 Then the high **p** tore his clothes and
Heb 3:1 apostle and high **p** of our confession
7:3 the Son of God, he remains a **p**
10:21 since we have a great **p** over the

PRIESTHOOD → PRIEST

Ex 29:9 the **p** shall be theirs by a perpetual
Heb 7:24 but he holds his **p** permanently,
1Pe 2:5 a holy **p,** to offer spiritual sacrifices

PRIESTS → PRIEST

Ex 28:1 the Israelites, to serve me as **p**—
Dt 31:9 this law, and gave it to the **p,**
Mic 3:11 its **p** teach for a price, its prophets
Mk 15:3 the chief **p** accused him of many
Heb 7:27 Unlike the other high **p,** he has no
Rev 20:6 they will be **p** of God and of Christ,

PRINCE → PRINCES

Isa 9:6 Everlasting Father, **P** of Peace.
Eze 37:25 David shall be their **p** forever.
Da 10:21 princes except Michael, your **p.**

PRINCES → PRINCE

1Sa 2:8 to make them sit with **p** and inherit
Da 8:25 even rise up against the Prince of **p.**

PRISCILLA*

Wife of Aquila, also called Prisca; co-worker with Paul (Ac 18; Ro 16:3; 1Co 16:19; 2Ti 4:19); instructor of Apollos (Ac 18:24-28).

PRISON → PRISONER, PRISONERS

Ge 39:20 he remained there in **p.**
Mt 14:10 and had John beheaded in the **p.**
Ac 12:5 While Peter was kept in **p,**
16:26 foundations of the **p** were shaken;

PRISONER → PRISON

Mk 15:6 at the festival he used to release a **p**
Eph 3:1 that I Paul am a **p** for Christ Jesus

PRISONERS → PRISON

Ps 146:7 The LORD sets the **p** free;
Isa 61:1 to the captives, and release to the **p;**

PRIZE

1Co 9:24 but only one receives the **p?**
Php 3:14 the **p** of the heavenly call of God in

PROCLAIM → PROCLAIMED

Ex 33:19 **p** before you the name, 'The LORD';
Ps 97:6 The heavens **p** his righteousness;
Mt 10:27 whispered, **p** from the housetops.
Lk 4:19 to **p** the year of the Lord's favor."
Ro 10:8 the word of faith that we **p);**

PROCLAIMED → PROCLAIM

Mk 13:10 the good news must first be **p** to all
Col 1:23 which has been **p** to every creature

PRODUCE → PRODUCES

Nu 18:12 choice **p** that they give to the LORD,
Jos 5:11 they ate the **p** of the land,
Pr 3:9 with the first fruits of all your **p;**

PRODUCES → PRODUCE

2Co 7:10 For godly grief **p** a repentance that
Jas 1:3 testing of your faith **p** endurance;

PROFANE

Lev 22:32 You shall not **p** my holy name,
1Mc 1:45 to **p** sabbaths and festivals,

PROFIT

Mt 16:26 For what will it **p** them if they gain
Sir 29:11 and it will **p** you more than gold.

PROMISE → PROMISED, PROMISES

Ps 105:42 For he remembered his holy **p,**
Ac 2:39 the **p** is for you, for your children,
Eph 2:12 and strangers to the covenants of **p,**
1Ti 4:8 holding **p** for both the present life
2Pe 3:9 The Lord is not slow about his **p,**

PROMISED → PROMISE

Dt 1:11 and bless you, as he has **p** you!
2Sa 7:28 **p** this good thing to your servant;
Lk 24:49 sending upon you what my Father **p**
Ac 13:23 to Israel a Savior, Jesus, as he **p;**
Eph 1:13 with the seal of the **p** Holy Spirit;
Heb 10:23 for he who has **p** is faithful.

PROMISES → PROMISE

Jos 21:45 the good **p** that the LORD had made
Ps 12:6 **p** of the LORD are **p** that are pure,
2Co 1:20 every one of God's **p** is a "Yes."
Heb 8:6 has been enacted through better **p.**

PROOFS* → PROVE

Isa 41:21 bring your **p,** says the King of Jacob
Ac 1:3 to them by many convincing **p,**

PROPHECIES → PROPHESY

1Co 13:8 as for **p,** they will come to an end;

PROPHECY → PROPHESY

Ac 21:9 daughters who had the gift of **p.**
1Co 12:10 to another **p,** to another
2Pe 1:20 that no **p** of scripture is a matter
Rev 22:18 who hears the words of the **p**

PROPHESY → PROPHECIES, PROPHECY, PROPHET, PROPHETS

Joel 2:28 sons and your daughters shall **p,**
Mt 7:22 Lord, did we not **p** in your name,
1Co 13:9 only in part, and we **p** only in part;
Rev 11:3 my two witnesses authority to **p**

PROPHET → PROPHESY

Ex 7:1 your brother Aaron shall be your **p.**
Dt 18:18 a **p** like you from among their own
Mal 4:5 the **p** Elijah before the great and
Lk 4:24 no **p** is accepted in the prophet's
20:6 are convinced that John was a **p."**
Rev 16:13 and from the mouth of the false **p.**
20:10 where the beast and the false **p** were
1Mc 4:46 until a **p** should come to tell what

PROPHETS → PROPHESY

Nu 11:29 that all the LORD's people were **p,**
1Ki 18:40 said to them, "Seize the **p** of Baal;
Ps 105:15 anointed ones; do my **p** no harm."
Mt 5:17 come to abolish the law or the **p;**
22:40 hang all the law and the **p."**
Lk 24:44 **p,** and the psalms must be fulfilled."
1Co 12:28 the church first apostles, second **p,**
Eph 2:20 the foundation of the apostles and **p,**
4:11 some **p,** some evangelists,
Rev 11:10 these two **p** had been a torment to
18:20 you saints and apostles and **p!**
1Mc 9:27 that **p** ceased to appear among them.

PROSPER → PROSPERING, PROSPERITY, PROSPEROUS

Ge 39:3 LORD caused all that he did to **p**
Ps 1:3 In all that they do, they **p.**
Isa 53:10 the will of the LORD shall **p.**

PROSPERING → PROSPER

Dt 30:9 will again take delight in **p** you,

PROSPERITY → PROSPER

Dt 30:15 have set before you today life and **p,**
Ps 73:3 I saw the **p** of the wicked.
Isa 48:18 your **p** would have been like a river,

PROSPEROUS → PROSPER

Jos 1:8 For then you shall make your way **p**

PROSTITUTE → PROSTITUTES

Ex 34:15 they **p** themselves to their gods
Jos 2:1 a **p** whose name was Rahab,
1Co 6:15 and make them members of a **p?**
Heb 11:31 By faith Rahab the **p** did not perish

PROSTITUTES → PROSTITUTE

Mt 21:31 the **p** are going into the kingdom of
1Co 6:9 idolaters, adulterers, male **p,**
Sir 9:6 Do not give yourself to **p,**

PROTECT → PROTECTS

Ps 91:14 I will **p** those who know my name.
Jn 17:11 **p** them in your name that you have

PROTECTS → PROTECT

Ps 116:6 The LORD **p** the simple;
Jdt 9:14 no other who **p** the people of Israel

PROUD → PRIDE

Ps 94:2 give to the **p** what they deserve!
Pr 21:4 Haughty eyes and a **p** heart—
Jas 4:6 God opposes the **p,** but gives grace
Sir 10:9 How can dust and ashes be **p?**

PROVE → PROOFS, PROVED

Heb 6:18 impossible that God would **p** false,

PROVED → PROVE

Ro 3:4 let God be **p** true,

PROVERBS

1Ki 4:32 He composed three thousand **p,**
Pr 1:1 The **p** of Solomon son of David,
Ecc 12:9 and studying and arranging many **p.**
Sir 39:3 seeks out the hidden meanings of **p**

PROVIDE → PROVIDES

Ge 22:8 "God himself will **p** the lamb for
1Co 10:13 testing he will also **p** the way out

PROVIDES → PROVIDE

Ps 111:5 He **p** food for those who fear him;
1Ti 6:17 who richly **p** us with everything

PROVOKE → PROVOKED

Dt 32:21 **p** them with a foolish nation.
Jer 25:6 not **p** me to anger with the work of
Heb 10:24 how to **p** one another to love

PROVOKED → PROVOKE

Ps 78:41 and **p** the Holy One of Israel.

PROWLS*

1Pe 5:8 your adversary the devil **p** around,

PRUNES

Jn 15:2 he **p** to make it bear more fruit.

PSALM → PSALMS

Ps 47:7 sing praises with a **p.**
Jdt 16:1 Raise to him a new **p;**

PSALMS → PSALM

Lk 24:44 and the **p** must be fulfilled."
Eph 5:19 you sing **p** and hymns and spiritual

PUBLIC

Mt 1:19 to expose her to **p** disgrace,
Col 2:15 and made a **p** example of them,
1Ti 4:13 to the **p** reading of scripture,

PUFFED → PUFFS

Col 2:18 **p** up without cause by a human way
1Ti 3:6 or he may be **p** up with conceit

PUFFS* → PUFFED

1Co 8:1 Knowledge **p** up, but love builds up.

PUNISH → PUNISHING, PUNISHMENT

Ex 32:34 I will **p** them for their sin."
2Sa 7:14 I will **p** him with a rod such as
Jer 21:14 I will **p** you according to the fruit of
1Pe 2:14 by him to **p** those who do wrong

PUNISHING → PUNISH

Dt 5:9 **p** children for the iniquity of parents
Joel 2:13 in steadfast love, and relents from **p.**

PUNISHMENT → PUNISH

Ge 4:13 "My **p** is greater than I can bear!
Isa 53:5 was the **p** that made us whole,
Mt 25:46 these will go away into eternal **p,**
1Jn 4:18 for fear has to do with **p,**

PURE → PURIFICATION, PURIFIED, PURIFY, PURITY

2Sa 22:27 with the **p** you show yourself **p,**
Ps 19:9 the fear of the LORD is **p,** enduring
119:9 can young people keep their way **p?**
Hab 1:13 Your eyes are too **p** to behold evil,
Mt 5:8 "Blessed are the **p** in heart, for they
Php 4:8 whatever is **p,** whatever is pleasing,
Tit 1:15 To the **p** all things are **p,**
1Jn 3:3 purify themselves, just as he is **p.**

PURIFICATION → PURE

Jn 2:6 water jars for the Jewish rites of **p,**
Heb 1:3 When he had made **p** for sins,

PURIFIED → PURE

Da 12:10 Many shall be **p,** cleansed, and
1Pe 1:22 **p** your souls by your obedience to

PURIFY → PURE

Tit 2:14 **p** for himself a people of his own
Heb 9:14 **p** our conscience from dead works

PURIM

Est 9:26 are called **P,** from the word Pur.

PURITY → PURE

2Co 6:6 by **p,** knowledge, patience, kindness
1Pe 3:2 the **p** and reverence of your lives.

PURPLE

Ex 25:4 **p,** and crimson yarns and fine linen,
Mk 15:17 And they clothed him in a **p** cloak;

PURPOSE

Ps 57:2 to God who fulfills his **p** for me.
Isa 46:10 saying, "My **p** shall stand,
Ro 8:28 who are called according to his **p.**
Eph 3:11 was in accordance with the eternal **p**
2Ti 1:9 works but according to his own **p**

PURSUE → PURSUED, PURSUES

Ps 34:14 and do good; seek peace, and **p** it.
Ro 14:19 Let us then **p** what makes for peace
1Ti 6:11 **p** righteousness, godliness, faith,
Sir 27:8 If you **p** justice, you will attain it

PURSUED → PURSUE

Ex 14:23 Egyptians **p,** and went into the sea
Ps 18:37 I **p** my enemies and overtook them;

PURSUES → PURSUE

Pr 21:21 Whoever **p** righteousness
Sir 31:5 **p** money will be led astray by it.

PUT

Isa 42:1 I have **p** my spirit upon him;
Eze 36:27 I will **p** my spirit within you,
Mt 12:18 I will **p** my Spirit upon him,
Eph 6:11 **P** on the whole armor of God,

Q

QUAILS

Ex 16:13 In the evening **q** came up
Nu 11:31 and it brought **q** from the sea and

QUARRELED → QUARRELSOME

Ex 17:7 the Israelites **q** and tested the LORD,
Nu 20:3 The people **q** with Moses and said,

QUARRELSOME → QUARRELED

1Ti 3:3 not **q,** and not a lover of money.
2Ti 2:24 the Lord's servant must not be **q**

QUEEN

1Ki 10:1 the **q** of Sheba heard of the fame of
Est 2:17 and made her **q** instead of Vashti.
Mt 12:42 The **q** of the South will rise up at
Rev 18:7 in her heart she says, 'I rule as a **q;**

QUESTIONS

2Ch 9:1 to Jerusalem to test him with hard **q,**
Mt 22:46 anyone dare to ask him any more **q.**

QUICK → QUICKLY

Jas 1:19 be **q** to listen, slow to speak,
Sir 5:11 Be **q** to hear, but deliberate

QUICKLY → QUICK

Jn 13:27 "Do **q** what you are going to do."
Ro 9:28 execute his sentence on the earth **q**
Gal 1:6 so **q** deserting the one who called

QUIET

1Ti 2:2 **q** and peaceable life in all godliness
1Pe 3:4 beauty of a gentle and **q** spirit,

QUIVER

Ps 127:5 Happy is the man who has his **q** full of
Isa 49:2 in his **q** he hid me away.

R

RABBI

Mt 23:8 But you are not to be called **r,**
Jn 1:38 **"R"** (which translated means Teacher),

RACE

Ecc 9:11 the sun the **r** is not to the swift,
1Co 9:24 that in a **r** the runners all compete,
Heb 12:1 let us run with perseverance the **r**
1Pe 2:9 But you are a chosen **r**, a royal

RACHEL

Daughter of Laban (Ge 29:16); wife of Jacob (Ge 29:28); bore two sons (Ge 30:22-24; 35:16-24; 46:19). Stole Laban's gods (Ge 31:19, 32-35). Death (Ge 35:19-20).

RAHAB

Prostitute who hid Israelite spies (Jos 2; 6:22-25; Heb 11:31; Jas 2:25). Mother of Boaz (Mt 1:5).

RAIN → RAINBOW, RAINED, RAINS

Ge 7:4 For in seven days I will send **r** on
1Ki 17:1 neither dew nor **r** these years,
Isa 45:8 let the skies **r** down righteousness;
Mt 5:45 sends **r** on the righteous and on the
Rev 11:6 so that no **r** may fall during the days

RAINBOW → BOW

Rev 4:3 the throne is a **r** that looks like an

RAINED → RAIN

Ge 19:24 **r** on Sodom and Gomorrah sulfur
Ex 9:23 LORD **r** hail on the land of Egypt;

RAINS → RAIN

Lev 26:4 I will give you your **r** in their season
Jas 5:7 receives the early and the late **r.**

RAISE → RISE

Dt 18:15 God will **r** up for you a prophet
Jn 2:19 and in three days I will **r** it up."
2Co 4:14 who raised the Lord Jesus will **r** us

RAISED → RISE

Mt 17:23 and on the third day he will be **r."**
Ac 2:24 God **r** him up, having freed him
Ro 4:25 and was **r** for our justification.
1Co 15:4 **r** on the third day in accordance

RAM → RAMS

Ge 22:13 and took the **r** and offered it up as
Ex 29:22 (for it is a **r** of ordination),
Da 8:3 saw a **r** standing beside the river.

RAMS → RAM

1Sa 15:22 and to heed than the fat of **r.**

RANSOM → RANSOMED

Ps 49:8 For the **r** of life is costly, and can
Mt 20:28 and to give his life a **r** for many."
1Ti 2:6 who gave himself a **r** for all

RANSOMED → RANSOM

Isa 35:10 And the **r** of the LORD shall return,
Rev 5:9 by your blood you **r** for God saints

RAVENS

1Ki 17:6 **r** brought him bread and meat in
Lk 12:24 Consider the **r**: they neither sow

READ → READING

Ex 24:7 and **r** it in the hearing of the people;
Jos 8:34 he **r** all the words of the law,
Ne 8:8 they **r** from the book, from the law
Lk 4:16 as was his custom. He stood up to **r,**
2Co 3:15 this very day whenever Moses is **r,**

READING → READ

Ac 8:30 you understand what you are **r?"**

READY

Lk 1:17 **r** a people prepared for the Lord."
Rev 19:7 and his bride has made herself **r;**

REAP

Gal 6:7 for you **r** whatever you sow.
Rev 14:15 for the hour to **r** has come,

REBEKAH

Sister of Laban, secured as bride for Isaac (Ge 24). Mother of Esau and Jacob (Ge 25:19-26). Taken by Abimelech as sister of Isaac; returned (Ge 26:1-11). Encouraged Jacob to trick Isaac out of blessing (Ge 27:1-17).

REBEL → REBELLED, REBELLION

Ex 23:21 do not **r** against him, for he will
1Sa 12:14 not **r** against the commandment

REBELLED → REBEL

Nu 20:24 because you **r** against my command
Ne 9:26 they were disobedient and **r**

REBELLION → REBEL

1Sa 15:23 For **r** is no less a sin than divination,
2Th 2:3 the **r** comes first and the lawless one

REBUILD → BUILD

Ezr 1:3 and **r** the house of the LORD,
Ne 2:17 let us **r** the wall of Jerusalem,
Da 9:25 went out to restore and **r** Jerusalem
Ac 15:16 and I will **r** the dwelling of David,

REBUKE

Ps 6:1 O LORD, do not **r** me in your anger,
Pr 27:5 Better is open **r** than hidden love.
Zec 3:2 said to Satan, "The LORD **r** you,
Mk 8:32 Peter took him aside and began to **r**
2Ti 4:2 convince, **r,** and encourage,

RECEIVE → RECEIVED

Jn 16:24 Ask and you will **r,** so that your joy
Ac 2:38 you will **r** the gift of the Holy Spirit.
20:35 'It is more blessed to give than to **r.'**
Rev 4:11 to **r** glory and honor and power,

RECEIVED → RECEIVE

Mt 6:2 I tell you, they have **r** their reward.
Jn 1:12 But to all who **r** him, who believed
1Co 11:23 I **r** from the Lord what I also handed

RECKONED → RECKONING

Ge 15:6 LORD **r** it to him as righteousness.
Ro 4:3 it was **r** to him as righteousness."

RECKONING → RECKONED

Ge 9:5 I will require a **r** for human life.
Sir 2:14 you do when the Lord's **r** comes?

RECONCILE → RECONCILED, RECONCILIATION

Ac 7:26 were quarreling and tried to **r** them,
Col 1:20 God was pleased to **r** to himself all

RECONCILED → RECONCILE

Mt 5:24 first be **r** to your brother or sister,
1Co 7:11 let her remain unmarried or else be **r**

RECONCILIATION → RECONCILE

Ro 5:11 whom we have now received **r.**
2Co 5:18 and has given us the ministry of **r;**

RED

Ex 15:4 officers were sunk in the **R** Sea.
Mt 16:3 for the sky is **r** and threatening.'
Rev 12:3 a great **r** dragon, with seven heads

REDEEM → REDEEMED, REDEEMER, REDEMPTION

Ex 6:6 I will **r** you with an outstretched
2Sa 7:23 whose God went to **r** it as a people,
Gal 4:5 to **r** those who were under the law,

REDEEMED → REDEEM

Dt 15:15 and the LORD your God **r** you;
Ps 107:2 Let the **r** of the LORD say so,

REDEEMER → REDEEM

Job 19:25 For I know that my **R** lives,
Ps 19:14 O LORD, my rock and my **r.**
Isa 48:17 Thus says the LORD, your **R,**

REDEMPTION → REDEEM

Lk 21:28 because your **r** is drawing near."
Eph 1:7 In him we have **r** through his blood,
Heb 9:12 own blood, thus obtaining eternal **r.**

REFINE → REFINED

Jer 9:7 I will now **r** and test them,
Zec 13:9 **r** them as one refines silver,

REFINED → REFINE

Da 12:10 shall be purified, cleansed, and **r,**

REFLECTED → REFLECTION

2Co 3:18 though **r** in a mirror,

REFLECTION → REFLECTED

1Co 11:7 since he is the image and **r** of God;
Heb 1:3 He is the **r** of God's glory

REFUGE

Nu 35:11 select cities to be cities of **r** for you,
Ps 2:12 Happy are all who take **r** in him.
Pr 30:5 a shield to those who take **r** in him.
Jer 16:19 my **r** in the day of trouble,

REFUSE

Ex 8:2 If you **r** to let them go,
Eze 3:27 and let those who **r** to hear, **r;**
Heb 12:25 do not **r** the one who is speaking;

REGARD

Isa 8:13 of hosts, him you shall **r** as holy;
Php 2:6 did not **r** equality with God as
3:7 these I have come to **r** as loss
Heb 12:5 not **r** lightly the discipline of the

REGULATIONS

Col 2:20 Why do you submit to **r,**
Heb 9:10 **r** for the body imposed until the

REHOBOAM

Son of Solomon (1Ki 11:43; 1Ch 3:10). Harsh treatment of subjects caused divided kingdom (1Ki 12:1-24; 14:21-31; 2Ch 10-12).

REIGN → REIGNS

Ex 15:18 The LORD will **r** forever and ever."
Ps 146:10 The LORD will **r** forever,
1Co 15:25 **r** until he has put all his enemies
2Ti 2:12 we will also **r** with him;
Rev 11:15 and he will **r** forever and ever."
22:5 and they will **r** forever and ever.

REIGNS → REIGN

Isa 52:7 who says to Zion, "Your God **r."**
Rev 19:6 the Lord our God the Almighty **r.**

REJECT → REJECTED

Ex 20:5 generation of those who **r** me,
Isa 30:12 Because you **r** this word,

REJECTED → REJECT

1Sa 8:7 but they have **r** me from being king
Ps 60:1 O God, you have **r** us, broken our
118:22 The stone that the builders **r**
Isa 53:3 He was despised and **r** by others;
Mt 21:42 'The stone that the builders **r**
1Pe 2:4 though **r** by mortals yet chosen and

REJOICE → REJOICING

Ps 5:11 But let all who take refuge in you **r;**
118:24 let us **r** and be glad in it.
Isa 62:5 so shall your God **r** over you.
Zep 3:17 he will **r** over you with gladness,
Lk 6:23 **R** in that day and leap for joy,
Php 4:4 **R** in the Lord always; again I will say, **R.**

REJOICING → REJOICE

2Sa 6:12 to the city of David with **r;**
Ne 8:17 And there was very great **r.**
2Co 6:10 as sorrowful, yet always **r;**

RELEASE

Isa 61:1 liberty to the captives, and **r** to
Mt 27:15 the governor was accustomed to **r**

RELENT → RELENTED

Eze 24:14 I will not spare, I will not **r.**
Joel 2:14 whether he will not turn and **r,**
Jnh 3:9 God may **r** and change his mind;

RELENTED → RELENT

1Ch 21:15 LORD took note and **r** concerning
Jer 4:28 I have not **r** nor will I turn back.

RELIGION

Jas 1:27 **R** that is pure and undefiled before

RELY

2Ch 14:11 O LORD our God, for we **r** on you,
Pr 3:5 and do not **r** on your own insight.
Gal 3:10 all who **r** on the works of the law
Sir 5:1 Do not **r** on your wealth,

REMAIN → REMAINS

1Co 7:20 Let each of you **r** in the condition
Heb 1:11 they will perish, but you **r;**

REMAINS → REMAIN

Jos 13:2 This is the land that still **r:**
Heb 7:3 Son of God, he **r** a priest forever.
10:26 there no longer **r** a sacrifice for sins,

REMEMBER → REMEMBERED, REMEMBRANCE

Ge 9:15 I will **r** my covenant that is between
Ex 20:8 **R** the sabbath day, and keep it holy.
Dt 8:18 But **r** the LORD your God,
Job 10:9 **R** that you fashioned me like clay;
Ecc 12:1 **R** your creator in the days of your
Jer 31:34 and **r** their sin no more.
2Ti 2:8 **R** Jesus Christ, raised from the dead
Heb 8:12 and I will **r** their sins no more."
Sir 23:18 The Most High will not **r** sins."

REMEMBERED → REMEMBER

Ex 2:24 God **r** his covenant with Abraham,
Ps 78:35 They **r** that God was their rock,
106:45 For their sake he **r** his covenant,
Rev 16:19 God **r** great Babylon and gave her

REMEMBRANCE → REMEMBER

Lk 22:19 Do this in **r** of me."

REMNANT

Ge 45:7 before you to preserve for you a **r**
Isa 10:21 A **r** will return, the **r** of Jacob,
Jer 50:20 will pardon the **r** that I have spared.
Ro 9:27 only a **r** of them will be saved;

REMOVE

Eze 36:26 **r** from your body the heart of stone
Lk 22:42 if you are willing, **r** this cup from

RENEW → RENEWAL, RENEWED, RENEWING

Isa 40:31 for the LORD shall **r** their strength,
La 5:21 **r** our days as of old—

RENEWAL → RENEW

Mt 19:28 I tell you, at the **r** of all things,
Col 3:11 In that **r** there is no longer Greek

RENEWED → RENEW

2Co 4:16 inner nature is being **r** day by day.
Eph 4:23 to be **r** in the spirit of your minds,

RENEWING* → RENEW

Ro 12:2 transformed by the **r** of your minds,

REPAY → PAY

Ps 28:4 **R** them according to their work,
Isa 59:18 to their deeds, so will he **r;**
Ro 12:17 Do not **r** anyone evil for evil,
Rev 18:6 and **r** her double for her deeds;

REPENT → REPENTANCE

1Ki 8:47 **r,** and plead with you in the land
Job 42:6 and **r** in dust and ashes."
Mt 3:2 **"R,** for the kingdom of heaven has
Ac 2:38 **"R,** and be baptized every one of
Rev 16:9 they did not **r** and give him glory.
Sir 18:21 and when you have sinned, **r.**

REPENTANCE → REPENT

Mk 1:4 a baptism of **r** for the forgiveness
Lk 3:8 Bear fruits worthy of **r.**
Ro 2:4 kindness is meant to lead you to **r?**
2Co 7:10 **r** that leads to salvation and brings
2Pe 3:9 any to perish, but all to come to **r.**

REPROVE

Pr 19:25 **r** the intelligent, and they will gain
Tit 2:15 exhort and **r** with all authority.
Rev 3:19 **r** and discipline those whom I love.

REQUIRE

Dt 10:12 does the LORD your God **r** of you?
Mic 6:8 the LORD **r** of you but to do justice,

RESCUE → RESCUED, RESCUES

Ps 22:8 him **r** the one in whom he delights!"
Mt 6:13 but **r** us from the evil one.
2Pe 2:9 the Lord knows how to **r** the godly

RESCUED → RESCUE

Col 1:13 has **r** us from the power of darkness
Sir 51:12 and **r** me in time of trouble.

RESCUES → RESCUE

Ps 37:40 The LORD helps them and **r** them;
Da 6:27 and **r,** he works signs and wonders
1Th 1:10 Jesus, who **r** us from the wrath that

RESIST

Mt 5:39 I say to you, Do not **r** an evildoer.
Ro 9:19 For who can **r** his will?"
Jas 4:7 **R** the devil, and he will flee from

RESPECT

Mal 1:6 if I am a master, where is the **r** due
Ro 13:7 **r** to whom **r** is due,

REST → RESTED, RESTS

Ex 31:15 seventh day is a sabbath of solemn **r**
2Sa 7:11 give you **r** from all your enemies.
Ps 95:11 swore, "They shall not enter my **r."**
Mt 11:28 and I will give you **r.**
Heb 4:10 those who enter God's **r** also cease

RESTED → REST

Ge 2:2 he **r** on the seventh day from all the
Ex 20:11 all that is in them, but **r** the seventh

RESTORE → RESTORES

Dt 30:3 LORD your God will **r** your fortunes
Ps 51:12 **R** to me the joy of your salvation,
Da 9:25 the word went out to **r** and rebuild
Mt 17:11 "Elijah is indeed coming and will **r**

RESTORES → RESTORE

Ps 23:3 he **r** my soul. He leads me in right

RESTS → REST

Ps 16:9 my body also **r** secure.
Pr 19:23 one **r** secure and suffers no harm.

RESURRECTION

Mt 22:30 For in the **r** they neither marry nor
Mk 12:18 Sadducees, who say there is no **r,**
Jn 11:25 said to her, "I am the **r** and the life.
1Co 15:12 you say there is no **r** of the dead?
Php 3:10 know Christ and the power of his **r**
Rev 20:5 This is the first **r.**
2Es 2:23 will give you the first place in my **r.**

RETURN

Ge 3:19 you are dust, and to dust you shall **r.**
Dt 30:2 and **r** to the LORD your God,
Ps 116:12 What shall I **r** to the LORD
Hos 14:1 **R,** O Israel, to the LORD your God,
Mal 3:7 **R** to me, and I will **r** to you,

REUBEN

Firstborn of Jacob by Leah (Ge 29:32; 46:8; 1Ch 2:1). Attempted to rescue Joseph (Ge 37:21-30). Lost birthright for sleeping with Bilhah (Ge 35:22; 49:4). Tribe of blessed (Ge 49:3-4; Dt 33:6), numbered (Nu 1:21; 26:7), allotted land east of Jordan (Nu 32; 34:14; Jos 13:15), west (Eze 48:6), failed to help Deborah (Jdg 5:15-16), supported David (1Ch 12:37), 12,000 from (Rev 7:5).

REVEAL → REVEALED, REVELATION, REVELATIONS

Mt 11:27 to whom the Son chooses to **r** him.

REVEALED → REVEAL

Isa 40:5 the glory of the LORD shall be **r,**
Mt 16:17 flesh and blood has not **r** this to you
Lk 17:30 on the day that the Son of Man is **r.**
Ro 1:17 in it the righteousness of God is **r**
2Th 1:7 the Lord Jesus is **r** from heaven
1Jn 3:2 we do know is this: when he is **r,**

REVELATION → REVEAL

1Co 14:6 some **r** or knowledge or prophecy
Eph 3:3 was made known to me by **r,**
Rev 1:1 The **r** of Jesus Christ, which God

REVELATIONS → REVEAL

2Co 12:1 but I will go on to visions and **r** of

REVERE → REVERENCE

Jos 24:14 "Now therefore **r** the LORD,
Mal 4:2 But for you who **r** my name the sun
Tob 4:5 **"R** the Lord all your days,

REVERENCE → REVERE

Eph 5:21 subject to one another out of **r** for
1Pe 3:2 see the purity and **r** of your lives.

REVILE → REVILED

Ex 22:28 You shall not **r** God, or curse
Mt 5:11 people **r** you and persecute you

REVILED → REVILE

1Co 4:12 When **r,** we bless;
1Pe 4:14 If you are **r** for the name of Christ,

REWARD → REWARDED

Ps 19:11 in keeping them there is great **r.**
Isa 40:10 **r** is with him, and his recompense
Mt 6:5 I tell you, they have received their **r.**
Lk 6:23 for surely your **r** is great in heaven;
Heb 11:26 for he was looking ahead to the **r.**
Rev 22:12 I am coming soon; my **r** is with me,

REWARDED → REWARD

2Sa 22:21 The LORD **r** me according to my

RIB

Ge 2:22 **r** that the LORD God had taken from

RICH → RICHES

Pr 23:4 Do not wear yourself out to get **r;**
Mt 19:23 hard for a **r** person to enter the
Lk 12:21 but are not **r** toward God."
2Co 8:9 by his poverty you might become **r.**
Eph 2:4 But God, who is **r** in mercy,
1Ti 6:18 to do good, to be **r** in good works,
Jas 1:10 and the **r** in being brought low,

RICHES → RICH

Ps 62:10 if **r** increase, do not set your heart
Pr 30:8 give me neither poverty nor **r;**
Lk 8:14 they are choked by the cares and **r**
Ro 11:33 O the depth of the **r** and wisdom
1Jn 2:16 the desire of the eyes, the pride in **r**
Sir 13:24 **R** are good if they are free from sin;

RID

Col 3:8 But now you must get **r** of all such
1Pe 2:1 **R** yourselves, therefore, of all

RIDER → RIDES, RIDING

Rev 19:11 Its **r** is called Faithful and True,

RIDES → RIDER

Dt 33:26 **r** through the heavens to your help,
Ps 68:4 a song to him who **r** upon the clouds

RIDING → RIDER

Zec 9:9 humble and **r** on a donkey,

RIGHT → BIRTHRIGHT

Ex 15:6 Your **r** hand, O LORD, glorious in
Dt 6:18 Do what is **r** and good in the sight
Job 42:7 have not spoken of me what is **r,**
Ps 110:1 says to my lord, "Sit at my **r** hand
Pr 14:12 a way that seems **r** to a person,
Mt 25:33 sheep at his **r** hand and the goats at
Ac 2:34 said to my Lord, "Sit at my **r** hand,
Heb 1:13 "Sit at my **r** hand until I make your
1Pe 3:14 if you do suffer for doing what is **r,**

RIGHTEOUS → RIGHTEOUSNESS

Ge 18:23 "Will you indeed sweep away the **r**
Job 4:17 'Can mortals be **r** before God?
Ps 11:7 For the LORD is **r;** he loves **r** deeds;
Pr 10:6 Blessings are on the head of the **r,**
11:23 desire of the **r** ends only in good;
15:29 but he hears the prayer of the **r.**
Jer 23:5 I will raise up for David a **r** Branch,
Eze 3:20 if the **r** turn from their righteousness
Hab 2:4 but the **r** live by their faith.
Mt 5:45 rain on the **r** and on the unrighteous.
Mk 2:17 come to call not the **r** but sinners."
Ro 1:17 one who is **r** will live by faith."
5:19 the many will be made **r.**
Heb 10:38 but my **r** one will live by faith.
1Jn 2:1 with the Father, Jesus Christ the **r;**
Rev 19:8 the fine linen is the **r** deeds of the
Wis 5:15 **r** live forever, and their reward
Sir 35:22 and does justice for the **r,**

RIGHTEOUSNESS → RIGHTEOUS

Ge 15:6 the LORD reckoned it to him as **r.**
Ps 9:8 He judges the world with **r;**
Pr 12:28 In the path of **r** there is life,
Ecc 7:15 people who perish in their **r,**
Isa 11:5 **R** shall be the belt around his waist,
Jer 23:6 be called: "The LORD is our **r."**
Da 9:24 to bring in everlasting **r,**
12:3 and those who lead many to **r,**
Hos 10:12 Sow for yourselves **r;** reap steadfast
Mt 5:6 those who hunger and thirst for **r,**
Jn 16:8 about sin and **r** and judgment:
Ro 5:18 act of **r** leads to justification
10:4 be **r** for everyone who believes.
Gal 3:6 and it was reckoned to him as **r,"**
Eph 6:14 and put on the breastplate of **r.**
1Pe 2:24 free from sins, we might live for **r;**
2Pe 3:13 heavens and a new earth, where **r** is
Rev 19:11 and in **r** he judges and makes war.

RIPE

Joel 3:13 Put in the sickle, for the harvest is **r.**
Jn 4:35 how the fields are **r** for harvesting.
Rev 14:15 the harvest of the earth is fully **r."**

RISE → ARISE, RAISE, RAISED, ROSE

Nu 24:17 and a scepter shall **r** out of Israel;
Ps 94:2 **R** up, O judge of the earth;
Da 12:13 shall **r** for your reward at the end of
Mal 4:2 the sun of righteousness shall **r,**
Mt 27:63 'After three days I will **r** again.'
Eph 5:14 **R** from the dead, and Christ will
1Th 4:16 and the dead in Christ will **r** first.

RIVER → RIVERS

Ps 46:4 a **r** whose streams make glad the
Isa 48:18 prosperity would have been like a **r,**
Eze 47:12 On the banks, on both sides of the **r,**
Mt 3:6 baptized by him in the **r** Jordan,
Rev 22:1 showed me the **r** of the water of life,

RIVERS → RIVER

Ps 137:1 By the **r** of Babylon—there we sat
Rev 8:10 it fell on a third of the **r** and on the

ROAD → CROSSROADS

Mt 7:13 and the **r** is easy that leads to

ROAR → ROARING, ROARS

Ps 46:3 though its waters **r** and foam,
Jer 25:30 The LORD will **r** from on high,

ROARING → ROAR

1Pe 5:8 a **r** lion your adversary the devil

ROARS → ROAR

Hos 11:10 the LORD, who **r** like a lion;
Joel 3:16 The LORD **r** from Zion,

ROB → ROBBER, ROBBERS

Mal 3:8 anyone **r** God? Yet you are robbing

ROBBER → ROB

1Co 5:11 an idolater, reviler, drunkard, or **r.**

ROBBERS → ROB

Jer 7:11 become a den of **r** in your sight?
Mt 21:13 but you are making it a den of **r."**

ROBE → ROBED, ROBES

Ge 37:3 had made him a long **r** with sleeves.
Ex 28:4 a breastpiece, an ephod, a **r,**
Jn 19:5 crown of thorns and the purple **r.**
Rev 6:11 They were each given a white **r** and
19:13 He is clothed in a **r** dipped in blood,

ROBED → ROBE

Ps 93:1 LORD is king, he is **r** in majesty;
Rev 15:6 **r** in pure bright linen,

ROBES → ROBE

Mk 12:38 who like to walk around in long **r,**
Rev 22:14 Blessed are those who wash their **r,**

ROCK

Ex 17:6 Strike the **r,** and water will come
Nu 20:8 you shall bring water out of the **r**
1Sa 2:2 there is no **R** like our God.
Ps 19:14 O LORD, my **r** and my redeemer.
Isa 44:8 There is no other **r;** I know not one.
Mt 16:18 and on this **r** I will build my church,
Mk 15:46 that had been hewn out of the **r.**
1Pe 2:8 and a **r** that makes them fall."

ROD

2Sa 7:14 I will punish him with a **r** such as
Ps 2:9 shall break them with a **r** of iron,
23:4 your **r** and your staff—they comfort
Pr 13:24 who spare the **r** hate their children,
Heb 9:4 and Aaron's **r** that budded,
Rev 2:27 to rule them with an iron **r,**

ROLL

Am 5:24 But let justice **r** down like waters,
Mk 16:3 "Who will **r** away the stone for us

ROOF

Jos 2:6 to the **r** and hidden them
2Sa 11:2 he saw from the **r** a woman bathing;
Mk 2:4 they removed the **r** above him;

ROOM

Mk 14:15 He will show you a large **r** upstairs,
Ro 12:19 but leave **r** for the wrath of God;
Eph 4:27 and do not make **r** for the devil.

ROOT → ROOTED

Isa 11:10 On that day the **r** of Jesse
53:2 and like a **r** out of dry ground;
Ro 15:12 "The **r** of Jesse shall come,
1Ti 6:10 For the love of money is a **r** of all
Rev 5:5 the tribe of Judah, the **R** of David,

ROOTED → ROOT

Eph 3:17 are being **r** and grounded in love.

ROSE → RISE

SS 2:1 I am a **r** of Sharon, a lily
1Th 4:14 believe that Jesus died and **r** again,

ROUGH

Isa 40:4 and the **r** places a plain.
Lk 3:5 and the **r** ways made smooth;

ROYAL

Jas 2:8 if you really fulfill the **r** law
1Pe 2:9 are a chosen race, a **r** priesthood,

RUBBISH

1Co 4:13 have become like the **r** of the world,
Php 3:8 and I regard them as **r,**

RUIN → RUINS

Eze 21:27 A **r,** a **r,** a **r**—I will make it!
Zep 1:15 a day of **r** and devastation,

RUINS → RUIN

Ezr 9:9 the house of our God, to repair its **r,**
Ne 2:17 Jerusalem lies in **r** with its gates
Ac 15:16 from its **r** I will rebuild it,
1Co 15:33 "Bad company **r** good morals."
1Mc 3:43 "Let us restore the **r** of our people,

RULE → RULER, RULER'S, RULERS, RULES

Ge 3:16 husband, and he shall **r** over you."
Ps 110:2 **R** in the midst of your foes.
Eph 1:21 far above all **r** and authority and
Col 3:15 the peace of Christ **r** in your hearts,
Rev 19:15 he will **r** them with a rod of iron;

RULER → RULE

Ex 2:14 made you a **r** and judge over us?
Mt 2:6 a **r** who is to shepherd my people
1Co 15:24 after he has destroyed every **r**
Rev 1:5 and the **r** of the kings of the earth.

RULER'S → RULE

Ge 49:10 the **r** staff from between his feet,

RULERS → RULE

Ps 2:2 and the **r** take counsel together,
Isa 40:23 makes the **r** of the earth as nothing.
Eph 6:12 against the **r,** against the authorities,

RULES → RULE

Ps 66:7 who **r** by his might forever,
Isa 40:10 and his arm **r** for him;
2Ti 2:5 competing according to the **r.**

RUMORS

Mt 24:6 you will hear of wars and **r** of wars;

RUN → FORERUNNER, RUNNERS

Isa 40:31 they shall **r** and not be weary,
Gal 2:2 or had not **r,** in vain.
Heb 12:1 let us **r** with perseverance the race

RUNNERS* → RUN

1Co 9:24 that in a race the **r** all compete,

RUST

Mt 6:19 where moth and **r** consume
LtJ 6:12 cannot save themselves from **r**

RUTH

Moabitess; widow who went to Bethlehem with mother-in-law Naomi (Ru 1). Gleaned in field of Boaz; shown favor (Ru 2). Proposed marriage to Boaz (Ru 3). Married (Ru 4:1–12); bore Obed, ancestor of David (Ru 4:13–22), Jesus (Mt 1:5).

S

SABBATH

Ex 20:8 Remember the **s** day, and keep it holy.
2Ch 36:21 the days that it lay desolate it kept **s,**
Mt 12:1 through the grainfields on the **s;**
Mk 2:28 Son of Man is lord even of the **s."**
1Mc 1:43 to idols and profaned the **s.**

SACKCLOTH → CLOTH

Da 9:3 supplication with fasting and **s** and
Mt 11:21 would have repented long ago in **s**

SACRED

Ex 28:2 You shall make **s** vestments for
34:13 and cut down their **s** poles

SACRIFICE → SACRIFICED, SACRIFICES

Ex 12:27 'It is the passover **s** to the LORD,
Lev 3:1 If the offering is a **s** of well-being,
1Sa 15:22 Surely, to obey is better than **s,**
Ps 40:6 **S** and offering you do not desire,
Pr 15:8 **s** of the wicked is an abomination
Da 9:27 he shall make **s** and offering cease;
Hos 6:6 For I desire steadfast love and not **s,**
Mt 9:13 this means, 'I desire mercy, not **s.**'
Ro 3:25 put forward as a **s** of atonement
Php 4:18 a **s** acceptable and pleasing to God.
Heb 13:15 let us continually offer a **s** of praise
1Jn 2:2 and he is the atoning **s** for our sins,

SACRIFICED → SACRIFICE

1Co 5:7 our paschal lamb, Christ, has been **s.**
8:1 Now concerning food **s** to idols:

SACRIFICES → SACRIFICE

Mk 12:33 all whole burnt offerings and **s."**
Heb 7:27 has no need to offer **s** day after day,

SADDUCEES

Mt 16:6 the yeast of the Pharisees and **S."**
Mk 12:18 **S,** who say there is no resurrection,

SAFE → SAFETY

Ps 37:28 righteous shall be kept **s** forever,
Pr 18:10 the righteous run into it and are **s.**

SAFETY → SAFE

Dt 12:10 around so that you live in **s,**
Eze 34:28 they shall live in **s,**

SAINTS

Ps 31:23 Love the LORD, all you his **s.**
Ro 8:27 the Spirit intercedes for the **s**
1Co 6:2 that the **s** will judge the world?
Eph 4:12 equip the **s** for the work of ministry,
Rev 5:9 by your blood you ransomed for God **s**

SALT

Ge 19:26 back, and she became a pillar of **s.**
Mt 5:13 "You are the **s** of the earth;

SALVATION → SAVE

Ex 15:2 and he has become my **s;**
Ps 27:1 The LORD is my light and my **s;**
51:12 Restore to me the joy of your **s,**
Isa 12:3 draw water from the wells of **s.**
52:7 brings good news, who announces **s,**
La 3:26 one should wait quietly for the **s**
Hab 3:18 I will exult in the God of my **s.**
Lk 3:6 all flesh shall see the **s** of God.'"
Ac 4:12 There is **s** in no one else,
2Co 6:2 see, now is the day of **s!**
Php 2:12 work out your own **s** with fear
Heb 2:3 escape if we neglect so great a **s?**
2Pe 3:15 regard the patience of our Lord as **s.**
Rev 19:1 **S** and glory and power to our God,
Bar 4:29 everlasting joy with your **s.**

SAMARIA → SAMARITAN

1Ki 16:24 and called the city that he built, **S,**
2Ki 17:6 the king of Assyria captured **S;**
Jn 4:4 But he had to go through **S.**
Ac 1:8 in all Judea and **S,** and to the ends

SAMARITAN → SAMARIA

Lk 10:33 But a **S** while traveling came near
Jn 4:7 A **S** woman came to draw water,

SAME

Ro 10:12 the **s** Lord is Lord of all
1Co 12:4 varieties of gifts, but the **s** Spirit;
Heb 13:8 Jesus Christ is the **s** yesterday and

SAMSON*

Danite judge. Birth promised (Jdg 13). Married a Philistine, but his wife given away (Jdg 14). Vengeance on the Philistines (Jdg 15). Betrayed by Delilah (Jdg 16:1-22). Death (Jdg 16:23-31). Feats of strength: killed lion (Jdg 14:6), 30 Philistines (Jdg 14:19), 1,000 Philistines with jawbone (Jdg 15:13-17), carried off gates of Gaza (Jdg 16:3), pushed down temple of Dagon (Jdg 16:25-30; Heb 11:32).

SAMUEL

Ephraimite judge and prophet (Heb 11:32). Birth prayed for (1Sa 1:10-18). Dedicated to temple by Hannah (1Sa 1:21-28). Raised by Eli (1Sa 2:11, 18-26). Called as prophet (1Sa 3). Led Israel to victory over Philistines (1Sa 7). Asked by Israel for a king (1Sa 8). Anointed Saul as king (1Sa 9-10). Farewell speech (1Sa 12). Rebuked Saul for sacrifice (1Sa 13). Announced rejection of Saul (1Sa 15). Anointed David as king (1Sa 16). Protected David from Saul (1Sa 19:18-24). Death (1Sa 25:1). Returned from dead to condemn Saul (1Sa 28).

SANCTIFICATION → SANCTIFY

Ro 6:19 as slaves to righteousness for **s.**
1Th 4:3 For this is the will of God, your **s:**

SANCTIFIED → SANCTIFY

Ex 29:43 and it shall be **s** by my glory;
Jn 17:19 so that they also may be **s** in truth.
1Co 6:11 But you were washed, you were **s,**

SANCTIFY → SANCTIFICATION, SANCTIFIED

Lev 11:44 **s** yourselves therefore, and be holy,
Heb 13:12 to **s** the people by his own blood.

SANCTUARY

Ex 25:8 And have them make me a **s,**
1Ch 22:19 build the **s** of the LORD God
Eze 37:26 and will set my **s** among them
Da 9:26 shall destroy the city and the **s.**
Heb 9:24 Christ did not enter a **s** made by
1Mc 1:21 He arrogantly entered the **s**
4:36 cleanse the **s** and dedicate it."

SAND

Ge 22:17 as the stars of heaven and as the **s**
Hos 1:10 Israel shall be like the **s** of the sea,
Mt 7:26 foolish man who built his house on **s.**

SANDALS

Ex 3:5 Remove the **s** from your feet,
Mt 3:11 I am not worthy to carry his **s.**

SARAH

Wife of Abraham, originally named Sarai; barren (Ge 11:29-31; 1Pe 3:6). Taken by Pharaoh as Abraham's sister; returned (Ge 12:10-20). Gave Hagar to Abraham; sent her away in pregnancy (Ge 16). Name changed; Isaac promised (Ge 17:15-21; 18:10-15; Heb 11:11). Taken by Abimelech as Abraham's sister; returned (Ge 20). Isaac born; Hagar and Ishmael sent away (Ge 21:1-21; Gal 4:21-31). Death (Ge 23).

SAT → SIT

Heb 10:12 "he **s** down at the right hand of God,
Rev 3:21 and **s** down with my Father

SATAN

1Ch 21:1 **S** stood up against Israel,
Job 1:6 and **S** also came among them.
Zec 3:2 "The LORD rebuke you, O **S!**
Mt 4:10 Jesus said to him, "Away with you, **S!**
12:26 If **S** casts out **S,** he is divided
16:23 said to Peter, "Get behind me, **S!**
2Co 11:14 **S** disguises himself as an angel of light.
Rev 12:9 who is called the Devil and **S,**
20:7 **S** will be released from his prison

SATISFIED → SATISFY

Ps 17:15 I shall be **s,** beholding your likeness.
Joel 2:26 You shall eat in plenty and be **s,**

SATISFY → SATISFIED

Isa 55:2 labor for that which does not **s?**
Jer 31:25 I will **s** the weary, and all who are

SAUL → =PAUL

1. Benjamite; anointed by Samuel as first king of Israel (1Sa 9-10). Defeated Ammonites (1Sa 11). Rebuked for offering sacrifice (1Sa 13:1-15). Defeated Philistines (1Sa 14). Rejected as king for failing to annihilate Amalekites (1Sa 15). Soothed from evil spirit by David (1Sa 16:14-23). Sent David against Goliath (1Sa 17). Jealousy and attempted murder of David (1Sa 18:1-11). Gave David Michal as wife (1Sa 18:12-30). Second attempt to kill David (1Sa 19). Anger at Jonathan (1Sa 20:26-34). Pursued David: killed priests at Nob (1Sa 22), went to Keilah and Ziph (1Sa 23), life spared by David at En Gedi (1Sa 24) and in his tent (1Sa 26). Rebuked by Samuel's spirit for consulting witch at Endor (1Sa 28). Wounded by Philistines; took his own life (1Sa 31; 1Ch 10). Lamented by David (2Sa 1:17-27). Children (1Sa 14:49-51; 1Ch 8).

2. See Paul.

SAVE → SALVATION, SAVED, SAVIOR

Ps 54:1 **S** me, O God, by your name,
Isa 59:1 LORD's hand is not too short to **s,**
Jer 15:20 for I am with you to **s** you
Mt 1:21 he will **s** his people from their sins."
16:25 who want to **s** their life will lose it,
Lk 19:10 came to seek out and to **s** the lost."
Heb 7:25 to **s** those who approach God

SAVED → SAVE

Isa 45:22 Turn to me and be **s,**
Joel 2:32 on the name of the LORD shall be **s;**
Mt 10:22 who endures to the end will be **s.**
Mk 15:31 He **s** others; he cannot save himself.
Lk 13:23 "Lord, will only a few be **s?"**
Ac 2:21 on the name of the Lord shall be **s.'**
16:30 "Sirs, what must I do to be **s?"**
Ro 10:13 on the name of the Lord shall be **s."**
Eph 2:8 For by grace you have been **s**

SAVIOR → SAVE

Ps 106:21 They forgot God, their **S,**
Isa 49:26 know that I am the LORD your **S,**
Hos 13:4 and besides me there is no **s.**
Lk 2:11 this day in the city of David a **S,**
Ac 13:23 to Israel a **S,** Jesus, as he promised;
1Ti 4:10 who is the **S** of all people,
Tit 2:13 of the glory of our great God and **S,**
2Pe 3:18 knowledge of our Lord and **S** Jesus

SCARLET

Isa 1:18 your sins are like **s,** they shall be
Mt 27:28 stripped him and put a **s** robe on him

SCATTER → SCATTERED

Dt 4:27 LORD will **s** you among the peoples;
Jer 9:16 I will **s** them among nations that

SCATTERED → SCATTER

Dt 30:3 the LORD your God has **s** you.
Jer 31:10 "He who **s** Israel will gather him,
Mk 14:27 the shepherd, and the sheep will be **s.'**

SCEPTER

Ge 49:10 The **s** shall not depart from Judah,
Nu 24:17 and a **s** shall rise out of Israel;
Heb 1:8 righteous **s** is the **s** of your kingdom.

SCOFFED → SCOFFERS

Lk 23:35 but the leaders **s** at him, saying,

SCOFFERS → SCOFFED

Ps 1:1 or sit in the seat of **s;**
Pr 19:29 Condemnation is ready for **s,**
2Pe 3:3 that in the last days **s** will come,

SCRIBES

Mt 7:29 having authority, and not as their **s.**
23:13 "But woe to you, **s** and Pharisees,

SCRIPTURE → SCRIPTURES

Lk 4:21 "Today this **s** has been fulfilled in
Jn 10:35 and the **s** cannot be annulled—
1Ti 4:13 attention to the public reading of **s,**
2Ti 3:16 All **s** is inspired by God and is useful

SCRIPTURES → SCRIPTURE

Mt 22:29 know neither the **s** nor the power
Lk 24:45 their minds to understand the **s,**

Jn 5:39 "You search the **s** because you think
1Co 15:3 our sins in accordance with the **s**,

SCROLL

Lk 4:17 the **s** of the prophet Isaiah was given
Rev 5:2 to open the **s** and break its seals?"

SEA

Ge 1:26 have dominion over the fish of the **s**,
Ex 15:1 and rider he has thrown into the **s**.
Dt 30:13 Neither is it beyond the **s**, that you
Ps 95:5 The **s** is his, for he made it,
Da 7:3 great beasts came up out of the **s**,
Mic 7:19 all our sins into the depths of the **s**.
Rev 4:6 there is something like a **s** of glass,
13:1 a beast rising out of the **s** having
21:1 and the **s** was no more.

SEAL → SEALS

Da 8:26 As for you, **s** up the vision,
2Co 1:22 by putting his **s** on us and giving us
Eph 1:13 the **s** of the promised Holy Spirit;
Rev 7:3 our God with a **s** on their foreheads.
22:10 not **s** up the words of the prophecy

SEALS → SEAL

Rev 5:2 to open the scroll and break its **s**?"

SEARCH → SEARCHES

Dt 4:29 if you **s** after him with all your heart
Ps 139:23 **S** me, O God, and know my heart;
Eze 34:11 I myself will **s** for my sheep,

SEARCHES → SEARCH

Ro 8:27 And God, who **s** the heart,
1Co 2:10 the Spirit **s** everything,

SEASON → SEASONS

Ps 1:3 which yield their fruit in its **s**,
Ecc 3:1 For everything there is a **s**,

SEASONS → SEASON

Ge 1:14 let them be for signs and for **s** and
Gal 4:10 and months, and **s**, and years.
1Th 5:1 Now concerning the times and the **s**,

SEAT → SEATED

Ex 25:17 make a mercy **s** of pure gold;
Ps 1:1 or sit in the **s** of scoffers;
Ro 14:10 stand before the judgment **s** of God.
2Co 5:10 must appear before the judgment **s**

SEATED → SEAT

Lk 22:69 the Son of Man will be **s** at the right
Eph 1:20 and **s** him at his right hand
Rev 4:4 **s** on the thrones are twenty-four elders,
19:4 and worshiped God who is **s** on

SECOND → TWO

Mt 22:39 And a **s** is like it:
Rev 20:14 This is the **s** death, the lake of fire;

SECRET

Dt 29:29 The **s** things belong to the Lord
Ro 2:16 will judge the **s** thoughts of all.

SECURITY → SECURE

Pr 12:3 No one finds **s** by wickedness,
1Th 5:3 they say, "There is peace and **s**,"

SEE → FORESEEING, NEAR-SIGHTED, SEEN, SEES, SIGHT

Ex 12:13 when I **s** the blood, I will pass over
33:20 for no one shall **s** me and live."
Ps 115:5 eyes, but do not **s**.
Jn 9:25 that though I was blind, now I **s**."
1Co 13:12 we **s** in a mirror, dimly,
1Jn 3:2 for we will **s** him as he is.
Rev 1:7 the clouds; every eye will **s** him,

SEED → SEEDS, SEEDTIME

Isa 6:13 The holy **s** is its stump.
Mt 17:20 have faith the size of a mustard **s**,
1Pe 1:23 of perishable but of imperishable **s**,

SEEDS → SEED

Mt 13:8 Other **s** fell on good soil
Mk 4:31 the smallest of all the **s** on earth;

SEEK

1Ch 28:9 If you **s** him, he will be found by
Ps 34:10 those who **s** the Lord lack no good
119:10 With my whole heart I **s** you;
Isa 55:6 **S** the Lord while he may be found,
65:1 found by those who did not **s** me.
Lk 19:10 came to **s** out and to save
Heb 11:6 that he rewards those who **s** him.
Sir 2:16 who fear the Lord **s** to please him,

SEEMS

Pr 16:25 there is a way that **s** to be right,
Heb 12:11 discipline always **s** painful rather

SEEN → SEE

Jn 1:18 No one has ever **s** God.
14:9 Whoever has **s** me has **s** the Father.
20:29 Blessed are those who have not **s**
1Pe 1:8 you have not **s** him, you love him;

SELF-CONTROL → SELF-CONTROLLED

1Co 7:5 tempt you because of your lack of **s**.
2Pe 1:6 with **s**, and **s** with endurance,

SELF-CONTROLLED → SELF-CONTROL

Tit 1:8 prudent, upright, devout, and **s**.
2:5 to be **s**, chaste, good managers

SELFISH → SELFISHNESS

Ps 119:36 to your decrees, and not to **s** gain.
Php 1:17 proclaim Christ out of **s** ambition,
Jas 3:14 if you have bitter envy and **s**

SELFISHNESS* → SELFISH

2Co 12:20 anger, **s**, slander, gossip, conceit,

SELL

Pr 23:23 Buy truth, and do not **s** it;
Mk 10:21 **s** what you own, and give the money

SEND → SENT

Ex 33:2 I will **s** an angel before you,
Isa 6:8 And I said, "Here am I; **s** me!"
Jn 3:17 God did not **s** the Son into the world to
14:26 whom the Father will **s** in my name,

SENNACHERIB

Assyrian king; siege of Jerusalem was overthrown by the Lord following prayer of Hezekiah and Isaiah (2Ki 18:13-19:37; 2Ch 32:1-21; Isa 36-37).

SENT → SEND

Ex 3:14 'I am has **s** me to you.'"
Lk 10:16 rejects me rejects the one who **s** me.
Jn 17:18 As you have **s** me into the world,
20:21 the Father has **s** me, so I send you."
1Jn 4:10 and **s** his Son to be the atoning

SEPARATE → SEPARATED

Mt 19:6 joined together, let no one **s**."
Ro 8:35 will **s** us from the love of Christ?
1Co 7:10 wife should not **s** from her husband

SEPARATED → SEPARATE

Lev 20:24 I have **s** you from the peoples.
Heb 7:26 **s** from sinners, and exalted above

SERPENT → SERPENTS

Ge 3:1 the **s** was more crafty than any other
Nu 21:9 Moses made a **s** of bronze,
2Co 11:3 the **s** deceived Eve by its cunning,
Rev 20:2 He seized the dragon, that ancient **s**,

SERPENTS → SERPENT

Mt 10:16 wise as **s** and innocent as doves.

SERVANT → SERVANTS

Ps 19:11 Moreover by them is your **s** warned;
Isa 42:1 Here is my **s**, whom I uphold,
43:10 and my **s** whom I have chosen,
53:11 my **s**, shall make many righteous,
Zec 3:8 going to bring my **s** the Branch.
Lk 1:38 "Here am I, the **s** of the Lord;
Ac 3:13 has glorified his **s** Jesus,
2Ti 2:24 Lord's **s** must not be quarrelsome
Heb 3:5 faithful in all God's house as a **s**,

SERVANTS → SERVANT

2Ki 17:23 as he had foretold through all his **s**
Jn 15:15 I do not call you **s** any longer,
1Pe 2:16 As **s** of God, live as free people,
Rev 7:3 marked the **s** of our God with a seal

SERVE

Jos 24:15 my household, we will **s** the Lord."
1Sa 12:20 but **s** the Lord with all your heart;
Mt 6:24 You cannot **s** God and wealth.
Mk 10:45 Son of Man came not to be served but to **s**,
1Pe 4:10 **s** one another with whatever gift

SETH

Ge 4:25 she bore a son and named him **S**,

SETTLE

Ge 26:2 **s** in the land that I shall show you.
Nu 33:53 possession of the land and **s** in it,

SEVEN → SEVENTH

Ge 7:2 with you **s** pairs of all clean animals,
Ex 25:37 You shall make the **s** lamps for it;
Jos 6:4 march around the city **s** times,
Da 9:25 prince, there shall be **s** weeks;
Mt 18:22 "Not **s** times, but, I tell you, seventy-seven
Rev 1:12 turning I saw **s** golden lampstands,
5:1 and on the back, sealed with **s** seals;
8:2 I saw the **s** angels who stand before
12:3 a great red dragon, with **s** heads and
15:1 **s** angels with **s** plagues,

SEVENTH → SEVEN

Ge 2:2 on the **s** day God finished the work
Ex 20:10 the **s** day is a sabbath to the Lord
23:11 but the **s** year you shall let it rest
Heb 4:4 God rested on the **s** day from all his

SEVENTY → SEVENTY-SEVEN

Ge 46:27 who came into Egypt were **s**.
2Ch 36:21 it kept sabbath, to fulfill **s** years.
Jer 25:12 Then after **s** years are completed,
Da 9:24 **S** weeks are decreed for your people

SEVENTY-SEVEN → SEVENTY

Mt 18:22 "Not seven times, but, I tell you, **s**

SEXUAL

1Co 10:8 not indulge in **s** immorality as some

SHADOW

2Ki 20:11 brought the **s** back the ten intervals,
Ps 17:8 hide me in the **s** of your wings,
91:1 who abide in the **s** of the Almighty,
Mt 4:16 and **s** of death light has dawned."
Col 2:17 are only a **s** of what is to come,

SHADRACH → =HANANIAH

Hebrew exiled to Babylon; name changed from Hananiah (Da 1:6-7). Refused defilement by food (Da 1:8-20). Refused to worship idol (Da 3:1-18); saved from furnace (Da 3:19-30).

SHALLUM

King of Israel (2Ki 15:10-16).

SHALMANESER

King of Assyria; conquered and deported Israel (2Ki 17:3-4; 18:9; Tob 1:2).

SHAME → ASHAMED, SHAMEFUL

Ps 69:6 who hope in you be put to **s** because
Eze 39:26 They shall forget their **s**, and all
Da 12:2 some to **s** and everlasting contempt.
1Co 1:27 foolish in the world to **s** the wise;

Heb 12:2 endured the cross, disregarding its **s**,
1Jn 2:28 be put to **s** before him at his coming.

SHAMEFUL → SHAME

2Co 4:2 We have renounced the **s** things
Eph 5:12 For it is **s** even to mention

SHAMGAR*

Judge; killed 600 Philistines (Jdg 3:31; 5:6).

SHARE

Nu 18:20 I am your **s** and your possession
Lk 3:11 "Whoever has two coats must **s**
Ro 15:27 for if the Gentiles have come to **s**
Col 1:12 to **s** in the inheritance of the saints
Heb 12:10 in order that we may **s** his holiness.
Jude 1:3 to you about the salvation we **s**,

SHARP → SHARPENS, SHARPER

Pr 5:4 **s** as a two-edged sword.
Rev 19:15 a **s** sword with which to strike down

SHARPENS → SHARP

Pr 27:17 Iron **s** iron, and one person **s**

SHARPER* → SHARP

Heb 4:12 **s** than any two-edged sword,

SHEBA

1. Benjamite; rebelled against David (2Sa 20).
2. Queen of Sheba (1Ki 10; 2Ch 9; Mt 12:42; Lk 11:31).

SHECHEM

1. Raped Jacob's daughter Dinah; killed (Ge 34).
2. City where Joshua renewed the covenant (Jos 24). Abimelech as king (Jdg 9).

SHED → BLOODSHED, SHEDDING

Ge 9:6 shall that person's blood be **s**;
Pr 6:17 and hands that **s** innocent blood,
Mt 23:35 may come all the righteous blood **s**
Rev 16:6 **s** the blood of saints and prophets,

SHEDDING → SHED

Heb 9:22 without the **s** of blood there is no
12:4 resisted to the point of **s** your blood.

SHEEP

1Ki 22:17 like **s** that have no shepherd;
Ps 100:3 people, and the **s** of his pasture.
Isa 53:6 All we like **s** have gone astray;
Eze 34:15 myself will be the shepherd of my **s**,
Zec 13:7 shepherd, that the **s** may be scattered;
Mt 9:36 like **s** without a shepherd.
Lk 15:4 a hundred **s** and losing one of them,
Jn 10:7 I am the gate for the **s**.
10:15 And I lay down my life for the **s**.
Heb 13:20 the great shepherd of the **s**,
1Pe 2:25 For you were going astray like **s**,

SHELTER

Ps 91:1 who live in the **s** of the Most High,
Rev 7:15 is seated on the throne will **s** them.

SHEM

Son of Noah (Ge 5:32; 6:10). Blessed (Ge 9:26). Descendants (Ge 10:21–31; 11:10–32; Lk 3:36).

SHEOL

Nu 16:30 and they go down alive into **S**,
Job 26:6 **S** is naked before God,
Ps 139:8 if I make my bed in **S**, you are there.
Isa 28:15 and with **S** we have an agreement;
Hos 13:14 O **S**, where is your destruction?

SHEPHERD → SHEPHERDS

2Sa 7:7 whom I commanded to **s** my people
Ps 23:1 The Lord is my **s**, I shall not want.
Ecc 12:11 sayings that are given by one **s**.
Isa 40:11 He will feed his flock like a **s**;
Mt 2:6 ruler who is to **s** my people Israel.'"
26:31 strike the **s**, and the sheep of the flock
Jn 10:11 "I am the good **s**.
Heb 13:20 the great **s** of the sheep,
1Pe 5:4 And when the chief **s** appears,

SHEPHERDS → SHEPHERD

Eze 34:2 prophesy against the **s** of Israel:
Lk 2:8 there were **s** living in the fields,

SHIELD

Ge 15:1 I am your **s**; your reward shall be
Ps 7:10 God is my **s**, who saves the upright
Eph 6:16 With all of these, take the **s** of faith,

SHILOH

1Sa 1:24 to the house of the Lord at **S**;

SHIMEI

Cursed David (2Sa 16:5–14); spared (2Sa 19:16–23). Killed by Solomon (1Ki 2:8–9, 36–46).

SHINE → SHINES, SHINING

Nu 6:25 Lord make his face to **s** upon you,
Ps 4:6 light of your face **s** on us, O Lord!"
Isa 60:1 **s**; for your light has come,
Da 12:3 Those who are wise shall **s** like the
Mt 5:16 let your light **s** before others,
Eph 5:14 the dead, and Christ will **s** on you."

SHINES → SHINE

Jn 1:5 The light **s** in the darkness,

SHINING → SHINE

2Pe 1:19 to this as to a lamp **s** in a dark place,
1Jn 2:8 and the true light is already **s**.

SHORT

Isa 59:1 the Lord's hand is not too **s** to save,
Mt 24:22 if those days had not been cut **s**,
Ro 3:23 sinned and fall **s** of the glory of God;

SHOUT

Ps 47:1 **s** to God with loud songs of joy.
Zec 9:9 **S** aloud, O daughter Jerusalem!
Lk 19:40 were silent, the stones would **s** out."

SHOW → SHOWED

Ge 12:1 to the land that I will **s** you.
Ex 33:18 Moses said, "**S** me your glory,
Ps 85:7 **S** us your steadfast love, O Lord,
Jn 14:8 said to him, "Lord, **s** us the Father,
1Co 12:31 will **s** you a still more excellent way
Rev 4:1 I will **s** you what must take place

SHOWED → SHOW

Dt 34:1 the Lord **s** him the whole land:
Jn 20:20 he **s** them his hands and his side.

SHOWERS

Dt 32:2 rain on grass, like **s** on new growth.
Eze 34:26 they shall be **s** of blessing.

SHUT

Isa 22:22 he shall open, and no one shall **s**;
Da 6:22 God sent his angel and **s** the lions'
Rev 3:7 who opens and no one will **s**,

SICK → SICKNESS

Mt 8:16 and cured all who were **s**.
9:12 of a physician, but those who are **s**.
Jas 5:14 Are any among you **s**?

SICKLE

Joel 3:13 Put in the **s**, for the harvest is ripe.
Rev 14:14 and a sharp **s** in his hand!

SICKNESS → SICK

Ex 23:25 I will take **s** away from among you.
Mt 4:23 and curing every disease and every **s**

SIDE → ASIDE

Ps 91:7 A thousand may fall at your **s**,
124:1 the Lord who was on our **s**
Jn 19:34 soldiers pierced his **s** with a spear,

SIFT

Isa 30:28 to **s** the nations with the sieve of
Lk 22:31 Satan has demanded to **s** all of you

SIGHT → SEE

Ge 6:11 the earth was corrupt in God's **s**,
Ps 72:14 and precious is their blood in his **s**.
Mt 11:5 blind receive their **s**, the lame walk,
2Co 5:7 for we walk by faith, not by **s**.
1Pe 3:4 which is very precious in God's **s**.

SIGN → SIGNS

Ge 9:12 the **s** of the covenant that I make
17:11 a **s** of the covenant between me
Isa 7:14 the Lord himself will give you a **s**.
Mt 24:3 the **s** of your coming and of the end
Mk 8:12 does this generation ask for a **s**?

SIGNS → SIGN

Ge 1:14 be for **s** and for seasons and for days
Ex 7:3 I will multiply my **s** and wonders in
Da 6:27 he works **s** and wonders in heaven
Mt 16:3 cannot interpret the **s** of the times.
Jn 20:30 Jesus did many other **s** in the
1Co 1:22 Jews demand **s** and Greeks desire
Rev 16:14 demonic spirits, performing **s**,

SILAS

Prophet (Ac 15:22–32); co-worker with Paul on second missionary journey (Ac 16–18; 2Co 1:19). Co-writer with Paul (1Th 1:1; 2Th 1:1); Peter (1Pe 5:12).

SILENT

Isa 53:7 a sheep that before its shearers is **s**,
Zep 1:7 Be **s** before the Lord God!
Mk 14:61 But he was **s** and did not answer.
1Co 14:34 women should be **s** in the churches.

SILVER

Ps 66:10 you have tried us as **s** is tried.
Pr 8:10 Take my instruction instead of **s**,
Isa 48:10 I have refined you, but not like **s**;
Zec 13:9 refine them as one refines **s**,
Mt 26:15 They paid him thirty pieces of **s**.
Ac 3:6 But Peter said, "I have no **s** or gold,
1Co 3:12 on the foundation with gold, **s**,

SIMEON → =SIMON

1. Son of Jacob by Leah (Ge 29:33; 35:23; 1Ch 2:1). With Levi killed Shechem for rape of Dinah (Ge 34:25–29). Held hostage by Joseph in Egypt (Ge 42:24–43:23). Tribe of blessed (Ge 49:5–7), numbered (Nu 1:23; 26:14), allotted land (Jos 19:1–9; Eze 48:24), 12,000 from (Rev 7:7).
2. Godly Jew who blessed the infant Jesus (2:25–35).
3. See Peter (Ac 15:14; 2Pe 1:1).

SIMON → =PETER, =SIMEON

1. See Peter.
2. Apostle; the Zealot (Mt 10:4; Mk 3:18; Lk 6:15; Ac 1:13).
3. Samaritan sorcerer (Ac 8:9–24).

SIMPLE

Ps 19:7 are sure, making wise the **s**;
Pr 1:22 O **s** ones, will you love being **s**?
14:15 The **s** believe everything,

SIN → SINFUL, SINNED, SINNER, SINNERS, SINS

Ge 4:7 not do well, **s** is lurking at the door;
Ex 32:32 if you will only forgive their **s**—
Nu 32:23 and be sure your **s** will find you out.
1Ki 8:46 "If they **s** against you—
2Ch 7:14 forgive their **s** and heal their land.
Ps 119:11 so that I may not **s** against you.
Isa 53:12 yet he bore the **s** of many,
Mt 5:29 If your right eye causes you to **s**,
Jn 1:29 who takes away the **s** of the world!
Ro 6:23 For the wages of **s** is death,
2Co 5:21 made him to be **s** who knew no **s**,
Heb 4:15 tested as we are, yet without **s**.
1Jn 1:7 Jesus his Son cleanses us from all **s**.
Tob 12:10 but those who commit **s**

Wis 10:13 but delivered him from **s**.
Sir 3:30 so almsgiving atones for **s**.

SINAI → =HOREB

Ex 19:20 the Lord descended upon Mount **S**,
Ps 68:17 the Lord came from **S** into the holy
Gal 4:25 Now Hagar is Mount **S** in Arabia

SINFUL → SIN

Lk 5:8 from me, Lord, for I am a **s** man!"
Ro 8:3 Son in the likeness of **s** flesh,
1Mc 1:10 From them came forth a **s** root,

SING → SINGERS, SONG, SONGS, SUNG

Ex 15:1 "I will **s** to the Lord,
Ps 47:6 **S** praises to God, **s** praises;
Isa 5:1 **s** for my beloved my love-song
1Co 14:15 I will **s** praise with the spirit,
Col 3:16 gratitude in your hearts **s** psalms,
Rev 5:9 They **s** a new song:
Jdt 16:13 I will **s** to my God a new song:
Aza 1:35 **s** praise to him and highly exalt him

SINGERS → SING

1Ch 15:16 to appoint their kindred as the **s**
Ezr 2:70 and the **s**, the gatekeepers,

SINGLE

Mt 6:27 worrying add a **s** hour to your span
Rev 21:21 each of the gates is a **s** pearl,

SINNED → SIN

Nu 14:40 Lord has promised, for we have **s**."
Ps 51:4 Against you, you alone, have I **s**,
La 5:7 Our ancestors **s**; they are no more,
Ro 3:23 all have **s** and fall short of the glory of God;
1Jn 1:10 If we say that we have not **s**,
Sir 18:21 and when you have **s**, repent.

SINNER → SIN

Lk 15:7 over one **s** who repents than
Jas 5:20 that whoever brings back a **s**

SINNERS → SIN

Ps 1:1 or take the path that **s** tread,
Pr 23:17 Do not let your heart envy **s**,
Lk 6:33 For even **s** do the same.
Ro 5:8 we still were **s** Christ died for us.
1Ti 1:15 Jesus came into the world to save **s**

SINS → SIN

1Sa 2:25 but if someone **s** against the Lord,
Ps 103:10 not deal with us according to our **s**,
Isa 1:18 your **s** are like scarlet, they shall be
Eze 18:4 only the person who **s** that shall die.
Mic 7:19 cast all our **s** into the depths of the
Mt 9:6 has authority on earth to forgive **s**"—
Mk 1:5 the river Jordan, confessing their **s**.
Lk 11:4 forgive us our **s**, for we ourselves
Ac 3:19 to God so that your **s** may be wiped
1Co 15:3 Christ died for our **s** in accordance
Heb 9:28 offered once to bear the **s** of many,
1Jn 1:9 If we confess our **s**, he who is faithful
Rev 1:5 loves us and freed us from our **s**
Sir 2:11 he forgives **s** and saves

SISTER

Ge 12:13 Say you are my **s**, so that it may go
20:2 of his wife Sarah, "She is my **s**."
Pr 7:4 Say to wisdom, "You are my **s**,"
Mk 3:35 the will of God is my brother and **s**

SIT → SAT, SITS

Ps 1:1 or **s** in the seat of scoffers;
110:1 says to my lord, "**S** at my right hand
Jer 33:17 never lack a man to **s** on the throne
Mt 20:23 to **s** at my right hand and at my left,
Heb 1:13 "**S** at my right hand until I make

SITS → SIT

Ps 2:4 He who **s** in the heavens laughs;
Isa 28:6 to the one who **s** in judgment,

SIX

Ex 20:9 **S** days you shall labor and do all
Pr 6:16 are **s** things that the Lord hates,
Isa 6:2 above him; each had **s** wings:
Rev 4:8 each of them with **s** wings,

SKILL

Ex 28:3 whom I have endowed with **s**,
1Ki 7:14 he was full of **s**, intelligence,

SKIN

Job 2:4 Satan answered the Lord, "**S** for **s**!
19:26 after my **s** has been thus destroyed,
Jer 13:23 Can Ethiopians change their **s**

SKULL

2Ki 9:35 they found no more of her than the **s**
Mt 27:33 Golgotha (which means Place of a **S**)

SKY

Dt 28:23 **s** over your head shall be bronze,
Mt 16:3 to interpret the appearance of the **s**,
Rev 6:14 The **s** vanished like a scroll rolling

SLANDER → SLANDERED

Ps 15:3 who do not **s** with their tongue,
Pr 10:18 and whoever utters **s** is a fool.
Mt 15:19 fornication, theft, false witness, **s**.
1Pe 2:1 all guile, insincerity, envy, and all **s**.

SLANDERED → SLANDER

1Co 4:13 when **s**, we speak kindly.

SLAUGHTER → SLAUGHTERED

Pr 7:22 and goes like an ox to the **s**,
Isa 53:7 like a lamb that is led to the **s**,
Zec 11:4 a shepherd of the flock doomed to **s**.
Ac 8:32 "Like a sheep he was led to the **s**,

SLAUGHTERED → SLAUGHTER

Rev 5:6 a Lamb standing as if it had been **s**,
6:9 who had been **s** for the word of God

SLAVE → ENSLAVE, ENSLAVED, SLAVERY, SLAVES

Ge 21:10 Cast out this **s** woman with her son;
Mk 10:44 first among you must be **s** of all.
Jn 8:34 who commits sin is a **s** to sin.
Gal 3:28 there is no longer **s** or free,

SLAVERY → SLAVE

Ex 20:2 out of the house of **s**;
Ro 7:14 of the flesh, sold into **s** under sin.
Gal 5:1 do not submit again to a yoke of **s**.

SLAVES → SLAVE

Ro 6:16 are **s** of the one whom you obey,
2Pe 2:19 people are **s** to whatever masters

SLEEP → ASLEEP, SLEEPER, SLEEPING

Ge 2:21 God caused a deep **s** to fall upon
15:12 a deep **s** fell upon Abram,
Ps 121:4 keeps Israel will neither slumber nor **s**.
Da 12:2 Many of those who **s** in the dust of

SLEEPER → SLEEP

Eph 5:14 "**S**, awake! Rise from the dead,

SLEEPING → SLEEP

Mt 9:24 for the girl is not dead but **s**."
26:40 to the disciples and found them **s**;

SLING

1Sa 17:50 over the Philistine with a **s** and a stone,

SLIP

Dt 32:35 for the time when their foot shall **s**;
Ps 37:31 their steps do not **s**.

SLOW → SLOWNESS

Ex 34:6 merciful and gracious, **s** to anger,
Nu 14:18 'The Lord is **s** to anger,
Ps 145:8 **s** to anger and abounding in
Na 1:3 The Lord is **s** to anger but great in
Lk 24:25 and how **s** of heart to believe all that

2Pe 3:9 The Lord is not **s** about his promise,
Tob 12:6 Do not be **s** to acknowledge him.
Sir 5:4 for the Lord is **s** to anger.

SLOWNESS → SLOW

2Pe 3:9 think of **s**, but is patient with you,

SMALL → SMALLEST

Jas 3:5 So also the tongue is a **s** member,

SMALLEST → SMALL

Mk 4:31 is the **s** of all the seeds on earth;

SMOKE → SMOKING

Ex 19:18 Now Mount Sinai was wrapped in **s**,
Isa 6:4 and the house filled with **s**.
Joel 2:30 blood and fire and columns of **s**.
Rev 15:8 with **s** from the glory of God and

SMOKING → SMOKE

Ge 15:17 **s** fire pot and a flaming torch passed
Ex 20:18 of the trumpet, and the mountain **s**,

SNAKE

Ex 4:3 and it became a **s**; and Moses drew
Lk 11:11 will give a **s** instead of a fish?

SNARE

Ex 23:33 it will surely be a **s** to you.
Jdg 2:3 their gods shall be a **s** to you."

SNOW

Ps 51:7 and I shall be whiter than **s**.
Isa 1:18 sins are like scarlet, they shall be like **s**;
Da 7:9 his clothing was white as **s**,
Rev 1:14 as white wool, white as **s**;

SOBER

1Th 5:6 but let us keep awake and be **s**;
2Ti 4:5 always be **s**, endure suffering,

SODOM

Ge 19:24 rained on **S** and Gomorrah sulfur
Isa 1:9 we would have been like **S**,
Lk 10:12 it will be more tolerable for **S** than
Rev 11:8 city that is prophetically called **S**

SOLDIERS

Mt 28:12 give a large sum of money to the **s**,
Jn 19:23 When the **s** had crucified Jesus,

SOLID

1Co 3:2 I fed you with milk, not **s** food,
Heb 5:14 But **s** food is for the mature,

SOLOMON

Son of David by Bathsheba; king of Judah (2Sa 12:24; 1Ch 3:5, 10). Appointed king by David (1Ki 1); adversaries Adonijah, Joab, Shimei killed by Benaiah (1Ki 2). Asked for wisdom (1Ki 3; 2Ch 1). Judged between two prostitutes (1Ki 3:16–28). Built temple (1Ki 5–7; 2Ch 2–5); prayer of dedication (1Ki 8; 2Ch 6). Visited by Queen of Sheba (1Ki 10; 2Ch 9). Wives turned his heart from God (1Ki 11:1–13). Jeroboam rebelled against (1Ki 11:26–40). Death (1Ki 11:41–43; 2Ch 9:29–31).

Proverbs of (1Ki 4:32; Pr 1:1; 10:1; 25:1); psalms of (Ps 72; 127); song of (SS 1:1).

SON → SONS

Ge 21:2 conceived and bore Abraham a **s**
Ex 4:23 now I will kill your firstborn **s**.'"
2Sa 7:14 and he shall be a **s** to me.
Ps 2:7 He said to me, "You are my **s**;
Isa 7:14 is with child and shall bear a **s**,
Mt 1:23 virgin shall conceive and bear a **s**,
2:15 "Out of Egypt I have called my **s**."
3:17 from heaven said, "This is my **S**,
12:8 the **S** of Man is lord of the sabbath."
16:16 the Messiah, the **S** of the living God."
Mk 10:45 **S** of Man came not to be served but to
Lk 1:35 he will be called **S** of God.
20:44 so how can he be his **s**?"
Jn 1:34 testified that this is the **S** of God."

3:16 loved the world that he gave his only **S,**
Ro 8:29 be conformed to the image of his **S,**
1Th 1:10 to wait for his **S** from heaven,
Heb 1:2 last days he has spoken to us by a **S,**
1:5 my **S;** today I have begotten you"?
2Pe 1:17 saying, "This is my **S,** my Beloved,
1Jn 4:9 God sent his only **S** into the world
Rev 12:5 she gave birth to a **s,** a male child,
14:14 the cloud was one like the **S** of Man,
Sir 4:10 be like a **s** of the Most High,
2Es 13:32 then my **S** will be revealed,

SONG → SING

Ex 15:1 sang this **s** to the LORD:
Dt 31:21 **s** will confront them as a witness,
Ps 40:3 He put a new **s** in my mouth,
Rev 5:9 They sing a new **s:** "You are worthy
15:3 and the **s** of the Lamb:

SONGS → SING

1Ki 4:32 his **s** numbered a thousand and five.
Ps 137:3 "Sing us one of the **s** of Zion!"
Col 3:16 hymns, and spiritual **s** to God.

SONS → SON

Ge 6:2 the **s** of God saw that they were fair;
35:22 Now the **s** of Jacob were twelve.
Dt 7:3 giving your daughters to their **s**
Ac 2:17 **s** and your daughters shall prophesy,
2Co 6:18 you shall be my **s** and daughters,

SOON

Isa 56:1 for **s** my salvation will come,
Rev 22:20 says, "Surely I am coming **s.**"

SORCERERS → SORCERY

Rev 22:15 Outside are the dogs and **s** and

SORCERY → SORCERERS

Gal 5:20 **s,** enmities, strife, jealousy, anger,
Rev 18:23 all nations were deceived by your **s.**

SORROW → SORROWFUL

Est 9:22 turned for them from **s** into gladness
Ecc 1:18 who increase knowledge increase **s.**
Isa 35:10 and **s** and sighing shall flee away.

SORROWFUL → SORROW

2Co 6:10 as **s,** yet always rejoicing;

SOUL → SOULS

Dt 6:5 all your **s,** and with all your might.
Jos 22:5 all your heart and with all your **s."**
Ps 16:9 heart is glad, and my **s** rejoices;
25:1 To you, O LORD, I lift up my **s.**
42:1 so my **s** longs for you, O God.
Mic 6:7 fruit of my body for the sin of my **s?"**
Mt 10:28 fear him who can destroy both **s** and
Heb 4:12 piercing until it divides **s** from spirit
Jas 5:20 will save the sinner's **s** from death
3Jn 1:2 just as it is well with your **s.**
Sir 7:29 With all your **s** fear the Lord,

SOULS → SOUL

Jer 6:16 walk in it, and find rest for your **s.**
Mt 11:29 and you will find rest for your **s.**
1Pe 2:25 the shepherd and guardian of your **s.**

SOUND

Eze 1:24 like the **s** of mighty waters,
1Co 15:52 For the trumpet will **s,** and the dead
2Ti 4:3 will not put up with **s** doctrine,
Tit 1:9 able both to preach with **s** doctrine
Rev 1:15 voice was like the **s** of many waters.

SOUR

Jer 31:29 "The parents have eaten **s** grapes,
Mk 15:36 filled a sponge with **s** wine,

SOVEREIGN → SOVEREIGNTY

1Ki 4:21 Solomon was **s** over all the
Rev 6:10 **"S** Lord, holy and true, how long

SOVEREIGNTY → SOVEREIGN

Da 4:34 For his **s** is an everlasting **s,**

SOW → SOWED, SOWS

Ex 23:10 For six years you shall **s** your land
Ecc 11:6 In the morning **s** your seed,
Hos 10:12 **S** for yourselves righteousness;
Mt 13:3 A sower went out to **s.**
1Co 15:36 **s** does not come to life unless it dies.

SOWED → SOW

Mt 13:24 to someone who **s** good seed
Lk 13:19 took and **s** in the garden;

SOWS → SOW

Jn 4:37 'One **s** and another reaps.'
2Co 9:6 who **s** sparingly will also reap

SPAN

Isa 40:12 marked off the heavens with a **s,**
Mt 6:27 add a single hour to your **s** of life?

SPARE

Ro 11:21 perhaps he will not **s** you.
2Pe 2:4 if God did not **s** the angels when

SPARROWS

Lk 12:7 you are of more value than many **s.**

SPEAK → SPEAKING, SPEECH, SPOKE

Ge 18:27 take it upon myself to **s** to the Lord,
Nu 12:8 With him I **s** face to face—
Dt 18:20 presumes to **s** in my name a word
Job 13:3 But I would **s** to the Almighty,
Ecc 3:7 time to keep silence, and a time to **s;**
Mt 13:13 The reason I **s** to them in parables is
Ac 2:4 began to **s** in other languages,
1Co 12:30 Do all **s** in tongues?
Jas 1:19 be quick to listen, slow to **s,**
Sir 4:25 Never **s** against the truth,

SPEAKING → SPEAK

1Co 14:39 and do not forbid **s** in tongues;
Eph 4:15 But **s** the truth in love,

SPEAR → SPEARS

1Sa 19:10 to pin David to the wall with the **s;**
Jn 19:34 the soldiers pierced his side with a **s,**

SPEARS → SPEAR

Joel 3:10 and your pruning hooks into **s;**
Mic 4:3 and their **s** into pruning hooks;

SPECK

Mt 7:4 'Let me take the **s** out of your eye, '

SPECTACLE

1Co 4:9 we have become a **s** to the world,

SPEECH → SPEAK

Ex 4:10 I am slow of **s** and slow of tongue."
Ps 19:3 There is no **s,** nor are there words;
1Ti 4:12 set the believers an example in **s**
1Jn 3:18 let us love, not in word or **s,**
Sir 4:29 Do not be reckless in your **s,**

SPICES

Ex 25:6 **s** for the anointing oil and for
Jn 19:40 wrapped it with the **s** in linen cloths,

SPIES → SPY

Nu 13:32 we have gone through as **s**
Jos 2:1 two men secretly from Shittim as **s,**

SPIRIT → SPIRITS, SPIRITUAL

Ge 6:3 My **s** shall not abide in mortals forever,
Nu 11:25 **s** rested upon them, they prophesied.
2Ki 2:9 inherit a double share of your **s."**
Ne 9:20 You gave your good **s** to instruct
Job 33:4 The **s** of God has made me,
Ps 31:5 Into your hand I commit my **s;**
51:17 acceptable to God is a broken **s;**
Pr 16:18 and a haughty **s** before a fall.
Isa 42:1 I have put my **s** upon him;
Eze 36:26 and a new **s** I will put within you;
Joel 2:28 I will pour out my **s** on all flesh;
Mt 1:18 to be with child from the Holy **S.**
5:3 "Blessed are the poor in **s,**
12:31 against the **S** will not be forgiven.
26:41 the **s** indeed is willing, but the flesh
Mk 1:8 will baptize you with the Holy **S."**
Jn 3:5 without being born of water and **S.**
4:24 God is **s,** and those who worship him
must worship in **s** and truth."
6:63 It is the **s** that gives life;
14:26 But the Advocate, the Holy **S,**
Ac 2:4 of them were filled with the Holy **S**
Ro 8:9 not in the flesh; you are in the **S,**
8:26 the **S** helps us in our weakness;
1Co 6:19 your body is a temple of the Holy **S**
12:4 are varieties of gifts, but the same **S;**
2Co 3:6 the letter kills, but the **S** gives life.
Gal 5:22 the fruit of the **S** is love, joy, peace,
Eph 1:13 the seal of the promised Holy **S;**
4:30 do not grieve the Holy **S** of God,
5:18 but be filled with the **S,**
1Th 5:19 Do not quench the **S.**
Heb 4:12 piercing until it divides soul from **s,**
1Pe 3:4 lasting beauty of a gentle and quiet **s**
1Jn 4:1 Beloved, do not believe every **s,**
Rev 1:10 I was in the **s** on the Lord's day,

SPIRITS → SPIRIT

Nu 16:22 the God of the **s** of all flesh,
Dt 18:11 or who consults ghosts or **s,**
Lk 4:36 power he commands the unclean **s,**
1Co 12:10 to another the discernment of **s,**
Gal 4:3 we were enslaved to the elemental **s**
Rev 1:4 seven **s** who are before his throne,

SPIRITUAL → SPIRIT

Ro 7:14 For we know that the law is **s;**
1Co 2:13 interpreting **s** things to those who are **s.**
12:1 Now concerning **s** gifts,
14:1 Pursue love and strive for the **s** gifts,
15:46 the **s** that is first, but the physical,
Eph 1:3 every **s** blessing in the heavenly
Col 1:9 of God's will in all **s** wisdom
1Pe 2:2 infants, long for the pure, **s** milk,
2:5 yourselves be built into a **s** house,

SPIT

Mk 14:65 began to **s** on him, to blindfold him,
Rev 3:16 am about to **s** you out of my mouth.

SPLENDOR

1Ch 16:29 Worship the LORD in holy **s;**
Eph 5:27 to present the church to himself in **s,**

SPOKE → SPEAK

Mk 4:33 many such parables he **s** the word
1Co 13:11 When I was a child, I **s** like a child,
Heb 1:1 Long ago God **s** to our ancestors in
2Pe 1:21 moved by the Holy Spirit **s** from

SPOT

Eph 5:27 without a **s** or wrinkle or anything
2Pe 3:14 at peace, without **s** or blemish;

SPRING

Isa 45:8 earth open, that salvation may **s** up,
Jn 4:14 a **s** of water gushing up to eternal life."
Rev 21:6 from the **s** of the water of life.

SPRINKLE → SPRINKLED

Nu 8:7 **s** the water of purification on them,
Eze 36:25 I will **s** clean water upon you,

SPRINKLED → SPRINKLE

Lev 8:11 He **s** some of it on the altar seven
Heb 10:22 with our hearts **s** clean from an evil
1Pe 1:2 and to be **s** with his blood:

SPY → SPIES

Nu 13:2 men to **s** out the land of Canaan,
Jos 6:25 whom Joshua sent to **s** out Jericho.

STAFF

Ge 49:10 the ruler's **s** from between his feet,
Ex 4:4 and it became a **s** in his hand—
Nu 17:6 the **s** of Aaron was among theirs.
Ps 23:4 your rod and your **s**—they comfort me.
Zec 11:10 I took my **s** Favor and broke it,

STAND → STANDING

Ex 14:13 "Do not be afraid, **s** firm,
Job 19:25 at the last he will **s** upon the earth;
Ps 1:5 wicked will not **s** in the judgment,
Isa 7:9 If you do not **s** firm in faith,
Mt 12:25 house divided against itself will **s.**
Ro 14:4 for the Lord is able to make them **s.**
14:10 all **s** before the judgment seat of God.
Eph 6:11 may be able to **s** against the wiles of

STANDARDS

Jn 8:15 You judge by human **s;** I judge no
1Co 1:26 of you were wise by human **s,**

STANDING → STAND

1Co 10:12 So if you think you are **s,**
Jas 5:9 See, the Judge is **s** at the doors!
Rev 3:20 I am **s** at the door, knocking;

STAR → STARS

Nu 24:17 a **s** shall come out of Jacob,
Isa 14:12 are fallen from heaven, O Day **S,**
Mt 2:2 For we observed his **s** at its rising,
2Pe 1:19 day dawns and the morning **s** rises
Rev 9:1 saw a **s** that had fallen from heaven
22:16 of David, the bright morning **s."**

STARS → STAR

Ge 1:16 to rule the night—and the **s.**
Job 38:7 when the morning **s** sang together
Ps 148:3 praise him, all you shining **s!**
Da 12:3 like the **s** forever and ever.
Php 2:15 you shine like **s** in the world.
Rev 1:16 In his right hand he held seven **s,**
12:4 a third of the **s** of heaven and threw

STATUE

Da 2:31 there was a great **s.**

STATUTE → STATUTES

Lev 16:29 This shall be a **s** to you forever:
Nu 19:21 It shall be a perpetual **s** for them.

STATUTES → STATUTE

Ge 26:5 commandments, my **s,** and my laws.
Dt 4:1 give heed to the **s** and ordinances
Ne 9:13 good **s** and commandments,
Ps 119:8 I will observe your **s;**

STEADFAST

Ex 34:6 abounding in **s** love and faithfulness
Nu 14:18 and abounding in **s** love,
2Sa 7:15 I will not take my **s** love from him,
Ps 57:7 My heart is **s,** O God, my heart is **s.**
136:1 for his **s** love endures forever.
Heb 6:19 a sure and **s** anchor of the soul,
1Pe 5:9 Resist him, **s** in your faith,

STEAL

Ex 20:15 You shall not **s.**
Mt 6:19 and where thieves break in and **s;**
Jn 10:10 The thief comes only to **s** and kill

STEPHEN*

Early church leader (Ac 6:5). Arrested (Ac 6:8-15). Speech to Sanhedrin (Ac 7). Stoned (Ac 7:54-60; 8:2; 11:19; 22:20).

STEPS

Pr 16:9 but the Lord directs the **s.**
1Pe 2:21 so that you should follow in his **s.**

STIFF-NECKED → NECK

Ex 32:9 "I have seen this people, how **s**
Ac 7:51 "You **s** people, uncircumcised in

STILL

Ex 14:14 and you have only to keep **s."**
Jos 10:13 sun stood **s,** and the moon stopped,
Ps 46:10 "Be **s,** and know that I am God!
Mk 4:39 said to the sea, "Peace! Be **s!"**
Ro 5:8 we **s** were sinners Christ died for us.
Heb 11:4 but through his faith he **s** speaks.

STING

1Co 15:55 Where, O death, is your **s?"**

STONE → CORNERSTONE, MILLSTONE, STONED, STONES

Ge 28:18 the **s** that he had put under his head
Ex 28:10 six of their names on the one **s,**
31:18 tablets of **s,** written with the finger of
1Sa 17:50 the Philistine with a sling and a **s,**
Ps 118:22 The **s** that the builders rejected has
Isa 28:16 in Zion a foundation **s,** a tested **s,**
Eze 36:26 from your body the heart of **s**
Mt 4:6 will not dash your foot against a **s.'"**
Mk 12:10 'The **s** that the builders rejected has
16:3 "Who will roll away the **s** for us
Ro 9:32 have stumbled over the stumbling **s,**
2Co 3:3 not on tablets of **s** but on tablets
1Pe 2:4 living **s,** though rejected by mortals
Rev 2:17 and I will give a white **s,**

STONED → STONE

2Ch 24:21 by command of the king they **s** him
Ac 14:19 Then they **s** Paul and dragged him
Heb 11:37 **s** to death, they were sawn in two,

STONES → STONE

Ex 28:21 twelve **s** with names corresponding
Jos 4:3 'Take twelve **s** from here out of the
1Sa 17:40 chose five smooth **s** from the wadi,
Mt 3:9 God is able from these **s** to raise
Lk 19:40 were silent, the **s** would shout out."
1Co 3:12 precious **s,** wood, hay, straw—
1Pe 2:5 like living **s,** let yourselves be built

STORE → SHOREHOUSE, STORING

Pr 7:1 and **s** up my commandments
Mt 6:19 Do not **s** up for yourselves treasures

STOREHOUSE → HOUSE, STORE

Dt 28:12 Lord will open for you his rich **s,**
Mal 3:10 Bring the full tithe into the **s,**

STORING* → STORE

Ro 2:5 you are **s** up wrath for yourself
1Ti 6:19 **s** up for themselves the treasure of

STRAIGHT

Pr 3:6 and he will make **s** your paths.
Isa 40:3 **s** in the desert a highway for our God.
Mt 3:3 way of the Lord, make his paths **s.'"**
Ac 9:11 Get up and go to the street called **S,**
Sir 2:6 make your ways **s,** and hope in him.

STRANGE → STRANGER, STRANGERS

Dt 32:16 They made him jealous with **s** gods,
1Co 14:21 "By people of **s** tongues and by the

STRANGER → STRANGE

Dt 10:19 You shall also love the **s,**
Mt 25:35 I was a **s** and you welcomed me,

STRANGERS → STRANGE

Dt 10:19 for you were **s** in the land of Egypt.
Ro 12:13 extend hospitality to **s.**
Eph 2:12 and **s** to the covenants of promise,
Heb 11:13 They confessed that they were **s**

STRAW

Ex 5:10 says Pharaoh, 'I will not give you **s.**
1Co 3:12 precious stones, wood, hay, **s**—

STRAY → ASTRAY

Ps 119:10 not let me **s** from your commandments.
Pr 22:6 and when old, they will not **s.**

STREAM → STREAMS

Isa 2:2 all the nations shall **s** to it.
Am 5:24 righteousness like an ever-flowing **s**

STREAMS → STREAM

Ps 1:3 like trees planted by **s** of water,
42:1 As a deer longs for flowing **s,**

STREET

Pr 1:20 Wisdom cries out in the **s;**
Mt 6:5 the synagogues and at the **s** corners,
Rev 21:21 and the **s** of the city is pure gold,

STRENGTH → STRONG

Ex 15:2 The Lord is my **s** and my might,
1Ch 16:11 Seek the Lord and his **s,**
Ne 8:10 for the joy of the Lord is your **s."**
Ps 46:1 God is our refuge and **s,**
Pr 31:25 **S** and dignity are her clothing,
Isa 40:31 for the Lord shall renew their **s,**
Mk 12:30 all your mind, and with all your **s.'**
1Co 1:25 God's weakness is stronger than human **s.**
Jdt 9:11 your **s** does not depend on numbers,
1Mc 3:19 but **s** comes from Heaven.

STRENGTHEN → STRONG

Jdg 16:28 and **s** me only this once, O God,
Ps 119:28 **s** me according to your word.
Lk 22:32 have turned back, **s** your brothers."
Heb 12:12 hands and **s** your weak knees,

STRENGTHENS → STRONG

Isa 40:29 to the faint, and **s** the powerless.
Php 4:13 do all things through him who **s** me.

STRETCH → OUTSTRETCHED, STRETCHED

Ex 14:16 and **s** out your hand over the sea
Mk 3:5 to the man, **"S** out your hand."

STRETCHED → STRETCH

2Sa 24:16 angel **s** out his hand toward Jerusalem
Isa 5:25 and his hand is **s** out still.

STRIFE → STRIVE

Pr 23:29 Who has sorrow? Who has **s?**
Ro 1:29 Full of envy, murder, **s,** deceit,
Gal 5:20 enmities, **s,** jealousy, anger,

STRIKE

Ge 3:15 he will **s** your head, and you will **s**
Ex 17:6 **S** the rock, and water will come out
Zec 13:7 **S** the shepherd, that the sheep may
Mal 4:6 come and **s** the land with a curse.
Mk 14:27 'I will **s** the shepherd, and the sheep
Rev 19:15 to **s** down the nations,

STRIVE → STRIFE

Mt 6:33 But **s** first for the kingdom of God
1Co 12:31 But **s** for the greater gifts.
2Pe 3:14 **s** to be found by him at peace,

STRONG → STRENGTH, STRENGTHEN, STRENGTHENS, STRONGHOLD

Dt 31:6 Be **s** and bold; have no fear
Jos 1:6 Be **s** and courageous; for you shall
Ps 140:7 O Lord, my Lord, my **s** deliverer,
Pr 18:10 The name of the Lord is a **s** tower;
Ecc 9:11 nor the battle to the **s,** nor bread to
SS 8:6 for love is **s** as death, passion fierce
Ro 15:1 We who are **s** ought to put up with
1Co 1:27 in the world to shame the **s;**
2Co 12:10 whenever I am weak, then I am **s.**
Eph 6:10 be **s** in the Lord and in the strength

STRONGHOLD → STRONG

Ps 9:9 The Lord is a **s** for the oppressed,
Na 1:7 a **s** in a day of trouble;

STRUGGLE

Eph 6:12 our **s** is not against enemies of
Heb 12:4 In your **s** against sin you have not yet

STUBBORN

Dt 9:6 for you are a **s** people.
Hos 4:16 Like a **s** heifer, Israel is **s**;

STUDY

Ezr 7:10 Ezra had set his heart to **s** the law
Ecc 12:12 much **s** is a weariness of the flesh.

STUMBLE → STUMBLING

Ps 37:24 we **s**, we shall not fall headlong,
Pr 4:12 and if you run, you will not **s**.
Mt 18:9 And if your eye causes you to **s**,
Ro 9:33 a stone that will make people **s**,
1Pe 2:8 **s** because they disobey the word,

STUMBLING → STUMBLE

Eze 14:3 placed their iniquity as a **s** block
Mt 16:23 You are a **s** block to me;
Ro 11:9 a **s** block and a retribution for them;
1Co 8:9 not somehow become a **s** block to

STUMP

Isa 6:13 The holy seed is its **s**.
11:1 shall come out from the **s** of Jesse,

SUBDUE

Ge 1:28 and fill the earth and **s** it;
1Ch 17:10 and I will **s** all your enemies.

SUBJECT → SUBJECTED

Ro 13:1 be **s** to the governing authorities;
Gal 4:21 who desire to be **s** to the law,
Eph 5:21 **s** to one another out of reverence

SUBJECTED → SUBJECT

Ro 8:20 for the creation was **s** to futility,
1Co 15:28 When all things are **s** to him,

SUBMISSION* → SUBMIT

1Ti 2:11 a woman learn in silence with full **s**.
Heb 5:7 was heard because of his reverent **s**.

SUBMISSIVE → SUBMIT

1Ti 3:4 keeping his children **s** and respectful
Tit 2:5 kind, being **s** to their husbands,

SUBMIT → SUBMISSION, SUBMISSIVE

Ps 81:11 Israel would not **s** to me.
Gal 5:1 do not **s** again to a yoke of slavery.
Heb 13:17 Obey your leaders and **s** to them,

SUCCEED → SUCCESS, SUCCESSFUL

Pr 15:22 but with many advisers they **s**.
Ecc 10:10 but wisdom helps one to **s**.

SUCCESS → SUCCEED

Ps 118:25 O Lord, we beseech you, give us **s**!
Sir 10:5 Human **s** is in the hand of the Lord,

SUCCESSFUL → SUCCEED

Jos 1:7 that you may be **s** wherever you go.

SUDDENLY

Mal 3:1 Lord whom you seek will **s** come to
Mk 13:36 find you asleep when he comes **s**.

SUFFER → SUFFERED, SUFFERING, SUFFERINGS, SUFFERS

Lk 22:15 this Passover with you before I **s**;
24:46 the Messiah is to **s** and to rise from
Heb 9:26 then he would have had to **s** again
1Pe 3:17 For it is better to **s** for doing good,

SUFFERED → SUFFER

Php 3:8 For his sake I have **s** the loss of all
1Pe 2:21 because Christ also **s** for you,

SUFFERING → SUFFER

Job 2:13 they saw that his **s** was very great.
Isa 53:3 a man of **s** and acquainted with
Mk 8:31 Son of Man must undergo great **s**,
Ro 12:12 Rejoice in hope, be patient in **s**,

SUFFERINGS → SUFFER

Ro 8:18 the **s** of this present time are not
1Pe 4:13 insofar as you are sharing Christ's **s**,

SUFFERS → SUFFER

1Co 12:26 If one member **s**, all suffer together

SUFFICIENT

2Co 12:9 "My grace is **s** for you,

SULFUR

Ge 19:24 rained on Sodom and Gomorrah **s**
Ps 11:6 he will rain coals of fire and **s**;
Rev 21:8 in the lake that burns with fire and **s**,

SUMMED*

Ro 13:9 commandment, are **s** up in this word
Gal 5:14 the whole law is **s** up in a single

SUN

Jos 10:13 And the **s** stood still,
Ps 84:11 For the Lord God is a **s** and shield;
Ecc 1:9 there is nothing new under the **s**.
Joel 2:31 The **s** shall be turned to darkness,
Mal 4:2 the **s** of righteousness shall rise,
Mt 5:45 he makes his **s** rise on the evil and
Ac 2:20 The **s** shall be turned to darkness
Rev 1:16 his face was like the **s** shining with
19:17 I saw an angel standing in the **s**,
22:5 they need no light of lamp or **s**,

SUPERIOR

Heb 1:4 having become as much **s** to angels
7:7 that the inferior is blessed by the **s**.

SUPPER

Lk 22:20 he did the same with the cup after **s**,
Rev 19:9 to the marriage **s** of the Lamb."

SUPPLICATION → SUPPLICATIONS

Ps 6:9 The Lord has heard my **s**;
Zec 12:10 a spirit of compassion and **s**
Eph 6:18 at all times in every prayer and **s**.

SUPPLICATIONS → SUPPLICATION

1Ti 2:1 then, I urge that **s**, prayers,
Heb 5:7 Jesus offered up prayers and **s**,

SUPPORT

Ps 18:18 but the Lord was my **s**.
Ro 11:18 that it is not you that **s** the root,

SURE

Nu 32:23 and be **s** your sin will find you out.
Ps 19:7 the decrees of the Lord are **s**,
Isa 28:16 a **s** foundation: "One who trusts
Heb 6:19 a **s** and steadfast anchor of the soul,

SURPASSES → SURPASSING

Eph 3:19 the love of Christ that **s** knowledge,
Php 4:7 the peace of God, which **s** all
Sir 25:11 Fear of the Lord **s** everything;

SURPASSING → SURPASSES

Ps 150:2 according to his **s** greatness!
2Co 9:14 pray for you because of the **s** grace

SURPRISE → SURPRISED

1Th 5:4 for that day to **s** you like a thief;

SURPRISED → SURPRISE

1Pe 4:12 do not be **s** at the fiery ordeal that is

SURROUNDED → SURROUNDS

Lk 21:20 you see Jerusalem **s** by armies,
Heb 12:1 **s** by so great a cloud of witnesses,
Rev 20:9 of the earth and **s** the camp of

SURROUNDS → SURROUNDED

Ps 89:8 Your faithfulness **s** you.
125:2 so the Lord **s** his people,

SURVIVORS

Isa 1:9 of hosts had not left us a few **s**,
Eze 14:22 Yet, **s** shall be left in it,

SUSA

Ne 1:1 while I was in **S** the capital,
Est 1:2 his royal throne in the citadel of **S**,

SUSANNA

Righteous woman wrongly accused of immorality (Sus 1:1-44); vindicated by Daniel (Sus 1:45-64).

SUSTAINS

Ps 3:5 for the Lord **s** me.
Heb 1:3 he **s** all things by his powerful word.

SWALLOW → SWALLOWED

Jnh 1:17 provided a large fish to **s** up Jonah;
Mt 23:24 You strain out a gnat but **s** a camel!

SWALLOWED → SWALLOW

Ge 41:7 The thin ears **s** up the seven plump
Nu 16:32 earth opened its mouth and **s** them
1Co 15:54 "Death has been **s** up in victory."

SWEAR → SWORE, SWORN

Dt 10:20 and by his name you shall **s**.
Ps 24:4 and do not **s** deceitfully.
Mt 5:34 Do not **s** at all, either by heaven,

SWEAT

Ge 3:19 By the **s** of your face you shall eat
Lk 22:44 [[**s** became like great drops of blood]]

SWEET → SWEETER

Ex 15:25 the water, and the water became **s**.
Ps 119:103 How **s** are your words to my taste,
Eze 3:3 in my mouth it was as **s** as honey.
Rev 10:10 it was **s** as honey in my mouth,

SWEETER → SWEET

Jdg 14:18 "What is **s** than honey?
Ps 19:10 **s** also than honey, and drippings of

SWIFT

Ecc 9:11 the race is not to the **s**, nor the battle
2Pe 2:1 bringing **s** destruction on themselves

SWINE

Mt 7:6 do not throw your pearls before **s**,
Mk 5:12 "Send us into the **s**;
1Mc 1:47 sacrifice **s** and other unclean animals,

SWORD → SWORDS

Ge 3:24 and a **s** flaming and turning to guard
1Sa 17:47 Lord does not save by **s** and spear;
1Ch 21:30 he was afraid of the **s** of the angel
Isa 2:4 shall not lift up **s** against nation,
49:2 He made my mouth like a sharp **s**,
Hos 2:18 and I will abolish the bow, the **s**,
Mt 10:34 not come to bring peace, but a **s**.
Eph 6:17 the **s** of the Spirit, which is the word
Heb 4:12 sharper than any two-edged **s**,
Rev 1:16 mouth came a sharp, two-edged **s**,
19:15 a sharp **s** with which to strike down
Sir 21:3 All lawlessness is like a two-edged **s**

SWORDS → SWORD

Isa 2:4 shall beat their **s** into plowshares,
Joel 3:10 Beat your plowshares into **s**,

SWORE → SWEAR

Ex 6:8 the land that I **s** to give to Abraham,
32:13 how you **s** to them by your own self,
Ps 132:11 The Lord **s** to David a sure oath
Heb 6:13 by whom to swear, he **s** by himself,

SWORN → SWEAR

Ge 22:16 "By myself I have **s**, says the Lord:
Ps 110:4 The Lord has **s** and will not change
Heb 7:21 "The Lord has **s** and will not change

SYMPATHIZE* → SYMPATHY

Heb 4:15 unable to **s** with our weaknesses,

SYMPATHY → SYMPATHIZE

Php 2:1 any compassion and **s,**
1Pe 3:8 all of you, have unity of spirit, **s,**

SYNAGOGUE → SYNAGOGUES

Lk 4:16 he went to the **s** on the sabbath day,
8:41 man named Jairus, a leader of the **s.**
Ac 18:26 He began to speak boldly in the **s;**

SYNAGOGUES → SYNAGOGUE

Mt 4:23 teaching in their **s** and proclaiming
Jn 18:20 always taught in **s** and in the temple,

T

TABERNACLE

Ex 25:9 concerning the pattern of the **t**
40:34 the glory of the LORD filled the **t.**
1Ch 6:48 for all the service of the **t** of the house

TABITHA* → SEE DORCAS

TABLE → TABLES

Ex 25:23 You shall make a **t** of acacia wood,
Ps 23:5 a **t** before me in the presence of my

TABLES → TABLE

Mk 11:15 overturned the **t** of the money changers

TABLET → TABLETS

Pr 3:3 write them on the **t** of your heart.

TABLETS → TABLET

Ex 31:18 gave him the two **t** of the covenant,
2Co 3:3 not on **t** of stone but on **t** of human hearts.

TAKE → TAKEN, TAKES

Dt 12:32 do not add to it or **t** anything from
Mt 11:29 **T** my yoke upon you, and learn
Mk 8:34 deny themselves and **t** up their cross

TAKEN → TAKE

Ecc 3:14 added to it, nor anything **t** from it;
Heb 11:5 By faith Enoch was **t** so that he did
Sir 44:16 Enoch pleased the Lord and was **t**

TAKES → TAKE

Jn 1:29 **t** away the sin of the world!
10:18 No one **t** it from me,
Rev 22:19 if anyone **t** away from the words of

TALENT

Mt 25:25 and hid your **t** in the ground.

TAMAR

1. Wife of Judah's sons Er and Onan (Ge 38:1–10). Children by Judah (Ge 38:11–30; Mt 1:3).
2. Daughter of David, raped by Amnon (2Sa 13).

TASTE → TASTED

Ps 34:8 O **t** and see that the LORD is good;
Mt 16:28 not **t** death before they see the Son
Col 2:21 not handle, Do not **t,** Do not touch"?

TASTED → TASTE

Heb 6:4 and have **t** the heavenly gift,
1Pe 2:3 you have **t** that the Lord is good.

TAUGHT → TEACH

Isa 40:14 Who **t** him knowledge,
Jn 6:45 'And they shall all be **t** by God.'

TAX → TAXES

Mt 11:19 a friend of **t** collectors and sinners!'
Lk 18:10 Pharisee and the other a **t** collector.

TAXES → TAX

Mt 22:17 Is it lawful to pay **t** to the emperor,
Ro 13:7 **t** to whom **t** are due,

TEACH → TAUGHT, TEACHER, TEACHERS, TEACHING

Dt 6:1 to **t** you to observe in the land that
Ps 90:12 So **t** us to count our days that we
Jer 31:34 No longer shall they **t** one another,
Jn 14:26 will **t** you everything,
Col 3:16 **t** and admonish one another in all
1Ti 2:12 I permit no woman to **t** or
1Jn 2:27 so you do not need anyone to **t** you.

TEACHER → TEACH

Ecc 1:1 words of the **T,** the son of David,
Mt 10:24 "A disciple is not above the **t,**
Jn 1:38 "Rabbi" (which translated means **T)**
1Ti 3:2 respectable, hospitable, an apt **t,**

TEACHERS → TEACH

Ps 119:99 more understanding than all my **t,**
1Co 12:28 second prophets, third **t;**
Eph 4:11 evangelists, some pastors and **t,**
Jas 3:1 Not many of you should become **t,**

TEACHING → TEACH

Mk 1:27 A new **t**—with authority!
Tit 1:11 by **t** for sordid gain what it is not right
2Jn 1:9 who does not abide in the **t** of Christ,

TEAR → TORN

Mk 2:21 from the old, and a worse **t** is made.
Rev 7:17 God will wipe away every **t** from

TEETH → TOOTH

Mt 8:12 will be weeping and gnashing of **t."**

TEKEL

Da 5:27 **t,** you have been weighed on the scales

TELL → FORETOLD

Ps 50:12 "If I were hungry, I would not **t** you,
105:2 **t** of all his wonderful works.
1Co 15:51 Listen, I will **t** you a mystery!

TEMPERATE

1Ti 3:2 married only once, **t,** sensible,
Tit 2:2 Tell the older men to be **t,** serious,

TEMPLE

1Sa 3:3 Samuel was lying down in the **t** of the
2Ch 2:12 who will build a **t** for the LORD,
Ps 11:4 The LORD is in his holy **t;**
Mt 4:5 placed him on the pinnacle of the **t,**
12:6 something greater than the **t** is here.
Jn 2:21 was speaking of the **t** of his body.
1Co 3:16 you are God's **t** and that God's Spirit
Eph 2:21 and grows into a holy **t** in the Lord;
Rev 21:22 its **t** is the Lord God the Almighty and
1Mc 4:48 sanctuary and the interior of the **t,**

TEMPTATION* → TEMPTED, TEMPTER

1Ti 6:9 who want to be rich fall into **t** and
Jas 1:12 Blessed is anyone who endures **t.**

TEMPTED → TEMPTATION

Mk 1:13 wilderness forty days, **t** by Satan;
Gal 6:1 care that you yourselves are not **t.**

TEMPTER* → TEMPTATION

Mt 4:3 The **t** came and said to him,
1Th 3:5 that somehow the **t** had tempted you

TEN → TENTH

Ex 34:28 the covenant, the **t** commandments.
Da 7:24 out of this kingdom **t** kings shall arise,
Mt 25:1 **T** bridesmaids took their lamps and
Rev 17:12 the **t** horns that you saw are **t** kings

TENDER → TENDERHEARTED

Hos 11:8 my compassion grows warm and **t.**
Lk 1:78 By the **t** mercy of our God,

TENDERHEARTED* → HEART, TENDER

Eph 4:32 **t,** forgiving one another,

TENT

Ex 27:21 the **t** of meeting, outside the curtain
2Sa 7:2 but the ark of God stays in a **t."**
2Co 5:1 the earthly **t** we live in is destroyed,

TENTH → TEN

Ge 14:20 Abram gave him one **t** of everything
Isa 6:13 Even if a **t** part remain in it,

TERROR

Ex 23:27 I will send my **t** in front of you,
Ps 91:5 You will not fear the **t** of the night,
Ro 13:3 rulers are not a **t** to good conduct,

TEST → TESTED, TESTING

Dt 6:16 not put the LORD your God to the **t,**
Lk 4:12 not put the Lord your God to the **t.'**
10:25 then a lawyer stood up to **t** Jesus.
2Co 13:5 indeed, you fail to meet the **t!**
1Jn 4:1 **t** the spirits to see whether they are
Sir 37:27 My child, **t** yourself while you live;

TESTED → TEST

Ge 22:1 After these things God **t** Abraham.
Ps 78:41 They **t** God again and again,
Heb 4:15 been **t** as we are, yet without sin.

TESTIFIED → TESTIFY

Jn 1:15 (John **t** to him and cried out,
1Pe 1:11 it **t** in advance to the sufferings

TESTIFIES → TESTIFY

1Jn 5:6 Spirit is the one that **t,**

TESTIFY → TESTIFIED, TESTIFIES, TESTIMONY

Jn 15:26 he will **t** on my behalf.
1Jn 5:7 There are three that **t:**

TESTIMONY → TESTIFY

Nu 35:30 put to death on the **t** of a single
Mk 14:59 on this point their **t** did not agree.
Rev 1:9 the word of God and the **t** of Jesus.

TESTING → TEST

1Co 10:13 No **t** has overtaken you that is not
Jas 1:3 **t** of your faith produces endurance;

THADDAEUS* → =JUDAS

Apostle (Mt 10:3; Mk 3:18); probably also known as Judas son of James (Lk 6:16; Ac 1:13).

THANK → THANKS, THANKSGIVING

2Ch 29:31 bring sacrifices and **t** offerings to
Ps 52:9 I will **t** you forever,
Sir 35:4 gives alms sacrifices a **t** offering.

THANKS → THANK

1Ch 16:8 give **t** to the LORD, call on his name,
Ps 107:1 O give **t** to the LORD, for he is good;
Ro 1:21 not honor him as God or give **t** to
1Co 11:24 and when he had given **t,**
2Co 9:15 **T** be to God for his indescribable
Rev 4:9 give glory and honor and **t** to

THANKSGIVING → THANK

Lev 7:12 If you offer it for **t,**
Ps 50:14 Offer to God a sacrifice of **t,**
Php 4:6 with **t** let your requests be made known
Rev 7:12 glory and wisdom and **t** and honor

THEFT → THIEF

Mt 15:19 fornication, **t,** false witness, slander.

THEFTS* → THIEF

Rev 9:21 or their fornication or their **t.**

THIEF → THEFT, THEFTS, THIEVES

Ex 22:1 The **t** shall make restitution,
Jn 10:10 The **t** comes only to steal and kill
1Th 5:2 day of the Lord will come like a **t** in
Rev 16:15 ("See, I am coming like a **t!**

THIEVES → THIEF

Mt 6:19 and where **t** break in and steal;
Eph 4:28 **T** must give up stealing;

THINK → THINKING, THOUGHT, THOUGHTS

Ro 12:3 not to **t** of yourself more highly than
1Co 10:12 So if you **t** you are standing,

THINKING → THINK

Ro 1:21 but they became futile in their **t,**
1Co 14:20 infants in evil, but in **t** be adults.

THIRD → THREE

Hos 6:2 on the **t** day he will raise us up,
Mt 26:44 and prayed for the **t** time,
Lk 18:33 and on the **t** day he will rise again."
2Co 12:2 was caught up to the **t** heaven—

THIRST → THIRSTY

Mt 5:6 who hunger and **t** for righteousness,
Rev 7:16 will hunger no more, and **t** no more;

THIRSTY → THIRST

Mt 25:35 I was **t** and you gave me something
Jn 6:35 believes in me will never be **t.**
Rev 22:17 And let everyone who is **t** come.

THOMAS*

Apostle (Mt 10:3; Mk 3:18; Lk 6:15; Jn 11:16; 14:5; 21:2; Ac 1:13). Doubted resurrection (Jn 20:24-28).

THORN → THORNS

2Co 12:7 a **t** was given me in the flesh,

THORNS → THORN

Ge 3:18 **t** and thistles it shall bring forth for
Mt 13:7 Other seeds fell among **t,**
Jn 19:2 the soldiers wove a crown of **t** and

THOUGHT → THINK

1Co 13:11 I spoke like a child, I **t** like a child,
2Co 10:5 take every **t** captive to obey Christ.

THOUGHTS → THINK

Isa 55:8 For my **t** are not your **t,**
1Co 3:20 "The Lord knows the **t** of the wise,
Heb 4:12 judge the **t** and intentions of the heart.

THOUSAND → THOUSANDS

Ps 50:10 the cattle on a **t** hills.
90:4 **t** years in your sight are like yesterday
2Pe 3:8 one day is like a **t** years, and a **t** years
Rev 20:4 and reigned with Christ a **t** years.

THOUSANDS → THOUSAND

1Sa 18:7 has killed his **t,** and David his ten **t."**
Da 7:10 A thousand **t** served him,
Rev 5:11 myriads of myriads and **t** of **t,**

THREE → THIRD

Ge 18:2 and saw **t** men standing near him.
Ex 23:14 **T** times in the year you shall hold a
Mt 18:20 two or **t** are gathered in my name,
26:34 you will deny me **t** times."
Mk 8:31 be killed, and after **t** days rise again.
2Co 12:8 **T** times I appealed to the Lord
1Jn 5:7 There are **t** that testify:

THRONE → THRONES

2Sa 7:13 the **t** of his kingdom forever.
Ps 45:6 Your **t,** O God, endures forever
Isa 6:1 I saw the Lord sitting on a **t,** high
Jer 33:21 not have a son to reign on his **t,**
Mt 19:28 the Son of Man is seated on the **t**
Heb 4:16 approach the **t** of grace with boldness,
12:2 his seat at the right hand of the **t**
Rev 4:10 they cast their crowns before the **t,**
20:11 I saw a great white **t** and the one

THRONES → THRONE

Da 7:9 **t** were set in place,
Rev 4:4 Around the throne are twenty-four **t,**

THROW → THROWN

Ex 1:22 Hebrews you shall **t** into the Nile,
Mt 7:6 do not **t** your pearls before swine,

THROWN → THROW

Ex 15:1 horse and rider he has **t** into the sea.
Da 3:21 **t** into the furnace of blazing fire.
6:12 shall be **t** into a den of lions?"
Rev 20:10 **t** into the lake of fire and sulfur,

THUMMIM

Ex 28:30 you shall put the Urim and the **T,**

THUNDER → THUNDERS

Ex 9:23 and the Lord sent **t** and hail,
Rev 4:5 and rumblings and peals of **t,**

THUNDERS → THUNDER

Rev 10:3 he shouted, the seven **t** sounded.

TIBNI*

King of Israel (1Ki 16:21-22).

TIE

Pr 6:21 **t** them around your neck.
Mt 23:4 **t** up heavy burdens, hard to bear,

TIME → TIMES

Est 4:14 dignity for just such a **t** as this."
Ecc 3:1 a **t** for every matter under heaven:
Da 7:25 for a **t,** two times, and half a **t.**
Ro 5:6 the right **t** Christ died for the ungodly.
2Co 6:2 See, now is the acceptable **t;**
Gal 4:4 when the fullness of **t** had come,
Col 4:5 making the most of the **t.**
Rev 12:14 for a **t,** and times, and half a **t.**
22:10 of this book, for the **t** is near.

TIMES → TIME

Jos 6:4 march around the city seven **t,**
Mt 16:3 cannot interpret the signs of the **t.**
18:22 seven **t,** but, I tell you, seventy-seven **t.**
Mk 14:30 you will deny me three **t."**
Sir 20:12 but pay for it seven **t** over.

TIMOTHY

Believer from Lystra (Ac 16:1). Joined Paul on second missionary journey (Ac 16-20). Sent to settle problems at Corinth (1Co 4:17; 16:10). Led church at Ephesus (1Ti 1:3). Co-writer with Paul (1Th 1:1; 2Th 1:1; Phm 1).

TITHE

Dt 12:17 the **t** of your grain, your wine, and
Mal 3:10 Bring the full **t** into the storehouse,

TITUS

Gentile co-worker of Paul (Gal 2:1-3; 2Ti 4:10); sent to Corinth (2Co 2:13; 7-8; 12:18), Crete (Tit 1:4-5).

TOBIAH

Enemy of Nehemiah (Ne 2:10-19; 4; 6; 13:4-9).

TOBIT

Tob 1:1 This book tells the story of **T**

TODAY

Dt 30:15 set before you **t** life and prosperity,
Ps 2:7 my son; **t** I have begotten you.
Lk 23:43 **t** you will be with me in Paradise."
Heb 1:5 my Son; **t** I have begotten you"?
13:8 Christ is the same yesterday and **t** and

TOGETHER

Mt 19:6 God has joined **t,** let no one separate."
Eph 2:5 made us alive **t** with Christ—

TOLA

A judge of Israel (Jdg 10:1-2).

TOMB

Mk 15:46 laid it in a **t** that had been hewn out
Lk 24:2 the stone rolled away from the **t,**

TOMORROW

Isa 22:13 "Let us eat and drink, for **t** we die."
Mt 6:34 "So do not worry about **t,**
Jas 4:14 do not even know what **t** will bring.

TONGUE → DOUBLE-TONGUED, TONGUES

Ex 4:10 I am slow of speech and slow of **t."**
Ps 139:4 before a word is on my **t,** O Lord,
Pr 18:21 Death and life are in the power of the **t,**
Isa 45:23 shall bow, every **t** shall swear."
1Co 14:19 than ten thousand words in a **t.**
Php 2:11 every **t** should confess that Jesus Christ
Jas 3:8 but no one can tame the **t**—
Sir 20:18 is better than a slip of the **t;**
23:7 discipline of the **t**

TONGUES → TONGUE

Ac 2:3 Divided **t,** as of fire, appeared
1Co 12:10 of **t,** to another the interpretation of **t.**
14:5 in **t,** unless someone interprets,

TOOTH → TEETH

Ex 21:24 **t** for **t,** hand for hand, foot for foot,
Mt 5:38 'An eye for an eye and a **t** for a **t.'**

TORCHES

Da 10:6 lightning, his eyes like flaming **t,**
Rev 4:5 of the throne burn seven flaming **t,**

TORMENTED

Rev 20:10 they will be **t** day and night forever

TORN → TEAR

1Sa 28:17 has **t** the kingdom out of your hand,
Lk 23:45 curtain of the temple was **t** in two.

TORTURED

Mt 18:34 handed him over to be **t** until
Heb 11:35 were **t,** refusing to accept release,

TOUCH

Ge 3:3 nor shall you **t** it, or you shall die.'"
Mt 9:21 only **t** his cloak, I will be made well.
Lk 24:39 **T** me and see;
Col 2:21 not handle, Do not taste, Do not **t"?**

TOWER

Ge 11:4 and a **t** with its top in the heavens,
Pr 18:10 The name of the Lord is a strong **t;**

TRADITION

Mt 15:2 disciples break the **t** of the elders?
Col 2:8 empty deceit, according to human **t,**

TRAIN → TRAINING

Pr 22:6 **T** children in the right way, and
1Ti 4:7 **T** yourself in godliness,

TRAINING → TRAIN

1Ti 4:8 while physical **t** is of some value,
2Ti 3:16 and for **t** in righteousness,

TRAITOR

Lk 6:16 and Judas Iscariot, who became a **t.**

TRANSFIGURED

Mt 17:2 And he was **t** before them,

TRANSFORM* → TRANSFORMED

Php 3:21 will **t** the body of our humiliation

TRANSFORMED → TRANSFORM

Ro 12:2 be **t** by the renewing of your minds,
2Co 3:18 are being **t** into the same image

TRANSGRESSION → TRANSGRESSIONS, TRANSGRESSORS

Ex 23:21 for he will not pardon your **t;**
Da 9:24 to finish the **t,** to put an end to sin,
Gal 6:1 if anyone is detected in a **t,**

TRANSGRESSIONS → TRANSGRESSION

Ps 103:12 so far he removes our **t** from us.
Isa 53:5 But he was wounded for our **t,**

TRANSGRESSORS → TRANSGRESSION

Ps 51:13 Then I will teach **t** your ways,
Isa 53:12 and was numbered with the **t;**

TRAP

Lk 20:20 in order to **t** him by what he said,
Ro 11:9 their table become a snare and a **t,**

TREAD → TREADING

Mic 7:19 he will **t** our iniquities under foot.
Rev 19:15 he will **t** the wine press of the fury

TREADING → TREAD

Dt 25:4 not muzzle an ox while it is **t** out
1Co 9:9 not muzzle an ox while it is **t** out

TREASURE → TREASURED, TREASURES

Ps 119:11 I **t** your word in my heart,
Mt 6:21 where your **t** is, there your heart
2Co 4:7 But we have this **t** in clay jars,
2Ti 1:14 Guard the good **t** entrusted to you,

TREASURED → TREASURE

Ex 19:5 be my **t** possession out of all the

TREASURES → TREASURE

Col 2:3 are hidden all the **t** of wisdom

TREE → TREES

Ge 3:24 to guard the way to the **t** of life.
Dt 21:23 hung on a **t** is under God's curse.
Mt 12:33 for the **t** is known by its fruit.
Ac 5:30 had killed by hanging him on a **t.**
Ro 11:24 grafted back into their own olive **t.**
Rev 22:2 the **t** of life with its twelve kinds

TREES → TREE

Ps 96:12 all the **t** of the forest sing for joy
Zec 4:11 "What are these two olive **t** on the
Rev 11:4 two olive **t** and the two lampstands

TREMBLE → TREMBLED, TREMBLING

Ps 114:7 **T,** O earth, at the presence of the LORD
Hab 3:6 he looked and made the nations **t.**

TREMBLED → TREMBLE

Ex 20:18 they were afraid and **t** and stood at

TREMBLING → TREMBLE

Ps 2:11 Serve the LORD with fear, with **t**
Php 2:12 your own salvation with fear and **t;**

TRESPASS → TRESPASSES

Ro 5:15 But the free gift is not like the **t.**

TRESPASSES → TRESPASS

Mt 6:14 For if you forgive others their **t,**
2Co 5:19 not counting their **t** against them,

TRIAL → TRIALS

Lk 11:4 do not bring us to the time of **t."**
2Pe 2:9 knows how to rescue the godly from **t,**
Rev 3:10 I will keep you from the hour of **t**

TRIALS → TRIAL

Jas 1:2 whenever you face **t** of any kind,
1Pe 1:6 you have had to suffer various **t,**

TRIBE → TRIBES

Nu 1:4 A man from each **t** shall be with you
Ps 78:68 but he chose the **t** of Judah,
Rev 5:5 See, the Lion of the **t** of Judah,

TRIBES → TRIBE

Ge 49:28 All these are the twelve **t** of Israel,
Ex 24:4 to the twelve **t** of Israel.
Mt 19:28 judging the twelve **t** of Israel.
Rev 21:12 inscribed the names of the twelve **t**

TRIUMPH → TRIUMPHAL, TRIUMPHS

Ps 112:8 they will look in **t** on their foes.
Pr 28:12 the righteous **t,** there is great glory,

TRIUMPHAL* → TRIUMPH

2Co 2:14 Christ always leads us in **t** procession,

TRIUMPHS → TRIUMPH

Jas 2:13 mercy **t** over judgment.

TROUBLE → TROUBLED

Job 14:1 few of days and full of **t,**
Ps 9:9 a stronghold in times of **t.**
Pr 11:8 The righteous are delivered from **t,**
Isa 33:2 our salvation in the time of **t.**
Mt 6:34 Today's **t** is enough for today.
Sir 51:10 do not forsake me in the days of **t,**

TROUBLED → TROUBLE

Jn 14:1 "Do not let your hearts be **t.**

TRUE → TRUTH

Ps 119:151 and all your commandments are **t.**
Jn 1:9 The **t** light, which enlightens
21:24 and we know that his testimony is **t.**
Ro 3:4 everyone is a liar, let God be proved **t,**
1Jn 5:20 He is the **t** God and eternal life.
Rev 3:14 the Amen, the faithful and **t** witness,
19:11 Its rider is called Faithful and **T,**
22:6 "These words are trustworthy and **t,**

TRUMPET → TRUMPETS

Ex 19:16 a blast of a **t** so loud that all the
Joel 2:15 Blow the **t** in Zion; sanctify a fast;
1Co 15:52 twinkling of an eye, at the last **t.**
1Th 4:16 and with the sound of God's **t,**

TRUMPETS → TRUMPET

Nu 10:2 Make two silver **t;** you shall make
Rev 8:2 and seven **t** were given to them.

TRUST → ENTRUST, ENTRUSTED, TRUSTED, TRUSTEES, TRUSTS, TRUSTWORTHY

Ps 9:10 know your name put their **t** in you,
37:3 **T** in the LORD, and do good;
119:42 for I **t** in your word.
Pr 3:5 **T** in the LORD with all your heart,
Isa 12:2 Surely God is my salvation; I will **t,**
Jer 17:7 Blessed are those who **t** in the LORD,
Heb 2:13 And again, "I will put my **t** in him."
Sir 2:6 **T** in him, and he will help you;

TRUSTED → TRUST

Ps 22:4 they **t,** and you delivered them.
Da 3:28 delivered his servants who **t** in him.
6:23 because he had **t** in his God.
Sus 1:35 for her heart **t** in the Lord.

TRUSTS → TRUST

Ps 86:2 save your servant who **t** in you.
Mt 27:43 He **t** in God; let God deliver him

TRUSTWORTHY → TRUST

Ps 111:7 and just; all his precepts are **t.**
Rev 22:6 "These words are **t** and true,
1Mc 14:41 until a **t** prophet should arise,

TRUTH → TRUE

Ps 25:5 Lead me in your **t,** and teach me,
119:142 and your law is the **t.**
Pr 23:23 Buy **t,** and do not sell it;
Jn 1:17 grace and **t** came through Jesus Christ.
4:23 worship the Father in spirit and **t,**
8:32 and the **t** will make you free."
14:6 "I am the way, and the **t,** and the life.
14:17 This is the Spirit of **t,**
Eph 4:15 But speaking the **t** in love,
2Ti 2:15 rightly explaining the word of **t.**
Tob 3:2 all your ways are mercy and **t;**

TUNIC

Lk 9:3 nor money—not even an extra **t.**
Jn 19:23 **t** was seamless, woven in one piece

TURN → TURNED

Ex 32:12 **T** from your fierce wrath;
Jos 1:7 do not **t** from it to the right hand or
Isa 6:10 and **t** and be healed."
45:22 **T** to me and be saved,
Mal 4:6 He will **t** the hearts of parents to their
Lk 1:17 **t** the hearts of parents to their children

TURNED → TURN

Dt 23:5 your God **t** the curse into a blessing
Isa 53:6 we have all **t** to our own way,
Ro 3:12 All have **t** aside, together they have

TWELVE

Ge 49:28 All these are the **t** tribes of Israel,
Ex 24:4 the mountain, and set up **t** pillars,
Jos 4:3 'Take **t** stones from here out of the
Mt 10:1 Jesus summoned his **t** disciples
Lk 9:17 **t** baskets of broken pieces.
Rev 21:12 inscribed the names of the **t** tribes
22:2 tree of life with its **t** kinds of fruit,

TWINKLING*

1Co 15:52 in the **t** of an eye, at the last trumpet

TWO → TWICE, TWO-EDGED

Ge 1:16 God made the **t** great lights—
6:19 bring **t** of every kind into the ark,
Ex 31:18 the **t** tablets of the covenant,
Dt 17:6 of **t** or three witnesses the death
Mt 6:24 "No one can serve **t** masters;
19:5 and the **t** shall become one flesh'?

TWO-EDGED → TWO

Heb 4:12 sharper than any **t** sword,
Rev 1:16 his mouth came a sharp, **t** sword,

TYRE

1Ki 5:1 King Hiram of **T** sent his servants to
Eze 28:12 a lamentation over the king of **T,**
Mt 11:22 be more tolerable for **T** and Sidon

U

UNBELIEF → UNBELIEVER, UNBELIEVERS

Mk 6:6 And he was amazed at their **u.**
9:24 cried out, "I believe; help my **u!"**
Ro 11:20 were broken off because of their **u,**
1Ti 1:13 because I had acted ignorantly in **u,**

UNBELIEVER → UNBELIEF

1Co 10:27 If an **u** invites you to a meal and
2Co 6:15 does a believer share with an **u?**

UNBELIEVERS → UNBELIEF

2Co 6:14 Do not be mismatched with **u.**
2Es 15:4 For all **u** shall die in their unbelief.

UNCHASTITY*

Mt 5:32 except on the ground of **u,**
19:9 divorces his wife, except for **u,**

UNCIRCUMCISED → UNCIRCUMCISION

Ex 12:48 But no **u** person shall eat of it;
Ac 7:51 people, **u** in heart and ears,
Ro 4:11 he had by faith while he was still **u.**
Col 3:11 circumcised and **u,** barbarian,
1Mc 1:48 and to leave their sons **u.**

UNCIRCUMCISION → UNCIRCUMCISED

1Co 7:19 Circumcision is nothing, and **u** is
Gal 5:6 neither circumcision nor **u** counts

UNCLEAN → UNCLEANNESS

Lev 5:2 when any of you touch any **u** thing
Isa 52:11 Touch no **u** thing;
Mk 3:11 Whenever the **u** spirits saw him,
Rev 21:27 But nothing **u** will enter it,

UNDER

Ps 8:6 you have put all things **u** their feet,
Ac 4:12 for there is no other name **u** heaven
Ro 6:14 since you are not **u** law but **u** grace.
Eph 1:22 And he has put all things **u** his feet

UNDERSTAND → UNDERSTANDING

Job 42:3 I have uttered what I did not **u,**
Pr 2:5 then you will **u** the fear of the LORD
Hos 14:9 Those who are wise **u** these things;
Mt 13:15 and **u** with their heart and turn—
Lk 24:45 opened their minds to **u** the scriptures,
Ac 8:30 "Do you **u** what you are reading?"
Eph 5:17 but **u** what the will of the Lord is.

UNDERSTANDING → UNDERSTAND

Ex 36:1 has given skill and **u** to know how

Pr 2:6 from his mouth come knowledge and **u**
Isa 40:14 and showed him the way of **u?**
Lk 2:47 heard him were amazed at his **u**
Php 4:7 peace of God, which surpasses all **u,**
2Ti 2:7 Lord will give you **u** in all things.

UNEXPECTED

Mt 24:44 Son of Man is coming at an **u** hour.

UNFAITHFUL → UNFAITHFULNESS

Ro 3:3 What if some were **u?**

UNFAITHFULNESS → UNFAITHFUL

1Ch 9:1 exile in Babylon because of their **u.**

UNGODLY

Ro 5:6 the right time Christ died for the **u.**
2Pe 2:6 example of what is coming to the **u;**
Sir 12:5 but do not give to the **u;**

UNINTENTIONALLY

Lev 4:2 When anyone sins **u** in any of
Nu 15:22 if you **u** fail to observe all these

UNITY

Ps 133:1 when kindred live together in **u!**
Eph 4:3 to maintain the **u** of the Spirit in the

UNJUST

Ro 3:5 That God is **u** to inflict wrath on us?
Heb 6:10 For God is not **u;** he will

UNLEAVENED

Ex 12:17 shall observe the festival of **U** bread,
Mt 26:17 first day of **U** Bread the disciples

UNPRODUCTIVE*

1Co 14:14 my spirit prays but my mind is **u.**
Tit 3:14 so that they may not be **u.**

UNRIGHTEOUS → UNRIGHTEOUSNESS

Mt 5:45 rain on the righteous and on the **u.**
2Pe 2:9 **u** under punishment until the day

UNRIGHTEOUSNESS → UNRIGHTEOUS

Ps 92:15 and there is no **u** in him.
1Jn 1:9 and cleanse us from all **u.**

UPHOLD

Isa 42:1 my servant, whom I **u,** my chosen,
Ro 3:31 On the contrary, we **u** the law.

UPRIGHT

Job 1:1 That man was blameless and **u,**
Ps 7:10 God is my shield, who saves the **u**
Tit 1:8 a lover of goodness, prudent, **u,**

UR

Ge 15:7 Lord who brought you from **U** of

URIAH

Hittite husband of Bathsheba, killed (2Sa 11).

URIM

Ex 28:30 of judgment you shall put the **U**

USE → USEFUL

Ex 20:7 not make wrongful **u** of the name of
Gal 5:13 only do not **u** your freedom as an
2Ti 2:20 for special **u,** some for ordinary.

USEFUL → USE

Eph 4:29 but only what is **u** for building up,
2Ti 3:16 scripture is inspired by God and is **u**

UZZIAH → =AZARIAH

Son of Amaziah; king of Judah also known as Azariah (2Ki 15:1–7; 1Ch 6:24; 2Ch 26). Struck with leprosy because of pride (2Ch 26:16–23).

V

VAIN → VANITY

Lev 26:16 You shall sow your seed in **v,**
Ps 2:1 and the peoples plot in **v?**
Mt 15:9 in **v** do they worship me,
Php 2:16 that I did not run in **v** or labor in **v.**

VALLEY

Ps 23:4 through the darkest **v,** I fear no evil;
Isa 40:4 Every **v** shall be lifted up,
Joel 3:14 multitudes, in the **v** of decision!
Lk 3:5 Every **v** shall be filled, and every

VALUE

Mt 13:46 on finding one pearl of great **v,**
Ro 3:1 Or what is the **v** of circumcision?
1Ti 4:8 while physical training is of some **v,**

VANITY → VAIN

Ecc 1:2 **v** of vanities! All is **v.**
12:8 **V** of vanities, says the Teacher; all is **v.**

VASHTI

Persian queen replaced by Esther (Est 1–2; AdE 1–2).

VEIL

Ex 34:33 he put a **v** on his face;
2Co 3:15 a **v** lies over their minds;

VENGEANCE → AVENGE, AVENGER, AVENGING

Ps 94:1 O Lord, you God of **v,**
Isa 34:8 For the Lord has a day of **v,**
Na 1:2 the Lord takes **v** on his adversaries

VICTORY

Pr 21:31 but the **v** belongs to the Lord.
1Co 15:54 Death has been swallowed up in **v."**
1Jn 5:4 the **v** that conquers the world, our faith.

VINDICATE → VINDICATED

Ps 26:1 **V** me, O Lord, for I have walked
135:14 For the Lord will **v** his people,

VINDICATED → VINDICATE

Job 13:18 I know that I shall be **v.**
Mt 11:19 Yet wisdom is **v** by her deeds."
1Ti 3:16 He was revealed in flesh, **v** in spirit,

VINE → VINEYARD

Ps 80:8 You brought a **v** out of Egypt;
Jer 2:21 Yet I planted you as a choice **v,**
Jn 15:1 "I am the true **v,** and my Father is
Rev 14:18 gather the clusters of the **v** of the

VINEYARD → VINE

1Ki 21:1 Naboth the Jezreelite had a **v** in
Isa 5:1 had a **v** on a very fertile hill.
Mt 21:33 a landowner who planted a **v,**

VIOLENCE → VIOLENT

Ge 6:11 and the earth was filled with **v.**
Isa 53:9 although he had done no **v,**
Hab 2:17 because of human bloodshed and **v**

VIOLENT → VIOLENCE

1Ti 3:3 not **v** but gentle, not quarrelsome,
Tit 1:7 or addicted to wine or **v** or greedy

VIPERS

Mt 23:33 You snakes, you brood of **v!**
Ro 3:13 venom of **v** is under their lips."

VIRGIN

Jer 31:21 Return, O **v** Israel, return to these
Mt 1:23 the **v** shall conceive and bear a son,
Lk 1:34 "How can this be, since I am a **v?"**
2Co 11:2 present you as a chaste **v** to Christ.

VISION → VISIONS

Isa 22:1 oracle concerning the valley of **v.**
Da 8:26 As for you, seal up the **v,**
Ac 26:19 not disobedient to the heavenly **v,**

VISIONS → VISION

Nu 12:6 make myself known to them in **v;**
Eze 1:1 were opened, and I saw **v** of God.
Da 1:17 Daniel also had insight into all **v**
Joel 2:28 and your young men shall see **v.**
Ac 2:17 and your young men shall see **v,**

VOICE

Isa 40:3 A **v** cries out: "In the wilderness
Jn 1:23 **v** of one crying out in the wilderness
10:3 and the sheep hear his **v.**
Heb 3:7 says, "Today, if you hear his **v,**
Rev 3:20 if you hear my **v** and open the door,

VOID

Ge 1:2 the earth was a formless **v**
Mt 15:6 you make **v** the word of God.

VOW → VOWS

Ecc 5:4 Fulfill what you **v.**
Sir 18:23 Before making a **v,** prepare yourself

VOWS → VOW

Ps 22:25 my **v** I will pay before those who fear

W

WAGES

Ro 6:23 For the **w** of sin is death,

WAIT → WAITS

Ps 27:14 **W** for the Lord; be strong,
La 3:26 should **w** quietly for the salvation of
Hab 2:3 If it seems to tarry, **w** for it;
Ro 8:23 while we **w** for adoption,
1Th 1:10 to **w** for his Son from heaven,
Sir 2:7 fear the Lord, **w** for his mercy;

WAITS → WAIT

Ps 130:6 my soul **w** for the Lord more than
Ro 8:19 the creation **w** with eager longing

WALK → WALKED

Ge 17:1 **w** before me, and be blameless.
Dt 10:12 to **w** in all his ways, to love him,
Ps 23:4 I **w** through the darkest valley, I fear no
Isa 2:5 let us **w** in the light of the Lord!
40:31 they shall **w** and not faint.
Jer 6:16 **w** in it, and find rest for your souls.
Jn 8:12 follows me will never **w** in darkness
2Co 5:7 for we **w** by faith, not by sight.
Rev 21:24 The nations will **w** by its light,

WALKED → WALK

Ge 5:24 Enoch **w** with God; then he was no

WALL

Jos 6:20 shout, and the **w** fell down flat;
Ne 2:17 let us rebuild the **w** of Jerusalem,
Zec 2:5 I will be a **w** of fire all around it,
Eph 2:14 has broken down the dividing **w,**

WANT → WANTING

Ps 23:1 Lord is my shepherd, I shall not **w.**
Php 3:10 I **w** to know Christ and the power

WANTING → WANT

2Pe 3:9 not **w** any to perish, but all to come to

WAR → WARRIOR, WARS

Ecc 3:8 a time for **w,** and a time for peace.
Da 9:26 and to the end there shall be **w.**
Ro 7:23 in my members another law at **w**
Rev 19:11 righteousness he judges and makes **w.**

WARRIOR → WAR

Ex 15:3 Lord is a **w;** the Lord is his name.

WARS → WAR

Mt 24:6 you will hear of **w** and rumors of **w;**

WASH → WASHED

Ps 51:7 **w** me, and I shall be whiter than snow.

Jn 13:5 and began to **w** the disciples' feet
Rev 22:14 Blessed are those who **w** their robes,

WASHED → WASH

1Co 6:11 you were **w,** you were sanctified,
2Pe 2:22 sow is **w** only to wallow in the mud.

WATCH → WATCHES

Lk 2:8 keeping **w** over their flock by night.
Heb 13:17 they are keeping **w** over your souls

WATCHES → WATCH

Ps 1:6 LORD **w** over the way of the righteous,
Wis 3:9 and he **w** over his elect.

WATER → WATERS

Ex 17:1 no **w** for the people to drink.
Nu 20:2 there was no **w** for the congregation;
Jer 2:13 the fountain of living **w,**
Eze 36:25 I will sprinkle clean **w** upon you,
Mk 1:8 I have baptized you with **w;**
Jn 2:9 tasted the **w** that had become wine,
3:5 without being born of **w** and Spirit.
4:10 he would have given you living **w."**
1Jn 5:6 the one who came by **w** and blood,
Rev 22:1 showed me the river of the **w** of life,

WATERS → WATER

Ge 7:7 the ark to escape the **w** of the flood.
Ex 14:21 dry land; and the **w** were divided.
Ecc 11:1 Send out your bread upon the **w,**
Isa 55:1 who thirsts, come to the **w;**

WAVERING

Heb 10:23 confession of our hope without **w,**
Jude 1:22 have mercy on some who are **w;**

WAY → WAYS

Ps 1:6 watches over the **w** of the righteous,
86:11 Teach me your **w,** O LORD,
Pr 12:15 Fools think their own **w** is right,
22:6 Train children in the right **w,**
Isa 40:3 wilderness prepare the **w** of the LORD,
Mal 3:1 sending my messenger to prepare the **w**
Mt 3:3 'Prepare the **w** of the Lord,
Jn 14:6 "I am the **w,** and the truth, and the life.
Ac 9:2 found any who belonged to the **W,**
1Co 12:31 show you a still more excellent **w.**
Heb 10:20 the new and living **w** that he opened

WAYS → WAY

Dt 10:12 to walk in all his **w,** to love him,
Hos 14:9 For the **w** of the LORD are right,
Rev 15:3 Just and true are your **w,** King of
Sir 2:15 who love him keep his **w.**

WEAK → WEAKNESS, WEAKNESSES

Mt 26:41 indeed is willing, but the flesh is **w."**
Ro 14:1 Welcome those who are **w** in faith,
1Co 1:27 God chose what is **w** in the world
2Co 12:10 whenever I am **w,** then I am strong.

WEAKNESS → WEAK

Ro 8:26 the Spirit helps us in our **w;**
1Co 15:43 It is sown in **w,** it is raised in power.

WEAKNESSES → WEAK

2Co 12:10 I am content with **w,** insults,
Heb 4:15 to sympathize with our **w,**

WEALTH

Ps 49:6 those who trust in their **w** and boast
Pr 19:4 **W** brings many friends,
Mt 13:22 and the lure of **w** choke
Rev 5:12 receive power and **w** and wisdom
Sir 5:1 Do not rely on your **w,**

WEAPONS

Ecc 9:18 Wisdom is better than **w** of war,
2Co 6:7 the **w** of righteousness for the right

WEAR

Isa 51:6 the earth will **w** out like a garment,
Mt 6:31 or 'What will we **w?'**

WEARY

Isa 40:31 they shall run and not be **w,**
Heb 12:3 you may not grow **w** or lose heart.

WEDDING

Jn 2:1 there was a **w** in Cana of Galilee,

WEEKS

Ex 34:22 You shall observe the festival of **w,**
Lev 23:15 you shall count off seven **w;**
Da 9:24 "Seventy **w** are decreed for your

WEEP → WEEPING

Ecc 3:4 a time to **w,** and a time to laugh;
Ro 12:15 **w** with those who **w.**

WEEPING → WEEP

Ps 30:5 **W** may linger for the night,
Mt 2:18 Rachel **w** for her children;
8:12 will be **w** and gnashing of teeth."

WEIGHED

1Sa 2:3 and by him actions are **w.**
Da 5:27 you have been **w** on the scales

WELL

Dt 6:3 so that it may go **w** with you,
Mt 3:17 with whom I am **w** pleased."
17:5 I am **w** pleased; listen to him!"
2Pe 1:17 with whom I am **w** pleased."

WEST

Ps 103:12 as far as the east is from the **w,**
Isa 43:5 and from the **w** I will gather you;

WHEAT

Mt 13:25 and sowed weeds among the **w,**
Lk 22:31 demanded to sift all of you like **w,**
Jn 12:24 grain of **w** falls into the earth and dies,

WHIRLWIND → WIND

2Ki 2:11 Elijah ascended in a **w** into heaven.
Na 1:3 His way is in **w** and storm,

WHITE → WHITER

Da 7:9 his clothing was **w** as snow,
Mt 5:36 cannot make one hair **w** or black.
Rev 1:14 his hair were **w** as **w** wool, **w** as snow;
20:11 a great **w** throne and the one who sat

WHITER → WHITE

Ps 51:7 wash me, and I shall be **w** than snow.

WICKED → WICKEDNESS

Ge 13:13 Now the people of Sodom were **w,**
18:23 the righteous with the **w?**
Ps 1:5 the **w** will not stand in the judgment,
73:3 I saw the prosperity of the **w.**
Isa 48:22 no peace," says the LORD, "for the **w."**
Eze 18:23 any pleasure in the death of the **w,**
Da 12:10 None of the **w** shall understand,

WICKEDNESS → WICKED

Ge 6:5 The LORD saw that the **w** of
Ps 45:7 you love righteousness and hate **w.**
Lk 11:39 inside you are full of greed and **w.**

WIDE

Mt 7:13 the gate is **w** and the road is easy

WIDOW → WIDOWS

Ex 22:22 shall not abuse any **w** or orphan.
Ps 146:9 he upholds the orphan and the **w,**
1Ti 5:4 If a **w** has children or grandchildren,
Rev 18:7 I am no **w,** and I will never see grief

WIDOWS → WIDOW

1Ti 5:3 Honor **w** who are really **w.**
Jas 1:27 to care for orphans and **w** in their

WIFE → WIVES

Ge 2:24 and his mother and clings to his **w,**
Ex 20:17 shall not covet your neighbor's **w,**
Pr 18:22 who finds a **w** finds a good thing,
Mt 5:32 that anyone who divorces his **w,**
19:3 to divorce his **w** for any cause?"
Eph 5:28 He who loves his **w** loves himself.
Rev 21:9 the bride, the **w** of the Lamb."
Tob 8:6 his **w** Eve as a helper and support.
Sir 26:3 A good **w** is a great blessing;

WILD

Ex 32:25 saw that the people were running **w**
Mk 1:13 and he was with the **w** beasts;
Ro 11:17 a **w** olive shoot,

WILDERNESS

Isa 40:3 the **w** prepare the way of the LORD,
Mt 3:3 voice of one crying out in the **w:**

WILL → FREEWILL, WILLING

Ps 40:8 I delight to do your **w,** O my God;
143:10 Teach me to do your **w,**
Isa 53:10 it was the **w** of the LORD to crush him
Mt 6:10 Your **w** be done, on earth as it is in
Lk 22:42 yet, not my **w** but yours be done."
Jn 4:34 "My food is to do the **w** of him who
Ro 9:19 For who can resist his **w?"**
Eph 6:6 doing the **w** of God from the heart.
1Jo 5:14 if we ask anything according to his **w,**

WILLING → WILL

Mt 26:41 spirit indeed is **w,** but the flesh is weak.
Lk 22:42 if you are **w,** remove this cup from

WIND → WHIRLWIND

1Ki 19:11 but the LORD was not in the **w;**
Ps 1:4 like chaff that the **w** drives away.
Ecc 1:14 all is vanity and a chasing after **w.**
Jn 3:8 The **w** blows where it chooses,
Ac 2:2 a sound like the rush of a violent **w,**

WINE

Dt 7:13 your grain and your **w** and your oil,
Ps 104:15 and **w** to gladden the human heart,
Pr 20:1 **W** is a mocker, strong drink a
SS 1:2 For your love is better than **w,**
Mt 9:17 is new **w** put into old wineskins;
Jn 2:9 tasted the water that had become **w,**
Eph 5:18 Do not get drunk with **w,** for that is
Rev 18:3 have drunk of the **w** of the wrath
Sir 40:20 **W** and music gladden the heart,

WINGS

Ex 19:4 and how I bore you on eagles' **w**
Ps 17:8 hide me in the shadow of your **w,**
Mal 4:2 shall rise, with healing in its **w.**
Lk 13:34 hen gathers her brood under her **w,**

WIPE → WIPED

Isa 25:8 God will **w** away the tears from all faces,
Rev 21:4 he will **w** every tear from their eyes.

WIPED → WIPE

Ac 3:19 so that your sins may be **w** out,

WISDOM → WISE

Dt 4:6 will show your **w** and discernment
1Ki 4:29 God gave Solomon very great **w,**
Job 11:6 the secrets of **w!** For **w** is many-sided.
Pr 1:20 **W** cries out in the street;
9:10 fear of the LORD is the beginning of **w,**
Ecc 1:13 to search out by **w** all that is done
Jer 9:23 Do not let the wise boast in their **w,**
Mt 13:54 this man get this **w** and these deeds
Lk 2:52 Jesus increased in **w** and in years,
Ro 11:33 the depth of the riches and **w** and
1Co 1:19 "I will destroy the **w** of the wise,
Col 2:3 whom are hidden all the treasures of **w**
Jas 3:17 But the **w** from above is first pure,
Rev 5:12 wealth and **w** and might and honor
Wis 6:12 **W** is radiant and unfading,
Sir 1:1 All **w** is from the Lord,
24:1 the praise of **w**

WISE → WISDOM

Dt 4:6 great nation is a **w** and discerning
Ps 19:7 are sure, making **w** the simple;

Pr 3:7 Do not be **w** in your own eyes;
13:20 walks with the **w** becomes **w,**
Ecc 12:11 The sayings of the **w** are like goads,
Da 12:3 are **w** shall shine like the brightness
Mt 25:2 were foolish, and five were **w.**
1Co 1:26 not many of you were **w** by human
Eph 5:15 not as unwise people but as **w,**

WITHER → WITHERED, WITHERS

Ps 1:3 and their leaves do not **w.**
Eze 47:12 Their leaves will not **w** nor their

WITHERED → WITHER

Mt 13:6 since they had no root, they **w** away.
21:19 And the fig tree **w** at once.

WITHERS → WITHER

Jn 15:6 is thrown away like a branch and **w;**
1Pe 1:24 The grass **w,** and the flower falls,

WITHHOLD

Ps 84:11 No good thing does the LORD **w** from
Ro 8:32 He who did not **w** his own Son,

WITHOUT

2Ch 18:16 like sheep **w** a shepherd;
Pr 19:2 Desire **w** knowledge is not good,
Mt 9:36 helpless, like sheep **w** a shepherd.
Jn 3:34 for he gives the Spirit **w** measure.
Eph 2:12 no hope and **w** God in the world.
Heb 4:15 tested as we are, yet **w** sin.

WITNESS → EYEWITNESSES, WITNESSES

Dt 19:15 single **w** shall not suffice to convict
Job 16:19 in fact, my **w** is in heaven,
Ro 2:15 their own conscience also bears **w;**
Rev 1:5 faithful **w,** the firstborn of the dead,

WITNESSES → WITNESS

Mt 26:60 though many false **w** came forward.
Heb 12:1 surrounded by so great a cloud of **w,**
Rev 11:3 my two **w** authority to prophesy

WIVES → WIFE

1Ki 11:3 and his **w** turned away his heart.
Eph 5:22 **W,** be subject to your husbands as
1Pe 3:1 **W,** in the same way, accept the

WOE

Mt 23:13 "But **w** to you, scribes and Pharisees
Rev 8:13 **"W, w, w** to the inhabitants of the

WOLF → WOLVES

Isa 11:6 The **w** shall live with the lamb,
Jn 10:12 sees the **w** coming and leaves the sheep

WOLVES → WOLF

Mt 7:15 but inwardly are ravenous **w.**

WOMAN → WOMEN

Ge 2:22 he made into a **w** and brought her to
3:15 enmity between you and the **w,**
Ps 113:9 He gives the barren **w** a home,
Pr 11:16 A gracious **w** gets honor,
31:30 **w** who fears the LORD is to be praised.
Isa 54:1 of the desolate **w** will be more than
Rev 12:1 a **w** clothed with the sun,
Jdt 16:5 foiled them by the hand of a **w.**
Sus 1:2 a very beautiful **w** and one who feared

WOMB

Job 1:21 Naked I came from my mother's **w,**
Ps 139:13 knit me together in my mother's **w.**
Lk 1:44 the child in my **w** leaped for joy.

WOMEN → WOMAN

Ezr 10:2 married foreign **w** from the peoples
Mt 24:41 Two **w** will be grinding meal
Lk 1:42 "Blessed are you among **w,**
23:55 **w** who had come with him from
1Pe 3:5 that the holy **w** who hoped in God

WONDERFUL → WONDERS

Ge 18:14 Is anything too **w** for the LORD?
Jdg 13:18 do you ask my name? It is too **w."**
Ps 107:8 for his **w** works to humankind.
Isa 9:6 named **W** Counselor, Mighty God,

WONDERS → WONDERFUL

Ex 3:20 and strike Egypt with all my **w** that
Ps 136:4 who alone does great **w,**
Jn 4:48 signs and **w** you will not believe."
2Th 2:9 who uses all power, signs, lying **w,**

WOOD

Dt 28:64 serve other gods, of **w** and stone,
1Co 3:12 silver, precious stones, **w,** hay,

WORD → BYWORD, WORDS

Dt 30:14 No, the **w** is very near to you;
1Ki 8:56 not one **w** has failed of all his good
Ps 56:4 In God, whose **w** I praise,
119:105 Your **w** is a lamp to my feet and
Pr 30:5 Every **w** of God proves true;
Isa 40:8 the **w** of our God will stand forever.
55:11 my **w** be that goes out from my mouth;
Mk 4:14 The sower sows the **w.**
Jn 1:1 In the beginning was the **W,** and the **W** was with God, and the **W** was God.
1:14 the **W** became flesh and lived among
17:17 in the truth; your **w** is truth.
Ro 9:6 as though the **w** of God had failed.
2Ti 2:15 rightly explaining the **w** of truth.
Jas 1:22 But be doers of the **w,**
1Jn 2:5 but whoever obeys his **w,**
Rev 19:13 his name is called The **W** of God.

WORDS → WORD

Ex 20:1 Then God spoke all these **w:**
Dt 11:18 put these **w** of mine in your heart
Ps 5:1 Give ear to my **w,** O LORD;
Pr 30:6 not add to his **w,** or else he will rebuke
Hos 6:5 killed them by the **w** of my mouth,
Mt 24:35 but my **w** will not pass away.
Lk 6:47 hears my **w,** and acts on them.
1Co 2:13 in **w** not taught by human wisdom
Rev 22:19 takes away from the **w** of the book

WORK → WORKS

Ge 2:2 the seventh day God finished the **w**
Ex 20:10 you shall not do any **w**—
Ps 8:3 heavens, the **w** of your fingers,
Jn 6:27 Do not **w** for the food that perishes,
Php 1:6 who began a good **w** among you will
2:12 **w** out your own salvation with fear
2Ti 3:17 equipped for every good **w.**

WORKS → WORK

Ps 8:6 given them dominion over the **w**
92:5 How great are your **w,** O LORD!
Gal 2:16 and not by doing the **w** of the law,
5:19 the **w** of the flesh are obvious:
Eph 2:9 not the result of **w,** so that no one may
1Ti 6:18 to do good, to be rich in good **w,**

WORLD

Ps 9:8 He judges the **w** with righteousness;
Mt 5:14 "You are the light of the **w.**
16:26 gain the whole **w** but forfeit their life?
Jn 1:10 yet the **w** did not know him.
3:16 loved the **w** that he gave his only Son,
8:12 saying, "I am the light of the **w.**
16:33 courage; I have conquered the **w!"**
1Ti 6:7 we brought nothing into the **w,**
Jas 4:4 friend of the **w** becomes an enemy of
1Jn 2:2 but also for the sins of the whole **w.**
2:15 not love the **w** or the things in the **w.**
Rev 11:15 kingdom of the **w** has become the

WORM

Ps 22:6 But I am a **w,** and not human;
Mk 9:48 where their **w** never dies,

WORRY

Mt 6:25 do not **w** about your life,
10:19 not **w** about how you are to speak

WORSHIP → WORSHIPED

Ex 20:5 not bow down to them or **w** them;
Ps 100:2 **W** the LORD with gladness;
Mt 4:9 if you will fall down and **w** me."
Jn 4:24 who **w** him must **w** in spirit and truth."
Ro 12:1 which is your spiritual **w.**
Rev 22:3 and his servants will **w** him;
Sir 35:10 Be generous when you **w** the Lord,

WORSHIPED → WORSHIP

Mt 28:9 took hold of his feet, and **w** him.
Rev 5:14 And the elders fell down and **w.**

WORTHY

2Sa 22:4 LORD, who is **w** to be praised,
Mt 10:38 and follow me is not **w** of me.
Eph 4:1 to lead a life **w** of the calling
Heb 3:3 Jesus is **w** of more glory than Moses
Rev 4:11 "You are **w,** our Lord and God,
5:12 **W** is the Lamb that was slaughtered

WOUND → WOUNDS

Ex 21:25 burn for burn, **w** for **w,** stripe for
Rev 13:3 but its mortal **w** had been healed.

WOUNDS → WOUND

Ps 147:3 brokenhearted, and binds up their **w.**
1Pe 2:24 by his **w** you have been healed.

WRAPPED

Mk 15:46 the body, **w** it in the linen cloth,
Lk 2:7 **w** him in bands of cloth,

WRATH

Nu 16:46 For **w** has gone out from the LORD;
Ps 2:5 Then he will speak to them in his **w,**
6:1 or discipline me in your **w.**
Pr 15:1 A soft answer turns away **w,**
Jer 25:15 my hand this cup of the wine of **w,**
La 4:11 The LORD gave full vent to his **w;**
Zep 1:15 That day will be a day of **w,**
Mt 3:7 you to flee from the **w** to come?
Ro 1:18 **w** of God is revealed from heaven
1Th 1:10 rescues us from the **w** that is coming
Rev 6:17 the great day of their **w** has come,
Sir 16:11 For mercy and **w** are with the Lord;

WRESTLED

Ge 32:24 a man **w** with him until daybreak.

WRITE → WRITING, WRITTEN, WROTE

Ex 34:27 LORD said to Moses: **W** these words;
Nu 17:2 **W** each man's name on his staff,
Dt 6:9 **w** them on the doorposts of your house
Pr 7:3 **w** them on the tablet of your heart.
Jer 31:33 and I will **w** it on their hearts;
Heb 8:10 and **w** them on their hearts,
Rev 21:5 **"W** this, for these words are trustworthy

WRITING → WRITE

Ex 32:16 and the **w** was the **w** of God,
Da 5:7 "Whoever can read this **w**
2Es 14:24 prepare for yourself many **w** tablets,

WRITTEN → WRITE

Jos 23:6 to observe and do all that is **w** in
Da 12:1 who is found **w** in the book.
Lk 24:44 everything **w** about me in the law
Jn 21:25 if every one of them were **w** down,
Rev 21:27 are **w** in the Lamb's book of life.
2Es 14:44 forty days, ninety-four books were **w.**

WRONG → WRONGDOING, WRONGED

Nu 5:7 shall make full restitution for the **w,**
Lk 23:41 but this man has done nothing **w."**
Ac 23:9 "We find nothing **w** with this man.
Ro 13:10 Love does no **w** to a neighbor;

WRONGDOING → DO, WRONG

Ex 23:2 You shall not follow a majority in **w**
1Jn 5:17 All **w** is sin, but there is sin that is not

WRONGED → WRONG

1Co 6:7 Why not rather be **w?**

WROTE → WRITE

Ex 24:4 And Moses **w** down all the words
34:28 he **w** on the tablets the words of the
Jn 5:46 believe me, for he **w** about me.

Y

YEAR → YEARS

Ex 23:14 Three times in the **y** you shall hold a
Heb 10:1 continually offered **y** after **y,**

YEARS → YEAR

Ge 1:14 and for seasons and for days and **y,**
Ex 12:40 in Egypt was four hundred thirty **y.**
Nu 14:34 forty **y,** and you shall know my
2Ch 36:21 it kept sabbath, to fulfill seventy **y.**
Ps 90:4 For a thousand **y** in your sight are like
Jer 25:12 Then after seventy **y** are completed,
Da 9:2 of Jerusalem, namely, seventy **y.**
Gal 4:10 and months, and seasons, and **y.**
2Pe 3:8 the Lord one day is like a thousand **y,**
Rev 20:2 and bound him for a thousand **y,**

YEAST

Mt 16:6 beware of the **y** of the Pharisees and
Gal 5:9 A little **y** leavens the whole batch of

YESTERDAY

Heb 13:8 Jesus Christ is the same **y** and today

YOKE

Mt 11:30 my **y** is easy, and my burden is light."
Gal 5:1 not submit again to a **y** of slavery.

YOUNG → YOUTH

Ps 119:9 can **y** people keep their way pure?
Joel 2:28 and your **y** men shall see visions.
Ac 2:17 and your **y** men shall see visions,

YOUTH → YOUNG

Ps 71:5 my trust, O LORD, from my **y.**
Ecc 12:1 Remember your creator in the days of your **y,**

Z

ZACCHAEUS

Lk 19:2 A man was there named **Z;**

ZEAL → ZEALOUS

Ps 69:9 **z** for your house that has consumed me
Isa 37:32 The **z** of the LORD of hosts will do this.
Jn 2:17 **"Z** for your house will consume me.
Ro 10:2 testify that they have a **z** for God,
Php 3:6 as to **z,** a persecutor of the church;
1Mc 2:26 Thus he burned with **z** for the law,

ZEALOUS → ZEAL

Nu 25:13 because he was **z** for his God,
1Ki 19:10 "I have been very **z** for the Lord,

ZEBULUN

Son of Jacob by Leah (Ge 30:20; 35:23; 1Ch 2:1). Tribe of blessed (Ge 49:13; Dt 33:18-19), numbered (Nu 1:31; 26:27), allotted land (Jos 19:10-16; Eze 48:26), failed to fully possess (Jdg 1:30), supported Deborah (Jdg 4:6-10; 5:14, 18), David (1Ch 12:33), 12,000 from (Rev 7:8).

ZECHARIAH

1. Son of Jeroboam II; king of Israel (2Ki 15:8-12).
2. Post-exilic prophet who encouraged rebuilding of temple (Ezr 5:1; 6:14; Zec 1:1).

ZEDEKIAH € =MATTANIAH

1. False prophet (1Ki 22:11-24; 2Ch 18:10-23).
2. Mattaniah, son of Josiah (1Ch 3:15), made king of Judah by Nebuchadnezzar (2Ki 24:17-25:7; 2Ch 36:10-14; Jer 37-39; 52:1-11).

ZEPHANIAH

Prophet; descendant of Hezekiah (Zep 1:1).

ZERUBBABEL

Descendant of David (1Ch 3:19; Mt 1:3). Led return from exile (Ezr 2:2; Ne 7:7). Governor of Israel; helped rebuild temple (Ezr 3; Hag 1-2; Zec 4).

ZIMRI

King of Israel (1Ki 16:9-20).

ZION

2Sa 5:7 David took the stronghold of **Z,**
Ps 2:6 I have set my king on **Z,** my holy hill.
48:2 is the joy of all the earth, Mount **Z,**
78:68 Mount **Z,** which he loves.
Isa 28:16 I am laying in **Z** a foundation stone,
Mic 4:2 For out of **Z** shall go forth instruction,
Zec 9:9 Rejoice greatly, O daughter **Z!**
Mt 21:5 "Tell the daughter of **Z,**
Ro 11:26 "Out of **Z** will come the Deliverer;
1Pe 2:6 "See, I am laying in **Z** a stone,
Rev 14:1 the Lamb, standing on Mount **Z!**

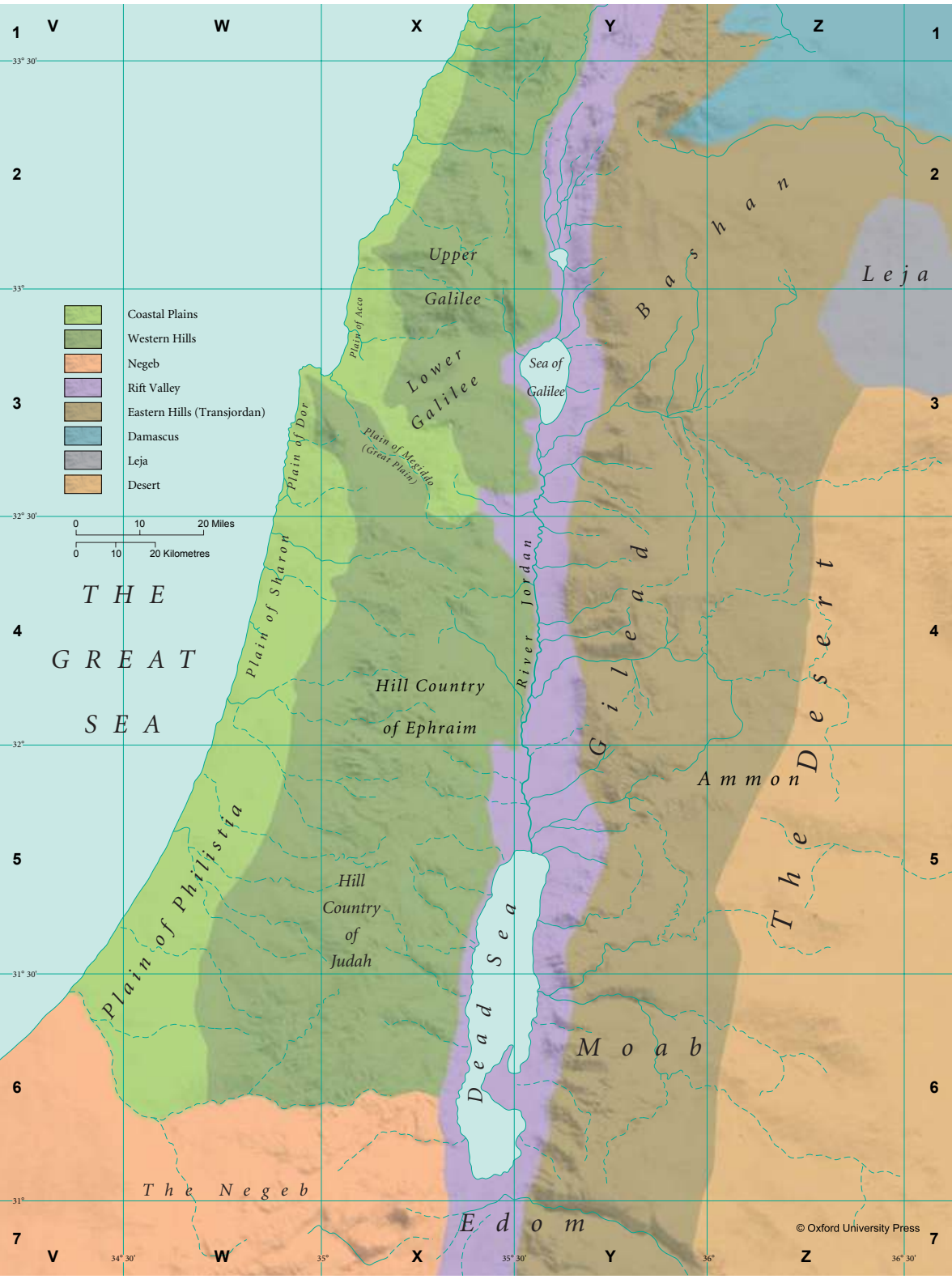
ZIPPORAH*

Daughter of Reuel; wife of Moses (Ex 2:21-22; 4:20-26; 18:1-6).

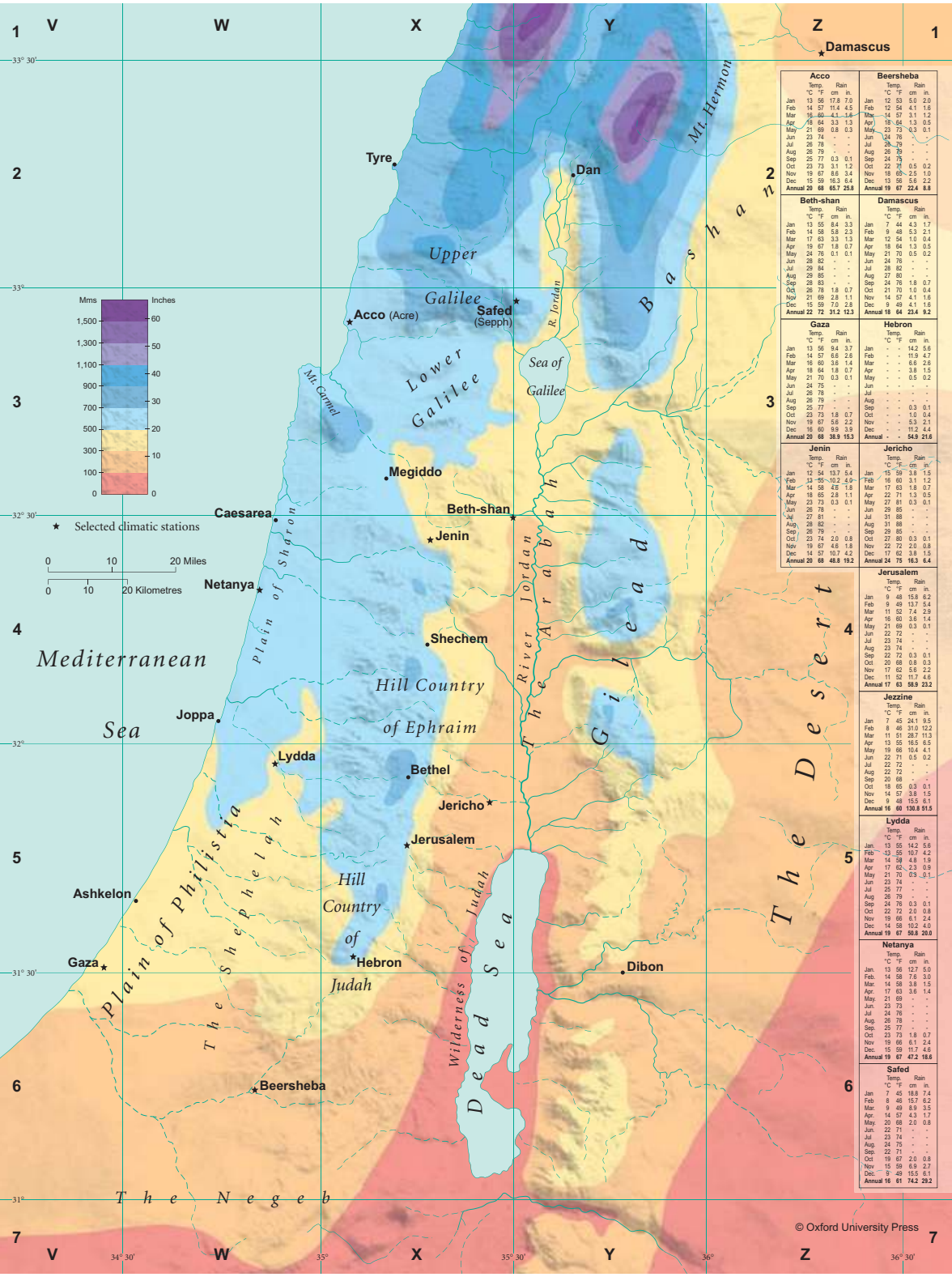
ZOPHAR*

One of Job's friends (Job 2:11; 11; 20; 42:9).


THE GREAT SEA
Plain of Phoenicia
Plain of Philistia
The Shephelah
The Negeb
Sidon
Tyre
Abel
Dan
Paneas
Kedesh
Achzib
Hazor
Merom
Acco (Ptolemais)
Arbela
Capernaum
Sea of Galilee (Chinnereh)
Madon
Sephoris
Nazareth
Mt. Tabor
Megiddo
Dor
Caesarea
Jezreel
Taanach
Ibleam
Dothan
Yehem
Samaria
Tirzah
Shechem
Mt. Ebal
Mt. Gerizim
Aphek
Joppa
Beth-dagon
Lod (Lydda)
Lebonah
Shiloh
Hill Country of Ephraim
Beth-horon
Mizpah
Michmash
Bethel
Jericho
Jabneel
Aijalon
Ramah
Geba
Mt. Scopus
Jerusalem
Ashdod
Ekron
Azekah
Bethlehem
Ashkelon
Libnah
Lachish
Gaza
Hebron
Hill Country of Judah
Carmel
Maon
Debir
Beer-sheba
Brook Besor
Wilderness of Judah
Dead Sea (Salt Sea)
(Sea of the Arabah)
En-gedi
Arabah
Ascent of Akrabbim
Brook Zered
Edom
Moab
Dibon
Aroer
Kir-hareseth
Heshbon
Rabbah
Jogbehah
Gerasa
Ramoth-gilead
Beth-shan (Scythopolis)
Arbela
Ashtaroth
Kamaim
Damascus
Damascus Plain
Anti-Lebanon
Mt. Hermon
Bashan
Leja
Hauran
Gilead
The Arabah
The Desert
Ammon
Plains of Moab
Jordan River
Brook Cherith
Brook Jabbok
Wadi Yarmuk
Brook Kanah
Plain of Sharon
Plain of Megiddo
Valley of Jezreel
Valley of Aijalon
Valley of Sorek
Valley of Elah
Valley of Beer-sheba
Valley of Salt
Wadi Qubeiba
Wadi Hesban
Mt. Pisgah
Mt. Nebo
Mts. of Abarim
Mt. Carmel
Kishon
Plain of Dor
Shihor Libnat
Wadi Zerqa
Plain of Acco
Wadi esh-Shaghur
Ladder of Tyre
Upper Galilee
Lower Galilee
Plain of Hazor
Waters of Merom
River Dan
Mt. Lebanon (Nahr el Litani)
The Plain
R. Leontes
R. Abana
R. Pharpar
The Way of the Sea
The Kings Highway
R. Arnon
R. Nahaliel
R. Kidron
Mt. Scopus
Ascent of Zic
Wild. of Beracah
Jeruel
Wadi Fejr
Waters of Nimrim
R. Besor
R. Jabbok
Mt. Gilboa
Mt. Tabor
Hill of Moreh
Mt. Carmel
Wadi Ara
Wadi esh-Shaghur
Plain of Megiddo
Plain of Dor
Shihor Libnat
Wadi Zerqa
Valley of Jezreel
Valley of Aijalon
Valley of Sorek
Valley of Elah
Valley of Beer-sheba
Valley of Salt
Wadi Qubeiba
Wadi Hesban
Mts. of Abarim
Ascent of Zic
Wild. of Beracah
Jeruel
Wadi Fejr
Waters of Nimrim
R. Besor
R. Jabbok
Mt. Gilboa
Mt. Tabor
Hill of Moreh
Mt. Carmel
Kishon
Wadi Ara
Plain of Acco
Wadi esh-Shaghur
Ladder of Tyre
Upper Galilee
Lower Galilee
Plain of Hazor
Waters of Merom
River Dan
Mt. Lebanon (Nahr el Litani)
The Plain
R. Leontes
R. Abana
R. Pharpar
The Way of the Sea
The Kings Highway
R. Arnon
R. Nahaliel
R. Kidron
Mt. Scopus


V
W
X
Y
Z
1
2
3
4
5
6
7
33° 30'
33°
32° 30'
32°
31° 30'
31°
34° 30'
35°
35° 30'
36°
36° 30'
Coastal Plains
Western Hills
Negeb
Rift Valley
Eastern Hills (Transjordan)
Damascus
Leja
Desert
0 10 20 Miles
0 10 20 Kilometres
THE GREAT SEA
Plain of Philistia
Plain of Sharon
Plain of Dor
Plain of Acco
Upper Galilee
Lower Galilee
Plain of Megiddo (Great Plain)
Sea of Galilee
River Jordan
Dead Sea
Hill Country of Ephraim
Hill Country of Judah
The Negeb
Edom
Moab
Ammon
Gilead
Bashan
Leja
The Desert
© Oxford University Press


Sidon
Damascus
Tyre
Dan
Plain of Phoenicia
Upper Galilee
R. Jordan
Acco (Acre)
Sea of Galilee
Lower Galilee
Mt. Carmel
Megiddo
Caesarea
Plain of Sharon
River Jordan
Arabah
The Gilead
The Desert
Shechem
Hill Country of Ephraim
Joppa
Bethel
Jerusalem
Plain of Philistia
The Shephelah
Hill Country of Judah
Wilderness of Judah
Dead Sea
Ashkelon
Dibon
Beer-sheba
The Negeb
Forest
Dry Forest
Scrub and grassland
Desert
Sand Dunes
Oases
0 10 20 Miles
0 10 20 Kilometres
© Oxford University Press



Acco

	Temp. °C	°F	Rain cm	in.
Jan	13	56	17.8	7.0
Feb	14	57	11.4	4.5
Mar	16	60	4.1	1.6
Apr	18	64	3.3	1.3
May	21	69	0.8	0.3
Jun	23	74	-	-
Jul	26	78	-	-
Aug	26	79	-	-
Sep	25	77	0.3	0.1
Oct	23	73	3.1	1.2
Nov	19	67	8.6	3.4
Dec	15	59	16.3	6.4
Annual	**20**	**68**	**65.7**	**25.8**

Beersheba

	Temp. °C	°F	Rain cm	in.
Jan	12	53	5.0	2.0
Feb	12	54	4.1	1.6
Mar	14	57	3.1	1.2
Apr	18	64	1.3	0.5
May	23	73	0.3	0.1
Jun	24	76	-	-
Jul	26	79	-	-
Aug	26	79	-	-
Sep	24	75	-	-
Oct	22	71	0.5	0.2
Nov	18	65	2.5	1.0
Dec	13	56	5.6	2.2
Annual	**19**	**67**	**22.4**	**8.8**

Beth-shan

	Temp. °C	°F	Rain cm	in.
Jan	13	55	8.4	3.3
Feb	14	58	5.8	2.3
Mar	17	63	3.3	1.3
Apr	19	67	1.8	0.7
May	24	76	0.1	0.1
Jun	28	82	-	-
Jul	29	84	-	-
Aug	29	85	-	-
Sep	28	83	-	-
Oct	26	78	1.8	0.7
Nov	21	69	2.8	1.1
Dec	15	59	7.0	2.8
Annual	**22**	**72**	**31.2**	**12.3**

Damascus

	Temp. °C	°F	Rain cm	in.
Jan	7	44	4.3	1.7
Feb	9	48	5.3	2.1
Mar	12	54	1.0	0.4
Apr	18	64	1.3	0.5
May	21	70	0.5	0.2
Jun	24	76	-	-
Jul	28	82	-	-
Aug	27	80	-	-
Sep	24	76	1.8	0.7
Oct	17	63	1.0	0.4
Nov	14	57	4.1	1.6
Dec	9	49	5.6	2.2
Annual	**18**	**64**	**23.4**	**9.2**

Gaza

	Temp. °C	°F	Rain cm	in.
Jan	13	56	9.4	3.7
Feb	14	57	6.6	2.6
Mar	16	60	3.6	1.4
Apr	18	64	1.8	0.7
May	21	70	0.3	0.1
Jun	24	75	-	-
Jul	26	78	-	-
Aug	26	79	-	-
Sep	25	77	-	-
Oct	23	73	1.8	0.7
Nov	19	67	5.6	2.2
Dec	16	60	9.9	3.9
Annual	**20**	**68**	**38.9**	**15.3**

Hebron

	Temp. °C	°F	Rain cm	in.
Jan	-	-	14.2	5.6
Feb	-	-	11.9	4.7
Mar	-	-	6.6	2.6
Apr	-	-	3.8	1.5
May	-	-	0.5	0.2
Jun	-	-	-	-
Jul	-	-	-	-
Aug	-	-	-	-
Sep	-	-	0.3	0.1
Oct	-	-	1.0	0.4
Nov	-	-	5.3	2.1
Dec	-	-	11.2	4.4
Annual	**-**	**-**	**54.9**	**21.6**

Jenin

	Temp. °C	°F	Rain cm	in.
Jan	12	54	13.7	5.4
Feb	13	55	10.2	4.0
Mar	14	58	4.8	1.8
Apr	18	65	2.9	1.1
May	23	73	0.3	0.1
Jun	26	78	-	-
Jul	27	81	-	-
Aug	28	82	-	-
Sep	26	79	-	-
Oct	23	74	2.0	0.8
Nov	19	67	4.6	1.8
Dec	14	57	10.7	4.2
Annual	**20**	**68**	**48.8**	**19.2**

Jericho

	Temp. °C	°F	Rain cm	in.
Jan	15	59	3.8	1.5
Feb	16	60	3.1	1.2
Mar	17	63	1.8	0.7
Apr	22	71	1.3	0.5
May	27	81	0.3	0.1
Jun	29	85	-	-
Jul	31	88	-	-
Aug	31	88	-	-
Sep	29	85	-	-
Oct	27	80	0.3	0.1
Nov	22	72	2.0	0.8
Dec	17	62	3.8	1.5
Annual	**24**	**75**	**16.3**	**6.4**

Jerusalem

	Temp. °C	°F	Rain cm	in.
Jan	9	48	15.8	6.2
Feb	9	49	13.7	5.4
Mar	11	52	7.4	2.9
Apr	16	60	3.6	1.4
May	21	69	0.3	0.1
Jun	22	72	-	-
Jul	23	74	-	-
Aug	23	74	-	-
Sep	22	72	0.3	0.1
Oct	20	68	0.8	0.3
Nov	17	62	5.6	2.2
Dec	11	52	11.7	4.6
Annual	**17**	**63**	**58.9**	**23.2**

Jezzine

	Temp. °C	°F	Rain cm	in.
Jan	7	45	24.1	9.5
Feb	8	46	31.0	12.2
Mar	11	51	28.7	11.3
Apr	13	55	16.5	6.5
May	19	66	10.4	4.1
Jun	22	71	0.5	0.2
Jul	22	72	-	-
Aug	22	72	-	-
Sep	20	68	-	-
Oct	18	65	0.3	0.1
Nov	14	57	3.8	1.5
Dec	9	48	15.5	6.1
Annual	**16**	**60**	**130.8**	**51.5**

Lydda

	Temp. °C	°F	Rain cm	in.
Jan.	13	55	14.2	5.6
Feb.	13	55	10.7	4.2
Mar.	14	58	4.8	1.9
Apr.	17	62	2.3	0.9
May.	21	70	0.3	0.1
Jun.	23	74	-	-
Jul.	25	77	-	-
Aug.	26	79	-	-
Sep.	24	76	0.3	0.1
Oct.	22	72	2.0	0.8
Nov.	19	66	6.1	2.4
Dec.	14	58	10.2	4.0
Annual	**19**	**67**	**50.8**	**20.0**

Netanya

	Temp. °C	°F	Rain cm	in.
Jan.	13	56	12.7	5.0
Feb.	14	58	7.6	3.0
Mar.	14	58	3.8	1.5
Apr.	17	63	3.6	1.4
May.	21	69	-	-
Jun.	23	73	-	-
Jul.	24	76	-	-
Aug.	26	78	-	-
Sep.	25	77	-	-
Oct.	23	73	1.8	0.7
Nov.	19	66	6.1	2.4
Dec.	15	59	11.7	4.6
Annual	**19**	**67**	**47.2**	**18.6**

Safed

	Temp. °C	°F	Rain cm	in.
Jan.	7	45	18.8	7.4
Feb.	8	46	15.7	6.2
Mar.	9	49	8.9	3.5
Apr.	14	57	4.3	1.7
May.	20	68	2.0	0.8
Jun.	22	71	-	-
Jul.	23	74	-	-
Aug.	24	75	-	-
Sep.	22	71	-	-
Oct.	19	67	2.0	0.8
Nov.	15	59	6.9	2.7
Dec.	9	49	15.5	6.1
Annual	**16**	**61**	**74.2**	**29.2**

© Oxford University Press


Black Sea
Crimea
Sea of Azov
Caucasus Mountains
Caspian Sea
Aral Sea
Kara Kum
Kara-Bogaz-Gol
Syr Darya (Jaxartes)
Amu Darya (Oxus)
R. Volga
Manych Depression
ARMENIA
R. Murat
L. Van
L. Sevan
L. Urmia (Reza'iyeh)
ASIA MINOR
Anatolian Plateau
Taurus Mts
Nineveh
Ecbatana
Zagros Mountains
Lorestan (Luristan)
Alborz (Elburz) Mts
Kopper Dagh
Dashti-e Kavir
Khorasan
Dasht-e Lut
PERSIA (IRAN)
Fertile Crescent
Mesopotamia
R. Tigris
River Euphrates
Babylon
Ur
Khuzestan
Persepolis
Persian Gulf
Sistan
Baluchistan
Makran
Gulf of 'Oman
Qeshm
Strait of Hormuz
Jebel Akhdar
10,400
Rub' al Khali
Dahna
Jebel Tuwaiq
Nafud
Arabian Desert
Red Sea
Gulf of Suez
Sinai Penin.
Suez Canal
Bitter Lakes
Ismailia Canal
Pelusium
Pelusiac Branch
Nile Delta
LOWER EGYPT
UPPER EGYPT
Eastern Desert
Red Sea Hills
Western Desert
Libyan Desert
Libyan Plateau
CYRENAICA
LIBYA
Qattara Depression
Siwa Oasis
Jalo Oasis
Farafra Oasis
Dakhla Oasis
Kharga Oasis
Thebes
1st Cataract
River Nile
Abu Simbel
Nubian Desert
ETHIOPIA
Alexandria
Memphis
L. Qarun
Joppa
Jerusalem
David Sea
Dead Sea
Jordan R.
Jericho
Damascus
Tyre
Sidon
Byblos
Nicosia
CYPRUS
Antioch
Ugarit
Rhodes
Carpathos
Cythera
Khania (Canea)
CRETE
Ionian Sea
Mediterranean Sea
Malta
SICILY
Etna
10,741
Vesuvius
3,891
Rome
Istria
Corfu (Corcyra)
G. of Taranto
Cephalonia
Zacynthos
Peloponnese
Sparta
Athens
Cyclades
Euboea
Chios
Samos
Ephesus
Mt. Olympus
9,573
Pindus Mts
8,445
Mt. Ida
8,797
Rhodope Mts
8,170
Balkan Mts
River Danube
Transylvanian Alps
R. Drava
R. Sava
Dinaric Alps
6,581
Adriatic Sea
Apennine Mts
9,470
ITALY
MACEDONIA
GREECE
Aegean Sea
Hellespont
Bosphorus
Sea of Marmara
Thrace
Dardanelles
Caspian Sea
Aral Sea
Kara Kum
Kara-Bogaz-Gol
Syr Darya (Jaxartes)
Amu Darya (Oxus)
Alborz (Elburz) Mts
Kopper Dagh
Dashti-e Kavir
Khorasan
Dasht-e Lut
Zagros Mountains
Lorestan (Luristan)
Mesopotamia
R. Tigris
River Euphrates
Nineveh
Ecbatana
Babylon
Ur
Khuzestan
Persepolis
Persian Gulf
Sistan
Baluchistan
Makran
Gulf of 'Oman
Qeshm
Strait of Hormuz
Jebel Akhdar
10,400
Rub' al Khali
Dahna
Jebel Tuwaiq
Nafud
Arabian Desert
Red Sea
Gulf of Suez
Sinai Penin.
Suez Canal
Bitter Lakes
Ismailia Canal
Pelusium
Pelusiac Branch
Nile Delta
LOWER EGYPT
UPPER EGYPT
Eastern Desert
Red Sea Hills
Western Desert
Libyan Desert
Libyan Plateau
CYRENAICA
LIBYA
Qattara Depression
Siwa Oasis
Jalo Oasis
Farafra Oasis
Dakhla Oasis
Kharga Oasis
Thebes
1st Cataract
River Nile
Abu Simbel
Nubian Desert
ETHIOPIA
Alexandria
Memphis
L. Qarun
Joppa
Jerusalem
David Sea
Dead Sea
Jordan R.
Jericho
Damascus
Tyre
Sidon
Byblos
Nicosia
CYPRUS
Antioch
Ugarit
Rhodes
Carpathos
Cythera
Khania (Canea)
CRETE
Ionian Sea
Mediterranean Sea
Malta
SICILY
Etna
10,741
Vesuvius
3,891
Rome
Istria
Corfu (Corcyra)
G. of Taranto
Cephalonia
Zacynthos
Peloponnese
Sparta
Athens
Cyclades
Euboea
Chios
Samos
Ephesus
Mt. Olympus
9,573
Pindus Mts
8,445
Mt. Ida
8,797
Rhodope Mts
8,170
Balkan Mts
River Danube
Transylvanian Alps
R. Drava
R. Sava
Dinaric Alps
6,581
Adriatic Sea
Apennine Mts
9,470
ITALY
MACEDONIA
GREECE
Aegean Sea
Hellespont
Bosphorus
Sea of Marmara
Thrace
Dardanelles
1
2
3
4
5
6
A
B
C
D
E
F
G
H
J
K
L
M
N
O
© Oxford University Press


Black Sea
Caspian Sea
Mediterranean Sea (Upper Sea)
Persian Gulf (Lower Sea)
Red Sea
HITTITE EMPIRE (HATTI)
ARARAT (URARTU)
SUBARTU
MITANNI
ASSYRIA
BABYLONIA
(Akkad)
(Sumer)
ELAM
MEDIA (MADAI)
Zagros Mts.
GUTIUM
(KEDAR)
ARABIA
EGYPT
Lower Egypt
Upper Egypt
Sinai
Midian
Negeb
Canaan
Amurru
Libya (Lubim)
Put
Cush (Ethiopia)
OPHIR
Minoans
Arzawa
Assuwa
Rhodes
Alashiya, Kittim (Cyprus)
Troy (Ilium)
Mycenae
Athens
Argos
Tiryns
Pylos
Knossos
Phaistos
Caphtor (Crete)
R. Sangarius
R. Halys
R. Maeander
Taurus Mts.
Kizzuwatna (Cilicia)
Hattusa
Ankuwa
Kanish
Lake Van
Lake Urmia
(Zinjirli)
Carchemish
Haran
(Tell Halaf)
Alalakh
Halab (Aleppo)
Ebla
Ugarit
R. Orontes
R. Habor
River Euphrates
Arvad
Hamath
Kadesh
Tadmor
Lebanon Mts.
Gebal
Berytus
Sidon
Damascus
Tyre
Acco
Hazor
Dor
Megiddo
Shechem
Joppa
Bethel
Jericho
Ashkelon
Gaza
Jerusalem
Raphia
Hebron
Beer-sheba
Karkor
Kadesh-barnea
Mari
Nineveh
Calah
Arbela
Asshur
Nuzi
Little Zab
River Tigris
R. Adhaim
R. Diyala
Ecbatana
Eshnunna
Sippar
Cuthah
Babylon
Kish
Borsippa
Nippur
Isin
Lagash
Larsa
Erech (Uruk)
Ur
Eridu
Susa
(Malamir)
ancient coastline
(Dumah)
(Tema)
(Dedan)
(Yathrib)
(Mahd edh-Dhahab)
Dilmun
Tanis (Zoan)
Avaris (Rameses)
On (Heliopolis)
Memphis (Noph)
Gizeh
Saqqarah
Heracleopolis
(Serabit el-Khadim)
Beni-hasan
Hermopolis
Akhetaton (Tell el-Amarna)
Abydos
Thebes (No)
(el-Kab)
Syene
1st Cataract
R. Nile
Route reflected in the story of Abraham
0 100 200 Miles
0 100 200 Kilometres
© Oxford University Press


GAD, etc.
Tribes of Israel said to have settled in Transjordan
EDOM, etc.
Kingdoms said to have been encountered by the Israelites at the time of the settlement
Cities mentioned in Numbers and Deuteronomy, but not in Genesis
0 10 20 Miles
0 10 20 Kilometres
THE GREAT SEA (The Western Sea)
Sidon
Damascus
Mt. Lebanon
Mt. Hermon (Sirion, Senir)
ARAM (SYRIA)
Ijon
Tyre
Uzu
Abel
Laish (Dan)
Kanah
Beth-anath?
MAACAH
Kedesh
Achzib
Hazor
Janoah
Merom
Aduru
R. Jordan
GESHUR
BASHAN
ARGOB
Acco
Chinnereth
Sea of Chinnereth
Karnaim
Golan
Ashtaroth
Madon
Hannathon
Mt. Carmel
Achshaph?
Shimron
Japhia
Beth-yerah (Philoteria)
Yanoam
HAVVOTH-JAIR
Edrei
Jokneam
Dor
Megiddo
Shunem
Anaharath?
Ham
Ramoth-gilead
Aruna
Taanach
Beth-haggan (En-gannim)
Beth-shean
Rehob
Pehel (Pella)
Migdal
Ibleam
Gath of Sharon
Arubboth
Dothan
Yehem
Socoh
Plain of Sharon
Hill Country of Israel
Tirzah
Mt. Ebal
Shechem
Mt. Gerizim
River Jordan
The Arabah
GILEAD
MANASSEH
Succoth
Penuel
R. Jabbok
Mahanaim
Aphek
Joppa
Ono
Jazer
Jogbehah
AMMONITES
AMMON
Beth-dagon
Lod
Bethel (Luz)
Ai
Beth-nimrah
Rabbah
Plains of Moab
Beth-horon
Gilgal
Abel-shittim (Shittim)
Gezer
Aijalon
Gibeon
Jericho
Elealeh
Ekron
Jerusalem (Salem)
Beth-jeshimoth
Heshbon
Bezer?
Ashdod
Beth-shemesh
Mt. Pisgah
Mt. Nebo
Timnah
Bethlehem (Ephrath)
Medeba
Ashkelon
Gath?
Socoh
Kiriathaim
Mts. of Abarim
Baal-meon (Beon)
Chezib
Adullam
Keilah
Mattanah
Eglon?
Lachish
Mamre
R. Nahaliel
Ataroth
Gaza
Beth-tappuah
Hebron (Kiriath-arba)
Dibon
Kedemoth?
Aroer
Beth-eglaim (Eglaim)
R. Arnon
Gerar
Ziklag?
Debir
Yurza
Sharuhen
Moladah
ARAD?
Beer-sheba
Bab ed-Dra'
Ar
Hormah
Arad?
MOAB
Aroer
Numeira
Possible location of the cities of Sodom, Gomorrah, Admah, Zeboiim, and Zoar in the Valley of Siddim
Rehoboth
es-Safi
Zoar
The Negeb
Ziph
Hazazan-tamar (30° 48' N)
EDOM
Brook Zered
Ascent of Akrabbim
(Khanazir)
Feifa
© Oxford University Press


A S I A M I N O R
Cyprus
T H E G R E A T S E A
River Euphrates
Sea of Chinnereth
Bethel
Ai
Rabbah
Ashdod
Gezer
Jericho
Shittim
Jerusalem
Heshbon
Azekah
Mt. Nebo
Libnah?
Lachish
Medeba
Gaza
Hebron
Dibon
Juttah
Salt Sea
Raphia
ARAD?
Arnon
Gerar
Debir
Beer-sheba
Arad?
Kir-hareseth
Horman
The Negeb
Wilderness of Zin
Bene-jaakan (Beeroth)
Hazazon-tamar
Sela
Bozrah
Azmon
Hazar-addar
Punon
Mt. Sinai? (Horeb) (Jebel Helal)
Kadesh-barnea (Meribah)
Oboth
Wilderness of Paran
The Arabah
The King's Highway
Ezion-geber
Alternative Exodus route
Traditional Exodus route
Wilderness of Sin?
S I N A I
(Gulf of 'Aqaba)
Mt Sinai (Horeb) (Jebel Musa)
Gulf of Suez
Red Sea
Arabian Desert
Western Desert
River Nile
Lake Menzaleh
Mons Casius
Lake Sirbonis
Pelusium (Sin)
Zilu (Tjaru)
Rameses (Qantir)
Busiris
Zoan (Tanis)
Buto
(Rosetta)
Lake Timsah
Great Bitter Lake
Little Bitter Lake
Baal-zephon
Pi-beseth (Bubastis)
Pithom
Succoth
Athribis
(Tell el-Yahudiyeh)
Heliopolis (On)
Saqqarah
Memphis (Noph)
Lake Moeris
Heracleopolis
Beni-hasan
Possible Northern Exodus route
Wilderness of Shur
The Way to Shur
The Way to the Land of the Philistines
Brook of Egypt
Plain of Philistia
Plain of Sharon
Possible route reflected in the Exodus story
Possible alternative routes
Line of border fortresses
© Oxford University Press


ASHER, etc. Tribes of Israel
Cities of refuge
Philistine Cities
0 5 10 15 Miles
0 5 10 15 Kilometres
THE GREAT SEA
PHILISTINES
ASHER
NAPHTALI
ZEBULUN
ISSACHAR
MANASSEH
EPHRAIM
DAN
BENJAMIN
JUDAH
SIMEON
REUBEN
GAD
GILEAD
BASHAN
HAVVOTH-JAIR
AMMON
MOAB
EDOM
ARAD?
The Negeb
Hill Country of Judah
Hill of Ephraim
Hill Country of Manasseh
Valley of Elah
Valley of Sorek
Valley of Aijalon
Valley of Achor
Sea of the Arabah (The Salt Sea)
River Jordan
Wadi Arabah
Sea of Chinnereth
Waters of Merom
Mt. Lebanon
Valley of Lebanon
Mt. Hermon
Mt. Carmel
Hill of Moreh
Mt. Tabor
Mt. Gilboa
Mt. Ebal
Mt. Gerizim
Mt. Pisgah
Mt. Nebo
R. Jordan
R. Kishon
R. Jabbok
R. Arnon
Brook Besor
Brook Zered
Ascent of Akrabbim
Sidon
Damascus
Tyre
Ahlab
Baal-gad?
Dan (Laish)
Beth-rehob
Beth-anath?
Kedesh
Hazor
Misrephoth-maim
Yiron
Achzib
Abdon
Merom
Acco
Rehob
Cabul
Chinnereth
Aphik
Nahalol
Madon
Rimmon
Hannathon
Achshaph?
Hammath
Golan
Ashtaroth
Bethlehem
Haroseth-ha-goiim
Shimron
Lakkum
Jokneam
En-dor
Dor
Naphath-Dor
Megiddo
Shunem
Beer
Kamon?
Edrei
Tob
Ramoth-gilead
Jezreel
Taanach
Beth-shean
Ibleam
En-ganninm (Beth-haggan)
Jabesh-gilead
Hepher?
Socoh
Bezek
Abel-meholah
Thebez
Tirzah
Tabbath?
Zaphon?
Succoth
Penuel
Shechem
Pirathon
Arumah
Ataroth
Zarethan?
Adam
Baal-shalishah
Gath-rimmon?
Aphek
Tappuah
Lebonah
Shiloh
Joppa
Asor
Ramathaim-zophim
Beth-dagon
Timnath-serah
Jogbehah
Betonim
Rabbah
Ephron (Ophrah)
Bethel
Ai
Rimmon
Beth-nimrah
Lower Beth-horon
Upper Beth-horon
Naarah
Gilgal
Jericho
Mizpah
Michmash
Jabneel
Gibbethon
Shaalbim
Aijalon
Gibeon
Ramah
Jericho
Mount Baalah
Gezer
Beeroth?
Shittim
Baalath?
Shikkeron
Chephirah
Baalah (Kiriath-jearim)
Gibeah?
Anathoth
Beth-peor
Heshbon
Bezer?
Ekron
Sorek
Zela
Jerusalem (Jebus)
Ashdod
Timnah
Zorah
Middin?
Beth-jeshimoth
Beth-shemesh
Lehi?
Secacah?
Kiriathaim
Medeba
Makkedah?
Jarmuth
Bethlehem
Nibshan?
Beth-baal-meon
Gath?
Azekah
Timnah
Etam
Ashkelon
Socoh
Adullam
Zereth-shahar
Libnah
Keilah
Giloh
Beth-zur
Mareshah
Eglon?
Lachish
Hebron
Kedemoth?
Gaza
Jezreel?
Ziph
En-gedi
Dibon
Aroer
Debir
Anab
Goshen?
Maon
Gerar
Ziklag?
Eshtemoa
Karkor (37°36'E)
Madmannah
Jattir
Bethul (Bethuel)
Ashan
Kabzeel?
Beer-sheba
Hazar-shual
Arad?
Hormah
Adadah (Aroer)
Ziph
© Oxford University Press


SYRIA, etc.
Non-Israelite peoples
Places fortified by Solomon
I-XII
Solomon's administrative districts (1 Kgs. 4. 7-19)
0 10 20 Miles
0 10 20 Kilometres
ZOBAH
Damascus
SYRIA (ARAM)
Sidon
SIDONIANS
Mt. Lebanon
Mt. Hermon
BETH-REHOB
Tyre
Abel-beth-maacah
Dan
Beth-rehob
MAACAH
BASHAN
ARGOB
GESHUR
Hazor
Merom
Acco
Cabul
R. Jordan
Sea of Chinnereth
Helam
Mt. Carmel
R. Kishon
Jokneam (Jokmeam)
HAVVOTH-JAIR
GILEAD
Dor
Megiddo
Jezreel
Taanach
Mt. Gilboa
Beth-shean
Tob
Rogelim
Ramoth-gilead
THE GREAT SEA
Plain of Sharon
Arubboth
Hepher?
Socoh
Thebez
Jabesh-gilead
Abel-meholah
Mt. Ebal
Shechem
Mt. Gerizim
Pirathon
Lo-debar?
R. Jabbok
Succoth
Mahanaim
Zarethan?
The River Jordan
Arabah
GILEAD
AMMON
Gath-rimmon
Joppa
Zeredah
Shiloh
Jazer
Baal-hazor
Ephraim
Rabbah (Rabbath-ammon)
Beth-hanan
Bethel
Lower Beth-horon
Upper Beth-horon
Gilgal
Shaalbim
Gibeon
Geba
Jericho
Gezer
Baalath?
Makaz
Elon
Beeroth?
Heshbon
Kiriath-jearim
Gibeah?
Anathoth
Ekron
Sorek
Jerusalem
Ashdod
Beth-shemesh
Bethlehem
Medeba
Timnah
Gath?
Netophah
Ashkelon
Adullam
Libnah?
Tekoa
Giloh
R. Nahaliel
PHILISTINES
The Shephelah (Lowland)
Hebron
Gaza
Dibon
Aroer
MOAB
Salt Sea
(Sea of the Arabah)
Wilderness of Judah
R. Arnon
Carmel
Gerar
Ziklag?
Debir
Brook Besor
Kabzeel?
Arad
Beer-sheba
Valley of Salt
Kir-hareseth
The Negeb
AMALEKITES
Brook Zered
EDOM
Tamar (30° 48'N)
I
II
III
IV
V
VI
VII
VIII
IX
X
XI
XII
© Oxford University Press


Pergamum
Sardis
Smyrna
LYDIA
(LUD)
HITTITES
Kanish
Iconium
Meshech
Tubal
Kue
Tarsus
Markasi
Sam'al
Adana
Yaudi
Gurgum
Kummukhu
Melid
Carchemish
Alalakh
Posidium
Ugarit
Hittites
Aramaeans
Halab
Tiphsah
Amida
HURRIANS
Haran
Gozan
R. Khabur (Lower)
ARARAT
(URARTU)
L. Van
Van
Tabriz
L. Urmia
Caspian Sea
Nineveh
Singara
Calah
Arbela
MEDIA
ASSYRIA
Asshur
Nuzi
R. Tigris
Arrapkha
Ecbatana
KASSITES
ELAM
Rhodes
Crete
Enkomi
Kittim
(Alashiya)
Arvad
Hamath
Qatna
Homs
Tirqa
Mari
Tadmor
R. Euphrates
Geba
Lebo-Hamath
Lebanon
Mountains
Berytus
Sidon
Damascus
Tyre
Acco
Hazor
Dor
Megiddo
Bashan
Bozrah
Samaria
Shechem
Israel
Gilead
Joppa
Rabbah
Ashkelon
Ammon
Gaza
Judah
Jerusalem
Kenites
Moab
Nebaioth
Seir
Sela
Edom
Eshnunna
BABYLONIA
Babylon
Nippur
Susa
Ur
Pharos
Naucratis
Shur
Heliopolis (On)
Memphis
(Noph)
Sinai
Ezion-geber
Midian
KEDAR
ARABIA
Dumah
Buz
Ephah
Tema
Dedan
Sealand
Persian Gulf
Dilmun
EGYPT
Akhetaton
(T.el-'Amarna)
R. Nile
Oasis
Thebes
(No)
Myos Hormos
Khaibar
Leuke Kome
Yathrib
Syene
Berenike
OPHIR
(Mahd edh-Dhahab)
Red Sea
JOKTAN
Abu Simbel
Buhen
ETHIOPIA
(CUSH)
Napata
Meroe
Adulis
Uzal
Marib
Shabwa
Timna
SHEBA
HAZARMAVETH
Canneh
Muza
Eden
PUNT
Approximate line of principal trade routes
0 100 200 Miles
0 100 200 Kilometres
© Oxford University Press
The Great Sea
F
G
H
J
K
3
4
5
6
7
8
30°
35°
25°
20°
15°
40°
45°
50°


ISRAEL, JUDAH Hebrew kingdoms
ASHER, etc. Tribal areas
SYRIA, etc. Non-Israelite peoples
Approximate boundary between Israel, Judah and Philistia
0 10 20 Miles
0 10 20 Kilometres
THE GREAT SEA
ISRAEL
JUDAH
PHILISTIA
The Shephelah (Lowland)
The Negeb
SIMEON
EPHRAIM
MANASSEH
BENJAMIN
DAN
ASHER
NAPHTALI
ZEBULUN
ISSACHAR
GALILEE
SIDONIANS
HAVVOTH-JAIR
GILEAD
AMMON
MOAB
EDOM
BASHAN
HAURAN
SYRIA (ARAM)
ZOBAH
Sea of Chinnereth
Sea of the Arabah (Salt Sea)
Plain of Sharon
Wilderness of Judah
Valley of Salt
Brook Besor
Ascent of Ziz
Waters of Nimrim
Brook Zered
Brook Cherith
Entrance to Hamath
Mt. Lebanon
Mt. Hermon
Mt. Carmel
Mt. Tabor
Mt. Ebal
Mt. Gerizim
River Jordan
R. Jordan
R. Kishon
R. Jabbok
R. Arnon
R. Nahaliel
R. Abana
R. Pharpar
Sidon
Zarephath
Ijon
Tyre
Abel-beth-maacah (Abel-maim)
Dan
Damascus
Kedesh
Yiron
Hazor
Janoah
Merom
Acco
Chinnereth
Karnaim
Ashtaroth
Aphek
Rumah
Hannathon
Gath-hepher
Jokmeam
Dor
Megiddo
Shunem
Jezreel
Taanach
Edrei
Beth-arbel
Ramoth-gilead
Beth-haggan
Ibleam
Borim
Dothan
Tishbe
Abel-meholah
Socoh
Yazith
Samaria
Tirzah
Siphtan
Shechem
Pirathon
Lo-debar?
Penuel
Mahanaim
Baal-shalishah
Tappuah
Joppa
Shiloh
Zeredah
Jeshanah
Baal-hazor
Ephron
Rabbath
Gimzo
Bethel
Ai
Zemaraim
Gath (Gittaim)
Beth-horon
Mizpah
Gilgal
Jericho
Jabneel (Jabneh)
Gibbethon
Ramah
Geba
Mount Baalah
Shikkeron
Aijalon
Baalath?
Gibeah?
Anathoth
Jerusalem
Baal-peor
Heshbon
Bezer? (Bozrah?)
Timnah
Zorah
Ashdod
Ekron
Beth-shemesh
Middin
City of Salt?
Nebo
Kiriathaim
Azekah
Bethlehem
Nibshan?
Secacah?
Medeba
Gath?
Socoh
Etam
Beth-meon (Baal-meon)
Ashkelon
Adullam
Tekoa
Beth-diblathaim
Libnah
Beth-zur
Jahaz?
Mareshah
Zair
Ataroth
Lachish
Hebron
Gaza
Adoraim
Dibon
Ziph
En-gedi
Aroer
Carmel
Gerar
Yurza
Raphia
Sharuhen
Great Arad
Beer-sheba
Gurbaal
Arad of Beth-yeroham?
Kir-hareseth
Zoar
Hazazon-tamar (30° 48')
© Oxford University Press


Black Sea
Caspian Sea
The Great Sea (The Upper Sea, the Western Sea)
The Lower (Eastern) Sea
Red Sea
PHRYGIA
LYDIA
JAVAN
CILICIA (KHILAKKU)
Kue
Tubal (Tabal)
COMMAGENE (KUMUKHU)
Musri
Nairi
ARARAT (URARTU)
ASSYRIA
Minni (Mannai)
MADAI (MEDES)
ELAM
BABYLONIA
Kedar (Qidri)
ARABIA
Sinai
EGYPT
ETHIOPIA
SHEBA (SABA)
OPHIR
HATTINA
ARAMEA
Gomer (Gimarrai)
Meshech (Mushki)
Gordion
Usiana
Sardis (Sepharad)
Togarmah (Til-garimmu)
Milid (Melitene)
Turushpa (Tuspar)
Lake Van
Lake Urmia
Sam'al
Carchemish
Haran
Gozan
Calno
Arpad
Aleppo
Beth-eden (Bit-adini)
Tiphsah
Rezeph
Dur-sharrukin
Nineveh
Calah
Arbela
Asshur
Arrapkha
Ecbatana
Hamath
Qarqar
Arvad
Riblah
Kadesh
Tadmor (Tadmar)
Gebal (Byblos)
Berytus
Lebo-Hamath
Helbon
Sidon
Tyre
Damascus
Ushu
Acco
Hauran
Salecah
ISRAEL
Samaria
Jerusalem
JUDAH
Gaza
AMMON
MOAB
EDOM
Raphia
Sais
Zoan (Tanis)
Tahpanhes
Migdol
Pelusium
Athribis
Heliopolis (On)
Memphis (Noph)
Sela
Ezion-geber (Elath)
Dumah
Tema
Dedan
Hermopolis
Lycopolis (Siut)
River Nile
Thebes
Syene
Sippar
Cuthah
Babylon
Borsippa
Nippur
Pekod (Puqudu)
Susa (Shushan)
Erech (Uruk)
Larsa
Ur
Crete (Caphtor)
Cyprus (Iadanana)
Rhodes
Libya
R. Sangarius
R. Halys
R. Hermus
R. Maeander
R. Orontes
Amanus Mts.
R. Balikh
R. Habor
River Euphrates
River Tigris
Lower Zab
Upper Zab
R. Adhaim
R. Diyala
ancient coastline
Approximate extent of Assyrian domination in the latter part of the 8th. century.
(Later, under Esarhaddon (680-669), Assyria conquered Egypt.)
0 100 200 Miles
0 100 200 Kilometres
© Oxford University Press


ISRAEL
Former kingdom of Israel conquered by Assyria
Approximate boundaries
0 10 20 Miles
0 10 20 Kilometres
Sidon
Damascus
Zarephath
Ahlab
Tyre
Uzu
Dan
Kedesh
Achzib
Hazor
Acco
Jotbah
Rumah
Karnaim
Ashtaroth
HAURAN
Dor
Megiddo
Taanach
Beth-shan
Ibleam
Dothan
Ramoth-gilead
Ham
Jabesh-gilead
Abel-meholah
Samaria
Tirzah
Shechem
Succoth
Penuel
Adam
Joppa
Bene-berak
Asor
Ono
Beth-dagon
Shiloh
Jazer
AMMON
Rabbah
Lod
Gimzo
Mesad Hashavyahu
Bethel
Rimmon
Aiath
Mizpah
Michmash
Gilgal
Jericho
Eltekeh?
Jabneel (Jabneh)
Gezer
Mount Baalah
Gibbethon
Ramah
Migron
Geba
Gibeah?
Gallim
Baalath?
Shikkeron
Kiriath-jearim
Laishah
Anathoth
Shittim
Elealeh
Sibmah
Heshbon
Ashdod
Ekron
Timnah
Jerusalem
Nob
Bezer? (Bozrah?)
Nebo
Beth-shemesh
Beth-haccherem
Azekah
Bethlehem
Kiriathaim
Medeba
Gath?
Ashkelon
Socoh
Netophah
Beth-meon (Baal-meon)
Beth-diblathaim
Moresheth-gath
Adullam
Achzib?
Tekoa
Libnah?
Keilah
Mareshah
Jahaz?
Ataroth
Lachish
Bozkath
Hebron
Kerioth
Gaza
Dibon
Beth-ezel
Ziph
Aroer
Beth-gamul
Yurza
Gerar
Debir
Madmannah
Madmen?
Ar
Raphia
Sharuhen
Great Arad
Beer-sheba
Kir-hareseth (Kir, Kir-heres)
Zoar
Brook Zered
© Oxford University Press
Mt. Hermon
R. Abana
R. Pharpar
PHOENICIA
GALILEE
Sea of Chinnereth
R. Jordan
MAACAH
Mt. Carmel
R. Kishon
Plain of Megiddo
Plain of Sharon
THE GREAT SEA
River Jordan
The Arabah
GILEAD
SAMARIA
R. Jabbok
PHILISTIA
The Shephelah
JUDAH
Salt Sea (Sea of the Arabah)
R. Arnon
MOAB
Waters of Nimrim
The Negeb
EDOM
Brook Besor

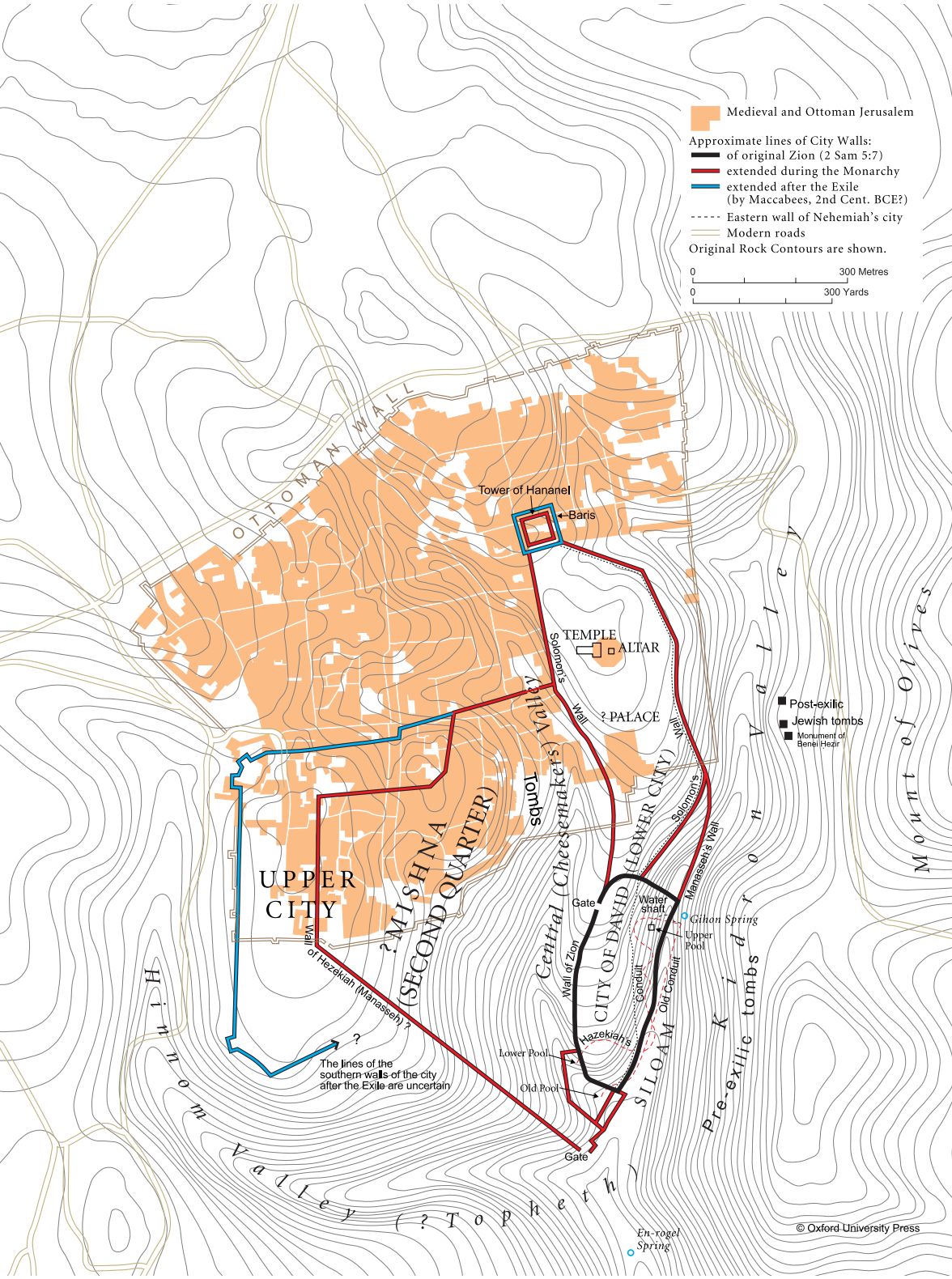

Black Sea
Caspian Sea
The Great Sea
Persian Gulf
Red Sea
R. Sangarius
R. Halys
R. Hermus
R. Maeander
LYDIA
(LUD, LUDU)
Ionia
Caria
Lycia
Rhodes
Crete
(Caphtor)
Cyprus
(Iadanna)
Corinth
Athens
Sardis
Magnesia
Kirshu
Pirindu
Ura
Khume
(Kue)
Carchemish
Sallune
Pitusu
URARTU
(ARARAT)
Izalla
Nisibis
Haran
Balikhu
Khazazu
Arpad
Quramati
R. Balikh
R. Habor
River Euphrates
R. Orontes
ASSYRIA
Nineveh
Calah
(Kalkhu)
Upper Zab
Lower Zab
Asshur
Arrapkha
Rusapu
Mannai
(Minni)
MEDIA
Ecbatana
Khin-Anat
danu
Sukhu
River Tigris
R. Adhaim
R. Diyala
Arvad
Hamath
Kadesh
Riblah
Lebo-Hamath
Gebal
Sidon
Tyre
Damascus
SYRIA
Arabs
KEDAR
Megiddo
SAMARIA
AMMON
Ashkelon
Gaza
Jerusalem
JUDAH
MOAB
EDOM
Zoan (Tanis)
Migdol
Pelusium
Pi-beseth
Tahpanhes
Heliopolis (On)
Memphis
(Noph)
Sinai
Dumah
Tema
Dedan
EGYPT
R. Nile
River Nile
PATHROS
Thebes
Syene
ETHIOPIA
Sallat
AKKAD
Der
Sippar
Cuthah
Babylon
Kish
Nippur
BABYLONIA
(CHALDEA)
Erech (Uruk)
Ur
Susa
ELAM
Anshan (Tall-i Malyan)
PERSIA
ancient coastline
Approximate greatest extent of Babylonian domination.
(The Halys river marked the border of the Median and lydian Empires after the Battle of the Eclipse in 585 B.C.)
0 100 200 Miles
0 100 200 Kilometres
© Oxford University Press


Black Sea
Caucasus Mountains
Hyrcanian Sea
(Caspian Sea)
Aegean Sea
Upper Sea (Mediterranean Sea)
Red Sea
Lower Sea (Persian Gulf)
Erythraean Sea
THRACE (SKUDRA)
MACEDONIA
THESSALY
PELOPONNESUS
Sparta
Athens
Corinth
Thebes
Marathon
Delphi
Thermopylae
Salamis
Lesbos
Mytilene
Magnesia
Ephesus
Sardis
Samos
Miletus
Magnesia on Maeander
CARIA
LYDIA
PHRYGIA
Mt. Ida
Mt. Mycale
Hellespont
Granicus R.
Rhodes
Xanthus
Crete
Gortyna
Cyrene
LIBYA
Donuscus
Byzantium
Sinope
PAPHLAGONIANS
DASCYLIUM
R. Sangarius
CAPPADOCIA
Gordion
CIMERIANS
Pteria?
Trapezus
COLCHIS
MOSCHI (MESHECH)
R. Halys
R. Araxes
R. Cyrus
L. Van
ARMENIA (URARTU)
Melitene
Royal Road
COMMAGENE
Cilician Gates
Tarsus
Issus
Carchemish
Harran
Arpad
Aleppo
Thapsacus
R. Euphrates
CILICIA
PAMPHYLIA
LYCIA
ASSYRIA
Nineveh
Arbela
Arrapkha
Asshur
R. Tigris
L. Urmia
MEDIA
Ecbatana (Achmetha)
Behistun (Bisutun)
Rages (Rhagae)
HYRCANIA
Astrabad (Gorgan)
Zadrakarta (Turang Tepe)
(Damghan)
Tesmes (Mashhad)
PARTHIA
Margiana (Margus)
R. Margos
BACTRIA
Bactra
Artacoana
R. Arachotus
ARIA
(Ghazni)
GANDHARA
SATTAGYDIA
SAKA (SCYTHIANS)
Cyropolis
(Bokhara)
CHORASMIA
SOGDIANA
R. Oxus
SAGARTIA
DRANGIANA
ARACHOSIA
(Kandahar)
Gabae (Isfahan)
Susa (Shushan)
ELAM (SUSIANA)
BABYLONIA
Eshnunna
Der
Sippar
Babylon
Borsippa
Nippur
Erech (Uruk)
Larsa
Ur
Persian Gulf coastline
PERSIS (PERSIA)
Anshan (Tall-i Malyan)
Persepolis
Parsagarda (Pasargadae)
(Kerman)
CARMANIA
GEDROSIA (MAKA)
(Gulashkird)
Pura
Pattala
HINDUSH (INDIA)
R. Indus
Cyprus
Soli
Kyrenia
Salamis
Citium
Amathus
Hamath
Arvad
Gebal
Sidon
Tyre
Damascus
Tadmor
BEYOND THE RIVER
PHOENICIA
Samaria
Ashdod
Gaza
Jerusalem
JUDAH
AMMON
MOAB
KEDAR
(Alexandria)
Sais
Busiris
Zoan
Tahpanhes
Pelusium
Heliopolis
Memphis
Sela
Dumah
Sinai
R. Nile
EGYPT
Hermopolis
Tema
Dedan
ARABIA
Abydos
Coptos
Thebes
Edfu
Yeb (Elephantine)
Syene
ETHIOPIA (CUSH)
Approximate boundary of the Persian Empire
0 100 200 Miles
0 100 200 Kilometres
© Oxford University Press



© Oxford University Press

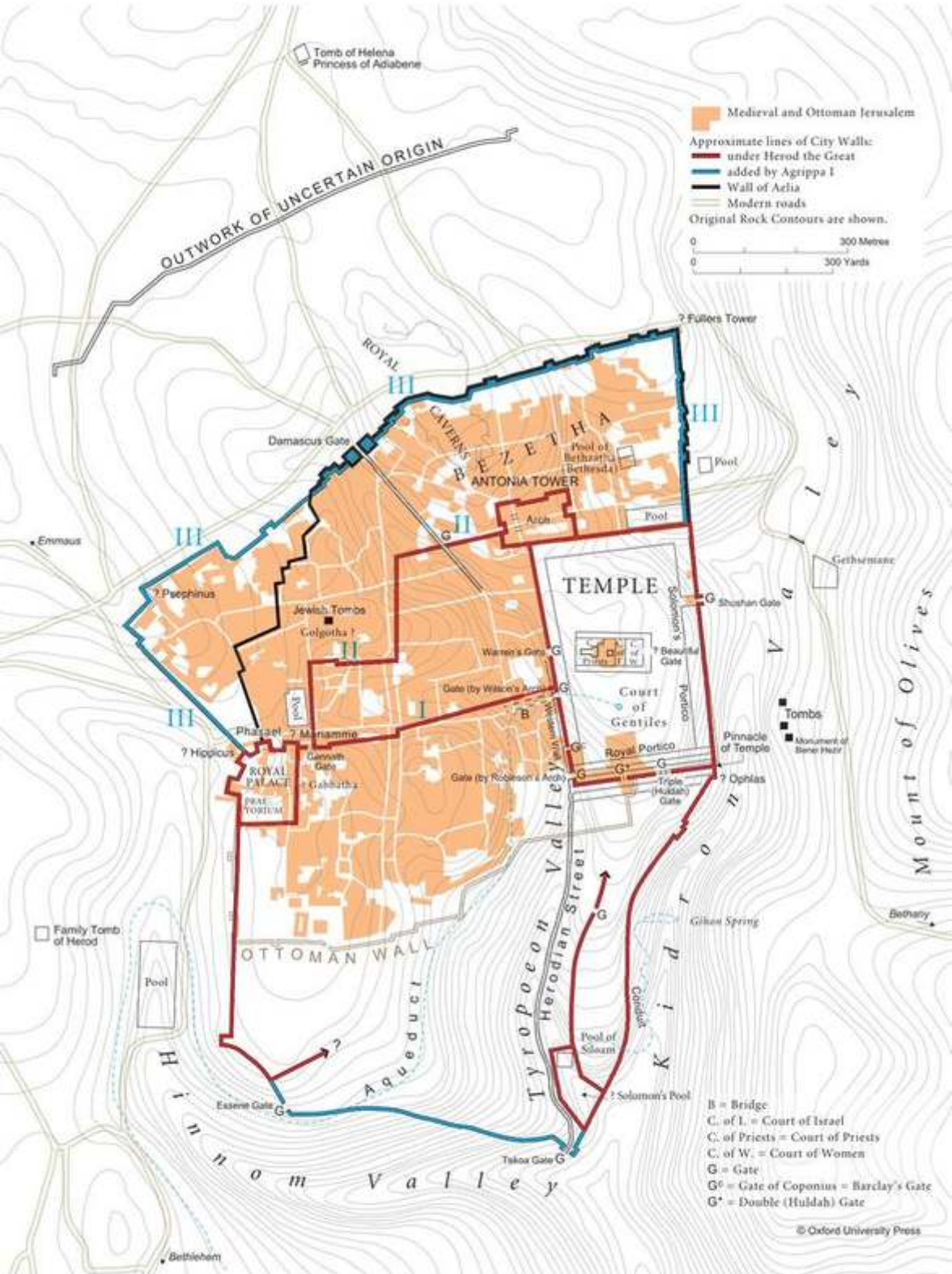

Black Sea
Mediterranean Sea
Red Sea
Persian Gulf
Erythraean Sea
Caspian Sea
Hyrcanian Sea
THRACE
MACEDONIA
Pella
Philippi
Thessalonica
Thasos
Dorıscus
Byzantium
Lysimachia
Calchedon
Heraclea
Sinope
Trapezus
PAPHLAGONIA
PONTUS
Nicaea
Scepsis
Scamander
Sangarius
Ilium (Troy)
Dascylium
Ancyra
Pteria?
Gordium (Gordion)
GALATIA
Halys
Mytilene
Pergamum
Magnesia
Delphi
Thebes
Athens
Corinth
Olympia
Sparta
THESSALY
AETOLIA
ACHAEA
Aegean Sea
IONIA
Sardis
Ephesus
Samos
Miletus
Didyma
Halicarnassus
CARIA
Maeander
Delos
PHRYGIA
Issus
Apamea (Calaenae)
PISIDIA
PAMPHYLIA
CILICIA
LYCIA
Perga
Phaselis
Xanthus
Rhodes
Cydonia
Knossos
Gortyna
Crete
Cyprus
Salamis
Citium
Paphos
Laodicea
Marathus
Tripolis
Byblos
Berytus
Sidon
Tyre
Ptolemais
Dora
Samaria
Azotus
Gaza
Paraetonium
Alexandria
Sais
Bubastis
Pelusium
Heliopolis
Memphis
Arsinoe
Petra
Raphia
Antioch (Gerasa)
Philadelphia
Jerusalem
Damascus
Paneas
Cyrene
CYRENAICA
PTOLEMAIC EMPIRE
EGYPT
Oasis of Ammon (Siwa)
Crocodilopolis
Hermopolis
Lycopolis
Ptolemais
Nag Hammadi
Thebes
Syene
NABATAEANS
ARABIA
Tyana
Cilician Gates
COMMAGENE
Melitene
ARMENIA
L. Van
L. Urmia
Araxes
Cyrus
Nisibis
Carchemish
Issus
Alexandria
Soli
Antioch
Aleppo
Thapsacus
Euphrates
SYRIA
Emesa
Palmyra
Dura-Europus
Gaugamela
Arbela
Tigris
MESOPOTAMIA
Ecbatana
Rages (Rhagae)
Astrabad (Gorgan)
Zadrakarta (Turang Tepe)
Hecatompylus (?)
HYRCANIA
CHORASMIA
SOGDIANA
Oxus
SAKA (SCYTHIANS)
Cyropolis
Alexandria (Antiochia-Margiana)
Margus
BACTRIA
Alexandria Kapisa
Ortospana (Kabul)
GANDHARA
HINDUSH
Indus
Alexandria Arion
Areius
PARTHIA
ARIA
Alexandria Arachosion
DRANGIANA
Alexandropolis (Kandahar)
ARACHOSIA
Ctesiphon
Seleucia
BABYLON
Babylon
Nippur
Uruk
Susa
SUSIANA
Gabae
Parsagarda
Persepolis
PERSIS
CARMANIA
GEDROSIA
Alexandria (Gulashkird)
Pura
Harmozeia
Pattala
ancient coastline
Approximate boundary of Alexander's Empire
0 100 200 Miles
0 100 200 Kilometres
© Oxford University Press

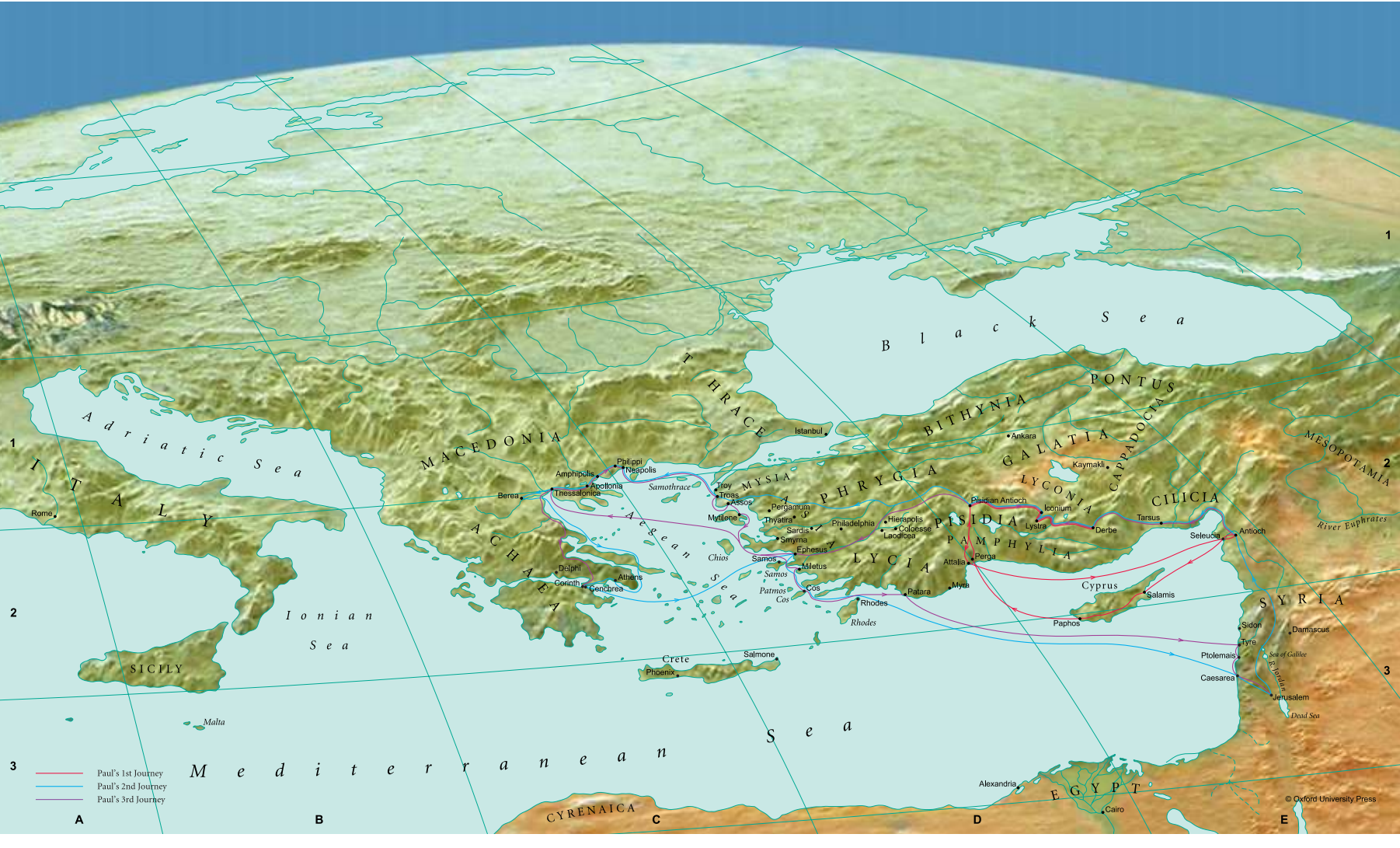

Medieval and Ottoman Jerusalem
Approximate lines of City Walls:
of original Zion (2 Sam 5:7)
extended during the Monarchy
extended after the Exile
(by Maccabees, 2nd Cent. BCE?)
Eastern wall of Nehemiah's city
Modern roads
Original Rock Contours are shown.
0 300 Metres
0 300 Yards
OTTOMAN WALL
Tower of Hananel
Baris
TEMPLE
ALTAR
? PALACE
Solomon's Wall
Tombs
? Valley
? MISHNA (SECOND QUARTER)
UPPER CITY
Wall of Hezekiah (Manasseh) ?
?
The lines of the southern walls of the city after the Exile are uncertain
Central (Cheesemakers') Valley
CITY OF DAVID (LOWER CITY)
Solomon's Wall
Manasseh's Wall
Gate
Water shaft
Gihon Spring
Upper Pool
Wall of Zion
Conduit
Old Conduit
Hezekiah's
Lower Pool
Old Pool
SILOAM
Gate
Hinnom Valley (? Topheth)
En-rogel Spring
Kidron Valley
Pre-exilic tombs
Mount of Olives
Post-exilic Jewish tombs
Monument of Benei Hezir
© Oxford University Press


V
W
X
Y
Z
1
2
3
4
5
6
7
33° 30'
32° 30'
31° 30'
34° 30'
35°
35° 30'
36°
36° 30'
Sidon
Sarepta
Tyre
Damascus
(a city of the Decapolis)
ABILENE
SYRIA
R. Leontes
ITURAEA
Paneas
Danos (Caesarea Philippi)
PROVINCE OF GALILEE
Upper Jordan
GAULANITIS
Bathyra?
TRACHONITIS
BATANAEA
Raphana
(a city of the Decapolis)
Ptolemais
Chorazin
Capernaum
Gennesaret
Bethsaida-Julias
R. Jordan
Sea of Galilee
Magdala
(Taricheae)
Gamala
Mt. Carmel
Sepphoris
Hippos
Dion?
Gabae (Hippeum)
Nazareth
Wadi Yarmuk
Abila
AURANITIS
Gadara
The Great Plain
Dora
HERODE CAPOLIS
Caesarea
(Strato's Tower)
Plain of Sharon
Scythopolis
Pella
MARE INTERNUM
(Mediterranean Sea)
Sebaste (Samaria)
Gerasa
Neapolis
Mt. Ebal
Amathus
Mt. Gerizim
River Jordan
Apollonia
Sozusa
SAMARIA
R. Jabbok
Antipatris
Alexandrium
Joppa
Phasaelis
Gadara
Thamna
PEREA
Lydda
Gophna
Archelais
Philadelphia (Rabbah)
KINGDOM OF
Jamnia
Jericho
Gazara
Emmaus (Nicopolis)
Cyprus
Betharamphtha
Jerusalem
Azotus
Bethany
JUDEA
Hyrcania
(Kh. Qumran
settlement of
Dead Sea sect)
Medeba
Bethlehem
Herodium
Ascalon
(Free City)
Betogabri
Lake
Callirhoe
Machaerus
Marisa
Agrippias
(Anthedon)
Asphaltitis
Hebron
Gaza
Adora
Wilderness of Judah
Engaddi (En-gedi)
R. Arnon
IDUMEA
(Dead Sea)
Masada
Raphia
Bersabe
(Beersheba)
Malatha
Mampsis
NABATAEAN KINGDOM
Boundary of Herod's kingdom at its greatest extent
Divisions, CE 6-37
Fortresses
0 10 20 Miles
0 10 20 Kilometres
© Oxford University Press


Political boundaries CE 6-34
JUDEA, etc.
Politcal units
Places mentioned in the New Testament
Cities of the Decapolis
Cities of the Decapolis mentioned in the New Testament
Fortresses
0 5 10 Miles
0 5 10 Kilometres
PROVINCE OF SYRIA
PHOENICIA
GALILEE
TETRARCHY OF PHILIP
GAULANITIS
BATANEA
TRACHONITIS
AUDANITIS
DECAPOLIS
PEREA
IDUMEA
SAMARIA
JUDEA
(under Roman administration)
Tyre
Ptolemais
Ecdippa (Achzib)
Ladder of Tyre
Sycaminum
Mt. Carmel
Bucolon Polis
Dora (Dor)
Crocodilon Polis
Caesarea
Joppa
Ascalon (Free city)
Azotus Paralius (Azotus-on-Sea)
Azotus
Accaron (Ekron)
Gaza
To Province of Syria
Agrippias (Anthedon)
Maiumas Ascalon (Baths of Ascalon)
Iamnitarum Portus (Jamnia Harbour)
Jamnia
Lydda
Apollonia Sozusa
Capnarsaba
Plain of Sharon
Brook of Kanah
Kedron
Cariathiareim
Emmaus (Nicopolis)
Gazara
Betogabri
Capharabis
Gemmaruris
Caphartobas
Adora
?Caparorsa
Aristobulias
Engaddi (En-gedi)
Masada
Bersabe (Beersheba)
Malatha
Mampsis
Brook Besor
Abelane
Caesarea Philippi (Paneas)
Daphne
Ulatha
Cadasa
Caparganaeoi
Lake Semechonitis (Lake Huleh)
Thella
Gischala
Jamneith
Seleucia
Meroth
Baca
Sepph
Acchabare
Bersabe
Chorazin
Sogane
R. Jordan
Bethsaida-Julias
Saab
Selame
Capernaum
Chabulon
Sogane
Ginnesar (Gennesaret)
Jotapata
Magdala (Taricheae)
Arbela
Sea of Galilee
Gergesa?
Gamala
Asochis
Cana
Rumah
Bethmaus
Tiberias
Ammathus
Hippos (Susithah)
Dion?
Sepphoris
Garis
Besara
Sennabris
Wadi Yarmuk
Nazareth
Sigoph
Dabaritta (Dabira)
Beth-yerah (Philoteria)
Emmatha
Abila
Simonias
Japha
Exaloth
Itabyrium (Tabor)
Gadara
Gabae (Hippeum)
Gabata
The Great Plain (Esdraelon)
R. Kishon
Nain
Agrippina
Capitolias
Arbela
Valley of Jezreel
Mt. Gilboa
Scythopolis
Pella
Narbata
Ginae
Salim?
Aenon?
Brook Cherith
Gitta
Bemesilis
Yishub
Sebaste (Samaria)
Gerasa
Amathus
Neapolis
Mt. Gerizim
Sychar
Tirathana
Mt. Ebal
Pharaton
Mahnayim
Coreae
(Wadi Farah)
River Jordan
Herod Antipas
R. Jabbok
Apollonia Sozusa
Capnarsaba
Brook of Kanah
Cappareteaea
Antipatris (Pegai)
Tower of Aphek
Arus
Tephon
Anathu Borcaeus
Acrabbein
Alexandrium
Selo (Shiloh)
Zia
Gadara
Phasaelis
Joppa
Rathamin (Arimathea?)
Thamna (Timnath)
Ilon
Berzetho
Gophna
Archelais
Philadelphia (Rabbath)
Adida
Modein
Bethel
Ephraim (Aphairema)
Iamnitarum Portus (Jamnia Harbour)
Sappho
Aialon?
Lower Beth-horon
Upper Beth-horon
Michmash
Jamnia
Gazara
Adasa
Capharsalama?
Taurus
Jericho
Cyprus
Emmaus (Nicopolis)
Berea?
Gabaon
Gabath Saul
Betharamphtha (Livias Julias)
Kedron
Cariathiareim
Anathoth
Esbus
Colonia Amasa (Emmaus?)
Mt. Scopus
R. Belus (Kedron)
Jerusalem
Bethphage
Bethany
(Kh. Qumran: settlement of Dead Sea sect)
Hyrcania
Medeba (Madaba)
Bethletepha
Bethlehem
Beth-basi
Etam
Herodium
W. Marabbah
Kidron
Wilderness of Judea
Beth-zechariah
Thecoa (Thekoa)
Beth-zaith
(Wadi Qubeibah)
R. Nahaliel
Callirrhoe
Machaerus
Bethsura (Beth-zur)
Aulos
Terebinthus (Mamre)
Hebron
Lake Asphaltitis (Dead Sea)
R. Arnon
Areopolis (Rabbathmoab)
MEDITERRANEAN SEA
NABATAEAN KINGDOM
IDUMEA
© Oxford University Press


Boundary of Roman Empire (c.CE 65)
Provincial boundaries (c.CE 65)
Roman Provinces
Selected Roman roads (route between Rome and the East)
ASIA, etc
0 100 200 Miles
0 100 200 Kilometres
ROMAN EMPIRE
ROME
ITALY
Mediterranean Sea (Mare Internum, Mare Nostrum)
Tyrrhenian Sea
Adriatic Sea
Aegean Sea
Euxine Sea (Pontus Euxinus)
Scythians
PANNONIA
DACIA
ILLYRICUM (DALMATIA)
MOESIA
THRACE
MACEDONIA
GALATIA
BITHYNIA and PONTUS
BOSPORAN KINGDOM
COLCHIS
KINGDOM OF ARMENIA
PARTHIAN EMPIRE
MESOPOTAMIA
ASSYRIA
ADIABENE
ATROPATENE
MEDIA
ELAM
CAPPADOCIA
PHRYGIA
LYCIA
PAMPHYLIA
PISIDIA
CILICIA
CILICIA and SYRIA
Commagene
OSROENE
GORDYENE
Nabataean Kingdom
Arabian Desert
Sahara Desert
AFRICA
LIBYA
EGYPT
CYRENAICA
Greater Syrtis
Lesser Syrtis
CRETE
CYPRUS
Rhodes
Malta (Melita)
SICILY
SARDINIA
CORSICA
Red Sea
Genua
Portus Veneris
Luca
Florentia
Arretium
Perusia
Bononia
Ravenna
Ariminum
Ancona
Pola
Siscia
Sirmium
Singidunum
Viminacium
Salonae
Scodra
Dyrrhachium
Apollonia
Brundisium
Tarentum
Sybaris
Croton
Panormus
Messana
Rhegium
Catana
Syracuse
Agrigentum
Utica
Carthage
Thapsus
St. Paul's Bay
Ostia
Three Taverns
Forum of Appius (Appii Forum)
Antium
Tarracina
Capua
Beneventum
Puteoli
Neapolis
Pompeii
Canusium
Paestum
Capreae (Capri)
Appian Way
Ostia
Corcyra
Nicopolis
Actium
Corinth
Cenchreae
Athens
Olympia
Sparta (Lacedaemon)
Thessalonica
Beroea
Philippi
Neapolis
Philippopolis
Sardica
Scupi
Niassus
Oescus
Novae
Istros
Tomi
Odessus
Mesembria
Byzantium
Heraclea
Nicomedia
Nicaea
Cyzicus
Prusa
Troas (Alexandria)
Assos
Adramyttium
Dorylaeum
Pergamum
Thyatira
Sardis
Smyrna
Philadelphia
Ephesus
Laodicea
Colossae
Miletus
Antioch
Iconium
Lystra
Derbe
Tarsus
Cilicia Trachea
Seleucia
Antioch
Attalia
Perga
Myra
Patara
Cnidus
Rhodes
Phoenix
Fair Havens
Salmone
Lasea
Cauda
Cyrene
Sabratha
Oea
Lepcis Magna
TRIPOLITANIA
Paphos
Salamis
Tripolis
Berytus
Sidon
Tyre
Ptolemais
Caesarea
Joppa
Gaza
Alexandria
Canopus
Naucratis
Sais
Pelusium
Memphis
Heliopolis
Babylon
Oxyrhynchus
Mt. Sinai
Aila (Aelana)
Petra
Damascus
Caesarea Philippi
Tiberias
Samaria
Jerusalem
Judaea
Abilene
Arca
Apamea
Epiphania
Emesa
Palmyra
Dura-Europus
Nicephorium
Edessa
Carrhae (Haran)
Zeugma
Europus (Carchemish)
Samosata
Nisibis
Ninus
Arbela
Seleucia
Ctesiphon
Babylon
Tigranocerta
Artaxata
Melitene
Caesarea (Mazaca)
Archelais
Amasea
Comana
Gangra
Ancyra
Tavium
Gordium
Pessinus
Amisus
Side
Trapezus
Sinope
Amastris
Chersonesus
Lesser Armenia
L. Van
L. Urmia
R. Araxes
R. Halys
R. Euphrates
R. Tigris
R. Orontes
R. Po
R. Tiber
R. Danube
R. Nile
Appennine Mts
Lesbos
Chios
Rhodes
Cauda
Corcyra
Dumah
Tema
© Oxford University Press


Tomb of Helena
Princess of Adiabene
OUTWORK OF UNCERTAIN ORIGIN
Medieval and Ottoman Jerusalem
Approximate lines of City Walls:
under Herod the Great
added by Agrippa I
Wall of Aelia
Modern roads
Original Rock Contours are shown.
0 300 Metres
0 300 Yards
? Fullers Tower
ROYAL
Damascus Gate
CAVERNS
BEZETHA
Pool of Bethzatha (Bethesda)
ANTONIA TOWER
Pool
Arch
Emmaus
? Psephinus
Jewish Tombs
Golgotha ?
TEMPLE
Gethsemane
Kidron Valley
Mount of Olives
Shushan Gate
Solomon's Portico
? Beautiful Gate
Warren's Gate
Court of Gentiles
Tombs
Monument of Bene Hezir
Gate (by Wilson's Arch)
Wilson's Arch
Pool
Phasael
? Mariamme
? Hippicus
Gennath Gate
ROYAL PALACE
PRAETORIUM
? Golgotha
Gate (by Robinson's Arch)
Royal Portico
Pinnacle of Temple
? Ophlas
Triple (Huldah) Gate
Tyropoeon Valley
Herodian Street
Gihon Spring
Bethany
Family Tomb of Herod
OTTOMAN WALL
Pool
Aqueduct
Causeway
Pool of Siloam
? Solomon's Pool
Hinnom Valley
Essene Gate
Tekoa Gate
Bethlehem
B = Bridge
C. of I. = Court of Israel
C. of Priests = Court of Priests
C. of W. = Court of Women
G = Gate
G° = Gate of Coponius = Barclay's Gate
G* = Double (Huldah) Gate
© Oxford University Press


Black Sea
Adriatic Sea
ITALY
Ionian Sea
SICILY
Malta
Mediterranean Sea
Aegean Sea
MACEDONIA
THRACE
ACHAEA
MYSIA
PHRYGIA
BITHYNIA
PONTUS
GALATIA
CAPPADOCIA
LYCONIA
PISIDIA
PAMPHYLIA
LYCIA
CILICIA
SYRIA
EGYPT
CYRENAICA
Cyprus
Crete
Rhodes
Chios
Samos
Patmos
Cos
Samothrace
Sea of Galilee
Dead Sea
River Euphrates
MESOPOTAMIA
Rome
Berea
Amphipolis
Philippi
Neapolis
Apollonia
Thessalonica
Delphi
Athens
Corinth
Cenchrea
Troy
Troas
Assos
Mytilene
Istanbul
Ankara
Kaymakli
Pergamum
Thyatira
Sardis
Philadelphia
Hierapolis
Colossae
Laodicea
Smyrna
Ephesus
Miletus
Pisidian Antioch
Iconium
Lystra
Derbe
Tarsus
Antioch
Seleucia
Attalia
Perga
Myra
Patara
Salamis
Paphos
Salmone
Phoenix
Alexandria
Cairo
Sidon
Tyre
Ptolemais
Caesarea
Damascus
Jerusalem
Paul's 1st Journey
Paul's 2nd Journey
Paul's 3rd Journey
A
B
C
D
E
1
2
3
© Oxford University Press


Euxine Sea
(Pontus Euxinus)
Mediterranean Sea
(Mare Internum)
THRACE
MACEDONIA
EPIRUS
THESSALY
ACHAEA
MYSIA
BITHYNIA AND PONTUS
PAPHLAGONIA
GALATIA
CAPPADOCIA
LYDIA
ASIA
PHRYGIA
LYCAONIA
GALATIAN PHRYGIA
PISIDIA
PAMPHYLIA
LYCIA
CARIA
CRETE
CYPRUS
CILICIA AND SYRIA
CILICIA TRACHEA
KINGDOM OF ANTIOCHUS
PHOENICIA
Kingdom of Herod Agrippa II
JUDEA
NABATAEAN KINGDOM
EGYPT
Aegean Sea
Ionian Sea
Propontis
Hellespont
Bosphorus
Egnatian Way
Scupi
Dyrrhachium
Philippopolis
Mesembria
Doberus?
Philippi
Neapolis
Amphipolis
Thessalonica
Apollonia
Beroea
Doriscus
Byzantium
Calchedon
Heraclea
Amastris
Sinope
Amisus
Side
Nicomedia
Claudiopolis
Nicaea
Cyzicus
Prusa
Abydos
Gangra
Amasea
Comana Pontica
Tavium
Ancyra
Gordium
Pessinus
Dorylaeum
Cotiaeum
Appia
Amorium
Caesarea (Mazaca)
Archelais
Comana Cappadociae
Germanicea
COMMAGENE
Larissa
Pharsalus
Nicopolis
Actium
Delphi
Patrae
Thebes
Eleusis
Corinth
Cenchreae
Athens
Piraeus
Olympia
Sparta (Lacedaemon)
Thyatira
Smyrna
Sardis
Philadelphia
Ephesus
Magnesia
Tralleis
Laodicea
Hierapolis
Apamea
Colossae
Antioch
Iconium
Lystra
Derbe
Miletus
Didyma
Halicarnassus
Cnidus
Rhodes
Xanthus
Patara
Myra
Attalia
Perga
Tarsus
Soli
Issus
Alexandria ad Issum
Seleucia (Free City)
Seleucia Pieria
Antioch
Laodicea
Apamea
Epiphania
Salamis
Paphos
Citium
Emesa
Tripolis
Heliopolis
Berytus
Chalcis
Sidon
Damascus
Tyre
Caesarea Philippi
Ptolemais
Tiberias
Gadara
Caesarea
Scythopolis
Pella
Bostra
Sebaste (Samaria)
Gerasa
Joppa
Jericho
Philadelphia
Jerusalem
Gaza
Raphia
Canopus
Alexandria
Naucratis
Sais
Pelusium
Heracleon
Phoenix
Salmone (Sammanion)
Fair Havens
Lasea
Cauda (Gaudos)
Samothrace
Imbros
Lemnos
Lesbos
Mytilene
Chios
Samos
Delos
Patmos
Rhodes
R. Strymon
R. Axius
R. Sangarius
R. Halys
R. Hermus
R. Macander
R. Pyramus
R. Orontes
R. Jordan
Cilician Gates
Syrian Gates
Arca
Abilene
Decapolis
To Herod Agrippa II
To Herod Agrippa II
Boundaries of Provinces of Roman Empire CE 65
ASIA, etc. Roman Provinces
'Seven Churches' of Asia (Rev. 1-3)
Selected Roman routes
0 50 100 Miles
0 50 100 Kilometres
© Oxford University Press


Black Sea
Caspian Sea
Mediterranean Sea
Red Sea
Persian Gulf
Sinai
ARABIA
PERSIA
MEDIA
ARMENIA
MESOPOTAMIA
ANATOLIA
Cilicia
Cyprus
Crete
Rhodes
Lesbos
Lemnos
Samothrace
Thrace
Macedonia
Greece
Cythera
Euboea
Chios
Samos
Lesbos
Scyros
Andros
Tenos
Paros
Delos
Melos
Naxos
Cos
Carpathos
Lapithos
Troy
Assos
Cyzicus
Thermae
Pergamum
Smyrna
Sardis
Kusura
Beycesultan
Colophon
Ephesus
Magnesia
Priene
Miletus
Didyma
Labraunda
Halicarnassus
Ialysus
Lindus
Xanthus
Antalya
Perga
Side
Antioch in Pisidia
Midas City
Gordion
Polatli
Ankara
Pazarli
Alaça Hüyük
Boğazköy (Hattusa)
Alishar
Külтepe
Kayseri
Malatya (Melid)
Marash
Nimrud Dagh
Karatepe
Sakçe Gözü
Tarsus
Mersin
Magarsus
Zinçirli
Carchemish
Harran
Chagar Bazar
T. Ahmar
T. Brak
T. Halaf (Gozan)
Arslan Tash
T. Judeideh
Aleppo
Antioch
el-Mina
'Atshana (Alalakh)
Ebla
Emar
Ugarit (Ras Shamra)
T. Sukas
Hama
Homs
Qatna
Tabbat el-Hammam
Kadesh
Qasr el-Hayr
Tadmor (Palmyra)
T. Ashara (Tirqa)
Dura-Europos
Mari
Samarra
Tepe Gawra
Khorsabad
Nineveh
Nimrud (Calah)
Hassuna
Hatra
Jarmu
Asshur
Nuzi
Tepe Hissar
Hamadan (Ecbatana)
Behistun
Tepe Giyan
Siyalk
Shah Tepe
TurangTepe
Geoy Tepe
Lake Van
Van
Lake Urmia
Great Zab
Little Zab
R. Tigris
Euphrates
Desert
Syrian
R. Ceyhan
R. Sakarya (Sangarius)
R. Kizilirmak (Halys)
R. Menderes
R. Nile
Pighades
Vouni
Idalion
Citium
Khirokitia
Kouklia
Curium
Amathus
Enkomi
Salamis
Byblos
Ba'albek
Damascus
Sidon
Tyre
Achzib
T. Abu Hawam
Hazor
Megiddo
Beth-shan
T. Fara
Bostra
Samaria
Gerasa
Gezer
Jericho
Lachish
Amman
Kh. Qumran
T. 'Ajjul
Jerusalem
Tale'ilat
Kh. Tannur
es-Sela' (Sela)
Petra
Nessana
Subeita
Kuntillet 'Ajrud
Timna'
T. el-Kheleifeh (Elath)
(Serabit el-Khadim)
Aqar Quf
T. Asmar
Khafajeh
T. Harmal
Ctesiphon
Sippar
'Uqeir
Jemdet Nasr
Babylon
Kish
Borsippa
Nippur
Bismaya
Fara (Shuruppak)
Tell'oh (Lagash)
Larsa
Erech (Uruk)
T. el-'Ubeid
Ur
Endu
Susa
Musyan
Bishapur
Persepolis
Sarvistan
ancient coastline
Alexandria
Tanis
T. Dafanneh
T. Basta
T. Yahudiyeh
T. Maskhuta
Tell er-Retabeh
Heliopolis
Gizeh
Saqqarah
Madinat el-Fayum
Meidum
Lahun
Ahnus
Oxyrhynchus
EGYPT
Beni-hasan
Hermopolis
T. el-'Amarna
Bawit
Deir Tasa
Badari
Qau
Abydos
Nag-Hammadi
Naqada
Qurna
Thebes
(Theban Cemetery)
Hierakonpolis
Abu Simbel
LIBYA
Philippi
Neapolis
Thessalonika
Thasos
Pella
Olynthus
Troy
Assos
Thermae
Pergamum
Delphi
Athens
Mycenae
Salamis
Argos
Tiryns
Pylos
Sparta
Olympia
Knossos
Ayia Triada
Phaistos
Palaikastro
Sinope
Trebizond
Van
Lake Van
Tepe Gawra
Nineveh
Nimrud (Calah)
Asshur
Nuzi
Jemdet Nasr
Babylon
Susa
Persepolis
Ur
Erech (Uruk)
Byblos
Mari
Ugarit (Ras Shamra)
Carchemish
Tarsus
Zinçirli
Gordion
Midas City
Troy
Ephesus
Knossos
Thebes
Hierakonpolis
Saqqarah
Gizeh
Jericho
Megiddo
Hazor
Beth-shan
Samaria
Gerasa
Lachish
Kadesh
Qatna
Ugarit
Carchemish
Mari
Susa
Persepolis
T. = Tell (mound, city site)
Kh. = Khirbet (ruin)
0 100 200 Miles
0 100 200 Kilometres
© Oxford University Press


T. Tell (Arabic), Tel (Hebrew): mound; city site
Kh. Khirbet (Arabic): ruin
W. Wadi: watercourse
Biblical names, when known, are given first and Arabic names are then bracketed.
Hebrew names, when given, follow the Arabic name.
0 5 10 Miles
0 5 10 Kilometres
Tyre (es-Sur)
Zarephath Sarepta (Sarafand)
Sidon (Saida)
33°33'N
Caesarea Philippi (Paneas), (Banias)
Dan (T. el-Qadi, T. Dan)
T. Anafa
Kedesh (T. Qades)
Shelomi
T. et-Taba'iq
el-Basseh
Yiron (Yarun)
Einan
Achzib (ez-Zib, T. Akhziv)
Qal'at el-Qurein
Kafr Bir'im
el-Jish (Gischala)
Jisr Banat Ya'aqub
Naharlyeh
Kabri
Tarshiha
Suhmata
Hazor (T. el-Qedah, T. Hazor)
Kh. en-Nabratein
T. es-Sumeiriyeh
el-Buqei'a
Kh. et-Tuleil
Merom (Meirun)
Kh. Shema'
Acco (T. el-Fukhkhar)
Ha-Yonim
Chorazim (Kh. Kerazeh)
Mishal? (Tell Keisan)
Cabul (Kabul)
Chinnereth (T. el-'Ureimeh)
prehistoric caves
Kh. el-Minya
Capernaum (T. Hum)
Heptapegon ('Ain Tabgha)
Sycaminum (T. es Samak, T. Shiqmona)
Jotapata (Jotbah) (Kh. Jefat)
Cana (Kh. Qana)
Magdala (Taricheae) (Mejdal; Migdal)
Umm el-'Amad
Arbela (Kh. Irbid)
Sea of Galilee
T. Abu Hawam
Rosh Maya (Kh. Rushmiya)
Neve Sha'anan (Iraq ez-Zigan)
Tiberias
Kh. el-'Asheq (En-Gev)
Susithah (Hippos) (Qal'at el-Husn)
T. Harbaj
Sepphoris (Saffuriyeh)
T. el-'Amr
Nahal Oren
Isfiyyeh
Jabneel (Tel Yin'am, Tell en-Na'am)
Beth-yerah (Kh. el-Kerak)
Mugharet Abu Usba' 'Athlit (Pilgrims' Castle)
Beth She'arim (Sheikh Abreiq)
Nazareth
Japhia (Yafa)
Mt. Tabor (Jebel et-Tor)
'Ubeidiya
el-Hammeh
Gadara (Umm Qeis)
W. el-Mughara (prehistoric caves)
Jokneam (T. Qeimun; T. Yoqneam)
Kishion (Kh. Qasyun, Tell Qishyon)
R. Kishon
Hazorea' (Tell Qiri)
'Affuleh
Dor (et-Tantura)
Megiddo (T. el-Mutesellim)
Jezreel (T. Yizre'el)
Beth Hashitta
Mugharet el-Kebara
T. el-Mubarak
Taanach (T. Ta'annak)
Beth Alpha (Beit Alfa)
Beth-shan Scythopolis (T. el-Husn)
Caesarea
Rehob (T. es-Sarem; T. Rehov)
Pella (Kh. Fahil)
Ramoth-gilead (T. Ramith)
Hadera
Meser
Migdal (T. edh-Dhurur, T. Zeror)
Dothan (T. Duthan)
Hepher? (Tel Hefer, Tell Ifshar)
Qal'at er-Rabad
Rihab
Gerasa (Jerash)
Tirzah T. Far'a
Samaria Sebastiyeh
Zarethan? T. es-Sa'idiyeh
Jordan River
T. er-Ras
Mt. Gerizim (Jebel et-Tor)
Shechem (T. Balata)
Succoth (T. Deir 'Allah)
R. Jabbok
Rishpon
T. Makmish
Zarethan (T. Umm Hamad?)
T. el-Qasileh
Aphek (T. Ras el-Ain)
Eben-ezer? ('Izbet Sartah)
T. Qudadi
Benei Berak
Alexandrium (Qarn Sartabeh)
Gath-rimmon? (T. el-Jerisheh)
Joppa (Jaffa)
Shiloh (Seilun)
Mugharet Abu Shinjeh
Shuqba
T. Abu Habil
Rabbah Philadelphia (Amman)
Mesad-Hashavyahu
Dhahrat Humraiyeh
el-Jisr
Modein
Bethel (Beitin)
Ai (el-Tell)
'Araq el-Emir
Gath (Gittaim) (T. Ras Abu Humeid)
'Ain ed-Duyuk
Gilgal? (Kh. el-Mafjar)
Eltekeh? (T. esh-Shallaf)
Mizpah (T. en-Nasbeh)
Deir el-Quruntul
Jericho, O.T.
Gezer (T. Abu Shusheh)
el-Qubeibeh
Gibeon (el-Jib)
Deir el-Qilt
Jericho, N.T.
Jericho
Emmaus (Imwas)
Gibeah? (T. el-Ful)
Deir Mar Jiryis
T. el Kheidar, T. Mor
Qaryat el-'Inab
Beth-haram (T. Iktanu)
Heshbon (Hesban)
Timnah (T. el-Batashi)
Khan el-Ahmar
Tuleilat el-Ghassul
Azotus-Paralius (Minet el-Qala')
Ekron (Kh. El-Muqanna', T. Miqne)
'Ain Karim
Jerusalem (el-Qods)
Mt. Pisgah (Ras Siyagha)
Ashdod (Esdud, T. Ashdod)
Beth-shemesh (T. er-Rumeileh)
Manahath
Beth Haccherem (Ramat Rahel)
caves
Kh. Qumran
Kh. el-Mekhaiyet
Beit Jimal
Bethir (Battir)
En-Eglaim ('Ain Feshkha)
Medeba (Madaba)
Azekah
Bethlehem
Kh. el-Mird
Middin (Kh. Abu Tabaq)
Baal-meon (Ma'in)
(T. Zakariyeh)
Bethletepha (Beit Natif)
Kh. es-Siyar
Nitshan? (Kh. el-Maqari)
Gath? (T. es-Safi)
Herodium (J. Fureidis)
Wa. el-Murabba'at
Ashkelon (Ascalon)
Kh. el-Hubeileh
Umm Qatafa (prehistoric caves)
Libnah? (T. Bornat)
Moresheth-gath? (T. el-Judeideh)
Kh. Asideh
Kh. Iskander
Beth Gubrin (Beit Jibrin)
Mareshah (T. Sandahannah)
Beth-zur (Kh. Tubeiqa)
caves
Callirrhoe
Lachish (T. ed-Duweir)
Mamre (Ramat el-Khalil)
Machaerus (Kh. Mukawer)
Eglon? (T. el-Hesi)
'Ain el-Ma'mudiyeh
Hebron (Kiriath-arba) (el-Khalil)
Dead Sea
Dibon (Dhiban)
En-gedi
Aroer ('Ara'ir)
Cave of the Letters
R. Arnon
T. Beit Mirsim
Debir (Kh. Rabud)
Eshtemoa (es-Samu')
Wa. Ta'ellim
Nahal Hever
Balu'a
Ziklag?
En-rimmon? (Tel Halif, Kh. Khuweilfeh)
Jattir (Kh. 'Attir; H. Yatir)
Masada (es-Sebbeh)
Arad (T. 'Arad)
Bab ed-Dra'
T. Abu Matar, Kh. Beter
Beer-sheba (T. es-Saba', T. Beer Sheva)
Hormah? (Tel Masos, Kh. el-Meshash)
Arad (T. el-Milh, Tel Malhata)
Mampsis (Kurnub)
31°01'N
'Ader
Kir-Hareseth (el-Kerak)
© Oxford University Press
Beer-sheba
T. Isdar
Negeb
Dead Sea
Kurnub
Dhat Ras
Yeroham
Kh. Tannur
Subeita
Nessana
Abdah
Ramat Matred
Bozrah
'Ain Qudeirat
'Ain Qedeis
Arabah
Petra
Beidha
Tawilan
Umm el-Biyyarah
Timna
H. Bodeda
T. el-Kheleifeh
Er Ram
Gulf of 'Aqaba
0 10 20 30 Miles
0 20 40 Kms.
Gaza Maioumas
Gaza (el-Ghazza)
Beth-eglaim (T. el-Ajjul)
T. er-Ruqeish
Deir el-Balah
Yurza (T. Jemme)
Sharuhen (T. Far'ah)
same scale